









THE  
DRAMATIC WORKS  
OF  
WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE.







THE  
DRAMATIC WORKS

WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE.

*New Edition,*

WITH INTRODUCTORY ESSAY AND NOTES.

LONDON AND GLASGOW:  
RICHARD GRIFFIN AND COMPANY.

MDCCCLV.



## P R E F A C E.

---

THE present collection of SHAKSPEARE'S PLAYS differs in arrangement from any that has hitherto been published. The Tragedies, Comedies, and Historical Plays, are divided; and in each division, the consecutive order of the pieces has reference to the country in which the action is laid, or to the epoch at which it is supposed to have taken place. Such as are founded on Grecian or Roman occurrences, are distinctly separated from those which commemorate the events of British history; and in each class a proper chronological priority is as much as possible maintained.

The text has been critically and laboriously collated with the standard editions, and an uniform and judicious method of punctuation, so necessary to the intelligibility of the old English writers, has been adopted throughout.

Large or numerous notes being inconsistent with the design of the work, such only are subjoined as were necessary for explaining obsolete words, unusual passages, old customs, and obscure allusions.

A literary and historical Notice is prefixed to each Play, containing a succinct criticism upon its merits or defects, tracing the origin of its plot, investigating the fidelity of its characters, and assigning as nearly as possible the date of its production.

In the preparation of these, and of the biographical portraiture of Shakspeare, the remarks of Rowe, Pope, Theobald, Warburton, Hanmer, Johnson, Steevens, Malone, Reed, Percy, Warton, Hazlitt, and others, have been carefully examined, and contrasted with each other.

The Editor feels that little praise can accompany this undertaking if *novelty of matter* be the only criterion of merit; but he thought it more becoming to condense and re-mould the accumulated comments of so many distinguished writers, than to revive speculations which have become too stale to be interesting, or to search for new proofs of what has long been an article of belief.





## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

ESSAY ON THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF SHAKSPEARE, . . . . .	5
CORIOLANUS, . . . . .	6
JULIUS CÆSAR, . . . . .	6
ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA, . . . . .	6
TITUS ANDRONICUS, . . . . .	8
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA, . . . . .	11
TIMON OF ATHENS, . . . . .	12
PERICLES, PRINCE OF TYRE, . . . . .	15
HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK, . . . . .	17
OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE, . . . . .	21
ROMEO AND JULIET, . . . . .	21
CYMBELINE, . . . . .	21
KING LEAR, . . . . .	21
MACBETH, . . . . .	21
KING JOHN, . . . . .	21
LIFE AND DEATH OF KING RICHARD II. . . . .	21
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV. . . . .	21
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV. . . . .	21
KING HENRY V. . . . .	21
FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI. . . . .	21
SECOND PART OF KING HENRY VI. . . . .	21
THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI. . . . .	21
LIFE AND DEATH OF KING RICHARD III. . . . .	21
KING HENRY VIII. . . . .	21
A MIDSUMMER NIGHT'S DREAM, . . . . .	21
THE TEMPEST, . . . . .	21
THE TWELFTH NIGHT; OR, WHAT YOU WILL, . . . . .	21
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL, . . . . .	21
THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA, . . . . .	21
LOVE'S LABOURS LOST, . . . . .	21
COMEDY OF ERRORS, . . . . .	21
AS YOU LIKE IT, . . . . .	21
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING, . . . . .	21
THE MERCHANT OF VENICE, . . . . .	21
MEASURE FOR MEASURE, . . . . .	21
WINTER'S TALE, . . . . .	21
TAMING OF THE SHREW, . . . . .	21
THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR, . . . . .	21



# ESSAY ON THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF SHAKSPEARE.

---

**WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE** was born at Stratford-upon-Avon, in Warwickshire, April 23, 1564. His ancestors are mentioned as "gentlemen of good figure and fashion." His father was a considerable dealer in wool, and had been the high-bailiff or mayor of the body corporate of Stratford. He held also the office of justice of the peace, and at one time, it is said, possessed lands and tenements to the amount of £500; but he must have been greatly reduced in the latter part of his life, as he was excused the trifling weekly tax of fourpence, levied on all aldermen, and subsequently resigned the office to another individual. His wife was the daughter and heiress of Robert Arden, of Wellingcote, in Warwickshire, "a gentleman of worship." This lady brought him ten children; of whom William, our poet, was the eldest. At a proper age he was sent to the free-school in Stratford, to which he was indebted for whatever learning he may have possessed; though his father had apparently no design to make him "a scholar," as he took him, at an early period, into his own business. Mr. Malone, on the contrary, conjectures, that he was placed in the office of some country attorney, after leaving school, or with the seneschal of some manor court, where he picked up those technical law phrases that so frequently occur in his plays, and could not have been in common use unless among professional men. However this may be, he resolved to write "man" earlier than usual, and before he was eighteen, married Anne Hathaway, eight years older than himself, the daughter of John Hathaway, who is said to have been a substantial yeoman in the neighbourhood of Stratford. Before the expiration of his minority he became the father of three children, a son and two daughters, his wife producing him twins. Nothing is known of his domestic economy or professional occupation at this time; though Mr. Capell supposes that this early marriage prevented his being sent to some university. Shortly after the birth of his youngest child, he left Stratford for the metropolis: his motive for doing so, as well as his connexion and prospects in London, are involved in considerable obscurity. It is said that he became acquainted with a gang of deer-stealers, and being detected with them in robbing the park of Sir Thomas Lucy, of Charlecote, was prosecuted with so much rigour as to be obliged to take shelter in London: having first revenged himself upon the knight by writing a satirical ballad. This was affixed to Sir Thomas's park-gates, and being liberally circulated in the neighbourhood, excited considerable attention, though it does no honour to our poet's genius, and was manifestly unjust. Some writers have asserted, that Shakspeare escaped with impunity after his first offence; but that, repeating it audaciously, he was prosecuted by Sir Thomas, whom he grossly lampooned—that to escape a prison, he fled to London, where, as might be expected from a man of wit and humour in similar circumstances, he threw himself among the players, and made his first appearance on the stage in a very subordinate character. This account (according to a modern publication) is not entitled to full credence; for though he may have associated with some idle youths, either for the sake of catching deer, or for some less difficult and hazardous enterprise, yet the story seems improbable, and comes in such a questionable shape, that it ought to be strongly corroborated before it be believed. Without depending on this circumstance, or supposing that "he held horses at the door of a theatre for his livelihood," a rational motive for his visiting London may be found in the circumstance, that he had a relative and townsman already established there; Thomas Green, "a celebrated comedinn." The statement of John Aubrey, a student in the university of Oxford only twenty-six years after our poet's death, strongly substantiates this view of the case, though it differs in some particulars from the commonly accepted opinions respecting his parentage and occupation. "His father (says Aubrey) was a butcher, and I have been told heretofore, by some of the neighbours, that when he was a boy he exercised his father's trade, but when he killed a calf, he would doe it in a high style, and make a speeche. This William, (meaning Shakspeare,) being naturally inclined to poetry and acting, came to London, I guesse about eighteen, and was an actor at one of the play-houses, and did act exceedingly well. He began early to make essays at dramaticque poetry, which at that time was very lowe, and his playes, tooke well." This is good to a certain extent; but the truth probably is, that some freak, or it might be, felony, determined Shakspeare promptly to embrace that profession to which his habits and inclinations had for a long time previously inclined him. The playful enthusiasm of his

disposition, when directed not to the useful purposes of life, but to "poetry and acting," was calculated to encourage habits of idleness or improvidence, with a taste for those wild and irregular associations, which commence by despising order, and generally terminate in a defiance of law. When he made Falstaff a deer-stealer, and played the battery of his wit so keenly upon Justice Shallow, the recollection of his own adventure was probably uppermost in his mind; and if there were any doubt on the subject, the circumstance of his having given to *Shallow* the identical quarterings of Sir Thomas Lucy, (his Warwickshire prosecutor,) would effectually set it at rest. The balance of evidence, therefore, preponderating greatly against "this amiable man and supereminent author," his admirers may be content to have him charged with an act of *pouching*, since it was the apparent cause of his producing those immortal dramas, which have rendered him the delight of successive ages. It is not agreed in what situation he was first employed at the theatre, and Mr. Rowe has not been able to discover any character in which he appeared to more advantage than that of the ghost in Hamlet. The instructions given to the player, and other passages of his works, evince an intimate acquaintance with the science of acting, and shew that he studied nature in it, as much as in writing; but all this might be mere theory. The situation of an actor neither deserved nor engaged his attention, and was far from adequate to the prodigious powers of his mind; he turned it to a higher and nobler use; and having, by practice and observation, acquainted himself with the mechanical part of a theatre, his native genius inspired all the other essentially superior qualities of a play-wright. The date at which his first play appeared is unknown, and the greatest uncertainty prevails with respect to the chronological order in which the whole series was written, exhibited, or published. As no certain authority could be adduced upon this point, recourse has been had to internal evidence; and by searching for those marks of progressive excellence, which are supposed to result from exercise and improvement, the dates of each play have been pretty positively fixed.

Though Shakspeare continued to write till the year 1614, he had probably declined appearing as an actor long before that period; as no mention of his name can be found among the list of players subsequent to the production of Ben Jonson's *Sejanus* in 1603. He now succeeded in obtaining a license from king James to exhibit comedies, tragedies, histories, &c. at the Globe Theatre or elsewhere, and was enabled to acquire, during his dramatic career, property to a considerable amount. Gildon (in his "Letters and Essays," 1694) estimated the amount at £300 per annum, a sum at least equal to £1000 in our days; but Mr. Malone thinks it could not exceed £200, which yet was a considerable fortune in those times. It is supposed that he might have derived £200 per annum from the theatre, while he continued on the stage. Besides his thirty-five plays, Shakspeare wrote some poetical pieces, which were published separately, viz. *Venus and Adonis*, *The Rape of Lucrece*, *The Passionate Pilgrim*, *A Lover's Complaint*, and a volume of Sonnets. The Earl of Southampton, with whom he was a great favourite, is said to have presented him with a sum of £1000, to enable him to complete a purchase—an act of munificent patronage, which has never been exceeded. He enjoyed in a great degree the personal favour of Queen Elizabeth; and King James the First "was pleased with his own hand to write an amicable letter to Mr. Shakspeare," in return (as Dr. Farmer supposes) for the compliment paid to him in *Macbeth*; where allusion is made to the kingdoms of England and Scotland being united under one monarch, and James's having begun to touch for *the king's evil*. Having acquired such a fortune as suited his views and wishes, he quitted the stage and all other business, and passed the remainder of his life in an honourable ease, at his native town of Stratford. Of the exact time when this took place, nothing certain is known; but Mr. Theobald supposes he did not resign the theatre before 1610, since, in his *Tempest*, he mentions the Bermuda islands, which were unknown to the English till 1609, when Sir John Sumners discovered them on his voyage to North America. He lived in a very handsome house of his own purchasing, to which, having repaired and modelled it to his own mind, he gave the name of New Place; and he had the good fortune to save it from the flames in the dreadful fire which shortly afterwards laid waste the town. During Shakspeare's abode in this house, his wit and good-humour engaged him the acquaintance and entitled him to the friendship of all the surrounding gentry. He was (says Aubrey) a handsome, well-shaped man, verie good companie, and of a verie ready, pleasant, and smooth wit. It is not difficult, indeed, to suppose that Shakspeare was a man of humour and a social companion, and that he excelled in that species of minor wit not ill adapted to conversation, of which it is to be wished he had been more sparing in his writings. In the beginning of the year 1616 he made his will, wherein he testified his respect to his quondam theatrical partners, appointing his youngest daughter, jointly with her husband, his executors, and bequeathing them the bulk of his estate, which came into their possession not long afterwards. It is inferred from this document, that our poet's lady did not enjoy much of his affection, as his "second-best bed, with the

furniture," constituted the only bequest to her. It is not known what particular malady terminated, at no very advanced age, the life and labours of this incomparable genius; but he died on the 23d of April, 1616, being the anniversary of his birth-day, when he exactly completed his fifty-second year. He was interred among his ancestors, on the north side of the chancel, in the great church of Stratford, and a handsome monument, bearing the following Latin distich, was erected to his memory:

Judicio Pylum, genio Sooratem, arte Maronem,  
Terra tegit, populus mœret, Olympus habet.

On the grave-stone in the pavement are the following singular lines:—

Good friend, for Jesus' sake, forbear  
To dig the dust enclosed here:  
Blest be the man that spares these stones,  
And curst be he that moves my bones.

In the year 1741, another very noble and beautiful monument was raised to his memory, at the public expense, in Westminster Abbey, under the direction of the Earl of Burlington, Dr. Mead, Mr. Pope, and Mr. Martyn. It stands near the south door of the Abbey, in what is called Poets' Corner, and was the work of Scheemaker, after a design of Kent's. The performers of each of the London theatres gave a benefit to defray the expenses, and the Dean and Chapter took nothing for the ground.

Mrs. Shakspeare survived her husband eight years, dying in 1623, at the age of sixty-seven. Of Shakspeare's family, the son died in 1596; the eldest daughter, Susanna, married Dr. John Hall, a physician of Stratford, who is said to have obtained much reputation and practice. She brought her husband an only child, Elizabeth, who was married, first to Thomas Nashe, Esq. and afterwards to Sir John Barnard, of Abingdon, in Northamptonshire, but had no issue by either of them. The second daughter, Judith, married Thomas Quiney, a gentleman of good family, by whom she had three children; but as none of them reached their twentieth year, they left no posterity. Hence our poet's last descendant was Lady Barnard, who was buried at Abingdon, Feb. 17, 1669-70. Dr. Hall, her father, died Nov. 25, 1635, and her mother, July 11, 1649, and were both interred in Stratford church. Our poet's house and lands continued in the possession of his descendants to the time of the Restoration, when they were re-purchased by the Clepton family, the original proprietors. Sir Hugh Clopton, who was knighted by King George the First, died in 1751, and his executor sold the estate to a clergyman of large fortune, who resided in it but a few years, and in consequence of a disagreement with his neighbours respecting a parochial assessment, peevishly pulled down the house, sold the materials, and left the town. To defeat the curiosity of the numerous strangers who were led to visit this classic ground, he had some time before cut down the mulberry-tree, which Shakspeare is known to have planted, and had piled it as a stack of firewood, to the great vexation, loss, and disappointment, of the inhabitants of Stratford. But an honest silversmith bought the whole stack, and converted it into a number of toys and implements, which were eagerly purchased by the curious. The purpose to which one of these trifles was applied gave rise to an occurrence, harmless, and perhaps laudable in itself, though by many considered as verging on the mock-heroic. The corporation of Stratford having presented Garrick with the freedom of the town in a box made from the wood of the tree, this incident suggested to him the idea of a festival in commemoration of Shakspeare, upon the very spot where he was born; and the plan was carried into execution in the autumn of 1769. Temporary buildings were raised—entertainments suited to every taste were provided—and company of all ranks, from the most distant parts of the kingdom, assembled to celebrate the memory of the poet. The jubilee lasted three days; but the weather was exceedingly unfavourable, and the pleasure enjoyed was by no means equal to that which the enthusiastic admirers of Shakspeare had anticipated, though Garrick exerted all his talents to gratify both the eye and the understanding. He composed several songs for music, with an ode of considerable length to the honour of his hero; and having expended a large sum of money upon various parts of the entertainment, took a method of reimbursing himself, which gives a laughable finale to this overflow of enthusiasm:—the jubilee was converted into a dramatic representation, during the following winter, in London, and became so popular, that it was repeated night after night to the most crowded audiences.

The nature and extent of Shakspeare's biblical learning will form a necessary introduction to the review of his dramatic writings; especially as there is no question connected with his history, upon which more ingenious speculation has been hazarded. There has always prevailed a tradition that Shakspeare wanted learning, and Ben Jonson, who wrote at a time when the character and acquisitions of our poet were known to multi-

tudes, affirms that he had small Latin, and less Greek. Dr. Farmer, in a curious essay upon this subject, has proved that his imaginary imitations from numerous old writers were derived from English books, to which he had easy access. It is surprising how much angry argument has been employed by such as are opposed to this opinion. Mr. Upton calls it the pride and pertness of dunces, whilst he very amusingly points out the skill with which Shakspeare has given "the trochaic-dimeter-brachy-catalectic, commonly called the ithyphallic measure," to the witches in Macbeth; and says that now and then a halting verse affords "a most beautiful instance of the *pes proceleusmaticus*!" Dr. Grey declares that Shakspeare's knowledge of Greek and Latin cannot reasonably be doubted; and another writer doubts whether *Truepenny* might not be derived from *Τρῦπανον*; quoting, at the same time, with much parade, an old scholiast on Aristophanes. Indeed, plagiarisms have been discovered in every natural description and every moral sentiment; a business which may be effected with very little time or sagacity, as Addison has shewn in his dissertation on Chevy Chase, and Wagstaff in his comment on Tom Thumb. To cite even a portion of the passages which Dr. Farmer has proved to be suggested by old chronicles, translations, or books of poetry, instead of being taken directly from writers in the dead languages, would be impossible; but one result of his inquiries may be adduced as a specimen of the whole. "Dr. Grey and Mr. Whalley assure us, that for the play of *Hamlet*, Shakspeare must have read Saxo Grammaticus in Latin, no translation having been made into any modern language. But the truth is, that he did not take it from Saxo at all; a novel, called the *Historie of Hamblet*, was his original; a fragment of which in black letter is now in my possession." Upon the same principle, Shakspeare's allusion to the darts of Cupid in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, where he says that some are tipped with gold and others with lead, does not prove his acquaintance with Ovid, any more than his allusions to Dido establish his knowledge of Virgil. Gower, Chaucer, and Lydgate, had already sung the fate of the love-sick queen, and Marlowe had even introduced her on the stage; whilst Surrey, Sidney, and Spenser, had defined in their amatory sonnets every characteristic distinction in Cupid's arrows. The *Comedy of Errors* is taken from the only play of Plautus which was then in English; and unless those which were not translated were inaccessible to him, there is no single reason why, if he copied one, he should not have copied more. He probably had learnt sufficient Latin to make him acquainted with construction, though he never advanced to an easy perusal of the Roman authors. Concerning his skill in modern languages, as no imitations of French or Italian authors have been discovered, though Italian poetry was then in high esteem, it would seem that he read English only, and chose for his fables merely such tales as he found translated. Some Italian words and phrases appear, it is true, in his works, but they are not of his own importation. With these opinions, the reader will form his own decision upon the acquired learning of our poet; and with Drayton, the countryman and acquaintance of Shakspeare, will probably attribute his excellence to "*the naturall braine only.*"

As a first impression, it naturally excites surprise, that the dramatic writings of Shakspeare, productions so agreeable to the age that witnessed their birth, and distinguished by such unequivocal marks of popular approbation, were not more diffusely circulated from time to time through the medium of the press; or at all events secured, by the author himself, from the direct ravages of piracy or ignorance, the common accompaniments of successful genius. It is certain that Shakspeare did not himself print any one of his plays; nor was a collection of them published until 1623, seven years after his death, by Heninge and Condale, his former fellow-managers. From that period to 1664, an interval of forty-one years, only two editions were disposed of; the numerical amount of which did not probably exceed *one thousand copies*! Different commentators have assigned different reasons for this apparent retrocession of the national taste; but Mr. Chalmers has offered the most simple, and consequently the most satisfactory, solution of the circumstance, in a series of statements which it may be useful to lay before the reader, though necessarily in a condensed form. Shakspeare was the promoter of an amusement just emerging from barbarism, and one, moreover, which has ever had such a strong tendency to deviate from moral propriety, that the force of law has been in all ages necessary to preserve it within the bounds of common decency. The church, in particular, has at all times been unfriendly to the stage; and at this particular period, it required all the policy and circumspection of the court, to establish the reformed faith firmly in the affections of the people. To this important end the controversial efforts of the Puritans were greatly conducive, and nothing was more obnoxious to their tenets, than the toleration of dramatic amusements. Thus Elizabeth, and her successor, James, though privately disposed to patronize and foster the stage, as a pleasing addition to their courtly recreations, were yet under the necessity of loading it with some onerous restrictions, whilst the bishops themselves publicly committed to the flames all the poetry and

novels which fell within their notice. Severe injunctions were issued against the printing of plays; nor were any allowed to be published, till revised and approved by persons in authority. In the temper and feeling of the times, this may be considered a virtual prohibition; and the publication of Shakspeare's works was therefore justly accounted a very doubtful speculation. For several years after his death, the public taste, ever dependent upon novelty, was strongly directed to the plays of Fletcher, and during the remainder of the seventeenth century, the noble productions of our poet gave place to a species of dramatic composition, equally conspicuous for its wit and its obscenity, and which the more chastened judgment of modern audiences has driven with abhorrence from the stage. The works of his rival and contemporary Jonson, appear indeed to have passed through several editions, and to have been read with uncommon avidity, while those of our poet were doomed to comparative neglect; but this is chiefly attributable to the passion for classical literature and collegiate learning, which were then regarded the chief criteria of merit. Only fifty years after his death, Dryden affirms that he was become "a little obsolete; and Tate, in his dedication to the altered play of King Lear, speaks of the original as an obscure piece, recommended to his notice by a friend. In the beginning of the last century, Lord Shaftesbury complained of "his rude unpolished style, and his antiquated phrase and wit;" and it is certain, that for nearly a hundred years after his death,—partly owing to the rebellion, when the stage was totally abolished—partly from the licentious taste encouraged in the time of Charles II., which we have already alluded to—and partly from the incorrect state of his works, he was almost entirely neglected. When, moreover, in addition to these facts, it is recollected that his works were published in a very unwieldy size—that the opportunities of attracting notice by advertisements were then very few—that the women had not applied to literature, nor was every house furnished with a closet of books—the limited sale of his works will cease to be a matter of surprise, and may fairly be attributed to the character and predominant occupations of the times which immediately followed his decease. Further examination will equally explain another apparent singularity, and also refute the supposition that Shakspeare was himself insensible of the value of his works, or careless of any reward beyond present popularity and present profit. He wrote them for a particular theatre, sold them to the managers when only an actor, reserved them in manuscript when himself a manager, and on disposing of his property in the theatre, they were still preserved in manuscript, to prevent their being acted by the rival houses. Copies of some of them appear to have been surreptitiously obtained, and published in a very incorrect state; but the managers were wise enough to overlook this fraud, rather than publish a correct edition, and so destroy the exclusive property they enjoyed. It is clear, therefore, on the one hand, that any publication of his plays by himself, would have interfered at first with his own interest, and afterwards with that of his fellow-managers, to whom he had made over his share in them; and on the other, that though the fame which he enjoyed was probably the highest which dramatic genius could bestow, yet that dramatic genius was novel and unappreciated, or perhaps, not heard of beyond the limits of the metropolis. It is, indeed, very doubtful whether he would have gained much by publication, whilst the refinements of criticism were so little understood, and the sympathies of taste so inadequately felt.

In 1709 an edition was undertaken by Mr. Nicholas Rowe, which had nothing to recommend it but some biographical particulars of Shakspeare, communicated by Betterton, the celebrated comedian, who had been at the trouble of a journey into Warwickshire purposely to obtain them. Nearly all the faults of the first edition were perpetuated in this; and according to Dr. Warburton, Mr. Rowe, though a wit, was so utterly unacquainted with the whole business of criticism, that he did not examine or consult the early copies of the work which he ventured to re-publish. But it is now very generally allowed, that he made a number of emendations which succeeding editors have received without acknowledgment. In 1725 Mr. Pope published his edition in 6 vols. 4to, and gave the first example of critical and emendatory notes. He collected the old copies, and restored many lines to their integrity; his preface is equally celebrated for elegance of composition, and justness of remark; but, by a very compendious criticism, he rejected whatever he disliked, thinking more of amputation than of cure, and proving himself a better poet than dramatic critic. Every anomaly of language, and every expression at variance with the accepted phraseology of that day, was considered an error or corruption, and the text was altered, or amended, as it was called, at pleasure. By these fanciful deviations, the poet was so completely modernized, that had he "revisited the glimpses of the moon," he would scarcely have understood his own works. In 1733 Mr. Theobald ventured upon a similar task, giving to his work the imposing title of *Shakspeare Restored*. Dr. Johnson describes him as a man of narrow comprehension and small acquirements—restoring a stray comma, and then panegyricizing himself for the



achievement—as mean, petulant, and ostentatious, and indebted for a little reputation to the circumstance of his having Pope for an opponent. Sir Thomas Hanmer was the next who undertook to illustrate Shakspeare: his work was published in 1743, in 6 vols. 4to. He is generally termed the “Oxford editor;” and, though eminently qualified by nature for such pursuits, is said to have adopted all the innovations of Pope, in addition to the capricious suggestions of his own taste. In 1747, Dr. Warburton, Bishop of Gloucester, published his edition in 8 vols. 8vo., and by an unbounded license in substituting his own chimerical conceits for the plain text of his author, subjected himself to the imputation of wishing rather to display his own learning, than to illustrate the obscurities of the poet. It has been said, indeed, of this celebrated critic, that he erected his throne on a heap of stones, that he might have them at hand to throw at the heads of all who passed by; but though his interpretations are sometimes perverse, and his conjectures improbable—though he occasionally discovers absurdities where the sense is plain, or dwells upon profundity of meaning which the author never contemplated, yet his emendations are frequently happy, and his commentaries learned and ingenious. In 1765, that distinguished moralist, scholar, and critic, Dr. Samuel Johnson, published these plays with additional criticisms, accompanying them with a preface, which is considered a perfect specimen of his own extraordinary genius, and in which, also, the respective merits of all the above-named editors are characterized with great candour, and with singular fertility of expression. It is said, that he has commented on the writings of Shakspeare with a severity far removed from accuracy and justice, and that he did not fully understand the varied merits of his author. But Mr. Malone, in the very intelligent and amusing preface to his edition of our poet, published in 1790, vindicates the Doctor’s happy and just refutation of Mr. Theobald and Warburton’s false glosses, and asserts that his vigorous and comprehensive understanding threw more light on the involved and difficult passages of many plays, than the united labour of all his predecessors had been able to do. In the edition of 1803, published by Mr. Steevens, (in 21 vols. 8vo. commonly called Johnson and Steevens’s Shakspeare, and justly esteemed the best,) all Mr. Malone’s original notes and improvements are incorporated. From 1716 to 1790, a period of seventy-four years, thirty thousand copies of Shakspeare were circulated in England; and since that time, the number has at least been doubled. Some of them issued under the auspices of able and accomplished scholars, particularly the edition of 1803, 10 vols. 8vo. by Alexander Chalmers, F.S.A.; which is distinguished by a sketch of the life of Shakspeare, founded upon the statements of Rowe, with the additional and corrective remarks of Malone and Steevens. The generality, however, are mere variations, with various degrees of typographical embellishments, and in almost every size and shape; but the magnificent copy published some time since by the Messrs. Boydell, in 4to. folio, enriched with the most sumptuous engravings, is justly considered as one of the finest specimens of art ever produced in this, or in any other country.

Nothing is more difficult, in estimating the real merits of a popular writer, than to “season the admiration” by judicious rules. These can only be learnt from the opinions of such as have made it their particular business to investigate the pretensions of authors, and to define the boundaries of taste by the best examples which learning and experience supply. Some useful information, applicable to this purpose, may be gained from the following analysis, exhibiting the most formidable objections that have been urged against Shakspeare’s dramas, in conjunction with the principal merits by which they are said to be distinguished.

Voltaire, after allowing that Shakspeare, besides possessing a strong fruitful genius, was natural and sublime, decides that he had not one spark of good taste, nor a single dramatic rule, and that his great merit has been the ruin of the English stage. “There are (says he) such noble, such beautiful, such dreadful scenes in this writer’s monstrous verses, to which the name of tragedy is given, that they have always been exhibited with great success. Time, which only gives reputation to writers, at last makes their very faults venerable. Most of the whimsical gigantic images of this poet, have, through length of time, acquired a right of passing for sublime. In *Othello*, a most tender piece, a man strangles his wife upon the stage, and though the poor woman is strangling, she cries out aloud that she dies very unjustly. In *Hamlet*, the two grave-diggers are drunk, singing ballads, and making humorous reflections on the skulls which they throw up. The players have not even struck out the buffoonery of the shoemakers and cobblers, who are introduced (in *Julius Cæsar*) in the same scene with Brutus and Cassius.”

These, says Dr. Johnson, are the petty cavils of petty minds. Shakspeare’s plays are not, in the rigorous and critical sense, either tragedies or comedies, but compositions of a distinct kind, exhibiting the mingled good and evil, joy and sorrow, inseparable from this sublunary state. That this is a practice contrary to ancient dramatic rules, will be readily allowed; but there is always an appeal open from criticism to nature. The end of writing

is to instruct; the end of poetry, to instruct by pleasing; and there is no reason why the mingled drama should not convey all the pleasure and instruction of which tragedy or comedy, in their simple form, are capable of doing. The English nation, in the time of Shakspeare, was yet struggling to emerge from barbarity. The philology of Italy had been transplanted hither in the reign of Henry VIII., and the learned languages had been successfully cultivated by Lilly, Linacre, and More; by Pole, Cheke, and Gardiner; and afterwards by Smith, Clerk, Haddon, and Ascham. Greek was taught in the public schools, and many of the Italian and Spanish poets were read with great diligence. But these advantages were confined to distinguished rank, whilst the public at large was still gross and dark. Plebeian learning was confined to giants, dragons, and enchantments; and the sober representations of common life would not have been tolerated by a nation which delighted in the wonders of fiction, in the exploits of Palmerin, and the feats of Guy of Warwick. Writing for such audiences as these, Shakspeare was compelled to look around for strange events and fabulous transactions; and that incredibility by which maturer knowledge is offended, was the chief recommendation of his writings to unskilful curiosity. Such, indeed, is the power of the marvellous, even over those who despise it, that every man finds his mind more strongly seized by the tragedies of Shakspeare than of any other writer; and he has, perhaps, excelled all but Homer, in the leading qualifications of a writer, by the power of exciting a restless and unquenchable curiosity. The necessity of observing the unities of time and place, arises from the supposed necessity of making the drama credible; but it will be found that the slavish adherence to these principles, which Voltaire and others so rigidly enforce, gives much more trouble to the poet, than pleasure to the audience. It is false that any representation is mistaken for reality; for if a spectator can once be persuaded that his old acquaintance are Alexander and Cæsar, that a room illuminated with candles is the plain of Pharsalia, he is in a state of elevation beyond the reach of truth, and there is no reason why, in such a state of ecstasy, he should count the clock, or consider minutes and hours, as any other than days and years. Whether, therefore, Shakspeare knew the unities, and rejected them by design, or deviated from them by happy ignorance, it is impossible to decide, and useless to inquire; since they are not essential to a just drama, and though sometimes conducive to pleasure, may always be sacrificed to the nobler beauties of variety and instruction.

Mr. Rowe's was the first editorial commentary on the plays of Shakspeare, and notwithstanding his alleged incapacity for criticism, the prominent beauties of our poet are judiciously and not inelegantly pointed out. Like other critics, he praises the fertility of his invention—the historical fidelity of his characters—the stateliness of his diction—the power of his muse in creating terror, or exciting mirth—and the perfection of his writings at a time of almost universal license and ignorance, where there was not one play in existence of sufficient merit to be acted at the present day.

With an ardour, an eloquence, and a discrimination, suited to his highly-gifted mind, and becoming the liberality of his poetical character, Mr. Pope enlarges on the characteristic excellences of our immortal bard. He considers him more original even than Homer; since the art of the latter proceeded through Egyptian strainers, and came to him not without some tincture of the learning of those that preceded him. In the power of the passions, he declares him to be no less admirable, than in the coolness of reflection and reasoning; and (as though he had been acquainted with the world by intuition) that his sentiments are the most pertinent and judicious, even on those great and public scenes, of which he could have had no experience. One cause of Shakspeare's peculiarities was the profession to which he belonged. Players are just judges of what is *right*, as tailors are of what is *graceful*. Living by the majority, they know no rule but that of pleasing the present humour, and complying with the wit in fashion. Our author first formed himself upon the opinions of this class of men; and consequently his faults are less to be ascribed to his wrong judgment as a poet, than to his right judgment as a player.

Mr. Theobald, in the midst of many compliments to his own acuteness, and much irreverent abuse of Pope, whose wit (he says) is as thick as Tewkesbury mustard, thus panegyricizes Shakspeare: "Whether we respect the force and greatness of his genius, the extent of his knowledge and reading, the power and address with which he throws out and applies either nature or learning, there is ample scope both for our wonder and pleasure."

Sir Thomas Hanmer commends the rich vein of sense which runs through the entire works of Shakspeare; and declares him unequalled in the two great branches of dramatic poetry, by the best writers of any age or country.

Dr. Warburton, in a paper replete with brilliant wit and energetic argument, thus speaks of the productions of Shakspeare: "Of all the literary exertions of speculative men, whether assigned for the use or entertainment of the world, there are none of so

much importance as those which let us into the knowledge of our nature. Others may exercise the reason, or amuse the imagination, but these only can improve the heart, and form the mind to wisdom. Now in this science Shakspeare confessedly occupies the foremost place; whether we consider the amazing sagacity with which he investigates every hidden spring and wheel of human action; or his happy manner of communicating this knowledge, in the just and living paintings which he has given us of all our passions, appetites, and pursuits."

To the recorded testimony of these eminent writers, it is scarcely necessary that any other should be added; but the inquisitive reader will find the merits of Shakspeare still further developed in the essays of Mrs. Montague, Dr. Richardson, Dr. Grey, and Mr. Britton. Dryden, whose own accomplished genius was sullied and debased by the dramatic impurities in which he indulged, says that Shakspeare had the largest and most comprehensive soul of all modern, and perhaps ancient, poets, and that, in dramatic composition, he has left no praise for any who come after him. In a similar feeling, and with that stately sentiment which pervades all he has written, Dr. Young thus exalts the qualifications of our poet: "Whatever other learning he wanted, he was master of two books unknown to many of the profoundly read, though books which the last conflagration alone can destroy: the book of nature, and that of man." Mr. Malone calls him the great refiner and polisher of our language; and ranks his compound epithets, his bold metaphors, his energetic expressions, and harmonious numbers, amongst the chief beauties of his works. Dr. Johnson, whose opinions have already been recited in opposition to those of Voltaire, declares that a valuable system of civil and economical prudence may be collected from the plays of Shakspeare—that they are filled with practical axioms and domestic wisdom—that almost every verse (as was formerly said of the writings of Euripides) is a precept; but that, at the same time, his real power is shewn in the progress of the fable, and the tenor of the dialogue—and that he who tries to recommend him by select quotations, will succeed like the pedant in Hierocles, who, when he offered his house to sale, carried a brick in his pocket as a specimen.

Though the excellence of Shakspeare's productions has become an article of literary faith in England, and though such of his defects as are too palpable to be overlooked, have been gratuitously attributed to the age in which he lived, it is only a necessary supplement to the foregoing remarks, and essential to a right appreciation of his character, briefly to point out what those defects are. In many of his plays, the latter part is evidently neglected; when he found himself near the end of his work, and in view of his reward, he shortened the labour to snatch the profit. The plots are often so loosely formed, that a very slight consideration may improve them, and so carelessly pursued, that he seems not always fully to comprehend his own design. In his comic scenes, the jests are frequently gross, and the pleasantry licentious; nor are his ladies and gentlemen sufficiently distinguished from clowns, by any appearance of refined manners. He is not long soft and pathetic, without some idle conceit, or contemptible equivocation. What he does best, he soon ceases to do. Let but a quibble spring up before him, and he leaves his work unfinished: he follows it at all adventures, however dignified or profound, however tender or pathetic, the subject which engages his attention. Lastly, he is accused of sacrificing virtue to convenience, and of being much more careful to please than to instruct. He that thinks reasonably, must think morally; but our poet's precepts drop casually from him; he makes no just distribution of good or evil; and after carrying his persons indifferently through right and wrong, he dismisses them at the close without further care, leaving their examples to operate by chance.

With these imperfect particulars, derived from the united labours of various admirers and commentators, our brief sketch of the life of Shakspeare must necessarily conclude. On all the topics which usually constitute the personal history of an individual, his contemporaries and immediate successors have been equally silent. The meagre facts which were first imbodied in a memoir by Mr. Rowe, and have been moulded into so many forms by the caprice or taste of successive writers, remain to the present day, unaided by any accession of novelty, and unimpeached by the utmost acuteness of criticism. His early studies—the progress of his pen—his moral and social qualities—his friendships and his errors, are completely buried in oblivion, as if the homage which is paid to his splendid poetical genius, should be unmingled with any recollection of his faults and failings as a man. Nor, after an interval of two centuries, is it probable that any undiscovered clue is in existence, by which the memorial of his actions can be redeemed from its present obscurity.

# CORIOLANUS.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THIS play, supposed to have been written in 1609, comprehends a period of five or six years. The plebeian citizens of Rome, unable to pay their debts from poverty, consequent upon the long war against Tarquin and the Latins, and incensed by the supposed indifference of the senators and patricians, retired with the undisciplined troops of Valerius, to a mountain about three miles from Rome, afterwards called Mount Sacer. The city was thrown into great alarm by this defection, and Menenius, who is described as "a very discreet person, and a great orator," was sent with other commissioners, to bring about a reconciliation. Here he related to them the fable of the belly and its members, the application of which had such an effect, that they were about to follow him home, when Sicinius and Junius Brutus (two factious fellows) cunningly demanding a guarantee for the people, were in the end appointed their tribunes, with very extraordinary power. In the year following, there was a severe famine; and Coriolanus (so called for his exploits at Corioli) with other young patricians, making excursions into the enemy's country, returned, laden with corn. Provisions also arriving from Sicily, the senate determined upon selling them at a cheap rate to the poor; but Coriolanus proposed the abolition of the tribuneship, and the retention of the corn, because the people had obstinately refused to join in the expedition sent out to obtain it. The exasperated populace would instantly have thrown him from the Tarpeian rock, but were repulsed by his friends. Being arraigned at the proper tribunal, he defended himself with so much grace and energy, that the people called out for his acquittal; whereupon one of the tribunes artfully and falsely accusing him of illegally appropriating the spoils of war, he was as suddenly sentenced to banishment. In a spirit of revenge, he offered his services to the Volscians, and carried destruction to the very gates of Rome. The city was on the point of being assaulted, when his mother, accompanied by his wife and children, threw herself at his feet, and worked so much upon the feelings of nature, that he granted a peace, and withdrew his troops. On returning to Antium, by the perfidious management of Tullus, he was cut in pieces ere he had time to defend his conduct; but the Volscians disapproved the assassination, buried him honourably, adorned his tomb with trophies, and the Roman women mourned for him twelve months. The poet has adhered very closely to historical facts. Mr. Pope remarks, that Shakespeare is found "to be very knowing in the customs, rites, and manners of antiquity." In Coriolanus and Julius Caesar, not only the spirit, but the manners of the Romans are exactly drawn; and a still nicer distinction is shown between Roman manners in the time of the former and of the latter.\* Many of the principal speeches are copied from Plutarch's *Life of Coriolanus*, as translated by Sir Thomas North. There are some glaring anachronisms in this play, such as introducing our nicknames of *Hob*, *Dick*, &c. church-yards, *cue*!! and particularly, theatres for the exhibition of plays, which did not exist until 250 years after the death of Coriolanus. *Volumnia*, also, was the name of his wife, not of his mother; and the good Menenius died three or four years before his revengeful expedition against Rome.—Dr. Johnson says. The tragedy of Coriolanus is one of the most amusing of our author's performances. The old man's merriment in Menenius; the lofty lady's dignity in Volumnia, the bridal modesty in Virgilia, the patrician and military haughtiness in Coriolanus, the plebeian malignity and tribunician insolence in Brutus and Sicinius make a very pleasing and interesting variety; and the various revolutions of the hero's fortune fill the mind with anxious curiosity. There is, perhaps, too much bustle in the first act, and too little in the last.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS, *a noble Roman.*  
TITUS LARTIUS, } *Generals against the Vol-*  
COMINIUS, } *scians.*  
MENENIUS AGRIPPA, *Friend to Coriolanus.*  
SICINIUS VELUTUS, } *Tribunes of the people.*  
JUNIUS BRUTUS, }  
YOUNG MARCIUS, *Son to Coriolanus.*  
A ROMAN HERALD.  
TULLUS AUFIDIUS, *General of the Volscians.*  
LIEUTENANT to Aufidius.  
CONSPIRATORS with Aufidius.

A CITIZEN of Antium.  
TWO VOLSCIAN GUARDS.  
VOLUMNIA, *Mother of Coriolanus.*  
VIRGILIA, *Wife to Coriolanus.*  
VALERIA, *Friend to Virgilia.*  
GENTLEWOMAN, *attending Virgilia.*

*Roman and Volscian Senators, Patricians, Ædiles, Lictors, Soldiers, Citizens, Messengers, Servants to Aufidius, and other Attendants.*

SCENE: partly in Rome, and partly in the territories of the Volscians and Antiates.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—Rome.—A Street.

*Enter a company of mutinous CITIZENS, with Staves, Clubs, and other Weapons.*

1 *Cit.* Before we proceed any further, hear me speak.

*Cit.* Speak, speak. [*Several speaking at once.*]

1 *Cit.* You are all resolved rather to die, than to furnish?

*Cit.* Resolved, resolved!

1 *Cit.* First you know, Caius Marcius is chief enemy to the people.

*Ans.* We know't, we know't.

1 *Cit.* Let us kill him, and we'll have corn at our own price. Is't a verdict?

*Cit.* No more talking on't; let it be done: away, away.

2 *Cit.* One word, good citizens.

1 *Cit.* We are accounted poor citizens; the patricians, good.\* What authority surfeits on, would relieve us; if they would yield us but the superfluity, while it were wholesome, we might guess they relieved us humanely; but they think we are too dear: the leanness that afflicts us, the object of our misery, is as an inventory to parti-

\* Rich

† Charge of keeping us more than we are worth.

R

cularize their abundance ; our sufferance is a gain to them.—Let us revenge this with our pikes, ere we become rakes : \* for the gods know, I speak this in hunger for bread, not in thirst for revenge.

1 *Cit.* Would you proceed especially against Caius Marcius ?

*Cit.* Against him first : he's a very dog to the commonality.

2 *Cit.* Consider you what services he has done for his country ?

1 *Cit.* Very well ; and could be content to give him good report for't, but that he pays himself with being proud.

2 *Cit.* Nay, but speak not maliciously. 1 *Cit.* I say unto you, what he hath done famously, he did it to that end ; though soft-conscience'd men can be content to say it was for his country, he did it to please his mother, and to be partly proud ; which he is, even to the altitude of his virtue.

2 *Cit.* What he cannot help in his nature, you account a vice in him : You must in no way say he is covetous.

1 *Cit.* If I must not, I need not be barren of accusations ; he hath faults, with surplus, to tire in repetition. [*Shouts within.*] What shouts are these ? The other side o' the city is risen : Why stay we prating here ? to the Capitol !

*Cit.* Come, come.

1 *Cit.* Soft ; who comes here ?

*Enter MENENIUS AGRIPPA.*

2 *Cit.* Worthy Menenius Agrippa : one that hath always loved the people.

1 *Cit.* He's one honest enough ; 'Would, all the rest were so !

*Men.* What work's, my countrymen, in hand ? Where go you With bats and clubs ? The matter ? Speak, I pray you.

1 *Cit.* Our business is not unknown to the senate ; they have had inkling,† this fortnight what we intend to do, which now we'll show 'em in deeds. They say, poor suitors have strong breaths ; they shall know we have strong arms too.

*Men.* Why, masters, my good friends, mine honest neighbours, Will you undo yourselves ?

1 *Cit.* We cannot, Sir, we are undone already.

*Men.* I tell you, friends, most charitable care Have the patricians of you. For your wants, Your suffering in this dearth, you may as well Strike at the heaven with your staves, as lift them

Against the Roman state ; whose course will on The way it takes, cracking ten thousand curbs Of more strong link asunder, than can ever Appear in your impediment : For the dearth, The gods, not the patricians, make it ; and Your knees to them, not arms, must help.

Alack !

You are transported by calamity Thither where more attends you ; and you slander The helms o' the state, who care for you like When you curse them as enemies. [*Fathers,*

1 *Cit.* Care for us ! True, indeed ! They ne'er cared for us yet. Suffer us to famish, and their store-houses crammed with grain ; make edicts for usury, to support usurers ; repeal daily any wholesome act established against the rich ; and provide more piercing statutes daily, to chain up and restrain the poor. If the wars eat us not up, they will ; and there's all the love they bear us.

*Men.* Either you must Confess yourselves wondrous malicious, Or be accus'd of folly. I shall tell you A pretty tale ; it may be, you have heard it : But, since it serves my purpose, I will venture To speak't ‡ a little more.

1 *Cit.* Well, I'll hear it, Sir ; yet you must not

think to fob off our disgrace with a tale ; but, an't please you, deliver.

*Men.* There was a time, when all the body's members

Rebell'd against the belly ; thus accus'd it :— That only like a gulf it did remain

'Tbe midst o' the body, idle and inactive, Still cupboarding the viand, never bearing Like labour with the rest ; where † the other instruments

Did see, and hear, devise, instruct, walk, feel, And, mutually participate, ‡ did minister Unto the appetite and affection common Of the whole body. The belly answered,—

1 *Cit.* Well, Sir, what answer made the belly ?

*Men.* Sir, I shall tell you.—With a kind of smile,

Which ne'er came from the lungs, but even thus, (For, look you, I may make the belly smile As well as speak,) it tauntingly replied To the discontented members, the mutinous parts That envied his receipt ; even so most fitly ; As you malign our senators, for that They are not such as you—

1 *Cit.* Your belly's answer : What ! The kingly-crowned head, the vigilant eye, The counsellor heart, the arm our soldier, Our steed the leg, the tongue our trumpeter, With other muniments and petty helps In this our fabric, if that they—

*Men.* What then ?—'Fore me, this fellow speaks !—what then ? what then ?

1 *Cit.* Should by the cormorant belly be restrain'd,

Who is the sink o' the body,—

*Men.* Well, what then ?

1 *Cit.* The former agents, if they did complain, What could the belly answer ?

*Men.* I will tell you ;

If you'll bestow a small (of what you have little,) Patience, a while, you'll hear the belly's answer.

1 *Cit.* You are long about it.

*Men.* Note me this, good friend ; Your most grave belly was deliberate, Not rash like his accusers, and thus answer'd. *Trile is it, my incorporate friends, quoth he, That I receive the general food at first, Which you do live upon : and fit it is ; Because I am the store-house, and the shop (Of the whole body : But if you do remember, I send it through the rivers of your blood, Even to the court, the heart,—to the seat o' the brain :*

*And, through the cranks † and offices of man, The strongest nerves, and small inferior veins, From me receive that natural competency Wherby they live : And though that all at once,*

*You, my good friends, (this says the belly, mark me,)*

1 *Cit.* Ay, Sir ; well, well.

*Men.* *Though all at once cannot See what I do deliver out to each ; Yet I can make my audit up, that all From me do back receive the flour of all, And leave me but the bran. What say you to't ?*

1 *Cit.* It was an answer : How apply you this ? *Men.* The senators of Rome are this good belly,

And you the mutinous members : For examine Their counsels and their cares ; digest things rightly,

Touching the weal o' the common ; you shall find No public benefit which you receive, But it proceeds, or comes, from them to you, And no way from yourselves.—What do you think ?

You the great toe of this assembly ?

1 *Cit.* I the great toe ? Why the great toe ?

*Men.* For that being one o' the lowest, basest, poorest,

\* Thin as vobee. † A him. ‡ Spread it.

\* Whereas.

† Participating. ‡ Windings.

‡ Exactly:

Of this most wise rebellion, thou go'st foremost ;  
Thou rascal, that art worse in blood to run,  
Lead'st first to win some vantage.—  
But make you ready your stiff bats and clubs ;  
Rome and her rats are at the point of battle,  
The one side must have bail.\* Hall, noble  
Marcius!

*Enter CAIUS MARCIUS.*

*Mar.* Thanks.—What's the matter, you dissen-  
tious rogues,  
That rubbing the poor itch of your opinion,  
Make yourselves scabs ?

*1 Cit.* We have ever your good words,

*Mar.* He that will give good words to thee,  
will flatter

Beneath abhorring. What would you have, you  
curs, [you,

That like nor peace, nor war ? the one affrights  
The other makes you proud. He that trusts you,  
Where he should find you lions, finds you hares ;  
Where foxes, geese : You are no surer, no,  
Than is the coal of fire upon the ice,  
Or hailstone in the sun. Your virtue is,  
To make him worthy whose offence subdues him,  
And curse that justice did it. Who deserves  
greatness,

Deserves your hate : and your affections are  
A sick man's appetite, who desires most that  
Which would increase his evil. He that depends  
Upon your favours, swims with fins of lead,  
And hews down oaks with rushes. Hang ye !  
Trust ye ?

With every minute you do change a mind ;  
And call him noble, that was now your hate,  
Him vile, that was your garland. What's the  
matter,

That in these several places of the city  
You cry against the noble senate, who,  
Under the gods, keep you in awe, which else  
Would feed on one another ?—What's their  
seeking ?

*Men.* For corn at their own rates ; whereof,  
they say,  
The city is well stor'd.

*Mar.* Hang 'em ! They say ?  
They'll sit by the fire, and presume to know  
What's done i'the Capitol : who's like to rise,  
Who thrives, and who declines : side factions,  
and give out

Conjectural marriages ; making parties strong,  
And feeling such as stand not in their liking,  
Below their cobbled shoes. They say, there's  
grain enough !

Would the nobility lay aside their ruth,†  
And let me use my sword, I'd make a quarry†  
With thousands of these quarter'd slaves, as high  
As I could pick § my lance.

*Men.* Nay, these are almost thoroughly per-  
suaded :

For though abundantly they lack discretion,  
Yet are they passing cowardly. But, I beseech  
What says the other troop ? [you,

*Mar.* They are dissolved : Hang 'em !  
They said they were an hungry : sigh'd forth  
proverbs— [cat ;

That hunger broke stone walls ; that dogs mast  
That meat was made for mouths ; that the gods  
sent not

Corn for the rich men only :—With these shreds  
They vented their complainings ; which, being  
answer'd,

And a petition granted them, a strange one,  
(To break the heart of generosity,  
And make bold power look pale) they threw their  
caps

As they would hang them on the horns o'the  
Shouting their emulation.] [moon

*Men.* What is granted them ?

*Mar.* Five tribunes to defend their vulgar  
wisdoms,

Of their own choice : One's Junius Brutus,  
Sicinius Velutus, and I know not—§ Death !

\* Damage. † Compassion. ‡ Heap of dead. § Pitch.  
| Faction.

The rabble should have first unroof'd the city,  
Ere so prevail'd with me : it will in time  
Win upon power, and throw forth greater themes  
For insurrection's arguing.\*

*Men.* This is strange.

*Mar.* Go, get you home, you fragments !

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mes.* Where's Caius Marcius ?

*Mar.* Here : What's the matter ?

*Mes.* The news, is, Sir, the Volscres are in arms.

*Mar.* I am glad on't ; then we shall have  
means to vent

Our musty superfluity :—See, our best elders.

*Enter COMINIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, and other  
SENATORS ; JUNIUS BRUTUS and SICINIUS  
VELUTUS.*

*1 Sen.* Marcius, 'tis true that you have lately  
told us :

The Volscres are in arms.

*Mar.* They have a leader,

Tullus Aufidius, that will put you to't.

I sin in envying his nobility :

And were I any thing but what I am,

I would wish me only he.

*Com.* You have fought together.

*Mar.* Were half to half the world by the ears,  
and he

Upon my party, I'd revolt, to make  
Only my wars with him : he is a lion  
That I am proud to hunt.

*1 Sen.* Then, worthy Marcius,

Attend upon Cominius to these wars.

*Com.* It is your former promise.

*Mar.* Sir, it is ;

And I am constant.—Titus Lartius, thou  
Shalt see me once more strike at Tullus' face  
What, art thou stiff ! stand'st out !

*Tit.* No, Caius Marcius ; [other,  
I'll lean upon one crutch, and fight with the  
Ere stay behind this business.

*Men.* Oh ! true bred !

*1 Sen.* Your company to the Capitol ; where  
I know,

Our greatest friends attend us

*Tit.* Lead you on :

Follow, Cominius ; we must follow you ;

Right worthy you priority.

*Com.* Noble Lartius !

*1 Sen.* Hence ! To your homes, be gone.

[To the CITIZENS.

*Mar.* Nay, let then follow :

The Volscres have much corn ; take these rats  
thither,

To gnaw their garners : Werahipful mutineers,  
Your valour puts a well forth : pray follow.

[*Exeunt SENATORS, COM. MAR. TIT. and  
MEN. CITIZENS steal away.*

*Sic.* Was ever man so proud as is this Mar-  
cius ?

*Brut.* He has no equal.

*Sic.* When we were chosen tribunes for the  
people,—

*Brut.* Mark'd you his lip, and eyes ?

*Sic.* Nay, but his taunts.

*Brut.* Being mov'd, he will not spare to gird †  
the gods.

*Sic.* Be-mock the modest moon.

*Brut.* The present wars devour him : he is  
Too proud to be so valiant. [grown

*Sic.* Such a nature

Tickled with good success, disdains the shadow  
Which he treads on at noon : But I do wonder  
His insolence can brook to be commanded  
Under Cominius.

*Brut.* Fame, at which he aims,—

In whom already he is well grac'd—cannot  
Better be held, nor more attain'd, than by  
A place below the first : for what miscarries  
Shall be the general's fault, though he perform  
To the utmost of a man ; and giddy censure,

\* For insurgents to debate upon. † Shows itself.  
‡ Chide.

Will then cry out of Marcius, *Oh! if he had borne the business!*

*Sic.* Besides, if things go well, Opinion, that so sticks on Marcius, shall Of his demerits \* rob Cominius.

*Bru.* Come:

Half all Cominius' honours are to Marcius, Though Marcius earn'd them not; and all his faults

To Marcius shall be honours, though, indeed, In ought he merit not.

*Sic.* Let's hence, and hear

How the dispatch is made; and in what fashion, More than in singularity,† he goes Upon his present action.

*Bru.* Let's along.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Corioli.—The Senate-House.

Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS, and certain SENATORS.

*1 Sen.* So, your opinion is, Aufidius, That they of Rome are enter'd in our counsels, And know how we proceed.

*Auf.* Is it not yours?

What-ever hath been thought on in this state, That could be brought to bodily act ere Rome Had circumvention! ‡ 'Tis not four days gone, Since I heard thence—these are the words: I think

I have the letter here; yes, here it is—[*Reads.* They have press'd a power, but it is not known

Whether for east or west: The dearth is great; The people mutinous: and it is rumour'd, Cominius, Marcus your old enemy,

(Who is of Rome worse hated than of you,) And Titus Lartius, a most valiant Roman,

These three lead on this preparation

Whither 'tis bent: most likely, 'tis for you: Consider of it.

*1 Sen.* Our army's in the field: We never yet made doubt but Rome was ready To answer us.

*Auf.* Nor did you think it folly, To keep your great pretences wend'd, till when They needs must shew themselves; which in the hatching,

It seem'd, appear'd to Rome. By the discovery, We shall be shorten'd in our aim, which was, To take in § many towns, ere, almost, Rome Should know we were afoot.

*2 Sen.* Noble Aufidius,

Take your commission; hie you to your bands: Let us alone to guard Corioli:

If they set down before us, for the remove Bring up your army; but, I think, you'll find They have not prepar'd for us.

*Auf.* Oh! doubt not that:

I speak from certainties. Nay, more—Some parcels of their powers are forth already, And only hitherward. I leave your honours.

If we and Caius Marcius chance to meet, 'Tis sworn between us, we shall never strike

Till one can do no more.

*All.* The gods assist you!

*Auf.* And keep your honours safe!

*1 Sen.* Farewell.

*2 Sen.* Farewell.

*All.* Farewell.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Rome.—An Apartment in MARCIUS' House

Enter VOLUMNIA and VIRGILIA: They sit down on two low stools, and sew.

*Vol.* I pray you, daughter, sing; or express yourself in a more comfortable sort: If my son were my husband, I should freelier rejoice in that absence wherein he won honour, than in the embracements of his bed, where he would show most love. When yet he was but tender-

bodied, and the only son of my womb: when youth with comeliness pluck'd all gaze his way; \* When, for a day of kings' entreaties, a mother should not sell him an hour from her beholding; †,—considering how honour would become such a person; that it was no better than picture-like to hang by the wall, if renown made it not stir,—was pleased to let him seek danger where he was like to find fame. To a cruel war I sent him; from whence he returned, his brows bound with oak. ‡ I tell thee, daughter, I sprang not more in joy at first hearing he was a man-child, than now in first seeing he had proved himself a man.

*Vir.* But had he died in the business, madam, how then?

*Vol.* Then his good report should have been my son: I therein would have found issue. Hear me profess sincerely: Had I a dozen sons, each in my love alike, and none less dear than thine and my good Marcius, I had rather had eleven die nobly for their country, than one voluptuously surfeit out of action.

Enter a GENTLEWOMAN.

*Gent.* Madam, the lady Valeria is come to visit you.

*Vir.* Beseech you, give me leave to retire myself.

*Vol.* Indeed, you shall not.

Methinks, I hear hither your husband's drum; See him pluck Aufidius down by the hair;

As children from a bear the Voices shunning him;

Methinks, I see him stamp thus, and call thus,—Come on, you cowards, you were got in fear,

Though you were born in Rome: His bloody brow

With his mail'd hand then wiping, forth he goes, Like to a harvest-man, that's task'd to mow

Or all, or lose his hire.

*Vir.* His bloody brow! O Jupiter, no blood!

*Vol.* Away, you fool! it more becomes a man, Than gilt his trophy: The breasts of Hecuba,

When she did suckle Hector, look'd not lovelier Than Hector's forehead, when it spit forth blood

At Grecian swords' contending.—Tell Valeria We are fit to bid her welcome. [*Exit GENT.*]

*Vir.* Heavens bless my lord from tell Aufidius!

*Vol.* He'll beat Aufidius' head below his kin: And tread upon his neck.

Re-enter GENTLEWOMAN, with VALERIA and her Usher.

*Val.* My ladies both, good day to you.

*Vol.* Sweet madam,—

*Vir.* I am glad to see your ladyship.

*Val.* How do you both? you are manifest house-keepers. What are you sewing here?

A fine spot, in good faith.—How does your little son?

*Vir.* I thank your ladyship; well, good madam.

*Vol.* He had rather see the swords, and hear a drum, than look upon his school-master.

*Val.* O' my word, the father's son: I'll swear, 'tis a very pretty boy. O' my troth, I looked upon him o' Wednesday half an hour together:

he has such a confirmed countenance. I saw him run after a gilded butterfly; and when he caught it, he let it go again; and after it again;

and over and over he comes, and up again; caught it again: or whether his fall enraged him, or how 'twas, he did so set his teeth,

and tear it: Oh! I warrant how he mammoek'd it!

*Vol.* One of his father's moods.

*Val.* Indeed he, 'tis a noble child.

*Vir.* A crack, madam.

*Val.* Come, lay aside your stichery; I must have you play the idle huswife with me this afternoon.

*Vir.* No, good madam; I will not out of duty

\* Demerits and merits had anciently the same meaning. † Let us also learn what are his powers, &c. ‡ Information of it. § To subdue.

\* Attracted universal attention. † The most honourable crown of all—given to him who saved the life of a citizen. ‡ Tore it. § Boy.

*Val.* Not out of doors!

*Vol.* She shall, she shall.

*Vir.* Indeed, no, by your patience: I will not over the threshold, till my lord return from the wars.

*Val.* Fle, you confine yourself most unreasonably: Come, you must go visit the good lady that lies in.

*Vir.* I will wish her speedy strength, and visit her with my prayers; but I cannot go thither.

*Vol.* Why, I pray you?

*Vir.* 'Tis not to save labour, nor that I want love.

*Val.* You would be another Penelope: yet, they say, all the yarn she spun in Ulysses' absence did but fill Ithaca full of moths. Come; I would your cambric were sensible as your finger, that you might leave pricking it for pity. Come, you shall go with us.

*Vir.* No, good madam, pardon me; indeed, I will not forth.

*Val.* In truth, la, go with me; and I'll tell you excellent news of your husband.

*Vir.* O good madam, there can be none yet.

*Val.* Verily, I do not jest with you; there came news from him last night.

*Vir.* Indeed, madam?

*Val.* In earnest, it's true; I heard a senator speak it. Thus it is:—The Volscres have an army forth; against whom Cominius the general is gone, with one part of our Roman power: your lord, and Titus Lartius, are set down before their city Corioli; they nothing doubt prevailing, and to make it brief wars. This is true, on mine honour; and so, I pray, go with us.

*Vir.* Give me excuse, good madam; I will obey you in every thing hereafter.

*Vol.* Let her alone, lady; as she is now, she will but disease our better mirth.

*Val.* In truth, I think she would:—Fare you well then.—Come, good sweet lady.—Pr'ythee, Virgilia, turn thy solemnness out o'door, and go along with us.

*Vir.* No, at a word, madam: indeed, I must not. I wish you much mirth.

*Val.* Well, then, farewell. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV.—Before Corioli.

*Enter with Drums, and Colours, MARCIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, Officers and Soldiers. To them a MESSENGER.*

*Mar.* Yonder comes news:—A wager, they have met.

*Lart.* My horse to yours, no.

*Mar.* 'Tis done.

*Lart.* Agreed.

*Mar.* Say, has our general met the enemy?

*Mess.* They lie in view; but have not spoke as yet.

*Lart.* So, the good horse is mine.

*Mar.* I'll buy him of you.

*Lart.* No, I'll not sell, nor give him: lend you him, I will,

For half a hundred years.—Summon the town.

*Mar.* How far off lie these armies?

*Mess.* within this mile and half.

*Mar.* Then shall we hear their drum, and they ours.

Now, Mars, I prythee make us quick in work: That we, with smoking swords, may march from hence, [blast

To help our fielded friends!—Come, blow thy

*They sound a parley.—Enter on the walls, some SENATORS, and others.*

Tullus Aufidius, is he within your walls?

1 *Sen.* No, nor a man that fears you less than he, That's lesser than a little. Hark, our drums

Are bringing forth our youth: We'll break our walls,

Rather than they shall pound us up: our gates, Which yet seem shut, we have but pinn'd with rushes;

They'll open of themselves. Hark you, far off! [Other Alarums.

There is Aufidius; list, what work he makes

Amongst your cloven army,

*Mar.* Oh! they are at it!

*Lart.* Their noise be our instruction.—Ladders ho!

*The Volscres enter and pass over the Stage.*

*Mar.* They fear us not, but issue forth their city. [fight

Now put your shields before your hearts, and With hearts more proof than shields.—Advance, brave Titus:

They do disdain us much beyond our thoughts, Which makes me sweat with wrath.—Come on, my fellows;

He that retires, I'll take him for a Volscer.

And he shall feel mine edge.

*Alarum, and exeunt ROMANS and VOLSCRES, fighting. The ROMANS are beaten back to their trenches. Re-enter MARCIUS.*

*Mar.* All the contagion of the south light on you!

You shames of Rome! you herd of—Boils and Plaster you o'er; that you may be abhorr'd

Further than seen, and one infect another Against the wind a mile! You souls of geese,

That bear the shapes of men, how have you run [hell!

From slaves that apes would beat? Pluto and All hurt behind; backs red, and faces pale

With flight and agued fear! Mend, and charge home,

Or, by the fires of heaven, I'll leave the foe, And make my wars on you: look to't! Come on!

If you'll stand fast, we'll beat them to their As they us to our trenches followed. [wives,

*Another Alarum. The VOLSCRES and ROMANS re-enter, and the fight is renewed. The VOLSCRES retire into Corioli, and MARCIUS follows them to the gates.*

So, now the gates are open:—Now prove good seconds:

'Tis for the followers fortune widens them, Not for the fliers: make me, and do the like.

[He enters the gates, and is shut in.

1 *Sol.* Fool-hardiness! not I.

2 *Sol.* Nor I.

3 *Sol.* See, they

Have shut him in. [Alarum continues.

All. To the pot, I warrant him.

*Enter TITUS LARTIUS.*

*Lart.* What is become of Marcus?

All. Slain, Sir, doubtless.

1 *Sol.* Following the fliers at the very heels, With them he enters: who, upon the sudden,

Clapp'd to their gates: he is himself alone, To answer all the city.

*Lart.* O noble fellow!

Who, sensible, outdares his senseless sword, And, when it bows, stands up! Thou art left,

Marcus:

A carbuncle entire, as big as thou art, Were not so rich a jewel. Thou wast a soldier

Even to Cato's wish, not fierce and terrible Only in strokes; but, with thy grim looks, and

The thunder-like percussion of thy sounds, Thou mad'st thine enemies shake, as if the world

Were feverous and did tremble.

*Re-enter MARCIUS bleeding, assaulted by the enemy.*

1 *Sol.* Look, Sir.

*Lart.* 'Tis Marcus:

Let's fetch him off, or make remain alike.

[They fight, and all enter the city.

• When it is bent.



## SCENE V.—Within the town.—A Street.

*Enter certain ROMANS, with spoils.*

1 Rom. This I will carry to Rome.

2 Rom. And I this.

3 Rom. A murrain on't! I took this for silver.  
[*Alarum continues still afar off.*]*Enter MARCIUS, and TITUS LARTIUS, with a trumpet.*

Mar. See here these movers, that do prize their hours  
At a crack'd drachin! Cushions, leaden spoons,  
Irons of doit, doublets that hangmen would  
Bury with those that wore them, these base slaves,  
Ere yet the fight be done, pack up!—Down with them.

And hark, what noise the general makes! To him!—

There is the man of my soul's hate, Aufidius,  
Piercing our Romans: Then, valiant Titus, take  
Convenient numbers to make good the city;  
Whilst I, with those that have the spirit, will  
To help Cominius. [*haste*]

Lart. Worthy Sir, thou bleed'st;  
Thy exercise hath been too violent for  
A second course of fight.

Mar. Sir, praise me not: [well]  
My work hath yet not warn'd me: Fare you  
The blood I drop is rather physical  
Than dangerous to me: To Aufidius thus  
I will appear, and fight.

Lart. Now the fair goddess, Fortune,  
Fall deep in love with thee: and her great  
charms

Misguide thy opposers' swords! Bold gentleman,  
Prosperity be thy page!

Mar. Thy friend no less  
Than those she placeth highest! So farewell.

Lart. Thou worstest Marcius!—  
[*Exit MARCIUS.*]

Go, sound thy trumpet in the market-place;  
Call thither all the officers of the town,  
Where they shall know our mind. Away.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VI.—Near the Camp of COMINIUS.

*Enter COMINIUS and forces, retreating.*

Com. Breathe you, my friends; well fought,  
we are come off

Like Romans, neither foolish in our stands,  
Nor cowardly in retire; believe me, Sirs,  
We shall be charg'd again. Whiles we have  
struck, [heard]

By interlins, and conveying gusts, we have  
Lead the charges of our friends:—The Roman gods  
Lead their successes as we wish our own;  
That both our powers, with smiling fronts en-  
counter.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

May give you thankful sacrifice!—Thy news

Mess. The citizens of Corioli have issued,  
And given to Lartius and to Marcina battle:  
I saw our party to their trenches driven,  
And then I came away.

Com. Though thou speak'st truth,  
Methinks, thou speak'st not well. How long is't  
since?

Mess. Above an hour, my lord.

Com. 'Tis not a mile; briefly we heard their  
drums:  
How could'st thou in a mile compass'd \* an hour,  
And bring thy news so late?

Mess. Spies of the Volscies  
Held me in chase, that I was forc'd to wheel  
Thence or four miles about; else had I, Sir,  
Half an hour since brought my report.

*Enter MARCIUS.*

Com. Who's yonder,  
That does appear as he were slain? O gods!

\* Exceed.

He has the stamp of Marcius; and I have  
Beforetime seen him thus.

Mar. Come I too late?

Com. The shepherd knows not thunder from  
a tabor,

More than I know the sound of Marcius' tongue  
From every meaner man's.

Mar. Come I too late?

Com. Ay, if you come not in the blood of  
But mantled in your own. [others,

Mar. Oh! let me clip you

In arms as sound, as when I woo'd; in heart  
As merry as when our nuptial day was done,  
And tapers burn'd to bedward.

Com. Flower of warriors,

How is't with Titus Lartius?

Mar. As with a man busied about decrees:  
Condemning some to death, and some to exile;  
Ransoming him, or pitying, threat'ning the other;  
Holding Corioli in the name of Rome,  
Even like a fawning greyhound in the leash,  
To let him slip at will.

Com. Where is that slave,  
Which told me they had beat you to your trenches?  
Where is he? Call him hither.

Mar. Let him alone,

He did inform the truth: But for our gentlemen,  
The common file, (a plague!—tribunes for them!)  
The mouse ne'er sham'd the cat, as they did  
budge

From rascals worse than they.

Com. But how prevail'd you?

Mar. Will the time serve to tell? I do not  
think—

Where is the enemy? Are you lords o'the field?  
If not, why cease you till you are so?

Com. Marcius,

We have at disadvantage fought, and did  
Retire, to win our purpose.

Mar. How lies their battle? Know you on  
which side

They have plac'd their men of trust?

Com. As I guess, Marcius,  
Their bands in the vaward\* are the Antiates,†  
Of their best trust: o'er them Aufidius,  
Their very heart of hope.

Mar. I do beseech you,

By all the battles wherein we have fought,  
By the blood we have shed together, by the vows  
We have made to endure friends, that you di-  
rectly

Set me against Aufidius and his Antiates:  
And that you not delay the present; but,  
Filling the air with swords advanced, and darts,  
We prove this very hour.

Com. Though I could wish

You were conducted to a gentle bath,  
And balms applied to you, yet dare I never  
Deny your asking: take your choice of those  
That best can aid your action.

Mar. Those are they

That most are willing:—If any such be here,  
(As it were sin to doubt,) that love this painting  
Wherein you see me smear'd; if any fear  
Lesser his person than an ill report;

If any think brave death outweighs bad life,  
And that his country's dearer than himself;  
Let him, alone, or so many, so minded,  
Wave thus [waving his hand] to express his  
disposition,

And follow Marcius,  
[*They all shout and wave their swords; take  
him up in their arms, and cast up their  
caps.*]

O me, alone! Make you a sword of me?  
If these shows be not outward, which of you  
But is four Volscies? None of you but is  
Able to bear against the great Aufidius  
A shield as hard as his. A certain number,  
Though thanks to all, must I select: the rest  
Shall bear the business in some other fight,  
As these will be obey'd. Please you to march,

\* Front. † Soldiers of Antiates.

And four shall quickly draw out my command,  
Which men are best inclin'd.

*Com.* March on, my fellows:  
Make good this ostentation, and you shall  
Divide in all with us. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VII.—The Gates of Corioli.

*TITUS LARTIUS, having set a guard upon Corioli, going with a drum and trumpet toward COMINIUS and CAIUS MARCIUS, enters with a LIEUTENANT, a party of soldiers, and a scout.*

*Lart.* So, let the ports \* be guarded: keep your duties,  
As I have set them down. If I do send, despatch  
Those centuries † to our aid: the rest will serve  
For a short holding: if we lose the field,  
We cannot keep the town.

*Lieu.* Fear not our care, Sir.

*Lart.* Hence, and shut your gates upon us.—  
Our guider, come; to the Roman camp conduct  
us. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE VIII.—A field of battle between the Roman and the Volscian Camps.

*Alarm. Enter MARCIUS and AUFIDIUS.*

*Mar.* I'll fight with none but thee; for I do  
hate thee  
Worse than a promise-breaker.

*Auf.* We hate alike:  
Not Afric owns a serpent, I abhor  
More than thy fame and envy: Fix thy foot.

*Mar.* Let the first budger; die the other's slave,  
And the gods doom him after!

*Auf.* If I fly, Marcus,  
Halloo me like a hare.

*Mar.* Within these three hours, Tullus,  
Alone I fought in your Corioli walls,  
And made what work I pleas'd: 'Tis not my  
blood,

Wherein thou seest me mask'd for thy revenge,  
Wrench up thy power to the highest.

*Auf.* Wert thou the Hector,  
That was the whip of your biagg'd progeny, §  
Thou should'st not 'scape me hence.—

*[They fight and certain voices come to the aid of AUFIDIUS.]*

Officious, and not valiant—you have sham'd me  
In your condemned seconds. ||

*[Exeunt fighting, driven in by MARCIUS.]*

SCENE IX.—The Roman Camp.

*Alarm. A retreat is sounded. Flourish. Enter at one side, COMINIUS and Romans; at the other side, MARCIUS, with his arm in a scarf, and other Romans.*

*Com.* If I should tell thee o'er this thy day's  
work,

Thou'lt not believe thy deeds: but I'll report it,  
Where senators shall mingle tears with smiles;  
Where great patricians shall attend, and shrug,  
I'th' end, admire; where ladies shall be frighted,  
And gladly quak'd, † hear more; where the dull  
Tribunes,

That, with the fusty plebeians, hate thine ho-  
nours, ‡

Shall say, against their hearts—*We thank thee  
Our Rome hath such a soldier!*—  
Yet can'st thou to a moriel of this feast,  
Having fully dined before.

*Enter TITUS LARTIUS, with his power, \*\* from the pursuit.*

*Lart.* O general,  
Here is the steed, we the caparison:  
Hast thou beheld—

*Mar.* Pray now, no more; my mother,  
Who has a charter †† to extol her blood,

When she does praise me, grieves me. I have  
done,

As you have done! that's what I can; induc'd  
As you have been, that's for my country;  
He, that has but effected his good will,  
Hath overtaken mine act.

*Com.* You shall not be  
The grave of your deserving: Rome must know  
The value of her own: 'twere a concealment  
Worse than a theft, no less than a traducement,  
To hide your doings; and to silence that,  
Which to the spire and top of praises vouch'd  
Would seem but modest: Therefore, I beseech  
(In sign of what you are, not to reward [you  
What you have done] before our army hear me.

*Mar.* I have some wounds upon me, and they  
smart  
To hear themselves remember'd.

*Com.* Should they not,  
Well might they fester 'gainst ingratitude,  
And tent themselves with death. Of all the  
horses,  
(Whereof we have ta'en good, and good store,)  
of all

The treasure, in this field achiev'd, and city,  
We render you the tenth; to be ta'en forth,  
Before the common distribution, at  
Your only choice.

*Mar.* I thank you, general;  
But cannot make my heart consent to take  
A bribe to pay my sword: I do refuse it;  
And stand upon my common part with those  
That have beheld the doing.

*[A long flourish. They all cry, Marcus! Marcus! cast up their caps and lances: COMINIUS and LARTIUS stand bare.]*

*Mar.* May these same instruments, which you  
prolance, †

Never sound more! When drums and trumpets  
I'th' field prove flatterers, let counts and cities  
be

Made all of false-fac'd soothing: When steel  
Soft as the parasite's silk, let him be made  
An overture for the wars! No more, I say;  
For that I have not wash'd my nose that bled,  
Or foil'd some debile \* wretch, (which, without  
note,

Here's many else have done,) you shout me forth  
In acclamations hyperbolical:  
As if I loved my little should be dieted  
In praises sauc'd with lies ‡

*Com.* Too modest are you;  
More cruel to your good report, than grateful  
To us that give you truly: by your patience,  
If 'gainst yourself you be incens'd, we'll put you  
(Like one that means his proper † harm,) in  
manacles, †

Then reason safely with you.—Therefore, be it  
As to us, to all the world, that Caius Marcius  
Wears this war's garland: in token of the which  
My noble steed, known to the camp, I give him,  
With all his trim belonging; and, from this  
time,

For what he did before Corioli, call him,  
With all the applause and clamour of the host,  
CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS.—  
Bear the addition nobly ever!

*[Flourish. Trumpets sound, and Drums.]*  
*All.* Caius Marcius Coriolanus!

*Cor.* I will go wash;  
And when my face is fair, you shall perceive  
Whether I blush, or no: Howbeit, I thank  
you.—

I mean to stride your steed; and, at all times,  
To undercrest; your good addition,  
To the fairness of my power.

*Com.* So, to our tent:  
Where, ere we do repose us, we will write  
To Rome of our success.—You, Titus Lartius,  
Must to Corioli back: send us to Rome  
The heat, § with whom we may articulate,  
For their own good, and ours.

\* Gates. † Companies of a hundred men. ‡ Ensign.  
§ The Romans sprang from Eneas. || In sending such  
help. ¶ Thrown into grateful trepidation. \*\* Forces.  
† Privilege.

\* Feeble. † Own. ‡ Add more by doing my best.  
§ Chief men. ¶ Enter into articles.

*Lart.* I shall, my lord.

*Cor.* The gods begin to mock me. I that now Refus'd most princely gifts, am bound to beg Of my lord general.

*Com.* Take it: 'tis yours.—What is't?

*Cor.* I sometime lay, here in Corioli, At a poor man's house; he us'd me kindly: He cried to me; I saw him prisoner; But then Aufidius was within my view, And wrath o'erwhelm'd my pity: I request you To give my poor host freedom.

*Com.* Oh! well begg'd! Were he the butcher of my son, he should Be free, as is the wind. Deliver him, Titus.

*Lart.* Marcius, his name?

*Cor.* By Jupiter, forgot:— I am weary; yea, my memory is tir'd.— Have we no wine here?

*Com.* Go to we our tent: The blood upon your visage dries: 'tis time It should be look'd to: come. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE X.—The Camp of the Volsces.

*A Flourish. Cornets. Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS, bloody with two or three SOLDIERS.*

*Auf.* The town is ta'en!

*1 Sol.* 'Twill be delivered back on good condition.

*Auf.* Condition!—

I would I were a Roman; for I cannot, Being a Volsc, be that I am.—Condition! What good condition can a treaty find I'the part that is at mercy? Five times, Marcius, I have fought with thee; so often hast thou beat me; [counter

And, would'st do so, I think, should we us-as often as we eat.—By the elements, If e'er again I meet him beard to beard, He is mine, or I am his: Mine emulation Hath not that honour in't, it had; for where \* I thought to crush him in an equal force, \* (True sword to sword,) I'll potch † at him some Or wrath, or craft, may get him. [way]

*1 Sol.* He's the devil.

*Auf.* Bolder, though not so subtle: My valour's poison'd,

With only suffering stain by him; for him Shall fly out of itself: nor sleep, nor sanctuary, Being naked, sick, nor fane, nor Capitol, The prayers of priests, nor times of sacrifice, Embarkements all of fury, shall lift up Their rotten privilege and custom 'gainst My hate to Marcius: where I find him, were it At home, upon my brother's guard, ‡ even there Against the hospitable canon, would I Wash my fierce hand in his heart. Go you to the city;

Learn how 'tis held; and what they are, that Be hostages for Rome. [must

*1 Sol.* Will not you go?

*Auf.* I am attended § at the cypress grove:

I pray you

('Tis south the city mills,) bring me word thither How the world goes; that to the pace of it I may spur on my journey.

*1 Sol.* I shall, Sir. [Exeunt.

#### ACT II.

##### SCENE I.—Rome.—A Public Place.

*Enter MENENIUS, SICINIUS, and BRUTUS.*

*Men.* The augurer tells me we shall have news to-night.

*Brut.* Good, or bad?

*Men.* Not according to the prayer of the people, for they love not Marcius.

*Sic.* Nature teaches beasts to know their friends.

*Men.* Pray you, who does the wolf love?

*Sic.* The lamb. \*

*Men.* Ay, to devour him; as the hungry plebeians would the noble Marcius.

*Brut.* He's a lamb indeed, that baes like a bear.

*Men.* He's a bear indeed, that lives like a lamb. You two are old men; tell me one thing that I shall ask you.

*Both Trib.* Well, Sir.

*Men.* In what enormity is Marcius poor, that you two have not in abundance?

*Brut.* He's poor in no one fault, but stored with all.

*Sic.* Especially, in pride.

*Brut.* And topping all others in boasting.

*Men.* This is strange now: Do you two know how you are censured here in the city, I mean of us o'the right hand file? Do you?

*Both Trib.* Why, how are we censured?

*Men.* Because you talk of pride now,—Will you not be angry?

*Both trib.* Well, well, Sir, well.

*Men.* Why 'tis no great matter; for a very little thief of occasion will rob you of a great deal of patience: give your disposition the reins, and be angry at your pleasures; at the least, if you take it as a pleasure to you, in being so. You blame Marcius for being proud?

*Brut.* We do it not alone, Sir.

*Men.* I know you can do very little alone; for your helps are many; or else your actions would grow wondrous single: your abilities are too infant-like, for doing much alone. You talk of pride: Oh! that you could turn your eyes towards the napes of your necks, and make but an interior survey of your good selves! Oh! that you could!

*Brut.* What then, Sir?

*Men.* Why, then you should discover a brace of unmeriting, proud, violent, testy magistrates, (alias, fools) as any in Rome.

*Sic.* Menenius, you are known well enough too.

*Men.* I am known to be a humorous patrician, and one that loves a cup of hot wine with not a drop of allaying Tybe \* in't; said to be something imperfect, in favouring the first complaint: hasty, and tender-like, upon too trivial motion: one that converses more with the buttock of the night, than with the forehead of the morning. What I think, I utter; and spend my malice in my breath: Meeting two such weak-men as you are, (I cannot call you Lycurguses) if the drink you gave me, touch my palate adversely, I make a crooked face at it. I cannot say, your worships have delivered the matter well, when I find the ass in compound with the major part of your syllables: and though I must be content to bear with those that say you are reverend grave men, yet they lie deadily that tell you have good faces. If you see this in the map of my microcosm, follows it, that I am known well enough too? What harm can your bisson; † conspectivities glean out of this character, if I be known well enough too.

*Brut.* Come, Sir, come, we know you well enough.

*Men.* You know neither me, yourselves, nor any thing. You are ambitious for poor knaves' caps and legs; § you wear out a good wholesome forenoon, in hearing a cause between an orange-wife and a fossot-seller; and then rejoin the controversy of three-pence to a second day of audience.—When you are hearing a matter between party and party, if you chance to be pinched with the cholic, you make faces like mummers; set up the bloody flag against all patience; and, roaring for a chamber-pot, dismiss the controversy bleeding, the more entangled by your hearing: all the peace you make in their cause is, calling both the parties knaves: You are a pair of strange ones.

*Brut.* Come, come, you are well understood to be a perfecter giber for the table, than a necessary benchman in the Capitol.

\* Whereas.  
protection.

† Strike.  
§ Waited for

‡ Under my brother's

Waters of the Tiber.

† Scates.  
Obsequence.

‡ Blind views.

*Men.* Our very priests must become mockers, if they shall encounter such ridiculous subjects as you are. When you speak best unto the purpose, it is not worth the wagging of your beards; and your beards deserve not so honourable a grave, as to stuff a butcher's cushion, or to be entombed in an ass's pack-saddle. Yet you must be saying, Marcius is proud; who, in a cheap estimation, is worth all your predecessors, since Deucalion; though, peradventure, some of the best of them were hereditary hangmen. Good even to your worship; more of your conversation would infect my brain, being the herdsman of the beastly plebeians: I will be bold to take my leave of you.

[*Brutus and Sicinius retire to the back of the Scene.*]

*Enter VOLUNNIA, VIRGILIA, and VALERIA, &c.*

How now, my as fair as noble ladies, (and the moon, were she earthly, no nobler) whither do you follow your eyes so fast?

*Vol.* Honourable Menenius, my boy Marcius approaches; for the love of Juno, let's go.

*Men.* Ha! Marcius coming home?

*Vol.* Ay, worthy Menenius; and with most prosperous approbation.

*Men.* Take my cap, Jupiter, an I thank thee:—Hoo! Marcius coming home?

*Two Ladies.* Nay, 'tis true.

*Vol.* Look, here's a letter from him; the state hath another; his wife another; and I think, there's one at home for you.

*Men.* I will make my very house reel to-night:—A letter for me?

*Vir.* Yes, certain, there's a letter for you; I saw it.

*Men.* A letter for me? It gives me an estate of seven years' health; in which time I will make a lip at the physician: the most sovereign prescription of Galen is but empiric, and, to this preservative, of no better report than a horse-drench. Is he not wounded? he was wont to come home wounded.

*Vir.* Oh! no, no, no.

*Vol.* Oh! he is wounded, I thank the gods for't.

*Men.* So do I to, if it be not too much:—Brings 'a victory in his pocket?—The wounds become him.

*Vol.* On's brows, Menenius: he comes the third time home with the oaken garland.

*Men.* Has he disciplined Aufidius soundly?

*Vol.* Titus Lartius writes, they fought together, but Aufidius got off.

*Men.* And 'twas time for him too, I'll warrant him that: an he had staid by him, I would not have been so fidious for all the chests in Corioli, and the gold that's in them. Is the senate possessed of this?

*Vol.* Good ladies, let's go:—Yes, yes, yes: the senate has letters from the general, wherein he gives my son the whole name of the war: he hath in this action outdone his former deeds doubly.

*Vol.* In troth, there's wondrous things spoke of him.

*Men.* Wondrous? ay, I warrant you, and not without his true purchasing.

*Vir.* The gods grant them true!

*Vol.* True? pow, wow.

*Men.* True? I'll be sworn they are true:—Where is he wounded?—God save your good worships! [*To the Tribunes, who come forward.*] Marcius is coming home: he has more cause to be proud.—Where is he wounded?

*Vol.* I'the shoulder, and i'the left arm: There will be large cicatrices to show the people, when he shall stand for his place. He received in the repulse of Tarquin, seven hurts i'the body.

*Men.* One in the neck, and two in the thigh,—there's nine that I know.

*Vol.* He had, before this last expedition, twenty-five wounds upon him.

*Men.* Now its twenty-seven: every gash was an enemy's grave: [*A Shout and Flourish*—Hark! the trumpets.

*Vol.* These are the ushers of Marcius: before him [*tears*]. He carries noise, and behind him he leaves Death, that dark spirit, in's nerry arm doth lie; Which being advanc'd, declines, and then men die.

*A Sennet. Trumpets sound. Enter COMINIUS and TITUS LARTIUS; between them CORIOLANUS, crowned with an oaken Garland; with Captains, Soldiers, and a Herald.*

*Her.* Know, Rome, that all alone Marcius did fight

Within Corioli' gates: where he hath won, With fame, a name to Caius Marcius; these In honour follows, Coriolanus: Welcome to Rome, renowned Coriolanus!

[*Flourish.*]

*All.* Welcome to Rome, renowned Coriolanus!

*Cor.* No more of this, it does offend my heart; Pray now, no more.

*Com.* Look, Sir, your mother,—

*Cor.* Oh!

You have I know, petition'd all the gods For my prosperity. [*Kneels.*]

*Vol.* Nay, my good soldier, up; My gentle Marcius, worthy Caius, and By deed-achieving honour newly nam'd, What is it? Coriolanus, must I call thee? But oh! thy wife.—

*Cor.* My gracious\* silence, hail! Would'st thou have laugh'd, had I come coffin'd home,

That weep'd to see me triumph? Ah, my dear, Such eyes the widows in Corioli wear, And mothers that lack sons.

*Men.* Now the gods crown thee!

*Cor.* And live you yet?—O my sweet lady, pardon. [*To VALERIA.*]

*Vol.* I know not where to turn:—O welcome home;

And welcome, general;—And you are welcome all.

*Men.* A hundred thousand welcomes: I could weep, [*come*].

And I could laugh: I am light and heavy: Well—A curse begin at very root of his heart, That is not glad to see thee!—You are three, That Rome should dote on: yet, by the faith of men;

We have some old crab-trees here at home, that will not

Be grafted to your relish. Yet welcome war—We call a nettle, but a nettle; and [*riors*]. The faults of fools, but folly.

*Com.* Ever right.

*Cor.* Menenius, ever, ever.

*Her.* Give way there, and go on.

*Cor.* Your hand, and yours:

[*To his Wife and Mother*]

Ere in our own house I do shade my head, The good patricians must be visited; From whom I have received not only greetings But with them change of honours.

*Vol.* I have lived

To see inherited my very wishes, And the buildings of my fancy: only there Is one thing wanting, which I doubt not but Our Rome will cast upon thee.

*Cor.* Know, good mother, I had rather be their servant in my way, Than sway with them in theirs.

*Com.* On to the Capitol.

[*Flourish. Coronets. Exeunt in state, as before. The Tribunes remain.*]

*Brutus.* All tongues speak of him, and the bleared sights

Are spectacled to see him: Your prattling nurse Into a rapture lets her baby cry,

\* Informed.

\* My beauteous silence, or, my silent grace.

† Fit

While she chats him : the kitchen malkin \* pins  
Her richest lockram † 'bout her reechy ‡ neck,  
Clambering the walls to eye him : stalls, bulks,  
windows,  
Are smother'd up, leads fill'd, and ridges hors'd  
With variable complexions ; all agreeing  
In earnestness to see him : seldy-shown fla-  
mens ||

Do press among the popular throngs, and puff  
To win a vulgar station : † our veil'd dames  
Commit the war of white and damask, in  
Their nicely-gawdied \*\* cheeks, to the wanton  
spoil

Of Phœbus' burning kisses : such a pother,  
As if that whatsoever god who leads him,  
Were slyly crept into his human powers,  
And gave him graceful posture.

*Sic.* On the sudden,

I warrant him consul.

*Bru.* Then our office may,  
During his power, go sleep.

*Sic.* He cannot temperately transport his ho-  
nours

From where he should begin, and end ; but will  
Lose those that he hath won.

*Bru.* In that there's comfort :

*Sic.* Doubt not the commoners, for whom we  
stand,

But they, upon their ancient malice, will  
Forget with the least cause these his new ho-  
nours ;

Which that he'll give them, make as little ques-  
As he is proud to do't.

*Bru.* I heard him swear,  
Were he to stand for consul, never would he  
Appear i' the market-place, nor on him put  
The napless † vesture of humility ;  
Nor, showing (as the manner is) his wounds  
To the people, beg their stinking breaths.

*Sic.* 'Tis right.

*Bru.* It was his word : Oh ! he would miss it,  
rather

Than carry it, but by the suit o'the gentry to  
And the desire of the nobles. [him ;

*Sic.* I wish no better,

Than have him hold that purpose, and to put it  
In execution.

*Bru.* 'Tis most like he will.

*Sic.* It shall be to him then, as our good  
A sure destruction. [wills ; ‡

*Bru.* So it must fall out

To him, or our authorities. For an end,  
We must suggest the people, in what hatred  
He still hath held them ; that, to his power, he  
would

Have made them mules, silenced their pleaders,  
Disproportioned their freedoms : holding them,  
In human action and capacity,

Of no more soul, nor fitness for the world,  
Than camels in their war ; who have their  
provaud §§

Only for bearing burdens, and sore blows  
For sinking under them.

*Sic.* This, as you say, suggested

At some time when his soaring insolence  
Shall teach the people, (which time shall not  
want,

If he be put upon't and that's as easy,  
As to set dogs on sheep,) will be his fire  
To kindle their dry stubble ; and their blaze  
Shall darken him for ever.

#### Enter a MESSENGER.

*Bru.* What's the matter ?

*Mess.* You are sent for to the Capitol. 'Tis  
thought,

That Marcus shall be consul : I have seen  
The dumb men throng to see him, and the  
blind

To hear him speak : The matrons † among their  
Ladies and maids their scarfs and handkerchiefs,

\* Majd. † A kind of cheap linen. ‡ Soiled with  
sweat and smoke. § Seldom. ¶ Priests. † Com-  
mon standing-places. \*\* Adorned. †† Thread-bare  
‡‡ As our safety demands. §§ Provender.

Upon him as he pass'd : the nobles bended,  
As to Jove's statue ; and the commons made  
A shower, and thunder, with their caps and  
I never saw the like. [shouts :

*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol ;

And carry with us ears and eyes for the time,  
But hearts for the event.

*Sic.* Have with you.

[Exeunt.

#### SCENE II.—The same.—The Capitol.

Enter two OFFICERS, to lay Cushions.

1 *Off.* Come, come, they are almost here :  
How many stand for consulships ?

2 *Off.* Three, they say : but 'tis thought of  
every one Coriolanus will carry it.

1 *Off.* That's a brave fellow ; but he's ven-  
geance proud, and loves not the common people.

2 *Off.* 'Faith, there have been many great  
men that have flatter'd the people, who ne'er  
loved them ; and there be many that they have  
loved, they know not wherefore : so that if they love  
they know not why, they hate upon no better a  
ground : Therefore, for Coriolanus neither to  
care whether they love or hate him, manifests  
the true knowledge he has in their disposition ;  
and, out of his noble carelessness, lets them  
plainly see't.

1 *Off.* If he did not care whether he had their  
love, or no, he wou'd indifferently 'twixt doing  
them neither good nor harm ; but he seeks their  
hate with greater devotion than they can render  
it him ; and leaves nothing undone, that may  
fully discover him their opposite. Now, to seem  
to affect the malice and displeasure of the peo-  
ple, is as bad as that which he dislikes, to flatter  
them for their love.

2 *Off.* He hath deserved worthily of his country :  
And his ascent is not by such easy degrees as  
those, who, having been supple and courteous to  
the people, honnetted, † without any further deed  
to heave them at all into their estimation and  
report : but he hath so planted his honours in  
their eyes, and his actions in their hearts, that  
for their tongues to be silent, and not confess  
so much, were a kind of ingratel'd injury : to  
report otherwise were a malice, that, going itself  
the lie, would pluck reproof and rebuke from  
every ear that heard it.

1 *Off.* No more of him ; he is a worthy man :  
Make way, they are coming.

A *Sennet.* Enter, with LACTORS, before them,  
COMINIUS the Consul, MENEIUS, CORIO-  
LANUS, many other SENATORS, SICINIUS,  
and BRUTUS. The SENATORS take their  
places ; the TRIBUNES take theirs also by  
themselves.

*Men.* Having determin'd of the Volscés, and  
To send for Titus Lartius, it remains,  
As the main point of this our after-meeting,  
To gratify his noble service, that  
Hath thus stood for his country : Therefore, please  
you,

Most reverend and grave elders, to desire  
The present consul, and last general  
In our well-found successes, to report  
A tale of that worthy work perform'd  
By Caius Marcus Coriolanus ; whom  
We meet here, both to thank, and to remember  
With honours like himself.

1 *Sen.* Speak, good Cominius :  
Leave nothing out for length, and make us think  
Rather our state's defective for requital,  
Than we to stretch it out. Masters o'the people  
We do request your kindest ears : and, after,  
Your loving motion toward the common body,  
To yield what passes here.

*Sic.* We are contented  
Upon a pleasing treaty ; and have hearts  
Incluable to honour and advance  
The theme of our assembly.

*Bru.* Which the rather

\* Adversary.

† Took off their caps

We shall be bless'd to do, if he remember  
A kinder value of the people, than  
He hath hereto priz'd them at.

*Men.* That's off, that's off,\*  
I would you rather had been silent: Please you  
To hear Cominius speak?

*Bru.* Most willingly:  
But yet my caution was more pertinent,  
Than the rebuke you give it.

*Men.* He loves your people;  
But tie him not to be their bedfellow.—  
Worthy Cominius, speak.—Nay, keep your place.  
[CORIOLANUS rises, and offers to go away.]

*1 Sen.* Sit, Coriolanus: never shame to hear  
What you have nobly done.

*Cor.* Your honours' pardon;  
I had rather have my wounds to heal again,  
Than hear say how I got them.

*Bru.* Sir, I hope  
My words disbenched you not.

*Cor.* No, Sir: yet oft,  
When blows have made me stay, I fled from words.  
You sooth'd not, therefore hurt not: But, your  
I love them as they weigh. people,

*Men.* Pray now, sit down.  
*Cor.* I had rather have one scratch my head  
i'th' sun,

When the alarum were struck,† than idly sit  
To hear my nothings monster'd.

[Exit CORIOLANUS.]  
*Men.* Masters o'the people,  
Your multiplying spawn how can he flatter,  
(That's thousand to one good one,) when you now  
see

He had rather venture all his limbs for honour,  
Than one of his ears to hear it?—Proceed, Cominius.

*Com.* I shall lack voice: the deeds of Corio-  
lanus

Should not be utter'd feebly.—It is held,  
That valour is the chiefest virtue, and  
Most dignifies the bearer:‡ if it be,  
The man I speak of cannot in the world  
Be singly counterpois'd. At sixteen years,  
When Tarquin made a head for Rome, he fought  
Beyond the mark of others; our then dictator,  
Whom with all praise I point at, saw him fight,  
When with his Amazonian chin‡ he drove  
The bristled‡ lips before him: he bestied  
An o'er press'd Roman, and i'the consul's view  
Slew three opposers: Tarquin's self he met  
And struck him on his knee: ¶ in that day's feats,  
When he might act the woman in the scene,\*\*  
He prov'd best man i'the field, and for his meed  
Was brow-bound with the oak. His pupil age  
Man-enter'd thus, he waxed like a sea;  
And, in the brunt of seventeen battles since,  
He lurch'd‡† all swords o'the gailand. For this  
Before and in Corioli, let me say, [last  
I cannot speak him home: He stopp'd the fliers;  
And, by his rare example, made the coward  
Turn terror into sport: as waves before  
A vessel under sail, so men obey'd, [stamp,  
And fell below his stem: his sword (death's)  
Where it did mark, it took; from face to foot  
He was a thing of blood, whose every motion ‡  
Was timed §§ with dying cries! alone he enter'd  
The mortal gate o'the city, which he painted  
With shunless destiny, aidless came off,  
And with a sudden re-enforcement struck  
Corioli, like a planet: now all's his:  
When by and by the din of war 'gan pierce  
His ready sense: then straight his double spirit  
Re-quick'n'd what in flesh was fatigued, ||  
And to the battle came he; where he did  
Run reeking o'er the lives of men, as if  
'Twere a perpetual spoil; and, till we call'd  
Both field and city ours, he never stood  
To ease his breast with pausing.

*Men.* Worthy man!

\* Nothing to the purpose. † Summoned to battle.  
‡ Fourscore. § Without a beard. ¶ Bearded.  
‡ Made him fall on his knee. \*\* Smooth faced  
enough to act a woman's part †† Won. ‡ Stroke.  
§§ Followed. || Wearied.

*1 Sen.* He cannot but with measure sit the  
Which we devise him. [honours

*Com.* Our spoils he kick'd at;  
And look'd upon things precious, as they were  
The common muck o'the world: he covets less  
Than misery \* itself would give; rewards  
His deeds with doing them; and is content  
To spend the time, to end it.

*Men.* He's right noble;  
Let him be call'd for.

*1 Sen.* Call for Coriolanus.  
*Off.* He doth appear.

*Re-enter CORIOLANUS.*

*Men.* The senate, Coriolanus, are well pleas'd  
To make thee consul.

*Cor.* I do owe them still  
My life and services.

*Men.* It then remains,  
That you do speak to the people.

*Cor.* I do beseech you,  
Let me o'erleap that custom; for I cannot  
Put on the gown, stand naked, and entreat them,  
For my wounds' sake, to give their suffrage:  
please you,

That I may pass this doing.

*Sic.* Sir, the people  
Must have their voices; neither will they bate  
One jot of ceremony.

*Men.* Put them not to't:—  
Pray you, go fit you to the custom: and  
Take to you, as your predecessors have,  
Your honour with your foam.

*Cor.* It is a part  
That I shall blush in acting, and might well  
Be taken from the people.

*Bru.* Mark you that!

*Cor.* To brag unto them,—Thus I did, and  
thus;—

Show them the unaching scars which I should hide,  
As if I had received them for the hire  
Of their breath only:—

\* *Men.* Do not stand upon't.—  
We recommend to you, tribunes of the people,  
Our purpose to them;—and to our noble consul  
Wish we all joy and honour.

*Sen.* To Coriolanus come all joy and honour!  
[Flourish. Then exeunt SENATORS.]

*Bru.* You see how he intends to use the people

*Sic.* May they perceive his intent! He that will  
require them,

As if he did contemn what he requested  
Should be in them to give.

*Bru.* Come, we'll inform them  
Of our proceedings here: on the market-place,  
I know they do attend us. [Exeunt,

SCENE III.—The same.—The Forum.

*Enter several CITIZENS.*

*1 Cit.* Once, if he do require our voices, we  
ought not to deny him.

*2 Cit.* We may, Sir, if we will.

*3 Cit.* We have power in ourselves to do it,  
but it is a power that we have no power to do:  
for if he show us his wounds, and tell us his  
deeds, we are to put our tongues into those wounds,  
and speak for them; so, if he tell us his noble  
deeds, we must also tell him our noble accep-  
tance of them. Ingratitude is monstrous: and  
for the multitude to be ingrateful were to make  
a monster of the multitude; of the which, we,  
being members, should bring ourselves to be mon-  
strous members.

*1 Cit.* And to make us no better thought of,  
a little help will serve: for once, when we stood  
up about the corn, he himself stuck not to call  
us the many-headed multitude.

*3 Cit.* We have been called so of many; not  
that our heads are some brown, some black, some  
auburn, some bald, but that our wits are so  
diversely coloured: and truly I think, if all our

• Avarice.

wits were to issue out of one scull, they would fly east, west, north, south; and their consent of one direct way should be at once to all the points o'the compass.

2 *Cit.* Think you so? Which way, do you judge my wit would fly?

3 *Cit.* Nay, your wit will not so soon out as another man's will; 'tis strongly wedged up in a block-head: but if it were at liberty, 'twould, sure south ward.

2 *Cit.* Why that way?

3 *Cit.* To lose itself in a fog; where, being three parts melted away with rotten dews, the fourth would return for conscience' sake, to help to get thee a wife.

2 *Cit.* You are never without your tricks:—You may, you may.

3 *Cit.* Are you all resolved to give your voices? But that's no matter, the greater part carries it. I say, if he would incline to the people, there was never a worthier man.

*Enter CORIOLANUS and MENENIUS.*

Here he comes, and in the gown of humility; mark his behaviour. We are not to stay altogether, but to come by him where he stands, by ones, by twos, and by threes. He's to make his requests by particulars: wherein every one of us has a single honour, in giving him our own voices with our own tongues: therefore follow me, and I'll direct you how you shall go by him.

*All.* Content, content.

[*Exeunt.*

*Men.* O Sir, you are not right: have you not known

The worthiest men have done it?

*Cor.* What must I say?

I pray, Sir,—Plague upon't! I cannot bring my tongue to such a pace:—Look, Sir;—

my wounds;—  
I got them in my country's service, when Some certain of your brethren roar'd, and ran From the noise of our own drums.

*Men.* O me, the gods!

You must not speak of that: you must desire them To think upon you.

*Cor.* Think upon me? Hang 'em!

I would they would forget me, like the virtues Which our divines lose by them.

*Men.* You'll mar all;

I'll leave you: Pray you, speak to them, I pray you, In wholesome manner.

[*Exit.*

*Enter two CITIZENS.*

*Cor.* Bid them wash their faces, And keep their teeth clean.—So, here comes a brace:

You know the cause, Sir, of my standing here.  
*Cit.* We do, Sir; tell us what hath brought you to't.

*Cor.* Mine own desert.

2 *Cit.* Your own desert!

*Cor.* Ay, not

Mine own desire.

1 *Cit.* How! not your own desire?

*Cor.* No, Sir:

'Twas never my desire yet, To trouble the poor with begging.

1 *Cit.* You must think, if we give you any We hope to gain by you. [Thus,

*Cor.* Well then, I pray, your price o'the consulship?

1 *Cit.* The price is, Sir, to ask it kindly.

*Cor.* Kindly?

Sir, I pray let me ha't: I have wounds to show you, Which shall be yours in private.—Your good voice, Sir;

What say you?

2 *Cit.* You shall have it, worthy Sir.

*Cor.* A match, Sir:—

There is in all two worthy voices begg'd—I have your alms; adieu.

1 *Cit.* But this is something odd.

2 *Cit.* An 'twere to give again,—But 'tis no matter. [*Exeunt two CITIZENS.*

*Enter two other CITIZENS.*

*Cor.* Pray you now, if it may stand with the tune of your voices, that I may be consul, I have here the customary gown.

3 *Cit.* You have deserved nobly of your country, and you have not deserved nobly.

*Cor.* Your enigma?

3 *Cit.* You have been a scourge to her enemies, you have been a rod to her friends; you have not, indeed, loved the common people.

*Cor.* You should account me the more virtuous, that I have not been common in my love. I will, Sir, flatter my sworn brother the people, to earn a dearer estimation of them; 'tis a condition they account gentle: and since the wisdom of their choice is rather to have my hat than my heart, I will practise the insinuating nod, and be off to them most counterfeitedly: that is, Sir, I will counterfeited the bewitchment of some popular man, and give it bountifully to the desirers. Therefore, beseech you, I may be consul.

4 *Cit.* We hope to find you our friend; and therefore give you our voices heartily.

3 *Cit.* You have received many wounds for your country.

*Cor.* I will not seal your knowledge with showing them. I will make much of your voices, and so trouble you no further.

Both *Cit.* The gods give you joy, Sir, heartily! [*Exeunt.*

*Cor.* Most sweet voices!—

Better it is to die, better to starve, Than crave the hate which first we do deserve. Why in this woolly gown should I stand here, To beg of Hob and Dick, that do appear, Their needless vouches: Custom calls me to't:—What custom wills, in all things should we do't; The dust on antique time would lie unswept, And mountainous error be too highly heap'd For truth to over-peer.—Rather than fool it so, Let the high office and the honour go. To one that would do thus.—I am halt through; The one part suffer'd, the other will I do.

*Enter three other CITIZENS.*

Here come more voices.—

Your voices; for your voices I have fought; Watch'd for your voices; for your voices, bear Of wounds two dozen odd; battles thrice six, I have seen and heard of; for your voices, have Done many things, some less, some more: your voices:

Indeed, I would be consul.

5 *Cit.* He has done nobly, and cannot go without any honest man's voice,

6 *Cit.* Therefore let him be consul: The gods give him joy, and make him good friend to the people!

*All.* Amen, Amen,—

God save thee, noble consul!

[*Exeunt CITIZENS.*

*Cor.* Worthy voices!

*Re-enter MENENIUS, with BRUTUS and SICIPIUS.*

*Men.* You have stood your limitation; and the tribunes

Endue you with the people's voice; Remains, That, in the official marks invested, you Anon do meet the senate.

*Cor.* Is this done?

*Sic.* The custom of request you have discharged:

The people do admit you; and are summon'd To meet anon, upon your approbation.

*Cor.* Where? at the senate-house?

*Sic.* There, Coriolanus.

*Cor.* May I then change these garments?

*Sic.* You may, Sir.

*Cor.* That I'll straight do; and, knowing myself again, Repair to the senate-house.

*Men.* I'll keep you company.—Will you along?

*Bru.* We stay here for the people.

*Sic.* Fare you well.

[*Exeunt CORIOL. and MENEN.*]

He has it now; and by his looks, methinks,  
Tis warm at his heart.

*Bru.* With a proud heart he wore  
His humble weeds: Will you dismiss the people?

*Re-enter CITIZENS.*

*Sic.* How now, my masters? have you chose  
this man?

1 *Cit.* He has our voices, Sir.

*Bru.* We pray the gods, he may deserve your  
loves.

2 *Cit.* Amen, Sir: To my poor unworthy no-  
He mock'd us, when he begg'd our voices. [twice,

3 *Cit.* Certainly,

He flouted us downright.

1 *Cit.* No, 'tis his kind of speech, he did not  
mock us.

2 *Cit.* Not one amongst us save yourself, but  
says

He us'd us scornfully: he should have show'd us  
his marks of merit, wounds receiv'd for his  
country.

*Sic.* Why, so he did, I am sure.

*Cit.* No; no man saw 'em. [*Several speak.*]

3 *Cit.* He said he had wounds, which he could  
show in private;

And with his hat, thus waving it in scorn,  
*I would be consul*, says he: *aged custom*,  
*But by your voices, will not so permit me*;  
*Your voices therefore*: When we granted that,  
Here was,—*I thank you for your voices*,—*thank*  
*you*,— [your voices,  
*Your most sweet voices*—*now you have left*  
*I have no further with you*.—Was not this  
mockery?

*Sic.* Why, either you were ignorant to see't?  
Or, seeing it, of such childish friendliness  
To yield your voices?

*Bru.* Could you not have told him,  
As you were lesson'd,—When he had no power,  
But was a petty servant to the state,  
He was your enemy: ever spake against  
Your liberties, and the charters that you bear  
I'th' body of the weal: and now, arriving  
A place of potency, and sway o'the state,  
If he should still malignantly remain  
Fast foe to the plebeian,\* your voices might  
Be curses to yourselves? You should have said,  
That, as his worthy deeds did claim no less  
Than what he stood for, so his gracious nature  
Would think upon you for your voices, and  
Translate his malice towards you into love,  
Standing your friendly lord.

*Sic.* Thus to have said,  
As you were fore-advise'd, had touch'd his spirit,  
And tried his inclination; from him pluck'd  
Either his gracious promise, which you might,  
As cause had call'd you up, have held him to;  
Or else it would have gall'd his surly nature,  
Which easily endures not article  
Tying him to ought: so, putting him to rage,  
You should have taken the advantage of his choler,  
And pass'd him unselected.

*Bru.* Did you perceive,  
He did solicit you in free contempt,  
When he did need your loves; and do you think,  
That his contempt shall not be bruising to you,  
When he hath power to crush? Why, had your  
bodies

No heart among you? Or had you tongues to cry  
Against the rectorship of judgement?

*Sic.* Have you,

Ere now, denied the asker? and, now again,  
On him, that did not ask, but mock, bestow  
Your su'd-for tongues?

3 *Cit.* He's not confirm'd, we may deny him  
yet.

2 *Cit.* And will deny him:  
I'll have five hundred voices of that sound.

\* Plebeians.

1 *Cit.* I twice five hundred and their friends  
to piece 'em.

*Bru.* Get you hence instantly; and tell those  
friends,—

They have chose a consul, that will from them take  
Their liberties; make them of no more voice  
Than dogs, that are as often beat for barking,  
As therefore kept to do so.

*Sic.* Let them assemble;

And, on a safer judgment, all revoke  
Your ignorant election: Enforce\* his pride,  
And his old hate unto you: besides, forget not  
With what contempt he wore the humble weed;  
How in his suit he scorn'd you: but your love,  
Thinking upon his services, took from you  
The apprehension of his present portance,†  
Which, gibingly, ungravelly he did fashion  
After the inveterate hate he bears you.

*Bru.* Lay

A fault on us, your tribunes; that we 'bom'd‡  
(No impediment between) but that you must  
Cast your election on him.

*Sic.* Say, you chose him

More after our commandment, than as guid'd  
By your own true affections: and that, your hands  
Pre-occupied with what you rather must do  
Than what you should, made you against the  
grain

To voice him consul: Lay the fault on us.

*Bru.* Ay, spare us not. Say, we read lectures  
to you,

How youngly he began to serve his country;  
How long continued: and what stocks he  
springs of,

The noble house o'the Marcians; from whence  
That Ancus Marcius, Numa's daughter's son,  
Who, after great Hostilius, here was king:  
Of the same house Publius and Quinctus were,  
That our best water brought by conduits hither;  
And Censorinus, darling of the people,  
And nobly nam'd so, being Censor twice,  
Was his great ancestor.

*Sic.* One thus descended,  
That hath beside well in his person wrought  
To be set high in place, we did commend  
To your remembrances: but you have found,  
Scaling‡ his present bearing with his past,  
That he's your fixed enemy, and revoke  
Your sudden approbation.

*Bru.* Say, you ne'er had don't,  
(Harp on that still,) but by our putting on: §  
And presently, when you have drawn your num-  
Repair to the Capitol. [over,

*Cit.* We will so: almost all [*Several speak.*]  
Repeat in their election. [*Exeunt CITIZENS.*]

*Bru.* Let them go on:

This mutiny were better put in hazard,  
Than stay, past doubt, for greater:  
If, as his nature is, he fall in rage  
With their refusal, both observe and answer  
The vantage|| of his anger.

*Sic.* To the Capitol:

Come; we'll be there before the stream o'the peo-  
And this shall seem, as partly 'tis, their own  
Which we have goaded¶ onward. [*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—The same.—A Street

*Cornets.* Enter CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, CO-  
MINIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, SENATORS, and PA-  
TRICIANS.

*Cor.* Tullus Aufidius then had made new  
head?

*Lart.* He had, my lord; and that it was, which  
caus'd

Our swifter composition.

*Cor.* So then the Volscies stand but as at first;  
Ready, when time shall prompt them, to make  
Upon us again. [loud

\* Object. † Carriage. ‡ Weighing. § Incitation.  
|| Advantage. ¶ Driven.



*Com.* They are worn, lord consul, so,  
That we shall hardly in our ages see  
Their banners wave again.

*Cor.* Saw you Andrius?

*Lart.* On safe-guard \* he came to me; and  
did curse

Against the voices, for they had so vilely  
Yielded the town: he is retir'd to Antium.

*Cor.* Spoke he of me?

*Lart.* He did, my lord.

*Cor.* How? what?

*Lart.* How often he had met you, sword to  
sword:

That, of all things upon the earth, he hated  
Your person most: that he would pawn his for-  
tunes

To hopeless restitution, so he might  
Be call'd your vanquisher.

*Mar.* At Antium lives he?

*Lart.* At Antium.

*Cor.* I wish I had a cause to seek him there,  
To oppose his hatred fully.—Welcome home.

[To LARTIUS.]

*Enter SICINIUS and BRUTUS.*

Behold! these are the tribunes of the people,  
The tongues o'the common mouth. I do despise  
them:

For they do prank \* them in authority,  
Against all noble sufferance.

*Sic.* Pass no further.

*Cor.* Ha! what is that?

*Bru.* It will be dangerous to  
Go on: no further.

*Cor.* What makes this change?

*Men.* The matter?

*Com.* Hath he not pass'd the nobles, and the  
commons?

*Bru.* Commius, no.

*Cor.* Have I had children's voices?

*1 Sen.* Tribunes, give way; he shall to the  
market-place.

*Bru.* The people are incens'd against him.

*Sic.* Stop,  
Or all will fall in broil.

*Cor.* Are these your herd?—

Must these have voices, that can yield them  
now,

And straight disclaim their tongues?—What are  
your offices?

You being their mouths, why rule you not their  
teeth?

Have you not set them on?

*Men.* Be calm, be calm.

*Cor.* It is a purpos'd thing, and grows by plot,  
To curb the will of the nobility:—

Suffer it, and live with such as cannot rule,  
Nor ever will be rul'd.

*Bru.* Call't not a plot:

The people cry, you mock'd them; and, of late,  
When corn was given them gratis, you repin'd;  
Scandal'd the supplicants for the people; call'd  
them

Time-pleasers, flatterers, foes to nobleness.

*Cor.* Why, this was known before.

*Bru.* Not to them all.

*Cor.* Have you inform'd them since?

*Bru.* How! I inform them!

*Cor.* You are like to do such business.

*Bru.* Not unlike,  
Each way to better yours.

*Cor.* Why then should I be consul? By you  
clouds,

Let me deserve so ill as you, and make me  
Your fellow-tribune.

*Sic.* You show too much of that,  
For which the people stir: If you will pass  
To where you are bound, you must inquire your  
way,

Which you are out of, with a gentler spirit;  
Or never be so noble as a consul,  
Nor yoke with him for tribune.

*Men.* Let's be calm.

\* With a guard.

† Flume, deck.

*Com.* The people are abus'd:—Set on.—This  
palt'ring \*

Becomes not Rome; nor has Coriolanus  
Deserv'd this so dishonour'd rub, laid falsely †  
I'the plain way of his merit.

*Cor.* Tell me of corn!

This was my speech, and I will speak't again;—  
*Men.* Not now, not now.

*1 Sen.* Not in this heat, Sir, now.

*Cor.* Now, as I live, I will.—My noble friends,  
I crave their pardons:—

For the mutable, rank-scented many, ‡ let them  
Regard me as I do not flatter, and  
Therein behold themselves: I say again,  
In soothing them, we nourish 'gainst our senate  
The cockle § of rebellion, insolence, sedition,  
Which we ourselves have plough'd for, sow'd and  
scatter'd,

By mingling them with us, the honour'd number;  
Who lack not virtue, no, nor power, but that  
Which they have given to beggars.

*Men.* Well, no more.

*1 Sen.* No more words, we beseech you.

*Cor.* How I no more?

As for my country I have shed my blood  
Not fearing outward force, so shall my lungs  
Coin words till their decay, against those mea-  
rels, ||

Which we disdain should tetter ¶ us, yet sought  
The very way to catch them.

*Bru.* You speak o'the people,  
As if you were a god to punish, not  
A man of their infirmity.

*Sic.* 'Twere well,

We let the people know't.

*Men.* What, what? his choler?

*Cor.* Choler!

Were I as patient as the midnight sleep,  
By Jove, 'twould be my mind.

*Sic.* It is a mind,  
That shall remain a poison where it is,  
Not poison any further.

*Cor.* Shall remain!—  
Hear you this Triton of the minnows? \*\* mark  
His absolute shall? (you

*Com.* 'Twas from the canon. ††

*Cor.* Shall!

O good but most unwise patricians, why,  
You grave, but reckless ‡ senators, have you thus  
Given Hydra here to choose an officer,  
That with his peremptory shall, being but  
The horn and noise o'the monsters, wants not  
spirit

To say, he'll turn your current in a ditch,  
And make your channel his? If he have power,  
Then veil your ignorance: if none, awake  
Your dangerous lenity. If you are learned,  
Be not as common fools; if you are not,  
Let them have cushions by you. You are ple-  
beians,

If they be senators: and they are no less,  
When both your voices blended, the greatest  
taste (trate;

Most palates theirs. They choose their magis-  
And such a one as he, who puts his shall,  
His popular shall, against a graver bench  
Than ever frown'd in Greece! By Jove himself,  
It makes the consuls base: and my soul akes  
To know, when two authorities are up,  
Neither supreme, how soon confusion  
May enter 'twixt the gap of both, and take  
The one by the other.

*Com.* Well—on to the market-place.

*Cor.* Whoever gave that counsel, to give forth  
The corn o'the storehouse gratis, as 'twas us'd  
Sometime in Greece,—

*Men.* Well, well, no more of that.

*Cor.* (Though there the people had more ab-  
solute power,)

I say, they nourish'd disobedience, fed  
The ruin of the state.

\* Shuffling. † Treacherously. ‡ Populace.  
§ Cockle is a weed which grows up with corn.  
|| Lepers. ¶ Scab. \*\* The smallest fish.  
†† According to law. ‡‡ Thoughtless.

*Bru.* Why, shall the people give  
One, that speaks thus, their voice?

*Cor.* I'll give my reasons,  
More worthy than their voices. They know,  
the corn

Was not our recompence; resting well assur'd  
They ne'er did service for't: Being press'd to  
the war,

Even when the navel of the state was touch'd,  
They would not thread \* the gates: this kind of  
service

Did not deserve corn gratis: being i'the war,  
Their mutinies and revolts, wherein they show'd  
Most valour, spoke not for them: The accusa-  
tion

Which they have often made against the senate,  
All cause unborn, could never be the native †  
Of our so frank donation. Well, what then?  
How shall this bosom multiplied digest  
The senate's courtesy? Let deeds express  
What's like to be their words:—*He did request*

*it;*  
*We are the greater poll, ‡ and in true fear*  
*They gave us our demands:*—Thus we debase  
The nature of our seats, and make the rabble  
Call our cares, fears: which will in time break  
ope

The locks o'the senate, and bring in the crows  
To peck the eagles.—  
*Men.* Come, enough.  
*Bru.* Enough, with over-measure.  
*Cor.* No, take more:

What may be sworn by, both divine and human,  
Seal what I end withal!—This double worship—  
Where one part does disdain with cause, the  
other [wisdom]

Insult without all reason; where gentry, title,  
Cannot conclude, but by the yea and no  
Of general ignorance,—It must omit  
Real necessities, and give way the while  
To unstable slighness: purpose so barr'd, it  
follows,

Nothing is done to purpose: Therefore, beseech  
you,—  
You that will be less fearful than discreet;  
That love the fundamental part of state,  
More than you doubt † the change of't; that  
prefer

A noble life before a long, and wish  
To jump ‡ a body with a dangerous physic  
That's sure of death without it,—at once pluck  
out

The multitudinous tongue, let them not lick  
The sweet which is their poison: your dishonour  
Mangles true judgment, and bereaves the state  
Of that integrity which should become it;  
Not having the power to do the good it would,  
For the ill which doth control it.

*Bru.* He has said enough.  
*Sic.* He has spoken like a traitor, and shall  
answer  
As traitors do.

*Cor.* Thou wretch! despite o'erwhelm thee!—  
What should the people do with these bald tri-  
bunes?

On whom depending, their obedience fails  
To the greater bench: In a rebellion,  
When what's not meet, but what must be, was  
law,

Then were they chosen: In a better hour,  
Let what is meet, be said it must be meet,  
And throw their power i'the dust.

*Bru.* Manifest treason.  
*Sic.* This a counsel? no.  
*Bru.* The Ædiles, hold!—Let him be appre-  
hended.

*Sic.* Go, call the people; [*Exit Brutus.*] in  
whose name, myself  
Attach thee, as a traitorous innovator,  
A foe to the public weal: Obey, I charge thee,  
And follow to thine answer.

*Cor.* Hence, old goat!

*Sen. & Pat.* We'll surely him.

*Com.* Aged Sir, hands off.

*Cor.* Hence, rotten thing, or I shall shake thy  
bones

Out of thy garments.

*Sic.* Help, ye citizens.

*Re-enter BRUTUS, with the ÆDILES, and a  
Rabble of CITIZENS.*

*Men.* On both sides more respect.

*Sic.* Here's he, that would

Take from you all your power.

*Bru.* Seize him, Ædiles.

*Cit.* Down with him, down with him!

[*Several speak*

2 *Sen.* Weapons, weapons, weapons!

[*They all bustle about CORIOLANUS.*

Tribunes, patricians, citizens!—what ho!

SCICINIUS, BRUTUS, CORIOLANUS, citizens!

*Cit.* Peace, peace, peace; stay, hold, peace!

*Men.* What is about to be—I am out of  
breath: [buncs

Confusion's near: I cannot speak:—You, tri-

To the people,—Coriolanus, patience;—

Speak, good SCICINIUS.

*Sic.* Hear me, people;—Peace.

*Cit.* Let's hear our tribune:—Peace. Speak,  
speak, speak.

*Sic.* You are at point to lose your liberties:

Marcus would have all from you; Marcus,

Whom late you have nam'd for consul.

*Men.* Fie, fie, fie!

This is the way to kindle, not to quench.

1 *Sen.* To unbuild the city, and to lay all flat.

*Sic.* What is the city, but the people?

*Cit.* True,

The people are the city.

*Bru.* By the consent of all, we were establish'd

The people's magistrates.

*Cit.* You so remain.

*Men.* And so are like to do.

*Cor.* That is the way to lay the city flat;

To bring the root to the foundation;

And bury all, which yet distinctly ranges

In heaps and piles of ruins.

*Sic.* This deserves death.

*Bru.* Or let us stand to our authority,

Or let us lose it:—We do here pronounce,

Upon the part o'the people, in whose power

We were elected theirs, Marcus is worthy

Of present death.

*Sic.* Therefore, lay hold of him;

Bear him to the rock Tarpeian,\* and from thence

Into destruction cast him.

*Bru.* Ædiles, seize him.

*Cit.* Yield, Marcus, yield.

*Men.* Hear me one word.

'Beseech you, tribunes, hear me but a word.

*Ædi.* Peace, peace.

*Men.* Be that you seem, truly your country's

friend,

And temperately proceed to what you would

Thus violently redress.

*Bru.* Sir, those cold ways,

That seem like prudent helps, are very poisonous

Where the disease is violent:—Lay hands upon

And bear him to the rock. [him,

*Cor.* No: I'll die here. [*Drawing his sword.*

There's some among you have beheld me fight-  
ing; [me,

Come, try upon yourselves what you have seen

*Men.* Down with that sword,—Tribunes, with-  
draw a while.

*Bru.* Lay hands upon him.

*Men.* Help, Marcus! help,

You that be noble; help him, young and old!

*Cit.* Down with him, down with him!

[*In this Mutiny, the TRIBUNES, the ÆDILES,*

*and the People are all beat in.*

*Men.* Go, get you to your house; be gone,

All will be naught else. [away,

2 *Sen.* Get you gone.

\* Pass through. † The natural parent, or, the cause.  
‡ Numbers. § Fear. ¶ To violently agitate.

\* From whence criminals were thrown, and dashed to  
pieces.

*Cor.* Stand fast ;  
We have as many friends as enemies.  
*Men.* Shall it be put to that ?  
*1 Sen.* The gods forbid !  
*1 Pri.* 'Thee, noble friend, home to thy house :  
Leave us to cure this cause.  
*Men.* For 'tis a sore upon us, [you]  
You cannot tent yourself : Be gone, 'beseech  
*Com.* Come, Sir, along with us.

*Cor.* I would they were barbarians, (as they  
are,  
Though in Rome litter'd,) not Romans, (as they  
are not,

Though calv'd i'the porch o'the Capitol,)—  
*Men.* Be gone ;  
Put not your worthy rage into your tongue :  
One time will owe another.

*Cor.* On fair ground,  
I could beat forty of them.

*Men.* I could myself  
Take up a brace of the best of them ; yea, the  
two tribunes.

*Com.* But now 'tis odds beyond arithmetic ;  
And manhood is call'd foolery, when it stands  
Against a killing fabric.—Will you hence,  
Before the tax \* return ? whose rage doth rend  
Like interrupted waters, and o'erbear  
What they are used to bear.

*Men.* Pray you, be gone :  
I'll try whether my old wit be in request  
With those that have but little : this must be  
With cloth of any colour. [part'd]

*Com.* Nay, come away.

[*Exeunt COR. COM. and others.*]

*1 Pat.* This man has marr'd his fortune.

*Men.* His nature is too noble for the world :  
He would not flatter Neptune for his trident,  
Or Jove for his power to thunder. His heart's  
his mouth ;

What his breast forges, that his tongue must  
And being angry, does forget that ever  
He heard the name of death. [1 noise within.  
Here's goodly work !

*2 Pat.* I would they were a-bed ?

*Men.* I would they were in Tyber !—What, the  
vengeance,  
Could he not speak them fair ?

*Re-enter BRUTUS and SICIPIUS, with the  
Rabble.*

*Sic.* Where's this viper,  
That would depopulate the city, and  
Be every man himself ?

*Men.* You worthy tribunes,—

*Sic.* He shall be thrown down the Tarpeian  
rock

With rictorous hands ; he hath resisted law,  
And therefore law shall scorn him further trial  
Than the severity of the public power,  
Which he so sets at nought.

*1 Cit.* He shall well know,  
The noble tribunes are the people's mouths,  
And we their hands.

*Cit.* He shall sure on't. †

[*Several speak together.*]

*Men.* Sir,—

*Sic.* Peace.

*Men.* Do not cry, havoc, ‡ where you should  
but hunt

With modest warrant.

*Sic.* Sir, how comes it, that you  
Have help to make this rescue ?

*Men.* Hear me speak :—  
As I do know the consul's worthiness,  
So can I name his faults :—

*Sic.* Consul !—what consul !

*Men.* The consul Coriolanus.

*Bru.* He a consul !

*Cit.* No, no, no, no, no.

*Men.* If, by the tribunes' leave, and yours,  
good people,

I may be heard, I'd crave a word or two ;

\* The lowest of the populace, tax, rag, and hobtail.  
† Be sure on't. ‡ The signal for slaughter.

The which shall turn you to no further harm,  
Than so much loss of time.

*Sic.* Speak briefly then ;

For we are peremptory to despatch  
This viperous traitor : to eject him hence,  
Were but one danger ; and, to keep him her  
Our certain death ; therefore it is decreed,  
He dies to-night.

*Men.* Now the good gods forbid

That our renowned Rome, whose gratitude  
Towards her deserved \* children is enroll'd  
In Jove's own book, like an unnatural dam  
Should now eat up her own !

*Sic.* He's a disease, that must be cut away.

*Men.* Oh ! he's a limb, that has but a disease  
Mortal, to cut it off, to cure it, easy.

What has he done to Rome, that's worthy death  
Killing our enemies ? The blood he hath lost,  
(Which, I dare vouch, is more than that he hath  
By many an ounce,) he dropp'd it for his country—  
And, what is left, to lose it by his country, [they]  
Were to us all, that do't, and suffer it,  
A brand to the end o'the world.

*Sic.* This is clean kill'd.

*Bru.* Merely † awry : when he did love his  
country,

It honour'd him.

*Men.* The service of the foot

Being once gangren'd, is not then respected

For what before it was ?

*Bru.* We'll hear no more —

Pursue him to his house, and pluck him thence ;  
Lest his infection, being of catching nature,  
Spread further.

*Men.* One word more, one word.

This tiger-footed rage, when it shall find  
The harm of uncur'd ‡ swiftness, with too late,  
The leaden pound to his heels. Proceed by pro-  
cess ;

Lest parties (as he is belov'd) break out,

And sack great Rome with Romans

*Bru.* If it were so,—

*Sic.* What do ye talk ?

Have we not had a taste of his obedience ?

Our shields smote † our sides resisted †—Come ;—  
*Men.* Consider this :—He has been bred to  
wars

Since he could draw a sword, and is ill school'd  
In boulding ‡ language, head and brain together  
He throws without distinction. Give me leave,  
I'll go to him, and undertake to bring him  
Where he shall answer, by a lawful form  
(In peace) to his utmost peril.

*1 Sen.* Noble tribunes,

It is the humane way : the other course  
Will prove too bloody ; and the end of it  
Unknown to the beginning.

*Sic.* Noble Menenius,

Be you then as the people's officer :

Masters, lay down your weapons.

*Bru.* Go not home.

*Sic.* Meet on the market-place :—We'll attend  
you there :

Where, if you bring not Marcius, we'll proceed  
In our first way.

*Men.* I'll bring him to you :—  
Let me desire your company. [To the SENATORS  
He must come,

Or what is worst will follow.

*1 Sen.* Pray you, let's to him. [*Exeunt*]

SCENE II.—A Room in CORIOLANUS'S  
House.

*Enter CORIOLANUS and PATRICIANS.*

*Cor.* Let them pull all about mine ears ; pre-  
sent me

Death on the wheel, or at wild horses' heels ;

Or pile ten hills on the Tarpeian rock,

That the precipitation might down stretch

Below the beam of sight, yet will I still

Be thus to them.

\* Deserving. † Quite awry. ‡ Absolutely  
‡ Inconsiderate haste. † Finely sifted.

*Enter VOLUMNIA.**I Pat.* You do the nobler.*Cor.* I muse,\* my mother

Does not approve me further, who was wont  
To call them woollen vassals, things created  
To buy and sell with groats; to show bare heads  
In congregations, to yawn, be still, and wonder,  
When one but of my ordinance † stood up  
To speak of peace or war. I talk of you:

*[To VOLUMNIA.]*

Why did you wish me milder? Would you have  
me

False to my nature? Rather say, I play

The man I am.

*Vol.* O Sir, Sir, Sir,

I would have had you put your power well on.  
Before you had worn it out.

*Cor.* Let go.*Vol.* You might have been enough the man you are,

With striving less to be so: Lesser had been  
The thwartings of your dispositions, if  
You had not show'd them how you were dispos'd  
Ere they lack'd power to cross you.

*Cor.* Let them hang.*Vol.* Ay, and burn too.*Enter MENENIUS and SENATORS.*

*Men.* Come, come, you have been too rough,  
something too rough;  
You must return, and mend it.

*I Sen.* There's no remedy;  
Unless, by not so doing, our good city  
Cleave in the midst, and perish.

*Vol.* Pray be counsel'd:

I have a heart as little apt as yours,  
But yet a brain, that leads my use of anger  
To better vantage.

*Men.* Well said, noble woman:  
Before he should thus stoop to the herd, but that  
The violent fit o' the time craves it as physic  
For the whole state, I would put mine armour on  
Which I can scarcely bear.

*Cor.* What must I do?*Men.* Return to the tribunus.*Cor.* Well,

What then? what then?

*Men.* Repent what you have spoke.

*Cor.* For them t—I cannot do it to the gods;  
Must I then do't to them?

*Vol.* You are too absolute;  
Though therein you can never be too noble,  
But when extremities speak. I have heard you  
say,

Honour and policy, like unsever'd friends  
I'the war do grow together: Grant that, and tell  
me,

In peace, what each of them by th'other lose,  
That they combine not there.

*Cor.* Tush, tush!*Men.* A good demand.

*Vol.* If it be honour, in your wars, to seem  
The same you are not, (which is for your best ends,  
That it shall hold companionship in peace  
With honour, as in war; since that to both  
It stands in like request?

*Cor.* Why force? you this?

*Vol.* Because that now it lies you on to speak  
To the people; not by our own instruction,  
Nor by the matter which your heart prompts you  
to,

But with such words that are but rotes in  
Your tongue, though but bastards, and syllables  
Of no allowance, to your bosom's truth.  
Now, this no more dishonours you at all,  
Than to take in § a town with gentle words,  
Which else would put you to your fortune, and  
The hazard of much blood.—

I would dissemble with my nature, where  
My fortunes, and my friends, at stake, requir'd  
I should do so in honour: I am, in this,  
Your wife, your son, these senators, the nobles;

And you will rather show our general lowts\*  
How you can frown, than spend a fawn upon  
them,  
For the inheritance of their loves, and safeguard  
Of what that want might ruin.

*Men.* Noble lady!—

Come, go with us; speak fair: you may save so,  
Not what is dangerous present, but the loss  
Of what is past.

*Vol.* I pr'ythee now, my son,

Go to them, with this bonnet in thy hand;  
And thus far having stretch'd it (here be with  
them,)

Thy knee bussing the stones, for in such busi-  
ness

Action is eloquence, and the eyes of the igno-  
More learned than the ears,) waving thy head,  
Which often, thus, correcting thy stout heart,

That humble, as the ripest mulberry,  
Now will show the handling: Or, say to them,  
Thou art their soldier, and, being bred in broils,  
Hast not the soft way which, thou dost confess,  
Were fit for thee to use, as they to claim,  
In asking their good loves; but thou wilt frame  
Thyself, forsooth, hereafter, so far  
As thou hast power and person.

*Men.* This but done,  
Even as she speaks, why, all their hearts were  
yours:

For they have pardons, being ask'd, as free  
As words to little purpose.

*Vol.* Pr'ythee now,  
Go, and be rul'd: although, I know, thou hadst  
rather

Follow thine enemy in a fiery gulf,  
Than flatter him in a bowel. Here is Cominius.

*Enter COMINIUS.*

*Com.* I have been i'the market-place: and,  
Sir, tis fit

You make strong party, or defend yourself  
By calmness, or by absence: all's in angel.

*Men.* Only fair speech.

*Com.* I think 'twill serve, if he  
Can thereto frame his spirit.

*Vol.* He must, and will:—

Pr'ythee, now, say you will, and go about it.

*Cor.* Must I go show them my unbarb'd  
sconce? † Must I,

With my base tongue, give to my noble heart  
A lie that it must bear? Well, I will do't:

Yet were there but this single plot to lose,  
This mould of Marcus, they to dust should  
grind it, [place:—

And throw it against the wind.—To the market-  
You have put me now to such a part, which never  
I shall discharge to the life.

*Com.* Come, come, we'll prompt you.

*Vol.* I pr'ythee now, sweet son, as thou hast  
said,

My praises made thee first a soldier, so  
To have my praise for this, perform a part  
Thou hast not done before.

*Cor.* Well, I must do't:

Away, my disposition, and possess me  
Some harlot's spirit! My throat of war be turn'd,  
Which quired with my drum, into a pipe  
Small as an eunuch, or the virgin voice  
That babies lulls asleep! The smiles of knaves  
Tent ‡ in my cheeks; and school-boy's tears take  
The glasses of my sight! A beggar's tongue [up  
Make motion through my lips; and my arm'd  
knees,

Which bow'd but in my stirrup, bend like his  
That hath receiv'd an alms!—I will not do't:  
Lest I surcease to honour mine own truth,  
And, by my body's action, teach my mind  
A most inherent baseness.

*Vol.* At thy choice then:

To beg of thee, it is my more dishonour,  
Than thou of them. Come all to ruin: let  
Thy mother rather feel thy pride, than fear  
Thy dangerous stoutness; for I mock at death

\* Wonder. † Rank. ‡ Urge. § Subdue.

\* Common clown. † Unshaven head. ‡ Dwell.  
C

With as big heart as thou. Do as thou list.  
Thy valiantness was mine, thou suck'st it from  
But owe \* thy pride thyself. [me ;

Cor. Pray, be content :  
Mother, I am going to the market-place ;  
Chide me no more. I'll mountebank their loves,  
Cog their hearts from them, and come home be-  
lov'd

Of all the trades in Rome. Look, I am going :  
Commend me to my wife. I'll return consul ;  
Or never trust to what my tongue can do  
I'll the way of flattery, further.

Fol. Do your will. [Exit.

Com. Away, the tribunes do attend you : arm  
yourself

To answer mildly ; for they are prepar'd  
With accusations, as I hear, more strong  
Than are upon you yet.

Cor. The word is mildly :—Pray you, let us  
Let them accuse me by invention, I [go :  
Will answer in mine honour.

Men. Ay, but mildly.

Cor. Well, mildly be it then : mildly.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—The same.—The Forum.

Enter SICINIUS and BRUTUS.

Bru. In this point charge him home—that he  
affects

Tyrannical power : if he evade us there,  
Enforce him with his envy † to the people ;  
And that the spoil, got on the Antiates,  
Was ne'er distributed.—

Enter an ÆDILE.

What, will he come !

Æd. He's coming.

Bru. How accompanied ?

Æd. With old Menenius, and those senators  
That always favour'd him.

Sic. Have you a catalogue  
Of all the voices that we have procur'd  
Set down by the poll ?

Æd. I have : 'tis ready, here.

Sic. Have you collected them by tribe ?

Æd. I have.

Sic. Assemble presently the people hither :  
And when they hear me say, *It shall be so*  
*I'll the right and strength o' the commons, be it*  
*either*

For death, for fine, or banishment, then let them,  
If I say fine, cry *fine* ; if death, cry *death* ;  
Insisting on the old prerogative  
And power i' the truth o' the cause.

Æd. I shall inform them.

Bru. And when such time they have begun to  
cry,

Let them not cease, but with a din confus'd

Enforce the present execution  
Of what we chance to sentence.

Æd. Very well.

Sic. Make them be strong, and ready for this  
hint,

When we shall hap to give't them.

Bru. Go about it.—[Exit ÆDILE.

Put him to choler straight : He hath been us'd  
Ever to conquer, and to have his worth  
Of contradiction : Being once chaf'd, he cannot  
Be rein'd again to temperance ; then he speaks  
What's in his heart ; and that is there, which looks  
With us to break his neck.

Enter CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, COMINIUS,  
SENATORS, and PATRICIANS.

Sic. Well, here he comes.

Men. Calmly, I do beseech you.

Cor. Ay, as an ostler, that for the poorest  
piece

Will bear the knave ‡ by the volume.—The ho-  
nour'd gods

Keep Rome in safety, and the chairs of justice

\* Own.                    † Accuse him of his barred.  
‡ Will bear being called a knave.

Supplied with worthy men ! plant love among us !  
Through our large temples with the shows of peace,  
And not our streets with war ?

I Sen. Amen, amen !

Men. A noble wish !

Re-enter ÆDILE, with CITIZENS.

Sic. Draw near, ye people.

Æd. List to your tribunes : audience : Peace,  
I say.

Cor. First, hear me speak.

Both Trs. Well, say.—Peace, ho.

Cor. Shall I be chaig'd no further than this  
present ?

Must all determine ?

Sic. I do demand here,

If you submit you to the people's voices—

Allow their officers, and are content

To suffer lawful censure for such faults

As shall be prov'd upon you ?

Cor. I am content.

Men. Lo, citizens, he says, he is content :

The wail-like service he has done, consider ;

Think on the wounds his body bears, which show

Like graves i' the holy churchyard.

Cor. Scratches with livers.

Scars to move laughter only

Men. Consider further,

That when he speaks not like a citizen,

You find him like a soldier : Do not take

His rougher accents for malicious sounds ;

But, as I say, such as become a soldier,

Rather than envy \* you.

Com. Well, well, no more.

Cor. What is the matter,

That being pass'd for consul with full voice,

I am so dishonour'd, that the very hour

You take it off again ?

Sic. Answer to us.

Cor. Say then : 'tis true, I ought so.

Sic. We charge you, that you have contriv'd to  
take

From Rome all season'd † office, and to win it

Yourself into a power tyrannical ;

For which, you are a traitor to the people.

Cor. How ! Traitor ?

Men. Nay, temperately : Your promise—

Cor. The tires i' the lowest hell told in the  
people !

Call me their traitor.—Thou injurious tribune !

Within thine eyes sat twenty thousand deaths,

In thy hands clutch'd ‡ as many millions, in

Thy lying tongue both numbers, I would say,

Thou best, unto thee, with voice as free

As I do pray the gods.

Sic. Mark you this, people ?

Cit. To the rock with him ! to the rock with  
him !

Sic. Peace.

We need not put new matter to his charge :

What you have seen him do, and heard him speak,

Beating your officers, cursing yourselves,

Opposing laws with strokes, and here defying

Those whose great power must try him ; even

So criminal, and in such capital kind, [tho',

Deserves the extremest death.

Bru. But since he hath

Serv'd well for Rome,—

Cor. What ! do you prate of service ?

Bru. I talk of that, that know it.

Cor. You ?

Men. Is this

The promise that you made your mother ?

Com. Know,

I pray you,—

Cor. I'll know no further :

Let them pronounce the steep Tarpeian death

Vagabond exile, slaying ; pent to linger

But with a grain a day ; I would not buy

Their mercy at the price of one fair word,

Nor check my courage for what they can give

To hav't with saying, Good morrow.

Sic. For that he has

\* Injure.    † Of long standing.    ‡ Griev'd.

(As much as in him lies) from time to time  
 Envied against the people, seeking means  
 To pluck away their power: as now at last  
 Given hostile strokes, and that not in the presence  
 Of dreaded justice, but on the ministers  
 That do distribute it!—In the name o' the people,  
 And in the power of us the tribunes, we,  
 Even from this instant, banish him our city;  
 In peril of precipitation  
 From off the rock Tarpeian, never more  
 To enter our Rome gates: P' the people's name,  
 say it shall be so.

*Cit.* It shall be so,  
 It shall be so; let him away: he's banish'd;  
 And so it shall be.

*Com.* Hear me, my masters, and my common  
 friends—

*Sic.* He's sentenc'd: no more hearing

*Com.* Let me speak:

I have been consul, and can show from Rome,  
 Her enemies' marks upon me. I do love  
 My country's good, with a respect more tender,  
 More holy, and profound, than mine own life,  
 My dear wife's estimate,† her womb's increase,  
 And treasure of my loins; then if I would  
 Speak that—

*Sic.* We know your drift: Speak what?

*Bru.* There's no more to be said, but he is  
 banish'd,

As enemy to the people and his country:  
 it shall be so.

*Cit.* It shall be so, it shall be so.

*Cor.* You common cry of curs! whose breath  
 I hate

As reek's o' the rotten fens, whose love I prize  
 As the dead carcasses of unburied men  
 That do corrupt my air, I banish you;  
 And here remain with your uncertainty!  
 Let every feeble rumour shake your hearts!  
 Your enemies, with nodding of their plumes,  
 Fan you into despair! Have the power still  
 To banish your defenders; till, at length,  
 Your ignorance (which finds not till it feels),  
 Making not reservation of yourselves,  
 (Still your own foes,) deliver you, as most  
 Abated‡ captives, to some nation  
 That won you without blows! Despising,  
 For you, the city, thus I turn my back:  
 There is no city elsewhere.

[*Exeunt CORIOLANUS, COMINIUS, MENENIUS,  
 SENATORS, and PATRICIANS.*]

*Ad.* The people's enemy is gone, is gone!

*Cit.* Our enemy's banish'd! he is gone! Hoo!  
 hoo!

[*The people shout and throw up their Caps.*]

*Sic.* Go, see him out at gates, and follow him!  
 As he hath follow'd you, with all despite:  
 Give him deserv'd vexation. Let a guard  
 Attend us through the city.

*Cit.* Come, come, let us see him out at gates;  
 come:—

The gods preserve our noble tribunes!—Come.  
 [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

**SCENE I.**—*The same.*—*Before a Gate of the City.*

*Enter CORIOLANUS, VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA,  
 MENENIUS, COMINIUS, and several young  
 PATRICIANS.*

*Cor.* Come, leave your tears; a brief farewell:  
 —the best †

With many heads butts me away.—Nay, mother,  
 Where is your ancient courage? you were us'd  
 To say, extremity was the tier of spirits;  
 That common chances common men could bear;  
 That, when the sea was calm, all boats alike  
 Show'd mastership in floating: fortune's blows,  
 When most struck home, being gentle wounded,  
 craves

A noble cunning: you were us'd to load me  
 With precepts, that would make invincible  
 The heart that cou'd not them.

*Vir.* O heavens! O heavens!

*Cor.* Nay, I pry thee, woman,—

*Vol.* Now the red pestilence strike all trades  
 in Rome,

And occupations perish!

*Cor.* What, what, what!

I shall be lov'd when I am lack'd. Nay, mother,  
 Resume that spirit, when you were wont to say,  
 If you had been the wife of Hercules,  
 Six of his labours you'd have done, and sav'd  
 Your husband so much sweat.—Cominius,  
 Droop not; adieu:—Farewell, my wife! my mo-  
 ther!

I'll do well yet.—Thou old and true Menenius,  
 Thy tears are saltier than a younger man's,  
 And venomous to thine eyes.—My sometime  
 general,

I have seen thee stern, and thou hast oft beheld  
 Heart-hard'ning spectacles: tell these sad women,  
 'Tis fond \* to wail inevitable strokes, [well,  
 As 'tis to laugh at them.—My mother, you wot  
 My hazards still have been your solace: and  
 Believe't not lightly, (though I go alone,  
 Like to a lonely dragon, that his fen  
 Makes fear'd) and talk'd of more than seen your

Will, or exceed the common, or be caught  
 With cautelous † baits and practice.

*Vol.* My first ‡ son,

Whither wilt thou go? Take good Cominius  
 With thee a while: Determine on some course,  
 More than a wild exposure § to each chance,  
 That starts † the way before thee.

*Cor.* O the gods!

*Com.* I'll follow thee a month, devise with thee  
 Where thou shalt rest, that thou may'st hear of  
 us,

And we of thee; so, if the time thrust forth  
 A cause for thy repeal, we shall not send  
 O'er the vast world, to seek a single man;  
 And lose advantage, which doth ever cool  
 † the absence of the needier.

*Cor.* Fare ye well:—

[*full*]

Thou hast years upon thee; and thou art too  
 Of the wars' sufferers, to go rove with one  
 That's yet unbuis'd: bring me but out at gate.—  
 Come, my sweet wife, my dearest mother, and  
 My friends of noble touch, ‡ when I am forth,  
 Bid me farewell, and smile. I pray you, come.  
 While I remain above the ground, you shall  
 Hear from me still; and never of me aught  
 But what is like me formerly.

*Men.* That's worthily

As any ear can hear.—Come, let's not weep.—  
 If I could shake off but one seven years  
 From these old arms and legs, by the good gods,  
 I'd with thee every foot.

*Cor.* Give me thy hand:—

Come.

[*Exeunt.*]

**SCENE II.**—*The same.*—*A Street near the Gate.*

*Enter SICINIUS, BRUTUS, and an EDILE.*

*Sic.* Bid them all home: he's gone, and we'll  
 no farther.—

The nobility are vex'd, who, we see, have sided  
 in his behalf.

*Bru.* Now we have shown our power,  
 Let us seem humbler after it is done,  
 Than when it was a doing.

*Sic.* Bid them home:

Say their great enemy is gone, and they  
 Stand in their ancient strength.

*Bru.* Dismiss them home. [*Exit EDILE.*]

*Enter VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, and MENENIUS.*  
 Here comes his mother.

*Sic.* Let's not meet her.

\* For. † Value. ‡ Pack. § Vapour.  
 † Subdued. ‡ The government of the people.

\* Foolish. † Insidious. ‡ Nobliest.  
 † Exposure. ‡ True metal.

*Bru.* Why?

*Sic.* They say, she's mad.

*Bru.* They have ta'en note of us :  
Keep on your way.

*Vol.* Oh ! you're well met : The hoarded plague  
o'the gods

Requite your love !

*Men.* Peace, peace : be not so loud.

*Vol.* If that I could for weeping, you should  
hear,—

Nay, and you shall hear some.—Will you be gone ?

[*To BRUTUS.*]

*Fir.* You shall stay too ; [*To SICIN.*] I would  
had the power

To say so to my husband.

*Sic.* Are you mankind ?

*Vol.* Ay, fool ; is that a shame ?—Note but this  
fool.—

Was not a man my father ? Hadst thou foxship \*

To banish him that struck more blows for Rome,  
Than thou hast spoken words ?

*Sic.* O blessed heavens !

*Vol.* More noble blows, than ever thou wise  
words ;

And for Rome's good.—I'll tell thee what ;—

Yet go :—

Nay but thou shalt stay too :—I would my son

Were in Arabia, and thy tribe before him,

His good sword in his hand.

*Sic.* What then ?

*Fir.* What then ?

He'd make an end of thy posterity.

*Vol.* Bastards, and all.—

Good man, the wounds that he does bear for  
Rome !

*Men.* Come, come, peace.

*Sic.* I would he had continu'd to his country

As he began ; and not unknit himself

The noble knot he made

*Bru.* I would he had.

*Vol.* I would he had ! 'Twas you incens'd the  
rabble :

Cats, that can judge as fitly of his worth,

As I can of those mysteries which heaven

will not have eath to know.

*Bru.* Pray, let us go.

*Vol.* Now pray, Sir, get you gone :

You have done a brave deed. Ere you go, hear  
this :

As far as doth the Capitol exceed

The meaneſt house in Rome, so far my son,

(This lady's husband here, this, do you see,) <sup>†</sup>

Whom you have banish'd, does exceed you all.

*Bru.* Well, well, we'll leave you.

*Sic.* Why stay we to be baited

With one that wants her wits ?

*Vol.* Take my prayers with you.—

I would the gods had nothing else to do,

[*Exeunt TRIBUNES.*]

But to confirm my curses ! Could I meet them

But once a day, it would unclug my heart

Of what lies heavy to't.

*Men.* You have told them home,

And by my troth, you have cause. You'll sup  
with me ?

*Vol.* Anger's my meat : I sup upon myself,

And so shall starve with feeding.—Come let's go :

Leave this faint puling, and lament as I do,

In anger, Juno-like. Come, come, come.

*Men.* Fie, fie, fie !

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.—A highway between Rome and Antium.

*Enter a ROMAN and a VOLSC, meeting.*

*Rom.* I know you well, Sir, and you know me :

your name, I think, is Adrian.

*Vol.* It is so, Sir : truly, I have forgot you.

*Rom.* I am a Roman ; and my services are,  
as you are, against them : Know you me yet ?

*Vol.* Nicanor ? No.

*Rom.* The same, Sir.

*Vol.* You had more beard, when I last saw

you ; but your favour \* is well appeared by your  
tongue. What's the news in Rome ? I have a  
note from the Volscian state, to find you out there :  
You have well saved me a day's journey.

*Rom.* There hath been in Rome strange insur-  
rection : the people against the senators, patri-  
cians, and nobles.

*Vol.* Hath been ! Is it ended then ? Our state  
thinks not so ; they are in a most warlike pre-  
paration, and hope to come upon them in the heat  
of their division.

*Rom.* The main blaze of it is past, but a small  
thing would make it flame again. For the nobles  
receive so to heart the banishment of that wor-  
thy Coriolanus, that they are in a ripe aptness

to take all power from the people, and to pluck  
from them their tribunes for ever. This lies  
glooming I can tell you, and is almost mature for  
the violent breaking out.

*Vol.* Coriolanus banished ?

*Rom.* Banished, Sir.

*Vol.* You will be welcome with this intelli-  
gence, Nicanor.

*Rom.* The day serves well for them now. I  
have heard it said, the fittest time to corrupt a  
man's wife, is when she's fallen out with her  
husband. Your noble Tullus Aufidius will ap-  
pear well in these wars, his great opposer, Co-  
riolanus, being now in no request of his coun-  
try.

*Vol.* He cannot choose. I am most fortunate  
thus accidentally to encounter you : You have  
ended my business, and I will merrily accom-  
pany you home.

*Rom.* I shall, between this and supper, tell  
you most strange things from Rome ; all tend-  
ing to the good of their adversaries. Have you  
an army ready, say you ?

*Vol.* A most royal one : the centurions and  
their charges distinctly billeted, already in the  
entertainment, † and to be on foot at an hour's  
warning.

*Rom.* I am joyful to hear of their readiness,  
and am the man, I think, that shall set them  
in present action. So, Sir, heartily well met, and  
most glad of your company.

*Vol.* You take my part from me, Sir ; I have  
the most cause to be glad of yours.

*Rom.* Well, let us go together. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV.—Antium.—Before AUFIDIUS'S House.

*Enter CORIOLANUS, in mean apparel, dis-  
guised and muffled.*

*Cor.* A goodly city is this Antium : City,  
'Tis I that made thy widows : many an heir  
Of these fair edifices 'fore my wars  
Have I heard groan, and drop : then know me not  
Least that thy wives with spits, and boys with stones,

*Enter a CITIZEN.*

In puny battle slay me.—Save you, Sir.

*Cit.* And you.

*Cor.* Direct me, if it be your will,  
Where great Aufidius lies : Is he in Antium ?  
*Cit.* He is, and feasts the nobles of the state  
At his house this night.

*Cor.* Which is his house, 'beseech you ?

*Cit.* This, here, before you.

*Cor.* Thank you, Sir : farewell.

[*Exit CITIZEN*]

O world ! thy slippery turns ! Friends now fast  
sworn,

Whose double bosoms seem to wear one heart,  
Whose hours, whose bed, whose meal, and exer-  
cise,

Are still together, who twin, as 'twere, in love

Unseparable, shall within this hour,

On a dissention of a doit, \* break out

To bitterest enmity : So, fellest foes,  
Whose passions and whose plots have broke their  
sleep

\* Mean enaning

\* Countenance.

† In pay.

‡ A small coin,

To take the one the other, by some chance,  
Some trick not worth an egg, shall grow dear  
friends,

And interjoin their issues. So with me:  
My birth-place hate I, and my love's upon  
This enemy town. I'll enter: if he slay me,  
He does fair justice, if he give me way  
I'll do his country service. [Exit.

SCENE V.—*The same.*—A hall in AUFIDIUS'S  
House.

*Music within. Enter a SERVANT.*

1 *Serv.* Wine, wine, wine! What service is  
here! I think our fellows are asleep. [Exit.

*Enter another SERVANT.*

2 *Serv.* Where's Cotus! my master calls for  
him. Cotus!

*Enter CORIOLANUS.*

*Cor.* A goodly house: The feast smells well:  
but I  
Appear not like a guest.

*Re-enter the first SERVANT.*

1 *Serv.* What would you have, friend? Whence  
are you? Here's no place for you: Pray, go to  
the door.

*Cor.* I have deserv'd no better entertainment  
in being Coriolanus.\*

*Re-enter second SERVANT.*

2 *Serv.* Whence are you, Sir? Has the porter  
his eyes in his head, that he gives entrance to  
such companions! Pray, get you out.

*Cor.* Away!

2 *Serv.* Away? Get you away.

*Cor.* Now thou art troublesome.

2 *Serv.* Art you so brave! I'll have you talked  
with anon.

*Enter a third SERVANT. The first meets him.*

3 *Serv.* What fellow's this?

1 *Serv.* A strange one as ever I looked on: I  
cannot get him out o'the house: Pr'ythee, call  
my master to him.

3 *Serv.* What have you to do here, fellow?  
Pray you, avoid the house.

*Cor.* Let me but stand: I will not hurt your  
hearth.

2 *Serv.* What are you?

*Cor.* A gentleman.

3 *Serv.* A marvellous poor one.

*Cor.* True, so I am.

3 *Serv.* Pray you, poor gentleman, take up  
some other station; here's no place for you; pray  
you, avoid: come.

*Cor.* Follow your function, go!

And batten† on cold bits. [Pushes him away.

3 *Serv.* What, will you not? Pr'ythee tell my  
master what a strange guest he has here. [Exit.

2 *Serv.* And I shall.

3 *Serv.* Where dwellest thou?

*Cor.* Under the canopy.

2 *Serv.* Under the canopy?

*Cor.* Ay.

3 *Serv.* Where's that?

*Cor.* 'Tis the city of kites and crows.

3 *Serv.* 'Tis the city of kites and crows?—What  
an ass it is!—Then thou dwellest with daws too?

*Cor.* No, I serve not thy master.

3 *Serv.* How, Sir! do you meddle with my  
master?

*Cor.* Ay; 'tis an honest service than to  
meddle with thy mistress:

Thou prat'st, and prat'st; serve with thy trencher,  
hence! [Beats him away.

*Enter AUFIDIUS and the second SERVANT.*

*Auf.* Where is this fellow?

2 *Serv.* Here, Sir: I'd have beaten him like a  
dog, but for disturbing the lords within.

*Auf.* Whence comest thou? what wouldst  
thou? Thy name?

Why speak'st not? Speak, man: What's thy  
name?

*Cor.* If, Tullius, [Unmuffling.  
Not yet thou know'st me, and seeing me, dost not  
Think me for the man I am, necessity  
Commands me name myself.

*Auf.* What is thy name? [SERVANTS retire.

*Cor.* A name unmusical to the Volscians' ears,  
And harsh in sound to thine.

*Auf.* Say, what's thy name?

Thou hast a grim appearance, and thy face  
Bears a command in't: though thy tackle's torn,  
Thou show'st a noble vessel. What's thy name?

*Cor.* Prepare thy brow to frown: Know'st  
thou me yet?

*Auf.* I know thee not:—Thy name?

*Cor.* My name is Caius Marcius, who hath  
done

To thee particularly, and to all the Volscies,  
Great hurt and mischief; thereto witness may  
My surname, Coriolanus: The painful service,  
The extreme dangers, and the drops of blood  
Shed for my thankless country, are requited  
But with that surname; a good memory,\*  
And witness of the malice and displeasure  
Which thou should'st bear me: only that name  
remains:

The cruelty and envy of the people,  
Permitted by our dastard nobles, who  
Have all forsook me, hath devour'd the rest;  
And suffer'd me by the voice of slaves to be  
Whoop'd out of Rome. Now, this extremity  
Hath brought me to thy hearth; not out of hope,  
Mistake me not, to save my life; for if  
I had fear'd death, of all the men i'the world  
I would have voided thee: but in mere spite,  
To be full quit of those my banishers,  
Stand I before thee here. Then if thou hast  
A heart of wreak† in thee, that will revenge  
Thine own particular wrongs, and stop those  
mainms;

Of shame seen through thy country, speed thee  
straight,  
And make my misery serve thy turn: so use it,  
That my revengeful services may prove  
As benefits to thee; for I will fight  
Against my canker'd country with the spleen  
Of all the under § fiends. But if so be  
Thou dar'st not this, and that to prove more for-  
tunes

Thou art ur'd, then, in a word, I also am  
Longer to live most weary, and present  
My throat to thee, and to thy ancient malice,  
Which, not to cut, would show thee but a fool;  
Since I have ever follow'd thee with hate,  
Drawn tuns of blood out of thy country's breast;  
And cannot live but to thy shame, unless  
It be to do thee service.

*Auf.* O Marcius, Marcius,  
Each word thou hast spoke hath weeded from  
my heart  
A root of ancient envy. If Jupiter [say,  
Should from yon cloud speak divine things, and  
'Tis true, I'd not believe them more than thee,  
All noble Marcius.—Oh! let me twine  
Mine arms about that body, where against  
My grained ash an hundred times hath broke,  
And scar'd the moon with splinters! Here I  
clip!

The anvil of my sword; and do contest,  
As hotly and as nobly with thy love,  
As ever in ambitious strength I did  
Contend against thy valour. Know thou first,  
I lov'd the maid I married; never man  
Sigh'd truer breath; but that I see thee here,  
Thou noble thing! more dances my rapt heart.  
Than when I first my wedded mistress saw.

\* Having derived that name from Corioli.  
† Follows. § Feed.

\* Memorial. † Resentment. § Wounds,  
§ Infernal. ¶ Embraze.



Bestride my threshold. Why, thou Mars! I tell thee  
We have a power on foot; and I had purpose  
Once more to hew thy target from thy brawn,\*  
Or lose mine arm for't: Thou hast beat me out †  
Twelve several times, and I have nightly since  
Dreamt of encounters 'twixt thyself and me;  
We have been down together in my sleep  
Unbuckling helms, flinging each other's throat,  
And wak'd half dead with nothing. Worthy

Marcus,

Had we no quarrel else to Rome, but that  
Thou art thence banish'd, we would muster all  
From twelve to seventy; ‡ and, pouring war  
Into the bowels of ungrateful Rome,  
Like a bold flood o'er-beat. O come, go in,  
And take our friendly senators by the hands;  
Who now are here, taking their leaves of me,  
Who am prepar'd against your territories,  
Though not for Rome itself.

Cor. You bless me, gods!

Auf. Therefore, most absolute Sir, if thou  
wilt have

The leading of thine own revenges, take  
The one half of my commission; and set down—  
As best thou art experienc'd, since thou know'st  
Thy country's strength and weakness,—thine  
own ways:

Whether to knock against the gates of Rome,  
Or rudely visit them in parts remote,  
To fright them, ere destroy. But come in:  
Let me commend thee first to those, that shall  
Say *gratias* to thy desires. A thousand welcomes!  
And more a friend than e'er an enemy;  
Yet, Marcus, that was much. Your hand! Most  
welcome!

[*Exit* CORIOLANUS and AUFIDIUS.]

1 Serv. [*Advancing.*] Here's a strange alteration!

2 Serv. By my hand, I had thought to have  
struck him with a cudgel: and yet my mind  
gave me, his clothes made a false report of him.

1 Serv. What an arm he has! He turned me  
about with his finger and his thumb, as one would  
set up a top.

2 Serv. Nay, I knew by his face that there  
was something in him: He had, Sir, a kind of  
face, methought,—I cannot tell how to term it.

1 Serv. He had so: looking as it were,—  
'Would I were hanged, but I thought there was  
more in him than I could think.

2 Serv. So did I, I'll be sworn: He is simply  
the rarest man i'the world.

1 Serv. I think he is: but a greater soldier  
than he, you wot's one.

2 Serv. Who? my master?

Serv. Nay, it's no matter for that.

Serv. Worth six of him.

1 Serv. Nay, not so neither; but I take him  
to be the greater soldier.

2 Serv. 'Faith, look you, one cannot tell how  
to say that: for the defence of a town, our ge-  
neral is excellent.

1 Serv. Ay, and for an assault too.

*Re-enter third SERVANT.*

3 Serv. O slaves, I can tell you news: news,  
you rascals.

1. 2. Serv. What, what, what? let's partake.

3 Serv. I would not be a Roman, of all na-  
tions: I had as lieve be a condemned man.

1. 2. Serv. Wherefore? wherefore?

3 Serv. Why, he's he that was wont to  
thwack our general,—Caius Marcius.

1 Serv. Why do you say thwack our general?

3 Serv. I do not say, thwack our general; but  
he was always good enough for him.

2 Serv. Come, we are fellows and friends:  
he was ever too hard for him; I have heard him  
say so himself.

1 Serv. He was too hard for him directly, to  
say the truth on't: before Coriolanus, he scotched  
him and notched him like a carbonado.¶

\* Arm. † Full. ‡ Years of age. § Know.  
¶ Meat cut across to be broiled.

2 Serv. An he had been cannibally given he  
might have broiled and eaten him too.

1 Serv. But more of thy news?

3 Serv. Why, he is so made on here within,  
as if he were son and heir to Mars: set at up-  
per end o'the table: no question asked him by  
any of the senators, but they stand bald before  
him: Our general himself makes a mistress of  
him; sanctifies himself with his hand, and turns  
up the white o'the eye to his discourse. But the  
bottom of the news is, our general is cut i'the  
middle, and but one half of what he was yester-  
day; for the other was half, by the entreaty, and  
grant of the whole table. He'll go, he says, and  
sowle\* the porter of Rome gates by the ears:  
He will mow down all before him, and leave his  
passage polled.†

2 Serv. And he's as like to do't as any man  
I can imagine.

3 Serv. Do't? he will do't: For, look you,  
Sir, he has as many friends as enemies: which  
friends, Sir, (as it were,) durst not (look you,  
Sir,) show themselves (as we term it,) his friends,  
whilst he's in directitude.

1 Serv. Directitude? what's that?

3 Serv. But when they shall see, Sir, his crest  
up again, and the man in blood; ‡ they will out  
of their burrows, like cones after rain, and revel  
all with him.

1 Serv. But when goes this forward?

3 Serv. To-morrow; to-day; presently. You  
shall have the drum struck up this afternoon:  
'tis, as it were, a parcel § of their feast, and to be  
executed ere they wipe their lips.

2 Serv. Why then we shall have a stirring  
world again. This peace is nothing, but to  
rust iron, increase tailors, and breed ballad-  
makers.

1 Serv. Let me have war, say I: it exceeds  
peace, as far as day does night; it's spritely,  
waking, audible, and full of vent. ¶ Peace is  
a very apoplexy, lethargy: muffled, † deaf, sleepy,  
insensible: a getter of more bastard children,  
than war's a destroyer of men.

2 Serv. 'Tis so: and as wars, in some sort,  
may be said to be a ravisher, so it cannot be de-  
nied but peace is a great maker of cuckolds.

1 Serv. Ay, and it makes men hate one an-  
other.

3 Serv. Reason; because they then less need  
one another. The wars for my money. I hope  
to see Romans as cheap as Volscians. They are  
rising, they are rising.

All. In, in, in, in.

[*Exit* *cont.*]

SCENE VI.—Rome.—A Public place.

*Enter* SICINIUS and BRUTUS.

Sic. We hear not of him, neither need we fear  
him:

His remedies are tame i'the present peace  
And quietness o'the people, which before  
Were in wild hurry. Here do we make his friends  
Blush, that the world goes well: who rather had,  
Though they themselves did suffer by't, behold  
Dissentious numbers pestering streets, than see  
Our tradesmen singing in their shops, and going  
About their functions friendly.

*Enter* MENENIUS.

Bru. We stood to't in good time. Is this  
Menenius?

Sic. 'Tis he, 'tis he: Oh! he is grown most  
Of late.—Hail, Sir! [*Kind*]

Men. Hail to you both?

Sic. Your Coriolanus, Sir, is not much miss'd,  
But with his friends; the common-wealth doth  
stand;

And so would do, were he more angry at it.

Men. All's well; and might have been much  
better, if  
He could have temporiz'd.

\* Pall. † Cut clear. ‡ Vigour. § Part.  
¶ Rumour. ¶ Softened.

*Sic.* Where is he, hear you?

*Men.* Nay, I hear nothing; his mother and his wife  
Hear nothing from him.

*Enter Three or Four CITIZENS.*

*Cit.* The gods preserve you both!

*Sic.* Good-e'en, our neighbours.

*Bru.* Good-e'en to you all, good-e'en to you all.

*1 Cit.* Ourselves, our wives, and children, on our knees.

Are bound to pray for you both

*Sic.* Live, and thrive!

*Bru.* Farewell, kind neighbours: we wish'd Coriolanus

Had lov'd you as we did.

*Cit.* Now the gods keep you!

*Both Tri.* Farewell, farewell,

[*Exit CITIZENS.*]

*Sic.* This is a happier and more comely time, Than when these fellows ran about the streets, Crying Confusion.

*Bru.* Caius Marcius was

A worthy officer i'the war; but insolent, O'ercome with pride, ambitious past all thinking, Self-loving.—

*Sic.* And affecting one sole throne, Without assistance.\*

*Men.* I think not so.

*Sic.* We should by this, to all our lamentation, If he had gone forth consul, found it so.

*Bru.* The gods have well prevented it, and Sit safe and still without him. [Rome]

*Enter ÆDILE.*

*Æd.* Worthy tribunes, There is a slave whom we have put in prison, Reports,—the Volscs with two several powers Are entered in the Roman territories; And with the deepest malice of the war Destroy what lies before them.

*Men.* 'Tis Aufidius, Who, hearing of our Marcius' banishment, Thrusts forth his horns again into the world: Which were inshell'd, when Marcius stood † for Rome,

And durst not once peep out.

*Sic.* Come, what talk you Of Marcius?

*Bru.* Go see this rumourer whipp'd. It cannot be,

The Volscs dare break with us.

*Men.* Cannot be!

We have record, that very well it can; And three examples of the like have been Within my age. But reason † with the fellow, Before you punish him, where he heard this: Lest you should chance to whip your information, And beat the messenger who bids beware Of what is to be dreaded.

*Sic.* Tell me not:

I know this cannot be.

*Bru.* Not possible.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* The nobles, in great earnestness, are going

All to the senate house: some news is come, That turns ‡ their countenances

*Sic.* 'Tis this slave:—  
Go whip him †fore the people's eyes:—his raise  
Nothing but his report! ug!

*Mess.* Yes, worthy Sir,  
The slave's report is seconded; and more,  
More fearful is deliver'd.

*Sic.* What more fearful?

*Mess.* It is spoke freely out of many mouths, (How probable, I do not know) that Marcius, Join'd with Aufidius, leads a power 'gainst Rome; And vows revenge as spacious, as between The young'st and oldest thing.

*Sic.* This is most like!y!

*Bru.* Rais'd only, that the weaker sort may Good Marcius home again. [wish]

*Sic.* The very trick on't.

*Men.* This is unlikely:

He and Aufidius can no more atone,\* Than violentest contrariety.

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* You are sent for to the senate: A fearful army, led by Caius Marcius, Associated with Aufidius, rages Upon our territories; and have already, O'erborne their way, consum'd with fire, and What lay before them. [took]

*Enter COMINIUS.*

*Com.* Oh! you have made good work!

*Men.* What news? what news?

*Com.* You have help to ravish your own daughters, and

To melt the city leads upon your pates;

To see your wives dishonour'd to your noses—

*Men.* What's the news? what's the news?

*Com.* Your temples burn'd in their cement; and

Your franchises, whereon you stood confin'd Into an augre's bore.†

*Men.* Pray now, your news?—

You have made fair work, I fear me:—Pray, your news?

If Marcius should be join'd with Volscians,—

*Com.* If!

He is their god; he leads them like a thing Made by some other deity than nature, That shapes man better; and they follow him. Against us brats, with no less confidence Than boys pursuing summer butterflies, Or butchers killing flies.

*Men.* You have made good work, You and your apron men; you that stood so much Upon the voice of occupation, ‡ and The breath of garlic-eaters?

*Com.* He will shake

Your Rome about your ears.

*Men.* As Hercules

Did shake down mellow fruit: You have made fair work!

*Bru.* But is this true, Sir?

*Com.* Ay; and you'll look pale Before you find it other. All the regions Do smilingly revolt; † and, who resist, Are only mock'd for vaiaunt ignorance, And perish constant fools. Who isn't can blame him?

Your enemies, and his, find something in him.

*Men.* We are all undone, unless

The noble man have mercy.

*Com.* Who shall ask it?

The tribunes cannot do't for shame: the people Deserve such pity of him, as the wolf Does of the shepherds: for his best friends, if they

Should say, *Be good to Rome, they charg'd him* As those should do that had deserv'd his hate, And therein show'd like enemies.

*Men.* 'Tis true:

If he were putting to my house the brand

That should consume it, I have not the face

To say, *'Beseech you, cease.*—You have made fair hands,

You and your crafts! you have crafted fair!

*Com.* You have brought

A trembling upon Rome, such as was never So incapable of help.

*Tri.* Say not, we brought it.

*Men.* How! Was it we? We lov'd him; but like beasts,

And cowardly nobles, gave way to your clusters Who did hoot him out o' the city.

*Com.* But, I fear

\* Suffrage. † Stood up in its defence. ‡ Talk † Changes.

\* Unite. † A small round hole; an augre's a carpenter's tool. ‡ Mechanics. § Revolt with pleasure.

They'll roar him in again. Tullus Aufidius, The second name of men, obeys his points As if he were his officer :—Desperation Is all the policy, strength, and defence, That Rome can make against them.

*Enter a troop of CITIZENS.*

*Men.* Here comes the clusters.— And is Aufidius with him?—You are they That made the air unwholesome, when you cast Your stinking, greasy caps, in hooting at Coriolanus' exile. Now he's coming; And not a hair upon a soldier's head, Which will not prove a whip; as many coxcombs As you threw caps up, will he tumble down, And pay you for your voices. 'Tis no matter: If he could burn us all into one coal, We have deserv'd it.

*Cit.* 'Faith, we hear fearful news.

*1 Cit.* For mine own part.

When I said, banish him, I said, 'twas pity.

*2 Cit.* And so did I.

*3 Cit.* And so did I; and, to say the truth, so did very many of us: That we did, we did for the best: and though we willingly consented to his banishment, yet it was against our will.

*Com.* You are goodly things, you voices!

*Men.* You have made

Good work, you and your cry! \*—Shall us to the Capitol?

*Com.* Oh I ay; what else?

[*Exeunt Com. and Men.*]

*Sic.* Go, masters, get you home, be not dismay'd:

These are a side that would be glad to have This true, which they so seem to fear. Go home, And show no sign of fear.

*1 Cit.* The gods be good to us! Come, masters, let's home. I ever said we were i'th' wrong, when we banish'd him.

*2 Cit.* So did we all. But come, let's home.

[*Exeunt CITIZENS.*]

*Bru.* I do not like this news.

*Sic.* Nor I.

*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol:—'Would half my wealth

Would buy this of a lie!

*Sic.* Pray, let us go. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE VII.—A Camp, at a small distance from Rome.*

*Enter Aufidius and his LIEUTENANT.*

*Auf.* Do they still fly to the Roman?

*Lieu.* I do not know what witchcraft's in him; but

Your soldiers use him as the grace 'fore meat, Their talk at table, and their thanks at end; And you are darken'd in this action, Sir, Even by your own.

*Auf.* I cannot help it now;

Unless, by using means, I lame the foot Of our design. He bears himself more prounder Even to my person, than I thought he would, When first I did embrace him: Yet his nature In that's no changeling; and I must excuse What cannot be amended.

*Lieu.* Yet I wish, Sir, (I mean for your particular,) you had not Join'd in commission with him; but either Had borne the action of yourself, or else To him had left it solely.

*Auf.* I understand thee well; and be thou sure, When he shall come to his account, he knows not

What I can urge against him. Although it seems, And so he thinks, and is no less apparent To the vulgar eye, that he bears all things fairly, And shews good husbandry for the Volscian state; Fights dragon-like, and does achieve as soon As draw his sword; yet he hath left undone That which shall break his neck, or hazard mine, Whene'er we come to our account.

\* Pack, alluding to a pack of hounds.

*Lieu.* Sir, I beseech you, think you he'll carry Rome?

*Auf.* All places yield to him ere he sits down: And the nobility of Rome are his: The senators and patricians love him too: The tribunes are no soldiers; and their people Will be as rash in the repeal, as hasty To expel him thence. I think he'll be to Rome, As is the osprey \* to the fish, who takes it By sovereignty of nature. First he was A noble servant to them; but he could not Carry his honours even: whether 'twas pride, Which out of daily fortune ever taints The happy man; whether defect of judgement, To fail in the disposing of those chances Which he was lord of; or whether nature, Not to be other than one thing, not moving From the casque + to the cushion; ‡ but commanding peace

Even with the same austerity and garb As he controll'd the war; but, one of these (As he hath spices of them all, not all,) For I dare so far free him,) made him fear'd, So hated, and so banish'd: But he has a merit, To choke it in the utterance. So our virtues Lie in the interpretation of the time: And power, unto itself most commendable, Hath not a tomb so evident as a chair To extol what it hath done.

One fire drives out one fire; one nail, one nail; Rights by rights fowler, strengths by strengths do fail.

Come, let's away. When, Camus, Rome is thine, Thou art poor'st of all; then shortly art thou none.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—Rome.—A Public Place.

*Enter MENENIUS, COMINIUS, SICINIUS, BRUTUS and others.*

*Men.* No, I'll not go: you hear what he hath said,

Which was sometime his general; who lov'd him In the most dear particular. He call'd me, father: But what o'that? Go, you that banish'd him, A mile before his tent fall down, and kneel The way into his mercy: Nay, if he coy'd; To hear Cominius speak, I'll keep at home.

*Com.* He will not seem to know me.

*Men.* Do you hear?

*Com.* Yet one time he did call me by my name:

I urg'd our old acquaintance, and the drops That we have bled together. Coriolanus He would not answer to: forbad all names: He was a kind of nothing, titleless, Till he had forg'd himself a name i'th' fire Of burning Rome.

*Men.* Why, so; you have made good work: A pair of tribunes that have rack'd ¶ for Rome To make coals cheap: A noble memory! \*\*

*Com.* I minded him how royal 'twas to pardon When it was less expected: He replied, It was a bare petition of a state To one whom they had punish'd.

*Men.* Very well:

Could he say less?

*Com.* I offer'd to awaken his regard For his private friends: His answer to me was, He could not stay to pick them in a pile Of noisome, musty chaff: He said 'twas folly, For one poor grain or two, to leave unburnt, And still to noise the offence.

*Men.* For one poor grain Or two? I am one of those; his mother, wife, His child, and this brave fellow too, we are the grains:

\* An eagle that preys on fish.

† The chair of civil authority.

‡ Their full extent.

¶ Harassed by exactions.

† Helmet.

‡ Not all in

Condescended unwillingly.

\*\* Memorial.

You are the musty chaff; and you are smelt  
Above the moon: We must be burnt for you.

*Sic.* Nay, pray, be patient: If you refuse your  
aid

In this so never-heeded help, yet do not  
Upbraid us with our distress. But sure, if you  
Would be your country's pleader, your good  
tongue,

More than the instant arm we can make,  
Might stop our countryman.

*Men.* No; I'll not meddle.

*Sic.* I pray you, go to him.

*Men.* What should I do?

*Bru.* Only make trial what your love can do  
For Rome towards Marcius.

*Men.* Well, and say that Marcius  
Return me, as Cominius is return'd,  
Unheard; what then?—

But as a discontented friend, grief-shot  
With his unkindness? Say't be so?

*Sic.* Yet your good will

Must have that thanks from Rome, after the mea-  
sure,

As you intended well.

*Men.* I'll undertake it:

I think he'll hear me. Yet to bite his lip,  
And hum at good Cominius, much unhearts me.  
He was not taken well; he had not din'd:

The veins unfill'd, the blood is cold, and then  
We pout upon the morning, are unapt

To give or to forgive; but when we have stuff'd  
These pipes and these conveyances of our blood  
With wine and feeding, we have suppler souls  
Than in our priest-like fasts: therefore I'll watch  
him

Till he be dieted to my request,

And then I'll set upon him.

*Bru.* You know the very road into his kindness,  
And cannot lose your way.

*Men.* Good faith, I'll prove him,  
Speed how it will. I shall ere long have know-  
ledge

Of my success.

*Exit.*

*Com.* He'll never hear him.

*Sic.* Not?

*Com.* I tell you; he does sit in gold his eye  
Red as 'twould burn Rome; and his injury  
The jailer to his pity. I kneel'd before him;

'Twas very faintly he said, *Rise*; dismiss'd me  
Thus, with his speechless hand. What he would do,

He sent in writing after me; what he could not,  
Bound with an oath, to yield to his conditions:

So that all hope is vain,

Unless his noble mother, and his wife,

Who, as I hear, mean to solicit him

For mercy to his country—Therefore, let's hence,  
And with our fair entreaties haste them on.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—An advanced Post of the Vol-  
scian Camp, before Rome. The GUARD at  
their Stations.

*Enter to them, MENENIUS.*

1 G. Stay: Whence are you?

2 G. Stand, and go back.

*Men.* You guard like men; 'tis well: But, by  
your leave,

I am an officer of state, and come  
To speak with Coriolanus.

1 G. From whence?

*Men.* From Rome.

1 G. You may not pass, you must return: our  
general

Will no more hear from thence.

2 G. You'll see your Rome embrac'd with fire,  
before

You'll speak with Coriolanus.

*Men.* Good my friends,

If you have heard your general talk of Rome,  
And of his friends there, it is lots \* to blanks,  
My name hath touch'd your ears: it is Mene-  
nius.

\* Prizes.

1 G. Be it so; go back: the virtue of your name  
Is not here passable.

*Men.* I tell thee, fellow,

Thy general is my lover: \* I have been  
The book of his good acts, whence men have read  
His fame unparallel'd, haply, amplified;  
For I have ever veried† my friends,  
(Of whom he's chief,) with all the size that  
verity†

Would without lapsing suffer: nay, sometimes,  
Like to a bowl upon a subtle‡ ground,  
I have tumbled past the throw; and, in his  
praise,

Have almost stamp'd the leasing: || Therefore  
fellow,

I must have leave to pass.

1 G. 'Faith, Sir, if you had told as many lies  
in his behalf, as you have uttered words in your  
own, you should not pass here: no, though it  
were as virtuous to lie, as to live chastely. There-  
fore, go back.

*Men.* Pr'ythee, fellow, remember my name  
is Menenius, always factionary on the party of  
your general.

2 G. Howsoever you have been his liar, (as  
you say you have) I am one that, telling true  
under him, must say, you cannot pass. There-  
fore, go back.

*Men.* Has he dined, can'st thou tell? for I  
would not speak with him til after dinner.

1 G. You are a Roman, are you?

*Men.* I am as thy general is.

1 G. Then you should hate Rome, as he does.

Can you, when you have pushed out your gates  
the very defender of them, and, in a violent po-  
pular ignorance, given your enemy your shield,  
think to front his revenges with the easy groans  
of old women, the virginal palms of your daugh-  
ters, or with the palsied intercession of such a  
decayed dotant¶ as you seem to be? Can you  
think to blow out the intended fire your city is  
ready to flame in, with such weak breath as this? No,  
you are deceived; therefore back to Rome,  
and prepare for your execution: you are con-  
demned, our general has sworn you out of re-  
prieve and pardon.

*Men.* Sirrah, if thy captain knew I were here,  
he would use me with estimation.

2 G. Come, my captain knows you not.

*Men.* I mean, thy general.

1 G. My general cares not for you. Back, I  
say, go, lest I let forth your half pint of blood;  
—back,—that's the utmost of your having: —  
back.

*Men.* Nay, but fellow, fellow, —

*Enter CORIOLANUS AND AUFIDIUS.*

*Cor.* What's the matter?

*Men.* Now your companion, \*\* I'll say an er-  
rand for you; you shall know now that I am in  
estimation; you shall perceive that a Jack††  
guardant cannot office me from my son Corio-  
lanus: guess, but by my entertainment with him,  
if thou stand'st not i'the state of hanging, or of  
some death more long in spectatorship, and  
crueller in suffering: behold now presently, and  
swoon for what's to come upon thee.—The glo-  
rious gods sit in hourly synd about thy particu-  
lar prosperity, and love thee no worse than thy  
old father Menenius does! O my son! my son!  
thou art preparing fire for us; look thee, here's  
water to quench it. I was hardly moved to come  
to thee; but being assured none but myself  
could move thee, I have been blown out of your  
gates with sighs: and conjure thee to pardon  
Rome, and thy petitionary countrymen. The  
good gods assuage thy wrath, and turn the dregs  
of it upon this varlet here; this, who, like a  
block, hath denied my access to thee.

*Cor.* Away!

*Men.* How! Away?

\* Friend. † Proved to. ‡ Truth.  
§ Decentful. ¶ Lye. ¶ Dotard.  
\*\* Fellow. †† Jack in office.

*Cor.* Wife, mother, child, I know not. My affairs  
Are servanted to others : Though I owe  
My revenge properly, my remission lies  
In Volscian breasts. That we have been fa-  
miliar,  
Ingrate forgetfulness shall poison, rather  
Than pity note how much.—Therefore, be gone.  
Mine ears against your suits are stronger, than  
Your gates against my force. Yet, for \* I lov'd  
thee,  
Take this along : I witt, it for thy sake,

[*Gives a Letter.*  
And would have sent it. Another word, Me-  
nenius,

I will not hear thee speak.—This man, Aufidius,  
Was my beloved in Rome : yet thou behold'st—  
*Auf.* You keep a constant temper.

[*Exeunt CORIOLANUS and AUFIDIUS.*

1 *G.* Now, Sir, is your name Menenius ?  
2 *G.* 'Tis a spell, you see, of much power :  
You know the way home again.

1 *G.* Do you hear how we are shent † for keep-  
ing greatness back ?

2 *G.* What cause, do you think, I have to  
swoon ?

*Men.* I neither care for the world, nor your  
general : for such things as you, I can scarce  
think there's any, you are so slight. He that  
hath a will to die by himself, fears it not from  
another. Let your general do his worst. For  
you, be that you are long ; and your misery  
increase with your age ! I say to you, as I was  
said to, Away ! [*Exit.*

1 *G.* A noble fellow, I warrant him.

2 *G.* The worthy fellow is our general : He is  
the roc., the oak not to be wind-shaken.

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III.—*The Tent of CORIOLANUS.*

*Enter CORIOLANUS, AUFIDIUS, and others.*

*Cor.* We will before the walls of Rome to-  
morrow

Set down our host.—My partner in this action,  
You must report to the Volscian lords, how  
I have borne this business. [plainly ;

*Auf.* Only their ends

You have respected : stopp'd your ears against  
The general suit of Rome ; never admitted  
A private whisper, no, not with such friends  
That thought them sure of you.

*Cor.* This last old man,  
Whom with a crack'd heart I have sent to Rome,  
Lov'd me above the measure of a father :  
Nay, godded me, indeed. Their latest refuge  
Was to send him : for whose old love I have  
(Though I show'd sourly to him,) once more  
offer'd

The first conditions, which they did refuse,  
And cannot now accept, to grace him only,  
That thought he could do more ; a very little  
I have yielded too : Fresh embassies, and suits,  
Nor from the state, nor private friends, hereafter  
Will I lend ear to.—Ha ! what shout is this ?

[*Shout within.*

Shall I be tempted to infringe my vow  
In the same time 'tis made ? I will not.—

*Enter in mourning habits, VIRGILIA, VO-  
LUMNIA, leading young MARCIUS, VALERIA,  
and ATTENDANTS.*

My wife comes foremost ; then the honour'd  
mould

Wherein this trunk was fram'd, and in her hand  
The grand-child to her blood. But, out, affection !  
All bond and privilege of nature, break !

Let it be virtuous to be obstinate.—

What is that curt'sy worth ? or those doves' eyes,  
Which can make gods forsworn ?—I melt, and  
am not

Of stronger earth than others.—My mother bows ;  
As if Olympus to a molehill should

In supplication nod : and my young boy  
Hath an aspect of intercession, which  
Great nature cries, *Deny not.*—Let the Volscies  
Plough Rome and harrow Italy ; I'll never  
Be such a gossling to obey instinct ; but stand  
As if a man were author of himself,  
And knew no other kin.

*Vir.* My lord and husband !

*Cor.* These eyes are not the same I wore in  
Rome.

*Vir.* The sorrow, that delivers us thus chang'd  
Makes you think so.

*Cor.* Like a dull actor now,  
I have forgot my part, and I am out,  
Even to a full disgrace. Best of my flesh,  
Forgive my tyranny ; but do not say,  
For that, *Forgive our Romans.*—O! a kiss  
Long as my exile, sweet as my revenge !  
Now by the jealous queen \* of heaven, that kiss  
I carried from thee, dear ; and my true lip  
Hath virgin'd it e'er since.—You gods ! I pray,  
And the most noble mother of the world  
Leave us unalited : Sink, my knee, t' the earth ;

[*Kneels.*

Of thy deep duty more impression show  
Than that of common sons.

*Vol.* Oh ! stand up bless'd !  
Whilst, with no softer cushion than the flint  
I kneel before thee ; and unproperly  
Show duty, as mistaken all the while  
Between the child and parent. [*Kneels*

*Cor.* What is this ?

Your knees to me † to your corrected son  
Then let the pebbles on the hungry beach  
Fillip the stars ; then let the mutinous winds  
Strike the proud cedars 'gainst the fiery sun,  
Mur'd'ring impossibility, to make  
What cannot be, slight work.

*Vol.* Thou art my warrior :  
I help to frame thee. Do you know this lady ?

*Cor.* The noble sister of Publicola,  
The moon of Rome ; chaste as the ice  
That's curd'd by the frost from purest snow,  
And hangs on Dian's temple. Dear Valeria !

*Vol.* This is a poor epitome of yours,  
Which, by the interpretation of full time,  
May show like all yourself.

*Cor.* The god of soldiers,  
With the consent of supreme Jove, inform  
Thy thoughts with nobleness, that thou may'st  
prove

To shame invulnerable, and stick t' the wars  
Like a great sea-mark, standing every flaw, ‡  
And saving those that eye thee !

*Vol.* Your knee, Sirrah.

*Cor.* That's my brave boy.

*Vol.* Even he, your wife, this lady, and myself,  
Are suitors to you.

*Cor.* I beseech you, peace :  
Or, if you'd ask, remember this before :  
The things I have forsworn to grant, may never  
Be held by you denials. Do not bid me  
Dismiss my soldiers, or capitate \*  
Again with Rome's mechanics : Tell me not  
Wherein I seem unnatural : Desire not  
To allay my rages and revenges, with  
Your colder reasons.

*Vol.* Oh ! no more, no more !  
You have said, you will not grant us any thing ;  
For we have nothing else to ask, but that  
Which you deny already : Yet we will ask,  
That, if you fail in our request, the blame  
May hang upon your hardness : therefore hear us.

*Cor.* Aufidius, and you Volscies, mark ; for  
we'll

Hear nought from Rome in private.—Your re-  
*Vol.* Should we be silent and not speak, our  
raiment

And state of bodies would bewray ‡ what life  
We have led since thy exile. Think with thyself,  
How more unfortunate than all living women  
Are we come hither ; since that thy sight, which  
should

\* Because. † Reprimanded. ‡ Openly.

\* Jane.

\* Storm.

‡ Betray

Make your eyes flow with joy, hearts dance with comfort,  
Constrains them weep, and shake with fear and sorrow;

Making the mother, wife, and child, to see  
The son, the husband, and the father, tearing  
His country's bowels out. And to poor we,  
Thine enmity's most capital: thou barr'st us  
Our prayers to the gods, which is a comfort  
That all but we enjoy; for how can we,  
Alas! how can we for our country pray,  
Whereto we are bound; together with thy victory,  
Whereto we are bound? Alack! or we must lose  
The country, our dear nurse; or else thy person,  
Our comfort in the country. We must find  
An evident calamity, though we had  
Our wish, which side should win: for either thou  
Must, as a foreign miscreant, be led  
With manacles through our streets, or else  
Triumphantly tread on thy country's ruin;  
And bear the palm for having bravely shed  
Thy wife and children's blood. For myself, son,  
I purpose not to wait on fortune, till  
These wars determine; \* if I cannot persuade thee  
Rather to show a noble grace to both parts,  
Than seek the end of one, thou shalt no sooner  
March to assault thy country, than to tread  
(Trust to't, thou shalt not,) on thy mother's womb,  
That brought thee to this world.

*Vir.* Ay, and on mine,  
That brought you forth this boy, to keep your  
Living to time. [name]

*Boy.* He shall not tread on me;  
I'll run away, till I am bigger, but then I'll fight.

*Cor.* Not of a woman's tenderness to be,  
Requires nor child nor woman's face to see.  
I have sat too long. [Rising.]

*Vol.* Nay, go not from us thus.  
If it were so, that our request did tend  
To save the Romans, thereby to destroy  
The Volscues whom you serve, you might condemn us,

As poisonous of your honour: No; our suit  
Is, that you reconcile them: while the Volscues  
May say, *This mercy we have show'd; the*  
*Romans,*

*This we receiv'd;* and each in either side  
Give the all-hail to thee, and cry, *Be bless'd*  
*For making up this peace!* Thou know'st,  
great son,

The end of war's uncertain; but this certain,  
That, if thou conquer Rome, the benefit  
Which thou shalt thereby reap, is such a name,  
Whose reputation will be dogg'd with curses:  
Whose chronicle thus writ,—*The man was noble,*  
*But with his last attempt he wip'd it out;*  
*Destroyed his country: and his name remains*  
*To the ensuing age, abhorr'd.* Speak to me,  
son;

Thou hast affected the fine strains † of honour,  
To imitate the graces of the gods;  
To tear with thunder the wide cheeks o'the air,  
And yet to charge thy sulphur with a bolt  
That should but rive an oak. Why dost not  
speak?

Think'st thou it honourable for a noble man  
Still to remember wrongs?—Daughter, speak you;  
He cares not for your weeping.—Speak thou, boy:  
Perhaps thy childishness will move him more  
Than can our reasons.—There is no man in the  
world [prate]

More bound to his mother; yet here he lets me  
Like one i'the stocks. Thou hast never in thy life  
Show'd thy dear mother any courtesy;  
When she (poor hen!) fond of no second brood,  
Has cluck'd thee too the wars, and safely home,  
Loaden with honour. Say, my request's unjust,  
And spurn me back: But, if it be not so,  
Thou art not honest; and the gods will plague  
thee,

That thou restrain'st from me the duty, which  
To a mother's part belongs.—He turns away:  
Down, ladies; let us shame him with our knees.

\* Conclude.

† The niceties.

To his surname Coriolanus 'longs more pride,  
Than pty to our prayers. Down; an end:  
This is the last;—So we will home to Rome,  
And die among our neighbours.—Nay, behold us:  
This boy, that cannot tell what he would have,  
But kneels, and holds up hands, for fellowship,  
Does reason our petition with more strength  
Than thou hast to deny't.—Come, let us go:  
This fellow had a Volscian to his mother;  
His wife is in Corioli, and his child  
Like him by chance:—Yet give us our despatch:  
I am hush'd until our city be afile,  
And then I'll speak a little.

*Cor.* O mother, mother!  
[Holding VOLUMNIA by the Hands, silent.  
What have you done? Behold, the heavens  
do ope,

The gods look down, and this unnatural scene  
They laugh at. O my mother, mother! O!  
You have won a happy victory to Rome:  
But, for your son,—believe it, oh! believe it,  
Most dangerously you have with him prevail'd,  
If not most mortal to him. But, let it come:  
Aufidius, though I cannot make true wars,  
I'll frame convenient peace. Now, good Aufidius,

Were you in my stead, say, would you have heard  
A mother less? or granted less, Aufidius?

*Auf.* I was mov'd withal.  
*Cor.* I dare be sworn you were:

And, Sir, it is no little thing, to make  
Mine eyes to sweat compassion. But, good Sir,  
What peace you'll make, advise me: For my part,  
I'll not to Rome, I'll back with you; and pray  
you,

Stand to me in this cause. O mother! wife!  
*Auf.* I am glad thou hast set thy mercy and  
thy honour

At difference in thee: out of that I'll work  
Myself a former fortune. [Aside.]

[The ladies make signs to CORIOLANUS.  
*Cor.* Ay, by and by:

[To VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, &c.  
But we will drink together; and you shall bear  
A better witness back than words, which we,  
On like conditions, will have counter-scal'd.  
Come, enter with us. Ladies, you deserve  
To have a temple built you: all the swords  
In Italy, and her confederate arms,  
Could not have made this peace. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV.—Rome.—A public Place.

Enter MENENIUS and SICINIUS.

*Men.* See you yond\* coign\* o'the Capitol:  
yond' corner stone?

*Sic.* Why, what of that?

*Men.* If it be possible for you to displace it  
with your little finger, there is some hope the  
ladies of Rome, especially his mother, may pre-  
vail with him. But I say, there is no hope in't;  
our throats are sentenced, and stay † upon execu-  
tion.

*Sic.* Is't possible that so short a time can alter  
the condition of a man?

*Men.* There is difference between a grub and  
a butterfly; yet your butterfly was a grub. This  
Marcus is grown from man to dragon: he has  
wings! he's more than a creeping thing.

*Sic.* He loved his mother dearly.

*Men.* So did he me: and he no more remem-  
bers his mother now, than an eight year old  
horse. The tartness of his face soues ripe grapes.  
When he walks, he moves like an engine, and the  
ground shrinks before his treading. He is able  
to pierce a corslet with his eye; talks like a knell  
and his hum is a batter. He sits in his state, ‡  
as a thing made for Alexander. What he bids  
be done, is finished with his bidding. He wants  
nothing of a god but eternity, and a heaven to  
throne in.

*Sic.* Yes, mercy, if you report him truly.

\* Angle. † Stay but for it. ‡ Chair of state.  
‡ To resemble.

*Men.* I paint him in the character. Mark what mercy his mother shall bring from him: There is no more mercy in him, than there is milk in a male tiger; that shall our poor city find: and all that is 'long of you.

*Sic.* The gods be good unto us!

*Men.* No, in such a case the gods will not be good unto us. When we banished him, we respected not them: and, he returning to break our necks, they respect not us.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Sir, if you'd save your life, fly to your house:

The plebeians have got your fellow-tribune, And hale him up and down; all swearing, if The Roman ladies bring not comfort home, They'll give him death by inches.

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

*Sic.* What's the news?

*Mess.* Good news, good news:—The ladies have prevail'd,

The Volsces are dislodg'd, and Marcius gone: A merrier day did never yet greet Rome, No, not the expulsion of the Tarquins.

*Sic.* Friend,

Art thou certain this is true? is it most certain?

*Mess.* As certain as I know the sun is fire:

Where have you lurk'd, that you make doubt of it? Ne'er through an arch so hurried the blown tide, As the recounted through the gates. Why hark you;

[*Trumpets and Hautboys sounded, and Drums beat, all together. Shouting also within. The trumpets, sackbuts, psalteries, and lutes, Tabors, and cymbals, and the shouting Romans, Make the sun dance. Hark you!*]

[*Shouting again.*]

*Men.* This is good news:

I will go meet the ladies. This Volturnia Is worth of consuls, senators, patricians, A city full of of tribunes such as you, A sea and land full: You have pray'd well to-day; This morning, for ten thousand of your throats I'd not have given a dot. Hark, how they joy!

[*Shouting and Music.*]

*Sic.* First, the gods bless you for their tidings: Accept my thankfulness. [next,

*Mess.* Sir, we have all

Great cause to give great thanks,

*Sic.* They are near the city?

*Mess.* Almost at point to enter.

*Sic.* We will meet them

And help the joy. [Going.

*Enter the Ladies, accompanied by SENATORS, PATRICIANS, and People. They pass over the Stage.*

1 *Sen.* Behold our patroness, the life of Rome: Call all your tribes together, praise the gods, And make triumphant fires; strew flowers before them:

Unshout the noise that banish'd Marcins, Repeal\* him with the welcome of his mother; Cry,—Welcome, ladies, Welcome!—

All. Welcome, ladies!

Welcome!

[*A flourish with Drums and Trumpets. [Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE V.—Antium.—A Public Place.

*Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS, with Attendants.*

*Auf.* Go tell the lords of the city, I am here: Deliver them this paper: having read it, bid them repair to the market-place; where I, Even in theirs and in the commons' ears, Will vouch the truth of it. Him I accuse, The city ports† by this hath enter'd, and Intends to appear before the people, hoping To purge himself with words: Despatch.

[*Exeunt Attendants.*]

*Enter Three or Four CONSPIRATORS of AUFIDIUS'S Faction.*

Most welcome!

1 *Con.* How is it with our general?

*Auf.* Even so,

As with a man by his own alms empoison'd, And with his charity slain.

2 *Con.* Most noble Sir,

If you do hold the same intent wherein You wish'd us parties, we'll deliver you Of your great danger.

*Auf.* Sir, I cannot tell:

We must proceed, as we do find the people.

3 *Con.* The people will remain uncertain, whilst 'Twixt you there's difference; but the fall of either Makes the survivor heir of all.

*Auf.* I know it;

And my pretext to strike at him admits A good construction. I rais'd him, and I pawn'd Mine honour for his truth: Who being so heighten'd,

He water'd his new plants with dews of flattery, Seducing so my friends; and, to this end, He bow'd his nature, never known before But to be rough, unswayable, and free,

3 *Con.* Sir, his stoutness,

When he did stand for consul, which he lost By lack of stooping,—

*Auf.* That I would have spoke of:

Being banish'd for't, he came unto my hearth; Presented to my knife his throat; I took him; Made him joint-servant with me; gave him way In all his own desires; nay, let him choose Out of my files, his project to accomplish, My best and freshest men; serv'd his designments In mine own person; help\* to reap the fame, Which he did end all his; and took some pride To do myself this wrong; till, at the last, I seem'd his follower, not partner; and He wag'd me with his countenance,† as if I had been mercenary.

1 *Con.* So he did, my lord:

The army marvell'd at it. And, in the last, When he had carried Rome, and that we look'd For no less spoil than glory,—

*Auf.* There was it,—

For which my sinews shall be stretch'd upon him. At a few drops of women's rheum,‡ which are As cheap as lies, he sold the blood and labour Of our great action: Therefore shall he die And I'll renew me in his fall. But, hark!

[*Drums and Trumpets sound, with great shouts of the People.*]

1 *Con.* Your native town you enter'd like a post, And had no welcomes home; but he returns, Splitting the air with noise.

2 *Con.* And patient fools,

Whose children he hath slain, their base throats tear,

With giving him glory.

3 *Con.* Therefore, at your vantage, Ere he express himself, or move the people With what he would say, let him feel your sword, Which we will second. When he lies along, After your way his tale pronounc'd shall bury His reasons with his body.

*Auf.* Say no more:

Here come the lords.

*Enter the LORDS of the City.*

*Lords.* You are most welcome home.

*Auf.* I have not deserv'd it:

But, worthy lords, have you with heed perus'd What I have written to you?

*Lords.* We have.

1 *Lord.* And grieve to hear it.

What faults he made before the last, I think, Might have found easy fines: but there to end, Where he was to begin, and give away The benefit of our levies, answering us With our own charge;‡ making a treaty, where There was a yielding; This admits no excuse

\* Recall.

† Gates.

\* Helped

† Tears.

† Thought me rewarded with good looks

‡ Rewarding us with our own expenses

*Auf.* He approaches, you shall hear him.

*Enter CORIOLANUS, with Drums and Colours ; a Crowd of CITIZENS with him.*

*Cor.* Hail, lords ! I am returned your soldier ; No more infected with my country's love, Than when I parted hence, but still subsisting Under your great command. You are to know, That prosperously I have attempted, and, With bloody passage led your wars, even to The gates of Rome\*. Our spoils we have brought home,

Do more than counterpoise, a full third part, The charges of the action. We have made peace, With no less honour to the Antiates, Than shame to the Romans ; and we here deliver, Subscrib'd by the consuls and patricians, Together with the seal o'the senate, what We have compounded on.

*Auf.* Read it not, noble lords ; But tell the traitor in the highest degree He hath abus'd your powers.

*Cor.* Traitor !—How now ?

*Auf.* Ay, traitor, Marcius.

*Cor.* Marcius !

*Auf.* Ay, Marcius, Caius Marcius : Dost thou think

I'll grace thee with that robbery, thy stol'n name Coriolanus in Corioli ?—

You lords and heads of the state, perfidiously He has betray'd your business, and given up For certain drops of salt\* your city Rome (I say, your city) to his wife and mother : Breaking his oath and resolution, like A twist of rotten silk : never admitting Counsel o'the war ; but at his nurse's tears He whin'd and roar'd away your victory ; That pages blush'd at him, and men of heart Look'd wondering each at other.

*Cor.* Hear'st thou, Mars ?

*Auf.* Name not the god, thou boy of tears,—

*Cor.* Ha !

*Auf.* No more. †

*Cor.* Measureless liar, thou hast made my heart Too great for what contains it. Boy ! O slave !— Pardon me, lords, 'tis the first time that ever I was forc'd to scold. Your judgments, my grave lords,

Must give this cur the lie : and his own notion (Who wears my stripes impress'd on him that must bear

My beating to his grave,) shall join to thrust The lie unto him.

1 *Lord.* Peace, both, and hear me speak.

*Cor.* Cut me to pieces, Volscies : men and lads, Stain all your edges on me.—Boy ! False hound ! If you have writ your annals true, 'tis there,

That like an eagle in a dove-cote, I

Flutter'd your voices in Corioli :

Alone I did it.—Boy !

*Auf.* why, noble lords,

Will you be put in mind of his blind fortune, Which was your shame, by this unholly braggart, 'Fore your own eyes and ears ?

*Cor.* Let him die for't. [*Several speak at once.*

*Cit.* [*Speaking promiscuously.*] Tear him to pieces, do it presently. He killed my son :—my daughter ;—He killed my cousin Marcius ;—He killed my father.—

2 *Lord.* Peace, ho ;—no outrage ;—peace.

The man is noble, and his fame folds in This orb o'the earth. \* His last offence to us Shall have judicious† hearing.—Stand, Aufidius, And trouble not the peace.

*Cor.* Oh ! that I had him, With six Aufidiuses, or more, his tribe To use my lawful sword !

*Auf.* Insolent villain !

*Cor.* Kill, kill, kill, kill, kill him !

[*AUFIDIUS and the CONSPIRATORS draw, and kill CORIOLANUS, who falls, and AUFIDIUS stands on him.*

*Lords.* Hold, hold, hold, hold !

*Auf.* My noble masters, hear me speak.

1 *Lord.* O Tullius !—

2 *Lord.* Thou hast done a deed whereat valour will weep.

3 *Lord.* Tread not upon him.—Masters, all, be Put up your swords. [*quiet :*

*Auf.* My lords, when you shall know (as in this rage,

Provok'd by him, you cannot,) the great danger Which this man's life did owe you, you'll rejoice That he is thus cut off. Please it your honours To call me to your senate, I'll deliver Myself your loyal servant, or endure Your heaviest censure.

1 *Lord.* Bear from hence his body, And mourn you for him : let him be regarded As the most noble corse that ever herald Did follow to his urn.

2 *Lord.* His own impatience Takes from Aufidius a great part of blame. Let's make the best of it.

*Auf.* My rage is gone, And I am struck with sorrow.—Take him up : Help, three o'the chiefest soldiers ; I'll be one.— Beat thou the drum, that it speak mournfully : Trail your steel pikes.—Though in this city he Hath widow'd and unchilded many a one, Which to this hour bewail the injury, Yet he shall have a noble memory.

*Assist.* [*Exeunt, bearing the body of CORIOLANUS. A dead March sounded.*

\* Drops of tears.

† No more than a boy of tears.

\* His fame overspreads the world.

† Judicial.



# JULIUS CESAR.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

ABOUT the middle of February, A.U.C. 709, a riotous festival sacred to Pan, and called Lupercalia, was held in honour of Cesar, when the regal crown was offered him by Antony. In the middle of the following March he was assassinated. November 27, 710, the Triumvirs, Antony, Lepidus, and Octavius, met at a small island formed by the river Rhenus, near Bouonia, and there agreed upon the cruel proscription introduced in Act IV.—In 711, Brutus and Cassius were totally defeated at Philippi.—Shakspeare appears to have produced this play about the year 1607. one, upon the same subject, had been written by a young Scotch Nobleman, the Earl of Sterling; and in many passages of each, a strong similarity may be traced—this was probably occasioned by both authors drawing their materials from the same source.—A Latin play on this subject, by Dr Lodes, of Oxford, who is enumerated amongst the best tragic authors of that age, was published in 1582.—Dr Johnson says of this tragedy:—"Many particular passages deserve regard, and the contention and reconciliation of Brutus and Cassius are universally celebrated, but I have never been strongly agitated in perusing it, and think it somewhat cold and uninteresting, compared with some other of Shakspeare's plays: his adherence to the real story, and to Roman manners, seems to have impeded the natural vigour of his genius."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

JULIUS CESAR.		ARTEMIDORUS, <i>a Sophist of Cnidos.</i>
OCTAVIUS CESAR.	} <i>Triumvirs after the Death of Julius Cesar.</i>	A SOOTHSAYER.
MARCUS ANTONIUS,		CINNA, <i>a Poet,—Another Poet.</i>
M. ENIL. LEPIDUS,		LUCILIUS, TITINIUS, MESSALA, YOUNG CATO, and VOLLEMIUS, <i>Friends to Brutus and Cassius.</i>
CICERO, PUBLIUS, POPILIUS LENA, Senators.		VARRO, CLITUS, CLAUDIUS, STRATO, LUCIUS DARDANIUS, <i>Servants to Brutus</i>
MARCUS BRUTUS,	} <i>Conspirators against Julius Cesar.</i>	PINDARUS, <i>Servant to Cassius.</i>
CASSIUS,		CALPURNIA, <i>Wife to Cesar.</i>
CASCA,		PORCIA, <i>Wife to Brutus.</i>
TREBONIUS,		
LIGARIUS,		<i>Senators, Citizens, Guards, Attendants, &amp;c</i>
DECIUS BRUTUS,		
METELLUS CLEMENS,		
CINNA,		
FLAVIUS and MARULLUS, Tribunes.		

SCENE: the first three acts at Rome: afterwards at an Island near Mutina, at Sardis; and near Philippi

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—Rome.—A Street.

Enter FLAVIUS, MARULLUS, and a Rabble of CITIZENS.

Flav. Hence! home, you idle creatures, get you home;

Is this a holiday? What! know you not, Being mechanical, you ought not walk Upon a labouring day, without the sign Of your profession?—Speak, what trade art thou?

1 Cit. Why, Sir, a carpenter.

Mar. Where is thy leather apron, and thy rule? What dost thou with thy best apparel on?—You, Sir; what trade are you?

2 Cit. Truly, Sir, in respect of a fine workman, I am but, as you would say, a cobbler.

Mar. But what trade art thou? Answer me directly.

2 Cit. A trade, Sir, that I hope I may use with a safe conscience; which is, indeed, Sir, a mender of bad soles.

Mar. What trade, thou knave! thou naughty knave, what trade?

2 Cit. Nay, I beseech you, Sir, be not out with me: yet, if you be out, Sir, I can mend you.

Mar. What meanest thou by that? Mend me, thou saucy fellow?

2 Cit. Why, Sir, cobbler you.

Flav. Thou art a cobbler, art thou?

3 Cit. Truly, Sir, all that I live by is, with the awl: I meddle with no tradesman's matters, nor woman's matters, but with awl. I am, indeed, Sir, a surgeon to old shoes; when they are in great danger, I recover them. As proper men as ever trod upon neat-leather, have gone upon my handy-work.

Flav. But wherefore art not in thy shop to-day? Why dost thou lead these men about the streets?

2 Cit. Truly, Sir, to wear out their shoes, to get myself in more work. But, indeed, Sir, we make holiday to see Cesar, and to rejoice in his triumph.

Mar. Wherefore rejoice? What conquest brings he home?

What tributaries follow him to Rome,

To grace in captive bonds his chariot wheels?

You blocks, you stones, you worse than senseless things?

O you hard hearts, you cruel men of Rome, Knew you not Pompey? Many a time and oft

Have you climb'd up to walls and battlements, To towers and windows, yea, to chimney-tops,

Your infants in your arms, and there have sat The live-long day, with patient expectation,

To see great Pompey pass the streets of Rome; And when you saw his chariot but appear,

Have you not made an universal shout, That Tyber trembled underneath her banks

To hear the replication of your sounds, Made in her concave shores?

And do you now put on your best attire?  
And do you now call out a holiday?  
And do you now strew flowers in his way,  
That comes in triumph over Pompey's blood?  
Be gone!

Run to your houses, fall upon your knees,  
Pray to the gods to intermit the plague  
That needs must light on this ingratitude.

*Flav.* Go, go, good countrymen, and, for this  
Assemble all the poor men of your sort; [fault,  
Draw them to Tyber banks, and weep your tears  
Into the channel, till the lowest stream  
Do kiss the most exalted shores of all.

[*Exeunt CITIZENS.*]

See, wher their basest metal be not mov'd;  
They vanish tongue-tied in their guiltiness.  
Go you down that way towards the Capitol;  
This way will I: Disrobe the images,  
If you do find them deck'd with ceremonies.\*

*Mar.* May we do so?

You know it is the feast of Lupercal.

*Flav.* It is no matter; let no images  
Be hung with Cesar's trophies. † I'll about,  
And drive away the vulgar from the streets:  
So do you too where you perceive them thick.  
These growing feathers pluck'd from Cesar's wing,  
Will make him fly an ordinary pitch;  
Who else would soar above the view of men,  
And keep us all in servile fearfulness.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—The same.—A public Place.

*Enter, in Procession, with Music, CESAR; ANTONY, for the course; CALPURNIA, PORCIA, DECIES, CICERO, BRUTUS, CASSIUS, and CASCIA, a great Crowd following, among them a SOOTH-SAYER.*

*Ces.* Calpurnia,—

*Casca.* Peace, ho! Cesar speaks.

[*Music ceases.*]

*Ces.* Calpurnia,—

*Cal.* Here, my lord.

*Ces.* Stand you directly in Antonius' way,

When he doth turn his course:—Antonius,

*Ant.* Cesar, my lord.

*Ces.* Forget not, in your speed, Antonius,  
To touch Calpurnia: for our elders say,  
The barren touched in this holy chase,  
Shake off their sterility.

*Ant.* I shall remember:

When Cesar says, *Do this*, it is perform'd.

*Ces.* Set on; and leave no ceremony out.

[*Music.*]

*Sooth.* Cesar!

*Ces.* Ho! who calls?

*Casca.* Bid every noise be still:—Peace yet again.

[*Music ceases.*]

*Ces.* Who is it in the press that calls on me?  
I hear a tongue, shriller than all the music,

*Cry, Cesar!*—Speak; Cesar is turn'd to hear.

*Sooth.* Beware the ides of March.

*Ces.* What man is that?

*Br.* A soothsayer bids you beware the ides of March.

*Ces.* Set him before me, let me see his face.

*Cas.* Fellow, come from the throng: Look upon Cesar.

*Ces.* What say'st thou to me now? Speak once again.

*Sooth.* Beware the ides of March.

*Ces.* He is a dreamer: let us leave him;—pass.

[*Scenet. 5. Exeunt all but BRU. and CAS.*]

*Cas.* Will you go see the order of the course?

*Br.* Not I.

*Cas.* I pray you, do.

*Br.* I am not gamesome: I do lack some part  
Of that quick spirit that is in Antony.  
Let me not hinder, Cassius, your desires;  
I'll leave you.

\* Honorary ornaments: tokens of respect.

† Adorned with laurel crown.  
observed at the feast of Lupercalia.

‡ A ceremony  
§ Flourish of instruments.

*Cas.* Brutus, I do observe you now of late;  
I have not from your eyes that gentleness,  
And show of love—as I was wont to have:  
You bear too stubborn and too strange a hand  
Over your friend that loves you.

*Br.* Cassius,

Be not deceived: if I have veil'd my look,  
I turn the trouble of my countenance

Merely upon myself. Vexed I am,

Of late, with passions of some difference; \*

Conceptions only proper to myself,

Which give some soil, perhaps, to my beha-  
viours:

But let not therefore my good friends be griev'd:

(Among which number, Cassius, be you one)

Not construe any further my neglect,

Than that poor Brutus, with himself at war,

Forgets the shows of love to other men.

*Cas.* Then, Brutus, I have much mistook your  
passion, †

By means whereof, this breast of mine hath  
buried

Thoughts of great value, worthy cogitations.

Tell me, good Brutus, can you see your face?

*Br.* No, Cassius: for the eye sees not itself,

But by reflection, by some other things.

*Cas.* 'Tis just:

And it is very much lamented, Brutus,

That you have no such mirrors as will turn

Your hidden worthiness into your eye,

That you might see your shadow. I have heard,

Where many of the best respect in Rome,

(Except immortal Cesar) speaking of Brutus,

And groaning underneath this age's yoke,

Have wish'd that noble Brutus had his eyes

*Br.* Into what dangers would you lead me,  
Cassius,

That you would have me seek into myself

For that which is not in me?

*Cas.* Therefore, good Brutus, be prepar'd to  
hear:

And, since you know you cannot see yourself

So well as by reflection, I, your glass,

Will modestly discover to yourself

That of yourself which you yet know not of.

And be not jealous of me, gentle Brutus:

Were I a common laughter, or did use

To stale ‡ with ordinary oaths my love

To every new protester; if you know

That I do fawn on men, and hug them hard,

And after scandal them; or, if you know

That I profess myself in banqueting

To all the rout, then hold me dangerous.

[*Flourish and shout.*]

*Br.* What means this shouting? I do fear, the  
people

Choose Cesar for their king.

*Cas.* Ay, do you fear it?

Then must I think you would not have it so.

*Br.* I would not, Cassius; yet I love him  
well:—

But wherefore do you hold me here so long?

What is it that you would impart to me?

If it be aught toward the general good,

Set honour in one eye, and death 't' the other,

And I will look on both indifferently:

For, let the gods so speed me, as I love

The name of honour more than I fear death.

*Cas.* I know that virtue to be in you, Brutus,

As well as I do know your outward favour.

Well, honour is the subject of my story.—

I cannot tell, what you and other men

Think of this life; but, for my single self,

I had as lief not be, as live to be

In awe of such a thing as I myself.

I was born free as Cesar; so were you:

We both have fed as well; and we can both

Endure the winter's cold, as well as he.

For once, upon a raw and gusty day,

The troubled Tyber chafing with her shores,

Cesar said to me, *Dar'st thou, Cassius, now*

*Leap in with me into this angry flood,*

\* Discordant opinions.

† The nature of your

feelings.

‡ To unseate by repopulation.

*And swim to yonder point? Upon the word, Account'd as I was, I plunged in, And bade him follow: so, indeed, he did, The torrent roar'd; and we did buffet it With lusty sinews; throwing it aside And stemming it with hearts of controversy. But, ere we could arrive the point propos'd, Caesar cried, Help me, Cassius, or I sink. I, as Æneas, our great ancestor, Did from the flames of Troy upon his shoulder The old Anchises bear, so, from the waves of Tyber*

*Did I the tired Cesar; And this man Is now become a god; and Cassius is A wretched creature, and must bend his body, If Cesar carelessly but nod on him. He had a fever when he was in Spain, And, when the fit was on him, I did mark How he did shake: 'tis true, this god did shake: His coward lips did from their colour fly; And that same eye, whose bend doth awe the world,*

*Did lose its lustre: I did hear him groan: Ay, and that tongue of his, that bade the Romans*

*Mark him, and write his speeches in their books, Alas! it cried, Give me some drink, Titinius, As a sick girl. Ye gods, it doth amaze me, A man of such a feeble temper\* should So get the start of the majestic world, And bear the palm alone. [Shout. Flourish.*

*Bru. Another general shout! I do believe that these applauses are For some new honours that are heap'd on Cesar.*

*Cas. Why, man, he doth bestride the narrow world*

*Like a Colossus; and we petty men Walk under his huge legs, and peep about To find ourselves dishonourable graves. Men at some time are masters of their fates: The fault, dear Brutus, is not in our stars, But in ourselves, that we are underlings. Brutus and Cesar: What should be in that Cesar?*

*Why should that name be sounded more than yours?*

*Write them together, yours is as fair a name; Sound them, it doth become the mouth as well; Weigh them, it is as heavy; conjure them, Brutus will start a spirit as soon as Cesar. [Shout.*

*Now in the names of all the gods at once, Upon what mean doth this our Cesar feed, That he is grown so great? Age, thou art sham'd! Rome, thou hast lost the breed of noble bloods! When went there by an age, since the great flood, But it was fam'd with more than with one man? When could they say, till now, that talk'd of Rome,*

*That her wide walks encompass'd but one man? Now is it Rome indeed, and room enough, When there is in it but one only man. Oh! you and I have heard our fathers say, There was a Brutus† once, that would have brook'd*

*The eternal devil to keep his state in Rome, As easily as a king.*

*Bru. That you do love me, I am nothing jealous:*

*What you would work me to, I have some aim: How I have thought of this, and of these times, I shall recount hereafter; for this present, I would not, so with love I might entreat you, Be any further mov'd. What you have said, I will consider; what you have to say, I will with patience hear: and find a time Both meet to hear, and answer, such high things. Till then, my noble friend, chew upon this: Brutus had rather be a villager,‡ Than to repute himself a son of Rome Under such hard conditions as this time Is like to lay upon us.*

*Cas. I am glad, that my weak words Have struck but thus much show of fire from Brutus.*

*Re-enter CESAR, and his train.*

*Bru. The games are done, and Cesar is returning.*

*Cas. As they pass by, pluck Casca by the sleeve;*

*And he will, after his sour fashion, tell you What hath proceeded, worthy note, to-day.*

*Bru. I will do so:—But, look you, Cassius, The angry spot doth glow on Cesar's brow, And all the rest look like a chidden train: Calphurnia's cheek is pale; and Cicero Looks with such ferret\* and such fiery eyes, As we have seen him in the Capitol, Being cross'd in conference by some senators.*

*Cas. Casca will tell us what the matter is.*

*Ces. Antonius.*

*Ant. Cesar.*

*Ces. Let me have men about me that are fat; Sleek-headed men, and such as sleep o' nights: Yond' Cassius has a lean and hungry look; He thinks too much: such men are dangerous.*

*Ant. Fear him not, Cesar, he's not dangerous; He is a noble Roman, and well given.*

*Ces. 'Would he were fatter:—But I fear him not:*

*Yet if my name were liable to fear, I do not know the man I should avoid So soon as that spare Cassius. He reads much; He is a great observer, and he looks Quite through the deeds of men: he loves no plays,*

*As thou dost, Antony; he hears no music: Seldom he smiles, and smiles in such a sort, As if he mock'd himself, and scorn'd his spirit That could be mov'd to smile at any thing. Such men as he, be never at heart's ease, Whilst they behold a greater than themselves; And therefore are they very dangerous.*

*I rather tell thee what is to be fear'd, Than what I fear, for always I am Cesar. Come on my right hand, for this ear is deaf, And tell me truly what thou think'st of him.*

*[Exit CESAR and his Train. CASCA stays behind.*

*Casca. You pull'd me by the cloak; Would you speak with me?*

*Bru. Ay, Casca; tell us what hath chanc'd to-day.*

*That Cesar looks so sad.*

*Casca. Why you were with him, were you not?*

*Bru. I should not then ask Casca what had chanc'd.*

*Casca. Why, there was a crown offer'd him: and, being offer'd him, he put it by with the back of his hand, thus; and then the people fell a shouting.*

*Bru. What was the second noise for?*

*Casca. Why, for that too.*

*Cas. They shouted thrice; What was the last cry for?*

*Casca. Why, for that too.*

*Bru. Was the crown offer'd him thrice?*

*Casca. Ay, marry, was't; and he put it by thrice: every time gentler than other; and at every putting by, more honest neighbours shouted.*

*Cas. Who offer'd him the crown?*

*Casca. Why, Antony.*

*Bru. Tell us the manner of it, gentle Casca.*

*Casca. I can as well be hang'd, as tell the manner of it: it was mere foolery. I did not mark it. I saw Mark Antony offer him a crown;—yet 'twas not a crown neither, 'twas one of these coronets;—and, as I told you, he put it by once: but, for all that, to my thinking, he would fain have had it. Then he offer'd it to him again; then he put it by again: but, to my thinking, he was very loath to lay his fingers off it. And then he offer'd it the third time; he put it the third time by: and still, as he refus'd it,*

\* Temperament, constitution. † Lucius Junius Brutus. ‡ Not a citizen of Rome.

\* A ferret has red eyes.

the rabblement hooted, and clapped their chap-ped hands, and threw up their sweaty night-caps, and uttered such a deal of stinking breath because Caesar refused<sup>\*</sup> the crown, that it had almost choked Caesar; for he swooned and fell down at it: And for mine own part I durst not laugh, for fear of opening my lips, and receiving the bad air.

*Cas.* But soft, I pray you: What! did Caesar swoon?

*Casca.* He fell down in the market-place, and foamed at mouth, and was speechless.

*Bru.* 'Tis very like: he hath the falling-sickness.

*Cas.* No, Caesar hath it not; but you, and I, And honest Casca, we have the falling-sickness.

*Casca.* I know not what you mean by that; but, I am sure, Caesar fell down. If the rag-rag people did not clap him, and hiss him, according as he pleased, and displeased them, as they use to do the players in the theatre, I am no true man.

*Bru.* What said he, when he came unto himself?

*Casca.* Marry, before he fell down, when he perceiv'd the common herd was glad he refused the crown, he plucked me ope his doublet, and offered them his throat to cut.—An I had been a man of any occupation,\* if I would not have taken him at a word, I would I might go to hell among the rogues;—and so he fell. When he came to himself again, he said, If he had done, or said, any thing amiss, he desired their worship to think it was his infirmity. Three or four wenches, where I stood, cried, *Alas, good soul!*—and forgave him with all their hearts: But there's no heed to be taken of them; if Caesar had stabbed their mothers, they would have done no less.

*Bru.* And after that, he came, thus said, away?

*Casca.* Ay.

*Cas.* Did Cicero say any thing?

*Casca.* Ay, he spoke Greek.

*Cas.* To what effect?

*Casca.* Nay, an I tell you that, I'll ne'er look you i'the face again: But those that understood him smiled at one another, and shook their heads; but, for mine own part, it was Greek to me. I could tell you more news too: Marullus and Flavius, for pulling scarfs off Caesar's images, are put to silence. Fare you well. There was more foolery yet, if I could remember it.

*Cas.* Will you sup with me to-night, Casca?

*Casca.* No, I am promised forth.

*Cas.* Will you dine with me to-morrow?

*Casca.* Ay, if I be alive, and your mind hold, and your dinner worth eating.

*Cas.* Good: I will expect you.

*Casca.* Do so: Farewell, both.

[Exit CASCA.]

*Bru.* What a blunt fellow is this grown to be? He was quick mettle, when he went to school.

*Cas.* So is he now in execution Of any bold or noble enterprise, However he puts on this sturdy form. This rudeness is a sauce to his good wit, Which gives men stomach to digest his words With better appetite.

*Bru.* And so it is. For this time I will leave you:

To-morrow if you please to speak with me, I will come home to you; or, if you will, Come home with me, and I will wait for you.

*Cas.* I will do so:—till then, think of the world.

[Exit BRUTUS.]

Well, Brutus, thou art noble; yet, I see Thy honourable metal may be wrought From that it is dispos'd of: Therefore 'tis meet That noble minds keep ever with their likes: For who so firm, that cannot be seduc'd? Caesar doth bear me hard;† but he loves Brutus: If I were Brutus now, and he were Cassius,

He should not humour\* me. I will this night, In several hands,† in at the windows throw, As if they came from several citizens, Writings all tending to the great opinion That Rome holds of his name; wherein obscurely

Cesar's ambition shall be glanced at: And, after this, let Caesar seat him sure; For we will shake him, or worse days endure. [Exit.]

### SCENE III.—The same.—A Street.

*Thunder and Lightning.* Enter, from opposite sides, CASCA, with his sword drawn, and CICERO.

*C.c.* Good even, Casca: Brought you Caesar home?

Why are you breathless? and why stare you so?

*Casca.* Are you not mov'd, when all the sway i of earth

Shakes, like a thing unfirm? O Cicero, I have seen tempests, when the scolding winds Have riv'd the knotty oaks; and I have seen The ambitious ocean swell, and rage, and foam, To be exalted with the threatening clouds: But never till to-night, never till now, Did I go through a tempest-dropping fire. Either there is a civil strife in heaven, Or else the world, too saucy with the gods, Incenses them to send destruction.

*Cic.* Why, saw you any thing more wonderful?

*Casca.* A common slave (you know him well by sight)

Held up his left hand, which did flame, and burn Like twenty torches join'd; and yet his hand, Not sensible of fire, remain'd unscorch'd. Besides, (I have not since put up my sword) Against the Capitol I met a lion, Who glar'd upon me, and went surly by, Without annoying me: And there were drawn Upon a heap a hundred ghastly women, Transformed with their fear; who swore they saw Men, all in fire, walk up and down the streets. And yesterday, the bird of night did sit, Even at noon-day, upon the market-place, Hooting, and shrieking. When these prodigies Do so conjunctly meet, let not men say These are their reasons.—They are natural. For, I believe, they are portentous things Unto the climate that they point upon.

*Cic.* Indeed, it is a strange-disposed time: But men may construe things after their fashion, Clean from the purpose of the things themselves. Comes Caesar to the Capitol to-morrow?

*Casca.* He doth; for he did bid Antonius Send word to you he would be there to-morrow.

*Cic.* Good night then, Casca: this disturbed sleep Is not to walk in.

*Casca.* Farewell, Cicero. [Exit CICERO.]

Enter CASSIUS.

*Cas.* Who's there?

*Casca.* A Roman.

*Cas.* Casca, by your voice.

*Casca.* Your ear is good. Cassius, what night is this?

*Cas.* A very pleasing night to honest men.

*Casca.* Who ever knew the heavens menace so?

*Cas.* Those, that have known the earth so full of faults.

For my part, I have walk'd about the streets, Submitting me unto the perilous night; And thus unbraced, Casca, as you see, Have bar'd my bosom to the thunder-stone: And, when the cross blue lightning seem'd to open The breast of heaven, I did present myself Even in the aim and very flash of it.

*Casca.* But wherefore did you so much tempt the heavens?

It is the part of men to fear and tremble,

\* A mechanic. † Has an unfavourable opinion of me.

\* Cujule. † Hand-writings. ‡ Whole momentum of the globe. § Altogether. ¶ Bolt.

When the most mighty gods, by tokens, send  
Such dreadful heralds to astonish us.

*Cas.* You are dull, Casca; and those sparks of  
That should be in a Roman, you do want, [life  
Or else you use not: You look pale, and gaze,  
And put on fear, and cast yourself in wonder,  
To see the strange impatience of the heavens:  
But if you would consider the true cause,  
Why all these fires, why all these gliding ghosts,  
Why birds, and beasts, from quality and kind; \*  
Why old men fools, and children calculate †  
Why all these things change, from their ordinance,  
Their natures and pre-formed faculties,  
To monstrous quality—why, you shall find,  
That heaven hath infused them with these spirits,  
To make them instruments of fear and warning,  
Unto some monstrous state. Now could I, Casca,  
Name to thee a man most like this dreadful  
night;

That thunders, lightens, opens graves, and roars  
As doth the lion in the Capitol:  
A man no mightier than thyself, or me,  
In personal action; yet prodigious grown,  
And fearful, as these strange eruptions are,

*Casca.* 'Tis Cesar that you mean: Is it not,  
Cassius?

*Cas.* Let it be who it is: for Romans now  
Have thieves ‡ and lums like to their ancestors;  
But, woe the while! our fathers' minds are dead,  
And we are govern'd with our mothers' spirits;  
Our yoke and suzerance show us womanish.

*Casca.* Indeed, they say, the senators to-mor-  
row mean to establish Cesar as a king: †  
And he shall wear his crown, by sea and land,  
In every place, save here in Italy.

*Cas.* I know where I will wear this dagger  
then;

Cassius from bondage will deliver Cassius:  
Therein, ye gods, you make the weak most strong;  
Therein, ye gods, you tyrants do defeat:  
Nor stony tower, nor walls of beaten brass,  
Nor airless dungeon, nor strong links of iron,  
Can be retentive to the strength of spirit;  
But life, being weary of these worldly baits,  
Never lacks power to dismiss itself.  
If I know this, know all the world besides,  
That part of tyranny that I do bear,  
I can shake off at pleasure.

*Casca.* So can I;  
So every bondman in his own hand bears  
The power to cancel his captivity.

*Cas.* And why should Cesar be a tyrant then?  
Poor man! I know he would not be a wolf,  
But that he sees the Romans are but sheep:  
He were no lion, were not Romans hinds. ‡  
Those that with haste will make a mighty fire,  
Begin it with weak straws: What trash is Rome,  
What rubbish, and what offal, when it serves  
For the base matter to illuminate

So vile a thing as Cesar! But, O grief!  
Where hast thou led me! I, perhaps, speak this  
Before a willing bondman; then I know  
My answer must be made: But I am arm'd,  
And dangers are to me indifferent.

*Casca.* You speak to Casca; and to such a  
man,  
That is no fleering tell-tale. Hold † my hand:  
Be factious ‡ for redress of all these griefs;  
And I will set this foot of mine as far,  
As who goes farthest.

*Cas.* There's a bargain made.  
Now know you, Casca, I have mov'd already  
Some certain of the noblest-minded Romans,  
To undergo with me an enterprise  
Of honourable dangerous consequence;  
And I do know, by this, they stay for me  
In Pompey's porch: for now, this fearful night  
There is no stir or walking in the streets;  
And the complexion of the element,  
Is favour'd \*\* like the work we have in hand,  
Most bloody, fiery, and most terrible.

\* Why they deviate from nature. † Prophecy.  
‡ Mischief. § Deer. ¶ Here's my hand. † Active.  
\*\* Resembles.

*Enter CINNA.*

*Casca.* Stand close awhile, for here comes one  
in haste.

*Cas.* 'Tis Cinna, I do know him by his gait;  
He is a friend.—Cinna, where haste you so?

*Cin.* To find out you: Who's that? Metellus  
Cimber?

*Cas.* No, it is Casca; one incorporate \*  
To our attempts. Am I not staid for, Cinna?

*Cin.* I am glad on't. What a fearful night is  
this? [sighs.

There's two or three of us have seen strange  
*Cas.* Am I not staid for, Cinna? Tell me.

*Cin.* Yes,  
You are. O Cassius, if you could but win  
The noble Brutus to our party—

*Cas.* Be you content: Good Cinna, take this  
paper,

And look you lay it in the prator's chair,  
Where Brutus may but find it; and throw this  
In at his window: set this up with wax  
Upon old Brutus' statue: all this done,  
Repay to Pompey's porch, where you shall find  
us.

*Aie Decius Brutus and Trebonius there!*

*Cin.* All but Metellus Cimber; and he's gone  
To seek you at your house. Well, I will lie,  
And so bestow these papers as you bade me.

*Cas.* That done, repay to Pompey's theatre.  
[Exit CINNA.

Come, Casca, you and I will, yet, ere day,  
See Brutus at his house: three parts of him  
Is ours already; and the man entire,  
Upon the next encounter, yields him ours.

*Casca.* Oh! he sits high in all the people's  
hearts:

And that, which would appear offence in us,  
His countenance, like richest alchymy,  
Will change to virtue and to worthiness.

*Cas.* Him, and his worth, and our great need  
of him,

You have right well conceited. † Let us go,  
For it is after midnight; and, ere day,  
We will awake him—and be sure of him.

[Exit.

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—The same.—BRUTUS' Orchard.

*Enter BRUTUS.*

*Brut.* What, Lucius! ho!—  
I cannot, by the progress of the stars,  
Give guess how near to day.—Lucius, I say!—  
I would it were my fault to sleep so soundly.—  
When, Lucius, when? awake, I say: What  
Lucius!

*Enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* Call'd you, my lord?

*Brut.* Get me a taper in my study, Lucius:  
When it is lighted, come and call me here.

*Luc.* I will, my lord. [Exit.

*Brut.* It must be by his death: and, for my  
part,

I know no personal cause to spurn at him,  
But for the general. He would be crown'd:—  
How that might change his nature, there's the  
question! †

It is the bright day, that brings forth the adder;  
And that craves wary walking. Crown him?—  
That;—

And then, I grant, we put a sting in him,  
That at his will he may do danger with.

The abuse of greatness is, when it disjoins  
Remorse ‡ from power: And, to speak truth of  
Cesar,

I have not known when his affections sway'd  
More than his reason. But 'tis a common proof, †  
That lowliness is young ambition's ladder,  
Whereto the climber upward turns his face:

\* Engaged in. † Conceived. ‡ An exclamation of  
impatience. § Mercy. ¶ Truth.

But when he once attains the utmost round,  
He then unto the ladder turns his back,  
Looks in the clouds, scorning the base degrees  
By which he did ascend: So Cesar may;  
Then, lest he may, prevent. And, since the  
quarrel

Will bear no colour for the thing he is,  
Fashion it thus; that what he is, augmented,  
Would run to these and these extremities;  
And therefore, think him as a serpent's egg,  
Which, hatch'd, would, as his kind, grow mis-  
And kill him in the shell. [chievous;

*Re-enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* The taper burneth in your closet, Sir.  
Searching the window for a flint, I found  
This paper, thus seal'd up; and, I am sure,  
It did not lie there when I went to bed.

*Bru.* Get you to bed again, it is not day.  
Is not to-morrow, boy, the ides of March?

*Luc.* I know not, Sir.

*Bru.* Look in the calendar, and bring me word.

*Luc.* I will, Sir. [Exit.

*Bru.* The exhalations, whizzing in the air,  
Give so much light, that I may read by them.

[Opens the Letter, and reads.

*Brutus, thou sleep'st; awake, and see thyself.  
Shalt Rome, &c. Speak—strike—redress!*

*Brutus, thou sleep'st; awake.—*  
Such instigations have been often dropp'd  
Where I have took them up.

*Shalt Rome, &c.* Thus, must I piece it out;  
Shall Rome stand under one man's awe? What!  
Rome?

My ancestors did from the streets of Rome  
The Tarquin drive, when he was call'd a king.  
*Speak—strike—redress!*—Am I entreated then  
To speak, and strike? O Rome! I make thee  
promise,

If the redress will follow, thou receivest  
Thy full petition at the hand of Brutus!

*Re-enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* Sir, March is wasted fourteen days.

[Knock within.

*Bru.* 'Tis good. Go to the gate; somebody  
knocks. [Exit LUCIUS.

Since Cassius first did whet me against Cesar,  
I have not slept.

Between the acting of a dreadful thing  
And the first motion, all the interim is  
Like a phantasma, or a hideous dream:  
The genius, and the mortal instruments,  
Are then in council; and the state of man,  
Like to a little kingdom, suffers then  
The nature of an insurrection.

*Re-enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* Sir, 'tis your brother Cassius at the door,  
Who doth desire to see you.

*Bru.* Is he alone?

*Luc.* No, Sir, there are more with him.

*Bru.* Do you know them?

*Luc.* No, Sir; their hats are pluck'd about their  
And half their faces buried in their cloaks, [sais,  
That by no means I may discover them  
By any mark of favour.\*

*Bru.* Let them enter. [Exit LUCIUS.

They are the faction. O conspiracy!  
Sham'st thou to show thy dangerous brow by night,  
When evils are most free! Oh! then, by day,  
Where wilt thou find a cavern dark enough  
To mask thy monstrous visage? Seek none,  
Hide thy smiles and affability: [spracy;  
For if thou path thy native semblance on, con-  
Not Erebus† itself were dim enough  
To hide thee from prevention. §

*Enter CASSIUS, CASCA, DECIVS, CINNA, ME-  
TELLUS CIMBER, AND TREBONIUS.*

*Cas.* I think we are too bold upon your rest:  
Good morrow, Brutus; Do we trouble you?

\* Countenance.

† Hell.

‡ Walk in thy true form.

§ Detection

*Bru.* I have been up this hour; awake, all  
night.

Know I these men, that come along with you?

*Cas.* Yes, every man of them; and no man  
here,

But honours you: and every one doth wish  
You had but that opinion of yourself,  
Which every noble Roman bears of you.

This is Trebonius.

*Bru.* He is welcome hither.

*Cas.* This Decius Brutus.

*Bru.* He is welcome too.

*Cas.* This, Casca; this, Cinna;

And this, Metellus Cimber.

*Bru.* They are all welcome.

What watchful cares do interpose themselves

Between your eyes and night?

*Cas.* Shall I entreat a word? [They whisper.

*Dec.* Here lies the east: Doth not the day  
break here?

*Casca.* No.

*Cin.* Oh! pardon, Sir, it doth; and you grey  
lines,

That fret the clouds, are messengers of day.

*Casca.* You shall confess, that you are both  
deceiv'd.

Here, as I point my sword, the sun arises;  
Which is a great way growing on the south,  
Weighing the youthful season of the year.  
Some two months hence, up higher toward the  
north

He first presents his fire; and the high east  
Stands, as the Capitol, directly here.

*Bru.* Give me your hands all over, one by  
one.

*Cas.* And let us swear our resolution.

*Bru.* No, not an oath: If not the face of men,

The sufferance of our souls, the time's abuse,—

If these be motives weak, break off betimes,

And every man hence to his idle bed;

So let high-sighted tyranny range on,

Till each man drop by lottery. But if these,

As I am sure they do, bear fire enough

To kindle cowards, and to steel with valour

The melting spirits of women; then, countrymen,

What need we any spur, but our own cause,

To prick us to redress? what other bond,

Than secret Romans, that have spoke the word,

And will not palter? And what other oath,

Than honesty to honesty engag'd?

That this shall be, or we will fall for it?

Swear priests, and cowards, and men cautious,\*

Old feeble carions, and such suffering souls,

That welcome wrongs; unto bad causes swear

Such creatures as men doubt: but do not stain

The even virtue of our enterprise,

Nor the insuppressive mettle of our spirits,

To think that of our cause, or our performance,

Did need an oath; when every drop of blood

That every Roman bears, and nobly bears,

Is guilty of a several bastardy,

If he do break the smallest particle

Of any promise that hath pass'd from him.

*Cas.* But what of Cicero? Shall we sound him?

I think he will stand very strong with us.

*Casca.* Let us not leave him out.

*Cin.* No, by no means.

*Met.* Oh! let us have him; for his silver hair

Will purchase us a good opinion,

And buy men's voices to commend our deeds:

It shall be said, his judgment rul'd our hands;

Our youths, and wildness, shall no whit appear,

But all be buried in his gravity.

*Bru.* Oh! name him not; let us not break

with him: †

For he will never follow any thing

That other men begin.

*Cas.* Then leave him out.

*Casca.* Indeed, he is not fit.

*Dec.* Shall no man else be touch'd, but only

Cesar?

*Cas.* Decius, well urg'd:—I think it is not meet

Mark Antony so well belov'd of Cesar,

\* Wary, circumspect.

† Break the matter to him

For tinctures, stains, relics,\* and cognizance.  
This by Calphurnia's dream is signified.

Ces. And this way have you well expounded it.

Dec. I have, when you have heard what I can say;

And know it now: The senate have concluded  
To give, this day, a crown to mighty Cesar.  
If you shall send them word you will not come,  
Their minds may change. Besides, it were a  
mock

Apt to be render'd, for some one to say,  
*Break up the senate till another time,  
When Cesar's wife shall meet with better  
dreams.*

If Cesar hide himself, shall they not whisper,  
*Lo, Cesar is afraid?*

Pardon me, Cesar; for my dear, dear love  
To your proceeding bids me tell you this;  
And reason to my love is liable.†

Ces. How foolish do your fears seem now,  
Calphurnia!

I am ashamed I did yield to them.—

Give me my robe, for I will go:—

*Enter Publius, Brutus, Ligarius, Metellus,  
Casca, Trebonius, and Cinna.*

And look where Publius is come to fetch me.

Pub. Good morrow, Cesar.

Ces. Welcome, Publius.

What, Brutus, are you stirr'd so early too?

Good morrow, Casca. Caius Ligarius,  
Cesar was ne'er so much your enemy,  
As that sameague which hath made you lean.—  
What is't o'clock?

Br. Cesar, 'tis strucken eight.

Ces. I thank you for your pains and courtesy.

*Enter Antony.*

See! Antony, that revels long o' nights,  
Is notwithstanding up:—

Good morrow, Antony.

Ant. So to most noble Cesar.

Ces. Bid them prepare within:—

I am to blame to be thus waited for.—  
Now, Cinna—Now, Metellus!—What, Trebonius!  
I have an hour's talk in store for you;  
Remember that you call on me to-day:  
Be near me, that I may remember you.

Treb. Cesar, I will:—and so near will I be,  
That your best friends shall wish I had been  
farther. *[Aside.]*

Ces. Good friends, go in, and taste some wine  
with me;  
And we, like friends, will straightway go to-  
gether.

Br. That every like is not the same, O Cesar,  
The heart of Brutus yearns to think upon!  
*[Exit.]*

*SCENE III.—The same.—A street near the  
Capitol.*

*Enter ARTEMIDORUS, reading a Paper.*

Art. Cesar, beware of Brutus; take heed of  
Cassius, come not near Casca; have an eye on  
Cinna; trust not Trebonius; mark well Metel-  
lus Cimber; Decius Brutus loves thee not;  
thou hast wronged Caius Ligarius. There is  
but one mind in all these men, and it is bent  
against Cesar. If thou dost not immortal,  
look about you: Security gives way to conspiracy.  
The mighty gods defend thee! Thy  
lover, §

ARTEMIDORUS.

Here will I stand, till Cesar pass along,  
And as a sutor will I give him this.  
My heart laments, that virtue cannot live  
Out of the teeth of emulation.†  
If thou read this, O Cesar, thou may'st live;  
If not, the fates with traitors do contrive.

*[Exit.]*

\* As to a saint, for reliques  
‡ Graves. † Friend. ‡ Envy.

*SCENE IV.—The same.—Another part of the  
same Street before the House of Brutus.*

*Enter PORTIA and LUCIUS.*

Por. I prythee, boy, run to the senate house;  
Stay not to answer me, but get thee gone:  
Why dost thou stay?

Luc. To know my errand, madam.

Por. I would have had thee there, and here  
again,

Ere I can tell thee what thou should'st do there.—  
O constancy, be strong upon my side!  
Set a huge mountain 'tween my heart and  
tongue!

I have a man's mind, but a woman's might.

How hard it is for women to keep counsel!—

Art thou here yet?

Luc. Madam, what should I do?

Run to the Capitol, and nothing else?

And so return to you, and nothing else?

Por. Yes, bring me word, boy, if thy lord  
look well,

For he went sickly forth: And take good note,  
What Cesar doth, what suitors press to him.

Hark, boy! what noise is that?

Luc. I hear none, madam.

Por. Prythee, listen well;

I heard a bustling rumour like a fray,

And the wind brings it from the Capitol.

Luc. Sooth, madam, I hear nothing.

*Enter SOOTHSAYER.*

Por. Come hither, fellow:

Which way hast thou been?

Sooth. At mine own house, good lady.

Por. What is't o'clock?

Sooth. About the ninth hour, lady.

Por. Is Cesar yet gone to the Capitol?

Sooth. Madam, not yet; I go to take my stand,  
To see him pass on to the Capitol.

Por. Thou hast some suit to Cesar, hast thou  
not?

Sooth. That I have, lady: if it will please  
Cesar

To be so good to Cesar, as to hear me,

I shall beseech him to bethink himself.

Por. Why, knowest thou any harm's intended  
towards him?

Sooth. None that I know will be, much that I  
fear may chance.

Good-morrow to you. Here the street is narrow:  
The throng that follows Cesar at the heels  
Of senators, of praetors, common suitors,  
Will crowd a feeble man almost to death:  
I'll get me to a place more void, and there  
Speak to great Cesar as he comes along. *[Exit.]*

Por. I must go in.—Ah me! how weak a thing  
The heart of woman is! O Brutus!

The heavens speed thee in thine enterprise!

Sure, the boy heard me:—Brutus hath a suit,  
That Cesar will not grant.—Oh! I grow faint:—

Run, Lucius, and commend me to my lord;  
Say, I am merry: come to me again,

And bring me word what he doth say to thee  
*[Exit.]*

### ACT III.

*SCENE I.—The same.—The Capitol; the  
Senate sitting.*

*A Crowd of People in the Street leading to  
the Capitol; among them ARTEMIDORUS,  
and the SOOTHSAYER. Flourish. Enter  
CESAR, BRUTUS, CASSIUS, CASCA, DECIVS,  
METELLUS, TREBONIUS, CINNA, ANTONY,  
LEPIDUS, POPILIUS, PUBLIUS, and others.*

Ces. The Ides of March are come.

Sooth. Ay, Cesar; but not gone.

Art. Hail, Cesar! Read this schedule.

Dec. Trebonius doth desire you to o'er-read  
At your best leisure, this his humble suit.

## Scene I.

## JULIUS CESAR.

39

*Art.* O Cesar, read mine first; for mine's a suit  
That touches Cesar nearer: Read it, great Cesar.  
*Ces.* What touches us ourself, shall be last serv'd.

*Art.* Delay not, Cesar; read it instantly.

*Ces.* What, is the fellow mad?

*Pub.* Sirrah, give place.

*Cas.* What, urge you your petitions in the street?  
Come to the Capitol.

*CESAR enters the Capitol, the rest following.*  
*All the SENATORS rise.*

*Pop.* I wish you enterprise to-day may thrive.

*Cas.* What enterprise, Popilius?

*Pop.* Fare you well. [*Advances to CESAR.*]

*Brut.* What said Popilius Lena?

*Cas.* He wish'd, to-day our enterprise might I fear our purpose is discovered. [*thrive.*]

*Brut.* Look, how he makes to Cesar: Mark him.

*Cas.* Casca, be sudden, for we fear prevention.—

*Brutus*, what shall be done? If this be known, Cassius on Cesar never shall turn back, for I will slay myself.

*Brut.* Cassius, be constant:

Popilius Lena speaks not of our purposes;

For, look, he smiles, and Cesar doth not change.

*Cas.* Trebonius knows his time; for, look you, Brutus,

He draws Mark Antony out of the way.

[*Exit ANTONY and TREBONIUS.* CESAR and the SENATORS take their Seats.]

*Dec.* Where is Metellus Cimber? Let him go, And presently prefer his suit to Cesar.

*Brut.* He is address'd: \* press near and second him.

*Cas.* Casca, you are the first that rears your head.

*Ces.* Are we all ready? what is now amiss, That Cesar and his senate must redress?

*Met.* Most high, most mighty, and most puissant Cesar,

Metellus Cimber throws before thy seat An humble heart. — [*Kneeling.*]

*Cas.* I must prevent thee, Cimber.

These couchings, and these lowly courtesies, Might fire the blood of ordinary men; And turn pre-ordnance, and first decree, Into the law of children. Be not fond To think that Cesar bears such rebel blood, That will be thaw'd from the true quality With that which melteth fools; I mean, sweet words,

Low-crook'd curties, and base spaniel fawning. Thy brother by decree is banished; It thou dost bend, and pray, and fawn for him, I spurn thee like a cur out of my way. Know, Cesar doth not wrong; nor, without cause, Will he be satisfied.

*Met.* Is there no voice more worthy than my own,

To sound more sweetly in great Cesar's ear, For the repealing of my banish'd brother?

*Brut.* I kiss thy hand, but not in flattery, Cesar;

Desiring thee, that Publius Cimber may Have an immediate freedom of repeal.

*Ces.* What, Brutus!

*Cas.* Pardon, Cesar; Cesar, pardon: As low as to thy foot doth Cassius fall, To beg enfranchisement for Publius Cimber.

*Ces.* I could be well mov'd, if I were as you; If I could pray to move, prayers would move me: But I am constant as the northern star, Of whose true-fix'd and resting quality There is no fellow in the firmament. The skies are painted with unnumber'd sparks, They are all fire, and every one doth shine; But there's but one in all doth hold his place: So, in the world; 'Tis furnish'd well with men

\* Ready.

And men are flesh and blood, and apprehensive; \*

Yet, in the number, I do know but one That unassailable holds on his rank, Unshak'd of motion: † and, that I am he, Let me a little show it, even in this; That I was constant Cimber should be banish'd And constant do remain to keep him so.

*Cin.* O Cesar—

*Ces.* Hence! Wilt thou lift Olympus?

*Dec.* Great Cesar,—

*Ces.* Doth not Brutus bootless kneel?

*Casca.* Speak, hands, for me.

[*CASCA stabs CESAR in the neck. CINAR catches hold of his arm. He is then stabbed by several other Conspirators, and at last by MARCUS BRUTUS.*]

*Ces.* Et tu, Brute?—Then, fall, Cesar.

[*Dies.* The Senators and People retire in confusion.]

*Cin.* Liberty! Freedom! Tyranny is dead!—Run hence, proclaim, cry it about the streets.

*Cas.* Some to the common pulpits, and cry out, Liberty, freedom, and enfranchisement!

*Brut.* People, and senators! be not affrighted; Fly not; stand still:—ambition's debt is paid.

*Casca.* Go to the pulpit, § Brutus.

*Dec.* And Cassius too.

*Brut.* Where's Publius?

*Cin.* Here, quite confounded with this mutiny.

*Met.* Stand fast together, lest some friend of Cesar's

Should chance—

*Brut.* Talk not of standing—Publius, good cheer;

There is no harm intended to your person, Nor to no Roman else: so tell them, Publius.

*Cas.* And leave us, Publius; lest that the people, [chief,

Rushing on us, should do your age some mis-

*Brut.* Do so;—and let no man abide this deed, But we the doers;—

*RE-ENTER TREBONIUS.*

*Cas.* Where's Antony?

*Tre.* Fled to his house amaz'd:

Men, wives, and children, stare, cry out, and run, As it were doom-day.

*Brut.* Fates! we will know your pleasures:—That we shall die, we know; 'tis but the time, And drawing days out, that men stand upon.

*Cas.* Why, he that cuts off twenty years of life Cuts off so many years of fearing death.

*Brut.* Grant that, and then is death a benefit: So are we Cesar's friends, that have abridg'd His time of fearing death.—Stoop, Romans, stoop And let us bathe our hands in Cesar's blood Up to the elbows, and besmear our swords; Then walk we forth, even to the market-place; And, waving our red weapons o'er our heads, Let's all cry, Peace! Freedom! and Liberty!

*Cas.* Stoop then, and wash: || How many ages hence,

Shall this our lofty scene be acted o'er, In states unborn, and accents yet unknown!

*Brut.* How many times shall Cesar bleed in sport,

That now on Pompey's basis lies along, No worthier than the dust!

*Cas.* So oft as that shall be, So often shall the knot of us be call'd The men that gave our country liberty.

*Dec.* What, shall we forth?

*Cas.* Ay, every man away! Brutus shall lead; and we will grace his heels With the most boldest and best hearts of Rome.

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Brut.* Soft, who comes here? A friend of Antony's.

\* Capable of apprehending. † By entreaty. ‡ And thou, Brutus: § In the forum, the place of harangue. || Steep; as washed with gold.



Serv. Thus, Brutus, did my master bid me kneel;

Thus did Mark Antony bid me fall down ;  
And, being prostrate, thus he bade me say :  
" Brutus is noble, wise, valiant, and honest ;  
" Cesar was mighty, bold, royal, and loving ;  
" Say, I love Brutus, and I honour him ;  
" Say, I fear'd Cesar, honour'd him, and lov'd  
" If Brutus will vouchsafe, that Antony [him.  
" May safely come to him, and be resolv'd  
" How Cesar hath deserv'd to lie in death,  
" Mark Antony shall not love Cesar dead  
" So well as Brutus living ; but will follow  
" The fortunes and affairs of noble Brutus,  
" Thorough the hazards of this untrod state,  
" With all true faith." So says my master An-  
tony.

Brut. Thy master is a wise and valiant Roman ;  
I never thought him worse.  
Tell him, so please him come unto this place,  
He shall be satisfied ; and, by my honour,  
Depart untouch'd.

Serv. I'll fetch him presently. [Exit SERV.

Brut. I know, that we shall have him well to friend.

Cas. I wish we may : but yet have I a mind,  
That tears him much ; and my misgiving still  
Falls shrewdly to the purpose.

Re-enter ANTONY.

Brut. But here comes ANTONY.—Welcome, Mark Antony.

Ant. O mighty Cesar ! Dost thou lie so low ?  
Are all thy conquests, glories, triumphs, spoils,  
Shrunk to this little measure ? Fare thee well.—  
I know not, gentlemen, what you intend,  
Who else must be let blood, who else is rank : \*  
If I myself, there is no hour so fit  
As Cesar's death hour ; nor no instrument  
Of half that worth, as those your swords, made  
rich

With the most noble blood of all this world.  
I do beseech ye, if you hear me hard,  
Now, whilst your purpled hands do reek and  
smoke,

Fulfil your pleasure. Live a thousand years,  
I shall not find myself so apt to die :  
No place will please me so, no mean of death,  
As here by Cesar, and by you cut off,  
The choice and master spirits of this age.

Brut. O Antony ! beg not your death of us.  
Though now we must appear bloody and cruel,  
As, by our hands, and thus our present act,  
You see we do ; yet see you but our hands ;  
And this the bleeding business they have done :  
Our hearts you see not, they are pitiful ;  
And pity to the general wrong of Rome  
(As fire drives out fire, so pity, pity.)  
Hath done this deed on Cesar. For your part,  
To you our swords have leaden points, Mark  
Antony :

Our aims, in strength of malice, and our hearts,  
Of brothers' temper, do receive you in  
With all kind love, good thoughts, and reverence.  
Cas. Your voice shall be as strong as any man's,  
In the disposing of new dignities.

Brut. Only be patient, till we have appeas'd  
The multitude, beside themselves with fear,  
And then we will deliver you the cause,  
Why I, that did love Cesar when I struck him,  
Have thus proceeded.

Ant. I doubt not of your wisdom.  
Let each man render me his bloody hand :  
First, Marcus Brutus, will I shake with you :—  
Next, Cains Cassius, do I take your hand ;—  
Now, Decius Brutus, yours ;—now yours, Me-  
tellus :

Yours, Cinna ;—and, my valiant Casca, yours ;—  
Though last, not least in love, yours, good Tre-  
bonius.

Gentlemen all,—alas ! what shall I say ?  
My credit now stands on a slippery ground,

That one of two bad ways you must conceit \* me,  
Either a coward or a flatterer.—

That I did love thee, Cesar, oh ! 'tis true :  
If then thy spirit look upon us now,  
Shall it not grieve thee, deader than thy death's,  
To see thy Antony making his peace,  
Shaking the bloody fingers of thy foes,  
Most noble ! in the presence of thy corse ?  
Had I as many eyes as thou hast wounds,  
Weeping as fast as they stream forth thy blood,  
It would become me better, than to close  
In terms of friendship with thine enemies.  
Pardon me, Julius !—Here wast thou bay'd, brave  
hart :

Here didst thou fall ; and here thy hunters stand  
Sign'd in thy spoil, and crimson'd in thy kith. †  
O world ! thou wast the forest to this heart ;  
And thus, indeed, O world, the heart of thee.  
How like a deer, stricken by many princes,  
Dost thou here lie ?

Cas. Mark Antony,—

Ant. Pardon me, Cains Cassius :  
The enemies of Cesar shall say this ;  
Then, in a friend, it is cold modesty.

Cas. I blame you not for praising Cesar so ;  
But what compact mean you to have with us ?  
Will you be prick'd in number of our friends ;  
Or shall we on, and not depend on you ?

Ant. Therefore I took your hands ; but was  
indeed,

Sway'd from the point, by looking down on Cesar.  
Friends am I with you all, and love you all ;  
Upon this hope, that you shall give me reasons,  
Why, and wherein, Cesar was dangerous.

Brut. Or else were this a savage spectacle :  
Our reasons are so full of good regard,  
That were you, Antony, the son of Cesar,  
You should be satisfied.

Ant. That's all I seek :  
And am moreover sutor, that I may  
Produce his body to the market-place ;  
And in the pulpit, as becomes a friend,  
Speak in the order of his funeral.

Brut. You shall, Mark Antony.  
Cas. Brutus, a word with you.

You know not what you do ; Do not consent,  
That Antony speak in his funeral :  
Know you how much the people may be mov'd  
By that which he will utter ! *Aside.*

Brut. By your pardon,—  
I will myself into the pulpit first,  
And show the reason of our Cesar's death :  
What Antony shall speak, I will protest  
He speaks by leave and by permission ;  
And that we are contented Cesar shall  
Have all true rites, and lawful ceremonies.  
It shall advantage more, than do us wrong.

Cas. I know not what may fall ; I like it not.

Brut. Mark Antony, here, take you Cesar's body.  
You shall not in your funeral speech blame us,  
But speak all good you can devise of Cesar ;  
And say, you do't by our permission ;  
Else shall you not have any hand at all  
About his funeral : And you shall speak  
In the same pulpit whereto I am going,  
After my speech is ended.

Ant. Be it so ;  
I do desire no more.

Brut. Prepare the body then, and follow us.  
[Exit all but ANTONY

Ant. O, pardon me, thou piece of bleeding  
earth,

That I am meek and gentle with these butchers !  
Thou art the ruins of the noblest man  
That ever liv'd in the tide of times.  
Woe to the hand that shed this costly blood !  
Over thy wounds now do I prophesy,  
(Which, like dumb mouths, do ope their ruby lips,  
To beg the voice and utterance of my tongue—  
A curse shall light upon the limbs of men ;  
Domestic fury, and fierce civil strife,  
Shall cumber all the parts of Italy ;  
Blood and destruction shall be so in use,

\* Grown too powerful for the public safety.  
† Though strong in the deed just performed.

\* Suppose me. † Used by old writers for death.

And dreadful objects so familiar,  
That mothers shall but smile, when they behold  
Their infants quarter'd with the hands of war;  
All pity chok'd with custom of fell deeds:  
And Cesar's spirit, ranging for revenge,  
With Ate by his side, come hot from hell,  
Shall in these confines, with a monarch's voice,  
Cry *Havoc*,\* and let slip the dogs of war;†  
That this foul deed shall smell above the earth  
With carrion men, groaning for burial.

*Enter a SERVANT.*

You serve Octavius Cesar, do you not?

*Serv.* I do, Mark Antony.

*Ant.* Cesar did write for him to come to Rome.

*Serv.* He did receive his letters, and is coming;

And bid me say to you by word of mouth.—

○ Cesar!— [*Seeing the Body.*]

*Ant.* Thy heart is big, get thee apart and weep.  
Passion, I see, is catching; for mine eyes,  
Seeing those beads of sorrow stand in thine,  
Began to water. Is thy master coming?

*Serv.* He lies to-night within seven leagues of Rome.

*Ant.* Post back with speed, and tell him what  
hath chanc'd:

Here is a mourning Rome, a dangerous Rome,  
No Rome of safety for Octavius yet;  
Hie hence, and tell him so. Yet, stay a while;  
Thou shalt not back, till I have borne this corse  
Into the market-place: there shall I try,  
In my oration, how the people take  
The cruel issue of these bloody men;  
According to the which, thou shalt discourse  
To young Octavius of the state of things.  
Lend me your hand.

[*Exeunt with CESAR's Body.*]

SCENE II.—*The same.—The Forum.*

*Enter BRUTUS and CASSIUS, and a throng  
of CITIZENS.*

*Cit.* We will be satisfied; let us be satisfied.

*Brut.* Then follow me, and give me audience,  
friends.—

Cassius, go you into the other street,  
And part the numbers.— [*here;*

Those that will hear me speak, let them stay  
Those that will follow Cassius, go with him;  
And public reasons shall be rendered  
Of Cesar's death.

1 *Cit.* I will hear Brutus speak.

2 *Cit.* I will hear Cassius, and compare their  
reasons.

When severally we hear them rendered.

[*Exit CASSIUS, with some of the CITIZENS.*]

*BRUTUS goes into the Rostrum.*

3 *Cit.* The noble Brutus is ascended: Silence!  
*Brut.* Be patient till the last.

Romans, countrymen, and lovers! hear me for  
my cause, and be silent, that you may hear: be-  
lieve me for mine honour, and have respect to  
mine honour, that you may believe: censure me  
in your wisdom, and awake your senses, that you  
may the better judge. If there be any in this  
assembly, any dear friend of Cesar's, to him I  
say, that Brutus' love to Cesar was no less than  
his. If then that friend demand, why Brutus  
rose against Cesar, this is my answer:—Not that  
I loved Cesar less, but that I loved Rome more.  
Had you rather Cesar were living, and die all  
slaves, than that Cesar were dead, to live all free-  
men? As Cesar loved me, I weep for him; As  
he was fortunate, I rejoice at it; as he was va-  
hant, I honour him; but, as he was ambitious,  
I slew him: There are tears for his love; joy  
for his fortune; honour for his valour; and death  
for his ambition. Who is here so base, that  
would be a bondman? If any, speak; for him  
have I offended. Who is here so rude, that would  
not be a Roman? If any, speak; for him have I

offended. Who is here so vile that would not  
love his country? If any, speak; for him have  
I offended. I pause for a reply.

*Cit.* None, Brutus, none.

[*Several speaking at once.*]

*Brut.* Then none have I offended. I have  
done no more to Cesar, than you should do to  
Brutus. The question of his death is enrolled  
in the Capitol; his glory not extenuated wherein  
he was worthy; nor his offences enforced, to  
which he suffered death.

*Enter ANTONY and others with CESAR's Body.*

Here comes his body, mourned by Mark Antony:  
who, though he had no hand in his death, shall  
receive the benefit of his dying, a place in the  
commonwealth; as which of you shall not? With  
this I depart; That, as I slew my best lover\* for  
the good of Rome, I have the same dagger for  
myself, when it shall please my country to need  
my death.

*Cit.* Live, Brutus, live! live!

1 *Cit.* Bring him with triumph home unto his  
house.

2 *Cit.* Give him a statue with his ancestors.

3 *Cit.* Let him be Cesar.

4 *Cit.* Cesar's better parts  
Shall now be crown'd in Brutus.

1 *Cit.* We'll bring him to his house with  
shouts and clamours.

*Brut.* My countrymen,—

2 *Cit.* Peace! silence! Brutus speaks.

1 *Cit.* Peace, ho!

*Brut.* Good countrymen, let me depart alone,  
And, for my sake, stay here with Antony:  
Do grace to Cesar's corse, and grace his speech  
Tending to Cesar's glories; which Mark Antony,  
By our permission, is allow'd to make.

I do entreat you, not a man depart,  
Save I alone, till Antony have spoke. [*Exit.*]

1 *Cit.* Stay, ho! and let us hear Mark Antony.

3 *Cit.* Let him go up into the public chair;  
We'll hear him:—Noble Antony, go up.

*Ant.* For Brutus' sake, I am beholden to you.

4 *Cit.* What does he say of Brutus?

3 *Cit.* He says, for Brutus' sake,  
He finds himself beholden to us all.

4 *Cit.* 'Twere best he speak no harm of Brutus  
here.

1 *Cit.* This Cesar was a tyrant.

3 *Cit.* Nay, that's certain:  
We are bless'd, that Rome is rid of him.

2 *Cit.* Peace; let us hear what Antony can say.

*Ant.* You gentle Romans,—

*Cit.* Peace, ho! let us hear him.

*Ant.* Friends, Romans, countrymen, lend me  
your ears;

I come to bury Cesar, not to praise him.  
The evil that men do lives after them;  
The good is oft interred with their bones;  
So let it be with Cesar. The noble Brutus  
Hath told you Cesar was ambitious:  
If it were so, it was a grievous fault,  
And grievously hath Cesar answer'd it.  
Here, under leave of Brutus and the rest,  
(For Brutus is an honourable man;  
So are they all, all honourable men;)—  
Come I to speak in Cesar's funeral.  
He was my friend, faithful and just to me;  
But Brutus says he was ambitious;  
And Brutus is an honourable man.  
He hath brought many captives home to Rome,  
Whose ransoms did the general coffers fill:  
Did this in Cesar seem ambitious?  
When that the poor have cried, Cesar hath wept;  
Ambition should be made of sterner stuff;  
Yet Brutus says he was ambitious;  
And Brutus is an honourable man.  
You all did see that, on the Lupercal,  
I thrice presented him a kingly crown,  
Which he did thrice refuse. Was this ambition?  
Yet Brutus says he was ambitious;

\* The signal for giving no quarter.  
† Fire, sword, and famine.

• Friend

And sure he is an honourable man.

I speak not to disprove what Brutus spoke,  
But here I am to speak what I do know.  
You all did love him once, not without cause;  
What cause withholds you then to mourn for him?  
O judgment, thou art fled to brutish beasts,  
And men have lost their reason!—Bear with me;  
My heart is in the coffin there with Cesar,  
And I must pause till it come back to me.

*Cit.* Methinks, there is much reason in his sayings.

*Cit.* If thou consider rightly of the matter,  
Cesar has had great wrong.

*3 Cit.* Has he, masters?

I fear there will a worse come in his place.

*4 Cit.* Mark'd ye his words? He would not take the crown;

Therefore, 'tis certain he was not ambitious.

*1 Cit.* If it be found so, some will dear abide it.  
*2 Cit.* Poor soul! his eyes are red as are  
with weeping.

*3 Cit.* There's not a nobler man in Rome,  
than Antony.

*4 Cit.* Now mark him, he begins again to speak.

*Ant.* But yesterday, the world of Cesar might  
Have stood against the world: now lies he there,  
And none so poor to do him reverence.

O masters! if I were dispos'd to stir

Your hearts and minds to mutiny and rage,

I should do Brutus wrong, and Cas-ius wrong,

Who, you all know, are honourable men:

I will not do them wrong; I rather choose

To wrong the dead, to wrong myself, and you,

Than I will wrong such honourable men.

But here's a parchment, with the seal of Cesar;

I found it in his closet, 'tis his will:

Let but the commons hear this testament,

(Which, pardon me, I do not mean to read),

And they would go and kiss dead Cesar's wounds,

And dip their napkins in his sacred blood,

Yea, beg a hair of him for memory,

And, dying, mention it within their wills,

Bequeathing it as a rich legacy

Unto their issue.

*4 Cit.* We'll hear the will: Read it, Mark Antony.

*Cit.* The will! the will! we will hear Cesar's will.

*Ant.* Have patience, gentle friends, I must not read it;

It is not meet you know how Cesar lov'd you.

You are not wood, you are not stones, but men;

And, being men, hearing the will of Cesar,

It will inflame you, it will make you mad;

'Tis good you know not that you are his heirs;

For, if you should, oh! what would come of it?

*4 Cit.* Read the will: we will hear it, Antony;

You shall read us the will, Cesar's will.

*Ant.* Will you be patient? Will you stay a

I have o'er-shot myself to tell you of it. [while?]

I fear I wrong the honourable men,

Whose daggers have stabb'd Cesar: I do fear it.

*4 Cit.* They were traitors: Honourable men!

*Cit.* The will! the testament!

*2 Cit.* They were villains, murderers: The will! read the will!

*Ant.* You will compel me then to read the will?

Then make a ring about the corse of Cesar,

And let me show you him that made the will.

Shall I descend? And will you give me leave?

*Cit.* Come down.

*2 Cit.* Descend.

[He comes down from the Pulpit.]

*3 Cit.* You shall have leave.

*4 Cit.* A ring; stand round.

*1 Cit.* Stand from the hearse, stand from the body.

*2 Cit.* Room for Antony:—most noble Antony.

*Ant.* Nay, press not so upon me; stand far off.

*Cit.* Stand back! room! hear back!

*Ant.* If you have tears, prepare to shed them now.

You all do know this mantle: I remember

The first time ever Cesar put it on:

'Twas on a summer's evening, in his tent,

That day he overcame the Nervii:—

Look, in this place ran Cassius' dagger through:

See, what a rent the envious Casca made:

Through this, the well-beloved Brutus stabb'd,

And, as he pluck'd his cursed steel away,

Mark how the blood of Cesar follow'd it;

As rushing out of doors, to be resolv'd

If Brutus so unkindly knock'd or no;

If Brutus, as you know, was Cesar's angel!

Judge, O you gods, how dearly Cesar lov'd him!

This was the most unkindest cut of all:

For, when the noble Cesar saw him stab,

Ingratitude, more strong than traitor's arms,

Quite vanquish'd him: then burst his mighty heart;

And, in his mantle muffling up his face,

Even at the base of Pompey's statue\*—

Which all the while ran blood,† great Cesar fell.

Oh! what a fall was there, my countrymen!

Then I, and you, and all of us fell down,

Whilst bloody treason flourish'd over us.

Oh! now you weep: and I perceive you feel

The dint of pity: these are gracious drops.

Kind souls, what, weep you, when you but behold

Our Cesar's vesture wounded? Look you here,

Here is himself, marr'd as you see, with tra-

tors.

*1 Cit.* O piteous spectacle!

*2 Cit.* O noble Cesar!

*3 Cit.* O woeful day!

*4 Cit.* O traitors, villains!

*1 Cit.* O most bloody sight!

*2 Cit.* We will be revenged: revenge; about,  
—seek,—burn,—fire,—kill,—slay!—let not a traitor live.

*Ant.* Stay, countrymen.

*1 Cit.* Peace there.—Hear the noble Antony.

*2 Cit.* We'll hear him, we'll follow him, we'll die with him.

*Ant.* Good friends, sweet friends, let me not stir you up

To such a sudden flood of mutiny.

They that have done this deed are honourable;

What private griefs they have, alas, I know not,

That made them do it: they are wise and honourable.

And will no doubt, with reasons answer you,

I come not, friends, to steal away your hearts;

I am no orator, as Brutus is:

But, as you know me all, a plain blunt man,

That love my friend: and that they know full well.

That gave me public leave to speak of him.

For I have neither wit, nor words, nor worth,

Action, nor utterance, nor the power of speech,

To stir men's blood: I only speak right on;

I tell you that, which you yourselves do know;

Show you sweet Cesar's wounds, poor, poor

dumb mouths,

And bid them speak for me. But were I Brutus,

And Brutus Antony, there were an Antony

Would ruffle up your spirits, and put a tongue

In every wound of Cesar, that should move

The stones of Rome to rise and mutiny.

*Cit.* We'll mutiny.

*1 Cit.* We'll burn the house of Brutus.

*3 Cit.* Away then, come, seek the conspirators.

*Ant.* Yet hear me, countrymen; yet hear me speak.

*Cit.* Peace, ho! Hear Antony, most noble Antony.

*Ant.* Why, friends, you go to do you know not what:

Wherein hath Cesar thus deserv'd your loves?

Alas, you know not:—I must tell you then:—

You have forgot the will I told you of.

\* All are too proud to shew him any respect.  
† Said more than I intended.

\* Statues for statues, is common among the old writers.  
† Cesar's blood fell upon the statue, and trickled from it.  
‡ Wrongs.

*Cit.* Most true;—the will;—let's stay, and hear the will.

*Ant.* Here is the will, and under Cesar's seal. To every Roman citizen he gives, To every several man, seventy-five drachmas.\*

*2 Cit.* Most noble Cesar!—we'll revenge his death.

*3 Cit.* O royal Cesar!

*Ant.* Hear me with patience.

*Cit.* Peace, ho!

*Ant.* Moreover, he hath left you all his walks, His private arbours, and new-planted orchards, On this side Tyber; he hath left them you, And to your heirs for ever; common pleasures,† To walk abroad, and recreate yourselves. Here was a Cesar: When comes such another?

*1 Cit.* Never, never:—Come, away, away: We'll burn his body in the holy place. And with the brands fire the traitors' houses. Take up the body.

*2 Cit.* Go, fetch fire.

*3 Cit.* Pluck down benches.

*4 Cit.* Pluck down forms, windows, any thing. *[Exit CITIZENS, with the Body.]*

*Ant.* Now let it work: Mischief, thou art afoot, Take thou what course thou wilt!—How now, fellow?

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Serv.* Sir, Octavius is already come to Rome.

*Ant.* Where is he?

*Serv.* He and Lepidus are at Cesar's house.

*Ant.* And thither will I straight to visit him: He comes upon a wish: Fortune is merry, And in this mood will give us any thing.

*Serv.* I heard him say, Brutus and Cassius Are rid like madmen through the gates of Rome.

*Ant.* Belike, they had some notice of the people, How I had mov'd them. Bring me to Octavius. *[Exit.]*

*SCENE III.—The same.—A street.*

*Enter CINNA, the Poet.*

*Cin.* I dreamt to night, that I did feast with Cesar, And things unluckily charge my fantasy: § I have no will to wander forth of doors, Yet something leads me forth.

*Enter CITIZENS.*

*1 Cit.* What is your name?

*2 Cit.* Whither are you going?

*3 Cit.* Where do you dwell?

*4 Cit.* Are you a married man, or a bachelor?

*2 Cit.* Answer every man directly.

*1 Cit.* Ay, and briefly.

*4 Cit.* Ay, and wisely.

*3 Cit.* Ay, and truly, you were best.

*Cin.* What is my name? Whither am I going? Where do I dwell? Am I a married man, or a bachelor? Then to answer every man directly, and briefly, wisely, and truly. Wisely I say, I am a bachelor.

*2 Cit.* That's as much as to say, they are fools that marry:—You'll bear me a bang for that, I fear. Proceed; directly.

*Cin.* Directly, I am going to Cesar's funeral.

*1 Cit.* As a friend, or an enemy?

*Cin.* As a friend.

*2 Cit.* That matter is answered directly.

*4 Cit.* For your dwelling,—briefly.

*Cin.* Briefly, I dwell by the Capitol.

*3 Cit.* Your name, Sir, truly.

*Cin.* Truly, my name is Cinna.

*1 Cit.* Tear him to pieces, he's a conspirator.

*Cin.* I am Cinna the poet, I am Cinna the poet.

*4 Cit.* Tear him for his bad verses, tear him for his bad verses.

*2 Cit.* It is no matter, his name's Cinna;

\* A drachma is 7d. sterling.—2s. 3d. † Pleasure-grounds. ‡ His coming is the very thing I wished for. § My mind is oppressed with ill-omens.

pluck but his name out of his heart, and turn him going.

*3 Cit.* Tear him, tear him. Come, brands, ho! fire-brands. To Brutus', to Cassius'; burn all. Some to Decius' house, and some to Calpurnia's; some to Ligarius': away; go. *[Exit.]*

## ACT IV.

*SCENE I.—The same.—A room in ANTONY'S House.*

ANTONY, OCTAVIUS, and LEPIDUS, seated at a Table.

*Ant.* These many then shall die; their names are prick'd.

*Oct.* Your brother too must die; Consent you, Lepidus?

*Lep.* I do consent.

*Oct.* Prick him down, Antony.

*Lep.* Upon condition Publius shall not live,

Who is your sister's son, Mark Antony.

*Ant.* He shall not live; look, with a spot I damn him.

But, Lepidus, go you to Cesar's house; Fetch the will hither, and we will determine How to cut off some charge in legacies.

*Lep.* What, shall I find you here?

*Oct.* Or here, or at

The Capitol. *[Exit LEPIDUS.]*

*Ant.* This is a slight unmeritable man, Meet to be sent on errands: Is it fit, The three-fold world divided, he should stand One of the three to share it?

*Oct.* So you thought him; And took his voice who should be prick'd to die, In our black sentence and proscription.

*Ant.* Octavius, I have seen more days than you; And though we lay these honours on this man; To ease ourselves of divers slanderous loads, He shall but bear them as the ass bears gold; To groan and sweat under the business, Either led or driven, as we point the way, And, having brought our treasure where we will, Then take we down his load, and turn him off, Like to the empty ass, to shake his ears, And graze in commons.

*Oct.* You may do your will;

But he's a tried and valiant soldier.

*Ant.* So is my horse, Octavius; and, for that, I do appoint him store of provender.

It is a creature that I teach to fight,

To wind, to stop, to run directly on;

His corporal motion govern'd by my spirit.

And, in some taste, is Lepidus but so;

He must be taught, and train'd, and bid go forth;

A barren-spirited fellow; one that feeds

On objects, arts, and imitations;

Which, out of use, and stall'd by other men,

Begin his fashion: Do not talk of him,

But as a property. And now, Octavius,

Listen great things.—Brutus and Cassius,

Are levying powers: we must straight make head;

Therefore, let our alliance be combin'd,

Our best friends made, and our best means

stretch'd out;

And let us presently go sit in council,

How covert matters may be best disclos'd,

And open perils surest answered.

*Oct.* Let us do so: for we are at the stake,

And bay'd § about with many enemies;

And so, that smile, have in their hearts, I fear

Millions of mischief. *[Exit.]*

*SCENE II.—Before BRUTUS' Tent, in the Camp near Sardis.*

*Drum.—Enter BRUTUS, LUCILIUS, LUCIUS, and Soldiers: TITINIUS and PINDARUS meeting them.*

*Bru.* Stand hence.

\* Note. † Condemn. ‡ A; a thing at our dispose § Surrounded.

*Luc.* Give the word, ho ! and stand.

*Br.* What now, Lucilius ? is Cassius near ?

*Luc.* He is at hand ; and Pindarus is come To do you salutation from his master.

[PINDARUS gives a letter to BRUTUS.]

*Br.* He greets me well.—Your master, Pin- In his own change, or by ill officers, Pindarus, Hath given me some worthy cause to wish Things done, undone : but, if he be at hand, I shall be satisfied.

*Pin.* I do not doubt

But that my noble master will appear Such as he is, full of regard, and honour.

*Br.* He is not doubted.—A word, Lucilius : How he received you, let me be resoly'd.\*

*Luc.* With courtest, and with respect enough ; But not with such familiar instances, Nor with such free and friendly conference As he hath used of old.

*Br.* Thou hast describ'd

A hot friend cooling : Ever note, Lucilius, When love begins to sicken and decay, It useth an enforced ceremony.

There are no tricks in plain and simple faith : But hollow men, like horses hot at hand, Make gallant show and promise of their mettle : But when they should endure the bloody spur, They fall their crests, and like deceitful jades Sink in the trial. Comes his army on ?

*Luc.* They mean this night in Saidis to be quarter'd :

The greater part, the horse in general, Are come with Cassius. [March within.]

*Br.* Hark, he is arriv'd :— March gently on to meet him.

Enter CASSIUS and Soldiers.

*Cas.* Stand, ho !

*Br.* Stand, ho ! Speak the word aloud.

*Within.* Stand.

*Within.* Stand.

*Cas.* Most noble brother, you have done me wrong

*Br.* Judge me, you gods ! Wrong I mine enemies ?

And, if not so, how should I wrong a brother ? *Cas.* Brutus, this sober form of yours hides And when you do them— [wroongs ;

*Br.* Cassius, be content, Speak your griefs softly,—I do know you well.— Before the eyes of both our armies here, Which should perceive nothing but love from us, Let us not wrangle : Bid them move away ; Then in my tent, Cassius, enlarge your griefs, And I will give you audience.

*Cas.* Pindarus,

Bid our commanders lead their charges off A little from this ground.

*Br.* Lucilius, do the like ; and let no man Come to our tent till we have done our conference.

Let Lucius and Titinius guard our door.

[Exit.]

SCENE III.—Within the tent of BRUTUS.— LUCIUS and TITINIUS at some distance from it.

Enter BRUTUS and CASSIUS.

*Cas.* That you have wrong'd me, doth appear in this :

You have condemn'd and not'd ? Lucius Pella, For taking bribes here of the Saidians ; Wherein, my letters, praying on his side, Because I knew the man, were slighted off.

*Br.* You wrong'd yourself, to write in such a case.

*Cas.* In such a time as this, it is not meet That every nice offence should bear his comment.

*Br.* Let me tell you, Cassius, you yourself

Are much condemn'd to have an itching palm To sell and matt your offices for gold, To undeservers.

*Cas.* I an itching palm ?

You know that you are Brutus that speak this, Or, by the gods, this speech were else your last.

*Br.* The name of Cassius honours this corruption,

And chastisement doth therefore hide his head.

*Cas.* Chastisement !

*Br.* Remember March, the ides of March remember !

Did not great Julius bleed for justice' sake ?

What villain touch'd his body, that did stab, And not for justice ? What, shall one of us,

That struck the foremost man of all this world, But for supporting robbers—shall we now

Contaminate our fingers with base bribes, And sell the mighty space of our large honours,

For so much trash as may be grasped thus ?— I'd rather be a dog, and bay \* the moon,

Than such a Roman.

*Cas.* Brutus, bay not me, I'll not endure it : you forget yourself,

To hedge me in ; I am a soldier, I Older in practice, abler than yourself

To make conditions.†

*Br.* Go to ; you're not, Cassius.

*Cas.* I am.

*Br.* I say, you are not.

*Cas.* Urge me no more, I shall forget myself ; Have mind upon your health, tempt me no further.

*Br.* Away, slight man !

*Cas.* Is't possible ?

*Br.* Hear me, for I will speak.

Must I give way and room to your rash choler ? Shall I be frightened, when a madman states ?

*Cas.* O gods ! ye gods ! Must I endure all this ?

*Br.* All this ! ay, more : Fret till your proud heart break ;

Go, show your slaves how choleric you are, And make your bondmen tremble. Must I budge ?

Must I observe you ? Must I stand and crouch Under your testy humour ? By the gods,

You shall digest the venom of your spleen, Though it do split you ; for from this day forth,

I'll use you for my mirth, yea, for my laughter, When you are waspish.

*Cas.* Is it come to this ?

*Br.* You say, you are a better soldier :

Let it appear so, make your vaunting true, And it shall please me well : For mine own part,

I shall be glad to learn of nobler men.

*Cas.* You wrong me every way, you wrong me, Brutus ;

I said an elder soldier not a better :

Did I say, better ?

*Br.* If you did, I care not.

*Cas.* When Cesar liv'd he durst not thus have mov'd me.

*Br.* Peace, peace ; you durst not so have tempted him.

*Cas.* I durst not ?

*Br.* No.

*Cas.* What ? durst not tempt him ?

*Br.* For your life you durst not.

*Cas.* Do not presume too much upon my love, I may do that I shall be sorry for.

*Br.* You have done that you should be sorry for.

There is no terror, Cassius, in your threats ; For I am arm'd so strong in honesty,

That they pass by me as the idle wind, Which I respect not. I did send to you

For certain sums of gold, which you denied me ;— For I can raise no money by vile means ;

By heaven I had rather coin my heart,

And drop my blood for drachmas, than to wring From the hard hands of peasants their vile trash

By any indirection. I did send

To you for gold to pay my legions,

\* Inform'd

† Exposed.

† Complaints.

‡ Small.

\* Bark at.

† To confer the offices at my disposal.

Which you denied me :—Was that done like Cassius ?

Should I have answer'd Caius Cassius so ?  
When Marcus Brutus grows so covetous,  
To lock such rascal counters from his friends,  
Be ready, gods, with all your thunderbolts,  
Dash him to pieces !

*Cas.* I denied you not.

*Bru.* You did.

*Cas.* I did not :—he was but a fool,  
That brought my answer back.—Brutus hath  
riv'd \* my heart :

A friend should bear his friend's infirmities,  
But Brutus makes mine greater than they are.

*Bru.* I do not, till you practise them on me.

*Cas.* You love me not.

*Bru.* I do not like your faults.

*Cas.* A friendly eye could never see such  
faults,

*Bru.* A flatterer's would not though they do  
appear

As huge as high Olympus

*Cas.* Come, Antony, and young Octavius, come,  
Revenge yourselves alone on Cassius !

But Cassius is aware of the world :

Hated by one he loves ; brav'd by his brother ;  
Check'd like a bondman ; all his faults observ'd,  
Set in a note-book, learn'd ; and conn'd by rote,  
To cast into my teeth. Oh ! I could weep

My spirit from mine eyes !—There is my dagger,  
And here my naked breast ; within, a heart  
Dearer than Plutus' mine, richer than gold :

If that thou be'st a Roman, take it forth ;  
I, that denied thee gold, will give my heart :  
Strike, as thou didst at Cesar ; for I know,  
When thou didst hate him worse, thou lov'd'st  
him better.

Than ever thou lov'd'st Cassius.

*Bru.* Sheath your dagger :

Be angry when you will, it shall have scope ;

Do what you will, dishonour shall be humour.

O Cassius, you are voked with a lamb

That carries anger, as the flint bears fire ;

Which, much enforc'd, shows a hasty spark,

And straight is cold again.

*Cas.* Hath Cassius liv'd

To be but mirth and laughter to his Brutus,  
When grief, and blood ill-temper'd, vexeth  
him ?

*Bru.* When I spoke that, I was ill-temper'd  
too.

*Cas.* Do you confess so much ? Give me your  
hand.

*Bru.* And my heart too.

*Cas.* O Brutus !—

*Bru.* What's the matter ?

*Cas.* Have you not love enough to bear with  
me, [me,

When that rash humour which my mother gave  
makes me forgetful ?

*Bru.* Yes, Cassius ; and, henceforth,

When you are over-earnest with your Brutus,  
He'll think your mother chides, and leave you so.

[Noise within.

*Poet.* [Within.] Let me go in to see the ge-  
nerals ;

There is some grudge between them, 'tis not meet  
they be alone.

*Luc.* [Within.] You shall not come to them.

*Poet.* [Within.] Nothing but death shall  
stay me.

*Enter Poet.*

*Cas.* How now ? What's the matter ?

*Poet.* For shame, you generals : What do you  
mean ?

Love, and be friends, as two such men should be ;  
For I have seen more years, I'm sure, than ye.

*Cas.* Ha, ha ; how vilely doth this cynic  
rhyme !

*Bru.* Get you hence, Sirrah : saucy fellow,  
hence.

*Cas.* Bear with him, Brutus ; 'tis his fashion.

\* *Rent.*

*Bru.* I'll know his humour, when he knows  
his time :

What should the wars do with the juggling \* fool's  
Companion, ? hence.

*Cas.* Away, away, be gone.

[Exit Poet

*Enter Lucilius and Titinius.*

*Bru.* Lucilius and Titinius, bid the com-  
manders

Prepare to lodge their companies to-night.

*Cas.* And come yourselves, and bring Mes-  
sala with you

Immediately to us.

[Exit Lucilius and Titinius.

*Bru.* Lucius, a bowl of wine.

*Cas.* I did not think, you could have been so  
angry.

*Bru.* O Cassius, I am sick of many griefs.

*Cas.* Of your philosophy you make no use,  
If you give place to accidental evils.

*Bru.* No man bears sorrow better :—Portia  
is dead.

*Cas.* Ha ! Portia ?

*Bru.* She is dead.

*Cas.* How 'scap'd I killing, when I cross'd  
you so ?—

O insupportable and touching loss !—

Upon what sickness ?

*Bru.* Impatient of my absence ;

And grief, that young Octavius with Mark Antony  
Have made themselves so strong ;—for with her  
death

That tidings came ;—With this she fell distract,  
And, her attendants absent, swallow'd me.

*Cas.* And died so ?

*Bru.* Even so.

*Cas.* O ye immortal gods !

*Enter Lucius, with Wine and Tapers.*

*Bru.* Speak no more of her.—Give me a bowl  
of wine :—

In this I bury all unkindness, Cassius.

*Cas.* My heart is thirsty for that noble  
pledge :—

Fill, Lucius, till the wine o'erswell the cup ;  
I cannot drink too much of Brutus' love.

[Drinks.

*Re-enter Titinius, with Messala.*

*Bru.* Come in, Titinius—Welcome, good  
Messala.

Now sit we close about this taper here,

And call in question our necessities.

*Cas.* Portia, art thou gone ?

*Bru.* No more, I pray you.—

Messala, I have here received letters,  
That young Octavius, and Mark Antony

Come down upon us with a mighty power,  
Bending their expedition toward Philippi.

*Mess.* Myself have letters of the self-same  
tenour.

*Bru.* With what addition ?

*Mess.* That by proscription, and bills of out-  
Octavius, Antony, and Lepidus, [lawy,

Have put to death a hundred senators.

*Bru.* Their own letters do not well agree ;

Mine speak of seventy senators, that died  
By their proscriptions, Cicero being one.

*Cas.* Cicero one ?

*Mess.* Ay, Cicero is dead,

And by that order of proscription,—

Had you your letters from your wife, my lord ?

*Bru.* No, Messala.

*Mess.* Nor nothing in your letters writ of  
her ?

*Bru.* Nothing, Messala.

*Mess.* That, methinks, is strange.

*Bru.* Why ask you ? Hear you aught of her  
in yours ?

*Mess.* No, my lord.

\* *Jig*, signified a metrical composition.  
? A term of reproach.

**Bru.** Now, as you are a Roman, tell me true.  
**Mes.** Then like a Roman bear the truth I tell:  
 For certain she is dead, and by strange manner.  
**Bru.** Why, farewell, Portia.—We must die,  
 Messala:

With meditating that she must die once,\*  
 I have the patience to endure it now.  
**Mes.** Even so great men great losses should  
 endure.

**Cas.** I have as much of this in art† as you,  
 But yet my nature could not bear it so.

**Bru.** Well, to our work alive. What do you  
 think

Of marching to Philippi presently?

**Cas.** I do not think it good.

**Bru.** Your reason?

**Cas.** This it is:

'Tis better that the enemy seek us:  
 So shall he waste his means, weary his soldiers,  
 Doing himself offence; whilst we, lying still,  
 Are full of rest, defence, and numbness.

**Bru.** Good reasons must, of force, give place  
 to better.

The people, 'twixt Philippi and this ground,  
 Do stand but in a forced affection;  
 For they have grudg'd us contribution;  
 The enemy, marching along by them,  
 By them shall make a fuller number up,  
 Come on refresh'd, new-added, and encourag'd:  
 From which advantage shall we cut him off,  
 If at Philippi we do face him there,  
 These people at our back.

**Cas.** Hear me, good brother.

**Bru.** Under your pardon—you must note be-  
 side,

That we have tried the utmost of our friends,  
 Our legions are brim-full, our cause is ripe:  
 The enemy increaseth every day,  
 We, at the height, are ready to decline.  
 There is a tide in the affairs of men,  
 Which, taken at the flood, leads on to fortune;  
 Omitted, all the voyage of their life  
 Is bound in shallows, and in miseries.  
 On such a full sea are we now afloat;  
 And we must take the current when it serves,  
 Or lose our ventures.

**Cas.** Then, with your will, go on;  
 We'll along ourselves, and meet them at Phil-  
 lippi.

**Bru.** The deep of night is crept upon our talk,  
 And nature must obey necessity;  
 Which we will nigard with a little rest.  
 There is no more to say?

**Cas.** No more. Good night;  
 Early to-morrow will we rise, and hence.

**Bru.** Lucius, my gown. [*Exit LUCIUS.*] Fare-  
 well, good Messala.—

Good night, Titinius:—Noble, noble Cassius,  
 Good night, and good repose.

**Cas.** O my dear brother!  
 This was an ill beginning of the night:  
 Never come such division 'tween our souls!  
 Let it not, Brutus.

**Bru.** Every thing is well.

**Cas.** Good night, my lord.

**Bru.** Good night, good brother.

**Tit. Mes.** Good night, lord Brutus.

**Bru.** Farewell, every one.

[*Exit CAS. TIT. and MES.*]

*Re-enter LUCIUS with the Gown.*

Give me the gown. Where is thy instrument?

**Luc.** Here in the tent.

**Bru.** What, thou speak'st drowsily?  
 Poor knave, I blame thee not; thou art o'er-  
 watch'd.

Call Claudius, and some other of my men;  
 I'll have them sleep on cushions in my tent.

**Luc.** Varro, and Claudius!

*Enter VARRO and CLAUDIUS.*

**Var.** Calls my lord?

**Bru.** I pray you, Sirs, lie in my tent, and  
 sleep;

It may be I shall raise you by and by  
 On business to my brother Cassius.

**Var.** So please you, we will stand, and watch  
 your pleasure.

**Bru.** I will not have it so; lie down, good  
 Sirs;

It may be, I shall otherwise bethink me.

Look, Lucius, here's the book I sought for so:  
 I put it in the pocket of my gown.

[*Servants lie down.*]

**Luc.** I was sure your lordship did not give  
 it me.

**Bru.** Bear with me, good boy, I am much  
 forgetful.

Canst thou hold up thy heavy eyes awhile,  
 And touch thy instrument a strain or two?

**Luc.** Ay, my lord, an it please you.

**Bru.** It does, my boy:

I trouble thee too much, but thou art willing

**Luc.** It is my duty, Sir.

**Bru.** I should not urge thy duty past thy  
 might;

I know, young bloods look for a time of rest.

**Luc.** I have slept, my lord, already.

**Bru.** It is well done; and thou shalt sleep  
 again;

I will not hold thee long: if I do live,

I will be good to thee.

[*Music, and a Song.*]

This is a sleepy tune:—O murderous slumber!  
 Lay'st thou thy leaden mace upon my boy,  
 That plays thee music?—Gentle knave, good  
 night;

I will not do thee so much wrong to wake thee  
 If thou dost nod, thou break'st thy instrument,  
 I'll take it from thee; and, good boy, good  
 night.

Let me see, let me see;—Is not the leaf turn'd  
 down,

Where I left reading? Here it is, I think.

[*He sits down.*]

*Enter the GHOST of CESAR.*

How ill this taper burns!—Ha! who comes  
 here?

I think, it is the weakness of mine eyes  
 That shapes this monstrous apparition,  
 It comes upon me:—Art thou any thing?  
 Art thou some god, some angel, or some devil,  
 That mak'st my blood cold, and my hair to stare?  
 Speak to me, what thou art.

**Ghost.** Thy evil spirit, Brutus.

**Bru.** Why com'st thou?

**Ghost.** To tell thee, thou shalt see me at  
 Philippi.

**Bru.** Well;

Then I shall see thee again?

**Ghost.** Ay, at Philippi.

[*Ghost vanishes.*]

**Bru.** Why, I will see thee at Philippi  
 then.—

Now I have taken heart thou vanishest:  
 Ill spirit, I would hold more talk with thee.—  
 Boy! Lucius!—A voice! Claudius! Sirs, awake!—  
 Claudius!

**Luc.** The strings, my lord, are false.

**Bru.** He thinks he still is at his instrument.—  
 Lucius, awake.

**Luc.** My lord!

**Bru.** Didst thou dream, Lucius, that thou so  
 cry'dst out?

**Luc.** My lord, I do not know that I did cry.

**Bru.** Yes, that thou didst: Didst thou see any  
 thing?

**Luc.** Nothing, my lord.

**Bru.** Sleep again, Lucius.—Sirrah, Claudius!  
 Fellow thou! awake.

**Var.** My lord.

**Clau.** My lord.

**Bru.** Why did you so cry out, Sirs, in your  
 sleep?

\* At some time or other.

† In theory.

\* Sceptre.

*Var. Clau.* Did we, my lord?

*Bru. Ay:* Saw you any thing?

*Var.* No, my lord, I saw nothing.

*Clau.* Nor I, my lord.

*Bru.* Go, and commend me to my brother

Cassius;

Did him set on his powers betimes before,  
And we will follow.

*Var. Clau.* It shall be done, my lord.

[*Exeunt.*]

# ACT V.

## SCENE I.—The Plains of Philippi.

*Enter OCTAVIUS ANTONY, and their Army.*

*Oct.* Now, Antony, our hopes are answered:  
You said, the enemy would not come down,  
But keep the hills and upper regions;  
It proves not so; their battles are at hand;  
They mean to warn\* us at Philippi here,  
Answering before we do demand of them.

*Ant.* Tut, I am in their bosoms, and I know  
Wherefore they do it: they could be content  
To visit other places; and come down  
With fearful bravery, thinking, by this face,  
To fasten in our thoughts that they have courage;  
But 'tis not so.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Prepare you, generals:  
The enemy comes on in gallant show;  
Then bloody sign of battle is hung out,  
And something to be done immediately.

*Ant.* Octavius, lead your battle softly on.  
Upon the left hand of the even field.

*Oct.* Upon the right hand I, keep thou the left.

*Ant.* Why do you cross me in this exigent?

*Oct.* I do not cross you; but I will do so.

[*March.*]

*Drum. Enter BRUTUS, CASSIUS, and their army, LUCILIUS, TITINIUS, MESSALA, and theirs.*

*Bru.* They stand, and would have parley.

*Cas.* Stand fast, Titinius: We must out and talk.

*Oct.* Mark Antony, shall we give sign of battle?

*Ant.* No, Cesar, we will answer on their charge.

Make forth, the generals would have some words.  
*Oct.* Stir not until the signal.

*Bru.* Words before blows: Is it so, countrymen?

*Oct.* Not that we love words better, as you do.

*Bru.* Good words are better than bad strokes, Octavius.

*Ant.* In your bad strokes, Brutus, you give good words:

Witness the hole you made in Cesar's heart,  
Crying, *Long live 't' Caesar!*

*Cas.* Antony,

The posture of your blows are yet unknown,  
But for your words, they rob the Hybla bees  
And leave them honeyless.

*Ant.* Not stingsless too.

*Bru.* Oh! yes, and soundless too;  
For you have stol'n their buzzing, Antony,  
And very wisely, threat before you sting.

*Ant.* Vainurs, you did not so, when your vile daggers

Hack'd one another in the sides of Cesar:

You show'd your teeth like apes, and fawn'd like hounds,

And bow'd like bondmen, kissing Cesar's feet;

Whilst damned Casca, like a cur, behind,

Struck Cesar on the neck. O flatterers!

*Cas.* Flatterers!—Now, Brutus, thank yourself:

This tongue had not offended so to-day,  
If Cassius might have rul'd.

*Oct.* Come, come, the cause: If arguing make us sweat,

The proof of it will turn to redder drops.

Look;

I draw a sword against conspirators;

When think you that the sword goes up again?—

Never, till Cesar's three and twenty wounds

Be well aveng'd; or till another Cesar

Have added slaughter to the sword of traitors,

*Bru.* Cesar, thou can'st not die by traitors,

Unless thou bring'st them with thee.

*Oct.* So I hope;

I was not born to die on Brutus' sword.

*Bru.* Oh! if thou wert the noblest of thy

strain,

Young man, thou could'st not die more honourable.

*Cas.* A peevish school-boy, worthless of such

honour,

Join'd with a masker and a reveller.

*Ant.* Old Cassius still!

*Oct.* Come, Antony; away.—

Defiance, traitors, hurl we in your teeth:

If you dare fight to-day, come to the field;

If not, when you have stomachs.

[*Exeunt OCTAVIUS, ANTONY,*

*and their Army.*]

*Cas.* Why now, blow, wind; swell, billow;

and swim, bark!

The storm is up, and all is on the hazard.

*Bru.* Ho!

Lucilius; bark, a word with you.

*Luc.* My lord.

[*BRUTUS and LUCILIUS converse apart.*]

*Cas.* Messala,—

*Mes.* What says my general?

*Cas.* Messala,

This is my birth-day; as this very day

Was Cassius born. Give me thy hand, Messala:

Be thou my witness, that, against my will,

As Pompey was, am I compell'd to set

Upon one battle all our liberties.

You know, that I held Epicurus strong,

And his opinion: now I change my mind,

And partly credit things that do presage.

Coming from Sardis, on our former ensign\*

Two mighty eagles fell; and there they perch'd,

Gorging and feeding from our soldiers' hands,

Who to Philippi here consorted us.

This morning are they fled away and gone;

And, in their steads, do ravens, crows, and kites,

Fly o'er our heads, and downward look on us,

As we were sickly prey; their shadows seem

A canopy most fatal, under which

Our army lies, ready to give up the ghost.

*Mes.* Believe not so.

*Cas.* I but believe it partly;

For I am fresh of spirit, and resolv'd

To meet all perils very constantly.

*Bru.* Even so, Lucilius.

*Cas.* Now, most noble Brutus,

The gods to-day stand friendly; that we may,

Lovers in peace, lead on our days to age!

But, since the affairs of men rest still uncertain,

Let's reason with the worst that may befall.

If we do lose this battle, then is this

The very last time we shall speak together;

What are you then determined to do?

*Bru.* Even by the rule of that philosophy,

By which I did blame Cato for the death

Which he did give himself—(I know not how,

But I do find it cowardly and vile,

For fear of what might fall, so to prevent

The time of life)—aiming myself with patience,

To stay the providence of some high powers,

That govern us below.

*Cas.* Then, if we lose this battle,

You are contented to be led in triumph

Through the streets of Rome?

*Bru.* No, Cassius, no: think not, thou noble

Roman,

\* Summon.

\* First standard.

† Accompanied.



That ever Brutus will go bound to Rome :  
He bears too great a mind. But this same day  
Must end that work the ides of March begun ;  
And whether we shall meet again, I know not.  
Therefore our everlasting farewell take :—  
For ever, and for ever, farewell, Cassius !  
If we do meet again, why we shall smile ;  
If not, why then this parting was well made.  
*Cas.* For ever, and for ever, farewell, Brutus !  
If we do meet again, we'll smile indeed !  
If not, 'tis true this parting was well made.  
*Bru.* Why then, lead on.—Oh ! that a man  
might know  
The end of this day's business ere it come !  
But it sufficeth that the day will end,  
And then the end is known.—Come, ho ! away !  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same.—The Field of Battle.*

*Alarum.—Enter BRUTUS and MESSALA.*

*Bru.* Ride, ride, Messala, ride, and give these  
bills.  
Unto the legions on the other side :  
[*Loud Alarum.*]  
Let them set on at once ; for I perceive  
But cold demerour in Octavius' wing,  
And sudden push tells them the overthrow.  
Ride, ride, Messala : let them all come down.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.—Another part of the Field.*

*Alarum.—Enter CASSIUS and TITINIUS.*

*Cas.* O, look, Titinius, look, the villains fly !  
Myself have to mine own turn'd enemy :  
This ensign here of mine was turning back ;  
I slew the coward, and did take it from him.  
*Tit.* O Cassius, Brutus gave the word too  
early ;  
Who having some advantage on Octavius,  
Took it too largely, his soldiers fell to spoil,  
Whilst we by Antony are all enclosed.

*Enter PINDARUS.*

*Pin.* Fly further off, my lord, fly further off ;  
Mark Antony is in your tents, my lord !  
Fly therefore, noble Cassius, fly far off.  
*Cas.* This hill is far enough. Look, look, Ti-  
tinius ;  
Are those my tents, where I perceive the file ?  
*Tit.* They are, my lord.  
*Cas.* Titinius, if thou lov'st me,  
Mount thou my horse, and hide thy spurs in  
him,  
Till he have brought thee up to yonder troops,  
And here again ; that I may rest assur'd,  
Whether yond' troops are friend or enemy.  
*Tit.* I will be here again, even with a thought.  
[*Exit.*]

*Cas.* Go, Pindarus, get higher on that hill ;  
My sight was ever thick, regard Titinius,  
And tell me what thou not'st about the field.—  
[*Exit PINDARUS.*]

This day I breathed first : time is come round,  
And where I did begin, there I shall end ;  
My life has run his compass.—Sirrah, what news ?  
*Pin.* [Above.] O my lord !

*Cas.* What news ?  
*Pin.* Titinius is

Enclosed round about with horsemen, that  
Make to him on the spur ;—yet he spurs on.—  
Now they are almost on him ; now, Titinius !—  
Now some light !—Oh ! he 'lights too :—he's  
ta'en ;—and, hark !  
[*Shout.*]

They shout for joy.  
*Cas.* Come down, behold no more.—  
O coward that I am, to live so long,  
To see my best friend ta'en before my face !

\* Billets containing directions.

*Enter PINDARUS.*

Come hither, Sirrah :  
In Parthia did I take thee prisoner ;  
And then I swore thee, saving of thy life,  
That whatsoever I did bid thee do,  
Thou should'st attempt it. Come now, keep  
thine oath !  
Now be a freeman : and, with this good sword,  
That ran through Cesar's bowels, search this  
bosom.  
Stand not to answer ; Here, take thou the hilts ;  
And, when my face is cover'd as 'tis now,  
Guide thou the sword. Cesar, thou art reveng'd,  
Even with the sword that kill'd thee.  
[*Die.*]

*Pin.* So, I am free ; yet would not so have been,  
Durst I have done my will. O Cassius !  
Far from this country Pindarus shall run,  
Where never Roman shall take note of him.  
[*Exit.*]

*Re-enter TITINIUS, with MESSALA.*

*Mes.* It is but change, Titinius, for Octavius  
Is overthrown by noble Brutus' power,  
As Cassius' legions are by Antony.

*Tit.* These tidings will well comfort Cassius.  
*Mes.* Where did you leave him ?

*Tit.* All disconsolate,  
With Pindarus his bondman, on this hill.  
*Mes.* Is not that he, that lies upon the  
ground ?

*Tit.* He lies not like the living. O my heart !  
*Mes.* Is not that he ?

*Tit.* No, this was he, Messala,  
But Cassius is no more.—O setting sun !  
As in thy red rays thou dost sink to night,  
So in his red blood Cassius' day is set ;  
The sun of Rome is set ! Our day is gone ;  
Clouds, dews, and dangers come ; our deeds are  
done !

Mistrust of my success hath done this deed.  
*Mes.* Mistrust of good success hath done  
this deed.

O hateful error, melancholy's child !  
Why did'st thou show to the apt thoughts of men  
The things that are not ? O error, soon con-  
cay'd,

Thou never com'st unto a happy birth,  
But kill'st the mother that engender'd thee.

*Tit.* What, Pindarus ! Where art thou, Pin-  
darus ?

*Mes.* Seek him, Titinius : whilst I go to meet  
The noble Brutus, thrusting this report  
Into his ears. I may say, thrusting it :  
For piercing steel, and darts envenom'd,  
Shall be as welcome to the ears of Brutus,  
As tidings of this sight.

*Tit.* Hie you, Messala,  
And I will seek for Pindarus the while.

[*Exit MESSALA.*]

Why didst thou send me forth, brave Cassius ?  
Did I not meet thy friends ? and did not they  
Put on my brows this wreath of victory,  
And bid me give't thee ? Didst thou not hear  
their shouts ?

Alas ! thou hast misconstrued every thing.  
But hold thee, take this garland on thy brow ;  
Thy Brutus bid me give it thee, and I  
Will do his bidding.—Brutus, come apace,  
And see how I regarded Cæsar Cassius.—  
By your leave, gods :—This is a Roman's part :  
Come, Cassius' sword, and find Titinius' heart.  
[*Die.*]

*Alarum. Re-enter MESSALA, with BRUTUS,  
young CATO, STRATO, VOLUMINIUS, and LU-  
CILIUS.*

*Bru.* Where, where, Messala, doth his body  
lie ?

*Mes.* Lo, yonder ; and Titinius mourning it.

*Bru.* Titinius' face is upward.

*Cato.* He is slain.

*Bru.* O Julius Cesar, thou art mighty yet !

Thy spirit walks abroad, and turns our swords  
In our own proper entrails.

[*Low Alarums.*]

*Cato.* Brave Titinius!  
Look, wh'er he have not crown'd dead Cassius!  
*Bru.* Aie yet two Romans living such as  
these?—

The last of all the Romans, fare thee well!  
It is impossible that ever Rome  
Should breed thy fellow.—Friends, I owe more  
tears

To this dead man, than you shall see me pay.—  
I shall find time, Cassius, I shall find time.—  
Come, therefore, and to Thassos send his body;  
His funeral shall not be in our camp,  
Lest it discomf'ort us.—Lucilius, come;  
—And come, young Cato; let us to the field.—  
Labeo, and Flavius, set our battles on:—  
'Tis three o'clock; and, Romans, yet e'er night  
We shall try fortune in a second fight.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another part of the field.*

*Alarum.*—*Enter, fighting, Soldiers of both  
Armies; then BRUTUS, CATO, LUCILIUS, and  
others.*

*Bru.* Yet, countrymen, oh! yet hold up your  
heads!

*Cato.* What bastard doth not? Who will go  
with me?

I will proclaim my name about the field:—  
I am the son of Marcus Cato, ho!  
A foe to tyrants, and my country's friend:  
I am the son of Marcus Cato, ho!

[*Charges the Enemy.*]

*Bru.* And I am Brutus, Marcus Brutus, I;  
Brutus, my country's friend; know me for  
Brutus.

[*Exit, charging the Enemy. CATO is  
overpowered and falls.*]

*Luc.* O young and noble Cato, art thou  
down?

Why, now thou diest as bravely as Titinius;  
And may'st be honour'd being Cato's son.

1 *Sold.* Yield, or thou diest.

*Luc.* Only I yield to die:

There is so much that thou wilt kill me straight;  
[*Offering Money.*]  
Kill Brutus, and be honour'd in his death.

1 *Sold.* We must not.—A noble prisoner!

2 *Sold.* Room, ho! Tell Antony, Brutus is  
ta'en.

*Sold.* I'll tell the news.—Here comes the  
general:—

*Enter ANTONY.*

Brutus is ta'en, Brutus is ta'en, my lord.

*Ant.* Where is he?

*Luc.* Safe, Antony; Brutus is safe enough:  
I dare assure thee, that no enemy  
Shall ever take alive the noble Brutus:  
The gods descend him from so great a shame!  
When you do find him, or alive, or dead,  
He will be found like Brutus, like himself.

*Ant.* This is not Brutus, friend; but, I as-  
sume you.

A prize no less in worth: keep this man safe,  
Give him all kindness; I had rather have  
Such men my friends than enemies. Go on,  
And see wh'er Brutus be alive or dead:  
And bring us word unto Octavius' tent,  
How every thing is chanc'd.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*Another part of the Field.*

*Enter BRUTUS, DARDANIUS, CLITUS, STRATO,  
and VOLUMINIUS.*

*Bru.* Come, poor remains of friends, rest on  
this rock.

• Into our own bodies.

*Cl.* Statilius show'd the torch-light; but, my  
lord,

He came not back; he is or ta'en, or slain.

*Bru.* Sit thee down, Clitus: Slaying is the  
word;

It is a deed in fashion. Hark thee, Clitus.—

[*Whispering.*]

*Cl.* What, I, my lord? No, not for all the  
world.

*Bru.* Peace then, no words.

*Cl.* I'll rather kill myself

*Bru.* Hark thee, Dardanius!

[*Whispers him.*]

*Dar.* I do such a deed?

*Cl.* O Dardanius!

*Dar.* O Clitus!

*Cl.* What ill request did Brutus make to  
thee?

*Dar.* To kill him, Clitus: Look, he medi-  
tates.

*Cl.* Now is that noble vessel full of grief,  
That it runs over even at his eyes.

*Bru.* Come hither, good Voluminius; list a  
word.

*Vol.* What says my lord?

*Bru.* Why, this, Voluminius:

The ghost of Cesar hath appear'd to me  
Two several times by night: at Sardis, once;  
And this last night, here in Philippi' fields.  
I know my hour is come.

*Vol.* Not so, my lord.

*Bru.* Nay, I am sure it is, Voluminius.

Thou see'st the world, Voluminius, how it goes;  
Our enemies have beat us to the pit:  
It is more worthy to leap in ourselves,  
Than tarry till they push us. Good Volumi-  
nius,

Thou know'st that we two went to school toge-  
ther;

Even for that our love of old, I pray thee,  
Hold thou my sword-hilts, whilst I run on it.

*Vol.* That's not an office for a friend, my lord.

[*Alarum still.*]

*Cl.* Fly, fly, my lord; there is no tarrying  
here.

*Bru.* Farewell to you;—and you;—and you  
Voluminius.—

Strato, thou hast been all this while asleep:  
Farewell to thee too, Strato.—Countrymen,  
My heart doth joy, that yet, in all my life,  
I found no man, but he was true to me.

I shall have glory by this losing day,  
More than Octavius and Mark Antony.  
By this vile conquest, shall attain unto.  
So, fare you well at once: for Brutus' tongue  
Hath almost ended his life's history:  
Night hangs upon mine eyes; my bones would  
rest;

That have but labour'd to attain this hour.

[*Alarum. Cry within, Fly, fly, fly.*]

*Cl.* Fly, my lord, fly.

*Bru.* Hence; I will follow thee.

[*Exeunt CLITUS, DARDANIUS, and VOLUMI-  
NIUS.*]

I pray thee, Strato, stay thou by thy lord:

Thou art a fellow of a good respect;  
Thy life hath had some snatch of honour in it:  
Hold then my sword, and turn away thy face,  
While I do run upon it. Wilt thou, Strato?

*Str.* Give me your hand first: Fare you well,  
my lord.

*Bru.* Farewell, good Strato.—Cesar, now be  
still:

I kill'd not thee with half so good a will.

[*He runs on his Sword and dies.*]

*Alarum. Retreat. Enter OCTAVIUS, ANTONY,  
MESSALA, LUCILIUS, and their Army.*

*Oct.* What man is that?

*Mes.* My master's man.—Strato, where is thy  
master?

*Str.* Free from the bondage you are in,  
Messala;

The conquerors can but make a fire of him;

E

For Brutus only overcame himself,  
And no man else hath honour by his death.

*Luc.* So Brutus should be found.—I thank  
thee, Brutus,

That thou hast prov'd Lucilius' saying true.

*Oct.* All that serv'd Brutus, I will entertain  
them.\*

Fellow, wilt thou bestow thy time with me?

*Str.* Ay, if Messala will prefer† me to you.

*Oct.* Do so, Messala.

*Mes.* How died my master, Strato?

*Str.* I held the sword, and he did run on  
it.

*Mes.* Octavius, then take him to follow thee,  
That did the latest service to my master.

\* Take them into my service.

† Recommend.

*Ant.* This was the noblest Roman of them all;

All the conspirators, save only he,

Did that they did in envy of great Cesar:

He, only, in a general honest thought,

And common good to all made one of them.

His life was gentle; and the elements

So mix'd in him, that Nature might stand up,

And say to all the world, *This was a man!*

*Oct.* According to his virtue let us use  
him,

With all respect and rites of burial.

Within my tent his bones to-night shall lie,

Most like a soldier, order'd honourably.

So, call the field to rest: and let's away,

To part the glories of this happy day.

[*Ereunt.*]

# ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THIS play is supposed to have been written in the year 1608; and some of its incidents may have been borrowed from a production of Daniel's, called "The Tragedie of Cleopatra," which was entered on the books of the Stationers' Company in the year 1593. It rapidly condenses the events of a considerable period, commencing with the triple partition of the empire at the death of Brutus, B. C. 41, and terminating with the final overthrow of the Ptolemaic dynasty, B. C. 23. Its historical features are, upon the whole, accurately drawn; and the sentiments of many of the characters are literally copied from Plutarch and other biographers.—Antony's illicit connection with Cleopatra, his brutal treatment of the amiable Octavia, and his absurd assumption of despotic power in bequeathing the Roman provinces to a degraded progeny, were the ostensible grounds of the rupture which ended in his death, and united the whole extent of Roman conquest under one imperial sceptre. The character of Cleopatra, the fascinating, dexterous, and incontinent Egyptian, abounds in poetical beauty; and the rough soldier's description of her passage down the Cydnus, has ever been considered a luxurious specimen of glowing oriental description. But it is in the portrait of Antony that the discriminating reader will chiefly discover the pencil of a master. It is a choice finish to the outline of his character, as given in the play of Julius Cesar. He was then "a masker and a reveller," of comely person, lively wit, and insinuating address;—but the fire of youth, and the dictates of ambition, restrained his licentious cravings within tolerable bounds. In the decline of life, and in the lap of voluptuousness, with wealth at his command, and monarchs at his footstool, we find him alternately playing the fool, the hero, or the barbarian, trifling away the treasures of the East in sensuality and indolence, and destroying a noble army by cowardice and obstinacy. Still, the rays of inherent greatness occasionally gleam through a cloud of ignoble propensities, and glimmerings of Roman greatness partially reclaim a career of the most dotting effeminacy. The philosophy of his mind, and the cool superiority of maturer years, are admirably portrayed in the first re-crematory scene with Octavius Cesar, who, notwithstanding the flattery of historians, "was deceitful, mean-spirited, proud, and revengeful."—Dr. Johnson says: "This play keeps curiosity always busy, and the passions always intersted. The continual hurry of the action, the variety of incidents, and the quick succession of one passage to another, call the mind forwards without intermission from the first act to the last. But the power of delighting is derived principally from the frequent changes of the scene, for, except the feminine arts (some of which are too low) which distinguish Cleopatra, no character is very strongly discriminated."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

M. ANTONY,  
OCTAVIUS CESAR, } *Triumvirs.*  
M. EMIL. LÆPIDUS, }  
SEXTUS POMPEIUS, }  
DOMITIUS ENOBARBUS, }  
VENTIDIUS, } *Friends of Antony.*  
EROS,  
SCARUS,  
DENCETAS,  
DEMETRIUS,  
PHILO,  
MARC'AS,  
AGRIPPA, } *Friends to Cesar.*  
DOLABELLA,  
PROCULEIUS,  
THYREUS,  
GALLUS, }

MENAS, MENECRATES, VARRIUS, *Friends of Pompey.*  
TAURUS, *Lieutenant-general to Cesar.*  
CANIDIUS, *Lieutenant-general to Antony.*  
SILIUS, *an Officer in Ventidius' Army.*  
EUPHRONIUS, *an Ambassador from Antony to Cesar.*  
ALEXAS, MARDIAN, SELEUCUS, and DIOMEDES, *Attendants on Cleopatra.*  
A SOOTHSAYER.—A CLOWN.  
CLEOPATRA, *Queen of Egypt.*  
OCTAVIA, *Sister to Cesar, and wife to Antony.*  
CHARMIAN, and IRAS, *Attendants on Cleopatra.*  
*Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.*

SCENE, changes to several Parts of the Roman Empire.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—*Alexandria.—A Room in CLEOPATRA'S Palace.*

*Enter DEMETRIUS and PHILO.*

PHIL. Nay, but this dotage of our general's Overflows the measure; those his goodly eyes That o'er the files and musters of the war Have glow'd like plated Mars, now bend, now turn, The office and devotion of their view

Upon a tawny front: his captain's heart, Which in the scuffles of great fights hath burst The buckles on his breast, reneges all temper; And is become the bellows and the fan To cool a gypsy's lust. Look where they come

*Flourish. Enter ANTONY and CLEOPATRA with their Trains: EUNUCHS fanning her.*

Take but good note and you shall see in him

• Renounces.

The triple \* pillar of the world transform'd  
Into a strumpet's fool: behold and see.

*Cleo.* If it be love indeed, tell me how much!

*Ant.* There's beggary in the love that can be reckon'd.

*Cleo.* I'll set a bourn<sup>†</sup> how far to be belov'd.

*Ant.* Then must thou needs find out new heaven, new earth.

*Enter an ATTENDANT.*

*Att.* News, my good lord, from Rome—

*Ant.* Grates me:—The sum?—

*Cleo.* Nay, hear them, *Antony*:

Fulvia, perchance is angry; or, who knows

If the scarce-bearded Cesar have not sent

His powerful mandate to you, *Do this, or this:*

*Take in that kingdom, and enfranchise that:*

*Perform't, or else we damn thee.*

*Ant.* How, my love!

*Cleo.* Perchance,—nay, and most like,

You must not stay here longer: your dismissal

Is come from Cesar; therefore hear it, *Antony*.—

Where's Fulvia's process?|| Cesar's, I would say?—Both?—

Call in the messengers.—As I am Egypt's queen,

Thou blindest, *Antony*; and that blood of thine

Is Cesar's homager; else so thy cheek pays shame,

When shrill-tongu'd Fulvia scolds—The messengers.

*Ant.* Let Rome in Tyber melt! and the wide

Of the rang'd empire fall! Here is my space:

Kingdoms are clay: our dungy earth alike

Feeds beast as man: the nobleness of life

Is, to do thus; when such a mutual pair,

And such a twain can do't, in which, I bind

On pain of punishment, the world to weet, *¶*

We stand up peerless.

*Cleo.* Excellent falsehood!

Why did he marry Fulvia, and not love her?—

I'll seem the fool I am not: *Antony*

Will be himself.

*Ant.* But stirr'd by Cleopatra.—

Now, for the love of Love, *¶¶* and her soft hours,

Let's not confound the time with conference

harsh:

There's not a minute of our lives should stretch

Without some pleasure now: What sport to-

night?

*Cleo.* Hear the ambassadors.

*Ant.* Fie, wrangling queen!

Whom every thing becomes, to chide, to laugh,

To weep; whose every passion fully strives

To make itself, in thee, fair and admir'd!

No messenger; but thine, and all alone,

To-night we'll wander through the streets, and note

The qualities of people. Come, my queen;

Last night you did desire it:—Speak not to us.

[*Exeunt. ANT. and CLEO. with their Train.*]

*Dem.* Is Cesar with Antonius priz'd so slight?

*Phs.* Sir, sometimes, when he is not *Antony*,

He comes too short of that great property

Which still should go with *Antony*.

*Dem.* I'm full sorry,

That he approves the common liar, *††* who

Thus speaks of him at Rome: But I will hope

Of better deeds to-morrow. Rest you happy!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—The Same.—Another Room.

*Enter CHARMIAN, IRAS, ALEXAS, and a*

SOOTHSAYER.

*Char.* Lord Alexas, sweet Alexas, most any thing Alexas, almost most absolute Alexas, where's the soothsayer that you praised so to the queen? Oh! that I knew this husband, which, you say, must charge his horns with garlands!

\* One of the triumvirs: the three masters of the world.  
† Besoud. Give me the substance.  
‡ News was formerly a plural noun. § Summons ¶ Know.  
\*\* Or, of Venus. †† I am.

*Alex.* Soothsayer.

*Sooth.* Your will?

*Char.* Is this the man?—Is't you, Sir, that know things?

*Sooth.* In nature's infinite book of secrecy, a little I can read.

*Alex.* Show him your hand.

*Enter ENOBARBUS.*

*Eno.* Bring in the banquet quickly; wine Cleopatra's health to drink. [enough,

*Char.* Good Sir, give me good fortune.

*Sooth.* I make not, but foresee.

*Char.* Pray then, foresee me one.

*Sooth.* You shall be yet far fairer than you are.

*Char.* He means, in flesh.

*Iras.* No, you shall paint when you are old.

*Char.* Wrinkles forbid!

*Alex.* Vex not his prescience: be attentive.

*Char.* Hush!

*Sooth.* You shall be more beloved than be-

loved.

*Char.* I had rather heat my liver with drinking.

*Alex.* Nay, hear him.

*Char.* Good now, some excellent fortune!

Let me be married to three kings in a forenoon,

and widow them all: let me have a child at fifty,

to whom Herod of Jewry \* may do homage: find

me to marry me with Octavius Cesar, and com-

pamon me with my mistress.

*Sooth.* You shall outlive the lady whom you

serve.

*Char.* O excellent! I love long life better than

figs. †

*Sooth.* You have seen and proved a fairer

former fortune

Than that which is to approach.

*Char.* Then, belike, my children shall have no

names: ‡ Pr'ythee, how many boys and wenches

must I have?

*Sooth.* If every of your wishes had a womb,

And fertile every wish, a million.

*Char.* O fool! I forgive thee for a witch.

*Alex.* You think none but your sheets are privy

to your wishes.

*Char.* Nay, come, tell *Iras* her's.

*Alex.* We'll know all our fortunes.

*Eno.* Mine, and most of our fortunes, to-night,

shall be—drunk to bed.

*Iras.* There's a palm presages chastity, if

nothing else.

*Char.* Even as the overflowing Nilus presageth

famine.

*Iras.* Go, you wild bedfellow, you cannot

soothsay.

*Char.* Nay, if an oily palm be not a fruitful

prognostication, I cannot scratch mine ear.—

Pr'ythee, tell her but a worky-day fortune.

*Sooth.* Your fortunes are alike.

*Iras.* But how, but how? give me particulars.

*Sooth.* I have said.

*Iras.* Am I not an inch of fortune better than

she?

*Char.* Well, if you were but an inch of fortune

better than I, where would you choose it?

*Iras.* Not in my husband's nose.

*Char.* Our worse thoughts heavens mend! Alexas,—

come, his fortune, his fortune.—Oh! let him

marry a woman that cannot go, sweet

Isis, § I beseech thee! And let her die too, and

give him a worse; and let worse follow worse,

till the worst of all follow him laughing to his

grave, fifty-fold a cuckold! Good Isis, hear me

this prayer, though thou deny me a matter of

more weight: good Isis, I beseech thee!

*Iras.* Amen. Dear goddess, hear that prayer

of the people! for, as it is a heart-breaking to

see a handsome man loose-wived, so it is a deadly

sorrow to behold a foul knave uncuckolded.

Therefore, dear Isis, keep decorum, and fortune

him accordingly!

\* Vaguely esteemed the fiercest and proudest monarch of antiquity. † A common proverb. ‡ Shall be bastards. § An Egyptian goddess.

*Char.* Amen.

*Alex.* Lo, now, if it lay in their hands to make me a cuckold, they would make themselves whores but they'd do't.

*Eno.* Hush! here comes Antony.

*Char.* Not he, the queen.

*Enter CLEOPATRA.*

*Cleo.* Saw you my lord?

*Eno.* No, lady.

*Cleo.* Was he not here?

*Char.* No, madam,

*Cleo.* He was dispos'd to mirth; but on the sudden

A Roman thought hath struck him.—Enobarbus,—

*Eno.* Madam.

*Cleo.* Seek him, and bring him hither. Where's Alexas?

*Alex.* Here, madam, at your service.—My lord approaches.

*Enter ANTONY, with a MESSENGER, and Attendants.*

*Cleo.* We will not look upon him: Go with us.

*[Exit CLEOPATRA, ENOBARBUS, ALEXAS, IRAS, CHARMIAN, SOOTHSEYER, and Attendants.]*

*Mess.* Fulvia thy wife first came into the field.

*Ant.* Against my brother Lucius?

*Mess.* Ay:

But soon that war had end, and the time's state Made friends of them, joining their force 'gainst Cesar;

Whose better issue in the war, from Italy, Upon the first encounter, drove them.

*Ant.* Well,

What worse?

*Mess.* The nature of bad news infects the teller.

*Ant.* When it concerns the fool or coward.—

On:

Things that are past, are done, with me.—'Tis Who tells me true, though in his tale he death,

I hear him as he flatter'd.

*Mess.* Labeius

(This is still news) hath, with his Parthian force, Extended \* Asia from Euphrates; His conquering banner shook, from Syria To Lydia, and to Ionia;

Whilst—

*Ant.* Antony, thou wouldst say,—

*Mess.* O my lord!

*Ant.* Speak to me home; mince not the general tongue;

Name Cleopatra as she's call'd in Rome; Rail thou in Fulvia's phrase; and taunt my faults

With such full licence, as both truth and malice Have power to utter. Oh! then we bring forth weeds,

When our quick winds † he stilt; and our ill told us,

Is as our earring. ‡ Fare thee well a while.

*Mess.* At thy noble pleasure. *[Exit.]*

*Ant.* From Sicily how the news? Speak there.

1 *Att.* The man from Sicily.—Is there such a one?

2 *Att.* He stays upon your will.

*Ant.* Let him appear,—

These strong Egyptian tethers I must break,

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

Or lose myself in dotage.—What are you?

2 *Mess.* Fulvia thy wife is dead.

*Ant.* Where died she?

2 *Mess.* In Sicily:

Her length of sickness, with what else more seri- Importeth thee to know, this beats. *[Exit.]*

*Ant.* Forbear me.— *[Exit MESSENGER.]*

There's a great spirit gone! Thus did I desire it: What our contempts do often hurl from us, We wish it our's again; the present pleasure, By revolution lowering, does become The opposite of itself; she's good, being gone; The hand could pluck her back, that shov'd her on.

I must from this enchanting queen break off; Ten thousand harms, more than the ills I know, My idleness doth hatch.—How now! Enobarbus!

*Enter ENOBARBUS.*

*Eno.* What's your pleasure, Sir?

*Ant.* I must with haste from hence.

*Eno.* Why, then, we kill all our women: We see how mortal an unkindness is to them; if they suffer our departure, death's the word.

*Ant.* I must be gone.

*Eno.* Under a compelling occasion, let women die: It were pity to cast them away for nothing; though, between them and a great cause, they should be esteemed nothing. Cleopatra, catching but the least noise of this, dies instantly: I have seen her die twenty times upon far poorer moment: \* I do think there is mettle in death, which commits some loving act upon her, she hath such a celerity in dying.

*Ant.* She is cunning past man's thought.

*Eno.* Alack, Sir, no: her passions are made of nothing but the finest part of pure love: we cannot call her winds and waters, sighs and tears; they are greater storms and tempests than almanacks can report: † this cannot be cunning in her; if it be, she makes a shower of rain as well as Jove.

*Ant.* 'Would I had never seen her!

*Eno.* O Sir, you had then left unseen a wonderful piece of work; which not to have been blessed withal, would have discredited your travel.

*Ant.* Fulvia is dead.

*Eno.* Sir?

*Ant.* Fulvia is dead.

*Eno.* Fulvia?

*Ant.* Dead.

*Eno.* Why, Sir, give the gods a thankful sacrifice. When it pleaseth their deities to take the wife of a man from him, it shows to man the tailors of the earth; comforting therein, that when old robes are worn out, there are members to make new. If there were no more women but Fulvia, then had you indeed a cut, and the case to be lamented: this grief is crowned with consolation—your old snock brings forth a new petticoat:—and indeed the tears live in an onion, that should water this sorrow.

*Ant.* The business she hath broached in the Cannot endure my absence. *[State]*

*Eno.* And the business you have broached here cannot be without you; especially that of Cleopatra's, which wholly depends on your abode.

*Ant.* No more light answers. Let our officers Have notice what we purpose. I shall break The cause of our expedience † to the queen, And get her love ‡ to part. For not alone The death of Fulvia, with more urgent touches, Do strongly speak to us; but the letters too Of many our contriving friends in Rome Petition us at home: Sexus Pompeius Hath given the dare to Cesar, and commands The empire of the sea: our shippery people (Whose love is never link'd to the desert, Till his deserts are past,) begin to throw Pompey the great, and all his dignities, Upon his son; who, high in name and power, Higher than both in blood and life, stands up For the main soldier: whose quality, going on, The sides o' the world may danger: Much is breeding,

Which, like the courser's † hair, hath yet but life,

• Upon far less reason. † Expedition. ‡ Leave.

† Horat's hair, except into potrid water, was supposed to turn into an animal.

\* Seized.

† By some read *mind*.

‡ Tilling, plowing; prepares us to produce good seed.

And not a serpent's poison. Say, our pleasure,  
To such whose place is under us, requires  
Our quick remove from hence.

*Eno.* I shall do't.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN IRAS, and ALEXAS.*

*Cleo.* Where is he ?

*Char.* I did not see him since.

*Cleo.* See where he is, who's with him, what he does :—

I did not send you ; \*—If you find him sad,

Say, I am dancing ; if in mirth, report

That I am sudden sick : Quick, and return.

[*Exit ALEXAS.*]

*Char.* Madam, methinks, if you did love him dearly,

You do not hold the method to enforce

The like from him.

*Cleo.* What should I do, I do not ?

*Char.* In each thing give him way, cross him in nothing.

*Cleo.* Thou teachest like a fool : the way to lose him.

*Char.* Tempt him not so too far : Wish for bear :

In time we hate that which we often fear.

*Enter ANTONY.*

But here comes Antony.

*Cleo.* I am sick, and sullen.

*Ant.* I am sorry to give breathing to my purpose,—

*Cleo.* Help me away, dear Charmian, I shall fall,

It cannot be thus long ; the sides of nature  
Will not sustain it.

*Ant.* Now, my dearest queen,—

*Cleo.* Pray you, stand further from me.

*Ant.* What's the matter ?

*Cleo.* I know, by that same eye, there's some good news.

What says the married woman ?—You may go,  
Would, she had never given you leave to come !

Let her not say 'tis I that keep you here,

I have no power upon you : her's you are.

*Ant.* The gods best know,

*Cleo.* Oh ! never was there queen

So mightily betray'd ! Yet, at the first,

I saw the treasons planted.

*Ant.* Cleopatra,—

*Cleo.* Why should I think you can be mine,  
and true,

Though you in swearing shake the thronged gods,  
Who have been false to Fulvia ? Riotous mad-  
ness,

To be entangled with those mouth-made vows,

Which break themselves in swearing !

*Ant.* Most sweet queen,—

*Cleo.* Nay, pray you, seek no colour for your going,

[*sing,*]

But bid farewell, and go : when you sued stay—  
Then was the time for words : No going then ;—

Eternity was in our lips, and eyes ;

Bliss in our brows' bent ; † none our parts so poor,  
But was a race ‡ of heaven :—They are so still,

Or thou the greatest soldier of the world,

Art turn'd the greatest liar.

*Ant.* How now, lady !

*Cleo.* I would, I had thy inches thou shouldst know,

There were a heart in Egypt.

*Ant.* Hear me, queen :

The strong necessity of time commands

Our services a while ; but my full heart

Remains in use with you, Our Italy

Shines o'er with civil swords ; Sextus Pompeius

Makes his approaches to the port § of Rome :

Equality of two domestic powers

Breeds scrupulous faction : The hated, grown to strength,

[*Pompey,*]

Are newly grown to love : the condemn'd

Rich in his father's honour, creeps apace

Into the hearts of such as have not thriv'd

Upon the present state, whose numbers threaten ;

And quietness, grown sick of rest, would purge

By any desperate change : My more particular,

And that which most with you should save \* my

going,

Is Fulvia's death.

*Cleo.* Though age from folly could not give me freedom,

It does from childishness :—Can Fulvia die ? †

*Ant.* She's dead, my queen :

Look here, and, at thy sovereign leisure, read

The garboils she awak'd ; ‡ at the last, best :

See, when and where she died.

*Cleo.* O most false love !

Where be the sacred vials thou should'st fill

With sorrowful water ? Now I see, I see,

In Fulvia's death, how mine receiv'd shall be.

*Ant.* Guard no more, but be prepar'd to know

The purposes I bear ; which are, or cease,

As you shall give the advice : Now, by the fire

That quickens Nilus' slime, I go from hence,

Thy soldier, servant, making peace, or war,

As thou affect'st.

*Cleo.* Cut my lace, Charmian, come ;—

But let it be.—I am quickly ill and well ;

So Antony loves.

*Ant.* My precious queen, forbear ;

And give true evidence to his love, which stands

An honourable trial.

*Cleo.* So Fulvia told me.

I pry thee turn aside, and weep for her ;

Then bid adieu to me, and say the tears

Belong to Egypt : Good now, play one scene

Of excellent dissembling ; and let it look

Like perfect honour.

*Ant.* You'll heat my blood, no more.

*Cleo.* You can do better yet ; but this is meetly.

*Ant.* Now, by my sword,—

*Cleo.* And target,—Still he mends ;

But this is not the best : Look, pry thee, Char-  
mian,

How this Heircanian Roman does become

The carriage of his chafe.

*Ant.* I'll leave, you, lady.

*Cleo.* Courteous lord, one word.

Sir, you and I must part,—but that's not it.

Sir, you and I have lov'd,—but there's not it.

That you know well : Something it is I would,—

Oh ! my oblivion § is a very Antony,

And I am all forgotten.

*Ant.* But that your royalty

Holds idleness your subject, I should take you

For idleness itself.

*Cleo.* 'Tis sweating labour,

To bear such idleness so near the heart

As Cleopatra this. But, Sir, forgive me ;

Since my becomings kill me, when they do not

Eye well to you : Your honour calls you hence ;

Therefore be deaf to my unpractised folly,

And all the gods go with you ! upon your sword

Sit laurel'd victory ! and smooth success

Be strew'd before your feet !

*Ant.* Let us go. Come :

Our separation so abides, and flies,

That thou, residing here, go'st yet with me,

And I, hence fleeing, here remain with thee.

Away. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE IV.—Rome.—An apartment in CESAR'S House.*

*Enter OCTAVIUS CESAR, LEPIDUS, and Attendants.*

*Ces.* You may see, Lepidus, and henceforth

know,

It is not Cesar's natura' vice to hate

One great competitor : ¶ from Alexandria

\* Render my going agreeable. † Can Fulvia be dead

‡ The commotion she occasioned. § Oblivious memory.

¶ Associate or partner.

\* Look as if I did not send you.

† Or eye-brows.

‡ A taste.

§ Gaze

This is the news—He fishes, drinks, and wastes  
The lamps of night in revel: is not more man-  
like

Than Cleopatra; nor the queen Ptolemy  
More womanly than he: hardly gave audience, or  
Vouchsaf'd to think he had partners: You shall  
find there

A man, who is the abstract of all faults  
That all men follow.

*Lep.* I must not think there are  
Evils enough to darken all his goodness:  
His faults, in him, seem as the spots of heaven,  
More fiery by night's blackness; hereditary,  
Rather than purchas'd \* what he cannot change,  
Than what he chooses.

*Ces.* You are too indulgent: let us grant, it is  
not

Amiss to tumble on the bed of Ptolemy;  
To give a kingdom for a mirth; to sit  
And keep the turn of tippling with a slave;  
To reel the streets at noon, and stand the buffet  
With knaves that smell of sweat: say, this be-  
comes him,

'As his composure must be rare indeed,  
Whom these things cannot blemish,' yet must  
Antony

No way excuse his soils, when we do hear  
So great weight in his lightness.† If he fill'd  
His vacancy with his voluptuousness,  
Full surfeits, and the dizziness of his bones  
Call on him; for't: but, to confound § such time,  
That drums him from his sport, and speaks as  
loud

As his own state, and ours,—'tis to be chid  
As we rate boys, who, being mature in know-  
ledge,  
Pawn their experience to their present pleasure,  
And so rebel to judgment.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Lep.* Here's more news.

*Mess.* Thy bidding's have been done; and  
every hour,

Most noble Cesar, shalt thou have report  
How 'tis abroad. Pompey is strong at sea,  
And, it appears, he is belov'd of those  
That only have fear'd Cesar: to the ports  
The discontents ¶ repair, and men's reports  
Give him much wrong'd.

*Ces.* I should have known no less:—  
It hath been taught us from the primal state,  
That he, which is, was wish'd, until he were;  
And the ebb'd man, ne'er lov'd, till ne'er worth  
love [body,  
Comes dear'd, by being lack'd.¶ This common  
Like a vagabond flag upon the stream,  
Goes to, and back, lackeying the varying tide,  
To rot itself with motion.

*Mess.* Cesar, I bring thee word,  
Menecrates and Menas, famous pirates,  
Make the sea serve them: which they ear \*\* and  
wound

With keels of every kind: Many hot inroads  
They make in Italy; the borders maritime  
Lack blood † to think on't, and flush ‡ youth  
revolt:

No vessel can peep forth, but 'tis as soon  
Taken as seen; for Pompey's name strikes more  
Than could his war resisted.

*Ces.* Antony,  
Leave thy lascivious wassals. §§ When thou once  
Wast beaten from Modena, where thou slew'st  
Hirtius and Pansa, consuls, at thy heel  
Did famine follow; whom thou fought'st against,  
Though daintily brought up, with patience more  
Than savages could suffer: Thou didst drink  
The stale of horses, and the gilded puddle  
Which beasts would cough at: thy palate then  
did delign

The roughest berry on the rudest hedge;

Yea, like the stag, when snow the pasture sheets  
The barks of trees thou browsed'st; on the Alps  
It is reported, thou did'st eat strange flesh,  
Which some did die to look on: And all this,  
(It wounds thine honour, that I speak it now,)  
Was borne so like a soldier, that thy cheek  
So much as lank'd not.

*Lep.* It is pity of him.

*Ces.* Let his shames quickly  
Drive him to Rome: 'Tis time we twain  
Did show ourselves i'the field; and, to that end,  
Assemble we immediate council: Pompey  
Thrives in our idleness.

*Lep.* To-morrow, Cesar,  
I shall be furnish'd to inform you rightly  
Both what by sea and land I can be able,  
To 'front this present time.

*Ces.* Till which encounter,  
It is my business too. Farewell.

*Lep.* Farewell, my lord: What you shall know  
mean time

Of stirs abroad, I shall beseech you, Sir,

To let me be partaker.

*Ces.* Doubt not, Sir;

I knew it for my bond. \*

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE V.—Alexandria.—A Room in the  
Palace.*

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and  
MARDIAN.*

*Cleo.* Charmian,—

*Char.* Madam.

*Cleo.* Ha, ha!—

Give me to drink mandragora. †

*Char.* Why, madam?

*Cleo.* That I might sleep out this great gap of  
My Antony is away. [time,

*Char.* You think of him

Too much.

*Cleo.* O treason!

*Char.* Madam, I trust, not so,

*Cleo.* Thou eunuch! Mardian!

*Mar.* What's your highness' pleasure?

*Cleo.* Not now to hear thee sing; I take no  
pleasure

In aught a eunuch has: 'Tis well for thee,  
That, being unseminar'd, ‡ thy freer thoughts  
May not fly forth of Egypt. Hast thou affec-  
tions †

*Mar.* Yes, gracious madam.

*Cleo.* Indeed?

*Mar.* Not in deed, madam; for I can do no-  
thing

But what in deed is honest to be done.

Yet have I fierce affections, and think

What Venus did with Mars.

*Cleo.* O Charmian,

Where think'st thou he is now? Stands he, or  
sits he?

Or does he walk? or is he on his horse?

O happy horse, to bear the weight of Antony

Do bravely, horse! for wot'st thou whom thou  
mov'st?

The demi-Atlas of this earth, the arm  
And bugonet § of men.—He's speaking now,  
Or murmuring, *Where's my serpent of old  
Nile?*

For so he calls me: Now I feed myself  
With most delicious poison:—Think on me,  
That am with Phœbus' amorous pinches black,  
And wrinkled deep in time? Broad-fronted  
Cesar,

When thou wast here above the ground, I was  
A morsel for a monarch: and great Pompey  
Would stand, and make his eyes grow in my  
brow;

There would he anchor his aspect, and die  
With looking on his life.

*Enter ALEXAS.*

*Alex.* Sovereign of Egypt, hail!

\* My bounden duty.

† Unmann'd.

‡ A sleepy potion.

§ A helmet.

\* Procured by his own fault.

† Would punish him for it.

‡ Malcontents.

\*\* Plough.

† Turn pale.

‡ Feasting.

† Levity.

‡ Consume.

¶ Endear'd by being missed.

‡ Ruddy.



*Cleo.* How much unlike art thou Mark Antony!

Yet, coming from him, that great medicine hath  
With his tinct gilded thee.—

*How goes it with my brave Mark Antony?*

*Alex.* Last thing he did, dear queen,  
He kiss'd,—the last of many doubled kisses,—  
This orient pearl.—His speech sticks in my heart.

*Cleo.* Mine ear must pluck it thence.

*Alex.* Good friend, quoth he,  
Say, the firm Roman to great Egypt sends  
This treasure of an oyster; at whose foot  
To mend the petty present, I will piece  
Her opulent throne with kingdoms; All the east,

Say thou, shall call her mistress. So he nodded,  
And soberly did mount a tergitant<sup>\*</sup> steed,  
Who neigh'd so high, that what I would have spoke  
Was beastly dumb'd by him.

*Cleo.* What, was he sad, or merry?

*Alex.* Like to the time o'the year between the extremes

Of hot and cold; he was nor sad, nor merry.

*Cleo.* O well-divided disposition!—Note him,  
Note him, good Charmian, 'tis the man; but  
note him:

He was not sad; for he would shine on those  
That make their looks by his: he was not merry;  
Which seem'd to tell them, his remembrance lay  
In Egypt with his joy: but between both:  
O heavenly mingle; Be'st thou sad, or merry,  
The violence of either thee becomes;

So does it no man else.—Met'st thou my posts?

*Alex.* Ay, madam, twenty several messengers:  
Why do you send so thick?

*Cleo.* Who's born that day  
When I forget to send to Antony,  
Shall die a beggar.—Ink and paper, Charmian.—  
Welcome, my good Alexas.—Did I, Charmian,  
Ever love Cesar so?

*Char.* O that brave Cesar!

*Cleo.* Be chok'd with such another emphasis!  
Say, the brave Antony.

*Char.* The valiant Cesar!

*Cleo.* By Isis, I will give thee bloody teeth,  
If thou with Cesar paragon again  
My man of men.

*Char.* By your most gracious pardon,  
I sing but after you.

*Cleo.* My sallad days,  
When I was green in judgment!—cold in blood,  
To say as I said then!—But, come, away:  
Get me ink and paper: he shall have every day  
A several greeting, or I'll unpeople Egypt.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*Mcssia.*—A Room in POMPEY'S house.

*Enter POMPEY, MENEKRATES, and MENAS.*

*Pom.* If the great gods be just, they shall assist  
The deeds of justest men.

*Mene.* Know, worthy Pompey,  
That what they do delay, they not deny.

*Pom.* Whiles we are suitors to their throne,  
The thing we sue for. [*decays*]

*Mene.* We, ignorant of ourselves,  
Beg often our own harms, which the wise powers  
Deny us for our good; so find we profit,  
By losing of our prayers.

*Pom.* I shall do well:  
The people love me, and the sea is mine:  
My power's a crescent, and my auguring hope  
Says, it will come to the full. Mark Antony  
In Egypt sits at dinner, and will make  
No wars without doors: Cesar gets money, where  
He loses hearts: Lepidus flatters both,  
Of both is flatter'd; but he neither loves,  
Nor either cares for him.

\* Furious.

*Men.* Cesar and Lepidus

Are in the field; a mighty strength they carry.

*Pom.* Where have you this? 'tis false.

*Men.* From Silvius, Sir.

*Pom.* He dreams: I know they are in Rome  
together,

Looking for Antony: But all charms of love,  
Salt Cleopatra, soften thy wad<sup>\*</sup> lip!  
Let witchcraft join with beauty, lust with both;  
Tie up the libertine in a field of feasts,  
Keep his brain fuming; Epicurean cooks,  
Sharpen with cloyless sauce his appetite;  
That sleep and feeding may prorogue his honour,  
Even till a Lethe'd dullness!—How now, Var-  
rius?

*Enter VARRIUS.*

*Var.* This is most certain that I shall deliver:  
Mark Antony is every hour in Rome  
Expected; since he went from Egypt, 'tis  
A space for further travel.

*Pom.* I could have given less matter  
A better ear.—Menas, I did not think  
This amorous surfeiter would have don't<sup>†</sup> his  
For such a petty war: his soldiiership  
Is twice the other twain: But let us hear  
The higher our opinion, that our stinging  
Can from the lap of Egypt's widow pluck  
The ne'er-lust-wearied Antony.

*Men.* I cannot hope,  
Cesar and Antony shall well greet together:  
His wife, that's dead, did trespass to Cesar;  
His brother war'd<sup>‡</sup> upon him; although, I think,  
Not mov'd by Antony.

*Pom.* I know not, Menas,  
How lesser enmities may give way to greater.  
Were't not that we stand up against them all,  
'Twere pregnant they should square<sup>§</sup> between  
themselves;

For they have entertained cause enough  
To draw their swords; but how the feat of us  
May cement their divisions, and bind up  
The petty difference, we yet not know.  
Be it as our gods will have it! It only stands  
Our lives upon, to use our strongest hands.  
Come, Menas. [*Exeunt*]

SCENE II.—*Rome.*—A Room in the house of  
LEPIDUS.

*Enter ENOBARBUS and LEPIDUS.*

*Lep.* Good Enobarbus, 'tis a worthy deed,  
And shall become you well, to entreat your cap-  
To soft and gentle speech. [*tain*]

*Eno.* I shall entreat him  
To answer like himself: if Cesar move him,  
Let Antony look over Cesar's head,  
And speak as loud as Mars. By Jupiter,  
Were I the wearer of Antonius' beard,  
I would not shave to-day.

*Lep.* 'Tis not a time  
For private stoniching.

*Eno.* Every time  
Serves for the matter that is then born in it.

*Lep.* But small to greater matters must give  
way.

*Eno.* Not if the small come first,  
*Lep.* Your speech is passion:  
But, pray you, stir no embers up. Here comes  
The noble Antony.

*Enter ANTONY and VENTIDIUS.*

*Eno.* And yonder, Cesar.

*Enter CESAR, MECENAS, and AGRIPPA.*

*Ant.* If we compose<sup>†</sup> well here, to Parthia:  
Hark you, Ventidius.

*Ces.* I do not know,  
Mecenas; ask Agrippa.

*Lep.* Noble friends,  
That which combin'd us was most great, and let  
not

\* Fedd. † To. ‡ Put on. § Helmet.  
! Quarrel. ¶ Agree.

A leaner action rend us. What's amiss,  
May it be gently heard: When we debate  
Our trivial difference loud, we do commit  
Murder in healing wounds: Then, noble partners,  
(The rather, for I earnestly beseech,)  
Touch you the sourest points with sweetest terms,  
Nor curstness \* grow to the matter.

*Ant.* 'Tis spoken well:  
Were we before our armies, and to fight,  
I should do thus.

*Ces.* Welcome to Rome.

*Ant.* Thank you.

*Ces.* Sit.

*Ant.* Sit, Sir!

*Ces.* Nay,

Then—

*Ant.* I learn, you take things ill, which are  
not so;

Or, being, concern you not.

*Ces.* I must be laugh'd at,  
If, or for nothing, or a little, I  
Should say myself offended; and with you  
Chiefly i'the world: more laugh'd at, that I  
should

Once name you derogately, when to sound your  
name

It not concern'd me.

*Ant.* My being in Egypt, Cesar,  
What was't to you?

*Ces.* No more than my residing here at Rome  
Might be to you in Egypt: Yet, if you there  
Did practise † on my state, your being in Egypt  
Might be my question. ‡

*Ant.* How intend you, practis'd?

*Ces.* You may be pleas'd to catch at mine  
intent, [ther,

By what did here befall me. Your wife, and bro-  
Made wars upon me; and their contestation  
Was theme for you, you were the word of war.

*Ant.* You do mistake your business; my brother  
never

Did urge me in his act: I did enquire it;  
And have my learning from some true reports, §  
That drew their swords with you. Did he not  
rather

Discredit my authority with yours;  
And make the wars alike against my stomach,  
Having alike your cause? Of this, my letters  
Before did satisfy you. If you'll patch a quarrel,  
As matter whole you have not to make it with,  
It must not be with this.

*Ces.* You praise yourself  
By laying defects of judgment to me; but  
you patch'd up your excuses.

*Ant.* Not so, not so;

I know you could not lack, I am certain on't  
Very necessity of this thought, that I,  
Your partner in the cause 'gainst which he  
fought,

Could not but with grateful eyes attend those wars  
Which 'fronted || mine own peace. As for my  
wife,

I would you had her spirit in such another:  
The third o'the world is yours; which, with a  
snaffle ¶

You may pace easy, but not such a wife.

*Eno.* 'Would we had all such wives, that the  
men might go to wars with the women!

*Ant.* So much incurable, her garbolls, Cesar,  
Made out of her impatience, (which not wanted  
Shrewdness of policy too,) I grieving grant,  
Did you too much disquiet: for that, you must  
But say, I could not help it.

*Ces.* I wrote to you,  
When rioting in Alexandria: you  
Did pocket up my letters, and with taunts  
Did gibe my missive \*\* out of audience.

*Ant.* Sir,  
He fell upon me, ere admitted; then  
Three kings I had newly feasted, and did want

Of what I was i'the morning; but, next day,  
I told him of myself; which was as much.  
As to have ask'd him pardon: Let this fellow  
Be nothing of our state; if we contend,  
Out of our question \* wipe him.

*Ces.* You have broken

The article of your oath; which you shall never  
Have tongue to charge me with.

*Lep.* Soft, Cesar.

*Ant.* No, Lepidus, let him speak:

The honour's sacred which he talks on now,  
Supposing that I lack'd it: But on, Cesar;  
The article of my oath,—

*Ces.* To lend me arms and aid, when I re-  
quir'd them;

The which you both denied.

*Ant.* Neglected, rather;

And then, when poison'd hours had bound me up  
From mine own knowledge. As nearly as I may,  
I'll play the penitent to you: but mine honesty  
Shall not make poor my greatness, nor my power  
Work without it: Truth is, that Fulvia,  
To have me out of Egypt, made wars here;  
For which myself, the ignorant motive, do  
So far ask pardon, as befits mine honour  
To stoop in such a case.

*Lep.* 'Tis nobly spoken.

*Alc.* If it might please you to enforce no  
further

The griefs † between ye, to forget them quite,  
Were to remember that the present need  
Speaks to atone ‡ you.

*Lep.* Worthily spoke, Mecænas.

*Eno.* Or, if you borrow one another's love for  
the instant, you may, when you hear no more  
words of Pompey, return it again: you shall  
have time to wrangle in, when you have nothing  
else to do.

*Ant.* Thou art a soldier only; speak no more.

*Eno.* That truth should be silent, I had almost  
forgot.

*Ant.* You wrong this presence, therefore speak  
no more.

*Eno.* Go to then; your considerate stone.

*Ces.* I do not much dislike the matter, but  
The manner of his speech: for it cannot be,  
We shall remain in friendship, on conditions  
So differing in their acts. Yet, if I knew  
What hoop should hold us staunch, from edge to  
edge

O'the world I would pursue it.

*Ag.* Give me leave, Cesar,—

*Ces.* Speak, Agrippa.

*Ag.* Thou hast a sister by the mother's side,  
Admir'd Octavia: great Mark Antony  
Is now a widower.

*Ces.* Say not so, Agrippa;

If Cleopatra heard you, your reproof  
Were well deserv'd of rashness.

*Ant.* I am not married, Cesar: let me hear  
Agrippa further speak.

*Ag.* To hold you in perpetual amity,  
To make you brothers, and to knit your hearts  
With an unslipping knot, take Antony  
Octavia to his wife: whose beauty claims  
No worse a husband than the best of men!  
Whose virtue, and whose general graces, speak  
That which none else can utter. By this mar-  
riage,

All little jealousies, which now seem great,  
And all great fears, which now import their dan-  
gers,

Would then be nothing: truths would be but tales  
Where now half tales be truths: her love to both  
Would, each to other, and all loves to both,  
Draw after her. Pardon what I have spoke:  
For 'tis a studied, not a present thought,  
By duty ruminated.

*Ant.* Will Cesar speak?

*Ces.* Not till he hears how Antony is touch'd  
With what is spoke already.

*Ant.* What power is in Agrippa,

\* Let not ill-humour be added.

† Use unwar-

rentable aria.

‡ Subject of conversation.

§ Reporters.

¶ Opposed.

¶ Bride.

\*\* Messenger.

\* Conversation

† Grievances.

‡ Recollection.

If I would say, *Agrippa, be it so*,  
To make this good!

*Ces.* The power of Cesar, and  
His power unto Octavia.

*Ant.* May I never  
To this good purpose, that so fairly shows,  
Dream of impediment!—Let me have thy hand:  
Further this act of grace; and, from this hour,  
The heart of brothers govern in our loves,  
And sway our great designs!

*Ces.* There is my hand.  
A sister I bequeath you, whom no brother  
Did ever love so dearly: Let her live  
To join our kingdoms and our hearts; and never  
Fly off our loves again!

*Lep.* Happily, amen!  
*Ant.* I did not think to draw my sword 'gainst  
Pompey,

For he hath laid strange courtesies, and great,  
Of late upon me: I must thank him only,  
Lest my remembrance suffer ill report:

At heel of that, defy him.  
*Lep.* Time calls upon us:  
Of us must Pompey presently be sought,  
Or else he seeks out us.

*Ant.* And where lies he?  
*Ces.* About the mount Misenum.

*Ant.* What's his strength  
By land?  
*Ces.* Great, and increasing: but by sea  
He is an absolute master.

*Ant.* So is the fame.  
'Would we had spoke together! Haste we for it:  
Yet, ere we put ourselves in arms, despatch we  
The business we have talk'd of.

*Ces.* With most gladness;  
And do invite you to my sister's view,  
Whither straight I will lead you.

*Ant.* Let us, Lepidus,  
Not lack your company.

*Lep.* Noble Antony,  
Not sickness should detain me.

[*Flourish. Exeunt CESAR, ANTONY, and  
LEPIDUS.*]

*Mec.* Welcome from Egypt, Sir.  
*Eno.* Half the heart of Cesar, worthy Mecas-  
nas!—my honourable friend, Agrippa!—

*Ag.* Good Enocharbus!  
*Mec.* We have cause to be glad that matters  
are so well digested. You staid well by it in  
Egypt.

*Eno.* Ay, Sir; we did sleep day out of coun-  
tenance, and made the night light with drink-  
ing.

*Mec.* Eight wild boars roasted whole at a  
breakfast, and but twelve persons there. Is this  
true?

*Eno.* This was but as a fly by an eagle: we  
had much more monstrous matter of feast, which  
worthily deserved noting.

*Mec.* She's a most triumphant lady, if report  
be square\* to her.

*Eno.* When she first met Mark Antony, she  
purs'd up his heart upon the river of Cydnus.

*Ag.* There she appear'd indeed; or my re-  
porter devised well for her.

*Eno.* I will tell you:  
The barge she sat in, like a burnish'd throne,  
Burn'd on the water: the poop was beaten gold;  
Purple the sails, and so perfumed, that  
The winds were love-sick with them: the oars  
were silver:

Which to the tune of flutes kept stroke, and made  
The water, which they beat, to follow faster,  
As amorous of their strokes. For her own per-  
son,

It beggar'd all description: she did lie  
In her pavilion, (cloth of gold, of tissue,)  
O'erpicturing that Venus, where we see,  
The fancy out-work nature: on each side her,  
Stood pretty dimpled boys, like smiling Cupids,  
With diverse-colour'd fans, whose wind did seem  
To glow the delicate cheeks which they did cool,

\* Suits with her merits.

And what they undid, did,\*  
*Ag.* Oh, rare for Antony!

*Eno.* Her gentlewomen, like the Nereides,  
So many mermaids, tended her i'th' eyes,  
And made their bends adornings: + at the helm  
A seeming Mermaid steers; the silken tackle  
Swell with the touches of those flower-soft hands  
That yarely frame; the office. From the barge  
A strange invisible pèrume hits the sense  
Of the adjacent wharfs. The city cast  
Her people out upon her; and Antony,  
Enthron'd in the market-place, did sit alone,  
Whistling to the air; which, but for vacancy,  
Had gone to gaze on Cleopatra too,  
And made a gap in nature.

*Ag.* Rare Egyptian!  
*Eno.* Upon her landing, Antony sent to her,  
Invited her to supper: she replied,  
It should be better he became her guest;  
Which she entreated: Our courteous Antony,  
Whom ne'er the word of 'No woman heard speak,  
Being barber'd ten times o'er, goes to the feast;  
And, for his ordinary, pays his heart,  
For what his eyes eat only.

*Ag.* Royal wench!  
She made great Cesar lay his sword to bed  
He plough'd her, and she crop'd.

*Eno.* I saw her once  
Hop forty paces through the public street:  
And having lost her breath, she spoke, and panted,  
That she did make defect, perfection,  
And, breathless, power breathe forth.

*Mec.* Now Antony must leave her utterly!—

*Eno.* Never; he will not;  
Age cannot wither her, nor custom stale  
Her infinite variety: Other women  
Cloy th' appetites they feed: but she makes  
hungry

Where most she satisfies. For vilest things  
Become themselves in her, that the holy p  
Bless her, when she's rugged. ||

*Mec.* If beauty, wisdom, modesty, can settle  
The heart of Antony, Octavia is  
A blessed lottery to him,

*Ag.* Let us go.—  
Good Enocharbus, make yourself my guest,  
Whilst you abide here.

*Eno.* Humbly, Sir, I thank you, [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—The same.—A Room in Cesar's  
House.

Enter CESAR, ANTONY, OCTAVIA between them;  
ATTENDANTS, and a SOOTH-SAYER.

*Ant.* The world, and my great office, will  
sometimes

Divide me from your bosom.

*Octa.* All which time,  
Before the gods my knee shall bow my prayers  
To them for you.

*Ant.* Good night, Sir.—My Octavia,  
Read not my blemishes in the world's report:  
I have not kept my square; but that to come  
Shall all be done by the rule. Good night, dear  
lady.—

*Octa.* Good night, Sir.  
*Ces.* Good night.

[*Exeunt CESAR and OCTAVIA.*]

*Ant.* Now, Sirrah! you do wish yourself in  
Egypt?

*Sooth.* Would I had never come from thence,  
nor you

Thither!

*Ant.* If you can, your reason?

*Sooth.* I see't in  
My motion, || have it not in my tongue: But yet  
Hie you again to Egypt.

*Ant.* Say to me,  
Whose fortunes shall rise higher; Cesar's, or  
mine?

\* Increased the glow they were intended to diminish  
+ Made even humiliation become them  
|| Readily perform. } Waxes.  
|| I.e. the divinitory agitation.

*Sooth.* Cesar's.

Therefore, O Antony, stay not by his side :  
Thy demon, that's thy spirit which keeps thee, is  
Noble, courageous, high, unmatchable,  
Where Cesar's is not ; but, near him, thy angel  
Becomes a fiend, as being o'erpower'd : therefore  
Make space enough between you.

*Ant.* Speak this no more.

*Sooth.* To none but thee ; no more, but when  
to thee.

If thou dost play with him at any game,  
Thou art sure to lose ; and, of that natural luck,  
He beats thee 'gainst the odds ; thy lustre thickens,  
When he shines by : I say again, thy spirit  
Is all afraid to govern thee near him ;  
But, he away, 'tis noble.

*Ant.* Get thee gone :

Say to Ventidius, I would speak with him :

*[Exit SOOTHSAYER.]*

He shall to Parthia.—Be it art, or hap,  
He hath spoken true : The very dice obey him ;  
And, in our sports, my better cunning faints  
Under his chance : if we draw lots, he speeds :  
His cocks do win the battle still of mine.  
When it is all to nought ; and his quails \* ever  
Beat mine, in hoop'd,† at odds. I will to Egypt :  
And though I make this marriage for my peace,

*Enter VENTIDIUS.*

I'll ease my pleasure lies :—O come, Ventidius,  
You must to Parthia ; your commission's ready :  
Follow me, and receive it. *[Exit.]*

SCENE IV.—The same.—A Street.

*Enter LEPIDUS, MECENAS, and AGRIPPA.*

*Lep.* Trouble yourselves no further : pray you,  
hasten

Your generals after.

*Ag.* Sir, Mark Antony

Will e'en but kiss Octavia, and we'll follow.

*Lep.* Till I shall see you in your soldier's dress,  
Which will become you both, farewell.

*Mec.* We shall,

As I conceive the journey, be at mount ;  
Before you, Lepidus.

*Lep.* Your way is shorter,  
My purposes do draw me much about :  
You'll win two days upon me.

*Mec.* *Ag.* Sir, good success !

*Lep.* Farewell.

SCENE V.—Alexandria.—A Room in the  
Palace.

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and  
ALEXAS.*

*Cleo.* Give me some music ; music, moody §  
Of so that trade in love. *[food*

*Attend.* The music, ho !

*Enter MARDIAN.*

*Cleo.* Let it alone ; let us to billiards : ||  
Come, Charmian.

*Char.* My arm is sore, best play with Mar-  
dian.

*Cleo.* As well a woman with an eunuch play'd,  
As with a woman ;—Come, you'll play with me,  
Sir ?

*Mar.* As well as I can, madam.

*Cleo.* And when good will is show'd, though  
it come too short,

The actor may plead pardon. I'll none now :  
Give me mine angle ; we'll to the river : there,  
My music playing far off, I will betray  
Tawny-fin'd fishes ; my bended hook shall pierce  
Their shiny jaws ; and, as I draw them up,  
I'll think them every one an Antony,  
And say, *Ah, ha ! you're caught.*

*Char.* 'Twas merry, when  
You wagger'd on your angling ; when your diver

Did hang a salt-fish on his hook, which he  
With servency drew up.

*Cleo.* That time !—O times !—

I laugh'd him out of patience ; and that night  
I laugh'd him into patience ; and next morn,  
Ere the ninth hour, I drunk him to his bed ;  
Then put my tires and mantles on him, whilst  
I wore his sword Philippan. Oh ! from Italy ;

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

Ram thou thy fruitful tidings in mine ears,  
That long time have been barren.

*Mess.* Madam, madam,—

*Cleo.* Antony's dead ?—

If thou say so, villain, thou kill'st thy mistress  
But well and free

If thou so yield him, there is gold, and here  
My bluest veins to kiss : a hand, that kings  
Have lipp'd, and trembled kissing.

*Mess.* First, madam, he's well.

*Cleo.* Why, there's more gold. But, Sirrah,  
mark : We use

To say the dead are well ; bring it to that,  
The gold I give thee will I melt, and pour  
Down thy ill-uttering throat.

*Mess.* Good madam, hear me.

*Cleo.* Well, go to, I will ;  
But there's no goodness in thy face : If Antony

Be free, and healthful, why so tart a favour \*  
To trumpet such good tidings ? I'll not well,  
Thou should'st come like a lury crown'd with  
Not like a formal man. *[unakes,*

*Mess.* Will't please you hear me ?

*Cleo.* I have a mind to strike thee, ere thou  
speak'st :

Yet, if thou say, Antony lives, is well,  
Or friends with Cesar, or not captive to him,  
I'll set thee in a shower of gold, and hail  
Rich pearls upon thee.

*Miss.* Madam, he's well.

*Cleo.* Well said.

*Mess.* And friends with Cesar.

*Cleo.* Thou'rt an honest man.

*Mess.* Cesar and he are greater friends than  
ever.

*Cleo.* Make thee a fortune from me.

*Miss.* But yet, madam,—

*Cleo.* I do not like but yet ; it does allay  
The good precedence ; † die upon but yet :

But yet is as jailer to bring forth  
Some monstrous malefactor. Pr'ythee, friend,

Pour out the pack of matter to mine ear,  
The good and bad together : He's friend with  
Cesar ; *[free.*

In state of health, thou say'st : and, thou say'st  
*Miss.* Free, madam ! no ; I made no such re-  
He's bound unto Octavia. *[port :*

*Cleo.* For what good turn ?

*Mess.* For the best turn i'th' bed.

*Cleo.* I am pale, Charmian.

*Mess.* Madam, he's married to Octavia.

*Cleo.* The most infectious pestilence upon  
thee ! *[Strikes him down.*

*Mess.* Good madam, patience.

*Cleo.* What say you ?—Hence, *[Strikes him again.*

Horrible villain ! or I'll spurn thine eyes

Like balls before me ; I'll unhair thy head ;

*[She hales him up and down.*

Thou shalt be whipp'd with wire, and stew'd in

Smarting in ling'ring pickle. *[brine,*

*Mess.* Gracious madam,

I, that do bring the news, made not the match.

*Cleo.* Say 'tis not so, a province I will give  
thee, *[hadst*

And make thy fortunes proud ; the blow thou

Shall make thy peace, or moving me to rage ;

And I will boot ; thee with what gift beside

Thy modesty can beg.

*Mess.* He's married, madam.

*Cleo.* Rogue, thou hast liv'd too long.

*[Draws a Dagger.]*

\* The ancients used to match quails as we match cocks.

† Inclosed. ‡ Mount Misenum. § Melancholy.

|| Billiards were unknown then.

\* So sour a countenance.

† The good news you have told me. ‡ Recompense.

*Mess.* Nay, then I'll run :—  
What mean you, madam? I have made no fault.

*Char.* Good madam, keep yourself within  
The man is innocent. [yourself]  
*Cleo.* Some innocents 'scape not the thunder-  
bolt.—

Melt Egypt into Nile! and kindly creatures  
Turn all to serpents!—Call the slave again :  
Though I am mad, I will not bite him.—Call.

*Char.* He is afraid to come.  
*Cleo.* I will not hurt him :—  
These hands do lack nobility, that they strike  
A meaner than myself; since I myself  
Have given myself the cause.—Come hither, Sir.

*Re-entr MESSENGER.*

Though it be honest, it is never good  
To bring bad news : Give to a gracious message  
A host of tongues; but let ill tidings tell  
Themselves, when they be felt.

*Mess.* I have done my duty.  
*Cleo.* Is he married?  
I cannot hate thee worse than I do,  
If thou again say, Yes.

*Mess.* He is married, madam.  
*Cleo.* The gods confound thee I dost thou hold  
there still?

*Mess.* Should I lie, madam?  
*Cleo.* Oh! I would thou didst;  
So half my Egypt were submerg'd and made  
A cistern for scald'd snakes! Go, get thee hence;  
Hadst thou Narcissus in thy face, to me  
Thou would'st appear most ugly. He is married?  
*Mess.* I crave your highness' pardon.  
*Cleo.* He is married?

*Mess.* Take no offence, that I would not offend  
you;

To punish me for what you make me do,  
Seems much unequal : He is married to Octavia.

*Cleo.* Oh! that his fault should make a knave  
of thee,

That art not!—What? thou'rt sure of't?—Get  
thee hence :

The merchandise which thou hast brought from  
Rome,

Are all too dear for me; Lie they upon thy hand,  
And be undone by't! [Exit MESSENGER.]

*Char.* Good your highness, patience.  
*Cleo.* In praising Antony, I have disprais'd  
Cesar.

*Char.* Many times, madam.  
*Cleo.* I am paid for't now.

Lead me from hence,  
I faint; O Iras, Charmian,—'Tis no matter :—

Go to the fellow, good Alexas; bid him  
Report the feature\* of Octavia, her years,

Her inclination, let him not leave out  
The colour of her hair :—bring me word quick-  
ly.— [Exit ALEXAS.]

Let him for ever go :—Let him not—Charmian,  
Though he be painted one way like a Gorgon,  
T'other way he's a Mars :—Bid you Alexas

[To MARDIAN.]  
Bring me word how tall she is.—Pity me, Char-  
mian,

But do not speak to me.—Lead me to my cham-  
ber. [Exit.]

#### SCENE VI.—Near Misenum.

*Enter POMPEY AND MENAS, at one side; with  
Drum and Trumpet; at another, CESAR,  
LEPIDUS, ANTONY, ENOBARBUS, MECÆNAS,  
with Soldiers marching.*

*Pom.* Your hostages I have, so have you mine;  
And we shall talk before we fight.

*Ces.* Meet meet,  
That first we come to words; and therefore have  
Our written purposes before us sent; [we  
Which, if thou hast consider'd, let us know  
If 'twill tie up thy discontented sword,

And carry back to Sicily much tall\* youth  
That else must perish here.

*Pom.* To you all three,  
The senators alone of this great world,  
Chief factors for the gods,—I do not know,  
Wherefore my father should revengers want,  
Having a son and friends; since Julius Cesar,  
Who at Philippi the good Brutus ghosted,†  
There saw you labouring for him. What was it,  
That mov'd pale Cassius to conspire? And what  
Made the all-honour'd, honest Roman, Brutus,  
With the arm'd test, courtiers of beauteous  
freedom,

To drench the Capitol; but that they would  
Have one man but a man? And that is it,  
Hath made me rig my navy; at whose burden  
The anger'd ocean foams; with which I meant  
To scourge the ingratulate that desp'ful Rome  
Cast on my noble father.

*Ces.* Take your time.  
*Ant.* Thou canst not fear; us, Pompey, with  
thy sails,

We'll speak with thee at sea : at land thou know'st  
How much we do o'er-count thee.

*Pom.* At land, indeed,  
Thou dost o'er-count me of my father's house :  
But, since the cuckoo builds not for himself,  
Remain in't as thou may'st.

*Lep.* Be pleas'd to tell us,  
(For this is from the present, §) how you take  
The offers we have sent you.

*Ces.* There's the point.  
*Ant.* Which do not be entreated to, but weigh  
What it is worth embrac'd.

*Ces.* And what may follow,  
To try a larger fortune.

*Pom.* You have made me offer  
Of Sicily, Sardinia; and I must  
Rid all the sea of pirates; then, to send  
Measures of wheat to Rome : This 'good upon,

To part with unback'd edges, and beat back  
Our large undented.

*Ces.* *Ant.* *Lep.* That's our offer.

*Pom.* Know then,  
I came before you here, a man prepar'd  
To take this offer : But Mark Antony

Put me to some impatience : Though I lose  
The praise of it by telling, you must know,  
When Cesar and your brothers were at blows,  
Your mother came to Sicily, and did find  
Her welcome friendly.

*Ant.* I have heard it, Pompey;  
And am well studied for a liberal thanks,  
Which I do owe you.

*Pom.* Let me have your hand :  
I did not think, Sir, to have met you here.

*Ant.* The beds 't'ill the east are soft; and thanks  
to you,

That call'd me, timelier than my purpose, hither;  
For I have gain'd by it.

*Ces.* Since I saw you last,  
There is a change upon you.

*Pom.* Well, I know not  
What counts|| harsh fortune casts upon my face :  
But in my bosom shall she never come,  
To make my heart her vassal.

*Lep.* Well met here.  
*Pom.* I hope so, Lepidus.—Thus we are  
agreed :

I crave our composition may be written,  
And seal'd between us.

*Ces.* That's the next to do.  
*Pom.* We'll feast each other, ere we part; and  
let us

Draws lots who shall begin.

*Ant.* That will I, Pompey.

*Pom.* No, Antony, take the lot : but, first  
Or last, your fine Egyptian cookery  
Shall have the fame. I have heard, that Julius  
Grew fat with feasting there. [Cesar]

*Ant.* You have heard much.  
*Pom.* I have fair meanings, Sir.

\* Likeness.

\* Brava. † Haunted. ‡ Afright.  
§ Foreign to the point. || Murders.

*Ant.* And fair words to them.

*Pom.* Then so much have I heard :  
And I have heard, Apollodorus carried—  
*Eno.* No more of that :—He did so.

*Pom.* What, I pray you ?

*Eno.* A certain queen to Cesar in a mattress.

*Pom.* I know thee now :—How far'st thou, soldier ?

*Eno.* Well ;

And well am like to do : for, I perceive,  
Four feasts are toward.

*Pom.* Let me shake thy hand ;  
I never hated thee : I have seen thee fight,  
When I have envied thy behaviour.

*Eno.* Sir,  
I never lov'd you much : but I have prais'd you,  
When you have well deserv'd ten times as much  
As I have said you did.

*Pom.* Enjoy thy plainness,  
It nothing ill becomes thee.—  
Aboard my galley I invite you all :  
Will you lead, lords ?

*Ces. Ant. Lep.* Shew us the way, Sir.

*Pom.* Come.

[*Exit POMPEY, CESAR, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, Soldier, and Attendants.*]

*Men.* Thy father, Pompey, would ne'er have  
made this treaty.—[*Aside.*—] You and I have  
known, \* Sir.

*Eno.* At sea, I think.

*Men.* We have, Sir.

*Eno.* You have done well by water.

*Men.* And you by land.

*Eno.* I will praise any man that will praise  
me : though it cannot be denied what I have done  
by land.

*Men.* Nor what I have done by water.

*Eno.* Yes, something you can deny for your  
own safety : you have been a great thief by sea.

*Men.* And you by land.

*Eno.* There I deny my land service. But give  
me your hand, Menas : If our eyes had authority,  
here they might take two thieves kissing.

*Men.* All men's faces are true, whatsoe'er their  
hands are.

*Eno.* But there is never a fair woman has a  
true face.

*Men.* No slander, they steal hearts.

*Eno.* We came hither to fight with you.

*Men.* For my part, I am sorry it is turned to  
a drinking. Pompey doth this day laugh away  
his fortune.

*Eno.* If he do, sure, he cannot weep it back  
again.

*Men.* You have said, Sir. We looked not  
for Mark Antony : Pray you, is he married to  
Cleopatra ?

*Eno.* Cesar's sister is call'd Octavia.

*Men.* True, Sir ; she was the wife of Camus  
Marcellus.

*Eno.* But she is now the wife of Marcus An-  
tonius.

*Men.* Pray you, Sir ?

*Eno.* 'Tis true.

*Men.* Then is Cesar, and he, for ever knit  
together.

*Eno.* If I were bound to divine of this unity, I  
would not prophesy so.

*Men.* I think the policy of that purpose made  
more in the marriage, than the love of the  
parties.

*Eno.* I think so too. But you shall find the  
band that seems to tie their friendship to-  
gether, will be the very strangler of their amity :  
Octavia is of a holy, cold, and still conver-  
sation.†

*Men.* Who would not have his wife so ?

*Eno.* Not he that himself is not so ; which is  
Mark Antony. He will to his Egyptian dish  
again : then shall the sighs of Octavia blow the  
fire up in Cesar : and, as I said before, that  
which is the strength of their amity, shall prove  
the immediate author of their variance. Antony

will use his affection where it is : he married but  
his occasion here.

*Men.* And thus it may be. Come, Sir, will  
you aboard ? I have a health for you.

*Eno.* I shall take it, Sir : we have used our  
throats in Egypt.

*Men.* Come, let's away. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE VII.—On Board POMPEY'S Galley lying near Misenum.

*Music.* Enter two or three SERVANTS with a  
Banquet.\*

1 *Serv.* Here they'll be, man : Some o'their  
plants† are ill-rooted already, the least wind  
i'the world will blow them down.

2 *Serv.* Lepidus is high-coloured.

1 *Serv.* They have made him drink alms-  
drink.

2 *Serv.* As they pinch one another by the dis-  
position, he cries out, *no more* ; reconciles them  
to his entreaty, and himself to the drink.

1 *Serv.* But it raises the greater war between  
him and his discretion.

2 *Serv.* Why, this is to have a name in great  
men's fellowship ; I had as lief have a reed that  
will do me no service, as a partizan‡ I could not  
heave.

1 *Serv.* To be called into a huge sphere, and  
not to be seen to move in't, are the holes where  
eyes should be, which pitifully disaster the  
cheeks.

A Sennet sounded. Enter CESAR, ANTONY,  
POMPEY, LEPIDUS, AGRIPPA, MECENAS,  
ENOBARBUS, MENAS, with other Captains.

*Ant.* Thus do they, Sir : [To CESAR.] They  
take the flow o'the Nile.

By certain scales i'the pyramid ; they know,  
By the height, the lowness, or the mean,§ if  
dearth,

Or soizon,|| follow ; The higher Nilus swells,  
The more it promises : as it ebbs, the seedsman  
Upon the slime and ooze scatters his grain,  
And shortly comes to harvest.

*Lep.* You have strange serpents there.

*Ant.* Ay, Lepidus.

*Lep.* Your serpent of Egypt is bred now of  
your mud by the operation of your sun : so is  
your crocodile.

*Ant.* They are so.

*Pom.* Sit,—and some wine.—A health to Le-  
pidus.

*Lep.* I am not so well as I should be, but I'll  
ne'er out.

*Eno.* Not till you have slept ; I fear me, you'll  
be in, till then.

*Lep.* Nay, certainly, I have heard the Ptole-  
mies' pyramids¶ are very goodly things ; with-  
out contradiction, I have heard that.

*Men.* Pompey, a word. [*Aside.*]

*Pom.* Say in mine ear : What is't ?

*Men.* Forsake thy seat, I do beseech thee,  
captain, [*Aside.*]

And hear me speak a word.

*Pom.* Forbear me till anon.—

This wine for Lepidus.

*Lep.* What manner o'thing is your crocodile ?

*Ant.* It is shaped, Sir, like itself ; and it is as  
broad as it hath breadth : it is just so high as it  
is, and moves with its own organs : it lives by  
that which nourisheth it ; and the elements once  
out of it, it transmigrates.

*Lep.* What colour is it of ?

*Ant.* Of its own colour too.

*Lep.* 'Tis a strange serpent.

*Ant.* 'Tis so. And the tears of it are wet.

*Ces.* Will this description satisfy him ?

*Ant.* With the health that Pompey gives him,  
else he is a very epicure.

*Pom.* [To MENAS *aside.*] Go, hang, Sir, hang  
Tell me of that ? away !

\* Been acquainted.

† Behaviour.

• Desert. † Feet. ‡ Pike. § Middle.  
¶ Plenty. ¶ Pyramid

Do as I bid you.—Where's this cup I call'd for?

*Men.* If for the sake of merit thou wilt hear me,  
Rise from thy stool. [*Aside.*]

*Pom.* I think thou'rt mad. The matter?

[*Rises, and walks aside.*]  
*Men.* I have ever held my cap off to thy fortunes.

*Pom.* Thou hast serv'd me with much faith :  
What's else to say?

Be jolly, lords.  
*Ant.* These quick-sands, Lepidus,

Keep off them, for you sink.

*Men.* Wilt thou be lord of all the world?

*Pom.* What say'st thou?

*Men.* Wilt thou be lord of the whole world?  
That's twice.

*Pom.* How should that be?

*Men.* But entertain it, and,  
Although thou think me poor, I am the man  
Will give thee all the world.

*Pom.* Hast thou drunk well?

*Men.* No, Pompey, I have kept me from the cup.

Thou art, if thou dar'st be, the earthly Jove :  
Whate'er the ocean pales, \* or sky inclips, †  
Is thine, if thou wilt have't.

*Pom.* Show me which way.

*Men.* These three world-sharers, these competitors ;

Are in thy vessel : let me cut the cable ;  
And, when we are put off, fall to their throats :  
All there is thine.

*Pom.* Ah, this thou should'st have done,  
And not have spoke on't ! In me, 'tis villany ;  
In thee it had been good service. Thou must know,

'Tis not my profit that does lead mine honour ;  
Mine honour it. Repent, that e'er thy tongue  
Hath so betray'd thine act : Being done unknown,  
I should have found it afterwards well done ;  
But must condemn it now. Desist and drink.

*Men.* For this, [*Aside.*]  
I'll never follow thy pall'd ‡ fortunes more.—  
Who seeks, and will not take, when once 'tis  
Shall never find it more. [*offer'd,*]

*Pom.* This health to Lepidus.

*Ant.* Bear him ashore.—I'll pledge it for him,  
Pompey.

*Eno.* Here's to thee, Menas.

*Men.* Enobarbus, welcome.

*Pom.* Fill, till the cup be hid.

*Eno.* There's a strong fellow, Menas.

[*Pointing to the Attendant who carries off*  
*LEPIDUS.*]

*Men.* Why?

*Eno.* He bears

The third part of the world, man : See'st not?

*Men.* The third part then is drunk : 'Would it  
were all,

That it might go on wheels!

*Eno.* Drink thou ; increase the reels.

*Men.* Come.

*Pom.* This is not yet an Alexandrian feast.

*Ant.* It ripens towards it. Strike the vessels, ||  
Here is to Cesar. [*ho!*]

*Ces.* I could well forbear it.

'Tis monstrous labour, when I wash my brain,  
And it grows fouler.

*Ant.* Be a child o'the time.

*Ces.* Possess ¶ it, I'll make answer : but I had  
rather fast

From all, four days, than drink so much in one.

*Eno.* Ha, my brave emperor ! [*To ANTONY.*]  
Shall we dance now the Egyptian Bacchanals  
And celebrate our drink?

*Pom.* Let's ha't, good soldier.

*Ant.* Come, let us all take hands ;  
Till that the conquering wine hath steep'd our sense  
In soft and delicate Lethe.

*Eno.* All take hands.—

Make battery to our ears with the loud music ;—  
The while, I'll place you : Then the boy shall  
sing :

The holding \* every man shall bear, as loud  
As his strong sides can volley.

[*Music plays.* ENOBARBUS places them hand  
in hand.

## SONG.

Come, thou monarch of the vine,  
Plump Bacchus, with pink eye †  
In thy vats our cares be drown'd  
With thy grapes our hairs be crown'd  
Cup us, till the world go round ;  
Cup us, till the world go round !

*Ces.* What would you more ?—Pompey, good  
night. Good brother,

Let me request you off : our graver business  
Frowns at this levity.—Gentle lords, let's part ;  
You see, we have burnt our cheeks : strong Enobarbe

Is weaker than the wine ; and mine own tongue  
Splits what it speaks : the wild disguise hath  
almost

Antick'd us all. What needs more words ? Good  
night.—

Good Antony your hand.

*Pom.* I'll try you o'the shore.

*Ant.* And shall, Sir : give's your hand.

*Pom.* O Antony,  
You have my father's house, But what † we are  
friends :

Come, down into the boat.

*Eno.* Take heed you fall not.—

[*Exit POMPEY, CESAR, ANTONY, and*  
*Attendants.*]

Menas, I'll not on shore.

*Men.* No, to my cabin.—

These drums !—these trumpets, flutes ! what !—  
Let Neptune hear we bid a loud farewell  
To these great fellows : Sound, and be hang'd  
sound out.

[*A Flourish of Trumpets, with Drums.*]

*Eno.* Ho, says 'a !—There's my cap.

*Men.* Ho !—noble captain !  
Come. [*Exit.*]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—A plain in Syria.

*Enter VENTIDIUS, as after conquest, with*  
*SILIUS, and other Romans, Officers, and*  
*Soldiers ; the dead body of PACORUS borne*  
*before him.*

*Ven.* Now, darting Parthia, art thou struck ?  
and now

Pleas'd fortune does of Marcus Crassus' death  
Make me revenger.—Bear the king's son's body  
Before our army :—Thy Pacorus, Orodes, ‡  
Pays this for Marcus Crassus.

*Sil.* Noble Ventidius,  
Whilst yet with Parthian blood thy sword is  
warm, [*Media,*]

The fugitive Parthians follow ; spur through  
Mesopotamia, and the shelters whither  
The routed fly : so thy grand captain, Antony,  
Shall set thee on triumphant chariots, and  
Put garlands on thy head.

*Ven.* O Silius, Silius,  
I have done enough : A lower place, note well,  
May make too great an act : For learn this, Silius ;  
Better leave undone, than by our deed acquire  
Too high a fame, when him we serve's away.  
Cesar, and Antony, have ever won  
More in their officer than person : Sossius,  
One of my place in Syria, his lieutenant,  
For quick accumulation of renown,  
Which he achiev'd by the minute, lost his favour  
Who does l' the wars more than his captain can,

\* Encompasses. † Embraces. ‡ Confederates.  
§ Cloyed. || Kettle drums. ¶ Understand.

\* Chorus. † Red eyes.  
‡ Pacorus was the son of Orodes, king of Parthia.

Becomes his captain's captain; and ambition,  
The soldier's virtue, rather makes choice of loss,  
Than gain, which darkens him.  
I could do more to do Antonius good,  
But 'twould offend him; and in his offence  
Should my performance perish.

*Sil.* Thou hast, Ventidius,  
That without which a soldier, and his sword,  
Grants scarce distinction. Thou wilt write to  
Antony?

*Ven.* I'll humbly signify what in his name,  
That magical word of war, we have effected;  
How, with his banners, and his well-paid ranks,  
The ne'er-yet-beaten horse of Parthia  
We have jaded out o' the field.

*Sil.* Where is he now?

*Ven.* He purposeth to Athens: whither with  
what haste

The weight we must convey with us will permit,  
We shall appear before him.—On, there; pass  
along. [Exit.

SCENE II.—Rome.—An Antechamber in  
CESAR'S house.

Enter AGRIPPA, and ENOBARBUS, meeting.

*Agr.* What, are the brothers parted?

*Eno.* They have despatch'd with Pompey, he  
is gone,

The other three are sealing. Octavia weeps  
To part from Rome: Cesar is sad; and Lepidus,  
Since Pompey's feast, as Menas says, is troubled  
With the green-sickness.

*Agr.* 'Tis a noble Lepidus.

*Eno.* A very fine one: Oh! how he loves Ce-  
sar!

*Agr.* Nay, but how dearly he adores Mark  
Antony!

*Eno.* Cesar? Why, he's the Jupiter of men.

*Agr.* What's Antony? The god of Jupiter.

*Eno.* Spake you of Cesar? How! the nonpar-  
lel!

*Agr.* O Antony! O thou Arabian bird!\*

*Eno.* Would you praise Cesar, say,—Cesar;  
—go no farther.

*Agr.* Indeed, he plied them both with excel-  
lent praises.

*Eno.* But he loves Cesar best;—Yet he loves  
Antony:

Ho! hearts, tongues, figures, scribes, bards, poets,  
cannot

Think, speak, cast, write, sing, number, ho, his  
To Antony. But as for Cesar, [love  
Kneel down, kneel down, and wonder.

*Agr.* Both he loves.

*Eno.* They are his shards,† and he their bee-  
tie. So,— [Trumpets.

This is to horse.—Adieu, noble Agrippa.

*Agr.* Good fortune, worthy soldier; and fare-  
well.

Enter CESAR, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, and Oc-  
TAVIA.

*Ant.* No farther, Sir.

*Ces.* You take from me a great part of my-  
self;

Use me well in it.—Sister, prove such a wife  
As my thoughts make thee, and as my furthest  
band‡

Shall pass on thy approval.—Most noble Antony,  
Let not the piece of virtue, § which is set  
Betwixt us, as the cement of our love,  
To keep it builded, be the ram, to batter  
The fortress of it: for better might we  
Have lov'd without this mean, if on both parts  
This be not cherish'd.

*Ant.* Make me not offended  
In your distrust.

*Ces.* I have said.

*Ant.* You shall not find,  
Though you be therein curious, ¶ the least cause

For what you seem to fear: So, the gods keep  
you,

And make the hearts of Romans serve your ends! I  
We will here part.

*Ces.* Farewell, my dearest sister, fare thee  
well;

The elements\* be kind to thee, and make  
Thy spirits all of comfort! fare thee well.

*Oct.* My noble brother!—

*Ant.* The April's in her eyes: It is love's spring  
And these the showers to bring it on.—Be cheer-  
ful.

*Oct.* Sir, look well to my husband's house;  
and—

*Ces.* What,

Octavia?

*Oct.* I'll tell you in your ear.

*Ant.* Her tongue will not obey her heart, nor  
can

Her heart inform her tongue: the swan's down  
feather,

That stands upon the swell at full of tide,

And neither way inclines.

*Eno.* Will Cesar weep? [Aside to AGRIPPA.

*Agr.* He has a cloud in's face.

*Eno.* He were the worse for that, were he a  
So is he, being a man. [horse

*Agr.* Why, Enobarbus?

When Antony found Julius Cesar dead,

He cried almost to roaring: and he wept,

When at Philippi he found Brutus slain.

*Eno.* That year, indeed he was troubled with a  
rheum;

What willingly he did confound,† he wail'd:

Believe it, till I weep too.

*Ces.* No, sweet Octavia,

You shall hear from me still; the time shall not  
Out-go my thinking on you.

*Ant.* Come, Sir, come;

I'll wrestle with you in my strength of love:

Look, here I have you; thus I let you go

And give you to the gods.

*Ces.* Adieu; be happy!

*Lep.* Let all the number of the stars give light  
To thy fair way!

*Ces.* Farewell, Farewell! [Kisses OCTAVIA.

*Ant.* Farewell! [Trumpets sound. Exit.

SCENE III.—Alexandria.—A Room in the  
Palace.

Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and  
ALEXAS.

*Cleo.* Where is the fellow?

*Alex.* Half afraid to come.

*Cleo.* Go to, go to:—Come hither, Sir.

Enter a MESSENGER.

*Alex.* Good majesty,

Herod of Jewry dare not look upon you,  
But when you are well pleas'd.

*Cleo.* That Herod's head

I'll have: But now? when Antony is gone

Through whom I might command it.—Come thou  
near.

*Mess.* Most gracious majesty,—

*Cleo.* Didst thou behold  
Octavia?

*Mess.* Ay, dread queen.

*Cleo.* Where?

*Mess.* Madam, in Rome.

I look'd her in the face: and saw her led

Between her brother and Mark Antony.

*Cleo.* Is she as tall as me?‡

*Mess.* She is not, madam.

*Cleo.* Didst hear her speak? Is she shrill-

tongu'd, or low?

*Mess.* Madam, I heard her speak; she is low-

voic'd.

*Cleo.* That's not so good:—he cannot like her

long.

\* The Phoenix. † Wings.  
bond were formerly synonymous.  
‡ Doubtful.

† Band and  
‡ Cesar's sister.

\* Of air and water.

† Destroy.

‡ This scene is levelled at Queen Elizabeth's jealousy  
of her rival, Mary, Queen of Scots.



*Char.* Like her? O Isis! 'tis impossible.

*Cleo.* I think so, Charmian: Dull of tongue and dwarfish!

What majesty is in her gait? Remember, if e'er thou look'st on majesty.

*Mess.* She creeps;

Her motion and her station \* are as one: She shows a body rather than a life:

A statue, than a breather.

*Cleo.* Is this certain?

*Mess.* Or I have no observance.

*Char.* Three in Egypt Cannot make better note.

*Cleo.* He's very knowing, I do perceive it:—There's nothing in her yet:—The fellow has good judgment.

*Char.* Excellent.

*Cleo.* Guess at her years, I pray thee.

*Mess.* Madam, She was a widow.

*Cleo.* Widow?—Charmian, hark.

*Mess.* And I do think, she's thirty.

*Cleo.* Bear'st thou her face in mind? is it long or round?

*Mess.* Round, even to faultiness.

*Cleo.* For the most part too, [flour?] They are foolish that are so.—Her hair, what colour?

*Mess.* Brown, madam: And her forehead is as low

As she would wish it.

*Cleo.* There is gold for thee.

Thou must not take my former sharpness ill:—I will employ thee back again; I find thee Most fit for business: Go, make thee ready; Our letters are prepar'd. [Exit MESSENGER.]

*Char.* A proper man.

*Cleo.* Indeed, he is so: I repent me much, That so I harry'd him. Why, methinks, by him, This creature's no such thing.

*Char.* O nothing, madam.

*Cleo.* The man hath seen some majesty, and should know.

*Char.* Hath he seen majesty? Isis else defend, And serving you so long!

*Cleo.* I have one thing more to ask him yet, good Charmian:—

But 'tis no matter; thou shalt bring him to me Where I will write: All may be well enough.

*Char.* I warrant you, madam. [Exit.]

SCENE IV.—Athens.—A Room in ANTONY'S House.

Enter ANTONY and OCTAVIA.

*Ant.* Nay, nay, Octavia, not only that,—That were excusable, that, and thousands more Of semblable import,—but he hath wag'd New wars 'gainst Pompey; made his will, and read it

To public ear:

Spoke scantily of me: when perforce he could not But pay me terms of honour, cold and sickly He vented them; most narrow measure lent me: When the best hint was given him, he not took't, Or did it from his teeth. ||

*Oct.* O my good lord, Believe not all; or, if you must believe, Stomach not all. A more unhappy lady, If this division chance, ne'er stood between, Praying for both parts: And the good gods will mock me presently, When I shall pray, O bless my lord and husband!

Undo that prayer, by crying out as loud, O bless my brother! Husband win, win brother, Prays, and destroys the prayer; no midway 'Twixt these extremes at all.

*Ant.* Gentle Octavia, Let your best love draw to that point, which seeks Best to preserve it: If I lose mine honour, I lose myself: better I were not yours, Than yours so branchless. But, as you requested,

\* Standing. † Ruffled. ‡ Similar tendency. § Expressed. ¶ Inductively.

Yourself shall go between us: The mean time, lady,

I'll raise the preparation of a war Shall stain your brother; Make you soonest haste; So your desires are yours.

*Oct.* Thanks to my lord.

The Jove of power make me most weak, most weak,

Your reconciler! Wars 'twixt you twain would As if the world should cleave, and that slain men Should solder up the rift. \*

*Ant.* When it appears to you where this begins,

Turn your displeasure that way; for our faults Can never be so equal, that your love

Can equally move with them. Provide you going; [Cost

Choose your own company; and command what Your heart has mind to. [Exit.]

SCENE V.—The same.—Another Room in the same.

Enter ENOBARBUS and EROS, meeting.

*Ero.* How now, friend Eros?

*Eros.* There's strange news come, Sir.

*Ero.* What, man?

*Eros.* Cesar and Lepidus have made wars upon Pompey.

*Ero.* This is old: What is the success?

*Eros.* Cesar, having made use of him in the wars 'gainst Pompey, presently denied him rivalry; † would not let him partake in the glory of the action: and not resting here, accuses him of letters he had formerly wrote to Pompey; upon his own appeal, § seizes him: So poor the third is up, till death enlarge his confine.

*Ero.* Then, world, thou hast a pair of chaps; no more;

And throw between them all the food thou hast, They'll grind the one the other. Where's Antony?

*Eros.* He's walking in the garden—thus; and spins [dus?]

The rush that lies before him; cries, Fool, Lepidus And threatens the throat of that his officer, That murder'd Pompey.

*Ero.* Our great navy's rigged.

*Eros.* For Italy and Cesar. More, Domitius; My lord desires you presently: my news I might have told hereafter.

*Ero.* 'Twill be naught;

But let it be.—Bring me to Antony.

*Eros.* Come Sir. [Exit.]

SCENE VI.—Rome.—A Room in CESAR'S House.

Enter CESAR, AGRIPPA, and MECENAS.

*Ces.* Contemning Rome, he has done all this: And more;

In Alexandria,—here's the manner of it,—I'th' market place, on a tribunal silver'd, Cleopatra and himself in chairs of gold Were publicly enthron'd: at the feet, sat Cæsarion whom they call my father's son; And all the unlawful issue, that their lust Since then hath made between them. Unto her He gave the 'establishment of Egypt; made her Of lower Syria, Cyprus, Lydia, Absolute queen.

*Mec.* This in the public eye?

*Ces.* I'th' common show-place, where they exercise.

His sons, he there proclaim'd The kings of kings: Great Media, Parthia, and Armenia, He gave to Alexander; to Ptolemy he assign'd Syria, Cilicia, and Phœnicia: She In the habitments of the goddess Isis [ence, That day appear'd; and oft before gave audi. As 'tis reported, so.

\* Opening. † What follows? ‡ Equal rank § Accusation

*Mec.* Let Rome be thus Inform'd.

*Agr.* Who, queasy \* with his insolence Already, will their good thoughts call from him.

*Ces.* The people know it; and have now re- His accusations. [ceiv'd

*Agr.* Whom does he accuse?

*Ces.* Cesar: and that, having in Sicily Sextus Pompeius spoil'd, we had not rated † him. His part o'the isle: then does he say, he lent me Some shipping unrecor'd: lastly, he frets That Lepidus of the triumvirate Should be depos'd; and, being, that we detain All his revenue.

*Agr.* Sir, this should be answer'd

*Ces.* 'Tis done already, and the messenger gone.

I have told him, Lepidus was grown too cruel; That he his high authority abus'd, And did deserve his change; for what I have conquer'd,

I grant him part; but then, in his Armenia, And other of his conquer'd kingdoms, I Demand the like.

*Mec.* He'll never yield to that.

*Ces.* Nor must not then be yielded to in this.

*Enter OCTAVIA.*

*Oct.* Hail, Cesar, and my lord! hail, most dear Cesar!

*Ces.* That ever I should call thee, east-away!

*Oct.* You have not call'd me so, nor have you cause.

*Ces.* Why have you stol'n upon us thus? You come not

Like Cesar's sister: The wife of Antony Should have an army for an usher, and The neighs of horse to tell of her approach, Long ere she did appear; the trees by the way, Should have borne men; and expectation faint'd, Longing for what it had not: nay, the dust Should have ascended to the roof of heaven, Rais'd by your populous troops. But you are come

A market-maid to Rome; and have prevented The ostent; of our love, which, left unshown, Is often left unlov'd: we should have met you By sea, and land; supplying every stage With an augmented greeting.

*Oct.* Good my lord,

To come thus was I not constrain'd, but did it On my free-will. My lord, Mark Antony, Hearing that you prepar'd for war, acquainted My grieved ear withal: whereon, I begg'd His pardon for return.

*Ces.* Which soon he granted, Being an obstruct ‡ 'tween his lust and him.

*Oct.* Do not say so, my lord.

*Ces.* I have eyes upon him, And his affairs come to me on the wind. Where is he now?

*Oct.* My lord, in Athens.

*Ces.* No, my most wronged sister: Cleopatra Hath nodded him to her. He hath given his empire

Up to a whore; who now are levying [bled The kings o'the earth for war: He hath assembled Bocchus, the king of Libya; Archelaus, Of Cappadocia; Philadelphos, king Of Paphlagonia; the Thracian king, Adallas: King Malchus of Arabia; king of Pont; Herod of Jewry; Mithridates, king Of Comagene; Polemon and Antiochus, The kings of Mede, and Lycaonia, with a More larger list of sceptres.

*Oct.* Ah me, most wretched, That have my heart parted between two friends, That do afflict each other!

*Ces.* Welcome hither:

Your letters did withhold our breaking forth; Till we perceiv'd, both how you were wrong led, And we in negligent danger. Cheer your heart:

Be you not troubled with the time, which drives O'er your content these strong necessities; But let determined things to destiny Hold unbewail'd their way. Welcome to Rome: Nothing more dear to me. You are abus'd Beyond the mark of thought; and the high gods, To do you justice, make them ministers Of us, and those that love you. Best of comfort; And ever welcome to us.

*Agr.* Welcome, lady.

*Mec.* Welcome, dear madam.

Each heart in Rome does love and pity you: Only the adulterous Antony, most large In his abominations, turns you off, And gives his potent regiment \* to a trull, † That noises ‡ it against us.

*Oct.* Is it so, Sir?

*Ces.* Most certain. Sister, welcome: Play you,

Be ever known to patience: My dearest sister! [Lament.

*SCENE VII.—ANTONY'S Camp, near the Promontory of Actium.*

*Enter CLEOPATRA and ENOBARBUS.*

*Cleo.* I will be even with thee, doubt it not.

*Eno.* But why, why, why?

*Cleo.* Thou hast forespoke † my being in these wars;

And say'st, it is not fit.

*Eno.* Well, is it, is it?

*Cleo.* Is't not? Denounce against us, why should not we

Be there in person?

*Eno.* [Aside.] Well, I could reply:—

If we should serve with horse and mares together, [near

The horse were merely † lost; the mares would ‡

A soldier and his horse.

*Cleo.* What is't you say?

*Eno.* Your presence needs must puzzle Antony;

Take from his heart, take from his brain, from his time,

What should not then be spar'd. He is already Traduc'd for levity; and 'tis said in Rome, That Photinus a eunuch, and your maids, Manage this war.

*Cleo.* Sink Rome; and their tongues rot, That speak against us! A charge we bear 't'he war,

And, as the president of my kingdom, will appear there for a man. Speak not against it; I will not stay behind.

*Eno.* Nay, I have done: Here comes the emperor.

*Enter ANTONY AND CANIDIUS.*

*Ant.* Is't not strange, Canidius, That from Tarentum, and Brundisium, He could so quickly cut the Ionian sea, And take in † Toi-ne?—You have heard on't sweet?

*Cleo.* Celerity is never more admir'd, Than by the negligent.

*Ant.* A good rebuke, Which might have well becom'd the best of men, To taunt at slackness.—Canidius, we Will fight with him by sea.

*Cleo.* By sea! What else?

*Ant.* Why will my lord do so?

*Ant.* For \* † he dares us to't.

*Eno.* So hath my lord dar'd him to single fight.

*Ant.* Ay, and to wage this battle at Pharsalia, Where Cesar fought with Pompey: But these offers,

Which serve not for his vantage, he shakes off; And so should you.

*Eno.* Your ships are not well mann'd:

\* Disgusted    † Divided    ‡ Taken.

\* Power and empire.    † Harlot.    ‡ Threatened  
‡ Forbid.    † Absolutely.    ‡ Subdue.

Your mariners are muleteers,\* reapers, people  
Ingross'd by swift impress; † in Cesar's fleet  
Are those, that often have 'gainst Pompey fought:  
Their ships are yare; ‡ yours, heavy. No dis-  
grace

Shall fall you for refusing him at sea,  
Being prepar'd for land.

*Ant.* By sea, by sea,

*Eno.* Most worthy Sir, you therein throw away  
The absolute soldiership you have by land;  
Distract your army, which doth most consist  
Of war-mark'd footmen; leave unexecuted  
Your own renowned knowledge; quite forego  
The way which promises assurance; and  
Give up yourself merely to chance and hazard,  
From firm security.

*Ant.* I'll fight at sea.

*Cleo.* I have sixty sails, Cesar none better.

*Ant.* Our overplus of shipping will we burn;  
And, with the rest full-mann'd, from the head  
Of Actium

Beat the approaching Cesar. But if we fail,

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

We then can do't at land.—Thy business?

*Mess.* The news is true, my lord; he is des-  
Cesar has taken Tornyne. [cried;

*Ant.* Can he be there in person? 'tis impos-  
sible:

Strange, that his power should be.—Canidius,  
Our nineteen legions thou shalt hold by land,  
And our twelve thousand horse:—We'll to our  
ship;

*Enter a SOLDIER.*

Away, my Thetis! §—How now, worthy soldier?

*Sold.* O noble emperor, do not fight by sea:  
Trust not to rotten planks: Do you misdoit  
The sword, and these mine wounds? Let the  
Egyptians,

And the Phœnicians, go a ducking; we  
Have used to conquer standing on the earth,  
And fighting foot to foot.

*Ant.* Well, well, away.

[*Exeunt* ANTONY, CLEOPATRA, and  
ENOBARBUS.

*Sold.* By Hercules, I think I am i'the right.

*Can.* Soldier, thou art: but his whole action  
grows

Not in the power on't: So our leader's led,  
And we are women's men.

*Sold.* You keep by land.  
The legions and the horse whole, do you not?

*Can.* Marcus Octavius, Marcus Justinius,  
Publicola, and Cælius, are for sea: [sar's  
But we keep whole by land. This speed of Ce-  
Carries beyond belief.

*Sold.* While he was yet in Rome,  
His power went out in such distractions; ||  
Beguill'd all spies.

*Can.* Who's his lieutenant, hear you?

*Sold.* They say, one Taurus.

*Can.* Well I know the man.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* The emperor calls for Canidius.

*Can.* With news the time's with labour; and  
throes forth,  
Each minute, some. [Exeunt.

SCENE VIII.—A Plain near Actium.

*Enter* CESAR, TAURUS, Officers, and others.

*Ces.* Taurus,—

*Taur.* My lord.

*Ces.* Strike not by land; keep whole:  
Provoke not battle, till we have done at sea.  
Do not exceed the prescript of this scroll:  
Our fortune lies upon this jump. ¶

[Exeunt.

*Enter* ANTONY and ENOBARBUS.

*Ant.* Set we our squadrons on you' side o'the  
bill

In eye\* of Cesar's battle; from which place  
We may the number of the ships behold,  
And so plect accordingly. [Exeunt.

*Enter* CANIDIUS, marching with his Land Army  
one way, over the Stage; and TAURUS, the  
Lieutenant of CESAR, the other way. After  
their departure, is heard the noise of a Sea-  
fight.

*Alarum.* Re-enter ENOBARBUS.

*Eno.* Naught, naught, all naught! I can behold  
no longer:

The Antoniad, † the Egyptian admiral,  
With all their sixty, fly, and turn the rudder;  
To see't, mine eyes are blasted.

*Enter* SCARUS

*Scar.* Gods, and goddesses,

All the whole synd of them!

*Eno.* What's thy passion?

*Scar.* The greater cattle ‡ of the world is lost  
With very ignorance: we have kiss'd away  
Kingdoms and provinces.

*Eno.* How appears the fight?

*Scar.* On our side like the token'd § pestilence,  
Where death is sure. Yon' tithald-rid nag || of  
Egypt,

Whom leprosy o'ertake! i'the midst o'the fight,—  
When vantage like a pair of twins appear'd,  
Both as the same, or rather ours the elder,  
The brize ¶ upon her, like a cow in June,  
Hoists sails, and flies.

*Eno.* That I beheld: mine eyes

Did sicken at the sight on't, and could not  
Endure a further view.

*Scar.* She once being loof'd, \*\*

The noble ruin of her magic, Antony, [lard  
Claps on his sea-wing, and like a doting mal-  
Leaving the fight in height, flies after her:  
I never saw an action of such shame;  
Experience, manhood, honour, ne'er before  
Did violate so itself.

*Eno.* Alack, alack!

*Enter* CANIDIUS.

*Can.* Our fortune on the sea is out of breath  
And sinks most lamentably. Had our general  
Been what he knew himself, it had gone well:  
Oh! he has given example for our flight,  
Most grossly, by his own.

*Eno.* Ay, are you thereabouts? Why then, good  
night

Indeed. [Aside.

*Can.* Towards Peloponnesus are they fled.

*Scar.* 'Tis easy to't; and there I will attend  
What further comes.

*Can.* To Cesar will I render

My legions and my horse; six kings already  
Show me the way of yielding.

*Eno.* I'll yet follow

The wounded chance †† of Antony, though my  
reason

Sits in the wind against me. [Exeunt.

SCENE IX.—Alexandria.—A Room in the  
Palace.

*Enter* ANTONY and ATTENDANTS.

*Ant.* Hark, the land bids me tread no more  
upon't,

It is ashani'd to bear me!—Friends, come hither  
I am so lated ‡ in the world, that I  
Have lost my way for ever:—I have a ship  
Laden with gold; take that, divide it; fly,  
And make your peace with Cesar.

\* Sight. † Name of Cleopatra's ship. ‡ Corner.

§ Spotted. ¶ Common strumpet.

¶ The gad-fly that stings cattle.

\*\* Loof is to bring a ship close to the wind.

†† The broken fortunes. ‡‡ Beughted.

\* Mule drivers. † Pressed in haste. ‡ Manageable.  
§ He calls Cleopatra by the name of the sea-goddess.  
¶ Such different detachments. ¶ Hazard.

*Att.* Fly! not we.

*Ant.* I have fled myself; and have instructed cowards

To run and show their shoulders.—Friends, be gone;

I have myself resolv'd upon a course, Which has no need of you; be gone:

My treasure's in the harbour, take it.—Oh!

I follow'd that I blush to look upon:

My very hairs do mutiny; for the white

Reprove the brow: for rashness, and they them For fear and dotage.—Friends, be gone: you shall

Have letters from me to some friends, that will Sweep your way for you. Pray you, look not sad,

Nor make replies of loathness: take the hint

Which my despair proclaims; let that be left

Which leaves itself: to the sea side straightway:

I will possess you of that ship and treasure.

Leave me, I pray, a little: 'pray you now:—

Nay, do so; for, indeed, I have lost command,

Therefore I pray you:—I'll see you by and by.

[Sits down.]

*Enter EROS; and CLEOPATRA led by CHARMIAN and IRAS.*

*Eros.* Nay, gentle madam, to him:—Comfort him

*Irás.* Do, most dear queen.

*Char.* Do! Why, what else?

*Cleo.* Let me sit down. O Juno!

*Ant.* No, no, no, no, no.

*Eros.* See you here, Sir?

*Ant.* O he, fie, fie.

*Char.* Madam,—

*Irás.* Madam; O good empress!—

*Eros.* Sir, Sir,—

*Ant.* Yes, my lord, yes:—He, \* at Philippi,

kept

His sword even like a dancer; while I struck

The lean and wrinkled Cassius; and 'twas I

That the mad Brutus ended: he alone

Dealt on hesitantly,† and no practice had

In the brave squares of war: Yet now—No

matter.

*Cleo.* Ah! stand by.

*Eros.* The queen, my lord, the queen.

*Irás.* Go to him, madam, speak to him;

He is unqualified; with very shame.

*Cleo.* Well then,—Sustain me:—Oh!

*Eros.* Most noble Sir, arise; the queen ap-

proaches;

Her head's declin'd, and death will seize her: but §

Your comfort makes the rescue.

*Ant.* I have offended reputation;

A most unnooble swerving.

*Eros.* Sir, the queen.

*Ant.* O whither hast thou led me, Egypt?

See,

How I convey my shame out of thine eyes

By looking back on what I have left behind

\*Stic'd in dishonour.

*Cleo.* O my lord, my lord!

Forgive my fearful sails! I little thought

You would have follow'd.

*Ant.* Egypt, thou knew'st too well

My heart was to thy rudder tied by the strings,

And thou should'st tow me after: O'er my spirit

Thy full supremacy thou knew'st; and that

Thy beck might from the bidding of the gods

Command me.

*Cleo.* Oh! my pardon.

*Ant.* Now I must

To the young man send humble treaties, dodge

And palter in the shifts of lowliness; who

With half the bulk o' the world play'd as I pleas'd,

Making and marring fortunes. You did know

How much you were my conqueror; and that

My sword made weak by my affection, would

Obeey it on all cause.

*Cleo.* Oh! pardon, pardon.

*Ant.* Fall not a tear, I say: one of them rates \*

All that is won and lost: Give me a kiss;

Even this repays me.—We sent our school-master,

Is he come back?—Love, I am full of lead:—

Some wine, within there, and our viands:—For-

tune knows,

We scorn her most, when most she offers blows,

[Exeunt.]

SCENE X.—CESAR'S Camp in Egypt.

*Enter CESAR, DOLABELLA, THYREUS, and others.*

*Ces.* Let him appear that's come from An-  
Know you him? [tony.—

*Dol.* Cesar, 'tis his schoolmaster: †

An argument that he is pluck'd, when hither

He sends so poor a minion of his wing,

Which had superfluous kings for messengers,

Not many moons gone by.

*Enter EUPHRONIUS.*

*Ces.* Approach, and speak.

*Eup.* Such as I am, I come from Antony:

I was of late as petty to his ends,

As is the morn-dew on the myrtle leaf

To his grand sea.

*Ces.* Be it so: Declare thine office.

*Eup.* Lord of his fortunes he salutes thee, and

Requires to live in Egypt: which, not granted,

He lessens his requests; and to thee sues

To let him breathe between the heavens and

earth,

A private man in Athens: This for him.

Next, Cleopatra does confess thy greatness;

Submits her to thy might; and of thee craves

The circle ‡ of the Ptolemies for her heirs,

Now hazarded to thy grace.

*Ces.* For Antony,

I have no ears to his request. The queen

Of audience, not desire, shall fail; so she

From Egypt drive her all-disgraced friend, §

O! take his life there: This if she perform,

She shall not sue unheard. So to them both.

*Eup.* Fortune pursue thee!

*Ces.* Bring him through the bands.

[Exit EUPHRONIUS.]

To try thy eloquence, now 'tis time: Despatch;

From Antony win Cleopatra: promise,

[To THYREUS.]

And in our name, what she requires: add more,

From thine invention, offers: women are not,

In their best fortunes, strong; but want will

perjure [Thyrens;]

The ne'er-touch'd vestal: Try thy cunning,

Make thine own edict for thy pains, which we

Will answer as a law.

*Thyr.* Cesar, I go.

*Ces.* Observe how Antony becomes his flaw; ¶

And what thou think'st his very action speaks

In every power that moves.

*Thyr.* Cesar, I shall. [Exeunt.]

SCENE XI.—Alexandria.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter CLEOPATRA, ENOBARBUS, CHARMIAN, and IRAS.*

*Cleo.* What shall we do, Enobarbus?

*Eno.* Think, and die.

*Cleo.* Is Antony, or we, in fault for this;

*Eno.* Antony only, that would make his will

Lord of his reason. What although you fled

From that great face of war, whose several

ranges

Frighted each other, why should he follow?

The itch of his affection should not then

Have nick'd ¶ his captainship; at such a point

When half to half the world oppos'd, he being

The inered question, \*\* 'twas a shame no less

\* Is worth.

† Euphronius, schoolmaster to An-

tony's children.

‡ Duoden, the crown.

§ Paramour.

¶ Bears his misfortunes.

¶ Cosened

defeated.

\*\* The sole occasion of the war

\* Cesar.

† Fought by proxy.

‡ Unless.

‡ Bewildered.

Than was his loss, to course your flying flags,  
And leave his navy gazing.

*Cleo.* Prithee, peace.

*Enter ANTONY, with EUPHRONIUS.*

*Ant.* Is this his answer?

*Eup.* Ay, my lord.

*Ant.* The queen

Shall then have courtesy, so she will yield  
Us up.

*Eup.* He says so.

*Ant.* Let her know it.—

To the boy Cesar send this grizled head,  
And he will till thy wishes to the brain  
With principalities.

*Cleo.* That head, my lord?

*Ant.* To him again: Tell him, he wears the  
rose  
Of youth upon him; from which the world should  
Something particular: his coin, ships, legions,  
May be a coward's; whose minister would  
prevail

Under the service of a child, as soon  
As t' the command of Cesar: I dare him, therefore,  
To lay his gay comparisons \* apart,  
And answer me, declin'd, † sword against  
sword.

Ourselves alone: I'll write it; follow me.

*[Exit ANTONY and EUPHRONIUS.]*

*Eno.* Yes, like enough, high-battled Cesar will  
Unstate his happiness, and be stag'd to the show,  
Against a sworder.—I see, men's judgments are  
A parcel of their fortunes; and things outward  
To draw the inward quality after them,  
To suffer all alike. That he should dream,  
Knowing all measures, the full Cesar will  
Answer his emptiness!—Cesar, thou hast subdu'd  
His judgment too.

*Enter an ATTENDANT.*

*Att.* A messenger from Cesar.

*Cleo.* What, no more ceremony?—See my  
women!—

Against the blown rose may they stop their nose,  
That kneel'd unto the buds.—Admit him, Sir.

*Eno.* Mine honesty and I begin to square. ‡

*[Aside.]*

The loyalty, well held to fools, does make  
Our faith mere folly:—Yet, he that can endure  
To follow with allegiance a fallen lord,  
Does conquer him that did his master conquer,  
And earns a place i' the story.

*Enter THYREUS.*

*Cleo.* Cesar's will?

*Thyr.* Hear it apart.

*Cleo.* None but friends: say boldly,

*Thyr.* So, haply, ‖ are they friends to Antony.

*Eno.* He needs as many, Sir, as Cesar has;  
Or needs not us. If Cesar please, our master  
Will leap to be his friend: For us, you know,  
Whose he is, we are; and that's Cesar's.

*Thyr.* So.—

Thus then, thou most renown'd! Cesar entreats,  
Not to consider in what case thou stand'st,  
Further than he is Cesar.

*Cleo.* Go on: Right royal.

*Thyr.* He knows, that you embrace not An-  
tony  
As you did love, but as you fear'd him.

*Cleo.* Oh!

*Thyr.* The scars upon your honour, therefore,  
Does pity, as constrained blemishes, ‖  
Not as deserv'd.

*Cleo.* He is a god, and knows  
What is most right: Mine honour was not yielded,  
But conquer'd merely.

*Eno.* To be sure of that, ‖  
I will ask Antony.—Sir, Sir, thou'rt so leaky,  
That we must leave thee to thy sinking, for  
Thy dearest quit thee. *[Exit ENOBARDUS.]*

*Thyr.* Shall I say to Cesar

What you require of him? for he partly begs  
To be desir'd to give. It much would please  
him,

That of his fortunes you should make a staff  
To lean upon: but it would warm his spirits,  
To hear from me you had left Antony,  
And put yourself under his shroud,  
The universal landlord.

*Cleo.* What's your name?

*Thyr.* My name is Thyreus.

*Cleo.* Most kind messenger,  
Say to great Cesar this, In disputation \*  
I kiss his conqu'ring hand; tell him, I am  
prompt

To lay my crown at his feet, and there to kneel:  
Tell him, from his all-obeying † breath I hear  
The doom of Egypt.

*Thyr.* 'Tis your noblest course.

Wisdom and fortune combating together,  
If that the former dare but what it can,  
No chance may shake it. Give me grace to lay  
My duty on your hand.

*Cleo.* Your Cesar's father

Oft, when he hath mus'd of taking kingdoms in,  
Bestow'd his lips on that unworthy place,  
As it rain'd kisses.

*Re-enter ANTONY and ENOBARDUS.*

*Ant.* Favours, by Jove that thunders!—  
What art thou, fellow?

*Thyr.* One, that but performs  
The bidding of the fullest man, and worthiest  
To have command obey'd.

*Eno.* You will be whipp'd.

*Ant.* Approach, there:—Ay, you kite!—Now  
gods and devils! *[Ant.]*  
Authority melts from me: Of late, when I cry'd,  
Like boys unto a muss, ‡ kings would start forth,  
And cry, *Your will!* Have you no ears? I am

*Enter ATTENDANTS.*

Antony yet. Take hence this Jack, § and whip  
him.

*Eno.* 'Tis better playing with a lion's whelp,  
Than with an old one dying.

*Ant.* Moon and stars! *[Butaric's]*  
Whip him:—Were't twenty of the greatest tri-  
That do acknowledge Cesar, should I find them  
So saucy with the hand of she here, (What's her  
name,

Since she was Cleopatra?)—Whip him, fellows,  
Till, like a boy, you see him cringe his face,  
And whine aloud for mercy: Take him hence.

*Thyr.* Mark Antony,—

*Ant.* Tug him away; being whipp'd,  
Bring him again:—This Jack of Cesar's shall  
Bear us an errand to him.—

*[Exit ATTEND. with THYREUS.]*

You were half blasted ere I knew you:—Ha!  
Have I my pillow left unpress'd in Rome  
Forborne the getting of a lawful race,  
And by a gem of women, to be abus'd  
By one that looks on feeders? ‖

*Cleo.* Good my lord,—

*Ant.* You have been a boggler ever:  
But when we in our viciousness grow hard,  
(O misery on't!) the wise gods seal our eyes;  
In our own filth drop our clear judgments;  
make us

Adore our errors; laugh at us, while we strut  
To our confusion.

*Cleo.* Oh! is it come to this?

*Ant.* I found you as a morsel cold upon  
Dead Cesar's trencher: nay, you were a flag-  
ment

Of Cneius Pompey's; besides what hotter hours,  
Unregister'd in vulgar fame, you have  
Luxuriously pick'd out:—For I am sure,  
Though you can guess what temperance should be  
You know not what it is.

\* The comparisons in which he indulges on reviewing  
his fortune and mine. † That am fallen. ‡ Of a piece with. § Quarrel. ¶ Perhaps.

\* Supposed to be an error for *deputation*, i. e. by proxy.  
† Breath which all obey. ‡ Scramble. § A term of contempt. ¶ Servants.

*Cleo.* Wherefore is this?

*Ant.* To let a fellow that will take rewards  
And say, *God quit you!* be familiar with  
My playfellow, your hand; this kingly seal,  
And plighting of high hearts!—Oh! that I were  
Upon the hull of Basan, to outoar  
The horned herd! for I have savage cause:  
And to proclaim it civilly, were like  
A halter'd neck, which does the hangman thank  
For being yare \* about him.—Is he whipp'd?

*Re-enter ATTENDANTS, with THYRUS.*

1 *Att.* Soundly, my lord.

*Ant.* Cry'd he? and begg'd he pardon?

1 *Att.* He did ask favour.

*Ant.* If that thy father live, let him repent  
Thou wast not made his daughter; and be thou  
To follow Cesar in his triumph, since [sorrow]  
Thou hast been whipp'd for following him:  
henceforth,

The white hand of a lady fever thee,  
Shake thou to look on't.—Get thee back to Cesar,  
Tell him thy entertainment: Look thou sav,  
He makes me angry with him, for he seems  
Proud and disdainful, harping on what I am,  
Not what he knew I was: He makes me angry;  
And at this time most easy 'tis to do't;  
When my good stars, that were my former guides,  
Have empty left their orbs, and shot their fires  
Into the abism of hell. If he mislike  
My speech, and what is done; tell him, he has  
Hipparchus, my enfranchis'd bondman, whom  
He may at pleasure whip, or hang, or torture,  
As he shall like, to quit me: Urge it thou:  
Hence, with thy stripes, begone. [Exit THYRUS.]

*Cleo.* Have you done yet?

*Ant.* Alack, our terrible moon  
Is now eclips'd; and it portends alone  
The fall of Antony!

*Cleo.* I must stay his time.

*Ant.* To flatter Cesar, would you mingle eyes  
With one that ties his points?

*Cleo.* Not know me yet?

*Ant.* Cold-hearted toward me!

*Cleo.* Ah! dear, if I be so,

From my cold heart let heaven engender hail,  
And poison it in the source; and the first stone  
Drop in my neck; as it determines; so  
Dissolve my life! The next Cesarion's smile!  
Till, by degrees, the memory of my womb,  
Together with my brave Egyptians all,  
By the discarding of this pelleted stum,  
Lie graveless; till the flies and gnats of Nile  
Have buried them for prey!

*Ant.* I am satisfied.

Cesar sits down in Alexandria; where  
I will oppose his fate. Our force by land  
Hath nobly held: our sever'd navy too  
Have knit again, and fleet, threat'ning most  
sealike.

Where hast thou been, my heart?—Dost thou  
hear, lady?

If from the field I shall return once more  
To kiss these lips, I will appear in blood;  
I and my sword will earn our chronicle;  
There is hope in it yet.

*Cleo.* That's my brave lord!

*Ant.* I will be treble-sinew'd, hearted, breath'd,  
And fight maliciously: for when mine hours  
Were nice and lucky, men did ransom lives  
Of me for jests; but now, I'll set my teeth,  
And send to darkness all that stop me.—Come,  
Let's have one other gaudy night: call to me  
All my sad captains, fill our bowls; once more  
Let's mock the midnight bell.

*Cleo.* It is my birth-day:

I had thought to have held it poor; but, since  
my lord

Is Antony again, I will be Cleopatra.

*Ant.* We'll yet do well.

\* Handy. † Requite. ‡ Dissolves.  
‡ Her son by Julius Cesar. § Melteth.  
¶ Float.

*Cleo.* Call all his noble captains to my lord.

*Ant.* Do so, we'll speak to them; and to-night  
I'll force

The wine peep through their scars.—Come on,  
my queen;  
There's sap in't yet. The next time I do fight,  
I'll make death love me; for I will contend  
Even with his pestilent scythe.

[Exit ANTONY, CLEOPATRA, and  
Attendants.]

*Eno.* Now he'll out-stare the lightning. To  
be furious,  
Is, to be trighted out of fear: and, in that  
mood,

The dove will peck the estridge; \* and I see still,  
A diminution in our captain's brain  
Restores his heart: When valour preys on  
reason,

It eats the sword it fights with. I will seek  
Some way to leave him. [Exit.]

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—CESAR'S Camp at Alexandria.

*Enter CESAR, reading a Letter; AGRIPPA,  
MECANAS, and others.*

*Ces.* He calls me boy; and chides, as he had  
power

To beat me out of Egypt: my messenger  
He hath whipp'd with rods; dares me to per-  
sonal combat;

Cesar to Antony:—Let the old ruffian know,  
I have many other ways to die; mean time,  
Laugh at his challenge.

*Mec.* Cesar must think,

When one so great begins to rage, he's hunted  
Even to falling. Give him no breath, but now  
Make boot of his distraction: Never anger  
Made good guard for itself.

*Ces.* Let our best heads

Know, that to-morrow the last of many battles  
We mean to fight:—Within our files there are  
Of those that serv'd Mark Antony but late,  
Enough to fetch him in. See it be done;  
And feast the army: we have store to do't,  
And they have earn'd the waste. Poor Antony!  
[Exit.]

##### SCENE II.—Alexandria.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter ANTONY, CLEOPATRA, ENOPARBUS,  
CHARMIAN, IRAS, ALEXAS, and others.*

*Ant.* He will not fight with me, Domitius?

*Eno.* No.

*Ant.* Why should he not?

*Eno.* He thinks, being twenty times of better  
fortune,

He is twenty men to one.

*Ant.* To-morrow, soldier,

By sea and land I'll fight: or I will live,  
Or bathe my dying honour in the blood  
Shall make it live again. Woe't thou think well?

*Eno.* I'll strike; and cry, *Take all!*

*Ant.* Well said; come on.—

Call forth my household servants; let's to-night  
*Enter SERVANTS.*

Be bounteous at our meal.—Give me thy hand,  
Thou hast been rightly honest;—so hast thou;—  
And thou,—and thou,—and thou;—you have  
serv'd me well,  
And kings have been your fellows.

*Cleo.* What means this?

*Eno.* 'Tis one of those odd tricks, which sor-  
row shoots [Aside.]

Out of the mind.

*Ant.* And thou art honest too.

I wish, I could be made so many men; .

And all of you clapp'd up together in

\* Ostrich.

† Take advantage

An Antony; that I might do you service,  
So good as you have done.

*Serv.* The gods forbid!

*Ant.* Well, my good fellows, wait on me to-night:

Scant not my cups; and make as much of me,  
As when mine empire was your fellow too,  
And suffer'd my command.

*Cleo.* What does he mean?

*Eno.* To make his followers weep.

*Ant.* Tend me to-night;

May be, it is the period of your duty:  
Haply,\* you shall not see me more: or if,  
A mangled shadow: perchance, to-morrow  
You'll serve another master. I look on you,  
As one that takes his leave. Mine honest friends,  
I turn you not away; but, like a master  
Married to your good service, stay till death:  
Tend me to-night two hours, I ask no more,  
And the gods yield you for't!

*Eno.* What mean you, Sir,  
To give them this discomfort? Look, they weep;  
And I, an ass, an onion-ey'd—for shame!  
Transform us not to women.

*Ant.* Ho, ho, ho!†  
Now the witch take me, if I meant it thus!  
Grace grow where those drops fall! My hearty  
friends,

You take me in too dolorous a sense:  
I spake to you for your comfort: did desire you  
To burn this night with torches: Know, my  
hearts, •

I hope well of to-morrow; and will lead you,  
Where rather I'll expect victorious life,  
Than death and honour. Let's to supper; come  
And drown consideration. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The same.—Before the Palace.

Enter two SOLDIERS, to their Guard.

1 *Sold.* Brother, good night: to-morrow is the day.

2 *Sold.* It will determine one way: fare you well.

Heard you of nothing strange about the streets?

1 *Sold.* Nothing: What news?

2 *Sold.* Belike, 'tis but a rumour:

Good night to you.

1 *Sold.* Well, Sir, good night.

Enter two other SOLDIERS.

2 *Sold.* Soldiers,  
Have careful watch.

3 *Sold.* And you: Good night, good night.

[The first two place themselves at their Posts.

4 *Sold.* Here we: [They take their Posts.]  
and if to-morrow

Our navy thrive, I have an absolute hope

Our landmen will stand up.

3 *Sold.* 'Tis a brave army,  
And full of purpose.

[Music of Hautboys under the Stage.

4 *Sold.* Peace, what noise?

1 *Sold.* List, list!

2 *Sold.* Hark!

1 *Sold.* Music! 'tis the air.

3 *Sold.* Under the earth.

4 *Sold.* It signs § well,  
Doesn't not?

3 *Sold.* No.

1 *Sold.* Peace, I say. What should this mean?

2 *Sold.* 'Tis the god Hercules, whom Antony  
lov'd,

Now leaves him.

1 *Sold.* Walk; let's see if other watchmen  
Do hear what we do.

[They advance to another Post.

2 *Sold.* How now, masters?

*Sold.* How now?

How now! do you hear this?

[Several speaking together.

\* Perhaps,

† Reward.  
‡ Bodes.

§ Deeds.

1 *Sold.* Ay! Is't not strange?

3 *Sold.* Do you hear, masters? do you hear?

1 *Sold.* Follow the noise so far as we have  
quarter;

Let's see how't will give off.

*Sold.* [Several speaking.] Content: 'Tis  
strange. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—The same.—A Room in the  
Palace.

Enter ANTONY and CLEOPATRA; CHARNIAN,  
and others, attending.

*Ant.* Eros! mine armour, Eros!

*Cleo.* Sleep a little.

*Ant.* No, my chuck,—Eros, come; mine ar-  
mour, Eros!

Enter EROS, with Armour.

Come, my good fellow, put thine iron on:—

If fortune be not our's to-day, it is

Because we brave her.—Come.

*Cleo.* Nay, I'll help too.

What's this for?

*Ant.* Ah, let be, let be! thou art [this.

The armourer of my heart:—False, false; this,

*Cleo.* Sooth, la, I'll help: Thus it must be.

*Ant.* Well, well; [tell?]

We shall thrive now.—See'st thou, my good

Go, put on thy defences.

*Eros.* Briefly,\* Sir.

*Cleo.* Is not this buckled well?

*Ant.* Rarely, rarely:

He that unbuckles this, till we do please

To doff't for our repose, shall hear a storm.—

Thou fumblest, Eros; and my queen's a quite

More tight† at this, than thou: Despatch,—O

love, [knew'st

That thou could'st see my wars to-day, and

The royal occupation! thou should'st see

Enter an OFFICER, armed.

A workman in't.—Good morrow to thee; wel-  
come: [charge:

Thou look'st like him that knows a warlike

To business that we love, we rise betime,

And go to it with delight.

1 *Off.* A thousand, Sir,

Early though it be, have on your rivetted trim

And at the port expect you.

[Shout. Trumpets. Flourish.

Enter other OFFICERS, and SOLDIERS.

2 *Off.* The morn is fair.—Good morrow, ge-  
neral.

*All.* Good morrow, general.

*Ant.* 'Tis well blown, lads.

This morning, like the spirit of a youth

That means to be of note, begins betimes.—

So, so; come, give me that: this way; well  
said.

Fare thee well, dame, whate'er becomes of me:  
This is a soldier's kiss: rebukable, [Kisses her.

And worthy shameful check it were, to stand  
On more mechanic compliment; I'll leave thee

Now, like a man of steel.—You, that will fight,  
Follow me close; I'll bring you to't.—Adieu.

[Exit ANTONY, EROS, OFFICERS, and  
SOLDIERS.

*Char.* Please you, retire to your chamber?

He goes forth gallantly. That he and Cesar might  
Determine this great war in single fight!

Then, Antony,—But now,—Well, on.

[Exit

SCENE V.—ANTONY'S Camp near Alex-  
andria.

Trumpets sound.—Enter ANTONY and EROS;  
a SOLDIER meeting them.

*Sold.* The gods make this a happy day to  
Antony.

• Shortly.

† Adieu.

*Ant.* Would, thou and those thy scars had  
once prevail'd

To make me fight at land;

*Sold.* Had'st thou done so,

The kings that have revolted, and the soldier

That has this morning left thee, would have still  
follow'd thy heels.

*Ant.* Who's gone this morning?

*Sold.* Who?

One ever near thee: Call for Enohbarbus,  
He shall not hear thee; or from Cesar's camp  
say, I am none of thine.

*Ant.* What say'st thou?

*Sold.* Sir,

He is with Cesar

*Eros.* Sir, his chests and treasure

He has not with him.

*Ant.* Is he gone?

*Sold.* Most certain.

*Ant.* Go, Eros, send his treasure after; do it;  
Detain no jot, I charge thee: write to him  
(I will subscribe) gentle adieus and greetings:  
say, that I wish he never find more cause  
To change a master.—Oh! my fortunes have  
Corrupted honest men:—Eros, despatch.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—Cesar's Camp before Alex-  
andria.

*Flourish.*—*Enter* CESAR with AGRIPPA, ENO-  
HARBUS, and others.

*Ces.* Go forth, Agrippa, and begin the fight;  
Our will is, Antony be took alive;  
Make it so known.

*Agr.* Cesar, I shall. [*Exit* AGRIPPA.]

*Ces.* The time of universal peace is near:  
Prove this a prosperous day, the three-hoof'd  
shall bear the olive freely. [*world*]

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Antony

Is come into the field.

*Ces.* Go, charge Agrippa

Plant those that have revolted in the van,

That Antony may seem to spend his fury  
Upon himself.

[*Exeunt* CESAR and his Train.]

*Eno.* Alexas did revolt: and went to Jewry,  
On affairs of Antony; there did persuade  
Great Herod to incline himself to Cesar,  
And leave his master Antony: for his pains,  
Cesar hath hang'd him. Candidus, and the rest  
That fell away, have entertainment, but  
No honourable trust. I have done ill,  
Of which I do accuse myself so soley,  
That I will joy no more.

*Enter a SOLDIER of CESAR'S.*

*Sold.* Enohbarbus, Antony

Hath after thee sent all thy treasure, with

His bounty overplus: The messenger

Came on my guard; and at thy tent is now,

Unloading of his mules.

*Eno.* I give it you.

*Sold.* Mock me not, Enohbarbus.

I tell you true: Best that you say'd the bringer

Out of the host: I must attend mine office,

Or would have don't myself. Your emperor  
Continues still a Jove.

[*Exit* SOLDIER.]

*Eno.* I am alone the villain of the earth,  
And feel I am so most. O Antony,  
Thou mine of bounty, how would'st thou have paid  
My better service, when my turpitude  
Thou dost so crown with gold! This blows \* my  
heart.

If swift thought break it not, a swifter mean  
Shall outstrike thought: but thought † will do't,  
I feel.

I fight against thee!—No: I will go seek  
Some ditch, whereto die; the foul'st best fits  
My latter part of life. [*Exit.*]

\* Swells.

† Conscience.

SCENE VII.—Field of Battle between the  
Camps.

*Alarum.*—*Drums and trumpets.*—*Enter*  
AGRIPPA, and others.

*Agr.* Retire, we have engag'd ourselves too far;  
Cesar himself has work, and our oppression  
Exceeds what we expected. [*Exeunt.*]

*Alarum.*—*Enter* ANTONY, and SCARUS  
wounded.

*Scar.* O my brave emperor, this is fought in-  
deed!

Had we done so at first, we had driven them  
With clouts about their heads. [*hoine*]

*Ant.* Thou bleed'st apace.

*Scar.* I had a wound here that was like a T,  
But now 'tis made an H.

*Ant.* They do retire.

*Scar.* We'll beat 'em into bench-holes; I  
have yet  
Room for six scotches \* more.

*Enter* EROS.

*Eros.* They are beaten, Sir; and our advantage  
For a fair victory. [*serves*]

*Scar.* Let us score their backs,

And snatch 'em up, as we take hares, behind;

'Tis sport to maul a runner.

*Ant.* I will reward thee

Once for thy spritely comfort, and ten fold

For thy good valour. Come thee on.

*Scar.* I'll halt after. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VIII.—Under the walls of Alex-  
andria.

*Alarum.* *Enter* ANTONY, marching; SCARUS,  
and Forces.

*Ant.* We have beat him to his camp; Run one

before. [*row,*]

And let the queen know of our guests.—To-mor-

row the sun shall see us, we'll s, all the blood

That ha- to-day escap'd. I thank you all;

For doughty †-handed are you: and have fought

Not as you serv'd the cause, but as it had been

Each man's like mine; you have shown all

Hectors.

Enter the city, clip ‡ your wives, your friends,

Tell them your feats; whilst they, with joyful

tears, [*kiss*]

Wash the congealment from your wounds, and

The honour'd gashes whole.—Give me thy hand;

[*To* SCARUS.]

*Enter* CLEOPATRA, attended.

To this great fairy § I'll commend thy acts,

Make her thanks bless thee.—O thou day o'the

world,

Chain mine arm'd neck; leap thou, attire and all,

Through proof of harness to my heart and thine

Ride on the pants triumphing.

*Cleo.* Lord of lords!

O infinite virtue! com'st thou smiling from

The world's great snare uncaught?

*Ant.* My nightingale,

We have beat them to their beds. What, girl,

though grey [*we*]

Do something mingle with our brown; yet have

A brain that nourishes our nerves, and can

Get gaul for gaul of youth. Behold this man;

Commend unto his lips thy favouring hand;—

Kiss it, my warrior:—He hath fought to-day,

As if a god, in hate of mankind, had

Destroy'd in such a shape.

*Cleo.* I'll give thee, friend,

An amour all of gold: it was a king's.

*Ant.* He has deserv'd it, were it caruncled

Like holy Phœbus' ear.—Give me thy hand;

Through Alexandria make a jolly march; †

\* Cuts.

† Brave.

‡ Embraces.

§ Beauty, united with power, was the characteristic of  
fairies.



Bear our back'd targets like the men that owe them : \*

Had our great palace the capacity  
To camp this host, we all would sup together,  
And drink carouses to the next day's fate,  
Which promises royal peril.—Trumpeters,  
With brazen din blast you the city's ear ;  
Make mingle with our rattling tabourines ;  
That heaven and earth may strike their sounds  
together,  
Applauding our approach. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IX.—CESAR'S Camp.

SENTINELS on their Post. Enter ENOBARBUS.

1 Sold. If we be not reliev'd within this hour,  
We must return to the court of guard : † The  
night

Is shiny ; and, they say, we shall embattle  
By the second hour 't' the morn.

2 Sold. This last day was

A shrewd one to us.

Eno. O bear me witness, night !—

3 Sold. What man is this ?

2 Sold. Stand close, and list to him.

Eno. B' witness to me, O thou blessed moon,  
When men revolted shall upon record  
Bear hateful memory, poor Enobarbus did  
Before thy face repent !—

1 Sold. Enobarbus !

3 Sold. Peace ;

Hark further.

Eno. O sovereign mistress of true melancholy,  
The poisonous damp of night dispense ‡ upon me ;  
That life, a very rebel to my will,  
May hang no longer on me : Throw my heart  
Against the flint and hardness of my fault ;  
Which, being dried with grief, will break to  
powder,

And finish all foul thoughts. O Antony,

Nobler than my revolt is infamous,

Forgive me in thine own particular ;

But let the world rank me in register

A master-leaver, and a fugitive :

O Antony ! O Antony !

2 Sold. Let's speak

To him.

1 Sold. Let's hear him, for the things he speaks  
May concern Cesar.

3 Sold. Let's do so. But he sleeps.

1 Sold. Swoons rather ; for so bad a prayer  
as his

Was never yet for sleeping.

2 Sold. Go we to him.

3 Sold. Awake, awake, Sir ; speak to us.

2 Sold. Hear you, Sir.

1 Sold. The hand of death hath raught § him.

Hark, the drums

[Drums afar off.]

Demurely wake the sleepers. Let us bear him  
To the court of guard ; he is of note : our hour  
Is fully out.

3 Sold. Come on then ;

He may recover yet.

[Exeunt with the Body.]

SCENE X.—Between the two Camps.

Enter ANTONY and SCARUS, with Forces  
marching.

Ant. Their preparation is to-day by sea ;  
We please them not by land.

Scar. For both, my lord.

Ant. I would, they'd fight 't' the fire, or in the  
air :

We'd fight there too. But this it is : Our foot

Upon the hills adjoining to the city,

Shall stay with us ; order for sea is given ;

They have put forth the haven : Further on,

Where their appointment we may best discover,  
And look on their endeavour. [Exeunt.]

\* As becomes the warriors that own them. † The  
guard-room. ‡ Four out, as a sponge when  
squeezed. § The ancient praterie tense of reach.

Enter CESAR with his Forces, marching.

Ces. But being charg'd, we will be still by  
land,  
Which, as I take't, we shall ; for his best force  
Is torth to man his gallees. To the vales,  
And hold our best advantage. [Exeunt.]

Re-enter ANTONY and SCARUS.

Ant. Yet they're not join'd : Where yonder  
pine does stand,  
I shall discover all ; I'll bring thee word  
Straight how 'tis like to go. [Exit.]

Scar. Swallows have built  
In Cleopatra's sails their nests : the angureis  
Say, they know rot,—they cannot tell,—look  
grimly,  
And dare not speak their knowledge. Antony  
Is valiant and dejected ; and, by starts,  
His fifted fortunes give him hope and fear,  
Of what he has and has not.

Alarm afar off, as at a Sea Fight.

Re-enter ANTONY.

Ant. All is lost !  
This foul Egyptian hath betrayed me :  
My fleet have yielded to the foe ; and yonder  
They cast their caps up, and carouse together  
Like friends long lost.—Triple-turn'd whore ! \*

'tis thou  
Hast sold me to this novice ; and my heart  
Makes only wars on thee.—Bid them all fly :  
For when I am reveng'd upon my charm,  
I have done all.—Bid them all fly, begone.

[Exit SCARUS.]  
O sun, thy uprise shall I see no more :  
Fortune and Antony part here ; even here  
Do we shake hands.—All come to this ?—The  
hearts

That spauel'd me at heels, to whom I gave  
Their wishes, do discandy, melt their sweets  
On blossoming Cesar ; and this pine is bark'd,  
That overtopp'd them all. Betray'd I am :  
O this false soul of Egypt ! this grave charm,  
Whose eye beck'd † forth my wars, and call'd ‡  
them home ;

Whose bosom was my crownet, my chief end,  
Like a right gipsy, hath, at fast and loose, §  
Beguil'd me to the very heart of loss.—  
What, Eros, Eros !

Enter CLEOPATRA.

Ah ! thou spell ! Avaunt.

Cleo. Why is my lord enrag'd against his  
love ?

Ant. Vanish ; or I shall give thee thy deserv-  
ing,

And blemish Cesar's triumph. Let him take thee,  
And hoist thee up to the shouting plebeians :  
Follow his chariot, like the greatest spot  
Of all thy sex ; most monster-like, be shown  
For poor'st diminutives, to dolts : ¶ and let  
Patient Octavia plough thy visage up  
With her prepared nails. [Exit CLEO.] 'Tis well  
thou'rt gone.

If it be well to live : But better 'twere  
Thou fell'st into my fury, for one death  
Might have prevented many.—Eros, ho !—  
The shirt of Nessus is upon me : Trach me,  
Alcides, ¶ thou mine ancestor, thy rage :  
Let me lodge Lichas \*\* on the horns o'the moon ;  
And with those hands, that grasp'd the heaviest  
club,

Subdue my worthiest self. The witch shall die ;  
To the Roman boy she hath sold me, and I fall  
Under this plot : she dies to't.—Eros, ho !

[Exit.]

\* Cleopatra first belonged to Julius Cesar, then to  
Antony, and now, as Antony supposes, to Augustus.  
† This majestic beauty. ‡ Called forth.  
§ A cheating game, at present named pricking at the  
belt. ¶ For the smallest piece of money to clowns.  
¶ Hercules. \*\* The boy that brought the  
poisoned shirt to Hercules.

# Scene XII. ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA.

73

SCENE XI.—*Alexandria.—A Room in the Palace.*

Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and MARDIAN.

Cleo. Help me, my women! Oh, he is more mad Than Telamon\* for his shield; the boar of Was never so emboss'd† [Thessaly Char. To the monument; There lock yourself, and send him word you are dead.

The soul and body rive‡ not more in parting, Than greatness going off.

Cleo. To the monument:—Mardian, go tell him I have slain myself; Say, that the last I spoke was, Antony; And word it, prythee, piteously: Hence, Mardian; and bring me how he takes my death.—To the monument. [Exit.

SCENE XII.—*The same.—Another Room.*

Enter ANTONY and EROS.

Ant. Eros, thou yet behold'st me?

Eros. Ay, noble lord.

Ant. Sometime, we see a cloud that's dragonish; A vapour, sometime, like a bear, or lion, A tower'd citadel, a pendant rock, A forked mountain, or blue promontory With trees upon't, that nod unto the world, And mock our eyes with air: Thou hast seen these signs;

They are black vesper's pageants.

Eros. Ay, my lord.

Ant. That, which is now a horse, even with a thought, The rack‡ dislimbs; and makes it indistinct, As water is in water.

Eros. It does, my lord.

Ant. My good knave,|| Eros, now thy captain I've such a body: here I am Antony; [is Yet cannot hold this visible shape, my knave. I made these wars for Egypt; and the queen,— Whose heart, I thought, I had, for she had mine—

(Which, whilst it was mine, had annex'd unto't A million more, now lost)—she, Eros, has Pock'd cards with Cesar and false play'd my Unto an enemy's triumph.— [glory Nay, weep not, gentle Eros; there is left us Ourselves to end ourselves.—Oh! thy vile lady!

Enter MARDIAN.

She has robb'd me of my sword.

Mar. No, Antony;

My mistress lov'd thee, and her fortunes mingled With thine entirely.

Ant. Hence, saucy eunuch; peace:

She hath betray'd me, and shall die the death.

Mar. Death of one person can be paid but once;

And that she has discharg'd: What thou would'st do,

Is done unto thy hand; the last she spake

Was, Antony! most noble Antony!

Then in the midst a tearing groan did break

The name of Antony, it was divided

Between her heart and lips: she render'd life,

Thy name so buried in her.

Ant. Dead then?

Mar. Dead.

Ant. Eros, unarm: the long day's task is done,

And we must sleep:—That thou depart'st hence

safe,

Does pay thy labour richly; Go.—Off, pluck

off;— [Exit MARDIAN.

The seven-fold shield of Ajax cannot keep

The battery from my heart. O cleave, my sides!

Heart, once be stronger than thy continent,\* Crack thy frail case!—Apace, Eros, apace. No more a soldier!—Bruised pieces, go: You have been nobly borne.—From me awhile.— [Exit Eros.

I will o'ertake thee, Cleopatra, and Weep for my pardon. So it must be, for now All length is torture:—Since the torch is out, Lie down, and stay no further: Now all labour Mars what it does; yea, very force entangles Itself with strength: Seal then,† and all is done.—

Eros!—I come, my queen:—Eros!—Stay for me Where souls do couch on flowers, we'll hand in hand,

And with our sprightly port make the ghosts gaze: Dido and her Aeneas shall want troops, And all the haunt be ours.—Come, Eros, Eros!

Re-enter EROS.

Eros. What would my lord?

Ant. Since Cleopatra died, I have liv'd in such dishonour, that the gods Detest my baseness. I, that with my sword Quarter'd the world, and o'er green Neptune's back

With ships made cities, condemn myself, to lack The courage of a woman; less noble mind Than she, which, by her death, our Cesar tells, I am conqueror of myself. Thou art sworn,

Eros, [now That, when the exigent should come, (which is come indeed) when I should see behind me The inevitable prosecution of Disgrace and horror, that, on my command, Thou then would'st kill me: do't; the time is come:

Thou strik'st not me, 'tis Cesar thou defeat'st.

Put colour in thy cheek.

Eros. The gods withhold me!

Shall I do that, which all the Parthian darts, Though enemy, lost aim and could not?

Ant. Eros, [see Would'st thou be window'd in great Rome, and Thy master thus be pleas'd; arms, bending down

His corrigible neck, his face subdued To penetrative shame; whilst the wheel'd seat Of fortunate Cesar, drawn before him, branded His baseness that ensued?

Eros. I would not see't.

Ant. Come then; for with a wound I must be cur'd.

Draw that thy honest sword, which thou hast worn Most useful for thy country.

Eros. O Sir! pardon me.

Ant. When I did make thee free, swor'st thou not then

To do this when I bade thee? Do it at once;

Or thy precedent services are all

But accidents unpurpos'd. Draw and come.

Eros. Turn from me then that noble countenance

Wherein the worship of the whole world lies.

Ant. Lo thee. [Turning from him.

Eros. My sword is drawn.

Ant. Then let it do at once

The thing why thou hast drawn it

Eros. My dear master,

My captain, and my emperor! let me say,

Before I strike this bloody stroke, farewell.

Ant. 'Tis said, man;—and farewell.

Eros. Farewell, great chief. Shall I strike

now?

Ant. Now, Eros.

Eros. Why, there then:—

[Falls on his Sword.

Thus do I escape the sorrow

Of Antony's death. [Dies.

Ant. Thrice nobler than myself!

Thou teachest me, O valiant Eros, what

\* Ajax Telamon for the shield of Achilles.

† Emboss, in hunting, is when the animal foams at the mouth.

‡ Split.

§ The track, or form, destroys.

|| Servant.

\* Than the body which contains thee

† A metaphor borrowed from civil contracts.

‡ Corrected.

Corroding.

† A metaphor

‡ Folio.

I should, and thou could'st not. My queen and Eros

Have, by their brave instruction, got upon me  
A nobleness in record; but I will be  
A bridegroom in my death, and run into't  
As to a lover's bed. Come then; and, Eros,  
Thy master dies thy scholar: to do thus

[Falling on his Sword.

I learn'd of thee. How! not yet dead? not dead?—

The guard!—ho!—Oh! I despatch me.

Enter DERCETAS and GUARD.

1 Guard. What's the noise?

Ant. I have done my work ill, friends; Oh! make an end  
Of what I have begun.

2 Guard. The star is fallen.

1 Guard. And time is at his period.

All. Alas, and woe!

Ant. Let him that loves me, strike me dead.

1 Guard. Not I.

2 Guard. Nor I.

3 Guard. Nor any one. [Exeunt GUARD.

Der. Thy death and fortunes bid thy followers fly.

This sword but shown to Cesar, with this tidings,  
Shall enter me with him.

Enter DIOMEDES.

Dio. Where's Antony?

Der. There, Diomed, there.

Dio. Lives he?

Wilt thou not answer, man? [Exit DERCETAS.

Ant. Art thou there, Diomed? Draw thy sword, and give me  
Sufficing strokes for death.

Dio. Most absolute lord,  
My mistress Cleopatra sent me to thee.

Ant. When did she send thee?

Dio. Now, my lord.

Ant. Where is she?

Dio. Lock'd in her monument. She had a prophesying fear  
Of what hath come pass; for when she saw  
(Which never should be found,) you did suspect  
She had dispos'd\* with Cesar, and that your rage

Would not be purg'd, she sent you word she was dead;

But, fearing since how it might work, hath sent me  
To proclaim the truth; and I am come,  
I dread, too late.

Ant. Too late, good Diomed:—Call my guard,  
I pray thee.

Dio. What, ho! the emperor's guard! The guard, what ho!

Come, your lord calls.

Enter some of the GUARD.

Ant. Bear me, good friends, where Cleopatra bides:

'Tis the last service that I shall command you.

1 Guard. Woe are we, Sir, you may not live to wear

All your true followers out.

All. Most heavy day!

Ant. Nay, good my fellows, do not please sharp fate

To grace it with your sorrows: bid that welcome  
Which comes to punish us, and we punish it  
Seeming to bear it lightly. Take me up:  
have led you off; carry me now, good friends,  
And have my thanks for all.

[Exeunt, bearing ANTONY.

SCENE XIII.—The same.—A Monument.

Enter above, CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, and IRAS.

Cleo. O Charmian, I will never go from hence.

Char. Be comforted, dear madam.

Cleo. No, I will not:

\* Made terms with

All strange and terrible events are welcome,  
But comforts we despise; our size of sorrow,  
Proportion'd to our cause, must be as great

Enter DIOMEDES.

As that which makes it.—How now? is he dead?

Dio. His death's upon him, but not dead.

Look out o'the other side your monument,  
His guard hath brought him thither.

Enter ANTONY, borne by the GUARD.

Cleo. O thou sun,  
Burn the great sphere thou mov'st in!—dark-  
ling\* stand

The varying shore o'the world!—O Antony!  
Antony, Antony!—Charmian, help; help, Iras:  
Help, friends below; let's draw him hither.

Ant. Peace:

Not Cesar's valour hath o'erthrown Antony,  
But Antony's hath triumphed on itself.

Cleo. So it should be, that none but Antony  
Should conquer Antony: but woe 'tis so!

Ant. I am dying, Egypt, dying; only

I here importune death a while, until

Of many thousand kisses the poor last

I lay upon thy lips.—

Cleo. I dare not, dear

(Dear my lord, pardon,) I dare not,  
Lest I be taken: not the imperious show  
Of the full-forc'd Cesar ever shall  
Be brooch'd† with me: it knife, drugs, ser-  
pents, have

Edge, stung, or operation, I am safe:

Your wife Octavia, with her modest eyes,

And still conclusion, shall acquire no honour  
Demurring upon me.—But come, come, An-  
tony,—

Help me, my women, we must draw thee up:—  
Assist, good friends.

Ant. O quick, or I am gone.

Cleo. Here's sport, indeed!—How heavy weighs  
my lord!

Our strength is all gone into heaviness,  
That makes the weight: Had I great Juno's  
power,

The strong-wing'd Mercury should fetch thee up,  
And set thee by Jove's side. Yet come a  
little,—

Wishers were ever fools;—O come, come, come,  
[They draw ANTONY up.

And welcome, welcome! die where thou hast  
liv'd:

Quicken with kissing; had my lips that power,

Thus would I wear them out.

All. A heavy sight!

Ant. I am dying, Egypt, dying:

Give me some wine, and let me speak a little.

Cleo. No, let me speak; and let me rail so  
high,

That the false housewife Fortune break her  
Provok'd by my offence. [wheel

Ant. One word, sweet queen:

Of Cesar seek your honour, with your safe-  
ty.—O!

Cleo. They do not go together.

Ant. Gentle, hear me:

None about Cesar trust, but Proculeius.

Cleo. My resolution, and my hands, I'll trust;  
None about Cesar.

Ant. The miserable change now at my end,  
Lament nor sorrow at: but please your thoughts,  
In feeding them with those my former fortunes  
Wherein I liv'd, the greatest prince o'the world,  
The noblest; and do now not basely die,  
Nor cowardly; put off my helmet to  
My countryman; a Roman, by a Roman,  
Valiantly vanquish'd. Now, my spirit is going;  
I can no more. [Dies.

Cleo. Noblest of men, woo't die?

Hast thou no care of me? shall I abide  
In this dull world, which in thy absence is  
No better than a sty?—O see, my women,  
The crown o'the earth doth melt:—My lord!—

\* Without light.

† Adorned.

Oh! wither'd is the garland of the war,  
The soldier's pole\* is fallen; young boys, and  
girls,  
Are level now with men: the odds is gone,  
And there is nothing left remarkable,  
Beneath the visiting moon. *[She faints.]*

*Char.* O quietness, lady!

*Iras.* She is dead too, our sovereign.

*Char.* Lady,—

*Iras.* Madam,—

*Char.* O madam, madam, madam!

*Iras.* Royal Egypt!  
Empress!

*Char.* Peace, peace, Iras.

*Cleo.* No more, but e'en a woman; and com-  
manded

By such poor passion as the maid that milks,  
And does the meanest chares.†—It were for me  
To throw my sceptre at the injurious gods;  
To tell them, that this world did equal theirs,  
Till they had stolen our jewel. All's but naught;  
Patience is scottish; and impatience does  
Become a dog that's mad: Then, is it sin,  
To rush into the secret house of death,  
Ere death dare come to us?—How do you,  
women?

What, what? good cheer? Why, how now,  
Charman?

My noble girls!—Ah, women, women! look,  
Our lamp is spent, it's out:—Good Sirs, take  
heart:—

*[To the GUARD below.]*  
We'll bury him: and then, what's brave, what's  
noble,

Let's do it after the high Roman fashion,  
And make death proud to take us. Come, away:  
This case of that huge spirit now is cold.  
Ah, women, women! come; we have no friend  
But resolution, and the briefest end.

*[Exeunt: those above bearing off ANTONY's  
Body.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*Cleopatra's Camp before Alexandria.*

*Enter* CESAR, AGRIPPA, DOLABELLA, MECENAS, GALLUS, PROCULEIUS, and others.

*Ces.* Go to him, Dolabella, bid him yield;  
Bring so frustrate,† tell him, he mocks us by  
The pauses that he makes.

*Dol.* Cesar, I shall.

*[Exit DOLABELLA.]*

*Enter* DERCETAS, with the sword of ANTONY.

*Ces.* Wherefore is that? and what art thou,  
that dar'st

Appear thus § to us?

*Der.* I am call'd Dercetas: he  
Mark Antony I serv'd, who best was worthy  
Best to be serv'd: whilst he stood up and spoke,  
He was my master; and I wore my life,  
To spend upon his haters: If thou please  
To take me to thee, as I was to him  
I'll be to Cesar; if thou pleasest not,  
I yield thee up my life.

*Ces.* What is't thou say'st?

*Der.* I say, O Cesar, Antony is dead.

*Ces.* The breaking of so great a thing should  
make *[shook]*

A greater crack: The round world should have  
Lions into civil streets,  
And citizens to their dens:—The death of Antony  
Is not a single doom; in the name lay  
A moiety of the world.

*Der.* He is dead, Cesar;  
Not by a public minister of justice,  
Nor by a hired knife: but that self hand,  
Which writ his honour in the acts it did,

Hath, with the courage which the heart did  
lend it,

Split the heart.—This is his sword,  
I robb'd his wound of it: behold it stain'd  
With his most noble blood.

*Ces.* Look you sad, friends?

The gods rebuke me, but it is a tidings  
To wash the eyes of kings.

*Agr.* And strange it is,  
That nature must compel us to lament  
Our most persisted deeds.

*Mec.* His taints and honours  
Waged equal with him.

*Agr.* A rarer spirit never

Did steer humanity: but you, gods, will give us  
Some faults to make us men. Cesar is touch'd.

*Mec.* When such a spacious mirror's set be-  
fore him,

He needs must see himself.

*Ces.* O Antony!

I have follow'd thee to this:—But we do lance  
Diseases in our bodies: I must perforce  
Have shown to thee such a declining day,  
Or look on thine; we could not stall together  
In the whole world: But yet let me lament,  
With tears as sovereign as the blood of hearts,  
That thou, my brother, my competitor  
In top of all design, my mate in empire,  
Friend and companion in the front of war,  
The arm of mine own body, and the heart  
Where mine his\* thoughts did kindle,—that  
our stars,  
Unreconcilable, should divide  
Our equalness to this.—Hear me, good friends,—  
But I will tell you at some meetest season;

## Enter a MESSENGER.

The business of this man looks out of him,  
We'll hear him what he says.—Whence are you?

*Mess.* A poor Egyptian yet. The queen my  
mistress,  
Mistress in all she has, her monument,  
Of thy intents desires instruction:  
That she preparedly may frame herself  
To the way she's forced to.

*Ces.* Bid her have good heart;  
She soon shall know of us, by some of ours,  
How honourable and how kindly we  
Determine for her: for Cesar cannot live  
To be ungentle.

*Mess.* So the gods preserve thee! *[Exit.]*

*Ces.* Come hither, Proculeius: Go, and say  
We purpose her no shame: give her what com-  
forts

The quality of her passion shall require;  
Lest, in her greatness, by some mortal stroke  
She do defeat us; for her life in Rome,  
Would be eternal in our triumph: Go,  
And, with your speediest, bring us what she says,  
And how you find of her.

*Pro.* Cesar I shall.

*[Exit PROCULEIUS]*

*Ces.* Gallus, go you along.—Where's Dola-  
bella,

To second Proculeius?

*[Exit GALLUS.]*

*Agr. Mec.* Dolabella!  
*Ces.* Let him alone, for I remember now  
How he's employed: he shall in time be ready.  
Go with me to my tent, where you shall see  
How hardly I was drawn into this war;  
How calm and gentle I proceeded still  
In all my writings: Go with me, and see  
What I can show in this.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—*Alexandria.—A Room in the Monument.*

*Enter* CLEOPATRA, CHARMAN, and IRAS.

*Cleo.* My desolation does begin to make  
A better life: 'Tis paltry to be Cesar;  
Not being fortune, he's but fortune's knave,†

\* The soldier's object of admiration. † Task-work.  
‡ Frustrated. § With Antony's bloody sword.

\* Ita.

† Servant.

A minister of her will; And it is great  
To do that thing that ends all other deeds;  
Which shackles accidents, and bolts up change;  
Which sleeps, and never palates more the dung,  
The beggar's nurse and Cesar's.

*Enter, to the Gates of the Monument, PROCULEIUS, GALLUS, and Soldiers.*

*Pro.* Cesar sends greeting to the queen of Egypt;

And bids thee study on what fair demands  
Thou mean'st to have him grant thee.

*Cleo.* [Within.] What's thy name?

*Pro.* My name is Proculeius.

*Cleo.* [Within.] Antony

Did tell me of you, bade me trust you; but  
I do not greatly care to be deceiv'd,  
That have no use for trusting. If your master  
Would have a queen his beggar, you must tell him,  
That majesty, to keep decorum, must  
No less beg than a kingdom: if he please  
To give me conquer'd Egypt for my son,  
He gives me so much of mine own, as I  
Will kneel to him with thanks.

*Pro.* Be of good cheer:

You are fallen into a princely hand; fear nothing;

Make your full reference freely to my lord,  
Who is so full of grace, that it flows over  
On all that need: Let me report to him  
Your sweet dependancy; and you shall find  
A conqueror, that will pray in aid for kindness,  
Where he for grace is kneel'd to.

*Cleo.* [Within.] Pray you, tell him

I am his fortune's vassal, and I send him  
The greatness he has got. \* I hourly learn  
A doctrine of obedience, and would gladly  
Look him i' the face.

*Pro.* This I'll report, dear lady.

Have comfort: for I know your plight is pitied  
Of him that caus'd it.

*Gal.* You see how easily she may be surpriz'd;

[Here PROCULEIUS, and two of the Guard, ascend the Monument by a Ladder placed against a Window, and having descended, come behind CLEOPATRA. Some of the Guard unbar and open the Gates.]

Guard her till Cesar come.

[To PROCULEIUS and the Guard. Exit. GALLUS.]

*Jras.* Royal queen!

*Char.* O Cleopatra! thou art taken, queen!

*Cleo.* Quick, quick, good hands.

[Drawing a Dagger.]

*Pro.* Hold, worthy lady, hold:

[Seizes and disarms her.]

Do not yourself such wrong, who are in this  
Reliev'd, not but betray'd.

*Cleo.* What, of death too?

That rides our dogs of languish?

*Pro.* Cleopatra,

Do not abuse my master's bounty, by  
The undoing of yourself: let the world see  
His nobleness well acted, which your death  
Will never let come forth.

*Cleo.* Where art thou, death?

Come hither, come I come, come, and take a queen  
Worth many babes and beggars!

*Pro.* O temperance, lady!

*Cleo.* Sir, I will eat no meat, I'll not drink,  
If idle talk will only be necessary, [Sir]  
I'll not sleep neither: This mortal house I'll  
ruin,

Do Cesar what he can. Know, Sir, that I  
Will not wait pinion'd † at your master's court;  
Nor once be chastis'd with the sober eye  
Of dull Octavia. Shall they hoist me up,  
And show me to the shouting varletry?  
Of censuring Rome? Rather a ditch in Egypt  
Be gentle grave to me! rather on Nilus' mud  
Lay me stark naked, and let the water-flies

\* The crown which he has won  
‡ Rattle.

† In bonds.

Bow me into abhorring! rather make  
My country's high pyramids my gibbet,  
And hang me up in chains!

*Pro.* You do extend  
These thoughts of horror further than you shall  
Find cause in Cesar.

*Enter DOLABELLA.*

*Dol.* Proculeius,  
What thou hast done thy master Cesar knows,  
And he hath sent for thee: as for the queen,  
I'll take her to my guard.

*Pro.* So, Dolabella,  
It shall content me best: be gentle to her.—  
To Cesar I will speak what you shall please.

[To CLEOPATRA.]

If you'll employ me to him.

*Cleo.* Say, I would die.

[Exit PROCULEIUS, and Soldiers.]

*Dol.* Most noble empress, you have heard of me?

*Cleo.* I cannot tell.

*Dol.* Assuredly, you know me.

*Cleo.* No matter, Sir, what I have heard, or known.

You laugh, when boys, or women, tell their dreams;

Is't not your trick?

*Dol.* I understand not, madam.

*Cleo.* I dream'd, there was an emperor Antony;

Oh! such another sleep, that I might see

But such another man!

*Dol.* If it might please you,—

*Cleo.* His face was as the heavens; and therein stuck

A sun and moon; which kept their course, and lighted

The little O, the earth.

*Dol.* Most sovereign creature,—

*Cleo.* His legs bestrid the ocean: his rear'd arm

Crested the world: his voice was propertied  
As all the tuned spheres, and that to friends;

But when he meant to quarrel and shake the orb,

He was as rattling thunder. For his bounty,  
There was no winter in't; an autumn 'twas,

That grew the more by reaping: His delights  
Were dolphin-like; they show'd his back above

The element they liv'd in: in his livery  
Walk'd crowns and crownets; realms and islands

were

As plates † dropp'd from his pocket.

*Dol.* Cleopatra,—

*Cleo.* Think you there was, or might be, such a man

As this I dream'd of?

*Dol.* Gentle madam, no.

*Cleo.* You lie, up to the hearing of the gods.

But, if there be, or ever were one such,  
It's past the size of dreaming: Nature wants

stuff [Cue]  
To vie strange forms with fancy; yet, to imitate  
An Antony, were nature's piece 'gainst fancy,  
Condemning shadows quite.

*Dol.* Hear me, good madam:

Your loss is as yourself, great; and you bear it  
As answering to the weight: 'Would I might

never

O'ertake pursu'd success, but I do feel,  
By the rebound of yours, a grief that shoots

My very heart at root.

*Cleo.* I thank you, Sir

Know you what Cesar means to do with me?

*Dol.* I am loath to tell you what I would you knew.

*Cleo.* Nay, pray you, Sir,—

*Dol.* Though he be honourable,—

*Cleo.* He'll lead me then in triumph?

*Dol.* Madam, he will:

I know it.

*Within.* Make way there,—Cesar.

\* Crush.

† Silver money.

Scene II.

ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA.

77

Enter CESAR, GALLUS, PROCULEIUS, MECÆNAS, SELVUS, and Attendants.

Ces. Which is the queen Of Egypt?

Dol. 'Tis the emperor, madam. [CLEOPATRA kneels.]

Ces. Arise : You shall not kneel : — I pray you, rise : rise, Egypt. [Cleo. Sir, the gods Will have it thus ; my master and my lord I must obey.]

Ces. Take to you no hard thoughts : The record of what injuries you did us, Though written in our flesh, we shall remember as things but done by chance.

Cleo. Sole Sir o'the world, I cannot project \* mine own cause so well To make it clear ; but to confess, I have Been laden with like fruitless, which before Have often sham'd our sex.

Ces. Cleopatra, know, We will extenuate rather than enforce : If you apply yourself to our intents, (Which towards you are most gentle,) you shall find

A benefit in this change : but if you seek To lay on me a cruelty, by taking Antony's course, you shall bereave yourself Of my good purposes, and put your children To that destruction which I'll guard them from, If thereon you rely. I'll take my leave.

Cleo. And may, through all the world : 'tis yours : and we Your 'scutcheons, and your signs of conquest, shall

Hang in what place you please. Here, my good

Ces. You shall advise me in all for Cleopatra. Cleo. This is the brief of money, plate, and jewels,

I am possess'd of : 'tis exactly valued ; Not petty things admitted.—Where's Seleucus ?

Scel. Here, madam.

Cleo. This is my treasurer : let him speak, my lord,

Upon his peril, that I have reserv'd To myself nothing. Speak the truth, Seleucus.

Scel. Madam, I had rather seal † my lips, than, to my peril, Speak that which is not.

Cleo. What have I kept back ?

Scel. Enough to purchase what you have made known.

Ces. Nay, blush not, Cleopatra ; I approve Your wisdom in the deed.

Cleo. See, Cesar ! O behold

How pomp is follow'd ! mine will now be yours ; And, should we shift estates, yours would be mine.

The ingratitude of this Seleucus does Even make me wild :—O slave, of no more trust Than love that's hid !—What, goest thou back ?—thou shalt

Go back, I warrant thee ; but I'll catch thine eyes, Though they had wings : Slave, soulless villain, dog !

O rarely ‡ base !

Ces. Good queen, let us entreat you.

Cleo. O Cesar, what a wounding shame is this ;

That thou, vouchsafing here to visit me, Doing the honour of thy lordliness To one so meek, that mine own servant should Parcel § the sum of my disgraces by Addition of his envy ! Say, good Cesar, That I some lady trifles have reserv'd, Immoment toys, things of such dignity As we greet modern ¶ friends withal ; and say, Some nobler token I have kept apart For Livia ¶ and Octavia, \*\* to induce Their mediation ; must I be unfolded

With one that I have bred ? The gods ! It smites me

Beneath the fall I have. Pr'ythee, go hence ; [To SELEUCUS.]

Or I shall show the cinders of my spirits Through the ashes of my chance :—Wert thou a man,

Thou would'st have mercy on me.

Ces. Forbear, Seleucus. [Exit SELEUCUS.]

Cleo. Be it known, that we, the greatest, are misthought

For things that others do ; and, when we fall, We answer others' merits \* in our names, Are therefore to be pitied.

Ces. Cleopatra, Not what you have reserv'd, nor what acknowledg'd,

Put we i'the roll of conquest : still be it yours, Bestow it at your pleasure, and believe, Cesar's no merchant, to make prize with you Of things that merchants sold. Therefore be cheer'd ;

Make not your thoughts your prisons : no, dear queen ;

For we intend so to dispose you, as Yourself shall give us counsel. Feed, and sleep : Our care and pity is so much upon you, That we remain your friend ; And so adieu.

Cleo. My master, and my lord !

Ces. Not so : Adieu.

[Exit CESAR, and his Train.] Cleo. He woids me, girls, he woids me, that I should not

Be noble to myself : but hark thee, Charmian.

[Hisping CHARMIAN.] Iras. Finish, good lady : the bright day is done And we are for the dark.

Cleo. Hie thee again :

I have spoke already, and it is provided ;

Go, put it to the haste.

Char. Madam, I will.

Re-enter DOLABELLA.

Dol. Where is the queen ?

Char. Behold, Sir.

Cleo. Dolabella ? [Exit CHARMIAN.]

Dol. Madam, as thereto sworn by your command,

Which my love makes religion to obey, I tell you this : Cesar through Syria Intends his journey : and, within three days, You with your children will be send before : Make your best use of this : I have perform'd Your pleasure, and my promise.

Cleo. Dolabella, I shall remain your debtor.

Dol. I your servant.

Adieu, good queen ; I must attend on Cesar. Cleo. Farewell, and thanks.

[Exit DOLABELLA.] Now, Iras, what think'st thou ?

Thou, an Egyptian puppet, shalt be shown In Rome, as well as I : mechanic slaves, With greasy aprons, rules, and hammers, shall Uplift us to the view ; in their thick breaths, Rank of gross diet, shall we be enclouded, And forc'd to drink their vapour.

Iras. The gods forbid !

Cleo. Nay, 'tis most certain, Iras : Saucy lictors †

Will catch at us, like strumpets ‡ and scold ; rhyme Ballad us out o'tune : the quick comedians Extemporally will stage us, and present Our Alexandrian revels : Antony Shall be brought drunken forth, and I shall see Some squeaking Cleopatra boy § my greatness I'the posture of a whore.

Iras. O the good gods !

Cleo. Nay, that is certain.

\* State. † Sew up. ‡ Uncommonly.  
§ Add to. ¶ Common. § Female characters  
¶ Cesar's wife and \*\* Sister

\* Merits or demerits. † Beadles.  
‡ A term of contempt. § Female characters  
wore played by boys.

*Iras.* I'll never for it; for, I am sure, my nails  
Are stronger than mine eyes.

*Cleo.* Why that's the way  
To fool their preparation, and to conquer  
Their most absurd intents.—Now, Charmian!—

*Enter CHARMIAN.*

Show me, my women, like a queen;—Go fetch  
My best attires;—I am again for Cydnus,  
To meet Mark Antony:—Sirrah, *Iras*, go.—  
Now, noble Charmian, we'll despatch indeed:  
Aud, when thou hast done this chare, I'll give  
thee leave  
To play till doomsday.—Bring our crown and all.  
Wherefore's this noise?

*[Exit IRAS. A Noise within.]*

*Enter one of the GUARD.*

*Guard.* Here is a rural fellow,  
That will not be denied your highness' pre-  
sence:  
He brings you figs.

*Cleo.* Let him come in. How poor an instru-  
ment *[Exit GUARD.]*  
May do a noble deed! he brings me liberty.  
My resolution's plac'd, and I have nothing  
Of woman in me: Now from head to foot  
I am marble-constant: now the fleeting moon  
No planet is of mine.

*Re-enter GUARD, with a CLOWN bringing a Basket.*

*Guard.* This is the man.

*Cleo.* Avoid, and leave him.

*[Exit GUARD.]*

Hast thou the pretty worm\* of Nilus there,  
That kills and pains not?

*Crown.* Truly I have him: but I would not be  
the party that should desire you to touch him,  
for his biting is immortal: those that do die of  
it, do seldom or never recover.

*Cleo.* Remembers't thou any that have died  
on't?

*Crown.* Very many, men and women too. I  
heard of one of them no longer than yesterday—  
a very honest woman, but something given to  
lie as a woman should not do, but in the way  
of honesty—how she died of the biting of it,  
what pain she felt,—Truly, she makes a very  
good report o'the worm: But he that will be-  
lieve all that they say, shall never be saved by  
half that they do: But this is most fallible, the  
worm's an odd worm.

*Cleo.* Get thee hence: farewell.

*Crown.* I wish you all joy of the worm.

*Cleo.* Farewell.

*[CLOWN sets down the Basket.]*

*Crown.* You must think this, look you, that  
the worm will do his kind.†

*Cleo.* Ay, ay; farewell.

*Crown.* Look you, the worm is not to be  
trusted, but in the keeping of wise people; for,  
indeed, there is no goodness in the worm.

*Cleo.* Take thou no care: it shall be heeded.

*Crown.* Very good: give it nothing, I pray  
you, for it is not worth the feeding.

*Cleo.* Will it eat me?

*Crown.* You must not think I am so simple,  
but I know the devil himself will not eat a  
woman: I know that a woman is a dish for the  
gods, if the devil dress her not. But, truly,  
these same whoreson devils do the gods great  
harm in their women; for in every ten that they  
make, the devils mar five.

*Cleo.* Well, get thee gone: farewell.

*Crown.* Yes, forsooth; I wish you joy of the  
worm. *[Exit.]*

*Re-enter IRAS, with a Robe, Crown, &c.*

*Cleo.* Give me my robe, put on my crown; I  
have

\* Serpent.

† Act according to his nature.

Immortal longings in me: Now no more  
The juice of Egypt's grape shall moist this  
lip:—

Yare, yare,\* good *Iras*; quick.—Methinks, I  
hear

Antony call; I see him rouse himself  
To praise my noble act; I hear him mock  
The luck of Cesar, which the gods give men  
To excuse their after wrath: Husband, I come:  
Now to that name my courage prove my title!  
I am fire, and air; my other elements  
I give to base life.—So,—have you done?  
Come then, and take the last warmth of my  
lips.

Farewell, kind Charmian;—*Iras*, long farewell.

*[Kisses them. IRAS falls and dies.]*

Have I the aspic in my lips?† Dost fall?  
If thou and nature can so gently part,  
The stroke of death is as a lover's pinch,  
Which hurts and is desir'd. Dost thou lie still?  
If thus thou vanishest, thou tell'st the world  
It is not worth leave-taking.

*Char.* Dissolve, thick cloud and rain; that I  
may say

The gods themselves do weep!

*Cleo.* This proves me base:

If she first meet the curd Antony,  
He'll make demand of her; and spend that  
kiss,

Which is my heaven to have. Come, mortal!  
wretch,

*[To the Asp, which she applies to her Breast.]*

With thy sharp teeth this knot intrinsicate  
Of life at once untie: poor venomous fool,  
Be angry, and despatch. O! could'st thou  
speak!

That I might hear thee call great Cesar, Ass

Unpolitic!‡

*Char.* O eastern star!

*Cleo.* Peace, peace!

Dost thou not see my baby at my breast,

That sucks the nurse asleep?

*Char.* O break! O break!

*Cleo.* As sweet as balin, is soft as air, as  
gentle,—

O Antony!—Nay, I will take thee too:—

*[Applying another Asp to her Arm.]*

What should I stay—

*[Falls on a Bed and Dies]*  
*Char.* In this wild world?—So fare thee  
well,—

Now boast thee, death! in thy possession lies  
A lass unparallel'd.—Downy windows, close;  
And golden Phœbus never be beheld  
Of eyes again so royal! Your crown's awry;  
I'll mend it, and then play.‖

*Enter the GUARD, rushing in.*

1 *Guard.* Where is the queen?

*Char.* Speak softly, wake her not.

1 *Guard.* Cesar hath sent—

*Char.* Too slow a messenger.

*[Applies the Asp]*  
O come; apace, despatch: I partly feel thee.

1 *Guard.* Approach, ho! All's not well: Ce-  
sar's bequill'd.

2 *Guard.* There's Dolabella sent from Ce-  
sar:—call him.

1 *Guard.* What work is here?—Charmian, is  
this well done?

*Char.* It is well done, and fitting for a prin-  
cess

Descended of so many royal kings.

Ah, soldier!

*[Dies.]*

*Enter DOLABELLA.*

*Dol.* How goes it here?

2 *Guard.* All dead.

\* Make haste.

† Are my lips already poisoned by the aspic?

‡ An ass without common policy, thus to leave me to myself.

‖ Play my part in this tragedy.

*Dol.* Cesar, thy thoughts  
Touch their effects in this : Thyself art coming  
To see perform'd the dreaded act, which thou  
So sought'st to hinder.

*Within.* A way there, way for Cesar !

*Enter CESAR, and Attendants.*

*Dol.* O Sir, you are too sure an angurer ;  
That you did fear, is done.

*Ces.* Bravest at the last :  
She levell'd at our purposes, and, being royal,  
Took her own way.—The manner of their deaths ?  
I do not see them bleed.

*Dol.* Who was last with them ?

*1 Guard.* A simple countryman, that brought  
her figs :

This was his basket.

*Ces.* Poison'd then.

*1 Guard.* O Cesar,  
This Charinian lived but now ; she stood, and  
spoke :

I found her trimming up the diadem  
On her dead mistress ; tremblingly she stood,  
And on the sudden dropp'd.

*Ces.* O noble weakness !—

If they had swallow'd poison, 'twould appear  
By external swelling ; but she looks like sleep,

As she would catch another Antony  
In her strong toil of grace.

*Dol.* Here, on her breast,  
There is a vent of blood, and something blown, \*  
The like is on her arm.

*1 Guard.* This is an aspic's trail : and these  
fig-leaves

Have slime upon them, such as the aspic leaves  
Upon the caves of Nile.

*Ces.* Most probable,  
That so she died ; for her physician tells me,  
She had pursu'd conclusions † infinite  
Of easy ways to die.—Take up her bed ;  
And bear her women from the monument :—  
She shall be buried by her Antony :  
No grave upon the earth shall clip ‡ in it  
A pair so famous. High events as these  
Strike those that make them, and their story is  
No less in pity, than his glory, which  
Brought them to be lamented. Our army shall,  
In solemn show, attend the funeral ;  
And then to Rome.—Come, Dolabella, see  
High order in this great solemnity.

[*Exeunt*]

\* Some part of the flesh puff'd.

† Tried experiments. ‡ Enfeld.



# TITUS ANDRONICUS.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

AS it is intended, in the present collection of Shakspeare's Dramatic Works, to present in regular succession all such as have the scenery, characters, or manners, drawn from the same country, the sanguinary and disgusting Tragedy of Titus Andronicus is placed in immediate sequence to those that are essentially of Roman origin. The events, however, are not of historical occurrence, but were probably borrowed from an old ballad entered on the books of the Stationers' Company in the year 1593, about which period it may also have been written. Its identity, however, as one of Shakspeare's productions, rests on a very doubtful foundation. Dr. Percy supposes it only to have been corrected and re-touched by him; but, says Dr. Johnson, "I do not find his touches very discernible." It is devoid of any striking sentiment—it has none of the philosophic stateliness which generally distinguishes his plays—the anachronisms are gross—the language throughout is as tumid and laboured as the plot is horrid and unnatural;—and the only approach to energy discernible in the play, occurs in the scene between Aaron, the nurse, and Demetrius. Indeed, there is internal evidence enough (in the versification, the character of the composition, the total difference of conduct, language, and sentiment, and also in its resemblance to several dramas of much more ancient date) to prove, with irresistible force, that it has been erroneously ascribed to Shakspeare. Dr. Johnson says, "All the editors and critics agree with Mr. Theobald in supposing this play spurious. I see no reason for differing from them, for the colour of the style is wholly different from that of the other play, and there is an attempt at regular versification and artificial closes, not always inelegant, yet seldom pleasing. The barbarity of the spectacle, and the general massacre which are here exhibited, can scarcely be conceived tolerable to any audience, yet we are told by Jonson, that they were not only borne but applauded. That Shakspeare wrote any part, though Theobald declares it *incontestible*, I see no reason for believing."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

SATURNINUS, <i>Son to the late Emperor of Rome, and afterwards declared Emperor himself.</i>	ÆMILIUS, <i>a noble Roman.</i>
BASSIANUS, <i>Brother to Saturninus: in love with Lavinia.</i>	ALARBUS, } <i>Sons to Tamora.</i>
TITUS ANDRONICUS, <i>a noble Roman, General against the Goths.</i>	CHIRON, }
MARCUS ANDRONICUS, <i>Tribune of the People; and Brother to Titus.</i>	DEMETRIUS, }
LUCIUS, } <i>Sons to Titus Andronicus.</i>	AARON, <i>a Moor, beloved by Tamora.</i>
QUINTUS, }	A CAPTAIN, TRIBUNE, MESSENGER, and CLOWN;
MARTIUS, }	<i>Romans.</i>
MUTIUS, }	<i>Goths and Romans.</i>
YOUNG LUCIUS, <i>a Boy, Son to Lucius.</i>	TAMORA, <i>Queen of the Goths.</i>
PUBLIUS, <i>Son to Marcus the Tribune.</i>	LAVINIA, <i>Daughter to Titus Andronicus</i>
	A NURSE, and A BLACK CHILD
	<i>Kinsmen of Titus, Senators, Tribunes, Officers, Soldiers, and Attendants.</i>

SCENE: Rome, and the Country near it.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—Rome—Before the Capitol.

*The tomb of the ANDRONICI appearing; the TRIBUNES and SENATORS aloft, as in the Senate. Enter, below, SATURNINUS and his Followers, on one side; and BASSIANUS and his Followers on the other; with Drum and Colours.*

*Sat.* Noble patricians, patrons of my right,  
Defend the justice of my cause with arms;  
And, countrymen, my loving followers,  
Plead my successive title \* with your swords:  
I am his first-born son, that was the last  
That wore the imperial diadem of Rome,  
Then let my father's honours live in me,  
Nor wrong mine age with this indignity.

*Bas.* Romans,—friends, followers, favourers of  
of my right,—  
If ever Bassianus, Cesar's son,  
Were gracious in the eyes of royal Rome,

\* My title to the succession.

Keep then this passage to the Capitol:  
And suffer not dishonour to approach  
The imperial seat, to virtue consecrate,  
To justice, continence, and nobility:  
But let desert in pure election shine;  
And, Romans, fight for freedom in your choice.

*Enter MARCUS ANDRONICUS, aloft, with the Crown.*

*Mar.* Princes, that strive by factions and by  
friends,  
Ambitiously for rule and empery,—  
Know, that the people of Rome, for whom we  
stand

A special party, have, by their common voice,  
In election for the Roman empery,  
Chosen Andronicus, surnamed Pius  
For many good and great deserts to Rome;  
A nobler man, a braver warrior,  
Lives not this day within the city walls:  
He by the senate is accented \* home,  
From weary wars against the barbarous Goths,

\* Summured.

That, with his sons, a terror to our foes,  
Hath yok'd a nation strong, train'd up in arms.  
Ten years are spent, since first he undertook  
This cause of Rome, and chastised with aims  
Our enemies' pride: Five times he hath return'd  
Bleeding to Rome, bearing his valiant sons  
In cohorts from the field;  
And now, at last, laden with honour's spoils,  
Returns the good Andronicus to Rome,  
Renowned Titus, flourishing in arms.  
Let us entreat,—By honour of his name,  
Whom, worthily, you would have now succeed,  
And in the Capitol and senate's right.  
Whom you pretend to honour and adore,—  
That you withdraw you, and abate your strength:  
Dismiss your followers, and, as suitors should,  
Plead your deserts in peace and humbleness.

*Sat.* How fair the tribune speaks to calm my thoughts!

*Bac.* Marcus Andronicus, so I do affy •  
In thy uprightness and integrity,  
And so I love and honour thee and thine,  
Thy nobler brother Titus, and his sons,  
And he, to whom my thoughts are humbled all,  
Gracious Lavinia, Rome's rich ornament,  
That I will here dismiss my loving friends,  
And to my fortunes, and the people's favour,  
Commit my cause in balance to be weigh'd.

*[Exeunt the Followers of Bassianus.]*  
*Sat.* Friends, that have been thus forward in my right,  
I thank you all, and here dismiss you all;  
And to the love and favour of my country  
Commit myself, my person, and my cause.

*[Exeunt the Followers of Saturninus.]*  
Rome, be as just and gracious unto me,  
As I am confident and kind to thee.—  
Open the gates, and let me in.

*Bac.* Tribunes! and me, a poor competitor.  
*[Sca. and Bas. go into the Capitol, and exeunt with Senators, Marcus, &c.]*

## SCENE II.—The same.

*Enter a Captain, and others.*

*Cap.* Romans, make way!—The good Andronicus,

Father of virtue, Rome's best champion,  
Successful in the battles that he fights,  
With honour and with fortune is return'd,  
From where he circumscribed with his sword,  
And brought to yoke, the enemies of Rome.

*Flourish of Trumpets, &c. Enter Mutius and Marius: after them, two Men bearing a Coffin covered with black; then Quintus and Lucius. After them, Titus Andronicus; and then Tamora, with Alarbus, Chiron, Demetrius, Aaron, and other Goths, prisoners. Soldiers and People following. The Bearers set down the Coffin, and Titus speaks.*

*Tit.* Hail, Rome, victorious in thy mourning weeds!  
Lo, as the bark that hath discharged her fraught,†  
Returns with precious lading to the bay,  
From whence at first she weigh'd her anchorage,  
Cometh Andronicus, bound with laurel boughs,  
To re-salute his country with his tears;  
Tears of true joy for his return to Rome.—  
Thou great defender of this Capitol,‡  
Stand gracious to the rights that we intend!—  
Romans, of five and twenty valiant sons,  
Half of the number that king Priam had,  
Behold the poor remains, alive, and dead!  
These, that survive, let Rome reward with love:  
These, that I bring unto their latest home,  
With burial amongst their ancestors:  
Here Goths have given me leave to sleath my sword.

True, unkind, and careless of thine own,  
Why suffer'st thou thy sons, unburied yet,

To hover on the dreadful shore of Styx?—  
Make way to lay them by their brethren.

*[The Tomb is opened.]*  
There greet in silence, as the dead are wont,  
And sleep in peace, slain in your country's waist  
O sacred receptacle of my joys,  
Sweet cell of virtue and nobility,  
How many sons of mine hast thou in store,  
That thou wilt never render to me more!

*Luc.* Give us the proudest prisoner of the Goths,

That we may hew his limbs, and, on a pile  
*Ad manes fratrum* sacrifice his flesh,  
Before this earthly prison of their bones:  
That so the shadows be not unappeas'd.  
Nor we disturb'd with prodigies on earth.\*

*Tit.* I give him you; the noblest that survives,  
The eldest son of this distressed queen.

*Tam.* Stay, Roman brethren—Gracious conqueror,

Victorious Titus, rue the tears I shed,  
A mother's tears in passion for her son:  
And, if thy sons were ever dear to thee,  
Oh! think my son to be as dear to me.  
Sufficeth not, that we are brought to Rome  
To beautify thy triumphs, and return,  
Captives to thee, and to thy Roman yoke;  
But must my sons be slaughter'd in the streets,  
For valiant doings in their country's cause?  
Oh! if to fight for king and common weal  
Were piety in thine, it is in these.

Andronicus, stain not thy tomb with blood:  
Wilt thou draw near the nature of the gods,  
Draw near their then in being merciful:  
Sweet meicy is nobility's true badge—

Thrice-noble Titus, spare my first-born son.

*Tit.* Patient yourself, madam, and pardon me.  
These are their brethren, whom you Goths be-  
held

Alive and dead; and, for their brethren slain,  
Religiously they ask a sacrifice:  
To this your son is mark'd; and die he must,  
To appease their groaning shadows that are gone.

*Luc.* Away with him! and make a fire straight:

And with your swords, upon a pile of wood,  
Let's hew his limbs, till they be clean consum'd.

*Exeunt Lucius, Quintus, Marius, and Mutius, with Alarbus.*

*Tam.* O cruel, unreligious piety!

*Chi.* Was ever Scythia half so barbarous?

*Dem.* Oppose not Scythia to ambitious Rome:  
Alarbus goes to rest; and we survive

To tremble under Titus' threatening look.  
Then, madam, stand resolv'd: but hope withal,

The self-same gods, that arm'd the queen of Troy  
With opportunity of sharp revenge

Upon the Thracian tyrant in his tent,  
May favour Tamora, the queen of Goth,

(When Goths were Goths, and Tamora was queen.)

To quit the bloody wrongs upon her foes.

*Re-enter Lucius, Quintus, Marius, and Mutius, with their Swords bloody.*

*Luc.* See, lord and father, how we have perform'd.

Our Roman rites: Alarbus' limbs are lopp'd  
And entrails feed the sacrificing fire,  
Whose smoke, like incense, doth perfume the sky.  
Remaineth nought, but to inter our brethren,  
And with loud flarums welcome them to Rome.

*Tit.* Let it be so, and let Andronicus

Make this his latest farewell to his sons:

*[Trumpets sounded, and the Coffins laid in the Tomb.]*

In peace and honour rest you here, my sons.  
Rome's readiest champions, repose you here,  
Secure from worldly chances and mishaps!  
Here lurks no treason, here no envy swells,  
Here grow no damned grudges here are no storms.

• Confide. † Freight.  
‡ Jupiter, to whom the Capitol was sacred.

\* It was supposed that the ghosts of unburied people appeared to solicit the rights of funeral.

No noise : but silence and eternal sleep :

*Enter LAVINIA.*

In peace and honour rest you here, my sons !

*Lav.* In peace and honour live lord Titus long ;

My noble lord and father, live in fame !

Lo ! at this tomb my tributary tears

I render, for my brethren's obsequies ;

And at thy feet I kneel, with tears of joy

Shed on the earth, for thy return to Rome :

O bless me here with thy victorious hand,

Whose fortunes Rome's best citizens applaud.

*Tit.* Kind Rome, that hast thus lovingly re-

serv'd

The cordial of mine age to glad my heart !—

Lavinia, live ; outlive thy father's days,

And fame's eternal date, for virtue's praise ! \*

*Enter MARCUS ANDRONICUS, SATURNINUS, BASSIANUS, and others.*

*Mar.* Long live lord Titus, my beloved brother, Gracious triumph in the eyes of Rome !

*Tit.* Thanks, gentle tribune, noble brother Marcus.

*Mar.* And welcome, nephews, from successful wars,

You that survive, and you that sleep in fame.

Fair lords, your fortunes are alike in all,

That in your country's service drew your swords :

But safer triumph is this funeral pomp,

That hath aspir'd to Solon's happiness, †

And triumphs over chance in honour's bed. —

Titus Andronicus, the people of Rome,

Whose friend in justice thou hast ever been,

Send thee by me, their tribune, and their trust,

This pallament ; of white and spotless hue ;

And name thee in election for the empire,

With these our late-deceased emperor's sons :

Be *candidatus* then, and put it on,

And help to set a lead on headless Rome.

*Tit.* A better head her glorious body fits,

Than his, that shakes for age and feebleness :

What ! should I don this robe, and trouble

you ?

Be chosen with proclamations to-day ;

To-morrow, yield up rule, resign my life,

And set abroad new business for you all ?

Rome, I have been thy soldier forty years,

And buried one and twenty valiant sons,

Knights in field, slain manfully in arms,

In right and service of their noble country :

Give me a staff of honour for mine age,

But not a sceptre to control the world.

Upright he held it, lords, that held it last.

*Mar.* Titus, thou shalt obtain and ask the empery.

*Sat.* Proud and ambitious tribune, canst thou tell ?—

*Tit.* Patience, prince Saturnine.

*Sat.* Romans, do me right :—

Patricians, draw your swords, and sheath them not

Till Saturninus be Rome's emperor :—

Andronicus, 'would thou wert shipp'd to hell,

Rather than rob me of the people's hearts.

*Luc.* Proud Saturnine, interrupter of the good

That noble-minded Titus means to thee !

*Tit.* Content thee, prince ; I will restore to thee

The people's hearts, and wean them from themselves.

*Bas.* Andronicus, I do not flatter thee,

But honour thee, and will do till I die :

My faction if thou strengthen with thy friends,

I will most thankful be : and thanks, to men

Of noble minds, is honourable need.

*Tit.* People of Rome, and people's tribunes here,

\* He wishes that her life may be longer than his, and her praise longer than fame.

† The maxim alluded to is, that no man can be pronounced happy before his death.

‡ A robe.

§ Put it on.

I ask your voices, and your suffrages—

Will you bestow them friendly on Andronicus ?

*Trib.* To gratify the good Andronicus,

And gratulate his safe return to Rome,

The people will accept whom he admits.

*Tit.* Tribunes, I thank you : and this suit I make,

That you create your emperor's eldest son,

Lord Saturnine, whose virtues will, I hope,

Reflect on Rome as Titan's \* rays on earth,

And ripen justice in this common-weal :

Then, if you will elect by my advice,

Crown him, and say,—*Long live our emperor !*

*Mar.* With voices and applause of every sort,

Patricians and plebeians, we create

Lord Saturninus, Rome's great emperor ;

And say, *Long live our emperor Saturninus.*

[*A long Flourish.*]

*Sat.* Titus Andronicus, for thy favours done

To us in our election this day,

I give thee thanks in part of thy deserts,

And will with deeds requite thy gentleness :

And, for an onset, Titus, to advance

Thy name, and honourable family,

Lavinia will I make my empress,

Rome's royal mistress, mistress of my heart,

And in the sacred Pantheon her espouse :

Tell me, Andronicus, doth this motion please

thee ?

*Tit.* It doth, my worthy lord ; and, in this

match,

I hold me highly honour'd of your grace :

And here, in sight of Rome, to Saturnine,—

King and commander of our common-weal,

The wide world's emperor,—do I consecrate

My sword, my chariot, and my prisoners ;

Presents well worthy Rome's imperial lord :

Receive them then, the tribute that I owe,

Mine honour's ensigns humbled at thy feet.

*Sat.* Thanks, noble Titus, father of my life !

How proud I am of thee, and of thy gifts,

Rome shall record ; and, when I do forget

The least of these unspeakable deserts,

Romans, forget your fealty to me.

*Tit.* Now, madam, are you prisoner to an emperor ;

[*To TAMORA.*]

To him, that for your honour and your state,

Will use you nobly, and your followers,

*Sat.* A goodly lady, trust me ; of the hue

That I would choose, were I to choose anew.—

Clear up, fair queen, that cloudy countenance :

Though change of war hath wrought this change

of cheer,

Thou com'st not to be made a scorn in Rome :

Princely shall be thy usage every way.

Rest on my word, and let not discontent

Daunt all your hopes. Madam, he comforts

you,

Can make you greater than the queen of

Goths.—

Lavinia, you are not displeas'd with this ?

*Lav.* Not I, my lord ; with true nobility

Warrants these words in princely courtesy.

*Sat.* Thanks, sweet Lavinia.—Romans, let

us go

Ransomless here we set our prisoners free :

Proclaim our honours, lords, with trumpet and

drum.

*Bas.* Lord Titus, by your leave, this maid is

mine.

[*Seizing LAVINIA.*]

*Tit.* How, Sir ? are you in earnest then, my

lord ?

*Bas.* Ay, noble Titus ; and resolv'd withal,

To do myself this reason and this right.

[*The Emperor courts TAMORA in dumb show.*]

*Mar.* *Suum cuique* is our Roman justice :

This prince in justice seizeth but his own.

*Luc.* And that he will, and shall, if Lucius

live.

*Tit.* Traitors, avaunt ! Where is the emper-

or's guard ?

Treason, my lord ! Lavinia is surpris'd.

\* The sun.

† Since

*Sat.* Surpris'd! by whom?

*Bas.* By him that justly may  
Bear his betroth'd from all the world away.

[*Exeunt* MARCUS AND BASSIANUS, with  
LAVINIA.

*Mut.* Brothers, help to convey her hence  
away,  
And with my sword I'll keep this door safe.

[*Exeunt* LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and  
MARTIUS.

*Tit.* Follow my lord, and I'll soon bring her  
back.

*Mut.* My lord, you pass not here.

*Tit.* What, villain boy!  
Barr'st me my way in Rome?

[*Titus kills Mutius.*

*Mut.* Help, Lucius, help.

*Re-enter* LUCIUS.

*Luc.* My lord, you are unjust; and, more  
than so,  
In wrongful quarrel you have slain your son.

*Tit.* Nor thou, nor he, are any sons of  
mine:

My sons would never so dishonour me:

Traitor, restore Lavinia to the emperor.

*Luc.* Dead, if you will: but not to be his  
wife.

That is another's lawful promis'd love.

[*Exit.*

*Sat.* No, Titus, no; the emperor needs her  
not,

Not her, nor thee, nor any of thy stock:  
I'll trust, by leisure, him that mocks me once:  
Thee never, nor thy traitorous haughty sons,  
Confederates all thus to dishonour me.

Was there none else in Rome to make a  
stale\* of

But Saturnine? Full well, Andronicens,  
Agree these deeds with that proud brag of  
thine,

That said'st, I begg'd the empire at thy hands.

*Tit.* O monstrous! what reproachful words  
are these?

*Sat.* But go thy ways: go, give that changing  
piece

To him that flourish'd for her with his sword:  
A valiant son-in-law thou shalt enjoy;

One fit to bandy with thy lawless sons,

To ruffle in the commonwealth of Rome.

*Tit.* These words are razors to my wounded  
heart.

*Sat.* And, therefore, lovely Tamora, queen of  
Goths,—

That like the stately Phoebe 'mongst her  
nymphs,

Dost overshadow the gallant'st dames of Rome,—

If thou be pleas'd with this my sudden choice,  
Behold, I choose thee, Tamora, for my bride,

And will create thee empress of Rome.

Speak, queen of Goths, dost thou applaud my  
choice?

And here I swear by all the Roman gods,—

With priest and holy water are so near,

And tapers burn so bright, and every thing

In readiness for Hymeneus stand.—

I will not re-salute the streets of Rome,

Or climb my palace, till from forth this place

I lead espous'd my bride along with me.

*Lam.* And here, in sight of heaven, to Rome  
I swear,

If Saturnine advance the queen of Goths,

She will a handmaid be to his desires,

A loving nurse, a mother to his youth,

*Sat.* Ascend, fair queen, Pantheon:—Lords,  
accompany

Your noble emperor, and his lovely bride,

Sent by the heavens for prince Saturnine,

Whose wisdom hath her fortune conquered:

There shall we consummate our spousal rites.

*Exeunt SATURNINUS and his followers;*

TAMORA and her sons; AARON and  
Goths.

*Tit.* I am not bid\* to wait upon this  
bride:—

Titus, when wert thou wont to talk alone,  
Dishonour'd thus, and challenged of wrongs?

*Re-enter* MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and  
MARTIUS.

*Mar.* O Titus, see, oh! see, what thou hast  
done!

In a bad quarrel slain a virtuous son.

*Tit.* No, foolish tribune, no; no son of  
mine,—

Nor thou, nor these, confederates in the deed

That hath dishonour'd all our family;

Unworthy brother, and unworthy sons!

*Luc.* But let us give him burial as becomes;  
Give Mutus burial with our brethren.

*Tit.* Traitors, away! he rests not in this tomb

This monument five hundred years hath stood,

Which I have sumptuously re-edified:

Here none but soldiers, and Rome's servitors,

Repose in fame: none basely slain in brawls:—

Bury him where you can, he comes not here.

*Mar.* My lord, this is impiety in you:

My nephew Mutus' deeds do plead for him:

He must be buried with his brethren.

*Quin.* *Mar.* And shall, or him we will ac-

company.

*Tit.* And shall? What villain was it spoke that

word?

*Quin.* He that would vouch't in any place but

here.

*Tit.* What, would you bury him in my de-

spite?

*Mar.* No, noble Titus; but entreat of thee

To pardon Mutus, and to bury him.

*Tit.* Marcus, even thou hast stuck upon my

crest,

And, with these boys, mine honour thou hast

My foes I do repute you every one; [wounded:

So trouble me no more, but get you gone.

*Mart.* He is not with himself; let us with-

draw.

*Quin.* Not I, till Mutus' bones be buried.

[*MARCUS and the Sons of TITUS kneel.*

*Mar.* Brother, for in that name doth nature

plead.

*Quin.* Father, and in that name doth nature

speak.

*Tit.* Speak thou no more, if all the rest will

speak.

*Mar.* Renowned Titus, more than half my

soul,—

*Luc.* Dear father, soul and substance of us

all,—

*Mar.* Suffer thy brother Marcus to inter

His noble nephew here in virtue's nest,

That died in honour and Lavinia's cause.

Thou art a Roman, be not barbarous.

The Greeks, upon advice, did bury Ajax,

That slew himself; and wise Laertes' son

Did graciously plead for his funerals.

Let not young Mutus then, that was thy joy,

Be barr'd his entrance here.

*Tit.* Rise, Marcus, rise:—

The dismall'st day is this, that e'er I saw,—

To be dishonour'd by my sons in Rome!—

Well, bury him, and bury me the next.

[*MUTIUS is put into the Tomb.*

*Luc.* There lie thy bones, sweet Mutus, with

thy friends,

Till we with trophies do adorn thy tomb!—

*All.* No man shed tears for noble Mutus:

He lives in fame that died in virtue's cause.

*Mar.* My lord,—to step out of these dreary

dumps,—

How comes it, that the subtle queen of Goths

Is of a sudden thus advanc'd in Rome?

*Tit.* I know not, Marcus; but, I know, it is:

Whether by device, or no, the heavens can tell:

Is she not then beholden to the man

That brought her for this high good turn so far?

Yes, and will nobly him remunerate.

\* A stalking horse.

† A ruffler was a bully.

\* Invited.

*Flourish. Re-enter, at one side, SATURNINUS, attended; TAMORA, CHIRON, DEMETRIUS, and AARON: At the other, BASSIANUS, LAVINIA, and others.*

*Sat.* So, Bassianus, you have play'd your prize:

God give you joy, Sir, of your gallant bride.

*Bas.* And you of your's, my lord, I say no more,

Nor wish no less; and so I take my leave.

*Sat.* Traitor, if Rome have law, or we have power,

Thou and thy faction shall repent this rape.

*Bas.* Rape, call you it, my lord, to seize my own,

My true-betrothed love, and now my wife?

But let the laws of Rome determine all:

Mean while I am possess'd of what is mine.

*Sat.* 'Tis good, Sir: You are very short with

But, if we live, we'll be as sharp with you. [us:]

*Bas.* My lord, what I have done, as best I may,

Answer I must, and shall do with my life.

Only thus much I give your grace to know—

By all the duties that I owe to Rome,

This noble gentleman, lord Titus here,

Is in opinion, and in honour, wrong'd;

That, in the rescue of Lavinia,

With his own hand did slay his youngest son,

In zeal to you, and highly mov'd to wrath

To be control'd in that he frankly gave:

Receive him then to favour, Saturnine,

That hath express'd himself, in all his deeds,

A father and a friend to thee and Rome.

*Tit.* Prince Bassianus, leave to plead my

deeds;

'Tis thou, and those, that have dishonour'd me;

Rome and the righteous heavens be my judge.

How I have lov'd and honour'd Saturnine!

*Tam.* My worthy lord, if ever Tamora

Were gracious in those princely eyes of thine,

Then hear me speak indifferently for all;

And at my suit, sweet, pardon what is just.

*Sat.* What! madam! be dishonour'd openly,

And basely put it up without revenge?

*Tam.* Not so, my lord: The gods of Rome

forefend.\*

I should be author to dishonour you!

But, on mine honour, dare I undertake

For good lord Titus' innocence in all,

Whose fury, not dissembled, speaks his griefs:

Then, at my suit, look graciously on him;

Lose not so noble a friend on vain suppose,

Nor with sour looks afflict his gentle heart.—

[*Aside.*

My lord, be rul'd by me, be won at last,

Dissemble all your griefs and discontents:

You are but newly planted in your throne:

Lest then the people and patricians too,

Upon a just survey, take Titus' part,

And so supplant us for ingratitude,

(Which Rome reputes to be a heinous sin.)

Yield at entreats, and then let me alone:

I'll find a day to massacre them all,

And raze their faction, and their family,

The cruel father, and his traitorous sons,

To whom I sued for my dear son's life;

And make them know, what 'tis to let a queen

Kneel in the streets, and beg for grace in vain.—

Come, come, sweet emperor,—come, Andronicus,

Take up this good old man, and cheer the heart

That dies in tempest of thy angry frown.

*Sat.* Rise, Titus, rise; my empress hath pre-

vail'd.

*Tit.* I thank your majesty, and her, my lord;

These words, these looks, infuse new life in me.

*Tam.* Titus, I am incorporate in Rome,

A Roman now adopted happily,

And must advise the emperor for his good.

This day all quarrels die, Andronicus;

And let it be mine honour, good my lord,

That I have reconcil'd your friends and you.—

For you, prince Bassianus, I have pass'd  
My word and promise to the emperor,  
That you will be more mild and tractable.—  
And fear not, lords,—and you, Lavinia,  
By my advice, all humble on your knees,  
You shall ask pardon of his majesty.

*Luc.* We do; and vow to heaven, and to his  
highness,

That what we did was mildly, as we might,  
Tending our sister's honour and our own.

*Mar.* That on mine honour here I do protest.

*Sat.* Away, and talk not: trouble us no  
more.—

*Tam.* Nay, nay, sweet emperor, we must all  
be friends:

The tribune and his nephews kneel for grace:

I will not be denied. Sweet heart, look back.

*Sat.* Marcus, for thy sake, and thy brother's  
here,

And at my lovely Tamora's entreats,

I do remit these young men's heinous faults.

Stand up.

Lavinia, though you left me like a churl,

I found a friend; and sure as death I swore,

I would not part a bachelor from the priest.

Come, if the emperor's court can feast two  
brides.

You are my guest, Lavinia, and your friends;

This day shall be a love-day, Tamora.

*Tit.* To-morrow, an it please your majesty,

To hunt the panther and the hart with me,

With horn and hound, we'll give you grace  
*bonjour.*

*Sat.* Be it so, Titus, and grace, too. [*Exeunt*

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—The same.—Before the Palace.

*Enter AARON.*

*Aar.* Now climbeth Tamora Olympus' top,

Safe out of fortune's shot; and sits aloft,

Secure of thunder's crack, or lightning's dash:

Advanc'd above pale envy's threatening reach.

As when the golden sun salutes the morn,

And having gilt the ocean with his beams,

Gallops the zodiac in his glistening coach,

And overlooks the highest-peering hills:

So Tamora.—

Upon her wit doth early honour wait,

And virtue stoops and trembles at her frown:

Then, Aaron, arm thy heart, and fit thy thoughts,

To mount aloft with thy imperial mistress,

And mount her pitch: whom thou in triumph  
long

Hast prisoner held, fetter'd in amorous chains;

And faster bound to Aaron's charming eyes,

Than is Prometheus tied to Caucasus.

Away with slavish weeds, and idle thoughts!

I will be bright, and shine in pearl and gold,

To wait upon this new-made empress.

To wait, said I? to wait on this queen,

This goddess, this Semiramis—this queen,

This syren, that will charm Rome's Saturnine,

And see his shipwreck, and his commonweal's?

Holla! what storm is this?

*Enter CHIRON and DEMETRIUS, braving.*

*Dem.* Chiron, thy years want wit, thy wit wants  
edge,

And manners, to intrude where I am grac'd;

And may, for ought thou know'st, affect'd be.

*Chi.* Demetrius, thou dost o'erween in all;

And so in this to bear me down with braves.

'Tis not the difference of a year or two,

Make me less gracious, thee more fortunate:

I am as able and as fit as thou,

To serve and to deserve my mistress' grace;

And that my sword upon thee shall approve,

And plead my passions for Lavinia's love.

\* Forbid

\* Grand merci—great thanks.

† Favour.

*Aar.* Clubs, clubs! \* these lovers will not keep the peace.

*Dem.* Why, boy, although our mother, unadvised,

Gave you a dancing-rapier† by your side,  
Are you so desperate grown, to threaten your friends?  
Go to! have your lath glued within your sheath,  
Till you know better how to handle it.

*Chi.* Mean while, Sir, with the little skill I have,  
Full well shalt thou perceive how much I dare.

*Dem.* Ay, boy, glow ye so brave?  
[*They draw.*]

*Aar.* Why, how now, lords?

So near the emperor's palace dare you draw,  
And maintain such a quarrel openly?  
Till well I wot! the ground of all this grudge;  
I would not for a million of gold,  
The cause were known to them it most concerns:  
No, would your noble mother, for much more,  
Be so dishonour'd in the court of Rome.  
For shame, put up,

*Dem.* Not I, till I have sheath'd  
My rapier in his bosom, and, withal,  
Thrust these reproachful speeches down his throat,  
That he hath breath'd in my dishonour here.

*Chi.* For that I am prepar'd and full resolved,—  
[ *tongue,*]  
Foul spoken coward! that thunder'st with thy  
And with thy weapon nothing dar'st perform.

*Aar.* Away, I say.—

Now by the gods, that warlike Goths adore,  
This petty brabble will undo us all.—  
Why, lords,—and think you not how dangerous  
It is to put upon a prince's right?  
What, is Lavinia then become so loose,  
Or Bassianus so degenerate,  
That for her love such quarrels may be broach'd,  
Without contrivance, justice, or revenge?  
Young lords, beware!—an should the empress  
know

This discord's ground, the music would not please.  
*Chi.* I care not, I, knew she and all the world;  
I love Lavinia more than all the world.

*Dem.* Youngling, learn thou to make some  
meaner choice:

Lavinia is thine elder brother's hope.

*Aar.* Why, are ye mad? or know ye not, in  
Rome.

How furious and impatient they be,  
And cannot brook competitors in love?  
I tell you, lords, you do but plot your deaths  
by this device.

*Chi.* Aaron, a thousand deaths  
Would I propose, to achieve her whom I love.

*Car.* To achieve her!—How?

*Dem.* Why makest thou it so strange?  
She is a woman, therefore may be woo'd;  
She is a woman, therefore may be won;  
She is Lavinia, therefore must be lov'd.  
What, man! more water gildeth by the mill  
Than wots the miller of; and easy it is  
Of a cut loaf to steal a shive, § we know:  
Though Bassianus be the emperor's brother,  
Better than he have yet worn Vulcan's badge.

*Car.* Ay, and as good as Saturninus may.  
[*Aside.*]

*Dem.* Then why should he despair, that knows  
to count it

With words, fair looks and liberality?  
What, hast thou not full often struck a doe,  
And boue her cleanly by the keeper's nose?

*Car.* Why, then, it seems, some certain snatch,  
or so,  
Would serve your turns.

*Chi.* Ay, so the turn were serv'd.

*Dem.* Aaron, thou hast hit it.

*Car.* 'Would you had hit it too;  
Then should not we be tin'd with this ado.  
Why, hark ye, hark ye,—And are you such fools,  
To square § for this? Would it offend you then  
That both should speed?

*Chi.* Faith, not me.

*Dem.* Nor me,

So I were one.

*Aar.* For shame, be friends; and join for that  
you jar.

'Tis policy and stratagem must do  
That you affect; and so must you resolve:  
That what you cannot, as you would, achieve,  
You must perforce accomplish as you may.  
Take this of me, Lucrece was not more chaste  
Than this Lavinia, Bassianus' love.  
A speedier course than lingering languishment  
Must we pursue, and I have found the path.  
My lords, a solemn hunting is in hand;  
There will the lovely Roman ladies troop:  
The forest walks are wide and spacious,  
And many untriqued plots there are,  
Fitted by kind \* for rape and villainy:  
Single you thither for this dainty doe.  
And strike her home by force, if not by words:  
This way, or not at all, stand you in hope.  
Come, come, our empress, with her sacred † wit  
To villainy and vengeance consecrate,  
Will we acquaint with all that we intend:  
And she shall file our engines with advice  
That will not suffer you to square yourselves,  
But to your wishes' height advance you both.  
The emperor's court is like the house of fame,  
The palace full of tongues, of eyes, of ears:  
The woods are ruthless, dreadful, deaf and dull:  
There speak, and strike, brave boys, and take  
your turns: [eye,  
There serve your lust, shadow'd from heaven's  
And revel in Lavinia's treasury.

*Chi.* Thy counsel, lad, smells of no cowardice.

*Dem.* Sit fast and n' say, till I find the stream:  
To cool this heat, a charm to calm these fits,  
Per Stygia, per manes ichor. [Exit.

SCENE II.—A Forest near Rome.—A Lady,  
seen at a distance. Horns, and cry of  
Hounds heard.

Enter TITUS ANDRONICUS, with Hunters, &c.  
MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and MARTIUS.

*Tit.* The hunt is up, the morn is bright and  
grey, [green:  
The fields are fragrant, and the woods are  
Uncomp'd here, and let us make a bay,  
And wake the emperor and his lovely bride,  
And rouse the prince; and ring a hunter's peal,  
That all the court may echo with the noise.  
Sons, let it be your charge, as it is ours,  
To tend the emperor's person carefully:  
I have been troubled in my sleep this night,  
But dawning day new comfort hath inspir'd.

Horns and a Peal. Enter SATURNINUS, TITUS  
MORA, BASSIANUS, LAVINIA, CHIRON, DI-  
METRIUS, and attendants.

*Tit.* Many good morrows to your majesty:—  
Madam, to you as many and as good!—  
I promised your grace a hunter's peal.

*Sat.* And you have rung it lustily, my lords,  
Somewhat too early for new-married ladies.

*Bas.* Lavinia, how say you?  
*Lav.* I say, no:  
I have been broad awake two hours and more.

*Sat.* Come on then, horse and chariots let us  
have,  
And to our sport:—Madam, now shall we see  
Our Roman hunting. [To TITUS &c.

*Mar.* I have dogs, my lord,  
Will rouse the proudest panther in the chase,  
And climb the highest promontory top.

*Tit.* And I have horse will follow where the  
game

Makes way, and run like swallows o'er the plain.

*Dem.* Chiron, we hunt not, we, with horse nor  
hound,  
But hope to pluck a dainty doe to ground.

[Exit.

\* This was the usual outcry for assistance, when any  
riot broke out. † A sworn woman in dancing.  
‡ Know. § Strike. ¶ Quarrel.

\* By nature. † Sacred here signifies accursed. ‡ Jestism.

## SCENE III.—A desert Part of the Forest.

*Enter AARON, with a Bag of Gold.**Aar.* He that had wit, would think that I had none,

To bury so much gold under a tree,  
 And never after to inherit \* it.  
 Let him that thinks of me so abjectly,  
 Know, that this gold must coin a stratagem;  
 Which, cunningly effected, will beget  
 A very excellent piece of villany;  
 And so repose, sweet gold, for their unrest, †  
 [Hides the Gold.]  
 That have their aims out of the empress' chest.

*Enter TAMORA.**Tam.* My lovely Aaron, wherefore look'st thou sad,

When every thing doth make a gleeful boast?  
 The birds chaunt melody on every bush;  
 The snake lies rolled in the cheerful sun;  
 The green leaves quiver with the cooling wind,  
 And make a chequer'd shadow on the ground:  
 Under their sweet shade, Aaron, let us sit;  
 And—whilest the babbling echo mocks the hounds,  
 Replying shrilly to the well-tun'd horns,  
 As if a double hunt were heard at once,—  
 Let us sit down, and mark their yelling noise:  
 And—after conflict, such as was suppos'd  
 The wandering prince of Dido once enjoy'd,  
 When with a happy storm they were surpris'd,  
 And curtain'd with a counsel-keeping cave,—  
 We may, each wreathed in the other's arms,  
 Our pastimes done, possess a golden slumber;  
 While hounds, and horns, and sweet melodious  
 birds,

Be unto us, as is a nurse's song  
 Of lullaby, to bring her babe asleep.

*Aar.* Madam, though Venus govern your desires,

Saturn is dominator o'er mine:  
 What signifies my deadly standing eye,  
 My silence, and my cloudy melancholy,  
 My fleece of woolly hair that now uncurls,  
 Even as an adder, when she doth unroll  
 To do some fatal execution?  
 No, madam, these are no venereal signs;  
 Vengeance is in my heart, death in my hand,  
 Blood and revenge are hammering in my head.  
 Hark, Tamora—the empress of my soul,  
 Which never hopes more heaven than rests in  
 thee,—

This is the day of doom for Bassianus:  
 His Philomel! must loose her tongue to-day.  
 Thy sons make pillage of her chastity,  
 And wash their hands in Bassianus' blood.  
 Seest thou this letter? Take it up, I pray thee,  
 And give the king this fatal-plotted scroll:—  
 Now question me no more, we are espied;  
 Here comes a parcel of our hopeful booty,  
 Which dreads not yet their lives' destruction.

*Tam.* Ah, my sweet Moor, sweeter to me than life!

*Aar.* No more, great empress, Bassianus comes:  
 Be cross with him; and I'll go fetch thy sons  
 To back thy quarrels whatsoever they be.

[Exit.]

*Enter BASSIANUS and LAVINIA.**Bas.* Who have we here? Rome's royal emperess,

Unfurnish'd of her well-beseeming troop?  
 Or is it Dian, habited like her;  
 Who hath abandoned her holy groves,  
 To see the general hunting in this forest?

*Tam.* Sancy controller of our private steps!  
 Had I the power that some say, Dian had,  
 Thy temples should be planted presently  
 With horns, as was Actæon's; and the hounds  
 Should drive upon thy new transformed limbs:  
 Unmannerly intruder as thou art!

*Lav.* Under your patience, gentle emperess,

\* 'Tis thought you have a goodly gift in horning;  
 And to be doubted, that your Moor and you  
 Are singled forth to try experiments:  
 Jove shield your husband from his hounds to-day;  
 'Tis pity they should take him for a stag.

*Bas.* Believe me, queen, your swaith Cimmerian

Doth make your honour of his body's hue,  
 Spotted, detested, and abominable.  
 Why are you sequester'd from all your train?  
 Dismounted from your snow-white goodly steed,  
 And wander'd hither to an obscure plot,  
 Accompanied with a barbarous Moor,  
 If foul desire had not conducted you?

*Lav.* And, being intercepted in your sport,  
 Great reason that my noble lord be rated  
 For sauciness.—I pray you, let us hence,  
 And let her joy her purven colour'd love;  
 This valley fits the purpose passing well.

*Bas.* The king, my brother, shall have note of this.*Lav.* Ay, for these slips have made him noted long:

Good king! to be so mightily abus'd!

*Tam.* Why have I patience to endure all this?*Enter CHIRON and DEMETRIUS.**Dem.* How now, dear sovereign, and our gracious mother,

Why doth your highness look so pale and wan?

*Tam.* Have I not reason, think you, to look pale?

These two have 'tied me hither to this place,  
 A barren detested vale, you see, it is:  
 The trees, though summer, yet forlorn and lean,  
 O'ercome with moss, and baleful mistletoe.  
 Here never shines the sun; here nothing breeds,  
 Unless the nightly owl, or fatal raven;  
 And, when they show'd me this abhorred pit,  
 They told me, here, at dead time of the night,  
 A thousand fiends, a thousand hissing snakes,  
 Ten thousand swelling toads, as many adders,  
 Would make such fearful and confused cries,  
 As any mortal body, hearing it,  
 Should straight fall mad, or else die suddenly.  
 No sooner had they told this hellish tale,  
 But straight they told me, they would band me  
 here

Unto the body of a dismal yew;  
 And leave me to this miserable death.  
 And then they call'd me, foul adulteress,  
 Lascivious Goth, and all the bitterest term  
 That ever ear did hear to such effect.  
 And, had you not by wondrous fortune come,  
 This vengeance on me had they executed:  
 Revenge it, as you love your mother's life,  
 Or be ye not henceforth call'd my children.

*Dem.* This is a witness that I am thy son.

[Stabs BASSIANUS.]

*Chi.* And this for me, struck home to show my strength.

[Stabbing him likewise.]

*Lav.* Ay, come, Scuirrains,—nay, barbarous Tamora!

For no name fits thy nature but thy own!

*Tam.* Give me thy poniard; you shall know my boys,  
 Your mother's hand shall right your mother's wrong.

*Dem.* Stay, madam, here is more belongs to her;

First thrash the corn, then after burn the straw:  
 This minion stood upon her chastity,  
 Upon her nuptial vow, her loyalty,  
 And with that painted hope braves your mightiness.

And shall she carry this unto her grave?

*Chi.* An if she do, I would I were a eunuch.  
 Drag hence her husband to some secret hole,  
 And make his dead trunk pillow to our lust.

*Tam.* But when you have the honey you desire,

Let not this wasp outlive, us both to sting.

\* Possess.

† Disquiet.

‡ See Ovid's *Metamorphoses*, Book VI.

§ Part.

• Hedge-hogs.

*Chi.* I warrant you, madam; we will make that sure.—

Come, mistress, now perforce we will enjoy  
That nice-preserved honesty of your's.

*Lav.* O Tainora! thou bear'st a woman's face,—

*Tam.* I will not hear her speak: away with her.

*Lav.* Sweet lords, entreat her hear me but a word.

*Dem.* Listen, fair madam: Let it be your glory

To see her tears: but be your heart to them,  
As unrelenting flint to drops of rain.

*Lav.* When did the tiger's young ones teach the dam?

Oh! do not learn her wrath; she taught it thee:  
The milk thou suck'dst from her did turn to marble;

Even at thy teat thou had'st thy tyranny.—

Yet every mother breeds not sons alike;

Do thou entreat her show a woman's pity.

[*To CHIRON.*]

*Chi.* What! would'st thou have me prove myself a bastard?

*Lav.* 'Tis true; the raven doth not hatch a lark:

Yet I have heard (oh! could I find it now!)

The lion mov'd with pity, did endure

To have his princely paws par'd all away.

Some say that ravens foster tollorn children,

The whilst their own birds tamish in their nests:

Oh! be to me, though thy hard heart say no,

Nothing so kind, but something pitiful!

*Tam.* I know not what it means: away with her.

*Lav.* Oh! let me teach thee: for my father's sake,

That gave thee life, when well he might have slain thee,

Be not obdurate, open thy deaf ears.

*Tam.* Had thou in person ne'er offended me

Even for his sake am I pitiless:—

Remember, boys, I pour'd forth tears in vain

To save your brother from the sacrifice;

But hence Andronicus would not relent.

Therefore away with her, and use her as you will;

The worse to her, the better lov'd of me.

*Lav.* O Tainora, be call'd a gentle queen,  
And with thine own hands kill me in this place:

For 'tis not life that I have begg'd so long;

Poor I was slain, when Bassianus died.

*Tam.* What begg'st thou then: fond woman, let me go.

*Lav.* 'Tis present death I beg; and one thing more,

That womanhood denies my tongue to tell:

Oh! keep me from their worse than killing lust,  
And tumble me into some loathsome pit;

Where never man's eye may behold my body:

Do this, and be a charitable murderer.

*Tam.* So should I rob my sweet sons of their fee:

No, let them satisfy their lust on thee.

*Dem.* Away, for thou hast staid us here too long.

*Lav.* No grace? no womanhood? Ah! beastly creature!

The blot and enemy to our general name!

Confusion fall—

*Chi.* Nay, then, I'll stop your mouth:—Bring thou her husband;

[*Dragging off LAVINIA.*]

This is the hole where Aaron bid us hide him.

[*Exit.*]

*Tam.* Farewell, my sons: see that you make her sure:

Ne'er let my heart know merry cheer indeed,

Till all the Andronicus be made away.

Now will I hence to seek my lovely Moon,

And let my spleenful sons this trull deflower.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same.*

*Enter AARON, with QUINTUS and MARTIUS.*

*Aar.* Come on, my lords; the better foot before:

Straight will I bring you to the loathsome pit,  
Where I espy'd the panther fast asleep.

*Quin.* My sight is very dull, whate'er it bodes.

*Mart.* And mine, I promise you; we'll not for shame,

Well could I leave our sport to sleep awhile.

[*MARTIUS falls into the Pit.*]

*Quin.* What art thou fallen? What subtle hole is this,

Whose mouth is cover'd with rude-growing briars;  
Upon whose leaves are drops of new-shed blood,

As fresh as morning's dew distill'd on flowers?

A very fatal place it seems to me:—

Speak, brother, hast thou hurt thee with the fall?

*Mart.* O brother, with the dismallest object

That ever eye, with sight, made heart lament.

*Aar.* [*Aside.*] Now will I fetch the king to find them here;

That he thereby may give a likely guess,  
How these were they that made away his brother

[*Exit.*]

*Mart.* Why dost not comfort me, and help me out

From this unhallow'd and blood-stained hole?

*Quin.* I am surprised with an uncouth fear:

A chilling sweat o'er-runs my trembling joints:

My heart suspects more than mine eye can see.

*Mart.* To prove thou hast a true-divining heart,

Aaron and thou look down into this den,  
And see a fearful sight of blood and death.

*Quin.* Aaron is gone; and my compassionate heart

Will not permit mine eyes once to behold  
The thing, wherewith it trembles by surmise:

Oh! tell me how it is; for ne'er till now

Was I a child, to fear I know not what.

*Mart.* Loid Bassianus lies embrewed here,

All on a heap, like to a slaughter'd lamb,

In this detested, dark, blood-drinking pit.

*Quin.* If it be dark, how dost thou know 'tis he?

*Mart.* Upon his bloody finger he doth wear  
A precious ring, that lightens all the hole,

Which, like a taper in some monument,

Doth shine upon the dead man's earthy cheeks,

And shows the ragged entrails of this pit:

So pale did shine the moon on Pyramus,

When he by night lay bath'd in maiden blood.

O brother, help me with thy taunting hand,—

If fear hath made thee faint, as me it hath,—

Out of this fell devouring receptacle,

As hateful as Cocyus' misty mouth.

*Quin.* Reach me thy hand, that I may help thee out;

Or, wanting strength to do thee so much good,  
I may be pluck'd into the swallowing womb

Of this deep pit, poor Bassianus' grave.

I have no strength to pluck thee to the brink.

*Mart.* Nor I no strength to climb without thy help.

*Quin.* Thy hand once more; I will not loose  
Till thou art here aloft, or I below: [again,

Thou canst not come to me, I come to thee.

[*Falls in.*]

*Enter SATURNINUS and AARON.*

*Sat.* Along with me:—I'll see what hole is here,

And what he is, that now is leap'd into it.  
Say, who art thou, that lately didst descend

Into this gaping hollow of the earth?

*Mart.* The unhappy son of old Andronicus:  
Brought thither in a most unlucky hour,

To find thy brother Bassianus dead.

*Sat.* My brother dead? I know thou dost but jest:

He and his lady both are at the lodge,  
Upon the north side of this pleasant chace:

'Tis not an hour since I left him there.



*Mart.* We know not where you left him all alive,  
But, out alas! here have we found him dead.

*Enter TAMORA, with Attendants; TITUS ANDRONICUS, and LUCIUS.*

*Tam.* Where is my lord, the king?

*Sat.* Here, Tamora; though griev'd with killing grief.

*Tam.* Where is thy brother Bassianus?

*Sat.* Now to the bottom dost thou search my wound:

Poor Bassianus here lies murdered.

*Tam.* Then all too late I bring this fatal writ,  
[Giving a Letter.

The complot of this timeless tragedy;  
And wonder greatly, that man's race can fold  
In pleasing smiles such murderous tyrann.

*Sat.* [Reads.] *An if we miss to meet him handsomely,—*

*Sweet huntsman, Bassianus 'tis, we mean,—  
Do thou so much as dig the grave for him;  
Thou know'st our meaning; Look for thy reward*

*Among the nettles at the elder tree,  
Which overshades the mouth of that same pit,  
Where we decreed to bury Bassianus.*

*Do this, and purchase us thy lasting friends.*

O Tamora! was ever heard the like?

This is the pit, and this the elder tree:

Look, Sirs, if you can find the huntsman out,  
That should have murder'd Bassianus here.

*Aar.* My gracious lord, here is the bag of gold.  
[Shewing it.

*Sat.* Two of thy whelps, [To TIT.] fell curs of bloody kind,

Have here bereft my brother of his life:—  
Sirs, drag them from the pit unto the prison;  
There let them bide, until we have devis'd  
Some never-heard-of torturing pain for them.

*Tam.* What, are they in this pit? O wondrous thing!

How easily murder is discovered!

*Tit.* High emperor, upon my feeble knee  
I beg this boon, with tears not lightly shed,  
That this fell fault of my accursed sons,  
Accursed, if the fault be prov'd in them,—

*Sat.* If it be prov'd! you see, it is apparent.

Who found this letter? Tamora, was it you?

*Tam.* Andronicus himself did take it up.

*Tit.* I did, my lord: yet let me be their bail:  
For by my father's reverend tomb, I vow,  
They shall be ready at your highness' will,  
To answer their suspicion with their lives.

*Sat.* Thou shalt not bail them: see, thou follow me. [Exeunt.]

Some bring the murder'd body, some the murderer;  
Let them not speak a word, the guilt is plain;  
For, by my soul, were there worse end than death,

That end upon them should be executed.

*Tam.* Andronicus, I will entreat the king:  
Fear not thy sons, they shall do well enough.

*Tit.* Come, Lucius, come: stay not to talk  
with them.

[Exeunt severally.]

#### SCENE V.—The same.

*Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON, with LAVINIA, ravished; her Hands cut off, and her Tongue cut out.*

*Dem.* So, now go tell, an if thy tongue can speak,

Who 'twas that cut thy tongue, and ravish'd thee.

*Chi.* Write down thy mind, bewray thy meaning so;

And if thy stumps will let thee play the scribe.

*Dem.* See, how with signs and tokens she can scowl.

*Chi.* Go home, call for sweet water, wash thy hands.

• Unstintedly.

*Dem.* She hath no tongue to call, nor hand to wash;  
And so let's leave her to her silent walks.

*Chi.* An 'twere my case, I should go hate myself.

*Dem.* If thou hadst hands to help thee knit the cord.

[Exeunt DEMETRIUS and CHIRON.]

*Enter MARCUS.*

*Mar.* Who's this,—my niece, that flies away so fast?

Cousin, a word; Where is your husband?—  
If I do dream, 'would all my wealth would wake me!

If I do wake, some planet strike me down,  
That I may slumber in eternal sleep!—

Speak, gentle niece, what stern uncute hands  
Have lopp'd, and hew'd, and made thy body bare

Of her two branches? those sweet ornaments,  
Whose circling shadows kings have sought to sleep in;

And might not gain so great a happiness,  
As half thy love? Why dost not speak to me?—

Alas, a crimson river of warm blood,  
Like to a bubbling fountain stir'd with wind,

Doth rise and fall between thy parted lips,  
Coming and going with thy honey breath.

But sure, some Tereus hath devour'd thee,  
And lest thou should'st detect him, cut thy tongue.

Ah! now thou turnest away thy face for shame,\*

And, notwithstanding all this loss of blood,—  
As from a conduit with three running spouts,—

Yet do thy cheeks look red as Titan's face,  
Blushing to be encounter'd with a cloud.

Shall I speak for thee? shall I say, 'tis so?

Oh! that I knew thy heart; and knew the least,  
That I might rail at him to ease my mind!

Sorrow concealed, like an oven stopp'd,  
Doth burn the heart to cinders where it is.

Fair Philomela, she but lost her tongue,  
And in a tedious sampler sew'd her mind.

But, lovely niece, that mean is cut from thee;  
A clavier Tereus hast thou met withal,

And he hath cut those pretty fingers off,  
That could have better sew'd than Philomela.

Oh! had the monster seen those lily hands  
Tremble, like aspen leaves, upon a lute,

And make the sicken strings delight to kiss them,  
He would not then have touch'd them for his life;

Or, had he heard the heavenly harmony,  
Which that sweet tongue hath made,

He would have dropp'd his knife, and fell asleep.

As Cerberus at the Thracian port's \* feet.

Come, let us go, and make thy father blind:  
For such a sight will blind a father's eye:

One hour's storm will drown the fragrant meads;  
What will whole months of tears thy father's eyes?

Do not draw back, for we will mourn with thee;  
Oh! could our mourning ease thy misery!

[Exeunt.]

#### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—Rome.—A Street.

*Enter SENATORS, TRIBUNES, and Officers of Justice, with MARTIUS and QUINTUS, bound, passing on to the Place of Execution: TITUS going before, pleading.*

*Tit.* Hear me, grave fathers! noble tribunes stay!

For pity of mine age, whose youth was spent  
In dangerous wars, whilst thou securely slept;

For all my blood in Rome's great quarrel shed;  
For all the frosty nights that I have watch'd;

• Orpheus.

And for these bitter tears, which now you see  
Filling the aged wrinkles in my cheeks;  
Be pitiful to my condemned sons,  
Whose souls are not corrupted as 'tis thought!  
For two and twenty sons I never wept,  
Because they died in honour's lofty bed:  
For these, these, tribunes, in the dust I write  
[*Throwing himself on the Ground*]  
My heart's deep languor, and my soul's sad tears.  
Let my tears staunch the earth's dry appetite:  
My sons' sweet blood will make it shame and blush.

[*Exit SENATORS, TRIBUNES, &c.  
with the Prisoners.*]

O earth, I will beseech thee more with rain,  
That shall distil from these two ancient urns,  
Than youthful April shall with all his showers:  
In summer's drought, I'll drop upon thee still:  
In winter, with warm tears I'll melt the snow,  
And keep eternal spring-time on thy face,  
So thou refuse to drink my dear sons' blood.

*Enter Lucius, with his Sword drawn.*

O reverend tribunes! gentle aged men!  
Unbind my sons, reverse the doom of death;  
And let me say, that never wept before,  
My tears are now prevailing orators.

*Luc.* O noble father, you lament in vain;  
The tribunes hear you not, no man is by,  
And you recount your sorrows to a stone.

*Tit.* Ah! Lucius, for thy brothers let me plead:  
Grave tribunes, once more I entreat of you.

*Luc.* My gracious lord, no tribune hears you speak.

*Tit.* Why, 'tis no matter, man: if they did hear,

They would not mark me; or if they did mark,  
All bootless to them, they'd not pity me.  
Therefore I tell my sorrows to the stones,  
Who, though they cannot answer my distress,  
Yet in some sort they're better than the tribunes,  
For that they will not intercept my tale:  
When I do weep, they humbly at my feet  
Receive my tears, and seem to weep with me;  
And, were they but attuned in grave words,  
Rome could afford no tribune like to these.  
A stone is soft as wax, tribunes more hard than stones:

A stone is silent, and offendeth not:  
And tribunes with their tongues doom men to death.

But wherefore stand'st thou with thy weapon drawn?

*Luc.* To rescue my two brothers from their death:

For which attempt, the judges have pronounced  
My everlasting doom of banishment.

*Tit.* O happy man, they have befriended thee.  
Why, foolish Lucius, dost thou not perceive,  
That Rome is but a wilderness of tigers?  
Tigers must prey; and Rome affords no prey,  
But me and mine: How happy art thou then,  
From these devourers to be banished!  
But who comes with our brother Marcus here?

*Enter MARCUS and LAVINIA.*

*Mar.* Titus, prepare thy noble eyes to weep;  
Or, if not so, thy noble heart to break;  
I bring consuming sorrow to thine age.

*Tit.* Will it consume me? let me see it then.

*Mar.* This was thy daughter.

*Tit.* Why, Marcus, so she is.

*Luc.* Ah! me, this object kills me!

*Tit.* Faint hearted boy, arise, and look upon her!—

Speak, my Lavinia, what accursed hand  
Hath made thee handless in thy father's sight?  
What fool hath added water to the sea,  
Or brought a taggot to bright burning Troy?  
My grief was at the height before thou cam'st,  
And now, like Nilus,\* it disdaineth bounds,  
Give me a sword, I'll chop off my hands too;  
For they have sought for Rome, and all in vain;

And they have nurs'd this woe, in feeding life;  
In bootless prayer have they been held up,  
And they have serv'd me to effectless use:  
Now, all the service I require of them  
Is, that the one will help to cut the other.—  
'Tis well, Lavinia, that thou hast no hands;  
For hands, to do Rome service, are but vain.

*Luc.* Speak, gentle sister, who hath martyr'd thee?

*Mar.* Oh! that delightful engine of her thoughts,  
That blabb'd them with such pleasing eloquence,  
Is torn from forth that pretty hollow cage:  
Where, like a sweet melodious bird, it sung  
Sweet varied notes, enchanting every ear!

*Luc.* Oh! say thou for her, who hath done this deed?

*Mar.* Oh! thus I found her, staying in the park,

Seeking to hide herself, as doth the deer,  
That hath receiv'd some unrequiting wound.

*Tit.* It was my deer; and he that wounded her,

Hath hurt me more, than had he kill'd me dead:  
For now I stand as one upon a rock,

Environ'd with a wilderness of sea;  
Who marks the waxing tide grow wave by wave,  
Expecting ever when some envious surge  
Will in his brinish bowels swallow him.

This way to death my wretched sons are gone;  
Here stands my other son a banish'd man!

And here, my brother, weeping at my woes;  
But that which gives my soul the greatest pain,

Is dear Lavinia, dearer than my soul.—  
Had I but seen thy picture in this plight,  
It would have maddened me; What shall I do

Now I behold thy lively body so?

Thou hast no hands to wipe away thy tears:  
Nor tongue to tell me who has martyr'd thee:

Thy husband he is dead: and, for his death,  
Thy brothers are condemn'd and dead by this:—

Look, Marcus! ah! son Lucius, look on her!  
When I did name her brothers, then fresh tears

Stood on her cheeks; as doth the honey dew  
Upon a gather'd lily almost wither'd.

*Mar.* Perchance, she weeps because they kill'd  
her husband:

Perchance, because she knows them innocent.

*Tit.* If they did kill thy husband, then be joyful,

Because the law hath taken revenge on them.  
No, no, they would not do so foul a deed;

Witness the sorrow that their sister makes.—  
Gentle Lavinia, let me kiss thy lips;

Or make some sign how I may do thee ease:  
Shall thy good uncle, and thy brother Lucius,

And thou, and I, sit round about some fountain;  
Looking all downwards, to behold our cheeks

How they are stain'd; like meadows, yet not dry

With my slime left on them by a flood?  
And in the fountain shall we gaze so long,

Till the fresh taste be taken from that cleanness,  
And made a brim-pit with our bitter tears?

Or shall we cut away our hands, like thine?  
Or shall we bite our tongues, and in dumb

shows  
Pass the remainder of our hateful days?

What shall we do? let us, that have our tongues  
Plot some device of further misery,

To make us wonder'd at in time to come.

*Luc.* Sweet father, cease your tears; for, at your grief,

See how my wretched sister sobs and weeps.

*Mar.* Patience, dear niece:—good Titus, dry  
thine eyes.

*Tit.* Ah, Marcus, Marcus! brother, well I  
wot,\*

Thy napkin† cannot drink a tear of mine,  
For thou, poor man, hast drown'd it with thine  
own.

*Luc.* Ah! my Lavinia, I will wipe thy  
cheeks.

\* The river Nile.

\* Know.

† Handkerchief.

*Tit.* Mark, Marcus, mark! I understand her signs:

Had she a tongue to speak, now would she say  
That to her brother which I said to thee;  
His napkin, with his true tears all bewet,  
Can do no service on her sorrowful cheeks.  
Oh! what a sympathy of woe is this!  
As far from help as limbo is from bliss!

*Enter AARON.*

*Aar.* Titus Andronicus, my lord the emperor  
Sends thee this word,—That, if thou love thy sons,

Let Marcus, Lucius, or thyself old Titus,  
Or any one of you, chop off your hand,  
And send it to the king: he for the same,  
Will send thee hither both thy sons alive:  
And that shall be the ransom for their fault.

*Tit.* O gracious emperor! O gentle Aaron!  
Did ever raven sing so like a lark,  
That gives sweet tidings of the sun's uprise?  
With all my heart, I'll send the emperor  
My hand.

Good Aaron, wilt thou help to chop it off?

*Luc.* Stay, father; for that noble hand of  
thine,

That hath thrown down so many enemies,  
Shall not be sent: my hand will serve the turn:  
My youth can better spare my blood than you;  
And therefore mine shall save my brother's  
lives.

*Mar.* Which of your hands hath not defended  
Rome,

And rear'd aloft the bloody battle axe,  
Writing destruction on the enemy's castle?  
O none of both but are of high desert:  
My hand hath been but idle; let it serve  
To ransom my two nephews from their death;  
Then have I kept it to a worthy end.

*Aar.* Nay, come agree, whose hand shall go  
along,

For fear they die before their pardon come.

*Mar.* My hand shall go.

*Luc.* By heaven it shall not go.

*Tit.* Sirs, strive no more; such wither'd herbs  
as these

Are meet for plucking up, and therefore mine.

*Luc.* Sweet father, if I shall be thought thy  
son,

Let me redeem my brothers both from death.

*Mar.* And, for our father's sake, and mother's  
care,

Now let me show a brother's love to thee.

*Tit.* Agree between you: I will spare my  
hand.

*Luc.* Then I'll go fetch an axe.

*Mar.* But I will use the axe.

[*Enter LUCIUS and MARCUS.*]

*Tit.* Come hither, Aaron; I'll deceive them  
both:

Lend me thine hand, and I will give thee mine.

*Aar.* If that be call'd deceit, I will be honest,  
And never, whilst I live, deceive men so:—

But I'll deceive you in another sort, [*Aside.*]  
And that you'll say, ere half an hour can pass.

[*He cuts off Titus' Hand.*]

*Enter LUCIUS and MARCUS.*

*Tit.* Now, stay your strife; what shall be, is  
despatch'd.—

Good Aaron, give his majesty my hand:  
Tell him, it was a hand that ward'd him  
From thousand dangers; bid him bury it;  
More hath it merited, that let it have.  
As for my sons, say, I account of them  
As jewels purchas'd at an easy price;  
And yet dear too, because I bought mine own.

*Aar.* I go, Andronicus: and for thy hand,  
Look by and by to have thy sons with thee:—

[*Aside.*]

Their heads, I mean.—Oh! how this villany  
Doth sat me with the very thoughts of it!  
Let fools do good, and fair men call for grace,  
Aaron will have his soul black like his face.

[*Exit.*]

*Tit.* Oh! here I lift this one hand up to heaven,

And bow this feeble ruin to the earth:  
If any power pities wretched tears,  
To that I call!—What, wilt thou kneel with me?

[*To LAVINIA.*]

Do then, dear heart; for heaven shall hear our  
prayers;

Or with our sighs we'll breathe the welkin dim,  
And stain the sun with fog, as sometime clouds,  
When they do hug him in their melting bosoms.

*Mar.* O brother, speak with possibilities.  
And do not break into these deep extremes.

*Tit.* Is not my sorrow deep having no bottom?

Then be my passions' bottomless with them.

*Mar.* But yet let reason govern thy lament.

*Tit.* If there were reason for these miseries,  
Then into limits could I bind my woes:  
When heaven doth weep, doth not the earth  
o'erflow?

If the winds rage, doth not the sea wax mad,  
Threat'ning the welkin with his big-swoll'n face?  
And wilt thou have a reason for this coil?  
I am the sea; hark, how her sighs do blow!  
She is the weeping welkin, I the earth:

Then must my sea be moved with her sighs;  
Then must my earth with her continual tears  
Become a deluge, overflow'd and drown'd:  
For why? my bowels cannot hide her woes,  
But like a drunkard must I vomit them.  
Then give me leave; for losers will have leave  
To ease their stomachs with their bitter tongue.

*Enter a MESSENGER, with two Heads and a Hand.*

*Mess.* Worthy Andronicus, ill art thou repaid  
For that good hand thou sent'st the emperor.  
Here are the heads of thy two noble sons;  
And here's thy hand, in scorn to thee sent back;  
Thy griefs their sports, thy resolution mock'd:  
That woe is me to think upon thy woes,  
More than remembrance of my father's death.

[*Exit.*]

*Mar.* Now let hot *Ætna* cool in Sicily,  
And be my heart an ever-burning hell!  
These miseries are more than may be borne!  
To weep with them that weep doth ease some  
deal,

But sorrow flouted at is double death.

*Luc.* Ah! that this sight should make me deep  
a wound,

And yet detested life not shrink thereat!  
That ever death should let life bear his name,  
Where life hath no more interest but to breathe?

[*LAVINIA kisses him.*]

*Mar.* Alas, poor heart, that kiss is comeliest,  
As frozen water to a starved snake.

*Tit.* When will this fearful slumber have an  
end?

*Mar.* Now, farewell, flattery: Die, Andronicus;

Thou dost not slumber: see, thy two son's heads,  
Thy warlike hand, thy mangled daughter here,  
Thy other banish'd son, with this dear sight  
Struck pale and bloodless; and thy brother, I,  
Even like a stony image, cold and numb.  
Ah! now no more will I control thy griefs:  
Rent off thy silver hair, thy other hand  
Gnawing with thy teeth; and be this dismal  
sight

The closing up of our most wretched eyes!  
Now is a time to storm—why art thou still?

*Tit.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Mar.* Why dost thou laugh? it fits not with  
this hour.

*Tit.* Why, I have not another tear to shed:  
Besides this sorrow is an enemy,  
And would usurp upon my watery eyes,  
And make them blind with tributary tears:  
Then which way shall I find revenge's cave?  
For these two heads do seem to speak to me;  
And threat me, I shall never come to bliss,

\* Sufferings.

† Stir, bustle.

Till all these mischiefs be return'd again,  
Even in their throats that have committed  
them.

Come, let me see what task I have to do.—

You heavy people, circle me about;  
That I may turn me to each one of you,  
And swear unto my soul to right your wrongs.  
The vow is made.—Come, brother, take a head;  
And in this hand the other will I bear!  
Lavinia, thou shalt be employ'd in these things;  
Bear thou my hand, sweet wench, between thy  
teeth.

As for thee, boy, go, got thee from my sight;  
Thou art an exile, and thou must not stay:  
Hie to the Goths, and raise an army there:  
And, if you love me, as I think you do,  
Let's kiss and part, for we have much to do.

[*Exeunt* TITUS, MARCUS, and LAVINIA.]

*Luc.* Farewell, Andronicus, my noble father;  
The woeful'st man that ever liv'd in Rome!  
Farewell, proud Rome! till Lucius come again,  
He leaves his pledges dearer than his life.  
Farewell, Lavinia, my noble sister;  
Oh! would thou wert as thou 'fore have been!  
But now not Lucius nor Lavinia lives,  
But in oblivion, and hateful griefs.  
If Lucius live, he will requite your wrongs;  
And make proud Saturninus and his empress  
Beg at the gates, like Tarquin and his queen.  
Now will I to the Goths, and raise a power,  
To be reveng'd on Rome and Saturnine.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—A Room in TITUS' House.—  
A Banquet set out.

*Enter* TITUS, MARCUS, LAVINIA, and young  
LUCIUS, a boy.

*Tit.* So, so; now sit: and look, you eat no  
more

Than will preserve just so much strength in us  
As will revenge these bitter woes of ours.  
MARCUS, minkit that sorrow-wreathen knot;  
Thy niece and I, poor creatures, want our hands,  
And cannot passionate our tenfold grief  
With folded arms. This poor right hand of mine  
Is lent to tyrannise upon my breast;  
And when my heart, all mad with misery,  
Beats in this hollow prison of my flesh,  
Then thus I thump it down.—

Thou map of woe that thus dost talk in signs!

[*To* LAVINIA.]

When thy poor heart beats with outrageous  
beating,

Thou canst not strike it thus to make it still.  
Wound it with sighing, girl, kill it with groans;  
Or get some little knife between thy teeth,  
And just against thy heart make thou a hole;  
That all the tears that thy poor eyes let fall,  
May run into that sink, and soaking in,  
Drown the lamenting fool in sea-salt tears.

*Mar.* Fie, brother, fie! teach her not thus to lay  
Such violent hands upon her tender life.

*Tit.* How now! has sorrow made thee dote  
already?

Why, MARCUS, no man should be mad but I.  
What violent hands can she lay on her life!  
Ah! wherefore dost thou urge the name of  
hands:—

For bid Æneas tell the tale twice o'er,  
How Troy was burnt, and he made miserable!  
O handle not the theme, to talk of hands;  
Lest we remember still, that we have none.—  
Fie, fie, how frantically I square my talk!  
As if we should forget we had no hands,  
If MARCUS did not name the word of hands!—  
Come, let's fall to; and, gentle girl, eat this:—  
Here's no drink! Hark, MARCUS, what she  
says:—

I can interpret all her martyr'd signs:—  
She says, she drinks no other drink but tears,  
Brew'd with her sorrows, meab'd upon her  
cheeks:—

\* An allusion to brewing.

Speechless complainer, I will learn thy thought;  
In thy dumb action will I be as perfect,  
As begging hermits in their holy prayers:  
Thou shalt not sigh, nor hold thy stumps to  
heaven,

Nor wink, nor nod, nor kneel, nor make a sign  
But I, of these, will wrest an alphabet,  
And, by still \* practice, learn to know thy mean-  
ing.

*Boy.* Good grandsire, leave these bitter deep  
laments:

Make my aunt merry with some pleasing tale.

*Mar.* Alas! the tender boy, in passion mov'd,  
Doth weep to see his grandsire's heaviness.

*Tit.* Peace, tender sapling; thou art made of  
tears,

And tears will quickly melt thy life away.—

[*MARCUS strikes the Dish with a Knife.*  
What dost thou strike at, MARCUS, with thy  
knife?

*Mar.* At that that I have kill'd, my lord; a  
fly.

*Tit.* Out on thee, murderer! thou kill'st my  
heart;

Mine eyes are cloy'd with view of tyranny:

A deed of death, done on the innocent,

Becomes not TITUS' brother: Get thee gone;

I see thou art not for my company.

*Mar.* Alas! my lord, I have but kill'd a fly.

*Tit.* But how, if that fly had a father and mo-  
ther?

How would he hang his slender gilded wings,

And buzz lamenting doings in the air!

Poor harmless fly!

That, with his pretty buzzing melody,

Came here to make us merry; and thou hast  
kill'd him.

*Mar.* Pardon me, Sir; 'twas a black ill-  
favour'd fly,

Like to the empress' Moor; therefore I kill'd him.

*Tit.* Oh! oh! oh!

Then pardon me for reprehending thee,

For thou hast done a charitable deed.

Give me thy knife, I will insult on him;

Flattering myself, as it were the Moor

Come hither purposely to poison me.—

There's for thyself, and that's for Tamora.—

Ah! sirrah!—

Yet I do think we are not brought so low,

But that, between us, we can kill a fly,

That comes in likeness of a coal-black Moor

*Mar.* Alas! poor man! grief has so wrought  
on him,

He takes false shadows for true substances.

*Tit.* Come, take away.—Lavinia, go with me:

I'll to thy closet; and go read with thee

Sad stories, chanced in the times of old.—

Come, boy, and go with me; thy sight is young,

And thou shalt read, when mine begins to dazzle.

[*Exeunt*]

#### ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The same.—Before TITUS'  
House.

*Enter* TITUS and MARCUS. *Then enter young*  
LUCIUS, LAVINIA running after him.

*Boy.* Help, grandsire, help! my aunt Lavinia  
Follows me every where, I know not why:—  
Good uncle MARCUS, see how swift she comes!  
Alas! sweet aunt, I know not what you mean.

*Mar.* Stand by me, LUCIUS; do not fear thine  
aunt.

*Tit.* She loves thee, boy, too well to do thee  
harm.

*Boy.* Ay, when my father was in Rome, she  
did.

*Mar.* What means my niece Lavinia by these  
signs?

\* Constant practice.

† This was formerly not a disrespectful expression.

*Tit.* Fear her not, Lucius:—Somewhat doth she mean:

See, Lucius, see, how much she makes of thee: Somewhither would she have thee go with her. Ah! boy, Cornelia never with more care Read to her sons, than she hath read to thee, Sweet poetry, and Tully's Orator.\* Canst thou not guess wherefore she plies thee thus?

*Boy.* My lord, I know not, I, nor can I guess, Unless some fit or frenzy do possess her: For I have heard my grandsire say full oft, Extremity of griefs would make men mad; And I have read that Hecuba of Troy Ran mad through sorrow: That made me to fear; Although, my lord, I know my noble aunt Loves me as dear as e'er my mother did, And would not, but in fury, fright my youth: Which made me down to throw my books, and fly;

Caseless, perhaps: But pardon me, sweet aunt: And, madam, if my uncle Marcus go, I will most willingly attend your ladyship.

*Mar.* Lucius, I will.

[*LAVINIA turns over the books which LUCIUS has let fall.*]

*Tit.* How now, Lavinia!—Marcus, what means this?

Some book there is that she desires to see:— Which is it, girl, of these?—Open them, boy.— But thou art deeper read, and better skill'd; Come, and take choice of all my library, And so beguile thy sorrow, till the heavens Reveal the damnd contriver of this deed.— Why lifts she up her arms in sequence?—

*Mar.* I think she means, that there was more than one Confederate in the fact:—Ay, more there was:— Or else to heaven she leaves them for revenge.

*Tit.* Lucius, what book is that she tosseth so?

*Boy.* Grandsire, 'tis Ovid's Metamorphosis; My mother gave't me.

*Mar.* For love of her that's gone,

Perhaps she call'd it from among the rest.

*Tit.* Soft! see, how busily she turns the leaves! Help her:

What would she find?—Lavinia, shall I read?

This is the tragic tale of Philomel,

And treats of Tereus' treason and his rape;

And rape, I fear, was root of thine annoy.

*Mar.* See, mother, see! note, how she quotes the leaves.

*Tit.* Lavinia, wert thou thus surpris'd, sweet girl,

Ravish'd and wrong'd, as Philomela was,

Forc'd in the ruthless, vast, and gloomy woods?—

See, see!—

Ay, such a place there is, where we did hunt,

(Oh! had we never, never, hunted there!)

Pattern'd by that poet here describes.

By nature made for murders and for rapes.

*Mar.* Oh! why should nature build so foul a den.

Unless the gods delight in tragedies!

*Tit.* Give signs, sweet girl,—for here are none but friends,—

What Roman lord it was durst do the deed:

Or slunk not Saturnine, as Tarquin erst,

That left the camp to sun in Lucrece' bed?

*Mar.* Sit down, sweet niece;—brother, sit down by me,—

Apollo, Pallas, Jove, or Mercury,

Inspire me, that I may this treason find!—

My lord, look here,—Look here, Lavinia:

This sandy plot is plain; guide, if thou canst,

This alter me, when I have writ my name

Without the help of any hand at all.

[*He writes his name with his staff, and guides it with his feet and mouth.*]

Curs'd be that heart, that forc'd us to this shift!—

Write thou, good niece; and here display, at last,

What God will have discover'd for revenge:

Heaven guide thy pen to print thy sorrows plain

That we may know the traitors and the truth!

[*She takes the staff in her mouth, and guides it with her stumps, and writes.*]

*Tit.* Oh! do you read, my lord, what she hath

*Stuprum—Chiron—Demetrius.* [*Exit*]

*Mar.* What, what!—the lustful sons of Tamoia

Performers of this heinous, bloody deed?

*Tit.* *Magne Dominator poli,*

*Tam lentus audis scelera? tam lentus vides?*

*Mar.* Oh! calm thee, gentle lord! although, I know,

There is enough written upon this earth,

To stir a mutiny in the mildest thoughts,

And arm the minds of infants to exclaim.

My lord, kneel down with me; Lavinia, kneel; And kneel, sweet boy, the Roman Hector's hope: And swear with me,—as with the woe'd tear,— And father, of that chaste dishonour'd dame, Lord Junius Brutus sware to Lucrece' rape,— That we will prosecute, by good advice, Mortal revenge upon these traitorous Goths, And see their blood, or die with this reproach.

*Tit.* 'Tis sure enough, and you know how.

But if you hunt these bear-whips, then beware: The dam will wake; and, if she wind you once, Sue's with the lion deeply still in league, And lulls him whilst she playeth on her back, And, when he sleeps, will she do what she list. You're a young huntsman, Marcus; let it alone; And come, I will go get a leaf of brass, And with a gad of steel will write these words, And lay it by: the angry northern wind Will blow these sands, like Syria's leaves, abroad, And where's your lesson then?—Boy, what say you?

*Boy.* I say, my lord, that if I were a man, Then mother's bed-chamber should not be safe for these bad-bondmen to the yoke of Rome.

*Mar.* Ay, that's my boy! thy father hath full oft, For this ungrateful country done the like.

*Boy.* And, uncle, so will I, an I live.

*Tit.* Come, go with me into mine armoury; Lucius, I'll sit thee; and withal, my boy Shall carry from me to the empress' sons Presents, that I intend to send them both: Come, come; thou'lt do thy message, wilt thou not?

*Boy.* Ay, with my dagger in their bosoms, grandsire.

*Tit.* No, boy, not so; I'll teach thee another course.

Lavinia, come:—Marcus, look to my house; Lucius and I'll go brave it at the court; Ay, marry, will we, so: and we'll be waited on.

[*Exit* *TITUS, LAVINIA, and BOY.*]

*Mar.* O heavens, can you hear a good man groan, And not relent, or not compassion him? Marcus, attend him in his ecstasy; That hath more scars of sorrow in his heart, Than foe men's marks upon his batter'd shield: But yet so just, that he will not revenge:— Revenge the heavens for old Andronicus!— [*Exit*]

What God will have discover'd for revenge: Heaven guide thy pen to print thy sorrows plain That we may know the traitors and the truth! [*She takes the staff in her mouth, and guides it with her stumps, and writes.*]

*Tit.* Oh! do you read, my lord, what she hath

*Stuprum—Chiron—Demetrius.* [*Exit*]

*Mar.* What, what!—the lustful sons of Tamoia

Performers of this heinous, bloody deed?

*Tit.* *Magne Dominator poli,*

*Tam lentus audis scelera? tam lentus vides?*

*Mar.* Oh! calm thee, gentle lord! although, I know,

There is enough written upon this earth,

To stir a mutiny in the mildest thoughts,

And arm the minds of infants to exclaim.

My lord, kneel down with me; Lavinia, kneel; And kneel, sweet boy, the Roman Hector's hope: And swear with me,—as with the woe'd tear,— And father, of that chaste dishonour'd dame, Lord Junius Brutus sware to Lucrece' rape,— That we will prosecute, by good advice, Mortal revenge upon these traitorous Goths, And see their blood, or die with this reproach.

*Tit.* 'Tis sure enough, and you know how.

But if you hunt these bear-whips, then beware: The dam will wake; and, if she wind you once, Sue's with the lion deeply still in league, And lulls him whilst she playeth on her back, And, when he sleeps, will she do what she list. You're a young huntsman, Marcus; let it alone; And come, I will go get a leaf of brass, And with a gad of steel will write these words, And lay it by: the angry northern wind Will blow these sands, like Syria's leaves, abroad, And where's your lesson then?—Boy, what say you?

*Boy.* I say, my lord, that if I were a man, Then mother's bed-chamber should not be safe for these bad-bondmen to the yoke of Rome.

*Mar.* Ay, that's my boy! thy father hath full oft, For this ungrateful country done the like.

*Boy.* And, uncle, so will I, an I live.

*Tit.* Come, go with me into mine armoury; Lucius, I'll sit thee; and withal, my boy Shall carry from me to the empress' sons Presents, that I intend to send them both: Come, come; thou'lt do thy message, wilt thou not?

*Boy.* Ay, with my dagger in their bosoms, grandsire.

*Tit.* No, boy, not so; I'll teach thee another course.

Lavinia, come:—Marcus, look to my house; Lucius and I'll go brave it at the court; Ay, marry, will we, so: and we'll be waited on.

[*Exit* *TITUS, LAVINIA, and BOY.*]

*Mar.* O heavens, can you hear a good man groan, And not relent, or not compassion him? Marcus, attend him in his ecstasy; That hath more scars of sorrow in his heart, Than foe men's marks upon his batter'd shield: But yet so just, that he will not revenge:— Revenge the heavens for old Andronicus!— [*Exit*]

*SCENE II.—The same.—A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter* *AARON, CHIRON, and DEMETRIUS, at one Door; at another Door, young LUCIUS, and an Attendant, with a Bundle of Weapons, and Verses writ upon them.*

*Chit.* Demetrius, here's the son of Lucius; He hath some message to deliver to us.

*Aar.* Ay, some mad message from his mad grandfather.

*Boy.* My lords, with all the humbleness I may,

\* Tully's Treatise on Eloquence, entitled *Orator*.

† Succession.

‡ Obscures.

§ Follies.

\* Husband.

† The point of a spear.

I greet your honours from Andronicus :—  
And pray the Roman gods, confound you both.

[*Aside.*]  
*Dem.* Gramercy, lovely Lucius : What's the news ?

*Eog.* That you are both decypher'd that's the news,

For villains mark'd with rape. [*Aside.*] May it please you,

My grandsire, well-advis'd, hath sent by me  
The goodliest weapons of his armoury,  
To gratify your honourable youth.

The hope of Rome ; for so he bade me say ;  
And so I do, and with his gifts present  
Your lordships, that whenever you have need,  
You may be armed and appointed well :

And so I leave you both, [*Aside.*] like bloody  
villains.

[*Exeunt Boy and Attendant.*]  
*Dem.* What's here ? A scroll ; and written  
round about ?

Let's see :

*Integer vita, scelerisque purus,  
Non eget Mauri jaculis, nec arcu.*

*Chi.* Oh ! 'tis a verse in Horace ; I know it  
I read it in the grammar long ago. [*well :*]

*Aar.* Ay, just!—a verse in Horace :—right,  
you have it.—

Now, what a thing it is to be an ass ! [*Aside.*]  
Here's no sound jest ! the old man hath found  
their guilt ;

And sends the weapons wrapp'd about with lines,  
That wound, beyond their feeling, to the quick.  
But were our witty empress well-a-foot,  
She would applaud Andronicus' conceit.

But let her rest in her unrest awhile.—  
And now, young lords, wasn't not a happy star  
Led us to Rome, strangers, and, more than so,  
Captives, to be advanced to this height ?

It did me good, before the Palace gate,  
To have the tribute in his brother's hearing,

*Dem.* But me more good, to see so great a lord  
Basely in-mate, and send us gifts

*Aar.* Had he not reason, lord Demetrius ?  
Did you not see his daughter very friendly ?

*Dem.* I would we had a thousand Roman  
dames

At such a bay, by turn to serve our lust.  
*Chi.* A charitable wish, and full of love.

*Aar.* Here lacks but your mother for to say  
amen.

*Chi.* And that would she for twenty thousand  
more.

*Dem.* Come, let us go ; and pray to all the  
For our beloved mother in her pains. [*gods*]

*Aar.* Pray to the devils ; the gods have given  
us o'er. [*Aside. Flourish.*]

*Dem.* Why do the emperor's trumpets flourish  
thus ?

*Chi.* Belike for joy the emperor hath a son.  
*Dem.* Sott ; who comes here ?

*Enter a Nurse, with a black-a-moor Child in  
her arms.*

*Nur.* Good morrow, lords :

Oh ! tell me, did you see Aaron the Moor.  
*Aar.* Well, more or less, or ne'er a whit at  
all,

Here Aaron is ; and what with Aaron now ?  
*Nur.* O gentle Aaron, we are all undone !  
Now help or woe betide thee evermore !

*Aar.* Why, what a caterwauling dost thou  
keep !

What dost thou wrap and fumble in thine arms ?  
*Nur.* Oh ! that which I would hide from hea-  
ven's eye, [*grace :—*]

Our empress' shame, and stately Rome's dis-  
ble is deliver'd, lords, she is deliver'd.

*Aar.* To whom ?  
*Nur.* I mean, she's brought to bed.

*Aar.* Well, God  
Give her good rest ! What hath he sent her ?

*Nur.* A devil.

*Aar.* Why then she's the devil's dam ; a joy-  
ful issue.

*Nur.* A joyless, dismal, black, and sorrowful  
issue :

Here is the babe, as loathsome as a toad  
Amongst the fairest breeders of our clime.

The empress sends it thee, thy stamp, thy seal,  
And bids thee christen it with thy dagger's  
point.

*Aar.* Out, out, you whore ! is black so bas-  
e a hue ?—

Sweet blowse, you are a beauteous blossom, sure.

*Dem.* Villain, what hast thou done ?  
*Aar.* Done ! that which thou  
Canst not undo.

*Chi.* Thou hast undone our mother.  
*Aar.* Villain, I have done thy mother.

*Dem.* And therein, hellish dog, thou hast  
undone.

Woe to her chance, and damn'd her loathed  
choice !

Accurs'd the offspring of so foul a stend !  
*Chi.* It shall not live.

*Aar.* It shall not die.  
*Nur.* Aaron, it must ; the mother wills it so.

*Aar.* What, must it, nurse ? then let no man  
but I,

Do execution on my flesh and blood.  
*Dem.* I'll broach \* the tadpole on my rapier's  
point :

Nurse, give it me ; my sword shall soon despatch  
*Aar.* Sooner this sword shall plough thy  
bowels up.

[*Takes the Child from the Nurse  
and draws.*]

Stay, murderous villains ! will you kill your  
brother ?

Now, by the burning tapers of the sky,  
That shone so brightly when this boy was got,  
He dies upon my scimitar's sharp point,  
That touches this my first-born son and heir !

I tell you, younglings, not Enclaudas, †  
With all his threat'ning band of Typhon's brood,  
Nor great Alcides, ‡ nor the god of war,  
Shall seize this prey out of his father's hands.

What, what, ye sanguine, shallow-heated boys !  
My white-lin'd walls ! ye alehouse painted  
signs !

Coal black is better than another hue,  
In that it scorns to bear another hue :

For all the water in the ocean  
Can never turn a swan's black legs to white,  
Although she lave them hourly in the flood.

Tell the empress from me, I am of age  
To keep mine own ; excuse it how she can.

*Dem.* Wilt thou betray thy noble mistress this ?  
*Aar.* My mistress is my mistress ; this my-  
self ;

The vigour and the picture of my youth :

This, before all the world, do I prefer ;  
This mangre § all the world, will I keep safe,  
Or some of you shall smoke for it in Rome.

*Dem.* By this our mother is for ever sham'd.  
*Chi.* Rome will despise her for this foul escape

*Nur.* The emperor, in his rage, will doom her  
death.

*Chi.* I blush to think upon this ignomy, ||  
*Aar.* Why, there's the privilege your beauty  
bears :

Fie, treacherous hue ! that will betray with blush-  
ing

The close enacts and counsels of the heart !  
Here's a young lad fram'd of another hue : ¶  
Look, how the black slave smiles upon the fa-  
ther ;

As who should say, *Old lad, I am thine own.*  
He is your brother, lords ; sensibly fed  
Of that self-blood that first gave life to you ;  
And, from that womb where you in prison'd were,  
He is enfranchised and come to light :

Nay, he's your brother by the surer side,  
Although my seal be stamped in his face.

*Nur.* Aaron, what shall I say unto the empress ?

\* Spit.

† Hercules.

‡ A giant, the son of Titan and Terra.

§ In spite of.

¶ Complexion.

|| Ignominy.

*Dem.* Advise thee, Aaron, what is to be done,  
And we will all subscribe to thy advice :  
Save thou the child, so we may all be safe.

*Aar.* Then sit we down, and let us all consult.

*My son and I will have the wind of you :  
Keep there : Now talk at pleasure of your safety.*

*[They sit on the Ground.]*

*Dem.* How many women saw this child of his ?  
*Aar.* Why, so, brave lords : When we all join  
in league,

I am a lamb : but if you brave the Moor,  
The chafed boar, the mountain lioness,  
The ocean swells not so as Aaron storms.—  
But, say again, how many saw the child ?

*Nur.* Cornelia the midwife, and myself,  
And no one else, but the delivered empress.

*Aar.* The empress, the midwife, and yourself :  
Two may keep counsel, when the third's away :  
Go to the empress ; tell her, this I said :—

*[Stabbing her.]*

Weke, weke !—so cries a pig prepar'd to the spit.

*Dem.* What mean'st thou, Aaron ? Wherefore  
didst thou this ?

*Aar.* O lord, Sir, 'tis a deed of policy :  
Shall she live to betray this guilt of ours ?  
A long-tongu'd babbling gossip ? no, lords, no.  
And now be it known to you my full intent.  
Not far, one Multus lives, my countryman,  
His wife but yesternight was brought to bed,  
His child is like to her, fair as you are :  
Go pack \* with him, and give the mother gold,  
And tell them both the circumstance of all ;  
And how by this their child shall be advanc'd  
And be received for the emperor's heir,  
And substituted in the place of mine,  
To calm this tempest whirling in the court ;  
And let the emperor dandle him for his own,  
Hark ye, lords, ye see, that I have given her  
physic, *[Pointing to the Nurse.]*

And you must needs bestow her funeral ;  
The fields are near and you are gallant grooms :  
This done, see that you take no longer days,  
But send the midwife presently to me.  
The midwife, and the nurse, well made away,  
Then let the ladies tattle what they please.

*Chi.* Aaron, I see, thou wilt not trust the air  
With secrets.

*Dem.* For this care of Tamora,  
Herself, and her's, are highly bound to thee.

*[Exeunt DEM. and CHI. bearing off the Nurse.]*

*Aar.* Now to the Goths, as swift as swallow  
flies ;

There to dispose this treasure in mine arms,  
And secretly to greet the empress' friends.—  
Come on, you thick-lipp'd slave, I'll bear you  
hence ;

For it is you that puts us to our shifts :  
I'll make you feed on berries, and on roots,  
And feed on curds and whey, and suck the goat,  
And cabin in a cave ; and bring you up  
To be a warrior, and command a camp. *[Exit.]*

SCENE III.—The same.—A Public Place.

*Enter TITUS, bearing arrows, with letters  
at the ends of them ; with him MARCUS,  
young LUCIUS, and other Gentlemen with  
lions.*

*Tit.* Come, Marcus, come ; Kinsmen, this is  
the way :—

Sir boy, now let me see your archery :  
Look ye draw home enough, and 'tis there straight :  
*Terras Astræa reliquit :*  
Be you remember'd, Marcus, she's gone, she's  
fled.

Get, take you to your tools. You, cousins, shall  
Go sound the ocean, and cast your nets ;  
Happily you may find her in the sea ;  
Yet there's as little justice as at land :—  
No ; Publius and Sempronius, you must do it ;  
'Tis you must dig with mattock, and with spade,

\* Bargain with.

And pierce the inmost centre of the earth :  
Then, when you come to Pluto's region,  
I pray you, deliver him this petition :  
Tell him, it is for justice and for aid,  
And that it comes from old Andronicus,  
Shaken with sorrows in ungrateful Rome.—  
Ah ! Rome !—Well, well ; I made three miserable  
What time I threw the people's suffrages  
On him that thus doth tyrannise o'er me.—  
Go, get you gone ; and pray be careful all,  
And leave you not a man of war unsearch'd ;  
This wicked emperor may have shipp'd her hence,  
And, kinsmen, then we may go pipe for justice.

*Mar.* O Publius, is not this a heavy case,  
To see thy noble uncle thus distract ?

*Pub.* Therefore, my lord, it highly us con-  
cerns,

By day and night to attend him carefully ;  
And feed his humour kindly as we may,  
Till time beget some careful remedy.

*Mar.* Kinsmen, his sorrows are past remedy.  
Join with the Goths ; and with revengeful war  
Take wreak on Rome for this ingratitude,  
And vengeance on the traitor Saturnine.

*Tit.* Publius, how now ? how now, my mas-  
ters ! What,  
Have you met with her ?

*Pub.* No, my good lord ; but Plutos sends you  
word,

If you will have revenge from hell, you shall :  
Marry, for justice, she is so employ'd, *[else,*  
He thinks, with Jove in heaven, or somewhere  
So that perforce you must needs stay a time.

*Tit.* He doth me wrong, to feed me with de-  
I'll dive into the burning lake below, *[lays,*

And pull her out of Acheion by the heel.—  
Marcus, we are but shuibs, no cedars we ;  
No big-bon'd men, fram'd of the Cyclop's size :  
But metal, Marcus, steel to the very back ;  
Yet wrong \* with wrongs, more than our backs  
can bear :

And sith there is no justice in earth nor hell,  
We will solicit heaven ; and move the gods  
To send down justice for to wreak ; our wrongs :  
Come, to this gear. † You are a good archer,  
Marcus. *[He gives them the arrows.]*

*Ad Jovem,* that's for you.—*Hic, ad Apollin-*  
*Ad Martem,* that's for myself ;— *[um.—*

Here, boy, to Pallas : Here, to Mercury :  
To Saturn, Caus, not to Saturnine,—

You were as good to shoot against the wind.—  
To it, boy. Marcus, loose when I bid ;  
O' my word, I have written to effect ;  
There's not a god left unsolicited.

*Mar.* Kinsmen, shoot all your shafts into the  
court :

We will afflict the emperor in his pride.  
*Tit.* Now, masters, draw. *[They shoot.]* O,  
well said, Lucius !

Good boy, in Virgo's lap ; give it Pallas.

*Mar.* My lord, I aim a mile beyond the moon ;  
Your letter is with Jupiter by this.

*Tit.* Ha ! Publius, Publius what hast thou  
done !

See, see, thou hast shot off one of Taurus' horns.

*Mar.* This was the sport, my lord : when  
Publius shot,

The bull being gall'd, gave Aries such a knock  
That down fell both the ram's horns in the  
court ;

And who should find them but the empress' *villain !*  
She laugh'd, and told the Moor, he should not  
choose

But give them to his master for a present.

*Tit.* Why, there it goes : God give your lord-  
ship joy.

*Enter a Clown, with a basket and two pigeons.*

News, news from heaven ! Marcus, the post is  
come.

Sirrah, what tidings ? have you any letters ?  
Shall I have justice ? what says Jupiter ?

\* Strained. † Since. ‡ Revenge  
‡ Dress, furniture.

*Clo.* Ho! the gibbet maker? he says that he hath taken them down again, for the man must not be hanged till the next week.

*Tit.* But what says Jupiter, I ask thee?

*Clo.* Alas, Sir, I know not Jupiter; I never drank with him in all my life.

*Tit.* Why, villain, art not thou the carrier?

*Clo.* Ay, of my pigeons, Sir; nothing else.

*Tit.* Why, didst thou not come from heaven? *Clo.* From heaven? alas, Sir, I never came there: God forbid I should be so bold to press to heaven in my young days. Why, I am going with my pigeons to the tribunal plebs,\* to take up a matter of brawl betwixt my uncle and one of the imperial's men.

*Mar.* Why, Sir, that is as fit as can be, to serve for your oration; and let him deliver the pigeons to the emperor for you.

*Tit.* Tell me, can you deliver an oration to the emperor with a grace?

*Clo.* Nay, truly, Sir, I could never say grace in all my life.

*Tit.* Sirrah, come hither: make no more ado, But give your pigeons to the emperor: By me thou shalt have justice at his hands. Hold, hold—mean while, here's money for thy charges.

Give me a pen and ink.—[*tion?*]

Sirrah, can you with a grace deliver a supplication? *Clo.* Ay, Sir.

*Tit.* Then here is a supplication for you. And when you come to him, at the first approach, you must kneel; then kiss his foot; then deliver up your pigeons, and then look for your reward; I'll be at hand, Sir: see you do it bravely.

*Clo.* I warrant you, Sir; let me alone.

*Tit.* Sirrah, hast thou a knife? Come, let me here, Marcus, hold it in the oration; [see it. For thou hast made it like an humble supplication:—

And when thou hast given it to the emperor, Knock at my door, and tell me what he says.

*Clo.* God be with you, Sir; I will.

*Tit.* Come, Marcus, let's go:—Publius, follow me. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—*The same.—Before the Palace.*

Enter SATURNINUS, TAMORA, CHIRON, DEMETRIUS, LORDS, and others: SATURNINUS with the arrows in his hand, that TITUS shot.

*Sat.* Why, lords, what wrongs are these? Was ever seen

An emperor of Rome thus overborne, Troubled, confronted thus: and, for the extent Of equal justice, us'd in such contempt? My lords, you know, as do the mighty gods, However these disturbers of our peace Buz in the people's ears, there nought hath pass'd,

But even with law, against the wilful sons Of old Andronicus. And what an if His sorrows have so overwhelm'd his wits, Shall we be thus afflicted in his wrecks, His fits, his frenzy, and his bitterness? And now he writes to heaven for his redress: See, here's to Jove, and this to Mercury; This to Apollo; this to the god of war: Sweet scrolls to fly about the streets of Rome! What's this, but libelling against the senate, And blazoning our injustice every where? A goodly humour, is it not, my lords? As who would say, in Rome no justice were. But, if I live, his feigned ecstasies Shall be no shelter to these outrages: But he and his shall know that justice lives In Saturninus' health; whom, if she sleep, He'll so awake, as she in fury shall Cut off the proud and conspirator that lives.

*Tam.* My gracious lord, my lovely Saturnine, Lord of my life, commander of my thoughts, Calm thee, and bear the faults of Titus' age,

The effects of sorrow for his valiant sons, Whose loss hath pierc'd him deep, and scarr'd his heart; And rather comfort his distressed plight, Than prosecute the meanest, or the best, For these contempts. Why, thus it shall become High-witted Tamora to gloze\* with all: [Aside.

But Titus, I have touch'd thee to the quick, Thy life-blood out: if Aaron now be wise, Thou is all safe, the anchor's in the port.—

Enter CLOWN.

How now, good fellow? would'st thou speak with us?

*Clo.* Yes, forsooth, an your mistership be imperial.

*Tam.* Empress I am, but yonder sits the emperor.

*Clo.* 'Tis he.—God and saint Stephen give you good den:—I have brought you a letter, and a couple of pigeons here.

[SATURNINUS reads the Letter.

*Sat.* Go, take him away, and hang him presently.

*Clo.* How much money must I have?

*Tam.* Come, Sirrah, you must be hang'd.

*Clo.* Hang'd! by'r lady, then I have brought up a neck to a fair end. [Exit guarded.

*Sat.* Despightful and intolerable wrongs!

Shall I endure this monstrous villany? I know from whence this same device proceed's: May this be borne?—as if his traitorous sons, That died by law for murder of our brother, Have by my means been butcher'd wrongfully.—Go, drag the villain hither by the hair; Nor age, nor honour, shall shape privilege:—For this proud mock, I'll be thy slaughterman; Sly frantic wretch, that holp'st to make me great in hope thyself should govern Rome and me.

Enter EMILIUS.

What news with thee, Emilius?

*Emil.* Arm, arm, my lord; Rome never had more cause!

The Goths have gather'd head; and with a power Of high-resolved men, bent to the spoil, They hither march again, under the conduct Of Lucius, son to old Andronicus; Who threats, in course of this revenge, to do As much as ever Coriolanus did.

*Sat.* Is warlike Lucius general of the Goths? These tidings nip me; and I hang the head As flowers with frost, or grass beat down with storms.

Ay, now begun our sorrows to approach: 'Tis he the common people love so much; Myself hath often over-heard them say, (When I have walk'd like a private man,) That Lucius' banishment was wrongfully, And they have wish'd that Lucius were their emperor.

*Tam.* Why should you fear? is not your city strong?

*Sat.* Ay, but the citizens favour Lucius; And will revolt from me, to succour him.

*Tam.* King, be thy thoughts imperious, † like thy name.

Is the sun dimm'd, that gnats do fly in it? The eagle suffers little birds to sing, And is not careful what they mean thereby; Knowing that with the shadow of his wings, He can at pleasure stint† their melody: Even so may'st thou the giddy men of Rome. Then cheer thy spirit: for know thou, emperor I will enchant the old Andronicus With words more sweet, and yet more dangerous, Than baits to fish, or honey-stalks ‡ to sheep; When as the one is wounded with the bait, The other rotted with delicious feed.

*Sat.* But he will not entreat his son for us.

*Tam.* If Tamora entreat him, then he will:

\* The Clown means to say *piebeian tribune*, i. e. tribune of the people.  
† Equal.

\* Flatter. † Imperial. ‡ Stop.  
‡ Clover-flowers.



For I can smooth, and fill his aged ear  
With golden promises; that were his heart  
Almost impregnable, his old ears deaf,  
Yet should both ear and heart obey my tongue.—  
Go thou before, be our ambassador;

[To ÆMILIUS.

Say, that the emperor requests a pailey  
Of warlike Lucius, and appoint the meeting  
Even at his father's house, the old Andronicus'.

*Sat. Æmilus*, do this message honourably:  
And if he stand on hostage for his safety,  
Bid him demand what pledge will please him best.  
*Æmil.* Your bidding shall I do effectually.

[Exit ÆMILIUS.

*Tam.* Now will I to that old Andronicus;  
And temper him, with all the art I have,  
To pluck proud Lucius from the warlike Goths.  
And now, sweet emperor, be blithe again,  
And bury all thy fear in my devices.

*Sat.* Then go successfully, and plead to him.

[Exit.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—Plains near Rome.

Enter LUCIUS and GOTHs, with drum and colours.

*Luc.* Approved warriors, and my faithful friends,  
I have received letters from great Rome,  
Which signify, what hate they bear their em-  
And how desirous of our sight they are. [peron,  
Therefore, great lords, be, as your titles witness,  
Impetuous, and impatient of your wrongs;  
And, wherein Rome hath done you any scath, \*  
Let him make tible satisfaction.

1 *Goth.* Brave slip, sprung from the great Andronicus, [fret,  
Whose name was once our terror, now our com-  
Whose high exploits, and honourable deeds,  
Ingrateful Rome requites with foul contempt,  
Be bold in us: we'll follow where thou lead'st,—  
Like stinging bees in hottest summer's day,  
Led by their master to the flower'd fields,—  
And be aveng'd on curs'd Tamora.

*Goths.* And, as he saith, so say we all with him.

*Luc.* I humbly thank him, and I thank you all.

But who comes here, led by a lusty Goth?

Enter a GOTH, leading AARON, with his child in his arms.

2 *Goth.* Renowned Lucius, from our troops I stray'd,

To gaze upon a ruinous monastery;  
And as I earnestly did fix mine eye  
Upon the wasted building, suddenly  
I heard a child cry underneath a wall:  
I made unto the noise; when soon I heard  
The crying babe contrail'd with this discourse:  
*Peace, tawny slave, half me, and half thy dam!*

*Did not thy hue bewray whose brat thou art,  
Had nature lent thee but thy mother's look,  
Villain, thou might'st have been an emperor:  
But where the bull and cow are both milk-*

*white,  
They never do beget a coal-black calf.  
Peace, villain, peace!—even thus he rates the*

*babe,—  
For I must bear thee to a trusty Goth;  
Who, when he knows thou art the empress'*

*babe,  
Will hold thee dearly for thy mother's sake.  
With this my weapon drawn, I rush'd upon him,  
Surpris'd him suddenly, and brought him hi-*

*ther,  
To use as you think needful of the man.*

\* Harm

*Luc.* O worthy Goth! this is the incarnate devil

That robb'd Andronicus of his good hand:  
This is the pearl that pleas'd your empress's eye: \*

And here's the base fruit of his humming lust.—  
Say, wall-eyed slave, whither would'st thou convey

This growing image of thy fiend-like face?  
Why dost not speak? What! deal! No, not a word!

A halter, soldiers; hang him on this tree,  
And by his side his fruit of bastardy.

*Aar.* Touch not the boy, he is of royal blood  
*Luc.* Too like the sire for ever being good.—  
First hang the child, that he may see it spawl  
A sight to vex the father's soul withal.  
Get me a ladder.

[A ladder brought, which AARON is obliged to ascend.

*Aar.* Lucius, save the child;  
And bear it from me to the empress.

If thou do this, I'll show thee wondrous things,  
That highly may advantage thee to hear:  
If thou wilt not, befall what may befall,  
I'll speak no more—But vengeance rot you all!

*Luc.* Say on; and, if it please me which thou speak'st,

Thy child shall live, and I will see it nourish'd.

*Aar.* An if it please thee? why, assure thee  
Lucius,  
'Twill vex thy soul to hear what I shall speak:  
For I must talk of murders, rapes, and mas-

sacres,  
Acts of black night, abominable deeds,  
Complots of mischief, treason, villanies  
Ruthful to hear, yet pitiously perfunct;  
And this shall all be bound by my death,  
Unless thou swear to me, my child shall live.

*Luc.* Tell on thy mind. I say, thy child shall live.

*Aar.* Swear that he shall, and then I will begin.

*Luc.* Who should I swear by? thou believ'st no god:

That granted, how canst thou believe an oath?

*Aar.* What if I do not? as indeed, I do not.  
Yet,—for I know thou art religious,  
And hast a thing within thee, called conscience,  
With twenty popish tricks and ceremonies,  
Which I have seen thee careful to observe,—  
Therefore I urge thy oath:—I or that, I know,  
An idiot holds his bauble for a god,  
And keeps the oath, which by that god he swears;  
To that I'll urge him:—Therefore, thou shalt vow

By that same god, what god soe'er it be,  
That thou ador'st and hast in reverence,—  
To save my boy, to nourish, and bring him up,  
Or else I will discover nought to thee.

*Luc.* Even by my god, I swear to thee, I will.

*Aar.* First, know thou, I begot him on the empress.

*Luc.* O most insatiate, luxurious woman!

*Aar.* Tut, Lucius! this was but a deed of charity.

To that which thou shalt hear of me anon.  
'Twas her two sons that murder'd Bassianus:  
They cut thy sister's tongue and ravish'd her,  
And cut her hands, and trimm'd her as thou saw'st.

*Luc.* O detestable villain! call'st thou that trimming?

*Aar.* Why, she was wash'd, and cut, and trimm'd; and 'twas

Trim sport for them that had the doing of it.  
*Luc.* O barbarous, beastly villains, like thyself!

*Aar.* Indeed, I was their tutor to instruct them;

That coddling spirit had they from their mother,  
As sure a card as ever won the set.

\* Alluding to the proverb, "A black man is a pearl in a fair woman's eye."

† Lascivious.

That bloody hand, I think, they learn'd of me,  
As true a dog as ever fought at head.—  
Well, let my deeds be witness of my worth.  
I train'd thy brethren to that guleful hole,  
Where the dead corpse of Bassianus lay;  
I wrote the letter that thy father found,  
And hid the gold within the letter mention'd,  
Confederate with the queen, and her two sons;  
And what not done, that thou hast cause to rue,  
Wherein I had no stroke of mischief in it?  
I play'd the cheater, for thy father's hand;  
And, when I had it, drew myself apart,  
And almost broke my heart with extreme laugh-  
ter.

I pry'd me through the crevice of a wall,  
When, for his hand, he had his two sons' heads;  
Beheld his tears, and laugh'd so heartily,  
That both mine eyes were rainy like to his;  
And when I told the empress of this sport,  
She swooned almost at my pleasing tale,  
And, for my tidings, gave me twenty kisses.

*Goth.* What! caust thou say all this, and never blush?

*Aar.* Ay, like a black dog, as the saying is.

*Luc.* Art thou not sorry for these heinous deeds?

*Aar.* Ay, that I had not done a thousand more.  
Even now I curse the day, (and yet I think  
Few come within the compass of my curse,)  
Wherein I did not some notorious ill:  
As kill a man, or else devise his death;  
Ravish a maid, or plot the way to do it;  
Accuse some innocent, and forswear myself;  
Set deadly enmity between two friends;  
Make poor men's cattle break their necks;  
Set fire on barns and hay-stacks in the night,  
And bid the owners quench them with their tears.  
Oft have I digg'd up dead men from their graves,  
And set them upright at their dear friends' doors,  
Even when their sorrow almost were forgot,  
And on their skulls, as on the bark of trees,  
Have with my knife carved in Roman letters,  
*Let not your sorrow die, though I am dead.*  
Tut, I have done a thousand dreadful things,  
As willingly as one would kill a fly;  
And nothing grieves me heartily indeed,  
But that I cannot do ten thousand more.

*Luc.* Bring down the devil; for he must not die  
So sweet a death as hanging presently.

*Aar.* If there be devils, 'twould I were a devil,  
To live and burn in everlasting fire;  
So I might have your company in hell,  
But to torment you with my bitter tongue!

*Luc.* Sirs, stop his mouth, and let him speak  
no more.

*Enter a GOTH.*

*Goth.* My lord, there is a messenger from  
Rome,  
Desires to be admitted to your presence.

*Luc.* Let him come near.—

*Enter ÆMILIUS.*

Welcome Æmilius, what's the news from Rome?

*Æmil.* Lord Lucius, and you princes of the  
Goths,

The Roman emperor greets you all by me:  
And, for he understands you are in arms,  
He craves a parley at your father's house,  
Willing you to demand your hostages,  
And they shall be immediately deliver'd.

*1 Goth.* What says our general?

*Luc.* Æmilus, let the emperor give his pledges,  
Unto my father and my uncle Marcus,  
And we will come.—March away. \* *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—Rome.—Before Titus' House.

*Enter TAMORA, CHIRON, and DEMETRIUS,  
disguised.*

*Tam.* Thus, in this strange and sad habiliment,  
I will encounter with Andronicus;

\* Perhaps this is a stage direction, crept into the text.

And say, I am Revenge, sent from below,  
To join with him, and right his heinous wrongs,  
Knock at his study, where, they say, he keeps,  
To ruminate strange plots of dire revenge;  
Tell him, Revenge is come to join with him,  
And work confusion on his enemies.

*[They knock.]*

*Enter TITUS, above.*

*Tit.* Who doth molest my contemplation?  
Is it your trick to make me open the door,  
That so my sad decrees may fly away,  
And all my study be to no effect?

You are deceiv'd: for what I mean to do,  
See here, in bloody lines I have set down;  
And what is written shall be executed.

*Tam.* Titus, I am come to talk with thee.

*Tit.* No; not a word: How can I grace my  
Wanting a hand to give it action? *[Tals.]*  
Thou hast the odds of me; therefore no more.

*Tam.* If thou didst know me, thou would'st  
talk with me.

*Tit.* I am not mad; I know thee well enough:  
Witness this wretched stump, these crimson lines;  
Witness these trenches, made by grief and care;  
Witness the tiring day, and heavy night;  
Witness all sorrow, that I know thee well  
For our proud empress, mighty Tamora:  
Is not thy coming for my other hand?

*Tam.* Know thou, sad man, I am not Ta-  
She is thy enemy, and I thy friend: *[mora:]*  
I am Revenge, sent from the infernal kingdom,  
To ease the gnawing vulture of thy mind,  
By working wreakful vengeance on thy toes.  
Come down, and welcome me to this world's  
light:

Confer with me of murder and of death,  
There's not a hollow cave, or lurking-place;  
No vast obscurity, or misty vale,  
Where bloody murder, or detested rape,  
Can couch for fear, but I will find them out;  
And in their ears tell them my dreadful name,  
Revenge, which makes the foul offender quake.

*Tit.* Art thou Revenge? and art thou sent to  
To be a torment to mine enemies? *[Tam.]*

*Tam.* I am: therefore come down, and wel-  
come me.

*Tit.* Do me some service, ere I come to thee.  
Lo, by this side where Rape and Murder stand,  
Now give some surance that thou art Revenge.  
Stab them, or tear them on thy chariot wheels;  
And then I'll come, and be thy waggoner,  
And whirl along with thee about the globes.  
Provide thee proper palfreys, black as jet,  
To hale thy vengeful waggon swift away,  
And find out murderers in their guilty caves.  
And, when thy car is loaden with their heads,  
I will dismount, and by the waggon wheel  
Trot, like a servile footman, all day long!  
E'en from Hyperion's rising in the east,  
Until his very downfall in the sea.

And day by day I'll do this heavy task,  
So thou destroy Rapine and Murder there.

*Tam.* These are my ministers, and come with  
me.

*Tit.* Are they thy ministers? what are they  
call'd?

*Tam.* Rapine and Murder; therefore called so,  
'Cause they take vengeance of such kind of men.

*Tit.* Good lord, how like the empress' sons  
they are!

And you the empress! But we worldly men  
Have miserable, mad, mistaking eyes.  
O sweet Revenge, now do I come to thee:  
And, if one arm's embracement will content thee,  
I will embrace thee in it by and by.

*[Exit Titus from above.]*

*Tam.* This closing with him fits his lunacy:  
What'er I forge, to feed his brain-sick fits,  
Do you uphold and maintain in your speeches.  
For now he firmly takes me for Revenge;  
And being credulous in this mad thought,  
I'll make him send for Lucius, his son;  
And, whilst I at a banquet hold him sure,  
I'll find some cunning practice out of hand,

To scatter and disperse the giddy Goths,  
Or, at the least, make them his enemies.  
See, here he comes, and I must ply my theme.

*Enter Titus.*

*Tit.* Long have I been forlorn, and all for thee :

Welcome, dread fury, to my woful house ;—  
Rapine, and Murder, you are welcome too :—  
How like the empress and her sons you are !  
Well are you fitted, had you but a Moor ;—  
Could not all hell afford you such a devil ?—  
For, well I wot, the empress never wags,  
But in her company there is a Moor ;  
And, would you represent our queen aright,  
It were convenient you had such a devil :  
But welcome, as you are. What shall we do ?

*Tam.* What would'st thou have us do, Andronicus ?

*Dem.* Show me a murderer, I'll deal with him.  
*Chi.* Show me a villain, that hath done a rape.  
And I am sent to be reveng'd on him.

*Tam.* Show me a thousand that hath done  
And I will be revenged on them all. [three wrong,

*Tit.* Look round about the wicked streets of Rome,

And when thou find'st a man that's like thyself,  
Good Murder, stab him : he's a murderer.—  
Go thou with him ; and when it is thy hap,  
To find another that is like to thee,  
Good Rapine, stab him ! he is a ravisher.—  
Go thou with them ! and, in the emperor's court,  
There is a queen, attended by a Moor ;  
Well may'st thou know her by thy own proportion,

For up and down she doth resemble thee :  
I pray thee, do on them some violent death,  
They have been violent to me and mine.

*Tam.* Well hast thou lesson'd us ; this shall we do.

But would it please thee, good Andronicus,  
To send for Lucius, thy third valiant son,  
Who leads towards Rome a band of warlike Goths,  
And bid him come and banquet at thy house :  
When he is here, even at thy solemn feast,  
I will bring in the empress and her sons,  
The emperor himself, and all thy foes,  
And at thy mercy shall they stoop and kneel,  
And on them shall thou ease thy angry heart.  
What says Andronicus to this device ?

*Tit.* Marcus, my brother !—'tis sad Titus calls.

*Enter Marcus*

Go, gentle Marcus, to thy nephew Lucius !  
Thou shalt inquire him out among the Goths :  
Bid him repair to me, and bring with him  
Some of the chiefest princes of the Goths :  
Bid him encamp his soldiers where they are :  
Tell him, the emperor and the empress too  
Feast at my house : and he shall feast with them.  
This do thou for my love ; and so let him,  
As he regards his aged father's life.

*Mar.* This will I do, and soon return again.

[*Exit.*

*Tam.* Now will I hence about thy business,  
And take my ministers along with me.

*Tit.* Nay, nay, let Rape and Murder stay with  
Or else I'll call my brother back again, [me ;  
And cleave to no revenge but Lucius.

*Tam.* What say you, boys ? will you abide  
Whiles I go tell my lord the emperor, [with him,  
How I have govern'd our determin'd jest ?  
Yield to his humour, smooth and speak him fair,  
[*Aside.*

And tarry with him, till I come again.

*Tit.* I know them all, though they suppose  
me mad,  
And will o'er-reach them in their own devices ;  
A pair of cursed hell-hounds, and their dam.

[*Aside.*

*Dem.* Madam, depart at pleasure, leave us  
here.

*Tam.* Farewell, Andronicus : Revenge now goes  
To lay a complot to betray thy foes.

[*Exit TAMORA.*

*Tit.* I know thou dost ; and, sweet Revenge,  
farewell.

*Chi.* Tell us, old man, how shall we be employ'd.

*Tit.* Tut, I have work enough for you to do.—  
Publius, come hither, Caius, and Valentine !

*Enter PUBLIUS, and others.*

*Pub.* What's your will ?

*Tit.* Know you these two ?

*Pub.* Th' empress' sons,

I take them, Chiron and Demetrius.

*Tit.* Fie, Publius, fie ! thou art too much deceived ;

The one is Murder, Rape is the other's name :  
And therefore bind them, gentle Publius ;  
Caius and Valentine, lay hands on them :  
Oft have you heard me wish for such an hour,  
And now I find it : therefore bind them sure ;  
And stop their mouths, if they begin to cry.

[*Exit TITUS.*—PUBLIUS, &c. lay hold on  
CHIRON and DEMETRIUS.

*Chi.* Villains, forbear : we are the empress' sons.

*Pub.* And therefore do we what we are commanded.— [word :

Stop close their mouths, let them not speak a  
Is he sure bound I look that you bind them fast.

*Re-enter TITUS ANDRONICUS, with LAVINIA ;  
she bearing a basin, and he a knife.*

*Tit.* Come, come, Lavinia ! look, thy foes are  
bound :—

Sirs, stop their mouths, let them not speak to me ;  
But let them hear what fearful words I utter.—  
O villains, Chiron and Demetrius !  
Here stands the spring whom you have stain'd  
with mud ;

This goodly summer with your winter mix'd.  
You kill'd her husband ; and, for that vile fault,  
Two of her brothers were condemn'd to death,  
My hand cut off, and made a merry jest ;  
Both her sweet hands, her tongue, and that  
more dear

Than hands or tongue, her spotless chastity,  
Inhuman traitors, you constrain'd and forc'd.  
What would you say, if I should let you speak ?  
Villains, for shame you could not beg for grace.  
Hark, wretches, how I mean to martyr you.  
This one hand yet is left to cut your throats ;  
Whilst that Lavinia 'tween her stumps doth hold  
The basin that receives your guilty blood.

You know your mother means to feast with me,  
And calls herself Revenge, and thinks me mad,—  
Hark, villains ; I will grind your bones to dust,  
And with your blood and it, I'll make a paste ;  
And of the paste a coffin \* I will rear,  
And make two pasties of your shameful heads ;  
And bid that strumpet, your unhallow'd dam,  
Like to the earth, swallow her own increase.  
This is the feast that I have bid her to,  
And this the banquet she shall surfeit on ;  
For worse than Philomel you us'd my daughter  
And worse than Progne I will be reveng'd :  
And now prepare your throats.—Lavinia, come,  
[*He cuts their Throats.*

Receive the blood, and, when that they are dead,  
Let me go grind their bones to powder small,  
And with this hateful liquor temper it ;  
And in this paste let their vile heads be bak'd.  
Come, come, be every one officious  
To make this banquet ; which I wish may prove  
More stern and bloody than the Centaur's feast.  
So, now bring them in, for I will play the cook,  
And see them ready 'gainst their mother coves.  
[*Exeunt, bearing the dead bodies.*

*SCENE III.—The same.—A Pavillion, with  
Tables, &c.*

*Enter LUCIUS, MARCUS, and GOTHs, with  
AARON, prisoner.*

*Luc.* Uncle Marcus, since 'tis my father's mind  
That I repair to Rome, I am content.

\* Crust of a raised pye.

*I Goth.* And our's, with thine, befall what fortune will.

*Luc.* Good uncle take you in this barbarous Moor,

This ravenous tiger, this accursed devil;  
Let him receive no sustenance, fetter him,  
Till he be brought unto the empress' face,  
For testimony of her foul proceedings:  
And see the ambush of our friends be strong:  
I fear the emperor means no good to us.

*Aur.* Some devil whisper curses in mine ear.  
And prompt me, that my tongue may utter forth  
The venomous malice of my swelling heart!

*Luc.* Away, inhuman dog! unhallow'd slave!—

[*Ereunt GOTHs, with AARON. Flourish.*  
The trumpets show, the emperor is at hand.

*Enter SATURNINUS and TAMORA, with Tribunes, Senators, and others.*

*Sat.* What, hath the firmament more suns than one?

*Luc.* What boots \* it thee, to call thyself a sun?

*Mar.* Rome's emperor, and nephew, break† the parle;

These quarrels must be quietly debated.  
The feast is ready which the careful Titus

Hath ordain'd to an honourable end,  
For peace, for love, for league, and good to Rome:

Please you, therefore, draw nigh, and take your places.

*Sat.* Marcus, we will.

[*Hautboys sound. The Company sit down at table.*

*Enter TITUS, dressed like a cook, LAVINIA, veiled, young LUCIUS, and others. TITUS places the dishes on the table.*

*Tit.* Welcome, my gracious lord: welcome, dread queen:

Welcome, ye warlike Goths: welcome, Lucius:  
And welcome, all: although the cheer be poor,

'Twill nil your stomachs: please you eat of it.

*Sat.* Why art thou thus attir'd, Andronicus?

*Tit.* Because I would be sure to have all well,  
To entertain your highness and your empress.

*Tam.* We are beholden to you, good Andronicus.

*Tit.* An if your highness knew my heart, you were.

My lord the emperor, resolve me this;  
Was it well done of rash Virginius,

To slay his daughter with his own right hand,  
Because she was entor'd, stain'd, and deflower'd?

*Sat.* It was, Andronicus.

*Tit.* Your reason, mighty lord!

*Sat.* Because the girl should not survive her shame,

And by her presence still renew his sorrows.

*Tit.* A reason mighty, strong, and effectual;  
A pattern, precedent, and lively warrant.

For me, most wretched to perform the like:—  
Die, die, Lavinia, and thy shame with thee;

[*He kills LAVINIA.*  
And, with thy shame, thy father's sorrow die!

*Sat.* What hast thou done, unnatural, and unkind?

*Tit.* Kill'd her, for whom my tears have made  
I am as woful as Virginius was: [*He blind.*

And have a thousand times more cause than he  
To do this outrage; and it is now done.

*Sat.* What, was she ravish'd? tell, who did the deed.

*Tit.* Will't please you eat? will't please your highness feed?

*Tam.* Why hast thou slain thine only daughter thus?

*Tit.* Not I, 'twas Chiron and Demetrius:  
They ravish'd her, and cut away her tongue,  
And they, 'twas they, that did her all this wrong.

*Sat.* Go, fetch them hither to us presently.

*Tit.* Why, there they are both baked in that pye,

Whereof their mother daintily hath fed,  
Eating the flesh that she herself hath bred.

'Tis true, 'tis true; witness my knife's sharp point. [*Killing TAMORA.*

*Sat.* Die, frantic wretch, for this accursed deed. [*Killing TITUS.*

*Luc.* Can the son's eye behold his father bleed?

There's meed for meed, death for a deadly deed.

[*Kills SATURNINUS. A great tumult. The People in confusion disperse.* MARCUS,

LUCIUS, and their Partisans, ascend the steps before Titus' house.

*Mar.* You sad-fac'd men, people and sons of Rome,

By uproar sever'd, like a flight of fowl  
Scatter'd by winds and high tempestuous gusts,

O let me teach you how to knit again  
This scatter'd corn into one mutual sheaf,

These broken limbs again into one body.

*Sen.* Lest Rome herself be bane unto herself:

And she, whom mighty kingdoms curtsy to,  
Like a forlorn and desperate cast-away,

Do shameful execution on herself.  
But if my frosty signs and claps of age,

Grave witnesses of true experience,  
Cannot induce you to attend my words,—

Speak, Rome's dear friend; [*To LUCIUS.*] as erst  
our ancestor,

When with his solemn tongue he did discourse  
To love-sick Dido's sad attending ear,

The story of that baleful burning night,  
When subtle Greeks surpris'd king Priam's Troy;

Tell us, what Sinon hath bewitch'd our ears,  
Or who hath brought the fatal engine in,

That gives our Troy, our Rome, the civil wound.—

My heart is not compact of flint nor steel;  
Nor can I utter all our bitter grief,

But floods of tears will drown my oratory,  
And break my very utterance: even i'th' time

When it should move you to attend me most,  
Lending your kind commiseration:

Here is a captain, let him tell the tale;  
Your hearts will throb and weep to hear him speak.

*Luc.* Then, noble auditory, be it known to you,  
That curs'd Chiron and Demetrius

Were they that murdered our emperor's brother;  
And they it were that ravish'd our sister:

For their fell faults our brothers were beheaded;  
Our father's tears despis'd; and \* basely cozen'd

Of that true hand, that fought Rome's quarrel out,

And sent her enemies unto the grave.  
Lastly, myself unkindly banished,

The gates shut on me, and turn'd weeping out,  
To beg relief among Rome's enemies;

Who drown'd their enmity in my true tears,  
And op'd their arms to embrace me as a friend:

And I am the turn'd-forti, be it known to you,  
That have preserv'd her welfare in my blood;

And from her bosom took the enemy's point,  
Sheathing the steel in my advent'rous body.

Alas; you know, I am no vaunter, I;  
My scars can witness, dumb although they are,

That my report is just, and full of truth.  
But, soft: methinks I do digress too much,

Citing my worthless praise: O pardon me;  
For when no friends are by, men praise themselves.

*Mar.* Now is my turn to speak: Behold this child,

[*Pointing to the child in the arms of an attendant.*

Of this was Tamora delivered;  
The issue of an irreligious Moor,

Chief architect and plotter of these woes; .

The villain is alive in Titus' house,  
 Damm'd as he is, to witness this is true.  
 Now judge, what cause had Titus to revenge  
 These wrongs, unspeakable, past patience,  
 Or more than any living man could bear.  
 Now you have heard the truth, what say you  
 Romans?

Have we done aught amiss? Show us wherein,  
 And, from the place where you behold us now,  
 (The poor remainder of Andronici)  
 We'll hand in hand, all headlong cast us down,  
 And on the ragged stones beat forth our brains,  
 And make a mutual closure of our house.  
 Speak, Romans, speak; and, if you say we  
 shall,

Lo, hand in hand, Lucius and I will fall.

*Emil.* Come, come, thou reverend man of  
 Rome,

And bring our emperor gently in thy hand:

Lucius our emperor; for, well I know

The common voice do cry, it shall be so.

*Rom.* [*Several speak.*] Lucius, all hail;  
 Rome's royal emperor!

LUCIUS, &c. *descend.*

*Mar.* Go, go into old Titus' sorrowful house;

[*To an Attendant.*]

And hither hale that misbelieving Moor,

To be adjudg'd some direful slaughtering death,  
 As punishment for his most wicked life.

*Rom.* [*Several speak.*] Lucius, all hail;  
 Rome's gracious governor!

*Luc.* Thanks, gentle Romans; May I govern  
 so,

To heal Rome's harms, and wipe away her woe!

But, gentle people, give me aim awhile,—

For nature puts me to a heavy task;—

Stand all aloof;—but, uncle, draw you near,

To shed obsequious tears upon this trunk;—

O take this warm kiss on thy pale cold lips,  
 [*Kisses Titus.*]

These sorrowful drops upon thy blood-stain'd  
 face,

The last true duties of thy noble son!

*Mar.* Tear for tear, and loving kiss for kiss,

Thy brother Marcus tenders on thy lips:

Oh! were the sum of these that I should pay

Countless and infinite, yet would I pay them!

*Luc.* Come hither, boy; come, come, and  
 learn of us

To melt in showers: Thy grandsire lov'd thee  
 well:

Many a time he danc'd thee on his knee,  
 Sung thee asleep, his loving breast thy pillow;  
 Many a matter hath he told to thee,  
 Meet, and agreeing with thine infancy;  
 In that respect then, like a loving child,  
 Shed yet some small drops from thy tender  
 spring,

Because kind nature doth require it so: [*Weep.*]  
 Friends should associate friends in grief. And  
 Bid him farewell; commit him to the grave;

Do him that kindness, and take leave of him.

*Boy.* O grandsire, grandsire! even with all my

heart

Would I were dead, so you did live again!—

O lord, I cannot speak to him for weeping;

My tears will choke me, if I ope my mouth.

*Enter Attendants, with AARON.*

*I Rom.* You sad Andronici, have done with  
 woes;

Give sentence on this execrable wretch,  
 That hath been breeder of these dire events.

*Luc.* Set him breast-deep in earth, and smother  
 him;

There let him stand, and rave and cry for food;

If any one relieves or pities him,

For the offence he dies. This is our doom:

Some stay, to see him fasten'd in the earth.

*Aar.* Oh! why should wrath be mute, and fury  
 dumb?

I am no baby, I that, with base prayers,

I should repent the evils I have done:

Ten thousand worse than that ever yet I did

Would I perform, if I might have my will;

If one good deed in all my life I did,

I do repent it from my very soul.

*Luc.* Some loving friends convey the emperor  
 hence,

And give him burial in his father's grave:

My father, and Lavinia, shall forthwith

Be closed in our household's monument

As for that heinous tiger, Tamora,

No funeral rite, nor man in mournful weeds,

No mournful bell shall ring her burial;

But throw her forth to beasts and birds of prey

Her life was beast-like, and devoid of pity,

And, being so, shall have like want of pity.

See justice done to Aaron, that damn'd Moor,

By whom our heavy days had then beginning:

Then, afterwards, to order well the state;

That like events may never it renew.

[*Exeunt.*]

# TROILUS AND CRESSIDA.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THIS tragedy was written about the year 1602, and Shakspeare is supposed to have taken the greatest part of its materials from the *Troie Boke* of Lydgate, an author who derived many of his particulars from a *History of Troy*, in Latin, by Guido of Columpnas. Chaucer had previously celebrated the loves of Troilus and Cressida, in a translation from a Latin poem of one Lollius, an old Lombard author. The characters in this play (which was not originally divided into acts) are strikingly assimilated to the portraits which history has preserved of them—the aged loquacity of Nestor—the insinuating eloquence of Ulysses—the boasting confidence of Ajax—the sullen self-importance of Achilles—the conscious dignity of Agamemnon, and the sneaking insignificance of the cuckold Menelaus, are excellently displayed in the development of the piece; whilst the scurrile malignity of Thersites most humorously and ingeniously advances its interest throughout. The mode of Hector's death is, however, at variance with historical record, and was probably accompanied with such baseness on the part of Achilles, to perfect the amiable attributes in which the poet chose to invest the character of his Trojan opponent. Troilus, the hero of the play, has little to recommend him beyond personal intrepidity, and the sincerity of a youthful attachment—some authors rank him among the elder of Priam's sons: others (and among them Virgil, who describes in the 1st book of the *Æneid*, line 474, the manner of his death by the hand of Achilles) call him the youngest. Anachronisms are of frequent occurrence in this play; such as Hector's citing Aristotle, and Ulysses alluding to the "bull-bearing Milet," who did not live till many years after the Trojan war. It must, nevertheless, be remembered, that the greater part of Shakspeare's library consisted of ancient romances; and nothing could be less correct than their computation of dates. The language of the piece is greatly tinctured with the peculiarities of the age in which he lived, and although Dr. Johnson considers it more correctly written than many of its companions, he exempts it from any extent of view or elevation of fancy. "The vicious characters (says that discriminating critic, sometimes dissent, but cannot corrupt, for both Cressida and Pandarus are detested and condemned. The comic characters seem to have been the favourites of the writer: they are of the superficial kind, and exhibit more of manners than nature; but they are copiously filed, and powerfully impressed."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

PRIAM, <i>King of Troy.</i>	HERSITES, <i>a deformed and scurrilous Grecian.</i>
HECTOR, TROILUS, PARIS, } <i>His Sons.</i>	ALEXANDER, <i>Servant to Cressida.</i>
DEIPHOBUS, HELENUS, }	Servant to Troilus.—Servant to Paris.—Servant to Diomedes.
ANILAS, ANTENOR, <i>Trojan Commanders.</i>	HELEN, <i>Wife to Menelaus.</i>
CALCHAS, <i>a Trojan Priest, taking part with the Greeks.</i>	ANDROMACHE, <i>Wife to Hector.</i>
PANDARUS, <i>Uncle to Cressida.</i>	CASSANDRA, <i>Daughter to Priam; a Prophetess.</i>
MARGARELLON, <i>a bastard Son of Priam.</i>	CRESSIDA, <i>Daughter to Calchas.</i>
AGAMEMNON, <i>the Grecian General.</i>	Trojan and Greek Soldiers, and Attendants.
MENELAUS, <i>his Brother.</i>	
ACHILLES, AJAX, ULYSSES, } <i>Grecian Commanders.</i>	
NESTOR, DIOMEDES, }	
PATROCLUS,	

SCENE: Troy, and the Grecian Camp before it.

## PROLOGUE.

IN Troy there lies the scene. From isles of Greece.

The princes ogulous, \* their high blood chaf'd,  
Have to the port of Athens sent their ships,  
Fought with the ministers and instruments  
Of cruel war: Sixty and nine, that wore  
Their crowns regal, from the Athenian bay  
Put forth toward Phrygia: and then vow is made,

To ransack Troy; within whose strong immures  
The ravish'd Helen, Menelaus' queen,  
With wanton Paris sleeps: And that's the quarrel.

To Tenedos they come;  
And the deep-drawing barks do there disgorge  
Their warlike freightage; † Now on Dardan plains  
The fresh and yet unbruised Greeks do pitch

\* Proud, disdainful

† Fright.

Their brave pavilions: Priam's six-gated city,  
Dardan, and Tymbria, Ilios, Chetas, Trojan,  
And Antenorides, with massy staples,  
And corresponsive and fulfilling bolts,  
Speir \* up the sons of Troy.  
Now expectation, tickling skittish spirits,  
On one and other side, Trojans and Greek,  
Sets all on hazard:—And hither am I come  
A prologue arm'd,—but not in confidence  
Of author's pen, or actor's voice; but suted  
In like conditions as our argument,—  
To tell you, fair beholders, that our play  
Leaps o'er the vauit and fistlings of those  
broils,

'Ginning in the middle; starting thence away  
To what may be digested in a play  
Like, or find fault; do as your pleasures are;  
Now good, or bad, 'tis but the chance of war.

\* Shut.

† Assault what went before.

## ACT I.

## SCENE I.—Troy.—Before PRIAM'S Palace.

Enter TROILUS arm'd, and PANDARUS.

Tro. Call here my varlet,\* I'll unarm again :  
Why should I war without the walls of Troy,  
That find such cruel battle here within?  
Each Trojan that is master of his heart,  
Let him to field : Troilus, alas ! hath none.

Pan. Will this gear ne'er be mended?

Tro. The Greeks are strong, and skilful to  
their strength,  
Fierce to their skill, and to their fierceness valiant ;

But I am weaker than a woman's tear,  
Tamer than sleep, fonder than ignorance ;  
Less valiant than the virgin in the night,  
And skillless as unpractis'd infancy.

Pan. Well, I have told you enough of this ;  
for my part, I'll not meddle nor make no further.  
He that will have a cake out of the wheat must  
tarry the grinding.

Tro. Have I not tarried?

Pan. Ay, the grinding ; but you must tarry the bolting.

Tro. Have I not tarried?

Pan. Ay, the bolting ; but you must tarry the leavening.

Tro. Still have I tarried.

Pan. Ay, to the leavening ; but here's yet, in  
the word, *hereafter*, the kneading, the making  
of the cake, the heating of the oven, and the  
baking : nay, you must stay the cooling too, or  
you may chance to burn your lips.

Tro. Patience herself, (what goddess e'er  
she be)

Doth lesser bleach† at sufferance than I do  
At Priam's royal table do I sit,  
And when fair Cressid comes into my thoughts,—  
So, traitor !—when she comes !—When is she  
thence?

Pan. Well, she looked yesternight fairer than  
ever I saw her look, or any woman else.

Tro. I was about to tell thee,—When my  
heart,

As wedged with a sigh, would rive‡ in twain,  
Lest Hector or my father should perceive me,  
I have (as when the sun doth light a storm,)†  
Buried this sigh in wrinkle of a smile :  
But sorrow that is couch'd in seeming glad-  
ness,

Is like that mirth false turns to sudden sadness.

Pan. An her hair were not somewhat darker  
than Helen's, (well, go to,) there were no more  
comparison between the women.—But, for my  
part, she is my kinswoman : I would not, as they  
term it, praise her.—But I would somebody had  
heard her talk yesterday, as I did. I will not  
dispraise your sister Cassandra's wit ; but—

Tro. O Pandarus ! I tell thee, Pandarus,—  
When I do tell thee, there my hopes lie drown'd,  
Reply not in how many fathoms deep  
They lie indrench'd. I tell thee, I am mad  
In Cressid's love : Thou answer'st, she is fair ;  
Pour'st in the open ulcer of my heart  
Her eyes, her hair, her cheek, her gait, her voice ;  
Handlest in thy discourse, oh ! that her hand,  
In whose comparison all whites are ink,  
Writing their own reproach ; To whose soft  
seizure

The cygnet's down is harsh, and spirit of sense  
Hard as the palm of ploughmen ! This thou  
tellest me,

As true thou tellest me, when I say—I love her ;  
But, saying thus, instead of oil and balm,  
Thou lay'st in every gash that love hath given me  
The knife that made it.

Pan. I speak no more than truth.

Tro. Thou dost not speak so much.

Pan. Faith, I'll not meddle in't. Let her be  
as she is : if she be fair, 'tis the better for her ;

an she be not, she has the mends in her own  
hands.

Tro. Good Pandarus ! How now, Pandarus ?

Pan. I have had my labour for my travel ; ill-  
thought on of her, and ill-thought on of you :  
gone between and between, but small thanks for  
my labour.

Tro. What, art thou angry, Pandarus ? what  
with me?

Pan. Because she is kin to me, therefore,  
she's not so fair as Helen : an she were not kin  
to me, she would be as fair on Friday, as Helen  
is on Sunday. But what care I ? I care not,  
an she were a black-a-moor ; 'tis all one to me.

Tro. Say I, she is not fair?

Pan. I do not care whether you do or no.  
She's a fool to stay behind her father ; let her to  
the Greeks ; and so I'll tell her the next time I  
see her : for my part, I'll meddle nor make no  
more in the matter.

Tro. Pandarus—

Pan. Not I.

Tro. Sweet Pandarus,—

Pan. Pray you, speak no more to me ; I will  
leave all as I found it, and there an end.

[Exit PANDARUS. An Alarum.

Tro. Peace, you ungracious clamours ! peace,  
rude sounds !

Fools on both sides ! Helen must needs be fair,

When with your blood you daily paint her thus.

I cannot fight upon this argument ;

It is too starv'd a subject for my sword.

But Pandarus—O gods, how do you plague me !

I cannot come to Cressid, but by Pandar ;

And he's as tetchy to be woo'd to woo,

As she is stubborn-chaste against all suit. A

Tell me, Apollo, for thy Daphne's love,

What Cressid is, what Pandar, and what we

Her bed is India ; there she lies, a pearl :

Between our Ilum and where she resides,

Let it be call'd the wild and wandering flood,

Ourselves, the merchant ; and this sailing Pan-  
dar,

Our doubtful hope, our convoy, and our bark.

Alarum. Enter AENEAS.

Æne. How now, prince Troilus ? wherefore  
not afield ?

Tro. Because not there. This woman's an-  
swer sorts\*

For womanish it is to be from thence.

What news, Æneas, from the field to-day ?

Æne. That Paris is returned home, and hurt.

Tro. By whom, Æneas ?

Æne. Troilus, by Menelaus.

Tro. Let Paris bleed : 'tis but a scar to  
scorn ;

Paris is gor'd with Menelaus' horn. [Alarum.

Æne. Hark ! what good sport is out of town  
to-day !

Tro. Better at home, if *you'd* I might, were  
may.—

But to the sport abroad ;—Are you bound thi-  
[her ?

Æne. In all swift haste.

Tro. Come, go we then together. [Exit.

## SCENE II.—The same.—A Street.

Enter CRESSIDA and ALEXANDER.

Cres. Who were those went by ?

Alex. Queen Hecuba, and Helen.

Cres. And whither go they ?

Alex. Up to the eastern tower,

Whose height commands as subject all the vale  
To see the battle. Hector, whose patience

Is as a virtue fix'd, to-day was mov'd :

He chid Andromache, and struck his armourer ;

And, like as there were husbandry in war,

Before the sun rose he was harness'd light,

And to the field goes he ; where every flower

Did as a prophet weep what it foresaw

In Hector's wrath.

Cres. What was his cause of anger ?

\* A servant as a knight.

† Shrink

‡ More foolish.

§ Split.

\* Is becoming.

*Alex.* The noise goes, this : There is among the Greeks

A lord of Trojan blood, nephew to Hector ; They call him, Ajax.

*Cres.* Good ; And what of him ?

*Alex.* They say he is a very man *per se*,\* And stands alone.

*Cres.* So do all men ; unless they are drunk, sick, or have no legs.

*Alex.* This man, lady, hath robbed many beasts of their particular additions : † he is as valiant as the lion, churlish as the bear, slow as the elephant : a man into whom nature hath so crowded humours, that his valour is crushed ‡ into folly, his folly sauced with discretion : there is no man hath a virtue that he hath not a glimpse of ; nor any man an attain, but he carries some stain of it : he is melancholy without cause, and merry against the hair : § He hath the joints of every thing ; but every thing so out of joint, that he is a gouty Briareus, many hands and no use : or purblind Argus, all eyes and no sight.

*Cres.* But how should this man, that makes me smile, make Hector angry ?

*Alex.* They say, he yesterday coped Hector in the battle, and struck him down ; the disdain and shame whereof hath ever since kept Hector fasting and waking.

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Cres.* Who comes here ?

*Alex.* Madam, your uncle Pandarus.

*Cres.* Hector's a gallant man.

*Alex.* As may be in the world, lady.

*Pan.* What's that ? what's that ?

*Cres.* Good morrow, uncle Pandarus.

*Pan.* Good morrow, cousin Cressid : What do you talk of ?—Good morrow, Alexander.—How do you, cousin ? When were you at Ilum ?

*Cres.* This morning, uncle.

*Pan.* What were you talking of when I came ? Was Hector armed, and gone, ere ye came to Ilum ? Helen was not up, was she ?

*Cres.* Hector was gone ; but Helen was not up.

*Pan.* E'en so ; Hector was stirring early.

*Cres.* That were we talking of, and of his anger.

*Pan.* Was he angry ?

*Cres.* So he says here.

*Pan.* True, he was so ; I know the cause too ; he'll lay about him to-day, I can tell them that : and there is Troilus will not come far behind him ; let them take heed of Troilus ; I can tell them that too.

*Cres.* What, is he angry too ?

*Pan.* Who, Troilus ? Troilus is the better man of the two.

*Cres.* O Jupiter ! there's no comparison.

*Pan.* What, not between Troilus and Hector ? Do you know a man if you see him ?

*Cres.* Ay ; if ever I saw him before, and knew him.

*Pan.* Well, I say, Troilus is Troilus.

*Cres.* Then you say as I say ; for I am sure he is not Hector.

*Pan.* No, nor Hector is not Troilus, in some degrees.

*Cres.* 'Tis just to each of them ; he is himself.

*Pan.* Himself ? Alas, poor Troilus ! I would, he were,—

*Cres.* So he is.

*Pan.* —'Condition, I have gone barefoot to India.

*Cres.* He is not Hector.

*Pan.* Himself ? no, he's not himself.—'Would a were himself ! Well, the gods are above ; Time must friend, or end : Well, Troilus, well,—I would my heart were in her body !—No, Hector is not a better man than Troilus.

*Cres.* Excuse me.

*Pan.* He is elder.

*Cres.* Pardon me, pardon me

*Pan.* The other's not come to't ; you shall tell me another tale, when the other's come to't. Hector shall not have his wit this year.

*Cres.* He shall not need it, if he have his own.

*Pan.* Nor his qualities,—

*Cres.* No matter.

*Pan.* Nor his beauty.

*Cres.* 'Twould not become him, his own's better.

*Pan.* You have no judgment, niece : Helen herself swore the other day, that Troilus, for a brown favour, (for so 'tis, I must confess,)—Not brown neither.

*Cres.* No, but brown.

*Pan.* 'Faith, to say truth, brown and not brown.

*Cres.* To say the truth, true and not true.

*Pan.* She prais'd his complexion above Paris

*Cres.* Why, Paris hath colour enough.

*Pan.* So he has.

*Cres.* Then, Troilus should have too much : if she praised him above, his complexion is higher than his ; he having colour enough, and the other higher, is too flaming a praise for a good complexion. I had as lief Helen's golden tongue had commended Troilus for a copper nose.

*Pan.* I swear to you, I think Helen loves him better than Paris.

*Cres.* Then she's a merry Greek, indeed.

*Pan.* Nay, I am sure she does. She came to him the other day into a compassed window,\*—and, you know, he has not past three or four hairs on his chin.

*Cres.* Indeed, a tapster's arithmetic may soon bring his particulars therein to a total.

*Pan.* Why, he is very young : and yet will be, within three pound, list as much as his brother Hector.

*Cres.* Is he so young a man, and so old a sister ? †

*Pan.* But, to prove to you that Helen loves him ;—she, came, and puts me her white hand to his cloven chin,—

*Cres.* Juno have mercy !—How came it cloven ?

*Pan.* Why, you know, 'tis dimpled : I think, his smiling becomes him better than any man in all Phrygia.

*Cres.* Oh ! he smiles valiantly.

*Pan.* Does he not ?

*Cres.* O yes, an 'twere a cloud in autumn.

*Pan.* Why, go to then :—But to prove to you that Helen loves Troilus,—

*Cres.* Troilus will stand to the proof, if you'll prove it so.

*Pan.* Troilus ? why, he esteems her no more than I esteem an addle egg.

*Cres.* If you love an addle egg as well as you love an idle head, you would eat chickens i'the shell.

*Pan.* I cannot choose but laugh, to think how she tickled his chin ;—Indeed, she has a marvellous white hand, I must needs confess.

*Cres.* Without the rack.

*Pan.* And she takes upon her to spy a white hair on his chin.

*Cres.* Alas, poor chin ! many a wart is richer.

*Pan.* But there was such laughing ;—Queen Hecuba laughed, that her eyes ran o'er.

*Cres.* With mill-stones. ‡

*Pan.* And Cassandra laughed.

*Cres.* But there was a more temperate fire under the pot of her eyes ;—Did her eyes run o'er too ?

*Pan.* And Hector laughed.

*Cres.* At what was all this laughing ?

*Pan.* Marry, at the white hair that Helen spied on Troilus' chin.

*Cres.* An't had been a green hair, I should have laughed too.

*Pan.* They laughed not so much at the hair, as at his pretty answer.

\* By himself. † Characters. ‡ Mingled with.  
§ Grain.

\* Bow window. † Thief. ‡ A proverbial saying



*Cres.* What was his answer?

*Pan.* Quoth she, *Here's but one and fifty hairs on your chin, and one of them is white.*

*Cres.* This is her question.

*Pan.* That's true; make no question of that. *One and fifty hairs, quoth he, and one white: That white hair is my father, and all the rest are his sons. Jupiter! quoth she, which of these hairs is Paris my husband? The joyed one, quoth he; pluck it out and give it him.* But, there was such laughing! and Helen so blushed, and Paris so chafed, and all the rest so laughed, that it passed.\*

*Cres.* So let it now; for it has been a great while going by.

*Pan.* Well, cousin, I told you a thing yesterday; think on't.

*Cres.* So I do.

*Pan.* I'll be sworn, 'tis true; he will weep you, an 'twere a man born in April.

*Cres.* And I'll spring up in his tears, an 'twere a nettle against May.

[*A Retreat sounded.*]

*Pan.* Hark, they are coming from the field: Shall we stand up here, and see them as they pass toward Ilum? good niece, do; sweet niece Cressida.

*Cres.* At your pleasure.

*Pan.* Here, here, here's an excellent place; here we may see most bravely: I'll tell you them all by their names as they pass by: but hark Troilus above the rest.

*ÆNEAS passes over the stage.*

*Cres.* Speak not so loud.

*Pan.* That's Æneas; is not that a brave man? he's one of the flowers of Troy, I can tell you; but mark Troilus; you shall see anon.

*Cres.* Who's that?

*ANTENOR passes over.*

*Pan.* That's Antenor; he has a shrewd wit, I can tell you; and he's a man good enough; he's one of the soundest judgments in Troy, whosoever, and a proper man of person.—When comes Troilus?—I'll show you Troilus anon: if he see me, you shall see him nod at me.

*Cres.* Will he give you the nod?

*Pan.* You shall see.

*Cres.* If he do, the rich shall have more.

*HECTOR passes over.*

*Pan.* That's Hector, that, that, look you, that; There's a fellow!—Go thy way, Hector!—There's a brave man, niece.—O brave Hector!—Look, how he looks! there's a countenance: Is't not a brave man?

*Cres.* Oh! a brave man!

*Pan.* Is a not? It does a man's heart good—Look you what hacks are on his helmet? look you yonder, do you see? look you there! There's no jesting: there's laying on; take't off who will, as they say: there he hacks!

*Cres.* Be those with swords?

*PARIS passes over.*

*Pan.* Swords? any thing, he cares not: an the devil come to him, it's all one: By god's lid, it does one's heart good!—Yonder comes Paris, yonder comes Paris: look ye yonder, niece; Is't not a gallant man too, is't not?—Way, this is brave now.—Who said he came hurt home to-day? he's not hurt: why this will do Helen's heart good now. Hal! 'would I could see Troilus now!—you shall see Troilus anon.

*Cres.* Who's that?

*HELLENUS passes over.*

*Pan.* 'Tis Helenus,—I marvel, where Troilus is:—'Tis Helenus,—I think he went not forth to-day.—That's Helenus.

*Cres.* Can Helenus fight, uncle?

*Pan.* Helenus? no;—yes, he'll fight indifferently well:—I marvel, where Troilus is!—Hark!—do you not hear the people cry, Troilus!—Helenus is a priest.

*Cres.* What sneaking fellow comes yonder?

*TROILUS passes over.*

*Pan.* Where? yonder! that's Demiphoebus: 'Tis Troilus! there's a man, niece!—Hem!—Brave Troilus! the prince of chivalry!

*Cres.* Peace, for shame, peace!

*Pan.* Mark him; note him;—O brave Troilus!—look well upon him, niece; look you, how his sword is bloodied, and his helm\* more hack'd than Hector's; And how he looks, and how he goes!—O admirable youth! he ne'er saw three and twenty. Go thy way, Troilus, go thy way; had I a sister were a grace, or a daughter a goddess, he should take his choice. O admirable man! Paris!—Paris is due to him; and I warrant, Helen, to change, would give an eye to boot.

*Forcés pass over the stage.*

*Cres.* Here come more.

*Pan.* Asses, fools, dolts! chaff and bran, chaff and bran! porridge after meat! I could live and die 't' the eyes of Troilus. Ne'er look, ne'er look; the eagles are gone; crows and daws, crows and daws! I had rather be such a man as Troilus, than Agamemnon and all Greece.

*Cres.* There is among the Greeks, Achilles; a better man than Troilus.

*Pan.* Achilles? a drayman, a porter, a very camel.

*Cres.* Well, well.

*Pan.* Well, well?—Why, have you any discretion? have you any eyes? Do you know what a man is? Is not birth, beauty, good shape, discourse, manhood, learning, gentleness, virtue, youth, liberality, and such like, the spice and salt that season a man?

*Cres.* Ay, a minced man; and then to be baked with no date† in the pye,—for then the man's date is out.

*Pan.* You are such a woman! one knows not at what ward‡ you lie.

*Cres.* Upon my back, to defend my belly, upon my wit, to defend my wiles; upon my secrecy, to defend mine honesty; my mask, to defend my beauty; and you, to defend all these: and at all these wards I lie, at a thousand watches.

*Pan.* Say one of your watches.

*Cres.* Upon my watch for that; and that's one of the chiefest of them too: if I cannot ward what I would not have hit, I can watch you for telling how I took the blow; unless it swell past hiding, and then it is past watching.

*Pan.* You are such another!

*Enter TROILUS' Boy.*

*Boy.* Sir, my lord would instantly speak with you.

*Pan.* Where?

*Boy.* At your own house; there he unarms him.

*Pan.* Good boy, tell him I come: [*Exit Boy.*] I doubt he be hurt.—Fare ye well, good niece.

*Cres.* Adieu, uncle.

*Pan.* I'll be with you, niece, by and by.

*Cres.* To bring, uncle,—

*Pan.* Ay, a token from Troilus.

*Cres.* By the same token you are a bawd.

[*Exit PANDARUS.*]

Words, vows, griefs, tears, and love's full sacrifice,

He offers in another's enterprise:

But more in Troilus thousand fold I see Than in the glass of Pandar's praise may be;

\* Helmet. † An ingredient in all ancient pastry. ‡ A metaphor from the art of defence.

\* Exceeded all bounds.

† As if 'twere.

Yet hold I off. Women are angels, wooing :  
Things won are done, joy's soul lies in the doing :  
That she belov'd knows nought, that knows not  
this,—

Men prize the thing ungain'd more than it is :  
That she was never yet, that ever knew  
Love got so sweet as when desire did sue :  
Therefore this maxim out of love I teach,—  
Achievement is command ; ungain'd behest :  
Then though my heart's content firm love doth  
bear,  
Nothing of that shall from mine eyes appear.

[Exit.

SCENE III.—*The Grecian Camp.—Before  
Agamemnon's Tent.*

*Trumpets. Enter AGAMEMNON, NESTOR,  
ULYSSES, MENELAUS and others.*

*Agam.* Princes,

What grief hath set the jaundice on your cheeks ?  
The ample proposition, that hope makes  
In all designs begun on earth below,  
Fails in the promis'd largeness ; cheeks and dis-  
asters

Grow in the veins of actions highest rear'd ;  
As knots, by the conflux of meeting sap,  
Infect the sound pine, and divert his grain  
Tortive and errant \* from his course of growth.  
Nor, princes, is it matter new to us,  
That we come short of our suppose so far,  
That, after seven years' siege, yet Troy walls  
stand ;

Sith † every action that hath gone before,  
Whereof we have record, trial did draw  
Bias and thwart, not answering the aim,  
And that unbodied figure of the thought  
That gav't summ'd shape. Why then, you  
princes,

Do you with cheeks abash'd behold our works ;  
And thing them shames, which are, indeed,  
nought else

But the prophetic trials of great Jove.  
To find perceptive constancy in men ?  
The inches of which metal is not found  
In fortune's love ; for then, the bold and  
coward,

The wit and tool, the artist and unread,  
The hard and soft, seem all afraid ; and kin :  
But, in the wind and tempest of her frown,  
Distinction, with a broad and powerful faw,  
Pulling at all, winnows the light away ;  
And what hath mass or matter, by itself  
Lies, rich in virtue, and unmingled.

*Nest.* With due observance of thy godlike  
seat, ‡

Great Agamemnon, Nestor shall apply  
Thy latest words. In the reproof of chance  
Lies the true proof of men : The sea being  
smooth

How many shallow hauble boats dare sail  
Upon her patient breast, making then way  
With those of noble bulk.

But let the rufian Bores once enrage  
The gentler Thetis, ¶ and, anon, behold  
The strong nob'd bark through liquid moun-  
tains cut,

Bounding between the two moist elements,  
Like Pegasus' horse ; Where's then the saucy  
boat,

Whose weak untimber'd sides but even now  
Co-rival'd greatness † either to harbour fled,  
Or made a toast for Neptune. Even so  
Doth valour's show, and valour's worth, divide,  
In storms of fortune : For, in her ray and  
brightness,

The herd hath more annoyance by the brize, ¶  
Than by the tiger : but when the splitting wind  
Makes flexible the knees of knotted oaks,  
And flies fled under shade, why, then the thing  
of courage

\* Twisted and rambling.

† Joined by affinity.

‡ Goddess of the sea.

† Since.

‡ The throne.

¶ The gad fly.

As rous'd with rage, with rage doth sympathize,  
And with an accent turn'd in self-same key,  
Returns to chiding fortune.

*Ulyss.* Agamemnon,—

Thou great commander, nerve, and bone of  
Greece,

Heart of our numbers, soul and only spirit  
In whom the tempers and the minds of all  
Should be shut up,—hear what Ulysses speaks  
Besides the applause and approbation

The which,—most mighty for thy place and  
sway,— [To AGAMEMNON.

And thou must reverend for thy stretch'd-out  
life,— [To NESTOR.

I give to both your speeches,—which were such,  
As Agamemnon and the hand of Greece  
Should hold up high in brass ; and such again,  
As venerable Nestor, hatch'd in silver,  
Should with a bond of air (strong as the axle-  
tree

On which heaven rides,) knit all the Greekish  
cars [both,—

To his experienc'd tongue,—yet let it please  
Thou great,—and wise,—to hear Ulysses speak.

*Agam.* Speak, prince of Ithaca ; and be't of  
less expect \*

That matter needless, of importless burden,  
Divide thy lips ; than we are confident,  
When rank Thersites opens his mastiff jaws,  
We shall hear music, wit, and oracle.

*Ulyss.* Troy, yet upon his basis had been  
down, [ter,

And the great Hector's sword had lack'd a bias.  
But for these instances.

The speciality of rule † hath been neglected ;  
And, look, how many Grecian tents do stand  
Hollow upon this plain, so many hollow fac-  
tions.

When that the general is not like the live,  
To whom the followers shall all repair,  
What honey is expected ? Degree being viz-  
arded, ‡

The unworthiest shows as fairly in the mask.  
The heavens themselves, the planets, and this  
centre,

Observe degree, priority, and place,  
Insisture, § course, proportion, season, form,  
Office, and custom, in all line of order :  
And therefore is the glorious planet, Sol,  
In noble eminence enthron'd and sphere'd  
Amidst the other ; whose med'cable eye  
Corrects the ill aspects of planets evil,  
And posts, like the commandment of a king,  
Saus ¶ check, to good and bad : But when the  
planets,

In evil mixture, to disorder wander,  
What plagues, and what portents † what mutiny ?  
What raging of the sea ? shaking of earth ?  
Commotion in the winds ? frights, changes, hor-  
rors,

Divert and crack, tend and deracline ¶  
The unity and married calm of states  
Quite from their fixture † Oh ! when degree is  
shak'd,

Which is the ladder of all high designs,  
The enterprise is sick ! How could commu-  
nities,

Degrees in schools, and brotherhoods \*\* in cities  
Peaceful commerce from dividable † shares,  
The primogenitive and due of birth,  
Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,  
But by degree, stand in authentic place ?  
Take but degree away, untune that string,  
And, hawk, what discord follows ! Each thing  
meets

In mere ‡ oppugnancy : The bounded waters  
Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores,  
And make a sop of all this solid globe :  
Strength should be lord of imbecility,  
And the rude son should strike his father  
dead :

\* Expectation.

† Masked.

‡ Tear up by the roots.

¶ Divided.

† Rights of supreme authority.

‡ Without.

§ Constancy.

\*\* Corporation.

‡ Absolute

Force should be right; or, rather, right and wrong,

(Between whose endless jar justice resides,) Should lose their names, and so should justice too.

Then every thing includes itself in power, Power into will will into appetite; And appetite, a universal will, So doubly seconded with will and power, Must make perforce a universal pley, And, last, eat up himself. Great Agamemnon, This chaos, when degree is suffocate, Follows the choking.

And this neglect of degree it is, That by a pace goes backward, with a purpose It hath to climb. The general's disdain'd By him one step below; he, by the next; That next, by him beneath: so every step, Exemplified by the first pace that is sick Of his superior, grows to an envious fever Of pale and bloodless emulation: And 'tis this fever that keeps Troy on foot, Not her own sinews. To end a tale of length, Troy in our weakness stands, not in her strength.

Nest. Most wisely hath Ulysses here discover'd

The fever whereof all our power\* is sick.

Agam. The nature of the sickness found, What is the remedy? [Ulysses,

Ulyss. The great Achilles,—whom opinion crowns

The sinew and the forehead of our host,— Having his ear full of his airy fame, Grows dainty of his worth, and in his tent Lies mocking our designs: With him Patroclus, Upon a lazy bed the livelong day Breaks scurril jests; And with ridiculous and awkward action (Which, slanderer, he imitation calls,) He pageants† us. Sometime, great Agamemnon, Thy topless‡ deputation he puts on; And, like a strutting player,—whose conceit Lies in his hamstring, and doth think it rich To hear the wooden dialogue and sound

\*Twixt his stretch'd looting and the scaffold-age, §—

Such to-be-pitied and o'er-wrested || seeming He acts thy greatness in: and when he speaks, 'Tis like a chime a mending; with terms unsquar'd,¶ [dropp'd,

Which, from the tongue of roaring Typhon Would seem hyperboles. At this fusty stuff, The large Achilles, on his press'd bed lolling, From his deep chest laughs out a loud applause;

Cries—Excellent!—'tis Agamemnon just.—

Now play me Nestor:—hem, and stroke thy beard,

As he, being dress'd to some oration.

That's done:—as near as the extremest ends Of parallels; as like as Vulcan and his wife. Yet good Achilles still cries, Excellent!

'Tis Nestor right! Now play him me, Patroclus,

Arming to answer in a night alarm.

And then, forsooth, the faint defects of age Must be the scene of mirth; to cough, and spit, And with a palsy-fumbling on his gorget, Shake in and out the rivet:—and at this sport, Sir Valour dies; cries, O!—enough, Patroclus;—

Or give me ribs of steel! I shall split all In pleasure of my spleen. And in this fashion, All our abilities, gifts, natures, shapes, Severals and generals of grace exact, Achievements, plots, orders, preventions, Excitements to the field, or speech for truce, Success, or loss, what is, or is not, serves As stuff for these two to make paradoxes.

Nest. And in the imitation of these twain (Whom, as Ulysses says, opinion crowns

With an imperial voice,) many are infect. Ajax is grown self-will'd; and bears his head In such a reign, in full as proud a place As broad Achilles; keeps his tent like him; Makes factious feasts; rails on our state of war Bold as an oracle: and sets Theraites (A slave, whose gall coins slanders like a mint,) To match us in comparisons with dirt; To weaken and discredit our exposure, How rank soever rounded in with danger.

Ulyss. They tax our policy, and call it cowardice;

Count wisdom as no member of the war; Forestall prescience, and esteem no act But that of hand: the still and mental parts,— That do contrive how many hands shall strike. When fitness call them on; and know, by measure

Of their observant toil, the enemies' weight,— Why, this hath not a finger's dignity: They call this—bed-work, mappery, closet-war: So that the ram, that batters down the wall, For the great swing and rudeness of his poise, They place before his hand that made the engine;

Or those, that with the fineness of their souls By reason guide his execution.

Nest. Let this be granted, and Achilles' horse

Makes many Thetis' sons. [Trumpet sounds. Agam. What trumpet? look, Menelaus.

Enter ÆNEAS.

Men. From Troy.

Agam. What would you 'fore our tent?

Æne. Is this

Great Agamemnon's tent, I pray?

Agam. Even this.

Æne. May one, that is a herald and a prince,

Do a fair message to his kingly ears?

Agam. With surety stronger than Achilles' arm, 'Fore all the Greekish heads, which with one voice

Call Agamemnon head and general.

Æne. Fair leave, and large security. How may A stranger to those most imperial looks Know them from eyes of other mortals?

Agam. How?

Æne. Ay;

I ask, that I might waken reverence, And bid the cheek be ready with a blush Modest as morning when she coldly eyes The youthful Phœbus:

Which is that god in office, guiding men?

Which is the high and mighty Agamemnon?

Agam. This Trojan scorns us; or the men of Troy,

Are ceremonious courtiers.

Æne. Courtiers as free, as debonaire, unarm'd, As bending angels; that's their fame in peace: But when they would seem soldiers, they have

galls, Good arms, strong joints, true swords; and, Jove's accord,

Nothing so full of heart. But peace, Æneas, Peace, Trojan; lay thy finger on thy lips! The worthiness of praise distains his worth, If that the praise'd himself bring the praise forth:

But what the repining enemy commends, That breath fame follows; that praise, sole pure, transcends.

Agam. Sir, you of Troy, call you yourself Æneas?

Æne. Ay, Greek, that is my name.

Agam. What's your affair, I pray you?

Æne. Sir, pardon; 'tis for Agamemnon's ears.

Agam. He hears nought privately, that comes from Troy.

Æne. Nor I from Troy come not to whisper him:

I bring a trumpet to awake his ear; To set his sense on the attentive bent, And then to speak.

\* Army.

† Mimics us.

‡ Supreme.

§ The galleries of the theatre.

|| Beyond the ruts.

¶ Undeveloped.

*Agam.* Speak frankly \* as the wind ;  
It is not Agamemnon's sleeping hour :  
That thou shalt know, Trojan, he is awake,  
He tells thee so himself.

*Enc.* Trumpet blow loud,  
Send thy brass voice through all these lazy  
tents ;—

And every Greek of mettle, let him know,  
What Troy means fairly shall be spoke aloud.

[*Trumpet sounds.*]  
We have, great Agamemnon, here in Troy,  
A prince call'd Hector, (Priam is his father)  
Who in this dull and long-continued truce  
Is rusty grown ; he bade me take a trumpet,  
And in this purpose speak. Kings, princes,  
lords !

If there be one among the fair'st of Greece,  
That holds his honour higher than his ease ;  
That seeks his praise more than he fears his  
peril ;

That knows his valour, and knows not to fear ;  
That loves his mistress more than in confession,  
(With truant vows to her own lips he loves,)  
And dare avow her beauty and her worth,  
In other arms than hers,—to him this chal-  
lenge.

Hector, in view of Trojans and of Greeks,  
Shall make it good, or do his best to do it  
He hath a lady, wiser, fairer, truer,  
Than ever Greek did compass in his arms ;  
And will to-morrow with his trumpet call,  
Mid-way between your tents and walls of Troy,  
To rouse a Grecian that is true in love :  
If any come, Hector shall honour him ;  
If none, he'll say in Troy, when he retires,  
The Grecian dames are sun-burn'd, and not  
worth

The splinter of a lance. Even so much :  
*Agam.* This shall be told our lovers, lord  
Æneas ;

If none of them have soul in such a kind,  
We left them all at home. But we are sol-  
diers ;

And may that soldier a mere recreant prove,  
That means not, hath not, or is not in love !  
If then one is, or hath, or means to be,  
That one meets Hector ; if none else, I am he.

*Nest.* Tell him of Nestor, one that was a  
man

When Hector's grandsire suck'd ; he is old now ;  
But if there be not in our Grecian host  
One noble man, that hath one spark of fire  
To answer for his love, tell him from me,—  
I'll hide my silver beard in a gold beaver ;  
And in my vanbracer put this wither'd brawn ;  
And meeting him, will tell him, That my lady  
Was fairer than his grandame, and as chaste  
As may be in the world : His youth in flood,  
I'll prove this truth with my three drops of  
blood

*Ænc.* Now heavens forbid such scarcity of  
youth !

*Ulyss.* Amen !

*Agam.* Fair lord Æneas, let me touch your  
hand ;

To our pavilion shall I lead you, Sir.  
Achilles shall have word of this intent :  
So shall each lord of Greece, from tent to tent :  
Yourself shall feast with us before you go,  
And find the welcome of a noble foe.

[*Exeunt all but ULYSSES and NESTOR.*]

*Ulyss.* Nestor,—

*Nest.* What says Ulysses ?

*Ulyss.* I have a young conception in my  
brain,

Be you my time to bring it to some shape.

*Nest.* What is't ?

*Ulyss.* This 'tis :

Blunt wedges ride hard knots : The seeded pride  
That hath to this maturity blown up  
In rank Achilles, must or now be cropp'd,  
Or, shedding, breed a nursery of like evil,  
To overbulk us all.

*Nest.* Well, and how ?

*Ulyss.* This challenge that the gallant Hector  
sends,

However it is spread in general name,  
Relates in purpose only to Achilles.

*Nest.* The purpose is perspicuous even as sub-  
stance,

Whose grossness little characters sum up :

And, in the publication, make no strain ; \*

But that Achilles, were his brain as barren

As banks of Libya,—though, Apollo knows,

'Tis dry enough,—will, with what great speed of  
judgment,

As, with celerity, find Hector's purpose

Pointing on him.

*Ulyss.* And wake him to the answer, think  
you ?

*Nest.* Yes,

It is most meet ; Whom may you else oppose,

That can from Hector bring those honours off,

If not Achilles ? Though't be a sportful combat,

Yet in the trial much opinion dwells ;

For here the Trojans taste our dear'st repute

With their fin'st palate : And trust to me,

Ulysses,

Our imputation shall be oddly pois'd

In this wild action : for the sarces,

Although particular, shall give a scantling +

Of good or bad into the general ;

And in such indexes, although small pricks ‡

To their subsequent volumes, there is secu

The baby figure of the giant mass

Of things to come at large. It is suppos'd,

He, that meets Hector, issues from our choice :

And choice, being mutual, act of all our souls,

Makes merit her election ; and doth boil,

As 'twere from forth us all, a man distill'd

Out of our virtues ; Who miscarrying,

What heart receives from hence a conquering

part,

To steel a strong opinion to themselves †

Which entertain'd, limbs are his instruments,

In no less working, than are swords and bows

Directive by the limbs.

*Ulyss.* Give pardon to my speech ;—

Therefore 'tis meet, Achilles meet not Hector.

Let us, like merchants, show our foulest wares,

And think, perchance, they'll sell : if not,

The lustre of the better shall exceed,

By showing the worse first. Do not consent,

That ever Hector and Achilles meet ;

For both our honour and our shame, in this,

Are dogg'd with two strange followers.

*Nest.* I see them not with my old eyes ; what  
are they ?

*Ulyss.* What glory our Achilles shares from  
Hector,

Were he not proud, we all should share with him :

But he already is too insolent ;

And we were better parch in Afric sun,

Than in the pride and salt scorn of his eyes,

Should he 'scape Hector fair : If he were  
foi'd,

Why, then we did our main opinion § crush

In taint of our best man. No, make a lottery ,

And, by device, let blockish Ajax draw

The sort ¶ to fight with Hector : Among our  
selves,

Give him allowance for the better man,

For that will physic the great Myrmidon,

Who broils in loud applause ; and make him fall

His crest, that prouder than blue Iris bends.

If the dull brainless Ajax come safe off,

We'll dress him up in voices : If he fail,

Yet go we under our opinion still

That we have better men. But, hit or miss,

Our project's life this shape of sense assumes—

Ajax, employ'd, plucks down Achilles' plumes.

*Nest.* Ulysses,

Now I begin to relish thy advice ;

And I will give a taste of it forthwith

\* Difficulty.

† Size.

‡ Small points compared with the volumes.

§ Character.

¶ Lot.

\* Freely.

† Arvanthras : armour for the arm.

To Agamemnon : go we to him straight.  
Two curs shall tame each other : Pride alone  
Must tarré \* the mastiffs on, as 'twere their bone.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—Another part of the Grecian Camp.

Enter AJAX and THERSITES.

Ajax. Thersites,——  
Ther. Agamemnon—how if he had boils ? full  
all over, generally ?

Ajax. Thersites,——  
Ther. And those boils did run ?—Say so,—did  
not the general run then ? were not that a botchy  
core ?

Ajax. Dog,——  
Ther. Then would come some matter from  
him ; I see none now.

Ajax. Thou bitch-wolf's son, canst thou not  
hear ? Feel then. [Strikes him.]

Ther. The plague of Greece upon thee, thou  
mongrel beef-witted lord !

Ajax. Speak then, thou unsalted laven ! speak :  
I will beat thee into handsomeness.

Ther. I shall sooner rail thee into wit and ho-  
liness : but I think thy horse will sooner con an  
oration, than thou learn a prayer without book.  
Thou canst strike, canst thou ? a red murrain  
o' thy jade's tricks !

Ajax. Toads-stool, learn me the proclamation.  
Ther. Dost thou think I have no sense, thou  
strikest me thus ?

Ajax. The proclamation,——  
Ther. Thou art proclaimed a fool, I think.  
Ajax. Do not, porcupine, do not ; my fingers  
itch.

Ther. I would thou didst itch from head to  
foot, and I had the scratching of thee ; I would  
make thee the loathsomest scab in Greece. When  
thou art forth in the incursions, thou strik'st as  
slow as another.

Ajax. I say, the proclamation,——  
Ther. Thou grumblest and ralest every hour  
on Achilles, and thou art as full of envy at his  
greatness as Cerberus at Proserpina's beauty ;  
ay, that thou barrest at him.

Ajax. Mistress Thersites !  
Ther. Thou should'st strike him.

Ajax. Cobloar !  
Ther. He would pun<sup>†</sup> thee into shivers with  
his fist, as a sailor breaks a biscuit.

Ajax. You whoremonger cur ! [Beating him.]  
Ther. Do, do.

Ajax. Thou stool for a witch !  
Ther. Ay, do, do ; thou sodden-witted lord !  
thou hast no more brain than I have in mine  
elbows ; an assinego<sup>‡</sup> may tutor thee : Thou  
scurry valiant ass ; thou art here put to thrash  
Trojans ; and thou art bought and sold among  
those of any wit, like a Barbarian slave. If thou  
use<sup>‡</sup> to beat me, I will begin at thy heel, and  
tell what thou art by inches, thou thing of no  
bowels, thou !

Ajax. You dog !  
Ther. You scurvy lord !

Ajax. You cur ! [Beating him.]  
Ther. Mars his idiot, do ! rudeness ; do, cannot ;  
do, do.

Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.

Achil. Why, how now, Ajax ? wherefore do  
you thus ?  
How now, Thersites ? what's the matter, man ?  
Ther. You see him there, do you ?  
Achil. Ay ; what's the matter ?  
Ther. Nay, look upon him.

Achil. So I do ; What's the matter ?  
Ther. Nay, but regard him well.

Achil. Well, why I do so.  
Ther. But yet you look not well upon him : for  
whosoever you take him to be, he is Ajax.

Achil. I know that, fool.  
Ther. Ay, but that fool knows not himself.

Achil. Therefore I beat thee.  
Ther. Lo, lo, lo, lo, what modicums of wit  
he utters ! his evasions have ears thus long. I  
have bobbed his brain, more than he has beat  
my bones : I will buy nine sparrows for a penny  
and his *pia mater* \* is not worth the ninth part  
of a sparrow. This lord, Achilles, Ajax,—who  
wears his wit in his belly, and his guts in his  
head,—I'll tell you what I say of him.

Achil. What ?  
Ther. I say this, Ajax——

Achil. Nay, good Ajax.  
[AJAX offers to strike him, ACHILLES  
interposes.]

Ther. Has not so much wit——  
Achil. Nay, I must hold you.

Ther. As will stop the eye of Helen's needle,  
for whom he comes to fight.

Achil. Peace, fool !  
Ther. I would have peace and quietness,  
but the fool will not : he there ; that he, look  
you there.

Ajax. O thou damned cur ! I shall——  
Achil. Will you set your wit to a fool's ?

Ther. No, I warrant you ; for a fool's wit  
shame it.

Patr. Good words, Thersites.  
Achil. What's the quarrel ?

Ajax. I bade the vile owl go learn me the  
tenour of the proclamation, and he rails upon me.

Ther. I serve thee not.  
Ajax. Well, go to, go to.

Ther. I serve here voluntary. †  
Achil. Your last service was sufferance, 'twas  
not voluntary ; no man is braten voluntary ;  
Ajax was here the voluntary, and you as under  
an impress.

Ther. Even so ?—a great deal of your wit too  
lies in your sinews, or else there be hairs. Hector  
shall have a great catch, if he knock out either  
of your brains ; a' were as good crack a lusty nut  
with no kernel.

Achil. What with me too, Thersites ?  
Ther. There's Ulysses, and old Nestor,—whose  
wit was mouldy ere your grandsires had nails on  
their toes,—yoke you like draught oxen, and  
make you plough up the wars.

Achil. What, what ?  
Ther. Yes, good sooth ; To, Achilles ! to  
Ajax ! to !

Ajax. I shall cut out your tongue.  
Ther. 'Tis no matter ; I shall speak as much  
as thou afterwards.

Patr. No more words, Thersites ; peace.  
Ther. I will hold my peace when Achilles'  
brach<sup>‡</sup> bids me, shall I ?

Achil. There's for you, Patroclus.  
Ther. I will see you hanged, like clopoles  
ere I come any more to your tents ; I will keep  
where there is wit stirring, and leave the faction  
of fools. [Exit.]

Patr. A good riddance.  
Achil. Marry, this, Sir, is proclaim'd through  
all our host :

That Hector, by the first hour of the sun,  
Will, with a trumpet, 'twixt our tents and Troy,  
To-morrow morning call some knight to arms,  
That hath a stomach ; and such a one, that dare  
Maintain—I know not what ; 'tis trash : Fare-  
well.

Ajax. Farewell. Who shall answer him ?  
Achil. I know not it is put to lottery ; other-  
He knew his man. [wise,  
Ajax. Oh ! meaning you :—I'll go learn more  
of it. [Exeunt.]

\* Provokes. † A crusty uneven loaf.  
‡ Pound. ‡ A cant term for a foolish fellow.  
‡ Continue.

\* The membrane that protects the brain  
† Voluntarily. ‡ Bitch.

SCENE II.—*Troy.*—A Room in PRIAM'S Palace.

Enter PRIAM, HECTOR, TROILUS, PARIS, and HELENUS.

*Pri.* After so many hours, lives, speeches spent,

Thus once again says Nestor from the Greeks:

*Deliver Helen, and all damage else—*

*As honour, loss of time, travel, expence, Wounds, friends, and what else dear that is consum'd*

*In hot digestion of this cormorant war,—*

*Shall be struck off*—Hector, what say you to't?

*Hect.* Though no man lesser fears the Greeks than I,

As far as toucheth my particular, yet,

Dread Priam,

There is no lady of more softer bowels,

More springy to suck in the sense of fear,

More ready to cry out—*Who knows what follows?*

Than Hector is: The wound of peace is surety,

Surety secure; but modest doubt is call'd

The beacon of the wise, the tent that searches

To the bottom of the worst. Let Helen go:

Since the first sword was drawn about this

question,

Every tithen soul,\* amongst many thousand dismes,\*

Hath been as dear as Helen: I mean, of ours:

If we have lost so many tenths of ours,

To guard a thing not ours; not worth to us,

Had it our name, the value of one ten;

What merits in that reason, which denies

The yielding of her up?

*Tro.* Fie, fie, my brother!

Weigh you the worth and honour of a king,

So great as our dread father, in a scale

Of common ounces? Will you with counters sum

The past-proportion of his minute?

And buckel in a waist most lathomless,

With spans and inches so diminutive

As tears and reasons? Fie, for godly shame!

*Hec.* No marvel, though you bite so sharp at

reasons,

You are so empty of them. Should not our

father [sobs],

Beat the great war of his affairs with tea

Because your speech hath none, that tells him so?

*Tro.* You are too dreams and slumbers, brother priest,

You fur your gloves with reason. Here are

your reasons:

You know, an enemy intends you harm;

You know, a sword employ'd is perilous,

And reason flies the object of all harm:

Who marvels then, when Helenus beholds

A Grecian and his sword, if he do set

The very wings of reason to his heels;

And if, like chidden Mercury from Jove,

Or like a star disorb'd?—Nay, if we talk of reason,

Let's shut our gates, and sleep: Manhood and

should have bare hearts, would they but fat

their thoughts

With this clamor'd reason: reason and respect

Make livers pale, and lusthood deject.

*Hect.* Brother, she is not worth what she

doth cost

The holding.

*Tro.* What is aught, but as 'tis valued?

*Hect.* But value dwells not in particular will;

It holds his estimate and dignity

As well where'er 'tis precious of itself

As in the prizer: 'tis mad idolatry,

To make the service greater than the god;

And the will dotes, that is attributive

To what infection itself affects,

Without some image of the affected merit.

*Tro.* I take to-day a wife, and my election

Is led on in the conduct of my will;

My will enkindled by mine eyes and ears,

\* Tenths.

† Caution.

Two traded pilots 'twixt the dangerous shores  
Of will and judgment: How may I avoid,  
Although my will distaste what it elected,  
The wife I chose? there can be no evasion  
To blench \* from this, and to stand firm by lo-  
nour:

We turn not back the silks upon the merchant  
When we have sold't them; nor the remainder  
vands

We do not throw in unrespective sieve,†

Because we now are full. It was thought meet,

Paris should do some vengeance on the Greeks:

Your breath with full consent bellied his sails;

The seas and winds (old wranglers) took a truce,

And did him service: he touch'd the ports de-  
air'd; [captives]

And, for an old aunt,‡ whom the Greeks held

He brought a Grecian queen, whose youth and  
freshness

Wrinkles Apollo's, and makes pale the morning.

Why keep we her? the Grecians keep our aunt:

Is she worth keeping? why, she is a pearl!

Whose price hath launch'd above a thousand  
ships,

And turn'd crown'd kings to merchants.

If you'll avouch 'twas wisdom Paris went,

(As you must needs, for you all cried—*Go, go,*)

If you'll confess, he brought home noble prize,

(As you must needs, for you all clapp'd your  
hands,

And cried—*Justifiable!*) why do you now

The issue of your proper wisdoms rate;

And do a deed that fortune never did,

Beggar the estimation which you priz'd

Richer than sea and land? O theft most base:

That we have stolen what we do fear to keep!

But, thieves, unworthy of a thing so stolen,

That in their country did them that disgrace,

We fear to warrant in our native place!

*Cas.* [Within.] Cry, Trojans, cry!

*Pri.* What noise? what shriek is this?

*Tro.* 'Tis our mad sister, I do know her  
voice.

*Cas.* [Within.] Cry, Trojans!

*Hect.* It is Cassandra.

Enter CASSANDRA, raving.

*Cas.* Cry, Trojans, cry! lend me ten thousand  
eyes,

And I will fill them with prophetic tears.

*Hect.* Peace, sister, peace.

*Cas.* Virgins and boys, mid-age and wrinkled  
elders,

Soft infancy, that nothing canst but cry,

Add to my clamours! let us pay betimes

A moiety of that mass of moan to come.

Cry, Trojans, cry! practise your eyes with tears!

Troy must not be, nor goodly Ilion stand;

Our fire-brand brother, Paris, § burns us all.

Cry, Trojans, cry! a Helen, and a woe:

Cry, cry! Troy burns, or else let Helen go.

[Exit.

*Hect.* Now youthful Troilus, do not these high  
strains

Of divination in our sister work

Some touches of remorse? or is your blood

So madly hot, that no discourse of reason,

Nor fear of bad success in a bad cause,

Can qualify the same?

*Tro.* Why, brother Hector,

We may not think the justness of each act

Such and no other than event doth form it

Nor once deject the courage of our minds,

Because Cassandra's mad: her brain-sick rap-  
tures

Cannot distaste || the goodness of a quarrel,

Which hath our several honours all engag'd

To make it gracious. ¶ For my private part,

I am no more touch'd than all Priam's sons:

And Jove forbid, there should be done amongst  
us

\* Shrink.

† I.e. a common vender.

‡ Priam's sister, Hesione.

§ Her mother, Hecuba, dreamt she should bring forth a fire-brand.

|| Corrupt, change to a worse estate. ¶ To give it estate.

Such things as might offend the weakest spleen  
To fight for and maintain!

*Par.* Else might the world convince \* of levity  
As well my undertakings, as your counsels:  
But I attest the gods, your full consent  
Gave wings to my propension, and cut off  
All fears attending on so dire a project.  
For what, alas, can these my single arms!  
What propugnation† is in one man's valour,  
To stand the push and enmity of those  
This quarrel would excite? Yet, I protest,  
Were I alone to pass the difficulties,  
And had as ample power as I have will,  
Paris should ne'er retract what he hath done,  
Nor faint in the pursuit.

*Pri.* Paris, you speak  
Like one besotted on your sweet delights:  
Like have the honey still, but these the gall;  
So to be valiant, is no praise at all.

*Par.* Sir, I propose not merely to myself  
The pleasures such a beauty brings with it;  
But I would have the soil of her fair rape  
Wip'd off in honourable keeping her.  
What treason were it to the ransack'd queen,  
Disgrace to your great worths, and shame to me,  
Now to deliver her possession up,  
On terms of base compulsion? Can it be,  
That so degenerate a strain as this [soms?]  
Should once set footing in your generous bosom?  
There's not the meanest spirit on our party,  
Without a heart to dare, or sword to draw,  
When Helen is defended; nor none so noble,  
Whose life were ill bestow'd, or death unman'd,  
Where Helen is the subject; then, I say,  
Well may we fight for her, whom, we know well,  
The world's large spaces cannot parallel.

*Hect.* Paris and Troilus, you have both said  
well:

And on the cause and question now in hand  
Have glaz'd,—but superficially; ‡ not much  
Unlike young men, whom Aristotle thought  
Unfit to hear moral philosophy:  
The reasons you allege, do more conduce  
To the hot passion of distemper'd blood,  
Than to make up a free determination  
\* Twixt right and wrong; For pleasure and re-  
venge

Have hears more deaf than adders to the voice  
Of any true decision. Nature craves  
All dues be render'd to their owners: Now  
What nearer debt in all humanity,  
Than wife is to the husband? if this law  
Of nature be corrupted through affection;  
And that great minds, of § partial indulgence  
To their benumbed¶ wills, resist the same;  
There is a law in each well-order'd nation,  
To curb those raging appetites that are  
Most disobedient and refractory.  
If Helen then be wife to Sparta's king;—  
As it is known she is,—these moral laws  
Of nature, and of nations, speak aloud  
To have her back return'd: Thus to persist  
In doing wrong, extenuates not wrong,  
But makes it much more heavy. Hector's opi-  
nion

Is this in way of truth: yet ne'ertheless,  
My spritely brethren, I propend ¶ to you  
In resolution to keep Helen still;  
For 'tis a cause that hath no mean dependence  
Upon our joint and several dignities.

*Tro.* Why, there you touch'd the life of our  
design:

Were it not glory that we more affected  
Than the performance of our heaving spleens,  
I would not wish a drop of Trojan blood  
Spent more in her defence. But, worthy Hec-  
tor,

She is a theme of honour and renown;  
A spur to valiant and magnanimous deeds;  
Whose present courage may beat down our foes,  
And fame, in time to come, canonize us;

For, I presume, brave Hector would not lose  
So rich advantage of a promis'd glory,  
As smiles upon the forehead of this action,  
For the wide world's revenue.

*Hect.* I am yours,  
You valiant offspring of great Priamus.  
I have a roisting \* challenge sent amongst  
The dull and factious nobles of the Greeks,  
Will strike amazement to their drowsy spirits:  
I was advertised their great general slept,  
Whilst emulation† in the army crept;  
This, I presume, will wake him. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—The Grecian Camp.—Before  
ACHILLES' Tent.

Enter THERSITES.

*Ther.* How now, Thersites? what, lost in the  
labyrinth of thy fury? Shall the elephant Ajax  
carry it thus? he beats me, and I rail at him:  
O worthy satisfaction! \* would it were otherwise;  
that I could beat him whilst he railed at me:  
'Sfoot, I'll learn to conjure and raise devils, but  
I'll see some issue of my spiteful execrations.  
Then there's Achilles,—a rare engineer. If Troy  
be not taken till these two undermine it, the  
walls will stand till they fall of themselves. O  
thou great thunder-darter of Olymps, forget that  
thou art Jove the king of gods; and, Mercury,  
lose all the serpentine craft of thy Caduceus; ‡  
if ye take not that little little less-than-little wit  
from them that they have! which short-armed  
ignorance itself knows is so abundant scarce, it  
will not in circumvention deliver a fly from a  
spider, without drawing their massy moons, and  
cutting the web. After this, the vengeance on  
the whole camp! or, rather, the bone-ache! for  
that, methinks, is the curse dependent on those  
that war for a placket. I have said my prayers;  
and devil, envy, say Amen. What, ho! my lord  
Achilles!

Enter PATROCLUS.

*Patr.* Who's there? Thersites? Good Thersites,  
come in and rail.

*Ther.* If I could have remembered a gilt  
counterfeit, thou wouldest not have shipped out  
of my contemplation: but it is no matter: Thy-  
self upon thyself! The common curse of main-  
kind, folly and ignorance, be thine in great re-  
venue! heaven bless thee from a tutor, and disci-  
pline come not near thee! Let thy blood be  
thy direction till thy death! then if she, that  
lays thee out, says,—thou art a fair coise, I'll  
be sworn and sworn upon't, she never shrouded  
any but lazars. ¶ Amen.—Where's Achilles?

*Patr.* What, art thou devout? wast thou in  
prayer?

*Ther.* Ay; The heavens hear me!

Enter ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Who's there?

*Patr.* Thersites, my lord.

*Achil.* Where, where?—Art thou come? Why,  
my cheese, my digestion, why hast thou not  
served thyself in on my table so many meals?  
Come; what's Agamemnon?

*Ther.* Thy commander, Achilles:—Then tell  
me, Patroclus, what's Achilles?

*Patr.* Thy lord, Thersites; Then tell me, I  
pray thee, what's thyself?

*Ther.* Thy knower, Patroclus; Then tell me  
Patroclus, what art thou?

*Patr.* Thou mayest tell, that knowest.

*Achil.* Oh! tell, tell.

*Ther.* I'll decline the whole question. Aga-  
memnon commands Achilles; Achilles is my  
lord; I am Patroclus' knower; and Patroclus is  
a fool.

*Patr.* You rascal!

*Ther.* Peace, fool; I have not done.

\* Convict.

† Spoken sophistically  
‡ Indefinite.

† Force.

‡ Through.  
¶ Incline to.

\* Blustering.

† Envy.

‡ The wand of Mercury wreathed with serpents.  
¶ Passions. ¶ Leprous persons.

*Achil.* He is a privileged man.—Proceed, Thersites.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool : Achilles is a fool ; Thersites is a fool ; and, as aforesaid, Patroclus is a fool.

*Achil.* Derive this ; come.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool to offer to command Achilles ; Achilles is a fool to be commanded of Agamemnon ; Thersites is a fool to serve such a fool ; and Patroclus is a fool positive.

*Patr.* Why am I a fool ?

*Ther.* Make that demand of the prover.—It suffices me, thou art. Look you, who comes here !

*Enter AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, DIOMEDES, AND AJAX.*

*Achil.* Patroclus, I'll speak with nobody :—Come in with me, Thersites. *[Exit.]*

*Ther.* Here is such patchery, such juggling, and such knavery ! all the argument is, a cuckold and a whore ; A good quarrel to draw emulous factions, and bleed to death upon ! Now the dry *serpigo* ! on the subject ! and war and lechery confound all ! *[Exit.]*

*Agam.* Where is Achilles ?

*Patr.* Within his tent ; but ill dispos'd, my lord.

*Agam.* Let it be known to him that we are here.

*He silent ;* our messengers ; and we lay by our appetitaunments, § visiting of him :

Let him be told so ; lest, perchance, he think We dare not move the question of our place, Or know not what we are.

*Patr.* I shall say so to him. *[Exit.]*

*Ulyss.* We saw him at the opening of his tent : He is not sick.

*Ajax.* Yes, lion-sick, sick of proud heart : you may call it melancholy, if you will favour the mau, but, by my head, 'tis pride : But why, why ? let him show us a cause.—A word, my lord. *[Takes AGAMEMNON aside.]*

*Nest.* What moves Ajax thus to bay at him ?

*Ulyss.* Achilles hath inveigled his fool from him.

*Nest.* Who ? Thersites ?

*Ulyss.* He.

*Nest.* Then will Ajax lack matter, if he have not his argument. ||

*Ulyss.* No you see, he is his argument, that has his argument ; Achilles.

*Nest.* All the better ; then fraction is more our wish, than their faction : But it was a strong compulsion, a fool could disunite.

*Ulyss.* The amity that wisdom knits not, folly may easily untie. Here comes Patroclus.

*Re-enter PATROCLUS.*

*Nest.* No Achilles with him.

*Ulyss.* The elephant hath joints, but none for courtesy ; his legs are legs for necessity, not for flexure.

*Patr.* Achilles bids me say—he is much sorry,

If any thing more than your sport and pleasure Did move your greatness, and this noble state, To call upon him : he hopes, it is no other, But for your health and your digestion sake, And after-dinner's breath. ¶

*Agam.* Hear you, Patroclus ;—We are too well acquainted with these answers : But his evasion, wing'd thus swift with scorn, Cannot outfly our apprehensions.

Much attribute he hath ; and much the reason Why we ascribe it to him : yet all his virtues,—Not virtuously on his own part beheld,—Do, in our eyes, begin to lose their gloss ; Yea, like fair fruit in an unwholesome dish, Are like to rot untasted. Go and tell him,

We come to speak with him : And you shall not sin,

If you do say—we think him over-proud, And under-honest ; in self-assumption greater, Than in the note of judgment : and worthier than himself

Here tend \* the savage strangeness † he puts on ; Disguise the holy strength of their command, And underwrite ‡ in an observing kind His humorous predominance ; yea, watch His pettish lunes, § his ebbs, his flows, as if The passage and whole carriage of this action Rode on his tide. Go, tell him this ; and add, That, if he overhold his price so much, We'll none of him ; but let him, like an engine Not portable, lie under this report—Bring action hither, this cannot go to war : A stirring dwarf we do allowance || give Before a sleeping giant :—Tell him so.

*Patr.* I shall ; and bring his answer presently. *[Exit.]*

*Agam.* In second voice we'll not be satisfied, We come to speak with him.—Ulysses, enter. *[Exit ULYSSES.]*

*Ajax.* What is he more than another ?

*Agam.* No more than what he thinks he is.

*Ajax.* Is he so much ? Do you not think, he thinks himself a better man than I am ?

*Agam.* No question.

*Ajax.* Will you subscribe his thought, and say—he is ?

*Agam.* No, noble Ajax ; you are as strong, as valiant, as wise, no less noble, much more gentle, and altogether more tractable.

*Ajax.* Why should a man be proud ? How doth pride grow ? I know not what pride is.

*Agam.* Your mind's the clearer, Ajax, and your virtues the fairer. He that is proud, eats up himself : pride is his own glass, his own trumpet, his own chronicle ; and whatever praises itself but in the deed, devours the deed in the praise.

*Ajax.* I do hate a proud man, as I hate the engendering of toads.

*Nest.* And yet he loves himself : Is it not strange ? *[Aside.]*

*Re-enter ULYSSES.*

*Ulyss.* Achilles will not to the field to-morrow.

*Agam.* What's his excuse ?

*Ulyss.* He doth rely on none ;

But carries on the stream of his dispose, Without observance or respect of any, In will peculiar and in self-admission.

*Agam.* Why will he not, upon our fair request,

Untent his person, and share the air with us ?

*Ulyss.* Things small as nothing, for request's sake only, [greatness ;

He makes important : Possess'd he is with And speaks not to himself, but with a pride That quarrels at self-breath : imagin'd worth Holds in his blood such swoll and hot discourse,

That, 'twixt his mental and his active parts, Kingdom'd Achilles in commotion rages, And batters down himself : What should I say ? He is so plagu' proud, that the death tokens of it Cry—No recovery.

*Agam.* Let Ajax go to him.—

Dear lord, go you and greet him in his tent :

'Tis said he holds you well : and will be led,

At your request, a little from himself.

*Ulyss.* O Agamemnon, let it not be so !

We'll consecrate the steps that Ajax makes When they go from Achilles : shall the proud lord,

That bastes his arrogance with his own seam, ¶

And never suffers matter of the world

Enter his thoughts,—save such as do revolve

\* Envious. † Tetter, scab. ‡ Rebuked.  
§ Our rank and dignity. || Subject.  
¶ Breathing or exercise.

\* Attend. † Shyness. ‡ Obey  
§ Fits of lunacy. || Appropriation.  
¶ Swine-seam is hog's lard.



And ruminate himself,—shall he be worshipp'd  
Of that we hold an idol more than he?  
No, this thrice worthy and right valiant lord  
Must not so stale his palm, nobly acquit'd,  
Nor, by my will, assubugate his merit,  
As simply titled as Achilles is,

By going to Achilles:  
That were to enlaid his fat-already pride;  
And add more coals to Cancer,\* when he burns  
With entertaining great Hyperion.  
This lord go to him! Jupiter forbid;  
And say in thunder—*Achilles, go to him.*

*Nest.* Oh! this is well; he rubs the vein of him.

*Di.* And how his silence drinks up this applause!

*Ajax.* If I go to him, with my arm'd fist I'll pash† him

Over the face.

*Agam.* Oh! no, you shall not go.

*Ajax.* An he be proud with me, I'll pheeze‡ his pride:

Let me go to him.

*Ulyss.* Not for the worth that hangs upon our quarrel.

*Ajax.* A paltry, insolent fellow,—

*Nest.* How he describes

Himself! [*Aside.*

*Ajax.* Can he not be sociable?

*Ulyss.* The raven

Chides blackness. [*Aside.*

*Ajax.* I will let his humours blood.

*Agam.* He'll be physician, that should be the patient. [*Aside.*

*Ajax.* An all men

Were o' my mind,—

*Ulyss.* Wit would be out of fashion. [*Aside.*

*Ajax.* He should not bear it so,

He should eat swords first: Shall pride carry it?

*Nest.* An 'twould, you'd carry half. [*Aside.*

*Ulyss.* He'd have ten shares. [*Aside.*

*Ajax.* I'll knead him, I will make him supple:—

*Nest.* He's not yet thorough warm: force him with praises:

Pour in, pour in; his ambition is dry. [*Aside.*

*Ulyss.* My lord, you feed too much on this dislike. [*To AGAMEMNON.*

*Nest.* O noble general, do not do so.

*Di.* You must prepare to fight without Achilles

*Ulyss.* Why, 'tis this naming of him does him harm.

Here is a man—But 'tis before his face;

I will be silent.

*Nest.* Wherefore should you so?

He is not enulous|| as Achilles is.

*Ulyss.* Know the whole world, he is as valiant.

*Ajax.* A whoreson dog, that shall palter¶ thus thus!

would he were a Trojan!

*Nest.* What a vice

Were it in Ajax now—

*Ulyss.* If he were proud!

*Di.* Or covetous of praise?

*Ulyss.* Ay, or surly borne?

*Di.* Or strange, or self-affected?

*Ulyss.* Thank the heavens, lord, thou art of sweet composure;

Praise him that got thee, she that gave thee suck:

Fam'd be thy tutor, and thy parts of nature

Thrice-fam'd beyond all erudition:

But he that disciplin'd thy arms to fight,

Let Mars divide eternally in twain,

And give him half: and, for thy vigour,

Bull-bearing Milo his addition\*\* yield

To sinewy Ajax. I will not praise thy wisdom,

Which, like a bourn,†† a pale, a shore, confines

\* The sign in the zodiac into which the sun (Hyperion) enters at Midsummer. † Strike.

‡ Comb or curry. § Stuff. ¶ Envious. \*\* Boils. †† Trade. †† Boundry

Thy spacious and dilated parts: Here's Nestor,—  
Instructed by the antiquary times,  
He must, he is, he cannot but be wise:—  
But pardon, father Nestor, were your days  
As green as Ajax', and your brain so temper'd  
You should not have the eminence of him,  
But be as Ajax.

*Ajax.* Shall I call you father?

*Nest.* Ay, my good son.

*Di.* Be rul'd by him, lord Ajax.

*Ulyss.* There is no tarrying here; the hart

Achilles

Keeps thicket. Please it our great general

To call together all his state of war;

Fresh kings are come to Troy: To-morrow,

We must with all our main of power stand fast:

And here's a lord,—come knights from east to west,

And cull their flower, Ajax shall cope the best.

*Agam.* Go we to council. Let Achilles sleep.

Light beats sail swift, though greater hulk draw deep. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—Troy.—A Room in PRIAM'S Palace.

Enter PANDARUS and a SERVANT.

*Pan.* Friend! you! pray you, a word: Do not you follow the young lord Paris!

*Serv.* Ay, Sir, when he goes before me.

*Pan.* You do depend upon him, I mean?

*Serv.* Sir, I do depend upon the lord.

*Pan.* You do depend upon a noble gentleman; I must needs praise him.

*Serv.* The lord be praised!

*Pan.* You know me, do you not?

*Serv.* Faith, Sir, superficially.

*Pan.* Friend, know me better; I am the lord Pandarus.

*Serv.* I hope, I shall know your honour better.

*Pan.* I do desire it.

*Serv.* You are in the state of grace.

*Pan.* Grace! not so, friend; [*Music within.*

honour and lordship are my titles:—What music is this?

*Serv.* I do but partly know, Sir; it is music in parts.

*Pan.* Know you the musicians?

*Serv.* Wholly, Sir.

*Pan.* Who play they to?

*Serv.* To the hearers, Sir.

*Pan.* At whose pleasure, friend?

*Serv.* At mine, Sir, and their's that love music.

*Pan.* Command, I mean, friend.

*Serv.* Who shall I command, Sir?

*Pan.* Friend, we understand not one another; I am too courtly, and thou art too cunning: At whose request do these men play?

*Serv.* That's to't, indeed, Sir: Marry, Sir at the request of Paris my lord, who is there in person; with him, the mortal Venus, the beautiful of beauty, love's invisible soul,—

*Pan.* Who, my cousin Cressida?

*Serv.* No, Sir, Helen; Could you not find out that by her attributes?

*Pan.* It should seem, fellow, that thou hast not seen the lady Cressida. I come to speak with Paris from the prince Troilus: I will make a complimentary assault upon him, for my business seeths.\*

*Serv.* Sudden business! there's a stewed phrase, indeed!

Enter PARIS and HELEN, attended.

*Pan.* Fair be to you, my lord, and to all this fair company! fair desires, in all fair measure,

\* Boils.

fairly guide them! especially to you, fair queen! fair thoughts be your fair pillow!

*Helen.* Dear lord, you are full of fair words.

*Pan.* You speak your fair pleasure, sweet queen.—

Fair prince, here is good broken music.

*Par.* You have broke it, cousin; and, by my life, you shall make it whole again: you shall piece it out with a piece of your performance.—Well, he is full of harmony.

*Pan.* Truly, lady, no.

*Helen.* O Sir,—

*Pan.* Rude, in sooth; in good sooth, very rude.

*Par.* Well said, my lord! well, you say so in fits.\*

*Pan.* I have business to my lord, dear queen:—

My lord, will you vouchsafe me a word?

*Helen.* Nay, this shall not hedge us out; we'll bear you sing, certainly.

*Pan.* Well, sweet queen, you are pleasant with me.—But (marry) thus, my lord,—My dear lord, and most esteemed friend, your brother Troilus—

*Helen.* My lord Pandarus; honey-sweet lord,—

*Pan.* Go to, sweet queen, go to:—commends himself most affectionately to you.

*Helen.* You shall not bob us out of our melody; if you do, our melancholy upon your head!

*Pan.* Sweet queen, sweet queen; that's a sweet queen, I'faith.

*Helen.* And to make a sweet lady sad, is a sour offence.

*Pan.* Nay, that shall not serve your turn; that shall it not, in truth, la. Nay, I care not for such words; no, no.—And, my lord, he desires you, that, if the king call for him at supper, you will make his excuse.

*Helen.* My lord Pandarus,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen,—my very very sweet queen?

*Par.* What exploit's in hand? where sups he to-night?

*Helen.* Nay, but my lord,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen?—My cousin will fall out with you. You must not know where he sups.

*Par.* I'll lay my life, with my disposer Cressida.

*Pan.* No, no, no such matter, you are wide; come, your disposer is sick.

*Par.* Well, I'll make excuse.

*Pan.* Ay, good my lord. Why should you say—Cressida? no, your poor disposer's sick.

*Par.* I spy.

*Pan.* You spy! what do you spy?—Come, give me an instrument.—Now, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Why, this is kindly done.

*Pan.* My niece is horribly in love with a thing you have, sweet queen.

*Helen.* She shall have it, my lord, if it be not my lord Paris.

*Pan.* He! no, she'll none of him; they two are twain.

*Helen.* Falling in, after falling out, may make them three.

*Pan.* Come, come, I'll hear no more of this; I'll sing you a song now.

*Helen.* Ay, ay, pr'ythee now. By my troth, sweet lord, thou hast a fine forehead.

*Pan.* Ay, you may, you may.

*Helen.* Let thy song be love: this love will undo us all. O Cupid, Cupid, Cupid!

*Pan.* Love! ay, that it shall, I'faith.

*Par.* Ay, good now, love, love, nothing but love.

*Pan.* In good troth, it begins so:

*Love, love, nothing but love, still more!*

*For, oh! love's bow*

*Shouts buck and doe:*

\* By fits.

† Wide of your mark.

*The shaft confounds,  
Not that it wounds,  
But tickles still the sore.*

*These lovers cry—Oh! oh! they die!  
Yet that which seems the wound to kill  
Doth turn oh! oh! to ha! ha! he!  
So dying love lives still:  
Oh! oh! a while, but ha! ha! ha!  
Oh! oh! groans out for ha! ha! ha!*

Hey ho!

*Helen.* In love, I'faith, to the very tip of the nose

*Par.* He eats nothing but doves, love; and that breeds hot blood, and hot blood begets hot thoughts, and hot thoughts beget hot deeds, and hot deeds is love.

*Pan.* Is this the generation of love? hot blood, hot thoughts, and hot deeds?—Why, they are vipers: is love a generation of vipers? Sweet lord, who's a-field to-day?

*Par.* Hector, Deiphobus, Helenus, Antenor, and all the gallantry of Troy: I would fain have armed to-night, but my Neill would not have it so.—How chance my brother Troilus went not?

*Helen.* He hangs the lip at something;—you know all, lord Pandarus.

*Pan.* Not I, honey-sweet queen.—I long to hear how they sped to-day.—You'll remember your brother's excuse?

*Par.* To a hair.

*Pan.* Farewell, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Commend me to your niece.

*Pan.* I will, sweet queen. [Exit.

[A Retreat sounded.]

*Par.* They are come from field: let us to Priam's hall,

To greet the warriors. Sweet Helen, I must woo you

To help unarm our Hector: his stubborn buckles,

With these your white enchanting fingers touch'd Shall more obey, than to the edge of steel, Or force of Greekish sinews; you shall do more Than all the island kings, disarm great Hector!

*Helen.* 'Twill make us proud to be his servant, Paris:

Yea, what he shall receive of us in duty,

Give us more palm in beauty than we have;

Yea, o'er shines ourself.

*Par.* Sweet, above thought I love thee.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The same. PANDARUS' Orchard.

Enter PANDARUS and a SERVANT, meeting.

*Pan.* How now? where's thy master? at my cousin Cressida's?

*Serv.* No, Sir; he stays for you to conduct him thither.

Enter TROIILUS.

*Pan.* Oh! here he comes.—How now, how now?

*Tro.* Sirrah, walk off. [Exit. SERVANT.]

*Pan.* Have you seen my cousin?

*Tro.* No, Pandarus: I stalk about her door, Like a strange soul upon the Stygian banks Staying for waftage. Oh be thou my Chaucer, And give me swift transporance to those fields, Where I may wallow in the lily beds, Propos'd for the deserver! O gentle Pandarus, From Cupid's shoulder pluck his painted wings, And fly with me to Cressid!

*Pan.* Walk here I'the orchard; I'll bring her straight. [Exit PANDARUS.]

*Tro.* I am giddy: expectation whisks me. The imaginary relish is so sweet [round.

That it enchants my sense: What will it be When that the watery palate tastes indeed

Love's thrice-reputed nectar! death, I fear me; Swooning destruction; or some joy too sweet,

Too subtle-potent, tun'd too sharp in fineness, For the capacity of my ruder powers:

I fear it much ; and I do fear besides,  
That I shall lose distinction in my joys ;  
As doth a battle, when they charge on heaps  
The enemy flying.

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* She's making her ready, she'll come straight : you must be witty now. She does so blush, and fetches her wind so short, as if she were frayed with a sprite : I'll fetch her. It is the prettiest villain :—she fetches her breath as short as a new-ta'en sparrow.

*[Exit PANDARUS.]*

*Tro.* Even such a passion doth embrace my bosom :

My heart beats thicker than a feverous pulse ;  
And all my powers do their bestowing lose,  
Like vassalage at unawares encount'ring  
The eye of majesty.

*Enter PANDARUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Pan.* Come, come, what need you blush ? shame's a baby.—Here she is now : swear the oaths now to her, that you have sworn to me.—What are you gone again ? you must be watched ere you be made tame, must you ? Come your ways, come your ways : an you draw backward, we'll put you i'th' fills. \*—Why do you not speak to her ?—Come, draw this curtain, and let's see your picture. Alas the day, how loath you are to offend daylight ! an 'twere dark, you'd close sooner. So, so ; rub on, and kiss the mistress.† How now, a kiss in fee-farm ! build there, carpenter ; the air is sweet. Nay, you shall light your hearts out, ere I part you. The falcon is the tercel,‡ for all the ducks i'th' river : go to, go to.

*Tro.* You have bereft me of all words, lady.

*Pan.* Words pay no debts, give her deeds : but she'll bereave you of the deeds too, if she call your activity in question. What, billing again ? Here's—*In witness whereof the parties interchangeably—Come in come in ; I'll go get a fire.*

*[Exit PANDARUS.]*

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord ?

*Tro.* O Cressida, how often have I wished me thus ?

*Cres.* Wished my lord ?—The gods grant !—O my lord !

*Tro.* What should they grant ? what makes this pretty abrupton ? What too curious diegesies my sweet lady in the fountain of our love ?

*Cres.* More dregs than water if my fears have eyes.

*Tro.* Fears make devils cherubins ; they never see truly.

*Cres.* Blind fear, that seeing reason leads, finds safer footing than blind reason stumbling without fear : To fear the worst, oft cures the worst.

*Tro.* Oh ! let my lady apprehend no fear : in all Cupid's pageant there is presented no monster.

*Cres.* Nor nothing monstrous neither ?

*Tro.* Nothing but our undertakings ; when we vow to weep seas, live in fire, eat rocks, tame tigers ; thinking it harder for our mistress to devise imposition enough, than for us to undergo any difficulty imposed. This is the monstrousness in love, lady,—that the will is infinite, and the execution confined ; that the desire is boundless, and the act a slave to it.

*Cres.* They, say, all lovers swear more performance than they are able, and yet reserve an ability that they never perform ; vowing more than the perfection of ten, and discharging less than the tenth part of one. They that have the voice of lions, and the act of hares, are they not monsters ?

\* I. e. In the shafts. † An allusion to bowling ; what is now called the ball was formerly termed the mistress. ‡ The tercel, the male and the falcon the female hawk.

*Tro.* Are there such ? such are not we : Praise us as we are tasted, allow us as we prove ; our head shall go bare, till merit crown it : no perfection in reversion shall have a praise in present : we will not name desert, before his birth ; and, being born, his addition \* shall be humble. Few words to fair truth : Troilus shall be such to Cressid, as what envy can say worst, shall be a mock for his truth ; and what truth can speak truest, not truer than Troilus.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord ?

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* What, blushing still ? have you not done talking yet ?

*Cres.* Well, uncle, what folly I commit, I dedicate to you.

*Pan.* I thank you for that : if my lord get a boy of you, you'll give him me : Be true to my lord : if he pinch, chide me for it.

*Tro.* You know now your hostages : your uncle's word, and my firm faith.

*Pan.* Nay, I'll give my word for her too ; our kindred, though they be long ere they are wooed, they are constant, being won : they are burs, I can tell you ; they'll stick where they are thrown.

*Cres.* Boldness comes to me now, and brings me heart :

Prince Troilus, I have lov'd you night and day for many weary months.

*Tro.* Why was my Cressid then so hard to win ?

*Cres.* Hard to seem won ; but I was won, my lord,

With the first glance that ever—Pardon me ; If I confess much, you will play the tyrant. I love you now ; but not, till now, so much. But I might master it :—in faith, I lie ; My thoughts were like unbidded children, grown too headstrong for their mother : See, we fools !

Why have I blab'd ? who shall be true to us, When we are so unsecret to ourselves ? But though I lov'd you well, I woo'd you not ; And yet, good faith, I wish'd myself a man ; Or that we women had men's privilege Of speaking first. Sweet, bid me hold my tongue ; For, in this rapture, I shall surely speak. The thing I shall repent. See, see, your silence,

Cunning in dumbness, from my weakness draws My very soul of counsel : Stop my mouth.

*Tro.* And shall, albeit sweet music issues thence.

*Pan.* Pretty, I'faith.

*Cres.* My lord, I do beseech you, pardon me ; 'Twas not my purpose, thus to beg a kiss : I am ashamed ;—O heavens ! what have I done ?—For this time will I take my leave, my lord.

*Tro.* Your leave, sweet Cressid ?

*Pan.* Leave ? an you take leave till to-morrow morning,—

*Cres.* Pray you, content you.

*Tro.* What offends you, lady ?

*Cres.* Sir, mine own company.

*Tro.* You cannot shun Yourself.

*Cres.* Let me go and try : I have a kind of self resides with you ; But an unkind self, that itself will leave, To be another's fool. I would be gone : Where is my wit ? I know not what I speak.

*Tro.* Well know they what they speak, that speak so wisely.

*Cres.* Perchance my lord, I show more craft than love ;

And fell so roundly to a large confession, To angle for your thoughts : But you are wise ; Or else you love not ; For to be wise, and love, Exceeds man's might ; that dwells with gods above.

*Tro.* Oh! that I thought it could be in a woman,  
(As, if it can, I will presume in you,) To feed for aye \* her lamp and flames of love; To keep her constancy in plight and youth, Outliving beauty's outward, with a mind That doth renew swifter than blood decays! Or, that persuasion could but thus convince That my integrity and truth to you [me,— Might be affronted † with the match and weight Of such a winnow'd purity in love: How were I then uplifted! but, alas, I am as true as truth's simplicity, And simpler than the infancy of truth.

*Cres.* In that I'll war with you.

*Tro.* O virtuous fight, When night with right wars who shall be most right!

True swains in love, shall in the world to come, Approve their truths by Troilus: when their rhymes,

Full of protest, of oath, and big compare, ‡ Want smiles, truth tri'd with iteration,— As true as steel, as plantage to the moon, As sun to day, as turtle to her mate, as iron to adamant, as earth to the centre,— Yet, after all comparisons of truth, As truth's authentic author to be cited, As true as Troilus shall crown up § the verse, And sanctify the numbers.

*Cres.* Prophet may you be!

If I be false, or swerve a hair from truth, When time is old and hath forgot itself, When waterdrops have worn the stones of Troy,

And blind oblivion swallow'd cities up, And mighty states characterless are grated To dusty nothing; yet let memory, From false to false, among false maids in love, Upbraid my falsehood! when they have said— as false

As air, as water, wind, or sandy earth, As fox to lamb, as wolf to heifer's calf, Paid to the hind, or stepdame to her son; Yea, let them say, to stick the heart of falsehood, As false as Cressid.

*Pan.* Go to, a bargain made: seal it, seal it; I'll be the witness.—Here I hold your hand; here, my cousin's. If ever you prove false one to another, since I have taken such pains to bring you together, let all pitiful goers-between be called to the world's end after my name, call them all—Pandars: let all constant men be Troiluses, all false women Cressids, and all brokers-between Pandars! say, amen.

*Tro.* Amen.

*Cres.* Amen.

*Pan.* Amen. Whereupon I will show you a chamber and a bed; which bed, because it shall not speak of your pretty encounters, press it to death: away.

And Cupid grant all tongue-tied maidens here, Bed, chamber, Paudar to provide this gear!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—The Grecian Camp.

Enter AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, DIOMEDES, NESTOR, AJAX, MENELAUS, and CALCHAS.

*Cal.* Now, princes, for the service I have done you

The advantage of the time prompts me aloud To call for recompense. Appear it to your mind, That, though the sight I bear in things, to Jove

I have abandon'd Troy, left my possession, Incurr'd a traitor's name; expos'd myself, From certain and possess'd conveniences, To doubtful fortunes; sequest'ring from me all That time, acquaintance, custom, and condition, Made tame and most familiar to my nature; And here, to do you service, am become

As new into the world, strange, unacquainted: I do beseech you, as in way of taste, To give me now a little benefit, Out of those many register'd in promise, Which, you say, live to come in my behalf.

*Agam.* What wouldst thou of us, Trojan! make demand.

*Cal.* You have a Trojan prisoner, call'd Antenor,

Yesterday took; Troy holds him very dear. Offer have you, (often have you thanks therefore.)

Desir'd my Cressid in right great exchange, Whom Troy hath still denied: But this Antenor,

I know, is such a wrest \* in their affairs That their negotiations all must slack, Wanting his manage; and they will almost Give us a prince of blood, a son of Priam, In change of him: let him be sent, great princes, And he shall buy my daughter; and her presence

Shall quite strike off all service I have done, In most accepted pain.

*Agam.* Let Diomedes hear him, And bring us Cressid hither: Calchas shall have What he requests of us.—Good Diomed, Furnish you fairly for this interchange: Withal, bring word—if Hector will to-morrow Be answer'd in his challenge: Ajax is ready.

*Dio.* This shall I undertake; and 'tis a burden Which I am proud to bear.

[*Exeunt* DIOMEDES and CALCHAS.

Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS, before their Tent.

*Ulyss.* Achilles stands i'the entrance of his tent:—

Please it our general to pass strangely † by him, As if he were forgot; and, princes all, Lay negligent and loose regard upon him: I will come last: 'Tis like, he'll question me, Why such unplausible eyes are bent, why tain'd on him:

If so, I have derision med'nable, To use between your strangeness and his pride, Which his own will shall have desire to drink; It may be good: pride hath no other glass To show itself, but pride; for supple knees Feed arrogance, and are the proud man's fees.

*Agam.* We'll execute your purpose, and put on

A form of strangeness as we pass along;— So do each lord; and either greet him not, Or else disdainfully, which shall shake him more

Than if not look'd on. I will lead the way.

*Achil.* What, comes the general to speak with me?

You know my mind, I'll fight no more 'gainst Troy.

*Agam.* What says Achilles? would he ought with us?

*Nest.* Would you, my lord, aught with the general?

*Achil.* No.

*Nest.* Nothing, my lord.

*Agam.* The better.

[*Exeunt* AGAMEMNON and NESTOR.

*Achil.* Good day, good day.

*Men.* How do you? how do you?

[*Exit* MENELAUS.

*Achil.* What, does the cuckold scorn me?

*Ajax.* How now, Patroclus?

*Achil.* Good morrow, Ajax.

*Ajax.* Ha?

*Achil.* Good morrow.

*Ajax.* Ay, and good next day too.

[*Exit* AJAX.

*Achil.* What mean these fellows? Know they not Achilles?

*Patr.* They pass by strangely: they were us'd to bend,

\* Ever. † Met with and match'd.  
‡ Comparison. § Conclude it.

\* An instrument for tuning harps, &c. † Shyly

To send their smiles before them to Achilles ;  
To come as humbly, as they us'd to creep  
To holy altars.

*Achil.* What, am I poor of late ?  
'Tis certain, greatness, once fallen out with  
fortune,

Must fall out with men too : What the declin'd is,  
He shall as soon read in the eyes of others,  
As feel in his own fall : for men, like butter-  
flies, <sup>(mer)</sup>

Show not their mealy wings, but to the sun-  
And not a man, for being simply man,  
Hath any honour ; but honour for those honours  
That are without him, as place, riches, favour,  
Prizes of accident as oft as merit :

Which when they fall, as being slippery standers,  
The love that lean'd on them as slippery too,  
Do one pluck down another, and together  
Lie in the fall. But 'tis not so with me :

Fortune and I are friends ; I do enjoy  
At ample point all that I did possess,  
Save these men's looks ; who do, methinks,  
find out

Something not worth in me such rich beholding  
As they have often given. Here is Ulysses ;  
I'll interrupt his reading.—

How now, Ulysses ?

*Ulyss.* Now great Thetis' son ?

*Achil.* What are you reading ?

*Ulyss.* A strange fellow here  
Writes me, That man—how dearly ever parted,\*  
How much in having, or without, or in—  
Cannot make boast to have that which he hath,  
Nor feels not what he owes, but by reflection ;  
As when his virtues shining upon others  
Heat them, and they retort that heat again  
To the first giver.

*Achil.* This is strange, Ulysses.  
The beauty that is borne here in the face  
The bearer knows not, but commends itself  
To others' eyes : nor doth the eye itself  
(That most pure spirit of sense,) behold itself,  
Not going from itself ; but eye to eye oppos'd  
Salutes each other with each other's form.  
For speculation turns not to itself,  
Till it hath travell'd, and is married there  
Where it may see itself : this is not strange  
at all.

*Ulyss.* I do not strain at the position ;  
It is familiar ; but at the author's drift :  
Who, in his circumstance, † expressly proves—  
That no man is the lord of any thing,  
(Though in and of him there be much con-  
sisting,)

Till he communicate his parts to others :  
Nor doth he of himself know them for aught  
Till he behold them form'd in the applause  
Where they are extended ; which, like an arch,  
reverberates

The voice again : or like a gate of steel  
Fronting the sun, receives and renders back  
His figure and his heat. I was much rapt in  
And apprehended here immediately [this ;  
The unknown Ajax.

Heavens, what a man is there ! a very horse ;  
That has he knows not what. Nature, what  
things there are,

Most object in regard, and dear in use !  
What things again most dear in the esteem,  
And poor in worth ! Now shall we see to-mor-  
row,

An act that very chance doth throw upon him,  
Ajax renew'd. O heavens, what some men do,  
While some men leave to do !

How some men creep in skittish fortune's hall,  
Whiles others play the idiots in her eyes !  
How one man eats into another's pride,  
Whiles pride is fast upon his wantonness !

To see these Grecian lords !—why, even already  
They clap the lubber Ajax on the shoulder ;  
As if his foot were on brave Hector's breast,  
And great Troy shrinking,

*Achil.* I do believe it ; for they pass'd by me,  
As misers do by beggars : neither gave to me  
Good word nor look : What, are my deeds forgot ?

*Ulyss.* Time hath, my lord, a wallet at his back,  
Wherein he puts alms for oblivion,  
A great-sized monster of ingratitude ;  
Those scraps are good deeds past : which are  
devour'd

As fast as they are made, forgot as soon  
As done : Perseverance, dear my lord,  
Keeps honour bright : To have done, is to hang  
Quite out of fashion, like a rusty mail  
In monumental mockery. Take the instant way :

For honour travels in a strait so narrow,  
Where one but goes abreast : keep the the path ;  
For emulation hath a thousand sons,  
That one by one pursue : If you give way,  
Or hedge aside from the direct forthright,  
Like to an enter'd tide they all rush by,

And leave you hindmost :—  
Or, like a gallant horse fallen in first rank,  
Lie there for pavement to the abject rear,  
O'er-run and trampled on : Then what they do  
in present,

Though less than yours in past, must o'ertop  
For time is like a fashionable host, [yours :  
That slightly shakes his parting guest by the  
hand,

And with his arms out-stretch'd, as he would fly  
Grasps in the corner : Welcome ever smiles,  
And farewell goes out sighing. Oh ! let not  
virtue seek

Remuneration for the thing it was ;  
For beauty, wit,  
High birth, vigour of bone, desert in service,  
Love, friendship, charity, are subjects all  
To envious and calumniating time.

One touch of nature makes the whole world  
kin,— [gawds,\*  
That all, with one consent, praise new-born  
Though they are made and moulded of things  
past ;

And give to dust, that is a little gilt,  
More lard than gilt o'er-dusted.  
The present eye praises the present object :  
Turn marvel not, thou great and complete man,  
That all the Greeks begin to worship Ajax ;  
Since things in motion sooner catch the eye,  
Than what not stirs. The cry went once on thee,  
And still it might ; and yet it may again,  
If thou would'st not entomb thyself alive,  
And case thy reputation in thy tent ;  
Whose glorious deeds, but in these fields of late,  
Made emulous missions † 'mongst the gods them-  
And drove great Mars to faction. [selves,

*Achil.* Of this my privacy  
I have strong reasons.

*Ulyss.* But 'gainst your privacy  
The reasons are more potent and heroic d :

'Tis known, Achilles, that you are in love  
With one of Priam's daughters : ‡  
*Achil.* Ha ! known !

*Ulyss.* Is that a wonder ?  
The providence that's in a watchful state,  
Knows almost every grain of Plutus' gold ;  
Finds bottom in the uncomprehensive deeps ;  
Keeps place with thought, and almost, like the  
gods,

Does thoughts unveil in their dumb cradles.  
There is a mystery (with whom relation  
Durst never meddle) in the soul of state,  
Which hath an operation more divine,  
Than breath, or pen, can give expression to :  
All the commerce that you have had with Troy,  
As perfectly is ours, as your's my lord ;  
And better would it fit Achilles much,  
To throw down Hector, than Polyxena :

But it must grieve young Pyrrhus now at home,  
When fame shall in our islands sound her  
trump,

And all the Greekish girls shall tripping sing,—

\* New fashioned toys. † Causing the gods  
themselves to enlist among the combatants.  
‡ Polyxena.

\* How ~~of~~ not so ever endowed.  
† ~~of~~ of argument.

*Great Hector's sister did Achilles win ;  
But our great Ajax bravely beat down him.  
Farewell, my lord : I as your lover \* speak ;  
The fool slides o'er the ice that you should break.*

*[Exit.]*  
*Patr.* To this effect, Achilles, have I mov'd  
A woman impudent and mannish grown (you :  
Is not more loath'd than an effeminate man  
In tune of action. I stand condemn'd for this :  
They think my little stomach to the war,  
And your great love to me, restrains you thus :  
Sweet, rouse yourself ; and the weak wanton

*Cupid*  
Shall from your neck unlouse his amorous fold,  
And, like a dew-drop from the lion's mane,  
Be shook to air.

*Achil.* Shall Ajax fight with Hector ?

*Patr.* Ay, and, perhaps, receive much honour  
by him.

*Achil.* I see my reputation is at stake ;

My fame is shrewdly go'd.

*Patr.* Oh ! then beware ;  
Those wounds heal ill, that men do give them-  
Omission to do what is necessary [selves :  
Seals a commission to a blank of danger ;  
And danger, like an ague, subtly taints  
Even then when we sit idly in the sun.

*Achil.* Go call Therites hither, sweet *Patro-*  
*clus* :

I'll send the foot to Ajax, and desire him  
To invite the Trojan lords, after the combat,  
To see us here unarm'd : I have a woman's  
An appetite that I am sick withal, [longing,  
To see great Hector in his weeds of peace ;  
To talk with him, and to behold his visage,  
Even to my full of view. A labour sav'd !

*Enter THERITES.*

*Ther.* A wonder !

*Achil.* What ?

*Ther.* Ajax goes up and down the field, ask-  
ing for himself.

*Achil.* How so ?

*Ther.* He must fight singly to-morrow with  
Hector ; and so prophetically proud of an  
heroical cudgelling, that he raves in saying no-  
thing.

*Achil.* How can that be ?

*Ther.* Why, he stalks up and down like a pe-  
cock, a stride, and a stand : ruminates, like an  
hossess, that hath no arithmetic but her brain to  
set down her reckoning ; bites his lip with a  
politic regard, as who should say—there were wit  
in this head, an 'twould out ; and so there is ;  
but it lies as coldly in him as fire in a flint,  
which will not show without knocking. The  
man's undone for ever ; for if Hector break not  
his neck in the combat, he'll break it himself in  
vain-glory. He knows not me : I said, *Good-*  
*morrow*, Ajax ; and he replies, *Thanks*, Agamem-  
non. What think you of this man, that takes  
me for the general ? He is grown a very land-  
fish, languageless, a monster. A plague of  
opinion ! a man may wear it on both sides, like  
a leather jerkin.

*Achil.* Thou must be my ambassador to him,  
*Therites*.

*Ther.* Who, I ? why, he'll answer nobody ;  
he professes not answering ; speaking is for  
beggars ; he wears his tongue in his arms. I  
will put on his presence ; let Patroclus make  
demands to me, you shall see the pageant of  
Ajax.

*Achil.* To him, Patroclus : Tell him,—I hum-  
bly desire the valiant Ajax, to invite the most  
valorous Hector to come unarm'd to my tent ;  
and to procure safe conduct for his person, of  
the magnanimous and most illustrious six-or-  
seven-times-honoured captain general of the  
Grecian army, Agamemnon. Do this.

*Patr.* Jove bless great Ajax.

*Ther.* Humph !

*Patr.* I come from the worthy Achilles,—

*Ther.* Ha !

*Patr.* Who most humbly desires you, to in-  
vite Hector to his tent !—

*Ther.* Humph !

*Patr.* And to procure safe conduct from  
Agamemnon ?

*Ther.* Agamemnon ?

*Patr.* Ay, my lord.

*Ther.* Ha !

*Patr.* What say you to't ?

*Ther.* God be wi' you, with all my heart.

*Patr.* Your answer, Sir.

*Ther.* If to-morrow be a fair day, by eleven  
o'clock it will go one way or other ; howsoever,  
he shall pay for me ere he has me.

*Patr.* Your answer, Sir.

*Ther.* Fare you well, with all my heart.

*Achil.* Why, but he is not in this tune, is he ?

*Ther.* No, but he's out o'tune thus. What  
music will be in him when Hector has knocked  
out his brains, I know not : But, I am sure, none ;  
unless the fiddler Apollo get his sinews to make  
catlings \* on.

*Achil.* Come, thou shalt bear a letter to him  
straight.

*Ther.* Let me bear another to his horse ; for  
that's the more capable † creature.

*Achil.* My mind is troubled, like a fountain  
stirr'd ;

And I myself see not the bottom of it.

*[Exeunt ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.]*

*Ther.* 'Would the fountain of your mind were  
clear again, that I might water an ass at it ! I had  
rather be a tick in a sheep, than such a va-  
liant ignorance. *[Exit.]*

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—Troy.—A Street.

*Enter, at one side, ÆNEAS and SERVANT,  
with a torch ; at the other, PARIS, DEAPHO-  
BUS, ANTEOR, DIOMEDES, and others, with  
torches.*

*Par.* See, ho ! who's that there ?

*Dei.* 'Tis the lord Æneas.

*Æne.* Is the prince there in person ?—

Had I so good occasion to lie long,

As you, prince Paris, nothing but heavenly  
business

Should rob my bed-mate of my company.

*Dio.* That's my mind too.—Good morrow, lord  
Æneas.

*Par.* A valiant Greek, Æneas ; take his hand :  
Witness the process of your speech, wherein  
You told—how Diomed, a whole week by day,  
Did haunt you in the field.

*Æne.* Health to you, valiant Sir,  
During all question ; of the gentle truce :  
But when I meet you arm'd, as black defiance  
As heart can think, or courage execute.

*Dio.* The one and other Diomed embraces.  
Our bloods are now in calm ; and, so long,  
health :

But when contention and occasion meet,  
By Jove, I'll play the hunter for thy life,  
With all my force, pursuit, and policy.

*Æne.* And thou shalt hunt a lion, that will fly  
With his face backward.—In humane gentle-  
ness,

Welcome to Troy ! now, by Anchises' life,  
Welcome indeed ! By Venus' hand I swear,  
No man alive can love, in such a sort,  
The thing he means to kill more excellently.

*Dio.* We sympathize :—Jove, let Æneas live,  
If to my sword his fate be not the glory,  
A thousand complete courses of the sun !  
But, in mine envious honour, let him die,  
With every joint a wound ; and that to-mor-  
row !

\* Lute-strings made of catgut.

† Intelligent.  
‡ Conversation.

\* Friend.

*Æne.* We know each other well.

*Dio.* We do; and long to know each other worse.

*Par.* This is the most despicable gentle greeting,  
The noblest hateful love, that e'er I heard of.—  
What business, lord, so early?

*Æne.* I was sent for to the king; but why, I know not.

*Par.* His purpose meets you; 'Twas to bring this Greek  
To Calchas' house; and there to render him,  
For the enfréed Antenor, the fair Cressid:  
Let's have your company; or, if you please,  
Haste there before us: I constantly do think,  
Or, rather, call my thought a certain know-  
ledge,)

My brother Troilus lodges there to-night;  
Rouse him, and give him note of our approach,  
With the whole quality wherefore: I fear,  
We shall be much unwelcome.

*Æne.* That I assure you;  
Troilus had rather Troy were borne to Greece,  
Than Cressid borne from Troy.

*Par.* There is no help;  
The bitter disposition of the time  
Will have it so. On, lord; we'll follow you.

*Æne.* Good morrow, all.

*Par.* And tell me, noble Diomed; 'faith, tell me true,

Even in the soul of sound good-fellowship,—  
Who, in your thoughts, merits fair Helen best,  
Myself, or Menelaus?

*Dio.* Both alike:

He merits well to have her, that doth seek her  
(Not making any scruple of her sojourn;  
With such a hell of pain, and world of charge;  
And you as well to keep her, that defend her  
(Not palating the taste of her dishonour,  
With such a costly loss of wealth and friends:  
He, like a puling cuckold, would drink up  
The lees and dregs of a flat tamed piece;  
You, like a lecher, out of whorish loins  
Are pleas'd to breed out your inheritors:  
Both merits pois'd, each weighs nor less nor  
more;

But he as he, the heavier for a whore.

*Par.* You are too bitter to your countryman.

*Dio.* She's bitter to her country: I hear me, Paris,—

For every false drop in her bawdy veins  
A Grecian's life hath sunk; for every scruple  
Of her contaminated carrion weight,  
A Trojan hath been slain; since she could  
speak,

She hath not given so many good words breath,  
As for her Greeks and Trojans suffer'd death.

*Par.* Fair Diomed, you do as chapmen do,  
Dispraise the thing that you desire to buy:  
But we in silence hold this virtue well.—  
We'll not commend what we intend to sell,  
Here lies our way.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—The same.—Court before the  
House of PANDARUS.

Enter TROILUS and CRESSIDA.

*Tro.* Dear, trouble not yourself the morn is cold.

*Cres.* Then, sweet my lord, I'll call mine  
uncle down;

He shall unbolt the gates.

*Tro.* Trouble him not;  
To bed, to bed: Sleep till those pretty eyes,  
And give as soft attachment to thy senses,  
As infants' empty of all thought!

*Cres.* Good morrow then.

*Tro.* 'Frythee now, to bed.

*Cres.* Are you aware of me?

*Tro.* O Cressida! but that the busy day,  
Wak'd by the lark, hath rous'd the ribald  
crows,

And dreaming night will hide our joys no longer,  
I would not from thee.

*Cres.* Night hath been too brief.

*Tro.* Beshrew the witch! with venomous  
wights she stays,  
As tediously as bell; but flies the grasps of love,  
With wings more momentary-swift than thought.  
You will catch cold, and curse me.

*Cres.* Prythee tarry;—

You men will never tarry.—  
O foolish Cressid!—I might have still held off.  
And then you would have tarried. Hark! there's  
one up.

*Pan.* [Within.] What, are all the doors open  
here?

*Tro.* It is your uncle.

Enter PANDARUS.

*Cres.* A pestilence on him! now will he be  
mocking:

I shall have such a life,—

*Pan.* How now, how now? how go maiden-  
heads?—Here, you maid! where's my cousin  
Cressid?

*Cres.* Go hang yourself, you naughty mocking  
uncle!

You bring me to do, \* and then you flout me too.

*Pan.* To do what? to do what?—let her say  
what: what have I brought you to do?

*Cres.* Come, come; beshrew your heart!  
you'll ne'er be good,

Nor suffer others.

*Pan.* Ha, ha! Alas, poor wretch! a poor  
capocchia!—last not slept to-night? would he  
not, a naughty man, let it sleep? a bugbear take  
him!

[*Knocking.*]

*Cres.* Did I not tell you?—would he were  
knock'd o'the head!

Who's that at door? good uncle, go and see.—

My lord, come you again into my chamber:  
You smile, and mock me, as if I meant  
naughtily.

*Tro.* Ha, ha!

*Cres.* Come, you are deceiv'd, I think of no  
such thing.— [*Knocking.*]

How earnestly they knock!—pray you, come in.  
I would not for half Troy have you seen here.

[*Exeunt TROILUS and CRESSIDA.*]

*Pan.* [Going to the door.] Who's there?  
what's the matter? will you beat down the door?  
How now? what's the matter?

Enter ÆNEAS.

*Æne.* Good morrow, lord, good morrow.

*Pan.* Who's there? my lord Æneas? By my  
troth, I knew you not: what news with you so  
early?

*Æne.* Is not prince Troilus here?

*Pan.* Here! what should he do here

*Æne.* Come, he is here, my lord, do not deny  
him;

It doth import him much, to speak with me.

*Pan.* Is he here, say you? 'tis more than I  
know.

I'll be sworn!—For my own part, I came in  
What should he do here? [Exit:]

*Æne.* Who!—nay, then;—

Come, come, you'll do him wrong ere you are  
'ware:

You'll be so true to him, to be false to him:  
Do not you know of him, yet go fetch him hither—  
Go.

As PANDARUS is going out, enter TROILUS.

*Tro.* How now? what's the matter?

*Æne.* My lord, I scarce have leisure to sa-  
lute you,

My matter is so rash: There is at hand  
Paris your brother, and Delphobus,  
The Grecian Diomed, and our Antenor  
Deliver'd to us: and for him forthwith,  
Ere the first sacrifice, within this hour,

\* A wanton insinuation.

† An Italian word for poor fool.

‡ Ill betide.

§ Hasty.

\* Lowd noly.

We must give up to Diomedes' hand  
The lady Cressida.

*Tro.* Is it so concluded?

*Ene.* By Priam, and the general state of  
Troy:

They are at hand, and ready to effect it.

*Tro.* How my achievements mock me!

I will go meet them: and, my lord *Eneas*,

We met by chance; you did not find me here.

*Ene.* Good, good, my lord: the secrets of  
nature

Have not more gift in taciturnity.

[*Exeunt* TROILUS and *ENEAS*.]

*Pan.* Is't possible? no sooner got, but lost?  
The devil take Antenor! the young prince will  
go mad. A plague upon Antenor, I would, they  
had broke's neck!

*Enter* CRESSIDA.

*Cres.* How now? What is the matter? Who  
was here?

*Pan.* Ah! ah!

*Cres.* Why sigh you so profoundly? where's  
my lord gone?

Tell me, sweet uncle, what's the matter?

*Pan.* 'Would I were as deep under the earth  
as I am above!

*Cres.* O the gods!—What's the matter?

*Pan.* Pr'ythee, get thee in; 'Would thou  
had'st ne'er been born! I knew, thou would'st be  
his death:—O poor gentleman!—A plague upon  
Antenor!

*Cres.* Good uncle, I beseech you on my knees,  
I beseech you, what's the matter?

*Pan.* Thou must be gone, wench, thou must  
be gone. thou art changed for Antenor: thou  
must to thy father, and begone from Troilus;  
'twill be his death; 'twill be his bane; he can-  
not bear it.

*Cres.* O you immortal gods!—I will not go.

*Pan.* Thou must.

*Cres.* I will not, uncle: I have forgot my  
father:

know no touch \* of consanguinity;

No kin, no love, no blood, no soul so near me,

As the sweet Troilus.—O you gods divine!

Make Cressid's name the very crown of false-  
hood,

If ever she leave Troilus! Time, force, and death,  
Do to this body what extremes you can;

But the strong base and building of my love

Is as the very centre of the earth,

Drawing all things to it.—I'll go in, and  
weep;—

*Pan.* Do, do.

*Cres.* Tear my bright hair, and scratch my  
praised cheeks,

Crack my clear voice with sobs, and break my  
heart

With sounding Troilus. I will not go from Troy.  
[*Exeunt*.]

SCENE III.—*The same*.—Before PANDARUS'  
House.

*Enter* PARIS, TROILUS, *ENEAS*, DRIPHOBUS,  
ANTENOR, and DIOMEDES.

*Par.* It is great morning; and the hour pre-  
fix'd

Of her delivery to this valiant Greek

Comes fast upon:—Good my brother Troilus,

Tell you the lady what she is to do,  
And haste her to the purpose.

*Tro.* Walk in to her house;

I'll bring her to the Grecian presently:

And to his hand when I deliver her,  
Think it an altar; and thy brother Troilus

A priest, there offering to it his own heart.  
[*Exit*.]

*Par.* I know what 'tis to love;

And 'would, as I shall pity, I could help!—  
Please you, walk in, my lords. [*Exeunt*.]

SCENE IV.—*The same*.—A Room in PANDARUS' House.

*Enter* PANDARUS and CRESSIDA.

*Pan.* Be moderate, be moderate.

*Cres.* Why tell you me of moderation?

The grief is fine, full, perfect, that I taste,

And violenteth in a sense as strong

As that which causeth it: How can I moderate

If I could temporize with my affection, [it]

Or brew it to a weak and colder palate,

The like allayment could I give my grief:

My love admits no qualifying dross;

No more my grief, in such a precious loss.

*Enter* TROILUS.

*Pan.* Here, here, here he comes.—Ah! sweet  
ducks!

*Cres.* O Troilus! Troilus!

[*Embracing him*.]

*Pan.* What a pair of spectacles is here! Let  
me embrace too: O heart,—as the goodly say-  
ing is,—

—O heart, O heavy heart,

Why sigh'st thou without breaking?

where he answers again,

Because thou canst not ease thy smart,

By friendship, nor by speaking.

There never was a truer rhyme. Let us cast  
away nothing, for we may live to have need of  
such a verse; we see it, we see it.—How now,  
lambs?

*Tro.* Cressid, I love thee in so strain'd a  
purity,

That the bless'd gods—as angry with my fancy,  
More bright in zeal than the devotion which  
Cold lips blow to their duties,—take thee from  
me.

*Cres.* Have the gods envy?

*Pan.* Ay, ay, ay, ay; 'tis too plain a case.

*Cres.* And is it true, that I must go from

Troy?

*Tro.* A hateful truth.

*Cres.* What, and from Troilus too?

*Tro.* From Troy and Troilus.

*Cres.* Is it possible?

*Tro.* And suddenly; where injury of chance  
Puts back leave-taking, justles roughly by  
All time of pause, rudely beguiles our lips  
Of all rejoindure, forcibly prevents

Ours lock'd embrasures, strangles our dear vows

Even in the birth of our own labouring breath:

We two, that with so many thousand sighs

Did buy each other, must poorly sell ourselves

With the rude brevity and discharge of one.

Injurious time now, with a robber's haste,

Crams his rich thievery up, he knows not how:

As many farewells as be stars in heaven,

With distinct breath and consign'd \* kisses to

He fumbles up into a loose adieu; [them,

And scants us with a single famish'd kiss,

Distasted with the salt of broken tears.

*Ene.* [Within.] My lord! is the lady ready?

*Tro.* Hark! you are call'd: Some say, the

Genius so

Cries, Come! to him that instantly must die.—

But then have patience; she shall come anon.

*Pan.* Where are my tears? rain, to lay this

wind, or my heart will be blown up by the root!

[*Exit* PANDARUS.]

*Cres.* I must then to the Greeks?

*Tro.* No remedy.

*Cres.* A woeful Cressid 'mongst the merry

When shall we see again? [Greeks!]

*Tro.* Hear me, my love: Be thou but true of

heart,—

*Cres.* I true! how now? what wicked deem'st

is this?

*Tro.* Nay, we must use expostulation kindly,

For it is parting from us:

I speak not, be thou true, as fearing thee;

\* Sense or feeling of relationship.

\* Sealed.

† Interrupted.

‡ Surmise.



For I will throw my glove to death himself,  
That there's no maculation\* in thy heart:  
But be thou true, say I, to fashion in  
My sequent† protestation; be thou true,  
And I will see thee.

*Cres.* Oh! you shall be expos'd, my lord, to dangers  
As infinite as imminent! but, I'll be true.

*Tro.* And I'll grow friend with danger. Wear this sleeve.

*Cres.* And you this glove. When shall I see you?

*Tro.* I will corrupt the Grecian sentinels,  
To give thee nightly visitation.  
But yet, be true.

*Cres.* O heavens!—be true again!

*Tro.* Hear why I speak it, love:  
The Grecian youths are full of quality; ‡  
They're loving, well compos'd, with gifts of nature flowing,  
And swelling o'er with arts and exercise;  
How novelty may move, and parts with person,  
Alas, a kind of godly jealousy  
(Which I beseech you, call a virtuous sin,)  
Makes me afraid.

*Cres.* O heavens! you love me not.

*Tro.* Die I a villain then!

In this I do not call your faith in question,  
So mainly as my merit: I cannot sing,  
Nor heel the high lavolt, § nor sweeten talk,  
Nor play at subtle games; fair virtues all,  
To which the Grecians are most prompt and pregnant:

But I can tell, that in each grace of these  
There lurks a still and dumb-discursive devil,  
That tempts most cunning;—but be not tempted.

*Cres.* Do you think I will?

*Tro.* No.

But something may be done, that we will not:  
And sometimes we are devils to ourselves,  
When we will tempt the frailty of our powers,  
Presuming on their changeable potency.

*Ene.* [Within.] Nay, good my lord,—

*Tro.* Come, kiss; and let us part.

*Par.* [Within.] Brother Troilus!

*Tro.* Good brother, come you hither;  
And bring Æneas and, the Grecian, with you.

*Cres.* My lord, will you be true?

*Tro.* Who, I? alas, it is my vice, my fault:  
While others fish with craft for great opinion,  
I with great truth catch mere simplicity;  
Whilst some with cunning gild their copper crowns,  
With truth and plainness I do wear mine bare.  
Fear not my truth; the moral of my wit  
Is—plain and true,—there's all the reach of it.

*Enter ÆNEAS, PARIS, ANTONOR, DRIPHOBUS, and DIOMEDES.*

Welcome, Sir Diomed! here is the lady,  
Which to Antonor we deliver you:  
At the port, † lord, I'll give her to thy hand;  
And, by the way, possess ‡ thee what she is.  
Entreat her fair; and, by my soul, fair Greek,  
If e'er thou stand at mercy of my sword,  
Name Cressid, and thy life shall be as safe  
As Priam is in Ilion.

*Dio.* Fair lady Cressid,  
So please you, save the thanks this prince expects:

The lustre in your eye, heaven in your cheek,  
Pleads your fair usage; and to Diomed  
You shall be mistress and command him wholly.

*Tro.* Grecian, thou dost not use me courteously.

To shame the zeal of my petition to thee,  
In praising her: I tell thee, lord of Greece,  
She is as far high-soaring o'er thy praises,  
As thou unworthy to be call'd her servant.  
I charge thee, use her well, even for my charge;  
For by the dreadful Pluto, if thou dost not,

Though the great bulk Achilles be thy guard,  
I'll cut thy throat.

*Dio.* Oh! be not mov'd, prince Troilus:  
Let me be privileg'd by my place and message,  
To be a speaker free; When I am hence,  
I'll answer to my lust: \* And know you, lord,  
I'll nothing do on charge: To her own worth  
She shall be priz'd; but that you say—he'll so,  
I'll speak it in my spirit and honour,—no.

*Tro.* Come to the port.—I'll tell thee, Diomed,  
This brave shall oft make thee to hide thy  
Lady, give me your hand; and, as we walk,  
To our own selves bend we our needful talk.  
[*Exit TROILUS, CRESSIDA, and DIOMEDES.*]

[*Trumpet heard.*]

*Par.* Hark! Hector's trumpet.

*Ene.* How have we spent this morning!  
The prince must think me tardy and remiss,  
That swore to ride before him to the field.

*Par.* 'Tis Troilus' fault: Come, come, to field with him.

*Del.* Let us make ready straight.

*Ene.* Yea, with a bridegroom's fresh alacrity,  
Let us address to tend on Hector's heels:  
The glory of our Troy doth this day lie,  
On his fair worth and single chivalry.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—The Grecian Camp.—*Lists set out.*

*Enter AJAX, armed; and AGAMEMNON, ACHILLES, PATROCLUS, MENELAUS, ULYSSES, NESTOR, and others.*

*Agam.* Here art thou in appointment\* fresh and fair.

Anticipating time with starting courage,  
Give with thy trumpet a loud note to Troy,  
Thou dreadful Ajax; that the appalled  
May pierce the head of the great combatant,  
And hale him thither.

*Ajax.* Thou, trumpet, there's my purse.  
Now crack thy lungs, and spit thy brazen pipe:  
Blow, villain, till thy spher'd bias check  
Out-swell the colic of puff'd Aquilon.  
Come, stretch thy chest, and let thy eyes spout blood;

Thou blow'st for Hector. [*Trumpet sounds.*]

*Ulyss.* No trumpet answers.

*Achil.* 'Tis but early days.

*Agam.* Is not you Diomed, with Calchas' daughter?

*Ulyss.* 'Tis he, I ken the manner of his gait;  
He rises on the toe: that spirit of his  
In aspiration lifts him from the earth.

*Enter DIOMEDES, with CRESSIDA.*

*Agam.* Is this the lady Cressid?

*Dio.* Even she.

*Agam.* Most dearly welcome to the Greeks, sweet lady.

*Nest.* Our general doth salute you with a kiss.

*Ulyss.* Yet is the kindness but particular;

'Twere better she were kiss'd in general.

*Nest.* And very courtly counsel: I'll begin—  
So much for Nestor.

*Achil.* I'll take that winter from your lips, fair lady:

Achilles bids you welcome.

*Men.* I had good argument for kissing once.

*Patr.* But that's no argument for kissing now.

For thus popp'd Paris in his hardiment;

And parted thus you and your argument.

*Ulyss.* O deadly gall, and theme of all our  
scorns!

For which we lose our heads to gild his horns.

*Patr.* The first was Menelaus' kiss;—this

Patroclus kisses you. [*Music.*]

*Men.* Oh! this is trim!

*Patr.* Paris, and I, kiss evermore for him.

*Men.* I'll have my kiss, Sir:—Lady, by your leave.

\* Spot. † Following. ‡ Highly accomplished.  
§ A dance, ¶ Catch.

\* Pleasure, will. † Preparat on.

*Cres.* In kissing do you render or receive?  
*Patr.* Both take and give.  
*Cres.* I'll make my match to live,  
 The kiss you take is better than you give:  
 Therefore no kiss.  
*Men.* I'll give you boot, I'll give you three  
 for one.  
*Cres.* You're an odd man; give even or give  
 none.  
*Men.* An odd man, lady? every man is odd.  
*Cres.* No, Paris is not; for, you know 'tis  
 true,  
 That you are odd, and he is even with you,  
*Men.* You flipp me o'the head.  
*Cres.* No, I'll be sworn.  
*Ulyss.* It were no match, you nail against his  
 horn.—  
 May I, sweet lady, beg a kiss of you?  
*Cres.* You may.  
*Ulyss.* I do desire it.  
*Cres.* Why, beg then—  
*Ulyss.* Why then, for Venus' sake, give me  
 a kiss,  
 When Helen is a maid again, and his.  
*Cres.* I am your debtor, claim it when 'tis due.  
*Ulyss.* Never's my day, and then a kiss of  
 you.  
*Diom.* Lady, a word;—I'll bring you to your  
 father. [*DIOMEDEUS* leads out CRESSIDA.]  
*Nest.* A woman of quick sense.  
*Ulyss.* Fie, fie upon her!  
 There's language in her eye, her cheek, her lip;  
 Nay, her foot speaks; her wanton spirits look  
 At every joint and motive \* of her body. [out  
 Oh! these encounters, so glib of tongue,  
 That give a coasting welcome ere it comes,  
 And wide unclasp the tables of their thoughts  
 To every ticklish reader! set them down  
 For sluttish spoils of opportunity,  
 And daughters of the game. [*Trumpet within.*  
*All.* The Trojan's trumpet.  
*Agam.* Yonder comes the troop.  
*Enter* HECTOR, armed; ÆNEAS, TROILUS,  
 and other Trojans, with Attendants.  
*Æne.* Hail, all the state of Greece! what shall  
 be done [pose,  
 To him that victory commands? Or do you pur-  
 A victor shall be known? I will you, the knights  
 Shall to the edge of all extremity  
 Pursue each other; or shall they be divided  
 By any voice or order of the field?  
 Hector bade ask.  
*Agam.* Which way would Hector have it?  
*Æne.* He cares not, he'll obey conditions.  
*Achil.* 'Tis done like Hector; but securely  
 done.  
 A little proudly, and great deal misprising  
 The knight oppos'd.  
*Æne.* If not Achilles, Sir,  
 What is your name?  
*Achil.* If not Achilles, nothing.  
*Æne.* Therefore Achilles: But, whatever,  
 know this:—  
 In the extremity of great and little,  
 Valour and pride excel themselves in Hector;  
 The one almost as infinite as all,  
 The other blank as nothing. Weigh him well,  
 And that, which looks like pride, is courtesy.  
 This Ajax is half made of Hector's blood:  
 In love whereof, half Hector stays at home;  
 Half heart, half hand, half Hector comes to seek  
 This blomed knight, half Trojan, and half  
 Greek.  
*Achil.* A maiden battle then?—Oh! I perceive  
 you.  
*Re-enter* DIOMEDEUS.  
*Agam.* Here is Sir Diomed:—Go, gentle  
 knight,  
 Stand by our Ajax: as you and lord Æneas  
 Consent upon the order of their fight,  
 So be it; either to the uttermost,

\* Motion.

Or else a breath; \* the combatants being kn,  
 Half stints† their strife before their strokes  
 begin.

[AJAX and HECTOR enter the lists  
*Ulyss.* They are oppos'd already.  
*Agam.* What Trojan is that same that looks  
 so heavy?

*Ulyss.* The youngest son of Priam, a true  
 knight;

Not yet mature, yet matchless; firm of word;  
 speaking in deeds and deedless; in his tongue;  
 Not soon provok'd, nor, being provok'd, soon  
 calm'd;

His heart and hand both open, and both free;  
 For what he has, he gives, what thinks, he  
 shows;

Yet gives he not till judgment guide his bounty,  
 Nor dignifies an impair'd thought with breath:  
 Manly as Hector, but more dangerous;  
 For Hector, in his blaze of wrath, subscribes ||  
 To tender objects; but he, in heat of action,  
 Is more vindictive than jealous love:  
 They call him Troilus; and on him erect  
 A second hope as fairly built as Hector.  
 Thus says Æneas; one that knows the youth  
 Even to his inches, and, with private soul,  
 Did in great Ilion thus translate ¶ him to me.

[ALARUM. HECTOR and AJAX fight.  
*Agam.* They are in action.

*Nest.* Now, Ajax, hold thine own!

*Tro.* Hector, thou sleep'st;

Awake thee!

*Agam.* His blows are well dispos'd:—there,  
 Ajax!

*Dio.* You must no more. [*Trumpets cease.*

*Æne.* Princes, enough, so please you.

*Ajax.* I am not warm yet, let us fight again.

*Dio.* As Hector pleases.

*Hect.* Why then will I no more:—  
 Thou art, great lord, my father's sister's son,  
 A cousin-german to great Priam's seed;  
 The obligation of our blood forbids  
 A gory \*\* emulation 'twixt us twain:  
 Were they communion Greek and Trojan so,  
 That thou could'st say—*This hand is Grecian*  
*And this is Trojan; the sinews of this leg, all*  
*All Greek, and thus all Troy; my mother's*  
*blood*

*Runs on the dexter † check, and this sinister:—*  
*Bounds in my father's; by Jove multipotent,*  
 Thou should'st not bear from me a Greekish  
 member

Wherein my sword had not impressure made  
 Of our rank feud: But the just gods calumny,  
 Than any drop thou borrow'st from thy mother  
 My sacred aunt, should by my mortal sword  
 Be drain'd! Let me embrace thee, Ajax:  
 By him that thunders, thou hast lusty arms;  
 Hector would have them fall upon him thus:  
 Cousin, all honour to thee!

*Ajax.* I thank thee, Hector:

Thou art too gentle, and too free a man;  
 I came to kill thee, cousin, and bear hence  
 A great addition § earned in thy death.

*Hect.* Not Neoptolemus ||| so admirable  
 (On whose bright crest Fame wail her loud: † O  
 yes!)

Cries, *This is he,*) could promise to himself  
 A thought of added honour torn from Hector.  
*Æne.* There is expectation here from both the  
 What further you will do. [sides,

*Hect.* We'll answer it:

The issue is embracement:—Ajax, farewell.

*Ajax.* If I might in entreaties find success  
 (As sold ¶¶ I have the chance,) I would desire  
 My famous cousin to our Grecian tents.

*Dio.* 'Tis Agamemnon's wish: and great  
 Achilles

Doth long to see unarm'd the valliant Hector.  
*Hect.* Æneas, call my brother Troilus to me:

\* Or else merely for exercise. † Stops.  
 ‡ No booster. § Unsuitable to his character.  
 ¶ Yields. ¶ Explains his character.  
 \*\* Bloody. †† Right. †† Left.  
 ‡ Title. || Achilles. ¶¶ Seldom.

And signify this loving interview  
To the expecters of our Trojan part; [sin;  
Desire them home.—Give me thy hand, my cou-  
I will go eat with thee, and see your knights.  
*Ajax.* Great Agamemnon comes to meet us  
here.

*Hect.* The worthiest of them tell me name by  
name;

But for Achilles, my own searching eyes  
Shall find him by his large and portly size.

*Agam.* Worthy of arms! as welcome as to one  
That would be rid of such an enemy;  
But that's no welcome: Understand more clear,  
What's past and what's to come, is stew'd with  
And formless ruin of oblivion; [husks,  
But in this extant moment, faith and troth,  
Strain'd purely from all hollow bias-drawing,  
Bids thee, with most divine integrity,  
From heart of every heart, great Hector, wel-  
come.

*Hect.* I thank thee, most imperious \* Aga-  
memnon.

*Agam.* My well fam'd lord of Troy, no less to  
you. [To TROILUS.

*Men.* Let me confirm my princely brother's  
greeting:—

You brace of warlike brothers, welcome hither.

*Hect.* Whom must we answer?

*Men.* The noble Menelaus.

*Hect.* O you, my lord? by Mars his gauntlet,  
thanks!

Mock not, that I affect the untraded † oath;  
Your *quondam* ‡ wife swears still by Venus'  
glove:

She's well, but bade me not commend her to you.

*Men.* Name her not now, sir; she's a deadly  
theme.

*Hect.* Oh! pardon; I offend.

*Vest.* I have, thou gallant Trojan, seen thee  
Labouring for destiny, make cruel way † off,  
Through ranks of Greekish youth: and I have  
seen thee,

As hot as Perseus, spur thy Phrygian steed,  
Despising many fortlets and subduments,  
When thou hast hung thy advanced sword  
't' the air,

Not letting it decline on the declin'd; ‡  
That I have said to some my standards-by  
*Lo, Jupiter is yonder, dealing life* †

And I have seen thee pause, and take thy breath,  
When that a ring of Greeks have hemm'd  
thee in,

Like an Olympian wrestling: This have I seen;  
But this thy countenance, still lock'd in steel,  
I never saw till now. I knew thy grandsire, ‡  
And once fought with him: he was a soldier  
good;

But, by great Mars, the captain of us all,  
Never like thee: Let an old man embrace thee;  
And, worthy warrior, welcome to our tents.

*Men.* 'Tis the old Nestor.

*Hect.* Let me embrace thee, good old chro-  
nicle, [time:—  
Thou hast so long walk'd hand in hand with  
Most reverend Nestor, I am glad to clasp thee.

*Nest.* I would my arms could match thee in  
contention,

As they contend with thee in courtesy.

*Hect.* I would they could.

*Nest.* Ha!

By this white beard, I'd fight with thee to-mor-  
row. Well, welcome, welcome! I have seen the  
time—

*Ulyss.* I wonder how yonder city stands,  
When we have here her base and pillar by us.

*Hect.* I know your favour, lord Ulysses, well.  
Ah! sir, there's many a Greek and Trojan dead,  
Since first I saw yourself and Diomed  
in Ilion, on your Greekish embassy.

*Ulyss.* Sir, I foretold you then what would  
ensue:

My prophecy is but half his journey yet;

For yonder walls, that partly front your town,  
Yon towers, whose wanton tops do buss the  
clouds,  
Must kiss their own feet.

*Hect.* I must not believe you:  
There they stand yet; and modestly I think,  
The fall of every Phrygian stour will cost  
A drop of Grecian blood: The end crowns all;  
And that old common arbitrator, time,  
Will one day end it.

*Ulyss.* So to him we leave it.  
Most gentle, and most valiant Hector, welcome.  
After the general, I beseech you next  
To feast with me, and see me at my tent.

*Achil.* I shall forestall thee, lord Ulysses,  
thou!—

Now, Hector, I have fed mine eyes on thee;  
I have with exact view perus'd thee, Hector,  
And quoted \* joint by joint.

*Hect.* Is this Achilles?

*Achil.* I am Achilles.

*Hect.* Stand fair, I pray thee: let me look on  
thee.

*Achil.* Behold thy fill.

*Hect.* Nay, I have done already.

*Achil.* Thou art too brief; I will the second  
time,  
As I would buy thee, view thee limb by limb.

*Hect.* Oh! like a book of sport thou'lt read me  
o'er;

But there's more in me than thou understand'st.  
Why dost thou so oppress me with thine eye?

*Achil.* Tell me, you heavens, in which part of  
his body [there?

Shall I destroy him? whether there, there, or  
That I may give the local wound a name;  
And make distinct the very breach whereout  
Hector's great spirit flew: Answer me, heavens!

*Hect.* It would discredit the bless'd gods, proud  
man,

To answer such a question: Stand again:  
Think't thou to catch my life so pleasantly,  
As to prenominate † in nice conjecture,  
Where thou wilt hit me dead?

*Achil.* I tell thee, yea.

*Hect.* Wert thou an oracle to tell me so,  
I'd not believe thee. Henceforth guard thee  
well;

For I'll not kill thee there, nor there, nor there.  
But, by the forge that studded ‡ Mars his helm,  
I'll kill thee every where, yea, o'er and o'er.—  
You wisest Grecians, pardon me this brag,  
His insolence draws folly from my lips;  
But I'll endeavour deeds to match these words,  
Or may I never—

*Ajax.* Do not chafe thee, cousin;—  
And you, Achilles, let these threats alone  
Till accident or purpose bring you to't:  
You may have every day enough of Hector,  
If you have stomach; † the general state, I fear  
Can scarce entreat you to be odd with him.

*Hect.* I pray you, let us see you in the field;  
We have had pelting ‡ wars, since you refus'd  
The Grecians' cause.

*Achil.* Dost thou entreat me, Hector?  
To-morrow do I meet thee, tell as death;  
To-night all friends.

*Hect.* Thy hand upon that match.

*Agam.* First, all you peers of Greece go to my  
tent;

There in the full convive † we: afterwards,  
As Hector's leisure and your bounties shall  
Concur together, severally entreat him.—  
Beat loud the tabourines, † let the trumpets  
blow,

That this great soldier may his welcome know.  
[Exeunt all but TROILUS and ULYSSES.

*Tro.* My lord Ulysses, tell me, I beseech you  
In what place of the field doth Calchas keep?

*Ulyss.* At Menelaus' tent, most princely Troi-  
lus:

\* Imperish. † Singular, not common. ‡ Former.  
‡ Fallen. † Leomedon.

\* Observed. † Feynames.  
‡ Stithy, a smith's shop. † Inclination.  
‡ Petty. † Feast. \*\* Small drums.

There Diomed doth feast with him to-night;  
Who neither looks upon the heaven, nor earth,  
But gives all gaze and bent of amorous view  
On the fair Cressida.

*Tro.* Shall I, sweet lord, be bound to you so much,

After we part from Agamemnon's tent,  
To bring me thither?

*Ulyss.* You shall command me, Sir.

As gentle tell me, of what honour was  
This Cressida in Troy? Had she no lover  
there

That waits her absence?

*Tro.* O Sir, to such as boasting show their

scars,  
A mock is due. Will you walk on, my lord?

She was below'd, she lov'd; she is, and doth so.

But, still, sweet love is food for fortune's tooth.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—The Grecian Camp.—Before  
ACHILLES' Tent.

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*

*Achil.* I'll heat his blood with Greekish wine  
to-night,

Which with my scimitar I'll cool to-morrow.—  
Patroclus, let us feast him to the height.

*Patr.* Here comes Thersites.

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Achil.* How now, thou core of envy?

Thou crusty batch of nature, what's the news?

*Ther.* Why, thou picture of what thou seem-  
est, and idol of idiot-worshippers, here's a letter  
for thee.

*Achil.* From whence, fragment?

*Ther.* Why, thou full dish of fool, from Troy.

*Patr.* Who keeps the tent now?

*Ther.* The surgeon's box, or the patient's  
wound.

*Patr.* Well said, Adversity! \* and what need  
these tricks?

*Ther.* Prythee be silent, boy; I profit not by  
thy talk: thou art thought to be Achilles' male  
varlet.

*Patr.* Male varlet, you rogue! what's that?

*Ther.* Why, his masculine whore. Now the  
rotten diseases of the south, the guts-griping,  
ruptures, catarrhs, loads o' gravel i'the back,  
lethargies, cold palsies, raw eyes, dirt-rotten  
livers, wheezing lungs, bladders full of impos-  
tume, sciaticas, limekilns i'the palm, incurable  
bone-ache, and the rivelled fee-simple of the  
fetter; take and take again such preposterous  
discoveries!

*Patr.* Why thou damnable box of envy, thou,  
what meanest thou to curse thus?

*Ther.* Do I curse thee?

*Patr.* Why, no, you ruinous butt; you whore-  
son indistinguishable car, no.

*Ther.* No! why art thou then exasperate, thou  
idle immaterial skein of sieve + silk, thou green  
sarcenet flap for a sore eye, thou tassel of a  
prodigal's purse, thou! Ah! how the poor world  
is pestered with such water-flies; diminutives of  
nature!

*Patr.* Out, gall!

*Ther.* Finch egg!

*Achil.* My sweet Patroclus, I am thwarted  
quite

From my great purpose in to-morrow's battle.

Here is a letter from queen Hecuba:

A token from her daughter, my fair love;

Both taxing me, and gaging me to keep

An oath that I have sworn. I will not break it:

Fall, Greeks; fall, fame; honour, or go, or  
stay;

My major vow lies here, this I'll obey.—

\* Contrariety

† Course, unwrought.

Come, come, Thersites, help to trim my tent.  
This night in banquetting must all be spent.  
Away, Patroclus.

[*Exeunt ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*]

*Ther.* With too much blood, and too little  
brain, these two may run mad; but if with too  
much brain, and too little blood, they do, I'll  
be a curer of madmen. Here's Agamemnon,—  
an honest fellow enough, and one that loves  
quails; \* but he has not so much brain as ear-  
wax: And the goodly transformation of Jupiter  
there, his brother, the bull,—the primitive statue  
and oblique memorial of cuckolds; + a thrifty  
shoeing-horn in a chain, hanging at his brother's  
leg,—to what form, but that he is, should wit  
lard with malice, and malice forced; with wit  
turn him to? To an ass, were nothing; he is  
both ox and ass: to an ox were nothing; he is  
both ox and ass. To be a dog, a mule, a cat, a  
fitchew, § a toad, a lizard, an owl, a puttock, or  
a herring without a row, I would not care: but  
to be Menelaus,—I would conspire against des-  
tiny. Ask me not what I would be, if I were  
not Thersites; for I care not to be the louse of  
a lazar, || so I were not Menelaus.—Hey-day!  
spirits and fires!

*Enter HECTOR, TROILUS, AJAX, AGAMEMNON,  
ULYSSES, NESTOR, MENELAUS, and DIOMEDE,  
with Lights.*

*Agam.* We go wrong, we go wrong.

*Ajax.* No, yonder 'tis;

There, where we see the lights.

*Hect.* I trouble you.

*Ajax.* No, not a whit.

*Ulyss.* Here comes himself to guide you.

*Enter ACHILLES.*

*Achil.* Welcome, brave Hector; welcome,  
princes all.

*Agam.* So now, fair prince of Troy, I bid good  
Ajax commands the guard to tend on you to-night.

*Hect.* Thanks, and good night to the Greeks'   
general,

*Men.* Good night, my lord.

*Hect.* Good night, sweet Menelaus.

*Ther.* Sweet draught: ¶ Sweet, quoth 'a!  
sweet sink, sweet sewer.

*Achil.* Good night.

And welcome, both to those that go, or tarry.

*Agam.* Good night.

[*Exeunt AGAMEMNON and MENELAUS.*]

*Achil.* Old Nestor tarrys; and you too, Dio-  
Keep Hector company an hour or two. [med,

*Dio.* I cannot, lord; I have important busi-  
ness. [Hector.]

The tide whereof is now.—Good night, great

*Hect.* Give me your hand.

*Ulyss.* Follow his torch, he goes

To Calchas' tent; I'll keep you company.

[*Aside to TROILUS*

*Tro.* Sweet Sir, you honour me.

*Hect.* And so good night.

[*Exit DIOMEDE; ULYSSES and TROILUS  
following.*]

*Achil.* Come, come, enter my tent.

[*Exeunt ACHILLES, HECTOR, AJAX, and  
NESTOR.*]

*Ther.* That same Diomed's a false-hearted  
rogue, a most unjust knave; I will no more  
trust him when he leers, than I will a serpent  
when he hisses: he will spend his month, and  
promise, like Brabler the bound; but when he  
performs, astronomers foretell it; it is prodigi-  
ous, \*\* there will come some change; the sun  
borrows of the moon, when Diomed keeps his  
word. I will rather leave to see Hector, than  
not to dog him: they say, he keeps a Trojan  
drab, and uses the traitor Calchas' tent: I'll  
after.—Nothing but lechery! all inconjunct  
varlets! [*Exit.*]

\* Harlots.

§ Folecat.

† Menelaus.

‡ A diseased beggar.

\*\* Ominous.

‡ Stuffed.

¶ Privy

SCENE II.—*The same*.—*Before CALCHAS' Tent.*

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* What I are you up here, ho? speak.

*Cal.* [*Within.*] Who calls?

*Dio.* Diomed.—Calchas, I think.—Where's your laughter?

*Cal.* [*Within.*] She comes to you.

*Enter TROIILUS and ULYSSES, at a distance, after them THERSITES.*

*Ulyss.* Stand where the torch may not discover us.

*Enter CRESSIDA.*

*Tro.* Cressid come forth to him!

*Dio.* How now, my charge?

*Cres.* Now, my sweet guardian!—Hark! a word with you. [*Whispers.*]

*Tro.* Yes, so familiar!

*Ulyss.* She will sing any man at first sight.

*Ther.* And any man may sing her, if he can take her cliff;\* she's noted.

*Dio.* Will you remember?

*Cres.* Remember? yes.

*Dio.* Nay, but do then;

And let your mind be coupled with your words.

*Tro.* What should she remember?

*Ulyss.* List!

*Cres.* Sweet honey Greek, tempt me no more to folly.

*Ther.* Roguery!

*Dio.* Nay, then,—

*Cres.* I'll tell you what:

*Dio.* Pho! pho! come, tell a pin: You are forsworn.—

*Cres.* In faith, I cannot: what would you have me do?

*Ther.* A juggling trick, to be—secretly open.

*Dio.* Wh. can you swear you would bestow on me?

*Cres.* I pry'thee, do not hold me to mine oath;

But do me any thing but that, sweet Greek.

*Dio.* Good night.

*Tro.* Hold, patience!

*Ulyss.* How now, Trojan?

*Cres.* Diomed,—

*Dio.* Do, no, good night: I'll be your fool no more.

*Tro.* Thy better must.

*Cres.* Hark! one word in your ear.

*Tro.* O plague and madness!

*Ulyss.* You are mov'd, prince; let us depart, I pray you,

Lest your displeasure should enlarge itself

To wrathful terms; this place is dangerous;

The time right deadly: I beseech you, go.

*Tro.* Behold, I pray you!

*Ulyss.* Now, good my lord, go off:

You flow to great destruction; come, my lord.

*Tro.* I pry'thee, stay.

*Ulyss.* You have not patience; come.

*Tro.* I pray you, stay: by hell, and all hell's torments,

I will not speak a word.

*Dio.* And so, good night.

*Cres.* Nay, but you part in anger.

*Tro.* Doth that grieve thee?

O wither'd truth!

*Ulyss.* Why how now, lord?

*Tro.* By Jove,

I will be patient.

*Cres.* Guardian!—why, Greek!

*Dio.* Pho, pho! adieu; you palter.†

*Cres.* In faith, I do not; come hither once again.

*Ulyss.* You shake, my lord, at something; will you go out? ‡

You will break out.

*Tro.* She strokes his cheek!

*Ulyss.* Come, come.

*Tro.* Nay, stay; by Jove, I will not speak a word:

There is between my will and all offenders  
A guard of patience:—stay a little while.

*Ther.* How the devil luxury, with his fat rump  
and potatoe finger, tickles these together! Fry,  
lechery, fry!

*Dio.* But will you then?

*Cres.* In faith, I will, la; never trust me else.

*Dio.* Give me some token for the surety of it.

*Cres.* I'll fetch you one. [*Exit.*]

*Ulyss.* You have sworn patience.

*Tro.* Fear me not, my lord;  
I will not be myself, nor have cognition\*  
Of what I feel: I am all patience.

*Re-enter CRESSIDA.*

*Ther.* Now the pledge; now, now, now!

*Cres.* Here, Diomed, keep this sleeve.

*Tro.* O beauty! where's thy faith?

*Ulyss.* My lord,—

*Tro.* I will be patient: outwardly I will.

*Cres.* You look upon that sleeve; Behold it well.—

He loved me—O false wench!—Giv't me again.

*Dio.* Who was't?

*Cres.* No matter, now I haven't again.

I will not meet with you to-morrow night:

I pry'thee Diomed, visit me no more.

*Ther.* Now she sharpens;—Well said, whet  
stone.

*Dio.* I shall have it.

*Cres.* What, this!

*Dio.* Ay, that.

*Cres.* Oh! all you gods!—O pretty pretty  
pledge!

Thy master now lies thinking in his bed  
Of thee and me; and sighs and takes my glove,  
And gives memorial dainty kisses to it.

As I kiss thee.—Nay, do not snatch it from me;  
He that takes that, must take my heart withal.

*Dio.* I had your heart before, this follows it.

*Tro.* I did swear patience.

*Cres.* You shall not have it, Diomed; 'faith  
you shall not:

I'll give you something else,

*Dio.* I will have this; Whose was it?

*Cres.* 'Tis no matter.

*Dio.* Come, tell me whose it was.

*Cres.* 'Twas one's that loved me better than  
you will.

But now you have it, take it.

*Dio.* Whose was it?

*Cres.* By all Diana's waiting-women vnder, †  
And by herself, I will not tell you whose.

*Dio.* To-morrow will I wear it on my helm;

And grieve his spirit that dares not challenge it.

*Tro.* Wert thou the devil, and wert'st on thy

It should be challenged. [*thorn.*]

*Cres.* Well, well, 'tis done, 'tis past;—And yet

it is not;

I will not keep my word.

*Dio.* Why then, farewell!

Thou never shalt mock Diomed again.

*Cres.* You shall not go:—One cannot speak a  
word,

But it straight starts you.

*Dio.* I do not like this fooling.

*Ther.* Nor I, by Pluto: but that that likes not  
you, pleases me best.

*Dio.* What, shall I come? the hour?

*Cres.* Ay, come:—O Jove!—

Do come:—I shall be plagu'd.

*Dio.* Farewell till then.

*Cres.* Good night. I pry'thee, come.—

[*Exit DIOMEDES.*]

Troilus, farewell! one eye yet looks on thee;  
But with my heart the other eye doth see.

Ah! poor our sex! this fault in us I find,  
The error of our eye directs our mind;

What error leads, must err; O then, conclude,  
Minds, away'd by eyes, are full of turpitude.

[*Exit CRESSIDA.*]

† Key note.

‡ Shuffle.

\* Knowledge.

† The stars.

*Ther.* A proof of strength she could not publish more;

Unless she sail, My mind is now turn'd whore.  
*Ulyss.* All's done, my lord.

*Tro.* It is.

*Ulyss.* Why stay we then?

*Tro.* To make a recordation \* to my soul  
Of every syllable that here was spoke.  
But, if I tell how these two did co-act  
Shall I not be in publishing a truth?  
Sith † yet there is a credence ‡ in my heart,  
And esperance § so obstinately strong,  
That doth invert the attest ¶ of eyes and ears;  
As if those organs had deceptions functions,  
Created only to calumniate.  
Was Cressid here?

*Ulyss.* I cannot conjure, Trojan.

*Tro.* She was not sure.

*Ulyss.* Most sure she was.

*Tro.* Why, my negation ¶ hath no taste of  
madness.

*Ulyss.* Nor mine, my lord: Cressid was here  
but now.

*Tro.* Let it not be believ'd for womanhood! \*\*  
Think, we had mothers; do not give advantage  
To stubborn critics †—apt, without a theme,  
For depravation,—to square the general sex  
By Cressid's rule: rather think this not Cressid.

*Ulyss.* What hath she done, prince, that can  
soil our mothers?

*Tro.* Nothing at all, unless that this were  
she.

*Ther.* Will he swagger himself out on's own  
eyes?

*Tro.* This she? no, this is Diomed's Cressida:  
beauty have a soul, this is not she;

If souls guide vow, † if vows be sanctimony,

If sanctimony be the gods' delight,

If there be rule in unity itself,

This was not she. O madness of discourse,

That cause sets up with and against itself!

Bold authority! where reason can revolt

Without petition, and loss assume all reason

Without revolt, this is, and is not, Cressid!

Within my soul there doth commence a fight

Of this strange nature, that a thing inseparate

Divides more widely than the sky and earth;

And yet the spacious breath of this division

Admits no offence for a point as subtle

As is Achæne's broken woof, to enter.

Instance, O instance! strong as Pluto's gates;

Cressid is mine, tied with the bonds of heaven:

Instance, O instance! strong as heaven itself;

The bonds of heaven are slipp'd, dissolv'd, and

loos'd †;

And with another knot, five-finger tied,

The fractions of her faith, bits of her love,

The fragments, scraps, the bits, and greasy re-  
liquies

Of her o'er-eaten faith, are bound to Diomed.

*Ulyss.* May worthy Troilus be half attach'd

With that which here his passion doth express?

*Tro.* Ay, Greek; and that shall be divulged

in characters as red as Mars his heart [well

luscious] with Venus: never did young man

fancy ‡

With so eternal and so fix'd a soul.

Hark, Greek;—As much as I do Cressid love,

So much by weight hate I her Diomed:

That sieve is mine, that he'll bear on his helm;

Were it a casque, compos'd by Vulcan's skill;

My sword should bite it: not the dreadful spout,

Which shipmen do the hurricano call,

Constring'd ¶ in mass by the almighty sun,

Shall dizzy with more clamour Neptune's ear

In his descent, than shall my prompted sword

Falling on Diomed.

*Ther.* He'll tickle it for his concepy. ¶¶

*Tro.* O Cressid! O false Cressid! false, false,

false!

\* Remembrance.

† Hope.

¶ For the sake of.

§ Helmet.

† Since.

†† Testimony.

††† Cynics.

¶ Compressed.

‡ Belief

¶ Denial.

¶ Love.

¶ Concupiscence.

Let all untruths stand by thy stained name,  
And they'll seem glorious.

*Ulyss.* Oh! contain yourself;  
Your passion draws ears hither.

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* I have been seeking you this hour, my  
lord:

*Hector,* by this, is aiming him in Troy;

Ajax, your guard, stays to conduct you home.

*Tro.* Have with you, prince:—My courteous  
lord, adieu:

Farewell, revolted fair!—and, Diomed,  
Stand fast, and wear a castle on thy head!

*Ulyss.* I'll bring you to the gates.

*Tro.* Accept distracted thanks.

[*Exeunt TROILUS, ÆNEAS, and ULYSSES.*

*Ther.* 'Would I could meet that rogue Diomed!  
I would croak like a raven; I would bode,  
I would bode. Patroclus will give me any thing  
for the intelligence of this whore: the parrot will  
not do more for an almond, than he for a commodious  
drab. Lechery, lechery; still, wars and  
lechery; nothing else holds fashion: A burning  
devil take them!

[*Exit*

SCENE III.—Troy.—Before PRIAM'S  
Palace.

*Enter HECTOR and ANDROMACHE.*

*And.* When was my lord so much ungently  
temper'd,

To stop his ears against admonishment?

Unarm'd, unarm'd, and do not fight to-day.

*Hect.* You train me to offend you; get you in:  
By all the everlasting gods, I'll go.

*And.* My dreams will, sure, prove ominous to  
the day.

*Hect.* No more I say.

*Enter CASSANDRA.*

*Cas.* Where is my brother Hector?

*And.* Here, sister; arm'd, and bloody in in-  
tent:

Con-sort with me in loud and dear petition,  
Pursue we him on knees; for I have dream'd  
Of bloody turbulence, and this whole night  
Hath nothing been but shapes and forms of  
slaughter.

*Cas.* Oh! it is true.

*Hect.* Ho! had my trumpet sound!

*Cas.* No notes of sally, for the heavens, sweet  
brother.

*Hect.* Begone, I say: the gods have heard me  
swear.

*Cas.* The gods are deaf to hot and peevish \*  
vows;

They are polluted offerings, more abhor'd  
Than spotted livers in the sacrifice.

*And.* Oh! be persuaded: Do not count it  
holy

To hunt by being just: it is as lawful,  
For we would give much, to use violent thefts  
And rob in the behalf of charity.

*Cas.* It is the purpose that makes strong the  
vow;

But vows, to every purpose, must not hold:  
Unarm'd, sweet Hector.

*Hect.* Hold you still, I say;

Mine honour keeps the weather of my fate:  
Life every man holds dear; but the dear man  
Holds honour far more precious-dear † than  
life.—

*Enter TROILUS.*

How now, young man? mean'st thou to fight to-  
day?

*And.* Cassandra, call my father to persuade.  
[*Exit CASSANDRA.*

*Hect.* No, 'faith, young Troilus; do! thy  
harness, youth,  
I am to-day i' the vein of chivalry:

\* Foolish.

† Valuable.

‡ Put off.

Let grow thy sinews till their knots be strong,  
And tempt not yet the brushes of the war.  
Unarm thee, go; and doubt thou not, brave boy,  
I'll stand, to-day, for thee, and me, and Troy.

*Tro.* Brother, you have a vice of mercy in you,  
Which better fits a lion than a man.

*Hect.* What vice is that, good Troilus? chide me for it.

*Tro.* When many times the captive Grecians fall,  
Even in the fan and wind of your fair sword,  
You bid them rise, and live.

*Hect.* Oh! 'tis fair play.

*Tro.* Fool's play, by heaven, Hector.

*Hect.* How now? how now?

*Tro.* For the love of all the gods,  
Let's leave the hermit pity with our mother;  
And when we have our armours buckled on,  
The venom'd vengeance ride upon our swords;  
Spur them to ruthless work, rein them from ruth.

*Hect.* Fie, savage, fie!

*Tro.* Hector, then 'tis wars.

*Hect.* Troilus, I would not have you fight to-day.

*Tro.* Who should withhold me?  
Not fate, obedience, nor the hand of Mars  
Beckoning with fiery truncheon my retire;  
Not Priamus and Hecuba on knees,  
Their eyes o'ergalled with recourse of tears;  
Nor you, my brother, with your true sword drawn,  
Oppos'd to hinder me, should stop my way,  
But by my ruin.

*Re-enter CASSANDRA, with PRIAM.*

*Cas.* Lay hold upon him, Priam, hold him fast:

He is thy crutch; now if thou lose thy stay,  
Thou on him leaning, and all Troy on thee,  
Fall altogether.

*Pri.* Come, Hector, come, go back:  
Thy wife hath dream'd; thy mother hath had visions;

Cassandra doth foresee; and I myself  
Am like a prophet suddenly enrapt,  
To tell thee—that this day is ominous:  
Therefore, come back.

*Hect.* Aeneas is a-field;  
And I do stand engag'd to many Greeks,  
Even in the faith of valour, to appear  
This morning to them.

*Pri.* But thou shalt not go.

*Hect.* I must not break my faith.  
You know me dutiful; therefore, dear Sir,  
Let me not shame respect; but give me leave  
To take that course by your consent and voice,  
Which you do here forbid me, royal Priam.

*Cas.* O Priam, yield not to him.

*And.* Do not, dear father.

*Hect.* Andromache, I am offended with you:  
Upon the love you bear me, get you in.

[*Exit ANDROMACHE.*]

*Tro.* This foolish, dreaming, superstitious girl  
Makes all these bodements.

*Cas.* O farewell, dear Hector.

Look, now thou diest! look, how thy eye turns pale!

Look, how thy wounds do bleed at many vents!  
Hark, how Troy roars! how Hecuba cries out!  
How poor Andromache shrills her dolours forth!

Behold, destruction, frenzy, and amazement,  
Like wild ass's, one another meet,  
And all cry—Hector! Hector's dead! O Hector!

*Tro.* Away!—Away!

*Cas.* Farewell.—Yet, soft:—Hector, I take my leave:

Thou dost thyself and all our Troy deceive.

[*Exit.*]

*Hect.* You are amaz'd, my liege, at her exclaim:

\* Ruseful, useful.

† Mercy.

Go in, and cheer the town: we'll forth, and fight;  
Do deeds worth praise, and tell you them at  
*Pri.* Farewell: the gods with safety stand about thee!

[*Exit severally PRIAM and HECTOR.*]

*Alarums.*

*Tro.* They are at it; hark! Proud Diomed, believe,

I come to lose my arm, or win my sleeve.

*As TROILUS is going out, enter, from the other side, PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* Do you hear, my lord? do you hear?

*Tro.* What now?

*Pan.* Here's a letter from jon' poor girl.

*Tro.* Let me read.

*Pan.* A whoreson pilsick, a whoreson rascally pilsick so troubles me, and the foolish fortune of this girl; and what one thing, what another, that I shall leave you one o'these days. And I have a rheum in mine eyes too; and such an ache in my bones, that, unless a man were curs'd, I cannot tell what to think out.—What says she there!

*Tro.* Words, words, mere words, no matter from the heart; [*Tearing the letter.*]

The effect doth operate another way.—

Go, wind, to wind, there turn and change together.—

My love with words and errors still she feeds;  
But edifies another with her deeds.

[*Exit severally.*]

*SCENE IV.—Between Troy and the Grecian Camp.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter THERSITES.*

*Ther.* Now they are clapper-clawing one another; I'll go look on. This dissembling abominable varlet, Diomed, has got that same scurvy dotting foolish young knave's sleeve of Troy there, in his helm. I would fain see them meet, that that same young Trojan ass, that loves the whore there, might send that Greekish whoreson masterly villain with the sleeve, back to the dissembling luxurious diab, on a sleeveless errand. O' the other side, the policy of those crafty swearing rascals,—that stale old mouse-trap dry cheese, Nestor: and that same dog-fox, Ulysses,—is not proved worth a blackberry:—they set me up, in policy, that mongrel cur, Ajax, against that dog of as bad a kind, Achilles; and now I, the cur Ajax prouder than the cur Achilles, and will not arm to-day: whereupon the Grecians begin to proclaim barbarism, and policy grows into an ill opinion. Soft! here come sleeve, and U'other.

*Enter DIOMEDES, TROILUS following.*

*Tro.* Fly not; for, should'st thou take the river Styx,  
I would swim after.

*Di.* Thou dost miscall retire:  
I do not fly; but advantageous care  
Withdrew me from the odds of multitude:  
Have at thee!

*Ther.* Hold thy whore, Grecian!—now for thy whore, Trojan!—now the sleeve, now the sleeve!

[*Exit TROILUS and DIOMEDES, fighting.*]

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* What art thou, Greek? art thou for Hector's match?  
Art thou of blood, and honour?

*Ther.* No, no: I am a rascal; a scurvy railing knave; a very filthy rogue.

*Hect.* I do believe thee:—live. [*Exit.*]

*Ther.* God-a-mercy, that thou wilt believe me; But a plague break thy neck, for frightening me! What's become of the wenching rogues? I think they have swallowed one another: I would laugh at that miracle. Yet, in a sort, lechery eats itself. I'll seek them. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE V.—The same.

Enter DIOMEDES and a SERVANT.

Dio. Go, go, my servant, take thou Troilus' horse;

Present the fair steed to my lady Cressid:  
 Follow, commend my service to her beauty;  
 Tell her, I have chastis'd the amorous Trojan,  
 And am her knight by proof.

Serv. I go, my lord. [Exit SERVANT.]

Enter AGAMEMNON.

Agam. Renew, renew! The fierce Polydamus  
 Hath beat down Menon: bastard Margarelon  
 Hath Doreus prisoner:  
 And stands colossus-wise, waving his beam,\*  
 Upon the pashe'd † corpses of the kings  
 Epistrophus and Cediüs: Polixenes is slain;  
 Amphimachus, and Thoas, deadly hurt;  
 Patroclus ta'en, or slain; and Palamedes  
 Sore hurt and bruised: the dreadful Sagittary  
 Appals our numbers: haste we, Diomed,  
 To reinforcement, or we perish all.

Enter NESTOR.

Nest. Go, bear Patroclus' body to Achilles;  
 And bid the snail-pac'd Ajax arm for shame.—  
 There is a thousand Hector's in the field:  
 Now here he fights on Galathea his horse,  
 And there lacks work; anon, he's there afoot,  
 And there they fly, or die, like scaled sculls;  
 Before the belching whale; then is he yonder,  
 And there the strawy Greeks, ripe for his edge,  
 Fall down before him, like the mower's swath:  
 Here, there, and every where, he leaves, and  
 Dexterity so obeying appetite, † takes;  
 That what he will he does; and does so much,  
 That proof is call'd impossibility.

Enter ULYSSES.

I Iyss. Oh! courage, courage, princes! great Achilles

Is arming, weeping, cursing, vowing vengeance:  
 Patroclus' wounds have rou'd his drowsy blood,  
 Together with his mangled Myrmidons,  
 That noseless, handless, back'd and chipp'd, come  
 to him.

Crying on Hector. Ajax hath lost a friend,  
 And foams at mouth, and he is arm'd, and at  
 it.

Roaring for Troilus; who hath done to-day  
 Mad and fantastic execution;  
 Engaging and redeeming of himself,  
 With such a careless force, and forceless care,  
 As if that luck, in very spite of cunning,  
 Bade him win all.

Enter AJAX.

Ajax. Troilus! thou coward Troilus! [Exit.

Dio. Ay, there, there.

Nest. So, so, we draw together.

Enter ACHILLES.

Achil. Where is this Hector?  
 Come, come, thou boy-queller, ‡ show thy face;  
 Know what it is to meet Achilles angry.  
 Hector! where's Hector? I will none but Hector.  
 [Exit.

## SCENE VI.—Another part of the Field.

Enter AJAX.

Ajax. Troilus, thou coward Troilus, show thy head!

Enter DIOMEDES.

Dio. Troilus, I say! where's Troilus?

Ajax. What would'st thou?

Dio. I would correct him.

Ajax. Were I the general thou should'st  
 have my office, [Troilus!  
 Ere that correction:—Troilus, I say! what,

Enter TROILUS.

Tro. O traitor Diomed!—turn thy false face,  
 thou traitor,  
 And pay thy life thou ow'st me for my horse!

Dio. Hal art thou there?

Ajax. I'll fight with him alone: stand, Diomed.

Dio. He is my prize, I will not look upon.\*

Tro. Come both, you cogging † Greeks; have at you both. [Exit, fighting.]

Enter HECTOR.

Hect. Yea, Troilus? Oh! well fought my youngest brother!

Enter ACHILLES.

Achil. Now do I see thee: Hal!—Have at thee, Hector.

Hect. Pause, if thou wilt.

Achil. I do disdain thy courtesy, proud Trojan.

Be happy, that my arms are out of use:  
 My rest and negligence befriend thee now,  
 But thou anon shalt hear of me again;  
 Till when go seek thy fortune. [Exit.

Hect. Fare thee well:—

I would have been much more a fresher man,  
 Had I expected thee.—How now, my brother?

Re-enter TROILUS.

Tro. Ajax hath ta'en Æneas; Shall it be?  
 No, by the flame of yonder glorious heaven,  
 He shall not carry ‡ him; I'll be taken too,  
 Or bring him off:—Fate, bear me what I say!  
 I reck † not though I end my life to-day. [Exit.

Enter one in sumptuous Armour.

Hect. Stand, stand, thou Greek; thou art a goodly mark:—

No? wilt thou not?—I like thy armour well;  
 I'll crush ‡ it, and unlock the rivets all,  
 But I'll be master of it:—Wilt thou not, boast,  
 abide?

Why, then, fly on, I'll hunt thee for thy hide.  
 [Exit.

## SCENE VII.—The same.

Enter ACHILLES, with MYRMIDONS.

Achil. Come here about me, you my Myrmidons;

Mark what I say.—Attend me where I wheel:  
 Strike not a stroke, but keep yourselves in  
 breath;

And when I have the bloody Hector found,  
 Empale him with your weapons round about;  
 In fellest manner execute ‡ your arms.  
 Follow me, sirs, and my proceedings eye:  
 It is decreed—Hector the great must die.  
 [Exit.

## SCENE VIII.—The same.

Enter MENELAUS and PARIS, fighting: then THESSITES.

Ther. The cuckold, and the cuckold-maker are at it: Now, bull! now, dog! 'Loo, Paris, 'loo! now my double-benned sparrow! 'Loo, Paris, 'loo! The bull has the game:—'ware horns, ho!  
 [Exit PARIS and MENELAUS.]

Enter MARGARELON.

Mar. Turn, slave, and fight.

Ther. What art thou?

Mar. A bastard son of Priam's.

Ther. I am a bastard too; I love bastards: I am a bastard begot, bastard instructed, bastard in mind, bastard in valour, in every thing illegitimate. One bear will not bite another, and wherefore should one bastard? Take heed, the quarrel's most ominous to us: if the son of a

\* Iance. † Bruised, crushed.  
 ‡ Should of fish. † Killer.

\* Not be a looken-on. † Lying.  
 ‡ Prevail over. † Care. † Burst. ‡ Employ.



whore fight for a whore, he tempts judgment :  
Farewell, bastard.

*Mar.* The devil take thee, coward !

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE IX.—Another part of the field.*

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* Most putrified core, so fair without,  
Thy goodly armour thus hath cost thy life.  
Now is my day's work done ! I'll take good breath :  
Rest, sword ; thou hast thy fill of blood and  
death !

[*Puts off his helmet, and hangs his shield  
behind him.*]

*Enter ACHILLES and Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Look, Hector, how the sun begins to  
set ;  
How ugly night comes breathing at his heels :  
Even with the veil and dark'ning of the sun,  
To close the day up Hector's life is done.

*Hect.* I am unarm'd ; forego this vantage, \*  
Greek.

*Achil.* Strike, fellows, strike ; this is the man  
I seek. [*HECTOR falls.*]

So, Ilion, fall thou next ! now, Troy, sunk down ;  
Here lies thy heart, thy sinews, and thy bone.—  
On, Myrmidons ; and cry you all amain,  
*Achilles hath the mighty Hector slain.*

[*A Retreat sounded.*]

*Hark !* a retreat upon our Grecian part.

*Myr.* The Trojan trumpets sound the like,  
my lord.

*Achil.* The dragon wing of night o'erspreads  
the earth,

And, stickler † like, the armies separates.  
My half-suppl'd sword, that frankly ‡ would  
have fed,

Pleas'd with this dainty bit, thus goes to bed.—  
[*Sheaths his sword.*]

Come, tie his body to my horse's tail ;  
Along the field I will the Trojan trail. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE X.—The same.*

*Enter AGAMEMNON, AJAX, MENELAUS, NES-  
TOR, DIOXEDUS, and others marching.  
Shouts within.*

*Agam.* Hark ! hark ! what shout is that !

*Nest.* Peace, drums.

[*Within*] Achilles !

*Achilles ! Hector's slain ! Achilles !*

*Who.* The bruit † is—Hector's slain and by  
Achilles.

*Ajax.* If it be so, yet brazen let it be ;

Great Hector was as good a man as he.

*Agam.* March patiently along.—Let one be  
sent

To pray Achilles see us at our tent.—

If in his death the gods have us befriended,

Great Troy is our's, and our sharp wars are  
ended. [*Exeunt, marching.*]

*SCENE XI.—Another part of the field.*

*Enter AENEAS and TROJANS.*

*Aene.* Stand, hol yet are we masters of the  
field :

Never go home : here starve we out the night.

\* Take not this advantage.

† An arbitrator at Athletic games.

‡ Fettering.

*Nice, rumour.*

*Enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* Hector is slain.

*All.* Hector ?—The gods forbid !

*Tro.* He's dead ; and at the murderer's horse's  
tail,

In beastly sort, dragg'd through the shameful  
Frown on, you heavens, effect your rage with  
speed !

Sit, gods, upon your thrones, and smile at Troy !  
I say, at once let your brief plagues be mercy,  
And linger not our sure destructions on !

*Aene.* My lord, you do discomfort all the host.

*Tro.* You understand me not, that tell me so :  
I do not speak of flight, of fear, of death ;

But dare all imminence, that gods and men,  
Address their dangers in. Hector is gone !

Who shall tell Priam so, or Hecuba ?  
Let him that will a screech-owl eye \* be call'd !

Go in to Troy, and say there—Hector's dead  
There is a word will Priam turn to stone ;

Make wells and Niobes of the maids and wives,  
Cold statues of the youth ; and, in a word,

Scare Troy out of itself. But, march, away :  
Hector is dead ; there is no more to say.

Stay yet ;—You vile abominable tents,  
Thus proudly pitch'd upon our Phrygian plains,

Let Titan rise as early as he dare,  
I'll through and through you !—And thou great-

siz'd coward !  
No space of earth shall sunder our two hates

I'll haunt thee like a wicked conscience still,  
That mouldeth gobins swift as frenzy thoughts.—

Strike a free march to Troy—with comfort go  
Hope of revenge shall hide our inward woe.

*Exeunt AENEAS and TROJANS.*

*As TROILUS is going out, enter from the other  
side, PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* But hear you, hear you !

*Tro.* Hence, broker lackey ! ignominy † and  
shame

Pursue thy life, and live eye ‡ with thy name !

*Exit TROILUS.*

*Pan.* A goodly medicine for my aching  
bones !—O world ! world ! world ! this is the

poor agent despised ! O traitors and bawds,  
how earnestly are you set at work, and how ill

required ! Why should our endeavour be so  
loved, and the performance so loathed ? what

verse for it ? what instance for it ?—Let me  
see :—

Full merrily the humble-bee doth sing,  
Till he hath lost his honey and his sting :

And being once subdued in armed tail,  
Sweet honey and sweet notes together fall.—

Good traders in the flesh, set this in your painted  
cloths. ‡

As many as be here of Pandar's hall,  
Your eyes, half out, weep out at Pandar's fall :

Or, if you cannot weep, yet give some groans,  
Though not for me, yet for your aching bones.

Brethren and sisters of the hold-door trade,  
Some two months hence my will shall here be  
made ;

It should be now, but that my fear is this,—  
Some galled goose of Winchester would hiss :

Till then I'll sweat, and seek about for cases ;  
And, at that time, bequeath you my diseases.

[*Exit.*]

\* Ever.

† Pitched.

‡ Ignominy.

§ Ever.

|| Canvas hangings for rooms painted with emblem  
and mottoes.

# TIMON OF ATHENS.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THIS play, which contains many perplexed, obscure, and corrupt passages, was written about the year 1610, and was probably suggested by a passage in Plutarch's Life of Antony, wherein the latter professes to imitate the conduct of Timon, by retiring to the woods, and inveighing against the ingratitude of his friends. The finding of hidden gold, (see Act IV.) was an incident borrowed from a MS. play, apparently transcribed about the year 1600, and at one time in the possession of Mr. Strutt the antiquary. A building yet remains near Athens, called *Timon's Tower*. Phrynia, one of the courtezans whom Timon reviles so outrageously, was that exquisitely beautiful Phryne, who, when the Athenian Judges were about to condemn her for enormous offences, by the sight of her bosom disarmed the court of its severity, and secured her life from the sentence of the law. Alcibiades, known as a hero who, to the principles of a debauchee added the sagacity of a statesman, the intrepidity of a general, and the humanity of a philosopher, is reduced to comparative insignificance in the present production. His relative merits, as to action and construction, are succinctly pointed out by Johnson. He describes it as "a domestic tragedy, which strongly fastens on the attention of the reader. In the plan, there is not much art, but the incidents are natural, and the characters various and exact. The catastrophe affords a very powerful warning against the ostentatious liberality, which scatters bounty, but confers no benefits, and buys flattery but not friendship."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

*TIMON, a noble Athenian.*

*LUCIUS, LUCILLUS, SEMPRONIUS, } Lords, and Flatterers of Timon.*

*VINDICIUS, one of Timon's false Friends.*

*APEMANTUS, a churlish Philosopher.*

*ALCIBIADES, an Athenian General.*

*FLAVIUS, Steward to Timon.*

*FLAVINIUS, } Timon's Servants.*

*LUCILIUS, SERVILIUS, }*

*PHILOTOUS, } Servants to Timon's Creditors.*

*TITUS, LUCIUS, HORTENSIVS, }*

*TWO SERVANTS OF VARRO, and the SERVANT of MILDRE; two of Timon's Creditors.*

*CUPID, and MASKERS.*

*THREE STRANGERS.*

*POET, PAINTER, JEWELLER and MERCHANT.*

*AN OLD ATHENIAN.*

*A PAGE.*

*A FOOL.*

*PHRYNIA, } Mistresses to Alcibiades.*

*TIMANDRA, }*

*Other Lords, Senators, Officers, Soldiers, Thieves, and Attendants.*

SCENE: Athens; and the Woods adjoining.

## ACT I

SCENE I.—*Athen.*—*A Hall in TIMON'S House.*

*Enter POET, PAINTER, JEWELLER, MERCHANT, and others, at several Doors.*

*Poet.* Good day, Sir.

*Pain.* I am glad you are well.

*Poet.* I have not seen you long. How goes the world?

*Pain.* It wears, Sir, as it grows.

*Poet.* Ay, that's well known:

But what particular rarity? what strange, Which manifold record not matches? See, Magic of bounty! all these spirits thy power Hath conjur'd to attend. I know the merchant.

*Pain.* I know them both; 't'other's a jeweller.

*Mer.* Oh! 'tis a worthy lord.

*Jew.* Nay, that's most fix'd.

*Mer.* A most incomparable man; breath'd, as it were,

To an untirable and continue goodness.

*He passes.*

*Jew.* I have a jewel here.

\* Joured.

† Goes beyond common bounds.

*Mer.* O pray let's see't: For the lord Timon, Sir?

*Jew.* If he would touch the estimate: But, for that—

*Poet.* When we for recompense have prais'd the vile,

It stains the glory in that happy verse Which aptly sings the good.

*Mer.* 'Tis a good form.

*Jew.* And rich: here is a water, look you.

*Pain.* You are rapt, Sir, in some work, some dedication

To the great lord.

*Poet.* A thing slipp'd idly from me.

Our poesy is as a gum, which oozes From whence 'tis nourished: The fire i'the flint Shows not, till it be struck; our gentle flame Provokes itself, and, like the current, flies Each bound it chafes. What have you there?

*Pain.* A picture, Sir.—And when comes your book forth?

*Poet.* Upon the heels of my presentment \* Sir. Let's see your piece.

*Pain.* 'Tis a good piece.

*Poet.* So 'tis: this comes off well and excel-

\* As soon as my book has been presented to Timon.

*Pain.* Indifferent.

*Poet.* Admirable: How this grace

Speaks his own standing! What a mental power  
This eye shoots forth! how big imagination  
Moves in this lip! to the dumbness of the gesture  
One might interpret.

*Pain.* It is a pretty mocking of the life.  
Here is a touch; let's good!

*Poet.* I'll say of it,  
It tutors nature: artificial strife  
Lives in these touches, livelier than life.

*Enter certain SENATORS, and pass over.*

*Pain.* How this lord's follow'd!

*Poet.* The senators of Athens:—Happy men!

*Pain.* Look, more!

*Poet.* You see this confluence, this great flood  
of visitors.

I have, in this rough work, shap'd out a man,  
Whom this beneath world doth embrace and hug

With amplest entertainment: My free drift  
Hails not particularly; but moves itself  
In a wide sea of wax; no level'd malice  
Infects one comma in the course I hold;  
But flies an eagle flight, hold, and forth on,  
Leaving no tract behind.

*Pain.* How shall I understand you?

*Poet.* I'll unbolt to you.

You see how all conditions, how all minds,  
(As well of glib and slippery creatures, as  
Of grave and austere quality,) tender down  
Their services to lord Timon: his large fortune,  
Upon his good and gracious nature hanging,  
Subdues and properties to his love and tend-  
ance

All sorts of hearts; yea, foom the glass-fac'd  
flatterer;

To Apemantus, that few things loves better  
Than to abhor himself: even he drops down  
The knee before him, and returns in peace  
Most rich in Timon's nod.

*Pain.* I saw them speak together.

*Poet.* Sir, I have upon a high and pleasant  
hill,

Feign'd Fortune to be thrond: The base o'the  
mount

Is rank'd with all deserts, all kind of natures,  
That labour on the bosom of this sphere

To propagate their states: amongst them all,  
Whose eyes are on this sovereign lady fix'd,  
One do I personate of lord Timon's frame,  
Whom Fortune with her ivory hand wants to  
her;

Whose present grace to present slaves and ser-  
vants translates his rivals.

*Pain.* 'Tis conceiv'd to scope. [thinks,  
This throne, this Fortune, and this hill, me-  
With one man beckon'd from the rest below,  
Bowling his head against the steepy mount  
To climb his happiness would be well express'd  
In our condition.

*Poet.* Nay, Sir, but hear me on:  
All those which were his fellows but of late,  
(Some better than his value,) on the moment  
Follow his strides, his lobbies fill with tendance  
Rain sacrificial whisperings in his ear,  
Make sacred even his stirrup, and through him  
Drink the free air.

*Pain.* Ay, marry, what of these?

*Poet.* When Fortune in her shift and change  
of mood,  
Spurns down her late below'd, all his depend-  
Which labour'd after him to the mountain's top,  
Even on their knees and hands, let him slip  
down,

Not one accompanying his declining foot.

*Pain.* 'Tis common:  
A thousand moral paintings I can show

\* The contest of art with nature.

† My poem does not allude to any particular character.  
‡ Explain. § Shewing, as a glass does by reflection,  
the looks of his patron. ¶ To advance their con-  
ditions of life. ¶ Whispers of officious servility.

•• Inebriate.

That shall demonstrate these quick blows of for-  
tune

More pregnantly than words. Yet you do well,  
To show lord Timon, that mean eyes have  
The foot above the head [seen]

*Trumpets sound. Enter TIMON, attended; the  
SERVANT of VENTIDIUS talking with him.*

*Tim.* Imprison'd is he, say you?

*Ven. Ser.* Ay, my good lord: five talents is  
his debt;

His means most short, his creditors most strait:  
Your honourable letter he desires [him,  
To those have shut him up; which failing to  
Periods his comfort.

*Tim.* Noble Ventidius! Well;

I am not of that feather to shake off [him  
My friend when he must need me. I do know  
A gentleman that well deserves a help,  
Which he shall have: I'll pay the debt, and free  
him.

*Ven. Ser.* Your lordship ever binds him.

*Tim.* Commend me to him: I will send his  
ransom;

And, being enfranchis'd, bid him to come to  
me:—

'Tis not enough to help the feeble up,  
But to support him after.—Fare you well.

*Ven. Ser.* All happiness to your honour!  
[Exit.

*Enter an old ATHENIAN.*

*Old Ath.* Lord Timon, hear me speak.

*Tim.* Freely, good father.

*Old Ath.* Thou hast a servant nam'd Lu-  
cilius.

*Tim.* I have so: What of him?

*Old Ath.* Most noble Timon, call the man  
before thee.

*Tim.* Attends he here, or no?—Lucilius!

*Enter LUCILIUS.*

*Luc.* Here, at your lordship's service.

*Old Ath.* This fellow here, lord Timon, this  
thy creature,

By night frequents my house. I am a man  
That from my first have been inclin'd to thrift,  
And my estate deserves an heir more rais'd,  
Than one which holds a trencher

*Tim.* Well; what further?

*Old Ath.* One only daughter have I, no kin  
else,

On whom I may confer what I have got:  
The maid is fair, o'the youngest for a bride,  
And I have bred her at my dearest cost,  
In qualities of the best. This man of thine  
Attempts her love: I pray thee, noble lord,  
Join with me to forbid him her resort;  
Myself have spoke in vain.

*Tim.* The man is honest.

*Old Ath.* Therefore he will be, Timon:  
His honesty rewards him in itself,  
It must not bear my daughter.

*Tim.* Does she love him?

*Old Ath.* She is young, and apt:  
Our own precedent passions do instruct us  
What levity's in youth.

*Tim.* [To LUCILIUS.] Love you the maid?

*Luc.* Ay, my good lord, and she accepts  
of it.

*Old Ath.* If in her marriage my consent be  
missing,

I call the gods to witness, I will choose  
Mine heir from forth the beggars of the world,  
And dispossess her all.

*Tim.* How shall she be endow'd,

If she be mated with an equal husband?

*Old Ath.* Three talents, on the present; in  
future, all.

*Tim.* This gentleman of mine hath serv'd me  
long:

To build his fortune, I will strain a little  
For 'tis a bold in men. Give him thy daughter;

\* Inferior spectators.

What you bestow, in him I'll counterpoise,  
And make him weigh with her.

*Old Ath.* Most noble lord,  
Pawn me to this your honour, she is his.

*Tim.* My hand to thee; mine honour on my promise.

*Luc.* Humbly I thank your lordship: Never may

That state or fortune fall into my keeping,  
Which is not ow'd to you!

[*Exeunt LUCILIUS and old ATHENIAN.*]

*Poet.* Vouchsafe my labour, and long live your lordship!

*Tim.* I thank you; you shall hear from me anon:

Go not away.—What have you there, my friend?

*Pain.* A piece of painting, which I do beseech

*Tim.* Painting is welcome.

The painting is almost the natural man;  
For since dishonour traffics with man's nature,  
He is but outside: These pencil'd figures are  
Even such as they give out.\* I like your work;

And you shall find, I like it: wait attendance

Till you hear further from me.

*Pain.* The gods preserve you!

*Tim.* Well fare you, gentlemen: Give me your hand;

We must needs come together.—Sir, your jewel hath suffer'd under praise.

*Jew.* What, my lord? dispraise?

*Tim.* A mere satiety of commendations.

If I should pay you for't as 'tis extoll'd,

It would unweave me quite.

*Jew.* My lord, 'tis rated [know,

As those, which sell, would give: But you well

Things of like value, differing in the owners,

Are prized by their masters: believe't, dear lord,

You mend the jewel by wearing it.

*Tim.* Well mock'd.

*Mer.* No, my good lord; he speaks the common tongue,

Which all men speak with him.

*Tim.* Look, who comes here. Will you be

chid?

[*Enter APEMANTUS.*]

*Jen.* We will bear with your lordship.

*Ath.* He'll spare none.

*Tim.* Good morrow to thee, gentle Apemantus!

*Apem.* Till I be gentle, stay for thy good morrow;

[honest.

When thou art Timon's dog, and these knaves

*Tim.* Why dost thou call them knaves? thou know'st them not.

*Apem.* Are they not Athenians?

*Tim.* Yes.

*Apem.* Then I repent not.

*Jew.* You know me, Apemantus.

*Apem.* Thou know'st I do; I call'd thee by thy name.

*Tim.* Thou art proud, Apemantus.

*Apem.* Of nothing so much, as that I am not like Timon.

*Tim.* Whither art going?

*Apem.* To knock out an honest Athenian's brains.

*Tim.* That's a deed thou'lt die for.

*Apem.* Right, if doing nothing be death by the law.

*Tim.* How likest thou this picture, Apemantus?

*Apem.* The best, for the innocence.

*Tim.* Wrought he not well, that painted it?

*Apem.* He wrought better, that made the painter; and yet he's but a filthy piece of work.

*Pain.* You are a dog.

*Apem.* Thy mother's of my generation: What's she if I be a dog?

*Tim.* Wilt dine with me, Apemantus?

*Apem.* No; I eat not lords.

\* What they profess to be.

† Draw out the whole mass of my fortunes.

*Tim.* An thou should'st, thou'dst anger ladies.

*Apem.* Oh! they eat lords; so they come by great bellies.

*Tim.* That's a lascivious apprehension.

*Apem.* So thou apprehend'st it: Take it for thy labour.

*Tim.* How dost thou like this jewel, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Not so well as plain-dealing,\* which will not cost a man a doit.

*Tim.* What dost thou think 'tis worth?

*Apem.* Not worth my thinking.—How now, poet?

*Poet.* How now, philosopher?

*Apem.* Thou liest.

*Poet.* Art not one?

*Apem.* Yes.

*Poet.* Then I lie not.

*Apem.* Art not a poet?

*Poet.* Yes.

*Apem.* Then thou liest: look in thy last work, where thou hast feign'd him a worthy fellow.

*Poet.* That's not feign'd, he is so.

*Apem.* Yes, he is worthy of thee, and to pay thee for thy labour: He that loves to be flattered, is worthy o'the flatterer. Heavens, that I were a lord!

*Tim.* What would'st do then, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Even as Apemantus does now, hate a lord with my heart.

*Tim.* What, thyself?

*Apem.* Ay.

*Tim.* Wherefore?

*Apem.* That I had no angry wit to be a lord.—

Art not thou a merchant?

*Mer.* Ay, Apemantus.

*Apem.* Traffic confound thee, if the gods will not!

*Mer.* If traffic do it, the gods do it.

*Apem.* Traffic's thy god, and thy god confound thee!

*Trumpets sound. Enter a SERVANT.*

*Tim.* What trumpet's that?

*Serv.* 'Tis Alcibiades, and

Some twenty horse, all of companionship.

*Tim.* Pray, entertain them; give them guide to us.— [Exeunt some Attendants.

You must needs dine with me:—Go not you hence,

[done,

Till I have thank'd you; and, when dinner's

show me this piece.—I am joyful of your sights.—

*Enter ALCIBIADES, with his Company.*

Most welcome, Sir! [They salute.

*Apem.* So, so; there!—

Aches contract and starve your supple joints!—

That there should be small love 'mongst these

sweet knaves, [out

And all this court's! The strain of man's bred

into baboon and monkey.†

*Alcib.* Sir, you have sav'd my longing, and I

Most hungrily on your sight. [teed

*Tim.* Right welcome, Sir:

Ere we depart, we'll share a bounteous time

in different pleasures. Pray you, let us in.

[Exeunt all but APEMANTUS.

*Enter two LOVES.*

1 Lord. What time a day is't, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Time to be honest.

1 Lord. That time serves still.

*Apem.* The most accursed thou, that still

omit'st it.

2 Lord. Thou art going to lord Timon's feast.

*Apem.* Ay; to see meat fill knaves, and wine

heat fools.

2 Lord. Fare thee well, fare thee well.

\* Alluding to the proverb: plain-dealing is a jewel,

but they who use it beggars.

† His lineage degenerated into a monkey.

*Apem.* Thou art a fool, to bid me farewell twice.

*2 Lord.* Why, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Shouldst have kept one to thyself, for I mean to give thee none.

*1 Lord.* Hang thyself.

*Apem.* No, I will do nothing at thy bidding: make thy requests to thy friend.

*2 Lord.* Away, unpeaceable dog, or I'll spurn thee hence.

*Apem.* I will fly, like a dog, the heels of the ass. [*Exit.*]

*1 Lord.* He's opposite to humanity. Come, shall we in,  
And taste lord Timon's bounty? he outgoes  
The very heart of kindness.

*2 Lord.* He pours it out: Plutus, the god of gold,

Is but his steward: no meed\* but he repays  
Sevenfold above itself: no gift to him,  
But breeds the giver a return exceeding  
All use of quittance.†

*1 Lord.* The noblest mind he carries  
That ever govern'd man.

*2 Lord.* Long may he live in fortunes! Shall we in?

*1 Lord.* I'll keep you company. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—The same.—A Room of State in  
TIMON'S HOUSE.

*Hautboys playing loud music. A great banquet served in, FLAVIUS and others attending: then enter TIMON, ALCEBIADES, LUCIUS, LUCULLUS, SEMPRONIUS, and other Athenian Senators, with VENTIDIUS, and Attendants. Then comes, dropping after all, APEMANTUS, discontentedly.*

*Fen.* Most honour'd Timon, 't hath pleas'd the gods remember

My father's age, and call him to long peace.  
He is gone happy, and has left me rich:  
Then, as in grateful virtue I am bound  
To you free heart, I do return those talents,  
Doubled, with thanks and service, from whose  
help

I deriv'd liberty.

*Tim.* Oh! by no means,  
Honest Ventidius: you mistake my love;  
I gave it freely ever; and there's none  
Can truly say he gives, if he receives:  
It our betters play at that game, we must not

date  
To imitate them: Faults that are rich, are fair.

*Fen.* A noble spirit.

[*They all stand ceremoniously looking on TIMON.*]

*Tim.* Nay, my lords, ceremony  
Was but devis'd at first, to set a gloss  
On faint deeds, hollow welcomes,  
Reverting goodness, sorry ere 'tis shown;  
But where there is true friendship, there needs

none.  
Pray, sit; more welcome are ye to my fortunes,  
Than my fortunes to me.

[*They sit.*]  
*1 Lord.* My lord, we always have confess'd  
it.

*Apem.* Oh, ho, confess'd it? hang'd it, have  
you not?

*Tim.* O Apemantus!—you are welcome.

*Apem.* No.

You shall not make me welcome:  
I come to have thee thrust me out of doors.

*Tim.* Fie, thou art a churl; you have got a  
humour there

Does not become a man, 'tis much to blame:  
Thy say, my lords, that *ira furor brevis est*,  
But would'st man's ever angry.

Go, let him have a table by himself;  
For he does neither affect company,  
Nor is he fit for it, indeed.

\* No desert. † All customary returns for obligations. ‡ Anger is a short madness.

*Apem.* Let me stay at thine own peril, Timon:

I come to observe; I give thee warning out.

*Tim.* I take no heed of thee; thou art an Athenian; therefore welcome: I myself would have no power; prythee, let my meat make thee silent.

*Apem.* I scorn thy meat; 'twould choke me for I should

Ne'er flatter thee.—O you gods! what a number  
Of men eat Timon, and he sees them not!  
It grieves me, to see so many dip their meat  
In one man's blood; and all the madness is,  
He cheers them up too.\*

I wonder men dare trust themselves with men:  
Methinks they should invite them without knives;  
Good for their meat, and safer for their lives.  
There's much example for't; the fellow that  
Sits next him now, parts bread with him, and  
pledges

The breath of him in a divided draught,  
Is the readiest man to kill him: it has been  
if I prov'd.

Were a huge man, I should fear to drink at  
meals;

Lest they should spy my windpipe's dangerous  
notes;

Great men should drink with harness† on their  
throats.

*Tim.* My lord, in heart; and let the health  
go round.

*2 Lord.* Let it flow this way, my good lord.

*Apem.* Flow this way! [*Timon.*]  
A brave fellow!—he keeps his tides well. *Timon.*  
Those healths will make thee and thy state look  
ill.

Here's that which is too weak to be a sinuer,  
Honest water, which ne'er left man i'th' mire;  
This and my food, are equals; there's no odds.  
Feasts are too proud to give thanks to the gods.

APEMANTUS' GRACE.

*Immortal gods, I crave no self;  
I pray for no man, but myself:  
Grant I may never prove so fond, &  
To trust man on his oath or bond;  
Or a harlot, for her weeping;  
Or a dog, that seems a sleeping;  
Or a keeper with my freedom;  
Or my friends, if I should need 'em.  
Amen. So fall to't:  
Rich men sin, and I eat root.*

[*Eats and drinks.*]  
Much good dich thy good heart, Apemantus!

*Tim.* Captain Alcibiades, your heart's in the  
field now.

*Alcb.* My heart is ever at your service, my  
lord.

*Tim.* You had rather be at a breakfast of ene-  
mies, than a dinner of friends.

*Alcb.* So they were bleeding new, my lord,  
there's no meat like them: I could wish my best  
friend at such a feast.

*Apem.* 'Would all those flatterers were thine  
enemies then; that then thou might'st kill 'em,  
and bid me to 'em.

*1 Lord.* Might we but have that happiness,  
my lord, that you would once use our hearts,  
whereby we might express some part of our  
zeals, we should think ourselves for ever per-  
fect.‡

*Tim.* O no doubt, my good friends, but the  
gods themselves have provided that I shall have  
much help from you: How had you been my  
friends else? why have you that charitable ¶ title  
from thousands, did you not chiefly belong to my  
heart? I have told more of you to myself, than  
you can with modesty speak in your own behalf;  
and thus far I continue you. O you gods, think

\* Alluding to hounds which are trained to pursue by  
the blood of the animal which they kill. † Armour.

‡ In sincerity. ¶ Foolish.  
‡ At the summit of happiness. ¶ Educating.

I, what need we have any friends, if we should never have need of them? they were the most needless creatures living, should we ne'er have use for them; and would most resemble sweet instruments hung up in cases, that keep their sounds to themselves. Why, I have often wish'd myself poorer, that I might come nearer to you. We are born to do benefits; and what better or properer can we call our own, than the riches of our friends? Oh! what a precious comfort 'tis, to have so many, like brothers, commanding one another's fortunes! O joy, e'en made away ere it can be born! Mine eyes cannot hold out water, methinks: to forget their faults, I drink to you.

*Apem.* Thou weep'st to make them drink, Timon.

2 *Lord.* Joy had the like conception in our eyes,  
And, at that instant, like a babe sprung up.

*Apem.* Ho! ho! I laugh to think that babe a bastard.

3 *Lord.* I promise you, my lord, you mov'd me much.

*Apem.* Much! [*Tucket sounded.*]  
*Tim.* What means that trumpet?—How now!

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Serr.* Please you, my lord, there are certain ladies most desirous of admittance.

*Tim.* Ladies! what are their wills?

*Serr.* There comes with them a fore-runner, my lord, which bears that office, to signify their pleasures.

*Tim.* I pray, let them be admitted.

*Enter CUPID.*

*Cup.* Hail to thee, worthy Timon;—and to all

That of his bounties taste!—The five best senses  
Acknowledge thee their patron; and come  
fervently

To gratulate this piteous bosom: The ear,  
Taste touch, smell, all pleas'd from thy table  
rise;

They only now come but to feast thine eyes.

*Tim.* They are welcome all, let them have  
kind admittance.

Music, make their welcome. [*Exit CUPID.*]

1 *Lord.* You see, my lord, how ample you are  
belov'd.

*Music.*—*Re-enter CUPID, with a masque of  
LADIES as Amazons, with lutes in their  
hands, dancing, and playing.*

*Apem.* Hey day, what a sweep of vanity  
comes this way!

They dance! they are mad women.  
Like madness is the glory of this life,

As this pomp shows to a little oil, and root.  
We make ourselves fools, to disport ourselves;

And spend our flatteries, to drink those men,  
Upon whose age we void it up again,

With poisonous spite and envy. Who lives,  
that's not

Depraved, or depraves? who dies, that bears  
Not one spurn to their graves of their friends'  
gift?

I should fear, those that dance before me now,  
Would one day stamp upon me. It has been  
done;

Men shut their doors against a setting sun.

*The Lords rise from table, with much adorning  
of TIMON; and, to shew their loves, each  
singles out an Amazon, and all dance, men  
with women, a lofty strain or two to the  
hautboys, and cease.*

*Tim.* You have done our pleasures much grace,  
fair ladies,

Set a fair fashion on our entertainment,  
Which was not half so beautiful and kind;  
You have add'd worth unto't, and lively lustre,  
And entertain'd me with mine own device;  
I am to thank you for it.

1 *Lady.* My lord, you take us even at the  
best.

*Apem.* Faith, for the worst is filthy; and would  
not hold taking, I doubt me.

*Tim.* Ladies, there is an idle banquet  
Attends you: Please you to dispose yourselves.

*All Lad.* Most thankfully, my lord.  
[*Exeunt CUPID, and LADIES.*]

*Tim.* Flavius,—  
*Flav.* My lord.

*Tim.* The little casket bring me hither.

*Flav.* Yes, my lord.—More jewels yet!  
There is no crossing him in his humour;

Else I should tell him,—Well,—if faith, I should  
When all's spent, he'd be cross'd\* then, as he  
could.

'Tis pity, bounty had not eyes behind; †  
That man might ne'er be wretched for his  
mind; ‡

[*Exit, and returns with the casket.*]

1 *Lord.* Where be our men?

*Serr.* Here, my lord, in readiness.

2 *Lord.* Our horses.

*Tim.* O my friends, I have one word  
To say to you:—Look you, my good lord, I  
must

Entreat you, honour me so much, as to  
Advance this jewel;

Accept and wear it, kind my lord.

1 *Lord.* I am so far already in your gifts,—  
All. So are we all.

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Serr.* My lord, there are certain nobles of the  
senate

Newly alighted, and come to visit you.

*Tim.* They are fairly welcome.

*Flav.* I beseech your honour,

Vouchsafe me a word; it does concern you near.

*Tim.* Near? why then another time I'll hear  
I pray thee, let us be provided [thee:]

To shew them entertainment.

*Flav.* I scarce know how. [*Aside.*]

*Enter Another SERVANT.*

2 *Serr.* May it please your honour, the lord  
Lucius,

Out of his free love, hath presented to you  
Four milk-white horses, trapp'd in silver.

*Tim.* I shall accept them fairly: let the pre-  
sents

*Enter a third SERVANT.*

Be worthily entertain'd.—How now, what news?

3 *Serr.* Please you, my lord, that honourable  
gentleman, Lord Lucullus, entreats your company  
to-morrow to hunt with him; and has sent your  
honour two brace of greyhounds.

*Tim.* I'll hunt with him; And let them be  
receiv'd,

Not without fair reward.

*Flav.* [*Aside.*] What will this come to?  
He commands us to provide, and give great gifts,  
And all out of an empty coffer—

Nor will he know his purse; or yield me this,  
To shew him what a beggar his heart is,

Being of no power to make his wishes good;  
His promiser fly so beyond his state,

That what he speaks is all in debt, he owes  
For every word; he is so kind, that he now  
Pays interest for't; his land's put to their books.

Well 'would I were gently put out of office,  
Before I were forc'd out!

Happier is he that has no friend to feed,  
Than such as do even enemies exceed.

I bleed inwardly for my lord. [*Exit.*]  
*Tim.* You do yourselves

Much wrong, you bate too much of your own  
merits:—  
Here, my lord, a trifle of our love.

\* A play on the word cross: from the piece of money  
called a cross. † To see the miseries that will  
follow ‡ For his generosity of mind.

2 *Lord.* With more than common thanks I will receive it.

3 *Lord.* Oh! he is the very soul of bounty!

*Tim.* And now I remember me, my lord, you gave

Good words the other day of a bay courser I rode on: it is yours, because you lik'd it.

2 *Lord.* I beseech you, pardon me, my lord, in that.

*Tim.* You may take my word, my lord; I know, no man

Can justly praise but what he does affect:

I weigh my friend's affection with mine own;

I'll tell you true. I'll call on you.

All *Lords.* None so welcome.

*Tim.* I take all and your several visitations

No kind to heart, 'tis not enough to give;

Methinks, I could dead kingdoms to my friends,

And ne'er be weary.—Alcibiades,

Thou art a soldier, therefore seldom rich,

It comes in charity to thee: for all thy living

Is 'mongst the dead; and all the lands thou hast

Lie in a pitch'd field.

*Alcib.* Ay, dedled land, my lord.

1 *Lord.* We are so virtuously bound,—

*Tim.* And so

Am I to you.

2 *Lord.* So infinitely endear'd,—

*Tim.* All to you.—Lights, more lights.

1 *Lord.* The best of happiness,

Honour, and fortunes, keep with you, lord

*Timon!*

*Tim.* Ready for his friends.

[*Exeunt* ALCIBIADES, LORDS, &c.]

*Apem.* What a coil's here!

Serving of becks,† and jutting out of hums!

I doubt whether their less be worth the sums

That are given for 'em. Friendship's full of

dress: Methinks, false hearts should never have sound

Thus honest fools lay out their wealth on

court'sies.

*Tim.* Now Apemantus! if thou wert not sullen,

I'd be good to thee.

*Apem.* No, I'll nothing: for,

If I should be brib'd too, there would be none

To rail upon thee: and then thou wouldest see

the faster.

Thou giv'st so long, Timon, I fear me, thou

Wilt give away thyself in paper: shortly;

What need these feasts, pomps, and vain glories?

*Tim.* Nay,

An you begin to rail on society once,

I am sworn, not to give regard to you.

Farewell; and come with better music. [*Exit.*]

*Apem.* So:—

Thou'lt not hear me now,—thou shalt not then,

I'll lock

Thy heaven's from thee. Oh! that men's ears

should be

To counsel deaf, but not to flattery! [*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—The same.—A Room in a SENATOR'S House.

*Enter* a SENATOR, with papers in his hand.

*Sen.* And late, five thousand to Varro; and to

Isidore

He owes nine thousand; besides my former sum,

Which makes it five and twenty.—Still in motion

Of raging waste! It cannot hold; it will not.

If I want gold, steal but a beggar's dog,

And give it Timon, why, the dog coins gold:

If I would sell my horse, and buy twenty more

Better than he, why, give my horse to Timon,

Ask nothing, give it him, it foals me, straight,

And able horses: No porter at his gate;

But rather one that smiles, and still invites

\* All happiness to you  
† In bonds.

† Offering salutations  
‡ &c. good advice.

All that pass by. It cannot hold; no reason  
Can found his state in safety. \* Caphis, ho!

Caphis, I say!

*Enter* CAPHIS.

*Caph.* Here, Sir; What is your pleasure?

*Sen.* Get on your cloak, and haste you to lord

Timon;

Importune him for my monies; be not cras'd †

With slight denial; nor then silenc'd, when—

*Commend me to your master*—and the cap

Plays in the right hand, thus:—but tell him,

Sirrah,

My uses cry to me, I must serve my turn

Out of mine own; his days and times are past,

And my reliances on his tracted dates

Have smit my credit: I love and honour him;

But must not break my back, to heal his finger:

Immediate are my needs; and my relief

Must not be toas'd and turn'd to me in words,

But find supply immediate. Get you gone:

Put on a most importunate aspect,

A visage of demand; for I do fear,

When every feather sticks in his own wing,

Lord Timon will be left a naked gull,

Which flashes now a phoenix. Get you gone.

*Caph.* I go, Sir.

*Sen.* I go, Sir!—take the bonds along with you

And have the dates in compt.

*Caph.* I will, Sir.

*Sen.* Go.

[*Exeunt*]

### SCENE II.—The same.—A Hall in TIMON'S

House.

*Enter* FLAVIUS, with many bills in his hand.

*Flav.* No care, no stop! so senseless of ex-

pendence,

That he will neither know how to maintain it,

Nor cease his flow of riot: Takes no account

How things go from him; nor resumes no care

Of what is to continue, Never mind

Was to be so unwise, to be so kind.

What shall be done? He will not hear, till feel

I must be round with him now he comes from

hunting.

Fie, fie, fie, he!

*Enter* CAPHIS, and the SERVANTS of ISIDORE

and VARRO.

*Caph.* Good even, Varro: What,

You come for money?

*Var. Serv.* Is't not your business too?

*Caph.* It is.—And yours too, Isidore?

*Isid. Serv.* It is so.

*Caph.* 'Would we were all discharg'd!

*Var. Serv.* I fear it.

*Caph.* Here comes the lord.

*Enter* TIMON, ALCIBIADES, and LORDS, &c.

*Tim.* So soon as dinner's done, we'll forth

again,

My Alcibiades.—With me? What's your will?

*Caph.* My lord, here is a note of certain dues.

*Tim.* Dues? Whence are you?

*Caph.* Of Athens here, my lord.

*Tim.* Go to my steward.

*Caph.* Please it your lordship, he hath put me

off

To the succession of new days this month:

My master is awak'd by great occasion,

To call upon his own; and humbly prays you,

That with your other noble parts you'll suit,

In giving him his right.

*Tim.* Mine honest friend,

I pry'thee, but repair to me next morning.

*Caph.* Nay, good my lord,—

*Tim.* Contain thyself, good friend.

*Var. Serv.* One Varro's servant, my good

lord,—

*Isid. Serv.* From Isidore;

He humbly prays your speedy payment,—

\* By no argument can he be proved in a solvent state.  
† Repulsed.

*Caph.* If you did know, my lord, my master's wants,—

*Var. Serv.* 'Twas due on forfeiture, my lord, six weeks,

And past,—

*Isid. Serv.* Your steward puts me off, my lord;

And I am sent expressly to your lordship.

*Tim.* Give me breath:—

I do beseech you, good my lords, keep on;

[*Exit ALCIBIADES and LORDS.*]

I'll wait upon you instantly.—Come hither, pray you.

[*To FLAVIUS.*]  
How goes the world, that I am thus encounter'd

With clamorous demands of date-broke bonds,

And the detention of long-since-due debts,

Against my honour?

*Flav.* Please you, gentlemen,

The time is unagreeable to this business:

Your importunity cease, till after dinner;

That I may make his lordship understand

Wherefore you are not paid.

*Tim.* Do so, my friends:

See them well entertain'd. [*Exit TIMON.*]

*Flav.* I pray, draw near.

[*Exit FLAVIUS.*]

*Enter APEMANTUS and a FOOL.*

*Caph.* Stay, stay, here comes the fool with Apemantus; let's have some sport with 'em.

*Var. Serv.* Hang him, he'll abuse us.

*Isid. Serv.* A plague upon him, dog!

*Var. Serv.* How dost, fool?

*Apem.* Dost dialogue with thy shadow?

*Var. Serv.* I speak not to thee.

*Apem.* No; 'tis to thyself,—Come away

[*To the FOOL.*]

*Isid. Serv.* [*To VAR. SERV.*] There's the fool hangs on your back already.

*Apem.* No, thou stand'st single, thou art not on him yet.

*Caph.* Where's the fool now?

*Apem.* He last asked the question.—Poor rogues, and usurers' men! bawds between gold and want!

*All Serv.* What are we, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Asses.

*All Serv.* Why?

*Apem.* That you ask me what you are, and do not know yourselves.—Speak to 'em, fool.

*Fool.* How do you, gentlemen?

*All Serv.* Gramercies, good fool: How does your mistress?

*Fool.* She's e'en setting on water to scald such chickens as you are. 'Would, we could see you at Corinth.

*Apem.* Good! gramercy.

*Enter PAGE.*

*Fool.* Look you, here comes my mistress' page.

*Page.* [*To the FOOL.*] Why, how now, captain? what do you in this wise company?—How dost thou, Apemantus?

*Apem.* 'Would I had a rod in my mouth, that I might answer thee profitably.

*Page.* Pi'thee, Apemantus, read me the superscription of these letters; I know not which is which.

*Apem.* Canst not read?

*Page.* No.

*Apem.* There will little learning die then, that day thou art hanged. This is to lord Timon; this to Alcibiades. Go; thou wast born a bastard, and thou'lt die a bawd.

*Page.* Thou wast whelped a dog; and thou shalt famish a dog's death. Answer not, I am gone. [*Exit PAGE.*]

*Apem.* Even so thou out-run'st grace. Fool, I will go with you to lord Timon's.

*Fool.* Will you leave me there?

*Apem.* If Timon stay at home.—You three serve three masters?

*All Serv.* Ay, 'would they served us!

*Apem.* So would I,—as good a trick as ever hangman served thief.

*Fool.* Are you three usurers' men?

*All Serv.* Ay, fool.

*Fool.* I think, no usurer but has a fool to his servant: My mistress is one, and I am her fool. When men come to borrow of your masters, they approach sadly, and go away merry; but they enter my mistress' house merrily, and go away sadly: The reason of this?

*Var. Serv.* I could render one.

*Apem.* Do it then, that we may account thee a whoremaster and a knave; which, notwithstanding, thou shalt be no less esteemed.

*Var. Serv.* What is a whoremaster, fool?

*Fool.* A fool in good clothes, and something like thee. 'Tis a spirit: sometime, it appears like a lord: sometime, like a lawyer; sometime, like a philosopher, with two stones more than his artificial one: He is very often like a knight; and, generally in all shapes, that man goes up and down in, from fourscore to thirteen, this spirit walks in.

*Var. Serv.* Thou art not altogether a fool.

*Fool.* Nor thou altogether a wise man; as much foolery as I have, so much wit thou lackest.

*Apem.* That answer might have become Apemantus.

*All Serv.* Aside, aside; here comes lord Timon.

*Re-enter TIMON and FLAVIUS.*

*Apem.* Come with me, fool, come.

*Fool.* I do not always follow lower, elder brother, and woman; sometime, the philosopher.

[*Exit APEMANTUS and FOOL.*]

*Flav.* 'Pray you, walk near; I'll speak with you anon. [*Exit SERV.*]

*Tim.* You make me marvel: Wherefore, ere this time,

Had you not fully laid my state before me;

That I might so have rated my expense,

As I had leave of means?

*Flav.* You would not hear me,

At many leisures I propos'd.

*Tim.* Go to:

Perchance, some single vantages you took

When my indisposition put you back;

And that unaptness made your minister,

'Thus to excuse yourself.

*Flav.* O my good lord!

At many times I brought in my accounts, Laid them before you; you would throw them off,

And say, you found them in mine honesty.

When, for some trifling present, you have bid me

Return so much, \* I have shook my head, and wept:

Yea, 'gainst the authority of manners, pray'd

you

To hold your hand more close; I did endure

Not seldom, nor so slight checks; when I have

Prompted you, in the ebb of your estate,

And your great flow of debts. My dear-lov'd lord,

Though you hear now, (too late!) yet now's a

time,

The greatest of your having lacks a half

To pay your present debts.

*Tim.* Let all my land be sold.

*Flav.* 'Tis all engag'd, some forfeited and gone;

And what remains will hardly stop the mouth

Of present dues: the future comes apace:

What shall defend the interim? and at length

How goes our reckoning?

*Tim.* To Lacedæmon did my land extend.

*Flav.* O my good lord, the world is but

word;

Were it all your's, to give it in a breath,

How quickly were it gone?

*Tim.* You tell me true.

\* *L. s.* a certain sum.



*Flav.* If you suspect my husbandry, or false-  
Call me before the exactest auditor, <sup>[hood,</sup>  
And set me on the proof. So the gods bless me,  
When all our offices \* have been oppress'd  
With riotous feeders; when our vaults have  
wept  
With drunken spilt of wine; when every room  
Hath blaz'd with lights, and bray'd with min-  
strelsy;  
I have retur'd me to a wasteful cock, †  
And set mine eyes at flow.

*Tim.* Pr'ythee, no more.

*Flav.* Heavens, have I said, the bounty of  
this lord! <sup>[saints,</sup>  
How many prodigal bits have slaves and pea-  
This night englutted! Who is not Timon's?  
What heart, head, sword, force, means, but is  
lord Timon's?

Great Timon, noble, worthy, royal Timon?  
Ah! when the means are gone, that buy this  
praise,

The breath is gone whereof this praise is made:  
Feast-won, fast-lost; one cloud of winter  
showers,

These flies are couch'd

*Tim.* Come, sermon me no further:  
No villainous bounty yet hath pass'd my heart;  
Unwisely, not ignobly, have I given.  
Why dost thou weep? Canst thou the conscience  
lack,

To think I shall lack friends? Secure thy heart:  
If I would broach the vessels of my love,  
And try the argument of hearts by borrow-  
ing,

Men, and men's fortunes, could I frankly use,  
As I can bid thee speak.

*Flav.* Assurance bless your thoughts!

*Tim.* And, in some sort, these wants of mine  
are crown'd

That I account them blessings; for by these  
Shall I try friends: You shall perceive, how  
you

Mistake my fortunes: I am wealthy in my friends.  
Within there, ho!—Flaminius! Servilius!

*Enter FLAMINIUS, SERVILIUS, and other  
SERVANTS.*

*Serv.* My lord, my lord,—

*Tim.* I will de-patch you severally.—You to  
lord Lucius,—

To lord Lucullus you: I hunted with his  
Honour to-day;—You, to Sempronius;  
Commend me to their loves; and, I am proud,  
say

That my occasions have found time to use them  
Toward a supply of money: let the request  
Be fifty talents.

*Flam.* As you have said, my lord

*Flav.* Lord Lucius, and Lord Lucullus?

*Flam.* <sup>[Aside.</sup> bumph! <sup>]</sup> to the

*Tim.* Go you, Sir, <sup>[To another SERV.]</sup> to the  
senators,

(Of whom, even to the state's best health, I  
have

Deserv'd this hearing,) bid 'em send o'the instant  
A thousand talents to me.

*Flav.* I have been bold,  
(For that I knew it the most general way.)  
To them to use your signet, and your name:  
But they do shake their heads, and I am here  
No richer in return.

*Tim.* Is't true? can it be?

*Flav.* They answer, in a joint and corporate  
voice,

That now they are at fall, ‡ want treasure, can-  
not

Do what they would; are sorry—you are hon-  
ourable,—

But yet they could have wish'd—they know  
not—but

\* The apartments allotted to culinary offices, &c.

† A pipe with a turning stopple running to waste.

‡ If I would, (says Timon,) by borrowing, try of what  
men's hearts are composed, what they have in them, &c.

§ Dignified

|| At an ebb.

Something hath been amiss—a noble nature  
May catch a wretch—would all were well—'tis  
pity—

And so intending \* other serious matters,  
After distasteful looks, and these hard ma-  
nitions, †

With certain half-caps, ‡ and cold moving nods,  
They froze me into silence.

*Tim.* You gods, reward them!

I pr'ythee man, look cheerly; These old tri-  
lows

Have their ingratitude in them hereditary:  
Their blood is cak'd, † is cold, it seldom flows.

'Tis lack of kindly warmth, they are not kind,  
And nature as it grows again toward earth,  
Is fashion'd for the journey, dull, and heavy.

Go to Ventidius,—<sup>[To a SERV.]</sup> Pr'ythee, <sup>[To</sup>  
FLAVIUS,] be not sad,

Thou art true, and honest; ingeniously I speak,  
No blame belongs to thee:—<sup>[To SERV.]</sup> Ventidius lately

Buried his father by whose death, he's stepp'd  
Into a great estate: when he was poor,

Imprison'd, and in scarcity of friends,  
I clear'd him with five talents: Great him from

Bid him suppose, some good necessity <sup>[murmur,</sup>  
Touches his friend, which craves to be re-  
member'd

With those five talents:—that had,—<sup>[To FLAV.]</sup>  
give it these fellows

To whom 'tis instant due. Ne'er speak, or  
think, <sup>[sighs]</sup>

That Timon's fortunes 'mong his friends can  
Flav. I would, I could not think it, That

thought is bounty's foe,  
Being free itself, it thinks all others so.

*Exit.*

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same place.—A Room in LUCULLUS'  
House.*

FLAMINIUS waiting. *Enter a SERVANT to him.*

*Serv.* I have told my lord of you, he is com-  
ing down to you.

*Flam.* I thank you, Sir.

*Enter LUCULLUS.*

*Serv.* Here's my lord.

*Lucul.* <sup>[Aside.]</sup> One of Lord Timon's men? a  
gift, I warrant. Why, this hits right; I dreamt  
of a silver basin and ewer to-night. Flaminius,  
honest Flaminius; you are very respectfully  
welcome, Sir.—Fill me some wine.—*[Exit SER-  
VANT.]* And how does that honourable, complete,  
free-hearted gentleman of Athens, thy very boun-  
tiful good lord and master?

*Flam.* His health is well, Sir.

*Lucul.* I am right glad that his health is well,  
Sir: And what hast thou there under thy cloak,  
pretty Flaminius?

*Flam.* Faith, nothing but an empty box, Sir;  
which in my lord's behalf, I come to entreat  
your honour to supply; who, having great and  
instant occasion to use fifty talents, hath sent to  
your lordship to furnish him; nothing doubting  
your present assistance therein.

*Lucul.* La, la, la, la, la,—nothing doubting, says  
he? alas, good lord! a noble gentleman 'tis, if  
he would not keep so good a house. Many a  
time and often I have dined with him, and told  
him on't: and come again to supper to him, or  
purpose to have him spend less; and yet he  
would embrace no counsel, take no warning by  
my coming. Every man has his fault, and hon-  
esty \*\* is his; I have told him on't but I could  
never get him from it.

\* Regarding.

† Abrupt remarks.

‡ A cap slightly moved, not put off.

§ For ingenuously.

|| Liberal.

¶ For respectfully.

\*\* Honesty meaning liberality.

*Re-enter SERVANT, with wine.*

*Serv.* Please your lordship, here is the wine.  
*Lucul.* Flaminius, I have noted thee always wise. Here's to thee.

*Flam.* Your lordship speaks your pleasure.

*Lucul.* I have observed thee always for a forwardly prompt spirit,—give thee thy due,—and one that knows what belongs to reason: and canst use the time well, if the time use thee well: good parts in thee.—Get you gone, Sirrah.—*[To the SERVANT, who goes out.]*—Draw nearer, honest Flaminius. Thy lord's a bountiful gentleman: but thou art wise; and thou knowest well enough, although thou comest to me, that this is no time to lend money; especially upon bare friendship, without security. Here's three solidares\* for thee; good boy, wink at me, and say thou saw'st me not. Fare thee well.

*Flam.* Is't possible, the world should so much differ; And we alive, that liv'd? Fly, damned base-  
To him that worships thee.

*[Throwing the money away.]*  
*Lucul.* Ha! Now I see thou art a tool, and fit for thy master. *[Exit LUCULLUS.]*

*Flam.* May these add to the number that may scald thee!

I et molten corn be thy damnation,  
Thou disease of a friend, and not himself!  
Has friendship such a faint and milky heart,  
It turns in less than two nights? O you gods,  
I feel my master's passion! This slave  
Unto his honour, has my lord's meat in him;  
Why should it thrive, and him to nuriment,  
When he is turn'd to poison!  
Oh! may diseases only work upon't!  
And, when he is sick to death, let not that part  
Of nature  
Which my lord paid for, be of any power  
To expel sickness, but prolong his hour!  
*[Exit.]*

SCENE II.—The same.—A public place.

*Enter LUCIUS, with three STRANGERS.*

*Luc.* Who, the lord Timon? he is my very good friend, and an honourable gentleman.

1 *Stran.* We know him for no less, though we are but strangers to him. But I can tell you one thing, my lord, and which I hear from common rumours; now lord Timon's happy hours are done\* and past, and his estate shrinks from him.

*Luc.* For no, do not believe it; he cannot want for money.

2 *Stran.* But believe you this, my lord, that, not long ago, one of his men was with the lord Lucullus, to borrow so many talents; nay, urg'd extremely for't, and showed what necessity belonged to't, and yet was denied.

*Luc.* How?

2 *Stran.* I tell you denied, my lord.

*Luc.* What a strange case was that? now, before the gods, I am ashamed on't. Denied that honourable man! there was very little honour show'd in't. For my own part, I must needs confess, I have received some small kindnesses from him, as money, plate, jewels, and such like trifles, nothing comparing to his; yet, had he mistook him, and lent to me, I should ne'er have denied his occasion so many talents.

*Enter SERVILIUS.*

*Serv.* See, by good hap, yonder's my lord; I have sweat to see his honour.—*[To LUCIUS.]*

*Luc.* Servilius! you are kindly met, Sir. Fare thee well.—Commend me to thy honourable-virtuous lord, my very exquisite friend.

\* A piece of Shakspeare's coming.

† And we who were alive then, alive now.

‡ Suffering.

§ His life.

¶ Consumed.

*Serv.* May it please your honour, my lord hath sent—

*Luc.* Ha! what has he sent? I am so much endeared to that lord, he's ever sending: How shall I thank him, thinkest thou? and what has he sent now?

*Serv.* He has only sent his present occasion now, my lord, requesting your lordship to supply his instant use with so many talents.

*Luc.* I know; his lordship is but merry with me;

He cannot want fifty-five hundred talents.

*Serv.* But in the mean time he wants less, my lord, if his occasion were not virtuous,\* *[Lucul.]* I should not urge it so half faithfully.

*Luc.* Dost thou speak seriously, Servilius?

*Serv.* Upon my soul, 'tis true, Sir.

*Luc.* What a wicked beast was I, to disturb myself against such a good time, when I might have shown myself honourable? how unluckily it happened, that I should purchase the day before for a little part, and undo a great deal of honour?—Servilius, now before the gods, I am not able to do't; the more beast, I say.—I was sending to use lord Timon myself these gentlemen can witness; but I would not, for the wealth of Athens, I had done it now. Commend me bountifully to his good lordship; and I hope his honour will conceive the fairest of me, because I have no power to be kind. And tell him this from me, I count it one of my greatest afflictions, say, that I cannot pleasure such an honourable gentleman. Good Servilius, will you beseech me so far as to use mine own words to him?

*Serv.* Yes, Sir, I shall.

*Luc.* I will look you out a good turn, Servilius.—*[Exit SERVILIUS.]*

True, as you said, Timon is shrunk, indeed: And he, that's once denied, will hardly speed.

*[Exit LUCIUS.]*

1 *Stran.* Do you observe this, Hostilius?

2 *Stran.* Ay, too well.

1 *Stran.* Why this

Is the world's soul; and just of the same piece is every flatterer's spirit. Who can call him His friend, that digs in the same dish? for, in my knowing, Timon hath been this lord's father, And kept his credit with his purse; Supported his estate; nay, Timon's money Has paid his men their wages: He ne'er drinks, But Timon's silver treas' upon his lip; And yet, (oh! I see the monstrousness of man When he looks out in an ungrateful shape!) He does deny him, in respect of his, What charitable men afford to beggars.

3 *Stran.* Religion groans at it.

1 *Stran.* For mine own part, I never tasted Timon in my life, Nor came any of his bounties over me, To mark me for his friend, yet, I protest, For his right noble mind, illustrious virtue, And honourable carriage, Had his necessity made use of me, I would have put my wealth into donation; And the best half should have return'd to him, So much I love his heart: But I perceive, Men must learn now with pity to dispense: For policy sits above conscience. *[Exit.]*

SCENE III.—The same.—A Room in SEMPRONIUS' House.

*Enter SEMPRONIUS, and a SERVANT of TIMON'S.*

*Sem.* Must he needs trouble me in't? Humph! Above all others?

He might have tried lord Lucius, or Lucullus; And now Ventidius is wealthy too, Whom he redeem'd from prison: All these three Owe their estates unto him.

*Serv.* O my lord,

\* "If he did not want it for a good use."

† Presented it as a donation.

They have all been touch'd,\* and found base metal; for

They have all denied him!

*Ser.* How! have they denied him?

Has Ventidius and Lucullus denied him?

And does he send to me? Three? hump!—

It shows but little love or judgment in him. Must I be his last refuge? His friends, like physicians,

Thrive, give him over; Must I take the cure upon me? (him.)

He has much disgrac'd me in't; I am angry at That might have known my place: I see no sense for't.

But his occasions might have woo'd me first;

For, in my conscience, I was the first man

That e'er receiv'd gift from him:

And does he think so backwardly of me now,

That I'll requite it last? No: So it may prove

An argument of laughter to the rest,

And I amongst the lords be thought a fool.

I had rather than the worth of thrice the sun,

He had sent to me first, but for my mind's sake;

I had such a courage† to do him good. But

now return,

And with their tant reply this answer join;

Who bates mine honour, shall not know my coin. (Exit.)

*Serv.* Excellent! Your lordship's a goodly villain. The devil knew not what he did, when he made man politic; he cross'd himself by't: and I cannot think, but, in the end, the villainies of man will set him clear. How fairly this lord strives to appear foul! takes virtuous copies to be wicked: like those that, under hot ardent zeal, would set whole realms on fire.

Of such a nature is his politic love.

This was my lord's best hope: now all are fled,

Save the gods only: Now his friends are dead,

Doors, that were ne'er acquainted with their

wards

Many a bounteous year, must be employ'd

Now to guard sure their master.

And this is all a liberal course allows:

Who cannot keep his wealth, must keep his

house.‡ (Exit.)

SCENE IV.—The same.—A Hall in Timon's House.

Enter two Servants of Varro, and the Servant of Lucius, meeting Titus, Hortensius, and other Servants to TIMON'S Creditors, waiting his coming out.

*Var. Serv.* Well met; good-morrow, Titus and Hortensius.

*Tit.* The like to you, kind Varro.

*Hor.* Lucius?

What, do we meet together?

*Luc. Serv.* Ay, and I think

One business does command us all; for mine is money.

*Tit.* So is theirs and ours.

Enter PHILOTUS.

*Luc. Serv.* And Sir

Philotus too!

*Phi.* Good day at once.

*Luc. Serv.* Welcome, good brother.

What do you think the hour?

*Phi.* Labouring for mine.

*Luc. Serv.* So much?

*Phi.* Is not my lord seen yet?

*Luc. Serv.* Not yet.

*Phi.* I wonder on't: he was wont to shine at

seven.

*Luc. Serv.* Ay, but the days are waxed

shorter with him:

You must consider, that a prodigal course

Is like the sun's; § but not, like his, recoverable.

I fear,

'Tis deepest winter in lord Timon's purse;

\* Tried.

† For fear of duns.

‡ Fagor desire.

§ In blaze and splendour.

That is, one may reach deep enough, and yet find little.

*Phi.* I am of your fear for that.

*Tit.* I'll show you how to observe a strange event.

Your lord sends now for money.

*Hor.* Most true, he does.

*Tit.* And he wears jewels now of Timon's gift

For which I wait for money.

*Hor.* It is against my heart.

*Luc. Serv.* Mark, how strange it shows,

Timon in this should pay more than he owes:

And e'en as if your lord should wear rich jewels,

And send for money for 'em.

*Hor.* I am weary of this charge,\* the gods

can witness:

I know, my lord hath spent of Timon's wealth,

And now ingratitude makes it worse than stealth.

*1 Var. Serv.* Yes, mine's three thousand

crowns: What's yours?

*Luc. Serv.* Five thousand mine.

*1 Var. Serv.* 'Tis much deep: and it should

seem by the sun,

Your master's confidence was above mine;

Else, surely, his had equal'd.

Enter FLAMINIUS.

*Tit.* One of lord Timon's men.

*Luc. Serv.* Flaminius! Sir, a word: 'Pray, is

my lord ready to come forth?

*Flam.* No, indeed, he is not.

*Tit.* We attend his lordship; pray, signify so

much.

*Flam.* I need not tell him that: he knows you

are too diligent. (Exit FLAMINIUS.)

Enter FLAVIUS in a cloak, muffled.

*Luc. Serv.* Ha! is not that his steward muf-

fled so?

He goes away in a cloud: call him, call him.

*Tit.* Do you hear, Sir?

*1 Var. Serv.* By your leave, Sir,—

*Flav.* What do you ask of me, my friend?

*Tit.* We wait for certain money here, Sir.

*Flav.* Ay,

If money were as certain as your waiting,

'Twere sure enough. Why then pretend you

not [at

Your sums and bills, when your false masters

Of my lord's meat? Then they could smile,

and fawn

Upon his debts, and take down the interest

Into their glutinous maws. You do yourselves

but wrong,

To stir me up; let me pass quietly:

Believ't, my lord and I have made an end;

I have no more to reckon, he to spend.

*Luc. Serv.* Ay, but this answer will not serve.

*Flav.* It 'twill not,

'Tis not so base as you; for you serve knaves. (Exit.)

*1 Var. Serv.* How! what does his cashier'd

worship mutter?

*2 Var. Serv.* No matter what; he's poor, and

that's revenge enough. Who can speak broader

than he that has no house to put his head in?

Such may rail against great buildings.

Enter SERVILIUS.

*Tit.* Oh! here's Servilius; now we shall know

some answer.

*Serv.* If I might beseech you, gentlemen,

To repair some other hour, I should much

Derive from it: for, take it on my soul,

My lord leans wond'rously to discontent.

His comfortable temper has forsok him;

He is much out of health, and keeps his cham-

ber.

*Luc. Serv.* Many do keep their chambers, are

not sick:

And, if it be so far beyond his health,

Methinks, he should the sooner pay his debts,

And make a clear way to the gods.

\* Commission.

*Ser.* Good gods!

*Tit.* We cannot take this for an answer, Sir.

*Flam.* [*Within.*] Servilius, help!—my lord!  
my lord!—

*Enter TIMON, in a rage; FLAMINIUS following.*

*Tim.* What, are my doors oppos'd against my passage.

Have I been ever free, and must my house  
Be my retentive enemy, my jail:  
The place which I have feasted, does it now,  
Like all mankind, show me an iron heart?

*Luc. Serv.* Put it now, Titus.

*Tit.* My lord, here is my bill.

*Luc. Serv.* Here's mine.

*Hor. Serv.* And mine, my lord.

*Both Var. Serv.* And ours, my lord.

*Phi.* All our bills.

*Tim.* Knock me down with 'em: \* cleave me to the girdle.

*Luc. Serv.* Alas! my lord,—

*Tim.* Cut my heart in sums.

*Tit.* Mine, fifty talents.

*Tim.* Tell out my blood.

*Luc. Serv.* Five thousand crowns, my lord.

*Tim.* Five thousand drops pays that.

What yours!—and yours?

*1 Var. Serv.* My lord,—

*2 Var. Serv.* My lord,—

*Tim.* Tear me, take me, and the gods fall upon you! [*Exit.*]  
*Hor.* 'Faith, I perceive our masters may throw their caps at their money; these debts may well be called desperate ones, for a madman owes 'em.

*Re-Enter TIMON and FLAVIUS.*

*Tim.* They have e'en put my breath from me, the slaves:

Creditors!—devils.

*Flav.* My dear lord,—

*Tim.* What if it should be so?

*Flav.* My lord,—

*Tim.* I'll have it so:—My steward!

*Flav.* Here, my lord!

*Tim.* So fitly! Go, bid all my friends again, Lucius, Lucullus, and Sempronius; all: I'll once more feast the rascals.

*Flav.* O my lord,

You only speak from your distracted soul;  
There is not so much left, to furnish out  
A moderate table.

*Tim.* Be't not in this care; go.

I charge thee; invite them all: let in the tide  
Of knaves once more; my cook and I'll provide.  
[*Exit.*]

*SCENE V.—The same.—The Senate-House.*

*The Senate sitting. Enter ALCIBIADES, attended.*

*1 Sen.* My lord, you have my voice to it; the fault's

bloody; 'tis necessary he should die:  
Nothing emboldens sin so much as mercy.

*2 Sen.* Most true: the law shall bruise him.

*Alcib.* Honour, health, and compassion to the senate!

*1 Sen.* Now, captain?

*Alcib.* I am an humble suitor to your virtues;  
For pity is the virtue of the law,  
And none but tyrants use it cruelly.

It pleases time, and fortune, to lie heavy  
Upon a friend of mine, who in hot blood,  
Hath stepp'd into the law, which is past death  
To those that, without heed, do plunge into it.  
He is a man, setting his fate aside,†  
Of comely virtues:

Nor did he soil the fact with cowardice;  
(An honour in him which buys out his fault,)  
But, with a noble fury, and fair spirit,

Seeing his reputation touch'd to death,  
He did oppose his foe:  
And with such sober and unnoted passion \*  
He did behave: his anger, ere 'twas spent,  
As if he had but prov'd an argument.

*1 Sen.* You undergo too strict a paradox, ‡  
Striving to make an ugly deed look fair  
Your words have took such pains, as if they  
labour'd

To bring manslaughter into form, set quarrelling  
Upon the head of valour; which, indeed,  
Is valour misbegot, and came into the world  
When sects and factions were newly born:  
He's truly valiant, that can wisely suffer.  
The worst that man can breathe; and make his  
wrongs

His outides; wear them like his raiment, care-  
And ne'er prefer his injuries to his heart,  
To bring it into danger

If wrongs be evils, and enforce us ill,

What folly 'tis, to hazard life for ill?

*Alcib.* My lord,—

*1 Sen.* You cannot make gross sins look clear;  
To revenge is no valour, but to bear.

*Alcib.* My lords, then, under favour, pardon  
me.

If I speak like a captain,—

Why do fond men expose themselves to battle,  
And not endure all threat'nings? sleep upon it,  
And let the foes quietly cut their throats  
Without repugnancy? but if there be  
Such valour in the bearing, what make we  
Abroad? why then, women are more valiant,  
That stay at home, if bearing carry it;  
And th' ass, more captain than the lion; the felon,  
Loaden with mouns, wiser than the judge,  
If wisdom be in suffering. O my lords,  
As you are great, be pitifully good:

Who cannot condemn rashness in cold blood?

To kill, I grant, is sin's extremest act †

But, in defence, by mercy, 'tis most just. ‡

To be in anger, is imperty;

But who is man, that is not angry?

Weigh but the crime with this.

*2 Sen.* You breathe in vain.

*Alcib.* In vain? his service done

At Lacedæmon and Byzantium,

Were a sufficient briber for his life.

*1 Sen.* What's that?

*Alcib.* Why, I say, my lords, he's done fair  
service,

And slain in night many of your enemies:

How full of valour did he bear himself

In the last conflict, and made piteous wounds?

*2 Sen.* He has made too much plenty with  
'em, he

Is a sworn rioter: he's a sin that often

Drowns him, and takes his valour prisoner:

If there were no foes, that were enough alone

To overcome him: in that beastly fury

He has been known to commit outrages,

And cherish factions: 'Tis infer'd to us,

His days are foul, and his drunk dangerous.

*1 Sen.* He dies.

*Alcib.* Hard fate! he might have died in war.

My lords, if not for any parts in him,

(Though his right arm might purchase his own  
time,

And be in debt to none,) yet, more to move you,  
Take my deserts to his, and join them both:

And, for I know, your reverend ages love

Security, I'll pawn my victories, all

My honour to you, upon his good returns.

If by this crime he owes the law his life,

Why, let the war receive't in valiant gore;

For law is strict, and war is nothing more.

*1 Sen.* We are for law, he dies; urge it no  
more,

On height of our displeasure: Friend, or bro-

He forfeits his own blood, that spills another.

\* A bill was also a battle-axe—Timon, therefore, plays upon the word.

† With the exception of this one act

\* Passion so moderated that no one could note its operation. † Manage. ‡ You undertake a paradox too hard.

§ Reason. ¶ Why do we take the field? † I call mercy to witness, that excessive violence is just.

*Alcib.* Must it be so? it must not be. My I do beseech you, know me. [Lords,

2 *Sen.* How?

*Alcib.* Call me to your remembrances.

3 *Sen.* What?

*Alcib.* I cannot think, but your age has forgot me;

It could not else be, I should prove so base,\* To sue and be denied such common grace: My wounds ache at you.

1 *Sen.* Do you dare our anger?

'Tis in few words, but specious in effect— We banish thee for ever.

*Alcib.* Banish me?

Banish your dotage; banish usury,

That makes the senate ugly.

1 *Sen.* If, after two days' shine, Athens contain thee,

Attend our weightier judgment. And, not to swell our spirit,†

He shall be executed presently.

[*Exit* SENATORS.]

*Alcib.* Now the gods keep you old enough, that you may live

Only in bone, that none may look on you!

I am worse than mad: I have kept back their foes,

While they have told their money, and let out

Their coin upon large interest; I myself,

Rich only in large hurts:—All those, for this?

Is this the balsam, that the usuring senate

Pours into captains' wounds? ha! banishment!

It comes not ill; I hate not to be banish'd;

It is a cause worthy my spleen and fury,

That I may strike at Athens. I'll cheer up

My discontented troops, and lay for hearts;‡

'Tis honour, with most lands to be at odds;

Soldiers should brook as little wrongs as gods.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE VI.—A magnificent Room in TIMON'S House.

*Music.* Tables set out: SERVANTS attending. Enter divers LORDS at several doors.

1 *Lord.* The good time of day to you, Sir.

2 *Lord.* I also wish it to you. I think, this honourable lord did but try us this other day.

1 *Lord.* Upon that were my thoughts tiring, when we encountered: I hope, it is not so low with him, as he made it seem in the trial of his several friends.

2 *Lord.* It should not be, by the persuasion of his new feasting.

1 *Lord.* I should think so: He hath sent me an earnest inviting, which many my near occasions did urge me to put off; but he hath conjured me beyond them, and I must needs appear.

2 *Lord.* In like manner was I in debt to my importunate business, but he would not hear my excuse. I am sorry, when he sent to borrow of me, that my provision was out.

1 *Lord.* I am sick of that grief too, as I understand how all things go.

2 *Lord.* Every man here's so. What would he have borrowed of you?

1 *Lord.* A thousand pieces.

2 *Lord.* A thousand pieces!

1 *Lord.* What of you?

3 *Lord.* He sent to me, Sir.—Here he comes.

[*Enter* TIMON, and Attendants.]

*Tim.* With all my heart, gentlemen both:—And how fare you?

1 *Lord.* Ever at the best, hearing well of your lordship.

2 *Lord.* The swallow follows not summer more willing, than we your lordship.

*Tim.* [*Aside.*] Nor more willingly leaves winter; such summer-blids are men.—Gentlemen,

our dinner will not recompense this long stay: feast your ears with the music awhile; it they will fare so harshly on the trumpet's sound: we shall to't presently.

2 *Lord.* I hope it remains not unkindly with your lordship, that I returned you an empty messenger.

*Tim.* O Sir, let it not trouble you.

2 *Lord.* My noble lord,—

*Tim.* Ah! my good friend! what cheer?

[*The banquet brought in.*]

2 *Lord.* My most honourable lord, I am even sick of shame, that when your lordship this other day sent to me, I was so unfortunate a beggar.

*Tim.* Think not on't, Sir.

2 *Lord.* If you had sent but two hours before,—

*Tim.* Let it not cumber your better remembrance. Come, bring in all together.

2 *Lord.* All cover'd dishes!

1 *Lord.* Royal cheer, I warrant you.

2 *Lord.* Doubt not that, if money and the season can yield it.

1 *Lord.* How do you? what's the news?

3 *Lord.* Alcibiades is banish'd: Hear you of it?

1 & 2 *Lords.* Alcibiades banish'd!

3 *Lord.* 'Tis so, be sure of it.

1 *Lord.* How? how?

2 *Lord.* I pray you, upon what?

*Tim.* My worthy friends, will you draw near?

3 *Lord.* I'll tell you more anon. Here's a noble feast toward.†

2 *Lord.* This is the old man still.

3 *Lord.* Will't hold? will't hold?

2 *Lord.* It does: but time will—and so—

3 *Lord.* I do conceive.

*Tim.* Each man to his stool with that spun as he would to the lip of his mistress: your diet shall be in all places alike. Make not a city feast of it, to let the meat cool ere we can agree upon the first place: Sit, sit. The gods require our thanks.

*You great benefactors, sprinkle our society with thankfulness. For your own gifts, make yourselves proud: but reserve still to give, lest your desires be despoiled. Lend to each man enough, that one need not lend to the other: for, were your godheads to borrow of men, men would forsake the gods. Make the meat be belated, more than the man that gives it. Let no assembly of twenty be without a score of villains: If there sit twelve women at the table, let a dozen of them be—as they are.—The rest of your fees, O gods,—the senators of Athens, together with the common lag† of people,—what is amiss in them, you gods make suitable for destruction. For these my present friends,—as they are to be nothing, so in nothing bliss them, and to nothing they are welcome.*

Uncover, dozs, and lap.

[*The dishes uncovered are full of warm water.*]

*Some speak.* What does his lordship mean?

*Some other.* I know not.

*Tim.* May you a better feast never behold, You knot of mouth-friends! smoke, and make warm water

Is your perfection. This is Timon's last; Who stuck and spangled you with flatteries, Washes it off, and sprinkles in your faces

[*Throwing water in their faces.*]

Your reeking villany. Live loath'd, and long,

Most smiling, smooth, detested parasites,

Courteous destroyers, affable wolves, meek bears,

You fools of fortune, trencher-friends, time's

flies,‡

\* So dishonoured.

† Not to put ourselves in a

page. ‡ Lay out for hearts, or, for the affections of the people

§ Were idly employed.

\* Your good memory.

† The flag-end of a piece of cloth, is the lag

‡ Flies of a season.

Cap and knee slaves, vapours, and minute-jacks!\*

Of man, and beast, the infinite malady +  
Crust you quite o'er!—What, dost thou go?  
Soit, take thy physic first—thou too,—and thou;—

*Thrus the dishes at them, and drives them out.*

Stay, I will lend thee money, borrow none.—  
What, all in motion? Henceforth be no feast,  
Whereat a villain's not a welcome guest.  
Burn, house; sink, Athens! henceforth hated be  
Of Timon, man, and all humanity? [Exit.

*Re-enter the Lords, with other Lords and SENATORS.*

1 Lord. How now, my lords?

2 Lord. Know you the quality of lord Timon's fury?

3 Lord. Pish! did you see my cap?

4 Lord. I have lost my gown.

3 Lord. He's but a mad lord, and nought but humour sways him. He gave me a jewel the other day, and now he has beat it out of my hat.—Did you see my jewel?

4 Lord. Did you see my cap?

3 Lord. Here 'tis.

4 Lord. Here lies my gown.

1 Lord. Let's make no stay.

2 Lord. Lord Timon's mad.

3 Lord. I feel't upon my bones.

4 Lord. One day he gives us diamonds, next day stones. [Exit.

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—Without the walls of Athens.

*Enter TIMON.*

Tim. Let me look back upon thee, O thou wall,  
That girdest in those wolves! Dive in the earth,  
And fence not Athens! Matrons, turn incontinent!

Obedience fail in children! slaves and fools  
Pluck the grave wrinkled senate from the bench,

And minister in their steeds! to general filths;  
Convert o'the instant, green virginity!  
Do't in your parents' eyes! bankrupts, hold fast:  
Rather than render back, out with your knives,  
And cut your tru-ers' throats! bound servants, steal!

Large handed robbers your grave masters are,  
And pill by law! maid, to thy master's bed;  
Thy mistress is o'the brothel! son of sixteen,  
Pluck the hind crutch from the old lumping sire,

With it beat out his brains! piety, and fear,  
Religion to the gods, peace, justice, truth,  
Domestic awe, night-rest, and neighbourhood,  
Instruction, manners, mysteries, and trades,  
Degrees, observances, customs, and laws,  
Decline to your confounding contraries, and  
And yet confusion live!—Plagues, incident to men,

Your potent and infectious fevers heap  
On Athens, ripe for stroke! thou cold sciatica,  
Cripple our senators, that their limbs may halt  
As lamely as their manners! lust and liberty  
Creep in the minds and marrow of our youth:  
That 'gainst the stream of virtue they may strive,

And drown themselves in riot! itches, blains,  
Sow all the Athenian bosoms; and their crop  
Be general leprosy! breath infect breath;  
That their society, as their friendship, may  
Be merely poison! Nothing I'll bear from thee,

\* Jacks of the clock; like those at St. Dunstan's church, in Fleet-street.  
+ Every kind of disease.  
x Common sewers.  
} Contraventions, which waste or destroy each other.  
} Libertinism

But nakedness, thou detestable town!  
Take thou that too, with multiplying banners! •  
Timon will to the woods; where he shall find  
The unkindest beast more kinder than man kind.

The gods confound (hear me, ye good gods all,)  
The Atheulians both within and out that wall!  
And grant, as Timon grows, his hate may grow  
To the whole race of inankind, high and low!  
Amen. [Exit

## SCENE II.—Athens.—A Room in TIMON'S House.

*Enter CLAVIUS, with two or three SERVANTS.*

1 Ser. Hear you, master steward, where's our master?

Are we undone? cast off? nothing remaining?  
Flat. Alack, my fellows, what should I say to you?

Let me be recorded by the righteous gods,  
I am as poor as you.

1 Ser. Such a house broke!  
So noble a master fallen! All gone! and not  
One friend, to take his fortune by the arm,  
And go along with him!

2 Ser. As we do turn our backs  
From our companion, thrown into his grave;  
So his familiars to his buried fortunes  
Slunk all away; leave their false vows with him  
Like empty purses pick'd; and his poor self,  
A dedicated beggar to the air,  
With his disease of all-shunn'd poverty,  
Walks, like contempt, alone.—More of our fellows.

*Enter other SERVANTS.*

Flat. All broken implements of a ruined house.

3 Ser. Yet do our hearts wear Timon's livery,

That see I by our faces; we are fellows still,  
Serving alike in sorrow: Leak'd is our bark,  
And we, poor mates, stand on the dying deck,  
Heaving the surges' threat: we must all part  
Into this sea of air.

Flat. Good fellows all,  
The latest of my wealth I'll share amongst you  
Wherever we shall meet, for Timon's sake,  
Let's yet be fellows; let's shake our heads, and say,

As 'twere a knell unto our master's fortunes,  
We have seen better days. Let each take some;  
[Giving them money.

Nay, put out all our hands. Not one word more:

Thus part we rich in sorrow, parting poor,

Exit SERVANTS.  
Oh! the fierce + wretchedness that glory brings us! [Exit.

Who would not wish to be from wealth ex-  
Since riches point to misery and contempt?

Who'd be so mock'd with glory, as to live  
But in a dream of friendship? [pounds,

To have his pomp, and all what state con-  
But only painted like his vanish'd friends?

Poor honest lord, brought low by his own heart;

Undone by goodness! Strange unusual blood; +

When man's worst sin is, he does too much good!

Who then dares to be half so kind again?

For bounty that makes gods, does still mar men.

My dearest lord,—bless'd, to be most accurs'd,  
Rich, only to be wretched.—thy great fortunes  
Are made thy chief attractions. Alas, kind lord!

He's flung in rage from this ungrateful seat  
Of monstrous friends; nor has he with him to  
Supply his life, or that which can command it.  
I'll follow and inquire him out:

\* Accumulated curses.  
† Quick. ‡ Propensity.

I'll serve his mind with my best will;  
Whilst I have gold, I'll be his steward still.

[Exit.]

SCENE III.—The Woods.

Enter TIMON.

Tim. O blessed breeding sun, draw from the earth

Rotten humidity; below thy sister's orb\*  
Interect the air! Timon'd brothers of one womb,—  
Whose procreation, residence, and birth,  
Scarcely is dividant,—touch them with several  
fortunes;

The greater scorns the lesser: Not nature,  
To whom all sores lay siege, can bear great for-  
But by † contempt of nature. (tune)

Raise me this beggar, and denude that lord;  
The senator shall bear contempt hereditary,  
The beggar native honour.

It is the pasture lards the brother's sides,  
The want that makes him lean. Who dares,  
who dares,

In purity of manhood stand upright,  
And say, *This man's a flatterer*? If one be,  
So are they all; for every grize; of fortune  
Is smoothed by that below: the learned pate  
Ducks to the golden fool: All is oblique;  
There's nothing level in our cursed natures,  
But direct villany. Therefore, be abhor'd  
All feasts, societies, and thrones of men!  
His semblable, yea, himself, Timon disdains!  
Destruction tang; mankind!—Earth, yield me  
roots! (Digging.)

Who seeks for better of thee, sauce his palate  
With thy most operant poison! What is here?  
Gold? yellow, glittering, precious gold? No,  
gods, (yens)

I am no idle votarist. || Roots, you clear hea-  
Thus much of this, will make black white; foul,  
fair;

Wrong, right; base, noble; old, young; coward,  
valiant.

Ha, you gods! why this? What this, you gods!  
Why this

Will lug your priests and servants from your  
sides;

Pluck stout men's pillows from below their heads:  
This yellow slave

Will knit and break religions; bless the ac-  
curs'd;

Make the hoar leprosy ador'd; place thieves,  
And give them title, knee, and approbation,  
With senators on the bench: this is it,  
That makes the wappen'd † widow wed again;  
Shr, whom the spital-house, and ulcerous sores  
Would cast the gorge at, this embalms and  
spices

To the April day again. \*\* Come, damned earth,  
Thou common whore of mankind, that put'st  
odds

Among the rout of nations, I will make thee  
Do thy right nature.—[March afar off.]—Ha!  
a drum?—Thou'rt quick,  
But set I'll bury thee: Thou'lt go, strong thief,  
When gouty keepers of thee cannot stand:—  
Nay, stay thou out for earnest.

[Keeping some gold.]

Enter ALCIBIADES, with drum and fife, in war-  
like manner; PHRYNIA and TIMANDRA.

Alcib. What art thou there?

Speak.

Tim. A beast, as thou art. The canker know  
thy heart,

For showing me again the eyes of man!

Alcib. What is thy name? Is man so hateful  
to thee,

That art thyself a man?

Tim. I am *misanthropos*, and hate mankind.

\* I.e. The moon's. † Without. ‡ Step or degree. § Grips. || No insinere.  
suppliant. ¶ I want not gold, but roots. \*\* Restores to all the sweetness and freshness of her  
youth.

For thy part, I do wish thou wert a dog,  
That I might love thee something.

Alcib. I know thee well;  
But in thy fortunes am unlearn'd and strange.

Tim. I know thee too; and more, than that I  
know thee,

I not desire to know. Follow thy drum;  
With man's blood paint the ground, gules,  
gules;

Religious canons, civil laws are cruel;  
Then what should war be? This fell whore of  
thine

Hath in her more destruction than thy sword,  
For all her cherubin look.

Phr. Thy lips rot off!

Tim. I will not kiss thee; then the rot returns  
To thine own lips again.

Alcib. How came the noble Timon to this  
change?

Tim. As the moon does by wanting light to  
But then renew I could not like the moon:  
There were no suns to borrow of.

Alcib. Noble Timon,  
What friendship may I do thee?

Tim. None, but to  
Maintain my opinion.

Alcib. What is it, Timon?

Tim. Promise me friendship, but perform  
none: If

Thou wilt not promise, the gods plague thee: for  
Thou art a man! I thou dost perform, confound  
thee,

For thou'rt a man!

Alcib. I have heard in some sort of thy mis-  
eries.

Tim. Thou saw'st them, when I had pros-  
perity.

Alcib. I see them now; thou was a blessed  
time.

Tim. As time is now, held with a brace of  
harlots.

Timan. Is this the Athenian minion, whom  
the world

Voted so regardfully?

Tim. Art thou Timandra?

Timan. Yes.

Tim. Be a whore still! they love thee not, that  
use thee:

Give them diseases, leaving with thee their lust.

Make use of thy salt hours: season the slaves  
For tubs, and baths; bring down rose-cheeked  
To the tub-fast, and the diet. (youth)

Timan. Hang thee, monster!

Alcib. Pardon him, sweet Timandra; for his  
wits

Are drown'd and lost in his calamities.—  
I have but little gold of late, brave Timon  
The want whereof doth daily make revolt  
In my penurious band: I have heard and  
grieved,

How curs'd Athens, mindless of thy worth,  
Forgetting thy great deeds, when neighbour states,  
But for thy sword and fortune trod upon them,—

Tim. I prythee, beat thy drum, and get thee  
gone.

Alcib. I am thy friend, and pity thee, dear  
Timon.

Tim. How dost thou pity him, whom thou  
dost trouble?

I had rather be alone.

Alcib. Why, fare thee well:

Here's some gold for thee.

Tim. Keep't, I cannot eat it.

Alcib. When I have laid proud Athens on a  
heap,—

Tim. Warr'est thou 'gainst Athens?

Alcib. Ay, Timon, and have cause.

Tim. The gods confound them all i'thy con-  
quest; and

Thou art, when thou hast conquer'd!

Alcib. Why me, Timon?

Tim. That,

By killing villains, thou wast born to conquer

■ Used in the cure of a peculiar disorder.

My country.  
Put up thy gold. Go on,—here's gold,—go on ;  
Be as a planetary plague, when Jove  
Will o'er some high-wid'd city bang his poison  
In the sick air : Let not thy sword skip one :  
Pity not honour'd age for his white beard,  
He's a usurer. Strike me the counterfeit matron ;  
It is her habit only that is honest,  
Herself's a bawd. Let not the virgin's cheek  
Make soft thy trenchant sword ; for those milk-

paps,  
That through the window-bars bore at men's eyes,  
Are not within the leaf of pity writ,  
Set them down horrible traitors. Spare not the  
babe, [mercy ;

Whose dimpled smiles from fools exhaust their  
Think it a bastard, † whom the oracle  
Hath doubtfully pronounc'd thy throat shall cut,  
And mince it sans remorse. ‡ Swear against ob-  
jects ; §

Put armour on thine ears, and on thine eyes ;  
Whose proof, nor yells of mothers, maids, nor  
babes,  
Nor sight of priests in holy vestments bleeding,  
Shall pierce a jot. There's gold to pay thy sol-  
diers ;

Make large confusion : and, thy fury spent,  
Confounded be thyself! Speak not, be gone.

*Alcib.* Hast thou gold yet ? I'll take the gold  
thou giv'st me,  
Not all thy coinage.

*Tim.* Dost thou, or dost thou not, heaven's  
curse upon thee !

*Phr. & Timon.* Give us some gold, good Ti-  
mon : Hast thou more ?

*Tim.* Enough to make a whore forswear her  
trade, [sluts,  
And to make whores, a bawd. Hold up, you  
thou aprons mountant : You are not oathable,—  
Although, I know, you'll swear, terribly swear,  
Into strong shudders, and to heavenly agues,  
The immortal gods that hear you,—spare your  
oaths,

I'll trust to your conditions. ¶ Be whores still :  
And he whose pious breath seeks to convert you,  
Be strong in whore, allure him, burn him up ;  
Let your close fire predominate his smoke,  
And be no turncoats : Yet may your pains, six  
months, [roofs

Be quite contrary : And thatch your poor thin  
With burdens of the dead ;—some that were  
hang'd,

No matter : wear them, betray with them : whore  
still ;

Paint till a horse may mire upon your face :  
A box of wrinkles !

*Phr. & Timon.* Well, more gold ;—What  
then !—

Believ't, that we'll do any thing for gold.

*Tim.* Consumptions sow  
In hollow bones of man ; strike their sharp shins,  
And mar men's spurring. Crack the lawyer's  
voice,

That he may never more false title plead,  
Nor sound his quilllets ¶ shrilly : hoar \*\* the  
flamen,

That scolds against the quality of flesh,  
And not believes himself : down with the nose,  
Down with it flat ; take the bridge quite away  
Of him, that his particular to foresee,  
Smells from the general weal : make curl'd-pate  
ruffians bald ;

And let the unscar'd braggarts of the war  
Derive some pain from you : Plague all ;  
That your activity may defeat and quell  
The source of all erection.—There's more gold :—  
Do you damn others, and let this damn you,  
And ditches grave†† you all !

*Phr. & Timon.* More counsel with more money,  
bounteous Timon.

*Tim.* More whore, more mischief first ; I have  
given you earnest.

*Alcib.* Strike up the drum towards Athens.  
Farewell, Timon ;

If I thrive well, I'll visit thee again.

*Tim.* If I hope well, I'll never see thee more.

*Alcib.* I never did thee harm.

*Tim.* Yes, thou spok'st of me.

*Alcib.* Call'st thou that harm ?

*Tim.* Men daily find it such. Get thee away  
And take thy bargains with thee.

*Alcib.* We but offend him.—

Strike.

[Drum beats. *Exeunt* *ALCIBIADES*,  
*PHRYNIA*, and *TIMANDRA*.

*Tim.* That nature, being sick of man's unkind-  
ness,

Should yet be hungry !—Common mother, thou,  
[Digging.

Whose womb unmeasurable, and infinite breast,\*  
Teems, and feeds all ; whose self-same mettle,  
Whereof thy proud child, arrogant man, is  
puff'd,

Engenders the black toad, and adder blue,  
The gilded newt, and eyeless venom'd worm, †  
With all the abhorred births below crisp ‡  
heaven

Whereon Hypertion's quickening fire doth shine ;  
Yield him, who all thy human sons doth hate,  
From forth thy plenteous bosom one poor root !

Ensear thy fertile and conception womb,  
Let it no more bring out ingrateful man !

Go great with tigers, dragons, wolves, and bears  
Teem with new monsters, whom thy upward  
face

Hath to the marbled mansion all above  
Never presented !—Oh ! a root,—Dear thanks !

Diy up thy marrows, vines, and plough-torn  
leas ;

Whereof ingrateful man, with liquorish draughts  
And morsels unctuous, greases his pure mind,  
That from it all consideration slips !

*Enter* *APEMANTUS*.

More man ? Plague ! plague !

*Apem.* I was directed hither : Men report,  
Thou dost affect my manners, and dost use them.

*Tim.* 'Tis then, because thou dost not keep a  
dog

Whom I would imitate : Consumption catch thee !

*Apem.* This is in thee a nature but affected !  
A poor unmanly melancholy, sprung  
From change of fortune. Why this epade † this  
place ?

This slave-like habit ‡ and these looks of care ?  
Thy flatterers yet wear silk, drink wine, lie soft,

Hug their diseas'd perfumes, § and have forgot  
That ever Timon was. Shame not these woods,

By putting on the cunning of a carper. ¶  
Be thou a flatterer now, and seek to thrive

By that which has undone thee : hinge thy knee,  
And let his very breath, whom thou'lt observe,

Blow off thy cap ; praise this most vicious strain,  
And call it excellent. Thou wast told thus :

Thou gav'st thine ears, like tapsters, that bio  
welcome,

To knaves, and all approachers : 'Tis most just,  
That thou turn rascal ; had'st thou wealth again,

Rascals should hav't. Do not assume my like-  
ness.

*Tim.* Were I like thee, I'd throw away my-  
self.

*Apem.* Thou hast cast away thyself, being like  
thyself ;

A madman so long, now a fool : What think'st  
That the bleak air, thy boisterous chamberlain,

Will put thy shirt on warm ? Will these moss'd  
trees,

That have outliv'd the eagle, page thy heels,  
And skip when thou point'st out ? Will the cold  
brook,

Candied with ice, caudle thy morning taste,

\* Sharp.  
† Alluding to Jocasta, the wife of  
Oedipus, who murdered her incestuous offspring.  
‡ Without pity.  
§ Against objects of compassion.  
¶ Vocations.  
†† Subtleties.  
\*\* Give him  
the hoary leprosy.  
†† Entomb.

\* Boundless surface.  
† The serpent called the  
blind worm.  
‡ Beat.  
§ Their diseased  
perfumed mistresses  
† Finding fault.



To cure thy o'er-night's surfeit? call the creatures,—

Whose naked natures live in all the spite  
Of wreakful heaven; whose bare unhoused  
trunks,

To the conflicting elements expos'd,  
Answer mere nature,—bid them flatter thee.  
Oh! thou shalt find—

*Tim.* A fool of thee: Depart.

*Apem.* I love thee better now than e'er I did.

*Tim.* I hate thee worse.

*Apem.* Why?

*Tim.* Thou flatter'st misery.

*Apem.* I flatter not; but say thou art a cat-tiff.

*Tim.* Why dost thou seek me out?

*Apem.* To vex thee.

*Tim.* Always a villain's office, or a fool's.  
Dost please thyself in't?

*Apem.* Ay.

*Tim.* What! a knave too?

*Apem.* If thou didst put this sour cold habit on  
To castigate thy pride, 'twere well: but thou  
Dost it enforcedly; thou'dst courtier be again,  
Wert thou not beggar. Willing misery  
Outlives uncertain pomp, is crown'd before:  
The one is filling still, never complete;  
The other, at high wish: Best state, contentless,  
Hath a distracted and most wretched being,  
Worse than the worst, content.

Thou should'st desire to die, being miserable.

*Tim.* Not by his breath,† that is more miserable.

Thou art a slave, whom Fortune's tender arm  
With favour never clasp'd; but bred a dog.  
Hadst thou, like us, from our first swath,‡  
proceeded

The sweet degrees that this brief world affords  
To such as may the passive drags of it  
Freely command, thou would'st have plung'd  
thyself

In general riot; melted down thy youth  
In different beds of lust; and never learn'd  
The new precepts of respect,§ but follow'd  
The sugar'd game before thee. But myself,  
Who had the world as my confectionary;  
The month's, the tongue's, the eye's, and hearts  
of men

At duty, more than I could frame employment;  
That numberless upon me stuck, as leaves  
Do on the oak, have with one winter's brush  
Fall from their boughs, and left me open, bare  
For every storm that blows. I, to bear this,  
That never knew but better, is some burden:  
Tny nature did commence in sufferance, time  
Hath made thee hard in't. Why should'st thou  
hate men?

They never flatter'd thee: What hast thou given?  
If thou wilt curse,—thy father, that poor rag,  
Must be thy subject; who, in spite, put stuff  
To some she beggar, and compounded thee  
Poor rogue hereditary. Hence! be gone!—  
If thou hadst not been born the worst of men,  
Thou hadst been a knave and flatterer.

*Apem.* Art thou proud yet?

*Tim.* Ay, that I am not thee.

*Apem.* I, that I was

No prodigal.

*Tim.* I, that I am one now;  
Were all the wealth I have, shut up in thee,  
I'd give thee leave to hang it. Get thee gone.—  
That the whole life of Athens were in this!  
Thus would I eat it. [Eating a root.

*Apem.* Here; I will mend thy feast.

[Offering him something.

*Tim.* First mend my company, take away thyself.

*Apem.* So I shall mend mine own, by the lack  
of thine.

*Tim.* 'Tis not well mended so, it is but botch'd;  
If not, I would it were.

*Apem.* What would'st thou have to Athens?

\* Arrives sooner at the completion of his wishes.  
† By his sentence. ‡ From infancy.  
§ The cold admonitions of prudence.

*Tim.* Thine (thither in a whirlwind. If thou  
wilt,

Tell them there I have gold; look, so I have.

*Apem.* Here is no use for gold.

*Tim.* The best and truest:

For here it sleeps, and does no hired batm.

*Apem.* Where liest o' nights, Timon?

*Tim.* Under that's above me.

Where feed'st thou o' days, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Where my stomach finds meat; or,  
rather, where I eat it.

*Tim.* 'Would poison were obedient, and knew  
my mind!

*Apem.* Where would'st thou send it?

*Tim.* To sauce thy dishes.

*Apem.* The middle of humanity thou never  
knewest, but the extremity of both ends: When  
thou wast in thy gilt, and thy perfume, they  
mocked thee for too much curiosity,\* in the  
rags thou knowest none, but are despised for the  
contrary. There's a medlar for thee, eat it.

*Tim.* On what I hate, I feed not.

*Apem.* Dost hate a medlar?

*Tim.* Ay, though it look like thee.

*Apem.* An thou hadst hated meddlers sooner,  
thou should'st have loved thyself better now.  
What man didst thou ever know unthrift, that  
was beloved after his means?

*Tim.* Who, without those means thou talkest  
of, didst thou ever know beloved?

*Apem.* Myself.

*Tim.* I understand thee; thou had'st some  
means to keep a dog.

*Apem.* What things in the world canst thou  
nearest compare to thy flatterers?

*Tim.* Women nearest; but men, men are the  
things themselves. What would'st thou do  
with the world, Apemantus, if it lay in thy  
power?

*Apem.* Give it the beasts, to be rid of the  
men.

*Tim.* Would'st thou have thyself fall in the  
confusion of men, and remain a beast with the  
beasts?

*Apem.* Ay, Timon.

*Tim.* A beastly ambition, which the gods grant  
thee to attain to! If thou wert the lion, the fox  
would beguile thee: if thou wert the lamb, the  
fox would eat thee: if thou wert the fox, the  
lion would suspect thee, when, peradventure,  
thou wert accused by the ass: if thou wert the  
ass, thy dulness would torment thee: and still  
thou livest but as a breakfast to the wolf: if  
thou wert the wolf, thy greediness would afflict  
thee, and oft thou should'st hazard thy life for  
thy dinner: wert thou the unicorn, pride and  
wrath would confound thee, and make thine own  
self the conquest of thy fury: wert thou a bear,  
thou would'st be killed by the horse; wert thou  
a horse, thou would'st be seized by the leopard;  
wert thou a leopard, thou wert german to the  
lion, and the spots of thy kindred were joints on  
thy life: all thy safety were remotion; and thy  
defence, absence. What beast could'st thou be,  
that were not subject to a beast? and what a  
beast art thou already, that sees not thy loss in  
transformation?

*Apem.* If thou could'st please me with speak-  
ing to me, thou might'st have hit upon it here:  
The commonwealth of Athens is become a forest  
of beasts.

*Tim.* How has the ass broke the wall, that  
thou art out of the city?

*Apem.* Yonder comes a poet, and a painter:  
The plague of company light upon thee! I will  
fear to catch it, and give way: When I know not  
what else to do, I'll see thee again.

*Tim.* When there is nothing living but thee,  
thou shalt be welcome. I had rather be a beggar's  
dog, than Apemantus.

*Apem.* Thou art the cap† of all the fools  
alive.

\* For too much finical delicacy.

† I.e. In being placed at a distance from the lion.  
‡ The top.

*Tim.* 'Would thou wert clean enough to spit upon.

*Apem.* A plague on thee, thou art too bad to curse.

*Tim.* All villains that do stand by thee, are pure.

*Apem.* There is no leprosy but what thou speak'st.

*Tim.* If I name thee.—

I'll beat thee,—but I should infect my hands.

*Apem.* I would my tongue could rot them off!

*Tim.* Away, thou issue of a mangy dog!

Choler doth kill me that thou art alive;

I swoon to see thee.

*Apem.* 'Would thou would'st burst!

*Tim.* Away,

Thou tedious rogue! I am sorry I shall lose

A stone by thee. [*Throws a stone at him.*]

*Apem.* Beast!

*Tim.* Slave!

*Apem.* Toad!

*Tim.* Rogue, rogue, rogue!

[*APIMANTUS retreats backwards, as going.*]

I am sick of this false world; and will love

nought

But even the mere necessities upon it.

Then, Timon, presently prepare thy grave;

Lie where the light foam of the sea may beat

Thy grave-stone daily: make thine epitaph,

That death in me at others' lives may laugh.

O thou sweet king-killer, and dear divorcee

[*Looking on the gold.*]

'Twixt natural son and sure! thou bright defiler

Of Hymen's purest bed! thou valiant Mars!

Thou ever young, fre-h, lov'd, and delicate

wooer,

Whose blush doth thaw the consecrated snow

That lies on Dian's lap! thou visible god,

That soldier'st close impossibilities,

And mak'st them kiss! ~~that speak'st~~ with every

tongue,

To every purpose! O thou touch<sup>\*</sup> of hearts!

Think, thy slave man rebels; and by thy virtue

Set them into contending odds; that beasts

May have the world in empire!

*Apem.* 'Would 'twere so!

But not till I am dead!—I'll say, thou hast gold:

Thou wilt be throng'd to shortly.

*Tim.* Throng'd to!

*Apem.* Ay.

*Tim.* Thy back, I pry thee.

*Apem.* Live, and love thy misery!

*Tim.* Long live so, and so die!—I am quit.—

[*Exit APIMANTUS.*]  
More things like men?—Eat, Timon, and abhor

them.

*Enter THIEVES.*

1 *Thief.* Where should he have this gold? It is some poor fragment, some slender ort of his remainder: The mere want of gold, and the falling-from of his friends, drove him into this melancholy.

2 *Thief.* It is noised, he hath a mass of treasure.

3 *Thief.* Let us make the assay upon him: If he care not for't, he will supply us easily; if he covetously reserve it, how shall'st get it?

2 *Thief.* True; for he bears it not about him 'tis hid.

1 *Thief.* Is not this he?

*Thieves.* Where?

2 *Thief.* 'Tis his description.

3 *Thief.* He; I know him.

*Thieves.* Save thee, Timon.

*Tim.* Now thieves?

*Thieves.* Soldiers, not thieves.

*Tim.* Both too; and women's sons.

*Thieves.* We are not thieves, but men that much do want.

*Tim.* Your greatest want is, you want much of meat,

Why should you want? Behold, the earth hath

Within this mule break forth a hundred springs  
The oaks bear mast, the briars scarlet lups;  
The bounteous housewife, nature, on each bush  
Lays her full mess before you. Want? why want?

*Thief.* We cannot live on grass, on berries,  
As beasts, and birds, and fishes.

*Tim.* Nor on the beasts themselves, the birds,  
and fishes;

You must eat men. Yet thanks I must you  
That you are thieves profess'd; that you work  
not

In holier shapes: for there is boundless theft

In limited<sup>\*</sup> professions. Rascal thieves,

Here's gold: Go, seek the subtle blood of the  
grape,

Till the high fever seeth your blood to froth,

And so 'scape hanging: trust not the physician;

His antidotes are poison, and he slays [gather;

More than you rob: take wealth and lives to-

Do villany, do, since you profess to do't,

Like workmen. I'll example you with thievery:

The sun's a thief, and with his great attraction

Robs the vast sea: the moon's an arrant thief,

And her pale fire she snatches from the sun:

The sea's a thief, whose liquid surge resolves

The moon into salt tears: the earth's a thief,

That feeds and breeds by a composture<sup>†</sup> stolen

From general excrement: each thing's a thief:

The laws, your curb and whip, in their rough

power [away;

Have uncheck'd theft. Love not yourselves:

Rob one another. There's more gold: Cut

throats;

All that you meet are thieves: To Athens, go,

Break open shops; nothing can you steal,

But thieves do lose it: Steal not less, for this

I give you; and gold confound you howsoever!

Amen. [*TIMON returns to his Cave.*]

3 *Thief.* He has almost charmed me from my

profession, by persuading me to it.

1 *Thief.* 'Tis in the malice of mankind, that

he thus advises us; not to have us thrive in

our mystery.

2 *Thief.* I'll believe him as an enemy, and

give o'er my trade.

1 *Thief.* Let us first see peace in Athens;

There is no time so miserable, but a man may

be true. [*Exit THIEVES.*]

*Enter FLAVIUS.*

*Flav.* O you gods!

Is you despis'd and ruinous man my lord?

Foul of decay and railing! O monument

And wonder of good deeds evilly bestow'd!

What an alteration of honour! has

Desperate want made!

What viler thing upon the earth, than friends,

Who can bring noblest minds to basest ends!

How rarely<sup>‡</sup> does it meet with this time's

gulse,

When man was wish'd<sup>§</sup> to love his enemies:

Grant, I may ever love, and rather woo [do!

Those that would mischief me, than those that

He has caught me in his eye: I will present

My honest grief unto him; and, as my lord,

Still serve him with my life.—My dearest

master!

*TIMON comes forward from his Cave.*

*Tim.* Away! what art thou?

*Flav.* Have you forgot me, Sir? [men;

*Tim.* Why dost ask that? I have forgot all

Then, if thou grant'st thou'rt man, I have for-

got thee.

*Flav.* An honest poor servant of yours.

*Tim.* Then

I know thee not: I ne'er had honest man

About me, I: all that I kept were knaves,

To serve in meat to villains.

*Flav.* The gods are witness,

\* Legal.

† Manure.

‡ I. e. From an honourable state to one of disgrace.

§ How happily.

¶ Recommended.

Ne'er did poor steward wear a truer grief  
For his undone lord, than mine eyes for you.

*Tim.* What, dost thou weep?—Come nearer:  
—then I love thee,

Because thou art a woman, and disclaim'st  
Flinty mankind; whose eyes do never give,  
But thorough lust and laughter. Pity's sleeping:  
—

Strange times, that weep with laughing, not  
with weeping!  
*Flav.* I beg of you to know me good my  
lord,

To accept my grief, and whilst this poor wealth  
To entertain me as your steward still.

*Tim.* Had I a steward so true, so just, and  
So comfortable? It almost turns [now]  
My dangerous nature wild. Let me behold  
Thy face.—Surely, this man was born of wo-  
man.—

Forgive my general and exceptless rashness,  
Perpetual-sober gods! I do proclaim  
One honest man,—mistake me not,—but one:  
No more, I pray,—and he is a steward.—  
How fain would I have hated all mankind,  
And thou redeem'st thyself: but all save thee,  
I fell with curses.

[wise,  
Methinks, thou art more honest now, than  
For, by oppressing and betraying me,  
Thou might'st have sooner got another service.  
For many so arrive at second masters,  
Upon their first lord's neck. But tell me true,  
(For I must ever doubt, though ne'er so sure,)  
Is not thy kindness subtle, covetous,  
If not a usuring kindness; and as rich men deal  
gills,

Expecting in return twenty for one?

*Flav.* No, my most worthy master, in whose  
breast

Doubt and suspect, alas, are plac'd too late:  
You should have fear'd false times, when you  
did least:

Suspect still comes where an estate is least.  
That which I show, heaven knows, is merely  
love,

Duty and zeal to your unmatched mind,  
Care of your food and living: and, believe it,  
My most honour'd lord,  
For any benefit that points to me,  
Either in hope, or present, I'd exchange  
For this one wish, That you had power and  
wealth

To requite me, by making rich yourself.

*Tim.* Look thee, 'tis so!—Thou singly honest  
Here take:—the gods out of my misery [man,  
Have sent thee treasure. Go, live rich, and  
happy: [men; \*

But thus condition'd; Thou shalt build from  
Hate all, curse all: show charity to none;  
But let the famish'd flesh slide from the bone,  
Ere thou relieve the beggar: give to dogs  
What thou deny'st to men; let prisons swallow  
them,

Debts wither them: Be men like blasted woods,  
And may diseases lick up their false bloods!  
And so, farewell, and thrive.

*Flav.* O let me stay,  
And comfort you, my master.

*Tim.* If thou hat'st  
Curses, stay not: fly, whilst thou'rt bless'd and  
free:  
Ne'er see thou man, and let me ne'er see thee.

[*Exeunt severally.*

#### ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The same.*—Before TIMON'S Cave.

Enter POET and PAINTER; TIMON behind, un-  
seen.

*Pain.* As I took note of the place, it cannot  
be far where he abides.

\* Away from the abodes of men.

*Poet.* What's to be thought of him? Does  
the rumour hold for true, that he is so full of  
gold?

*Pain.* Certain: Alcibiades reports it; Phrynia  
and Timandra had gold of him: he likewise  
enriched poor straggling soldiers with great  
quantity: 'Tis said, he gave unto his steward a  
mighty sum.

*Poet.* Then this breaking of his has been but a  
try for his friends.

*Pain.* Nothing else: you shall see him a palm  
in Athens again, and flourish with the highest.  
Therefore, 'tis not amiss, we tender our loves to  
him, in this supposed distress of his: it will  
show honestly in us; and is very likely to load  
our purposes with what they travel for, if it be a  
just and true report that goes of his having.

*Poet.* What have you now to present unto  
him?

*Pain.* Nothing at this time but my visitation:  
only I will promise him an excellent piece.

*Poet.* I must serve him so too: tell him of an  
intent that's coming toward him.

*Pain.* Good as the best. Promising is the  
very air o'the time: it opens the eyes of expec-  
tation: performance is ever the duller for his  
act; and, but in the plainer and simpler kind of  
people, the deed of saying \* is quite out of use.  
To promise is most courtly and fashionable: per-  
formance is a kind of will and testament, which  
argues a great sickness in his judgment that  
makes it.

*Tim.* Excellent workman! Thou canst not  
paint a man so bad as is thyself.

*Poet.* I am thinking what I shall say I have  
provided for him: It must be a personating of  
himself: a satire against the softness of prospe-  
rity, with a discovery of the adulate flatteries  
that follow youth and opulence.

*Tim.* Must thou needs stand for a villain in  
thine own work? Wilt thou whip thine own  
faults in other men? Do so, I have gold for  
thee.

*Poet.* Nay, let's seek him:  
Then do we—in against our own estate,  
When we may profit meet, and come too late.

*Pain.* True;  
When the day serves, before black-corner'd  
night,  
Find what thou want'st by free and offer'd light.  
Come.

*Tim.* I'll meet you at the turn. What a god's  
gold,

That he is worshipp'd in a baser temple,  
Than where swine feed!  
'Tis thou that rigg'st the bark, and plough'st the  
foam;

Settlest admired reverence in a slave:  
To thee be worship! and thy saints for aye  
Be crown'd with plagues, that thee alone obey!  
'Tis I do meet them. [Advancing.

*Poet.* Hail, worthy Timon!

*Pain.* Our late noble master.

*Tim.* Have I once liv'd to see two honest  
men?

*Poet.* Sir,  
Having often of your open bounty tasted,  
Hearing you were retir'd, your friends fall'n off,  
Whose thankless natures—O abhorred spirits!  
Not all the whips of heaven are large enough—  
What I to you!

Whose star-like nobleness gave life and influence  
To their whole being! I'm rapt and cannot  
cover

The monstrous bulk of this ingratitude

With any size of words.

*Tim.* Let it go naked, men may see't the  
better:

You, that are honest, by being what you are,  
Make them best seen, and known.

*Pain.* He, and myself,  
Have travell'd in the great shower of your gifts  
And sweetly felt it.

\* The doing of what we have said we would do.

*Tim.* Ay, you are honest men.

*Pain.* We are hither come to offer you our service.

*Tim.* Most honest men! Why, how shall I requit you?

Can you eat roots, and drink cold water? no.

*Both.* What we can do, we'll do, to do you service.

*Tim.* You are honest men: You have heard that I have gold;

I am sure you have: speak truth: you are honest men.

*Pain.* So it is said, my noble lord: but there—  
Came not my friend, nor I [fore]

*Tim.* Good honest men!—Thou draw'st a counterfeit.\*

Best in all Athens: thou art, indeed, the best;  
Thou counterfeit'st most lively.

*Pain.* So, so, my lord.

*Tim.* Even so, Sir, as I say:—And, for thy fiction, [To the Poet.

Why thy verse swells with stuff so hue and smooth,

That thou art even natural in thine art.—

But, for all this, my honest-natur'd friends,

I must needs say, you have a little fault:

Marry, 'tis not monstrous in you; neither wish I,  
You take much pains to mend.

*Both.* Beseech your honour,  
To make it known to us.

*Tim.* You'll take it ill.

*Both.* Most thankfully, my lord.

*Tim.* Will you, indeed?

*Both.* Doubt it not, worthy lord.

*Tim.* There's no'er a one of you but trusts a  
That mightily deceives you. [kneave]

*Both.* Do we, my lord?

*Tim.* Ay, and you hear him cog, see him dis-

semble,  
Know his gross patchery, love him, feed him,  
Keep in your bosom: yet remain assur'd,

That he's a made-up villain.†

*Pain.* I know none such, my lord.

*Poet.* Nor I.

*Tim.* Look you, I love you well; I'll give you gold,

Rid me these villains from your companies:

Hang them, or stab them, drown them in a draught;

Confound them by some course, and come to me,  
I'll give you gold enough.

*Both.* Name them, my lord, let's know them.

*Tim.* You that way, and you this, but two in company:—

Each man apart, all single and alone,

Yet an arch villain keeps him company.

If, where thou art, two villains shall not be.

[To the Painter.  
Come not near him.—If thou would'st not reside

[To the Poet.  
But where one villain is, then him abandon.—

Hence! pack! there's gold, ye came for gold, ye slaves! [Hence!]

You have done work for me, there's payment:  
You are an alchymist, make gold of that:—

Out, rascal dog!

[Exit, beating and driving them out.

SCENE II.—The same.

Enter FLAVIUS, and two SENATORS.

*Flav.* It is in vain that you would speak with  
For he is set so only to himself, [Timon;  
That nothing but himself, which looks like man,  
Is friendly with him.

1 Sen. Bring us to his cave:

It is our part and promise to the Athenians,  
To speak with Timon.

2 Sen. At all times alike

Men are not still the same: 'Twas time, and  
griefs,

That fram'd him thus: time, with his fairer hand,

Offering the fortunes of his former days,  
The former man may make him: Bring us to  
And chance it as it may. [him,

*Flav.* Here is his cave.—

Peace and content be here! Lord Timon! Timon!  
Look out, and speak to friends: The Athe-

nians,  
By two of their most reverend senate, greet  
Speak to them, noble Timon. [thee:]

Enter TIMON.

*Tim.* Thou son, that comfort'st, burn!—Speak,  
and be bang'd:

For each true word, a blister! and each false  
Be as a caut'rizing to the root o'the tongue,  
Consuming it with speaking!

1 Sen. Worthy Timon—

*Tim.* Of none but such as you, and you of  
Timon.

2 Sen. The senators of Athens greet thee, Ti-

mon.

*Tim.* I thank them; and would send them

back the plague,

Could I but catch it for them.

1 Sen. Oh! forget

What we are sorry for ourselves in thee.

The senators, with one consent of love,\*

Entreat thee back to Athens; who have thought

On special dignities, which vacant lie

For thy best use and wear†

2 Sen. They confess,

Toward thee, forgetfulness too general, gross:

Which now the public body,—which doth seldom

Play the recanter,—feeling in itself

A lack of Timon's aid, hath sense withal

Of its own fall, restraining aid to Timon;

And send forth us, to make their sorrowed  
render,‡

Together with a recompense more fruitful  
Than their offence can weigh down by the dram;

Ay, even such heaps and sums of love and  
wealth,

As shall to thee blot out what wrongs were  
theirs,

And write in thee the figures of their love,  
Ever to read them thine.

*Tim.* You witch me in it;

Surprise me to the very brink of tears:

Lend me a fool's heart, and a woman's eyes,

And I'll bewep these comforts, worthy sena-

tors.

1 Sen. Therefore, so please thee to return  
with us,

And of our Athens (thine, and ours,) to take

The captainship, thou shalt be met with thanks,  
Allow'd‡ with absolute power, and thy good  
name

Live with authority:—so soon we shall drive back  
Of Alcibiades the approaches wild;

Who, like a boar too savage, doth root up  
His country's peace.

2 Sen. And shakes his threat'ning sword  
Against the walls of Athens.

1 Sen. Therefore, Timon,—

*Tim.* Well, Sir, I will; therefore, I will, Sir,  
Thus,—

If Alcibiades kill my countrymen,

Let Alcibiades know this of Timon, [Athens,  
That—Timon cares not. But if he sack fair

And take our goodly aged men by the beads,  
Giving our holy virgins to the stain

Of countenous, beastly, mad-brain'd war;  
Then, let him know,—and tell him Timon speaks  
it,

In pity of our aged, and our youth,  
I cannot chuse but tell him, that—I care not,

And let him tak't at worse; for their knives care  
not,

While you have throats to answer: for myself,  
There's not a whistle § in the unruly camp,  
But I do prize it at my love, before [You  
The reverend'st throat in Athens. So I leave

\* As a portrait was then called.

† A complete villain. ‡ In a jakes, or house of office.

\* With an united voice of affection.

† Confession.

‡ Licensed.

§ A clasp knife.

To the protection of the prosperous gods,\*  
As thieves to keepers.

*Flav.* Stay not, all's in vain.

*Tim.* Why, I was writing of my epitaph,  
It will be seen to-morrow; My long sickness  
Of health,† and living, now begins to mend,  
And nothing brings me all things. Go, live  
still;

Be Alcibiades your plague, you his,  
and last so long enough!

1 *Sen.* We speak in vain.

*Tim.* But yet I love my country: and am not  
One that rejoices in the common wreck,  
As common bruit; doth put it.

1 *Sen.* That's well spoke.

*Tim.* Commend me to my loving country-  
men,—

1 *Sen.* These words become your lips as they  
pass through them.

2 *Sen.* And enter in our ears like great trium-  
phers

In their applauding gates.

*Tim.* Commend me to them;

And tell them, that, to ease them of their griefs,  
Their fears of hostile strokes, their aches, losses,  
Their pangs of love, with other incident throes  
That nature's fragile vessel doth sustain  
In life's uncertain voyage, I will some kindness do  
them:

I'll teach them to prevent wild Alcibiades'  
wrath.

2 *Sen.* I like this well, he will return again.

*Tim.* I have a tree, which grows here in my  
close,

That mine own use invites me to cut down,  
And shortly must I fell it; Tell my friends,  
Tell Athens, in the sequence of degree,‡  
From high to low throughout, that whoso please  
To stop affliction, let him take his haste,  
Come hither, ere my true bath felt the axe,  
And hang himself:—I pray you do my greet-  
ing.

*Flav.* Trouble him no further, thus you still  
shall find him.

*Tim.* Come not to me again: but say to  
Athens,

Timon hath made his everlasting mansion  
Upon the beached verge of the salt flood,  
Which once a day with his embosomed froth,  
The turbulent surge shall cover; thither come,  
And let my grave-stone be your oracle,—  
Lips, let sour words go by, and language end:  
What is amiss, plague and infection mend!  
Graves only be men's works; and death, their  
gain!

Sun, hide thy beams! Timon hath done his  
reign. [Exit TIMON.]

1 *Sen.* His discontentants are unremovably  
coupled to him.

2 *Sen.* Of hope in him is dead: let us re-  
turn.

And strain what other means is left unto us  
—Our dear † peril.

3 *Sen.* It requires swift foot. [Exit.]

### SCENE III.—The Walls of Athens.

Enter two SENATORS, and a MESSENGER.

1 *Sen.* Thou hast painfully discover'd; are his  
files

As full as thy report, the least:

*Mess.* I have not the least:  
Besides, his expectations promises  
Present approach.

2 *Sen.* We stand much hazard, if they bring  
not Timon.

*Mess.* I met a courier, one mine ancient  
friend;—

Whom, though in general part we were oppos'd,  
Yet our old love made a particular force,

\* The gods who especially dispense prosperity.

† The disease of life is drawing to a period.

‡ Report. § In due succession from highest to lowest.

¶ Swollen truth. † Dreadful.

And made us speak like friends:—this man was  
riding

From Alcibiades to Timon's cave,  
With letters of entreaty, which import'd  
His fellowship i'th cause against your city,  
In part for his sake mov'd.

Enter SENATORS from TIMON.

1 *Sen.* Here come our brothers.

2 *Sen.* No talk of Timon, nothing of him ex-  
pect.— [ing.]

The enemies' drum is heard, and fearful scour-  
doth choke the air with dust: in and prepare;  
Ours is the fall, I fear; our foes, the sure.

[Exit.]

### SCENE IV.—The Woods.—TIMON'S Cave, and a Tomb-stone seen.

Enter a SOLDIER, seeking TIMON.

*Sol.* By all description this should be the  
place.

Who's here? speak, ho!—No answer?—What is  
this?

Timon is dead, who hath outstretch'd his span:  
Some beast rear'd this; there does not live a man.  
Dead, sure; and this his grave.—  
What's on this tomb I cannot read; the character  
I'll take with wax.

Our captain hath in every figure skill;  
An ag'd interpreter, though young in days;  
Before proud Athens he's set down by this.  
Whose fall the mark of his ambition is. [Exit.]

### SCENE V.—Before the Walls of Athens.

Trumpets sound. Enter ALCIBIADES, and  
Forces.

*Alcib.* Sound to this coward and lascivious town  
Our terrible approach. [A Parley sounded.]

Enter SENATORS on the Walls.

Till now you have gone on, and fill'd the time  
With all licentious measure, making your wills  
The scope of justice; till now, myself, and  
such

As slept within the shadow of your power,  
Have wander'd with our travelers' arms,\* and  
breath'd,

Our sufferance vainly: Now the time is flush;  
When crouching marrow, in the bearer strong,  
Cries, of itself, No more: now breathless wrong,  
Shall sit and pant in your great chairs of ease;  
And pury insolence shall break his wind,  
With fear and horrid flight.

1 *Sen.* Noble and young,  
When thy first griefs were but a mere conceit,  
Ere thou hadst power, or we had cause of fear,  
We sent to thee; to give thy rages balm,  
To wipe out our ingratitude with loves  
Above their quantity.

2 *Sen.* So did we too  
Transformed Timon to our city's love,  
By humble message, and by promis'd means;†  
We were not all unkind, nor all deserve  
The common stroke of war.

1 *Sen.* These walls of ours  
Were not erected by their hands, from whom  
You have receiv'd your griefs: nor are they such,  
Than these great towers, trophies, and schools  
should fall

For private faults in them.

2 *Sen.* Nor are they living,  
Who were the motives that you first went out;  
Shame, that they wanted cunning, in excess  
Hath broke their hearts. March, noble lord,  
Into our city with thy banners spread:  
By decimation, and a tithe'd death,  
(If thy revenges hunger for that food,  
Which nature loaths,) take thou the death'd  
tenth;

\* Arms revers'd.

† Means.

‡ I.e. By promising him a competent subsistence.

And by the hazard of the spotted die,  
Let die the spotted.

1 *Sen.* All have not offended ;  
For those that were, it is not square, \* to take,  
On those that are, revenges : crimes like lands,  
Are not inherited. Then, dear countryman,  
Bring in thy ranks, but leave without thy rage :  
Spare thy Athenian cradle, and those kin,  
Which, in the bluster of thy wrath, must fall,  
With those that have offended : like a shepherd,  
Approach the fold, and call the infected forth.  
But kill not altogether.

2 *Sen.* What thou wilt,  
Thou rather shalt enforce it with thy smile.  
Than hew to't with thy sword.

1 *Sen.* Set but thy foot  
Against our rampir'd gates, and they shall open :  
So thou wilt send thy gentle heart before,  
To say, thou'lt enter friendly.

2 *Sen.* Throw thy glove.  
Or any token of thine honour else,  
That thou wilt use the wars as thy redress,  
And not as our confusion, all thy powers  
Shall make their harbour in our town, till we  
Have seal'd thy full desire.

*Alcib.* Then there's my glove ;  
Descend, and open your uncharged ports ; †  
Those enemies of Timon's, and mine own,  
Whom you yourselves shall set out for reproof,  
I'll, and no more : and,—to atone ‡ your fears  
With my more noble meaning,—not a man  
Shall pass his quarter, or offend the stream  
Of regular justice in your city's bounds,  
But shall be remedied, to your public laws  
At bravest answer.

\* Not regular, not equitable.  
† Unattacked gate. ‡ Reconcile.

*Both.* 'Tis most nobly spoken.

*Alcib.* Descend, and keep your words.

*The SENATORS descend, and open the Gates.*

*Enter a SOLDIER.*

*Sold.* My noble general, Timon is dead ;  
Entomb'd upon the very hem o'the sea :  
And on his grave-stone, this insculpture ; which  
With wax I brought away, whose soft impression  
Interprets for my poor ignorance.

*Alcib.* [Reads.] *Here lies a wretched corpse,  
Of wretched soul bereft :*

*Seek not my name : A plague consume you  
Wicked catiffs left !*

*Here lie I Timon ; who, alive, all living men  
Did hate :*

*Pass by, and curse thy fill ; but pass, and  
Stay not here thy gait.*

These well express in thee thy latter spirits :  
Though thou abhorrd'st in us our human griefs,  
Scorn'd'st our brain's flow, \* and those our drop  
lets which

From nigard nature fall, yet rich conceit  
Taught thee to make vast Neptune weep for aye  
On thy low grave, on faults forgiven. Dead  
Is noble Timon ; of whose memory  
Hereafter more.—Bring me into your city  
And I will use the olive with my sword :  
Make war breed peace ; make peace stunt † war,  
make each

Prescribe to other, as each other's leech. ‡  
Let our drums strike. [Exeunt

\* I. e. Our tears. † Physician.  
‡ Stop.

# PERICLES, PRINCE OF TYRE.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

**THIS** play, the authorship of which has been much disputed, was probably written about the year 1608. Pope ranks it among "the wretched pieces," which cannot be attributed to Shakspeare; but Malone, who divided it into scenes, considers the internal evidence, (such as the congenial sentiments, the situation of the persons, the colour of the style, and the similitude of its expressions, to passages in his undisputed dramas) sufficiently decisive as to his having written the last three acts, and occasional portions of the preceding two. Indeed, unless it be considered as the production of some inferior playwright, amended by Shakspeare, an earlier date must be assigned to its production, than acknowledged authorities will warrant; for no play in the English language is so incorrect as this—the metre is seldom attended to—verse is frequently printed as prose—and the grossest errors appear throughout. With all these faults, however, it is mentioned as a very popular performance, and may still be read with pleasure; for it abounds with situations of difficulty and danger, is full of bustle and vivacity, the interest never lags, and the results are all gratifying. Some of the dialogues are nevertheless gross and nonsensical—those which take place in the brothel are superlatively disgusting, nor can they be excused by the moral intended to be drawn from them. Steevens, upon this portion, has judiciously remarked, that Marina, who is designed for a character of juvenile innocence, appears much too knowing in the impurities of a brothel, nor are her expressions more chastised than her ideas. Theunities of time and place are equally outraged: the action of the piece is alternately occurring at Antioch in Syria—Tyre in Phœnicia—Tarsus in Cilicia—Mitylene in the island of Lesbos—and Ephesus the capital of Ionia. The story on which the play is founded, is of great antiquity; but the dramatic hero bears no resemblance to his great Athenian namesake. It is taken from the history of *Appolonius, King of Tyre*, in the *Gesta Romanorum*, a very old book; which is also related by Gower, in his *Confessio Amantis*, a poem. Many incidents of the plot may be found in the latter work, and even a few of its particular expressions; and, therefore, as Gower himself is introduced, (like the chorus of old) it is reasonable to suppose that Shakspeare chiefly followed the work of that poet.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ANTIOCHUS, *King of Antioch.*  
PERICLES, *Prince of Tyre.*  
HELICANUS, } *Two Lords of Tyre.*  
ECANES, }  
SIMONIDES, *King of Pentapolis.*  
CLEON, *Governor of Tharsus.*  
LYSIMACHUS, *Governor of Mitylene.*  
CERINON, *a Lord of Ephesus.*  
THALIARD, *a Lord of Antioch.*  
PHILEMON, *Servant to Cerinon.*  
LEONINE, *Servant to Dionyza.*—MARSHAL.  
A PANDAR, and his WIFE.—BOULT, their Servant.

GOWER, as Chorus.

THE DAUGHTER of Antiochus.  
DIONYZA, *Wife to Cleon.*  
THAISA, *Daughter to Simonides.*  
MARINA, *Daughter to Pericles and Thaisa.*  
LYCHORIDA, *Nurse to Marina.*  
DIANA.

Lords, Ladies, Knights, Gentlemen, Sailors, Pirates, Fishermen, and Messenger, &c.

SCENE, dispersedly in various countries.

## ACT I.

Enter GOWER.

Before the Palace of Antioch.

To sing a song of old \* was sung,  
From which ancient Gower is come;  
Assuming man's infirmities,  
To lead your ear, and please your eyes.  
It hath been sung at festivals,  
On ember-eves, and holy ales; †  
And lords and ladies of their lives  
Have read it for restoratives:  
Purpose to make men glorious;  
*Et quo antiquius, eo melius*  
Born in these latter times,  
I'll sing with a more ripe, accept my rhymes,  
And that I hear an old man sing,  
May to your wishes pleasure bring,

\* I. e. That of old.

† Whitsun-ales, &c.

I life would wish and that I might,  
Waste it for you, like taper-light.—  
This city then, Antioch the great  
Built up for his chieftest seat;  
The fairest in all Syria;  
(I tell you what mine authors say:)  
This king unto him took a pheere,\*  
Who died and left a female heir,  
So buxom, blithe, and full of face,  
As heaven had lent her all his grace,  
With whom the father liking took,  
And her to incest did provoke:  
Bad father! to entice his own  
To evil, should be done by none.  
By custom, what they did begin,  
Was, with long use, account † no sin.  
The beauty of this sinful dame  
Made many princes thither frame,

\* Wife, the word signifies a mate or companion.  
† Accounted.

To seek her as a bed-fellow,  
In marriage pleasures play fellow :  
Which to prevent, he made a law,  
(To keep her still, and men in awe,) *Ant.*  
That whoso ask'd her for his wife,  
His riddle told not, lost his life :  
So for her many a wight did die,  
As yon grim looks do testify.\*

What now ensues, to the judgment of  
your eye

I give, my cause who best can justify.

[Exit.]

SCENE I.—Antioch.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter ANTIOCHUS, PERICLES, and Attendants.

*Ant.* Young prince of Tyre, you have at large  
receiv'd

The danger of the task you undertake.

*Per.* I have, Antiochus ; and with a soul  
Embolden'd with the glory of her praise,  
Think death no hazard, in this enterprise.

[Music.]

*Ant.* Bring in our daughter clothed like a  
bride,

For the embacements even of Jove himself ;

At whose conception, (till Lucina reign'd,) *(Takes hold of the hand of the princess.)*

Nature thus dowry gave, to glad her presence,

The senate-house of planets all did sit,

To knit in her their best perfections.

Enter the DAUGHTER of ANTIOCHUS.

*Per.* See where she comes, apparell'd like the  
spring,

Graces her subjects, and her thoughts the king

Of every virtue\* gives renown to men !

Her face, the book of praises, where is read

Nothing but curious pleasures, as from thence

Sorrow were ever raz'd, and testy wrath

Could never be her mild companion.

Ye gods that made me man, and sway in love,

That have inflam'd desire within my breast,

To taste the fruit of yon celestial tree,

Or die in the adventure,—be my helps,

As I am son and servant to your will,

To compass such a boundless happiness !

*Ant.* Prince Pericles,—

*Per.* That would be son to great Antiochus.

*Ant.* Before thee stands this fair Hesperides,

With golden fruit, but dangerous to be touch'd ;

For death-like dragons here affright thee hard :

Her face, like heaven, enticeth thee to view

A countless glory, which desert must gain :

And which, without desert, because thine eye

Presumes to reach, all thy whole heap must die.

Yon' sometime famous princes, like thyself,

Drawn by report, advent'rous by desire,

Tell thee with speechless tongues, and semblance

pale,

That, without covering, save yon' field of stars,

They here stand martyrs, slain in Cupid's wars :

And with dead cheeks advise thee to desist,

For going on death's net, whom none resist.

*Per.* Antiochus, I thank thee, who hast taught

My frail mortality to know itself,

And by those fearful objects to prepare

This body, like to them, to what I must :

For death remember'd, should be like a mirror,

Who tells us life's but breath ; to trust it, error,

I'll make my will then ; and as sick men do,

Who know the world, see heaven, but feeling

woe,

Gripe not at earthly joys, as erst they did :

So I bequeath a happy peace to you,

And all good men, as every prince should do ;

My riches to the earth from whence they came ;

But my unspotted fire of love to you.

[To the DAUGHTER of ANTIOCHUS.]

Thus ready for the way of life or death,

I wait the sharpest blow, Antiochus,

Scorning advice.

\* Pointing to the scene of the palace gate at Antioch, on which the heads of these unfortunate wights were fixed.  
† I.e. That given.

*Ant.* Read the conclusion then ;  
Which read, and not expounded, 'tis decreed,  
As these before thee, thou thyself shalt bleed.

*Daugh.* In all, save that, may'st thou prove  
prosperous !

*Per.* Like a bold champion, I assume the  
lists,

Nor ask advice of any other thought  
But faithfulness, and courage.

[He reads the Riddle.]

*I am no viper, yet I feed  
On mother's flesh, which did me breed :  
I sought a husband, in which labour,  
I found that kindness in a father.  
He's father, son, and husband mild,  
I mother, wife, and yet his child.  
How they may be, and yet in two,  
As you will live, resolve it you.*

Sharp physic is the last : but, O you powers !  
That give heaven countless eyes to view men's  
acts,

Why cloud they not their sights perpetually,  
If this be true, which makes me pale to read it ?

Fair glass of light, I lov'd you, and could still,

*(Takes hold of the hand of the princess.)*

Were not this glorious casket stor'd with ill :

But I must tell you,—now, my thoughts revolt ;

For he's no man on whom perfections wait,

That knowing sin within, will touch the gate.

You're a fair viol, and your sense the strings ;

Who, finger'd to make man his lawful music,

Would draw heaven down, and all the gods to  
hearken ;

But, being play'd upon before your time,

Hell only danceth at so harsh a clume :

Good sooth, I care not for you.

*Ant.* Prince Pericles, touch not, upon thy life,

For that's an article within our law,

As dangerous as the rest. Your time's expir'd :

Either expound now, or receive your sentence.

*Per.* Great king,

Few love to hear the sins they love to act :

'Twould 'braud yourself too near for me to  
tell it.

Who has a book of all that monarchs do,

He's more secure to keep it shut, than shown ;

For vice repeated, is like the wand'ring wind,

Blows dust in others' eyes, to spread itself ;

And yet the end of all is bought thus dear,

The breath is gone, and the sore eyes see clear :

To stop the air would hurt them. The blind  
mole casts

Copp'd\* hills towards heaven, to tell the earth

is wrong'd [die for't.]

By man's oppression ; and the poor worm doth

Kings are earth's gods : in vice their law's

their will ;

And if Jove stray, who dares say, Jove doth ill ?

It is enough you know ; and it is fit,

What, being more known, grows worse, to  
smother it.

All love the womb that their first beings bred,

Then give my tongue like leave to love my  
head.

*Ant.* Heaven, that I had thy head ; He has  
found the meaning :—

But I will glaze† with him. [Aside.] Young prince

of Tyre,

Though by the tenour of our strict edict,

Your exposition misinterpreting,

We might proceed to cancel of your days ; ‡

Yet hope, succeeding from so fair a tree

As your fair self, doth tune us otherwise :

Forty days longer we do respite you ;

If by which time our secret be undone,

This mercy shows, we'll joy in such a son ;

And, until then, your entertain shall be,

As doth befit our honour, and your worth.

[Exit ANTIOCHUS, his DAUGHTER, and

Attendants.]

\* Rising to a top or head.

† Or, play falsely with him. ‡ To take away your life.



*Per.* How courtesy would seem to cover sin !  
When what is done is like an hypocrite,  
The which is good in nothing but in sight.  
If it be true that I interpret false,  
Then were it certain you were not so bad,  
As with foul incest to abuse your soul :  
Where \* now you're both a father and a son,  
By your untimely clasps with your child,  
(Which pleasure fits an husband, not a father :)  
And she an eater of her mother's flesh,  
By the defiling of her parent's bed ;  
And both like serpents are, who though they feed  
On sweetest flowers, yet they poison breed.  
Antioch, farewell ! for wisdom sees, those men  
Blush not in actions blacker than the night,  
Will shun no course to keep them from the  
light :  
One sin, I know, another doth provoke ;  
Murder's as near to lust, as flame to smoke :  
Poison and treason are the hands of sin,  
Ay, and the targets, to put off the shame :—  
Then, lest my life be crop'd to keep you clear,  
By flight I'll shun the danger which I fear.

[Exit.]

Re-enter ANTIOCHUS.

*Ant.* He hath found the meaning, for the which  
we mean  
To have his head.  
He must not live to trumpet forth my infamy,  
Nor tell the word, Antiochus doth sin  
In such a loathed manner :  
And therefore instantly, this prince must die ;  
For by his fall my honour must keep high.  
Who attends on us there ?

Enter THALIARD.

*Thal.* Doth your highness call ?

*Ant.* Thaliard, you're of our chamber, and our  
mind  
Partakes her private actions to your secrecy ;  
And for your faithfulness we will advance you.  
Thaliard, behold, here's poison, and here's gold :  
We hate the prince of Tyre, and thou must kill  
him.

It fits thee not to ask the reason why,  
Because we bid it. Say, is it done ?

*Thal.* My lord,  
'Tis done.

Enter a MESSENGER.

*Ant.* Enough :  
Lest your breath cool yourself, telling your haste.  
*Mess.* My lord, prince Pericles is dead.

[Exit MESSENGER.]

*Ant.* As thou  
Wilt live, fly after : and, as an arrow, shot  
From a well experienced archer, hits the mark  
His eye doth level at, so ne'er return,  
Unless thou say, Prince Pericles is dead.

*Thal.* My lord, if I  
Can get him once within my pistol's length,  
I'll make him sure : so farewell to your highness.

[Exit.]

*Ant.* Thaliard, adieu ! till Pericles be dead,  
My heart can lend no succour to my head.

[Exit.]

SCENE II.—Tyre.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter PERICLES, HELICANUS, and other Lords.

*Per.* Let none disturb us : Why this charge of  
thoughts ?

The sad companion, dull-eyed melancholy,  
By me us'd a guest is, not an hour,  
In the day's glorious walk or peaceful night,  
(The time where grief should sleep,) can breed  
the quiet !

Here pleasures court mine eyes, and mine eyes  
shun them,  
And danger, which I feared, is at Antioch,  
Whose arm seems far too short too hit me here :

\* Whereas.

Yet neither pleasure's art can joy my spirits,  
Nor yet the other's distance comfort me.  
Then it is thus : the passions of the mind,  
That have their first conception by mis-dead,  
Have after-nourishment and life by care ;  
And what was first but fear what might be  
done,

Grows elder now, and cares it be not done.\*  
And so with me :—the great Antiochus  
('Gainst whom I am too little to contend,  
Since he's so great, can make his will his act,)  
Will think me speaking, though I swear to  
silence ;

Nor boots it me to say, I honour him,  
If he suspect I may dishonour him :  
And what may make him blush in being known,  
He'll stop the course by which it might be  
known :

With hostile forces he'll o'erspread the land,  
And with the ostent of war will look so huge,  
Amazement shall drive courage from the state ;  
Our men be vanquish'd, ere they do resist,  
And subjects punish'd, that ne'er thought of  
fence :

Which care of them, not pity of myself,  
(Who am no more but as the tops of trees,  
Which fence the roots they grow by, and defend  
them.)

Makes both my body pine, and soul to languish,  
And punish that before, that he would punish.

1 *Lord.* Joy and all comfort in your sacred  
breast !

2 *Lord.* And keep your mind, till you return  
Peaceful and comfortable !

[To u.]

*Hcl.* Peace, peace, my lords, and give expe-  
rience tongue.

They do abuse the king, that flatter him  
For flattery is the bellows blows up sin ;  
The thing the which is flatter'd, but a spark,  
To which that breath gives heat and stronger  
glowing :

Whereas reproof, obedient and in order,  
Fits kings, as they are men, for they may err.  
When signior Sooth here does proclaim a peace,  
He flatters you, makes war upon your life :  
Prince, pardon me, or strike me, if you please ;  
cannot be much lower than my knees.

*Per.* All leave us else : but let your cares  
o'erlook

What shipping and what lading's in our haven,  
And when return to us. [Exit LORDS.] Helic-  
anus, thou

Hast moved us : what seest thou in our looks ?  
*Lic.* An angry brow, dread lord.

*Per.* If there be such a dart in princes' frowns,

How durst thy tongue move anger to our face ?  
*Hcl.* How dare the plants look up to heaven,  
from whence

They have their nourishment ?  
*Per.* Their know'st I have power  
To take thy life.

*Hcl.* [Kneeling.] I have ground the axe my-  
Do you but strike the blow. [self ;

*Per.* Rise, prythee rise ;  
Sit down, sit down ; thou art no flatterer :

I thank thee for it ; and high heaven forbid  
That kings should let their ears hear their faults  
hid !

Fit counsellor and servant for a prince,  
Who by thy wisdom mak'st a prince thy servant  
What would'st thou have me do ?

*Hcl.* With patience bear  
Such griefs as you do lay upon yourself.

*Per.* Thou speak'st like a physician, Helicanus :  
Who minister'st a potion unto me,  
That thou would'st tremble to receive thyself.

Attend me then : I went to Antioch,  
Where, as thou know'st, against the face of death  
I sought the purchase of a glorious beauty,  
From whence an issue I might propagate,  
Bring arms to princes, and to subjects joys.  
Her face was to mine eye beyond all wonder ;

\* L. e. Takes care it be not done.

The rest (hark in thine ear) as black as incest ;  
Which, by my knowledge found, the sinful  
father

Seem'd not to strike, but smooth : but thou  
know'st this,

'Tis time to fear, when tyrants seem to kiss.

Which fear so grew in me, I hither fled,  
Under the covering of a careful night,  
Who seem'd my good protector ; and being here,  
Bethought me what was past, what might suc-  
ceed.

I knew him tyrannous ; and tyrants' fears  
Decrease not, but grow faster than their years :  
And should he doubt it, (as no doubt he doth)  
That I should open to the listening air  
How many worthy princes' bloods were shed,  
To keep his bed of blackness unalaid ope,—  
To lop that doubt, he'll fill this land with arms,  
And make pretence of wrong that I have done  
him ;

When all, for mine, if I may call't offence,  
Must feel war's blow, who spares not inno-  
cence :

Which love to all (of which thyself art one,  
Who now reprov'st me for it)—

*Hel.* Alas, Sir !

*Per.* Drew sleep out of mine eyes, blood from  
my cheeks,

Musing into my mind ; a thousand doubts  
How I might stop this tempest, ere it came ;  
And, minding little comfort to relieve them,  
I thought it princely charity to grieve them.

*Hel.* Well, my lord, since you have given me  
leave to speak,

Freely I'll speak. Antiochus you fear ;  
And justly too, I think, you fear the tyrant,  
Who either by public war, or private treason,  
Will take away your life.

Therefore, my lord, go travel for a while,  
Till that his rage and anger be forgot,  
Or by times do cut his thread of life.  
Your rule direct to any ; if to me,  
Day serves not light more faithful than I'll be.

*Per.* I do not doubt thy faith :  
But should he wrong my liberties in absence—

*Hel.* We'll mingle bloods together in the  
earth,  
From whence we had our being and our birth.

*Per.* Tyre, I now look from thee then, and to  
Tharsus

Intend my travel, where I'll hear from thee ;  
And by whose letters I'll dispose myself.

The care I had and have of subjects' good,  
On thee I lay, whose wisdom's strength can  
bear it.

I'll take thy word for faith, not ask thine oath ;  
Who shuns not to break one, will sure crack  
both :

But in our orbs \* we'll live so round and safe,  
That time of both this truth shall ne'er cou-  
vince, †

Thou show'st a subject's shine, I a true  
prince. *[Exit.]*

SCENE III.—Tyre.—An Ante-chamber in the  
Palace.

*Enter THALIARD.*

*Thal.* So, this is Tyre, and this is the court.  
Here must I kill king Pericles ; and if I do not,  
I am sure to be hanged at home : 'tis danger-  
ous.—Well, I perceive he was a wise fellow,  
had good discretion, that being bid to ask what  
he would of the king, desired he might know  
none of his secrets. Now do I see he had some  
reason for it ; for if a king bid a man be a vil-  
lain, he is bound by the indenture of his oath to  
be one.—Hush, here come the lords of Tyre.

*Enter HELICANUS, ESCANES, and other Lords.*

*Hel.* You shall not need, my fellow peers of  
Tyre,  
Further to question of your king's departure.

\* In our different spheres.

† Overcome.

His seal'd commission, left in trust with me,  
Doth speak sufficiently—he's gone to travel.

*Thal.* How ! the king gone ! *[Aside.]*

*Hel.* If further yet you will be satisfied,  
Why, as it were unlicens'd of your loves,  
He would depart, I'll give some light unto you.  
Being at Antioch—

*Thal.* What from Antioch ? *[Aside.]*

*Hel.* Royal Antiochus (on what cause I know  
not,)

Took some displeasure at him ; at least he  
judg'd so :

And doubting lest that he had err'd or sinn'd,  
To show his sorrow, would correct himself ;  
So puts himself unto the shipman's toil,  
With whom each minute threatens life or death.

*Thal.* Well, I perceive *[Aside.]*  
I shall not be hang'd now, although I would :  
But since he's gone, the king it sure must  
please :

He scap'd the land, to perish on the seas,—  
But I'll present me. Peace to the lords of  
Tyre !

*Hel.* Lord Thaliard from Antiochus is wel-  
come.

*Thal.* From him I come

With message unto princely Pericles ;  
But, since my landing, as I have understood,  
Your lord has took himself to unknown travels,  
My message must return from whence it came.

*Hel.* We have no reason to desire it, since  
Commended to our master not to us :

Yet, ere you shall depart, this we desire,—  
As friends to Antioch, we may feast in Tyre.  
*[Exit.]*

SCENE IV.—Tharsus.—A Room in the Go-  
vernor's House.

*Enter CLEON, DIONYZA, and Attendants.*

*Cle.* My Dionyza, shall we rest us here,  
And by relating tales of others' griefs,  
See if 'twill teach us to forget our own ?

*Dio.* That were to blow at fire, in hope to  
quench it :

For who digs hills because they do aspire—  
Throws down one mountain, to cast up a higher.  
O my distressed lord, even such our griefs ;  
Here they're but felt, and seen with mistful  
eyes, *[Exit.]*

But like to groves, being topp'd, they higher  
rise.

*Cle.* O Dionyza,  
Who wanteth food, and will not say he wants it,  
Or can conceal his hunger till he starveth !  
Our tongues and sorrows do sound deep our  
woes

Into the air ; our eyes do weep, till  
Fetch breath that may proclaim them louder ;  
that,

If heaven slumber while their creatures want,  
They may awake their helps to comfort them.  
I'll then discourse our woes, felt several years,  
And wanting breath to speak, help me with  
tears.

*Dio.* I'll do my best, Sir.

*Cle.* This Tharsus, o'er which I have govern-  
ment,

(A city on whom plenty held full hand,  
For riches, strew'd herself even in the streets ;)  
Whose towers bore heads so high, they kiss'd the  
clouds,

And strangers ne'er beheld, but wonder'd at ;  
Whose men and dames so jett'd \* and adorn'd,  
Like one another's glass to trim t'hem by :  
Their tables were stor'd full, to glad the sight,  
And not so much to feed on, as delight ;  
All poverty was scorn'd, and pride so great,  
The name of help grew odious to repeat.

*Dio.* Oh ! 'tis too true.

*Cle.* But see what heaven can do ! By this  
our change, *[Exit.]*  
These mouths whom but of late, earth, sea, and  
were all too little to content and please,

\* To jet, to strut.

† To dress them by.

Although they gave their creatures in abundance,

As houses are defiled for want of use;  
They are now starv'd for want of exercise:  
Those palates, who not yet too summers  
younger,

Must have inventions to delight the taste,  
Would now be glad of bread, and beg for it:  
Those mothers who, to nurse \* up their babes,  
Thought nought too curious, are ready now  
To eat those little darlings whom they lov'd:  
So sharp are hunger's teeth, that man and  
wife

Draws lots who first shall die, to lengthen life:  
Here stands a lord, and there a lady weeping;  
Here many sink, yet those which see them fall,  
Have scarce strength left to give them burial.  
Is not this true?

*Di.* Our cheeks and hollow eyes do witness  
it.

*Cle.* Oh! let those cities, that of plenty's cup  
And her prospectues so largely taste,  
With their superfluous riots, hear these tears!  
The misery of Tharsus may be their's.

*Enter a LORD.*

*Lord.* Where's the lord governor?

*Cle.* Here. [haste,  
Speak out thy sorrows which thou bring'st, in  
For comfort is too far for us to expect.

*Lord.* We have descried, upon our neighbour-  
ing shore

A portly sail of ships make hitherward.

*Cle.* I thought as much.

One sorrow never comes, but brings an heir,  
That may succeed as his inheritor;—  
And so in our's: some neighbouring nation,  
Taking advantage of our misery, [power,†  
Hath stuff'd these hollow vessels with their  
To beat us down, the which are down already;  
And make a conquest of unhappy me,  
Whereas no glory's got to overcome.

*Lord.* That's the least fear; for, by the sem-  
blance [peace,  
Of their white flags display'd, they bring us  
And come to us as favourers, not as foes.

*Cle.* Thou speak'st like him's untutor'd to  
repeat; [decent,  
Who makes the fairest show, means most  
But bring they what they will, what need we  
fear? [there,

The ground's the low'st, and we are half way  
Go tell their general, we attend him here,  
To know for what he comes, and whence he  
And what he craves. [comes,

*Lord.* I go, my lord. [Exit,

*Cle.* Welcome is peace, if he on peace com-  
If wars we are unable to resist. [sist;‡

*Enter PERICLES with Attendants.*

*Per.* Lord governor, (for so we hear you are)  
Let not our ships and number of our men,  
Be, like a beaconn fir'd, to amaze your eyes.  
We have heard your miseries as far as Tyre,  
And seen the desolation of your streets;  
Nor come we to add sorrow to your tears,  
But to relieve them of their heavy load;  
And these our ships (you happily § may think  
Are, like the Trojan horse, war-stuff'd within,  
With bloody views, expecting overthrow)  
Are stor'd with corn, to make your needy  
\* bread,  
And give them life, who are hunger-starv'd,  
half dead.

*All.* The gods of Greece protect you.  
And we'll pray for you.

*Per.* Rise, I pray you, rise:  
We do not look for reverence but for love,  
And harbourage for ourself, our ships, and men.

*Cle.* The which when any shall not gratify,  
Or pay you with unthankfulness in thought,  
Be it our wives, our children, or ourselves,

\* Nurse fondly.

‡ If he stands on peace.

† Forces.

§ Perhaps.

The curse of heaven and men succeed their  
evils! [seen,]

Till when, (the which, I hope, shall ne'er be  
Your grace is welcome to our town and us.

*Per.* Which welcome we'll accept: feast here  
a while,

Until our stars, that frown, lend us a smile. [Exeunt.

## ACT II.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* Here have you seen a mighty king  
His child, I wis, \* to incest bring;  
A better prince, and benign lord,  
Prove awful both in deed and word.  
Be quiet then, as men should be,  
Till he hath pass'd necessity.  
I'll show you those in trouble's reign,  
Losing a mite, a mountain gain.  
The good in conversation †  
(To whom I give my benison,) ‡  
Is still at Tharsus, where each man  
Thinks all is writ he spoken can;  
And, to remember what he does,  
Gild his statue glorious:  
But tidings to the contrary  
Are brought your eyes; what need speak I?

*Dumb Show.*

*Enter at one door PERICLES, talking with  
CLEON; all the train with them. Enter at  
another door, a GENTLEMAN with a Letter to  
PERICLES; PERICLES shows the letter to  
CLEON; then gives the Messenger an award,  
and knights him. Exeunt PERICLES, CLEON,  
&c. severally.*

*Gow.* Good Helicane hath staid at home,  
Not to eat honey, like a droue,  
From others' labours; forth he strive  
To killen bad, keep good alive;  
And to fulfil his prince's desire,  
Sends word of all that haps in Tyre:  
How Thaliard came full bent with sin,  
And hid intent, to murder him;  
And that in Tharsus was not best  
Longer for him to make his rest:  
He knowing so, put forth to seas,  
Where when men been, there's seldom ease;  
For now the wind begins to blow;  
Thunder above, and deeps below,  
Make such unquiet, that the ship [split;  
Should house him safe, is wreck'd and  
And he, good prince, having all lost,  
By waves from coast to coast is tost:  
All perishes of man, of pelf,  
Ne aught escapen but himself;  
Till fortune, tir'd with doing bad,  
Threw him ashore, to give him glad:  
And here he comes what shall be next,  
Pardon old Gower; this 'longs the text. [Exit.

*SCENE I.—Pentapolis. §—An open Place by  
the Sea Side.*

*Enter PERICLES, wet.*

*Per.* Yet cease your ire, ye angry stars of  
heaven! [man  
Wind, rain, and thunder, remember, earthly  
Is but a substance that must yield to you;  
And I, as fits my nature, do obey you.  
Alas! the sea hath cast me on the rocks  
Wash'd me from shore to shore, and left me  
breath  
Nothing to think on, but ensuing death:  
Let it suffice the greatness of your powers,

\* I suppose.

† Blessing.

‡ I.e. In behaviour.

§ Although Pentapolis is found  
in an ancient map of the world, M.S. is the Cotton li-  
brary, this is esteemed an imaginary name borrowed  
from some romance.

To have bereft a prince of all his fortunes;  
And having thrown him from your wat'ry  
grave,  
Here to have death in peace, is all he'll crave.

*Enter three FISHERMEN.*

1 *Fish.* What, ho, Pilche!

2 *Fish.* Ho! come and bring away the nets.

1 *Fish.* What Patch-breech I say!

3 *Fish.* What say you, master?

1 *Fish.* Look how thou surrest now! come away, or I'll fetch thee with a wannon.

3 *Fish.* Faith, master, I am thinking of the poor men that were cast away before us, even now.

1 *Fish.* Alas, poor souls, it griev'd my heart to hear what pitiful cries they made to us to help them, when, well-a-day, we could scarce help ourselves.

2 *Fish.* Nay, master, said not I as much, when I saw the porpus, how he bounced and tumbled? they say, they are half fish half flesh; a plague on them, they ne'er come, but I look to be wash'd. Master, I marvel how the fishes live in the sea.

1 *Fish.* Why as men do a-land; the great ones eat up the little ones: I can compare our rich misers to nothing so fitly as to a whale; 'a plays and tumbles, diving the poor fly before him, and at last devours them all at a mouthful. Such whales have I heard of a-land, who never leave gaping, till they've swallow'd the whole parish, church, steeple, bells, and all.

*Per.* A pretty moral.

3 *Fish.* But, master, if I had been the sexton, I would have been that day in the belfry.

2 *Fish.* Why, man?

3 *Fish.* Because he should have swallow'd me too: and when I had been in his belly, I would have kept such a jangling of the bells, that he should have never have left, till he cast bells, steeple, church, and parish, up again. But it the good king Simonides were of my mind—

*Per.* Simonides!

3 *Fish.* We would purge the land of these drones that rob the bee of her honey.

*Per.* How from the funny subject of the sea These fishers tell the intimacies of men; And from their wat'ry empire recollect All that may men approve, or men detect! Peace be at your labour, honest fishermen.

2 *Fish.* Honest! good fellow, what's that? if it be a day tins yon, scratch it out of the calendar, and no body will look after it.

*Per.* Nay, see, the sea hath cast upon your coast—

2 *Fish.* What a drunken knave was the sea, to cast thee in our way!

*Per.* A man whom both the waters and the wind,

In that vast tennis-court, hath made the ball For them to play upon, entreats you pity him: He asks of you, that never us'd to beg.

1 *Fish.* No, friend, cannot you beg? here's them in our country of Greece gets more with begging than we can do with working.

2 *Fish.* Canst thou catch any fishes then?

*Per.* I never practis'd it.

2 *Fish.* Fish, then thou wilt starve sure; for here's nothing to be got now-a-days, unless thou canst fish for't.

*Per.* What I have been, I have forgot to know;

But what I am, want teaches me to think on: A man shrunk up with cold; my veins are chill,

And have no more of life than may suffice To give my tongue that heat, to ask your help; Which if you shall refuse, when I am dead, For I am a man, pray see me buried.

1 *Fish.* Die quoth-a? Now gods forbid I have a gown here; come, put it on; keep thee warm. Now, afore me, a handsome fellow! Come, thou shalt go home, and we'll have flesh for holidays, fish for fasting-days, and more or'er

puddings and flap-jacks,\* and thou shalt be welcome.

*Per.* I thank you, Sir.

2 *Fish.* Hark you, my friend, you said you could not beg.

*Per.* I did not crave.

2 *Fish.* But crave! Then I'll turn craver too, and so I shall 'scape whipping. [then?] *Per.* Why, are all your beggars whipp'd?

2 *Fish.* Oh! not all, my friend, not all: for if all your beggars were whipp'd, I would wish ne better office than to be beadle. But, master, I'll go draw up the net.

[*Exeunt two of the FISHERMEN.*

*Per.* How well this honest mirth becomes their labour!

1 *Fish.* Hark you, Sir! do you know where you are?

*Per.* Not well.

1 *Fish.* Why, I'll tell you: this is called Pentapolis, and our king, the good Simonides.

*Per.* The good king Simonides, do you call him?

1 *Fish.* Ay, Sir, and he deserves to be so call'd, for his peaceable reign and good government.

*Per.* He is a happy king, since from his sub-

He gains the name of good, by his government. How far is his court distant from this shore?

1 *Fish.* Marry, Sir, half a day's journey, and I'll tell you he hath a fair daughter, and to-morrow is her birth-day; and there are princes and knights come from all parts of the world, to just and tourney† for her love.

*Per.* Did but my fortunes equal my desires, I'd wish to make one there.

1 *Fish.* O Sir, things must be as they may; and what a man cannot get, he may lawfully deal for—his wife's soul.

*Re-enter the Two FISHERMEN, drawing up a net.*

2 *Fish.* Help, master, help; here's a fish hangs in the net, like a poor man's right in the law; 'twill hardly come out. Ha! bots on't, 'tis come at last, and 'tis turn'd to a rusty armour.

*Per.* An armour, friends! I pray you, let me see it.

Thanks, fortune, yet, that after all my crosses, I should give me somewhat to repair myself; And, though it was mine own, part of mine heritage,

Which my dead father did bequeath to me, With this strict charge, (even as he left his life,) *Keep it, my Pericles, it hath been a shield 'Till me and death:* (and pointed to this brace)†

*For that it sav'd me, keep it; in like necessity Which gods protect thee from! it may defend thee.*

It kept where I kept, I so dearly lov'd it; Till the rough seas, that spare not any man, Took it in rage, though calm'd, they give't again:

I thank thee for't; my shipwreck's now no ill, Since I have here my father's gift by will.

1 *Fish.* What mean you, Sir?

*Per.* To beg of you, kind friends, this coat of worth,

For it was sometime target to a king; I know it by this mark. He lov'd me dearly, And for his sake I wish the having of it; And that you'd guide me to your sovereign's court,

Where with't I may appear a gentleman; And if that ever my low fortunes better, I'll pay your bounties: till then, rest your debtor.

1 *Fish.* Why, wilt thou tourney for the lady? *Per.* I'll show the virtue I have borne in arms.

\* Paucakes.

† To tilt as at a tournament.  
‡ Armour for the arm.

1 *Fish*. Why, do ye take it, and the gods give thee good on't!

2 *Fish*. Ay, but hark you, my friend; 'twas we that made up this garment through the rough seams of the waters: there are certain condolements, certain veils. I hope, Sir, if you thrive, you'll remember from whence you had it.

*Per*. Believe't, I will.  
Now by your furtherance, I am cloth'd in steel;  
And, spite of all the rupture of the sea,  
This jewel holds his bidding \* on my arm:  
Unto thy value will I mount myself  
Upon a courser, whose delightful steps  
Shall make the gazer joy to see him tread.—  
Only, my friend, I yet am unprovided  
Of a pair of bases. †

2 *Fish*. We'll sure provide: thou shalt have my best gown to make thee a pair; and I'll bring thee to the court myself.

*Per*. Then honour be but a goal to my will;  
This day I'll rise, or else add ill to ill.

[*Exit*].

SCENE II.—*The same*.—A public Way, or Platform, leading to the Lists. A Pavilion by the Side of it, for the reception of the KING, PRINCESS, LORDS, &c.

*Enter* SIMONIDES, THAISA, LORDS, and Attendants.

*Sim*. Are the knights ready to begin the triumph?

1 *Lord*. They are, my liege:

And stay your coming to present themselves.

*Sim*. Return them; we are ready; and our daughter,

In honour of whose birth these triumphs are,  
Sits here, like beauty's child, whom nature gave  
For men to see, and seeing wonder at.

*Thai*. It pleaseth you, my father, to express  
My commendations great, whose merit's less.

*Sim*. 'Tis fit it should be so; for princes are  
A model, which heaven makes like to itself:  
As jewels lose their glory, if neglected,  
So princes their renown, if not respected.  
'Tis now your honour, daughter, to explain  
The labour of each knight, in his device. ‡

*Thai*. Which, to preserve mine honour, I'll perform.

*Enter a Knight; he passes over the Stage, and his Squire presents his Shield to the Princess.*

*Sim*. Who is the first that doth prefer | himself?

*Thai*. A knight of Sparta, my renowned father;

And the device he bears upon his shield  
Is a black Ethiop, reaching at the sun:  
The word, & *Lux tua vita mihi*.

*Sim*. He loves you well, that holds his life of you.

[*The second Knight passes.*]

Who is the second, that presents himself?  
*Thai*. A prince of Macedon, my royal father;  
And the device he bears upon his shield  
Is an armed knight, that's conquer'd by a lady:  
The motto thus, in Spanish, *Piu per dulcira*  
*que per fuerca*. \*\*

[*The third Knight passes.*]

*Sim*. And what's the third?

*Thai*. The third, of Antioch;

And his device, a wreath of chivalry:  
The word, *Me pompa prorexit apex*.

[*The fourth Knight passes.*]

*Sim*. What is the fourth?

*Thai*. A burning torch, that's turned upside down:

The word, *Quod me alit, me extinguit*.

\* The bracelet was fastened by a jewel, which the sea had not removed from its place.

† A kind of hawk-bow.

‡ Offer. § The motto.

¶ L. e. More by sweetness than by force.

*Sim*. Which shows that beauty hath his power and will,

Which can as well inflame, as it can kill

[*The fifth Knight passes.*]

*Thai*. The fifth, a hand environed with clouds:  
Holding out gold that's by the touchstone tried:  
The motto thus, *Sic spectanda fides*.

[*The sixth Knight passes.*]

*Sim*. And what's the sixth and last, which the knight himself

With such a graceful courtesy deliver'd?

*Thai*. He seems a stranger; but his present is  
A wither'd branch, that's only green at top:

The motto, *In hac spe vivo*.

*Sim*. A pretty moral;  
From the dejected state wherein he is,  
He hopes by you his fortunes yet may flourish.

1 *Lord*. He had need mean better than his outward show

Can any way speak in his just commend:

For, by his rusty outside, he appears  
To have practis'd more the whipsack, \* than the lance.

2 *Lord*. He well may be a stranger, for he comes

To an honour'd triumph strangely furnish'd.

3 *Lord*. And on set purpose let his armour rust  
Until this day, to scour it in the dust.

*Sim*. Opinion's but a fool, that makes us scan  
The outward habit by the inward man.

But stay, the knights are coming; we'll withdraw  
Into the gallery.

[*Exit*.]  
[*Great shouts, and all cry, The mean knight!*]

SCENE III.—*The same*.—A Hall of State.—  
A Banquet prepared.

*Enter* SIMONIDES, THAISA, LORDS, KNIGHTS and Attendants.

*Sim*. Knights,

To say you are welcome, were superfluous.

To place upon the volume of your deeds,  
As in a title-page, your worth in arms,

Were more than you expect, or more than's fit,  
Since every worth in show commends itself.

Prepare for mirth, for mirth becomes a feast:  
You are my guests.

*Thai*. But you, my knight and guest:  
To whom this wreath of victory I give,  
And crown you king of this day's happiness.

*Per*. 'Tis more by fortune, lady, than my merit.

*Sim*. Call it by what you will, the day is yours;

And here, I hope, is none that envies it.  
In framing artists, art hath thus decreed,  
To make some good, but others to exceed;

And you're her labour'd scholar. Come, queen  
o'the feast,

[*place*:]  
(For, daughter, so you are,) here take your  
Marshal the rest, as they deserve their grace.

*Knights*. We are honour'd much by good  
Simonides.

*Sim*. Your presence glads our days; honour  
we love,

For who hates honour, hates the gods above.

*Marsh*. Sir, yond's your place.

*Per*. Some other is more fit.

1 *Knight*. Contend not, Sir; for we are gentlemen,

That neither in our hearts, nor outward eyes,  
Envy the great, nor do the low despise.

*Per*. You are right courteous knights.

*Sim*. Sit, sit, Sir; sit.

*Per*. By Jove, I wonder, that is king of  
thoughts,

These eates resist me, † she not thought upon.

*Thai*. By Juno, that is queen  
Of marriage, all the vizards that I eat  
Do seem unsavoury, wishing him my meat:  
Sure he's a gallant gentleman.

\* Handle of a whip.

† I. e. These delicacies go against my stomach.

*Sim.* He's but  
A country gentleman:  
He has done no more than other knights have  
Broken a staff, or so: so let it pass. [done]

*Thai.* To me he seems like diamond to a glass.  
*Per.* You' king's to me, like to my father's  
picture,

Which tells me, in that glory once he was;  
Had princes sit, like stars, about his throne,  
And he the sun, for them to reverence.  
None that beheld him, but, like lesser lights,  
Did veil \* their crown to his supremacy;  
Where now his son's a glow-worm in the night,  
The which hath fire in darkness, none in light;  
Whereby I see that time's the king of men,  
For he's their parent, and he is their grave,  
And gives them what he will, not what they  
crave.

*Sim.* What, are you merry, knights?

*I Knight.* Who can be other, in this royal  
presence?

*Sim.* Here, with a cup that's stor'd unto the  
brim,

(As you do love, fill to your mistress' lips.)

We drink this health to you.

*Knights.* We thank your grace.

*Sim.* Yet pause a while:

You knight, methinks, doth sit too melancholy,  
As if the entertainment in our court  
Had not a show might countervail his worth.  
Note it not you, Thaisa?

*Thai.* What is it

To me, my father?

*Sim.* Oh! attend my daughter;  
Princes, in this, should live like gods above,  
Who freely give to every one that comes  
To honour them: and princes, not doing so,  
Are like to guats, which make a sound, but  
kill'd

Are wonder'd at.

Therefore to make's entrance more sweet, here  
say,

We drink this standing bowl of wine to him.

*Thai.* Alas, my father, it befits not me  
Unto a stranger knight to be so bold;  
He may my proffer take for an offence.  
Since men take women's gifts for impudence.

*Sim.* How!

Do as I bid you, or you'll move me else.

*Thai.* Now, by the gods, he could not please  
me better. [Aside]

*Sim.* And further tell him, we desire to  
know,

Of whence he is, his name and parentage.

*Thai.* The king my father, Sir, has drunk to  
you.

*Per.* I thank him.

*Thai.* Wishing it so much blood unto your  
life.

*Per.* I thank both him and you, and pledge  
him freely.

*Thai.* And further he desires to know of you,  
Of whence you are, your name and parentage.

*Per.* A gentleman of Tyre—(my name, Peri-  
cles:

My education being in arts and arms:)—

Who, looking for adventures in the world,

Was by the rough seas reft of ships and men,

And, after shipwreck, driven upon this shore.

*Thai.* He thanks your grace; names himself  
Pericles.

A gentleman of Tyre, who, only by

Misfortune of the seas, has been bereft

Of ships and men, and cast upon this shore.

*Sim.* Now, by the gods, I pity his misfor-  
tune,

And will awake him from his melancholy.

Come, gentlemen, we sit too long on trifles,

And waste the time, which looks for other re-  
vels.

Even in your armours, as you are address'd, †

Will very well become a soldier's dance.

I will not have excuse, with saying, this

Loud music is too harsh for ladies' heads,  
Since they love men in arms, as well as beds.

[The KNIGHTS dance.]  
So, this was well ask'd, 'twas so well perform'd  
Come, Sir:

Here is a lady that wants breathing too;  
And I have often heard, you knights of Tyre  
Are excellent in making ladies trip;  
And that their measures \* are as excellent.

*Per.* In those that practise them, they are my  
lord.

*Sim.* Oh! that's as much as you would be  
deny'd

[The KNIGHTS and LADIES dance.]

Of your fair courtesy.—Unclasp, unclasp:  
Thanks, gentlemen, to all; all have done well;  
But you the best. [To PERICLES.] Pages and  
lights, conduct [Sir,

These knights unto their several lodgings; Your's  
We have given order to be next our own.

*Per.* I am at your grace's pleasure.

*Sim.* Princes, it is too late to talk of love,

For that's the mark I know you level at:

Therefore each one betake him to his rest;

To-morrow, all for speeding do their best.

[Exit.]

SCENE IV.—Tyre.—A Room in the Gover-  
nor's House.

Enter HELICANES and ESCANES.

*Hel.* No, no, my Escanes: know this of me,—  
Antiochus from incest liv'd not free;  
For which, the most high gods not minding  
longer

To withhold the vengeance that they had in store,  
Due to this heinous capital offence,

Even in the height and pride of all his glory,  
When he was seated, and his daughter with him,

In a chariot of inestimable value,  
A fire from heaven came, and shrivell'd up

Their bodies, even to loathing; for they so  
stunk,

That all those eyes ador'd them, † ere their fall,  
Scorn now their hand should give them burial.

*Escan.* 'Twas very strange.

*Hel.* And yet but just; for though

This king were great, his greatness was no guard  
To bar heaven's shaft, but sin had his reward.

*Escan.* 'Tis very true.

Enter three LORDS.

*1 Lord.* See, not a man in private conference,  
Or council, has respect with him but he.

*2 Lord.* It shall no longer grieve without re-  
proof.

*3 Lord.* And curs'd be he that will not se-  
cond it.

*1 Lord.* Follow me, then: Lord Helicane, a  
word.

*Hel.* With me? and welcome: Happy day,  
my lords.

*1 Lord.* Know that our griefs are risen to the  
top,

And now at length they overflow their banks.

*Hel.* Your griefs, for what? wrong not the  
prince you love.

*1 Lord.* Wrong not yourself then, noble Heli-  
cane;

But if the prince do live, let us salute him,  
Or know what ground's made happy by his  
breath.

If in the world he live, we'll seek him out;  
If in his grave he rest, we'll find him there;

And be resolv'd, ‡ he lives to govern us,  
Or dead, gives cause to mourn his funeral,

And leaves us to our free election.

*2 Lord.* Whose death's, indeed, the strongest  
in our censure: §

And knowing this kingdom, if without a head,  
(Like goodly buildings left without a roof,)   
Will soon to ruin fall, your noble self,

\* Dances.

† Which adored them.

‡ Satisfied.

§ Most probable in our opinion.

• Lower.

† Accounted

That best know'st how to rule, and how to reign,

We thus submit unto,—our sovereign.

*All.* Live, noble Helicane!

*Hel.* Try honour's cause, forbear your sufferings:

If that you love prince Pericles, forbear.

Take I your wish, I leap into the seas,

Where's hourly trouble for a minute's ease.

A twelvemonth longer, let me then entreat you

To forbear choice 'till the absence of your king;

If, in which time expir'd, he not return,

I shall with aged patience bear your yoke.

But if I cannot win you to this love,

Go search like noblemen, like noble subjects,

And in your search spend your adventurous worth;

Whom if you find, and win unto return,

You shall like diamonds sit about his crown.

*1 Lord.* To wisdom he's a fool that will not yield;

And, since lord Helicane enjoins us,

We with our travels will endeavour it.

*Hel.* Then you love us, we you, and we'll clasp hands;

When peers thus knit, a kingdom ever stands.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—Pentapolis.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter SIMONIDES, reading a Letter; the KNIGHTS meet him.*

*1 Knight.* Good morrow to the good Simonides.

*Sim.* Knights, from my daughter this I let you know,

That, for this twelvemonth, she'll not undertake A married life.

Her reason to herself is only known, Which from herself by no means can I get

*2 Knight.* May we not get access to her, my lord?

*Sim.* 'Faith, by no means: she hath so strictly tied her

To her chamber, that it is impossible.

One twelve moons more she'll wear Diana's livery—

This by the eye of Cynthia hath she vow'd

And on her virgin honour will not break it.

*3 Knight.* Though loath to bid farewell, we take our leaves.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Sim.* So

They're well despatch'd; now to my daughter's letter:

She tells me here she'll wed the stranger knight,

Or never more to view nor day nor night.

Mistress, 'tis well, your choice agrees with mine;

I like that well:—nay, how absolute she's in't,

Not minding whether I dislike or no!

Well, I commend her choice;

And will no longer have to be delay'd.

Soft, here he comes.—I must dissemble it.

*Enter PERICLES.*

*Per.* All fortune to the good Simonides!

*Sim.* To you as much, Sir! I am beholden to you,

For your sweet music this last night: my ears, I do protest, were never better fed

With such delightful pleasing harmony.

*Per.* It is your grace's pleasure to commend; Not my desert.

*Sim.* Sir, you are music's master.

*Per.* The worst of all her scholars, my good lord.

*Sim.* Let me ask one thing. What do you think, Sir, of

My daughter?

*Per.* As of a most virtuous princess.

*Sim.* And she is fair too, is she not?

*Per.* As a fair day in summer; wondrous fair.

*Sim.* My daughter, Sir, thinks very well of you;

Ay, so well, Sir, that you must be her master, And she'll your scholar be: therefore look to it.

*Per.* Unworthy I to be her schoolmaster.

*Sim.* She thinks not so; peruse this writing else.

*Per.* What's here!

A letter, that she loves the knight of Tyre?

'Tis the king's subtilty, to have my life.

[*Aside.*]

Oh! seek not to entrap, my gracious lord,

A stranger and distressed gentleman,

That never aim'd so high to love your daughter,

But bent all offices to honour her.

*Sim.* Thou hast bewitch'd my daughter, and thou art

A villain.

*Per.* By the gods, I have not, Sir.

Never did thought of mine levy offence;

Nor never did my actions yet commence

A deed might gain her love, or your displeasure.

*Sim.* Traitor, thou liest.

*Per.* Traitor!

*Sim.* Ay, traitor, Sir.

*Per.* Even in his throat, (unless it be the king.)

That calls me traitor, I return the lie.

*Sim.* Now, by the gods, I do applaud his courage.

[*Aside.*]

*Per.* My actions are as noble as my thoughts.

That never relish'd of a base descent.

I came unto your court for honour's cause,

And not to be a renel to her state;

And he that otherwise accounts of me,

This sword shall prove he's honour's enemy

*Sim.* No!—

Here comes my daughter, she can witness it.

*Enter THAISIA.*

*Per.* Then, as you are as virtuous as fair,

Resolve your angry father, if my tongue

Did e'er solicit, or my hand subscribe

To any syllable that made love to you?

*Thai.* Why, Sir, say if you had,

Who takes offence at that would make me glad?

*Sim.* Yea, mistress, are you so peremptory?

I am glad of it with all my heart. [*Aside.*] I'll tame you;

I'll bring you in subjection.—

Will you, not having my consent, bestow

Your love and your affections on a stranger?

(Who, for ought I know to the contrary,

Or think, may be as great in blood as I.)

[*Aside.*]

Hear, therefore, mistress; frame your will to mine.—

And you, Sir, hear you.—Either be rul'd by me,

Or I will make you—man and wife.—

Nay, come; your hands and lips must seal it too.—

And, being join'd, I'll thus your hopes destroy;

And, for a further grief,—God give you joy!

What, are you both pleas'd?

*Thai.* Yes, if you love me, Sir.

*Per.* Even as my life, my blood that fosters it.

*Sim.* What, are you both agreed?

*Both.* Yes, 'please your majesty.

*Sim.* It pleaseth me so well, I'll see you wed;

Then, with what haste you can, get you to bed.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* Now sleep yslaked hath the rout;

No din but snores, the house about,

Made louder by the o'er-fed breast

Of this most pompous marriage-feast.

The cat, with eye of burning coal,

Now couches 'fore the mouse's hole:

• Quenched.

And crickets sing at th' oven's mouth,  
As the bithner for their drouth.  
Hymen bath brought the bride to bed,  
Where, by the loss of maidenhead,  
A babe is moulded.—Be attent,  
And time, that is so briefly spent,  
With your fine fancies quaintly eche :  
What's dumb in show, I'll plain with speech.

*Dumb show.*

*Enter PERICLES and SIMONIDES at one door, with Attendants ; a Messenger meet them, kneels, and gives PERICLES a letter. PERICLES shows it to SIMONIDES ; the Lords kneel to the former. Then enter THAISIA with child, and LYCHORIDA. SIMONIDES shows his daughter the letter ; she rejoices : she and PERICLES take leave of her father, and depart. Then SIMONIDES, &c. retire.*

*Gow.* By many a dearn † and painful perch :  
Of Pericles the careful search  
By the four opposing coignes, §  
Which the world together joins,  
Is made, with all due diligence,  
That horse, and sail, and high expense,  
Can stead the quest. || At last from Tyre  
(Fame answering the most strong inquire,) To the court of king Simonides  
Are letters brought ; the tenour these :—  
Antiochus and his daughter's dead :  
The men of Tyrus, on the head  
Of Helicanus would set on  
The crown of Tyre, but he will none ;  
The mutiny there he hastes t'appease :  
Says to them, If king Pericles  
Come not, in twice six moons, home,  
He, obedient to their doom,  
Will take the crown. The sum of this,  
Brought hither to Pentapolis,  
Y-ravished the regions round,  
And every one, with claps, 'gan sound  
*Our heir apparent is a king :*  
*Who dream'd, who thought, of such a thing ?*  
Brief, he must hence depart to Tyre ;  
His queen, with child, makes her desire  
(Which who shall cross t' along to go :  
(Omit we all their dole and woe)  
Lychorida, her nurse, she takes,  
And so to sea. Their vessel shakes  
On Neptune's billow ; half the flood  
Hath their keel cut : but fortune's mood  
Varies again : the grizzled north  
Disgorges such a tempest forth,  
That as a duck for life that dives,  
So up and down the poor ship dives.  
The lady shrieks, and, well-a-need !  
Both fall in travail with her fear :  
And what ensues in this fell storm,  
Shall, for itself, itself perform.  
I will † relate ; action may  
Conveniently the rest convey ;  
Which might not what by me is told.  
In your imagination hold  
This stage, the ship, upon whose deck  
The sea-toss'd prince appears to speak.

[*Exit.*]

### SCENE I.

*Enter PERICLES, on a ship at sea.*

*Per.* Thou God of this great vast, † rebuke  
these surges,  
Which wash both heaven and hell ; and thou,  
that hast  
Upon the winds command, blind them in brass,  
Having call'd them from the deep ! Oh ! still thy  
deaf'ning, [ble,  
Thy dreadful thunders ; gently quench thy nim-  
Sulphureous flashes !—O how, Lychorida,

How does my queen ?—This storm, thou ! veno-  
mously

Wilt thou spit all thyself ?—The seaman's whis-  
per in the ears of death, [tle  
Unheard.—Lychorida !—Lucina ! † O  
Divinest patroness, and midwife, gentle  
To those that cry by night, convey thy deity  
Aboard our dancing boat ; make swift the  
pangs

Of my queen's travails !—Now, Lychorida—

*Enter LYCHORIDA, with an Infant.*

*Lyc.* Here is a thing  
Too young for such a place, who, if it had  
Conceit, I would die as I am like to do.  
Take in your arms this piece of your dead  
queen.

*Per.* How ! how, Lychorida !

*Lyc.* Patience, good Sir : do not assist the  
storm.

Here's all that is left living of your queen,—  
A little daughter : for the sake of it,  
Be manly, and take comfort.

*Per.* O you gods !

Why do you make us love your goodly gifts,  
And snatch them straight away ? We, here  
below,

Recall not what we give, and therein may  
Vie honour ‡ with yourselves.

*Lyc.* Patience, good Sir,  
Even for this charge.

*Per.* Now, mild may be thy life.

For a more blust'rous birth had never babe :  
Quiet and gentle thy conditions !  
For thou'rt the rudest welcome'd to this world,  
That e'er was prince's child. Happy what  
follows !

Thou hast as chiding, a nativity,  
As fire, air, water, earth, and heaven can make,  
To herald thee from the womb : even at the  
mist,

Thy loss is more than can thy portage quit, †  
With all thou canst and here.—Now the good gods  
Throw their best eyes upon it !

*Enter two SAILORS.*

1 *Sail.* What courage, Sir ! God save you.

*Per.* Courage enough : I do not fear the  
flaw ; \*\*

It hath done to me the worst.—Yet, for the love  
Of this poor infant, this fresh-new sea-farer,  
I would, it would be quiet.

1 *Sail.* Slack the bolins †† there ; thou wilt  
not, wilt thou ? Blow, and split thyself.

2 *Sail.* But sea-room, on the brine and cloudy  
billows kiss the moon, I care not.

1 *Sail.* Sir, your queen must overboard : the  
sea works high, the wind is loud, and will not  
lie, till the ship be cleared of the dead.

*Per.* That's your superstition.

1 *Sail.* Pardon us, Sir ; with us at sea it still  
hath been observed ; and we are strong in car-  
nest. Therefore briefly yield her ; for she must  
overboard straight.

*Per.* Be it as you think meet.—Most wretched  
queen !

*Lyc.* Here she lies, Sir.

*Per.* A terrible child-bed hast thou had, my  
dear !

No light, no fire : the unfriendly elements  
Forgot thee utterly ; nor have I time  
To give thee hallow'd to thy grave, but straight  
Must cast thee, scarcely coffin'd, in the ooze ;  
Where, for a monument upon thy bones,  
And aye-remaining ‡ lamps, the belching whale,  
And humming water must o'erwhelm thy corpse,  
Lying with simple shells. Lychorida,  
Bid Nestor bring me spices, ink, and paper,  
My casket and my jewels ; and bid Nicander  
Bring me the satiu coffer : lay the babe

† Eke out. ‡ Lonely. † A measure.  
‡ Corners. † Assist the search. † Disposition.  
\*\* An exclamation equivalent to "Well-a-day."  
†† I shall not. †† This wide expanse.

• Maliciously. † The goddess of child-bearing.  
‡ Thought. † Contend with you in honour.  
† As noisy a one. † Than thy entrance into life can  
require. \*\* Blast. †† Howl, roar, &c. of the sails.  
‡ Ever-burning.



Upon the pillow; hie thee, whiles I say  
A priestly farewell to her: suddenly, woman.

[Exit LYCHORIS.  
2 *Sail.* Sir, we have a chest beneath the  
hatches, caulk'd and bitum'd ready.

*Per.* I thank thee. Mariner, say, what coast  
is this?

2 *Sail.* We are near Tharsus.

*Per.* Thither, gentle mariner,  
Alter thy course for Tyre. When canst thou  
reach it?

2 *Sail.* By break of day, if the wind cease.

*Per.* Oh! make for Tharsus.

There will I visit Cleon, for the babe  
Cannot hold out to Tyros; there I'll leave it  
At careful nursing. Go thy ways, good mariner;  
I'll bring the body presently.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—Ephesus.—A Room in CERIMON'S  
House.

Enter CERIMON, a SERVANT, and some per-  
sons who have been shipwrecked.

*Cer.* Philemon, ho!

Enter PHILEMON.

*Phil.* Doth my lord call?

*Cer.* Get fire and meat for these poor men;—  
It has been a turbulent and stormy night.

*Serv.* I have been in many; but such a night  
as this,

Till now, I ne'er endur'd.

*Cer.* Your master will be dead ere you re-  
turn;

There's nothing can be minister'd to nature,  
That can recover him. Give this to the 'pothe-  
And tell me how it works.

[To PHILEMON.

[Exit PHILEMON, SERVANT, and those  
who had been shipwrecked.

Enter two GENTLEMEN.

1 *Gent.* Good morrow, Sir.

2 *Gent.* Good morrow to your lordship.

*Cer.* Gentlemen,

Why do you stir so early?

1 *Gent.* Sir,

Our lodgings, standing bleak upon the sea,  
Shook, as the earth did quake;  
The very principals \* did seem to rend,  
And all to topple; pure surprise and fear  
Made me to quit the house.

2 *Gent.* That is the cause we trouble you so  
'Tis not our husbandry;— [early]

*Cer.* Oh! you say well.

1 *Gent.* But I much marvel that your lordship,  
having

Rich tire; about you, should at these early hours  
Shake off the golden slumber of repose.

It is most strange,  
Nature should be so conversant with pain,  
Being thereto not compell'd.

*Cer.* I held it ever

Virtue and cunning were endowments greater  
Than nobleness and riches: careless heirs  
May the two latter darken and expend;  
But immortality attends the former,  
Making a man a god. 'Tis known, I ever  
Have studied physic, through which secret art,  
By turning o'er authorities, I have  
(Together with my practice,) made familiar  
To me and to my aid, the blest infusions  
That dwell in vegetables, in metals, stones;  
And I can speak of the disturbances  
That nature works, and of her cures; which  
gives me

A more content in course of true delight  
Than to be thirsty after tottering honour,  
Or tie my treasure up in silken bags,  
To please the fool and death.

\* The principals are the strongest rafters in the roof  
of a building. † Tumble. ‡ I. e. Economical  
prudence, early rising. § Attire. ¶ Knowledge.

2 *Gent.* Your honour has through Ephesus  
pour'd forth

Your charity, and hundreds call themselves  
Your creatures, who by you have been restor'd;  
And not your knowledge, personal pain, but even  
Your purse, still open, hath built lord Cerimon  
Such strong renown as time shall never—

Enter two SERVANTS with a chest.

*Serv.* So: lift there.

*Cer.* What is that?

*Serv.* Sir, even now

Did the sea toss upon our shore this chest.

'Tis of some wreck.

*Cer.* Set't down, let's look on it

2 *Gent.* 'Tis like a coffin, Sir,

*Cer.* Whate'er it be,

'Tis wondrous heavy. Wrench it open straight  
If the sea's stomach be o'ercharg'd with gold,  
It is a good constraint of fortune, that  
It belches upon us.

2 *Gent.* 'Tis so, my lord.

*Cer.* How close 'tis caulk'd and bitum'd!—

Did the sea cast it up?

*Serv.* I never saw so huge a billow, Sir,

As toss'd it upon shore.

*Cer.* Come, wrench it open—

Soft, soft!—it smells most sweetly in my sense.

2 *Gent.* A delicate odour.

*Cer.* As e'er hot my nostril; so,—up with it.

O you most potent god! what's here? a casket!

1 *Gent.* Most strange!

*Cer.* Shrouded in cloth of state; balin'd and  
entreasur'd

With bags of spices full! A passport too!

Apollo, perfect me the characters!

[Takes a scroll.

Here I give to understand, [Reads.

(If e'er this coffin drift a-land,)

I, king Pericles, have lost

This queen, worth all our mundane \* covet.

Who finds her, give her burying,

She was the daughter of a king:

Hence this treasure for a fee,

The gods requite his charity!

If thou liv'st, Pericles, thou hast a heart  
That even cracks for woe!—This chance I to-  
night.

2 *Gent.* Most likely, Sir.

*Cer.* Nay, certainly to-night;

For look, how fresh she looks!—They were too  
rough,

That threw her in the sea. Make fire within;

Fetch hither all the boxes in my closet.

Death may usurp on nature many hours,

And yet the fire of life kindle again

The overpressed spirits. I have heard

Of an Egyptian, had nine hours been dead,

By good appliance was recovered.

Enter a SERVANT, with boxes, raphins, and  
fire.

Well said, well said; the fire and the cloth.—

The rough and woful music that we have,

Cause it to sound, beseech you.

The vial once more—How thou stir'st, thou  
block!—

The music there.—I pray you, give her air:—

Gentlemen,

This queen will live: nature awakes; a woman  
Breathes out of her; she hath not been en-  
tranc'd

Above five hours. See, how she 'gins to blow  
Into life's flower again!

1 *Gent.* The heavens, Sir,

Through you, increase our wonder, and set up  
Your fame for ever.

*Cer.* She's alive—behold

Her eyelids, cases to those heavenly jewels

Which Pericles hath lost,

Begin to part their fringes of bright gold;

\* Worldly.

Scene III.

PERICLES, PRINCE OF TYRE.

161

The diamonds of a most praised water  
Appear, to make the world twice rich. O live,  
And make us weep to hear your fate, fair crea-  
ture,

Rare as you seem to be! [She moves.  
Thai. O dear Diana,  
Where am I? Where's my lord? What world  
is this?

2 Gent. Is not this strange?

1 Gent. Most rare.

Cer. Hush, gentle neighbours:

Lend me your hands: to the next chamber bear  
her.

Get linen; now this matter must be look'd to,  
For her relapse is mortal. Come, come, come;  
And Æsculapius guide us!

[Exeunt carrying THAISA away.

SCENE III.—Tharsus.—A Room in CLEON'S  
House.

Enter PERICLES, CLEON, DIONYZA, LYCHORIDA,  
and MARINA.

Per. Most honour'd Cleon, I must needs be  
gone;

My twelve months are expir'd, and Tyrus stands  
In a litigious peace. You, and your lady,  
Take from my heart all thankfulness! The gods  
Make up the rest upon you!

Cle. Your shafts of fortune, though they hurt  
you mortally,

Yet glance full wand'ringly on us.

Dion. O your sweet queen!

That the strict fates had pleas'd you had brought  
her hither,

To have bless'd mine eyes!

Per. We cannot but obey  
The powers above us. Could I rage and roar  
As doth the sea she lies in, yet the end  
Must be as 'tis. My babe Marina (whom,  
For she was born at sea, I have nam'd so) here  
I charge your charity withal, and leave her  
The infant of your care; beseeching you  
To give her princely training, that she may be  
Manner'd as she is born.

Cle. I fear not, my lord:

Your grace,\* that fed my country with your  
corn,

(For which the people's prayers still fall upon  
you.) [tion

Must in your child be thought on. If neglect-  
Should therein make me vile, the common  
body †

By you reliev'd, would force me to my duty:

But if to that my nature need a spur,

The gods revenge it upon me and mine,

To the end of generation!

Per. I believe you:

Your honour and your goodness teach me credit,  
Without your vows. Till she be married,  
madam,

By bright Diana, whom we honour all,  
Unscissard shall this hair of mine remain,  
Though I show will ‡ in't. So I take my leave.  
Good madam, make me blessed in your care  
In bringing up my child.

Dion. I have one myself,  
Who shall not be more dear to my respect,  
Than your's, my lord.

Per. Madam, my thanks and prayers.

Cle. We'll bring your grace even to the edge  
o'the shore;

Then give you up to the mask'd Neptune, § and  
the gentlest winds of heaven.

Per. I will embrace

Your offer. Come, dear'st madam.—O no tears,  
Lychorida, no tears:

Look to your little mistress, on whose grace  
You may depend hereafter. Come, my lord.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Ephesus.—A Room in CLEO-  
MON'S House.

Enter CERIMON and THAISA.

Cer. Madam, this letter, and some certain  
jewels,

Lay with you in your coffer: which are now  
At your command. Know you the character?

Thai. It is my lord's.

That I was shipp'd at sea, I well remember.  
Even on your yearning\* time; but whether  
there

Delivered or no, by the holy gods,  
I cannot rightly say: But since king Pericles,  
My wedded lord, I ne'er shall see again,  
A vestal livery will I take me to,  
And never more have joy.

Cer. Madam, if this you purpose as you  
speak,

Diana's temple is not distant far,  
Where you may 'bide until your date expire.

Moreover, if you please, a niece of mine  
shall there attend you.

Thai. My recompense is thanks; that's all;  
Yet my good will is great, though the gift small.  
[Exeunt.

ACT IV.

Enter GOWER.

Gow. Imagine Pericles at Tyre,  
Welcom'd to his own desire.  
His woeful queen leave at Ephesus,  
To Dian there a votaress.  
Now to Marina bend your mind,  
Whom our fast growing scene must find  
At Tharsus, and by Cleon train'd  
In music, letters, who hath gain'd  
Of education all the grace,  
Which makes her both the heart and place  
Of general wonder. But, alack!  
That monster envy, oft the wrack  
Of earned praise, Marina's life  
Seeks to take off by treason's knife.  
And in this kind hath our Cleon  
One daughter, and a wench full grown,  
Even ripe for marriage fight; this maid  
Hight † Philoten: and it is said  
For certain in our story, she  
Would ever with Marina be:  
Be't when she weav'd the sleided ‡ silk  
With fingers long, small, white as milk;  
Or when she would with sharp need † wound  
The cambric, which she made more sound  
By hurting it; or when to the lute  
She sung, and made the night-bird mute,  
That still records † with moan † when  
She would with rich and constant pen  
Veil to her mistress Dian; still  
This Philoten contends in skill  
With absolute † Marina: so  
With the dove of Paphos might the crow  
Vie feathers white. Marina gets  
All praises, which are paid as debts,  
And not as given. This so darks  
In Philoten all graceful marks,  
That Cleon's wife, with envy rare,  
A present murderer does prepare  
For good Marina, that her daughter  
Might stand peerless by this slaughter.  
The sooner her vile thoughts to stead;  
Lychorida, our nurse, is dead;  
And curs'd Dionysa hath  
The pregnant \*\* instrument of wrath  
Prest † for this blow. The unborn event  
I do commend to your content:  
Only I carry winged time  
Post on the lame feet of my rhyme;

\* Bounty. † The common people.

‡ Appear wilful or perverse by allowing it.  
§ Insidious waves that wear a treacherous smile.

\* Groaning. † Called.

‡ Needle. \*\* Prepared. †† Ready.

† Unwistled.

†† Accomplished.

Which never could I so convey,  
Unless your thoughts went on my way.—  
Dionysa does appear,  
With Leonine, a murderer.

[Exit.]

SCENE I.—*Tharsus.—An open Place near the sea-shore.*

*Enter DIONYSZA and LEONINE.*

*Dion.* Thy oath remember; thou hast sworn to do it:

'Tis but a blow, which never shall be known.  
Thou canst not do a thing i' the world so soon,  
To yield thee so much profit. Let not conscience,

Which is but cold, inflame love in thy bosom,  
Inflame too nicely; nor let pity, which  
Even women have cast off, melt thee, but be  
A soldier to thy purpose.

*Leon.* I'll do't; but yet she is a goodly creature.

*Dion.* The fitter then the gods should have her.  
Here

Weeping she comes for her old nurse's death.  
Thou art resolv'd.

*Leon.* I am resolv'd.

*Enter MARINA, with a Basket of Flowers.*

*Mar.* No, no, I will rob Tellus\* of her weeds,  
To strew thy green with flowers: the yellows,  
blues,  
The purple violets, and marigolds,  
Shall, as a chaplet, hang upon thy grave,  
While summer days do last. Ah me! poor maid,

Born in a tempest, when my mother died,  
This world to me is like a lasting storm,  
Whirling me from my friends.

*Dion.* How now, Marina! Why do you keep alone?

How chance my daughter is not with you? Do not

Consume your blood with sorrowing you have  
A nurse of me. Lord! how your favour's  
chang'd

With this unprofitable woe! Come, come;  
Give me your wreath of flowers. Ere the sea  
mar it,

Walk forth with Leonine;† the air is quick there  
Piercing, and sharpens well the stomach.  
Come:—

Leonine, take her by the arm, walk with her.

*Mar.* No, I pray you;  
I'll not bereave you of your servant.

*Dion.* Come, come;  
I love the king your father, and yourself,  
With more than foreign heart. We every day  
Expect him here; when he shall come, and find  
Our paragon to all reports, thus blasted,  
He will repent the breadth of his great voyage;  
Blame both my lord and me, that we have ta'en  
No care to your best courses. Go, I pray you,  
Walk, and be cheerful once again; reserve  
That excellent complexion, which did steal  
The eyes of young and old. Care not for me;  
I can go home alone.

*Mar.* Well, I will go;  
But yet I have no desire to it.

*Dion.* Come, come, I know 'tis good for you.  
Walk half an hour, Leonine, at the least:  
Remember what I have said.

*Leon.* I warrant you, madam.

*Dion.* I'll leave you, my sweet lady, for a while;

Pray you walk softly, do not heat your blood:  
What! I must have a care of you.

*Mar.* Thanks, sweet madam.—  
[Exit DIONYSZA.]

Is this wind westerly that blows?

*Leon.* South west.

*Mar.* When I was born, the wind was north.

*Leon.* Was't so?

*Mar.* My father, as nurse said, did never fear,

But cry'd, good seamen! to the sailors, galling  
His kingly hands with hauling of the ropes;  
And, clasping to the mast, endur'd a sea  
That almost burst the deck, and from the ladder-tackle

Wash'd off a canvas-climber! \* Ha! says one,  
Will out? and, with a dropping industry,  
They skip from stem to stern: the boatswain whistles,

The master calls, and trebles their confusion  
*Leon.* And when was this?

*Mar.* It was when I was born:

Never were waves nor wind more violent.

*Leon.* Come, say your prayers speedily.

*Mar.* What mean you?

*Leon.* If you require a little space for prayer,  
I grant it: Pray; but be not tedious,  
For the gods are quick of ear, and I am sworn  
To do my work with haste.

*Mar.* Why, will you kill me?

*Leon.* To satisfy my lady.

*Mar.* Why would she have me kill'd?

Now, as I can remember by my troth,

I never did her hurt in all my life;

I never spake bad word, nor did ill turn

To any living creature: believe me, la,

I never kill'd a mouse, nor hurt a fly;

I trod upon a worm against my will,

But I wept for it. How have I offended,

Wherein my death might yield her profit, or

My life imply her danger?

*Leon.* My commission

Is not to reason of the deed, but do it.

*Mar.* You will not do't for all the world, I hope.

You are well-favour'd, and your looks foreshew

You have a gentle heart. I saw you lately,

When you caught hurt in parting two that

fought:

Good sooth, it show'd well in you; do so now:

Your lady seeks my life: come you between,

And save poor me, the weaker.

*Leon.* I am sworn,

And will despatch.

*Enter PIRATES, whilst MARINA is struggling.*

1 Pirate. Hold, villain! [LEONINE runs away.]

2 Pirate. A prize! a prize!

3 Pirate. Half-part, mates, half part. Come

let's have her aboard suddenly.

[Exit PIRATES with MARINA.]

SCENE II.—*The same.*

*Re-enter LEONINE.*

*Leon.* These roving thieves serve the great

pirate Valdes;

And they have seiz'd Marina. Let her go:

There's no hope she'll return. I'll swear she's

dead,

And thrown into the sea.—But I'll see further:

Perhaps they will but please themselves upon her,

Not carry her aboard. If she remain,

Whom they have ravish'd, must by me be slain.  
[Exit.]

SCENE III.—*Mitylene.—A Room in a Brothel.*

*Enter PANDER, BAWD, and BOULT.*

*Pand.* Boul.

*Boult.* Sir.

*Pand.* Search the market narrowly; Mitylene is full of gallants. We lost too much money this mart, by bring too wenchless.

*Bawd.* We were never so much out of creatures. We have but poor three, and they can do no more than they can do; and with continual action are even as good as rotten.

*Pand.* Therefore let's have fresh ones, what-

\* The earth. † Commendance.  
‡ I.e. Ere the coming in of the tide prevent you.

\* A ship-boy.

e'er we pay for them. If there be not a conscience to be us'd in every trade, we shall never prosper.

*Baud.* Thou say'st true: 'tis not the bringing up of poor bastards, as I think I have brought up some eleven—

*Boul.* Ay, to eleven, and brought them down again. But shall I search the market?

*Baud.* What else, man? The stuff we have, a strong wind will blow it to pieces, they are so pitifully sodden.

*Pand.* Thou say'st true; they are too unwholesome o' conscience. The poor Transilvanian is dead, that lay with the little baggage.

*Boul.* Ay, she quickly poop'd him; she made him roast meat for worms:—but I'll go search the market. *[Exit BOULT.]*

*Pand.* Three or four thousand chequins were as pretty a proportion to live quietly, and so give over.

*Baud.* Why, to give over, I pray you? Is it a shame to get when we are old?

*Pand.* Oh! our credit comes not in like the commodity; nor the commodity wages not with the danger: therefore, if in our youths we could pick up some pretty estate, 'twere not amiss to keep our door hatch'd. Besides, the sore terms we stand upon with the gods, will be strong with us for giving over.

*Baud.* Come, other sorts offend as well as we.

*Pand.* As well as we I say, and better too; we offend worse. Neither is our profession any trade; it's no calling:—but here comes Boul.

*Enter the PIRATES, and BOULT, dragging in MARINA.*

*Boul.* Come your ways. *[To MARINA.]*—My masters, you say she's a virgin?

*1 Pirate.* O Sir, we doubt it not.

*Boul.* Master, I have gone thorough for this piece, you see: if you like her, so; if not, I have lost my earnest.

*Baud.* Boul, has she any qualities?

*Boul.* She has a good face, speaks well, and has excellent good clothes; there's no further necessity of qualities can make her be refused.

*Baud.* What's her price, Boul?

*Boul.* I cannot be bated one doit of a thousand pieces.

*Pand.* Well, follow me, my masters; you shall have your money presently. Wife, take her in; instruct her what she has to do, that she may not be raw in her entertainment.

*[Exit PANDER and PIRATES.]*

*Baud.* Boul, take you the marks of her; the colour of her hair, complexion, height, age, with warrant of her virginity; and cry, *He that will give most, shall have her first.* Such a maidenhead were no cheap thing; if men were as they have been. Get this done as I command you.

*Boul.* Performance shall follow.

*[Exit BOULT.]*

*Mar.* Alack, that Leonine was so slack, so slow!

*(He should have struck, not spoke;) or that these pirates*

*(Not enough barbarous,) had not overboard thrown me, to seek my mother!*

*Baud.* Why lament you, pretty one?

*Mar.* That I am pretty.

*Baud.* Come, the gods have done their part in you.

*Mar.* I accuse them not.

*Baud.* You are lit into my hands, where you are like to live.

*Mar.* The more my fault, To 'scape his hands, where I was like to die.

*Baud.* Ay, and you shall live in pleasure.

*Mar.* No.

*Baud.* Yes, indeed, shall you, and taste gentlemen of all fashions. You shall fare well; you

shall have the difference of all complexions. What! do you stop your ears?

*Mar.* Are you a woman?

*Baud.* What would you have me be, an I be not a woman?

*Mar.* An honest woman, or not a woman.

*Baud.* Marry, whip thee, gosing! I think I shall have something to do with you. Come, you are a young foolish sapling, and must be bowed as I would have you.

*Mar.* The gods defend me!

*Baud.* If it please the gods to defend you by men, then men must comfort you, men must feed you, men must stir you up.—Boul's returned.

*Enter BOULT.*

Now, Sir, hast thou cried her through the market?

*Boul.* I have cried her almost to the number of her hairs; I have drawn her picture with my voice.

*Baud.* And I prythee tell me, how dost thou find the inclination of the people, especially of the younger sort?

*Boul.* 'Faith, they listened to me, as they would have hearkened to their father's testament. There was a Spaniard's mouth so watered, that he went to bed to her very description.

*Baud.* We shall have him here to-morrow with his best ruff on.

*Boul.* To-night, to-night. But, mistress, do you know the French knight that cowers \* the hams?

*Baud.* Who? Monsieur Veroles?

*Boul.* Ay; he offered to cut a caper at the proclamation; but he made a groan at it, and swore he would see her to-morrow.

*Baud.* Well, well: as for him, he brought his disease hither; here he does but repair it. I know, he will come in our shadow, to scatter his crowns in the sun.

*Boul.* Well, if we had of every nation a traveller, we should lodge them with this sign.

*Baud.* Pray you, come hither awhile. You have fortunes coming upon you. Mark me: you must seem to do that fearfully, which you commit willingly; to despise profit, where you have most gain. To weep that you live as you do, makes pity in your lovers: Seldom, but that pity begets you a good opinion, and that opinion a mere † profit.

*Mar.* I understand you not.

*Boul.* O, take her home, mistress, take her home: these blushes of her's must be quenched with some present practice.

*Baud.* Thou say'st true, 'faith, so they must: for your bride goes to that with shame, which is her way to go with warrant.

*Boul.* 'Faith some do, and some do not. But, mistress, if I have bargained for the joint,—

*Baud.* Thou may'st cut a morsel off the spit.

*Boul.* I may so.

*Baud.* Who should deny it? Come, young one, I like the manner of your garments well.

*Boul.* Ay, by my faith, they shall not be changed yet.

*Baud.* Boul, spend thou that in the town: report what a sojourner we have; you'll lose nothing by custom. When nature framed this piece, she meant thee a good turn; therefore say what a paragon she is, and thou hast the harvest out of thine own report.

*Boul.* I warrant you, mistress, thunder shall not so awake the beds of eels, as my giving out her beauty stir up the lewdly-inclined. I'll bring home some to-night.

*Baud.* Give your ways; follow me.

*Mar.* If fires be hot, knives sharp, or waters Untied I still my virgin knot will keep. *[Deep, Diana, and my purpose!]*

\* I. e. Half open.

† Bid a high price for her

‡ Unskilful in what she has to do.

\* Bends.

† A certain profit.

*Baud.* What have you to do with Diana?  
Pray you, will you go with us?

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Tharsus.—A Room in CLEON'S House.*

*Enter CLEON and DIONYZA.*

*Dion.* Why are you foolish? Can it be undone?

*Cle.* O Dionysa, such a piece of slaughter  
The sun and moon ne'er look'd upon!

*Dion.* I think  
You'll turn a child again.

*Cle.* Were I chief lord of all the spacious world,

I'd give it to undo the deed. O lady,  
Much less in blood than virtue, yet a princess  
To equal any single crown o'the earth,  
I'the justice of compare! O villain Leonine,  
Whom thou hast poison'd too!  
If thou hadst drunk to him, it had been a kindness

Becoming well thy feat: \* what canst thou say,  
When noble Pericles shall demand his child?

*Dion.* That she is dead. Nurses are not the  
To foster it, nor ever to preserve. [fates  
She died by night; I'll say so. Who can cross  
it?

Unless you play the impious innocent, †  
And, for an honest attribute, cry out  
*She died by foul play.*

*Cle.* Oh! go to. Well, well,  
Of all the faults beneath the heavens, the gods  
Do like this worst.

*Dion.* Be one of those, that think  
The petty wrens of Tharsus will fly hence,  
And open this to Pericles. I do shame  
To think of what a noble strain you are,  
And of how coward a spirit.

*Cle.* To such proceeding  
Who ever but his approbation added,  
'Though not his preconsent, he did not flow  
From honourable courses.

*Dion.* Be it so then:  
Yet none does know, but you, how she came  
dead,

Nor none can know, Leonine being gone.  
She did disdain my child, and stood between  
Her and her fortunes: None would look on  
her,

But cast their gazes on Marina's face;  
Whilst ours was blarney'd at, and held a malkin, ‡  
Not worth the time of day. It pierc'd me  
thorough;

And though you call my course unnatural,  
You not your child well loving, yet I find,  
It greets me as an enterprise of kindness,  
Perform'd to your sole daughter.

*Cle.* Heavens forgive it!

*Dion.* And as for Pericles,  
What should he say? We wept after her  
hearse,

And even yet we mourn: her monument  
Is almost finish'd, and her epitaphs  
In glittering golden characters express  
A general praise to her, and care in us  
At whose expense 'tis done.

*Cle.* Thou art like the harpy,  
Which, to betray, doth wear an angel's face,  
Seize with an eagle's talons.

*Dion.* You are like one that superstitiously  
Both swear to the gods, that winter kills the  
flies:

But yet I know you so as I advise. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter GOWER, before the Monument, of  
MARINA, at Tharsus.*

*Gow.* Thus time we waste, and longest leagues  
make short;  
Sail seas in cockles; have, and wish but for't;

\* I.e. ~~the~~ piece with the rest of my exploit.  
† A common appellation for an idiot.  
‡ Only.

Making (to take your imagination.)

From bourn to bourn, \* region to region.

By you being pardon'd, we commit no crime,

To use one language, in each several clime,  
Where our scenes seem to live. I do beseech  
you,

To learn of me, who stand i'the gap to teach  
you,

The stages of our story. Pericles

Is now again thwarting the wayward seas,

(Attended on by many a lord and knight),

To see his daughter, all his life's delight.

Old Escanes, whom Helicanus late

Advanc'd in time to great and high estate,

Is left to govern. Bear you it in mind,

Old Helicanus goes along behind.

Well-sailing ships, and bounteous winds, have  
brought

This king to Tharsus, (think his pilot thought;

So with his steerage shall your thoughts grow  
on.)

To fetch his daughter home, who first is gone.

Like motes and shadows see them move a-  
while;

Your ears unto your eyes I'll reconcile.

*Dumb show.*

*Enter at one door PERICLES, with his Train;  
CLEON, and DIONYZA at the other. CLEON  
shows PERICLES the tomb of MARINA;  
whereat PERICLES makes lamentation, puts  
on Sackcloth, and in a mighty passion,  
departs. Then CLEON and DIONYZA re-  
tire.*

*Gow.* See how belief may suffer by foul show!

This borrow'd passion stands for true old woe;

And Pericles, in sorrow all devour'd,

With sighs shot through, and biggest tears o'er-  
show'd,

Leaves Tharsus, and again embarks. He swears

Never to wash his face, nor cut his hairs:

He puts on sackcloth, and to sea. He bears

A tempest, which his mortal vessel † tears,

And yet he rides it out. Now please you wit:

The epitaph is for Marina writ

By wicked Dionysa.

[*Reads the inscription on MARINA'S  
Monument.*]

*The fairest, sweet'st, and best, lies here,*

*Who wither'd in her spring of year.*

*She was of Tyrus, the king's daughter,*

*On whom foul death hath made this slaugh-  
ter;*

*Marina was she call'd; and at her birth,*

*Thetis, § being proud, swallow'd some part  
o'the earth:*

*Therefore the earth, fearing to be o'erflow'd,*

*Hath Thetis' birth-child on the heavens  
bestow'd;*

*Wherefore she does, (and swears she'll never  
stint, ||)*

*Make raging battery upon shores of flint.*

*No visor does become black villany,*

*So well as soft and tender flattery.*

*Let Pericles believe his daughter's dead,*

*And bear his courses to be ordered*

*By lady Fortune; while our scenes display*

*His daughter's woe and heavy well-a-day,*

*In her unholy service. Patience then,*

*And think you now are all in Mitylene.*

[*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—*Mitylene.—A Street before the  
Brothel.*

*Enter, from the Brothel, two GENTLEMEN.*

1 *Gent.* Did you ever hear the like?

2 *Gent.* No, nor never shall do in such a  
place as this, she being once gone.

\* Travelling from country to country.

† His body.

‡ To know.

§ The sea.

|| Never ceases.

1 *Gent.* But to have divinity preached there! Did you ever dream of such a thing?

2 *Gent.* No, no. Come, I am for no more bawdy-houses: shall we go hear the vestals sing?

1 *Gent.* I'll do any thing now that is virtuous; but I am out of the road of rutting, for ever.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*The same.*—A Room in the *Brothel.*

*Enter PANDER, BAWD, and BOULT.*

*Pand.* Well, I had rather than twice the worth of her, she had ne'er come here.

*Bawd.* Fie, fie upon her; she is able to freeze the god Priapus, and undo a whole generation. We must either get her ravish'd, or be rid of her. When she should do for clients her flimment, and do me the kindness of our profession, she has me her quirks, her reasons, her master-reacons, her prayers, her knees; that she would make a puritan of the devil, if he should cheapen a kiss of her.

*Boult.* Faith I must ravish her, or she'll dis-furnish us of all our cavaliers, and make all our swearers priests.

*Pand.* Now, the pox upon her green-sickness for me!

*Bawd.* Faith, there's no way to be rid on't, but by the way to the pox. Here comes the lord Lysimachus, disguised.

*Boult.* We should have both lord and lowly, if the peevish baggage would but give way to customers.

*Enter LYSIMACHUS.*

*Lys.* How now? How? a dozen of virginities?

*Bawd.* Now, the gods to-bless your honour!

*Boult.* I am glad to see your honour in good health.

*Lys.* You may so; 'tis the better for you that your resorters stand upon sound legs. How now, wholesome iniquity? Have you that a man may deal withal, and defy the surgeon?

*Bawd.* We have here one, Sir, if she would—but there never came her like in Nity-lene.

*Lys.* If she'd do the deeds of darkness, thou would'st say.

*Bawd.* Your honour knows what 'tis to say, well enough.

*Lys.* Well; call forth, call forth.

*Boult.* For flesh and blood, Sir, white and red, you shall see a rose; and she were a rose indeed, if she had but—

*Lys.* What, pr'ythee?

*Boult.* O Sir, I can be modest.

*Lys.* That dignifies the renown of a bawd, no less than it gives a good report to a number to be chaste.

*Enter MARINA.*

*Bawd.* Here comes that which grows to the stalk;—never plucked yet, I can assure you. Is she not a fair creature?

*Lys.* Faith, she would serve after a long voyage at sea. Well, there's for you;—leave us.

*Bawd.* I beseech your honour, give me leave: a word, and I'll have done presently.

*Lys.* I beseech you, do.

*Bawd.* First, I would have you note, this is an honourable man.

[*To MARINA, whom she takes aside.*]

*Mar.* I desire to find him so, that I may worthily note him.

*Bawd.* Next, he's the governor of this country, and a man whom I am bound to.

*Mar.* If he govern the country, you are bound

to him indeed; but how honourable he is in that, I know not.

*Bawd.* Pray you, without any more virginal fencing, will you use him kindly? He will lace your apron with gold.

*Mar.* What he will do graciously, I will thankfully receive.

*Lys.* Have you done?

*Bawd.* My lord, she's not paced yet; you must take some pains to work her to your manage. Come, we will leave his honour and her together.

[*Exeunt BAWD, PANDER, and BOULT.*]

*Lys.* Go thy ways.—Now, pretty one, how long have you been at this trade?

*Mar.* What trade, Sir?

*Lys.* What I cannot name, but I shall offend.

*Mar.* I cannot be offended with my trade. Please you to name it.

*Lys.* How long have you been of this profession?

*Mar.* Ever since I can remember.

*Lys.* Did you go to it so young? Were you a gamester? at five, or at seven?

*Mar.* Earlier too, Sir, if now I be one.

*Lys.* Why, the house you dwell in, proclaims you to be a creature of sale.

*Mar.* Do you know this house to be a place of such resort, and will come into it? I hear say, you are of honourable parts, and are the governor of this place.

*Lys.* Why, hath your principal made known unto you who I am?

*Mar.* Who is my principal?

*Lys.* Why, your herb woman: she that sets seeds and roots of shame and iniquity. Oh! you have heard something of my power, and so stand aloof for more serious wooing. But I protest to thee, pretty one, my authority shall not see thee, or else look friendly upon thee. Come, bring me to some private place. Come, come.

*Mar.* If you were born to honour, show it now;

If put upon you, make the judgment good

That thought you worthy of it.

*Lys.* How's this? how's this?—Some more;—be sage.

*Mar.* For me,

That am a maid, though most ungentle fortune Hath plac'd me here within this loathsome cell, Where, since I came, diseases have been sold Dearer than physic,—O that the good gods Would set me free from this unhallow'd place, Though they did change me to the meanest bird That flies the purer air!

*Lys.* I did not think

Thou couldst have spoke so well; ne'er dream'd thou couldst.

Had I brought hither a corrupted mind, Thy speech had alter'd it. Hail, here's gold for thee:

Perséver still in that clear way thou goest, And the gods strengthen thee!

*Mar.* The gods preserve you!

*Lys.* For me, be you thoughten

That I came with no ill intent: for to me The very doors and windows savour vilely. Farewell. Thou art a piece of virtue, and I doubt not but thy training hath been noble.—Hold; here's more gold for thee.—

A curse upon him, die he like a thief, That robs thee of thy goodness! If thou hear'st from me,

It shall be for thy good.

[*As LYSIMACHUS is putting up his Purse.* BOULT enters.

*Boult.* I beseech your honour, one piece for me.

*Lys.* Avaunt, thou damned door-keeper! Your house,

But for this virgin that doth prop it up,  
Would sink, and overwhelm you all. Away!

[Exit LYSIMACHUS.]

*Boult.* How's this? We must take another course with you. If your peevish chastity, which is not worth a breakfast in the cheapest country under the cope,\* shall undo a whole household, let me be gelded like a spaniel. Come your ways.

*Mar.* Whither would you have me?

*Boult.* I must have your maidenhead taken off, or the common hangman shall execute it. Come your way. We'll have no more gentlemen driven away. Come your ways, I say.

*Re-enter BAWD.*

*Bawd.* How now! what's the matter?

*Boult.* Worse and worse, mistress: she has here spoken holy words to the lord Lysimachus.

*Bawd.* Oh! abominable!

*Boult.* She makes our profession as it were to stink afore the face of the gods.

*Bawd.* Marry, hang her up for ever!

*Boult.* The nobleman would have dealt with her like a nobleman, and she sent him away as cold as a snowball: saying his prayers too.

*Bawd.* Boult, take her away: use her at thy pleasure; crack the glass of her virginity, and make the rest malleable.

*Boult.* An if she were a thornier piece of ground than she is, she shall be ploughed.

*Mar.* Hark, you gods!

*Bawd.* She conjures: away with her. Would she had never come within my doors! Marry hang you! She's born to undo us. Will you not go the way of women-kind? Marry come up, my dish of chastity with rosemary and bays!

[Exit BAWD.]

*Boult.* Come, mistress; come your way with me.

*Mar.* Whither would you have me?

*Boult.* To take from you the jewel you hold so dear.

*Mar.* Pr'ythee tell me one thing first.

*Boult.* Come now, your one thing.

*Mar.* What canst thou wish thine enemy to be?

*Boult.* Why, I could wish him to be my master, or rather, my mistress.

*Mar.* Neither of these are yet so bad as thou art.

Since thee do better thee in their command.  
Thou hold'st a place, for which the pained'st

Of hell would! not in reputation change:  
Thou'rt the damn'd door-keeper to every coy-

strel

That hither comes enquiring for his tib;  
To the choleric fisting of each rogue thy ear

Is liable; thy very food is such  
As hath been belch'd on by infected lungs.

*Boult.* What would you have me? go to the wars, would you? where a man may serve seven years for the loss of a leg, and have not money enough in the end to buy him a wooden one?

*Mar.* Do any thing but this thou doest.  
Empty

Old receptacles, common sewers, of filth;  
Serve by indenture to the common hangman;

Any of these ways are better yet than this:  
For that which thou professest, a taboo,

Could he but speak, would own a name too dear.

Oh! that the gods would safely from this place  
Deliver me! Here, here is gold for thee.

If that thy master would gain ought by me,  
Proclaim that I can sing, weave, sew, and

dance,  
With other virtues, which I'll keep from

boast;  
And I will undertake all these to teach.

\* Canopy of heaven.

† Paitry fellow.

I doubt not but this populous city will  
Yield many scholars.

*Boult.* But can you teach all this you speak of?

*Mar.* Prove that I cannot, take me home again,

And prostitute me to the basest groom  
That doth frequent your house.

*Boult.* Well, I will see what I can do for thee: if I can place thee, I will.

*Mar.* But, amongst honest women?

*Boult.* Faith, my acquaintance lies little amongst them. But since my master and mistress have bought you, there's no going but by their consent; therefore I will make them acquainted with your purpose, and I doubt not but I shall find them tractable enough. Come, I'll do for thee what I can: come your ways.

[Exit.]

## ACT V.

### Enter GOWLER.

*Gow.* Marina thus the brothel 'scapes, and chances

Into an honest house, our story says.  
She sings like one immortal, and she dances

As goddess-like to her admired lays:  
Deep clerks\* she dumbs; and with her need

composes  
Nature's own shape, of bud, bird, branch, or

berry;  
That even her art sisters the natural roses:

Her inkle, silk, twine with the rubied cherry:  
That pupils lacks she none of noble race,

Who pour their bounty on her; and her gain  
She gives the curs'd bawd. Here we her

place;  
And to her father turn our thoughts again.

Where we left him, on the sea. We there him

lost;

Whence, driven before the winds, he is arriv'd  
Here where his daughter dwells; and on this

coast

Suppose him now at anchor. The city striv'd  
God Neptune's annual feast to keep: from

whence

Lysimachus our Tyrian ship espies,  
His banners sable, trimm'd with rich expense;

And to him in his barge with fervour lies.  
In your supposing once more put your sight;

Of heavy Pericles think thus the bark:

Where, what is done in action, more, if might,  
Shall be discover'd; please you, sit, and hark.

[Exit.]

SCENE I.—On board PERICLES' Ship, off Mitylene. A close Pavilion on deck, with a Curtain before it; PERICLES within it, reclined on a Couch. A Barge lying beside the Tyrian Vessel.

Enter two SAILORS, one belonging to the Tyrian Vessel, the other to the Barge; to them HELICANUS.

*Tyr. Sail.* Where's the lord Helicanus? he can resolve you.

[To the SAILOR of Mitylene.]

Oh! here he is.—  
Sir, there's a barge put off from Mitylene.

And in it is Lysimachus the governor,  
Who craves to come aboard. What is your

will?

*Hel.* That he have his. Call up some gentlemen.

*Tyr. Sail.* Ho, gentlemen! my lord calls.

Enter two GENTLEMEN.

1 Gent. Doth your lordship call?

\* Learned men.

*Hcl.* Gentlemen,  
There is some of worth would come aboard : I  
pray you,  
To greet them fairly.  
[*THE GENTLEMEN and the two SAILORS*  
*descend and go on board the Barge.*

*Enter, from thence, LYSIMACHUS and LORDS ;*  
*the Tyrian GENTLEMEN, and the two SAILORS.*

*Tyr. Sail.* Sir,  
This is the man that can, in aught you would,  
Resolve you.

*Lys.* Hail, reverend Sir ! the gods preserve you !

*Hcl.* And you, Sir, to out-live the age I am,  
And die as I would do.

*Lys.* You wish me well.  
Being on shore, honouring of Neptune's triumphs,

Seeing this goodly vessel ride before us,  
I make to it, to know of whence you are.

*Hcl.* First, Sir, what is your place ?

*Lys.* I am governor of this place you lie before.

*Hcl.* Sir,  
Our vessel is of Tyre, in it the king ;  
A man, who for this three months hath not  
spoken

To any one, nor taken sustenance,  
But to prorogue \* his grief.

*Lys.* Upon what ground is his distemper-  
ture ?

*Hcl.* Sir, it would be too tedious to repeat ;  
But the main grief of all, springs from the loss  
Of a beloved daughter and a wife.

*Lys.* May we not see him, then ?

*Hcl.* You may indeed, Sir  
But bootless is your sight : he will not speak  
To any.

*Lys.* Yet, let me obtain my wish.

*Hcl.* Behold him, Sir : [*PERICLES discovered.*]  
this was a goodly person,  
Till the disaster, that, one mortal † night,  
Drove him to this.

*Lys.* Sir, king, all hail ! the gods preserve  
you ! Hail,

Hail, royal Sir !  
*Hcl.* It is in vain : he will not speak to you.  
I Lord, Sir, we have a maid in Mitylene, I  
durst wager,

Would win some words of him.

*Lys.* 'Tis well bethought.  
She, questionless, with her sweet harmony  
And other choice attractions, would allure,  
And make a battery through his deafen'd  
parts, ‡

Which now are midway stopp'd :

She, all as happy as of all the fairest,  
Is, with her fellow-maidens, now within  
The leafy shelter that abuts against  
The island's side.

*He whispers one of the attendant LORDS.—*

*Exit LORD, in the Barge of LYSIMACHUS.*

*Hcl.* Sure, all's effectless ; yet nothing we'll  
omit

That bears recovery's name. But, since your  
kindness  
We have stretch'd thus far, let us beseech you  
further,

That for our gold we may provision have,  
Wherein we are not destitute for want,  
But weary for the staleness.

*Lys.* O Sir, a courtesy,  
Which if we should deny, the most just God  
For every graft would send a caterpillar,  
And so infect our province.—Yet once more  
Let me intreat to know at large the cause  
Of your king's sorrow.

*Hcl.* Sit, Sir, I will recount it :—  
But see, I am prevented.

\* To prolong.

‡ I. e. Earn

† Destructive.

*Enter, from the Barge, LORD, MARINA, and*  
*a young LADY.*

*Lys.* Oh ! here is  
The lady that I sent for. Welcome, fair one !  
Is't not a goodly presence ?

*Hcl.* A gallant lady.

*Lys.* She's such, that were I well assur'd she  
came

Of gentle kind, and noble stock, I'd wish  
No better choice, and think me rarely wed.  
Fair one, all goodness that consists in bounty  
Expect even here, where is a kingly patient  
If that thy prosperous-artificial feat  
Can draw him but to answer thee in aught,  
Thy sacred physic shall receive such pay  
As thy desires can wish.

*Mar.* Sir, I will use  
My utmost skill in his recovery,  
Provided none but I and my companion  
Be suffer'd to come near him.

*Lys.* Come, let us leave her,  
And the gods make her prosperous !

[*MARINA sings*

*Lys.* Mark'd he your music ?

*Mar.* No, nor look'd on us.

*Lys.* See, she will speak to him.

*Mar.* Hail, Sir ! my lord, lend ear :—

*Per.* Hum ! ha !

*Mar.* I am a maid,  
My lord, that ne'er before invited eyes,  
But have been gaz'd on, comit-like : she  
speaks

My lord, that, may be, hath endur'd a grief  
Might equal yours, if both were justly weigh'd.  
Though wayward fortune did malign my state,  
My derivation was from ancestors  
Who stood equivalent with mighty kings :  
But time hath rooted out my parentage,  
And to the world and awkward casualties  
Bound me in servitude.—I will desist ;  
But there is something glows upon my cheek,  
And whispers in mine ear, *Go not till he speak.*

[*Aside.*

*Per.* My fortunes—parentage—good paren-  
tage—

To equal mine !—was it not thus ? what say  
you ?

*Mar.* I said, my lord, if you did know my  
parentage,  
You would not do me violence.

*Per.* I do think so.

I pray you, turn your eyes again upon me.—  
You are like something that—What country-  
woman ?

Here of these shores ?

*Mar.* No, nor of any shores :  
Yet I was mortally brought forth, and am  
No other than I appear.

*Per.* I am great with woe, and shall deliver  
weeping.

My dearest wife was like this maid, and such a  
one

My daughter might have been : my queen's  
square brows ;

Her stature to an inch ; as wand-like straight ;  
As silver-voic'd ; her eyes as jewel-like ;

And cas'd as richly : in pace another Juno ;  
Who starves the ears she feeds, and makes them  
hungry,

The more she gives them speech—Where do you  
live ?

*Mar.* Where I am but a stranger : from the  
deck

You may discern the place.

*Per.* Where were you bred ?

And how achiev'd you these endowments,  
which

You make more rich to owe ?

*Mar.* Should I tell my history.

'Twould seem like lies disdain'd in the report-  
ing.

*Per.* Pr'ythee speak :



Falseness cannot come from thee, for thou look'st Modest as justice, and thou seem'st a palace For the crown'd truth to dwell in: I'll believe thee,

And make my senses credit thy relation, To points that seem impossible; for thou look'st

Like one I lov'd indeed. What were thy friends?

Durst thou not say, when I did push thee back, (Which was when I perceiv'd thee,) that thou can'st

From good descending?

*Mar.* So indeed I did.

*Per.* Report thy parentage. I think thou said'st

Thou hadst been toss'd from wrong to injury, And that thou thought'st thy griefs might equal mine,

If both were open'd.

*Mar.* Some such thing indeed

I said, and said no more but what my thoughts Did warrant me was likely.

*Per.* Tell thy story:

If thine, consider'd, prove the thousandth part Of my endurance, thou art a man, and I Have suffer'd like a girl: yet thou dost look Like Patience, gazing on kings' graves, and smiling

Extremity out of act. What were thy friends? How lost thou them? Thy name, my most kind virgin?

Recount, I do beseech thee: come, sit by me.

*Mar.* My name, Sir, is Marina.

*Per.* Oh! I am mock'd, And thou by some incensed god sent hither To make the world laugh at me.

*Mar.* Patience, good Sir, Or here I'll cease.

*Per.* Nay, I'll be patient: Thou little know'st how thou dost startle me, To call thyself Marina.

*Mar.* The name, Marina, Was given me by one that had some power; My father, and a king.

*Per.* How! a king's daughter? And call'd Marina?

*Mar.* You said you would believe me; But, not to be a troubler of your peace, I will end here.

*Per.* But are you flesh and blood? Have you a working pulse? and are no fairy? No motion?—Well; speak on. Where were you born?

And wherefore call'd Marina?

*Mar.* Call'd Marina, For I was born at sea.

*Per.* At sea?—thy mother?

*Mar.* My mother was the daughter of a king; Who died the very minute I was born, As my good nurse Lychorida hath oft Deliver'd weeping.

*Per.* Oh! stop there a little! This is the rarest dream that e'er dull sleep Did mock sad fools withal: this cannot be. My daughter's buried. [*Aside.*] Well:—where were you bred?

I'll hear you more, to the bottom of your story, And never interrupt you.

*Mar.* You'll scarce believe me: 'twere best I did give o'er.

*Per.* I will believe you by the syllable: Of what you shall deliver. Yet, give me leave:—

How came you in these parts? Where were you bred?

*Mar.* The king, my father, did in Tharsus leave me;

Till cruel Cleon, with his wicked wife, Did seek to murder me: and having woo'd A villain to attempt it, who having drawn,

A crew of pirates came and rescu'd me; Brought me to Mitylene. But now, good Sir, Whither will you have me? Why do you weep?

It may be,

You think me an impostor: no, good faith; I am the daughter to King Pericles,

If good king Pericles be.

*Per.* Ho, Helicanus!

*Hel.* Calls my gracious lord?

*Per.* Thou art a grave and noble counsellor, Most wise in general: Tell me, if thou can'st, What this maid is, or what is like to be,

That thus hath made me weep?

*Hel.* I know not; but

Here is the regent, Sir, of Mitylene,

Speaks nobly of her.

*Lys.* She would never tell

Her parentage, being demanded that,

She would sit still and weep.

*Per.* O Helicanus, strike me, honour'd Sir, Give me a gash, put me to present pain; Lest this great sea of joys rushing upon me, O'erbear the shores of my mortality,

And drown me with their sweetness. O come hither,

Thou that beget'st him that did thee beget;

Thou that wast born at sea, buried at Tharsus,

And found at sea again! O Helicanus,

Down on thy knees, thank the holy gods, as loud

As thunder threatens us: This is Marina.—

What was thy mother's name? Tell me but that,

For truth can never be confirm'd enough,

Though doubts did ever sleep.

*Mar.* First, Sir, I pray,

What is your title?

*Per.* I am Pericles of Tyre: but tell me now (As in the rest thou hast been godlike perfect,) My drown'd queen's name, thou art the heir of kingdoms,

And another life to Pericles thy father.

*Mar.* Is it no more to be your daughter, than To say, my mother's name was Thaisa? Thaisa was my mother, who did end

The minute I began.

*Per.* Now blessing on thee, rise: thou art my child. Give me fresh garments. Mine own, Helicanus, (Not dead at Tharsus, as she should have been, By savage Cleon,) she shall tell thee all;

When thou shalt kneel and justify in knowledge,

She is thy very princess.—Who is this?

*Hel.* Sir, 'tis the governor of Mitylene,

Who, hearing of your melancholy state,

Did come to see you.

*Per.* I embrace you, Sir.

Give me my robes—I am wild in my beholding. O heavens bless my girl! But hark, what music!

Tell Helicanus, my Marina, tell him O'er, point by point, for yet he seems to doubt, How sure you are my daughter.—But what music?

*Hel.* My lord, I hear none.

*Per.* None?

The music of the spheres: list, my Marina. *Lys.* It is not good to cross him: give him way.

*Per.* Rarest sounds!

Do ye not hear? *Lys.* Music! My lord, I hear— *Per.* Most heavenly music: It nips me unto list'ning, and thick slumber Hangs on mine eye-lids: let me rest. [*He sleeps.*]

*Lys.* A pillow for his head;

[*The Curtain before the Pavilion of PERICLES is closed.*]

So leave him all.—Well, my companion-friends, If this but answer to my just belief,

I'll well remember you.

*Exeunt LYSIMACHUS, HELICANUS, MARINA, and attendant LADY.*

\* I. e. No puppet dressed up to deceive me.  
† I will believe every word you say.

SCENE II.—*The same.*—PERICLES on the Deck asleep: DIANA appearing to him as in a vision.

*Dia.* My temple stands in Ephesus; hie thee thither,  
And do upon mine altar sacrifice.  
There, when my maiden priests are met together,  
Before the people all,  
Reveal how thou at sea didst lose thy wife:  
To mourn thy crosses, with thy daughter's call,  
And give them repetition to the life.  
Perform my bidding, or thou liv'st in woe:  
Do't, and be happy, by my silver bow.  
Awake, and tell thy dream.

[DIANA disappears.]

*Per.* Celestial Dian, goddess argentluc,  
I will obey thee!—Helicanus!

*Enter* LYSIMACHUS, HELICANUS, and MARINA.

*Hel. Sir.*

*Per.* My purpose was for Tharsus, there to strike

The inhospitable Cleon; but I am  
For other service first: toward Ephesus  
Turn our blown sails; to-morrow I'll tell thee why.— [To HELICANUS.]

Shall we refresh us, Sir, upon your shore,  
And give you gold for such provision  
As our intents will need?

*Lys.* With all my heart, Sir; and, when you come ashore,  
I have another suit.

*Per.* You shall prevail,  
Were it to woo my daughter; for it seems  
You have been noble towards her.

*Lys.* Sir, lend your arm.

*Per.* Come, my Marina.

[Exeunt.]

*Enter* GOWER, before the Temple of DIANA at Ephesus.

*Gow.* Now our sands are almost run;  
More a little, and then done.  
This, as my last boon, give me,  
(For such kindness must relieve me,) That you aptly will suppose  
What pageantry, what feats, what shows,  
What minstrelsy, and pretty din,  
The regent made in Mitylin,  
To greet the king. So he has thriv'd,  
That he is promis'd to be wiv'd  
To fair Marina; but in no wise,  
Till he had done his sacrifice,  
As Dian bade: whereto being bound,  
The interim, pray you, all confound.  
In father'd business sails are fill'd,  
And wishes fall out as they're will'd.  
At Ephesus, the temple see,  
Our king, and all his company.  
That he can hither come so soon,  
Is by your fancy's thankful boon.

[Exit.]

SCENE III.—*The Temple of DIANA at Ephesus: THAISIA standing near the Altar, as high Priestess; a number of Virgins on each side; CERIMON and other inhabitants of Ephesus attending.*

*Enter* PERICLES, with his Train; LYSIMACHUS, HELICANUS, MARINA, and a Lady.

*Per.* Hail Dian! to perform thy just command,  
I here confess myself the king of Tyre;  
Who, fought from my country, did wed  
The fair Thaisia, at Pentapolis.  
At sea in childhood died she, but brought forth  
A maid-child call'd Marina; who, O goddess,

Wears yet thy silver livery.\* She at Tharsus  
Was nurs'd with Cleon; whom at fourteen years

He sought to murder: but her better stars  
Brought her to Mitylene; against whose shore  
Riding, her fortunes brought the maid aboard us,

Where, by her own most clear remembrance, she  
Made known herself my daughter.

*Thai.* Voice and favour!

You are—you are—O royal Pericles!

[She faints]

*Per.* What means the woman? she dies! help gentlemen!

*Cer.* Noble Sir.

If you have told Diana's altar true,

This is your wife.

*Per.* Reverend appearer, no:

I threw her o'erboard with these very arms,

*Cer.* Upon this coast, I warrant you.

*Per.* 'Tis most certain.

*Cer.* Look to the lady;—Oh! she's but o'er joy'd.

Early, one blust'ring morn, this lady was  
Thrown on this shore. I op'd the coffin, and  
Found there rich jewels; recover'd her, and  
plac'd her  
Here in Diana's temple.

*Per.* May we see them?

*Cer.* Great Sir, they shall be brought you to my house,

Whither I invite you. Look! Thaisia is Recover'd.

*Thai.* Oh! let me look!

If he be none of mine, my sanctity  
Will to my sense bend no licentious ear.  
But curb it, spite of seeing. O my lord,  
Are you not Pericles? Like him you speak,  
Like him you are: Did you not name a tempest,

A birth, and death?

*Per.* The voice of dead Thaisia!

*Thai.* That Thaisia am I, supposed dead,

And drown'd;

*Per.* Immortal Dian!

*Thai.* Now I know you better.—  
When we with tears parted Pentapolis,  
The king, my father, gave you such a ring.

[Shows a ring.]

*Per.* This, this: no more, you gods! your present kindness  
Makes my past miseries sport: You shall do well,

That on the touching of her lips I may  
Melt, and no more be seen. O come, be buried  
A second time within these arms.

*Mar.* My heart

Leaps to be gone into my mother's bosom.

[Kneels to THAISIA.]

*Per.* Look, who kneels here! Flesh of thy flesh, Thaisia;

Thy burden at the sea, and call'd Marina,  
For she was yielded there.

*Thai.* Bless'd and mine own!

*Hel.* Hail, madam, and my queen!

*Thai.* I know you not.

*Per.* You have heard me say, when I did fly from Tyre,

I left behind an ancient substitute:

Can you remember what I call'd the man?  
I have nam'd him oft.

*Thai.* 'Twas Helicanus then.

*Per.* Still confirmation:

Embrace him, dear Thaisia: this is he.  
Now do I long to hear how you were found;  
How possibly preserv'd; and whom to thank,  
Besides the gods, for this great miracle.

*Thai.* Lord Cerimon, my lord; this man  
Through whom the gods have shown their power,  
that can  
From first to last resolve you.

\* Soon.

† I. e. Pericles.

‡ Confound here signifies to consume.

\* I. e. Her white robe of innocence.

† Sensual passion. ‡ Drown'd here means everwhelmed, not suffocated.

*Per.* Reverend Sir,  
The gods can have no mortal officer  
More like a god than you. Will you deliver  
How this dead queen re-lives?

*Cer.* I will, my lord.

Beseech you, first go with me to my house,  
Where shall be shown you all was found with  
her;

How she came placed here within the temple;  
No needful thing omitted.

*Per.* Pure Diana!

I bless thee for thy vision, and will offer

My night oblations to thee. *Thaisa,*

This prince, the fair-betrothed of your daughter,

Shall marry her at Pentapolis. And now,

This ornament \* that makes me look so dismal,

Will I, my lov'd Marina, clip to form;

And what this fourteen years no razor touch'd,

To grace thy marriage-day, I'll beautify.

*Thai.* Lord Cerimon hath letters of good  
credit,

Sir, that my father's dead.

*Per.* Heavens make a star of him! Yet there,  
my queen,

We'll celebrate their nuptials, and ourselves

Will in that kingdom spend our following days;

Our son and daughter shall in Tyros reign.

\* J. s., His beard.

Lord Cerimon, we do our longing stay,  
To hear the rest untold.—Sir, lead the way.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter Gower.*

*Gow.* In Antioch, \* and his daughter, you  
have heard

Of monstrous lust the due and just reward:

In Pericles, his queen and daughter, seen

(Although assail'd with fortune fierce and  
keen,)

Virtue preserv'd from fell destruction's blast,

Led on by heaven, and crown'd with joy at  
last.

In Helicanus may you well descry

A figure of truth, of faith, of loyalty:

In reverend Cerimon there well appears,

The worth that learned charity aye wears.

For wicked Cleon and his wife, when fame

Had spread their cursed deed, and honour'd  
name

Of Pericles, to rage the city turn;

That him and his they in his palace burn.

The gods for murder seem'd so content

To punish them; although not done, but meant

So on your patience ever more attending,

New joy wait on you! Here our play has end-  
ing.

[*Exit Gower.*]

\* J. s. The king of Antioch.

# HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THIS tragedy is supposed to have been written in 1596. The principal incidents were probably drawn from a dramatic piece by one Thomas Ryd, and from a *Historie of Hamblet*, in black letter, adopted by Belleforest in his collection of novels (published 1564) from the narrative of Saxo-Græmmaticus, the old Danish historian. The play has long been accounted a first-rate dramatic production, for, with some egregious blunders, it contains a variety of unparalleled beauties. As originally written, it consumed four hours in the representation, persons, in Shakspeare's time, visiting the theatre so early as four o'clock, and regarding the quality less than the quantity obtained for their money; this will excuse some of those trifling interlocutions which yet remain. Perhaps none of our poet's undertakings have been subjected to so much erudite and ingenious criticism as this; and none, certainly, after its most severe exercise, have been left with so much to approve. For although it has been observed, with some appearance of justice, that in the management of the piece, Shakspeare has been rather unfortunate, all its most striking circumstances arising so early in the formation, as "not to leave him room for a conclusion suitable to the importance of its beginning;" yet this defect is amply recompened by the sublimity of conception, the didactic morality of sentiment, the pathetic intensity of feeling, the power and comprehensiveness of diction, and the delightful diversity of character, which are displayed in almost every scene. Indeed, were each drama of Shakspeare to be characterized by the particular quality which distinguishes it from the rest, the praise of variety must especially be given to the tragedy of Hamlet; as it is interchangeably contrasted "with merriment that includes judicious and instructive observations; and with solemnity not strained by poetical violence above the natural sentiments of man." To those, however, who are mentally capable of appreciating its excellences as a play, the charm of perusing it in the closet will probably be greater than the delight of witnessing its exhibition; since it is rich in the treasures of contemplative and philosophical speculation, divested of the glare and bustle which captivate or bewilder the senses, whilst the principal character, though furnished with abundant materials, is almost the only support of the piece, and seldom meets with a representative in whom the beauties of the original are effectively embodied. Of the plot it may be observed, that it teems with slaughter, and is justly obnoxious to criticism in many of its parts, but the catastrophe is certainly its most disgusting feature, and can only be tolerated by the known partiality of an English audience for a multiplicity of deaths and bloodshed. "The manner of Hamlet's death (says Dr. Johnson) is not very happily produced; for the exchange of weapons is rather an exponent of necessity, than a stroke of art."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

CLAUDIUS, *King of Denmark.*  
 HAMLET, *Son to the former, and Nephew to the present King.*  
 POLONIUS, *Lord Chamberlain.*  
 HORATIO, *Friend to Hamlet.*  
 LAERTIUS, *Son to Polonius.*  
 VOLTIMAND,  
 CORNELIUS, } *Courtiers.*  
 ROSENCRANTZ,  
 GUILDENSTERN,  
 OSRIC, *a Courtier.*  
 Another COURTIER.  
 A PRIEST.  
 MARCELLUS, } *Officers.*  
 BERNARDO,

FRANCISCO, *a Soldier.*  
 RLYNALDO, *Servant to Polonius.*  
 A CAPTAIN.—An AMBASSADOR.  
 GHOST of Hamlet's Father.  
 FORTINBRAS, *Prince of Norway.*  
 GERTRUDE, *Queen of Denmark, and Mother of Hamlet.*  
 OPHELIA, *Daughter of Polonius.*  
 Lords, Ladies, Officers, Soldiers, Players, Grave-diggers, Sailors, Messengers, and other Attendants.

SCENE, Elsinore.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Elsinore.—A Platform before the Castle.

FRANCISCO on his Post.—Enter to him BERNARDO.

Ber. Who's there?

Fran. Nay, answer me: stand, and unfold Yourself.

Ber. Long live the King!

Fran. Bernardo?

Ber. He.

Fran. You come most carefully upon your hour.

Ber. 'Tis now struck twelve; get thee to bed, Francisco.

Fran. For this relief, much thanks: 'tis bitter cold,

And I am sick at heart.

Ber. Have you had quiet guard?

Fran. Not a mouse stirring.

Ber. Well, good night.

If you do meet Horatio and Marcellus, The rivals of my watch, bid them make haste.

Enter HORATIO and MARCELLUS.

Fran. I think I hear them.—Stand, ho! Who is there?

Hor. Friends to this ground.

*Mar.* And liegemen to the Dane.

*Fran.* Give you good night.

*Mar.* O, farewell, honest soldier :  
Who hath reliev'd you ?

*Fran.* Bernardo hath my place.

Give you good night. [Exit FRANCISCO.]

*Mar.* Holla ! Bernardo !

*Her.* Say.

What, is Horatio there ?

*Hor.* A piece of him.

*Her.* Welcome, Horatio ; welcome, good Marcellus.

*Hor.* What, has this thing appear'd again to-night ?

*Her.* I have seen nothing.

*Mar.* Horatio says, 'tis but our fantasy ;  
And will not let belief take hold of him,

Touching this deadèd sight, twice seen of us :

Therefore I have entreated him, along

With us to watch the minutes of this night,

That, if again this apparition come,

He may approve \* our eyes, and speak to it.

*Hor.* Tush ! tush ! 'twill not appear.

*Her.* Sit down awhile ;

And let us once again assail your ears,

That are so fortified against our story,

What we two nights have seen.

*Hor.* Well, sit we down,

And let us hear Bernardo speak of this.

*Her.* Last night of all,

When yon same star, that's westward from the pole,

Had made his course to illumine that part of heaven  
Where now it burns, Marcellus, and myself,

The bell then beating one,—

*Mar.* Peace, break thee off—look, where it comes again !

#### Enter GHOST.

*Her.* In the same figure like the king that's dead.

*Mar.* Thou art a scholar, speak to it, Horatio.

*Her.* Looks it not like the king ? mark it, Horatio.

*Hor.* Most like :—it harrows me with fear, and wonder.

*Her.* It would be spoke to.

*Mar.* Speak to it, Horatio.

*Hor.* What art thou, that usurp'st this time of night,

Together with that fair and warlike form

In which the majesty of buried Denmark

Did sometimes march ?—By heaven I charge thee, speak !

*Mar.* It is offended.

*Her.* See ! it stalks away.

*Hor.* Stay ; speak : speak I charge thee, speak. [Exit GHOST.]

*Mar.* 'Tis gone, and will not answer.

*Her.* How now, Horatio ? you tremble, and look pale :

Is not this something more than fantasy ?

What think you of it ?

*Hor.* Before my God, I might not this believe,

Without the sensible and true avouch

Of mine own eyes.

*Mar.* Is it not like the king ?

*Hor.* As thou art to thyself :

Such was the very armour he had on.

When he the ambitious Norway combated :

So frown'd he once, when, in angry parle, †

He smote the sledded ‡ Polack § on the ice.

'Tis strange.

*Mar.* Thus, twice before, and jump ¶ at this

dead hour,

With martial stalk hath he gone by our watch.

*Hor.* In what particular thought to work, I

know not ;

But, in the gross and scope of mine opinion,

This bodes some strange eruption to our state.

*Mar.* Good now, sit down, and tell me, what

that knows,

Why this same strict and most observant watch  
So nightly toils the subject of the land ;  
And why such daily cast of brazen cannon,  
And foreign mart for implements of war ;  
Why such impress of shipwrights, whose sore

task  
Does not divide the Sunday from the week :  
What might be toward, that this sweaty haste  
Doth make the night joint-labourer with the

day ;  
Who is't, that can inform me ?

*Hor.* That can I ;

At least, the whisper goes so. Our last king,  
Whose image even but now appear'd to us,  
Was, as you know, by Fortinbras of Norway,  
Thereto prick'd on by a most emulate pride,  
Dar'd to the combat ; in which our valiant

Hamlet (him),

(For so this side of our known world esteem'd  
Did slay this Fortinbras ; who, by a seal'd com-  
well ratified by law and heraldry, (pact,

Did forfeit, with his life, all those his lands  
Which he stood seiz'd of, to the conqueror :

Against the which, a moiety competent  
Was gaged by our king ; which had return'd  
To the inheritance of Fortinbras,  
Had he been vanquisher ; as, by the same com-  
mart, \*

And carriage of the article design'd, †  
His fell to Hamlet : Now, Sir, young Fortin-  
Of unimproved mettle hot and full, ‡ (brav,

Hath in the skirts of Norway, here and there,  
Shark'd § up a list of landless resolute,  
For food and diet, to some enterprise  
That hath a stomach ¶ in't : which is no other  
(As it doth well appear unto our state,) But to recover of us, by strong hand,  
And terms compulsory, those † foresaid lands  
So by his father lost : And this, I take it,  
Is the main motive of our preparations ;  
The source of this our watch ; and the chief

head  
Of this post-haste and romage ¶ in the land.

[*Her.* I think it be no other, but even so :  
Well may it sort, \*\* that this portentous figure  
Comes armed through our watch ; so like the

king  
That was, and is, the question of these wars.

*Hor.* A mote it is, to trouble the mind's eye.

In the most high and palmy † state of Rome,  
A little ere the mightiest Julius fell, ‡ (dead  
The graves stood tenantless, and the sheeted  
Did squeak and gibber in the Roman streets.

As, stars with trains of fire and dews of blood,  
Disasters in the sun ; and the moist star, ‡  
Upon whose influence Neptune's empire stand,  
Was sick almost to doomsday with eclipse.  
And even the like precursor of fierce events,—  
As harbingers preceding still the fates,  
And prologue to the omen § coming on,  
Have heaven and earth together demonstrated  
Unto our climatures and countrymen.—]

Re-enter GHOST.

But, soft ; behold ! lo, where it comes again !

I'll cross it, though it blast me.—Stay, illu-  
sion !

If thou hast any sound, or use of voice,  
Speak to me :

If there be any good thing to be done,  
That may to thee do ease, and grace to me,  
Speak to me :

If thou art privy to thy country's fate,  
Which happily foreknowing may avoid,  
O speak !

Or, if thou hast uphoarded in thy life  
Extorted treasure in the womb of earth,  
For which, they say, you spirits oft walk in death,  
[*Clock chimes.*]

\* Joint bargain.

† The covenant to confirm that bargain.

‡ Full of spirit without experience. § Picked.

§ Resolution. ¶ Search. \*\* Suit.

†† Victorious. ‡‡ The moon. §§ Event.

\* Make good or establish. † Dispute.  
‡ Wedge. § An inhabitant of Poland. ¶ Just.

Speak of it:—stay, and speak.—Stop it, Marcellus.

Mar. Shall I strike at it with my partizan?

Hor. Do, if it will not stand.

Ber. 'Tis here!

Hor. 'Tis here!

Mar. 'Tis gone!

[Exit GHOST.]

We do it wrong, being so majestic,

To offer it the show of violence;

For it is, as the air, invulnerable;

And our vain blows malicious mockery.

Ber. It was about to speak, when the cock crew.

Hor. And then it started like a guilty thing

Upon a fearful summons. I have heard,

The cock, that is the trumpet of the morn,

Doth with his lofty and shrill-sounding throat

Awake the god of day; and, at his warnings,

Whether in sea or fire, in earth or air,

The extravagant and erring spirit hies

To his confine; and of the truth herein

This present object made probation.†

Mar. It faded on the crowing of the cock.

Some say, that ever 'gainst that season comes

Wherein our Saviour's birth is celebrated,

This bird of dawning singeth all night long;

And then they say no spirit dares stir abroad;

The nights are wholesome; then no planets

strike,

No fairy takes, nor witch hath power to charm;

So hallow'd and so gracious is the time.

Hor. So I have heard, and do in part believe it.

But look, the morn, in russet mantle clad,

Walks o'er the dew of yon high eastern hill:

Break we our watch up; and, by my advice,

Let us impart what we have seen to-night

Unto young Hamlet: for, upon my life,

This spirit, dumb to us, will speak to him:

Do you consent we shall acquaint him with it,

As needful in our loves, fitting our duty?

Mar. Let's do't, I pray; and I this morning know

Where we shall find him most convenient.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The same.—A Room of State in the same.

Enter the KING, QUEEN, HAMLET, POLONIUS, LAERTES, VOLTIMAND, CORNELIUS, LORDS, and Attendants.

King. Though yet of Hamlet our dear brother's death

The memory be green; and that it us befitted

To beat our hearts in grief, and our whole kingdom

To be contracted in one brow of woe;

Yet so far hath discretion fought with nature,

That we with wisest sorrow think on him,

Together with remembrance of ourselves.

Therefore our sometime sister, now our queen,

The imperial jointress of this warlike state,

Have we, as 'twere, with a defeated joy,—

With one auspicious, and one dropping eye;

With mirth in funeral, and with dirge in marriage,

In equal scale weighing delight and dole;†

Taken to wife: nor have we herein barr'd

Your better wisdoms, which have freely gone

With this affair along.—For all, our thanks.

Now follows, that you know, young Fortinbras—

Holding a weak supposal of our worth;

Or thinking, by our late dear brother's death,

Our state to be disjoint and out of frame,

Colleagu'd with this dream of his advantage,

He hath not fail'd to pester us with message,

Importing our surrender of those lands

Lost by his father, with all bands of law,

To our most valiant brother.—So much for him.

Now for ourself, and for this time of meeting.

Thus much the business is: We have here writ

To Norway, uncle of young Fortinbras,—

Who, impotent and bed-rid, scarcely hears

Of this his nephew's purpose,—to suppress

His further gait \* herein; in that the levies,

The lists, and full proportions, are all made

Out of his subject:—and we here despatch

You, good Cornelius, and you Voltimand,

For bearers of this greeting to old Norway;

Giving to you no further personal power

To business with the king, more than the scope

Of these dilated articles allow. [duty.]

Farewell; and let your haste commend you.

Cor. Vol. In that and all things will we show

our duty.

King. We doubt it nothing; heartily farewell.

[Exeunt VOLTIMAND and CORNELIUS.]

And now, Laertes, what's the news with you?

You told us of some suit; What is't, Laertes?

You cannot speak of reason to the Dane,

And lose your voice: What would'st thou best,

Laertes,

That shall not be my offer, not thy asking?

The head is not more native to the heart,

The hand more instrumental to the mouth,

Than is the throne of Denmark to thy father.

What wouldst thou have, Laertes?

Laer. My dread lord,

Your leave and favour to return to France;

From whence, though willingly, I came to Denmark,

To show my duty in your coronation;

Yet now, I must confess, that duty done,

My thoughts and wishes bend again toward

France,

And bow them to your gracious leave and pardon.

King. Have you your father's leave? What

says Polonius?

Pol. He hath, my lord, [wringing from me my

slow leave,

By labour'some petition; and, at last,

Upon his will I seal'd my hard consent:]

I do beseech you, give him leave to go.

King. Take thy fair hour, Laertes; time be

thine,

And thy best graces; spend it at thy will.—

But now, my cousin Hamlet, and my son,—

Ham. A little more than kin, and less than

kind.† [Aside.]

King. How is't, that the clouds still hang on

you?

Ham. Not so, my lord, I am too much i'the

sun.

Queen. Good Hamlet, cast thy nighted colour

off,

And let thine eye look like a friend on Denmark.

Do not, for ever, with thy veiled lids;

Seek for thy noble father in the dust:

Thou know'st 'tis common; all that live must

die;

Passing through nature to eternity.

Ham. Ay, madam, it is common.

Queen. If it be,

Why seems it so particular with thee?

Ham. Seems, madam! nay, it is I know not

seems.

'Tis not alone my lank cloak, good mother,

Nor customary suits of solemn black,

Nor windy suspiration of forc'd breath,

No, nor the fruitiful river in the eye,

Nor the dejected haviour of the visage,

Together with all forms, modes, shows of grief,

That can denote me truly: These, indeed,

seem,

For they are actions that a man might play:

But I have that within, which passeth show—

These, but the trappings and the suits of woe.

King. 'Tis sweet and commendable in your

nature, Hamlet,

To give these mourning duties to your father:—

\* Wandering.

† Proof.

‡ Grief.

\* Way-path

child.

† Kin is the Teutonic word for

dejected eyes.

But, you must know, your father lost a father;  
That father lost his; and the survivor bound  
In filial obligation, for some term  
To do obsequious sorrow: But to persevere  
In obstinate condolement, is a course  
Of impious stubbornness; 'tis unmanly grief:  
It shows a will most incorrect to heaven;  
A heart unfortified, or mind impatient;  
An understanding simple and unschool'd;  
For what we know must be, and is as com-  
mon

As any the most vulgar thing to sense,  
Why should we, in our prevish opposition,  
Take it to heart? Fie! 'Tis a fault to heaven.  
A fault against the dead, a fault to nature,  
To reason most absurd; whose common theme  
Is death of fathers, and who still hath cried,  
From the first corse, till he that died to-day,  
*This must be so.* We pray you, throw to earth  
This unprevailing woe; and think of us  
As of a father: for let the world take note,  
You are the most immediate to our throne;  
And, with no less nobility of love,  
Than that which dearest father bears his son,  
Do I impart toward you. For your intent  
In going back to school in Wittenberg,  
It is most retrograde\* to our desire;  
And, we beseech you, bend you to remain  
Here, in the cheer and comfort of our eye,  
Our chiefest courtier, counsellor, and our son.

*Queen.* Let not thy mother lose her prayers,  
Hamlet;

I pray thee, stay with us; go not to Wittenberg.  
*Ham.* I shall in all my best obey you, u-  
dam.

*King.* Why, 'tis a loving and a fair reply;  
Be as ourself in Denmark.—Madam, come;  
This gentle and unforced accord of Hamlet  
Sits smiling to my heart: in grace whereof,  
No jocund health that Denmark drinks to-day,  
But the great cannon to the clouds shall tell,  
And the king's rouse; the heaven shall bruit;  
again,

Re-speaking earthly thunder. Come away.  
*Exeunt KING, QUEEN, Lords, &c. POLON-  
NICS, and LAERTES.*

*Ham.* Oh! that this too too solid flesh would  
Thaw, and resolve itself into a dew! (melt,  
Or that the Everlasting had not fix'd (God!  
His canon) 'gainst self-slaughter!—O God! O  
How weary, stale, flat, and unprofitable  
Seem to me all the uses of this world!  
Fie on't! O fie! 'tis an unweeded garden,  
That grows to seed; things rank and gross in  
nature

Possess it merely. ¶ That it should come to this!  
But two months dead!—may, not so much, not  
So excellent a king; that was, to this, (two  
Hyperion\*\* to a satyr: so loving to my mother,  
That he might not betwixt ¶ the winds of hea-  
ven

Visit her face too roughly. Heaven and earth!  
Must I remember? why, she would hang on him,  
As if increase of appetite had grown  
By what it fed on: And yet, within a month,—  
Let me not think on't!—Frailty, thy name is  
woman!—

A little month: or ere those shoes were old,  
With which she follow'd my poor father's body,  
Like Niobe, all tears;—why—she, even she,—  
O heaven! a beast, that wants discourse of rea-  
son,

Would have mourn'd longer,—married with my  
uncle,  
My father's brother; but no more like my fa-  
ther.

Than I to Hercules: Within a month,  
Ere yet the salt of most unrighteous tears  
Had left the flushing in her galled eyes,  
She married:—O most wicked speed, to post  
With such dexterity to incestuous sheets!

It is not, nor it cannot come to, good.—  
But break, my heart; for I must hold my  
tongue!

*Enter HORATIO, BERNARDO, and MARCELLUS.*

*Hor.* Hail to your lordship!

*Ham.* I am glad to see you well:

Horatio,—or I do forget myself.

*Hor.* The same, my lord, and your poor ser-  
vant ever.

*Ham.* Sir, my good friend; I'll change that  
name with you. (two?)

And what make you from Wittenberg, Hora-  
Marcellus?

*Mar.* My good lord,—

*Ham.* I am very glad to see you; good even  
Sir.—

But what, in faith, make you from Wittenberg?

*Hor.* A truant disposition, good my lord.

*Ham.* I would not hear your enemy say so:

Nor shall you do mine ear that violence,

To make it trust of your own report.

Against yourself: I know you are no truant.

But what is your affair in Elsinore?

We'll teach you to drink deep ere you depart.

*Hor.* My lord, I came to see your father's  
funeral.

*Ham.* I pray thee, do not mock me, fellow  
student;

I think, it was to see my mother's wedding.

*Hor.* Indeed, my lord, it follow'd hard upon.

*Ham.* Thrift, thrift, Horatio! the funeral bakh'd  
meats\*

Did coldly furnish forth the marriage tables.

'Would I had met my dearest foe in heaven

Or ever I had seen that day, Horatio!

My father,—methinks, I see my father.

*Hor.* Where,

My lord?

*Ham.* In my mind's eye, Horatio.

*Hor.* I saw him once, he was a goodly king.

*Ham.* He was a man, take him for all in all,

I shall not look upon his like again.

*Hor.* My lord, I think I saw him yesternight.

*Ham.* Saw I who?

*Hor.* My lord, the king your father.

*Ham.* The king my father?

*Hor.* Season your admiration for a while

With an attent† ear; till I may deliver,

Upon the witness of these gentlemen,

This marvel to you.

*Ham.* For God's love, let me hear.

*Hor.* Two nights together had these gentle-  
men,

Marcellus and Bernardo, on their watch,  
In the dead waist and middle of the night,

Been thus encounter'd. A figure like your father,

Armed at point, exactly, cap-a-pé,

Appears before them, and, with solemn march,

Goes slow and stately by them: thrice he  
walk'd

By their oppress'd and fear-surprized eyes,

Within his truncheon's length; whilst they,

distill'd

Almost to jelly with the act of fear,

Stand dumb, and speak not to him. This to me

In dreadful secrecy impart they did;

And I with them, the third night, kept the

watch;

Where, as they had deliver'd, both in time,

Form of the thing, each word made true and

good,

The apparition comes: I knew your father;

These hands are not more like.

*Ham.* But where was this?

*Hor.* My lord, upon the platform where we

watch'd.

*Ham.* Did you not speak to it?

*Hor.* My lord, I did;

But answer made it none: yet once, methought,

It lifted up its head, and did address

\* Contrary.

† Dissolve.

\*\* Apollo.

‡ Draught.

§ Law.

¶ Suffer.

‡ Report.

¶ Entirely

† Chiefest.

\* It was anciently the custom to give cold entertain-  
ment at a funeral.

† Chiefest.

‡ Attractive.

Itself to motion, like as it would speak ;  
But, even then, the morning cock crew loud,  
And at the sound it shrunk in haste away,  
And vanish'd from our sight.

*Ham.* 'Tis very strange.

*Hor.* As I do live, my honour'd lord, 'tis true ;  
And we did think it writ down in our duty,  
To let you know of it.

*Ham.* Indeed, indeed, Sirs, but this troubles  
Hold you the watch to-night ? [me.

*All.* We do, my lord.

*Ham.* Arm'd, say you ?

*All.* Arm'd, my lord.

*Ham.* From top to toe ?

*All.* My lord, from head to foot.

*Ham.* Then saw you not  
This face.

*Hor.* O yes, my lord ; he wore his beaver \*  
up.

*Ham.* What, look'd he frowningly ?

*Hor.* A countenance more  
In sorrow than in anger.

*Ham.* Pale, or red ?

*Hor.* Nay, very pale.

*Ham.* And fix'd his eyes upon you ?

*Hor.* Most constantly.

*Ham.* I would I had been there.

*Hor.* It would have much amaz'd you.

*Ham.* Very like,

Very like : Stay'd it long ?

*Hor.* While one with moderate haste might  
tell a hundred.

*Mar. Ber.* Longer, longer.

*Hor.* Not when I saw it.

*Ham.* His beard was grizzled ? no ?

*Hor.* It was, as I have seen it in his life,  
A sable silver'd.

*Ham.* I will watch to-night :

Perchance, 'twill walk again.

*Hor.* I warrant it will.

*Ham.* If it assume my noble father's person,  
I'll speak to it, though hell itself should gape,  
And bid me hold my peace. I pray you all,  
If you have hitherto conceal'd this sight,  
Let it be tenable in your silence still ;  
And whatsoever else shall hap to-night,  
Give it an understanding, but no tongue :  
I will requite your loves : So, fare you well :  
Upon the platform, 'twixt eleven and twelve,  
I'll visit you.

*All.* Our duty to your honour.

*Ham.* Your loves, as mine to you : Farewell.  
[*Exit* HORATIO, MARCELLUS, and BEN-  
NARDIO.

My father's spirit in arms ! all is not well ;  
I doubt some foul play : 'would, the night were  
come !

Till then—sit still, my soul : Foul deeds will rise  
(Though all the earth o'erwhelm them) to men's  
eyes. [Exit.

SCENE III.—A Room in POLONIUS' House.

Enter LAERTES and OPHELIA.

*Laer.* My necessities are embark'd ; farewell :  
And, sister, as the winds give benefit,  
And convoy is assistant, do not sleep,  
But let me hear from you.

*Oph.* Do you doubt that ?

*Laer.* For Hamlet, and the trifling of his fa-  
Hold it a fashion, and a toy in blood ; [your,  
A violet in the youth of primy nature,  
Forward, not permanent, sweet, not lasting,  
The perfume and suppliance of a minute ;  
No more.

*Oph.* No more but so ?

*Laer.* Think it no more :

For nature, crescent, † does not grow alone  
In thews, ‡ and bulk ; but, as this temple waxes,  
The inward service of the mind and soul  
Grows wide withal. Perhaps, he loves you now ;

And now no soil, nor cautel, \* doth besmirch \*  
The virtue of his will : but, you must fear,  
His greatness weigh'd, his will is not his own ;  
For he himself is subject to his birth :  
He may not, as unvalued persons do,  
Carve for himself ; for on his choice depends  
The safety and the health of the whole state ;  
And therefore must his choice be circumscrib'd  
Upon the voice and yielding of that body,  
Whereof he is the head : Then if he says he  
loves you,

It fits your wisdom so far to believe it,  
As he in his particular act and place  
May give his saying deed ; which is no further,  
Than the main voice of Denmark goes withal.  
Then weigh what loss your honour may sus-  
tain,

If with too credent † ear you list ‡ his songs ;  
Or lose your heart : or your chaste treasure open  
To his unmaster'd † opportunity.  
Fear it, Ophelia, fear it, my dear sister ;  
And keep you in the rear of your affection,  
Out of the shot and danger of desire.

The chariest † maid is prodigal enough,  
If she unmask her beauty to the moon :  
Virtue itself scapes not calumnious strokes :  
The canker galls the infants of the spring,  
Too oft before their buttons be disclos'd ;  
And in the morn and liquid dew of youth  
Contagious blastments are most imminent.

Be wary then : best safety lies in fear.  
Youth to itself rebels, though none else near.

*Oph.* I shall effect this your good lesson  
keep,

As watchman to my heart : But, good my brother,  
Do not, as some ungracious pastors do,  
Show me the steep and thorny way to heaven ;  
Whilst, like a puff'd and reckless \* † libertine,  
Himself the primrose path of dalliance tread,  
And reck not his own read. ††

*Laer.* O fear me not.

I stay too long ;—But here my father comes.

Enter POLONIUS.

A double blessing is a double grace ;  
Occasion smiles upon a second leave.

*Pol.* Yet here, Laertes ! aboard, aboard, for  
shame ;

The wind sits in the shoulder of your sail,  
And you are staid for : (n) There,—my blessing  
with you ;

[*Laying his Hand on LAERTES' Head.*  
And these few precepts in thy memory  
Look thou character. † Give thy thoughts no  
tongue,

Nor any unproportion'd thought his act.  
Be thou familiar, but by no means vulgar.  
The friends thou hast, and their adoption tried,  
Grapple them to thy soul with hooks of steel ;  
But do not dull thy palm †§ with entertainment  
Of each new-hatch'd, unfiedg'd comrade. Be-  
ware

Of entrance to a quarrel : but, being in,  
Bear it that the opposer may beware of thee,  
Give every man thine ear, but few thy voice :  
Take each man's censure, †‡ but reserve thy  
judgment.

Costly thy habit as thy purse can buy,  
But not express'd in fancy ; rich, not gaudy :  
For the apparel oft proclaims the man,  
And they in France, of the best rank and sta-  
tion, [that

Are most select and generous, †† chief \*\*\* in  
Neither a borrower, nor a lender be ;  
For loan oft loses both itself and friend ;  
And borrowing dulls the edge of husbandry. †††

\* Subtlety, deceit.

† Disco.our.

‡ Believing.

† Listen to.

†† Most cautious.

\*\*\* Careless.

††† Licentious.

†††† Not less.

†† Write.

††††† Regards not

††††† Opinion.

††††† Noble.

††††† Palm of the hand.

††††† Economy.

††††† Chiefly.

\* This part of the helmet which may be lifted up.

† Increasing.

‡ Sinews.

(n) The lines following this are usually omitted, but they contain a compact richness of instruction describ-  
ing attention to public, and personal in private.



This above all,—To thine ownself be true;  
And it must follow, as the night the day,  
Thou canst not then be false to any man.  
Farewell; my blessing season\* this in thee!

*Lacr.* Most humble do I take my leave, my lord.

*Pol.* The time invites you; go, your servants tend.†

*Lacr.* Farewell, Ophelia; and remember well What I have said to you.

*Oph.* 'Tis in memory lock'd,  
And you yourself shall keep the key of it.

*Lacr.* Farewell. [Exit LACRATES.]

*Pol.* What is't, Ophelia, he hath said to you?

*Oph.* So please you, something touching the lord Hamlet.

*Pol.* Marry, well bethought:

'Tis told me, he hath very oft of late  
Given private time to you; and you yourself  
Have of your audience been most free and  
bounteous,

If it be so, (as so 'tis put on me,  
And that in way of caution,) I must tell you,  
You do not understand yourself so clearly,  
As it behoves my daughter and your honour:  
What is between you? give me up the truth.

*Oph.* He hath, my lord, of late, made many  
Of his affection to me. [tenders]

*Pol.* Affection? puh! you speak like a green  
girl,

Unsettled; in such perilous circumstance.

Do you believe his tenders, as you call them?

*Oph.* I do not know, my lord, what I should  
think.

*Pol.* Marry, I'll teach you: think yourself a  
baby;

That you have ta'en these tenders for true pay,  
Which are not sterling. Tender yourself more  
dearly;

Or (not to crack the wind of the poor phrase,  
Wroning it thus,) you'll tender me a fool.

*Oph.* My lord he hath importun'd me with love,  
In honourable fashion.‡

*Pol.* Ay, fashion you may call it; go to, go  
to.

*Oph.* And hath given countenance to his  
speech, my lord,

With almost all the holy vows of heaven.

*Pol.* Ay, springs to catch woodcocks. I do  
know,

When the blood burns, how prodigal the soul  
Lends the tongue vows: these blazes, daughter,  
Giving more light than heat,—extinct in both,  
Even in their promise, as it is a making,—  
You must not take for fire. From this time,  
Be somewhat scater of your maiden presence;  
Set your entreatments|| at a higher rate,  
Than a command to parley. For lord Hamlet,  
Believe so much in him, That he is young;  
And with a larger tether¶ may he walk,  
Then may be given you: In few, Ophelia,  
Do not believe his vows; for they are brokers,\*\*  
Not of that die which their investments show,  
But mere importators†† of unholy suits,  
Breathing like sanctified and pious bonds,  
The better to beguile. This is for all,—  
I would not, in plain terms, from this time  
forth,

Have you so slander any moment's leisure,  
As to give words or talk with the lord Hamlet.

Look to't, I charge you; come your ways.  
*Oph.* I shall obey, my lord. [Exit.]

#### SCENE IV.—The Platform.

Enter HAMLET, HORATIO, and MARCELLUS.

*Ham.* The air bites shrewdly; it is very cold.

*Hor.* It is a nipping and an eager†† air.

*Ham.* What hour now?

*Hor.* I think it lacks of twelve.

*Mar.* No, it is struck.

*Hor.* Indeed? I heard it not; it then draws  
near the season,  
Wherein the spirit held is wont to walk.

[A Flourish of Trumpets, and Ordinance  
shot off, within.]

What does this mean, my lord?

*Ham.* The king doth wake to-night, and takes  
his rouse,‡

Keeps wassel,† and the swaggering upspring  
reels;‡

And, as he drains his draughts of Rhenish down,  
The kettle-drum and trumpet thus bray out  
The triumph of his pledge.

*Hor.* Is it a custom?‡

*Ham.* Ay, marry, is't:

But to my mind,—though I am native here,  
And to the manner born,—it is a custom  
More honour'd in the breach, than the obser-  
vance.

This heavy-headed revel, east and west,  
Makes us traduc'd, and tax'd of other nations:  
They clepe§ us, drunkards, and with swinish  
phrase

Soil our addition; and, indeed it takes  
From our achievements, though perform'd at  
height,

The pith and marrow of our attribute.

So, oft it chances in particular men,  
That, for some vicious mode of nature in them,  
As, in their birth, (wherein they are not guilty,  
Since nature cannot choose his origin),

By the o'ergrowth of some complexion,||  
Of breaking down the pales and forts of rea-  
son;

Or by some habit, that too much o'er-leavens  
The form of plausive manners;—that these  
men,—

Carrying, I say, the stamp of one defect;  
Being nature's livery, or fortune's star,—  
Their virtues else (he they as pure as grace,  
As infinite as man may undergo,

Shall in the general censure take corruption  
From that particular fault: The drama of base  
Doth all the noble substance often dout,¶  
To his own scandal.

#### Enter GHOST.

*Hor.* Look, my lord, it comes!

*Ham.* Angels and ministers of grace defend  
us!—

Be thou a spirit of health, or goblin damn'd,  
Bring with thee airs from heaven, or blasts from  
hell,

Be thy intents wicked, or charitable,  
Thou com'st in such a questionable\*\* shape,  
That I will speak to thee: I'll call thee, Hamlet,

King, father, royal Dane: O answer me:  
Let me not burst in ignorance! but tell,

Why thy canoniz'd bones, hearsed in death,  
Have burst their cerements! why the sepulchre,

Wherein we saw thee quietly inurn'd,  
Hath op'd his ponderous and marble jaws,

To cast thee up again! What may this mean,  
That thou, dead creature, again, in complete street,

Revisit'st thus the glimpses of the moon,  
Making night hideous; and we fools of nature

So horribly to shake our disposition,††  
With thoughts beyond the reaches of our souls?

Say, why is this? wherefore? what should we  
do?

*Hor.* It beckons you to go away with it,  
As if it some impartment did desire  
To you alone.

*Mar.* Look, with what courteous action  
It waves you to a more removed; ground:

But do not go with it.

*Hor.* No, by no means.

*Ham.* It will not speak; then I will follow it.

*Hor.* Do not, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, what should be the fear?  
I do not set my life at a pin's fee;§§

\* Infix.      † Wait.      ‡ Unseasoned.  
§ Manner.    || Company.    ¶ Longer time.  
|| A horse fastened by a string to a stake is tethered.  
\*\* Pumps.    †† Importers    ‡‡ Sharp.

• Jovial draught.      † Jollity.  
• Call.                † Humour.  
• Conversable.      †† Frame.      †‡ Remote.  
                             †‡ Value.

And, for my soul, what can it <sup>do</sup> to that,  
Being a thing immortal as itself?  
It waves me forth again;—I'll follow it!

*Hor.* What if it tempt you toward the flood,  
my lord,

Or to the dreadful summit of the cliff,  
That beetles \* o'er his base into the sea,  
And there assume some other horrible form,  
Which might deprive your sovereignty of reason.

And draw you into madness?—think of it;  
The very place puts toys of de-peration,  
Without more motive, into every brain,  
That looks so many fathoms to the sea,  
And hears it roar beneath.

*Ham.* It waves me still:—  
Go on, I'll follow thee.

*Mar.* You shall not go, my lord.

*Ham.* Hold off your hands.

*Hor.* Be rul'd, you shall not go.

*Ham.* My fate cries out,  
And makes each petty artery in this body  
As hardy as the Nemean lion's nerve.—

[*GHOST beckons.*  
Still am I call'd;—unhand me, gentlemen;—

[*Breaking from them.*  
By heaven, I'll make a ghost of him that lets;  
I say, away!—Go on, I'll follow thee. [*He* :—

[*Exit* *GHOST* and *HAMLET.*  
*Hor.* He waves desperate with imagination.

*Mar.* Let's follow: 'tis not fit thus to obey him.

*Hor.* Have after!—To what issue will this come?

*Mar.* Something is rotten in the state of Denmark.

*Hor.* Heaven will direct it.

*Mar.* Nay, let's follow him. [*Exit.*

SCENE V.—A more remote part of the Platform.

Re-enter *GHOST* and *HAMLET.*

*Ham.* Whither wilt thou lead me? Speak:  
I'll go no further.

*Ghost.* Mark me.

*Ham.* I will.

*Ghost.* My hour is almost come,  
When I to sulphurous and tormenting flames  
Must render up myself.

*Ham.* Alas, poor ghost!

*Ghost.* Pity me not, but lend thy serious hearing  
To what I shall unfold.

*Ham.* Speak, I am bound to hear.

*Ghost.* So art thou to revenge, when thou shalt hear.

*Ham.* What?

*Ghost.* I am thy father's spirit;  
Doom'd for a certain term to walk the night;  
And, for the day, confin'd to fast in fires,<sup>(a)</sup>

Till the foul crimes, done in my days of nature,  
Are burn'd and purg'd away. But that I am

To tell the secrets of my prison-house, <sup>[forbid]</sup>  
I could a tale unfold, whose lightest word  
Would harrow up thy soul; freeze thy young

blood; <sup>[spheres:]</sup>  
Make thy two eyes, like stars, start from their

Thy knotted and combined locks to part,  
Like quills upon the fretful porcupine:

But this eternal blazon <sup>§</sup> must not be  
To ears of flesh and blood:—List, list, oh! list!

It thou didst ever thy dear father love,—

*Ham.* O heaven!

*Ghost.* Revenge his foul and most unnatural murder.

*Ham.* Murder?

*Ghost.* Murder most foul, as in the best it is;  
But this most foul, strange, and unnatural.

*Ham.* Haste me to know it; that I, with wings as swift

\* Hangs. † Whims. ‡ Hinders.

§ Displays.

<sup>(a)</sup> This is a Romish purgatory, though the Danes were then *Pagans*.

As meditation, or the thoughts of love,  
May sweep to my revenge.

*Ghost.* I find thee apt;

And duller shouldst thou be than the fat weed  
That rots itself in ease on Lethe wharf, <sup>[hear:]</sup>

Wouldst thou not stir in this. Now *Hamlet*,  
'Tis given out, that, sleeping in mine orchard, \*

A serpent stung me; so the whole ear of Denmark  
Is by a forged process of my death <sup>[mark]</sup>

Rankly abus'd: but know, thou noble youth,  
The serpent that did sting thy father's life,  
Now wears his crown.

*Ham.* O my prophetic soul! my uncle!

*Ghost.* Ay, that incestuous, that adulterate  
beast,

With witchcraft of his wit, with traitorous gifts,  
<sup>(O wicked wit, and gifts, that have the power</sup>

So to seduce!) won to his shameful lust  
The will of my most seeming virtuous queen:

O *Hamlet*, what a falling-off was there!  
From me whose love was of that dignity,

That I went hand in hand even with the vow  
I made to her in marriage; and to decline

Upon a wretch, whose natural gifts were poor  
To those of mine!

But virtue, as it never will be mov'd,  
Though lewdness court it in a shape of heaven;

So lust, though to a radiant angel lik'd,  
Will satiate itself in a celestial bed,  
And prey on garbage.

But, soft! I metlunk I scent the morning air;  
Brief let me be:—Sleeping within mine or-

My custom always of the afternoon, <sup>[chard,</sup>  
Upon my secure hour thy uncle stole,

With juice of cursed hebenon; in a vial,  
And in the porches of mine ears did pour

The leperous distilment; whose effect  
Holds such an enmity with blood of man,

That, swift as quicksilver, it courses through  
The natural gates and alleys of the body;

And, with a sudden vigour, it doth posset  
And curd, like eager droppings into milk,

The thin and wholesome blood: so did it mine.  
And a most instant tetter <sup>§</sup> bak'd about,

Most lazary <sup>||</sup>-like, with vile and loathsome crust,  
All my smooth body.

Thus was I, sleeping, by a brother's hand,  
Of life, of crown, of queen, at once des-

patch'd:†  
Cut off even in blossoms of my sin,  
Unhouse'd, \*\* unanointed, unanell'd:‡

No reckoning made, but sent to my account  
With all my imperfections on my head:

O horrible! O horrible! most horrible! <sup>(a)</sup>  
If thou hast nature in thee, bear it not;

Let not the royal bed of Denmark be  
A couch for luxury and damned incest.

But, howsoever thou pursu'st this act,  
Taint not thy mind, nor let thy soul contrive

Against thy mother'sught; leave her to heav'n,  
And to those thorns that in her bosom lodge,  
To prick and sting her. Fare thee well at  
once!

The glow-worm shows the matin to be near,  
And 'gins to pale his uneffectual fire:

Adieu, adieu, adieu! remember me. <sup>[Exit.</sup>

*Ham.* O all you host of heaven! O earth!  
What else?

And shall I couple hell?—O fie!—Hold, hold,  
my heart;

And you, my sinews, grow not instant old,  
But bear me stiffly up!—Remember thee?

Ay, thou poor ghost, while memory holds a  
seat

In this distracted globe. ‡ Remember thee!  
Yea, from the table of my memory

I'll wipe away all trivial fond records, <sup>[past,</sup>  
All saws <sup>§§</sup> of books, all forms all pressures

\* Garden. † Satiated. ‡ Hebrone

§ Scab, scurf. || Leprous. ¶ Bereft.

\*\* Without having received the sacrament.

†† Without extreme unction. ‡‡ Head.

§§ Sayings, sentences.

<sup>(a)</sup> This line seems with most propriety to belong to *Hamlet*, and in all modern representations is spoken by him.

That youth and observation copied there ;  
And thy commandment all alone shall live  
Within the book and volume of my brain,  
Unmix'd with baser matter : yes, by heav'n !  
O most pernicious woman !  
O villain, villain, smiling, damned villain !  
My tables, \*—meet it is, I set it down,  
That one may smile, and smile, and be a villain ;  
At least, I am sure, it may be so in Denmark :

[Writing.]  
So, uncle, there you are. Now to my word :  
It is, *Adieu, adieu ! remember me.*  
I have sworn't.

*Hor. [Within.]* My lord, my lord,——

*Mar. [Within.]* Lord Hamlet,——

*Hor. [Within.]* Heaven secure him !

*Ham.* So be it !

*Hor. [Within.]* Illo, ho, ho, my lord !

*Ham.* Hillo, ho, ho, boy ! come, bird, come.

Enter HORATIO AND MARCELLUS.

*Mar.* How is't, my noble lord ?

*Hor.* What news, my lord ?

*Ham.* O wonderful !

*Hor.* Good my lord, tell it.

*Ham.* No ;

You will reveal it.

*Hor.* Not I, my lord, by heaven.

*Mar.* Nor I, my lord.

*Ham.* How say you then ; would heart of  
man once think it !—

But you'll be secret,——

*Hor. Mar.* Ay, by heaven my lord.

*Ham.* There's ne'er a villain, dwelling in all  
Denmark,

But he's an arrant knave,

*Hor.* There needs no ghost, my lord, come  
from the grave

To tell us this.

*Ham.* Why, right ; you are in the right ;

And so, without more circumstance at all,  
I hold it fit, that we shake hands, and part :  
You, as your business, and desire, shall point  
you ;—

For every man hath business, and desire,  
Such as it is,—and, for my own poor part,  
Look you, I will go pray.

*Hor.* These are but wild and whirling words,  
my lord.

*Ham.* I am sorry they offend you, heartily ;  
Faith, heartily.

*Hor.* There's no offence, my lord.

*Ham.* Yes, by Saint Patrick, but there is,  
Horatio,

And much offence too. Touching this vision  
It is an honest ghost, that let me tell you ;  
For your desire to know what is between us,  
O'er-master it as you may. And now, good  
friends,

As you are friends, scholars, and soldiers,  
Give me one poor request.

*Hor.* What is't, my lord ?

We will.

*Ham.* Never make known what you have  
seen to-night.

*Hor. Mar.* My lord, we will not.

*Ham.* Nay, but swear't.

*Hor.* In faith,

My lord, not I.

*Mar.* Nor I, my lord, in faith.

*Ham.* Upon my sword.

*Mar.* We have sworn, my lord, already.

*Ham.* Indeed, upon my sword, indeed.

*Ghost. [Beneath.]* Swear.

*Ham.* Ha, ha, boy ! say'st thou so ? art thou  
there, true-penny ?

Come on—*you* hear this fellow in the cellar—  
Consent to swear.

*Hor.* Propose the oath, my lord.

*Ham.* Never to speak of this that you have  
swear by my sword.

*Ghost. [Beneath.]* Swear.

*Ham. Hic et ubique* \* then we'll shift our  
ground :—

Come hither, gentlemen,

And lay your hands again upon my sword :

Swear by my sword,

Never to speak of this that you have heard.

*Ghost. [Beneath.]* Swear by his sword.

*Ham.* Well said, old mole ! canst work i'th  
earth so fast ?

A worthy pioneer !—Once more remove, good  
friends.

*Hor.* O day and night, but this is wondrous  
strange !

*Ham.* And therefore as a stranger give it  
welcome.

There are more things in heaven and earth,  
Horatio,

Than are dreamt of in your philosophy.

But come ;—

Here, as before, never, so help you mercy !

How strange or odd so'er I bear myself,

As I, perchance, hereafter shall think meet

To put an antic disposition on,—

That you, at such times seeing me, never shall,

With arms encumber'd thus, or this head-  
shake,

Or by pronouncing of some doubtful phrase,

As, *Well, well, we know* ;—or, *We could*, *an*  
*if we would* ;—or, *If we list to speak* ;—or,

*There be*, and *if they might* ;—

Or such ambiguous giving out to note

That you know ought of me :—This do you  
swear,

So grace and mercy at your most need help  
*Ghost. [Beneath.]* Swear.

*Ham.* Rest, rest, perturbed spirit ! So, gen-  
tlemen,

With all my love I do commend me to you :

And what so poor a man as Hamlet is

May do, to express his love and friending to  
you,

God willing shall not lack. Let us go in toge-  
ther,

And still your fingers on your lips, I pray.

The time is out of joint ;—O cursed spite !

That ever I was born to set it right !

Nay, come, let's go together. [Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—A Room in POLONIUS' House.

Enter POLONIUS and REYNALDO.

*Pol.* Give him this money, and these notes,  
Reynaldo.

*Rey.* I will, my lord.

*Pol.* You shall do marvellous wisely, good  
Reynaldo,

Before you visit him, to make inquiry  
Of his behaviour.

*Rey.* My lord, I did intend it.

*Pol.* Marry, well said : very well said. Look  
you, Sir,

Inquire me first what Danskers† are in Paris ;  
And how, and who, what means, and where  
they keep,

What company, at what expense ; and finding,  
By this compassment and drift of question,  
That they do know my son, come you more  
nearer

Than your particular demands will touch it :

Take you, as 'twere, some distant knowledge of  
him ;

As thus,—*I know his father, and his friends,*  
*And, in part him* :—Do you mark this, Rey-  
naldo ?

*Rey.* Ay, very well, my lord.

*Pol.* And, in part, him ;—but, you may say,  
not well :

But, if't be he I mean, he's very wild ;  
Addicted so and so ;—and there put on him

\* Memorandum Book.

† Here and every where.

‡ Danes.

# Scene II. HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK.

179

What forgeries you please; marry, none so rank

As may dishonour him; take heed of that;  
But, Sir, such wanton, wild, and usual slips,  
As are companions noted and most known  
To youth and liberty.

*Rey.* As gaming, my lord.

*Pol.* Ay, or drinking, fencing, swearing,  
quarrelling,

Drabbing:—You may go so far.

*Rey.* My lord, that would dishonour him.

*Pol.* 'Faith, no; as you may season it in the  
charge.

You must not put another scandal on him,  
That he is open to incontinency;  
That's not my meaning: but breathe his faults  
so quaintly,

That they may seem the taints of liberty;

The flash and out-break of a fiery mind;

A savageness<sup>\*</sup> in unclaimed blood,

Of general assault.

*Rey.* But, my good lord,—

*Pol.* Wherefore should you do this?

*Rey.* Ay, my lord,

I would know that.

*Pol.* Marry, Sir, here's my drift;

And, I believe, it is a fetch of warrant:

You laying these slight sullies on my son,

As 'twere a thing a little soil'd<sup>†</sup> the working,

Mark you.

Your party in converse, him you would sound,

Having ever seen in the prenominate<sup>‡</sup> crimes,

The youth you breathe of guilty, be assur'd,

He closes with you in this consequence;

*Good Sir,* or so; or *friend*, or *gentleman*,—

According to the phrase, or the addition,

Of man, and country.

*Rey.* Very good, my lord.

*Pol.* And then, Sir, does he this,—He does—

What was I about to say?—By the mass, I

was about to say something:—Where did I

leave?

*Rey.* At closes in the consequence.

*Pol.* At closes in the consequence,—*Ay,*

*marry:*

He closes with you thus:—*I know the gentle-*

*I saw him yesterday, or t'other day,* [*man;*

*Or then, or then; with such, or such; and,*

*as you say,*

*There was he gaming; there o'ertook in his*

*rouse;*

*There falling out at tennis; or perchance,*

*I saw him enter such a house of sale,*

*(Videlicet, a brothel), or so forth.*—

See you now:

Your bait of falsehood takes this carp of truth:

And thus do we of wisdom and of reach,

With windlances, and with assays of bias,

By indirectness find directions out;

So, by former lecture and advice,

Shall you, my son: You have me, have you not?

*Rey.* My lord, I have.

*Pol.* God be wi' you; fare you well.

*Rey.* Good my lord,—

*Pol.* Observe his inclination in yourself.

*Rey.* I shall, my lord.

*Pol.* And let him play his music.

*Rey.* Well, my lord. [*Exit.*

*Enter Ophelia.*

*Pol.* Farewell!—How now, Ophelia? what's

the matter;

*Oph.* O my lord, my lord, I have been so af-

frighted!

*Pol.* With what, in the name of heaven?

*Oph.* My lord, as I was sewing in my clo-

set,

Lord Hamlet,—with his doublet all unbrac'd;

No hat upon his head; his stockings foul'd,

Ungarter'd, and down-gyved<sup>§</sup> to his ankle;

Pale as his shirt; his knees knocking each other;

And with a look so piteous in purport,

As if he had been loosed out of hell,  
To speak of horrors,—he comes before me.

*Pol.* Mad for thy love?

*Oph.* My lord, I do not know;

But, truly, I do fear it.

*Pol.* What said he?

*Oph.* He took me by the wrist, and held me  
hard;

Then goes he to the length of all his arm;

And, with his other hand thus o'er his brow,

He falls to such perusal of my face,

As he would draw it. Long stay'd he so;

At last,—a little shaking of mine arm,

And thrice his head thus waving up and  
down,—

He rais'd a sigh so piteous and profound,

As it did seem to shatter all his bulk,\*

And ~~his~~ being: That, done, he lets me go;

And ~~his~~ head over his shoulder turn'd;

He seem'd to find his way without his eyes;

For out o' doors he went without their help,

And, to the last, bended their light on me.

*Pol.* Come, go with me: I will go seek the

This is the very ecstasy of love; [*king.*

Whose violent property foredoes<sup>†</sup> itself,

And leads the will to desperate undertakings,

As oft as any passion under heaven,

That does afflict our natures. I am sorry:—

What, have you given him any hard words of  
late?

*Oph.* No, my good lord: but, as you did com-

mand,

I did repel his letters, and denied

his access to me.

*Pol.* That hath made him mad.

I am sorry that with better heed and judgment,

I had not quoted<sup>‡</sup> him; I fear'd he did but

trifle. [*jealously!*

And meant to wreck thee; but, beshrew my

it seems it is as proper to our age

To cast beyond ourselves in our opinions,

As it is common for the younger sort

To lack discretion. Come, go we to the king:

This must be known; which, being kept close,

might move

More grief to hide, than hate to utter love.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.—A Room in the Castle.

*Enter King, Queen, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDEN-*  
*STERN, and Attendants.*

*King.* Welcome, dear Rosenkrantz, and Guild-

enstern!

Moreover that we much did long to see you,

The need, we have to use you did provoke

Our hasty sending. Something have you heard

Of Hamlet's transformation; so I call it,

Since not the exterior nor the inward man

Resembles that it was: What it should be,

More than his father's death, that thus hath put

him

So much from the understanding of himself,

I cannot dream of: I entreat you both,

That,—being of so young days brought up with

him; [*mour,*

And, since, so neighbour'd to his youth and lu-

That you vouchsafe your rest here in our

court

Some little time: so by your companies

To draw him on to pleasures; and to gather,

So much as from occasion you may glean,

Whether aught, to us unknown, affects him thus,

That, open'd, lies within our remedy.

*Queen.* Good gentlemen, he hath much talk'd

of you;

And sure I am, two men there are not living,

To whom he more adheres. If it will please

you

To show us so much gentry<sup>§</sup> and good-will,

As to expend your time with us a while,

For the supply and profit of our hope,

\* Wildness.

† Already named.

‡ Body.

§ Observed.

‡ That is to say.

§ Hanging down like letters.

Your visitation shall receive such thanks  
As fits a king's remembrance.

*Ros.* Both your majesties  
Might, by the sovereign power you have of us,  
Put your dread pleasures more into command  
Than to entreaty.

*Guil.* But we both obey;  
And here give up ourselves, in the full bent,\*  
To lay our service freely at your feet,  
To be commanded.

*King.* Thanks, Rosencrantz, and gentle Guildenstern.

*Queen.* Thanks, Guildenstern, and gentle Rosencrantz:

And I beseech you instantly to visit  
My too much changed son.—Go, some of you,  
And bring these gentlemen where Hamlet is.

*Guil.* Heavens make our presence and our practices

Pleasant and helpful to him!

*Queen.* Ay, amen!

[*Exit* ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN,  
and some Attendants.]

*Enter* POLONIUS.

*Pol.* The ambassadors from Norway, my good lord,  
Are joyfully return'd.

*King.* Thon still hast been the father of good news.

*Pol.* Have I, my lord? Assure you, my good liege,

I hold my duty, as I hold my soul,  
Both to my God, and to my gracious king:  
And I do think, (or else this brain of mine  
Hunts not the trail of policy so sure  
As it hath us'd to do,) that I have found  
The very cause of Hamlet's lunacy.

*King.* Oh! speak of that; that I do long to hear.

*Pol.* Give first admittance to the ambassadors;  
My news shall be the fruit to that great feast.

*King.* Thyself do grace to them, and bring them in. [*Exit* POLONIUS.]

He tells me, my dear Gertrude, he hath found  
The head and source of all your son's distemper.

*Queen.* I doubt, it is no other but the main;  
His father's death, and our o'erhasty marriage.

*Re-enter* POLONIUS, with VOLTIMAND and CORNELIUS.

*King.* Well, we shall sift him.—Welcome, my good friends!

Sav, Voltimand, what from our brother Norway?

*Volt.* Most fair return of greetings and desires.  
Upon our first, he sent out to suppress

His nephew's levies; which to him appear'd  
To be a preparation 'gainst the Polack; †

But, better look'd into, he truly found  
It was against your highness: Whereat griev'd,—

That so his sickness, age, and impotence,  
Was falsely borne in hand, ‡ sends out arrests

On Fortinbras, which he, in brief, obey'd;  
Receives rebuke from Norway, and, in fine,

Makes vow before his uncle, never more  
To give the assay of arms against your majesty.

Whereon old Norway, overcome with joy,  
Gives him three thousand crowns in annual fee;

And his commission to employ those soldiers,  
So levied as before, against the Polack;

With an entreaty, herein further shown,  
[*Gives a Paper.*]

That it might please you to give quiet pass  
Through your dominions for this enterprise;

On such regards of safety, and allowance,  
As therein are set down.

*King.* It likes us well:

And, at our more consider'd time, we'll read,  
Answer, and think upon this business.

Meantime, we thank you for your well-took labour:

Go to your rest; at night we'll feast together:  
Most welcome home!

[*Exit* VOLTIMAND and CORNELIUS.]

*Pol.* This business is well ended.

My liege, and madam, to expostulate\*  
What majesty should be, what duty is,  
Why day is day, night night, and time is time  
Were nothing but to waste night, day, and time.

Therefore,—since brevity is the soul of wit,  
And tediousness the limbs and outward flourishes,—

I will be brief: Your noble son is mad:  
Mad call I it: for, to defuse true madness,  
What is't, but to be nothing else but mad:  
But let that go.

*Queen.* More matter, with less art.

*Pol.* Madam, I swear I use no art at all.  
That he is mad, 'tis true: 'tis true, 'tis pity,  
And pity 'tis, 'tis true: a foolish figure;  
But farewell it, for I will use no art.

Mad let us grant him then: and now remains,  
That we find out the cause of this defect;  
Or, rather say, the cause of this defect;  
For this effect, defective, comes by cause:  
Thus it remains, and the remainder thus.  
Perpend.

I have a daughter; have, while she is mine;  
Who, in her duty and obedience, mark,  
Hath given me this: Now gather and surmise.

—To the celestial, and my soul's idol, the most beautiful Ophelia,—

That's an ill phrase, a vile phrase; *beautified* is a vile phrase; but you shall hear,—Thus:

*In her excellent white bosom, these, &c.*

*Queen.* Came this from Hamlet to her?

*Pol.* Good madam, stay awhile; I will be faithful.—

*Doubt thou the stars are fire;* [*Reads.*]

*Doubt that the sun doth move:*

*Doubt truth to be a liar;*

*But never doubt I love.*

*O dear Ophelia, I am ill at these numbers;*

*I have not art to reckon my groans, but*

*that I love thee best, O most best, believe it.*

*Adieu.*

*Thine evermore, most dear lady, whilst*

*this machine is to him, Hamlet.*

This, in obedience, hath my daughter shown me.

And more above, hath his soliciting,  
As they fell out by time, by means, and place

All given to mine ear.

*King.* But how hath she  
Receiv'd his love?

*Pol.* What do you think of me?

*King.* As of a man faithful and honourable.

*Pol.* I would fain prove so. But what might you think,

When I had seen this hot love on the wing,  
(As I perceiv'd it, I must tell you that,

Before my daughter told me,) what might you,  
Or my dear majesty your queen here, think,

If I had play'd the desk, or table-book,  
Or given my heart a winking, mute and dumb,

Or look'd upon this love with idle sight:  
What might you think? no, I went round to work,

And my young mistress thus did I bespeak;  
*Lord Hamlet is a prince out of thy sphere;*

*This must not be:* and then I precepts gave her,

That she should lock herself from his resort  
Admit no messengers, receive no tokens.

Which done, she took the truits of my advice;  
And he, repuls'd, (a short tale to make)

Fell into a sadness; then into a fast;  
Thence to a watch; thence into a weakness;

Thence to a lightness; and, by this declension,  
Into the madness wherein now he raves,  
And all we mourn for.

\* Utmost exertion.  
† Poland.

‡ Secula.  
§ Imposed on.

• Discuss.

† Roundly, without reserve.

## Scene II. HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK.

181

*King.* Do you think, 'tis this?

*Queen.* It may be, very likely.

*Pol.* Hath there been such a time, (I'd fain know that,  
That I have positively said, 'Tis so,  
When it prov'd otherwise?

*King.* Not that I know.

*Pol.* Take this from this, if this be otherwise:  
[Pointing to his Head and Shoulder.

If circumstances lead me, I will find  
Where truth is hid, though it were hid indeed  
Within the centre.

*King.* How may we try it further?

*Pol.* You know, sometimes he walks for hours  
together,  
Here in the lobby.

*Queen.* So he does, indeed.

*Pol.* At such a time I'll loose my daughter to  
him:

Be you and I behind an arras\* then:  
Mark the encounter: If he love her not,  
And be not from his reason fallen thereon,  
Let me be no assistant for a state,  
But keep a farm, and carters.

*King.* We will try it.

*Enter HAMLET, reading.*

*Queen.* But, look, where sadly the poor wretch  
comes reading.

*Pol.* Away, I do beseech you, both away;  
I'll board† him presently:—Oh! give me leave.—

[Exit KING, QUEEN, and Attendants.  
How does my good lord Hamlet?

*Ham.* Well, god'a-mercy.

*Pol.* Do you know me, my lord?

*Ham.* Excellent well; you are a fishmonger.

*Pol.* Not I, my lord.

*Ham.* Then I would you were so honest a  
man.

*Pol.* Honest, my lord?

*Ham.* Ay, Sir; to be honest, as this world  
goes, is to be one man picked out of ten thou-  
sand.

*Pol.* That's very true, my lord.

*Ham.* For if the sun breed maggots in a dead  
dog, being a god-kissing carrion,—Have you a  
daughter?

*Pol.* I have, my lord.

*Ham.* Let her not walk i'th' sun: conception†  
is a blessing; but as your daughter may conceive, §  
—friend, look to't.

*Pol.* How say you by that? [Aside.] Still  
harping on my daughter:—yet he knew me not  
at first; he said, I was a fishmonger: He is far  
gone, far gone; and truly, in my youth, I suf-  
fered much extremity for love; very near this.  
I'll speak to him again.—What do you read, my  
lord?

*Ham.* Words, words, words!

*Pol.* What is the matter, my lord?

*Ham.* Between whom?

*Pol.* I mean the matter that you read, my  
lord.

*Ham.* Slanders, Sir: for the satirical rogue  
says here, that old men have grey beards; that  
their faces are wrinkled; their eyes purging  
thick amber, and plum-tree gum; and that  
they have a plentiful lack of wit, together with  
most weak hams: All of which, Sir, though I  
most powerfully and potentially believe, yet I  
hold it not honesty to have it thus set down;  
for yourself, Sir, shall be as old as I am, if, like  
a crab, you could go backward.

*Pol.* Though this be madness, yet there's  
method in it. [Aside.] Will you walk out of the  
air, my lord?

*Ham.* Into my grave?

*Pol.* Indeed, that is out o'th' air.—How preg-  
nant† sometimes his replies are! a happiness  
that often madness hits on, which reason and  
sanity‡ could not so prosperously be delivered of.

I will leave him, and suddenly contrive the  
means of meeting between him and my daughter.  
—My honourable lord, I will most humbly take  
my leave of you.

*Ham.* You cannot, Sir, take from me any  
thing, that I will more willingly part withal; ex-  
cept my life, except my life, except my life.

*Pol.* Fare you well, my lord.

*Ham.* These tedious old fools!

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

*Pol.* You go to seek the lord Hamlet; there  
he is.

*Ros.* God save you, Sir!

[To POLONIUS.

[Exit POLONIUS.

*Guil.* My honour'd lord!—

*Ros.* My most dear lord!

*Ham.* My excellent good friends! How dost  
thou, Guildenstern? Ah! Rosencrantz! Good  
lads, how do ye both?

*Ros.* As the indifferent children of the earth.

*Guil.* Happy, in that we are not overhappy;  
On fortune's cap we are not the very button.

*Ham.* Nor the soles of her shoe?

*Ros.* Neither, my lord.

*Ham.* Then you live about her waist, or in the  
middle of her favours?

*Guil.* 'Faith her privates we.

*Ham.* In the secret parts of fortune? Oh! most  
true; she is a strumpet. What news?

*Ros.* None, my lord; but that the world is  
grown honest.

*Ham.* Then is doomsday near: But your news  
is not true. Let me question more in particular:  
What have you, my good friends, deserved at the  
hands of fortune, that she sends you to prison  
hither?

*Guil.* Prison, my lord!

*Ham.* Denmark's a prison.

*Ros.* Then is the world one.

*Ham.* A goodly one; in which there are many  
confiners, wards, and dungeons; Denmark being  
one of the worst.

*Ros.* We think not so, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, then 'tis none to you; for there is  
nothing either good or bad, but thinking makes  
it so: to me it is a prison.

*Ros.* Why, then your ambition makes it one;  
'tis too narrow for you mind.

*Ham.* O God! I could be bounded in a nut-  
shell, and count myself a king of infinite space;  
were it not that I have bad dreams.

*Guil.* Which dreams, indeed, are ambition;  
for the very substance of the ambitious is merely  
the shadow of a dream.

*Ham.* A dream itself is but a shadow.

*Ros.* Truly, and I hold ambition of no airy  
and light a quality, that it is but a shadow's  
shadow.

*Ham.* Then are our beggars' bodies; and our  
monarchs and outstretch'd heroes the beggars'  
shadows: Shall we to the court? for, by my fay,  
I cannot reason.

*Ros.* *Guil.* We'll wait upon you.

*Ham.* No such matter: I will not sort you with  
the rest of my servants; for, to speak to you like  
an honest man, I am most dreadfully attended.  
But, in the beaten way of friendship, what make  
you at Elsinore?

*Ros.* To visit you, my lord; no other occa-  
sion.

*Ham.* Beggar that I am, I am even poor in  
thanks; but I thank you: and sure, dear friends,  
my thanks are too dear, a halfpenny. Were you  
not sent for? Is it your own inclining? Is it a  
free visitation? Come, come: deal justly with  
me: come, come; nay, speak.

*Guil.* What should we say, my lord?

*Ham.* Any thing—but to the purpose. You  
were sent for; and there is a kind of confession  
in your looks, which your modesties have not  
craft enough to colour: I know, the good king  
and queen have sent for you.

*Ros.* To what end, my lord?

*Ham.* That you must teach me. But let me

\* Tapestry.

† Understanding.

‡ Ready, apt.

† Accost.

§ Be pregnant.

¶ Soundness of mind.

conjure you, by the rights of our fellowship, by the consonancy of our youth, by the obligation of our ever-preserved love, and by what more dear a better proposer could charge you withal, be even and direct with me, whether you were sent for or no?

Ros. What say you?

[To GUILDENSTERN.

Ham. Nay, then I have an eye of you; [Aside.]—if you love me, hold not off.

Guil. My lord, we were sent for.

Ham. I will tell you why; so shall my anticipation prevent your discovery, and your secrecy to the king and queen moults no feather. I have of late (but, wherefore, I know not,) lost all my mirth, forgone all custom of exercises; and, indeed, it goes so heavily with my disposition, that this goodly frame, the earth, seems to me a sterl promontory; this most excellent canopy, the air,—look you, this brave o'erbanging firmament, this majestical roof fretted with golden fire,—why, it appears no other thing to me, than a foul and pestilent congregation of vapours. What a piece of work is man! How noble in reason! how infinite in faculties! in form and moving, how express and admirable! in action, how like an angel! in apprehension, how like a god! the beauty of the world! the paragon of animals! And yet, to me, what is this quintessence of dust? man delights not me, nor woman neither; though, by your smiling, you seem to say so.

Ros. My lord, there is no such stuff in my thoughts.

Ham. Why did you laugh then, when I said, *Man delights not me*?

Ros. To think, my lord, if you delight not in man, what *lenten*\* entertainment the players shall receive from you: we coted† them on the way; and hither are they coming, to offer you service.

Ham. He that plays the king, shall be welcome; his majesty shall have tribute of me: the adventurous knight shall use his foil and target; the lover shall not sigh gratis; the humorous man shall end his part in peace; the clown shall make those laugh, whose lungs are tickled o'the sere‡ and the lady shall say her mind freely, or the blank verse shall halt forth,—What players are they?

Ros. Even those you were wont to take such delight in, the tragedians of the city.

Ham. How chances it, they travel?; their residence, both in reputation and profit, was better both ways.

Ros. I think their inhibition comes by the means of the late innovation.

Ham. Do they hold the same estimation they did when I was in the city? Are they so followed?

Ros. No, indeed they are not.

Ham. How comes it? Do they grow rusty?

Ros. Nay, their endeavour keeps in the wonted pace: But there is, Sir, an airy of children, little eyases,§ that cry out on the top of question,¶ and are most tyrannically clapped for't: these are now the fashion; and so beate the common stages, (so they call them) that many, wearing rapiers, are afraid of goose quills, and dare scarce come thither.

Ham. What are they children? who maintain them? how are they escoted? Will they pursue the quality\*\* no longer than they can sing? will they not say afterwards, if they should grow themselves to common players, (as it is most like, if their means are no better,) their writers do them wrong, to make them exclaim against their own succession?

Ros. Faith, there has been much to do on both sides; and the nation holds it no sin, to tarre†† them on to controversy: there was, for

a while, no money bid for argument, unless the poet and the player went to cuffs in the question.

Ham. Is it possible?

Guil. Oh! there has been much throwing about of brains.

Ham. Do the boys carry it away?

Ros. Ay, that they do, my lord; Hercules and his load too.\*

Ham. It is not very strange: for my uncle is king of Denmark, and those that would make mouths at him while my father lived give twenty, forty, fifty, a hundred ducats a-piece, for his picture in little.† 'Sblood, there is something in this more than natural, if philosophy could find it out.

[Flourish of Trumpets within.

Guil. There are the players

Ham. Gentlemen, you are welcome to Elsinore. Your hands. Come then: the aptitude of welcome is fashion and ceremony: let me comply; with you in this garb; lest my extent to the players, which I tell you, must show fairly outward, should more appear like entertainment than yours. You are welcome: But my uncle-father, and aunt-mother, are deceived.

Guil. In what, my dear lord?

Ham. I am but mad north-north-west: when the wind is southerly, I know a hawk from a hand-saw.

Enter POLONIUS.

Pol. Well be with you, gentlemen!

Ham. Hark you, Guildenstern, and you too;—at each ear a hearer: that great baby, you see there, is not yet out of his swaddling-clouts.

Ros. Happily, he's the second time come to them; for, they say, an old man is twice a child.

Ham. I will prophesy he comes to tell me of the players: mark it.—You say right, Sir: o'Monday morning; 'twas then, indeed.

Pol. My lord, I have news to tell you.

Ham. My lord I have news to tell you; When Roscius was an actor in Rome,—

Pol. The actors are come hither, my lord.

Ham. Buz, buz!

Pol. Upon my honour,—

Ham. Then came each actor on his ass.—

Pol. The best actors in the world, either for tragedy, comedy, history, pastoral, pastoral-comical, historical-pastoral, [tragic-historical, tragic-comical-historical-pastoral,] scene indivisible, or poem unlimited: Seneca cannot be too heavy, nor Plautus too light. For the law of writ,§ and the liberty, these are the only men.

Ham. O Jephthah, judge of Israel,—what a treasure hadst thou!

Pol. What a treasure had he, my lord?

Ham. Why—*One fair daughter, and no more, The which he loved passing well.*

Pol. Still on my daughter. [Aside.

Ham. Am I not i'the right, old Jephthah?

Pol. If you call me Jephthah, my lord, I have a daughter, that I love passing well.

Ham. Nay, that follows not.

Pol. What follows then, my lord?

Ham. Why, *As by lot, God wot, and then, you know, It came to pass, As most like it was,*—The first row of the pious chanson|| will show you more; for, look, my abridgment comes.

Enter Four or Five PLAYERS.

You are welcome, masters; welcome, all:—I am glad to see thee well:—welcome, good friends.—O old friend! Why, thy face is valenced¶ since I saw thee last; Com'st thou to

\* Spare. † Overtake. ‡ Become swallows-  
§ Young nestlings. ¶ Dialogue. ¶ Paid  
\*\* Profession. †† Provokes.

\* I. e. The Globe, the sign of Shakspeare's Theatre.  
† Miniature. ‡ Compliment.  
§ Writing. ¶ Christmas carols. ¶ Fringed.

beard\* me in Denmark?—What! my young lady and mistress! By'r-lady, your ladyship is nearer to heaven, than when I saw you last, by the altitude of a chopine.† Pray God, your voice, like a piece of uncurrent gold, be not cracked within the ring.—Masters, you are all welcome. We'll e'en to't like French falconers, fly at any thing we see: We'll have a speech straight: Come, give us a taste of your quality;‡ Come, a passionate speech.

1 Play. What speech, my lord?

Ham. I heard thee speak me a speech once, —but it was never acted; or, if it was, not above once: for the play, I remember, pleased not the million; 'twas caviare § to the general: || but it was (as I received it, and others, whose judgments in such matters, cried in the top ¶ of mine,) an excellent play; well digested in the scenes, set down with as much modesty as cunning. I remember, one said there were no sallads in the lines, to nake the matter savoury; nor no matter in the phrase, that might indite\*\* the author of affection:†† but called it, an honest method, as wholesome as sweet, and by very much more handsome than fine. One speech in it I chiefly loved: 'twas Aeneas' tale to Dido; and thereabout of it especially, where he speaks of Priam's slaughter: If it live in your memory, begin at this line; let me see, let me see;—

The rugged Pyrrhus, like the Hyrcanian beast—'tis not so; it begins with Pyrrhus.

The rugged Pyrrhus,—he, whose subtle arms, Black as his purpose, did the night resemble When he lay couched in the ominous horse, Hath now this dread and black complexion smear'd

With heraldry more dismal; head to foot Now is he total gules; ‡‡ horribly trick'd §§ With blood of fathers, mothers, daughters,

sons; Bak'd and impasted with the parching streets, That lend a tyrannous and a damned light To their lord's murder: Roasted in wrath and fire,

And thus o'er-sized with congregate gore, With eyes like carbuncles, the hellish Pyrrhus

Old grandsire Priam seeks:—So proceed you. Pol. 'Fore God, my lord, well spoken; with good accent, and good discretion.

1 Play. Anon he finds him Striking too short at Greeks; his antique sword,

Rebellious to his arm, lies where it falls, Repugnant to command: Unequal match'd, Pyrrhus at Priam drives; in rage, strikes wide;

But with the whiff and wind of his fell sword The unnerv'd father falls. Then senseless Itum,

Seeming to feel this blow, with flaming top Stoops to his base; and with a hideous crash Takes prisoner Pyrrhus' ear: for, lo! his sword,

Which was declining on the milky head Of reverend Priam, seem'd it the air to stick; So, as a painted tyrant, Pyrrhus stood; And, like a neutral to his will and matter, Did nothing.

But, as we often see, against some storm, A silence in the heavens, the rack ||| stand still,

The bold winds speechless, and the orb below As hush as death: anon the dreadful thunder Doth rend the region: So, after Pyrrhus' pause,

A roused vengeance sets him new-a-work; And never did the Cyclops' hammers fall On Mars' armour, forg'd for proof eterne ¶¶

With less remorse than Pyrrhus' bleeding sword

Now falls on Priam!— [Geds] Out, out, thou strumpet, Fortune! All you In general synod, take away her power; Break all the spokes and fellies from her wheel,

And bow the round nave down the hill of heaven,

As low as to the fiends!

Pol. This is too long.

Ham. It shall to the barber's, with your beard.—Prythee, say on:—He's for a jig, or a tale of bawdry, or he sleeps:—say on: come to Hecuba.

1 Play. But who, ah woe! had seen the mobled\* queen?—

Ham. The mobled queen?

Pol. That's good; mobled queen is good.

1 Play. Run barefoot up and down, threat'ning the flames

With bisson† rheum; a clout upon that head,

Where late the diadem stood; and, for a robe, About her lank and all o'er-teemed loins, A blanket, in the alarm of fear caught up;

Who thus had seen, with tongue in venom steep'd,

'Gainst Fortune's state would treason have pronounced:

But if the gods themselves did see her then, When she saw Pyrrhus make malicious sport In mincing with his sword her husband's limbs;

The instant burst of clamour that she made, (Unless things mortal more than men not at all,) Would have made milch† the burning eye of heaven,

Pol. Look, whether he has not turn'd his colour, and has tears in's eyes.—Prythee, no more.

Ham. 'Tis well; I'll have thee speak out the rest of this soon.—Good my lord, will you see the players well bestowed? Do you hear, let them be well used; for they are the abstract; and brief chronicles of the time: After your death you were better have a bad epitaph, than their ill report while you live.

Pol. My lord, I will use them according to their desert.

Ham. Odd's bodikin, man, much better: Use every man after his desert, and who shall scape whipping? Use them after your own honour and dignity: The less they deserve, the more merit is in your bounty. Take them in.

Pol. Come, Sirs.

[Exit POLONIUS, with some of the PLAYERS.]

Ham. Follow him, friends: we'll hear a play to-morrow.—Dost thou hear me, old friend; can you play the murder of Gonzago?

1 Play. Ay, my lord.

Ham. We'll have it to-morrow night. You could, for a need, study a speech of some dozen or sixteen lines, which I would set down, and insert in't? could you not?

1 Play. Ay, my lord.

Ham. Very well.—Follow that lord; and look you mock him not. [Exit PLAYER.] My good friends, [To ROS. and GUIL.] I'll leave you till night: you are welcome to Elsinore.

Ros. Good my lord!

[Reënt ROSENCRAFT and GULDENSTERN.]

Ham. Ay, so, God be wi' you:—Now I am alone.

Oh! what a rogue and peasant slave am I! Is it not monstrous that this player here, But in a fiction, in a dream of passion, Could force his soul so to his own conceit, That, from her working, all his visage wann'd;

Tears in his eyes, distraction in's aspect, A broken voice, and his whole function suiting With forms to his conceit? And all for nothing!

\* Defy. † Clog. ‡ Profession.  
 § An Italian dish made of the roes of fishes.  
 || Multitude. ¶ Above. \*\* Convict.  
 †† Affectation. ‡‡ Red. §§ Blazoned.



For Hecuba!  
What's Hecuba to him, or he to Hecuba, [do,  
That he should weep for her? What would he  
Had he the motive and the cue for passion,  
That I have? He would drown the stage with  
tears,

And cleave the general ear with horrid speech;  
Make mad the guilty, and appal the free,  
Confound the ignorant, and amaze, indeed,  
The very faculties of eyes and ears.

Yet I,  
A dull and muddy-mettled rascal, peak,  
Like John a-dreams, unpregnant of my cause,  
And can say nothing; no, not for a king,  
Upon whose property, and most dear life,  
A damn'd defeat\* was made. Am I a coward?  
Who calls me villain? breaks my pate across?  
Plucks off my beard, and blows it in my face?  
Tweaks me by the nose? gives me the lie t' the  
throat,

As deep as to the lungs? Who does me this?  
Ha!

Why, I should take it: for it cannot be,  
But I am pigeon-liver'd, and lack gall  
To make oppression bitter; or, ere this,  
I should have fatted all the region kites  
With this slave's offal: Bloody, bawdy vil-  
lain!

Remorseless, treacherous, lecherous, kindless, +  
villain!

Why, what an ass am I? This is most brave;  
That I, the son of a dear father murder'd,  
Prompted to my revenge by heaven and hell,  
Must like a whore, unpack my heart with words,  
And fall a cursing, like a very drab,  
A scullion!

Fie upon't! foh! About my brains! Humph!  
I have heard,

That guilty creatures, sitting at a play,  
Have by the very cunning of the scene  
Been struck so to the soul, that presently  
They have proclaim'd their malefactions;  
For murder, though it have no tongue, will  
speak

With most miraculous organ. I'll have these  
Play something like the murder of my father,  
Before mine uncle: I'll observe his looks;  
I'll tent him to the quick; if he do blench, I  
know my course. The spirit that I have seen,  
May be a devil: and the devil hath power  
To assume a pleasing shape; yea, and, perhaps,  
Out of my weakness, and my melancholy,  
(As he is very potent with such spirits,)  
Abuses me to damn me: I'll have grounds  
More relative than this: The play's the thing,  
Wherein I'll catch the conscience of the king.

[Exit.]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—A Room in the Castle.

Enter KING, QUEEN, POLONIUS, OPHELIA,  
ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.

King. And can you, by no drift of con-  
ference,

Get from him, why he puts on this confusion;  
Grating so harshly all his days of quiet  
With turbulent and dangerous lunacy?

Ros. He does confess, he feels himself dis-  
tracted;

But from what cause he will by no means speak.  
Guil. Nor do we find him forward to be  
sounded;

But, with a crafty madness, keeps aloof,  
When we would bring him on to some confes-  
sion of his true state.

Queen. Did he receive you well?

Ros. Most like a gentleman.

Guil. But with much forcing of his disposi-  
tion.

Ros. Niggard of question; but, of our demands  
Most free in his reply.

Queen. Did you assay him

To any pastime?

Ros. Madam, it so fell out, that certain players  
We o'er-raught\* on the way: of these we told  
him;

And there did seem in him a kind of joy

To hear of it: They are about the court;

And, as I think, they have already order'd

This night to play before him.

Pol. 'Tis most true:

And he beseech'd me to entreat your majesties,  
To hear and see the matter.

King. With all my heart; and it doth much  
content me

To hear him so inclin'd.

Good gentlemen, give him a further edge,

And drive his purpose on to these delights.

Ros. We shall, my lord.

[Exit ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]

King. Sweet Gertrude, leave us too:

For we have closely sent for Hamlet hither;

That he, as 'twere by accident, may here

Afflict Ophelia:

Her father, and myself (lawful espials, &)

Will so bestow ourselves, that, seeing, unseen,

We may of their encounter frankly judge;

And gather by him, as he is behav'd,

If 't be the affliction of his love, or no,

That thus he suffers for.

Queen. I shall obey you:

And, for your part, Ophelia, I do wish

That your good beauties be the happy cause

Of Hamlet's wildness: so shall I hope, your

virtues

Will bring him to his wonted way again,

To both your honours.

Oph. Madam, I wish it may.

Pol. Ophelia, walk you here:—[Gracious, so  
please you,

We will bestow ourselves:—Read on this book:—  
[To OPHELIA.]

That show of such an exercise may colour

Your loneliness.—We are oft to blame in this,—

'Tis too much prov'd, ¶ that, with devotion's  
visage,

And pious action, we do sugar o'er

The devil himself.

King. Oh! 'tis too true: how smart

A lash that speech doth give my conscience!

The harlot's cheek, beautified with plastering  
art,

Is not more ugly to the thing that helps it,  
Than is my deed to my most painted word:

O heavy burden! [Aside.]

Pol. I hear him coming; let's withdraw, my  
lord. [Exit KING and POLONIUS.]

Enter HAMLET.

Ham. To be, or not to be, that is the ques-  
tion:—

Whether 'tis nobler in the mind, to suffer

The slings and arrows of outrageous fortune;

Or to take arms against a sea of troubles;

And, by opposing, end them?—To die—to  
sleep,

No more;—and, by a sleep, to say we end

The heart-ache, and the thousand natural  
shocks

That flesh is heir to,—'tis a consummation

Devoutly to be wish'd. To die—to sleep;

To sleep! perchance to dream:—ay, there's the  
rub! [come,

For in that sleep of death what dreams may  
When we have shuffled off this mortal coil,\*\*

Must give us pause: There's the respect ¶

That makes calamity of so long life:

\* Overtook.

† Meet.

‡ Spies.

§ Freely. ¶ Place. ¶ Too frequent.

\*\* Stir, bustle. †† Consideration.

\* Destruction.  
‡ Search his wounds.

† Unnatural.  
‡ Shrink or start.

For who would bear the whips and scorns of time,

The oppressor's wrong, the proud man's contumely,\*

The pangs of despa'd love, the law's delay,  
The insolence of office, and the spurns  
That patient merit of the unworthy takes,  
When he himself might his quietus † make  
With a bare bodkin‡; who would fardels §

bear,  
To groan and sweat under a weary life,  
But that the dread of something after death,—  
That undiscover'd country, from whose bourne ||

No traveller returns,—puzzles the will,  
And makes us rather bear those ills we have,  
Than fly to others that we know not of?

Thus conscience does make cowards of us all;  
And thus the native hue of resolution  
Is sicklied o'er with the pale cast of thought;  
And enterprises of great pith and moment, \*  
With this regard, their currents turn awry, \*  
And lose the name of action.—Soft you, now!  
The fair Ophelia:—Nymph, in thy orisons ¶  
Be all my sins remember'd.

Oph. Good my lord,  
How does your honour for this many a day?

Ham. I humbly thank you; well.

Oph. My lord, I have remembrances of your's

That I have longed long to re-deliver;  
I pray you, now receive them.

Ham. No, not I;

I never gave you aught.

Oph. My honour'd lord, you know right well;  
you did;

And, with them, words of so sweet breath compos'd †

As made the things more rich: their perfume  
Take these again: for to the noble mind,  
Rich gifts wax poor, when givers prove unkind.  
There, my lord.

Ham. Ha, ha! are you honest?

Oph. My lord?

Ham. Are you fair?

Oph. What means your lordship?

Ham. That if you be honest, and fair, you  
should admit no discourse to your beauty.

Oph. Could beauty, my lord, have better com-  
mence than with honesty?

Ham. Ay, truly; for the power of beauty will  
sooner transform honesty than what it is to a  
bawd, than the force of honesty can translate  
beauty into his likeness: this was sometime a  
paradox, but now the time gives it proof. I did  
love you once.

Oph. Indeed, my lord, you made me believe  
so

Ham. You should not have believed me; for  
virtue cannot so inoculate our old stock, but we  
shall relish of it: I loved you not.

Oph. I was the more deceived.

Ham. Get thee to a nunnery: Why wouldst  
thou be a breeder of sinners? I am myself in-  
different honest: but yet I could accuse me of  
such things, that it were better my mother had  
not borne me: I am very proud, revengeful,  
ambitious; with more offences at my beck, \*\*  
than I have thoughts to put them in, imagination  
to give them shape, or time to act them in:  
What should such fellows as I do crawling be-  
tween earth and heaven! We are arrant knaves,  
all; believe none of us: Go thy ways to a nun-  
nery. Where's your father?

Oph. At home, my lord.

Ham. Let the doors be shut upon him; that  
he may play the fool no where but in's own  
house. Farewell.

Oph. O help him, you sweet heavens!

Ham. If thou dost marry, I'll give thee this  
plague for thy dowry; Be thou as chaste as ice,  
as pure as snow, thou shalt not escape calumny.

\* Rudeness.

† The ancient term for a small dagger.

‡ Packs, burdens.

§ Prayers.

† Acquittance.

‡ Boundary, limits.

•• Call.

Get thee to a nunnery; farewell: Or, if thou  
wilt needs marry, marry a fool; for wise men  
know well enough, what monsters you make of  
them. To a nunnery, go; and quickly too.  
Farewell.

Oph. Heavenly powers, restore him!

Ham. I have heard of your paintings too, well  
enough; God hath given you one face, and you  
make yourselves another: you jig, you amble,  
and you lip, and nick-name God's creatures,  
and make your wantonness your ignorance: Go  
to: I'll no more oft; it hath made me mad. I  
say, we will have no more marriages: those  
that are married already, all but one, shall live;  
the rest shall keep as they are. To a nunnery,  
go. [Exit HAMLET.]

Oph. Oh! what a noble mind is here o'er-  
thrown!

The courtier's, soldier's, scholar's, eye, tongue,  
The expectancy and rose of the fair state,  
The glass of fashion, and the mould \* of form,  
The observ'd of all observers † quite, quite  
down!

And I, of ladies most deject and wretched,  
That suck'd the honey of his music vows,  
Now see that noble and most sovereign reason,  
Like sweet bells jangled, out of tune and harsh;  
That unmatch'd form and feature of blown  
youth,  
Blasted with ecstasy: ‡ O woe is me!  
To have seen what I have seen, see what I see.

Re-enter KING and POLONIUS.

King. Love! his affections do not that way  
tend;

Not what he spake, though it lack'd form a little,  
Was not like madness. There's something in his  
soul,

O'er which his melancholy sits on brood;  
And, I do doubt, the hatch, and the disclose,  
Will be some danger: Which for to prevent,  
I have, in quick determination,  
Thus set it down; He shall with speed to  
England,

For the demand of our neglected tribute:  
Haply, the seas, and countries different,  
With variable objects, shall exel  
This something-settled matter in his heart;  
Whereon his brains still beating, puts him thus  
From fashion of himself. What think you  
on't?

Pol. It shall do well; But yet I do believe  
The origin and commencement of his grief  
Sprung from neglected love.—How now, Ophelia?

You need not tell us what lord Hamlet said;  
We heard it all.—My lord, do as you please;  
But, if you hold it fit, after the play,  
Let his queen mother all alone entreat him  
To show his grief; let her be round; with him;  
And I'll be plac'd, so please you, in the ear  
Of all their conference; if she find him not,  
To England send him; or confine him, where  
Your wisdom best shall think.

King. It shall be so:  
Madness in great ones must not unwatch'd go.

[Exit.]

SCENE II.—A Hall in the same.

Enter HAMLET, and certain PLAYERS.

Ham. Speak the speech, I pray you, as I  
pronounced it to you, trippingly on the tongue;  
but if you mouth it, as many of our players do,  
I had as lief the town-crier spoke my lines.  
Nor do not saw the air too much with your  
hand, thus; but use all gently; for in the very  
torrent, tempest, and (as I may say) whirlwind  
of your passion, you must acquire and get a  
temperance, that may give it smoothness. O,  
it offends me to the soul, to hear a robustious

\* The model by whom all endeavoured to form them-  
selves.

† Alienation of mind.

‡ Reprimand him with freedom.

perwig-pated fellow tear a passion to tatters, to very rags, to split the ears of the groundlings: \* who, for the most part, are capable of nothing but inexplicable dumb show, and noise: I would have such a fellow whipped for o'er-doing Termagant; it out-herods Herod: † Pray you, avoid it.

1 *Play.* I warrant your honour.

*Ham.* Be not too tame neither, but let your own discretion be your tutor: suit the action to the word, the word to the action; with this special observance, that you o'erstep not the modesty of nature: for any thing so overdone is from the purpose of playing, whose end both at the first and now, was and is, to hold, as 'twere, the mirror up to nature; to show virtue her own feature, scorn her own image, and the very age and body of the time, his form and pressure. ‡ Now, this, overdone, or come tardy off, though it make the unskilful laugh, cannot but make the judicious grieve; the censure of which one must, in your allowance, § o'erweigh a whole theatre of others. Oh! there be players, that I have seen play,—and heard others praise, and that highly,—not to speak it profanely, that, neither having the accent of Christians, nor the gait of Christian, Pagan, nor man, have so stutted and bellowed, that I have thought some of nature's journeymen had made men, and not made them well, they imitated humanity so abominably,

1 *Play.* I hope we have reformed that indifferently with us.

*Ham.* O reform it altogether. And let those that play your clowns, speak no more than is set down for them: for there be of them, that will themselves laugh, to set on some quantity of barren spectators to laugh too; though, in the meantime, some necessary question || of the play be then to be considered: that's villainous; and shows a most pitiful ambition in the fool that uses it. Go, make you ready.

[*Exeunt PLAYERS.*]

*Enter* POLONIUS, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.

How now, my lord? will the king hear this piece of work?

*Pol.* And the queen too, and that presently.

*Ham.* Bid the players make haste.—

[*Exit.* POLONIUS.]

Will you two help to hasten them?

*Both.* Ay, my lord.

[*Exeunt* ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]

*Ham.* What, ho; Horatio!

*Enter* HORATIO.

*Hor.* Here, sweet lord, at your service.

*Ham.* Horatio, thou art e'en as just a man as e'er my conversation cop'd withal.

*Hor.* O my dear lord,—

*Ham.* Nay, do not think I flatter:

For what advancement may I hope from thee, That no revenue hast, but thy good spirits, To feed and clothe thee? Why should the poor be flatter'd?

No, let the candied tongue lick absurd pomp, And crook the pregnant hinges of the knee, Where thrift may follow fawning. Dost thou hear?

Since my dear soul was mistress of her choice, And could of men distinguish her election, She hath seal'd thee for herself: for thou hast been

As one in suffering all, that suffers nothing;  
A man, that fortune's buffets and rewards  
Hast ta'en with equal thanks; and bless'd are those, [mingled,  
Whose blood and judgment are so well co-

That they are not a pipe for fortune's finger  
To sound what stop she please: Give me that man [him

That is not passion's slave, and I will wear  
In my heart's core, ay, in my heart of hearts,  
As I do thee.—Something too much of this.—  
There is a play to-night before the king;  
One scene of it comes near the circumstance,  
Which I have told thee of my father's death.  
I pry thee, when thou seest that act afoot,  
Even with the very comment of thy soul  
Observe my uncle; if his occulted \* guilt  
Do not itself unkenneled in one speech,  
It is a damned ghost that we have seen;  
And my imaginations are as foul  
As Vulcan's stithy. † Give him heedful note:  
For I mine eyes will rivet to his face;  
And, after, we will both our judgments join  
In censure ‡ of his seeming.

*Hor.* Well, my lord [ing.  
If he steal aught, the whilst this play is play,  
And 'scape detecting, I will pay the theft.

*Ham.* They are coming to the play; I must be idle:  
Get you a place.

*Danish March.—A Flourish.—Enter* KING, QUEEN, POLONIUS, OPHELIA, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, and others.

*King.* How fares our cousin Hamlet?

*Ham.* Excellent, i'faith; of the camelion's dish: I eat the air, promise-crammed: You cannot feed capons so.

*King.* I have nothing with this answer, Hamlet: these words are not mine.

*Ham.* No, nor mine. Now, my lord,—you played once in the university, you say?

[*To* POLONIUS.]

*Pol.* That did I, my lord; and was accounted a good actor.

*Ham.* And what did you enact?

*Pol.* I did enact Julius Cesar; I was killed i' the Capitol; Brutus killed me.

*Ham.* It was a brute part of him, to kill so capital a calf there.—Be the players ready?

*Ros.* Ay, my lord, they stay § upon your patience.

*Queen.* Come hither, my dear Hamlet, sit by me.

*Ham.* No, good mother, here's metal more attractive.

*Pol.* O ho! do you mark that? [*To the King.*]

*Ham.* Lady, shall I lie in your lap? [*Lying down at OPHELIA's Feet.*]

*Oph.* No, my lord.

*Ham.* I mean, my head upon your lap?

*Oph.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* Do you think, I meant country matters? ||

*Oph.* I think nothing, my lord.

*Ham.* That's a fall thought to lie between maids' legs.

*Oph.* What is, my lord?

*Ham.* Nothing.

*Oph.* You are merry, my lord.

*Ham.* Who, I?

*Oph.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* O! your only jig-maker. What should a man do, but be merry? for, look you, how cheerfully my mother looks, and my father died within these two hours.

*Oph.* Nay, 'tis twice two months, my lord.  
*Ham.* So long? Nay, then let the devil wear black, for I'll have a suit of sables. ¶ O heavens! die two months ago, and not forgotten yet? Then there's hope a great man's memory may outlive his life half a year: But, by'r-lady, he must build churches then: or else shall he suffer not thinking on, with the hobby-horse; whose epitaph is, For, O, for, O, the hobby-horse is forgot.

\* The meaner people then seem to have sat in the pit.  
† Herod's character was always violent.  
‡ Impression, resemblance. § Approbation.  
|| Conversation discourse. ¶ Quick, ready.

\* Secret. † Shop, stithy is a smith's shop.  
‡ Opinion. § Wait. ¶ An obscure allusion  
¶ The richest dress.

*Trumpets sound. The dumb Show follows.*

*Enter a King and a Queen, very lovingly; the Queen embracing him, and he her. She kneels, and makes show of protestation unto him. He takes her up, and declines his head upon her neck: lays him down upon a bank of flowers; she, seeing him asleep, leaves him. Anon comes in a fellow, takes off his crown, kisses it, and pours poison in the King's ears, and exit. The Queen returns; finds the King dead, and makes passionate action. The poisoner, with some two or three Mutes, comes in again, seeming to lament with her. The dead body is carried away. The poisoner wooes the Queen with gifts; she seems loath and unwilling awhile, but, in the end, accepts his love.* [Exit.

*Oph.* What means this, my lord?

*Ham.* Marry, this is miching mallecho; \* it means mischief.

*Oph.* Belike, this show imports the argument of the play.

*Enter PROLOGUE.*

*Ham.* We shall know by this fellow: the players cannot keep counsel; they'll tell all.

*Oph.* Will he tell us what this show meant?

*Ham.* Ay, or any show that you'll show him: Be not you asham'd to show, he'll not shame to tell you what it means.

*Oph.* You are naught, you are naught; I'll mark the play.

*Pro.* For us, and for our tragedy,  
Hie stooping to your clemency,  
We beg your hearing patiently.

*Ham.* Is this a prologue, or the posy of a ring?

*Oph.* 'Tis brief, † my lord.

*Ham.* As woman's love.

*Enter a KING and a QUEEN.*

*P. King.* Full thirty times hath Phœbus' cart † gone round  
Neptune's salt wash, and Tellus' § orb'd ground;

And thirty dozen moons, with borrow'd sheen, ||  
About the world have times twelve thirties  
been; [hands,

Since love our hearts, and Hymen did our  
Unité communal in most sacred bands.

*P. Queen.* So many journeys may the sun  
and moon

Make us again count o'er, ere love be done!

But, woe is me, you are so sick of late,  
So far from cheer, and from your former state,

That I distrust you. Yet, though I distrust,  
Discomfort you, my lord, it nothing must:

For women's fear too much, even as they love;  
And women's fear and love hold quantity;

In neither aught, or in extremity. [know;

Now, what my love is, proof hath made you  
And as my love is siz'd, ¶ my fear is so,

Where love is great, the littlest doubts are  
fear; [there.

Where little fears grow great, great love grows  
*P. King.* 'Faith, I must leave thee, love, and  
shortly too; [do;

My operant \*\* powers their functions leave to  
And thou shalt live in this fair world behind,

Honour'd, belov'd; and, haply, one as kind  
For husband shalt thou—

*P. Queen.* O confound the rest!

Such love must needs be treason in my breast:  
In second husband let me be accus'd!

None wed the second, but who kill'd the first.  
*Ham.* That's wormwood.

*P. Queen.* The instances, †† that second mar-  
riage move,

Are base respects of thrift, but none of love;

\* Secret wickedness. † Short.  
‡ Car, chariot. § The earth. ¶ Shining, lustre.  
†† Magnitude, proportion. \*\* Active. †† Motives.

A second time I kill my husband dead,  
When second husband kisses me in bed.

*P. King.* I do believe, you think what now  
you speak;

But, what we do determine, oft we break.  
Purpose is but the slave to memory;

Of violent birth, but poor validity;  
Which now, like fruit unripe, sticks on the tree;

But fall, unshaken, when they mellow be.  
Most necessary 'tis, that we forget

To pay ourselves what to ourselves is debt:  
What to ourselves in passion we propose,

The passion ending, doth the purpose lose.  
The violence of either grief or joy

Their own enactures \* with themselves destroy:  
Where joy most revels, grief doth most lament;

Grief joys, joy grieves, on slender accident.  
This world is not for aye: † nor 'tis not strange,

That even our loves should with our fortunes  
For 'tis a question left us yet to prove, [change;

Whether love lead fortune, or else fortune love.  
The great man down, you mark his favourite

flies;

The poor advanc'd makes friends of enemies.  
And hitherto doth love on fortune tend;

For who not needs, shall never lack a friend;  
And who in want a hollow friend doth try,

Directly seasons him his enemy.  
But, orderly to end where I begun,—

Our wills, our fates, do so contrary run,  
That our devices still are overthrown;

Our thoughts are ours, their ends none of our  
own:

So think thou wilt no second husband wed;  
But die thy thoughts, when thy first lord is  
dead.

*P. Queen.* Nor earth to give me food, nor  
heaven light!

Sport and repose lock from me, day, and night!  
To desperation turn my trust and hope!

An anchor's † cheer in prison be my scope!  
Each opposite, that blinks the face of joy,

Meet what I would have well, and it destroy!  
Both here and hence pursue me, lasting starve,

If, once a widow, ever I be wit!

*Ham.* If she should break it now,—  
[To OPHELIA.

*P. King.* 'Tis deeply sworn. Sweet, leave  
me here a while;

My spirits grow dull, and fain I would beguile  
The tedious day with sleep. [Sleeps.

*P. Queen.* Sleep rock thy brain;  
And never come mischance between us twain!

[Exit.

*Ham.* Madam, how like you this play?

*Queen.* The lady doth protest too much, methinks.

*Ham.* Oh! but she'll keep her word.

*King.* Have you heard the argument? Is there  
no offence in't?

*Ham.* No, no, they do but jest; poison in jest;  
no offence 't the world.

*King.* What do you call the play?

*Ham.* The mouse-trap. § Marry, how? Tropi-  
cally. This play is the image of a murder

done in Vienna: Gonzago is the duke's name;  
his wife, Baptista: you shall see anon; 'tis a

knavish piece of work: But what of that? your  
majesty, and we that have free souls, it touches

us not: Let the galled jade wince, † our withers  
are unwarped.—

*Enter LUCIANUS.*

This is one Lucianus, nephew to the king.

*Oph.* You are as good as a chorus, my lord.

*Ham.* I could interpret between you and your  
love, if I could see the puppets dallying.

*Oph.* You are keen, my lord, you are keen.

*Ham.* It would cost you a groaning, to take off  
my edge.

\* Determinations. † Ever. ‡ Anchorit's  
§ — the thing,  
|| In which he'll catch the conscience of the king.  
† This is a proverbial saying.

*Oph.* Still better, and worse.

*Ham.* So you mistake your husbands.—Begin, murderer;—leave thy damnable faces, and begin! Come;—

—The croaking raven  
Doth bellow for revenge.

*Luc.* Thoughts black, hands apt, drugs fit, and time agreeing;

Confederate season, else no creature seeing;  
Thou mixture rank, of midnight weeds collected,  
With Hecate's ban<sup>\*</sup> thrice blasted, thrice infected,

Thy natural magic and dire property,  
On wholesome life usurp immediately.

[*Pours the Poison into the Sleeper's Ears.*  
*Ham.* He poisons him i'the garden for his estate. His name's Gonzago: the story is extant, and written in very choice Italian: You shall see anon, how the murderer gets the love of Gonzago's wife.

*Oph.* The king rises.

*Ham.* What! frightened with false fire!

*Queen.* How fares my lord?

*Pol.* Give o'er the play.

*King.* Give me some light:—away!

*All.* Lights, lights, lights!

[*Exeunt all but HAMLET and HORATIO.*

*Ham.* Why, let the stricken deer go weep,

The hart ungalled play:

For some must watch, while some must sleep;

Thus runs the world away.—

Would not this, Sir, and a forest of feathers, †  
(if the rest of my fortunes turn Turk ‡ with me,) with two Provincial roses on my razed § shoes, get me a fellowship in a cry ‖ of players, Sir?

*Hor.* Half a share.

*Ham.* A whole one, I.

For thou dost know, O Damon, dear,

This realm dismantled was

Of Jove himself; and now reigns here

A very, very—peacock.

*Hor.* You might have rhymed.

*Ham.* O good Horatio, I'll take the ghost's word for a thousand pound. Did'st perceive?

*Hor.* Very well, my lord.

*Ham.* Upon the talk of the poisoning,—

*Hor.* I did very well note him.

*Ham.* Ah! ha!—Come, some music; come, the recorders. ¶—

For if the king like not the comedy,

Why then, belike,—he likes it not, perdy. \*\*—

[*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

Come, some music.

*Guil.* Good, my lord, vouchsafe me a word with you.

*Ham.* Sir, a whole history.

*Guil.* The king, Sir—

*Ham.* Ay, Sir, what of him?

*Guil.* Is, in his retirement, marvellously discontented.

*Ham.* With drink, Sir?

*Guil.* No, my lord, with choler.

*Ham.* Your wisdom should show itself more richer, to signify this to the doctor; for, for me to put him to his purgation, would, perhaps, plunge him into more choler.

*Guil.* Good my lord, put your discourse into some frame, and start not so wildly from my affair.

*Ham.* I am tame, Sir:—pronounce.

*Guil.* The queen, your mother, in great affliction of spirit, hath sent me to you.

*Ham.* You are welcome.

*Guil.* Nay, good my lord, this courtesy is not of the right breed. If it shall please you to make me a wholesome answer, I will do your mother's commandment: if not, your pardon, and my return, shall be the end of my business.

*Ham.* Sir, I cannot.

*Guil.* What, my lord?

*Ham.* Make you a wholesome answer; my wit's diseased: But, Sir, such answer as I can make, you shall command; or rather, as you say, my mother: therefore no more, but to the matter: My mother, you say,—

*Ros.* Then thus she says; Your behaviour hath struck her into amazement and admiration.

*Ham.* O wonderful son, that can so astonish a mother!—But is there no sequel at the heels of this mother's admiration? impart.

*Ros.* She desires to speak with you in her closet, ere you go to bed.

*Ham.* We shall obey, were she ten times our mother. Have you any further trade<sup>\*</sup> with us?

*Ros.* My lord, you once did love me.

*Ham.* And do still, by these pickers and stealers. †

*Ros.* Good my lord, what is your cause of distemper? you do, surely, but bar the door upon your own liberty, if you deny your griefs to your friend.

*Ham.* Sir, I lack advancement.

*Ros.* How can that be, when you have the voice of the king himself for your succession in Denmark?

*Ham.* Ay, Sir, but, *While the grass grows*,—the proverb is something musty.

[*Enter the PLAYERS, with Recorders.*

Oh! the recorders:—let me see one.—To withdraw with you:—Why do you go about to recover the wind of me, as it you would drive me into a toil?

*Guil.* Oh! my lord, if my duty be too bold, my love is too unmanly.

*Ham.* I do not well understand that. Will you play upon this pipe?

*Guil.* My lord, I cannot.

*Ham.* I pray you.

*Guil.* Believe me, I cannot.

*Ham.* I do beseech you.

*Guil.* I know no touch of it, my lord.

*Ham.* 'Tis as easy as lying: govern these ventages ‡ with your fingers and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most eloquent music. Look you, these are the stops.

*Guil.* But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony; I have not the skill.

*Ham.* Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me. You would play upon me; you would seem to know my stops; you would pluck out the heart of my mystery; you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass; and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ; yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think I am easier to be played on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me.

[*Enter POLONIUS.*

God bless you, Sir.

*Pol.* My lord, the queen would speak with you, and presently.

*Ham.* Do you see yonder cloud, that's almost in shape of a camel?

*Pol.* By the mass, and 'tis like a camel, indeed.

*Ham.* Methinks, it is like a weasel.

*Pol.* It is backed like a weasel.

*Ham.* Or, like a whale?

*Pol.* Very like a whale.

*Ham.* Then will I come to my mother by and by.—They fool me to the top of my bent. †—I will come by and by.

*Pol.* I will say so.

[*Exit POLONIUS.*

*Ham.* By and by is easily said.—Leave me, friends.

[*Exeunt ROS. GUIL. HOR. &c.*

'Tis now the very witching time of night;

\* Curse.

† Change conditions.

‡ A kind of flute.

† For his head.

‡ Slashed.

¶ Pack company.

\*\* For dress.

\* Business.

† Holes.

‡ Hands.

¶ Utmost stretch.

When churchyards yawn, and hell itself breathes out  
Contagion to this world: Now could I drink hot blood,  
And do such business as the bitter day  
Would quake to look on. Soft; now to my mother:—

O heart, lose not thy nature; let not ever  
The soul of Nero enter this firm bosom:  
Let me be cruel, not unnatural:  
I will speak daggers to her, but use none;  
My tongue and soul in this be hypocrites:  
How in my wordssoever she be shent,\*  
To give them seals† never, my soul, consent!  
[Exit.]

SCENE III.—A Room in the same.

Enter KING, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.

King. I like him not; nor stands it safe with us,  
To let his madness range. Therefore, prepare  
I your commission will forthwith despatch,  
And he to England shall along with you:  
The terms of our estate may not endure  
Hazard so near us, as doth hourly grow  
Out of his lunies.‡

Guil. We will ourselves provide:  
Most holy and religious fear it is,  
To keep those many bodies safe,  
That live and feed upon your majesty.

Ros. The single and peculiar life is bound  
With all the strength and armour of the mind,  
To keep itself from 'nuoyance: but much more  
That spirit, upon whose wheel depend and rest  
The lives of many. The cease of majesty  
Dies not alone; but, like a gulf, doth draw  
What's near it, with it: it is a massy wheel,  
Fix'd on the summit of the highest mount,  
To whose huge spokes ten thousand lesser  
things

Are mortis'd and adjoin'd; which, when it falls,  
Each small annexment, petty consequence,  
Attends the boist'rous ruin. Never alone  
Did the king sigh, but with a general groan.

King. Aim you, I pray you, to this speedy voyage:  
For we will fetters put upon this fear,  
Which now goes too free-footed.

Ros. Guil. We will haste us.  
[Exit ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.]

Enter POLONIUS.

Pol. My lord, he's going to his mother's closet:  
Behind the arras I'll convey myself,  
To hear the process; I'll warrant, she'll tax  
him home:

And, as you said, and wisely was it said,  
'Tis meet, that some more audience than a  
mother, [hear]  
Since nature makes them partial, should o'er-  
The speech, of vantage. Fare you well, my  
liege;

I'll call upon you ere you go to bed,  
And tell you what I know.

King. Thanks, dear my lord.  
[Exit POLONIUS.]

Oh! my offence is rank, it smells to heaven;  
It hath the primal eldest curse upon't:  
A brother's murder!—Pray can I not,  
Though inclination be as sharp as will;  
My stronger guilt defeats my strong intent;  
And, like a man to double business bound,  
I stand in pause where I shall first begin,  
And both neglect. What, if this cursed hand  
Were thicker than itself with brother's blood,  
Is there not rain enough in the sweet heavens,  
To wash it white as snow? Whereto serves  
mercy,

But to confront the visage of offence?  
And what's in prayer, but this twofold force,—

To be forestalled, ere we come to fall,  
Or pardon'd, being down? Then I'll look up;  
My fault is past. But oh! what form of prayer  
Can serve my turn? Forgive me my foul murder!

That cannot be; since I am still possess'd  
Of those effects for which I did the murder—  
My crown, mine own ambition, and my queen.  
May one be pardon'd, and retain the offence?  
In the corrupted currents of this world,  
Offence's gilded hand may shove by justice;  
And oft 'tis seen, the wicked prize itself  
Buys out the law: But 'tis not so above:  
There is no shuffling; there the action lies  
In his true nature; and we ourselves compell'd,  
Even to the teeth and forehead of our faults,  
To give in evidence. What then? what rests?  
Try what repentance can: What can it not?  
Yet what can it, when one can not repent?  
O wretched state! O bosom black as death!  
O limed\* soul! that, struggling to be free,  
Art more engag'd. Help, angels, make assay!  
Bow, stubborn knees! and heart, with strings of  
steel,

Be soft as sinews of the new-born babe;  
All may be well! [Retires and kneels.]

Enter HAMLET.

Ham. Now might I do it pat, now he is pray-  
ing;

And now I'll do't; and so he goes to heaven:  
And so am I reveng'd? That would be  
scann'd:†

A villain kills my father; and, for that,  
I, his sole son, do this same villain send  
To heaven.

Why, this is hire and salary, ‡ not revenge.  
He took my father grossly, full of bread;  
With all his crimes broad blown, as flush as  
May; [heaven?]

And how his audit stands, who knows, save  
But, in our circumstance and course of thought,  
'Tis heavy with him: And am I then reveng'd,  
To take him in the pangs of his soul,  
When he is fit and season'd for his passage?  
No.

Up, sword; and know thou a more horrid hent. §  
When he is drunk, asleep, or in his rage,  
Or in the incestuous pleasures of his bed;  
At gaming, swearing, or about some act  
That has no relish of salvation in't: [even,  
Then trip him, that his heels may kick at hea-  
And that his soul may be as damn'd and black  
As hell, whereto it goes. My mother stays:  
This physic but prolongs thy sickly days.

[Exit.]

The KING rises and advances.

King. My words fly up, my thoughts remain  
below:

Words, without thoughts, never to heaven go.  
[Exit.]

SCENE IV.—Another Room in the same.

Enter QUEEN and POLONIUS.

Pol. He will come straight. Look you lay  
home to him:  
Tell him his planks have been too broad to bear  
with;

And that your grace hath screen'd and stood  
between  
Much heat and him. I'll silence me e'en here.  
Pray you, be round with him.

Queen. I'll warrant you;  
Fear me not!—withdraw, I hear him coming.  
[POLONIUS hides himself.]

Enter HAMLET.

Ham. Now, mother; what's the matter?

\* Reproved. † Authority to put them in execution.  
‡ Lunatics. § Tapestry.

\* Caught as with bird-lime. † Should be con-  
sidered. ‡ Only. § Reward.  
§ Seize him at a more horrid time.

*Queen.* Hamlet, thou hast thy father much offended.

*Ham.* Mother, you have my father much offended.

*Queen.* Come, come, you answer with an idle tongue.

*Ham.* Go, go, you question with a wicked tongue.

*Queen.* Why, how now, Hamlet?

*Ham.* What's the matter now?

*Queen.* Have you forgot me?

*Ham.* No, by the rood, \* not so:

You are the queen, your husband's brother's wife;

And,—would it were not so!—you are my mother.

*Queen.* Nay, then I'll set those to you that can speak.

*Ham.* Come, come, and sit you down; you shall not budge;

You go not, till I set you up a glass

Where you may see the inmost part of you.

*Queen.* What wilt thou do? thou wilt not murder me?

Help, help, ho!

*Pol.* [*Behind.*] What, ho! help!

*Ham.* How now! a rat?

[*Draus.*]

Dead, for a ducat, dead.

[*HAMLET makes a pass through the Arras.*]

*Pol.* [*Behind.*] Oh! I am slain.

[*Falls and dies.*]

*Queen.* O me, what hast thou done?

*Ham.* Nay, I know not:

Is it the king?

[*Lifts up the Arras and draws forth*  
*OLONIUS.*]

*Queen.* O what a rash and bloody deed is this!

*Ham.* A bloody deed;—almost as bad, good mother,

As kill a king, and marry with his brother.

*Queen.* As kill a king!

*Ham.* Ay, lady, 'twas my word.—

Thou wretched, rash, intruding fool, farewell!

[*To OLONIUS.*]

I took thee for thy better; take thy fortune:  
Thou find'st, to be too busy is some danger.—

Leave wringing of your hands: Peace; sit you down,

And let me wring your heart; for so I shall,

If it be made of penetrable stuff;

If damned custom have not braz'd it so,

That it is proof and bulwark against sense.

*Queen.* What have I done, that thou dar'st  
wag thy tongue

In noise so rude against me?

*Ham.* Such an act,

That blurs the grace and blush of modesty;

Calls virtue, hypocrite; takes off the rose

From the fair forehead of an innocent love,

And sets a blister there; makes marriage vows

As false as dicers' oaths: Oh! such a deed

As from the body of contraction plucks

The very soul; and sweet religion makes

A rhapsody of words: Heaven's face doth glow;

Yea, this solidity and compound mass,

With tristful visage as against the doom,

Is thought-sick at the act.

*Queen.* Ah! me, what act,

That roars so loud, and thunders in the index?

*Ham.* Look here, upon this picture; and on  
this;

The counterfeit presentment of two brothers.

See, what a grace was seated on this brow,

Hyperion's curls; the front of Jove himself;

An eye like Mars, to threaten and command;

A station like the herald Mercury,

New-lighted on a heaven-kissing hill;

A combination and a form, indeed,

Where every god did seem to set his seal,

To give the world assurance of a man:

\* Cross.

† Marriage contract.

‡ Sorrowful.

§ Index of contents prefixed to a book.

¶ The act of stinging.

|| Apollo's.

This was your husband.—Look you now, what follows:

Here is your husband; like a mildew'd ear,  
Blasting his wholesome brother. Have you  
eyes?

Could you on this fair mountain leave to feed,  
And batten \* on this moor? Ha! have you  
eyes?

You cannot call it love; for, at your age,  
The hey-day in the blood is tame, it's humble,  
And waits upon the judgment; And what judgment

Would step from this to this? Sense, a sure you  
have,

Else could you not have motion: But, sure, that  
is apoplexy'd: for madness would not err;  
Nor sense to ecstasy; was ne'er so thrall'd,  
But it reserv'd some quantity of choice,  
To serve in such a difference. What devil

was't,  
That thus hath cozen'd you at hoodman-blind? §  
Eyes without feeling, feeling without sight,  
Ears without hands or eyes, smelling sans || all,  
Or but a sickly part of one true sense

Could not so mope. ¶  
O shame! where is thy blush? Rebellions hell,

If thou canst mutine in a matron's bones,  
To flaming youth let virtue be as wax,

And melt in her own fire: proclaim no shame,  
When the compulsive ardour gives the charge;

Since frost itself as actively doth burn,  
And reason panders will.

*Queen.* O Hamlet, speak no more:  
Thou turn'st mine eyes into my very soul;

And there I see such black and grained spots,  
As will not leave their tinct. \*\*

*Ham.* Nay, but to live  
In the rank sweat of an enseamed + bed;

Stew'd in corruption; honeying and making love  
Over the nasty sty;—

*Queen.* O speak to me no more;  
These words, like daggers, enter in mine ears:

No more, sweet Hamlet.

*Ham.* A murderer, and a villain:  
A slave, that is not twentieth part the tythe

Of your precedent lord:—a vice || of kings:  
A cutpurse of the empire and the rule;

That from the shelf the precious diadem stole,  
And put it in his pocket!

*Queen.* No more.

*Enter GHOST.*

*Ham.* A king  
Of shreds and patches:—

Save me, and hover o'er me with your wings,  
You heavenly guards!—What would you, gracious  
figure?

*Queen.* Alas! he's mad.

*Ham.* Do you not come your tardy son to  
chide,

That, laps'd in time and passion, lets go by  
The important acting of your dread command?

O say!

*Ghost.* Do not forget: This visitation  
Is but to whet thy almost blunted purpose.

But, look, amazement on thy mother sits:  
O step between her and her fighting soul;

Conceit §§ in weakest bodies strongest works;  
Speak to her, Hamlet.

*Ham.* How is it with you, lady?

*Queen.* Alas! how is't with you?  
That you do bend your eye on vacancy,

And with the incorporeal air do hold discourse?  
Forth at your eyes your spirits wildly peep;

And, as the sleeping soldiers in the alarm,  
Your bedded hair, like life in excrements, |||

Starts up, and stands on end. O gentle son,  
Upon the heat and flame of thy distemper  
Sprinkle cool patience. Whereon do you look?

† Sensation.      \* To grow fat.      § Blindman's buff.  
‡ Without.      ¶ Be so stupid.      \*\* Colour.

†† Greasy.      ‡‡ Mimic.      §§ Imagination  
|| The hair of animals is excrementitious, that is,  
without life or sensation.

# Scene IV. HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK.

191

*Ham.* On him! on him!— Look you, how pale he glares!  
His form and cause conjoin'd, preaching to stones,  
Would make them capable. "—Do not look upon me;  
Lest with this piteous action, you convert  
My stern effects: † then what I have to do  
Will want true colour; tears, perchance, ‡ for blood.

*Queen.* To whom do you speak this?

*Ham.* Do you see nothing there?

*Queen.* Nothing at all; yet all, that is, † I see.

*Ham.* Nor did you nothing hear?

*Queen.* No, nothing, but ourselves.

*Ham.* Why, look you there! look, how it steals away!

My father, in his habit as he liv'd!

Look, where he goes, even now, out at the portal!  
[*Exit GHOST.*]

*Queen.* This is the very coinage of your brain:  
This bodiless creation ecstasy §  
Is very cunning in.

*Ham.* Ecstasy!

My pulse, as yours, doth temperately keep time,  
And makes as healthful music: It is not madness,

That I have utter'd: bring me to the test,  
And I the matter will re-word; which madness  
Would gambol from. Mother, for love of grace,  
Lay not that flattering unction to your soul,  
That not your trespass but my madness speaks:  
It will but skin and film the ulcerous place;  
Whiles rank corruption, mining all within,  
Infects unseen. Confess yourself to heaven;  
Repent what's past; avoid what is to come;  
And do not spread the compost † on the weeds,  
To make them ranker. Forgive me this my virtue:

For in the fatness of these pursy times,  
Virtue itself of vice must pardon beg;  
Yea, curb ¶ and woo, for leave to do him good.

*Queen.* O Hamlet! thou hast cleft my heart in twain.

*Ham.* O throw away the worse part of it,  
And live the purer with the other half;  
Good night: but go not to my uncle's bed;  
Assume a virtue, if you have it not.  
That monster, custom, who all sense doth eat  
Of habit's devil, is angel yet in this;  
That to the use of actions fair and good  
He likewise gives a frock, or livery,  
That aptly is put on: Refrain to-night;  
And that shall lend a kind of easiness  
To the next abstinence: the next more easy:  
For use almost can change the stamp of nature,  
And either curb the devil, or throw him out  
With wondrous potency. Once more, good night!

And when you are desirous to be bless'd,  
I'll blessing beg of you.—For this same lord,  
[*Pointing to POLONIUS.*]

I do repent: But heaven hath pleas'd it so,—  
To punish me with this, and this with me,  
That I must be their scourge and minister.  
I will bestow him, and will answer well  
The death I gave him. So, again, good night:—  
I must be cruel, only to be kind:  
Thus bad begins, and worse remains behind.—  
But one word more, good lady.

*Queen.* What shall I do?

*Ham.* Not this, by no means, that I bid you do:

Let the bloated king tempt you again to bed:  
Pinch wanton on your cheek; call you, his mouse; \*\*

And let him, for a pair or recchy † kisses,  
Or paddling in your neck with his damn'd fingers,

Make you to revel all this matter out,  
That I essentially am not in madness,

But mad in craft. 'Twere good you let him know:

For who, that's but a queen, fair, sober, wise,  
Would from a paddock, \* from a bat, a gib, †  
Such dear concernings hide? who would do so?  
No, in despite of sense and secrecy,  
Unpeg the basket on the house's top,  
Let the birds fly; and, like the famous ape,  
To try conclusions, ‡ in the basket creep,  
And break your own neck down.

*Queen.* Be thou assur'd, if words be made of breath,

And breath of life, I have no life to breathe  
What thou hast said to me.

*Ham.* I must to England; you know that?

*Queen.* Alack!

I had forgot; 'tis so concluded on.

*Ham.* There's letters seal'd: and my two school-fellows,—

Whom I will trust, as I will address fang'd, §—  
They bear the mandate; they must sweep my way,

And marshal me to knavery: Let it work;  
For 'tis the sport, to have the engineer

Hoist with his own petar: ¶ and it shall go hard,

But I will delve one yard below their mines,  
And blow them at the moon: Oh! 'tis most sweet,

When in one line two crafts directly meet.—  
This man shall set me packing.

I'll lug the guts into the neighbour room:—  
Mother, good night.—Indeed, this counsellor  
Is now most still, most secret, and most grave  
Who was in life a foolish prating knave.

Come, Sir, to draw toward an end with you:—  
Good night, mother.

[*Exeunt severally; HAMLET dragging in POLONIUS.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—The same.

*Enter KING, QUEEN, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* There's matter in these sighs; these profound heaves;  
You must translate: 'tis fit we understand them:  
Where is your son?

*Queen.* Bestow this place on us a little while.—

[*To ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN, who go out.*]

Ah! my good lord, what have I seen to-night! \*

*King.* What, Gertrude? How does Hamlet?

*Queen.* Mad as the sea, and wind, when both contend

Which is the mightier: In his lawless fit,  
Behind the arras hearing something stir,  
Whips out his rapier, cries, *A rat! a rat!*

And, in his brimish apprehension, kills  
The unseen good old man.

*King.* O heavy deed!

It had been so with us, had we been there:  
His liberty is full of threats to all;

To you yourself, to us, to every one.  
Alas! how shall this bloody deed be answer'd?

It will be laid to us, whose providence  
Should have kept short, restrain'd, and out of

haunt, ¶ [love,  
This mad young man: but, so much was our  
We would not understand what was most fit;

But, like the owner of a foul disease,  
To keep it from divulging, let it feed

Even on the pith of life. Where is he gone?

*Queen.* To draw apart the body he hath kill'd:

O'er whom his very madness, like some ore,

\* Intelligent.

† Actions.

‡ Perhaps.

§ Frenzy.

¶ Manure.

‡ Bend.

\*\* A term of endearment.

†† Steaming with heat.

\* Toad.

† Cat.

‡ Experiments.

§ Having their teeth.

¶ Blown up with his own bomb.

¶ Company.



Among a mineral \* of metals base,  
Shows itself pure; he weeps for what is done.

*King.* O Gertrude, come away!

The sun no sooner shall the mountains touch,  
But we will ship him hence; and this vile deed  
We must, with all our majesty and skill,  
Both countenance and excuse.—Ho! Guilden-  
stern!

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

Friends both, go join you with some further  
aid:

Hamlet in madness hath Polonius slain,  
And from his mother's closet hath he dragg'd  
him:

Go, seek him out; speak fair, and bring the body  
into the chapel. I pray you, haste in this.

[*Exeunt Ros. and GUIL.*  
Come, Gertrude, we'll call up our wisest friends;  
And let them know, both what we mean to do,  
And what's untimely done: so, haply, slau-  
der,—

Whose whisper o'er the world's diameter,  
As level as the cannon to his blank, †  
Trausports his poison'd shot,—may miss our  
name,  
And hit the woundless air.—O come away!  
My soul is full of discord and dismay.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—Another Room in the same.

*Enter HAMLET.*

*Ham.*—Safely stowed,—[*Ros. &c. within.*  
Hamlet! lord Hamlet! But soft!—what noise?  
who calls on Hamlet? Oh! here they come.

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

*Ros.* What have you done, my lord, with the  
dead body?

*Ham.* Compounded it with dust, whereto 'tis  
kin.

*Ros.* Tell us where 'tis; that we may take it  
thence,

And bear it to the chapel.

*Ham.* Do not believe it.

*Ros.* Believe what?

*Ham.* That I can keep your counsel, and not  
mine own. Besides, to be demanded of a  
sponge!—what replication should be made by the  
son of a king?

*Ros.* Take you me for a sponge, my lord?

*Ham.* Ay, Sir; that soaks up the king's  
countenance, his rewards, his authorities. But  
such officers do the king best service in the  
end: He keeps them, like an ape, in the corner  
of his jaw; first mouthed, to be last swallowed:  
When he needs what you have gleaned, it is  
but squeezing you, and, sponge, you shall be dry  
again.

*Ros.* I understand you not, my lord.

*Ham.* I am glad of it: A knavish speech  
sleeps in a foolish ear.

*Ros.* My lord, you must tell us where the body  
is, and go with us to the king.

*Ham.* The body is with the king, but the king  
is not with the body. The king is a thing—

*GUIL.* A thing, my lord?

*Ham.* Of nothing: bring me to him. Hide  
fox, and all after. ‡

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—Another Room in the same.

*Enter KING, attended.*

*King.* I have sent to seek him, and to find  
the body.  
How dangerous is it, that this man goes loose?  
Yet must we put the strong law on him:  
He's lov'd of the distracted multitude,  
Who like not in their judgment, but their eyes;  
And where 'tis so, the offender's scourge is  
weigh'd,

\* Mine.

† Mark.

‡ Asport among children.

But never the offence. To bear all smooth and  
even,  
This sudden sending him away must seem  
Deliberate pause: Diseases, desperate grown,  
By desperate appliance are reliev'd,

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ.*

Or not at all.—How now? what hath befallen?

*Ros.* Where the dead body is bestow'd, my  
lord,

We cannot get from him.

*King.* But where is he?

*Ros.* Without, my lord; guarded to know your  
pleasure.

*King.* Bring him before us,

*Ros.* Ho, Guildenstern? bring in my lord.

*Enter HAMLET and GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* Now, Hamlet, where's Polonius?

*Ham.* At supper.

*King.* At supper? Where?

*Ham.* Not where he eats, but where he is  
eaten: a certain convocation of politic worms  
are e'en at him. Your worm is your only em-  
peror for diet: we eat all creatures else, to eat  
us; and we eat ourselves for maggots: You  
eat king, and your lean beggar, is but variable  
service; two dishes, but to one table; that's the  
end.

*King.* Alas, alas!

*Ham.* A man may fish with the worm that  
hath eat of a king; and eat of the fish that hath  
fed of that worm.

*King.* What dost thou mean by this?

*Ham.* Nothing, but to show you how a king  
may go a progress through the guts of a beggar.

*King.* Where is Polonius?

*Ham.* In heaven; send thither to see: if your  
messenger find him not there, seek him i'the  
other place yourself. But, indeed, if you find  
him not within this month, you shall not see him as  
you go up the stairs into the lobby.

*King.* Go seek him there.

[*To some Attendants.*

*Ham.* He will stay till you come.

[*Exeunt Attendants.*

*King.* Hamlet, this deed, for thine especial  
safety,—

Which we do tender, as we dearly grieve

For that which thou hast done,—must send thee  
hence

With fiery quickness: Therefore, prepare thy-  
self. The bark is ready, and the wind at help,

The associates tend, † and every thing is bent  
For England.

*Ham.* For England?

*King.* Ay, Hamlet.

*Ham.* Good.

*King.* So is it, if thou knew'st our purposes.

*Ham.* I see a cherub, that sees them.—But,  
come; for England!—Farewell, dear mother.

*King.* Thy loving father, Hamlet.

*Ham.* My mother: Father and mother is man  
and wife; man and wife is one flesh; and so, my  
mother. Come, for England.

[*Exit.*

*King.* Follow him at foot; tempt him with  
speed aboard;

Delay it not, I'll have him hence to-night:

Away; for every thing is seal'd and done

That else leans on the affair: Pray you, make  
haste,

[*Exeunt Ros. and GUIL.*  
And, England, if my love thou hold'st at aught,  
(As my great power thereof may give thee  
sense;

Since yet thy cicatrice looks raw and red  
After the Danish sword, and thy free awe  
Pays homage to us,) thou may'st not coldly  
set;

Our sovereign process; which imports at full,  
By letters conjuring to that effect,

The present death of Hamlet. Do it, England;  
For like the hectic in my blood he rages,

\* Right, ready.

‡ Value, estimate.

† Attend

# Scene IV. HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK.

193

And thou must cure me: Till I know 'tis done,  
Howe'er my haps, \* my joys will ne'er begin.  
[Exit.

## SCENE IV.—A Plain in Denmark.

Enter FORTINBRAS, and Forces, marching.

For. Go, captain, from me greet the Danish king;  
Tell him, that, by his licence, Fortinbras  
Craves the conveyance of a promis'd march  
Over his kingdom. You know the rendezvous.

If that his majesty would aught with us,  
We shall express our duty in his eye.†  
And let him know so.

Cap. I will do't, my lord.

For. Go softly on.

[Exit FORTINBRAS and Forces.

Enter HAMLET, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDEN-  
STERN, &c.

Ham. Good Sir, whose powers ‡ are these?

Cap. They are of Norway, Sir,

Ham. How purpos'd, Sir,

I pray you?

Cap. Against some part of Poland.

Ham. Who

Commands them, Sir?

Cap. The nephew to old Norway, Fortinbras.

Ham. Goes it against the main of Poland, Sir,  
Or for some frontier?

Cap. Truly to speak, Sir, and with no addition,

We go to gain a little patch of ground;  
That hath in it no profit but the name.  
To pay five ducats, five, I would not farm it;  
Nor will it yield to Norway, or the Pole,  
A ranker rate, should it be sold in fee.

Ham. Why, then the Polack § never will defend it.

Cap. Yes, 'tis already garrison'd.

Ham. Two thousand souls, and twenty thousand ducats,

Will not debate the question of this straw:  
This is the imposthume of much wealth and peace;

That inward breaks, and shows no cause without

Why the man dies.—I humbly thank you, Sir.

Cap. God be wi' you, Sir. [Exit CAPTAIN.

Ros. Will't please you go, my lord?

Ham. I will be with you straight. Go a little before.

[Exit Ros. and GUILDENSTERN.

How all occasions do inform against me,  
And spur my dull revenge! What is a man,  
If his chief good, and market of his time,  
Be but to sleep and feed? a beast, no more.  
Sure he that made us with such large discourse,

Looking before and after, gave us not  
That capability and godlike reason

To fust \* in us unus'd. Now, whether it be  
Bestial oblivion, or some craven scruple  
Of thinking too precisely on the event,—

A thought, which, quarter'd, hath but one part  
wisdom,

And, ever, three parts coward,—I do not know  
Why yet I live to say, *This thing's to do*;  
Sith † I have cause, and will, and strength, and means,

To do't. Examples, gross as earth, exhort me:  
Witness, this army of such mass and charge,  
Led by a delicate and tender prince;  
Whose spirit with divine ambition puff'd,  
Makes mouths at the invisible event;  
Exposing what is mortal and unsure,  
To all that fortune, death, and danger dare,  
Even for an egg-shell. Rightly to be great,  
Is not to stir without great argument;  
But greatly to find quarrel in a straw,

When honour's at the stake. How stand I then,  
That have a father kill'd, a mother stain'd,  
Excitements of my reason and my blood,  
And let all sleep? while, to my shame, I see  
The imminent death of twenty thousand men,  
That, for a fantasy, and trick of fame,  
Go to their graves like beds; fight for a plot  
Whereon the numbers cannot try the cause,  
Which is not tomb enough, and continent,  
To hide the slain?—Oh! from this time forth  
My thoughts be bloody, or be nothing worth.

[Exit.

## SCENE V.—Elsinore.—A Room in the Castle.

Enter QUEEN and HORATIO.

Queen. —I will not speak with her.

Hor. She is importunate; indeed, distract;  
Her mood will needs be pited.

Queen. What would she have?

Hor. She speaks much of her father; says,  
she hears,

There's tricks i'th' world; and hems, and beats  
her heart;

Spurns enviously at straws; speaks things in  
doubt,

That carry but half sense: her speech is no  
[thing]

Yet the unshaped use of it doth move  
The hearers to collection; they aim \* at it,

And both the words up fit to their own  
thoughts;

Which, as her winks, and nods, and gestures  
yield them,

Indeed would make one think, there might be  
thought,

Though nothing sure, yet much unhappily.

Queen. 'Twere good she were spoken with;  
for she may strew

Dangerous conjectures in ill-breeding minds:  
Let her come in. [Exit HORATIO.

To my sick soul, as sin's true nature is,  
Each toy seems prologue to some great amiss:  
So full of artless jealousy is guilt,  
It spills itself in fearing to be spilt.

Re-enter HORATIO, with OPHELIA.

Oph. Where is the beauteous majesty of Denmark?

Queen. How now, Ophelia?

Oph. How should I your true love know

From another one?

By his cockle hat and staff,  
And his sandal shoon? ‡ [Singing.

Queen. Alas, sweet lady, what imports this song?

Oph. Say you? nay, pray you, mark.

He is dead and gone, lady, [Sings.

He is dead and gone;

At his head a grass-green turf,

At his heels a stone.

Oh! ho!

Queen. Nay, but Ophelia,—

Oph. Pray you, mark.

White his shroud as the mountain snow,

[Sings

Enter KING.

Queen. Alas! look here, my lord.

Oph. Larded § all with sweet flowers;  
Which bewept to the grave did go,  
With true-love showers.

King. How do you, pretty lady?

Oph. Well, God'ield || you! They say, the  
owl was a baker's daughter. Lord, we know  
what we are, but know not what we may be.  
God be at your table!

King. Conceit upon her father.

\* Successes. † Presences. ‡ Forces.  
§ Polanders. ¶ Power of comprehension.  
|| Grow mouldy. †† Cowardly. ‡‡ Sincere.

\* Guess. † Trifle. ‡ Shoes.  
§ Garnished. || Reward.  
O

*Oph.* Pray, let us have no words of this; but when they ask you what it means, say you this:

*Good morrow, 'tis Saint Valentine's day,  
All in the morning betime,  
And I a maid at your window,  
To be your Valentine:*

*Then up he rose, and don'd\* his clothes,  
And dapp'd† the chamber door;  
Let in the maid, that out a maid  
Never departed more.*

*King.* Pretty Ophelia!

*Oph.* Indeed, without an oath, I'll make an end on't:

*By Gis,† and by Saint Charity,  
Alack, and fie for shame!  
Young men will do't, if they come to't;  
By cock, they are to blame.*

*Quoth she, before you tumbled me,  
You promised me to wed:*

[He answers.]

*So would I ha' done, by yonder sun,  
An thou hadst not come to my bed.*

*King.* How long hath she been thus?

*Oph.* I hope, all will be well. We must be patient: but I cannot choose but weep, to think they should lay him i'the cold ground: My brother shall know of it, and so I thank you for your good counsel. Come, my coach! Good night, ladies; good night, sweet ladies: good night, good night. [Exit.]

*King.* Follow her close: give her good watch, I pray you. [Exit HORATIO.]

Oh! this is the poison of deep grief; it springs All from her father's death: And now behold, O Gertrude, Gertrude, When sorrows come, they come not single spies, But in battalions! First, her father slain; Next, your son gone; and the most violent au-

thor Of his own just remove: The people muddied, Thick and unwholesome in their thoughts and whispers,

For good Polonius' death; and we have done but greenly,§

In hugging mugger|| to inter him: Poor Ophelia Divided from herself, and her fair judgment; Without the which we are pictures, or mere beasts.

Last, and as much containing as all these, Her brother is in secret come from France: Feeds on his wonder, keeps himself in clouds, And wants not buzzers to infect his ear With pestilent speeches of his father's death; Wherein necessity, of matter beggar'd, Will nothing stick our person to arraign In ear and ear. O my dear Gertrude, this, Like to a murdering piece, in many places Gives me superfluous death! [A noise within.]

*Queen.* Alack! what noise is this?

*Enter a GENTLEMAN.*

*King.* Attend. [door:] What are my Switzers?¶ Let them guard the What is the matter?

*Gen.* Save yourself, my lord; The ocean, overpeering of his list,\*\* Eats not the flats with more impetuous haste, Than young Laertes, in a riotous head, O'erbears your officers! The rabble call him,

lord; And, as the world were now but to begin, Antiquity forgot, custom not known, The ruffians and props of every word, They cry, 'Choose us; Laertes shall be king! Caps, bands, and toupies, applaud it to the clouds, Laertes shall be king, Laertes king!

*Queen.* How cheerfully on the false trail\* they cry!

Oh! this is counter,† you false Danish dogs.

*King.* The doors are broke. [Noise within.]

*Enter LAERTES, armed; DANES following.*

*Laer.* Where is this king?—Sirs, stand you all without.

*Dan.* No, let's come in.

*Laer.* I pray you, give me leave.

*Dan.* We will, we will

[They retire without the door.]

*Laer.* I thank you:—keep the door.—O thou vile king, Give me my father.

*Queen.* Calmly, good Laertes.

*Laer.* That drop of blood that's calm, proclaims me bastard;

Cries cuckold to my father; brands the harlot Even here, between the chaste unsmirched i brow Of my true mother.

*King.* What is the cause, Laertes, That thy rebellion looks so giant-like?— Let him go, Gertrude; do not fear our person; There's such divinity doth hedge a king, That treason can but peep to what it would, Acts little of his will.—Tell me, Laertes, Why thou art thus incens'd;—Let him go, Ger- Speak, man. [trude:—]

*Laer.* Where is my father?

*King.* Dead.

*Queen.* But not by him.

*King.* Let him demand his fill.

*Laer.* How came he dead? I'll not be juggled with:

To hell, allegiance! vows, to the blackest devil! Conscience and grace to the profoundest pit! I dare damnation: To this point I stand,— That both the worlds I give to negligence, Let come what comes; only I'll be reveng'd Most thoroughly for my father.

*King.* Who shall stay you?

*Laer.* My will, not all the world's: And, for my means, I'll husband them so well, They shall go far with little.

*King.* Good Laertes,

If you desire to know the certainty

Of your dear father's death, is't writ in your revenge,

That, sweepstake, you will draw both friend and foe,

Winner and loser?

*Laer.* None but his enemies.

*King.* Will you know them then?

*Laer.* To his good friends thus wide I'll open my arms;

And, like the kind life-rend'ring pelican,

Repeat them with my blood.

*King.* Why, now you speak

Like a good child, and a true gentleman. That I am guiltless of your father's death,

And am most sensibly in grief for it, It shall as level to your judgment 'pear,§ As day does to your eye.

*Danes.* [Within.] Let her come in.

*Laer.* How now! what noise is that?

*Enter OPHELIA, fantastically dressed with Straus and Flowers.*

O heat, dry up my brains! tears seven times salt,

Burn out the sense and virtue of mine eye!— By heaven, thy madness shall be paid by weight,

Till our scale turn the beam. O rose of May! Dear maid, kind sister, sweet Ophelia!

O heavens! is't possible, a young maid's wits Should be as mortal as an old man's life?

Nature is fine|| in love: and, where 'tis fine,

\* Seem.

† Hounds run counter when they trace the scent backwards.

‡ Clean, undelfed.

§ Artful.

|| Appear.

\* Do on, i.e. put on.

† Do up.

‡ A corruption of *Jesu*.

§ Without judgment.

|| Privately.

¶ Guards.

\*\* Bounds.

It sends some precious instance of itself  
Alter the thing it loves.

*Oph.* They bore him barefac'd on the bier :  
    *Hey no nonny, nonny hey nonny :*  
    *And in his grave rain'd many a tear ;—*

Fare you well, my dove !

*Laer.* Hadst thou thy wits, and didst persuade  
    revenge,  
It could not move thus.

*Oph.* You must sing, *Down-a-down, an you*  
    *call him, a-down-a.* Oh ! how the wheel \* be-  
comes it ! It is the false steward, that stole his  
master's daughter.

*Laer.* This nothing's more than matter.

*Oph.* There's rosemary, that's for remem-  
brance ; pray you, love, remember : and there is  
pansies, that's for thoughts.

*Laer.* A document in madness ; thoughts and  
remembrance fitted.

*Oph.* There's fennel for you, and colum-  
bines :—there's rue for you ; and here's some  
for me :—we may call it, herb of grace o'Sun-  
days :—you may wear your rue with a differ-  
ence. †—There's a daisy :—I would give you  
some violets ; but they withered all, when my  
father died :—They say, he made a good  
end.

*For bonny sweet Robin is all my joy,—*

*Laer.* Thought ‡ and affliction, passion, hell  
    itself,  
She turns to favour, and to prettiness.

*Oph.* And will he not come again ? [Sings.  
    *And will he not come again ?*

*No, no, he is dead,  
Go to thy death-bed,  
He never will come again.*

*His beard was as white as snow,  
All flaxen was his poll :  
He is gone, he is gone,  
And we cast away moan,  
God 'a mercy on his soul !*

And of all Christian souls ! I pray God. God  
be wi' you ! [Exit OPHELIA.

*Laer.* Do you see this, O God !

*King.* Laertes, I must commune with your  
grief,

Or you deny me right. Go but apart,  
Make choice of whom your wisest friends you will,  
And they shall hear and judge 'twixt you and  
I : by direct or by collateral hand [me :  
They find us touch'd, we will our kingdom  
give,

Our crown, our life, and all that we call ours,  
To you in satisfaction ; but, if not,  
Be you content to lend your patience to us,  
And we shall jointly labour with your soul  
To give it due content.

*Laer.* Let this be so ;  
His means of death, his obscure funeral,—  
No trophy, sword, nor hatchment, o'er his  
bones,  
No noble rite, nor formal ostentation,—  
Cry to be heard, as 'twere from heaven to earth,  
That I must call't in question.

*King.* So you shall ;  
And where the offence is, let the great axe fall.  
I pray you, go with me. [Exit.

SCENE VI.—Another Room in the same.

Enter HORATIO, and a SERVANT.

*Hor.* What are they, that would speak with  
me ?

*Serv.* Sailors, Sir ;

They say, they have letters for you.

*Hor.* Let them come in.— [Exit SERVANT.  
I do not know from what part of the world  
I should be greeted, if not from lord Hamlet.

Enter SAILORS.

1 Sail. God bless you, Sir.

*Hor.* Let him bless thee too.

1 Sail. He shall, Sir, an't please him. There's  
a letter for you, Sir ; it comes from the ambas-  
sador that was bound for England ; if your name  
be Horatio, as I am let to know it is.

*Hor.* [Reads.] *Horatio, when thou shalt have  
overlooked this, give these fellows some means  
to the king ; they have letters for him. Ere  
we were two days old at sea, a pirate of  
very warlike appointment gave us chase :  
Finding ourselves too slow of sail, we put  
on a compelled valour : and in the grapple I  
boarded them : on the instant, they got clear  
of our ship ; so I alone became their prisoner.  
They have dealt with me like thieves of  
mercy ; but they knew what they did ; I am  
to do a good turn for them. Let the king  
have the letters I have sent ; and repair thou  
to me with as much haste as thou wouldst fly  
death. I have words to speak in thine ear,  
will make thee dumb ; yet are they much too  
light for the bore of the matter. These good  
fellows will bring thee where I am. Rosen-  
crantz and Guildenstern hold their course for  
England : of them I have much to tell thee.  
Farewell.*

*He that thou knowest thine, Hamlet.*  
Come, I will give you way for these your  
letters ;  
And do't the speedier, that you may direct me  
To him from whom you brought them.

[Exit.

SCENE VII.—Another Room in the same.

Enter KING and LAERTES.

*King.* Now must your conscience my acquit-  
tance seal,  
And you must put me in your heart for friend ;  
Sith \* you have heard, and with a knowing ear,  
That he, which hath your noble father slain,  
Pursu'd my life.

*Laer.* It well appears :—But tell me,  
Why you proceeded not against these feats,  
So crimeful and so capital in nature,  
As by your safety, greatness, wisdom, all things  
else,

You mainly were stirr'd up.  
*King.* Oh ! for two special reasons ;  
Which may to you, perhaps, seem much unsi-  
new'd, †

But yet to me they are strong. The queen his  
mother,

Lives almost by his looks ; and, for myself,  
(My virtue, or my plague, be it either which,)  
She is so conjunctive to my life and soul,  
That, as the star moves not but in his sphere,  
I could not but by her. The other motive,  
Why to a public count I might not go,  
Is, the great love the general gender ‡ bear him :  
Who, dipping all his faults in their affection,  
Would like the spring § that turneth wood to  
stone, [arrows,

Convert his gyves ¶ to graces ; so that my  
Too slightly timber'd for so loud a wind,  
Would have reverted to my bow again,  
And not where I had aim'd them.

*Laer.* And so have I a noble father lost ;  
A sister driven into desperate terms ;  
Whose worth, if praises may go back again,  
Stood challenger on mount of all the age  
For her perfections :—But my revenge will  
come.

*King.* Break not your sleeps for that : you  
must not think,  
That we are made of stuff so flat and dull,  
That we can let our heard be shook with danger,

\* Since. † Deprived of strength.

‡ Common people.

§ Petrifying springs are common in many parts of  
England. ¶ Fetters.

\* The burden. † I. e. By his Sunday name,  
"herb of grace ;" mine is merely rue, i. e. sorrow.  
‡ Melancholy.

And think it pastime. You shortly shall hear more :

I loved your father, and we love ourself ;  
And that, I hope, will teach you to imagine,—  
How now ? what news ?

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Letters, my lord, from Hamlet :  
This to your majesty ; this to the queen.

*King.* From Hamlet ! who brought them ?

*Mess.* Sailors, my lord, they say : I saw them not :  
They were given me by Claudio, he receiv'd them

Of him that brought them.

*King.* Laertes, you shall hear them :—

Leave us.

[*Exit MESSENGER.*]

[*Reads.*] *High and mighty, you shall know, I am set naked on your kingdom. To-morrow shall I beg leave to see your kingly eyes ; when I shall, first asking your pardon thereunto, recount the occasion of my sudden and more strange return.* Hamlet.

What should this mean ? Are all the rest come back ?

Or is it some abuse, and no such thing ?

*Laer.* Know you the hand ?

*King.* 'Tis Hamlet's character. *Naked,*—  
And in a postscript here, he says, *alone* :  
Can you advise me ?

*Laer.* I am lost in it, my lord. But let him come ;

It warms the very sickness in my heart,  
That I shall live and tell him to his teeth,  
*Thus diddest thou.*

*King.* If it be so, Laertes,  
As how should it be so ? how otherwise ?—  
Will you be rul'd by me ?

*Laer.* Ay, my lord ;

So you will not o'errule me to a peace.

*King.* To thine own peace. If he be now return'd,—

As checking \* at his voyage, and that he means  
No more to undertake it,—I will work him  
To an exploit, now ripe in my device,  
Under the which he shall not choose but fall :  
And for his death no wind of blame shall breathe :

But even his mother shall uncharge the practice,  
And call it, accident.

*Laer.* My lord, I will be rul'd ;  
The rather, if you could devise it so.  
That I might be the organ.

*King.* It falls right.

You have been talk'd of since your travel much,  
And that in Hamlet's hearing, for a quality  
Wherein, they say, you shine : your sum of  
parts

Did not together pluck such envy from him,  
As did that one ; and that, in my regard,  
Of the unworthiest siege. †

*Laer.* What part is that, my lord ?

*King.* A very ribband in the cap of youth,  
Yet needful too ; for youth no less becomes  
The light and careless livery that it wears,  
Than settled age his sables, and his weeds,  
Importing health and graveness.—Two months  
since,

Here was a gentleman of Normandy ;—  
I have seen myself, and serv'd against the French,  
And they can well on horseback : but this gal-  
lant

Had witchcraft in't ; he grew into his seat ;  
And to such wondrous doing brought his horse,  
As he had been incorp'd and demi-natur'd  
With the brave beast : so far he topp'd my  
thought,

That I, in forgery of shapes and tricks,  
Was short of what he did.

*Laer.* A Norman, was't ?

*King.* A Norman.

*Laer.* Upon my life, Lamord.

*King.* The very same.

*Laer.* I know him well, he is the brooch, \*  
indeed,

And gem of all the nation.

*King.* He made confession of you :  
And gave you such a masterly report,  
For art and exercise in your defence, †  
And for your rapier most especial,  
That he cried out, 'twould be a sight indeed,  
If one could match you : the scrimeurs ‡ of their  
nation,

He swore had neither motion, guard, nor eye,  
If you oppos'd them.—Sir, this report of his  
Did Hamlet so envenom with his envy,  
That he could nothing do, but wish and beg,  
Your sudden coming o'er, to play with you.  
Now, out of this,—

*Laer.* What out of this, my lord ?

*King.* Laertes, was your father dear to you ?  
Or are you like the painting of a sorrow,  
A face without a heart ?

*Laer.* Why ask you this ?

*King.* Not that I think, you did not love your  
father ;

But that I know, love is begun by time ;

And that I see, in passages of proof, §

Tune qualifies the spark and fire of it.

There lives within the very flame of love

A kind of wick, or snuff, that will abate it ;

And nothing is at a like goodness still ;

For goodness, growing to a pleurisy,

Dies in his own too-much : That we would do,  
We should do when we would ; for this would  
changes,

And hath abatements and delays as many,

As there are tongues, are hauds, are accidents ;

And then this *should* is like a spendthrift sigh,

That hurts by easing. But, to the quick o'the  
ulcer :

Hamlet comes back ; What would you unde-  
take, ..

To show yourself in deed your father's son

More than in words ?

*Laer.* To cut his throat i'the church.

*King.* No place, indeed, should murder sanc-  
tuarize ;

Revenge should have no bounds. But, good

Laertes,

Will you do this, keep close within your cham-  
ber : Hamlet, return'd, shall know you are come  
home :

We'll put on those shall praise your excellence,

And set a double varnish on the fame

The Frenchman gave you ; bring you, in fine,  
together,

And wager on your heads : he, being remiss, \*

Most generous, and free from all contriving,

Will not peruse the foils ; so that, with ease,

Or with a little shuffling, you may choose

A sword unbated, † and, in a pass of practice, ‡

Require him for your father.

*Laer.* I will do't :

And, for the purpose, I'll anoint my sword.

I bought an unction of a mountebank,

So mortal, that but dip a knife in it,

Where it draws blood, no cataplasm so rare,

Collected from all simples that have virtue

Under the moon, can save the thing from death,

That is but scratch'd withal : I'll touch my  
point

With this contagion ; that, if I gall him slightly,

It may be death.

*King.* Let's further think of this ;

Weigh what convenience, both of time and  
means,

May fit us to our shape : if this should fail,

And that our drift look through our bad per-  
formance,

'Twere better not assay'd ; therefore this pro-  
ject

Should have a back, or second, that might hold,

\* Ornament.

† Science of defence, i. e. fencing.

‡ Fencers.

§ Daily experience.

¶ Not blunted as foils are.

¶ Exercise.

\* Objecting to.

† Place.

If this should blast in proof. \* Soft;—let me see;—

We'll make a solemn wager on your cunning, †—

I ha't:

When in your motion you are hot and dry, (As make your bouts more violent to that end,) And that he calls for drink, I'll have preferr'd ‡ him

A chalice for the nonce: § whereon but sipping, if he by chance escape your venom'd stuck," Our purpose may hold there. But stay, what noise?

Enter QUEEN.

How now, sweet queen?

Queen. One woe doth tread upon another's heel, [Laertes,]

So fast they follow:—Your sister's drown'd, Laer. Drown'd! Oh! where?

Queen. There is a willow grows ascant the brook,

That shows his hoar leaves in the glassy stream; Therewith fantastic garlands did she make Of crow-flowers, nettles, daisies, and long purples, ¶

That liberal \*\* shepherds give a grosser name, But our cold maids do dead men's fingers call them:

There on the pendent boughs her coronet weeds Clambering to hang, an envious siver broke; When down her wedy trophies, and herself, Fell in the weeping brook. Her clothes spread wide;

And, mermaid-like, awhile they bore her up: Which time, she chaunted snatches of old As one incapable †† of her own distress, (tunes, Or like a creature native and indu'd, Unto that element: but long it could not be, Till that her garments, heavy with their drink, Pul'd the poor wretch from her melodious lay To muddy death.

Laer. Alas then, she is drown'd?

Queen. Drown'd, drown'd.

Laer. Too much of water hast thou, poor Ophelia,

And therefore I forbid my tears: But yet it is our trick; nature her custom holds, Let shame say what it will: when these are gone,

The woman will be out: ‡—Adieu, my lord! I have a speech of fire, that faint would blaze, But that this folly drowns it. [Exit.]

King. Let's follow, Gertrude:

How much I had to do to calm his rage! Now fear I, this will give it start again; Therefore, let's follow. [Exeunt.]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—A Church-Yard.

Enter Two CLOWNS, with Spades, &c.

1 Clo. Is she to be buried in Christian burial, that wilfully seeks her own salvation?

2 Clo. I tell thee, she is; therefore make her grave straight: §§ the crowner hath set on her, and finds it Christian burial.

1 Clo. How can that be, unless she drowned herself in her own defence?

2 Clo. Why 'tis found so.

1 Clo. It must be *se offendendo*; it cannot be else. For here lies the point: If I drown myself wittingly, it argues an act: and an act hath three branches: it is, to act, to do, and to perform; argal, ||| she drowned herself wittingly.

\* As fire arms sometimes burst in proving their strength. † Skill. ‡ Presented.

§ A eup for the purpose.

¶ Orchis morio mas.

†† Insensible.

‡‡ Immediately.

§§ Licentious.

|| Tears will flow.

||| A blunder for ergo.

2 Clo. Nay, but hear you, Goodman delver.

1 Clo. Give me leave. Here lies the water; good: here stands the man; good: if the man go to this water, and drown himself, it is, will he, nill he, he goes; mark you that: but if the water come to him, and drown him, he drowns not himself: argal, he, that is not guilty of his own death, shortcuts not his own life.

2 Clo. But is this law?

1 Clo. Ay, marry is't; crowner's-quest law.

2 Clo. Will you ha' the truth on't? If this had not been a gentlewoman, she should have been buried out of Christian burial.

1 Clo. Why, there thou say'st: And the more pity; that great folks shall have countenance in this world to drown or hang themselves, more than their even \* Christian. Come, my spade. There is no ancient gentlemen but gardeners, ditchers, and grave-makers; they hold up Adam's profession.

2 Clo. Was he a gentlemen?

1 Clo. He was the first that ever bore arms.

2 Clo. Why, he had none.

1 Clo. What, art a heathen? How dost thou understand the scripture? The scripture says, Adam digged; Could he dig without arms? I'll put another question to thee: If thou answerest me not to the purpose, confess thyself—

2 Clo. Go to.

1 Clo. What is he, that builds stronger than either the mason, the shipwright, or the carpenter?

2 Clo. The gallows maker; for that frame out-lives a thousand tenants.

1 Clo. I like thy wit well, in good faith; the gallows does well: But how does it well? it does well to those that do ill: now thou dost ill, to say the gallows is built stronger than the church; argal, the gallows may do well to thee. To't again; come.

2 Clo. Who builds stronger than a mason, a shipwright, or a carpenter?

1 Clo. Ay, tell me that, and unyoke. †

2 Clo. Marry, now I can tell.

1 Clo. To't.

2 Clo. Mass, I cannot tell.

Enter HAMLET and HORATIO, at a distance

1 Clo. Cudgel thy brains no more about it; for your dull ass will not mend his pace with beating: and, when you are asked this question next, say, a grave-maker; the houses that he makes last till doomsday. Go, get thee to Yaughan, and fetch me a stoup of liquor. [Exit 2 CLOWN.]

1 CLOWN digs, and sings.

In youth, when I did love, did love, ‡

Methought, it was very sweet,

To contract, O, the time, for, ah, my bhove O, methought, there was nothing meet.

Ham. Has this fellow no feeling of his business? he sings at grave-making.

Hor. Custom hath made it in him a property of easiness.

Ham. 'Tis e'en so: the hand of little employment hath the dautier sense.

1 Clo. But age, with his stealing steps,

Hath clau'd me in his clutch,

And hath shipped me into the land,

As if I had never been such.

[Throws up a Scull.]

Ham. That scull had a tongue in it, and could sing once: How the knave jowls it to the ground, as if it were Cain's jaw-bone, that did the first murder! This might be the pate of a politician, which this ass now o'er-reaches: one that would circumvent God, might it not?

\* Fellow.

† Give over.

‡ The song entire is printed in Percy's Reliques of Ancient English Poetry, Vol. 1. It was written by Lord Vaux

*Hor.* It might, my lord.

*Ham.* Or of a courtier; which could say,  
*Good-morrow, sweet lord! How dost thou,*  
*good lord!* This might be my lord such-a-one,  
that praised my lord such-a-one's horse, when  
he meant to beg it; might it not?

*Hor.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, e'en so; and now my lady  
Worm's; chapless, and knocked about the  
mazzard with a sexton's spade; Here's the  
revolution, an we had the trick to see't. Did  
these bones cost no more the breeding, but to  
play at loggats\* with them? mine ache to think  
on't.

*1 Clo.* A pick-axe, and a spade, a spade, [Sings.  
*For—and a shrouding sheet;*  
*O, a pit of clay for to be made*  
*For such a guest is meet.*

[Throws up a Scull.

*Ham.* There's another; Why may not that  
be the scull of a lawyer? Where be his quid-  
dits; now, his quilllets, his cases, his tenures,  
and his tricks? why does he suffer this rude  
knave now to knock him about the sconce†  
with a dirty shovel, and will not tell him of his  
action of battery? Humph! This fellow might  
be in's time a great buyer of land, with his  
statutes, his recognizances, his fines, his double  
vouchers, his recoveries: Is this the fine of his  
fines, and the recovery of his recoveries, to  
have his fine pate full of fine dirt? will his  
vouchers vouch him no more of his purchases,  
and double ones too, than the length and breadth  
of a pair of indentures? The very conveyances  
of his lands will hardly lie in this box; and  
must the inheritor himself have no more? ha?

*Hor.* Not a jot more, my lord.

*Ham.* Is not parchment made of sheep-skins?

*Hor.* Ay, my lord, and of calves-skins too.

*Ham.* They are sheep, and calves, which  
seek out assurance in that. I will speak to this  
fellow:—Whose grave's this, Sirrah?

*1 Clo.* Mine, Sir.—

*O, a pit of clay for to be made* [Sings.  
*For such a guest is meet.*

*Ham.* I think it be thine, indeed; for thou  
liest in't.

*1 Clo.* You lie out on't, Sir, and therefore it  
is not yours: for my part, I do not lie in't, yet  
it is mine.

*Ham.* Thou dost lie in't, to be in't and say it  
is thine; 'tis for the dead, not for the quick;  
therefore thou liest.

*1 Clo.* 'Tis a quick lie, Sir; 'twill away again,  
from me to you.

*Ham.* What man dost thou dig it for?

*1 Clo.* For no man, Sir.

*Ham.* What woman then?

*1 Clo.* For none neither.

*Ham.* Who is to be buried in't?

*1 Clo.* One, that was a woman, Sir; but,  
rest her soul she's dead.

*Ham.* How absolute the knave is! we must  
speak by the card,|| or equivocation will undo  
us. By the Lord, Horatio, these three years I  
have taken note of it; the age is grown so  
picked,¶ that the toe of the peasant comes so  
near the heel of the courtier, he galls his  
kibe.—How long hast thou been a grave-  
maker?

*1 Clo.* Of all the days i'the year, I came to't  
that day that our last king Hamlet overcame  
Fortinbras.

*Ham.* How long's that since?

*1 Clo.* Cannot you tell that? every fool can  
tell that: It was that very day that young Ham-  
let was born: he that is mad, and sent into  
England.

\* An ancient game played as quoits are at present.

† Subtilties. ‡ Frivolous distinctions. § Head.

|| By the compass, or chart of directions.

¶ Spruce, affected.

*Ham.* Ay, marry, why was he sent into Eng-  
land?

*1 Clo.* Why, because he was mad: he shall  
recover his wits there: or, if he do not, 'tis no  
great matter there.

*Ham.* Why?

*1 Clo.* 'Twill not be seen in him there; there  
the men are as mad as he.

*Ham.* How came he mad?

*1 Clo.* Very strangely, they say.

*Ham.* How strangely?

*1 Clo.* 'Faith, e'en with losing his wits.

*Ham.* Upon what ground?

*1 Clo.* Why, here in Denmark; I have been  
sexton here, man and boy, thirty years.

*Ham.* How long will a man lie i'the earth  
ere he rot?

*1 Clo.* 'Faith, if he be not rotten before he  
die, (as we have many pocky coises now-a-  
days, that will scarce hold the laying in,) he  
will last you some eight year, or nine year: a  
tanner will last you nine year.

*Ham.* Why more than another?

*1 Clo.* Why, Sir, his hide is so tanned with  
his trade, that he will keep out water a great  
while; and your water is a sore decayer of  
your whoreson dead body. Here's a scull no  
hath lain you i'the earth, three-and-twenty  
years.

*Ham.* Whose was it?

*1 Clo.* A whoreson mad fellow's it was.  
Whose do you think it was?

*Ham.* Nay, I know not.

*1 Clo.* A pestilence on him for a mad rogue! he  
poured a flagon of Rhenish on my head  
once. This same scull, Sir, was Yorick's scull,  
the king's jester.

*Ham.* This?

[Takes the Scull.

*1 Clo.* E'en that.

*Ham.* Alas! poor Yorick!—I knew him,  
Horatio; a fellow of infinite jest, of most ex-  
cellent fancy: he hath borne me on his back a  
thousand times; and now, how abhorred in my  
imagination it is! my gorge rises at it. Here  
hung those lips, that I have kissed I know not  
how oft. Where be your gibes now? your  
gambols? your songs? your flashes of merriment,  
that were wont to set the table on a  
roar? Not one now, to mock your own grinning?  
quite chap-fallen? Now get you to my  
lady's chamber, and tell her, let her paint an  
inch thick, to this favour\* she must come;  
make her laugh at that.—Pr'ythee, Horatio,  
tell me one thing.

*Hor.* What's that, my lord?

*Ham.* Dost thou think, Alexander looked  
o'this fashion i'the earth?

*Hor.* E'en so.

*Ham.* And smelt so? pah!

[Throws down the Scull.

*Hor.* E'en so, my lord.

*Ham.* To what base uses we may return,  
Horatio! why may not imagination trace the  
noble dust of Alexander, till he find it stopping  
a bung-hole?

*Hor.* 'Twere to consider too curiously, to  
consider so.

*Ham.* No, faith, not a jot; but to follow him  
thither with modesty enough, and likelihood  
to lead it: As thus; Alexander died, Alexander  
was buried, Alexander returneth to dust; the  
dust is earth; of earth we make loam: And  
why of that loam, whereto he was converted,  
might he not stop a beer-barrel?

Imperious† Cesar, dead, and turn'd to clay,  
Might stop a hole to keep the wind away:  
Oh! that that earth, which kept the world in  
awe,  
Should patch a wall to expel the winter's  
flaw!‡

But soft! but soft! aside:—Here comes the  
king.

\* Countenance, complexion.

‡ Blast.

† Imperious.

## Scene II. HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK.

199

*Enter PRIESTS, &c. in Procession; the Corpse of OPHELIA; LAERTES; and Mourners following; KING, QUEEN, their Train, &c.*

The queen, the courtiers: who is this they follow?

And with such maimed rites! \* This doth be-  
The corpse, they follow, did with desperate hand

Ford to its own life. †Twas of some estate: ‡  
Couch we awhile, and mark.

*[Retiring with HORATIO.]*

*Laer.* What ceremony else?

*Ham.* That is Laertes,

A very noble youth: Mark.

*Laer.* What ceremony else?

† *Priest.* Her obsequies have been as far en-  
larg'd

As we have warranty: Her death was doubtful;  
And, but that great command o'ersways the  
order,

She should in ground unsanctified have lodg'd,  
Till the last trumpet: for charitable prayers,  
Shards, § flints, and pebbles, should be thrown  
on her:

Yet here she is allow'd her virgin crants, ||  
Her maiden strewments, and the bringing home  
Of bell and burial.

*Laer.* Must there no more be done?

† *Priest.* No more be done!

We should profane the service of the dead,  
To sing a requiem ¶ and such rest to her  
As to peace-parted souls.

*Laer.* Lay her i'th earth:—  
And from her fair and unpolled flesh,  
May violets spring!—I tell thee, charlish priest,  
A ministr'ing angel shall my sister be,  
When thou liest howling.

*Ham.* What, the fair Ophelia!

*Queen.* Sweets to the sweet: Farewell!

*[Scattering Flowers.]*

I hop'd, thou shouldst have been my Hamlet's  
wife:

I thought thy bride-bed to have deck'd, sweet  
maid,  
And not have strew'd thy grave.

*Laer.* O treble woe

Fall ten times treble on that cursed head,  
Whose wicked dead thy most ingenious sense  
Depriv'd thee of!—Hold off the earth awhile,  
Till I have caught her once more in mine arms;

*[Leaps into the Grave.]*

Now pile your dust upon the quick \*\* and dead;  
Till of this flat a mountain you have made  
To o'ertop old Pelion, or the skyish bead  
Of blue Olympus.

*Ham.* *[Advancing.]* What is he, whose grief  
Bears such an emphasis? whose phrase of sorrow  
Conjures the wand'ring stars, and makes them  
stand

Like wonder-wounded hearers? this is I,  
Hamlet the Dane.

*[Leaps into the Grave.]*

*Laer.* The devil take thy soul!

*[Grappling with him.]*

*Ham.* Thou pray'st not well.

I pray thee, take thy fingers from my throat;  
For, though I am not splenetic and rash,  
Yet have I in me something dangerous,  
Which let thy wisdom fear: Hold off thy hand.

*King.* Pluck them asunder.

*Queen.* Hamlet, Hamlet!

*All.* Gentlemen,—

*Hor.* Good my lord, be quiet.

*[The Attendants part them, and they come out of the Grave.]*

*Ham.* Why, I will fight with him upon this  
theme,

Until my eye-lids will no longer wag.

*Queen.* O my son! what theme?

*Ham.* I lov'd Ophelia: forty thousand bro-  
thers

Could not, with all their quantity of love,

Make up my sum.—What wilt thou do for her?

*King.* Oh! he is mad, Laertes.

*Queen.* For love of God, forbear him.

*Ham.* 'Zounds, show me what thou'lt do:

Woul't weep? woul't fight? woul't fast? woul't  
tear thyself?

Woul't drink up Esau? \* eat a crocodile?

I'll do't.—Dost thou come here to whine?

To outface me with leaping in her grave?

Be buried quick with her, and so will I:

And, if thou prate of mountains, let them throw

Millions of acres on us; till our ground,

Singing his pate against the burning zone,

Make Ossa like a wart! Nay, an thou'lt mouth,

I'll rant as well as thou.

*Queen.* This is mere madness:

And thus awhile the fit will work on him;

Anon, as patient as the female dove,

When that her golden compleats are disclos'd, †

His silence will sit drooping.

*Ham.* Hear you, Sir:

What is the reason that you use me thus?

I lov'd you ever: But it is no matter;

Let Hercules himself do what he may,

The cat will mew, and dog will have his day.

*[Exit.]*

*King.* I pray thee, good Horatio, wait upon  
him.—*[Exit HORATIO.]*

Strengthen your patience in our last night's  
speech;

*[To LAERTES.]*

We'll put the matter to the present push.—

Good Gertrude, set some watch over your son.—

This grave shall have a living monument:

An hour of quiet shortly shall we see;

Till then, in patience our proceeding be.

*[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE II.—A Hall in the Castle.

*Enter HAMLET and HORATIO.*

*Ham.* So much for this, Sir: now shall you  
see the other;—

You do remember all the circumstance?

*Hor.* Remember it, my lord!

*Ham.* Sir, in my heart there was a kind of  
fighting,

That would not let me sleep: methought, I lay  
Worse than the mutines; in the bilboes. §

Rashly,

And prais'd be rashness for it,—Let us know,  
Our indiscretion sometimes serves us well,

When our deep plots do pall: || and that should

teach us,

There's a divinity that shapes our ends,

Rough-hew them how we will.

*Hor.* That is most certain.

*Ham.* Up from my cabin,

My sea-gown scarf'd about me, in the dark

Grop'd I to find out them; had my desire;

Finger'd their packet; and, in fine, withdrew

To mine own room again; making so bold,

My fears forgetting manners, to unseal

Their grand commission; where I found, Ho-  
ratio,

O royal knavery; an exact command,—

Larded ¶ with many several sorts of reasons,

Importing Denmark's health, and England's too,

With, ho! such bugs \*\* and goblins in my  
life,—

That, on the supervise, †† no leisure bated,

No, not to stay the grinding of the axe,

My head should be struck off.

*Hor.* Is't possible?

*Ham.* Here's the commission; read it at  
more leisure.

But wilt thou hear now how I did proceed?

*Hor.* Ay, beseech you.

*Ham.* Being thus benetted round with vil-  
lains,

\* *Esau* is vinegar; but Mr. Steevens conjectures  
the word should be *Wine*, a river which falls into the  
Baltic ocean.

† *Hatched*.

‡ *Mutineers*.

§ *The ship's prison*.

|| *Fail*.

\*\* *Bugbears*.

†† *Looking over*.

\* Imperfect obsequies.

† Undo, destroy,

‡ High rank.

§ A German term for garland.

\*\* Living.



Or \* I could make a prologue to my brains, They had begun the play;—I sat me down; Devils'd a new commission; wrote it fair: I once did hold it, as our statists + do, A baseness to write fair, and labour'd much For to forget that learning; but, Sir, now It did me yeoman's service: Wilt thou know The effect of what I wrote?

*Hor.* Ay, good my lord.

*Ham.* An earnest conjuration from the king,—

As England was his faithful tributary; As love between them like the palm might flourish;

As peace should still her wheaten garland wear, And stand a comma † 'tween their amities; And many such like as's, of great charge,— That, on the view and knowing of these contents,

Without debatement further, more, or less, He should the bearers put to sudden death, Not shriving ‡ time allow'd.

*Hor.* How was this seal'd?

*Ham.* Why, even in that was heaven ordinate;

I had my father's signet in my purse, Which was the model § of that Danish seal: Folded the writ up in form of the other; Subscrib'd it; gave't the impression; plac'd it safely,

The changeling never known: Now, the next day Was our sea-fight; and what to this was sequent ¶

Thou know'st already.

*Hor.* So Guildenstern and Rosencrantz go to't.

*Ham.* Why, man, they did make love to this employment;

They are not near my conscience; their defeat Does by their own insinuation grow:

'Tis dangerous, when the baser nature comes Between the pass and fell incensed points Of mighty opposites.

*Hor.* Why, what a king is this!

*Ham.* Does it not, think thee, stand me now upon?

He that hath kill'd my king and whor'd my mother, Popp'd in between the election and my hopes; Thrown out his angle for my proper life, And with such cozenage; is't not perfect conscience,

To quit \*\* him with this arm? and is't not to be damn'd,

To let this canker of our nature come In further evil?

*Hor.* It must be shortly known to him from England,

What is the issue of the business there.

*Ham.* It will be short; the interim is mine; And a man's life no more than to say, one.

But I am very sorry, good Horatio, That to Laertes I forgot myself;

For, by the image of my cause, I see

The portraiture of his: I'll count †† his favours: But, sure, the bravery of his grief did put me Into a towering passion.

*Hor.* Peace; who comes here?

*Enter Osr.*

*Osr.* Your lordship is right welcome back to Denmark.

*Ham.* I humbly thank you, Sir.—Dost know this waterfly ‡‡?

*Hor.* No, my good lord.

*Ham.* Thy state is the more gracious; for 'tis wiser to know him: He hath much land, and fertile: let a beast be lord of beasts, and his crib shall stand at the king's mess: 'Tis a chough, §§ but, as I say, spacious in the possession of dirt.

\* Before. † Statesmen. ‡ A note of connection. ¶ Confessing. § Copy. ¶ Following. †† Beseech. ‡‡ For count some Editors read count. § Water-fly is gnats. §§ A bird like a jackdaw.

*Osr.* Sweet lord, if your lordship were at leisure, I should impart a thing to you from his majesty.

*Ham.* I will receive it, Sir, with all diligence of spirit: Your bonnet to its right use; 'tis for the head.

*Osr.* I thank your lordship, 'tis very hot.

*Ham.* No, believe me, 'tis very cold; the wind is northerly.

*Osr.* It is indifferent cold, my lord, indeed.

*Ham.* But yet, methinks, it is very sultry and hot; or my complexion—

*Osr.* Exceedingly, my lord; it is very sultry,—as 'twere,—I cannot tell how—My lord, his majesty bade me signify to you, that he has laid a great wager on your head: Sir, this is the matter,—

*Ham.* I beseech you, remember—

[HAMLET moves him to put on his Hat.]

*Osr.* Nay, good my lord; for my ease, in good faith. \* Sir, here is newly come to court, Laertes: believe me, an absolute gentleman, full of most excellent differences, † of very soft society, and great showing: Indeed, to speak feelingly of him, he is the card ‡ or calendar of gentry, for you shall find in him the continent § of what part a gentleman would see.

*Ham.* Sir, this demerment suffers no perdition in you;—though, I know, to divide him inventorially, would dizzy the arithmetic of memory; and yet but raw neither, in respect of his quick sail. But, in the verity of extolment, I take him to be a soul of great article; and his infusion of such dearth and rareness, as, to make true diction of him, his semblable is his mirror; and, who else would trace him, his umbrage, nothing more. ||

*Osr.* Your lordship speaks most infallibly of him.

*Ham.* The concernancy, Sir? why do we wrap the gentleman in our more rawer breath?

*Osr.* Sir?

*Ham.* Is't not possible to understand in another tongue? You will do't, Sir, really.

*Ham.* What imports the nomination ¶ of this gentleman?

*Osr.* Of Laertes?

*Ham.* His purse is empty already; all his golden words are spent.

*Ham.* Of him, Sir.

*Osr.* I know, you are not ignorant—

*Ham.* I would, you did, Sir; yet, in faith, if you did, it would not much approve \*\* me;—Well, Sir.

*Osr.* You are not ignorant of what excellence Laertes is—

*Ham.* I dare not confess that, lest I should compare with him in excellence; but, to know a man well, were to know himself.

*Osr.* I mean, Sir, for his weapon; but in the imputation laid on him by them, in his meed †† he's unfellowed.

*Ham.* What's his weapon?

*Osr.* Rapier and dagger.

*Ham.* That's two of his weapons: but, well.

*Osr.* The king, Sir, hath wagered with him six Barbary horses: against the which he has impawned, ‡‡ as I take it, six French rapiers and poniards, with their assigns, as girdle, hangers, §§ and so: Three of the carriages, in faith, are very dear to fancy, very responsive to the hilts, most delicate carriages, and of very liberal conceit.

*Ham.* What call you the carriages?

*Hor.* I knew, you must be edified by the maigent, ||| ere you had done.

*Osr.* The carriages, Sir, are the hangings.

\* The affected phrase of the time.

† Distinguishing excellencies. ‡ Compass or chart.

§ The country and pattern for imitation.

¶ This speech is a ridicule of the court jargon of that time.

¶ Mentioning. \*\* Recommend.

†† Praise. ‡‡ Imposed, put down, staked.

§§ That part of the belt by which the sword was suspended.

||| Margin of a book which contains explanatory notes.

*Ham.* The phrase would be more german \* to the matter, if we could carry a cannon by our sides; I would, it might be hangers till then. But, on: Six Barbary horses against six French swords, their assigns, and three liberal concerted carriages; that's the French bet against the Danish: Why is this impawned, as you call it?

*Os.* The king, Sir, hath laid, that in a dozen passes between yourself and him, he shall not exceed you three hits; he hath laid, on twelve for nine; and it would come to immediate trial, if your lordship would vouchsafe the answer.

*Ham.* How, if I answer, no?

*Os.* I mean, my lord, the opposition of your person in trial.

*Ham.* Sir, I will walk here in the hall: If it please his majesty, it is the breathing time of day with me: let the foils be brought, the gentleman willing, and the king hold his purpose, I will win for him, if I can; if not, I will gain nothing but my shame, and the odd hits.

*Os.* Shall I deliver you so?

*Ham.* To this effect, Sir; after what flourish your nature will.

*Os.* I commend my duty to your lordship.

[*Exit.*]

*Ham.* Yours, yours.—He does well to commend it himself; there are no tongues else for's turn.

*Hor.* This lapwing † runs away with the shell on his head.

*Ham.* He did comply ‡ with his dug, before he sucked it. Thus has he (and many more of the same breed, that, I know, the drossy † age dotes on,) only got the tune of the time, and outward habit of encounter; a kind of yesty || collection, which carries them through and through the most fond ¶ and winnowed opinions; and do but blow them to their trial, the bubbles are out.

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* My lord, his majesty commended him to you by young Osric, who brings back to him, that you attend him in the hall: He sends to know, if your pleasure hold to play with Laertes, or that you will take longer time.

*Ham.* I am constant to my purposes, they follow the king's pleasure: if his fitness speaks, mine is ready; now, or whensoever, provided I be so able as now.

*Lord.* The king, and queen, and all are coming down.

*Ham.* In happy time.

*Lord.* The queen desires you to use some gentle entertainment to Laertes, before you fall to play.

*Ham.* She well instructs me. [*Exit Lord.*]

*Hor.* You will lose this wager, my lord.

*Ham.* I do not think so; since he went into France, I have been in continual practice; I shall win at the odds. But thou wouldst not think, how ill all's here about my heart: but it is no matter.

*Hor.* Nay, good my lord,—

*Ham.* It is but foolery; but it is such a kind of gain-giving, \*\* as would, perhaps, trouble a woman.

*Hor.* If your mind dislike any thing, obey it; I will forestal †† their repair hither, and say, you are not fit.

*Ham.* Not a whit, we defy augury; there is a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now; yet it will come: the readiness is all: Since no man, of aught he leaves, knows what is't to leave betimes? Let be.

*Enter KING, QUEEN, LAERTES, LORDS, OSRIC, and Attendants, with Foils, &c.*

*King.* Come, Hamlet, come, and take this hand from me.

[*The King puts the Hand of LAERTES into that of HAMLET.*]

*Ham.* Give me your pardon, Sir: I have done you wrong;

But pardon it, as you are a gentleman.

This presence \* knows, and you must needs have heard,

How I am punish'd with a sore distraction.

What I have done,

That might your nature, honour, and exception, Roughly awake, I here proclaim was madness.

Was't Hamlet wrong'd Laertes? Never, Hamlet:

If Hamlet from himself be ta'en away,

And, when he is not himself, does wrong Laertes,

Then Hamlet does it not, Hamlet denies it.

Who does it then? His madness? If't be so,

Hamlet is of the faction that is wrong'd,

His madness is poor Hamlet's enemy.

Sir, in this audience,

Let my disclaiming from a purpos'd evil

Free me so far in your most generous thoughts,

That I have shot my arrow o'er the house,

And hurt my brother.

*Laer.* I am satisfied in nature,

Whose motive, in this case, should stir me most

To my revenge: but in my terms of honour,

I stand aloof, and will no reconciliation,

Till by some elder masters, of known honour,

I have a voice and precedent of peace,

To keep my name ungor'd: † But till that time

I do receive your offer'd love like love,

And will not wrong it.

*Ham.* I embrace it freely;

And will this brother's wager frankly play.—

Give us the foils; come on.

*Laer.* Come, one for me.

*Ham.* I'll be your foil, Laertes; in mine ignorance

Your skill shall, like a star i'th' darkest night, Stick fiery off, indeed.

*Laer.* You mock me, Sir.

*Ham.* No, by this hand.

*King.* Give them the foils, young Osric.— Cousin Hamlet,

You know the wager?

*Ham.* Very well, my lord;

Your grace hath laid the odds o'th' weaker side.

*King.* I do not fear it: I have seen you both:—

But since he's better'd, we have therefore odds.

*Laer.* This is too heavy, let me see another.

*Ham.* This likes me well: These foils have all a length? [*They prepare to play.*]

*Os.* Ay, my good lord.

*King.* Set me the stoups ‡ of wine upon that table:—

If Hamlet give the first or second hit,

Or quit in answer of the third exchange,

Let all the battlements their ordnance fire;

The king shall drink to Hamlet's better breath;

And in the cup a union § shall be throw,

Richer than that which four successive kings

In Denmark's crown have worn; Give me the cups;

And let the kettle to the trumpet speak,

The trumpet to the cannoneer without,

The cannons to the heavens, the heavens to earth,

Now the King drinks to Hamlet.—Come, begin;—

And you, the judges, bear a wary eye.

*Ham.* Come on, Sir.

*Laer.* Come, my lord.

[*They play.*]

*Ham.* One.

\* A kin. † A bird which runs about immediately as it is hatched.

§ Worthless. ‡ Compliment.

\*\* Misgiving. † Frothy. ‡ For fond read/sannd.

† Prevent.

\* The king and queen's presence. † Unwounded.

‡ Large jugs.

§ A precious pearl.

*Laer.* No.

*Ham.* Judgment.

*Osr.* A hit, a very palpable hit.

*Laer.* Well,—again.

*King.* Stay, give me drink; *Hamlet*, this pearl is thine;

Here's to thy health.—Give him the cup.

[*Trumpets sound; and Cannon shot off within.*]

*Ham.* I'll play this bout first, set it by awhile.

Come.—Another hit; What say you?

[*They play.*]

*Laer.* A touch, a touch, I do confess.

*King.* Our son shall win.

*Queen.* He's fat, and scant o'breath.—

Here, *Hamlet*, take my napkin,\* rub thy brows: The queen carouses † to thy fortune, *Hamlet*.

*Ham.* Good madam,—

*King.* Gertrude, do not drink.

*Queen.* I will, my lord; I pray you, pardon me.

*King.* It is the poison'd cup; it is too late.

[*Aside.*]

*Ham.* I dare not drink yet, madam; by and by.

*Queen.* Come, let me wipe thy face.

*Laer.* My lord, I'll hit him now.

*King.* I do not think it.

*Laer.* And yet it is almost against my conscience.

[*Aside.*]

*Ham.* Come, for the third, *Laertes*: You do but dally;

I pray you, pass with your best violence;

I am afeard you make a wanton ‡ of me.

*Laer.* Say you so? come on.

[*They play.*]

*Osr.* Nothing neither way.

✓ *Laer.* Have at you now.

[*LAERTES wounds HAMLET; then, in scuffling, they change Rapiers, and HAMLET wounds LAERTES.*]

*King.* Part them, they are incens'd.

*Ham.* Nay, come again. [*The QUEEN falls.*]

*Osr.* Look to the queen there, ho!

*Hor.* They bleed on both sides:—How is it, my lord?

*Osr.* How is't, *Laertes*?

*Laer.* Why, as a woodcock to my own springe, *Osrick*;

I am justly kill'd with mine own treachery.

*Ham.* How does the queen?

*King.* She swoons to see them bleed.

*Queen.* No, no, the drink, the drink,—O my dear *Hamlet*!

The drink, the drink: I am poison'd! [*Dies.*]

*Ham.* O villainy!—How? let the door be lock'd:

Treachery! let it out. [*LAERTES falls.*]

*Laer.* It is here, *Hamlet*: *Hamlet*, thou art slain;

No medicine in the world can do thee good,

In thee there is not half an hour of life;

The treacherous instrument is in thy hand,

Unbated † and envenom'd: the foul practice

Hath turn'd itself on me; lo, here I lie,

Never to rise again: Thy mother's poison'd;

I can no more; the king, the king's to blame.

*Ham.* The point

Envenom'd too!—Then, venom, to thy work.

[*Stabs the KING.*]

*Osr. & Lords.* Treason! treason!

*King.* O yet defend me, friends, I am but hurt.

*Ham.* Here, thou incestuous, murd'rous,

damned Dane,

Drink off this potion:—Is thy union here?

Follow my mother. [*KING dies.*]

*Laer.* He is justly serv'd;

It is a poison temper'd ‡ by himself.—

Exchange forgiveness with me, noble *Hamlet*:

Mine and my father's death come not upon thee;

Nor thine on me. [*Dies.*]

*Ham.* Heaven make thee free of it! I follow thee.

I am dead, *Horatio*:—Wretched queen, adieu!

You that look pale and tremble at this chance,

That are but mutes or audience to this act,

Had I but time, (as this fell sergeant,\* death,

Is strict in his arrest,) oh! I could tell you;

But let it be:—*Horatio*, I am dead;

Thou liv'st; report me and my cause aright

To the unsatisfied.

*Hor.* Never believe it;

I am more an antique Roman than a Dane,

Here's yet some liquor left.

*Ham.* As thou'rt a man,—

Give me the cup; let go; by heaven I'll have it.—

O God!—*Horatio*, what a wounded name,

Things standing thus unknown, shall live be-

hind me †

If thou didst ever hold me in thy heart,

Absent ‡ from felicity awhile,

And in this harsh world draw thy breath in pain,

To tell my story.—

[*March afar off, and Shot within.*]

What warlike noise is this?

*Osr.* Young *Fortinbras*, with conquest come

from Poland,

To the ambassadors of England gives

This warlike volley.

*Ham.* O I die, *Horatio*;

The potent poison quite o'er-crows † my spirit;

I cannot live to hear the news from England;

But I do prophesy the election lights

On *Fortinbras*; he has my dying voice;

So tell him, with the occurrents ‡ more or less,

Which have solicited, §—The rest is silence.

[*Dies.*]

*Hor.* Now cracks a noble heart;—Good night,

sweet prince;

And flights of angels sing thee to thy rest!—

Why does the drum come hither?

[*March within.*]

Enter *FORTINBRAS*, the *ENGLISH AMBASSADORS*, and others.

*Fort.* Where is this sight?

*Hor.* What is it, ye would see?

If aught of woe, or wonder, cease your search. \*

*Fort.* This quarry † cries on havoc! ‡—O proud death!

What feast is toward in thine eternal cell,

That thou so many princes, at a shot,

So bloodily hast struck?

1 *Amb.* The sight is dismal;

And our affairs from England come too late;

The ears are senseless, that should give us hearing,

To tell him, his commandment is fulfill'd,

That *Rosencrantz* and *Guildenstern* are dead:

Where should we have our thanks?

*Hor.* Not from his mouth,\*\*

Had it the ability of life to thank you;

He never gave commandment for their death.

But since, so jump † upon this bloody question,

You from the *Polack ‡ wars*, and you from

England,

Are here arriv'd; give order that these bodies

High on a stage be placed to the view;

And let me speak, to the yet unknowing world,

How these things came about: So shall you hear

Of carnal, bloody, and unnatural acts;

Of accidental judgments, casual slaughters;

Of deaths put on by cunning, and forc'd cause;

And, in this upshot, purposes mistook

Fall'n on the inventors' heads: all this can I

Truly deliver.

*Fort.* Let us haste to hear it,

\* A sergeant is a sheriff's officer.

† O'ercomes.

‡ Incited.

§ Heap of dead game.

¶ A word of course when more game was destroyed than was reasonable.

\*\* I.e. The king's.

‡ By chance.

‡ Polish.

\* Handkerchief.

† Drinks good luck to you.

‡ Bury.

§ The foil wound a button, and poisoned point.

¶ Mixed.

And call the noblest to the audience.

For me, with sorrow I embrace my fortune ;  
I have some rights of memory in this kingdom,  
Which now to claim my vantage doth invite me.

*Hor.* Of that I shall have also cause to speak,  
And from his mouth whose voice will draw on  
more :

But let this same be presently perform'd  
Even while ~~men's~~ minds are wild ; lest ~~more~~  
~~mischance~~

On plots and errors, happen.

*Fort.* Let four captains

Bear Hamlet, like a soldier, to the stage ;  
For he was likely, had he been put on,  
To have prov'd most royally : and, for his pas-  
sage,

The soldier's music, and the rites of war,  
Speak loudly for him.—

Take up the bodies :—Such a sight as this  
Becomes the field, but here shows much amiss.

*Go,* bid the soldiers shoot. [*A dead march.*  
*Exeunt, bearing off the dead Bodies, after  
which, a Peal of Ordnance is shut off.*

---

In reply to an objection which was raised by an eminent critic, and has been repeated with considerable justice by all who have since written on the incidents of this play, viz. that "there appears no adequate cause for the feigned madness of Hamlet ; as he does nothing which he might not have done with the reputation of sanity ; playing the madman most when he treats Ophelia with so much rudeness, which seems to be useless and wanton cruelty,"—the following novel and satisfactory opinion, condensed from the remarks of a most intelligent and praise-worthy commentator, may be advantageously quoted :—Hamlet resolved to counterfeit madness that he might kill his uncle without being considered as a traitor and a murderer ; this he must have been, having no proof against his father's assassin, except what was said by the ghost to himself alone ; and of course it would have no weight with any other person. Winning for additional evidence, he had recourse to the play, which confirming the story of the ghost, he would instantly have gratified his vengeance by killing his uncle, but for the extraordinary circumstance of finding him on his knees at prayer ; and shortly afterwards he actually supposed he had done it, when he stabbed Polonius behind the arras, and, finding his mistake, solemnly conjured his mother to retain the secret of his madness being feigned. His treatment of "the young, the beautiful, the harmless, and the pious Ophelia" may be explained in the same way ; for if he behaved in such a frantic manner to her, who was the object of his tenderest regard, it is a certain consequence that not a doubt could be entertained by others of the reality of his distraction ; and thus the delusion was complete.—*Bowdler versus Johnson.*

# OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE story upon which this beautiful and instructive tragedy is founded, was taken, according to Mr. Pope, from Cynthio's novels. It was probably written in the year 1611. Mustapha, Selymus's general, invaded Cyprus in May 1570, and conquered it in the following year. His fleet first sailed towards that island; but immediately changing its course for Rhodes, formed a junction with another squadron, and then returned to the attack of Cyprus: thus the actual historical periods of the performance are satisfactorily determined. In addition to the admirable lesson set forth in this impressive tragedy, so well calculated to produce an excellent effect upon the human mind, by portraying that baneful passion, which, when once indulged, is the inevitable destroyer of conjugal happiness; it may justly be considered as one of the noblest efforts of dramatic genius, that has appeared in any age, or in any language. "The fiery openness of Othello, (says Dr. Johnson) magnanimous, artless, and credulous; boundless in his confidence, ardent in his affection, inflexible in his resolution, and obdurate in his revenge—the soft simplicity of Desdemona, confident of merit, and conscious of innocence; her artless perseverance in her suit, and her slowness to suspect that she can be suspected—the cool malignity of Iago, silent in his resentment, subtle in his designs, and studious at once of his interest and his vengeance—are such proofs of Shakspeare's skill in human nature, as I suppose it is in vain to seek in any modern writer; whilst even the inferior characters would be very conspicuous in any other piece, not only for their justness, but their strength." In proportion to the enormity of such a crime as adultery, should be the caution with which a suspicion of it is permitted to be entertained; and our great dramatic moralist was no doubt desirous of enforcing this maxim, when he made it, as he has done, the subject of no less than four of his most finished productions.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE OF VENICE.  
BRABANTIO, a Senator.  
Two other Senators.  
GRATIANO, Brother to Brabantio.  
LODOVICO, Kinsman to Brabantio.  
OTHELLO, the Moor.  
CASSIO, his Lieutenant.  
IAGO, his Ancient.  
RODERIGO, a Venetian Gentleman.  
MONTANO, Othello's predecessor in the Government of Cyprus.

CLOWN, *Servant to Othello.*  
HERALD.

DESDEMONA, Daughter to Brabantio, and Wife to Othello.  
EMILIA, Wife to Iago.  
BIANCA, a Courtesan, Mistress to Cassio.

Officers, Gentlemen, Messengers, Musicians, Sailors, Attendants, &c.

SCENE, for the first Act, in Venice; during the rest of the Play, at a Sea-port in Cyprus.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—Venice.—A Street.

Enter RODERIGO and IAGO.

Rod. Tush, never tell me, I take it much unkindly,  
That thou, Iago,—who hast had my purse,  
As if the strings were thine,—shouldst know of this.

Iago. 'Sblood, but you will not hear me:—  
If ever I did dream of such a matter,  
Abhor me.

Rod. Thou told'st me, thou didst hold him in thy hate.

Iago. Despise me, if I do not. Three great ones of the city,

In personal suit to make me his lieutenant,  
Oft capp'd\* to him;—and, by the faith of man,  
I know my price, I am worth no worse a place:  
But he, as loving his own pride and purposes,  
Evades them, with a bombast circumstance,†  
Horribly stuff'd with epithets of war;  
And, in conclusion, nonsuits

My mediators; for, certes,\* says he,  
I have already chose my officer.  
And what was he?  
Forsooth, a great arithmetician,  
One Michael Cassio, a Florentine,  
A fellow almost damn'd in a fair wife; †  
That never set a squadron in the field,  
Nor the division of a battle knows  
More than a splanter; unless the bookish the-  
oric, ‡  
Wherein the toged consuls § can propose  
As masterly as he: mere prattle, without prac-  
tice, ¶  
Is all his soldiership. But he, Sir, had the elec-  
tion: †  
And I,—of whom his eyes had seen the proof,  
At Rhodes, at Cyprus, and on other grounds  
Christian and heathen,—must be be-lee'd and  
calm'd  
By debtor and creditor; this counter-caster, ||  
He, in good time, must his lieutenant be,

\* Certainly.

† For *scife* some read *life*, supposing it to allude to the denunciation in the Gospel, "Woe unto you when all men shall speak well of you." ‡ Theorv.

§ Rulers of the state. ¶ It was anciently the practice to reckon up sums with counters.

\* Saluted.

† Circumlocution.

And I, (God bless the mark!) his Moorship's ancient.

*Rod.* By heaven, I rather would have been his hangman.

*Iago.* But there's no remedy; 'tis the curse of service;

Preferment goes by letter and affection,  
Not by the old gradation, where each second  
Stood heir to the first. Now, Sir, be judge  
yourself,

Whether I in any just term am affin'd  
To love the Moor.

*Rod.* I would not follow him then.

*Iago.* O Sir, content you;

I follow him to serve my turn upon him:  
We cannot all be masters, nor all masters  
Cannot be truly follow'd. You shall mark  
Many a duteous and knee-crooking knave,  
That, doting on his own obsequious bondage,  
Wears out his time, much like his master's ass,  
For nought but provender; and when he's old,

Whip me such honest knaves: Others there are,  
Who, tumb'd in forms and visages of duty,  
Keep yet their hearts attending on themselves;  
And, throwing but shows of service on their lords,  
Do well thrive by them; and when they have  
lun'd their coats,

Do themselves homage: these fellows have some  
soul;

And such a one do I profess myself.

For, Sir,

It is as sure as you are Roderigo,  
Were I the Moor, I would not be Iago:  
In following him, I follow but myself;  
Heaven is my judge, not I for love and duty,  
But seeming so, for my peculiar end;  
For when my outward action doth demonstrate  
The native act and figure of my heart,  
In compliment extern, 'tis not long after  
But I will wear my heart upon my sleeve  
For daws to peck at: I am not what I am.

*Rod.* What a full fortune does the thick-lips  
If he can carry't thus!

*Iago.* Call up her father,  
Rouse him; make after him, poison his delight,  
Proclaim him in the streets; incense her kin-  
men,

And, though he in a fertile climate dwell,  
Plague him with flies; though that his joy be joy,  
Yet throw such changes of vexation on't,  
As it may lose some colour.

*Rod.* Here is her father's house: I'll call  
aloud.

*Iago.* Do; with like timorous accent, and dire  
yell,

As when, by night and negligence, the fire

Is spied in populous cities.

*Rod.* What, ho! Brabantio! signior Braban-  
tio, ho!

*Iago.* Awake! what, ho! Brabantio! thieves  
thieves! thieves!

Look to your house, your daughter, and your  
Thieves! thieves!

BRABANTIO, above, at a Window.

*Bra.* What is the reason of this terrible  
summons? What is the matter there?

*Rod.* Signior, is all your family within?

*Iago.* Are your doors lock'd?

*Bra.* Why? wherefore ask you this?

*Iago.* 'Zounds, Sir, you are robb'd; for shame,  
put on your gown;

Your heart is burst, you have lost half your  
Even now, very now, an old black ram  
Is tupping your white ewe. Arise, arise;  
Awake the snorting citizens with the bell,  
Or else the devil will make a grandsire of you:  
Arise, I say.

*Bra.* What, have you lost your wits?

*Rod.* Most reverend signior, do you know my  
voice?

*Bra.* Not I; What are you?

*Rod.* My name is—Roderigo.

*Bra.* The worse welcome:  
I have charg'd thee, not to haunt about my  
In honest plainness thou hast heard me say  
My daughter is not for thee; and now, in mad-  
ness,

Being full of supper and distempering draughts,  
Upon malicious bravery dost thou come  
To start my quiet.

*Rod.* Sir, Sir, Sir, Sir,—

*Bra.* But thou must needs be sure,  
My spirit and my place have in them power  
To make this bitter to thee.

*Rod.* Patience, good Sir.

*Bra.* What tell'st thou me of robbing? this is  
Venice;

My house is not a grange.\*

*Rod.* Most grave Brabantio,  
In simple and pure soul I come to you.

*Iago.* 'Zounds, Sir, you are one of those that  
will not serve God, if the devil bid you. Be-  
cause we come to do you service, you think we  
are ruffians: You'll have your daughter covered  
with a Barbary horse; you'll have your nephews  
neigh to you: you'll have counsels for cousins,  
and gennets for Germans.

*Bra.* What profane wretch art thou?

*Iago.* I am one, Sir, that comes to tell you  
your daughter and the Moor are now making the  
beast with two backs.

*Bra.* Thou art a villain.

*Iago.* You are—a senator.

*Bra.* This thou shalt answer: I know thee  
Roderigo.

*Rod.* Sir, I will answer any thing. But I be-  
seech you,

I'll be your pleasure, and most wise consent,  
(As partly, I find, it is,) that your fair daughter,  
At this odd-even and dull watch o' the night,  
Transported—with no worse nor better guard,  
But with a knave of common lute, a gondolier,  
To the gross clasps of a lascivious Moor,—  
If this be known to you, and your allowance,  
We then have done you bold and saucy wrongs:  
But if you know not this, my manners tell me,  
We have your wrong rebuke. Do not believe  
That from the sense of all civility,  
If thus would play and trifle with your rever-  
Your daughter,—if you have not given her  
leave,—

I say again, hath made a gross revolt;  
Tying her duty, beauty, wit, and fortunes,  
In an extravagant and wheeling stranger, [self;  
Of here and every where: Straight satisfy you—  
If she be in her chamber, or your house,  
Let loose on me the justice of the state  
For thus deluding you.

*Bra.* Strike on the tinder, ho!

Give me a taper;—call up all my people:—

This accident is not unlike my dream,

Belief of it oppresses me already:—  
Light, I say! light!

*Iago.* Farewell; for I must leave you:

It seems not meet, nor wholesome to my place,  
To be produc'd (as, if I stay, I shall,)  
Against the Moor: For, I do know, the state,  
However this may gall him with some check,  
Cannot with safety cast him; for he's embark'd  
With such loud reason to the Cyprus wars,  
(Which even now stand in act,) that, for their  
souls,

Another of his fathom they have not,  
To lead their business; in which regard,  
Though I do hate him as I do hell pains,  
Yet, for necessity of present life,  
I must show out a flag and sign of love,  
Which is indeed but sign. That you shall surely  
find him,

Lead to the Sagittary the rais'd search;

And there will I be with him. So, farewell.

[Exit.

\* A lone farm house. † Nephews, here means grand-  
sons. ‡ A Spanish horse.  
§ Wandring. || Dismiss.

• Related

† Possess.

*Enter below, BRABANTIO, and Servants with Torches.*

*Bra.* It is too true an evil: gone she is: And what's to come of my despoised time, Is nought but bitterness.—Now, Roderigo, Where didst thou see her?—O unhappy girl!—With the Moor, say'st thou?—Who would be a father!—

How didst thou know 'twas she? O thou deceiv'st me

Past thought!—What said she to you?—Get more tapers; [you?]

Raise all my kindred.—Are they married think *Rod.* Truly, I think, they are.

*Bra.* O heaven!—How got she out!—O treason of the blood!—

Fathers, from hence trust not your daughters' minds

By what you see them act.—Are there not charms By which the property of youth and maidhood May be abus'd? Have you not read, Roderigo, Of some such thing?

*Rod.* Yes, Sir; I have indeed.

*Bra.* Call up my brother.—O that you had had her!—

Some one way, some another.—Do you know Where we may apprehend her and the Moor?

*Rod.* I think, I can discover him, if you please To get good guard, and go along with me.

*Bra.* Pray you, lead on. At every house I'll call;

I may command at most:—Get weapons, ho! And raise some special officers of night.—On, good Roderigo;—I'll deserve your pains.

[*Exeunt.*]

# SCENE II.—The same.—Another Street.

*Enter OTHELLO, IAGO, and Attendants.*

*Iago.* Though in the trade of war I have slain men,

Yet do I hold it very stuff o'the conscience, To do no contriv'd murder; I lack iniquity Sometimes, to me do service: Nine or ten times I had thought to have yer'd him here under the ribs.

*Oth.* 'Tis better as it is.

*Iago.* Nay, but he prated, And spoke such scurvy and provoking terms Against your honour, That, with the little godliness I have, I did full hard forbear him. But, I pray, Sir, Are you fast married? for be sure of this,—That the magnificent \* is much beloved; And hath, in his effect, a voice potential As double as the duke's; he will divorce you; Or put upon you what restraint and grievance The law (with all his might, to enforce it on,) Will give him cable.

*Oth.* Let him do his spite:

My services, which I have done the signiory, Shall out-tongue his complaints. 'Tis yet to know, [our,

(Which, when I know that boasting is an honest shall promulgate,) I fetch my life and being From men of royal siege, † and my demerits ‡ May speak, unbought, to as proud a fortune As this that I have reach'd: For know, Iago, But that I love the gentle Desdemona, I would not my unhoused free condition Put into circumspection and confine

For the sea's worth. But, look! what lights come yonder?

*Enter CASSIO, at a distance, and certain Officers with Torches.*

*Iago.* These are the raised father and his You were best to go in. [friends:]

*Oth.* Not I: I must be found; My parts, my title, and my perfect soul, Shall manifest me rightly. Is it they?

\* The title of a Senator. † Men who have sat upon royal thrones. ‡ Demerits has the same meaning in Shakspeare as merits.

*Iago.* By Janus, I think no.

*Oth.* The servants of the duke, and my lieutenant.

The goodness of the night upon you, friends! What is the news?

*Cas.* The duke does greet you, general; And he requires your haste, post-haste appearance, Even on the instant.

*Oth.* What is the matter, think you?

*Cas.* Something from Cyprus, as I may divine; It is a business of some heat: The galleys Have sent a dozen sequent \* messengers This very night at one another's heels; And many of the consuls, rais'd, and met, Are at the duke's already: You have been holli- call'd for;

When, being not at your lodging to be found, The senate hath sent about three several quests, To search you out.

*Oth.* 'Tis well I am found by you.

I will bestow a word here in the house. And go with you. [*Exit.*]

*Cas.* And what makes me here?

*Iago.* Faith, he to-night hath boarded a land carack, †

If it prove lawful prize, he's made for ever.

*Cas.* I do not understand.

*Iago.* He's married.

*Cas.* To who?

*Re-enter OTHELLO.*

*Iago.* Marry, to—Come, captain, will you go? *Oth.* Have with you.

*Cas.* Here comes another troop to seek for you.

*Enter BRABANTIO, RODERIGO, and Officers of Night with Torches and Weapons.*

*Iago.* It is Brabantio:—general, be advised; He comes to bad intent.

*Oth.* Holla! stand there!

*Rod.* Signior, it is the Moor.

*Bra.* Down with him, thief!

[*They draw on both sides.*]

*Iago.* You, Roderigo! come, Sir, I am for you, *Oth.* Keep up your bright swords, for the dew will rust them.—[years,

Good signior, you shall more command with Than with your weapons.

*Bra.* O thou foul thief, where hast thou stow'd my daughter?

Damn'd as thou art, thou hast enchanted her: For I'll refer me to all things of sense, If she in chains of magic were not bound, Whether a maid so tender, fair and happy, So opposite to marriage, that she shunn'd The wealthy curled darlings of our nation, Would ever have, to incur a general mock, Run from her guardage to the sooty bosom Of such a thing as thou: to fear not to delight. Judge me the world, if 'tis not gross in sense, That thou hast practis'd on her with foul charms; Abus'd her delicate youth with drugs, or minerals,

That waken motion: I'll have it disputed on; 'Tis probable, and palpable to thinking.

I therefore apprehend and do attach thee, For an abuser of the world, a practiser Of arts inhibited and out of warrant—Lay hold upon him; if he do resist, Subdue him at his peril.

*Oth.* Hold your hands,

Both you of my inclining, and the rest: Were it my cue to fight, I should have known it Without a prompter.—Where will you that I go To answer this your charge?

*Bra.* To prison: till fit time

Of law, and course of direct session, Call thee to answer.

*Oth.* What if I do obey?

How may the duke be therewith satisfied; Whose messengers are here about my side, Upon some present business of the state, To bring me to him?

\* Following.

† A rich vessel. ‡ To terrify.

# Scene III. OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE.

207

*Off.* 'Tis true, most worthy signior,  
The duke's in council; and your noble self,  
I am sure, is sent for.

*Bra.* How! the duke in council!  
In this time of the night!—Bring him away:  
Mine's not an idle cause: the duke himself,  
Or any of my brothers of the state,  
Cannot but feel this wrong as 'twere their own:  
For if such actions may have passage free,  
Bond-slaves and pagans \* shall our statesmen be.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.*—A Council Chamber.  
The DUKE and SENATORS, sitting at a Table;  
Officers attending.

*Duke.* There is no composition † in these  
That gives them credit. [news,

1 *Sen.* Indeed, they are disproportion'd;  
My letters say, a hundred and seven galleys.

*Duke.* And mine, a hundred and forty.

2 *Sen.* And mine two hundred:

But though they jump not on a just account,  
(As in these cases, where the aim reports,  
'Tis oft with difference,) yet do they all confirm  
A Turkish fleet, and bearing up to Cyprus.

*Duke.* Nay, it is possible enough to judge  
ment;

I do not so secure me in the error,  
But the main article I do approve,  
In fearful sense.

*Sailor.* [Within.] What ho! what ho! what  
ho!

*Enter an OFFICER, with a SAILOR.*

*Off.* A messenger from the galleys.

*Duke.* Now! the business?

*Sailor.* The Turkish preparation makes for  
Rhodes;

So was I bid report here to the state,  
By signior Angelo.

*Duke.* How say you by this change?

1 *Sen.* This cannot be,  
By no assay of reason; 'tis pageant,  
To keep us in false gaze: When we consider  
The importancy of Cyprus to the Turk;  
And let ourselves again but understand,  
That, as it more concerns the Turk than Rhodes,  
So may he with more facile question † bear it,  
For that it stands not in such warlike brace, ‡  
But altogether lacks the abilities  
That Rhodes is dress'd in:—if we make thought  
of this,

We must not think the Turk is so unskilful,  
To leave that latest which concerns him first;  
Neglecting an attempt of ease and gain,  
To wake; and wage a danger profitless.

*Duke.* Nay, in all confidence, he's not for  
Rhodes.

*Off.* Here is more news.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* The Ottomites, reverend and gracious,  
Steering with due course toward the isle of  
Rhodes,

Have there enjoined them with an after fleet.

1 *Sen.* Ay, so I thought:—How many as you  
guess?

*Mess.* Of thirty sail: and now do they restem  
their backward course, bearing with frank ap-  
pearance [tano,  
their purposes toward Cyprus.—Signior Mon-  
trusty and most vallant servitor,  
Whose free duty recommends you thus,  
prays you to believe him.

*Ukr.* 'Tis certain then for Cyprus.—

As Lucchesé, is he not in town?

*Sen.* He's now in Florence.

*Ukr.* Write from us; wish him post-post-  
haste: despatch.

*Ukr.* Here comes Brabantio, with the vallant  
Moor.

Our offices of state will be filled by the pa-  
bond-slaves of Africa. † Concordancy.  
position. ‡ State of defence.

*Enter BRABANTIO, OTHELLO, IAGO, RODERIGO,  
and Officers.*

*Duke.* Vallant Othello, we must straight em-  
ploy you  
Against the general enemy Ottoman.  
I did not see you; welcome, gentle Signior;

[To BRABANTIO]  
We lack'd your counsel and your help to-night.

*Bra.* So did I your's: Good your grace, pardon  
me;

Neither my place, nor ought I heard of busi-  
ness  
Hath rais'd me from my bed; nor doth the ge-  
neral care

Take hold on me; for my particular grief  
Is of so flood-gate and o'erbearing nature,  
That it engulfs and swallows other sorrows,  
And it is still itself.

*Duke.* Why, what's the matter?

*Bra.* My daughter! O my daughter!

*Sen.* Dead?

*Bra.* Ay, to me;

She is abus'd, stolen from me, and corrupted  
By spells and medicines bought of mountebanks;  
For nature so preposterously to err,  
Being not deficient, blind, or lame of sense,  
Sans \* witchcraft could.—

*Duke.* Whoe'er he be, that in this foul pro-  
ceeding,

Hath thus beguil'd your daughter of herself,  
And you of her, the bloody book of law  
You shall yourself read in the bitter letter,  
After your own sense; yea, though our proper  
son

Stood in your action. †

*Bra.* Humbly I thank your grace.

Here is the man, this Moor; whom now it  
seems,

Your special mandate, for the state affairs,  
Hath hither brought.

*Duke & Sen.* We are very sorry for it.

*Duke.* What, in your own part, can you say  
to this? [To OTHELLO.]

*Bra.* Nothing but this is so.

*Oth.* Most potent, grave, and reverend sig-  
niors,

My very noble and approv'd good masters,  
That I have ta'en away this old man's daughter,  
It is most true; true, I have married her;  
The very head and front of my offending  
Hath thus extent, no more. Rude am I in my  
speech,

And little bless'd with the set phrase of peace;  
For since these arms of mine had seven years' pith, [us'd

Till now some nine moons wasted, they have  
Their dearest action † in the tented field;  
And little of this great world can I speak,  
More than pertains to feats of broil and battle;  
And therefore little shall I grace my cause,  
In speaking for myself: Yet, by your gracious

patience,

I will a round unvarnish'd tale deliver  
Of my whole course of love; what drugs, what  
charms,

What conjuration, and what mighty magic,  
(For such proceeding I am charg'd withal),  
I won his daughter with.

*Bra.* A maiden never bold;

Of spirit so still and quiet, that her motion \*  
Blush'd at herself; And she,—in spite of na-  
ture,

Of years, of country, credit, every thing.—  
To fall in love with what she fear'd to look on?  
It is a judgment maim'd and most imperfect, †  
That will confess—perfection so could err  
Against all rules of nature; and must be driven  
To find out practices of cunning hell,  
Why this should be. I therefore vouch again,  
That with some mixtures powerful o'er the  
blood,

Or with some dram conjur'd to this effect,

He wrought upon her.

*Duke.* To vouch this, is no proof;

\* Without. † Accusation.



Without more certain and more overt-test,\*  
Than these thin habits, and poor likelihoods  
Of modern seeming,† do prefer against him.

1. *Sen.* But, Othello, speak:—

Did you by indirect and forced courses  
Subdue and poison this young maid's affec-  
tions?

Or came it by request, and such fair question  
As soul to soul affordeth?

*Oth.* I do beseech you,  
Send for the lady to the Sagittary,‡  
And let her speak of me before her father:  
If you do find me foul in her report,  
The trust, the office, I do hold of you,  
Not only take away, but let your sentence  
Even fall upon my life.

*Duke.* Fetch Desdemona hither.

*Oth.* Ancient, conduct them; you best know  
the place.—

[*Exeunt IAGO and Attendants.*]

And, till she come, as truly as to heaven  
I do confess the vices of my blood,  
So justly to your grave ears I'll present  
How I did thrive in this fair lady's love,  
And she in mine.

*Duke.* Say it, Othello.

*Oth.* Her father lov'd me; oft invited me;  
Still question'd me the story of my life,  
From year to year: the battles, sieges, fortunes,  
That I have pass'd.

I ran it through, even from my boyish days,  
To the very moment that he bade me tell it.  
Wherein I spoke of most disastrous chances,  
Of moving accidents, by flood, and field;  
Of hair-breadth scapes I the imminent deadly  
Of being taken by the insolent foe, [breach;  
And sold to slavery; of my redemption thence,  
And portance § in my travel's history:  
Wherein of antres || vast, and deserts idle,  
Rough quarries, rocks, and hills whose heads  
touch heaven,

It was my hint to speak, such was the process  
And of the Cannibals that each other eat,  
The Anthropophagi, and men whose heads  
Do grow beneath their shoulders. ¶ These things  
to hear,

Would Desdemona seriously incline: [thence;  
But still the house affairs would draw her  
Which ever as she could with haste despatch,  
She'd come again, and with a greedy ear  
Devour up my discourse: Which I observing,  
Took once a pliant hour, and found good  
means

To draw from her a prayer of earnest heart,  
That I would all my pilgrimage dilate,  
Whereof by parcels she had something heard,  
But not intently: \*\* I did consent;  
And often did beguile her of her tears,  
When I did speak of some distressful stroke,  
That my youth suffer'd. My story being done,  
She gave me for my pains a world of sighs;  
She swore,—In faith, 'twas strange, 'twas pass-  
ing strange;

'Twas pitiful, 'twas wondrous pitiful;  
She wish'd she had not heard it; yet she  
wish'd

That heaven had made her such a man; she  
thank'd me;

And bade me if I had a friend that lov'd her,  
I should but teach him how to tell my story,  
And that would woo her. Upon this hint, I  
She lov'd me for the dangers I had pass'd, [spoke:  
And I lov'd her that she did pity them.  
This only is the witchcraft I have us'd;  
Here comes the lady, let her witness it.

[*Enter DESDEMONA, IAGO, and Attendants.*]

*Duke.* I think this tale would win my daugh-  
ter too.—

\* Proof.

† Weak show.

‡ The sign of the fictitious creature so called.

§ My behaviour.

|| Caves.

¶ Mentioned by Maundeville, and also by Sir Walter Raleigh.

\*\* Attentively

Good Brabantio,  
Take up this mangled matter at the best:  
Men do their broken weapons rather use,  
Than their bare hands.

*Bra.* I pray you, hear her speak;  
If she confess that she was half the wooer,  
Destruction on my head, if my bad blame  
Light on the man!—Come hither, gentle mis-  
tress;

Do you perceive in all this noble company,  
Where most you owe obedience?

*Des.* My noble father,  
I do perceive here a divided duty:  
To you, I am bound for life and education;  
My life and education both do learn me  
How to respect you: you are the lord of duty,  
I am hitherto your daughter: But here's my  
husband;

And so much duty as my mother show'd  
To you, preferring you before her father,  
So much I challenge that I may profess  
Due to the Moor my lord.

*Bra.* God be with you!—I have done:—  
Please it your grace, on to the state affairs;  
I had rather to adopt a child, than get it.—  
Come hither, Moor:

I here do give thee that with all my heart,  
Which, but thou hast already, with all my  
heart

I would keep from thee.—For your sake,  
I am glad at soul I have no other child;  
For thy escape would teach me tyranny,  
To hang clogs on them.—I have done, my lord.

*Duke.* Let me speak like yourself; \* and lay  
a sentence,

Which as a grise,† or step, may help these  
Into your favours.  
When remedies are past, the griefs are ended,  
By seeing the worst, which late on hopes de-  
pendent.

To mourn a mischief that is past and gone,  
Is the next way to draw new mischief on.  
What cannot be preserv'd when fortune takes,  
Patience her injury a mockery makes.  
The robb'd, that smiles, steals something from  
the thief;

He robs himself, that spends a bootless grief.  
*Bra.* So let the Turk of Cyprus us beguile;  
We lose it not, so long as we can smile.  
He bears the sentence well, that nothing bears  
But the free comfort which from thence he  
hears:

But he bears both the sentence and the sorrow,  
That, to pay grief, must of poor patience bor-  
row.

These sentences, to sugar, or to gall,  
Being strong on both sides, are equivocal:  
But words are words; I never yet did hear,  
That the bruised heart was pieced through the  
ear.‡

I humbly beseech you, proceed to the affairs of  
state.

*Duke.* The Turk with a most mighty prepara-  
tion, makes for Cyprus:—O, the fortifi-  
cation of the place is best known to you: And  
though we have there subsidies of most al-  
lowed sufficiency, yet opinion, a sovereign mis-  
tress of effects, throws a more safer voice on  
you: you must therefore be content to slubber §  
the gloss of your new fortunes with this more  
stubbish and boisterous expedition.

*Oth.* The tyrant custom, most grave senators,  
Hath made the flinty and steel couch of war  
My thrice-driven bed of down: I do agnize ||  
A natural and prompt alacrity,  
I find in hardness; and do undertake  
These present wars against the Ottomites.  
Most humbly therefore bending to your state,  
I crave fit disposition for my wife,  
Due reference of place, and exhibition.

\* As you yourself would speak. † Grise, from degrees  
‡ I. e. That wounds of sorrow were ever cured by  
words of consolation.

§ Obscure.

|| Acknowledge.

# Scene II. OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE.

209

With such accommodation and besort,  
As levels with her breeding.

*Duke.* If you please,  
Be't at her father's.

*Bra.* I'll not have it so.

*Oth.* Nor I.

*Des.* Nor I; I would not there reside,  
To put my father in impatient thoughts,  
By being in his eye. Most gracious duke,  
To my unfolding lend a gracious ear;  
And let me find a charter in your voice,  
To assist my simpleness.

*Duke.* What would you, Desdemona?

*Des.* That I did love the Moor to live with him,

My downright violence and storm of fortunes  
May trumpet to the world; my heart's sub-  
dued

Even to the very quality \* of my lord:  
I saw Othello's visage in his mind;  
And to his honours, and his valiant parts,  
Did I my soul and fortunes consecrate.  
So that, dear lords, if I be left behind,  
A moth of peace, and he go to the war,  
The rights for which I love him, are bereft me,  
And I a heavy interm shall support  
By his dear absence: Let me go with him.

*Oth.* Your voices, lords:—'beseech you, let  
her will

Have a free way.

Vouch with me, heaven; I therefore beg it not  
To please the palate of my appetite;  
Nor to comply with heat, the young affects,  
In my distinct and proper satisfaction;  
But to be free and bounteous to her mind:  
And heaven defend your good souls, that you  
think

I will your serious and great business scant,  
For 'tis she is with me: No, when light-wing'd  
toys

Of feather'd Cupid seel § with wanton dulness  
My speculative and active instruments,  
That my dispositions corrupt and taunt my business,  
Let housewives make a skillet || of my helm, ¶  
And all indign and base adversities  
Make head against my estimation I.

*Duke.* Be it as you shall privately determine,  
Either for her stay or going: the affair cries,  
haste,

And speed must answer it: you must hence  
to-night.

*Des.* To-night, my lord?

*Duke.* This night.

*Oth.* With all my heart.

*Duke.* At nine i'the morning here we'll meet  
again.

Othello, leave some officer behind,  
And he shall our commission bring to you;  
With such things else of quality and respect,  
As doth import you.

*Oth.* Please your grace, my ancient;

A man he is of honesty and trust;  
To his conveyance I assign my wife, [think  
With what else needful your good grace shall  
To be sent after me.

*Duke.* Let it be so.—

Good night to every one.—And, noble Signior,  
[To BRABANTIO.

If virtue no delighted beauty lack,

Your son-in-law is far more fair than black.

1 Sen. Adieu, brave Moor! use Desdemona  
well.

*Bra.* Look to her, Moor; have a quick eye to  
see;

She has deceiv'd her father, and may thee.

[*Exeunt DUKE, SENATORS, OFFICERS, &c.*

*Oth.* My life upon her faith.—Honest Iago,  
My Desdemona must I leave to thee;  
I pry'thee, let thy wife attend on her;  
And bring them after in the best advantage.—  
Come, Desdemona; I have but an hour

Of love, of worldly matters, and direction,  
To spend with thee, we must obey the time.

[*Exeunt OTHELLO and DESDEMONA*

*Rod.* Iago.

*Iago.* What say'st thou, noble heart?

*Rod.* What wilt thou do, thinkest thou?

*Iago.* Why, go to bed, and sleep.

*Rod.* I will incontinently \* drown myself.

*Iago.* Well, if thou dost, I shall never love  
thee after it. Why, thou silly gentleman!

*Rod.* It is silliness to live, when to live is a  
torment: and then have we a prescription to  
die, when death is our physician.

*Iago.* O villainous! I have looked upon the  
world for four times seven years; and since I  
could distinguish between a benefit and an in-  
jury, I never found a man that knew how to  
love himself. Ere I would say, I would drown  
myself for the love of a Guinea-hen, † I would  
change my humanity with a baboon.

*Rod.* What should I do? I confess it is my  
shame to be so fond; but it is not in virtue to  
amend it.

*Iago.* Virtue? a fig! 'tis in ourselves, that we  
are thus, or thus. Our bodies are our gardens;  
to the which our wills are gardeners: so that  
if we will plant nettles, or sow lettuce; set  
hyssop, and weed up thyme: supply it with  
one gender of herbs, or distract it with many;  
either to have it steril with idleness, or man-  
ured with industry; why, the power and cor-  
rigible authority of this lies in our wills. If  
the balance of our lives had not one scale of  
reason to poise another of sensuality, the blood  
and baseness of our natures would conduct us  
to most preposterous conclusions: But we have  
reason to cool our raging motions, our carnal  
stings, our unbitted ‡ lusts: wherof I take this,  
that you call—love, to be a sect, § or sciou.

*Rod.* It cannot be.

*Iago.* It is merely a lust of the blood, and a  
permission of the will. Come, be a man;  
Drown thyself? drown cats and blind puppies.  
I have profess'd me thy friend, and I coust  
me knit to thy deserving with cables of per-  
durable toughness; I could never better seal  
thee than now. Put money in thy purse; fol-  
low these wars; I'll eat thy favour with an  
usurped beard; || I say, put money in thy  
purse. It cannot be, that Desdemona should  
long continue her love to the Moor,—put  
money in thy purse;—nor be his to her: it was  
a violent commencement, and thou shalt see  
an answerable sequestration;—put but money  
in thy purse.—These Moors are changeable in  
their wills;—fill thy purse with money: the  
food that to him now is as luscious as locusts,  
shall be to him shortly as bitter as coloquintida.  
She must change for youth: when she is sord  
with his body, she will find the error of her  
choice.—She must have change, she must:  
therefore put money in thy purse.—If thou  
wilt needs damn thyself, do it a more delicate  
way than drowning. Make all the money thou  
canst: If sanctimony and a frail vow, betwixt  
an erring ¶ barbarian and a supersubtle Vene-  
tian, be not too hard for my wits, and all the tribe  
of hell, thou shalt enjoy her; therefore make  
money. A pox of drowning thyself! it is clean  
out of the way: seek thou rather to be hanged  
in compassing thy joy, than to be drowned  
and go without her.

*Rod.* Wilt thou be fast to my hopes, if I de-  
pend on the issue?

*Iago.* Thou art sure of me;—Go, make  
money:—I have told thee often, and I re-tell  
thee again and again, I hate the Moor: My  
cause is hearted: thou hast no less reason:  
Let us be conjunctive in our revenge against  
him: if thou canst cuckold him, thou dost thy-

\* Quality means profession; i. e. the life of a soldier.  
† Forbid. ‡ Because. § Blind.  
|| A small kettle. ¶ Helms.

\* Immediately. † The cant term for a prostitute.  
‡ Unbridled § A sect is what the gardeners call a  
cutting. || i. e. Alter your effeminate visage, by  
putting on a beard. ¶ Wandering.  
P

self a pleasure, and me a sport. There are many events in the womb of time, which will be delivered. Traverse; \* go; provide thy money. We will have more of this to-morrow. Adieu.

Rod. Where shall we meet to-morrow?

Jago. At my lodging.

Rod. I'll be with thee betimes.

Jago. Go to; farewell. Do you hear, Roderigo?

Rod. What say you?

Jago. No more of drowning, do you hear.

Rod. I am changed. I'll sell all my land.

Jago. Go to; farewell: put money enough in your purse. [Exit RODERIGO.]

Thus do I ever make my fool my purse:

For I mine own gain'd knowledge should profane,

If I would time expend with such a snipe,

But for my sport and profit. I hate the Moor;

And it is thought abroad, that 'twixt my sheets

He has done my office: I know not if't be true;

But I, for mere suspicion in that kind,

Will do, as if for surety. He holds me well;

The better shall my purpose work on him.

Cassio's a proper man: Let me see now;

To get his place, and to plume up my will;

In double knavery,—How? how?—Let me see:—

After some time, to abuse Othello's ear,

That he is too familiar with his wife:—

He hath a person, and a smooth dispose,

To be suspected; fram'd to make woman false.

The Moor is of a free and open nature, <sup>[so]</sup>

That thinks men honest, that but seem to be

And will as tenderly be led by the nose,

As asses are.

I have't;—it is engender'd:—Hell and night

Must bring this monstrous birth to the world's

light. [Exit.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Sea-port Town in CYPRUS.—  
A Platform.

Enter MONTANO and Two GENTLEMEN.

Mon. What from the cape can you discern at sea?

1 Gent. Nothing at all: it is a high-wrought flood;

I cannot, 'twixt the heaven and the main,

Descry a sail.

Mon. Methinks, the wind hath spoke aloud at land:

A fuller blast ne'er shook our battlements:

If it hath ruffian'd so upon the sea,

What ribs of oak, when mountains melt on them,

Can hold the mortise? what shall we hear of this?

2 Gent. A segregation † of the Turkish fleet:

For do but stand upon the foaming shore,

The chiding billow seems to pelt the clouds;

The wind-shak'd surge, with high and monstrous main

Seems to cast water on the burning bear ‡

And quench the guards of the ever-fixed pole:

I never did like molestation view

On th' enchain'd flood.

Mon. If that the Turkish fleet

Be not insheer'd and embay'd, they are

drown'd;

It is impossible they bear it out.

Enter a third GENTLEMAN.

3 Gent. News, Lords! our wars are done;

The desperate tempest hath so bang'd the Turks,

That their designment halts: a noble ship of

Venice.

Hath seen a grievous wreck and sufferance

On most part of their fleet.

\* A military word of command.

‡ Separation.

† Betwixens.

‡ The constellation Arctophylax.

Mon. How! is this true?

3 Gent. The ship is here put in,

A Veronese; Michael Cassio,

Lieutenant to the warlike Moor, Othello,

is come on shore: the Moor himself at sea,

And is in full commission here for Cyprus.

Mon. I am glad on't; 'tis a worthy governor.

3 Gent. But this same Cassio, though he speaks

of comfort,

Touching the Turkish loss, yet he looks sadly,

And prays the Moor be safe; for they were

parted

With foul and violent tempest.

Mon. 'Pray heaven he be;

For I have serv'd him, and the man commands

Like a full soldier. Let's to the sea-side, ho!

As well to see the vessel that's come in,

As throw out our eyes for brave Othello;

Even till we make the main, and the aerial blue,

An indistinct regard.

3 Gent. Come, let's do so;

For every minute is expectancy

Of more arrival.

Enter CASSIO.

Cas. Thanks to the valiant of this warlike

isle,

That so approve the Moor; O let the heavens

Give him defence against the elements,

For I have lost him on a dangerous sea!

Mon. Is he well shipp'd?

Cas. His bark is stoutly timber'd, and his

pilot

Of very expert and approv'd allowance; †

Therefore my hopes, not surfeited to death,

Stand in bold cure.

[Within.] A sail, a sail, a sail!

Enter another GENTLEMAN.

Cas. What noise?

4 Gent. The town is empty: on the brow o'the

sea

Stand ranks of people, and they cry—a sail.

Cas. My hopes do shape him for the gover-

nor.

2 Gent. They do discharge their shot of cour-

tesy: [Guns heard]

Our friends, at least.

Cas. I pray you, Sir, go forth,

And give us truth who 'us that is arriv'd.

2 Gent. I shall. [Exit.]

Mon. But, good lieutenant, is your general

wiv'd?

Cas. Most unfortunately: he hath achiev'd a

maid

That paragons description and wild fame:

One that excels the quirks of blazoning pens,

And in the essential vesture of creation,

Does bear all excellency.—How now? who has

put in?

Re-enter second GENTLEMAN.

2 Gent. 'Tis one Iago, ancient to the general.

Cas. He has had most favourable and happy

speed:

Tempests themselves, high seas, and howling

winds,

The gutter'd rocks, and congregated sands,—

Traitors ensteep'd to clog the guiltless keel,—

As having sense of beauty, do omit

Their mortal † natures, letting go safely by

The divine Desdemona.

Mon. What is she?

Cas. She that I spake of, our great captain's

captain,

Left in the conduct of the bold Iago;

Whose footing here anticipates our thoughts,

A se'enight's speed.—Great Jove, Othello guard,

And swell his sail with thine own powerful

breath;

That he may bless this bay with his tall ship,

Make love's quick pants in Desdemona's arms,

\* Complete.

ness.

† Allowed and approved export-

‡ Destructive.

# Scene I. OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE.

211

Give renew'd fire to our extincted spirits,  
And bring all Cyprus comfort!—O behold,

*Enter DESDEMONA, EMILIA, IAGO, RODERIGO,  
and Attendants.*

The riches of the ship is come on shore!  
Ye men of Cyprus, let her have your knees!—  
Hail to thee, lady! and the grace of heaven,  
Before, behind thee, and on every hand,  
Enwheel thee round.

*Des.* I thank you, valiant Cassio.

What tidings can you tell me of my lord?

*Cas.* He is not yet arriv'd; nor know I aught  
But that he's well, and will be shortly here.

*Des.* O but I fear;—How lost you company?

*Cas.* The great contention of the sea and  
skies

Parted our fellowship; But, hark! a sail.

[*Cry within, A sail, a sail! Then Guns  
heard.*

*2 Gent.* They give their greeting to the citadel:  
This likewise is a friend.

*Cas.* See for the news. [*Exit GENTLEMAN.*  
Good ancient, you are welcome;—Welcome,  
mistress:— [*To EMILIA.*

Let it not gall your patience, good Iago,  
That I extend my manners: 'tis my breeding  
That gives me this bold show of courtesy.

[*Kissing her.*

*Iago.* Sir, would she give you so much of her  
lips,

As of her tongue she oft bestows on me,  
You'd have enough.

*Des.* Alas! she has no speech.

*Iago.* In faith, too much;

I find it still, when I lay list\* to sleep:  
Marry, before your ladyship, I grant  
She puts her tongue a little in her heart,  
And chides with thinking.

*Emil.* You have little cause to say so.

*Iago.* Come on, come on: you are pictures  
out of doors,

Bells in your parlours, wild cats in your kit-  
chens,

Saints in your injuries, devils being offended,  
Players in your housewifery, and housewives in  
your beds.

*Des.* O lie upon thee, slanderer!

*Iago.* Nay, it is true, or else I am a Turk;

You rise to play, and go to bed to work.

*Emil.* You shall not write my praise.

*Iago.* No, let me not.

*Des.* What wouldst thou write of me, if thou  
shouldst praise me?

*Iago.* O gentle lady, do not put me to't:

For I am nothing, if not critical.†

*Des.* Come on, assay:—There's one gone to  
the harbour.

*Iago.* Ay, madam.

*Des.* I am not merry; but I do beguile

The thing I am, by seeming otherwise.—

Come, how wouldst thou praise me?

*Iago.* I am about it; but, indeed, my inven-  
tion

Comes from my pate, as birdlime does from  
It plucks out brains and all: But my muse la-  
bours,

And thus she is deliver'd.

If she be fair and wise,—fairness and wit,—

The one's for use, the other useth it.

*Des.* Well prais'd! How if she be black and  
witty?

*Iago.* If she be black, and thereto have a  
wit,

She'll find a white that shall her blackness fit.

*Des.* Worse and worse.

*Emil.* How, if fair and foolish?

*Iago.* She never yet was foolish that was  
fair;

For even her folly help'd her to her heir.

*Des.* These are old fond† paradoxes, to make  
fools laugh at the alehouse. What miserable  
praise hast thou for her that's foul and foolish!

\* Desire.

† Censorious.

‡ Foolish.

*Iago.* There's none so foul, and foolish there-  
unto,

But does foul pranks which fair and wise ones,  
*Des.* O heavy ignorance!—thou praisest the  
worst best. But what praise couldst thou bestow  
on a deserving woman indeed! one, that, in the  
authority of her merit, did justly put on the  
vouch of very malice itself?

*Iago.* She that was ever fair, and never  
proud;

Had tongue at will, and yet was never loud;

Never lack'd gold, and yet went never gay;

Fled from her wish, and yet said,—*now I may;*

She that, being anger'd, her revenge being  
nigh,

Bade her wrong stay, and her displeasure fly;

She, that in wisdom never was so frail,

To change the cod's head for the salmon's tail;

She that could think, and ne'er disclose her  
mind,

See suitors following, and not look behind;

She was a wight,—if ever such wight were,—

*Des.* To do what?

*Iago.* To suckle fools, and chronicle small  
beer.

*Des.* O most lame and impotent conclusion!

—Do not learn of him, Emilia, though he be thy  
husband.—How say you, Cassio? is he not a  
most profane and liberal\* counsellor?

*Cas.* He speaks home, madam; you may re-  
lish him more in the soldier, than in the  
scholar.

*Iago.* [*Aside.*] He takes her by the palm:

Ay, well said, whisper: with as little a web as

this, will I ensnare as great a fly as Cassio. Ay,

smile upon her, do; I will give thee in thine

own courtship. You say true; 'tis so indeed:

if such tricks as these strip you out of your

lieutenantry, it had been better you had not

kissed your three fingers so oft, which now again

you are most apt to play the Sir in. ‡ Very good,

well kissed! an excellent courtesy! § 'tis so, in-  
deed. Yet again your fingers to your lips? would

they were clyster-pipes for your sake?—[*Trum-  
pet.*] The Moor, I know his trumpet.

*Cas.* 'Tis truly so.

*Des.* Let's meet him, and receive him.

*Cas.* Lo, where he comes!

*Enter OTHELLO, and Attendants.*

*Oth.* O my fair warrior!

*Des.* My dear Othello!

*Oth.* It gives me wonder great as my con-  
tent,

To see you here before me. O my soul's joy!

If after every tempest come such calms,

May the winds blow till they have waken'd  
death!

And let the labouring bark climb hills of seas,

Olympus-high, and duck again as low

As hell's from heaven! If it were now to die,

'Twere now to be most happy; for, I fear,

My soul hath her content so absolute,

That not another comfort like to this

Succeeds in unknown fate.

*Des.* The heavens forbid,

But that our loves and comforts should increase,

Even as our days do grow!

*Oth.* Amen to that, sweet powers!—

I cannot speak enough of this content,

It stops me here; it is too much of joy:

And this, and this, the greatest discords be,

[*Kissing her.*

That e'er our hearts shall make!

*Iago.* O you are well tun'd now!

But I'll set down the pegs that make this music,

As honest as I am. [*Aside.*

*Oth.* Come, let's to the castle.—

News, friends: our wars are done, the Turks

are drown'd.

\* Gross and licentious.

† Shackles.

‡ To shew your good breeding and gallantry.

§ Spoken when Cassio kisses his hand, and Desde-  
mona curtsies.

How do our old acquaintances of this isle t—  
Honey, you shall be well dear'd\* in Cyprus,  
I have found great love amongst them. O my  
sweet,

I prattle out of fashion,† and I dote  
In mine own comforts.—I prythee, good Iago,  
Go to the bay, and disembark my coffers:  
Bring thou the Master to the citadel;  
He is a good one, and his worthiness  
Does challenge much respect.—Come, Desde-  
mona, once more well met at Cyprus. [Exeunt  
OTHELLO, DESDEMONA, and At-  
tendants.]

*Iago.* Do thou meet me presently at the har-  
bour. Come hither. If thou be'st valiant,—as  
(they say) base men, being in love, have then a  
nobility in their natures more than is native to  
them,—list me.‡ The lieutenant to-night  
watches on the coast of guard: § First, I must  
tell thee this—Desdemona is directly in love  
with him.

*Rod.* With him? why, 'tis not possible.

*Iago.* Lay thy finger—thus, and let thy soul  
be instructed. Mark me with what violence she  
first loved the Moor, but for bragging, and tell-  
ing her fantastical lies: And will she love him still  
for prating? let not thy discreet heart think it.  
Her eye must be fed; and what delight shall she  
have to look on the devil? When the blood is  
made dull with the act of sport, there should be,  
—again to inflame it, and to give satiety a fresh  
appetite,—loveliness in favour; sympathy in  
years, manners, and beauties; all which the  
Moor is defective in: Now, for want of these  
required conveniences, her delicate tenderness  
will find itself abused, begin to heave the gorge,  
disrelish and abhor the Moor; very nature will  
instruct her in it, and compel her to some second  
choice. Now, Sir, this granted, (as it is a most  
pregnant and unforced position,) who stands so  
eminently in the degree of this fortune, as  
Cassio does? a knave very voluble; no further  
conscionable than in putting on the mere form  
of civil and humane seeming, for the better  
compassing of his salt and most hidden loose  
affection? why, none; why, none: A slippery  
and subtle knave; a finder out of occasions;  
that has an eye can stamp and counterfeit advan-  
tages, though true advantage never present itself:  
a devilish knave! Besides, the knave is hand-  
some, young, and hath all those requisites in  
him, that folly and green minds|| look after:  
A pestilent complete knave: and the woman  
hath found him already.

*Rod.* I cannot believe that in her; she is full  
of most blessed condition.¶

*Iago.* Blessed fig's end! the wine she drinks  
is made of grapes: if she had been blessed, she  
would never have loved the Moor: Blessed pud-  
ding! Didst thou not see her paddle with the  
palm of his hand? didst not mark that?

*Rod.* Yes, that I did; but that was but  
courtesy.

*Iago.* Lechery, by this hand; an index, and  
obscure prologue to the history of lust and foul  
thoughts. They met so near with their lips,  
that their breaths embraced together. Villain-  
ous thoughts, Roderigo, when these mutu-  
alities so marshal the way, hard at hand comes  
the master and main exercise, and incorporate  
conclusion: Pish!—But, Sir, be you ruled by  
me; I have brought you from Venice. Watch  
you to-night; for the command, I'll lay't upon  
you: Cassio knows you not;—I'll not be far  
from you: Do you find some occasion to anger  
Cassio, either by speaking too loud, or tainting\*\*  
his discipline; or from what other course you  
please, which the time shall more favourably  
minister.

*Rod.* Well.

*Iago.* Sir, he is rash, and very sudden in

\* Much solicited by invitation. † Without method.  
‡ Listen to me. § The place where the guard  
musters. || Minds unripe. ¶ Qualities.  
\*\* Throwing a slur upon his discipline.

choler; and, haply,\* with his truncheon may  
strike at you: Provoke him, that he may: for,  
even out of that, will I cause these of Cyprus  
to mutiny; whose qualification shall come into  
no true taste again, but by the displanting of  
Cassio. So shall you have a shorter journey to  
your desires, by the means I shall then have to  
prefer† them; and the impediment most profit-  
ably removed, without the which there were no  
expectation of our prosperity.

*Rod.* I will do this, if I can bring it to any  
opportunity.

*Iago.* I warrant thee. Meet me by and by at  
the citadel: I must fetch his necessaries ashore.  
Farewell.

*Rod.* Adieu.

[Exit.

*Iago.* That Cassio loves her, I do well be-  
lieve it;

That she loves him, 'tis apt, and of great credit:  
The Moor—howbeit that I endure him not,—  
Is of a constant, loving, noble nature;  
And, I dare think, he'll prove to Desdemona  
A most dear husband. Now I do love her too;  
Not out of absolute lust, (though, peradventure,  
I stand accountant for as great a sin,)  
But partly led to diet my revenge,  
For that I do suspect the lusty Moor  
Hath leap'd into my seat; the thought whereof  
Doth, like a poisonous mineral, gnaw my in-  
wards;

And nothing can or shall content my soul,  
Till I am even with him, wife for wife;  
Or, failing so, yet that I put the Moor  
At least into a jealousy so strong  
That judgment cannot cure. Which thing to  
do,—

If this poor trash of Venice, whom I trash;  
For his quick hunting, stand the putting on,  
I'll have our Michael Cassio on the hip;  
Abuse him to the Moor in the rank garb,§—  
(For I fear Cassio with my night-cap too)  
Make the Moor thank me, love me, and re-  
ward me,

For making him egregiously an ass,  
And practising upon his peace and quiet  
Even to madness. 'Tis here, but yet confus'd;  
Knavery's plain face is never seen, till us'd.

[Exit.

## SCENE II.—A Street.

Enter a HERALD, with a Proclamation;  
People following.

*Her.* It is Othello's pleasure, our noble and  
valiant general, that, upon certain tidings now  
arrived, importing the mere perdition of the  
Turkish fleet, every man put himself into  
triumph; some to dance, some to make bon-  
fires, each man to what sport and revel his ad-  
dition leads him; for, besides these benedi-  
cious news, it is the celebration of his nuptials: So  
much was his pleasure should be proclaimed.  
All offices¶ are open; and there is full liberty  
of feasting, from this present hour of five, till  
the bell hath told eleven. Heaven bless the isle  
of Cyprus, and our noble general, Othello!

[Exeunt.

## SCENE III.—A Hall in the Castle.

Enter OTHELLO, DESDEMONA, CASSIO, and  
Attendants.

*Oth.* Good Michael, look you to the guard  
to-night:

Let's teach ourselves that honourable stop,  
Not to out-sport discretion.

*Cas.* Iago hath direction what to do;  
But, notwithstanding, with my personal eye  
Will I look to't.

*Oth.* Iago is most honest,

\* Perhaps.

† To advance them.

‡ To trash waste to put a stone on a hound's neck o-  
hinder him outstripping his companions.

§ Entire.

¶ Rooms in the castle

Michael, good night : To-morrow, with your earliest,  
Let me have speech with you.—Come, my dear love,  
The purchase made, the fruits are to ensue ;  
That profit's yet to come 'twixt me and you.—  
Good night.

[*Exit* OTH. DES. and *Attend.*]

*Enter* IAGO.

Cas. Welcome, Iago : We must to the watch.  
Iago. Not this hour, lieutenant ; 'tis not yet ten o'clock : Our general cast \* us thus early, for the love of his Desdemona ; whom let us not therefore blame ; he hath not yet made wanton the night with her ; and she is sport for Jove.

Cas. She's a most exquisite lady.

Iago. And, I'll warrant her, full of game.

Cas. Indeed, she is a most fresh and delicate creature.

Iago. What an eye she has ! methinks it sounds a parley of provocation.

Cas. An inviting eye ; and yet, methinks, right modest.

Iago. And, when she speaks, is it not an alarm to love ?

Cas. She is, indeed, perfection.

Iago. Well, happiness to their sheets ! Come, lieutenant, I have a stoup of wine ; and here without are a brace of Cyprus gallants, that would fain have a measure to the health of the black Othello.

Cas. Not to-night, good Iago ; I have very poor and unhappy brains for drinking : I could well wish courtesy would invent some other custom of entertainment.

Iago. O they are our friends ; but one cup ; I'll drink for you.

Cas. I have drunk but one cup to-night, and that was cratically qualified † too, and behold what innovation it makes here : I am unfortunate in the infirmity, and dare not task my weakness with any more.

Iago. What, man ! 'tis a night of revels ; the gallants desire it.

Cas. Where are they ?

Iago. Here at the door ; I pray you, call them in.

Cas. I'll do't ; but it dislikes me.

[*Exit* CASSIO.]

Iago. If I can fasten but one cup upon him, With that which he hath drunk to-night already,

He'll be as full of quarrel and offence As my young mistress' dog. Now, my sick fool, Roderigo, Whom love has turn'd almost the wrong side outward,

To Desdemona hath to-night carous'd Potations pottle deep ; and he's to watch : Three lads of Cyprus,—noble swelling spirits, That hold their honours in a wary distance, The very elements of this warlike isle, Have I to-night fluster'd with flowing cups, And they watch too. Now, 'mongst this flock of drunkards,

Am I to put our Cassio in some action That may offend the isle :—But here they come : If consequence do but approve my dream, ‡ My boat sails freely, both with wind and stream.

*Re-enter* CASSIO, with him MONTANO and Gentlemen.

Cas. 'Fore heaven, they have given me a rouse † already.

Mon. Good faith, a little one ; not past a pint, as I am a soldier.

Iago. Some wine, ho !

[*Sings*  
And let me the canakin clink clink,  
And let me the canakin clink :  
A soldier's a man ;  
A life's but a span ;  
Why then, let a soldier drink.

Some wine, boys ! [*Wine brought in.*]

Cas. 'Fore heaven, an excellent song.

Iago. I learned it in England, where, indeed, they are most potent in potting : your Dane, your German, and your swag-bellied Hollander,—Drink, ho !—are nothing to your English.

Cas. Is your Englishman so expert in his drinking ?

Iago. Why, he drinks you, with facility, your Dane dead drunk ; he sweats not to overthrow your Alman ; he gives your Hollander a vomit ere the next pottle can be filled.

Cas. To the health of our general.

Mon. I am for it, lieutenant ; and I'll do you justice. \*

Iago. O sweet England !

King Stephen was a worthy peer,  
His breeches cost him but a crown ;  
He held them sixpence all too dear,  
With that he call'd the tailor—down.

He was a knight of high renown,  
And thou art but of low degree :  
'Tis pride that pulls the country down,  
Then tak' thine auld cloak about thee. †

Some wine, ho !

Cas. Why, this is a more exquisite song than the other.

Iago. Will you hear it again ?

Cas. No ; for I hold him to be unworthy of his place, that does those things.—Well,—Heaven's above all : and there be souls that must be saved, and there be souls must not be saved.

Iago. It's true, good lieutenant.

Cas. For mine own part,—no offence to the general, or any man of quality,—I hope to be saved.

Iago. And so do I too, lieutenant.

Cas. Ay, but, by your leave, not before me ; the lieutenant is to be saved before the ancient. Let's have no more of this ; let's to our affairs.—Forgive us our sins !—Gentlemen, let's look to our business. Do not think, gentlemen, I am drunk : this is my ancient ;—this is my right hand, and this is my left hand ;—I am not drunk now ; I can stand well enough, and speak well enough.

All. Excellent well.

Cas. Why, very well, then : you must not think then that I am drunk.

[*Exit.*]  
Mon. To the platform, masters ; come, let's set the watch.

Iago. You see this fellow, that is gone before :—

He is a soldier, fit to stand by Cesar, And give direction : and do but see his vice ; 'Tis to his virtue a just equinox, The one as long as the other : 'tis pity of him. I fear, the trust Othello puts him in, On some odd time of his infirmity Will shake this island.

Mon. But is he often thus ?

Iago. 'Tis evermore the prologue to his sleep : He'll watch the horologe a double set, ‡ If drink rock not his cradle.

Mon. It were well,

The general were put in mind of it. Perhaps, he sees it not ; or his good nature Prizes the virtue that appears in Cassio, And looks not on his evils : Is not this true ?

\* Dismissed.

† Silly mixed with water.

‡ Any scheme existing only in the imagination may be called a dream.

§ More than enough.

\* Drink as much as you do.

† For the whole of this song, see Percy's *Relics of Ancient Poetry*.

‡ While the clock strikes two rounds, i. e. four-and-twenty hours.

*Enter RODRIGO.*

*Iago.* How now, Roderigo? [*Aside.*  
I pray you, after the lieutenant; go.

*Mon.* And 'tis great pity, that the noble Moor  
Should hazard such a place, as his own se-  
With one of an ingraft \* infirmity:  
It were an honest action, to say  
So to the Moor.

*Iago.* Not I, for this fair island:  
I do love Cassio well; and would do much  
To cure him of this evil. But hark! what noise?  
[*Cry within,—Help! help!*

*Re-enter CASSIO, driving in RODRIGO.*

*Cas.* You rogue! you rascal!

*Mon.* What's the matter, lieutenant?

*Cas.* A knave!—teach me my duty!  
I'll beat the knave into a twiggen † bottle.

*Rod.* Beat me!

*Cas.* Dost thou prate, rogue?

*Mon.* Nay, good lieutenant, [*Striking RODRIGO.*  
I pray you, Sir, hold your hand. [*Staying him.*

*Cas.* Let me go, Sir,

Or I'll knock you o'er the mazzard.

*Mon.* Come, come, you're drunk.

*Cas.* Drunk!

*Iago.* Away, I say! go out, and cry—a mu-  
tiny! [*Aside to Rod. who goes out.*

Nay, good lieutenant,—alas, gentlemen,—  
Help, ho!—Lieutenant,—Sir,—Montano,—  
Sir;—

Help, masters!—Here's a goodly watch, in-  
deed! [*Bell rings.*

Who's that that rings the bell?—Diablo, ho!  
The town will rise, God's will, lieutenant! hold;  
You will be sham'd for ever.

*Enter OTHELLO, and Attendants.*

*Oth.* What is the matter here?

*Mon.* I bleed still, I am hurt to the death;—  
he dies.

*Oth.* Hold, for your lives.

*Iago.* Hold, hold, lieutenant, Sir, Montano,—  
gentlemen,—

Have you forgot all sense of place and duty?  
Hold, hold! the general speaks to you; hold,  
for shame!

*Oth.* Why, how now, ho! from whence ariseth  
this?

Are we turn'd Turks; and to ourselves do that,  
Which heaven hath forbid the Ottomites?  
For Christian shame, put by this barbarous  
brawl:

He that stirs next to carve for his own rage,  
Holds his soul light; he dies upon his motion.—  
Silence that dreadful bell, it frights the isle  
From her propriety. —What is the matter, mas-  
ters?—

Honest Iago, that look'st dead with grieving,  
Speak, who began this? on thy love, I charge  
thee.

*Iago.* I do not know;—friends all but now,  
even now.

In quarter, and in terms like bride and groom  
Devesting them for bed: and then, but now,  
(As if some planet had unwitting men.)  
Swords out, and tilting one at other's breast,  
In opposition bloody. I cannot speak  
Any beginning to this peevish odds;  
And 'would in action glorious I had lost  
Those legs, that brought me to a part of it!

*Oth.* How comes it, Michael, you are thus for-  
got?

*Cas.* I pray you, pardon me, I cannot speak.

*Oth.* Worthy Montano, you were wont be  
civil;

‡ The gravity and stillness of your youth  
The world hath noted, and your name is great

\* Rooted. † A wicked bottle.

‡ From her regular and proper state.

§ I.e. You have thus forgotten yourself.

In mouths of wisest censure: What's the matter  
That you unlance your reputation thus,  
And spend your rich opinion, for the name  
Of a night-brawler? Give me answer to it.

*Mon.* Worthy Othello, I am hurt to danger;  
Your officer, Iago, can inform you—  
While I spare speech, which something now  
offends me;—

Of all that I do know: nor know I ought  
By me that's said or done since this night;  
Unless self-charity \* be sometime a vice;  
And to defend ourselves it be a sin,  
When violence assails us.

*Oth.* Now, by heaven,  
My blood begins my safer guides to rule;  
Assays to lead the way: If once I stir  
And passion, having my best judgment collid,  
Or do but lift this arm, the best of you  
Shall sink in my rebuke. Give me to know  
How this foul rout began, who set it on;  
And he that is approv'd † in this offence,  
Though he had twin'd with me, both at a  
birth,

Shall lose me.—What! in a town of war,  
Yet wild, the people's hearts brimful of fear,  
To manage private and domestic quarrel,  
In night, and on the court and guard of safety!  
'Tis monstrous.—Iago, who began it?

*Ar.* If partially attir'd, § or leagu'd in office,  
Thou dost deliver more or less than truth,  
Thou art no soldier.

*Iago.* Touch me not so near:  
I had rather have this tongue cut from my  
mouth,

Than it should do offence to Michael Cassio;  
Yet, I persuade myself, to speak the truth  
Shall nothing wrong him.—Thus it is, general.  
Montano and myself being in speech,  
There comes a fellow, crying out for help;  
And Cassio following him with determin'd  
sword,

To execute upon him: Sir, this gentleman  
Steps in to Cassio, and entreats his pause;  
Myself the crying fellow did pursue,

Lest by his clamour, (as it so fell out,  
The town might fall in fright: he, swift of foot,  
Outran my purpose; and I return'd the rather  
For that I heard the clink and fall of swords,  
And Cassio high in oath; which, till to-night, ‡  
I ne'er might say before: when I came back,  
(For this was brief,) I found them close together  
At blow and thrust; even as again they were,  
When you yourself did part them.

More of this matter can I not report:—  
But men are men; the best sometimes forget:—  
Though Cassio did some little wrong to him,—  
As men in rage strike those that wish them  
best,—

Yet surely Cassio, I believe, receiv'd,  
From him that died, some strange indignity,  
Which patience could not pass.

*Oth.* I know, Iago,  
Thy honesty and love doth mince this matter, †  
Making it light to Cassio:—Cassio, I love thee;  
But never more be officer of mine.—

*Enter DESDEMONA, attended.*

Look, if my gentle love be not rais'd up;—  
I'll make thee an example.

*Des.* What's the matter, dear?

*Oth.* All's well now, sweeting; Come away  
to bed.

Sir, for your hurts,  
Myself will be your surgeon: Lead him off.

[*To MONTANO who is led off.*  
Iago, look with care about the town;  
And silence those whom this vile brawl dis-  
tracted.—

Come, Desdemona; 'tis the soldier's life,  
To have their balmy slumbers wak'd with strife.

[*Exeunt all but IAGO and CASSIO.*  
*Iago.* What are you hart, lieutenant?

\* Care of one's self. † Darkened.

‡ Convicted by proof. § Related by nearness of office.

*Cas.* Ay, past all surgery.

*Iago.* Marry, heaven forbid!

*Cas.* Reputation, reputation, reputation! O I have lost my reputation! I have lost the immortal part, Sir, of myself; and what remains is bestial.—My reputation, Iago, my reputation.

*Iago.* As I am an honest man, I thought you had received some bodily wound; there is more offence in that, than in reputation. Reputation is an idle and most false imposition; oft got without merit, and lost without deserving: You have lost no reputation at all, unless you repute yourself such a loser. What, man! there are ways to recover the general again: You are but now cast in his mood; \* a punishment more in policy than in malice; even so as one would beat his offenceless dog, to affront an imperious lion: see to him again, and he's yours.

*Cas.* I will rather sue to be despis'd, than to deceive so good a commander, with so slight, so drunken, and so indiscreet an officer. Drunk? and speak parrot?† and squabble? swagger? swear? and discourse fustian with one's own shadow?—O thou invisible spirit of wine, if thou hast no name to be known by, let us call thee—devil!

*Iago.* What was he that you followed with your sword? What had he done to you?

*Cas.* I know not.

*Iago.* Is it possible?

*Cas.* I remember a mass of things, but nothing distinctly; a quarrel, but nothing wherefore.—O that men should put an enemy in their mouths, to steal away their brains! that we should with joy, revel, pleasure, and applause, transform ourselves into beasts!

*Iago.* Why, but you are now well enough: How came you thus recovered?

*Cas.* It hath pleased the devil, drunkenness, to give place to the devil, wrath: one unperfectness shows me another, to make me frankly despise myself.

*Iago.* Come, you are too severe a moralist: As the time, the place, and the condition of this country stands, I could heartily wish this had not befallen; but, since it is as it is, mend it for your own good.

*Cas.* I will ask him for my place again; he shall tell me, I am a drunkard! Had I as many mouths as Hydra, such an answer would stop them all. To be now a sensible man, by and by a fool, and presently a beast! O strange!—Every inordinate cup is unblessed, and the ingredient is a devil.

*Iago.* Come, come, good wine is a good familiar creature, if it be well used; exclaim no more against it. And, good lieutenant, I think you think I love you.

*Cas.* I have well approved it, Sir,—I drunk!

*Iago.* You, or any man living, may be drunk at some time, man. I'll tell you what you shall do. Our general's wife is now the general;—I may say so in this respect, for that he hath devoted and given up himself to the contemplation, mark, and denotement of her parts and graces:—confess yourself freely to her; importune her; she'll help to put you in your place again: she is of so free, so kind, so apt, so blessed a disposition, that she holds it a vice in her goodness, not to do more than she is requested: This broken joint between you and her husband, entreat her to splinter; and, my fortunes against any lay† worth naming, this crack of your love shall grow stronger than was before.

*Cas.* You advise me well.

*Iago.* I protest in the sincerity of love, and honest kindness.

*Cas.* I think it freely, and, betimes in the morning, I will beseech the virtuous Desdemona to undertake for me: I am desperate of my fortunes, if they check me here.

*Iago.* You are in the right. Good night, lieutenant; I must to the watch.

*Cas.* Good night honest Iago. [Exit CASSIO.]

*Iago.* And what's he then, that says I play the villain?

When this advice is free I give, and honest, Probable to thinking, and (indeed) the course To win the Moor again? For 'tis most easy The inclining Desdemona to subdue In any honest suit; she's fram'd as fruitful\* As the free elements. And then for her To win the Moor, were't to renounce his baptism,

All seals and symbols of redeemed sin, His soul is so enfetter'd to her love, That she may make, unmake, do what she list, Even as her appetite shall play the god With his weak function. How am I then a villain,

To counsel Cassio to this parallel† course, Directly to his good? Divinity of hell! When devils will their blackest sins put on, They do suggest;† at first with heavenly shows, As I do now: For while this honest fool Plies Desdemona to repair his fortunes, And she for him pleads strongly to the Moor, I'll pour this pestilence into his ear,— That she repeats § him for her body's lust; And by how much she strives to do him good, She shall undo her credit with the Moor. So will I turn her virtue into pitch; And out of her own goodness make the net, That shall enmesh them all.—How now, Roderigo.

Enter RODERIGO.

*Rod.* I do follow here in the chase, not like a hound that hunts, but one that fills up the cry. My money is almost spent; I have been to-night exceedingly well cudgelled; and, I think, the issue will be—I shall have so much experience for my pains; and so, with no money at all, and a little more wit, return to Venice.

*Iago.* How poor are they, that have not patience!—

What wound did ever heal, but by degrees? Thou know'st we work by wit, and not by witchcraft;

And wit depends on dilatory time. Does't not go well? Cassio hath beaten thee, And thou, by that small hurt, hath cashier'd Cassio:

Though other things grow fair against the sun, Yet fruits that blossom first, will first be ripe: Content thyself awhile.—By the mass, 'tis morning;

Pleasure and action make the hours seem short. Retire thee; go where thou art billeted: Away, I say; thou shalt know more hereafter: Nay, get thee gone. [Exit Rod.] Two things are to be done,—

My wife must move for Cassio to her mistress; I'll set her on; Myself, the while, to draw the Moor apart, And bring him jump† when he may Cassio find Soliciting his wife.—Ay, that's the way; Dull not device by coldness and delay. [Exit.]

# ACT III.

## SCENE I.—Before the Castle

Enter CASSIO, and some MUSICIANS.

*Cas.* Masters, play here, I will content your pains, Something that's brief; and bid—good-morrow general. [Music.]

Enter CLOWN.

*Clow.* Why, masters, have your instruments been at Naples, that they speak† the more thus? 1 Mus. How, Sir, how!

\* Liberal. † Even. ‡ Tempt.  
§ Recall. ¶ Just at the time.

\* Dismissed in anger. † Talk foolishly. ‡ Bot.



*Clo.* Are these, I pray you, called wind instruments?

*I Mus.* Ay, marry, are they, Sir.

*Clo.* Oh! thereby hangs a tale.

*I Mus.* Whereby hangs a tale, Sir?

*Clo.* Marry, Sir, by many a wind instrument that I know. But, masters, here's money for you: and the general so likes your music, that he desires you, of all loves to make no more noise with it.

*I Mus.* Well, Sir, we will not.

*Clo.* If you have any music that may not be heard, to't again: but, as they say, to hear music, the general does not greatly care.

*I Mus.* We have none such, Sir.

*Clo.* Then put up your pipes in your bag, for I'll away: Go; vanish into air; away.

[*Exeunt MUSICIANS.*]

*Cas.* Dost thou hear, my honest friend?

*Clo.* No, I hear not your honest friend. I hear you.

*Cas.* Pr'ythee, keep up thy quillits.\* There's a poor piece of gold for thee: if the gentlewoman that attends the general's wife be stirring, tell her, there's one Cassio entreats her a little favour of speech: Will thou do this?

*Clo.* She is stirring, Sir: if she will stir hither, I shall seem to notify unto her. [*Exit.*]

*Enter IAGO.*

*Cas.* Do, good my friend.—In happy time, Iago.

*Iago.* You have not been a-bed then?

*Cas.* Why, no; the day had broke Before we parted. I have made bold, Iago, To send in to your wife: My suit to her Is, that she will to virtuous Desdemona Procure me some access.

*Iago.* I'll send her to you presently; And I'll devise a mean to draw the Moor Out of the way, that your converse and business

May be more free. [*Exit.*]  
*Cas.* I humbly thank you for't. I never knew A Florentine more kind and honest.

*Enter EMILIA.*

*Emil.* Good morrow, good Lieutenant: I am sorry

For your displeasure;† but all will soon be well. The general and his wife are talking of it, And she speaks for you stoutly: The Moor replies,

That he is hurt is of great fame in Cyprus, And great affinity; and that, in wholesome wisdom,

He might not but refuse you: but, he protests he loves you;

And needs no other suitor, but his likings,

To take the safest occasion by the front,

To bring you in again.

*Cas.* Yet, I beseech you,—

If you think fit, or that it may be done, Give me advantage of some brief discourse With Desdemona alone.

*Emil.* Pray you, come in; I will bestow you where you shall have time To speak your business freely.

*Cas.* I am much bound to you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—A Room in the Castle.

*Enter OTHELLO, IAGO, and GENTLEMEN.*

*Oth.* These letters give, Iago, to the pilot; And, by him, do my duties to the state: That done, I will be walking on the works, Repair there to me.

*Iago.* Well, my good lord, I'll do't.

*Oth.* This fortification, gentlemen,—shall we see't?

*Gent.* We'll wait upon your lordship. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Before the Castle.

*Enter DESDEMONA, CASSIO, and EMILIA.*

*Des.* Be thou assur'd, good Cassio, I will do All my abilities in thy behalf.

*Emil.* Good madam do; I know it grieves my husband,

As if the case were his.

*Des.* O that's an honest fellow.—Do not doubt, Cassio,

But I will have my lord and you again

As friendly as you were.

*Cas.* Bounteous madam,

Whatever shall become of Michael Cassio,

He's never any thing but your true servant.

*Des.* O Sir, I thank you: You do love my lord:

You have known him long; and be you well assur'd,

He shall in strangeness stand no further off Than in a politic distance.

*Cas.* Ay, but, lady,

That policy may either last so long,

Or feed upon such nice and waterish diet,

Or breed itself so out of circumstance,

That, I being absent, and my place supplied,

My general will forget my love and service.

*Des.* Do not doubt that; before Emilia here,

I give thee warrant of thy place: assure thee,

If I do vow a friendship, I'll perform it;

To the last article: my lord shall never rest;

I'll watch him tame,\* and talk him out of patience;

His bed shall seem a school, his board a shrill;†

I'll intermingle every thing he does

With Cassio's suit: Therefore be merry, Cassio;

For thy solicitor shall rather die,

Than give thy cause away.

*Enter OTHELLO, and IAGO, at a distance.*

*Emil.* Madam, here comes

My lord.

*Cas.* Madam, I'll take my leave.

*Des.* Why, stay,

And hear me speak.

*Cas.* Madam, not now; I am very ill at ease,

Unfit for mine own purposes.

*Des.* Well, well,

Do your discretion. [*Exit CASSIO.*]

*Iago.* Ha! I like not that.

*Oth.* What dost thou say?

*Iago.* Nothing, my lord: or if—I know not what.

*Oth.* Was not that Cassio, parted from my wife?

*Iago.* Cassio, my lord? No, sure, I cannot think it.

That he would steal away so guilty-like,

Seeing you coming.

*Oth.* I do believe 'twas he.

*Des.* How now, my lord?

I have been talking with a suitor here,

A man that languishes in your displeasure.

*Oth.* Who is't you mean?

*Des.* Why, your lieutenant Cassio. Good my lord,

If I have any grace, or power to move you,

His present reconciliation take;‡

For, if he be not one that truly loves you,

That errs in ignorance, and not in cunning,

I have no judgment in an honest face:

I pr'ythee, call him back.

*Oth.* Went he hence now?

*Des.* Ay, sooth, so humbled,

That he hath left part of his grief with me;

I suffer with him. Good love, call him back.

*Oth.* Not now, sweet Desdemona; some other time.

*Des.* But shall't be shortly?

*Oth.* The sooner, sweet, for you.

*Des.* Shall't be to-night at supper?

*Oth.* No, not to-night.

\* Nice distinctions.

† The displeasure you have incurred from Othello.

\* Hawks are tamed by keeping them from sleep.

† Accept his submission.

*Des.* To-morrow dinner then?  
*Oth.* I shall not dine at home;  
 I meet the captains at the citadel.  
*Des.* Why then, to-morrow night; or Tuesday  
 morn;  
 Or Tuesday noon, or night; or Wednesday  
 I pray thee, name the time; but let it not  
 Exceed three days; in faith, he's penitent;  
 And yet his trespass, in our common reason,  
 (Save that, they say, the wars must make ex-  
 amples  
 Out of their best \*) is not almost a fault  
 To incur a private check: When shall he come?  
 Tell me, Othello. I wonder in my soul,  
 What you could ask me, that I should deny.  
 Or stand so mammering † on. What! Michael  
 Cassio,  
 That came a wooing with you; and many a time,  
 When I have spoke of you dispraisingly,  
 Hath ta'en your part; to have so much to do  
 To bring him in! I Trust me, I could do much,—  
*Oth.* Pr'ythee, no more: let him come when  
 he will:  
 I will deny thee nothing.  
*Des.* Why, this is not a boon;  
 'Tis as I should entreat you wear your gloves,  
 Or feed on nourishing dishes, or keep you  
 warm;  
 Or sue to you to do peculiar profit  
 To your own person: Nay, when I have a suit,  
 Wherein I mean to touch your love indeed,  
 It shall be full of poize; and difficulty,  
 And fearful to be granted.  
*Oth.* I will deny thee nothing:  
 Whereon, I do beseech thee, grant me this,  
 To leave me but a little to myself.  
*Des.* Shall I deny you? no: Farewell, my  
 lord.  
*Oth.* Farewell, my Desdemona: I will come  
 to thee straight.  
*Des.* Emilia, come:—Be it as your fancies  
 teach you;  
 Whate'er you be, I am obedient.  
 [Exit, with EMILIA.  
*Oth.* Excellent wretch! Perdition catch my  
 soul,  
 But I do love thee! and, when I love thee not,  
 Chaos is come again.  
*Jago.* My noble lord,—  
*Oth.* What dost thou say, Iago?  
*Jago.* Did Michael Cassio, when you woo'd  
 my lady,  
 Know of your love?  
*Oth.* He did, from first to last: Why dost  
 thou ask?  
*Jago.* But for a satisfaction of my thought;  
 No further harm.  
*Oth.* Why of thy thought, Iago?  
*Jago.* I did not think, he had been acquainted  
 with her.  
*Oth.* O yes; and went between us very oft.  
*Jago.* Indeed?  
*Oth.* Indeed! ay, indeed:—Discern'st thou  
 anight in that?  
 Is he not honest?  
*Jago.* Honest, my lord?  
*Oth.* Ay, honest.  
*Jago.* My lord, for aught I know.  
*Oth.* What dost thou think?  
*Jago.* Think, my lord?  
*Oth.* Think, my lord!  
 By heaven, he echoes me,  
 As if there were some monster in his thought  
 Too hideous to be shown. Thou dost mean  
 something:  
 I heard thee say but now,—Thou lik'st not that,  
 When Cassio left my wife.—What didst not  
 like?  
 And, when I told thee he was of my counsel  
 In my whole course of wooing, thou cri'dst,  
 Indeed?  
 And didst contract and purse thy brow together,

As if thou then had'st shut up in thy brain  
 Some horrible conceit: If thou dost love me,  
 Show me thy thought.  
*Jago.* My lord, you know I love you.  
*Oth.* I think, thou dost;  
 And,—for I know thou art full of love and  
 honesty,  
 And weigh'st thy words before thou giv'st them  
 breath,—  
 Therefore these stops of thine fright me the  
 For such things, in a false disloyal knave,  
 Are tricks of custom; but, in a man that's just,  
 They are close denotements, working from the  
 heart,  
 That passion cannot rule.  
*Jago.* For Michael Cassio,—  
 I dare be sworn, I think that he is honest.  
*Oth.* I think so too.  
*Jago.* Men should be what they seem;  
 Or, those that be not, 'would they might seem  
 none!  
*Oth.* Certain, men should be what they seem.  
*Jago.* Why, then,  
 I think that Cassio is an honest man.  
*Oth.* Nay, yet there's more in this:  
 I pray thee, speak to me as to thy thoughts,  
 As thou dost ruminate; and give thy worst of  
 thoughts  
 The worst of words.  
*Jago.* Good my lord, pardon me;  
 Though I am bound to every act of duty,  
 I am not bound to that all slaves are free to.  
 Utter my thoughts? Why, say, they are vile and  
 false;  
 As where's that palace, whereinto foul things  
 Sometimes intrude not? who has a breast so pure,  
 But some uncleanly apprehensions  
 Keep leets \* and law-days, and in session sit  
 With meditations lawful?  
*Oth.* Thou dost conspire against thy friend,  
 Iago,  
 If thou but think'st him wrong'd, and mak'st  
 his ear  
 A stranger to thy thoughts.  
*Jago.* I do beseech you,—  
 Though I, perchance, am vicious in my guess,  
 As, I confess, it is my nature's plague  
 To spy into abuses; and, oft, my jealousy  
 Shapes faults that are not,—I entreat you then,  
 From one that so imperfectly conjects,  
 You'd take no notice; nor build yourself a trou-  
 ble  
 Out of his scattering and unsure observance:—  
 It were not for your quiet, nor your good,  
 Nor for my manhood, honesty, or wisdom,  
 To let you know my thoughts.  
*Oth.* What dost thou mean?  
*Jago.* Good name, in man and woman, dear  
 my lord,  
 Is the immediate jewel of their souls:  
 Who steals my purse, steals trash: 'tis some-  
 thing, nothing;  
 'Twas mine, 'tis his, and has been slave to  
 thousands;  
 But he, that filches from me my good name,  
 Robs me of that which not enriches him,  
 And makes me poor indeed.  
*Oth.* By heaven, I'll know thy thought.  
*Jago.* You cannot, if my heart were in your  
 hand;  
 Nor shall not, whilst 'tis in my custody.  
*Oth.* Ha!  
*Jago.* O beware, my lord, of jealousy;  
 It is the green-ey'd monster, which doth mock  
 The meat it feeds on: That cuckold lives in  
 bliss,  
 Who, certain of his fate, loves not his wronger;  
 But oh! what damned minutes tells he o'er,  
 Who dotes, yet doubts; suspects, yet strongly  
 loves!  
*Oth.* O misery!  
*Jago.* Poor, and content, is rich, and rich a  
 enough;

\* Best men. † Hesitating.

\* Courts of Enquiry. † Conjectures.

But riches, sinless, \* is as poor as winter,  
To him that ever fears he shall be poor :—  
Good heaven, the souls of all my tribe defend  
From jealousy !

*Oth.* Why ? why is this ?

Think'st thou, I'd make a life of jealousy,  
To follow still the changes of the moon  
With fresh suspicions ? No : to be once in  
doubt,

Is—once to be resolv'd : Exchange me for a  
When I shall turn the business of my soul  
To such exsufficate† and blown surmises,  
Matching thy inference. 'Tis not to make me  
jealous,

To say—my wife is fair, feeds well, loves com-  
Is free of speech, sings, plays, and dances well ;  
Where virtue is, these are more virtuous :  
Nor from mine own weak merits will I draw  
The smallest fear, or doubt of her revolt ;  
For she had eyes, and chose me : No, Iago ;  
I'll see, before I doubt ; when I doubt, prove ;  
And, on the proof, there is no more but this,—  
Away at once with love, or jealousy.

*Iago.* I am glad of this, for now I shall have  
reason

To show the love and duty that I bear you  
With franker spirit : therefore, as I am bound,  
Receive it from me :—I speak not yet of proof.  
Look to your wife ; observe her well with Cas-  
sio ;

Wear your eye thus, not jealous, nor secure :  
I would not have your free and noble nature,  
Out of self-bounty, be abus'd ; look to't :  
I know our country disposition well ;  
In Venice they do let heaven see the pranks  
They dare not show their husbands ; their best  
conscience

Is—not to leave undone, but keep unknown.

*Oth.* Dost thou say so ?

*Iago.* She did deceive her father, marrying  
you ;

And, when she seem'd to shake, and fear your  
looks,  
She lov'd them most.

*Oth.* And so she did.

*Iago.* Why, go to, then ;

She that, so young, could give out such a seem-  
ing, I

To seal ; her father's eyes up, close as oak,—  
He thought 'twas witchcraft :—But I am much  
to blame ;

I humbly do beseech you of your pardon,  
For too much loving you.

*Oth.* I am bound to thee for ever.

*Iago.* I see, this hath a little dash'd your  
spirits.

*Oth.* Not a jot, not a jot.

*Iago.* Trust me, I fear it has.

I hope, you will consider what is spoke  
Comes from my love ;—But, I do see you are  
mov'd :—

I am to pray you, not to strain my speech  
To grosser issues,‡ nor to larger reach,  
Than to suspicion.

*Oth.* I will not.

*Iago.* Should you do so, my lord,  
My speech should fall into such vile success  
As my thoughts aim not at. Cassio's my worthy  
friend :—

My lord, I see you are mov'd.

*Oth.* No, not much mov'd :—

I do not think but Desdemona's honest.

*Iago.* Long live she so ! and long live you to  
think so !

*Oth.* And yet, how nature errs from it-  
self,—

*Iago.* Ay, there's the point : As, to be bold  
with you,

Not to affect many proposed matches,  
Of her own clime, complexion, and degree ;  
Whereto, we see, in all things nature tends :

\* Endless. † Strained, or blown. ‡ Appearances.  
§ An expression from falconry : To send a hawk is to  
sway up his eye-side. ¶ Cautiousness.

Foh ! one may smell, in such, a will most rank.  
Foul disproportion, thoughts unnatural.—  
But pardon me ; I do not, in position,  
Distinctly speak of her ; though I may fear  
Her will, recolling to her better judgment,  
May fall to match you with her country forms,  
And (happily) repent.

*Oth.* Farewell, farewell :

If more thou dost perceive, let me know more ;  
Set on thy wife to observe : Leave me, Iago.

*Iago.* My lord, I take my leave. [Going.]

*Oth.* Why did I marry ?—This honest crea-  
ture, doubtless, [folds,  
Sees and knows more, much more, than he un-  
lago.

My lord, I would I might entreat your  
honour

To scan this thing no further : leave it to time :  
And though it be fit that Cassio have his place,  
(For, sure, he fills it up with great ability.)

Yet if you please to hold him off awhile,  
You shall by that perceive him and his means :

Note, if your lady strain his entertainment \*  
With any strong or vehement opportunity ;  
Much will be seen in that. In the meantime,  
Let me be thought too busy in my fears

(As worthy cause I have to fear I am,)  
And hold her free, I do beseech your honour.

*Oth.* Fear not my government.

*Iago.* I once more take my leave. [Exit.]

*Oth.* This fellow's of exceeding honesty,  
And knows all qualities, with a learned spirit,  
Of human dealings : If I do prove her haggard,  
Though that her jesses † were my dear heart-  
strings,

I'd whistle her off, and let her down the wind,  
To prey at fortune. Haply, for I am black,

And have not those soft parts of conversation  
That chamberers ‡ have ;—Or, for I am de-  
clin'd

Into the vale of years ;—yet that's not much ;—  
She's gone ; I am abus'd ; and my relief  
Must be to loathe her. O curse of marriage,  
That we can call these delicate creatures ours,  
And not their appetites ! I had rather be a  
load,

And live upon the vapour of a duncheon,  
Than keep a corner in the thing I love,  
For others' uses. Yet, 'tis the plague of great  
ones ;

Prerogativ'd are they less than the base ;  
'Tis destiny unshunnable, like death ;  
Even then this forked plague is fated to us,  
When we do quicken. ¶ Desdemona comes :

*Enter DESDEMONA, and EMILIA.*

If she be false, O then heaven mocks itself !—  
I'll not believe it.

*Des.* How now, my dear Othello ?  
Your dinner, and the generous issuers,  
By you invited, do attend your presence.

*Oth.* I am to blame.

*Des.* Why is your speech so faint ? are you  
not well ?

*Oth.* I have a pain upon my forehead here.

*Des.* Faith, that's with watching ; 'twill away  
again :

Let me but bind it hard, within this hour  
It will be well.

*Oth.* Your napkin ¶ is too little ;  
[He puts the handkerchief from him and it  
drops.]

Let it alone. Come, I'll go in with you.

*Des.* I am very sorry that you are not well.

[Re-enter Othello and Des.]

*Emil.* I am glad I have found this napkin ;  
This was her first remembrance from the Moor :

My wayward husband hath a hundred times  
Wood'd me to steal it ; but she so loves the  
token,

\* Press hard his restoration to office.  
† A term of reproach.

‡ Straps of leather by which a hawk is held on the fist.  
§ Intriguers. ¶ When he began to love.

¶ In the north of England and in Scotland this term  
for a handkerchief is still used.

# Scene III. OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE.

219

(For he conjur'd her, she would ever keep it.)  
That she reserves it evermore about her,  
To kiss and talk to. I'll have the work ta'en out,  
And give it Iago:  
What he'll do with it, heaven knows, not I;  
I nothing, but to please his fantasy.

Enter IAGO.

Iago. How now! what do you here alone?

Emil. Do not you chide; I have a thing for you.

Iago. A thing for me?—It is a common thing,—

Emil. Ha!

Iago. To have a foolish wife.

Emil. O is that all? What will you give me now.

For that same handkerchief?

Iago. What handkerchief?

Emil. What handkerchief?

Why, that the Moor first gave to Desdemona;

That which you so often did bid me steal.

Iago. Hast stolen it from her?

Emil. No, taith; she let it drop by negligence;

And, to the advantage, I being here, took't up.

Look, here it is.

Iago. A good wench: give it me.

Emil. What will you do with it, that you have been so earnest

To have me filch it?

Iago. Why, what's that to you?

[Snatching it.

Emil. If it be not for some purpose of import,

Give it me again: Poor lady! she'll run mad,

When she shall lack it.

Iago. Be not you known oft; \* I have use for it.

Go, leave me. [Exit EMILIA.

I will in Cassio's lodging lose this napkin,

And let him find it: Trifles, light as air,

Are, to the jealous, confirmation strong

As proofs of holy writ. This may do something.

The Moor already changes with my poison:—

Dangerous conceits are, in their natures, poi-

sons,

Which, at the first, are scarce found to distaste;

But, with a little act upon the blood,

Burn like the mines of sulphur.—I did say so:—

Enter OTHELLO.

Look where he comes! Not poppy, nor mandragora,†

Nor all the drowsy syrups of the world,

Shall ever medicine thee to that sweet sleep

Which thou ow'd'st ‡ yesterday.

Oth. Ha! ha! false to me?

To me?

Iago. Why, how now, general? no more of that.

Oth. Avaunt! begone! thou hast set me on the rack:—

I swear, 'tis better to be much abus'd, Than but to know't a little.

Iago. How now, my lord?

Oth. What sense had I of her stolen hours of lust?

I saw it not; thought it not, it harm'd not me: I slept the next night well, was free and merry:

I found not Cassio's kisses on her lips: He that is robb'd, not wanting what is stolen,

Let him not know it, and he's not robb'd at all. Iago. I am sorry to hear this.

Oth. I had been happy, if the general camp, Pioneers § and all, had tasted her sweet body,

So I had nothing known: O now, for ever,

Farewell the tranquil mind! farewell content! Farewell the plumed troop, and the big wars, That make ambition virtue! O farewell! Farewell the neighing steed, and the shrill trump,

The spirit-stirring drum, the ear-piercing fife, The royal banner; and all quality, [war] Pride, pomp, and circumstance of glorious And, O you mortal engines, whose rude throats The immortal Jove's dread clamours counter-

feit, Farewell! Othello's occupation's gone!

Iago. Is it possible?—My lord,—

Oth. Villain, be sure thou prove my love a whore;

Be sure of it; give me the ocular proof;

[Taking him by the Throat.

Or, by the worth of mine eternal soul,

Thou hadst been better have been born a dog,

Than answer my wak'd wrath.

Iago. Is it come to this?

Oth. Make me to see it; or (at the least) so

prove it,

That the probation bear no hinge, nor loop,

To hang a doubt on: or, woe upon thy lie!

Iago. My noble lord,—

Oth. If thou dost slander her, and torture me,

Never pray more: abandon all remorse; \*

On horror's head horrors accumulate:

Do deeds to make heaven weep, all earth

amaz'd,

For nothing canst thou to damnation add,

Greater than that.

Iago. O grace! O heaven defend me!

Are you a man? have you a soul, or sense?—

God be wi' you: take mine office.—O wretched

fool,

That liv'st to make thine honesty a vice!—

O monstrous world! Take note, take note, O

world,

To be direct and honest, is not safe.—

I thank you for this profit; and, from hence,

I'll love no friend, since love breeds such of-

fence.

Oth. Nay, stay:—Thou shouldst be honest.

Iago. I should be wise; for honesty's a fool,

And loses that it works for.

Oth. By the world, [not,

I think my wife be honest, and think she is

I think that thou art just, and think thou art

not; [fresh

I'll have some proof: Her name, that was as

As Dian's visage, is now begrim'd and black

As mine own face.—If there be cords, or

knives,

Poison, or fire, or suffocating streams,

I'll not endure it.—Would, I were satisfied!

Iago. I see, Sir, you are eaten up with pas-

sion: I do repent me that I put it to you.

You would be satisfied?

Oth. Would I nay, I will.

Iago. And may: but, how? how satisfied, my

lord?

Would you, the supervisor, grossly gape on?

Behold her tupp'd!

Oth. Death and damnation! O!

Iago. It were a tedious difficulty, I think,

To bring them to that prospect: Damn them

then,

If ever mortal eyes do see them bolster,

More than their own! What then? how then?

What shall I say? Where's satisfaction?

It is impossible, you should see this,

Were they as prime as goats, as hot as monkeys,†

As salt as wolves in pride, and fools as gross

As ignorance made drunk. But, yet, I say,

If imputation and strong circumstances,

Which lead directly to the door of truth,

Will give you satisfaction, you may have it.

\* All pr'y.

\* Seem as if you knew nothing of the matter.  
† The mandrake, or mandragora, was an opiate of the most powerful kind.

‡ Possessed.

§ Pioneers were generally degraded soldiers.

† It were to be wished that this and many of the succeeding passages could be expunged; but the facts which are adduced as proofs of adultery, are necessarily of such a nature as cannot be expressed in terms of perfect delicacy.

*Oth.* Give me a living reason she's disloyal.

*Jago.* I do not like the office :

But, sith I am entered in this canse so far,—  
Pick'd to it by foolish honesty and love,—  
I will go on. I lay with Cassio lately ;  
And, being troubled with a raging tooth,  
I could not sleep.

There are a kind of men so loose of soul,  
That in their sleeps will mutter their affairs ;  
One of this kind is Cassio :

In sleep I heard him say,—*Sweet Desdemona,  
Let us be wary, let us hide our loves!* [hand,  
And then, Sir, would he gripe, and wring my  
Cry,—*O sweet creature!* and then kiss me  
As if he pluck'd up kisses by the roots, [hard,  
That grew upon my lips : then laid his leg  
Over my thigh, and sigh'd, and kiss'd ; and  
then [floor !

Cried,—*Cursed fate! that gave thee to the*

*Oth.* O monstrous ! monstrous !

*Jago.* Nay, this was but his dream.

*Oth.* But this denoted a foregone conclusion ;  
'Tis a shrewd doubt, though it be but a dream.

*Jago.* And this may help to thicken other  
That do demonstrate thinly. [proofs,

*Oth.* I'll tear her all to pieces.

*Jago.* Nay, but be wise : yet we see nothing  
done :

She may be honest yet. Tell me but this,—  
Have you not sometimes seen a handkerchief,  
Spotted with strawberries, in your wife's hand ?

*Oth.* I gave her such a one ; 'twas my first  
gift.

*Jago.* I know not that : but such a handker-  
chief,

(I am sure it was your wife's,) did I to-day  
See Cassio wipe his beard with.

*Oth.* If it be that,—

*Jago.* If it be that, or any that was her's,  
It speaks against her with the other proofs.

*Oth.* O that the slave had forty thousand  
lives ;

One is too poor, too weak for my revenge !

Now do I see 'tis true.—Look here, Iago ;

All my fond love thus I do blow to heaven :

'Tis gone.—

Arise, black vengeance, from thy hollow cell !

Yield up, O love, thy crown, and hearted  
throne ; [fraught,

To tyrannous hate ! swell, bosom, with thy  
For 'tis of asp's tongues !

*Jago.* Pray, be content.

*Oth.* O blood, Iago, blood !

*Jago.* Patience, I say ; your mind, perhaps,  
may change.

*Oth.* Never, Iago. Like to the Pontic sea,  
Whose icy current and compulsive course  
Ne'er feels retiring ebb, but keeps due on  
To the Propontic and the Hellespont ;  
Even so my bloody thoughts, with violent  
pace, [love,

Shall ne'er look back, ne'er ebb to humble  
Till that a capable and wide revenge

Swallow them up.—Now, by yond' marble  
heaven,

In the due reverence of a sacred vow [Kneels.  
I here engage my words.

*Jago.* Do not rise yet.— [Kneels.

Witness, you ever-burning lights above !

You elements that clip \* us round about !

Witness, that here Iago doth give up

The execution of his wit, hands, heart,

To wrong'd Othello's service ! let him com-  
mand,

And to ~~they~~ shall be in me remorse, †

What bloody work soever.

*Oth.* I greet thy love,

Not with vain thanks, but with acceptance

bounteous,

And will upon the instant put thee to't

Within these three days let me hear thee say

That Cassio's not alive.

\* Embrace.

† I will do it out of pity

or remorse for him.

*Jago.* My friend is dead ; 'tis done, at your  
But let her live. [repeats

*Oth.* Damn her, lewd minx ! O damn her !  
Come, go with me apart ; I will withdraw,  
To turnish me with some swift means of death  
For the fair devil. Now art thou my lieuten-  
ant.

*Jago.* I am your own for ever. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV.—The same.

Enter DESDEMONA, EMILIA, and CLOWN.

*Des.* Do you know, Sirrah, where lieutenant  
Cassio lies ?

*Clo.* I dare not say, he lies any where.

*Des.* Why, man ?

*Clo.* He is a soldier ; and for me to say a  
soldier lies, is stabbing.

*Des.* Go to ; Where lodges he ?

*Clo.* To tell you where he lodges, is to tell  
you where I lie.

*Des.* Can any thing be made of this ?

*Clo.* I know not where he lodges ; and for  
me to devise a lodging, and say, he lies here,  
or he lies there, were to lie in my own throat.

*Des.* Can you inquire him out, and be edi-  
fied by report ?

*Clo.* I will catechise the world for him ; that  
is, make questions, and by them answer.

*Des.* Seek him, bid him come hither : tell  
him I have moved my lord in his behalf, and  
hope all will be well.

*Clo.* To do this is within the compass of  
man's wit ; and therefore I will attempt the  
doing it. [Exit.

*Des.* Where should I lose that handkerchief,  
Emilia ?

*Emil.* I know not, madam.

*Des.* Believe me, I had rather have lost my  
purse

Full of crusadoes. \* And but my noble Moor  
is true of mind, and made of no such baseness  
As jealous creatures are, it were enough

To put him to ill-thinking.

*Emil.* Is he not jealous ?

*Des.* Who, he ? I think the sun where he  
was born,

Drew all such humours from him.

*Emil.* Look, where he comes.

*Des.* I will not leave him now, till Cassio  
Be call'd to him.—How is't with you, my lord ?

#### Enter OTHELLO.

*Oth.* Well, my good lady.—[Aside.] O  
hardness to dissemble !—

How do you do, Desdemona ?

*Des.* Well, my good lord.

*Oth.* Give me your hand : This hand is moist,  
my lady.

*Des.* It yet has felt no age, nor known no  
sorrow.

*Oth.* This argues fruitfulness, and liberal  
heart ;— [quires

Hot, hot, and moist : This hand of your's re-  
A sequester from liberty, fasting and prayer,

Much castigation, † exercise devout ;  
For here's a young and sweating devil here,

That commonly rebels. 'Tis a good hand,  
A frank one.

*Des.* You may, indeed, say so ;

For 'twas that hand that gave away my heart.

*Oth.* A liberal hand : The hearts of old gave  
hands ;

But our new heraldry is—hands, not hearts.

*Des.* I cannot speak of this, Come now, your  
promise.

*Oth.* What promise, chuck ?

*Des.* I have sent to bid Cassio come speak  
with you.

*Oth.* I have a salt and sullen rheum offends  
Lend me thy handkerchief. [gives

*Des.* Here, my lord.

*Oth.* That which I gave you.

\* A Portuguese coin, &c.

† Penance, discipline.

*Des.* I have it not about me.

*Oth.* Not?

*Des.* No, indeed, my lord.

*Oth.* That is a fault:

That handkerchief

Did an Egyptian to my mother give;

She was a charmer,\* and could almost read

The thoughts of people: she told her, while  
she kept it, [the

'Twould make her amiable, and subdue my fa-  
Entirely to her love; but if she lost it,

Or made a gift of it, my father's eye [hunt

Should hold her loathly, and his spirits should

After new fancies: She, dying, gave it me;

And bid me, when my fate would have me  
wife,

To give it her. I did so: and take heed oft,

Make it a darling like your precious eye;

To lose or give't away, were such perdition,

As nothing else could match.

*Des.* Is it possible?

*Oth.* 'Tis true, there's magic in the web of it:

A sibyl, that had number'd in the world

The sun to make two hundred compasses,

In her prophetic fury sew'd the work;

The worms were hallow'd, that did breed the

silk;

And it was died in mummy,† which the skillful

Conserv'd of maidens' hearts.

*Des.* Indeed! is't true?

*Oth.* Most veritable; therefore look to't well.

*Des.* Then 'would to heaven that I had never

seen it.

*Oth.* Ha! wherefore?

*Des.* Why do you speak so startlingly and

rash?

*Oth.* Is't lost? is't gone? speak, is it out of

the way?

*Des.* Heaven bless us!

*Oth.* Say you?

*Des.* It is not lost; But what an if it were?

*Oth.* Ha!

*Des.* I say, it is not lost.

*Oth.* Fetch't, let me see it.

*Des.* Why, so I can, Sir, but I will not now;

This is a trick, to put me from my suit;

I pray, let Cassio be receiv'd again.

*Oth.* Fetch me that handkerchief; my mind

mis-gives.

*Des.* Come, come;

You'll never meet a more sufficient man.

*Oth.* The handkerchief,—

*Des.* I pray, talk me of Cassio.

*Oth.* The handkerchief,—

*Des.* A man that, all his time,

Hath founded his good fortune on your love;

Shar'd dangers with you;—

*Oth.* The handkerchief,—

*Des.* In sooth,

You are to blame.

*Oth.* Away! [Exit OTHELLO.

*Emil.* Is not this man jealous?

*Des.* I ne'er saw this before.

Sure, there's some wonder in this handker-

chief:

I am most unhappy in the loss of it.

*Emil.* 'Tis not a year or two shows us a man:

They are all but stomachs, and we all but food;

They eat us hungerly, and when they are full,

They belch us. Look you! Cassio, and my hus-

band.

Enter IAGO and CASSIO.

*Iago.* There is no other way; 'tis she must

do't;

And, lo, the happiness I go, and importune her.

*Des.* How now, good Cassio! what's the news

with you?

*Cas.* Madam, my former suit: I do beseech

you,

That, by your virtuous means, I may again

Exist, and be a member of his love,

Whom I, with all the duty of my heart,

Entirely honour; I would not be delay'd:

If my offence be of such mortal kind,

That neither service past, nor present sorrows,

Nor purpos'd merit in futurity,

Can ransom me into his love again,

But to know so must be my benefit;

So shall I clothe me in a forc'd content,

And shut myself up in some other course,

To fortune's alms.

*Des.* Alas! thrice-gentle Cassio,

My advocacy is not now in tune:

My lord is not my lord; nor should I know him,

Were he in favour,\* as in humour, alter'd.

So help me, every spirit sanctified,

As I have spoken for you all my best;

And stood within the blank† of his displeasure,

For my free speech! You must awhile be

patient:

What I can do, I will; and more I will,

Than for myself I dare: let that suffice you.

*Iago.* Is my lord angry?

*Emil.* He went hence but now,

And certainly in strange uneasiness.

*Iago.* Can he be angry? I have seen the can-

non,

When it hath blown his ranks into the air,

And, like the devil, from his very arm

Puff'd his own brother;—And can he be an-

gry?

Something of moment, then: I will go meet

him;

There's matter in't indeed, if he be angry.

*Des.* I pr'ythee, do so.—Something, sure, of

state,— [Exit IAGO.

Either from Venice; or some unbatch'd prac-

tice,‡

Made demonstrable here in Cyprus to him,—

Hath puddled his clear spirit; and, in such

cases,

Men's natures wrangle with inferior things,

Though great ones are their object. 'Tis even

For let our finger ache, and it endues [so]

Our other healthful members ev'n to that

sense

Of pain: Nay, we must think, men are not

Nor of them look for such observances [gods:]

As fit the bridal:—Beshrew me much, Emilia,

I was (unhandsome warrior as I am),

Arraigning his unkindness with my soul;

But now I find, I had suborn'd the witness,

And he's indicted falsely.

*Emil.* Pray heaven, it be state matters, as

you think;

And no conception, nor no jealous toy,

Concerning you.

*Des.* Alas, the day! I never gave him cause.

*Emil.* But jealous souls will not be an-

swered so:

They are not ever jealous for the cause,

But jealous for they are jealous: 'tis a monster,

Begot upon itself, born on itself.

*Des.* Heaven keep that monster from Othel-

lo's mind!

*Emil.* Lady, amen.

*Des.* I will go seek him.—Cassio walk here-

about:

If I do find him fit, I'll move your suit,

And seek to effect it to my uttermost.

*Cas.* I humbly thank your ladyship.

[Exit DESDEMONA and EMILIA.

Enter BIANCA.

\* *Bian.* Save you, friend Cassio!

*Cas.* What make you from home?

How is it with you, my most fair Bianca?

I'faith, sweet love, I was coming to your

house.

*Bian.* And I was going to your lodging,

Cassio. [lights]

What! keep a week away? seven days and

\* The balsamic liquor effused from mummies, was formerly famous for its anti-epileptic qualities.

\* In countenance. † Within the shot of his anger. ‡ Treason. § The nuptial feast.

Eight score eight hours? and lovers' absent hours,  
More tedious than the dial eight score times?  
O weary reckoning!

Cas. Pardon me, Bianca;  
I have this while with leaden thoughts been press'd;

But I shall, in a more continuant time,\*  
Strike off this score of absence. Sweet Bianca,  
[Giving her Desdemona's Handkerchief.]  
Take me this work out.†

Bian. O Cassio, whence came this?  
This is some token from a newer friend.  
To the felt absence now I feel a cause:  
Is it come to this? Well, well.

Cas. Woman, go to!  
Throw your vile guesses in the devil's teeth,  
From whence you have them. You are jealous now,  
[brance:]

That this is from some mistress, some remembrance,  
No, in good troth, Bianca.

Bian. Why, whose is it?

Cas. I know not, sweet: I found it in my chamber.

I like the work well; ere it be demanded,  
(As like enough, it will,) I'd have it copied:  
Take it, and do't; and leave me for this time.

Bian. Leave you! wherefore?

Cas. I do attend here on the general;  
And think it no addition, nor my wish  
To have him see me woman'd.

Bian. Why, I pray you?

Cas. Not that I love you not.

Bian. But that you do not love me.  
I pray you, bring me on the way a little,  
And say if I shall see you soon at night.

Cas. 'Tis but a little way that I can bring you,  
For I attend here: but I'll see you soon.

Bian. 'Tis very good: I must be circumstanti'd.‡  
[Exit.]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—The same.

Enter OTHELLO and IAGO.

Iago. Will you think so?

Oth. Think so, Iago?

Iago. What,

To kiss in private?

Oth. An unauthorized kiss.

Iago. Or to be naked with her friend abed,  
An hour, or more, not meaning any harm?

Oth. Naked abed, Iago, not mean harm?  
It is hypocrisy against the devil:

They that mean virtuously, and yet do so,  
The devil their virtue tempts, and they tempt heaven.

Iago. So they do nothing, 'tis a venial slip:  
But if I give my wife a handkerchief,—

Oth. What then?

Iago. Why then, 'tis her's, my lord; and being her's,

She may, I think, bestow't on any man.

Oth. She is protectress of her honour too;  
May she give that?

Iago. Her honour is an essence that's not seen;

They have it very oft, that have it not:

But, for the handkerchief,—

Oth. By heaven, I would most gladly have forgot it:—

Thou said'st,—O it comes o'er my memory,

As doth the raven o'er the infected house,

Boding to all,§ he had my handkerchief.

Iago. Ay, what of that?

Oth. That's not so good, now.

Iago. What, if I had said, I had seen him do you wrong?

Or heard him say,—As knaves be such abroad  
Who having, by their own importunate suit,  
Or voluntary dotage of some mistress,  
Convinced or supplied\* them, cannot choose  
But they must blush—

Oth. Hath he said any thing?

Iago. He hath, my lord; but be you well assur'd,

No more than he'll unswear.

Oth. What hath he said?

Iago. 'Faith, that he did,—I know not what he did.

Oth. What? what?

Iago. Lie—

Oth. With her?

Iago. With her, on her; what you will.

Oth. Lie with her! lie on her!—We say, lie on her, when they belie her: Lie with her: that's fulsome.—Handkerchief,—confessions,—handkerchief.—To confess, and be hanged for his labour,†—First to be hanged, and then to confess:—I tremble at it. Nature would not invest herself in such shadowing passion, without some instruction. It is not words, that shake me thus:—Pish!—Noses, ears, and lips:—Is't possible?—Confess!—Handkerchief!—O devil!—

[Falls in a Trance.]

Iago. Work on,  
My medicine, work! Thus credulous fools are caught;

And many worthy and chaste dames, even thus,  
All guiltless meet reproach.—What, ho! my lord!

Enter CASSIO.

My lord, I say! Othello!—How now, Cassio?

Cas. What is the matter?

Iago. My lord is fallen into an epilepsy;  
This is his second fit; he had one yesterday.

Cas. Rub him about the temples.

Iago. No, forbear:  
The lethargy must have his quiet course:  
If not, he foams at mouth; and, by and by,  
Breaks out to savage madness. Look, he stirs:  
Do you withdraw yourself a little while,  
He will recover straight; when he is gone,  
I would on great occasion speak with you.—

[Exit CASSIO.]

How is it general? have you not hurt your head?

Oth. Dost thou mock me?

Iago. I mock you! no, by heaven:

'Would you would bear your fortunes like a man.

Oth. A horned man's a monster, and a beast.

Iago. There's many a beast then in a populous city,

And many a civil monster.

Oth. Did he confess it?

Iago. Good Sir, be a man;

Think every hearded fellow, that's but yok'd,  
May draw with you: there's millions now alive,  
That nightly lie in those unproper beds,  
Which they dare swear peculiar; your case is better.

O 'tis the spite of hell, the fiend's arch-mock,  
To lip a wanton in a secure couch,  
And to suppose her chaste! No, let me know;  
And, knowing what I am, I know what she shall be.

Oth. O thou art wise; 'tis certain.

Iago. Stand you awhile apart:

Confine yourself but in a patient list.‡  
Whilst you were here, ere while mad with your grief,

(A passion most unsuiting such a man,)  
Cassio came hither: I shifted him away,  
And laid good sense upon your ecstasy;  
Bade him anon return, and here speak with me;

The which he promis'd. Do but enlave § your.

\* Time less interrupted. † The meaning is not, pick out of the work, but copy it in another handkerchief. ‡ Give way to circumstances. § The raven was thought to be a constant attendant on a house infected with the plague.

\* Old spelling of supplied. † A proverbial saying. ‡ Common. § Within the bounds of patience. ¶ Hide.

And mark the sneers, the gibes, and notable  
scorns,

That dwell in every region of his face:  
For I will make him tell the tale anew,—  
Where, how, how oft, how long ago, and when  
He hath, and is again to cope your wife;  
I say, but mark his gesture. Marry, patience;  
Or I shall say, you are all in all in spleen,  
And nothing of a man.

*Oth.* Dost thou hear, Iago?  
I will be found most cunning in my patience;  
But (dost thou hear?) most bloody.

*Iago.* That's not amiss;  
But yet keep time in all. Will you withdraw;  
[*OTHELLO withdraws.*]

Now will I question Cassio of Bianca,  
A housewife, that, by selling her desires,  
Buys herself bread and clothes: it is a creature,  
That dotes on Cassio,—as 'tis the strumpet's  
plague,

To beguile many, and be beguil'd by one;  
He, when he hears of her, cannot refrain  
From the excess of laughter:—Here he comes:—

*Re-enter Cassio.*

As he shall smile, Othello shall go mad;  
And his unbookish,\* jealousy must construe  
Poor Cassio's smiles, gestures, and light be-  
haviour [tenant]

Quite in the wrong.—How do you now, lieu-  
*Cas.* The worse, that you give me the addi-  
Whose want even kills me. [tion]

*Iago.* Ply Desdemona well, and you are  
sure of't.

Now, if this suit lay in Bianca's power,  
[*Speaking lower.*]

How quickly should you speed?

*Cas.* Alas, poor catiff!

*Oth.* Look, how he laughs already! [*Aside.*]

*Iago.* I never knew a woman love man so.

*Cas.* Alas, poor rogue! I think I'faith she  
loves me. [*Aside.*]

*Oth.* Now he denies it faintly, and laughs it  
out. [*Aside.*]

*Iago.* Do you hear, Cassio?

*Oth.* Now he importunes him

To tell it o'er: Go to; well said, well said.

[*Aside.*]

*Iago.* She gives it out, that you shall marry

Do you intend it? [her:]

*Cas.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* Do you triumph, Roman? do you tri-  
umph! [*Aside.*]

*Cas.* I marry her!—What a customer!† I

pr'ythee bear some charity, to my wit; do not

think it so unwholesome. Ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* So, so, so, so: They laugh that win.

[*Aside.*]

*Iago.* 'Faith, the cry goes that you shall

marry her.

*Cas.* Pr'ythee say true.

*Iago.* I am a very villain else.

*Oth.* Have you scored me? Well. [*Aside.*]

*Cas.* This is the monkey's own giving out:

she is persuaded I will marry her, out of her

own love and flattery, not out of my promise.

*Oth.* Iago beckons me; now he begins the  
story. [*Aside.*]

*Cas.* She was here even now: she haunts me

in every place. I was, the other day, talking on

the sea-bank with certain Venetians; and thither

comes this bauble; by this hand, she falls thus

about my neck;—

*Oth.* Crying, O dear Cassio! as it were: his

gesture imports it. [*Aside.*]

*Cas.* So hangs, and lolls, and weeps upon me;

so hales and pulls me: ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* Now he tells, how she pluck'd him to

my chamber: O I see that nose of yours, but

not that dog I shall throw it to. [*Aside.*]

*Cas.* Well, I must leave her company.

*Iago.* Before me! look where she comes.

*Enter Bianca.*

*Cas.* 'Tis such another fitchew!† marry, a  
perfum'd one.—What do you mean by this  
haunting of me?

*Bian.* Let the devil and his dam haunt you!  
What did you mean by that same handkerchief  
you gave me even now? I was a fine fool to  
take it. I must take out the whole work!—A  
likely piece of work, that you should find it in  
your chamber, and not know who left it there!  
This is some minx's token, and I must take out  
the work? There,—give it your bobby-horse:  
wheresoever you had it, I'll take out no work on't.

*Cas.* How now, my sweet Bianca? how now?

*Oth.* By heaven, that should be my handker-  
chief! [*Aside.*]

*Bian.* And you'll come to supper to-night, you

may: an you will not, come when you are next

prepared for. [*Exit.*]

*Iago.* After her, after her.

*Cas.* 'Faith I must, she'll rail in the streets

else.

*Iago.* Will you sup there?

*Cas.* 'Faith, I intend so.

*Iago.* Well, I may chance to see you; for I

would very fain speak with you.

*Cas.* Pr'ythee, come; Will you?

*Iago.* Go to: say no more. [*Exit Cassio.*]

*Oth.* How shall I murder him, Iago?

*Iago.* Did you perceive how he laughed at

his vice?

*Oth.* O Iago!

*Iago.* And did you see the handkerchief?

*Oth.* Was that mine?

*Iago.* Your's by this hand: and to see how he

prizes the foolish woman, your wife! she gave it

to him, and he hath given it his whore.

*Oth.* I would have him nine years a kill-  
ing:—A fine woman! a fair woman! a sweet

woman!

*Iago.* Nay, you must forget that.

*Oth.* Ay, let her rot, and perish, and be

damned to-night; for she shall not live: No, my

heart is turned to stone; I strike it, and it hurts

my hand. O the world hath not a sweeter cre-  
ature; she might lie by an emperor's side, and

command him tasks.

*Iago.* Nay, that's not your way.

*Oth.* Hang her! I do but say what she is:—

So delicate with her needle!—An admirable

musician! O she will sing the savageness out

of a bear!—Of so high and plenteous wit and

invention!

*Iago.* She's the worse for all this.

*Oth.* O a thousand, a thousand times:—And

then, of so gentle a condition!†

*Iago.* Ay, too gentle.

*Oth.* Nay, that's certain: But yet the pity of

it, Iago!—O Iago, the pity of it, Iago!

*Iago.* If you are so fond over her iniquity,

give her patent to offend; for, if it touch not you,

it comes near nobody.

*Oth.* I will chop her into messes:—Cuckold

me!

*Iago.* O 'tis foul in her.

*Oth.* With mine officer!

*Iago.* That's fouler.

*Oth.* Get me some poison, Iago; this night

—I'll not expostulate with her, lest her body

and beauty unprovide my mind again: this night,

Iago.

*Iago.* Do it not with poison, strangle her in

her bed, even the bed she hath contaminated.

*Oth.* Good, good: the justice of it pleases;

very good.

*Iago.* And for Cassio,—let me be his under-  
taker: You shall hear more by midnight.

[*A Trumpet within.*]

*Oth.* Excellent good.—What trumpet is that

same?

\* Ignorant. † Title of Lieutenant.  
‡ A common woman.

\* A pole-cat. † Of so sweet a disposition.



*Iago.* Something from Venice, sure. 'Tis Lodovico,  
Come from the duke: and, see, your wife is with him.

*Enter LODOVICO, DESDEMONA, and Attendants.*

*Lod.* 'Save you, worthy general!

*Oth.* With all my heart, Sir.

*Lod.* The duke and senators of Venice greet you.

*Oth.* I kiss the instrument of their pleasures.

*Des.* And what's the news, good cousin Lodovico?

*Iago.* I am very glad to see you, signior; Welcome to Cyprus.

*Lod.* I thank you: How does lieutenant Cassio?

*Iago.* Lives, Sir.

*Des.* Cousin, there's fallen between him and my lord

An unkind breach: but you shall make all well.

*Oth.* Are you sure of that?

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* This fail you not to do, as you will—

*[Reads.]*

*Lod.* He did not call; he's busy in the paper.

*Des.* A most unhappy one! I would do much

To atone \* them, for the love I bear to Cassio.

*Oth.* Fire and brimstone!

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* Are you wise?

*Des.* What, is he angry?

*Lod.* May be, the letter mov'd him;

For, as I think, they do command him home, Deputing Cassio in his government.

*Des.* By my troth, I am glad on't.

*Oth.* Indeed.

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* I am glad to see you mad.

*Des.* How, sweet Othello?

*Oth.* Devil.

*Des.* I have not deserv'd this.

*Lod.* My lord, this would not be believ'd in Venice,

Though I should swear I saw it: 'Tis very much; Make her amends, she weeps.

*Oth.* O devil, devil!

If that the earth could teem with woman's tears, Each drop she falls would prove a crocodile:— Out of my sight!

*Des.* I will not stay to offend you.

*Lod.* Truly, an obedient lady:—

I do beseech your lordship, call her back.

*Oth.* Mistress,—

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* What would you with her, Sir?

*Lod.* Who, I, my lord?

*Oth.* Ay, you did wish, that I would make her turn:

Sir, she can turn and turn, and yet go on, And turn again: and she can weep, Sir, weep; And she's obedient, as you say,—obedient,— Very obedient:—Proceed you in your tears.— Concerning this, Sir,—O well-painted passion! I am commanded home:—Get you away; I'll send for you anon.—Sir, I obey the mandate,

And will return to Venice:—Hence:—avaunt!

*[Exit DESDEMONA.]*  
Cassio shall have my place. And,—Sir, to-night,

I do entreat that we may sup together. You are welcome, Sir, to Cyprus.—Goats, and monks!

*[Exit.]*  
*Lod.* Is this the noble Moor whom our

Calball-in-all sufficient?—Thus the noble man—Whom passion could not shake? whose solid virtue

The shot of accident, nor dart of chance, Could neither graze nor pierce?

\* Reconcile.

*Iago.* He is much chang'd.

*Lod.* Are his wits safe? is he not light of brain?

*Iago.* He is that he is; I may not breathe my censure.

What he might be, if what he might, he is not,— I would to heaven, he were.

*Lod.* What, strike his wife!

*Iago.* 'Faith, that was not so well; Yet 'would That stroke would prove the worst.

*Lod.* Is it his use?

Or did the letters work upon his blood, And new-create this fault?

*Iago.* Alas, alas!

It is not honesty in me to speak

What I have seen and known. You shall observe him;

And his own courses will denote him so,

That I may save my speech: Do but go after,

And mark how he continues.

*Lod.* I am sorry that I am deceiv'd in him.

## SCENE II.—A Room in the Castle.

*Enter OTHELLO and EMILIA.*

*Oth.* You have seen nothing then?

*Emil.* Nor ever heard; nor ever did suspect.

*Oth.* Yes, you have seen Cassio and she together.

*Emil.* But then I saw no harm, and then I heard.

Each syllable that breath made up between

*Oth.* What, did they never whisper?

*Emil.* Never, my lord.

*Oth.* Nor send you out o'the way?

*Emil.* Never.

*Oth.* To fetch her fan, her gloves, her mask, nor nothing?

*Emil.* Never, my lord.

*Oth.* That's strange.

*Emil.* I durst, my lord, to wager she is honest,

Lay down my soul at stake: if you think Remove your thought; it doth abuse your bosom.

If any wretch hath put this in your head,

Let heaven requite it with the serpent's curse!

For if she be not honest, chaste, and true, There's no man happy; the purest of them is foul as slander.

*Oth.* Bid her come hither:—go—

*[Exit EMILIA.]*  
She says enough:—yet she's a simple bawd, That cannot say as much. This is a subtle whore,

A closet-lock-and-key of villainous secrets:

And yet she'll kneel and pray; I have seen her do't.

*Re-enter EMILIA with DESDEMONA.*

*Des.* My lord, what is your will?

*Oth.* Pray, chuck, come hither.

*Des.* What is your pleasure?

*Oth.* Let me see your eyes;

Look in my face.

*Des.* What horrible fancy's this?

*Oth.* Some of your function, mistress;

Leave procreants alone, and shut the door;

Cough, or cry hem, if any body come:

Your mystery, your mystery:—nay, despatch.

*[Exit EMILIA.]*  
*Des.* Upon my knees, what doth your speech import?

I understand a fury in your words, But not the words.

*Oth.* Why, what art thou?

*Des.* Your wife, my lord; your true And loyal wife.

*Oth.* Come, swear it, damn thyself; Lest, being like one of heaven, the devils themselves

Should fear to seize thee: therefore be double-Swear thou art honest.

*[Damn'd.]*

*Des.* Heaven doth truly know it.

*Oth.* Heaven truly knows, that thou art false as hell.

*Des.* To whom, my lord? with whom? How am I false?

*Oth.* O Desdemona!—away! away! away!

*Des.* Alas, the heavy day!—Why do you weep?

Am I the occasion of these tears, my lord? If, haply, you my father do suspect, An instrument of this your calling back, Lay not your blame on me; if you have lost him, Why, I have lost him too.

*Oth.* Had it pleas'd heaven

To try me with affliction; had he rain'd All kinds of sores and shames on my bare head;

Steep'd me in poverty to the very lips; Given to captivity me and my utmost hopes; I should have found in some part of my soul A drop of patience: but (alas!) to make me A fixed figure for the hand of scorn To point his slow unmoving finger at,— O! O!

Yet could I bear that too; well, very well: But there, where I have garner'd\* up my heart, Where either I must live, or bear no life, The fountain from the which my current runs, Or else dries up; to be discarded thence! Or keep it as a cistern, for foul toads To knot and gender in!—turn thy complexion there!

Patience, thou young and rose-lipp'd cherubim; Ay, there, look grim as hell!

*Des.* I hope, my noble lord esteems me honest.

*Oth.* O ay; as summer flies are in the shambles,

That quicken even with blowing. O thou weed, Who art so lovely fair, and smell'st so sweet, That the sense aches at thee.—Would, thou had'st ne'er been born!

*Des.* Alas! what ignorant sin have I committed?

*Oth.* Was this fair paper, this most goodly book,

Made to write whored-upon? What committed! Committed!—O thou public commoner!

I should make very forges of my cheeks, That would to cinders burn up modesty, Did I but speak thy deeds.—What committed! Heaven stops the nose at it, and the moon winks;

The bawdy wind, that kisses all it meets, Is hush'd within the hollow mine of earth, And will not hear it: What committed!—Impudent strumpet!

*Des.* By heaven, you do me wrong.

*Oth.* Are not you a strumpet?

*Des.* No, as I am a Christian:

If to preserve this vessel for my lord, From any other foul unlawful touch, Be—not to be a strumpet, I am none.

*Oth.* What, not a whore?

*Des.* No, as I shall be saved.

*Oth.* Is it possible?

*Des.* O heaven, forgive us!

*Oth.* I cry you mercy, then:

I took you for that cunning whore of Venice, That married with Othello.—You, mistress,

*Re-enter EMILIA.*

That have the office opposite to Saint Peter, And keep the gate of hell; You! you! ay, you! We have done our course; there's money for your pains;

I pray you turn the key, and keep our counsel.

[*Exit.*]

*Emil.* Alas, what does this gentlemen conceive?

How do you, madam? how do you, my good lady?

*Des.* 'Faith, half asleep.

*Emil.* Good madam, what's the matter with my lord?

*Des.* With who?

*Emil.* Why, with my lord, madam.

*Des.* Who is thy lord?

*Emil.* He that is your's, sweet lady.

*Des.* I have none: Do not talk to me, Emilia;

I cannot weep; nor answer I have none, But what should go by water. Pi'shree, to-night

Lay on my bed my wedding sheets,—remember;—

And call thy husband hither.

*Emil.* Here is a change, indeed! [*Exit.*]

*Des.* 'Tis meet I should be us'd so, very meet.

How have I been behav'd, that he might stick The small'st opinion on my great'st abuse?

*Re-enter EMILIA, with IAGO.*

*Iago.* What is your pleasure, madam? How is it with you?

*Des.* I cannot tell. Those, that do teach young babes,

Do it with gentle means and easy tasks: He might have chid me so; for, in good faith, I am a child to chiding.

*Iago.* What's the matter, lady?

*Emil.* Alas, Iago, my lord hath so bewhord'd her, Thrown such despite and heavy terms upon her, As true hearts cannot bear.

*Des.* Am I that name, Iago?

*Iago.* What name, fair lady?

*Des.* Such as, she says, my lord did say I was.

*Emil.* He call'd her, whore; a beggar, in his drink, Could not have laid such terms upon his callet.\*

*Iago.* Why did he so?

*Des.* I do not know; I am sure I am none such.

*Iago.* Do not weep, do not weep; Alas, the day!

*Emil.* Has she forsook so many noble matches, Her father, and her country, and her friends, To be call'd—whore? would it not make one weep?

*Des.* It is my wretched fortune.

*Iago.* Bewhore him for it!

How comes this trick upon him?

*Des.* Nay, heaven doth know.

*Emil.* I will be hang'd, if some eternal villain, Some busy and insinuating rogue, Some cogging cozening slave, to get some office,

Hath not devis'd this slander; I'll be hang'd, Fie, there is no such man: it is impossible.

*Des.* If any such there be, heaven pardon him!

*Emil.* A halter pardon him! and hell gnaw his bones!

Why should he call her, whore? who keeps her company?

What place? what time? what form? what likelihood?

The Moor's abus'd? by some most villainous Some base notorious knave, some scurvey fellow:—

O heaven, that such companions! thou'dst And put in every honest hand a whip, To lash the rascal naked through the world, Even from the east to the west!

*Iago.* Speak within door.

*Emil.* O fie upon him! some such squire he was,

That turn'd your wit the seamy side† without, And made you to suspect me with the Moor.

*Iago.* You are a fool; go to.

*Des.* O good Iago,

What shall I do to win my lord again?

\* Treasured up.

\* His drab.

† Fellows.

‡ Inside out.

Good friend, go to him; for, by this light of heaven,

I know not how I lost him. Here I kneel:—  
If e'er my will did trespass 'gainst his love,  
Either in discourse of thought, or actual deed;  
Or that mine eyes, mine ears, or any sense,  
Delighted them in any other form;  
Or that I do not yet, and ever did,  
And ever will,—though he do shake me off  
To beggary divorcement,—love him dearly,  
Comfort forswear me! Unkindness may do much;

And his unkindness may defeat my life,  
But never taint my love. I cannot say, whore;  
It does abhor me, now I speak the word;  
To do the act that might the addition\* earn,  
Not the world's mass of vanity could make me.

*Iago.* I pray you, be content: 'tis but his humour;

The business of the state does him offence,  
And he does chide with you.

*Des.* If 'twere no other,—

*Iago.* It is but so, I warrant you.

[*Trumpets.*]

Hark, how these instruments summon to supper!

And the great messengers of Venice stay:

So in, and weep not; all things shall be well.

[*Exeunt DESDEMONA and EMILIA.*]

*Enter RODRIGO.*

How now, Rodrigo?

*Rod.* I do not find that thou deal'st justly with me!

*Iago.* What in the contrary?

*Rod.* Every day thou dost† me with some device, Iago: and rather (as it seems to me now) keep'st from me all conveniency, than suppliest me with the least advantage of hope. I will, indeed, no longer endure it: Nor am I yet persuaded to put up in peace what already I have foolishly suffered.

*Iago.* Will you hear me, Rodrigo?

*Rod.* 'Faith, I have heard too much; for your words and performances are no kin together.

*Iago.* You charge me most unjustly.

*Rod.* With nought but truth. I have wasted myself out of my means. The jewels you have had from me, to deliver to Desdemona, would half have corrupted a votarist: You have told me—she has received them, and returned me expectations and comforts of sudden respect and acquaintance;‡ but I find none.

*Iago.* Well; go to; very well.

*Rod.* Very well I go to! I cannot go to man; nor 'tis not very well: By this hand, I say it is very scurvy; and begin to find myself fobbed in it.

*Iago.* Very well.

*Rod.* I tell you, 'tis not very well. I will make myself known to Desdemona: If she will return me my jewels, I will give over my suit, and repent my unlawful solicitation: if not, assure yourself, I will seek satisfaction of you.

*Iago.* You have said now.

*Rod.* Ay, and I have said nothing, but what I protest intendment of doing.

*Iago.* Why, now I see there's mettle in thee; and even, from this instant, do build on thee a better opinion than ever before. Give me thy hand, Rodrigo: Thou hast taken against me a most just exception; but yet I protest I have dealt most directly in thy affair.

*Rod.* It hath not appeared.

*Iago.* I grant indeed, it hath not appeared; and your suspicion is not without wit and judgment. But, Rodrigo, if thou hast that within thee indeed, which I have greater reason to believe now than ever,—I mean, purpose, courage, and valour,—this might show it: If thou the next night following enjoyest not Desdemona,

take me from this world with treachery, and devise engines for my life.\*

*Rod.* Well, what is it? Is it within reason, and compass?

*Iago.* Sir, there is especial commission come from Venice, to depute Cassio in Othello's place.

*Rod.* Is that true? why, then Othello and Desdemona return again to Venice.

*Iago.* O no; he goes into Mauritania, and takes away with him the fair Desdemona, unless his abode be lingered here by some accident; wherein none can be so determinate, as the removing of Cassio.

*Rod.* How do you mean—removing of him?

*Iago.* Why, by making him incapable of Othello's place; knocking out his brains.

*Rod.* And that you would have me do?

*Iago.* Ay; if you dare do yourself a profit, and a right. He sups to-night with a barlot, and thither will I go to him;—he knows not yet of his honourable fortune; if you will watch his going thence, (which I will fashion to fall out between twelve and one,) you may take him at your pleasure: I will be near to second your attempt, and he shall fall between us. Come, stand not amazed at it, but go along with me; I will show you such a necessity in his death, that you shall think yourself bound to put it on him. It is now high supper-time, and the night grows to waste; about it.

*Rod.* I will hear further reason for this.

*Iago.* And you shall be satisfied. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Another Room in the Castle.

*Enter OTHELLO, LODOVICO, DESDEMONA, EMILIA, and Attendants.*

*Lod.* I do beseech you, Sir, trouble yourself no further.

*Oth.* O pardon me; 'twill do me good to walk.

*Lod.* Madam, good night; I humbly thank your ladyship.

*Des.* Your honour is most welcome.

*Oth.* Will you walk, Sir?—

Oh!—Desdemona,—

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* Get you to bed on the instant, I will be returned forthwith: dismiss your attendant there: look, it be done.

*Des.* I will, my lord.

[*Exeunt OTHELLO, LODOVICO, and Attendants.*]

*Emil.* How goes it now? he looks gentler than he did.

*Des.* He says, he will return incontinent;† He hath commanded me to go to bed, And bade me to dismiss you.

*Emil.* Dismiss me!

*Des.* It was his bidding; therefore, good Emilia,

Give me my nightly wearing, and adieu: We must not now displease him.

*Emil.* I would, you had never seen him!

*Des.* So would not I: my love doth so approve him, [frowns—  
That even his stubbornness, his checks, and  
(Pr'ythee unpin me)—have grace and favour in them.

*Emil.* I have laid those sheets you bade me on the bed.

*Des.* All's one:—Good father! how foolish are our minds!—

If I do die before thee, pr'ythee shroud me  
In one of those same sheets.

*Emil.* Come, come, you talk.

*Des.* My mother had a maid called Barbara; She was in love; and he she lov'd prov'd mad,‡ And did forsake her: she had a song of willow, An old thing 'twas, but it express'd her fortune,

\* Thile.      † Put't me off.      ‡ Requitul.

\* Conceive means to destroy me.  
† Immediately.      ‡ Instant.

And she died singing it : That song, to-night,  
Will not go from my mind ; I have much to do,  
But to go hang my head all at one side,  
And sing it like poor Barbara. Prythee des-  
patch.

*Emil.* Shall I go fetch your night-gown ?

*Des.* No, unpin me here.—

This Lodovico is a proper man.

*Emil.* A very handsome man.

*Des.* And he speaks well.

*Emil.* I know a lady in Venice, who would  
have walked barefoot to Palestine, for a touch of  
his nether lip.

I.

*Des.* The poor soul sat sighing by a sycamore tree,  
Sing all a green willow ;

Her hand on her bosom, her head on her  
knee,  
Sing willow, willow, willow :

The fresh streams ran by her, and mur-  
mur'd her moans ;

Sing willow, &c.  
Her salt tears fell from her, and soften'd the  
stones ;

Lay by these :

Sing willow, willow, willow ;

Prythee, lie thee ; he'll come anon.—

Sing all a green willow must be my gar-  
land.

II.

Let nobody blame him, his scorn I ap-  
prove,—

Nay, that's not next.—Hark ! who is it that  
knocks ?

*Emil.* It is the wind.

*Des.* I call'd my love, false love ; but what  
said he then ?

Sing willow, &c.  
If I court mo\* women, you'll couch with  
mo men.

So, get thee gone ; good night. Mine eyes do  
Doth that bode weeping ?

*Emil.* 'Tis neither here nor there.

*Des.* I have heard it said so.—O these men,  
these men !

Dost thou in conscience think,—tell me, *Emil*—  
That there be women who abuse their husbands  
in such gross kind ?

*Emil.* There be some such, no question.

*Des.* Wouldst thou do such a deed for all the  
world ?

*Emil.* Why, would not you ?

*Des.* No, by this heavenly light !

*Emil.* Nor I neither by this heavenly light ;

I might do't as well i'the dark.

*Des.* Wouldst thou do such a deed for all the  
world ?

*Emil.* The world is a huge thing : 'Tis a  
for a small vice.

*Des.* Good troth, I think thou wouldst not.

*Emil.* By my troth, I think I should ; and  
undo't, when I had done. Marry, I would not  
do such a thing for a joint-ring ; nor for mea-  
sures of lawn ; nor for gowns, petticoats, nor  
caps, nor any petty exhibition : but, for the  
whole world.—Why, who would not make her  
husband a cuckold, to make him a monarch ? I  
should venture purgatory for't.

*Des.* Beshrew me, if I would do such a wrong  
for the whole world.

*Emil.* Why, the wrong is but a wrong i'the  
world ; and, having the world for your labour,  
'tis a wrong in your own world, and you might  
quickly make it right.

*Des.* I do not think there is any such woman.

\* Mo for more.

*Emil.* Yes, a dozen ; and as many  
To the vantage, as would store the world they  
play'd for.

But, I do think, it is their husbands' faults,  
If wives do fall : Say, that they slack their  
duties,

And pour our treasures into foreign laps ;  
Or else break out in peevish jealousies,  
Throwing restraint upon us ; or, say, they  
strike us,

Or scant our former having\* in despite :  
Why, we have galls ; and, though we have some  
grace,

Yet we have some revenge. Let husbands know,  
Their wives have sense† like them : they see,  
and smell,

And have their palates both for sweet and sour,  
As husbands have. What is it that they do  
When they change us for others ? Is it sport ?

I think it is ; And doth affection breed it ?  
I think, it doth. Is't frailty, that thus errs ?  
It is so too : And have not we affections ?

Desires for sport† and frailty, as men have ?  
Then, let them use us well : else, let them  
know,

The ills we do, their ills instruct us to.

*Des.* Good night, good night : Heaven me such  
usage send,  
Not to pick bad from bad ; but, by bad, mend !

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—A Street.

Enter IAGO and RODERIGO.

*Iago.* Here, stand behind this bulk ; straight  
will he come :

Wear thy good rapier bare,‡ and put it home ;  
Quick, quick ; fear nothing ; I'll be at thy el-  
bow :

It makes us, or it mars us ; think on that,  
And fix most firm thy resolution.

*Rod.* Be near at hand ; I may miscarry in't.

*Iago.* Here, at thy hand ; be bold, and take  
thy sword.

[*Retires to a little distance.*]

*Rod.* I have no great devotion to the deed ;  
And yet he has given me satisfying reasons :—

'Tis but a man gone :—forth, my sword ; he dies.  
[*Goes to his stand.*]

*Iago.* I have rubb'd this young quat almost to  
the sense,§

And he grows angry. Now, whether he kill Cas-  
sio or Cassio him, or each do kill the other, [sio,  
Every way makes my gain : Live Roderigo,

He calls me to a restitution large  
Of gold and jewels, that I bobb'd|| from him,  
As gifts to Desdemona ;

It must not be. If Cassio do remain,  
He hath a daily beauty in his life,

That makes me ugly ; and, besides, the Moor  
May unfold me to him ; there stand I in much  
peril :

No, he must die :—But so, I hear him coming.

Enter CASSIO.

*Rod.* I know his gait, 'tis he ;—Villain, thou  
diest.

[*Rushes from his post, and makes a pass  
at CASSIO.*]

*Cas.* That thrust had been mine enemy in-  
deed,

But that my coat is better than thou think'st ;  
I will make proof of thine.

[*Draws, and wounds RODERIGO.*]

*Rod.* O I am slain !  
[*IAGO rushes from his post, cuts CASSIO  
behind in the Leg,¶ and exits.*]

\* Abridge out pin-money in a pet.

† Sensation.

‡ Unsheathed. § To the quick.

¶ Fished.

|| Because he hears him say he has armour under  
his coat.

*Cas.* I am maim'd for ever :—Help, ho ! murder ! murder ! *[Falls.]*

*Enter OTHELLO, at a distance.*

*Oth.* The voice of Cassio :—Iago keeps his word.

*Rod.* O villain that I am !

*Oth.* Hark ! his even so.

*Cas.* O help ! ho ! light ! a surgeon !

*Oth.* 'Tis he :—O brave Iago, honest, and just, That hast such noble sense of thy friend's wrong !

Thou teachest me,—Minion, your dear lies dead, And your false bias apace :—Strumpet, I come : Foul,\* of my heart those charms, thine eyes, are blotted ;

Thy bed, lust-stain'd, shall with lust's blood be spotted. *[Exit OTHELLO.]*

*Enter LODOVICO and GRATIANO, at a distance.*

*Cas.* What, ho ! no watch ? no passage ? murder ! murder !

*Gra.* 'Tis some mischance ; the cry is very direful.

*Cas.* O help !

*Lod.* Hark !

*Rod.* O wretched villain !

*Lod.* Two or three groans :—it is a heavy ; night :

These may be counterfeits ; let's think't unsafe To come in to the cry, without more help.

*Rod.* No body come ? then shall I bleed to death.

*Enter IAGO, with a Light.*

*Lod.* Hark !

*Gra.* Here's one comes in his shirt, with light and weapons.

*Iago.* Who's there ? whose noise is this, that cries on murder ?

*Lod.* We do not know.

*Iago.* Did you not hear a cry ?

*Cas.* Here, here ; for heaven's sake, help me.

*Iago.* What's the matter ?

*Gra.* This is Othello's ancient, as I take it.

*Lod.* The same, indeed ; a very valiant fellow.

*Iago.* What are you here that cry so grievously ?

*Cas.* Iago ? O I am spoil'd, undone by villains ! Give me some help.

*Iago.* O me, lieutenant ! what villains have done this ?

*Cas.* I think, that one of them is hereabout, And cannot make away.

*Iago.* O treacherous villains !—

What are you there ? come in, and give some help. *[To LODOVICO and GRATIANO.]*

*Rod.* O help me here.

*Cas.* That's one of them.

*Iago.* O murderous slave ! O villain !

*[IAGO STABS RODERIGO.]*

*Rod.* O damn'd Iago ! O inhuman dog !—

O ! O ! O ! *Iago.* Kill men ! 'tbe dark !—Where be these bloody thieves !

How silent is this town !—Ho ! murder ! murder ! What may you be ? are you of good, or evil ?

*Lod.* As you shall prove us, praise us.

*Iago.* Signior Lodovico !

*Lod.* He, Sir.

*Iago.* I cry you mercy ; Here's Cassio hurt by villains.

*Gra.* Cassio ?

*Iago.* How is it, bother ?

*Cas.* My leg is cut in two.

*Iago.* Marry, heaven forbid !—

Light, gentlemen ; I'll bind it with my shirt.

*Enter BIANCA.*

*Bian.* What is the matter, ho ? who is't that cried ?

*Iago.* Who is't that cried ?

*Bian.* O my dear Cassio ! my sweet Cassio ! O Cassio ! Cassio ! Cassio !

*Iago.* O notable strumpet !—Cassio, may you suspect

Who they should be, that have thus mangled you ? *Cas.* No.

*Gra.* I am sorry to find you thus : I have been to seek you.

*Iago.* Lend me a garter : So.—O for a chair, To bear him easily hence !

*Bian.* Alas, he faints :—O Cassio ! Cassio ! Cassio !

*Iago.* Gentlemen all, I do suspect this trash To be a party in this injury.—

Patience awhile, good Cassio.—Come, come ;

Lend me a light.—Know we this face, or no ?

Alas ! my friend, and my dear countryman,

Roderigo ! no :—Yes, sure : O heaven, Roderigo.

*Gra.* What, of Venice ?

*Iago.* Even he, Sir ; did you know him ?

*Gra.* Know him ? ay.

*Iago.* Signior Gratiano ? I cry you gentle pardon ;

These bloody accidents must excuse my man-  
That so neglected you.

*Gra.* I am glad to see you.

*Iago.* How do you, Cassio ?—O a chair, a chair !

*Gra.* Roderigo !

*Iago.* He, he, 'tis he :—O that's well said ;—  
the chair :— *[A Chair brought in.]*

Some good man bear him carefully from hence ; I'll fetch the general's surgeon.—For you, mistress,

Save you your labour. He that lies slain here, Cassio,

Was my dear friend : What malice was between you ?

*Cas.* None in the world ; nor do I know the man.

*Iago.* *[To BIAN.]* What, look you pale ?—  
O bear him out o'the air.

*[CAS. AND ROD. are borne off.]*

Stay you, good gentlemen :—Look you pale, mistress ?

Do you perceive the greatness of her eye ?—

Nay, if you stare, we shall hear more anon :—

Behold her well ; I pray you, look upon her ;

Do you see, gentlemen ? nay, guiltiness will  
Though tongues were out of use. *[Speak,*

*Enter EMILIA.*

*Emil.* 'Las, what's the matter ; what's the matter, husband ?

*Iago.* Cassio hath here been set on in the dark,

By Roderigo, and fellows that are scap'd ;

He's almost slain, and Roderigo dead.

*Emil.* Alas, good gentleman ! alas, good Cassio !

*Iago.* This is the fruit of whoring.—Pr'ythee, Emilia,

Go know of Cassio where he suppy'd to-night :—

What, do you shake at that ?

*Bian.* He suppy'd at my house, but I there-fore shake not.

*Iago.* O did he so ? I charge you, go with me.

*Emil.* Fie, fie upon thee, strumpet !

*Bian.* I am no strumpet ; but of life as honest, As you that thus abuse me.

*Emil.* As I forbide upon thee !

*Iago.* Kind gentlemen, let's go see poor Cassio dress'd :—

Come, mistress, you must tell us another tale,—  
Emilia, run you to the citadel,

And tell my lord and lady what has happ'd,—  
Will you go on, I pray ?—This is the night,

That either makes me, or fordoes \* me quite. *[Aside.]*  
*[Exeunt.]*

\* Out. † No passengers. ‡ Thick, cloudy.

\* Undoes.

# Scene II. OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE.

229

*SCENE II.—A Bedchamber: DESDEMONA in Bed asleep.—A Light burning.*

*Enter OTHELLO.*

*Oth.* It is the cause, it is the cause, my soul,—  
Let me not name it to you, you chaste stars!—  
It is the cause. Yet I'll not shed her blood;  
Nor scar that whiter skin of her's than snow,  
And smooth as monumental alabaster,

*[Takes off his Sword.]*  
Yet she must die, else she'll betray more men.  
Put out the light, and then put out the light:  
If I quench thee, thou flaming minister,  
I can again thy former light restore,  
Should I repent me:—but once put out thine,  
Thou cunning'st pattern of excelling nature,  
I know not where is that Promethean heat,  
That can thy light relume. When I have

pluck'd thy rose,  
I cannot give it vital life again,  
It needs must wither: I'll smell it on the  
tree.—*[Kissing her.]*  
O balmy breath, that dost almost persuade  
Justice to break her sword!—One more, one  
more.—

Be thus when thou art dead, and I will kill  
thee,  
And love thee after:—One more, and this the  
last:

So sweet was ne'er so fatal. I must weep,  
But they are cruel tears: This sorrow's heav-  
enly;

It strikes, where it doth love.—She wakes—  
*Des.* Who's there? Othello?

*Oth.* Ay, Desdemona.

*Des.* Will you come to bed, my lord?

*Oth.* Have you pray'd to-night, Desdemona?

*Des.* Ay, my lord.

*Oth.* If you bethink yourself of any crime,  
Unconscionable as yet to heaven and grace,  
Solicit for it straight.

*Des.* Alas, my lord, what may you mean by  
that?

*Oth.* Well, do it, and be brief; I will walk  
by:

I would not kill thy unprepared spirit:  
No,—Heaven forbid!† I would not kill thy  
soul.

*Des.* Talk you of killing?

*Oth.* Ay, I do.

*Des.* Then, heaven

Have mercy on me!

*Oth.* Amen, with all my heart!

*Des.* If you say so, I hope you will not kill  
me.

*Oth.* Hump!

*Des.* And yet I fear you: for you are fatal  
then,

When your eyes roll so: Why I should fear, I  
know not,

Since guiltiness I know not; but yet, I feel  
I fear.

*Oth.* Think on thy sins.

*Des.* They are loves I bear to you.

*Oth.* Ay, and for that thou diest.

*Des.* That death's unnatural, that kills for  
loving.—

Alas, why gnaw you so your nether lip?  
Some bloody passion shakes your very frame:  
These are portents; but yet I hope, I hope,  
They do not point on me.

*Oth.* Peace and be still!

*Des.* I will so: What's the matter?

*Oth.* That handkerchief, which I so lov'd, and  
gave thee,

Thou gav'st to Cassio.

*Des.* No, by my life and soul;

Send for the man, and ask him.

*Oth.* Sweet soul, take heed, [bed.]

Take heed of perjury; thou'rt on thy death-

*Des.* Ay, but not yet to die.

*Oth.* Yes, presently:

\* *L. c.* The light of life.

† *Forbid.*

Therefore confess thee freely of thy sin;  
For to deny each article with oath, [tion,  
Cannot remove, nor choke, the strong conceit  
That I do groan withal. Thou art to die.

*Des.* Then, Lord have mercy on me!

*Oth.* I say, amen.

*Des.* And have you mercy too!—I never did  
Offend you in my life; never lov'd Cassio,  
But with such general warranty of heaven  
As I might love: I never gave him token.

*Oth.* By heaven, I saw my handkerchief in  
his hand.

O perjur'd woman! thou dost stone my heart,  
And mak'st me call, what I intend to do,  
A murder which I thought a sacrifice: \*  
I saw the handkerchief.

*Des.* He found it then;

I never gave it him:—Send for him hither,  
And let him confess a truth.

*Oth.* He hath confess'd.

*Des.* What, my lord?

*Oth.* That he hath—us'd thee

*Des.* How? unlawfully?

*Oth.* Ay.

*Des.* He'll not say so.

*Oth.* No, his mouth is stopp'd;

Honest Iago hath ta'en order for't.†

*Des.* My fear interprets then,—What, is he  
dead?

*Oth.* Had all his hairs been lives, my great  
revenge

Had stomach for them all.

*Des.* Alas! he is betray'd, and I undone.

*Oth.* Out, strumpet! Weep'st thou for him  
to my face?

*Des.* O banish me, my lord, but kill me  
not.

*Oth.* Down, strumpet!

*Des.* Kill me to-morrow, let me live to-night.

*Oth.* Nay, if you strive,—

*Des.* But half an hour.

*Oth.* Being done,

There is no pause.

*Des.* But while I say one prayer.

*Oth.* It is too late.† [He smothers her.]

*Emil.* [Within.] My lord, my lord! what

ho! my lord! my lord!

*Oth.* What noise is this?—Not dead! not yet  
quite dead!

I, that am cruel, and yet merciful;

I would not have thee linger in thy pain.—

So, so.‡

*Emil.* [Within.] What ho! my lord, my  
lord!

*Oth.* Who's there?

*Emil.* [Within.] O good my lord, I would  
speak a word with you.

*Oth.* Yes:—'Tis Emilia:—by and by.—She's  
dead.

\* 'Tis like she comes to speak of Cassio's death:

The noise was high.—Hail no more moving?

Still as the grave. Shall she come in? Were't  
good!

I think she stirs again:—No.—What's the  
beat?

If she come in, she'll sure speak to my wife:

My wife! my wife! what wife?—I have no  
wife:

O insupportable! O heavy hour!

methinks it should be now a huge eclipse  
Of sun and moon; and that the affrighted globe  
Should yawn at alteration.

\* A sacrifice atoning for thy crime.

† Has taken measures.

‡ In the old copies, after this speech, there is an invocation from Desdemona, consisting only of the sacred name thrice repeated; omitted in consequence of the Stat. 3. James I. c. 21, imposing a penalty on the profane use of God's name in stage-plays, &c. It is a passage of supererogatory horror, being uttered whilst she is struggling with death.

§ It is supposed that some theatrical direction has been omitted, and that when Othello says, "So, so," he then stabs her. After the repetition of wounds, Desdemona might speak again with propriety, and yet very soon expire.

*Emil.* [*Within.*] I do beseech you I may speak with you,  
O good my lord!  
*Oth.* I had forgot thee: O come in, Emilia—  
Soft,—by and by:—Let me the curtains draw.—  
Where art thou? What's the matter with thee now? [*Unlocks the door.*]

*Enter EMILIA.*

*Emil.* O good my lord, yonder's foul murder done.  
*Oth.* What? now?  
*Emil.* But now, my lord.  
*Oth.* It is the very error of the moon; She comes more near the earth than she was And makes men mad. [*Wont;*]  
*Emil.* Cassio, my lord, has kill'd a young Venetian,  
Call'd—Roderigo.  
*Oth.* Roderigo kill'd!  
And Cassio kill'd?  
*Emil.* No, Cassio is not kill'd.  
*Oth.* Not Cassio kill'd? Then murder's out of tune,  
And sweet revenge grows harsh.  
*Des.* O falsely, falsely murder'd!  
*Emil.* Alas! what cry is that?  
*Oth.* That! what?  
*Emil.* Out, and alas! that was my lady's voice:—  
Help! help, ho! help!—O lady, speak again! Sweet Desdemona! O sweet mistress, speak!  
*Des.* A guiltless death I die.  
*Emil.* O who hath done this deed?  
*Des.* Nobody; I myself; farewell:  
Commend me to my kind lord; O farewell. [*Dies.*]

*Oth.* Why, how should she be murder'd?  
*Emil.* Alas, who knows?  
*Oth.* You heard her say herself, it was not I.  
*Emil.* She said so; I must needs report the truth.  
*Oth.* She's like a liar, gone to burning hell; 'Twas I that kill'd her.  
*Emil.* O the more angel she, And you the blacker devil!  
*Oth.* She turn'd to folly, and she was a whore.  
*Emil.* Thou dost belie her, and thou art a devil.  
*Oth.* She was false as water.  
*Emil.* Thou art rash as fire to say That she was false; O she was heavenly true!  
*Oth.* Cassio did tup her; ask thy husband else. O I were damn'd beneath all depth in hell, But that I did proceed upon just grounds To this extremity: Thy husband knew it all.  
*Emil.* My husband?  
*Oth.* Thy husband.  
*Emil.* That she was false to wedlock?  
*Oth.* Ay, with Cassio.  
Nay, had she been true, If heaven would make me such another world Of one entire and perfect chrysolite,\* I'd not have sold her for it.  
*Emil.* My husband?  
*Oth.* Ay, 'twas he that told me first: An honest man he is, and hates the slime That sticks on filthy deeds.  
*Emil.* My husband?  
*Oth.* What needs this iteration,† woman? I say, thy husband.  
*Emil.* O mistress, villainy hath made mocks with love:—  
My husband says, that she was false!  
*Oth.* He, woman; I say, thy husband: Dost understand the word? My friend, thy husband, honest lago.  
*Emil.* If he say so, may his pernicious soul Rot half a grain a day! He lies to the heart; She was too fond of her most filthy bargain.

*Oth.* Ha!  
*Emil.* Do thy worst:  
This deed of thine is no more worthy heaven,  
Than thou wast worthy her.  
*Oth.* Peace, you were best.  
*Emil.* Thou hast not half the power to do me harm,  
As I have to be hurt. O gull! O dolt!  
As ignorant as dirt! thou hast done a deed,—  
I care not for thy sword; I'll make thee know,  
Though I lost twenty lives:—Help! help, ho! help!  
The Moor has kill'd my mistress; Murder! murder!

*Enter MONTANO, GRATIANO, and IAGO.*

*Mon.* What is the matter?—How now, general?  
*Emil.* O are you come, Iago? you have done well,  
That men must lay their murders on your neck.  
*Gra.* What is the matter?  
*Emil.* Disprove this villain, if thou be'st a man:  
He says, thou told'st him that his wife was false:  
I know thou did'st not, thou'rt not such a villain;  
Speak, for my heart is full. [*Hum;*]  
*Iago.* I told him what I thought; and told no more  
Than what he found himself was apt and true.  
*Emil.* But did you ever tell him, she was false?  
*Iago.* I did.  
*Emil.* You told a lie; an odious, damned lie; Upon my soul, a lie; a wicked lie:—  
She false with Cassio?—Did you say, with Cassio?  
*Iago.* With Cassio, mistress; Go to, charm your tongue.  
*Emil.* I will not charm my tongue; I am bound to speak;  
My mistress here lies murder'd in her bed.  
*All.* O heavens forfend!  
*Emil.* And your reports have set the murder on.  
*Oth.* Nay, stare not, masters; it is true, indeed.  
*Gra.* 'Tis a strange truth.  
*Mon.* O monstrous act!  
*Emil.* Villany, villany, villany!—  
I think upon't,—I think,—I smell't;—O villany!  
I thought so then;—I'll kill myself for grief.—  
O villany, villany!  
*Iago.* What, are you mad? I charge you, get you home.  
*Emil.* Good gentlemen, let me have leave to speak;  
'Tis proper I obey him, but not now:—  
Perchance, Iago, I will ne'er go home.  
*Oth.* O! O! O! [*Hanging over his wife.*]  
*Emil.* Nay, lay thee down, and roar;  
For thou hast kill'd the sweetest innocent,  
That e'er did lift up eye.  
*Oth.* O she was foul! [*Rising.*]  
I scarce did know you, uncle: there lies your niece,  
Whose breath, indeed, these hands have newly stopp'd:  
I know, this act shows horrible and grim.  
*Gra.* Poor Desdemona! I am glad thy father's dead;  
Thy match was mortal to him, and pure grief  
Shore his old thread in twain: did he live now  
This sight would make him do a desperate turn,  
Yea, curse his better angel from his side,  
And fall to reprobation.  
*Oth.* 'Tis pitiful! But yet Iago knows,  
That she with Cassio hath the act of shame  
A thousand times committed; Cassio confess'd it:

\* A precious stone.

† Repetition.

\* Forbid.

† Freely.

And she did gratify his amorous works  
With that recognizance and pledge of love  
Which I first gave her: I saw it in his hand;  
It was a handkerchief, an antique token  
My father gave my mother.

*Emil.* O heaven! O heavenly powers!

*Jago.* Come, hold your peace.

*Emil.* 'Twill out, 'twill out;—I hold my peace,  
Sir? no;

No, I will speak as liberal \* as the air;  
Let heaven, and men, and devils, let them all,  
All, all, cry shame against me, yet I'll speak.

*Jago.* Be wise, and get you home.

*Emil.* I will not.

[*JAGO offers to stab his Wife.*]

*Gra.* Fie!

Your sword upon a woman?

*Emil.* O thou dull Moor! that handkerchief  
thou speak'st of,

I found by fortune, and did give my husband;  
For often with a solemn earnestness,  
(More than indeed belong'd to such a trifle,) *He begg'd of me to steal it.*

*Jago.* Villanous whore!

*Emil.* She gave it Cassio! no, alas; I found it,  
And I did give't my husband.

*Jago.* Filth, thou liest.

*Emil.* By heaven, I do not; I do not, gentlemen:—

O murderous coxcomb! what should such a  
fool

Do with so good a wife?

[*JAGO stabs EMILIA, then runs out.*]

*Oth.* Are there no stones in heaven  
But what serve for the thunder?—Precious  
villain!

*Gra.* The woman falls; sure, he has kill'd  
his wife.

*Emil.* Ay, ay; O lay me by my mistress'  
side!

*Gra.* He's gone, but his wife's kill'd.

*Mon.* 'Tis a notorious villain. Take you this  
weapon,

Which I have here recover'd from the Moor:  
Come, guard the door without; let him not pass,  
But kill him rather: I'll after that same villain,  
For 'tis a damned slave.

[*Exit MONTANO and GRATIANO.*]

*Oth.* I am not valiant neither.  
But every puny whipster gets my sword:—  
But why should honour outlive honesty?  
Let it go all.

*Emil.* What did thy song bode, lady?  
Hark, canst thou hear me? I will play the

swan,  
And die in music:—*Willow, willow, willow.*—

Moor, she was chaste; she lov'd thee, cruel  
Moor;

So come my soul to bliss, as I speak true;  
So speaking as I think, I die, I die. [*Dies.*]

*Oth.* I have another weapon in this chamber,  
It is a sword of Spain, the ice-brook's temper—

O here it is:—Uncle, I must come forth.

*Gra.* [*Within.*] If thou attempt it, it will  
cost thee dear;

Thou hast no weapon, and perforce must suffer.

*Oth.* Look in upon me then, and speak with  
me,

Or, naked as I am, I will assault thee.

*Re-enter GRATIANO.*

*Gra.* What's the matter?

*Oth.* Behold! I have a weapon;

A better never did itself sustain

Upon a soldier's thigh: I have seen the day,  
That with this little arm, and this good sword,

I have made my way through more impediments

Than twenty times your stop:—But, O vain  
boast!

Who can control his fate? 'Tis not so now.—

Be not afraid, though you do see me weapon'd  
Here is my journey's end, here is my butt,  
And very sea-mark of my utmost sail.  
Do you go back dismay'd? 'tis a lost fear;  
Man but a rush against Othello's breast,  
And he retires:—Where should Othello go?—  
Now, how dost thou look now? O ill-starr'd  
wench!

Pale as thy smock! when we shall meet at  
compt \* <sup>(ven,</sup>

This look of thine will hurl my soul from hea-  
And sends will snatch at it. Cold, cold, my  
girl?

Even like thy chastity.—

O cursed, cursed slave!—Whip me ye devils,  
From the possession of this heavenly sight!

Blow me about in winds! roast me in sulphur!  
Wash me in steep-down galls of liquid fire!—

O Desdemona! Desdemona! dead!

Dead! O! O! O!

*Enter LODOVICO, MONTANO, CASSIO, carried  
in a Chair, and Officers with JAGO prisoner.*

*Lod.* Where is this rash and most unfortunate  
man?

*Oth.* That's he, that was Othello; here I am.

*Lod.* Where is that viper? bring the villain  
forth.

*Oth.* I look down towards his feet;†—but  
that's a fable:

If that thou be'st a devil, I cannot kill thee.

[*OTHELLO wounds JAGO.*]

*Lod.* Wrench his sword from him.

*Jago.* I bleed, Sir; but not kill'd.

*Oth.* I am not sorry neither; I'd have thee  
live;

For, in my sense, 'tis happiness to die.

*Lod.* O thou Othello, that wast once so good,  
Fall'n in the practice; of a cursed slave,  
What shall be said to thee?

*Oth.* Why, any thing.

An honourable murderer, if you will;  
For nought I did in hate, but all in honour.

*Lod.* This wretch hath in part confess'd his  
villany;

Did you and he consent in Cassio's death?

*Oth.* Ay.

*Cas.* Dear general, I never gave you cause.

*Oth.* I do believe it, and I ask your pardon.

Will you, I pray you demand that demi-devil,  
Why he hath thus ensnar'd my soul and body?

*Jago.* Demand me nothing: What you know,  
you know;

From this time forth I never will speak word.

*Lod.* What? not to pray?

*Gra.* Torments will ope your lips.

*Oth.* Well, thou dost best.

*Lod.* Sir, you shall understand what hath  
befall'n,

Which, as I think, you know not: Here is a  
letter,

Found in the pocket of the slain Roderigo,  
And here, another: the one of them imports

The death of Cassio to be undertook

By Roderigo.

*Oth.* O villain!

*Cas.* Most heathenish, and most gross!

*Lod.* Now here's another discontented paper,  
Found in his pocket too: and this it seems,

Roderigo meant to have sent this damned vil-  
lain;

But that belike, Iago in the interim

Came in and satisfied him.

*Oth.* O the pernicious caitiff!—

How came you, Cassio, by that handkerchief

That was my wife's?

*Cas.* I found it in my chamber:

And he himself confess'd, but even now  
That there he dropp'd it, for a special purpose

Which wrought to his desire.

*Oth.* O fool! fool! fool!

*Cas.* There is, besides, in Roderigo's letter,—

\* Freely. † Steel is hardened by being put red  
hot into very cold water

\* Account. † To see if his feet be cover'd.  
‡ By the stratagem



How he upbraids Iago, that he made him  
Brave me on the watch ; whereon it came  
That I was cast ; and even but now he spake,  
After long seeming dead,—Iago hurt him,  
Iago set him on.

*Lod.* You must forsake this room, and go  
with us ;

Your power and your command is taken off,  
And Cassio rules in Cyprus. For this slave,—  
If there be any cunning cruelty,  
That can torment him much, and hold him  
long,

It shall be his : You shall close prisoner rest,  
Till that the nature of your fault be known  
To the Venetian state :—Come, bring him  
away.

*Oth.* Soft you ; a word or two, before you go.  
I have done the state some service, and they  
know it ;

No more of that :—I pray you, in your letters,  
When you shall these unlucky deeds relate,  
Speak of me as I am ; nothing extenuate,  
Nor set down aught in malice : then must you  
speak

Of one that lov'd not wisely, but too well ;  
Of one, not easily jealous, but, being wrought,  
Perplex'd in the extreme ; of one, whose hand,  
Like the base Judean, threw a pearl away,  
Richer than all his tribe ; of one, whose subdu'd  
eyes,

Albeit unused to the melting mood,  
Drop tears as fast as the Arabian trees

Their medicinal gum : Set down this :

And say, besides,—that in Aleppo once,  
Where a malignant and a turbau'd Turk  
Beat a Venetian, and traduc'd the state,  
I took by the throat the circumcised dog,  
And smote him—thus. [*Stabs himself.*]

*Lod.* O bloody period !

*Gr.* All, that's spoke, is marr'd.

*Oth.* I kiss'd thee, ere I kill'd thee ;—No way  
but this,

[*Falling upon Desdemona.*  
Killing myself, to die upon a kiss.

[*Dies*  
*Cas.* This did I fear, but thought he had no  
weapon ;

For he was great of heart.

*Lod.* O Spartan dog,  
More fell than anguish, hunger, or the sea !  
Look on the tragic loading of this bed ;

[*To Iago.*  
This is thy work ; the object poisons sight ;—  
Let it be hid.—Gratiano, keep the house,  
And seize upon the fortunes of the Moor,  
For they succeed to you.—To you, lord gover-  
nor,

Remains the censure \* of this hellish villain ;  
The time, the place, the torture.—O enforce it !  
Myself will straight aboard ; and, to the state,  
This heavy act with heavy heart relate.

[*Exit*

\* Sentence

THE reader will frequently be at a loss to reconcile the order and passages of Othello, as given in the present edition, with their accustomed delivery on the stage ; but it is considered a trifling inconvenience, when counteracted by the pleasure of possessing (as nearly as the most authentic recollection can afford them,) the actual language and construction of the drama, as given by Shakespeare. In the authorized copies of the prompters' books, and in many editions reprinted from them, the beauty of the original has been somewhat obscured by green-room critics, of conflicting taste, and obsequious managers, more penny-wise than poetical. The scene with the musicians, which introduces Act II.—that incongruous nuisance, the clown—and that equally troublesome excrescence, Bianca the prostitute—are however, with real judgment, omitted in the representation ; and many of the less important passages, such as occur in the scene before the senate—in the soliloquies of Iago—in the dialogues between Montano and a gentleman of Cyprus, on the tempest of the preceding night, and between Desdemona and Emilia, on the temptations to adultery, are very considerably abridged. The order of the scenes is also perpetually varied ; each theatrical copartnership retaining its peculiar programme of Richard or Othello, in common with its wardrobe, thunder, side-scenes, and mould-candles.

# ROMEO AND JULIET.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

IN 1552 Mr. Arthur Brooke published a poem on "The Tragicall Historie of Romeus and Juliett;" the materials for which he chiefly obtained from a French translation (by Boisteau) of an Italian novel by Luigi da Porto, a Venetian gentleman, who died in 1529. A prose translation of Boisteau's work was also published 1576, by Painter, in his *Palace of Pleasure*, vol. II.; and upon the incidents of these two works, especially of the poem, Malone decides that Shakspeare constructed his entertaining tragedy. Dr. Johnson has declared this play to be "one of the most pleasing of Shakspeare's performances;" but it contains some breaches of irregularity—many superfluities, tumid conceits, and bombastic ideas, inexcusable even in a lover; with a continued recurrence of jingling periods and trifling quibbles, which obscure the sense, or disgust the reader. Several of the characters are, however, charmingly designed, and not less happily executed; the catastrophe is intensely affecting; the incidents various and expressive; and as the passion which it delineates is one of universal acceptance in the catalogue of human wishes, the tender-like character of the lady, and the notable constancy of the gentleman, are forgotten in the dangers and the calamities of both. The numerous rhymes which occur, are probably seedlings from Arthur Brooke's stock plant. "The nurse (says Dr. Johnson) is one of the characters in which Shakspeare delighted: he has, with great subtilty of distinction, drawn her at once loquacious and secret, obsequious and insolent, trusty and dishonest."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ESCALUS, *Prince of Verona.*  
 PARIS, *a young Nobleman, Kinsman to the Prince.*  
 MONTAGUE, } *Heads of two Houses at vari-*  
 CAPULET, } *ance with each other.*  
 AN OLD MAN, *Uncle to Capulet.*  
 ROMEO, *Son to Montague.*  
 MERCUTIO, *Kinsman to the Prince, and Friend to Romeo.*  
 BENVOLIO, *Nephew to Montague, and Friend to Romeo.*  
 TYBALT, *Nephew to Lady Capulet.*  
 FRIAR LAWRENCE, *a Franciscan.*  
 FRIAR JOHN, *of the same Order.*  
 BALTHAZAR, *Servant to Romeo.*  
 SAMPSON, } *Servants to Capulet.*  
 GREGORY, }

ABRAM, *Servant to Montague.*  
 AN APOTHECARY.  
 THREE MUSICIANS.  
 CHORUS.—BOY, *Page to Paris.*—PETER, *an Officer.*  
 LADY MONTAGUE, *Wife to Montague.*  
 LADY CAPULET, *Wife to Capulet.*  
 JULIET, *Daughter to Capulet.*  
 NURSE to Juliet.  
 Citizens of Verona; several Men and Women, relations to both Houses: Maskers Guards, Watchmen, and Attendants.

SCENE, during the greater part of the Play, in Verona: once, in the fifth Act, at Mantua.

## PROLOGUE.

Two households, both alike in dignity,  
 In fair Verona, where we lay our scene,  
 From ancient grudge break to new mutiny,  
 Where civil blood makes civil hands unclean.  
 From forth the fatal loins of these two foes  
 A pair of star-cross'd lovers take their life;  
 Whose misadventur'd piteous overthrows  
 Do, with their death, bury their parents' strife.

The fearful passage of their death-mark'd love,  
 And the continuance of their parents' rage,  
 Which, but their children's end, nought could remove,  
 Is now the two hours' traffic of our stage;  
 The which if you with patient ears attend  
 What here shall miss, our toil shall strive to mend.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—A public Place.

*Enter SAMPSON and GREGORY, armed with Swords and Bucklers.*

Sam. Gregory, o'my word, we'll not carry coals.

Gre. No, for then we should be colliers.

Sam. I mean, au we be in choler, we'll draw.

\* A phrase formerly in use to signify the bearing in fight.

Gre. Ay, while you live, draw your neck out of the collar.

Sam. I strike quickly, being moved.

Gre. But thou art not quickly moved to strike.

Sam. A dog of the house of Montague moves me.

Gre. To move, is—to stir; and to be valiant, is—to stand to it: therefore, if thou art mov'd, thou run'st away.

Sam. A dog of that house shall move me to stand: I will take the wall of any man or maid of Montague's.

*Gre.* That shows thee a weak slave; for the weakest goes to the wall.

*Sam.* True; and therefore women, being the weaker vessels, are ever thrust to the wall:—therefore I will push Montague's men from the wall, and thrust his maids to the wall.

*Gre.* The quarrel is between our masters, and us their men.

*Sam.* 'Tis all one, I will show myself a tyrant: when I have fought with the men, I will be cruel with the maids; I will cut off their heads.

*Gre.* The heads of the maids?

*Sam.* Ay, the heads of the maids, or their maidenheads; take it in what sense thou wilt.

*Gre.* They must take it in sense, that feel it.

*Sam.* Me they shall feel, while I am able to stand: and 'tis known I am a pretty piece of flesh.

*Gre.* 'Tis well, thou art not fish: if thou hadst, thou hadst been poor John. \* Draw thy tool; here comes two † of the house of the Montagues.

*Enter ABRAHAM and BALTHAZAR.*

*Sam.* My naked weapon is out; quarrel, I will back thee.

*Gre.* How? turn thy back, and run?

*Sam.* Fear me not.

*Gre.* No, marry: I fear thee!

*Sam.* Let us take the law of our sides; let them begin.

*Gre.* I will frown as I pass by: and let them take it as they list.

*Sam.* Nay, as they dare. I will bite my thumb at them; which is a disgrace to them, if they bear it.

*Abr.* Do you bite your thumb at us, Sir?

*Sam.* I do bite my thumb, Sir.

*Abr.* Do you bite your thumb at us, Sir?

*Sam.* Is the law on our side, if I say, ay?

*Gre.* No.

*Sam.* No, Sir, I do not bite my thumb at you, Sir; but I bite my thumb, Sir.

*Gre.* Do you quarrel, Sir?

*Abr.* Quarrel, Sir? no, Sir.

*Sam.* If you do, Sir, I am for you; I serve as good a man as you.

*Abr.* No better.

*Sam.* Well, Sir

*Enter BENVOLIO, at a Distance.*

*Gre.* Say—better; here comes one of my master's knismen.

*Sam.* Yes, better, Sir.

*Abr.* You lie.

*Sam.* Draw, if you be men.—Gregory, remember thy smashing blow.

[*They fight.*]

*Ben.* Part, fools; put up your swords; you know not what you do.

[*Beats down their Swords.*]

*Enter TYBALT.*

*Tyb.* What, art thou drawn among these heartless hinds?

Turn thee, Benvolio, look upon thy death.

*Ben.* I do but keep the peace; put up thy sword,

Or manage it to part these men with me.

*Tyb.* What, drawn, and talk of peace? I hate the word,

As I hate hell, all Montagues, and thee: Have at thee, coward.

[*They fight.*]

*Enter several Partizans of both Houses, who join the Fray: then enter CITIZENS with Clubs.*

1 *Cit.* Clubs, † bills, and partizans! strike! beat them down!

\* Poor John is hake, dried and salted.

† The disregard of concord is in character.

‡ Clubs! was equivalent to the modern cry of *Wards!*

Down with the Capulets! down with the Montagues!

*Enter CAPULET, in his Gown: and LADY CAPULET.*

*Cap.* What noise is this?—Give me my long sword, ho!

*La. Cap.* A crutch, a crutch!—Why call you for a sword?

*Cap.* My sword, I say!—Old Montague is come And flourishes his blade in spite of me.

*Enter MONTAGUE, and LADY MONTAGUE.*

*Mon.* Thou villain, Capulet,—Hold me not, let me go.

*La. Mon.* Thou shalt not stir one foot to seek a foe.

*Enter PRINCE, with Attendants.*

*Prin.* Rebellious subjects, enemies to peace, Profaners of this neighbour-stained steel,—Will they not hear?—what ho! you men, you beasts,—

That quench the fire of your pernicious rage With purple fountains issuing from your veins, On pain of torture, from those bloody hands Throw your mistemper'd weapons to the ground,

And hear the sentence of your moved prince.—

Three civil brawls, bred of an airy word,

By thee, old Capulet and Montague,

Have thrice disturb'd the quiet of our streets;

And made Verona's ancient citizens

Cast by their grave beseeching ornaments,

To wield old partizans, in hands as old,

Canker'd with peace to part your canker'd hate:

If ever you disturb our streets again,

Your lives shall pay the forfeit of the peace.

For this time, all the rest depart away:

You, Capulet, shall go along with me;

And, Montague, come you this afternoon,

To know our further pleasure in this case,

To old Free-town, our common judgment-place.

Once more, on pain of death, all men depart.

[*Exit PRINCE and Attendants. CAPULET, LADY CAPULET, TYBALT, CITIZENS, and Servants.*]

*Mon.* Who set this ancient quarrel new abroad?

Speak, nephew, were you by when it began?

*Ben.* Here were the servants of your adversary,

And your's, close fighting ere I did approach:

I drew to part them; in the instant came

The fiery Tybalt, with his sword prepar'd;

Which, as he breath'd defiance to my ears,

He swung about his head, and cut the winds,

Who, nothing hurt withal, hiss'd him in scorn:

While we were interchanging thrusts and blows

Came more and more and fought on part and

part,

Till the prince came, who parted either part.

*La. Mon.* O where is Romeo?—saw you him to day?

Right glad I am, he was not at his fray.

*Ben.* Madam, an hour before the worshipp'd sun,

Peer'd through the golden window of the east,

A troubled mind drove me to walk abroad;

Where,—underneath the grove of sycamore,

That westward rooteth from the city's side,—

So early walking did I see your son:

Towards him I made; but he was 'ware of me,

And stole into the covert of the wood:

I, measuring his affections by my own,

That most are busied when they are most alone,

Pursu'd his humour, not pursuing his,

And gladly shunn'd who gladly lov'd from me.

*Mon.* Many a morning bath he there been seen,

With tears augmenting the fresh morning's dew.

Adding to clouds more clouds with his deep sighs:

\* Angry.

But all so soon as the all-cheering sun  
Should in the furthest east begin to draw  
The shady curtains from Aurora's bed,  
Away from light steals home my heavy son,  
And private in his chamber pens himself;  
Shuts up his windows, locks fair day-light out,  
And makes himself an artificial night:  
Black and portentous must this humour prove,  
Unless good counsel may the cause remove.

*Ben.* My noble uncle, do you know the cause?

*Mon.* I neither know it, nor can learn of him.

*Ben.* Have you importun'd him by any means?

*Mon.* Both by myself, and many other friends:  
But he, his own affections' counsellor,  
Is to himself—I will not say, how true,—  
But to himself so secret and so close,  
So far from sounding and discovery,  
As is the bud bit with an envious worm,  
Ere he can spread his sweet leaves to the air,  
Or dedicate his beauty to the sun.  
Could we but learn from whence his sorrows  
grow,  
We would as willingly give cure, as know.

*Enter ROMEO, at a distance.*

*Ben.* See, where he comes: So please you,  
step aside:

I'll know his grievance, or be much denied.

*Mon.* I would thou wert so happy by thy stay,  
To hear true shrift.—Come, madam, let's away.

*[Exit MONTAGUE and LADY.]*

*Ben.* Good morning, cousin.

*Rom.* Is the day so young?

*Ben.* But new-struck nine.

*Rom.* Ah me! sad hours seem long.

Was that my father that went hence so fast?

*Ben.* It was:—What sadness lengthens Romeo's hours?

*Rom.* Not having that, which having, makes them short.

*Ben.* In love?

*Rom.* Out—

*Ben.* Of love?

*Rom.* Out of her favour, where I am in love.

*Ben.* Alas, that love, so gentle in his view,  
Should be so tyrannous and rough in proof!

*Rom.* Alas, that love, whose view is muffled still,  
Should, without eyes, see pathways to his will!  
Where shall we dine?—O me!—What fray  
was here?

Yet tell not, for I have heard it all. [love:—  
Here's much to do with hate, but more with  
Why, then, O brawling love! O loving hate!  
O any thing, of nothing first create!  
O heavy lightness! serious vanity!  
Mis-shapen chaos of well-seeming forms!  
Feather of lead, bright smoke, cold fire, sick  
health!

Still-waking sleep, that is not what it is!—  
This love feel I, that feel no love in this.

Dost thou not laugh?

*Ben.* No, coz, I rather weep.

*Rom.* Good heart, at what?

*Ben.* At thy good heart's oppression.

*Rom.* Why, such is love's transgression.—  
Griefs of mine own lie heavy in my breast;  
Which thou wilt propagate, to have it press'd  
With more of thine: this love, that thou hast  
shown,

Doth add more grief to too much of mine own.  
Love is a smoke rais'd with the fume of sighs;  
Being purg'd, a fire sparkling in a lover's eyes;  
Being vex'd, a sea nourish'd with lovers' tears:  
What is it else? a madness most discreet,  
A choking gall, and a preserving sweet.  
Farewell, my coz. [Going.]

*Ben.* Soft, I will go along;

And if you leave me so, you do me wrong.

*Rom.* Tut, I have lost myself; I am not  
here;

This is not Romeo, he's some other where.

*Ben.* Tell me in sadvers, who she is you  
love.

• In seriousness.

*Rom.* What, shall I groan, and tell thee?

*Ben.* Groan? why, no;

But sadly tell me, who.

*Rom.* Bid a sick man in sadness make his  
will:—

Ah word ill urg'd to one that is so ill!—

In sadness, cousin, I do love a woman.

*Ben.* I aim'd so near, when I suppos'd you  
lov'd.

*Rom.* A right good marksman!—And she's  
fair I love.

*Ben.* A right fair mark, fair coz, is soonest  
hit.

*Rom.* Well, in that hit, you miss: she'll not  
be hit

With Cupid's arrow, she hath Dian's wit;  
And, in strong proof of chastity well arm'd,  
From love's weak childish bow she lives un-  
harm'd.

She will not stay the siege of loving terms,  
Nor bide th' encounter of assailing eyes,  
Nor ope her lap to saint-seducing gold:

O she is rich in beauty; only poor,  
That, when she dies, with beauty dies her store.

*Ben.* Then she hath sworn, that she will still  
live chaste?

*Rom.* She hath, and in that sparing makes  
huge waste;

For beauty, starv'd with her severity,  
Cuts beauty off from all posterity.

She is too fair, too wise; wisely too fair,  
To merit bliss by making me despair:

She hath forsworn to love; and, in that vow,  
Do I live dead, that live to tell it now.

*Ben.* Be rul'd by me, forget to think of her.

*Rom.* O teach me how I should forget to  
think.

*Ben.* By giving liberty unto thine eyes:  
Examine other beauties.

*Rom.* 'Tis the way

To call her's exquisite, in question more:  
These happy masks, that kiss fair ladies' brows,  
Being black, put us in mind they hide the  
fair;

He, that is stricken blind, cannot forget  
The precious treasure of his eyesight lost:

Show me a mistress that is passing fair,  
What doth her beauty serve, but as a note  
Where I may read, who pass'd that passing  
fair?

Farewell; thou canst not teach me to forget.

*Ben.* I'll pay that doctrine, or else die in  
debt. [Exit.]

## SCENE II.—A Street.

*Enter CAPULET, PARIS, and SERVANT.*

*Cap.* And Montague is bound as well as I,  
In penalty alike; and 'tis not hard, I think,  
For men so old as we to keep the peace.

*Par.* Of honourable reckoning are you both;  
And pity 'tis, you liv'd at odds so long.

But now, my lord, what say you to my suit?

*Cap.* But saying o'er what I have said be-  
fore:

My child is yet a stranger in the world,  
She hath not seen the change of fourteen years;

Let two more summers wither in their pride,  
Ere we may think her ripe to be a bride.

*Par.* Younger than she are happy mothers  
made.

*Cap.* And too soon marr'd are those so early  
made.

The earth hath swallow'd all my hopes but she;  
She is the hopeful lady of my earth:

But woo her, gentle Paris, get her heart,  
My will to her consent is but a pain;

An she agree, within her scope of choice,  
Lies my consent, and fair according voice.

This night I hold an old accustomed feast,  
Whereto I have invited many a guest,

• A compliment to Queen Elizabeth, in whose reign the play was first represented.

Such as I love; and you, among the store, [more.  
Once more, most welcome, makes my number  
At my poor house, look to behold this night  
Earth-treading stars, that make dark heaven  
light:

Such comfort, as do lusty young men feel  
When well-appeard<sup>d</sup> April on the heel  
Of limping winter treads, even such delight  
Among fresh female buds shall you this night  
Inherit<sup>\*</sup> at my house; here all, all see,  
And like her most, whose merit most shall be:  
Such, amongst view of many, mine being one,  
May stand in number, though in reckoning<sup>†</sup>  
none.

Come, go with me;—Go, Sirrah, trudge about  
Through fair Verona; find those persons out,  
Whose names are written there, [*Gives a Paper.*]  
and to them say,  
My house and welcome on their pleasure stay.

[*Exeunt CAPULET and PARIS.*  
*Serv.* Find them out, whose names are written  
here? It is written—that the shoemaker  
should meddle with his yard, and the tailor with  
his last, the fisher with his pencil, and the  
painter with his nets; but I am sent to find  
those persons, whose names are here writ, and  
can never find what names the writing person  
hath here writ. I must to the learned:—in  
good time.

*Enter BENVOLIO and ROMEO.*

*Ben.* Tut, man! one fire burnus out another's  
burning,  
One pain is lessen'd by another's anguish;  
Turn giddy, and be help by backward turning:  
One desperate grief cures with another's languish:

Take thou some new infection to thy eye,  
And the rank poison of th' old will die.

*Rom.* Your plautain leaf is excellent for  
that.

*Ben.* For what, I pray thee?

*Rom.* For your broken shin.

*Ben.* Why, Romeo, art thou mad?

*Rom.* Not mad, but bound more than a mad-  
man is;

Shut up in prison, kept without my food,  
Whipp'd, and tormented, and—Good-e'en, good  
fellow.

*Serv.* God gi' good e'en.—I pray, Sir, can you  
read?

*Rom.* Ay, mine own fortune in my misery.

*Serv.* Perhaps you have learn'd it without  
book:

But I pray, can you read any thing you see?

*Rom.* Ay, if I know the letters, and the lan-  
guage.

*Serv.* Ye say honestly; Rest you merry!

*Rom.* Stay, fellow; I can read. [*Reads.*

*Signior Martino, and his wife and daughters;  
County Anselmo, and his beauteous  
sisters; The lady widow of Vitruvio; Signior  
Placentio, and his lovely nieces; Mercutio,  
and his brother Valentine; Mine uncle  
Capulet, his wife, and daughters; My fair  
niece Rosaline; Lucia; Signior Valerio,  
and his cousin Tybalt; Lucio, and the lively  
Helena.*

A fair assembly; [*Gives back the Note.*] Whither  
should they come?

*Serv.* Up.

*Rom.* Whither?

*Serv.* To supper; to our house.

*Rom.* Whose house?

*Serv.* My master's.

*Rom.* Indeed, I should have asked you that  
before.

*Serv.* Now I'll tell you without asking: My  
master is the great rich Capulet; and if you be

not of the house of Montagues, I pray, come  
and crush a cup of wine. \* Rest your merry!

[*Exit.*

*Ben.* At this same ancient feast of Capulet's  
Supps the fair Rosaline, whom thou so lov'st;  
With all the admired beauties of Verona:  
Go thither; and, with unattainted eye,  
Compare her face with some that I shall show,  
And I will make thee think thy swan a crow.

*Rom.* When the devout religion of mine eye  
Maintains such falsehood, then turn tears to  
fires!

And these,—who often drown'd could never die,—  
Transparent heretics, be burn'd for liars!  
One fairer than my love! th' all-seeing sun  
Ne'er saw her match, since first the world  
began.

*Ben.* Tut! you saw her fair, none else be-  
lieving by,  
Herself pois'n'd with herself in either eye:  
But in those crystal scales let there be weigh'd  
Your lady's love against some other maid  
That I will show you, shining at this feast,  
And she shall scant show well, that now shows  
best.

*Rom.* Ill go along, no such sight to be shown.  
But to rejoice in splendour of mine own.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—A Room in CAPULET'S House.

*Enter Lady CAPULET and NURSE.*

*La. Cap.* Nurse, where's my daughter? call  
her forth to me.

*Nurse.* Now, by my maidenhead, at twelve  
year old,— [*bird!*—  
I bade her come.—What, lamb! what, lady-  
God forbid!—where's this girl?—what, Juliet!

*Enter JULIET.*

*Jul.* How now, who calls?

*Nurse.* Your mother.

*Jul.* Madam, I am here,

What is your will?

*La. Cap.* This is the matter:—Nurse, give  
leave awhile,  
We must talk in secret.—Nurse, come back again;  
I have remember'd me, thou shalt hear our  
counsel.

Thou know'st, my daughter's of a pretty age.

*Nurse.* Faith, I can tell her age unto an  
hour.

*La. Cap.* She's not fourteen.

*Nurse.* I'll lay fourteen of my teeth,  
And yet, to my teen<sup>‡</sup> be it spoken, I have but  
four,—

She is not fourteen: How long is it now  
To Lammass tide?

*La. Cap.* A fortnight, and odd days.

*Nurse.* Even or odd, of all days in the year,  
Come Lammass-eve at night, shall she be four-  
teen.

Susan and she,—God rest all Christian souls!—  
Were of an age.—Well, Susan is with God;  
She was too good for me: But, as I said,  
On Lammass-eve at night shall she be fourteen;  
That shall she, marry; I remember it well.  
'Tis since the earthquake now eleven years;  
And she was wean'd,—I never shall forget  
it,—

Of all the days of the year, upon that day:  
For I had then laid wormwood to my dug,  
Sitting in the sun under the dove-house wall,  
My lord and you were then at Mantua:—  
Nay, I do bear a brain: [—but, as I said,  
When it did taste the wormwood on the nipple  
Of my dug, and felt it bitter, pretty fool!  
To see it tetchy, and fall out with the dug.  
Shake, quoth the dove-house: 'twas no need,  
I trow,  
To bid me trudge.

\* To inherit, in the language of Shakespeare, is to  
possess.

† Estimation.

\* To crack a bottle, is still a cant phrase.

† Weighed.

‡ Scarcely.

§ To my sorrow.

|| I. e., I have a perfect recollection.

And since that time it is eleven years :  
For then she could stand alone ; nay, by the  
rood \*

She could have run and waddled all about.  
For even the day before, she broke her brow :  
And then my husband—God be with his soul !  
‘A was a merry man ;—took up the child :  
Yea, quoth he, *doth thou fall upon thy face ?*  
*Thou wilt fall backward, when thou hast more*  
*wit ;*

*Wilt thou not, Juliet ?* and by my holy dam, †  
The pretty wretch left crying, and said—*Ay :*  
To see now, how a jest shall come about !  
I warrant, an I should live a thousand years,  
I never should forget it ; *Wilt thou not, Juliet ?*  
quoth he :

And, pretty fool, it stinted, ‡ and said—*Ay.*

*La. Cap.* Enough of this ; I pray thee, hold  
thy peace.

*Nurse.* Yes, madam ; Yet I cannot choose but  
laugh,

To think it should leave crying, and say—*Ay :*

And yet, I warrant, it had upon its brow  
A bump as big as a young cockrel’s stone ;  
A parlous knock ; and it cried bitterly.

Yea, quoth my husband, *fall’st upon thy face ?*  
*Thou wilt fall backward, when thou com’st*  
*to age ;*

*Wilt thou not, Juliet ?* it stinted, and said—*Ay.*

*Jul.* And stut thou too, I pray thee, nurse,  
say I.

*Nurse.* Peace, I have done. God mark thee  
to his grace ! †

Thou wast the prettiest babe that e’er I nurs’d :  
An I might live to see thee married once,  
I have my wish.

*La. Cap.* Marry, that marry is the very  
theme

I came to talk of :—Tell me, daughter Juliet,  
How stands your disposition to be married ?

*Jul.* It is an honour that I dream not of.

*Nurse.* An honour ! were not I thine only nurse,  
I’d say, thou hadst suck’d wisdom from thy teat.

*La. Cap.* Well, think of marriage now ;  
younger than you,

Here in Verona, ladies of esteem,  
Are made already mothers : by my count,  
I was your mother much upon these years  
That you are now a maid. Thus then, in  
brief :—

The valiant Paris seeks you for his love.

*Nurse.* A man, young lady ! lady, such a  
man,

As all the world—why, he’s a man of wax. ‡

*La. Cap.* Verona’s summer hath not such a  
flower,

*Nurse.* Nay, he’s a flower ; in faith, a very  
flower.

*La. Cap.* What say you ? can you love the  
gentleman ?

This night you shall behold him at our feast :  
Read o’er the volume of young Paris’ face,  
And find delight writ there with beauty’s pen ;  
Examine every married lineament,  
And see how one another lends content ;  
And what obscur’d in this fair volume lies,  
Find written in the margin of his eyes. ¶  
This precious book of love, this unbound lover,  
To beautify him, only lacks a cover :  
The fish lives in the sea ; \*\* and ’tis much  
pride,

For fair without the fair within to hide :  
That book in many’s eyes doth share the glory,  
That in gold clasps locks in the golden story ;  
So shall you share all that he doth possess,  
By having him, making yourself no less.

*Nurse.* No less ? nay, bigger ; women grow by  
men.

\* The cross. † Holy dame, ‡ i. e. the blessed virgin—  
† It stopped crying. ‡ Favour.

¶ As well made as if he had been modelled in wax.  
¶ The comments on ancient books were always printed  
in the margin.

\*\* I. e. is not yet caught, whose skin was wanted to  
bind him.

*La. Cap.* Speak briefly, can you like of Paris  
love ?

*Jul.* I’ll look to like, if looking liking move :  
But no more deep will I endart mine eye,  
Than your consent gives strength to make it fly.

Enter a SERVANT.

*Serv.* Madam, the guests are come, supper  
served up, you called, my young lady asked for,  
the nurse cursed in the pantry, and every thing  
in extremity. I must hence to wait ; I beseech  
you, follow straight.

*La. Cap.* We follow thee.—Juliet, the county  
stays.

*Nurse.* Go, girl, seek happy nights to happy  
days. [Exeunt]

#### SCENE IV.—A Street.

Enter ROMEO, MERCUTIO, BENVOLIO, with  
five or six Maskers, Torch-bearers, and  
others.

*Rom.* What, shall this speech be spoke for our  
excuse ?

Or shall we on without apology ?

*Ben.* The date is out of such prolixity : \*

We’ll have no Cupid hood-wink’d with a scarf,  
Bearing a Tartar’s painted bow of lath,

Scaring the ladies like a crow-keeper ; †

Nor no without-book prologue, faintly spoke

After the prompter, for our entrance :

But, let them measure us by what they will,

We’ll measure them a measure ; ‡ and be gone.

*Rom.* Give me a torch, §—I am not for this  
ambling ;

Being but heavy, I will bear the light.

*Mer.* Nay, gentle Romeo, we must have you  
dance.

*Rom.* Not I, believe me : you have dancing-  
shoes,

With nimble soles : I have a soul of lead

So stakes me to the ground, I cannot move.

*Mer.* You are a lover ; borrow Cupid’s wings,

And soar with them above a common bound.

*Rom.* I am too sore pierc’d with his shaft,

To soar with his light feathers ; and so bound,

I cannot bound a pitch above dull woe :

Under love’s heavy burden do I sink.

*Mer.* And, to sink in it, should you burden  
love ;

Too great oppression for a tender thing.

*Rom.* Is love a tender thing ? it is too rough,

Too rude, too boisterous ; and it pinches like  
thorn.

*Mer.* If love be rough with you, be rough  
with love ;

Prick love for pricking, and you beat love  
[down.—]

Give me a case to put my visage in :

[Putting on a Mask.]

A visor for a visor !—what care I,

What curious eye doth quote ¶ deformities ?

Here are the beetle-brows, shall blush for me.

*Ben.* Come, knock, and enter ; and no sooner

But every man betake him to his legs. [In.]

*Rom.* A torch for me ; let waltzers, light of  
heart,

Tickle the senseless rushes ¶ with their heels ;

For I am provok’d with a grandeur phrase,—

I’ll be a candle-holder, and look on,—

The game was ne’er so fair, and I am done. \*\*

*Mer.* Tut ! dun’s the mouse, the constable’s  
own word :

If thou art dun, we’ll draw thee from the mire

Of this (save reverence) love, wherein thou  
stick’st.

Up to the ears.—Come, we burn day-light, ho.

\* I. e. Long speeches are out of fashion.

† A scare-crow, a figure made up to frighten crows.

‡ A dancer.

§ A torch-bearer was a constant appendage to every  
troop of maskers.

¶ I. e. in the reign of Charles, the floors of the best  
houses were strewn with rushes.

\*\* This is equivalent to phrases in common use—*I am  
done for, it is over with me.*

*Rom.* Nay, that's not so.

*Mer.* I mean, Sir, in delay

We waste our lights in vain, like lamps by day.  
Take our good meaning; for our judgment sits  
Five times in that, ere once in our five wits.

*Rom.* And we mean well, in going to this mask;  
But 'tis no wit to go.

*Mer.* Why, may one ask?

*Rom.* I dreamt a dream to-night.

*Mer.* And so did I.

*Rom.* Well, what was yours?

*Mer.* That dreamers often lie.

*Rom.* In bed, asleep, while they do dream  
things true.

*Mer.* O then, I see, queen Mab hath been with  
you.

She is the fairies' midwife; and she comes  
in shape no bigger than an agate-stone  
On the fore-finger of an alderman,  
Drawn with a team of little atomies\*  
Athwart men's noses as they lie asleep:  
Her waggon-spokes made of long spinners' legs;  
The cover, of the wings of grasshoppers;  
The traces, of the smallest spider's web;  
The collars, of the moonshine's wat'ry beams;  
Her whip, of cricket's bone; the lash of film:  
Her waggoner, a small grey-coated gnat,  
Not half so big as a round little worm  
Prick'd from the lazy finger of a maid:  
Her chariot is an empty hazel-nut,  
Made by the joiner squirrel, or old grub,  
Time out of mind the fairies' coach-makers.  
And in this state she gallops night by night  
Through lovers' brains, and then they dream  
of love:

On courtiers' knees, that dream on courtiers'  
straight:

O'er lawyers' fingers, who straight dream on  
fees:

O'er ladies' lips, who straight on kisses dream,  
Which oft the angry Mab with blisters plagues,  
Because their breaths with sweetmeats tainted  
are.

Sometimes she gallops o'er a courtier's nose,  
And then dreams he of smelling out a suit:†  
And sometimes comes she with a tithe-pig's  
tail,

Tickling a parson's nose as 'a lies asleep,  
Then dreams he of another benefice:  
Sometimes she driveth o'er a soldier's neck,  
And then dreams he of cutting foreign throats,  
Of breaches, ambuscadoes, Spanish blades,  
Of healths five fathom deep; and then anon  
Drums in his ear; at which he starts, and  
wakes,

And, being thus frightened, swears a prayer or two,  
And sleeps again. This is that very Mab,  
That plats the manes of horses in the night,  
And bakes the elf-locks‡ in foul sluggish hairs,  
Which, once untangled, much misfortune bodes.  
This is the hag, when maids lie on their backs,  
That presses them, and learns them first to  
bear,

Making them women of good carriage.

This, this is she—

*Rom.* Peace, peace, Mercutio, peace;  
Thou talk'st of nothing.

*Mer.* True, I talk of dreams;

Which are the children of an idle brain,  
Fictor of nothing but vain fantasy;  
Which is as thin of substance as the air;  
And more inconstant than the wind, who woos  
Even now the frozen bosom of the north,  
And, being anger'd, puffs away from thence,  
Turning his face to the dew-dropping south.

*Ben.* This wind you talk of blows us from  
ourselves;

Supper is done, and we shall come too late.

*Rom.* I fear, too early: for my mind mis-  
gives

Some consequence, yet hanging in the stars,

Shall bitterly begin his fearful date  
With this night's revels; and expire the term  
Of a despised life, clos'd in my breast,  
By some vile forfeit of untimely death:  
But He, that hath the steerage of my course,  
Direct my sail!—On, lusty gentlemen.

*Ben.* Strike, drum.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE V.—A Hall in CAPULET'S House.

*Musicians waiting. Enter SERVANTS.*

1 *Serv.* Where's Potpan, that he helps not  
to take away? he shift a trencher! he scrape a  
trencher!

2 *Serv.* When good manners shall lie all in  
one or two men's hands, and they unwashed too,  
'tis a foul thing.

1 *Serv.* Away with the joint-stools, remove  
the court-cupboard,\* look to the plate:—good  
thou, save me a piece of marchpane:† and, a-  
thou lovest me, let the porter let in Susan  
Grindstone and Nell.—Antony! and Potpan!

2 *Serv.* Ay, boy; ready.

1 *Serv.* You are looked for, and called for,  
asked for, and sought for, in the great chamber.

2 *Serv.* We cannot be here and there too:—  
Cheerly, boys; be brisk a while, and the longer  
liver take all. [They retire behind.]

*Enter CAPULET, &c. with the Guests and the  
Maskers.*

*Cap.* Gentlemen, welcome! ladies, that have  
their toes [You.—]  
Unplagu'd with corns, will have a bout with  
Ah! my mistresses! which of you all  
Will now deny to dance? she that makes dainty,  
she,

I'll swear, hath corns; Am I come near you now?  
You are welcome, gentlemen! I have seen the  
day,

That I have worn a visor, and could tell  
A whispering tale in a fair lady's ear,  
Such as would please;—'tis gone, 'tis gone, 'tis  
gone: [Play.]

You are welcome, gentlemen!—Come, musicians,  
A hall! a hall! give room, and foot it, girls.

[*Music plays, and they dance.*]  
More light, ye knaves; and turn the tables up,  
And quench the fire, the room is grown too  
hot.—

Ah! Sirrah, this unlook'd-for sport comes well.  
Nay, sit, nay, sit, good cousin Capulet;  
For you and I are past our dancing days:  
How long is't now, since last yourself and I  
Were in a mask?

2 *Cap.* By'r lady, thirty years.

1 *Cap.* What, man! 'tis not so much; 'tis not  
so much:

'Tis since the nuptial of Lucentio,  
Come pentecost as quickly as it will,  
Some five and twenty years; and then we  
mask'd.

2 *Cap.* 'Tis more, 'tis more: his son is elder,  
His son is thirty. [Sir:]

1 *Cap.* Will you tell me that?

His son was but a ward two years ago.

*Rom.* What lady's that, which doth enrich the  
hand

Of yonder knight?

*Serv.* I know not, Sir.

*Rom.* O she doth teach the torches to burn  
bright!

Her beauty hangs upon the cheek of night  
Like a rich jewel in an Ethiop's‡ ear:  
Beauty too rich for use, for earth too dear!  
So shows a snowy dove trooping with crows,  
As yonder lady o'er her fellows shows.  
The measure‡ done, I'll watch her place of  
stand,

And, touching her's, make happy my rude hand.

\* Atoms. † A place in court.  
‡ I.e. Fairy-locks, locks of hair clotted and tangled  
in the night.

\* A cupboard set in a corner like a beautifol on which  
the plate was placed. † A clear hall, or make room.  
‡ An Ethiopian. † The dance.

Did my heart love till now? forswear it, sight!  
For I never saw true beauty till this night.

*Tyb.* This, by his voice, should be a Montague:—

Fetch me my rapier, boy:—What! dares the  
Come hither, cover'd with an antic face,  
To flout and scorn at our solemnity?  
Now, by the stuck and honour of my kin,  
To strike him dead I hold it not a sin.

*1 Cap.* Why, how now kinsman? wherefore  
sturm you so?

*Tyb.* Uncle, this is a Montague, our foe;  
A villain, that is hither come in spite,  
To scorn at our solemnity this night.

*1 Cap.* Young Romeo is't?

*Tyb.* 'Tis he, that villain Romeo.

*1 Cap.* Content thee, gentle coz, let him alone,  
He bears him like a portly gentleman;  
And, to say truth, Verona brags of him,  
To be a virtuous and well-govern'd youth:  
I would not, for the wealth of all this town,  
Here in my house do him disparagement:  
Therefore be patient, take no note of him,  
It is my will; the which if thou respect,  
Show a fair presence, and put off these frowns,  
And ill-becoming semblance for a feast.

*Tyb.* It fits, when such a villain is a guest;  
I'll not endure him.

*1 Cap.* He shall be endur'd: [to:—  
What, Goodman boy!—I say, he shall;—Go  
Am I the master here, or you? I go to. [soul—  
You'll not endure him!—God shall mend my  
You'll make a mutiny among my guests!  
You will set cock-a-whoop! you'll be the man!

*Tyb.* Why, uncle, 'tis a shame.

*1 Cap.* Go to, go to,  
You are saucy, boy;—Is't so, indeed?— [what.  
This trick may chance to scath\* you;—I know  
You must contrary me! marry, 'tis time—  
Well said, my hearts:—You are a princ Cox; †  
go:—

Be quiet, or—More light, more light, for shame!—  
I'll make you quiet; What!—Cheerly, my  
hearts.

*Tyb.* Patience perforce with wilful choler  
meeting, [ing.  
Makes my flesh tremble in their different greet-  
I will withdraw; but this intrusion shall,  
Now seeming sweet, convert to bitter gall.

[Exit.

*Rom.* If I profane with my unworthy hand  
[To JULIET.

This holy shrine, the gentle fine is this,—  
My lips, two blushing pilgrims, ready stand  
To smooth that rough touch with a tender  
kiss.

*Jul.* Good pilgrim, you do wrong your hand  
too much,

Which chaunterly devotion shows in this;  
For saints have hands that pilgrims' hands do  
touch,

And palm to palm is holy palmers' kiss.

*Rom.* Have not saints lips, and holy palmers  
too?

*Jul.* Ay, pilgrim, lips that they must use in  
prayer.

*Rom.* O then, dear saint, let lips do what  
hands do;

They pray, grant thou, lest faith turn to des-  
pair.

*Jul.* Saints do not move, though grant for  
players' sake.

*Rom.* Then move not, while my prayer's ef-  
fect I take.

Thus from my lips, by yours, my sin is purg'd.

[Kissing her. †

*Jul.* Then have my lips the sin that they have  
took.

*Rom.* Sin from my lips? O trespass sweetly  
Give me my sin again.

*Jul.* You kiss by the book.

*Nurse.* Madam, your mother craves a word  
with you.

*Rom.* What is her mother?

*Nurse.* Marry, bachelior,  
Her mother is the lady of the house,  
And a good lady, and a wise, and virtuous:  
I nurs'd her daughter, that you talk'd withal;  
I tell you,—he, that can lay hold of her,  
Shall have the chinks.

*Rom.* Is she a Capulet?

*1 Cap.* O dear account! my life is my foe's debt.

*Ben.* Away, begone; the sport is at the best.

*Rom.* Ay, so I fear; the more is my unrest.

*1 Cap.* Nay, gentlemen, prepare not to be  
gone;

We have a trifling foolish banquet\* towards.—

Is it e'en so? Why, then I thank you all;  
I thank you, honest gentlemen; good night:—  
More torches here!—Come on, then let's to  
bed. [late; to

Ah, Sirrah, [To 2 CAP.] by my fay, † it waxes  
I'll to my rest.

[Exit all but JULIET and NURSE.  
*Jul.* Come hither, nurse: What is your gen-  
tleman?

*Nurse.* The son and heir of old Tiberio.

*Jul.* What's he, that now is going out of  
door?

*Nurse.* Marry, that, I think, be young Pe-  
truchio.

*Jul.* What's he, that follows there, that would  
not dance?

*Nurse.* I know not.

*Jul.* Go, ask his name:—if he be married,  
My grave is like to be my wedding bed.

*Nurse.* His name is Romeo, and a Montague;  
The only son of your great enemy.

*Jul.* My only love sprung from my only  
hate!

Too early seen unknown, and known too late!

Prodigious birth of love it is to me,  
That I must love a loathed enemy.

*Nurse.* What's this? what's this?

*Jul.* A rhyme I learn'd even now

Of one I danc'd withal.

[One calls within, Juliet!

*Nurse.* Anon, anon:—

Come, let's away; the strangers all are gone.

[Exit.

Enter CHORUS.

Now old desire doth in his death-bed lie,  
And young affection gapes to be his heir;  
That fair, which love groan'd for, and would die  
With tender Juliet match'd, is now not fair.  
Now Romeo is belov'd, and loves again,  
Alike bewitched by the charm of looks;  
But to his foe suppos'd he must complain,  
And she steals love's sweet bait from fearful  
hooks:

Being held a foe, he may not have access  
To breathe such vows as lovers use to swear;  
And she as much in love, her means much less  
To meet her new-beloved any where:  
But passion lends them power, time means to  
meet,

Temp'ring extremities with extreme sweet.  
[Exit.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—An open Place, adjoining  
CAPULET'S Garden.

Enter ROMEO.

*Rom.* Can I go forward, when my heart is  
here?

Turn back, dull earth, † and find thy centre out.  
[He climbs the Wall, and leaps down  
within it.

\* Do you an injury. † A cockcomb.  
† In our poet's time, a salute in a public assembly  
might not be esteemed indecorous.

\* A collation of fruit, wine, &c. † Faith.



*Enter BENVOLIO, and MERCUTIO.*

*Ben.* Romeo! my cousin Romeo!

*Merc.* He is wise;

And, on my life, hath stolen him home to bed.

*Ben.* He ran this way, and leap'd this orchard wall;

Call, good Mercutio.

*Merc.* Nay, I'll conjure too.—

Romeo! humours! madman! passion! lover! Appear thou in the likeness of a sigh, Speak but one rhyme, and I am satisfied; Cry but—Ah me! couple but—*love* and *dove*; Speak to my gossip Venus one fair word, One nick-name for her purblind son and heir, Young Adam Cupid, he that shot so trim, When king Cophetua lov'd the beggarmaid. \*—He heareth not, stireth not, he moveth not; The ape† is dead, and I must conjure him.—I conjure thee by Rosaline's bright eyes, By her high forehead, and her scarlet lip, By her fine foot, straight leg, and quivering thigh,

And the demesnes that there adjacent lie, That in thy likeness thou appear to us.

*Ben.* An if he hear thee, thou wilt anger him.

*Merc.* This cannot anger him: 'twould anger To raise a spirit in his mistress' circle †him Of some strange nature, letting it there stand Till she had laid it, and conjur'd it down; That were some spite: my invocation Is fair and honest, and, in his mistress' name, I conjure only but to raise up him.

*Ben.* Come, he hath hid himself among those trees,

To be consort'd with the humorous; night: Blind is his love, and best befits the dark.

*Merc.* If love be blind, love cannot hit the mark.

Now will he sit under a medlar tree, And wish his mistress were that kind of fruit, As maids call medlars, when they laugh alone.—Romeo, good night;—I'll to my truckle-bed; This field-bed is too cold for me to sleep: Come, shall we go?

*Ben.* Go, then; for 'tis in vain To seek him here, that means not to be found. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.—CAPULET'S Garden.

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* He jests at scars, that never felt a wound.—

[JULIET appears above at a Window. But, soft! what light through yonder window breaks?

It is the east, and Juliet is the sun!—Arise, fair sun, and kill the envious moon, Who is already sick and pale with grief, That thou her maid art far more fair than she: Be not her maid, ‡ since she is envious; Her vestal livery is not sick and green, And none but fools do wear it; cast it off.—It is my lady; O it is my love: O that she knew she were!—

She speaks, yet she says nothing; What of that? Her eye discourses, I will answer it.—I am too bold, 'tis not to me she speaks: Two of the fairest stars in all the heaven, Having some business, do entreat her eyes To twinkle in their spheres till they return. What if her eyes were there, they in her head The brightness of her cheek would shame those stars,

As daylight doth a lamp; her eye in heaven Would through the airy region stream so bright, That birds would sing, and think it were not night.

See, how she leans her cheek upon her hand!

\* Alluding to the old ballad of the King and the Beggar.  
† This phrase in Shukapara's time was used as an expression of tenderness.  
‡ Illumin'd.  
§ A votary to the moon, to Diana.

O that I were a glove upon that hand, That I might touch that cheek!

*Jul.* Ah me!

*Rom.* She speaks:—

O speak again, bright angel! for thou art As glorious to this night, being o'er my head, As is a winged messenger of heaven Unto the white-upturned wond'ring eyes Of mortals, that fall back to gaze on him, When he bestrides the lazy-pacing clouds, And sails upon the bosom of the air.

*Jul.* O Romeo, Romeo! wherefore art thou Romeo?

Deny thy father, and refuse thy name:

Or, if thou wilt not, be but sworn my love, And I'll no longer be a Capulet.

*Rom.* Shall I hear more, or shall I speak at this? [Aside.]

*Jul.* 'Tis but thy name, that is my enemy;—Thou art thyself though, not a Montague.

What's Montague? it is nor hand, nor foot, Nor arm, nor face, nor any other part Belonging to a man. O be some other name! What's in a name? that which we call a rose, By any other name would smell as sweet: So Romeo would, were he not Romeo call'd: Retain that dear perfection which he owes, \* Without that title:—Romeo, doff † thy name; And for that name, which is no part of thee, Take all myself.

*Rom.* I take thee at thy word:

Call me but love, and I'll be none baptiz'd: Henceforth I never will be Romeo.

*Jul.* What man art thou, that, thus bescreen'd in night,

So stumblest on my counsel?

*Rom.* By a name

I know not how to tell thee who I am; My name, dear saint, is hateful to myself, Because it is an enemy to thee: Had I it written, I would tear the word.

*Jul.* My ears have not yet drunk a hundred words

Of that tongue's utterance, yet I know the sound:

Art thou not Romeo, and a Montague?

*Rom.* Neither, fair saint, if either thee dislike.

*Jul.* How cam'st thou hither, tell me? and wherefore?

The orchard walls are high, and hard to climb; And the place death, considering who thou art, If any of my kinsmen find thee here.

*Rom.* With love's light wings did I o'erperch these walls;

For stony limits cannot hold love out: And what love can do, that dares love attempt; Therefore thy kinsmen are no let; to me.

*Jul.* If they do see thee, they will murder thee.

*Rom.* Alack! there lies more peril in thine eye,

Than twenty of their swords: look thou but And I am proof against their enmity.

*Jul.* I would not, for the world, they saw thee here.

*Rom.* I have night's cloak to hide me from their sight;

And, but thou love me, ‡ let them find me here: My life were better ended by their hate, Than death prorogued, wanting of thy love.

*Jul.* By whose direction found'st thou out this place?

*Rom.* By love, who first did prompt me to inquire;

He lent me counsel, and I lent him eyes. I am no pilot: yet, wert thou as far As that vast shore wash'd with the furthest sea, I would adventure for such merchandise.

*Jul.* Thou know'st the mask of night is on my face;

Else would a maiden blush bepaint my cheek,

\* Owes.  
† Hindersance.

‡ Lay aside.  
§ Unless thou love me.

For that which thou hast heard me speak to-night.

Fain would I dwell on form; fain, fain deny  
What I have spoke; But farewell compliment!  
Dost thou love me? I know thou wilt say

Yes;  
And I will take thy word: yet, if thou swear'st,  
Thou may'st prove false; at lovers' perjuries,  
They say Jove laughs. O gentle Romeo,  
If thou dost love, pronounce it faithfully:  
Or if thou think'st I am too quickly won,  
I'll frown and be perverse, and say thee nay,  
So thou wilt woo: but, else, not for the world.  
In truth, fair Montague, I am too fond;  
And therefore thou may'st think my haviour

light:  
But trust me, gentleman, I'll prove more true  
Than those that have more cunning to be

strange.\*  
I should have been more strange, I must confess,  
But that thou over-heard'st, ere I was ware,  
My true love's passion: therefore pardon me;  
And not impute this yielding to light love,  
Which the dark night hath so discovered.

Rom. Lady, by yonder blessed moon I swear,  
That tips with silver all these fruit-tree tops,—

Jul. O swear not by the moon, the inconstant

moon,  
That monthly changes in her circled orb,  
Lest that thy love prove likewise variable.

Rom. What shall I swear by?

Jul. Do not swear at all;

Or, if thou wilt, swear by thy gracious self,  
Which is the god of my idolatry,  
And I'll believe thee.

Rom. If my heart's dear love—

Jul. Well, do not swear: although I joy in

thee,  
I have no joy in this contract to-night:  
It is too rash, too unadvised, too sudden;  
Too like the lightning, which doth cease to be,  
Ere one can say—It lightens. Sweet, good

night!  
This bud of love, by summer's ripening breath,  
May prove a beauteous flower when next we

meet.  
Good night, good night! as sweet repose and

rest  
Come to thy heart, as that within my breast!

Rom. O wilt thou leave me so unsatisfied?

Jul. What satisfaction canst thou have to-

night?  
Rom. The exchange of thy love's faithful vow

for mine.  
Jul. I gave thee mine before thou didst re-

quest it;

And yet I would it were to give again.

Rom. Woul'st thou withdraw it? for what pur-

pose, love?

Jul. But to be frank,† and give it thee again.  
And yet I wish but for the thing I have:  
My bounty is as boundless as the sea,  
My love as deep; the more I give to thee,  
The more I have, for both are infinite.

[Nurse calls within.  
I hear some noise within; Dear love, adieu!  
And, good nurse!—Sweet Montague, be true.  
Stay but a little, I will come again.] [Exit.]

Rom. O blessed blessed night! I am afraid,  
Being in night, all this is but a dream,  
Too flattering-sweet to be substantial.

Re-enter JULIET, above.

Jul. Three words, dear Romeo, and good

night indeed.  
If that thy bent† of love be honourable,  
Thy purpose marriage, send me word to-morrow,  
By one that I'll procure to come to thee,  
Where and what time thou wilt perform the rite;  
And all my fortunes at thy foot I'll lay,  
And follow thee, my lord, throughout the

\* J. e. More artfully assume coldness.  
† Freely. ‡ Inclination.

Nurse. [Within.] Madam.

Jul. I come, anon:—But if thou mean'st not

I do beseech thee,— [well,

Nurse. [Within.] Madam.

Jul. By and by, I come:—

To cease thy suit, and leave me to my grief:

To-morrow will I send.

Rom. So thrive my soul,—

Jul. A thousand times good night! [Exit.]

Rom. A thousand times the worse to want thy

light—

Love goes toward love, as schoolboys from their

books;

But love from love, toward school with heavy

looks. [Retiring slowly.]

Re-enter JULIET, above.

Jul. Hail! Romeo, hail!—O for a falconer's

voice,

To lure this tassel-gentle\* back again!

Bondage is hoarse, and may not speak aloud;

Else would I tear the cave where Echo lies,

And make her airy tongue more hoarse than

mine

With repetition of my Romeo's name.

Rom. It is my soul, that calls upon my name:

How silver-sweet sound lovers' tongues by night,

Like softest music to attending ears!

Jul. Romeo!

Rom. My sweet!

Jul. At what o'clock to-morrow

Shall I send to thee?

Rom. At the hour of nine.

Jul. I will not fail; 'tis twenty years till

then.

I have forgot why I did call thee back.

Rom. Let me stand here till thou remember

it.

Jul. I shall forget, to have thee still stand

there,

Rememb'ring how I love thy company.

Rom. And I'll still stay, to have thee still

forget

Forgetting any other home but this.

Jul. 'Tis almost morning, I would have thee

gone:

And yet no further than a wanton's bird;

Who lets it hop a little from her hand,

Like a poor prisoner in his twisted gyves,†

And with a silk thread plucks it black again,

So loving-jealous of his liberty.

Rom. I would I were thy bird.

Jul. Sweet, so would I:

Yet I should kill thee with much cherishing.

Good night, good night! Parting is such sweet

sorrow,

That I shall say—good night, till it be morrow.

[Exit.]

Rom. Sleep dwell upon thine eyes, peace in

thy breast!—

'Would I were sleep and peace, so sweet to rest!

Hence will I to my ghostly father's cell:

His help to crave, and my dear hap‡ to tell.

[Exit.]

SCENE III.—Friar Laurence's Cell.

Enter Friar LAURENCE, with a Basket.

Fri. The grey-ey'd morn smiles on the frown-

ing night, [light;

Checking the eastern clouds with streaks of

And flecked‡ darkness like a drunkard reels

From forth day's path-way, made by Titan's‡

wheels:

Now ere the sun advance his burning eye,

The day to cheer, and night's dank dew to dry,

I must fill up this osier cage of ours,

With baleful weeds, and precious-juiced flowers.

The earth, that's nature's mother, is her tomb;

What is her burying grave, that is her womb:

And from her womb children of divers kind

We sucking on her natural bosom find;

\* The male of the goshawk. † Fetters.  
‡ Chance. § Spotted, streaked. ¶ The sun.

Many for many virtues excellent,  
None but for some, and yet all different.  
O mickle is the powerful grace\* that lies  
In herbs, plants, stones, and their true qualities;  
For nought so vile that on the earth doth live,  
But to the earth some special good doth give;  
Nor aught so good, but strain'd from that fair  
use,  
Revolts from true birth, stumbling on abuse:  
Virtue itself turns vice, being misapplied;  
And vice sometime's by action dignified.  
Within the infant rind of this small flower  
Poison hath residence, and med'cine power:  
For this, being smelt, with that part cheers  
each part;  
Being tasted, slays all senses with the heart.  
Two such opposed foes encamp them still  
In man as well as herbs—grace and rude will;  
And, where the worse is predominant,  
Full soon the canker death eats up that plant.

Enter ROMEO.

Rom. Good morrow, father;

Fri. Benedicite!

What early tongue so sweet saluteth me?—  
Young son, it argues a distemper'd head,  
So soon to bid good morrow to thy bed;  
Care keeps his watch in every old man's eye,  
And where care lodges, sleep will never lie;  
But where unbruised youth with unstuff'd brain  
Doth couch his limbs, there golden sleep doth  
reign:

Therefore thy earliness doth me assure,  
Thou art up-rous'd by some distemper'd nature;  
Or, if not so, then here I hit it right—  
Our Romeo hath not been in bed to night.

Rom. That last is true, the sweeter rest was  
mine.

Fri. God pardon sin! wast thou with Ros-  
aline?

Rom. With Rosaline, my ghostly father? no;  
I have forgot that name, and that name's woe.

Fri. That's my good son: But where hast  
thou been then?

Rom. I'll tell thee, ere thou ask it me again.  
I have been feasting with mine enemy;  
Where, on a sudden, one hath wounded me,  
That's by me wounded; both our remedies  
Within thy help and holy physic lies:  
I bear no hatred, blessed man; for, lo,  
My intercession likewise steads my foe.

Fri. Be plain, good son, and homely in thy  
drift;

Riddling confession finds but riddling shrift.

Rom. Then plainly know, my heart's dear love  
is set

On the fair daughter of rich Capulet:  
As mine on her's, so her's is set on mine;  
And all combin'd save what thou must com-  
bine

By holy marriage: When, and where, and how,  
We met, we woo'd, and made exchange of vow,  
I'll tell thee as we pass; but this I pray,  
That thou consent to marry us this day.

Fri. Holy Saint Francis! what a change is  
here!

Is Rosaline, whom thou didst love so dear,  
So soon forsaken? young men's love then lies  
Not truly in their hearts, but in their eyes.  
Jesu Maria! what a deal of brine  
Hath wash'd thy sallow cheeks for Rosaline!  
How much salt water thrown away in waste,  
To season love, that of it doth not taste!  
The sun not yet thy sighs from heaven clears,  
Thy old groans ring yet in my ancient ears;  
Lo, here upon thy cheek the stain doth sit  
Of an old tear that is not wash'd off yet:  
If e'er thou wast thyself, and these woes thine,  
Thou and these woes were all for Rosaline;  
And art thou chang'd? pronounce this sentence  
then—

Women may fall, when there's no strength in

\* Virtue.

Rom. Thou chid'st me oft for loving Rosaline.  
Fri. For doting, not for loving, pupil mine.

Rom. And had'st me bury love.

Fri. Not in a grave,  
To lay one in, another out to have.

Rom. I pray thee, chide not: she, whom I  
love now.

Doth grace for grace, and love for love allow;  
The other did not so.

Fri. O she knew well,  
Thy love did read by rote, and could not spell.

But come, young waverer, come go with me,  
In one respect I'll thy assistant be;  
For this alliance may so happy prove,  
To turn your households' rancour to pure love.

Rom. O let us hence; I stand on sudden  
haste.\*

Fri. Wisely and slow; they stumble that run  
fast. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—A Street.

Enter BENVOLIO AND MERCUTIO.

Merc. Where the devil should this Romeo be?  
—Came he not home to-night?

Ben. Not to his father's; I spoke with his  
man.

Merc. Ah! that same pale hard-hearted wench,  
that Rosaline,

Torments him so, that he will sure run mad.

Ben. Tybalt, the kinsman of old Capulet,  
Hath sent a letter to his father's house.

Merc. A challenge, on my life.

Ben. Romeo will answer it.

Merc. Any man, that can write, may answer a  
letter.

Ben. Nay, he will answer the letter's master,  
how he dares, being dared.

Merc. Alas, poor Romeo, he is already dead;  
stabbed with a white wench's black eye; shot  
thorough the ear with a love-song; the very  
pin of his heart cleft with the blind bow-boy's  
butt-shaft;† And is he a man to encounter  
Tybalt?

Ben. Why, what is Tybalt?

Merc. More than prince of cats;‡ I can tell  
you. O he is the courageous captain of compli-  
ments. He fights as you sing prick-song,§  
keeps time, distance, and proportion; rests me  
his minims rest, one, two, and the third in your  
bosom: the very butcher of a silk button, a  
duellist, a duellist; a gentleman of the very first  
house,—of the first and second cause: Ah, the  
immortal passado! the punto reverse! the hay!

Ben. The what?

Merc. The pox of such antic, lapwing, affecting,  
fantasies; these new tuners of accents!—By  
Jesu, a very good blade!—a very tall man!—  
a very good whore!—Why, is not this a lament-  
able thing, grandsire, that we should be thus  
afflicted with these strange flies, these fashion-  
mongers, these *pardonnez-moy*, who stand so  
much on the new form, that they can sit at  
ease on the old bench? O their *bons*, their  
*bons*!¶

Enter ROMEO.

Ben. Here comes Romeo, here comes Romeo.

Merc. Without his roe, like a dried herring:  
—O flesh, flesh, how art thou shiftd!—Now  
is he for the numbers that Petrarch flow'd in:  
Laura, to his lady, was but a kitchen-wench;  
—marry, she had a better love to be-rhyme her  
Dido, a dowdy; Cleopatra, a gipsy; Helen and  
Hero, hildings and harlots; Thisbe, a grey eye  
or so, but not to the purpose.—Signior Romeo,  
*bon jour*! there's a French salutation to your  
French slop.\*\* You gave us the counterfeit  
fairly last night.

\* I.e. It is of the utmost consequence for me to be happy.

† Arrow. ‡ See the story of Reynard the Fox.

§ By notes prick'd down. ¶ Terms of the fencing  
school. \*\* Trowsers or pantaloons, a French  
fashion in Shakespeare's time.

*Rom.* Good-morrow to you both. What counterfeit did I give you?

*Mer.* The slip, Sir, the slip; \* Can you not conceive?

*Rom.* Pardon, good Mercutio, my business was great; and in such a case as mine, a man may strain courtesy.

*Mer.* That's as much as to say—such a case as your's constrains a man to bow in the hams.

*Rom.* Meaning—to court'ay.

*Mer.* Thou hast most kindly bit it.

*Rom.* A most courteous exposition.

*Mer.* Nay, I am the very pink of courtesy.

*Rom.* Pink for flower.

*Mer.* Right.

*Rom.* Why, then is my pump † well-flowered.

*Mer.* Well said: Follow me this jest now, till thou hast worn out thy pump; that, when the single sole of it is worn, the jest may remain, after the wearing, solely singular.

*Rom.* O single-soled ‡ jest, solely singular for the singleness!

*Mer.* Come between us, good Benvolio; my wits fail.

*Rom.* Switch and spurs, switch and spurs; or I'll cry a match.

*Mer.* Nay, if thy wits run the wild-goose chase, § I have done; for thou hast more of the wild-goose in one of thy wits, than, I am sure, I have in my whole five: Was I with you there for the goose?

*Rom.* Thou wast never with me for any thing, when thou wast not there for the goose.

*Mer.* I will bite thee by the ear for that jest.

*Rom.* Nay, good goose, bite not.

*Mer.* Thy wit is a very bitter sweeting; ¶ it is a most sharp sauce.

*Rom.* And is it not well served in to a sweet goose?

*Mer.* O here's a wit of cheverel, ¶ that stretches from an inch narrow to an ell broad!

*Rom.* I stretch it out for that word—broad; which added to the goose, proves thee § far and wide a broad goose.

*Mer.* Why, is not this better now than groaning for love? now art thou sociable, now art thou Romeo; now art thou what thou art, by art as well as by nature: for this drivelling love is like a great natural, that runs lolling up and down to hide his bauble in a hole.

*Ben.* Stop there, stop there.

*Mer.* Thou desirest me to stop in my tale against the hair.

*Ben.* Thou wouldst else have made thy tale large.

*Mer.* O thou art deceived, I would have made it short: for I was come to the whole depth of my tale; and meant, indeed, to occupy the argument no longer.

*Rom.* Here's goodly geer!

*Enter Nurse and Peter.*

*Mer.* A sail, a sail, a sail!

*Ben.* Two, two; a shirt and a smock.

*Nurse.* Peter!

*Peter.* Anon!

*Nurse.* My fan, Peter. \*\*

*Mer.* Prythee, do, good Peter, to hide her face; for her fan's the fairer of the two.

*Nurse.* God ye good-morrow, gentlemen.

*Mer.* God ye good den, †† fair gentlewoman.

*Nurse.* Is it good den?

*Mer.* 'Tis no less, I tell you; for the bawdy hand of the dial is now upon the prick ‡‡ of noon.

*Nurse.* Out upon you! what a man are you?

*Rom.* One, gentlewoman, that God hath made himself to mar.

*Nurse.* By my troth, it is well said;—For himself to mar, quoth'a?—Gentlemen, can any of you tell me where I may find the young Romeo?

\* A pun on counterfeit money called slips.

† Shoo. ‡ Slight, thin.

§ A horse race in any direction the leader chooses to take.

¶ An apple. ¶ Soft stretching leechup.

\*\* This was formerly the practice, though ridiculous to modern ideas.

†† Good even.

‡‡ Point.

*Rom.* I can tell you; but young Romeo will be older when you have found him, than he was when you sought him: I am the youngest of that name, for 'fault of a worse.

*Nurse.* You say well.

*Mer.* Yea, is the worst well? very well took, I'faith; wisely, wisely.

*Nurse.* If you be he, Sir, I desire some confidence with you.

*Ben.* She will ladite him to some supper.

*Mer.* A bawd, a bawd, a bawd! So be!

*Rom.* What hast thou found?

*Mer.* No hare, Sir; unless a hare, Sir, in a lenten pie, that is something stale and hoar ere it be spent.

*An old hare hoar, \**

*And an old hare hoar,*

*Is very good meat in lent:*

*But a hare that is hoar,*

*Is too much for a score,*

*When it hoars ere it be spent.—*

Romeo, will you come to your father's? we'll to dinner thither.

*Rom.* I will follow you.

*Mer.* Farewell, ancient lady; farewell, lady, lady, † lady.

[*Exit MERCUTIO and BENVOLIO.*]

*Nurse.* Marry farewell!—I pray you, Sir, what saucy meichant ‡ was this, that was so full of his ropery? §

*Rom.* A gentleman, nurse, that loves to hear himself talk: and will speak more in a minute, than he will stand to in a month.

*Nurse.* An 'a speak any thing against me, I'll take him down an 'a were lustier than he is, and twenty such Jacks; and if I cannot, I'll find those that shall. Scurvy knave! I am none of his flirt-gills; I am none of his skainsmates: ¶ —And thou must stand by too, and suffer every knave to use me at his pleasure?

*Pet.* I saw no man use you at his pleasure; if I had, my weapon should quickly have been out, I warrant you: I dare draw as soon as another man, if I see occasion in a good quarrel, and the law on my side.

*Nurse.* Now, afore God, I am so vexed, that every part about me quivers. Scurvy knave!—Pray you, Sir, a word; and, as I told you, my young lady bade me inquire you out; what she bade me say, I will keep to myself: but first let me tell ye, if ye should lead her into a fool's paradise, as they say, it were a very gross kind of behaviour, as they say: for the gentlewoman, is young; and, therefore, if you should deal double with her, truly, it were an ill thing to be offered to any gentlewoman, and very weak dealing.

*Rom.* Nurse, commend me to thy lady and mistress. I protest unto thee,—

*Nurse.* Good heart! and I'faith, I will tell her as much: Lord, lord, she will be a joyful woman.

*Rom.* What wilt thou tell her, nurse? thou dost not mark me.

*Nurse.* I will tell her, Sir,—that you do protest; which, as I take it, is a gentlemanlike offer.

*Rom.* Bid her devise some means to come this afternoon; ¶ [to shift ¶]

And there she shall, at friar Laurence's cell, Be shriv'd and married. Here is for thy pains.

*Nurse.* No, truly, Sir; not a penny.

*Rom.* Go to; I say you shall.

*Nurse.* This afternoon, Sir? well, she shall be there.

*Rom.* And stay, good nurse, behind the abbey-wall:

Within this hour my man shall be with thee;

And bring thee cords made like a tackled stair;

Which to the high top-gallant \*\* of my joy

Must be my convoy in the secret night.

\* Hoary, mouldy.

† The burden of an old song

‡ A term in contradistinction to gentleman.

§ Roguery. ¶ Not one of those that wore a skarn

or short sword. ¶ Confession.

\*\* The highest extremity of a ship's mast.

Farewell!—Be trusty, and I'll quit \* thy pains.  
Farewell!—Commend me to thy mistress.

*Nurse.* Now God in heaven bless thee!—Hark you, Sir.

*Rom.* What say'st thou, my dear nurse?

*Nurse.* Is your man secret? Did you ne'er hear say—

Two may keep counsel, putting one away?

*Rom.* I warrant thee; my man's as true as steel.

*Nurse.* Well, Sir; my mistress is the sweetest lady—Lord, lord!—when 'twas a little prating thing,—O,—there's a nobleman in town, one Paris, that would fain lay knife aboard; but she, good soul, had as lieve see a toad, a very toad, as see him. I anger her sometimes, and tell her that Paris is the properer man; but I'll warrant you, when I say so, she looks as pale as any clout in the varsal world. Doth not rosemary and Romeo begin both with a letter?

*Rom.* Ay, nurse; What of that? both with an R.

*Nurse.* Ah, mocker! that's the dog's name. R is for the dog. No; I know it begins with some other letter; and she hath the prettiest sententions of it, of you and rosemary, that it would do you good to hear it.

*Rom.* Commend me to thy lady. [Exit.]

*Nurse.* Ay, a thousand times.—Peter!

*Pet.* Anon.

*Nurse.* Peter, take my fan, and go before.

[Exit.]

#### SCENE V.—CAPULET'S Garden.

Enter JULIET.

*Jul.* The clock struck nine, when I did send the nurse;

In half an hour she promis'd to return.

Perchance, she cannot meet him: that's not so.—

O she is lame! love's heralds should be thoughts,  
Which ten times faster glide than the sun's beams,

Driving back shadows upon low'ring hills:  
Therefore do nimble-pinion'd doves draw love,  
And therefore hath the wind swift Cupid wings.  
Now is the sun upon the highest hill  
Of this day's journey; and from nine till twelve

Is three long hours,—yet she is not come.  
Had she affections, and warm youthful blood,  
She'd be as swift in motion as a ball;  
My words would bandy† her to my sweet love,  
And his to me:  
But old folks, many feign as they were dead;  
Unwieldy, slow, heavy, and pale as lead.

Enter NURSE and PETER.

O God, she comes!—O honey nurse, what news?

Hast thou met with him? Send thy man away.

*Nurse.* Peter, stay at the gate.

[Exit PETER.]

*Jul.* Now, good sweet nurse,—O lord! why look'st at thou sad?

Though news be sad, yet tell them merrily:  
If good, thou sham'st the music of sweet news,  
By playing it to me with a sour face.

*Nurse.* I am weary, give me leave a while;—  
Fie, how my bones ache! What a jaunt have I had!

*Jul.* I would thou hadst my bones, and I thy news:

Nay, come, I pray thee, speak;—good, good nurse, speak.

*Nurse.* Jesu! What haste? can you not stay awhile?

Do you not see, that I am out of breath?

*Jul.* How art thou out of breath, when thou hast breath

To say to me that thou art out of breath?  
The excuse that thou dost make in this delay,  
Is longer than the tale thou dost excuse.  
Is thy news good or bad? answer to that;  
Say either, and I'll stay the circumstance.  
Let me be satisfied, I't good or bad?

*Nurse.* Well, you have made a simple choice,  
you know not how to choose a man: Romeo,  
no, not he; though his face be better than any  
man's, yet his leg excels all men's; and for a  
hand, and a foot, and a body,—though they be not  
to be talked on, yet they are past compare: He  
is not the flower of courtesy,—but, I'll warrant  
him, as gentle as a lamb.—Go thy ways,  
wench; serve God.—What, have you dined at home?

*Jul.* No, no: But all this did I know before.  
What says he to our marriage? what of that?

*Nurse.* Lord, how my head aches! what a head have I!

It beats as it would fall in twenty pieces.

My back o't'other side,—O my back, my back!—  
Beslew \* your heart, for sending me about,  
To catch my death with jaunting up and down!

*Jul.* Prithee, I am sorry that thou art not well:

Sweet, sweet, sweet nurse, tell me, what says my love?

*Nurse.* Your love says like an honest gentleman,

And a courteous and a kind, and a handsome,  
And, I warrant, a virtuous:—Where is your mother?

*Jul.* Where is my mother?—why, she is within;

Where should she be? How oddly thou repliest!

*Your love says like an honest gentleman,—*  
*Where is your mother?*

*Nurse.* O God's lady dear!

Are you so hot? Marry, come up, I trow;

Is this the poultrie for my aching bones?

Hereforward do your messages yourself.

*Jul.* Here's such a cell,—come, what says Romeo?

*Nurse.* Have you got leave to go to shutt to-day?

*Jul.* I have.

*Nurse.* Then hie you hence to trial Laurence's cell.

There stays a husband to make you a wife.

Now comes the wanton blood up in your cheeks,

They'll be in scarlet straight at any news.

Hie you to church: I must another way,

To fetch a ladder, by the which your love

Must climb a bird's nest soon when it is dark:

I am the drudge, and toil in your delight;

But you shall bear the burden soon at night.

Go, I'll to dinner; hie you to the cell.

*Jul.* Hie to high fortune! honest nurse, farewell. [Exit.]

#### SCENE VI.—Friar LAURENCE'S Cell.

Enter Friar LAURENCE and ROMEO.

*Fri.* So smile the heavens upon this holy act,  
That after-hours with sorrow chide us not!

*Rom.* Amen, amen! but come what sorrow can,

It cannot countervail the exchange of joy

That one short minute gives me in her sight:

Do thou but close our hands with holy words,

Then love-devouring death do what he dare,

It is enough I may but call her mine.

*Fri.* These violent delights have violent ends,

And in their triumph die; like fire and powder,

Which, as they kiss, consume: the sweetest honey

Is loathsome in his own deliciousness,

And in the taste confounds the appetite:

Therefore, love moderately; long love doth so;

Too swift arrives as tardy as too slow.

\* Requite.

† Drive her, as a ball struck with a bandy or battledore.

\* Ill betide.

† A pet, or disturbance.

## Enter JULIET.

Here comes the lady:—O so light a foot  
Will ne'er wear out the everlasting flint: \*  
A lover may bestide the gossamers †  
That idle in the wanton summer air,  
And yet not fall; so light is vanity.

Jul. G. od even to my ghostly confessor.

Fri. Romeo shall thank thee, daughter, for us both.

Jul. As much to him, else are his thanks too much.

Rom. Ah! Juliet, if the measure of thy joy  
Be heap'd like mine, and that thy skill be more

To blazon it, then sweeten with thy breath  
This neighbour air, and let rich music's tongue  
Unfold the imagined happiness that both  
Receive in either by this dear encounter.

Jul. Conceit, more rich in matter than in words,  
Brags of his substance, not of ornament:  
They are but beggars that can count their worth;

But my true love is grown to such excess,  
I cannot sum up half my sum of wealth.

Fri. Come, come with me, and we will make short work;

For, by your leaves, you shall not stay alone,  
Till holy church incorporate two in one.

[Exit.]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—A Public Place.

Enter MERCUTIO, BENVOLIO, Page, and Servants.

Ben. I pray you, good Mercutio, let's retire;  
The day is hot, the Capulets abroad,  
And, if we meet, we shall not 'scape a brawl;  
For now, these hot days, is the mad blood stirring.

Merc. Thou art like one of those fellows,  
that, when he enters the confines of a tavern,  
claps me his sword upon the table, and says,  
*'God send me no need of thee!'* and, by the operation  
of the second cup, draws it on the drawer,  
when, indeed, there is no need.

Ben. Am I like such a fellow?

Merc. Come, come, thou art as hot a Jack in  
thy mood as any in Italy; and as soon moved  
to be moody, and as soon moody to be moved.

Ben. And what to?

Merc. Nay, and there were too such, we  
should have none shortly, for one would kill  
the other. Thou! why thou wilt quarrel with  
a man that hath a hair more or a hair less in  
his beard than thou hast. Thou wilt quarrel with  
a man for cracking nuts, having no other  
reason but because thou hast hazel eyes;  
What eye, but such an eye, would spy out such  
a quarrel? Thy head is as full of quarrels, as  
an egg is full of meat; and yet thy head hath  
been beaten as added as an egg, for quarrelling.  
Thou hast quarrelled with a man for coughing  
in the street, because he hath wakened thy  
dog that hath lain asleep in the sun. Didst  
thou not fall out with a tailor for wearing his  
new doublet before Easter? with another, for  
tying his new shoes with old ribband? and yet  
thou wilt not fight me from quarrelling!

Ben. Am I were so apt to quarrel as thou  
art, any man should buy the fee-simple of my  
lie for an hour and a quarter.

Merc. The fee-simple? O simple!

Enter TYBALT, and others.

Ben. By my head here come the Capulets

Merc. By my heel, I care not.

\* How everlasting flint could be worn out, is doubtful.

† The long white filament which flies in the air.

‡ Paint, display.

§ Imagination.

Tyb. Follow me close, for I will speak to  
them.—Gentlemen, good den: a word with one  
of you.

Merc. And but one word with one of us?  
Couple it with something; make it a word  
and a blow.

Tyb. You will find me apt enough to that,  
Sir, if you will give me occasion.

Merc. Could you not take some occasion  
without giving?

Tyb. Mercutio, thou consortest with Ro-  
meo,—

Merc. Consort? what, dost thou make us  
minstrels? an thou make minstrels of us, look  
to hear nothing but discords: here's my fiddle-  
stick; here's that shall make you dance.

'Zounds, consort!

Ben. We talk here in the public haunt of  
men:

Either withdraw into some private place,

Or reason coldly of your grievances,

Or else depart: here all eyes gaze on us.

Merc. Man's eyes were made to look, and let  
them gaze;

I will not budge for no man's pleasure, I.

Enter ROMEO.

Tyb. Well, peace be with you, Sir! here  
comes my man.

Merc. But I'll be hanged, Sir, if he wear  
your livery:

Marry, go before to field, he'll be your follower;  
Your worship, in that sense, may call him—  
man.

Tyb. Romeo, the hate I bear thee can af-  
ford

No better term than this—Thou art a villain.

Rom. Tybalt, the reason that I have to love  
Doth much excuse the appertaining rage [three  
To such a greeting:—Villain am I none;—] foot.  
Therefore farewell; I see, thou know'st me

Tyb. Boy, this shall not excuse the injuries  
That thou hast done me; therefore turn, and  
draw.

Rom. I do protest I never injur'd thee;  
But love thee better than thou canst devise.  
Till thou shalt know the reason of my love:  
And so, good Capulet,—which name I tender  
As dearly as mine own,—be satisfied.

Merc. O calm, dishonourable, vile submis-  
sion!

A la stoccata \* carries it away. [Draus.]

Tybalt, you rat-catcher, will you walk?

Tyb. What wouldst thou have with me?

Merc. Good king of cats, nothing but one of  
your nine lives; that I mean to make bold  
withal, and, as you shall use me hereafter,  
dry-beat the rest of the eight. Will you pluck  
your sword out of his pitcher † by the ears?  
make haste, lest mine be about your ears ere  
it be out.

Tyb. I am for you.

[Drawing.]

Rom. Gentle Mercutio, put thy rapier up.

Tyb. Come, Sir, your passado. [They fight.]

Rom. Draw, Benvolio; [shame]

Beat down their weapons:—Gentlemen, for  
Forbear this outrage;—Tybalt—Mercutio—  
The prince expressly hath forbid this bandying  
In Verona streets:—hold, Tybalt;—good Mer-  
cutio.

[Exit TYBALT and his Partizans.]

Merc. I am hurt:—

A plague o' both the houses!—I am sped:—

Is he gone, and hath nothing?

Ben. What, art thou hurt?

Merc. Ay, ay, a scratch, a scratch; marry,

'tis enough.— [geon.]

Where is my page?—go, villain, fetch a sur- [Exit Page.]

Rom. Courage, man: the hurt cannot be much.

Merc. No, 'tis not so deep as a well, nor so

\* The Italian term for a thrust or stab with a rapier.

† Case or scabbard.

wide as a church door; but 'tis enough, 'twill serve: ask for me to-morrow, and you shall find me a grave man. I am peppered, I warrant, for this world.—A plague o' both your houses!—Zounds, a dog, a rat, a mouse, cat, to scratch a man to death! a braggart, a rogue, a villain, that fights by the book of arithmetic!—Why the devil came you between us? I was hurt under your arm.

*Rom.* I thought all for the best.

*Merc.* Help me into some house, Benvolio, Or I shall faint.—A plague o' both your houses! They have made worm's meat of me: I have it, and soundly too:—Your houses!

*(Exeunt MERCUTIO and BENVOLIO.)*

*Rom.* This gentleman, the prince's near ally, My very friend, hath got his mortal hurt In my behalf; my reputation stain'd With Tybalt's slander, Tybalt, that an hour Hath been my kinsman: O sweet Juliet, Thy beauty hath made me effeminate, And in my temper soften'd valour's steel.

*Re-enter BENVOLIO.*

*Ben.* O Romeo, Romeo, brave Mercutio's dead; That gallant spirit hath aspir'd the clouds, Which too untimely here did scorch the earth.

*Rom.* This day's black fate on more days doth depend; This but begins the woe, others must end.

*Re-enter TYBALT.*

*Ben.* Here comes the furious Tybalt back again.

*Rom.* Alive! in triumph! and Mercutio slain! Away to heaven, respective\* lenity, And fire-ey'd fury be my conduct! now!—Now, Tybalt, take the villain back again, That late thou gav'st me; for Mercutio's soul Is but a little way above our heads, Staying for thine to keep him company; Either thou, or I, or both, must go with him.

*Tyb.* Thou, wretched boy, that didst consort him here, Shalt with him hence.

*Rom.* This shall determine that.

*(They fight; TYBALT falls.)*

*Ben.* Romeo, away, be gone! The citizens are up, and Tybalt slain: [death, Stand not amaz'd:—the prince will doom thee if thou art taken:—hence!—be gone!—away!]

*Rom.* O! I am fortune's fool!

*Ben.* Why dost thou stay? *(Exit ROMEO.)*

*Enter CITIZENS, &c.*

1 *Cit.* Which way ran he, that kill'd Mercutio?

Tybalt, that murderer, which way ran he?

*Ben.* There lies that Tybalt.

1 *Cit.* Up, Sir, go with me; I charge thee in the prince's name, obey.

*Enter PRINCE, attended; MONTAGUE, CAPULET, their Wives and others,*

*Prin.* Where are the vile beginners of this fray?

*Ben.* O noble prince, I can discover all The unlook'd manage of this fatal brawl: There lies the man slain by young Romeo, That slew thy kinsman, brave Mercutio.

*La. Cap.* Tybalt, my cousin!—O my brother's child!

Unhappy fellow, the blood is spill'd Of my dear kinsman!—Prince, as thou art true,

For blood of ours shed blood of Montague.—O cousin, cousin!

*Prin.* Benvolio, who began this bloody fray?

*Ben.* Tybalt, here slain, whom Romeo's hand did slay;

\* Cool, considerate gentlemen.

† Conduct, to lead on. ‡ Accompany.

§ Just and upright.

Romeo that spoke him fair, bade him bethink How nice\* the quarrel was, and urg'd withal Your high displeasure:—All this—uttered With gentle breath, calm look, knees humbly bow'd,—

Could not take truce with the unruly spleen Of Tybalt deaf to peace, but that he kills With piercing steel at bold Mercutio's breast; Who, all as hot, turns deadly point to point, And, with a martial scorn, with one hand beats Cold death aside, and with the other sends It back to Tybalt, whose dexterity Retorts it: Romeo he cries aloud,

*Hold, friends! friends, part! and, swifter than his tongue,*

His agile arm beats down their fatal points, And 'twixt them rushes; underneath whose arm

An envious thrust from Tybalt hit the life Of stout Mercutio, and then Tybalt fled:

But by and by comes back to Romeo, Who had but newly entertain'd revenge, And to't they go like lightning; for, ere I Could draw to part them, was stout Tybalt slain;

And, as he fell, did Romeo turn and fly:

This is the truth, or let Benvolio die.

*La. Cap.* He is a kinsman to the Montague, Affection makes him false, he speaks not true: Some twenty of them fought in this black strife, And all those twenty could but kill one life: I beg for justice, which thou, prince, must give;

Romeo slew Tybalt, Romeo must not live.

*Prin.* Romeo slew him, he slew Mercutio; Who now the price of his dear blood doth owe?

*Mon.* Not Romeo, prince, he was Mercutio's friend; His fault concludes but what the law should: The life of Tybalt.

*Prin.* And, for that offence, Immediately we do exile him hence: I have an interest in your hate's proceeding, My blood for your rude brawls doth lie a bleeding;

But I'll amerce you with so strong a fine, That you shall all repent the loss of mine: I will be deaf to pleading and excuses: Nor tears, nor prayers, shall purchase out abuses;

Therefore use none: let Romeo hence in haste, Else, when he's found, that hour is his last.

Bear hence this body and attend our will: Mercy but murders, pardoning those that kill.

*(Exeunt.)*

SCENE II.—A Room in CAPULET'S House.

*Enter JULIET.*

*Jul.* Gallop apace, you fiery-footed steeds, Towards Phœbus' mansion! such a waygoner As Phaeton would whip you to the west, And bring in cloudy night immediately.—Spread thy close curtain, love-performing night!

That run-away's eyes may wink; and Romeo Leap to these arms, untalk'd of, and unseen!—Lovers can see to do their amorous rites By their own beauties; or, if love be blind, It best agrees with night.—Come, civil night, Thou sober-suited matron, all in black, And learn me how to lose a winning match, Play'd for a pair of stainless maidenhoods: Hood my unmann'd blood bating in my cheeks, With thy black mantle; till strange love, grown bold,

Think true love acted, simple modesty.

Come, night!—Come, Romeo! come, thou day in night!

For thou wilt be upon the wings of night Whiter than new snow on a raven's back.—

\* Slight, unimportant.

† Grave, solemn.

‡ These are terms of falconry

Come, gentle night; come, loving, black-brow'd night,

Give me my Romeo: and, when he shall die,  
Take him and cut him out in little stars,  
And he will make the face of heaven so fine,  
That all the world will be in love with night,  
And pay no worship to the garish<sup>\*</sup> sun.—  
O I have bought the mansion of a love,  
But not possess'd it; and, though I am sold,  
Not yet enjoy'd: So tedious is this day,  
As is the night before some festival  
To an impatient child, that hath new robes,  
And may not wear them. O here comes my nurse,

*Enter Nurse, with Cords.*

And she brings news; and every tongue, that  
speaks [sequence.—  
But Romeo's name, speaks heavenly elo-  
Now, nurse, what news? What hast thou there,  
the cords  
That Romeo bade thee fetch?

*Nurse.* Ay, ay, the cords.

*[Throws them down.]*

*Jul.* Ah me! what news? why dost thou wring  
thy hands?

*Nurse.* Ah well-a-day! he's dead, he's dead,  
he's dead!

We are undone, lady, we are undone!—  
Alack the day!—he's gone, he's kill'd, he's  
dead!

*Jul.* Can heaven be so envious?

*Nurse.* Romeo can,  
Though heaven cannot:—O Romeo! Romeo!—  
Who ever would have thought it!—Romeo!

*Jul.* What devil art thou, that dost torment  
me thus?

This torture should be roar'd in dismal hell.  
Hath Romeo slain himself? say thou but I,†  
And that bare vowel I shall poison more  
Than the death-darting eye of cockatrice:  
I am not I, if there be such an I;  
Or those eyes shut, that make thee answer, I.  
If he be slain, say—*I*; or if not, no:  
Brief sounds determine of my weal or woe,

*Nurse.* I saw the wound, I saw it with mine  
eyes,—

God save the mark!—here on his manly breast:  
A piteous corse, a bloody piteous corse;  
Pale, pale as ashes, all bedawb'd in blood,  
All in gore blood; I swooned at the sight.

*Jul.* O break my heart!—poor bankrupt,  
break at once!

To prison, eyes! ne'er look on liberty!  
Vile earth, to earth resign: end motion here:  
And thou and Romeo press one heavy bier!

*Nurse.* O Tybalt, Tybalt, the best friend I  
had!

O courteous Tybalt! honest gentleman!  
That ever I should live to see thee dead!

*Jul.* What storm is this, that blows so con-  
trary?

Is Romeo slaughter'd? and is Tybalt dead?  
My dear-lov'd cousin, and my dearer lord?  
—Then, dreadful trumpet, sound the general  
doom!

For who is living, if those two are gone?  
*Nurse.* Tybalt is gone, and Romeo banish'd;  
Romeo, that kill'd him, he is banish'd.

*Jul.* O God!—did Romeo's hand shed Tybalt's  
blood?

*Nurse.* It did, it did; alas the day! it did.

*Jul.* O serpent heart, hid with a flow'ring  
face!

Did ever dragon keep so fair a cave?  
Beautiful tyrant! fiend angelical!  
Dove-feather'd raven! wolfish-ravenshamb lamb!  
Despised substance of divinity show!  
Just opposite to what thou justly seem'st.  
A damned saint, an honourable villain!—  
O nature! what hadst thou to do in hell,

When thou didst bower the spirit of a fiend  
In mortal paradise of such sweet flesh?  
Was ever book, containing such vile matter,  
So fairly bound? Oh! that deceit should dwell  
In such a gorgeous palace!

*Nurse.* There's no trust,  
No faith, no honesty in men; all perjur'd,  
All forsworn, all naught, all dissemblers.—  
Ah! where's my man? give me some 'aqua-  
vita:—<sup>[old.]</sup>

These griefs, these woes, these sorrows make me  
Shame come to Romeo!

*Jul.* Blister'd be thy tongue,  
For such a wish! he was not born to shame:  
Upon his brow shame is asham'd to sit;  
For 'tis a throne where honour may be crown'd  
Sole monarch of the universal earth.  
O what a beast was I to chide at him!

*Nurse.* Will you speak well of him that kill'd  
your cousin?

*Jul.* Shall I speak ill of him that is my hus-  
band?

Ah! poor my lord, what tongue shall smooth<sup>\*</sup>  
thy name,

When I, thy three-hours wife, have mangled  
it?—<sup>[sin?]</sup>

But, wherefore, villain, didst thou kill my cou-  
tin? That villain cousin would have kill'd my hus-  
band:

Back, foolish tears, back to your native spring;  
Your tributary drops belong to woe,  
Which you, mistaking, offer up to joy.

My husband lives, that Tybalt would have slain;  
And Tybalt's dead, that would have slain my  
husband:

All this is comfort: Wherefore weep I then?  
Some word there was, worse than Tybalt's  
death,

That murder'd me: I would forget it fain;  
But oh! it presses to my memory,  
Like damned guilty deeds to sinners' minds.

*Tybalt is dead, and Romeo—banish'd;*  
That—*banish'd*, that one word—*banish'd*,  
Hath slain ten thousand Tybalts.† Tybalt's  
death

Was woe enough, if it had ended there:  
Or,—if sour woes delights in fellowship,  
And needily will be rank'd with other griefs,—

Why follow'd not, when she said Tybalt's dead,  
Thy father, or thy mother, nay, or both,  
Which modern lamentation might have mov'd?

But, with a rearward following Tybalt's death,  
*Romeo is banish'd*,—to speak that word,  
Is father, mother, Tybalt, Romeo, Juliet,  
All slain, all dead:—*Romeo is banish'd*.—  
There is no end, no limit, measure, bound,  
In that word's death; no words can that woe  
sound,—

Where is my father, and my mother, nurse?

*Nurse.* Weeping and wailing over Tybalt's  
corse;

Will you go to them: I will bring you thither.

*Jul.* Wash they his wounds with tears: mine  
shall be spent,

When theirs are dry, for Romeo's banishment.  
Take up those cords:—Poor ropes, you are be-  
guil'd;

Both you and I, for Romeo is exil'd:  
He made you for a highway to my bed;

But I, a maid, the maiden-widowed.  
Come, cords; come, nurse; I'll to my wedding  
bed:

And death, not Romeo, take my maidenhead!

*Nurse.* Hie to your chamber: I'll find Romeo  
To comfort you:—I wot<sup>\*</sup> well where he is.

Hark ye, your Romeo will be here at night;  
I'll to him; he is hid at Laurence's cell.

*Jul.* O find him! give this ring to my tro-  
phant,  
And bid him come to take his last farewell.

[Exeunt]

\* Gaudy, showy. † In Shakespeare's time  
the affirmative particle *ay* was usually written *ye*, and  
here it is necessary to retain the old spelling.

\* To smooth, in ancient language, is to attend, to serve.  
† *I. e.* is worse than the loss of ten thousand Tybalts.  
‡ Common. § Known.



## SCENE III.—Friar LAURENCE'S Cell.

*Enter Friar LAURENCE and ROMEO.*

*Fri.* Romeo, come forth; come forth, thou fearful man;  
Affliction is enamour'd of thy parts,  
And thou art wedded to calamity.

*Rom.* Father, what news? what is the prince's doom?

What sorrow craves acquaintance at my hand,  
That I yet know not?

*Fri.* Too familiar  
Is my dear son with such sour company:  
I bring thee tidings of the prince's doom.

*Rom.* What less than doomsday is the prince's doom?

*Fri.* A gentler judgment vanish'd from his lips,  
Not body's death, but body's banishment.

*Rom.* Ha! banishment? be merciful, say—  
death:

For exile hath more terror in his look,  
Much more than death: do not say—banishment.

*Fri.* Hence from Verona art thou banished:  
Be patient, for the world is broad and wide.

*Rom.* There is no world without Verona walls,  
But purgatory, torture, hell itself.

Hence-banished is banish'd from the world,  
And world's exile is death:—thou banishment  
Is death misterr'd: calling death banishment,  
Thou cut'st my head off with a golden axe,  
And smil'st upon the stroke that murders me.

*Fri.* O deadly sin! O rude unthankfulness!  
Thy fault our law calls death; but the kind

prince,  
Taking thy part, hath rush'd aside the law,  
And turn'd that black word death to banishment:

This is dear mercy, and thou seest it not.

*Rom.* 'Tis torture, and not mercy: heaven is here,

Where Juliet lives; and every cat, and dog,  
And little mouse, every unworthy thing,  
Live here in heaven, and may look on her,  
But Romeo may not.—More validity,  
More honourable state, more courtship lives  
In carrion flies, than Romeo: they may seize  
On the white wonder of dear Juliet's hand,  
And steal immortal blessing from her lips;  
Who, even in pure and vestal modesty,  
Still blush, as thinking their own kisses sin;  
But Romeo may not; he is banished:  
Flies may do this, when I from this must fly;  
They are free men, but I am banished.  
And say'st thou yet, that exile is not death?  
Hadst thou no poison mix'd, no sharp-ground  
knife,

No sudden mean of death, though ne'er so mean,  
But—banished—to kill me: banished?  
O friar, the damned use that word in hell;  
Howlings attend it: How hast thou the heart,  
Being a divine, a ghostly confessor,  
A sin-absolver, and my friend profess'd,  
To mangle me, with that word—banishment?

*Fri.* Thou found mad man, hear me but speak  
a word.

*Rom.* O thou wilt speak again of banishment.

*Fri.* I'll give thee armour to keep off that  
word!

Adversity's sweet milk, philosophy,  
To comfort thee, though thou art banished.

*Rom.* Yet banished?—Hang up philosophy!

Unless philosophy can make a Juliet,  
Displant a town, reverse a prince's doom;  
It helps not, it prevails not—talk no more.

*Fri.* O then I see that madmen have no  
ears.

*Rom.* How should they, when that wise men  
have no eyes?

*Fri.* Let me dispute with thee of thy estate.

\* Worth value.

*Rom.* Thou canst not speak of what thou dost  
not feel:

Wert thou as young as I, Juliet thy love,  
An hour but married, Tybalt murdered,  
Doting like me, and like me banished,  
Then might'st thou speak, then might'st thou tear  
thy hair,

And fall upon the ground, as I do now,  
Taking the measure of an unmade grave.

*Fri.* Arise; one knocks; good Romeo, hide  
thyself.

*Rom.* Not I, unless the breath of heart-stick  
groans,  
Mist-like, unfold me from the search of eyes.

*Fri.* Hark, how they knock!—Who's there?—  
Romeo, arise;

Thou wilt be taken:—Stay a while: stand up:

Run to my study:—By and by:—God's will!

What wildfulness is this!—I come, I come.

*Knocking.*  
Who knocks so hard? whence come you? what's  
your will?

*Nurse.* [Within.] Let me come in, and you  
shall know my errand;

I come from lady Juliet.

*Fri.* Welcome then.

*Enter NURSE.*

*Nurse.* O holy friar, O tell me, holy friar,  
Where is my lady's lord, where's Romeo?

*Fri.* There on the ground, with his own tears  
made drunk.

*Nurse.* O he is even in my mistress' care,  
Just in her case!

*Fri.* O woeful sympathy!  
Piteous predicament!

*Nurse.* Even so, as she,  
Blubbering and weeping, weeping and blubber-  
ing:—

Stand up, stand up: stand, an you be a man:  
For Juliet's sake, for her sake, rise and stand;  
Why should you fall into so deep an O?

*Rom.* Nurse!

*Nurse.* Ah Sir! ah Sir!—Well, death's the  
end of all.

*Rom.* Spak'st thou of Juliet? how is it with  
her?

Dost she not think me an old murderer?  
Now I have stain'd the childhood of our joy  
With blood removed but little from her own?  
Where is she? and how doth she? and what says  
My cancell'd lady to our cancell'd love?

*Nurse.* O she says nothing, Sir, but weeps and  
weeps;

And now falls on her bed; and then starts up,  
And Tybalt calls; and then on Romeo cries,  
And then down falls again.

*Rom.* As if that name,  
Shot from the deadly level of a gun,  
Did murder her; as that name's cursed hand  
Murder'd her kinsman.—O tell me, friar, tell me,  
In what vile part of this anatomy  
Doth my name lodge? tell me, that I may sack  
The hateful mansion. [Drawing his sword.]

*Fri.* Hold thy desperate hand:

Art thou a man? thy form cries out thou art;  
Thy tears are womanish: thy wild acts denote  
The unreasonable fury of a beast:

Unseemly woman, in a seeming man!  
Or ill-beseeming beast, in seeming both!

Thou hast amaz'd me: by my holy order,  
I thought thy disposition better temper'd.

Hast thou slain Tybalt? wilt thou slay thyself?  
And slay thy lady too that lives in thee,  
By doing damned hate upon thyself?

Why rail'st thou on thy birth, the heaven, and  
earth?

Since birth, and heaven, and earth, all three do  
meet

In thee at once; which thou at once wouldst lose.

Fie, fie! thou sham'st thy shape, thy love, thy  
wit;

Which, like an usurer, abound'st in all,

And usest none in that true use indeed  
Which should bedeck thy shape, thy love, thy wit.

Thy noble shape is but a form of wax,  
Digressing from the valour of a man:  
Thy dear love, sworn, but hollow purjury,  
Killing that love which thou hast vow'd to cherish:

Thy wit, that ornament to shape and love,  
Misshapen in the conduct of them both,  
Like powder in a skill-less soldier's flask,  
Is set on fire by thine own ignorance,  
And thou dismember'd with thine own defence.\*  
What, rouse thee, man! thy Juliet is alive,  
For whose dear sake thou wast but lately dead;  
There art thou happy: Tybalt would kill thee,  
But thou slewest Tybalt; there art thou happy too:

The law, that threaten'd death, becomes thy friend,  
And turns it to exile; there art thou happy:  
A pack of blessings lights upon thy back;  
Happiness courts thee in her best array;  
But, like a mis-behaved and sullen wench,  
Thou pout'st upon thy fortune and thy love:  
Take heed, take heed, for such die miserably.  
Go, get thee to thy love, as was decreed,  
Ascend her chamber, hence and comfort her;  
But look thou stay not till the watch be set,  
For then thou canst not pass to Mantua;  
Where thou shalt live, till we can find a time  
To blaze your marriage, reconcile your friends,  
Beg pardon of the prince, and call thee back  
With twenty hundred thousand times more joy  
Than thou went'st forth in lamentation.—  
Go before, nurse: commend me to thy lady;  
And bid her hasten all the house to bed,  
Which heavy sorrow makes them apt unto:  
Romeo is coming.

Nurse. O Lord, I could have staid here all the night,  
To hear good counsel: Oh! what learning is!—  
My lord, I'll tell my lady you will come.

Rom. Do so, and bid my sweet prepare to chide.

Nurse. Here, Sir, a ring she bid me give you, Sir:  
Hie you, make haste, for it grows very late.

[Exit Nurse.]  
Rom. How well my comfort is reviv'd by this!

Fri. Hence: Good night; and here stands all your state;†

Either be gone before the watch be set,  
Or by the break of day disguis'd from hence:  
Sojourn in Mantua: I'll find out your man,  
And he shall signify, from time to time,  
Every good hap to you that chances here:  
Give me thy hand; 'tis late: farewell; good night.

Rom. But that a joy past joy calls out on me,  
It were a grief, so brief to part with thee:  
Farewell. [Exit Fri.]

SCENE IV.—A Room in CAPULET'S House.

Enter CAPULET, Lady CAPULET, and PARIS.

Cap. Things have fallen out, Sir, so unluckily,  
That we have had no time to move our daughter:

Look you, she lov'd her kinsman Tybalt dearly,  
And so did I;—Well, we were born to die.—  
'Tis very late, she'll not come down to-night:  
I promise you, but for your company,  
I would have been a-bed an hour ago.

Par. These times of woe afford no time to woo:

Madam, good night: commend me to your daughter.

La. Cap. I will, and know her mind early to-morrow;

To-night she's mew'd† up to her heaviness.

\* Torn to pieces with thine own weapons.

† The whole of your fortune depends on this.

‡ Shut up.

Cap. Sir Paris, I will make a desperate\* tender

Of my child's love: I think, she will be rul'd  
In all respects by me; nay more, I doubt it not.  
Wife, go you to her ere you go to bed;  
Acquaint her here of my son Paris' love;  
And bid her, mark you me, on Wednesday next—

But, soft; What day is this?

Par. Monday, my lord.

Cap. Monday? hal! hal! Well, Wednesday is too soon,

O'Thursday let it be;—O'Thursday, tell her,  
She shall be married to this noble earl:—  
Will you be ready? do you like this haste?  
We'll keep no great ado;—a friend, or two:—  
For hark you, Tybalt being slain so late,  
It may be thought we held him carelessly,  
Being our kinsman, if we revel much;  
Therefore we'll have some half a dozen friends,  
And there an end. But what say you to Thursday?

Par. My lord, I would that Thursday were to-morrow.

Cap. Well, get you gone:—O'Thursday be it then:—

Go you to Juliet ere you go to bed,  
Prepare her, wife, against this wedding day.—  
Farewell, my lord.—Light to my chamber, ho!  
Afore me, it is so very late, that we  
May call it early by and by:—Good night. [Exit Cap.]

SCENE V.—JULIET'S Chamber.

Enter ROMEO and JULIET.

Jul. Wilt thou be gone? It is not yet her day:

It was the nightingale, and not the lark,  
That pierc'd the fearful hollow of thine ear:  
Nightly she sings on yon pomegranate-tree:  
Believe me, love, it was the nightingale.

Rom. It was the lark, the herald of the morn,  
No nightingale: look, love, what envious streaks  
Do lace the severing clouds in yonder east:  
Night's candles are burnt out, and jocund day  
Stands tip-toe on the misty mountain-tops:  
I must be gone and live, or stay and die.

Jul. You light it is not daylight, I know it, I:

It is some meteor that the sun exhal's,  
To be to thee this night a torch-bearer;  
And light thee on thy way to Mantua:

Therefore stay yet, thou need'st not to be gone.

Rom. Let me be ta'en, let me be put to death;  
I am content, so thou wilt have it so.

I'll say, yon grey is not the morning's eye,  
'Tis but the pale reflex of Cynthia's brow;†

Nor that is not the lark, whose notes do beat  
The vaulty heaven so high above our heads:

I have more care† to stay, than will to go;—

Come, death, and welcome! Juliet wills it so.—

How is't, my soul? let's talk, it is not day.

Jul. It is, it is, hie hence, be gone, away;  
It is the lark that sings so out of tune,

Straining harsh discords, and unpleasant sharps.  
Some say, the lark makes sweet division;‡

This doth not so, for she divideth us:  
Some say, the lark and loathed toad change eyes;

O now I would they had chang'd voices too!  
Since arm from arm that voice doth us affray,

Hunting thee hence with hunts-up§ to the day.  
O now he gone; more light and light it grows

Rom. More light and light!—more dark and dark our woes.

Enter Nurse.

Nurse. Madam!

Jul. Nurse!

\* Bold. † Reflection of the moon.  
‡ Inclination. § Division was the technical phrase for musical composition.

† A tune played to wake hunters, also a morning song to a woman the day after marriage.

*Nurse.* Your lady mother's coming to your chamber:  
The day is broke; be wary, look about.

*[Exit Nurse.]*  
*Jul.* Then, window, let day in, and let life out.

*Rom.* Farewell, farewell! one kiss, and I'll descend.

*Jul.* Art thou gone so? my love! my lord! my friend!

I must hear from thee every day in the hour,  
For in a minute there are many days:  
Oh! by this count I shall be much in years,  
Ere I again behold my Romeo.

*Rom.* Farewell! I will omit no opportunity  
That may convey my greetings, love, to thee.

*Jul.* O think'st thou we shall ever meet again?

*Rom.* I doubt it not; and all these woes shall serve  
For sweet discourses in our time to come.

*Jul.* O God! I have an ill-dividing soul:  
Methinks I see thee, now thou art below,  
As one dead in the bottom of a tomb;  
Either my eye-sight fails, or thou look'st pale.

*Rom.* And trust me, love, in my eye so do you:

Dry sorrow drinks our blood. Adieu! adieu!  
*[Exit Romeo.]*

*Jul.* O fortune, fortune! all men call thee  
fickle:

If thou art fickle, what dost thou with him  
That is renown'd for faith? Be fickle, fortune;  
For then, I hope, thou wilt not keep him long,  
But send him back.

*La. Cap.* *[Within.]* Ho, daughter! are you up?

*Jul.* Who is't that calls? is it my lady mother?

Is she not down so late, or up so early?  
What uncustom'd cause procures her hither?

*Enter Lady Capulet.*

*La. Cap.* Why, how now, Juliet?

*Jul.* Madam, I am not well.

*La. Cap.* Evermore weeping for your cousin's death?

What, wilt thou wash him from his grave with  
An if thou couldst, thou couldst not make him live;

Therefore, have done: Some grief shows much  
of love;

But much of grief shows still some want of wit.

*Jul.* Yet let me weep for such a feeling loss.

*La. Cap.* So shall you feel the loss, but not  
the friend.

Which you weep for.

*Jul.* Feeling so the loss,

I cannot choose but ever weep the friend:

*La. Cap.* Well, girl, thou weep'st not so much  
for his death,

As that the villain lives which slaughter'd him.

*Jul.* What villain, madam?

*La. Cap.* That same villain, Romeo.

*Jul.* Villain and he are many miles asunder.  
God pardon him! I do, with all my heart;

And yet no man like he doth grieve my heart;

*La. Cap.* That is, because the traitor murder  
der lives.

*Jul.* Ay, madam, from the reach of these my  
hands.

'Would, none but I might vengeance on his cousin's  
hand.

*La. Cap.* We will have vengeance for it, fear  
thou not:

Then weep no more. I'll send to one in Mantua  
Where that same banish'd rascal doth live,—

That shall bestow on him so sure a draught,  
That he shall soon keep Tybalt company:

And then, I hope, thou wilt be satisfied.

*Jul.* Indeed I never shall be satisfied  
With Romeo, till I behold him—dead—  
Is my poor heart so for a kinsman vex'd—

• Brings

Madam, if you could find out but a man  
To bear a poison, I would temper it,  
That Romeo should, upon receipt thereof,  
Soon sleep in quiet.—O, how my heart abhors  
To hear him nam'd,—and cannot come to  
him,—

To wreak the love I bore my cousin Tybalt  
Upon his body that hath slaughter'd him!

*La. Cap.* Find thou the means, and I'll find  
such a man.

But now I'll tell thee joyful tidings, girl.

*Jul.* And joy comes well in such a needful  
time:

What are they, I beseech your ladyship?

*La. Cap.* Well, well, thou hast a careful  
father, child;

One, who, to put thee from thy heaviness,  
Hath sorted out a sudden day of joy,

That thou expect'st not, nor I look'd not for.

*Jul.* Madam, in happy time what day is  
that?

*La. Cap.* Marry, my child, early next Thurs-  
day morn,

The gallant, young, and noble gentleman,  
The county Paris, at Saint Peter's church,  
Shall happily make thee there a joyful bride.

*Jul.* Now, by Saint Peter's church, and Peter  
too,

He shall not make me there a joyful bride.  
I wonder at this haste; that I must wed

Ere he, that should be husband, comes to woo.

I pray you, tell my lord and father, madam,  
I will not marry yet; and, when I do, I swear  
It shall be Romeo, whom you know I hate,  
Rather than Paris:—These are news indeed!

*La. Cap.* Here comes your father: tell him  
so yourself.

And see how he will take it at your hands.

*Enter Capulet and Nurse.*

*Cap.* When the sun sets, the air doth drizzle  
But for the sunset of my brother's son, it  
rains downright.—

How now! a conduit, girl? what, still in tears?  
Evermore showering? In one little body

Thou counterfeits't a bark, a sea, a wind:  
For still thy eyes, which I may call the sea,

Do ebb and flow with tears; the bark thy body is,  
Sailing in this salt flood; the winds, thy sighs;

Who,—raging with thy tears, and they with  
them,—

Without a sudden calm, will overset  
Thy tempest-tossed body.—How now, wife?

Have you delivered to her our decree?

*La. Cap.* Ay, sir; but she will none, she  
gives you thanks.

I would, the fool were married to her grave!

*Cap.* Soft, take me with you, take me with  
you, wife.

How! will she none? doth she not give us  
thanks?

Is she not proud? doth she not count her  
bless'd,

Unworthy as she is, that we have wrought  
So worthy a gentleman to be her bridegroom?

*Jul.* Not proud, you have; but thankful, that  
you have:

Proud can I never be of what I hate;  
But thankful even for hate, that is meant love.

*Cap.* How now! how now, chop-logic! What  
is this?

Proud,—and, I thank you,—and, I thank you  
not;—

And yet not proud;—Mistress minion, you,  
Thank me no thankings, nor proud me no  
prouds,

But settle your fine joints 'gainst Thursday next  
To go with Paris to Saint Peter's church,

Or I will drag thee on a hurdle thither.  
Out, you green-sickness carrion! out, you baggage!

You tallow-face!

*La. Cap.* Fie, fie! what are you mad?

*Jul.* Good father, I beseech you on my  
knees,

Hear me with patience but to speak a word.

*Cap.* Hang thee, young baggage! disobedient wretch!

*I* tell thee what,—get thee to church o' Thursday. Or never after look me in the face: Speak not, reply not, do not answer me: My fingers itch.—Wife, we scarce thought us

blest'd,  
That God had sent us but this only child;  
But now I see this one is one too much,  
And that we have a curse in having her:  
Out on her, bidding I!

*Nurse.* God in heaven bless her!—  
You are to blame, my lord, to rate her so.

*Cap.* And why, my lady wisdom? hold your tongue,

Good prudence; smatter with your gossips, go.

*Nurse.* I speak no treason.

*Cap.* O! I speak good den!

*Nurse.* May not one speak?

*Cap.* Peace, you mumbling fool!  
Utter your gravity o'er a gossip's bowl,  
For here we need it not.

*La. Cap.* You are too hot.

*Cap.* Good breading! it makes me mad: Day,  
night, late, early,  
At home, abroad, alone, in company,  
Waking, or sleeping, still my care hath been  
To have her match'd: and having now pro-

vided  
A gentleman of princely parentage,  
Of fair demesnes, youthful, and nobly train'd,  
Stuff'd (as they say,) with honourable parts,  
Proportion'd as one's heart could wish a man,—  
And then to have a wretched puling fool,  
A whining mammet, in her fortune's tender,  
To answer—'I'll not wed,—I cannot love,  
I am too young,—I pray you, pardon me,—  
But, as you will not wed, I'll pardon you:  
Gaze where you will, you shall not house with me;

Look to't, think on't, I do not use to jest.  
Thursday is near; lay hand on heart, advise:  
An you be mine, I'll give you to my friend;  
An you be not, hang, beg, starve, die i'th' streets,

For, by my soul, I'll ne'er acknowledge thee,  
Nor what is mine shall never do thee good:  
Trust to't, bethink you, I'll not be forsworn.

[*Exit.*]

*Jul.* Is there no pity sitting in the clouds,  
That sees into the bottom of my grief?  
O sweet my mother, cast me not away!  
Delay this marriage for a month, a week;  
Or, if you do not, make the bridal bed  
In that dim monument where Tybalt lies.

*La. Cap.* Talk not to me, for I'll not speak a word;

Do as thou wilt, for I have done with thee.

[*Exit.*]

*Jul.* O God!—O nurse! how shall this be prevented?

My husband is on earth, my faith in heaven;  
How shall that faith return again to earth,  
Unless that husband send it me from heaven  
By leaving earth?—Comfort me, counsel me.—  
Alack, alack, that heaven should practise stratagems

Upon so soft a subject as myself!—  
What say'st thou? hast thou not a word of joy?  
Some comfort, nurse.

*Nurse.* 'Faith, here 'tis: Romeo  
Is banished; and all the world to nothing,  
That he dares ne'er come back to challenge you;

Or, if he do, it needs must be by stealth.  
Then, since the case so stands as now it doth,  
I think it best you married with the county.  
Oh! he's a lovely gentleman!  
Romeo's a disclout to him; an eagle, madam,  
Hath not so green, so quick, so fair an eye,  
As Paris hath. Beshrew my very heart,  
I think you happy in this second match,  
For it exceeds your first; or if it did not,

Your first is dead; or 'twere as good he were,  
As living here and you no use of him.

*Jul.* Speakest thou from thy heart?

*Nurse.* From my soul too;

Or else beshrew them both.

*Jul.* Amen!

*Nurse.* To what?

*Jul.* Well, thou hast comforted me marvellous much.

Go in; and tell my lady I am gone,  
Having displeas'd my father, to Laurence's cell,  
To make confession, and to be absolv'd.

*Nurse.* Marry, I will; and this is wisely done.

[*Exit.*]

*Jul.* Ancient damnation! O most wicked

send!

Is it more sin to wish me thus forsworn,  
Or to dispraise my lord with that same tongue  
Which she hath prais'd him with above compare

So many thousand times?—Go, counsellor;  
Thou and my bosom henceforth shall be twain.—

I'll to the friar, to know his remedy;

If all else fail, myself have power to die.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—Friar LAURENCE'S Cell.

*Enter Friar LAURENCE, and PARIS.*

*Fri.* On Thursday, Sir? the time is very short.

*Par.* My father Capulet will have it so;  
And I am nothing slow, to slack his haste.

*Fri.* You say you do not know the lady's mind:

Uneven is the course, I like it not.

*Par.* Immoderately she weeps for Tybalt's death,

And therefore have I little talk'd of love;  
For Venus smiles not in a house of tears.  
Now, Sir, her father counts it dangerous,  
That she doth give her sorrow so much sway;  
And, in his wisdom, bastes our marriage,  
To stop the inundation of her tears;  
Which, too much mudded by herself alone,  
May be put from her by society:  
Now do you know the reason of this haste.

*Fri.* I would I knew not why it should be slow'd.

[*Aside.*]

Look, Sir, here comes the lady towards my cell.

*Enter JULIET.*

*Par.* Happily met, my lady, and my wife!

*Jul.* That may be, Sir, when I may be a wife.

*Par.* That may be, must be, love, on Thursday next.

*Jul.* What must be shall be.

*Fri.* That's a certain text.

*Par.* Come you to make confession to this father?

*Jul.* To answer that, were to confess to you.

*Par.* Do not deny to him, that you love me.

*Jul.* I will confess to you, that I love him.

*Par.* So will you, I am sure, that you love me.

*Jul.* If I do so, it will be of more price,  
Being spoke behind your back, than to your face.

*Par.* Poor soul, thy face is much abus'd with tears.

*Jul.* The tears have got small victory by that;

For it was bad enough, before their spite.

*Par.* Thou wrong'st it, more than tears, with that report.

*Jul.* That is no slander, Sir, that is a truth;  
And what I spake, I spake it to my face.

*Par.* Thy face is mine, and thou hast slander'd it.

*Jul.* It may be so, for it is not mine own.—  
Are you at leisure, holy father, now;  
Or shall I come to you at evening mass?

*Fri.* My leisure serves me, pensive daughter,  
now:—  
My lord, we must entreat the time alone.

*Par.* God shield, I should disturb devotion!—

*Juliet*, on Thursday early will I rouse you:—  
Till then, adieu! and keep this holy kiss.

[*Exit PARIS.*]

*Jul.* O shut the door! and when thou hast  
done so,  
Come weep with me; Past hope, past cure,  
past help!

*Fri.* Ah! Juliet, I already know thy grief;  
It strains me past the compass of my wits:  
I bear thou must, and nothing must prorogue it,  
On Thursday next be married to this county.

*Jul.* Tell me not, friar, that thou hear'st of this,

Unless thou tell me how I may prevent it:  
If, in thy wisdom, thou canst give no help,  
Do thou but call my resolution wise,  
And with this knife I'll help it presently.

God join'd my heart and Romeo's, thou our  
hands:

And ere this hand, by thee to Romeo seal'd,  
Shall be the label to another deed,  
Or my true heart with treacherous revolt  
Turn to another, this shall slay them both:  
Therefore, out of thy long-experienc'd time,  
Give me some present counsel; or, behold,  
Twixt my extremes and me this bloody knife  
Shall play the umpire;— arbitrating that  
Which the commission of thy years and art  
Could to no issue of true honour bring.  
Be not so long to speak; I long to die,  
If what thou speak'st speak not of remedy.

*Fri.* Hold, daughter; I do spy a kind of  
Which craves as desperate an execution [hope,  
As that is desperate which we would prevent.  
If, rather than to marry county Paris,  
Thou hadst the strength of will to slay thyself;  
Then is it likely, thou wilt undertake  
A thing like death to chide away this shame,  
That cop'st with death himself to scape from it;  
And, if thou dar'st, I'll give thee remedy.

*Jul.* O bid me leap, rather than marry Paris,  
From off the battlements of yonder tower;  
Or walk in thievish ways; or bid me lurk  
Where serpents are; chain me with roaring  
Or shut me nightly in a charnel-house, [hears;  
O'er-cover'd quite with dead men's rattling  
bones,

With rocky shanks, and yellow chapless skulls;  
Or bid me go into a new-made grave,  
And hide me with a dead man in his shroud;  
Things that, to hear them told, have made me  
tremble:

And I will do it without fear or doubt,  
To live an unstain'd wife to my sweet love.

*Fri.* Hold, then; go home, be merry, give  
consent

To marry Paris; Wednesday is to-morrow;  
To-morrow night look that thou lie alone,  
Let not thy nurse lie with thee in thy chamber:  
Take thou this phial, being then in bed,  
And this distilled liquor drink thou off:  
When presently, through all thy veins shall run  
A cold and drowsy humour, which shall seize  
Each vital spirit; for no pulse shall keep  
His natural progress, but surcease to beat:  
No warmth, no breath, shall testify thou liv'st;  
The roses in thy lips and cheeks shall fade  
To pale ashes; thy eyes' windows fall,  
Like death when he shuts up the day of life;  
Each part, depriv'd of supple government,  
Shall stiff, and stark, and cold appear like  
death:

And in this borrow'd likeness of shrunk death  
Thou shalt remain full two and forty hours,

• Decide the struggle between me and my distresses.  
• Authority of power.

And then awake as from a pleasant sleep.

Now when the bridegroom in the morning  
comes [dead:

To rouse thee from thy bed, there art thou  
Then (as the manner of our country is,)  
In thy best robes uncover'd on the bier,  
Thou shalt be borne to that same ancient vault,  
Where all the kindred of the Capulets lie.  
In the meantime, against thou shalt awake,  
Shall Romeo by my letters know our drift;  
And hither shall he come; and he and I  
Will watch thy waking, and that very night  
Shall Romeo bear thee hence to Mantua.  
And this shall free thee from this present shame;  
If no unconstant toy, nor womanish fear,  
Abate thy valour in the acting it.

*Jul.* Give me, O give me! tell me not of fear.

*Fri.* Hold; get you gone, be strong and  
prosperous

In this resolve: I'll send a friar with speed

To Mantua, with my letters to thy lord.

*Jul.* Love, give me strength! and strength  
shall help afford.

Farewell, dear father.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—A Room in CAPULET'S House.

*Enter CAPULET, LADY CAPULET, NURSE, and  
SERVANTS.*

*Cap.* So many guests invite as here are  
writ.— [Exit SERVANT.

Sirrah, go hire me twenty cunning cooks.  
*2. Serv.* You shall have none ill, Sir; for I'll  
try if they can lick their fingers.

*Cap.* How canst thou try them so?

*2. Serv.* Marry, Sir, 'tis an ill cook that can-  
not lick his own fingers: therefore he that  
cannot lick his fingers goes not with me.

*Cap.* Go, begone.— [Exit SERVANT.

We shall be much unfurnish'd for this time.—  
What is my daughter gone to visit Laurence's  
Nurse? Ay, forsooth.

*Cap.* Well, he may chance to do some good  
on her:

A prevish self-will'd harlotry it is.

*Enter JULIET.*

*Nurse.* See, where she comes from shrill  
with merry look.

*Cap.* How now, my headstrong? what have  
you been gadding?

*Jul.* Where I have learn'd me to repent the  
Of disobedient opposition  
To you and your behests, and am enjoin'd  
By holy Laurence to fall prostrate here,  
And beg your pardon:—Pardoun, I beseech  
Henceforward I am ever rul'd by you. [Kneels.]

*Cap.* Send for the county; go tell him of  
this; [Exit.]

I'll have this knot knit up to-morrow morn-  
*Jul.* I met the youthful lord at Laurence's  
cell;

And gave him what becom'd; love I might,  
Not stepping o'er the bounds of modesty.

*Cap.* Why, I am glad on't; this is well,—  
stand up:

This is as't should be.—Let me see the county;  
Ay, marry, go, I say, and fetch him hither.—  
Now, afore God, this reverend holy friar,  
All our whole city is much bound to him.

*Jul.* Nurse, will you go with me into my  
closet,

To help me sort such needful ornaments

As you think fit to furnish me to-morrow?

*La. Cap.* No, not till Thursday; there is  
time enough.

*Cap.* Go, nurse, go with her:—We'll to church  
to-morrow.

[*Exit JULIET and NURSE.*]

*La. Cap.* We shall be short in our provision;  
'Tis now near night.

*Cap.* Tush! I will stir about, [wife;  
And all things shall be well, I warrant thee

• Confession. • Commands. • Becoming.

Go thou to Juliet, help to deck up her ;  
I'll not to bed to-night ;—let me alone ; [Ho !—  
I'll play the housewife for this once.—What,  
They are all forth : well, I will walk myself  
To county Paris, to prepare him up [light,  
Against to-morrow : my heart is wondrous  
Since this same wayward girl is so reclaim'd.  
[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE III.—JULIET'S Chamber.

Enter JULIET and NURSE.

*Jul.* Ay, those attires are best :—But, gentle nurse,  
I pray thee, leave me to myself to-night ;  
For I have need of many orisons \*  
To move the heavens to smile upon my state,  
Which, well thou know'st, is cross and full of sin.

Enter LADY CAPULET.

*La. Cap.* What, are you busy ? do you need my help ?

*Jul.* No, madam ; we have cull'd such necessities

As are behoveful for our state to-morrow :  
So please you, let me now be left alone,  
And let the nurse this night sit up with you ;  
For I am sure, you have your hands full all  
In this so sudden business.

*La. Cap.* Good night !

Get thee to bed, and rest ; for thou hast need.

[*Exeunt Lady CAPULET and NURSE.*

*Jul.* Farewell !—God knows, when we shall meet again.  
I have a faint cold fear thrills through my veins,

That almost freezes up the heat of life :  
I'll call them back again to comfort me :—  
Nurse !—What should she do here ?

My dismal scene I needs must act alone.—  
Come hither.—

What if this mixture do not work at all ?  
Must I of force be married to the county ?—  
No, no ;—this shall forbid it :—he thou there. —  
[*Laying down a Dagger.*

What if it be a poison, which the friar  
Subtly hath minister'd to have me dead,  
Lest in this marriage he should be dishonour'd,  
Because he married me before to Romeo ?  
I fear, it is ;—and yet methinks it should not,  
For he hath still been tried a holy man :

I will not entertain so bad a thought.—  
How if, when I am laid into the tomb,  
I wake before the time that Romeo  
Come to redeem me ? there's a fearful point !  
Shall I not then be stifled in the vault,  
To whose foul mouth no healthsome air  
Breathes in,

And there die strangled ere my Romeo comes ?  
Or, if I live, is it not very like  
The horrible conceit of death and night,  
Together with the terror of the place,—  
As in a vault, and ancient receptacle,  
Where, for these many hundred years, the bones

Of all my buried ancestors are pack'd ;  
Where bloody Tybalt, yet but green in earth,  
Lies festering in his shroud ; where, as they say,

At some hours in the night spirits resort :—  
Alack, alack ! is it not like that I,  
So early waking,—what with loathsome smells ;  
And shrieks like mandrakes' torn out of the earth,

That living mortals, hearing them, run mad ;—  
Oh ! if I wake, shall I not be distraught,  
Environ'd with all these hideous fears ?  
And madly play with my forefathers' joints ?

\* Prayers.

† The fabulous accounts of the plant called a mandrake give it a degree of animal life, and when it is torn from the ground it groans, which is fatal to him that pulls it up.

‡ Distracted

And pluck the maned Tybalt from his shroud !  
And, in this rage, with some great kinsman's bone,  
As with a club, dash out my desperate brains !  
O look ! methinks, I see my cousin's ghost  
Seeking out Romeo, that did spit his body  
Upon a rapier's point :—Stay, Tybalt, stay !—  
Romeo, I come ! this do I drink to thee.  
[*She throws herself on the Bed*

## SCENE IV.—CAPULET'S Hall.

Enter Lady CAPULET and NURSE.

*La. Cap.* Hold, take these keys, and fetch more spices, nurse.

*Nurse.* They call for dates and quinces in the pastry. \*

Enter CAPULET.

*Cap.* Come, sir, sur, sur ! the second cock hath crow'd,

The curfew bell hath rung, 'tis three o'clock :—  
Look to the bak'd meats, good Angelica :  
Spice not for cost.

*Nurse.* Go, go, you cat-quean, go,  
Get you to bed ; faith, you'll be sick to-morrow  
For this night's watching.

*Cap.* No, not a whit ; What ! I have watch'd ere now

All night for lesser cause, and ne'er been sick.

*La. Cap.* Ay, you have been a mouse hunt + in your time :

But I will watch you from such watching—now,  
[*Exeunt Lady CAPULET and NURSE.*

*Cap.* A jealous-hood, a jealous-hood !—Now, fellow,  
What's there ?

Enter SERVANTS with Spits, Legs, and Baskets.

1 *Serv.* Things for the cook, Sir ; but I know not what.

*Cap.* Make haste, make haste. [Exit 1 SERV.]  
Sirrah, fetch drier logs ;

Call Peter, he will show thee where they are.  
2 *Serv.* I have a head, Sir, that will bawd out logs,

And never trouble Peter for the matter  
[*Exit.*

*Cap.* 'Mass, and well said ; a merry whoreson ! ha,  
Thou shalt be logger-head.—Good faith 'tis day :  
The county will be hear with music straight,

[*Music within.*  
For so he said he would. I hear him near :—  
Nurse !—Wife ! what, ho !—what, Nurse, I say !

Enter NURSE.

Go, waken Juliet, go, and trim her up ;  
I'll go and chat with Paris :—Hie, make haste,  
Make haste ! the bridegroom he is come already :

Make haste, I say ! [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE V.—JULIET'S Chamber ; JULIET on the Bed.

Enter NURSE.

*Nurse.* Mistress !—what, mistress !—Juliet !  
—fast, I warrant her, she :—

Why, lamb !—why, lady !—fie, you slug-a-bed !—  
Why, love, I say !—madam ! sweet-heart !—  
why, bride !

What, not a word ?—you take your pennyworths now ;

[*Knock.*  
Sleep for a week :—for the next night, I warrant  
The county Paris hath set up his rest,  
That you shall rest but little.—God forgive me,  
[*Marry and amen !*] how sound is she asleep !  
I needs must wake her :—Madam, madam,  
madam !

Ay, let the county, take you in your bed ;

\* The room where pies were made.

+ *Messe* was a term of endearment to a woman.

He'll fright you up, 'faith.—Will it not be ?  
What, dress'd ! and in your clothes ! and down  
again !

I must needs wake you : Lady ! lady ! lady !  
Alas ! alas !—Help ! help ! my lady's dead !—  
O well-a-day, that ever I was born !—  
Some aqua-vitæ, ho !—my lord !—my lady !

*Enter Lady CAPULET.*

*La. Cap.* What noise is here ?

*Nurse.* O lamentable day !

*La. Cap.* What is the matter ?

*Nurse.* Look, look ! O heavy day !

*La. Cap.* O me, O me ! my child, my only  
life,

Revive, look up, or I will die with thee !—  
Help, help !—call help.

*Enter CAPULET.*

*Cap.* For shame, bring Juliet forth ; her lord  
is come.

*Nurse.* She's dead, deceas'd, she's dead ;  
alack the day !

*La. Cap.* Alack the day ! she's dead, she's  
dead, she's dead.

*Cap.* Ha ! let me see her :—Out, alas ! she's  
cold ;

Her blood is settled ; and her joints are stiff ;  
Life and these lips have long been separated :

Death lies on her like an untimely frost  
Upon the sweetest flower of all the field.

Accursed time ! unfortunate old man !

*Nurse.* O lamentable day !

*La. Cap.* O woeful time !

*Cap.* Death, that hath ta'en her hence to  
make me wail,

Ties up my tongue, and will not let me speak.

*Enter Friar LAURENCE and PARIS, with MU-  
SICIANS.*

*Fri.* Come, is the bride ready to go to  
church ?

*Cap.* Ready to go, but never to return :  
O son, the night before thy wedding day  
Hath death lain with thy bride :—See, there she  
lies,

Flower as she was, deflowered by him.  
Death is my son-in-law, death is my heir ;  
My daughter he hath wedded ! I will die,  
And leave him all ; life leaving, all is death's.

*Par.* Have I thought long to see this morn-  
ing's face,

And doth it give me such a sight as this ?

*La. Cap.* Accurs'd, unhappy, wretched, hate-  
ful day !

Most miserable hour, that e'er time saw  
In lasting labour of his pilgrimage !  
But one, poor one, one poor and loving child,  
But one thing to rejoice and solace in,  
And cruel death hath catch'd it from my sight.

*Nurse.* O woe ! O woeful, woeful, woeful  
day !

Most lamentable day ! most woeful day,

That ever ever I did yet behold !

O day ! O day ! O day ! O hateful day !

Never was seen so black a day as this :

O woeful day, O woeful day !

*Par.* Begun'd, divorced, wronged, spited,  
slain !

Most detestable death, by thee begun'd,  
By cruel thee quite overthrown !—  
O love ! O life !—not life, but love in death !

*Cap.* Despis'd, distressed, hated, martyr'd,  
kill'd !—

Uncomfortable time ! why cam'st thou now

To murder murder our solemnity !—

O child ! O child !—my son !, and not my  
child !—

Dead art thou, dead !—alack ! my child is dead ;  
And, with my child, my joys are buried !

*Fri.* Peace, ho, for shame ! confusion's cure  
lives not

In these confusions. Heaven and yourself  
Had part in this fair maid ; now heaven hath all,

And all the better is it for the maid :

Your part in her you could not keep from death ;  
But heaven keeps his part in eternal life.

The most you sought was—her promotion ;  
For 'twas your heaven, she should be advanc'd :

And weep ye now, seeing she is advanc'd,

Above the clouds, as high as heaven itself ?

Oh ! in this love, you love your child so ill,

That you run mad, seeing that she is well :

She's not well married, that lives married long ;

But she's best married, that dies married  
young.

Dry up your tears, and stick your rosemary

On this fair corse ; and as the custom is,

In all her best array bear her to church :

For though fond nature bids us all lament,

Yet nature's tears are reason's merriment.

*Cap.* All things, that we ordained festival,

Turn from their office to black funeral ;

Our instruments, to melancholy bells ;

Our wedding cheer, to a sad burial feast ;

Our solemn hymns to sullen dirges change ;

Our bridal flowers serve for a buried corse,

And all things change them to the contrary.

*Fri.* Sir, you go in,—and, madam, go with  
him ;—

And go, Sir Paris ;—every one prepare

To follow this fair corse unto her grave :

The heavens do low'r upon you, for some ill ;

Move them no more, by crossing their high will !

[*Exeunt CAPULET, Lady CAPULET, PARIS, and PRIAR.*]

*1 Mus.* 'Faith, we may put up our pipes, and  
be gone.

*Nurse.* Honest good fellows, ah ! put up,  
put up ;

For, well you know, this is a pitiful case.

[*Exit NURSE.*]

*1 Mus.* Ay, by my troth, the case may be  
amended.

*Enter PETER.*

*Pet.* Musicians, O musicians, *Heart's case*,  
*heart's ease* ; O an you will have me live, play  
—*heart's ease*.

*1 Mus.* Why *heart's ease* ?

*Pet.* O musicians, because my heart itself  
plays—*My heart is full of woe* : O play me  
some merry dump \* to comfort me.

*2 Mus.* Not a dump we ; 'tis no time to  
play now.

*Pet.* You will not then ?

*2 Mus.* No.

*Pet.* I will then give it you soundly.

*1 Mus.* What will you give us ?

*Pet.* No money, on my faith, but the glean :  
I will give you the minstrel.

*1 Mus.* Then will I give you the serving-  
creature.

*Pet.* Then will I lay the serving-creature's  
dagger on your pate. I will carry no crooklets :  
I'll re you, I'll fa you : Do you note me ?

*1 Mus.* An you re us, and fa us, you note us.

*2 Mus.* Pray you, put up your dagger, and put  
out your wit.

*Pet.* Then have at you with my wit, I will  
dry-beat you with an iron wit, and put up my  
iron dagger :—Answer me like men !

*When gripping grief the heart doth wound,*

*And doleful dumps the mind oppress,*

*Then music, with her silver sound ;*

Why, silver sound ? why music with her sil-  
ver sound ?

What say you, Simon Catling ?

*1 Mus.* Marry, Sir, because silver hath a  
sweet sound.

*Pet.* Pretty ! What say you, Hugh Rebeck ?

*2 Mus.* I say—silver sound, because musi-  
cians sound for silver.

\* Dumps were heavy mournful tunes.

† To glean is to scold, and a *gleanman* signified a minstrel.

‡ " And the jocund rebekes sound."—Milton.

*Pet.* Pretty too!—What say you, James Soundpost?

*3 Mus.* Faith, I know not what to say.  
*Pet.* O I cry you mercy! you are the singer: I will say for you. It is music with her silver sound, because such fellows as you have seldom gold for sounding:—

*Then music, with her silver sound,  
With speedy help doth lend redress.*

[*Exit singing.*]

*1 Mus.* What a pestilent knave is this same?  
*2 Mus.* Hang him, Jack! Come, we'll in here; tarry for the mourners, and stay dinner.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT V. \*

#### SCENE I.—Mantua.—A Street.

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* If I may trust the flattering eye of sleep,  
My dreams presage some joyful news at hand:  
My bosom's lord sits lightly in his throne;  
And all this day, an unaccustom'd spirit  
Lifts me above the ground with cheerful thoughts.  
I dreamt my lady came and found me dead;  
(Strange dream! that gives a dead man leave to think)  
And breath'd such life with kisses in my lips,  
That I reviv'd, and was an emperor.  
Ah me! how sweet is love itself possess'd,  
When but love's shadows are so rich in joy!

*Later BALTHAZAR.*

News from Verona!—How now, Balthazar?  
Dost thou not bring me letters from the friar?  
How doth my lady? Is my father well?  
How fares my Juliet? That I ask again;  
For nothing can be ill, if she be well.

*Bal.* Than she is well, and nothing can be ill,  
Her body sleeps in Capel's monument,  
And her immortal part with angels lives;  
I saw her laid low in her kindred's vault,  
And presently took post to tell it you:  
O pardon me for bringing these ill news,  
Since you did leave it for my office, Sir.

*Rom.* Is it even so? then I defy you, stars!  
Thou know'st my lodging: get me ink and paper,

And hire post-horses; I will hence to-night.

*Bal.* Pardon me, Sir, I will not leave you thus:

Your looks are pale and wild, and do import some misadventure.

*Rom.* Tush, thou art deceiv'd;  
Leave me, and do the thing I bid thee do:  
Hast thou no letters to me from the friar?

*Bal.* No, my good lord.

*Rom.* No matter; get thee gone,  
And hire those horses; I'll be with thee straight.

[*Exit BALTHAZAR.*]

Well, Juliet, I will lie with thee to-night.  
Let's see for means: O mischief, thou art swift

To enter in the thoughts of desperate men!  
I do remember an apothecary,—  
And hereabouts he dwells,—whom late I noted  
In tatter'd weeds, with overwhelming brows,  
Culling of simples; † meager were his looks,  
Sharp misery had worn him to the bones;  
And in his needy shop a tortoise hung,  
An alligator stuff'd, and other skins  
Of ill-shap'd fishes; and about his shelves

A beggarly account of empty boxes,  
Green earthen pots, bladders, and musty seeds,  
Remnants of packthread, and old cakes of roses  
Were thinly scatter'd, to make up a show.  
Noting this pectury, to myself I said—  
And if a man did need a poison now,  
Whose sale is present death in Mantua,  
Here lives a catiff wretch would sell it him.  
O this same thought did but forerun my need;

And this same needy man must sell it me.  
As I remember, this should be the house:  
Being holiday, the beggar's shop is shut.—  
What, ho! apothecary!

*Enter APOTHECARY.*

*Ap.* Who calls so loud?

*Rom.* Come hither, man.—I see that thou art poor;

Hold, there is forty ducats: let me have  
A dram of poison; such soon-speeding gear \*

As will disperse itself through all the veins,  
That the life-weary taker may fall dead,  
And that the trunk may be discharg'd of breath

As violently, as hasty powder fir'd  
Doth hurry from the fatal cannon's womb.

*Ap.* Such mortal drugs I have; but Mantua's law

Is death, to any he that utters them.

*Rom.* Art thou so bare, and full of wretchedness,

And fear'st to die? famine is in thy cheeks,  
Need and oppression starveth in thy eyes,

Upon thy back hangs rag'd misery,  
The world is not thy friend, nor the world's law:

The world affords no law to make thee rich;  
Then be not poor but break it, and take this.

*Ap.* My poverty, but not my will, consents.

*Rom.* I pay thy poverty, and not thy will.

*Ap.* Put this in any liquid thing you will.

And drink it off; and, if you had the strength  
Of twenty men, it would dispatch you straight.

*Rom.* There is thy gold: worse poison to men's souls,  
Doing more murders in this loathsome world,  
Than these poor compounds that thou may'st not sell.

I sell thee poison, thou hast sold me none.  
Farewell; buy food and get thyself in flesh.—  
Come, cordial, and not poison; go with me  
To Juliet's grave, for there must I use thee.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II.—Friar Laurence's Cell.

*Enter Friar JOHN.*

*John.* Holy Franciscan friar! brother, ho!

*Enter Friar LAURENCE.*

*Lau.* This same should be the voice of friar John.—

Welcome from Mantua: What says Romeo?  
Or, if his mind be writ, give me his letter.

*John.* Going to find a barefoot brother out,  
One of our order to associate me,  
Here in this city visiting the sick,  
And tending him, the searchers of the town,  
Suspecting that we both were in a house  
Where the infectious pestilence did reign,  
Seal'd up the doors, and would not let us forth;

So that my speed to Mantua there was stay'd.

*Lau.* Who bare my letter then to Romeo?

*John.* I could not send it,—here it is again,—

\* This act is now introduced by a solemn dirge, and a funeral service.  
† L. o. Love.

‡ Herbs.

• Snuff.



Nor get a messenger to bring it thee,  
So fearful were they of infection.

*Lauc.* Unhappy fortune! by my brotherhood,  
The letter was not mine, \* but full of charge,  
Of dear import; and the neglecting it  
May do much danger: Friar John, go hence;  
Get me an iron crow, and bring it straight  
Unto my cell.

*John.* Brother, I'll go and bring't thee. *[Exit.]*

*Lauc.* Now must I to the monument alone;  
Within this three hours will fail I diet wake;  
She will beshrew me much, that Romeo  
Hath had no notice of these accidents:  
But I will write again to Mantua,  
And keep her at my cell till Romeo come;  
Poor living corse, clos'd in a dead man's tomb! *[Exit.]*

SCENE III.—A Church-Yard; in it, a Monument belonging to the CAPULETS.

*Enter PARIS, and his PAGE bearing Flowers and a Torch.*

*Par.* Give me thy torch, boy: Hence and stand aloof;—

Yet put it out, for I would not be seen.  
Under yon yew-trees lay thee all along,  
Holding thine ear close to the hollow ground;  
So shall no foot upon the church-yard tread,  
(Being loose, unfirm, with digging up of graves,) But thou shalt hear it: whistle then to me,  
As signal that thou hear'st something approach.  
Give me those flowers. Do as I bid thee, go.

*Page.* I am almost afraid to stand alone  
Here in the church-yard; yet I will adventure. *[Retires.]*

*Par.* Sweet flower, with flowers I strew thy  
bridal bed:

Sweet tomb, that in thy circuit dost contain  
The perfect model of eternity;  
Fair Juliet, that with angels dost remain,  
Accept this latest favour at my hands;  
That living honour'd thee, and, being dead,  
With funeral praises do adorn thy tomb! *[The boy whistles.]*

The boy gives warning, something doth approach.

What cursed foot wanders this way to-night,  
To cross my obsequies, and true-love's rite?  
What, with a torch!—muffle me, night, a while. *[Retires.]*

*Enter ROMEO and BALTHAZAR with a Torch, Mattock, &c.*

*Rom.* Give me that mattock, and the wrenching iron.

Hold, take this letter; early in the morning  
See thou deliver it to my lord and father.  
Give me the light: Upon thy life I charge thee,  
Whate'er thou hear'st or seest, stand all aloof,  
And do not interrupt me in my course.  
Why I descend into this bed of death,  
Is partly, to behold my lady's face:  
But, chiefly, to take hence from her dead finger  
A precious ring; a ring that I must use  
In dear employment:† therefore hence, be-  
But if thou, jealous, dost return to pry (gone:—  
In what I further shall intend to do,  
By heaven, I will tear thee joint by joint,  
And strew this hungry church-yard with thy limbs:

The time and my intents are savage-wild;  
More fierce, and more inexorable far,  
Than empty tigers, or the roaring sea.

*Bal.* I will be gone, Sir, and not trouble you.

*Rom.* So shalt thou show me friendship.—  
Take thou that:

Live and be prosperous, and farewell, good fellow.

*Bal.* For all this same, I'll hide me here-  
about;

His looks I fear, and his intents I doubt.

*Rom.* Thou detestable maw, thou womb of death *[Retires.]*

Gorg'd with the dearest morsel of the earth,  
Thus I enforce thy rotten jaws to open.

*[Breaking open the Door of the Monument.]*  
And, in despite, I'll cram thee with more food!

*Par.* This is that banish'd haughty Montague,  
That murder'd my love's cousin;—with which  
grief,

It is supposed the fair creature died,—  
And here is come to do some villainous shame  
To the dead bodies: I will apprehend him!— *[Advances.]*

Stop thy unhallow'd toil, vile Montague;  
Can vengeance be pursu'd farther than death?  
Condemn'd villain, I do apprehend thee;  
Obey, and go with me; for thou must die.

*Rom.* I must, indeed; and therefore came I  
hither.—

Good gentle youth, tempt not a desperate man,  
Fly hence and leave me,—think upon these  
gone;

Let them affright thee.—I beseech thee, youth,  
Heap not another sin upon my head,  
By urging me to fury:—O be gone!  
By heaven, I love thee better than myself:  
For I come hither arm'd against myself;  
Stay not, be gone;—live, and hereafter say—  
A madman's mercy bade thee run away.

*Par.* O I defy thy conjurations,  
And do attach thee as a felon here.

*Rom.* Wilt thou provoke me? then have at  
thee, boy. *[They fight.]*

*Page.* O lord! they fight! I will go call the  
watch. *[Exit PAGE.]*

*Par.* O I am slain! *[Falls.]*—If thou be  
merciful,

Open the tomb, lay me with Juliet. *[Dies.]*

*Rom.* In faith, I will:—Let me peruse this  
face;—

Mercutio's kinsman, noble county Paris.—  
What said my man, when my betossed soul  
Did not attend him as we rode? I think,  
He told me Paris should have married Juliet:  
Said he not so? or did I dream it so?  
Or am I mad, hearing him talk of Juliet,  
To think it was so?—O give me thy hand,  
One writ with me in sour misfortune's book:  
I'll bury thee in a triumphant grave,—  
A grave? O no; a lantern,† slaughter'd youth,  
For here lies Juliet, and her beauty makes  
This vault a feasting presence; full of light.  
Death, lie thou there, by a dead man interr'd.

*[Laying Paris in the Monument.]*  
How oft when men are at the point of death  
Have they been merry? which their keepers  
call

A lightning before death: Oh! how may I  
Call this a lightning?—O my love! my wife!  
Death, that hath suck'd the honey of thy breath,  
Hath had no power yet upon thy beauty:  
Thou art not conquer'd; beauty's ensign yet  
Is crimson in thy lips, and in thy cheeks,  
And death's pale flag is not advanced there.—  
Tybalt, liest thou there in thy bloody sheet?  
Oh! what more favour can I do to thee,  
Than with that hand that cut thy youth in  
twain,

To sunder his that was thine enemy?  
Forgive me, cousin!—Ah! dear Juliet,  
Why art thou yet so fair? Shall I believe  
That unsubstantial Death is amorous;  
And that the lean abhorred monster keeps  
Thee here in dark to be his paramour?  
For fear of that, I will still stay with thee;  
And never from this palace of dim night  
Depart again; here, here will I remain  
With worms that are thy chambermaids; O here

\* I refuse to do as thou conjur'st me to do, i. e. depart.  
† The allusion is to a *louvre* or turret full of windows  
by means of which ancient halls, &c. are illuminated.  
‡ Presence chamber.

\* I. e. On a trivial or idle subject.  
† I. e. Action of importance.

Will I set up my everlasting rest;  
And shake the yoke of inauspicious stars  
From this world wearied flesh.—Eyes, look your  
last!

Arms, take your last embrace! and lips, O you  
The doors of breath, seal with a righteous kiss  
A dateless bargain to engrossing death!—  
Come, bitter conduct, come, unsavoury guide!  
Thou desperate pilot, now at once run on  
The dashing rocks thy sea-sick weary hark!  
Here's to my love!—*[Drinks.]* O true apothecary!

Thy drugs are quick.—Thus with a kiss I die.

*[Dies.]*

*Enter at the other end of the Church-Yard, Friar LAURENCE, with a Lantern, Crow, and Spade.*

Fri. Saint Francis be my speed! how oft to-night  
Have my old feet stumbled at graves?—Who's there?

Who is it that consorts, so late, the dead?

Bal. Here's one, a friend, and one that knows you well.

Fri. Bliss be upon you! Tell me, good my friend,

What torch is yond', that vainly lends his light  
To grubs and eyeless skulls? as I discern,  
It burneth in the Capels' monument.

Bal. It doth so, holy Sir; and there's my master,

One that you love.

Fri. Who is it?

Bal. Romeo.

Fri. How long hath he been there?

Bal. Full half an hour.

Fri. Go with me to the vault.

Bal. I dare not, Sir:

My master knows not, but I am gone hence;  
And fearfully did menace me with death,  
If I did stay to look on his intents.

Fri. Stay then, I'll go alone:—Fear comes upon me:

O much I fear some ill unlucky thing.

Bal. As I did sleep under this yew-tree here,  
I dreamt my master and another fought,  
And that my master slew him.

Fri. Romeo? *[Advances.]*

Alack, alack, what blood is this, which stains  
The stony entrance of this sepulchre?—  
What mean these masterless and gory swords  
To lie discolour'd by this place of peace?

*[Enters the Monument.]*

Romeo! oh! pale!—Who else? what, Paris too?

And steep'd in blood?—Ah! what an unkind hour

Is guilty of this lamentable chance!—

The lady stirs. *[JULIET wakes and stirs.]*

Jul. O comfortable friar! where is my lord?  
I do remember well where I should be,  
And there I am:—Where is my Romeo?

*[Noise within.]*

Fri. I hear some noise.—Lady, come from that nest

Of death, contagion, and unnatural sleep;

A greater power than we can contradict

Hath thwarted our intents; come, come away:

Thy husband in thy bosom there lies dead;

And Paris too:—come, I'll dispose of thee

Among a sisterhood of holy nuns:

Stay not to question, for the watch is coming;

Come, go, good Juliet:—*[Noise again.]* I dare

stay no longer. *[Exit.]*

Jul. Go, get thee hence, for I will not

away,—

What's here? a cup, clos'd in my true love's

haid?

Poison, I see, hath been his timeless end:—

O churl! drink all; and leave no friendly drop,

To help me after?—I will kiss thy lips;

Haply, some poison yet doth hang on them,

To make me die with a restorative.

*[Kisses him.]*

Thy lips are warm!

1 Watch. *[Within.]* Lead, boy:—Which way?

Jul. Yea, noise?—then I'll be brief.—O happy dagger!

*[Snatching ROMEO's Dagger.]*

This is thy sheath; *[Stabs herself.]* these rust,

and let me die.

*[Falls on ROMEO's Body, and dies.]*

*Enter WATCH, with the PAGE of PARIS.*

Page. This is the place;—here, where the

torch doth burn.

1 Watch. The ground is bloody; Search about

the church-yard:

Go, some of you, who'er you find, attach.

*[Exeunt some.]*

Pitiful sight! here lies the county slain:—

And Juliet bleeding; warm, and newly dead,

Who here hath lain these two days buried.—

Go, tell the prince,—run to the Capulets,—

Raise up the Montagues,—some others search;—

*[Exeunt other WATCHMEN.]*

We see the ground whereon these woes do lie;

But the true ground of all these piteous woes,

We cannot without circumstance descry.

*Enter some of the WATCH, with BALTHAZAR.*

2 Watch. Here's Romeo's man, we found him

in the church-yard.

1 Watch. Hold him in safety, till the prince

come hither.

*Enter another WATCHMAN, with Friar*

*LAURENCE.*

3 Watch. Here is a friar, that trembles,

sighs, and weeps:

We took this untaught and this spade from him,

As he was coming from this church-yard side.

1 Watch. A great suspicion; Stay the friar

too.

*Enter the PRINCE and Attendants.*

Prince. What misadventure is so early up,

That calls our person from our morning's rest?

*Enter CAPULET, Lady CAPULET, and others.*

Cap. What should it be, that they so shriek

abroad?

La. Cap. The people in the street cry—

Romeo,

Some—Juliet, and some—Paris; and all run,

With open outcry toward our monument.

Prince. What fear is this, which startles in

our ears?

1 Watch. Sovereign, here lies the county

Paris slain;

And Romeo dead; and Juliet, dead before,

Warm and new kill'd.

Prince. Search, seek, and know how this foul

murder comes.

1 Watch. Here is a friar, and slaughter'd

Romeo's man,

With instruments upon them, fit to open

These dead men's tombs.

Cap. O heavens! O wife! look how our daughter

bleeds!

This dagger hath mista'en,—for lo! his house

Is empty on the back of Montague,—

And is mis-sheathed in my daughter's bosom.

La. Cap. O me! this sight of death is as a

bell,

That warns my old age to a sepulchre.

*Enter MONTAGUE and others.*

Prince. Come, Montague; for thou art early

up,

To see thy son and heir more early down.

Mon. Alas, my liege, my wife is dead to

night.

Grief of my son's exile hath stopp'd her breath :  
What further woe conspires against mine age ?

*Prince.* Look, and thou shalt see.

*Mou.* O thou untaught ! what manners is in this,

To press before thy father to a grave ?

*Prince.* Seal up the mouth of outrage for a while,

'Till we can clear these ambiguities,  
And know their spring, their head, their true descent ;

And then will I be general of your woes,  
And lead you even to death : Meantime forbear,

And let mischance be slave to patience.—  
Bring forth the parties of suspicion.

*Fri.* I am the greatest, able to do least,  
Yet most suspected as the time and place  
Doth make against me, of this direful murder ;

And here I stand, both to impeach and purge  
Myself condemned and myself accus'd.

*Prince.* Then say at once what thou dost know in this.

*Fri.* I will be brief, for my short date of breath

Is not so long as is a tedious tale.

Romeo, there dead, was husband to that Juliet ;

And she, there dead, that Romeo's faithful wife :

I married them ; and their stolen-marriage-day

Was Tybalt's doomsday, whose untimely death  
Banish'd the new-made bridegroom from this city ;

For whom, and not for Tybalt, Juliet pin'd.

You—to remove that siege \* of grief from her,—  
Betroth'd, and would have married her perforce,

To county Paris :—Then comes she to me ;  
And, with wild looks, bid me devise some means

To rid her from this second marriage,  
Or, in my cell there would she kill herself.

Then gave I her, so tutor'd by my art,  
A sleeping potion ; which so took effect

As I intended, for it wrought on her  
The form of death : meantime I writ to Romeo,

That he should bither come as this dire night,  
To help to take her from her borrow'd grave,  
Being the time the potion's force should cease.

But he which bore my letter, friar John,

Was stand by accident ; and yesternight  
Return'd my letter back : Then all alone,

At the prefixed hour of her waking,  
Came I to take her from her kindred's vault ;

Meaning to keep her closely at my cell,  
Till I conveniently could send to Romeo :

But when I came, some minute ere the time  
Of her awakening,) here untimely lay

The noble Paris, and true Romeo, dead.

She wakes ; and I entreated her come forth,  
And hear this work of heaven with patience :

Put then a noise did scare me from the tomb ;  
And she too desperate, would not go with me,

But (as it seems,) did violence on herself.

\* Sent.

All this I know ; and to the marriage

Her nurse is privy : And, if aught in this  
Miscarried by my fault, let my old life

Be sacrific'd some hour before his time,  
Unto the rigour of severest law.

*Prince.* We still have known thee for a holy man.—

Where's Romeo's man ? what can he say in this ?

*Bal.* I brought my master news of Juliet's death ;

And then in post he came from Mantua,  
To this same place, to this same monument.

This letter he early bid me give his father ;  
And threaten'd me with death, going in the vault,

If I departed not, and left him there.

*Prince.* Give me the letter, I will look on it.—

Where is the county's page, that rais'd the watch ?—

Sirrah, what made your master in this place ?

*Page.* He came with flowers to strew his lady's grave ;

And bid me stand aloof, and so I did :

Anon, comes one with light to ope the tomb ;  
And, by and by, my master drew on him ;

And then I ran away to call the watch.

*Prince.* This letter doth make good the friar's words,

Their course of love, the tidings of her death :  
And here he writes—that he did buy a poison

Of a poor 'pothecary, and therewithal  
Came to this vault to die, and lie with Juliet.—

Where be these enemies ? Capulet ! Montague !—

See what a scourge is laid upon your hate,  
That heaven finds means to kill your joys with love !

And I, for winking at your discords too,  
Have lost a brace of kinsmen : \* all are punish'd.

*Cap.* O brother Montague, give me thy hand :

This is my daughter's jointure, for no more  
Can I demand.

*Mou.* But I can give thee more :

For I will raise her statue in pure gold ;  
That, while Verona by that name is known,

There shall no figure at such rate be set,  
As that of true and faithful Juliet.

*Cap.* As rich shall Romeo by his lady lie,  
Poor sacrifices of our enmity !

*Prince.* A glooming peace this morning with it brings ;

The sun for sorrow will not show his head :  
Go hence, to have more talk of these sad things ;

Some shall be pardon'd, and some punished : †

For never was a story of more woe,  
Than this of Juliet and her Romeo.

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Mercutio and Paris.

† In the original story, (to which this line refers) the prince tortures and hangs the apothecary ; banishes the old nurse ; pardons Romeo's servant, and allows Friar Laurence to retire to a hermitage in the vicinity of Verona.

AS a piece for dramatic exhibition, this tragedy has been essentially improved by the celebrated Mr. Garrick, not only in the style and language, by which the jingle and quibble of many of its passages are expunged, but also by the transposition of several scenes, and by the following essential deviation from the original plot : As amended by him, and represented at present, no mention is made of Rosaline, and the sudden and unnatural change of Romeo's affection from her to Juliet is thereby avoided. Juliet also revives from her death-like slumber before the poison has fully operated upon the frame of Romeo, and he dies in her arms, after attempting to carry her from the tomb. By this most judicious alteration, the pathos of the scene is heightened to its highest pitch ; for nothing can be more melting than the incidents and expressions which so highly-wrought a catastrophe affords. As the Italian story upon which the play is founded, such was actually the development of the plot ; but Shakspeare had certainly recourse to the English or French translation ; in which this addition to the tale was upon some account omitted.

# CYMBELINE.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

**BIALONE** supposes that Shakspeare wrote *Cymbeline* in the year 1605. The main incidents upon which the plot turns, occur in a novel of Boccaccio's; but our poet obtained them in a different shape, from an old story-book entitled *Westward for Smelts*. *Cymbeline*, who gives name to the play, but is a cipher of royalty, began to reign over Britain in the 18th year of Augustus Cæsar. He filled the throne during thirty-five years, leaving two sons, Guiderius and Arviragus. The play commences in the 16th year of the Christian era, which was the 24th year of *Cymbeline's* reign, and the 42nd of Augustus's. The subject of the piece is disjointed and much too diffuse: it exhibits some monstrous breaches of dramatic unity, and several very languid and make-shift scenes. But the part of Imogen is most delicately and delightfully drawn; her ideas are remarkably luxuriant, yet restrained; and the natural warmth of her affections is, in many instances, most beautifully expressed. Cloten is an incongruous animal, with some strong points about him; and a fine contrast to Posthumus, who is sketched with great judgment, feeling, and consistency. The Queen is an unfinished character, desirous of producing mischief, but possessing neither energy nor ability to accomplish her schemes; and though Iachimo's cunning is portrayed with uncommon skill in his first attempt upon Imogen's virtue, yet his subsequent penitence and candour (however conducive to the moral) are not consistent with the usual hardness of so thorough-paced a villain. Notwithstanding its fine passages and affecting incidents, this play was lost to the stage until Garrick undertook to revise it, by the abridgment of some scenes, and the transposition of others, it was reduced within the compass of a night's performance; and has since continued a periodical favourite with the public. Dr. Johnson decides the merits of this historical drama in the following summary manner: "To remark the folly of the fiction, the absurdity of the conduct, the confusion of the names and manners of different times, and the impossibility of the events in any system of life, were to waste criticism upon unresisting imbecility, upon faults too evident for detection, and too gross for aggravation." No one can deny the elegance or point of the Doctor's critical sentences, nor their murderous efficiency when meant to despatch an adversary at a single blow; but the greatest fault of our poet consists in his having christened some characters of the first century with names which belonged to the fifteenth; and in his having seasoned their antique Roman homeliness with a smattering of modern Italian villany.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

<b>CYMBELINE</b> , <i>King of Britain.</i>	<b>A ROMAN CAPTAIN. Two BRITISH CAPTAINS.</b>
<b>CLOTEN</b> , <i>Son to the Queen by a former husband.</i>	<b>PISANIO</b> , <i>Servant to Posthumus.</i>
<b>LIONATUS POSTHUMUS</b> , <i>a Gentleman, Husband to Imogen.</i>	<b>CORNELIUS</b> , <i>a Physician.</i>
<b>BELELIUS</b> , <i>a banished Lord, disguised under the name of Morgan.</i>	<b>TWO GENTLEMEN.</b>
<b>GUILFRIUS</b> , <i>Sons to Cymbeline, disguised under the names of Polydore and Cadwal, supposed Sons to Belarius.</i>	<b>TWO JAILERS.</b>
<b>ARVIRAGUS</b> , <i>Idem.</i>	<b>QUEEN</b> , <i>Wife to Cymbeline.</i>
<b>PHILARIO</b> , <i>Friend to Posthumus.</i>	<b>IMOGEN</b> , <i>Daughter to Cymbeline by a former Queen.</i>
<b>IACHIMO</b> , <i>Friend to Philario.</i>	<b>HELEN</b> , <i>Woman to Imogen.</i>
<b>A FRENCH GENTLEMAN</b> , <i>Friend to Philario.</i>	<i>Lords, Ladies, Roman Senators, Tribunes</i>
<b>CAIUS LUCIUS</b> , <i>General of the Roman Forces.</i>	<i>Apparitions, a Soothsayer, a Dutch Gentleman, a Spanish Gentleman, Musicians, Officers, Captains, Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.</i>

SCENE, sometimes in Britain; sometimes in Italy.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—*Britain.—The Garden behind CYMBELINE'S Palace.*

Enter two GENTLEMEN.

1 Gent. You do not meet a man, but frowns: our bloods \*  
No more obey the heavens, than our courtiers;  
Still seem, as does the king's, +  
2 Gent. But what's the matter?

\* Inclinations.

+ Many pages of controversy have been wasted upon this passage, which is very obscure, and must ever remain so.

1 Gent. His daughter, and the heir of his kingdom, whom  
He purpos'd to his wife's sole son, (a widow  
That late he married,) hath refer'd herself  
Unto a poor but worthy gentleman: She's wedded;  
Her husband banish'd; she imprison'd: all  
Is outward sorrow; though, I think, the king  
Be touch'd at very heart.

2 Gent. None but the king?

1 Gent. He, that hath lost her, too: so is the queen,  
[Tear]  
That most desir'd the match: But not a court-  
Although they wear their faces to the bent  
Of the king's looks, hath a heart that is not  
Glad at the thing they sorrow at.

2 *Cent.* And why so?

1 *Gent.* He that hath mis'd the princess, is a thing

Too bad for bad report : and he that hath her, (I mean, that married her, alack, good man ! And therefore banish'd) is a creature such As, to seek through the regions of the earth For one his like, there would be something failing

In him that should compare. I do not think So fair an outward, and such stuff within, Endows a man but he.

2 *Gent.* You speak him far.\*

1 *Gent.* I do extend him, Sir, within himself ; Crush him together, rather than unfold His measure duly.

2 *Gent.* What's his name, and birth ?

1 *Gent.* I cannot delve him to the root : His father

Was call'd *Scellius*, who did join his honour Against the Romans, with *Cassibelan* ; But had his titles by *Tenantius*,† whom He serv'd with glory and admir'd success ; So gain'd the sur-addition, *Leonatus* : And had, besides this gentleman in question, Two other sons, who, in the wars o'the time, Died with their swords in hand ; for which their father

(Then old and fond of issue,) took such sorrow, That he quit being ; and his gentle lad, Big of this gentleman, our theme, deceas'd As he was born. The king, he takes the babe To his protection ; calls him *Posthumus* ; Breeds him, and makes him of his bed-chamber : Puts him to all the learnings that his time Could make him the receiver of ; which he took,

As we do air, fast as 'twas minister'd ; and In his spring became a harvest : Liv'd in court, (Which rare it is to do,) most prais'd, most lov'd :‡

A sample to the youngest ; to the more mature a glass that fear'd them ; and to the graver, A child that guided dotards : to his mistress, For whom he now is banish'd,—her own price Proclaims how she esteem'd him and his virtue ; By her election may be truly read, What kind of man he is.

2 *Gent.* I honour him

Even out of your report. But, 'pray you, tell me, Is she sole child to the king ?

1 *Gent.* His only child.

He had two sons, (if this be worth your hearing, Mark it,) the eldest of them at three years old, I'the swathing clothes the other, from their nursery knowledge Were stolen : and, to this hour, no guess in Which way they went.

2 *Cent.* How long is this ago ?

1 *Gent.* Some twenty years.

2 *Gent.* That a king's children should be so convey'd !

So slackly guarded ! And the search so slow, That could not trace them !

1 *Gent.* Howsoever 'tis strange, Or that the negligence may well be laugh'd at, Yet is it true, Sir.

2 *Gent.* I do well believe you.

1 *Gent.* We must forbear : Here come the queen and princess. *Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.—The same.

Enter the QUEEN, POSTHUMUS, and IMOGEN.

Queen. No, be assur'd, you shall not find me, daughter, After the slander of most step-mothers, Evil-ey'd unto you : you are my prisoner, but Your father shall deliver you the keys [mus, That lock up your restraint. For you, *Posthu-*

\* You are lavish in your encomiums

† The father of *Cymbeline*.

‡ To be at once lov'd and prais'd, is truly rare.

§ I cried their manners.

So soon as I can win the offended king, I will be known your advocate : marry, yet The fire of rage is in him ; and 'twere good You lean'd unto his sentence, with what patience

Your wisdom may inform you.

Post. Please your highness, I will from hence to-day.

Queen. You know the peril :—

I'll fetch a turn about the garden, pitying The pangs of barr'd affections ; though the king

Hath charg'd you should not speak together.

[Exit QUEEN.]

Imo. O

Dissembling courtesy ! How fine this tyrant Can tickle where she wounds !—My dear husband,

I something fear my father's wrath ; but no (Always reserv'd my holy duty,) what His rage can do on me : You must be gone ; And I shall here abide the hourly shot Of angry eyes ; nor comforted to live, But that there is this jewel in this world, That I may see again.

Post. My queen ! my mistress !

O lady, weep no more ; lest I give cause To be suspected of more tenderness Than doth become a man ! I will remain The loyal'st husband that did e'er plight troth. My residence in Rome at one *Philario's* ; Who to my father was a friend, to me Known but by letter : thither write, my queen, And with mine eyes I'll drink the words you send,

Though ink be made of gall.

Re-enter QUEEN.

Queen. Be brief, I pray you : If the king come, I shall incur I know not How much of his displeasure :—Yet I'll move him

To walk this way : I never do him wrong, But he does buy my injuries, to be friends ; Pity dear for my offences. [Exit.]

Post. Should we be taking leave As long a term as yet we have to live, The loathness to depart would grow. Adieu !

Imo. Nay, stay a little :

Were you but riding forth to air yourself, Such parting were too petty. Look here, love ; This diamond was my mother's : take it, heart ; But keep it till you woo another wife, When *Imogen* is dead.

Post. How ! how ! another ?— You gentle gods give me but this I have, And seal up\* my embracements from a next With bonds of death !—Remain thou here

[Putting on the Ring.] While sense † can keep it on ! And sweetest, fairest,

As I my poor self did exchange for you, To your so infinite loss ; so, in our trill's I still win of you : For my sake, wear this ; It is a manacle of love : I'll place it Upon this fairest prisoner.

[Putting a Bracelet on her Arm.]

Imo. O the gods !

When shall we see again ?

Enter CYMBELINE and LORDS.

Post. Alack, the king !

Cym. Thou basest thing, avoid ! hence, from my sight !

If, after this command, thou fraught'st the court With thy unworthiness, thou diest : Away ! Thou art poison to my blood.

Post. The gods protect you ! And bless the good remainders of the court ! I am gone. [Exit]

Imo. There cannot be a pinch in death More sharp than this is.

Cym. O disloyal thing,

\* Close up.

† Sensation.

‡ Exit

That should'st repair my youth; thou heapest  
A year's age on me!

*Imo.* I beseech you, Sir,  
Harm not yourself with your vexation; I  
Am senseless of your wrath; a touch more  
rare.

Subdues all pangs, all fears.

*Cym.* Past grace! obedience

*Imo.* Past hope, and in despair: that way,  
past grace.

*Cym.* That might'st have had the sole son of  
my queen!

*Imo.* O bless'd, that I might not! I chose an  
eagle,

And did avoid a puttock.†

*Cym.* Thou took'st a beggar; would'st have  
made my throne

A seat for baseness.

*Imo.* No; I rather added

A lustre to it.

*Cym.* O thou vile one!

*Imo.* Sir,

It is your fault that I have lov'd Posthumus:

You bred him as my playfellow; and he is

A man, worth any woman; overbuys me

Almost the sun he pays.

*Cym.* What!—art thou mad?

*Imo.* Almost, Sir: Heaven restore me!—

'Would I were

A neat-herd's; daughter! and my Leonatus

Our neighbour shepherd's son!

*Re-enter QUEEN.*

*Cym.* Thon foolish thing!—  
They were again together: you have done

[To the QUEEN.  
Not after our command. Away with her,  
And pen her up.

*Queen.* 'Beseech your patience:—Peace,

Dear lady daughter, peace;—Sweet sovereign,

Leave us to ourselves; and make yourself some  
comfort

Out of your best advice.

*Cym.* Nay, let her languish

A drop of blood a day; and, being aged,

One of this folly!

[Exit.

*Enter PISANO.*

*Queen.* Fie!—you must give way:

Here is your servant.—How now, Sir? What  
news?

*Pis.* My lord, your son drew on my master.

*Queen.* Ha!

No harm, I trust, is done?

*Pis.* There might have been,

But that my master rather play'd than fought,

And had no help of anger: they were parted

By gentlemen at hand.

*Queen.* I am very glad on't.

*Imo.* Your son's my father's friend; he takes  
his part.—

To draw upon an exile!—O brave Sir!—

I would they were in Afric both together;

Myself by with a needle, that I might prick

The goer back.—Why came you from your  
master?

*Pis.* On his command: He would not suffer  
me

To bring him to the haven: left these notes

Of what commands I should be subject to,

Wher: it pleas'd you to employ me.

*Queen.* This hath been

Your faithful servant: I dare lay mine honour,  
He will remain so.

*Pis.* I humbly thank your highness.

*Queen.* Pray, walk awhile.

*Imo.* About some half hour hence,

I pray you speak with me: you shall, at least,

Go see my lord aboard: for this time leave  
me.

[Exeunt.

\* A more exquisite feeling.  
† Cattle-keeper.

## SCENE III.—A Public Place.

*Enter CLOTEN, and two LORDS.*

1 *Lord.* Sir, I would advise you to shift a  
shirt; the violence of action hath made you reek  
as a sacrifice: Where air comes out, air comes  
in: there's none abroad so wholesome as that  
you vent.

*Clo.* If my shirt were bloody, then to shift it  
—Have I hurt him?

2 *Lord.* No, faith; not so much as his pa-  
tience.

1 *Lord.* Hurt him? his body's a passable car-  
cass, if he be not hurt: it is a thoroughfare for  
steel if it be not hurt.

2 *Lord.* His steel was in debt; it went o'the  
backside the town.

*Clo.* The villain would not stand me.

2 *Lord.* No; but he fled forward still, toward  
your face.

1 *Lord.* Stand you! You had land enough of  
your own: but he added to your having; gave  
you some ground.

2 *Lord.* As many inches as you have oceans:  
Puppies!

*Clo.* I would, they had not come between us.

2 *Lord.* So would I, till you had measured  
how long a fool you were upon the ground.

*Clo.* And that she should love this fellow, and  
refuse me!

2 *Lord.* If it be a sin to make a true election,  
she is damned.

1 *Lord.* Sir, as I told you always, her beau-  
ty and her brain go not together: \* She's a  
good sign, but I have seen small reflection of  
her wit.†

2 *Lord.* She shines not upon fools, lest the  
reflection should hurt her.

*Clo.* Come, I'll to my chamber: 'Would there  
had been some hurt done!

2 *Lord.* I wish not so; unless it had been  
the fall of an ass, which is no great hurt.

*Clo.* You'll go with us?

1 *Lord.* I'll attend your lordship.

*Clo.* Nay, come, let's go together.

2 *Lord.* Well, my lord. [Exeunt.

## SCENE IV.—A Room in CYMBELINE'S Palace.

*Enter IMOGEN and PISANO.*

*Imo.* I would thou grew'st unto the shores  
o'the haven.

And question'dat every sail: if he should write,  
And I not have it, 'twere a paper lost

As offered mercy is. What was the last

That he spake to thee?

*Pis.* 'Twas, *His queen, his queen!*

*Imo.* Then way'd his handkerchief?

*Pis.* And kiss'd it, madam.

*Imo.* Senseless linen! happier therein than  
And that was all?

*Pis.* No, madam; for so long  
As he could make me with this eye or ear

Distinguish him from others, he did keep  
The deck, with glove, or hat, or handkerchief,

Still waving, as the fits and stirs of his mind  
Could best express how slow his soul sail'd on,

How swift his ship.

*Imo.* Thou should'st have made him

As little as a crow, or less, ere left

To after-eye him.

*Pis.* Madam, so I did.

*Imo.* I would have broke mine eye-strings;  
crack'd them, but

To look upon him; till the diminution  
Of space had pointed him sharp as my needle:

Nay, follow'd him, till he had melted from  
The smallness of a goat to air; and then

\* Her beauty and her senses are not equal.

† Anciently almost every sign had some attempt of a  
witticism underneath it.

Have turn'd mine eye, and wept.—But, good  
Pisano,

When shall we hear from him?

*Pis.* Be assur'd, madam,  
With his next vantage.\*

*Imo.* I did not take my leave of him, but had  
Most pretty things to say: ere I could tell him,  
How I would think on him, at certain hours,  
Such thoughts, and such; or I could make him  
swear

The shes of Italy should not betray  
Mine interest, and his honour; or have charg'd  
him,

At the sixth hour of morn, at noon, at mid-  
To encounter me with orisons,† for then  
I am in heaven for him: or ere I could  
Give him that parting kiss, which I had set  
Betwixt two charming words, comes in my  
father,

And, like the tyrannous breathing of the north,  
Shakes all our buds from growing.

*Enter a Lady.*

*Lady.* The queen, madam,  
Desires your highness' company.

*Imo.* Those things I bid you do, get them  
despatch'd.—

I will attend the queen.

*Pis.* Madam, I shall.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*Rome.—An Apartment in PHILARIO'S House.*

*Enter PHILARIO, IACHIMO, a FRENCHMAN, a  
DUTCHMAN, and a SPANIARD.*

*Iach.* Believe it, Sir, I have seen him in Brit-  
tain: he was then of a crescent note,‡ expected  
to prove so worthy, as since he hath been al-  
lowed the name of: but I could then have  
looked on him without the help of admiration;  
though the catalogue of his endowments had  
been tabled by his side, and I to peruse him  
by items.

*Phi.* You speak of him when he was less fur-  
nished,§ than now he is, with that which makes  
him both without and within.

*French.* I have seen him in France: we had  
very many there, could behold the sun with as  
firm eyes as he.

*Iach.* This matter of marrying his king's  
daughter, (wherein he must be weighed, rather  
by her value than his own,) words him, I doubt  
not, a great deal from the matter.

*French.* And then his banishment:—

*Iach.* Ay, and the approbation of those that  
weep this lamentable divorce, under her en-  
cour, are wonderfully to extend¶ him: be it  
but to fortify her judgment, which else an easy  
batter might lay flat, for taking a beggar  
without more quality. But how comes it, he  
is to sojourn with you? How creeps acquaint-  
ance?

*Phi.* His father and I were soldiers together;  
to whom I have been often bound for no less  
than my life:—

*Enter POSTHUMUS.*

Here comes the Briton: Let him be so enter-  
tain'd amongst you, as suits, with gentlemen of  
your knowing, to a stranger of quality.—I be-  
seech you all, be better known to this gentle-  
man: whom I commend to you as a noble friend  
of mine: How worthy he is, I will leave to ap-  
pear hereafter, rather than story him in his own  
hearing.

*French.* Sir, we have known together in Or-  
leans.

*Post.* Since when I have been debtor to you

for courtesies, which I will be ever to pay, and  
yet pay still.

*French.* Sir, you o'er-rate my poor kindness:  
I was glad I did alone\* my countryman and  
you; it had been pity you should have been put  
together with so mortal a passion as then each  
bore, upon importance of so slight and trivial a  
nature.

*Post.* By your pardon, Sir, I was then a  
young traveller: rather shunn'd to go even  
with what I heard, than in my every action to  
be guided by others' experiences: but, upon  
my mended judgment, (if I offend not to say it  
is mended,) my quarrel was not altogether  
slight.

*French.* 'Faith, yes, to be put to the arbitre-  
ment of swords; and by such two, that would,  
by all likelihood, have confounded† one the  
other, or have fallen both.

*Iach.* Can we, with manners, ask what was  
the difference‡?

*French.* Safely, I think: 'twas a contention  
in public, which may, without contradiction,  
suffer the report. It was much like an argu-  
ment that fell out last night, where each of us  
fell in praise of our country mistresses: This  
gentleman at that time vouching, (and upon  
warrant of bloody affirmation,) his to be more  
fair, virtuous, wise, chaste, constant-qualified,  
and less attemptable, than any the rarest of our  
ladies in France.

*Iach.* That lady is not now living; or this  
gentleman's opinion by this worn out.

*Post.* She holds her virtue still, and I my  
mind.

*Iach.* You must not so far prefer her 'fore  
our's of Italy.

*Post.* Being so far provoked as I was in  
France, I would abate her nothing: though I pro-  
fess myself her adorer, not her friend.

*Iach.* As fair and as good (a kind of band in-  
hand comparison,) had been something too fair  
and too good for any lady in Britain. If she  
went before others I have seen, as that diamond  
of your's outlustres many I have beheld, I could  
not but believe she excelled many: but I have  
not seen the most precious diamond that is, nor  
you the lady.

*Post.* I praised her, as I rated her: so do I  
my stone.

*Iach.* What do you esteem it at?

*Post.* More than the world enjoys.

*Iach.* Either your unparagoned mistress is dead,  
or she's outpriz'd by a trifle.

*Post.* You are mistaken: the one may be  
sold, or given; if there were wealth enough  
for the purchase, or merit for the gift: the  
other is not a thing for sale, and only the gift  
of the gods.

*Iach.* Which the gods have given you?

*Post.* Which by their graces, I will keep.

*Iach.* You may wear her in title your's: but,  
you know, strange foul light upon neighbour-  
ing pounds. Your ring may be stolen too: so,  
of your brace of unprizable estimations, the  
one is but frail, and the other casual; a cun-  
ning thief, or a that-way accomplished courtier,  
would hazard the winning both of first and  
last.

*Post.* Your Italy contains none so accom-  
plished a courtier, to convince; the honour of  
my mistress; if, in the holding or loss of that,  
you term her frail. I do nothing doubt you  
have store of thieves; notwithstanding I fear  
not my ring.

*Phi.* Let us leave here, gentlemen.

*Post.* Sir, with all heart. This worthy sig-  
nior, I thank him, makes no stranger of me; we  
are familiar at first.

*Iach.* With five times so much conversation, I  
should get ground of your fair mistress; make

\* Opportunity.

† Meet me with reciprocal

givers. ‡ Shakespeare has peopled Rome with  
such. § Italian; † Myself; and the Don are more char-  
acterized. ¶ Increasing in fame. † Accom-

plished. † Praise him.

\* Recommended.

† Destroyed.

‡ Overcome.

her go back, even to the yielding; had I admittance, and opportunity to friend.

*Post.* No, no.

*Jach.* I dare, thereon, pawn the moiety of my estate to your ring; which, in my opinion, o'er-values it something; But I make my wager rather against your confidence, than her reputation: and, to bar your offence herein too, I durst attempt it against any lady in the world.

*Post.* You are a great deal abused\* in too bold a persuasion; and I doubt not you sustain what you're worthy of, by your attempt.

*Jach.* What's that?

*Post.* A repulse: Though your attempt, as you call it, deserve more—a punishment too.

*Phi.* Gentlemen, enough of this: It came in too suddenly; let it die as it was born, and, I pray you, be better acquainted.

*Jach.* 'Would I had put my estate and my neighbour's on the approbation† of what I have spoke.

*Post.* What lady would you choose to assail?

*Jach.* Your's; whom in constancy, you think, stands so safe. I will lay you ten thousand ducats to your ring, that, commend me to the court where your lady is, with no more advantage than the opportunity of a second conference, and I will bring from thence that honour of her's, which you imagine so reserved.

*Post.* I will wage against your gold, gold to it: my ring I hold dear as my finger; 'tis part of it.

*Jach.* You are a friend, and therein the wiser. If you buy ladies' flesh at a million a dram, you cannot preserve it from tainting: But, I see, you have some religion in you, that you fear.

*Post.* This is but a custom in your tongue; you bear a graver purpose, I hope.

*Jach.* I am the master of my speeches; and would undo you what's spoken, I swear.

*Post.* Will you?—I shall but lend my diamond till your return:—Let there be covenants drawn between us: My mistress exceeds in goodness the hugeness of your unworthy thinking: I dare you to this match: here's my ring.

*Phi.* I will have it no lay.

*Jach.* By the gods it is one:—If I bring you no sufficient testimony that I have enjoyed the dearest bodily part of your mistress, my ten thousand ducats are your's; so is your diamond too. If I come off, and leave her in such honour as you have trust in, she your jewel, this your jewel, and my gold are your's:—provided I have your commendation,‡ for my more free entertainment.

*Post.* I embrace these conditions; let us have articles betwixt us:—only, thus far you shall answer. If you make your voyage upon her, and give me directly to understand you have prevailed, I am no further your enemy, she is not worth our debate: if she remain unseduced, (you not making it appear otherwise,) for your ill opinion, and the assault you have made to her chastity, you shall answer me with your sword.

*Jach.* Your hand; a covenant: We will have these things set down by lawful counsel, and straight away for Britain, lest the bargain should catch cold, and starve: I will fetch my gold, and have two wagers recorded.

*Post.* Agreed.

[*Exeunt POSTHUMUS and IACHIMO.*]

*French.* Will this hold, think you?

*Phi.* Signior Iachimo will not from it. Pray, let us follow 'em.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*Britain.—A Room in CYMBELINE'S Palace.*

*Enter QUEEN, LADIES, and CORNELIUS.*

*Queen.* Whiles yet the dew's on ground, gather those flowers;

\* Driv'd.

† Prof.

‡ A lover.

§ Recommendation.

Make haste: Who has the note of them?

*Lady.* I, madam.

*Queen.* Despatch.—

[*Exeunt LADIES.*]

Now, master doctor; have you brought those drugs?

*Cor.* Pleaseth your highness, ay: here they are, madam:

[*Presenting a small Box.*]

But I beseech your grace, (without offence; My conscience bids me ask;) wherefore you have

Commanded of me these most poisonous compounds,

Which are the movers of a languishing death; But, though slow, deadly?

*Queen.* I do wonder, doctor,

Thou ask'st me such a question: Have I not been

Thy pupil long? Hast thou not learn'd me how To make perfumes? distil? preserve? yea, so,

That our great king himself doth woo me oft For my confections? Having thus far proceeded,

(Unless thou think'st me devilish,) is't not meet That I did amplify my judgment in

Other conclusions? \* I will try the forces Of these thy compounds on such creatures as

We count not worth the hanging, (but none human,)

To try the vigour of them, and apply Allayments to their act; and by them gather Their several virtues and effects.

*Cor.* Your highness

Shall from this practice but make hard your heart:

Besides, the seeing these effects will be Both noisome and infectious.

*Queen.* O content thee.—

*Enter PISANIO.*

Here comes a flattering rascal; upon him Will I first work: he's for his master,

[*Aside.*]

And enemy to my son.—How now, Pisanio?— Doctor, your service for this time is ended; Take your own way.

*Cor.* I do suspect you, madam;

But you shall do no harm.

[*Aside.*]

*Queen.* Hark thee, a word.— [To PISANIO.]

*Cor.* [*Aside.*] I do not like her. She doth think she has

Strange lingering poisons: I do know her spirit, And will not trust one of her malice with A drug of such damn'd nature: Those, she has, Will stupify and dull the sense awhile: Which first, perchance, she'll prove on cats and dogs;

Then afterward up higher; but there is No danger in what show of death it makes, More than the locking up the spirits a time, To be more fresh, reviving. She is fool'd With a most false effect; and I the truer, So to be false with her.

*Queen.* No further service, doctor,

Until I send for thee.

*Cor.* I humbly take my leave.

[*Exit.*]

*Queen.* Weeps she still, say'st thou? Dost thou think, in time

She will not quench; † and let instructions enter Where folly now possesses? Do thou work;

When thou shalt bring me word she loves my son,

I'll tell thee, on the instant, thou art then As great as is thy master: greater; for

His fortunes all lie speechless, and his name Is at last gasp: Return he cannot, nor

Continue where he is: to shift his being, ‡ Is to exchange one misery with another;

And every day that comes, comes to decay A day's work in him: What shalt thou expect,

To be depend on a thing that leans?

\* Experiments.

† Grow cool.

‡ To change his shade.



Who cannot be new built; nor has no friends,  
*[The QUEEN drops a box: PISANIO takes it up.]*

So much as but to prop him?—Thou tak'st up  
 Thou know'st not what; but take it for thy  
 labour:

It is a thing I made, which hath the king  
 Five times redeem'd from death: I do not  
 know

What is more cordial:—Nay, I pry'thee, take it;  
 It is an earnest of a further good  
 That I mean to thee. Tell thy mistress how  
 The case stands with her; do't, as from thyself.  
 Think what a chance thou changest on; but  
 think

Thou hast thy mistress still; to boot, my son,  
 Who shall take notice of thee: I'll move the  
 To any shape of thy preferment, such *[king]*  
 As thou'lt desire; and then myself, I chiefly,  
 That set thee on to this desert, am bound  
 To load thy merit richly. Call my women:  
 Think on my words. *[Exit PISA.]*—A sly and  
 constant knave;

Not to be shak'd: the agent for his master;  
 And the remembrance of her, to hold  
 The hand fast to her lord.—I have given him  
 that,

Which, if he take, shall quite unpeople her  
 Of liegers\* for her sweet; and which she,  
 after,

Except she bend her humour, shall be assur'd

*Re-enter PISANIO, and LADIES.*

To taste of too.—So, so;—well done, well done:  
 The violets, cowslips, and the primroses,  
 Bear to my closet;—Fare thee well, Pisanio;  
 Think on my words.

*[Exeunt QUEEN and LADIES.]*

*Pis.* And shall do:  
 But when to my good lord I prove untrue,  
 I'll choke myself: there's all I'll do for you.  
*[Exit.]*

SCENE VII.—Another Room in the same.

*Enter IMOGEN.*

*Imo.* A father cruel, and a step-dame false;  
 A foolish suitor to a wedded lady, *[hand]*  
 That hath her husband banish'd—O that hus-  
 My supreme crown of grief! and those re-  
 peated

Vexations of it! Had I been thief-stolen,  
 As my two brothers, happy! but most miser-  
 able

Is the desire that's glorious: Blessed be those,  
 How mean soe'er, that have their honest wills,  
 Which seasons comfort.—Who may this be?  
 Fie!

*Enter PISANIO and IACHIMO.*

*Pis.* Madam, a noble gentleman of Rome  
 Comes from my lord with letters.

*Jack.* Change you, madam?  
 The worthy Leonatus is in safety,  
 And greets your husband dearly.

*[Presents a Letter.]*

*Imo.* Thanks, good Sir:

You are kindly welcome.

*Jack.* All of her, that is out of door, most  
 rich! *[Aside.]*

If she be furnish'd with a mind so rare,  
 She is alone the Arabian bird; and I  
 Have lost the wager. Boldness be my friend!  
 Arm me, audacity, from head to foot!  
 Or, like the Parthian, I shall fly right;  
 Rather, directly fly.

*Imo.* *[Reads.]*—He is one of the noblest natures,  
 To whose kindness I am most infinitely tied.  
 Reflect upon him accordingly, as you value  
 your trust *LEONATUS.*

So far I read along:

But even the very middle of my heart

Is warm'd by the rest, and takes it thankfully.—  
 You are as welcome, worthy Sir, as I  
 Have words to bid you; and shall find it so  
 In all that I can do.

*Jack.* Thanks, fairest lady.—

What! are men mad? Hath nature given them  
 eyes

To see this vaulted arch, and the rich crop  
 Of sea and land, which can distinguish 'twixt  
 The fiery orbs above, and the twin'd stones  
 Upon the number'd beach? and can we not  
 Partition make with spectacles so precious  
 'Twixt fair and foul?

*Imo.* What makes your admiration?

*Jack.* It cannot be i'the eye; for apes and  
 monkeys,

'Twixt two such shes, would chatter this way, and  
 Contemn with mows\* the other: Nor i'the  
 judgment;

For idiots, in this case of favour, would  
 Be wisely delinute: Nor i'the appetite;  
 Sluttish, to such neat excellence oppos'd,  
 Should make desire vomit emptiness,  
 Not so allur'd to feed.

*Imo.* What is the matter, trow?

*Jack.* The cloyed will,  
 (That satiate yet unsatisfied desire,  
 That tub both fill'd and running,) ravening first  
 The lamb, longs after for the garbage.

*Imo.* What, dear Sir,

Thus raps you? Are you well?

*Jack.* Thanks, madam; well:—'Beseech you,  
 Sir, desire *[To PISANIO.]*

My man's abode where I did leave him: he  
 Is strange and peevish.†

*Pis.* I was going, Sir,

To give him welcome. *[Exit PISANIO.]*

*Imo.* Continues well my lord: His health,  
 'beseech you?

*Jack.* Well, madam.

*Imo.* Is he dispos'd to mirth? I hope he is.

*Jack.* Exceeding pleasant; none a stranger  
 there

So merry and so gamester; he is call'd  
 The Briton reveller.

*Imo.* When he was here,  
 He did incline to sadness; and oft-times  
 Not knowing why.

*Jack.* I never saw him sad.

There is a Frenchman his companion, one  
 An eminent monsieur, that, it seems, much  
 loves

A Gallian girl at home: be furnaces  
 The thick sighs from him; whiles the jolly  
 Briton

(Your lord, I mean,) laughs from's free lungs,  
 cries, O!

Can my sides hold, to think, that man,—who  
 knows

By history, report, or his own proof,  
 What woman is, yea, what she cannot choose  
 But must be,—will his free hours languish  
 for

Assured bondage?

*Imo.* Will my lord say so?

*Jack.* Ay, madam? with his eyes in flood with  
 laughter.

It is a recreation to be by,  
 And hear him mock the Frenchman: But be-  
 veens know,

Some men are much to blame.

*Imo.* Not he, I hope.

*Jack.* Not he; But yet heaven's bounty towards  
 him might

Be us'd more thankfully. In himself, 'tis  
 much;

In you,—which I count his—beyond all ta-  
 lents,

Whilst I am bound to wonder, I am bound

To pity too.

*Imo.* What do you pity, Sir?

*Jack.* Two creatures, heartily.

*Imo.* Am I one, Sir?

\* Ambassadors.

† Making mouths.

‡ Shy and foolish.

You look on me: What wreck discern you in me,

Deserves your pity?

*Isach.* Lamentable! What!

To hide me from the radiant sun, and solace  
The dungeon by a snuff?

*Imo.* I pray you, Sir,  
Deliver with more openness your answers  
To my demands. Why do you pity me?

*Isach.* That others do,  
I was about to say, enjoy your—But  
It is an office of the gods to venge it,  
Not mine to speak out.

*Imo.* You do seem to know  
Something of me, or what concerns me: 'Pray  
you,

(Since doubting things go ill, often hurts more  
Than to be sure they do: for certainties  
Either are past remedies; or, timely knowing,  
The remedy then born,) discover to me  
What both you spur and stop.\*

*Isach.* Had I this check  
To bathe my lips upon; this hand, whose touch,  
Whose every touch, would force the feeler's  
soul

To the oath of loyalty; this object, which  
Takes prisoner the wild motion of mine eye,  
Fixing it only here: should I (damn'd then,)  
Slaver with lips as common as the stairs  
That mount the Capitol; join gripes with hands  
Made hard with hourly falsehood (falsehood, as  
With labour;) then lie peeping in an eye,  
Base and unobtrusive as the smoky light  
That's fed with stinking tallow; it were fit,  
That all the plagues of hell should at one time  
Encounter such revolt.

*Imo.* My lord, I fear,  
Has forgot Britain.

*Isach.* And himself. Not I,  
Inclin'd to this intelligence, pronounce  
The beggary of his change; but 'tis your graces  
That, from my mute conscience, to my tongue,  
Charms this report out.

*Imo.* Let me hear no more.

*Isach.* O dearest soul! your cause doth strike  
my heart

With pity, that doth make me sick. A lady  
So fair, and fasten'd to an empery,†  
Would make the great'st king double! to be  
partner'd

With tomboys;‡ bir'd with that self-exhibition §  
Which your own coffers yield! with diseas'd  
ventures,

That play with all infirmities for gold  
Which rottenness can leud nature! such boil'd  
stuff,

As well might poison poison! Be reveng'd;  
Or she that bore you was no queen, and you  
Recall from your great stock.

*Imo.* Reveng'd!  
How should I be reveng'd? If this be true,  
(As I have such a heart, that both mine ears  
Must not in haste abuse,) if it be true,  
How should I be reveng'd?

*Isach.* Should he make me  
Live like Diana's priest, betwixt cold sheets;  
Whilst he is vaulting variable ramps,  
In your despite, upon your purse? Revenge it.  
I dedicate myself to your sweet pleasure;  
More noble than that ransack to your bed;  
And will continue fast to your affection,  
Still close, as sure,

*Imo.* What ho, Pisanio!

*Isach.* Let me my service tender on your lips.

*Imo.* Away!—I do condemn mine ears, that  
have

So long attended these.—If thou wert honour-  
able,

Thou would'st have told this tale for virtue, not  
For such an end thou seek'st; as base as  
strange.

Thou wrong'st a gentleman, who is as far  
From thy report, as thou from honour; and  
Solicit'st here a lady, that disdains  
Thee and the devil alike.—What ho, Pisanio!—  
The king my father shall be made acquainted  
Of thy assault: if he shall think it fit,  
A saucy stranger, in his court, to smart  
As in a Romish stew, and to expound  
His beastly mind to us; he hath a court  
He little cares for, and a daughter whom  
He not respects at all.—What ho, Pisanio!—

*Isach.* O happy Leonatus! I may say:  
The credit, that thy lady hath of thee,  
Deserves thy trust; and thy most perfect good-  
ness

Her assur'd credit!—Blessed live you long!

A lady to the worthiest Sir, that ever  
Country call'd his! and you his mistress, only  
For the most worthiest fit! Give me your par-  
don.

I have spoke this, to know if your affiance  
Were deeply rooted; and shall make your lord,  
That which he is, new o'er: And he is one  
The truest manner'd; such a holy witch,  
That he enchants societies unto him:  
Half all men's hearts are his.

*Imo.* You make amends.

*Isach.* He sits 'mongst men, like a descended  
god:

He hath a kind of honour sets him off,  
More than a mortal seeming. Be not angry,  
Most mighty princess, that I have adventur'd  
To try your taking of a false report; which hath  
Honour'd with confirmation your great judg-  
ment

In the election of a Sir so rare,  
Which you know, cannot err: The love I bear  
him

Made me to fan\* you thus; but the gods made  
you,

Unlike all others, chaffness. Pray, your pardon.  
*Imo.* All's well, Sir: Take my power 't' the  
court for your's.

*Isach.* My humble thanks. I had almost forgot  
To entreat your grace but in a small request,  
And yet of moment too, for it concerns  
Your lord: myself, and other noble friends,  
Are partners in the business.

*Imo.* Pray, what is't?

*Isach.* Some dozen Romans of us, and your  
lord,  
(The best feather of our wing) have mingled  
sums,

To buy a present for the emperor;  
Which I, the factor for the rest have done  
In France: 'Tis plate of rare device; and  
jewels,

Of rich and exquisite form; their value's great;  
And I am something curious, being strange,†  
To have them in safe stowage: May it please you  
To take them in protection?

*Imo.* Willingly;

And pawn mine honour for their safety: since  
My lord hath interest in them, I will keep them  
in my bed-chamber.

*Isach.* They are in a trunk,  
Attended by my men: I will make bold  
To send them to you, only for this night;  
I must aboard to-morrow.

*Imo.* O no, no.

*Isach.* Yes, I beseech; or I shall short my  
word,

By length'ning my return. From Gallia  
I cross'd the seas on purpose, and on promise  
To see your grace.

*Imo.* I thank you for your pains;

But not away to-morrow?

*Isach.* O I must, madam:

Therefore, I shall beseech you, if you please  
To greet your lord with writing, don't to-night:  
I have outstaid my time; which is material  
To the tender of our present.

*Imo.* I will write.

\* What you seem anxious to utter, and yet withhold.

† Sovereign command.

‡ Allowance, pension.

§ Wantons.

\* To fan, is to winnow.

† A stranger.

Send your trunk to me; it shall safe be kept,  
And truly yielded you: You are very welcome,  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—Court before CYMBELINE'S Palace.

*Enter CLOTEN and two LORDS.*

*Clo.* Was there ever man had such luck! when I kissed the jack upon an up-cast,\* to be hit away! I had a hundred pound on't: And then a whoreson jackanapes must take me up for swearing; as if I borrowed mine oaths of him, and might not spend them at my pleasure.

1 *Lord.* What got he by that? You have broke his pate with your bowl.

2 *Lord.* If his wit had been like him that broke it, it would have ran all out. [*Aside.*]

*Clo.* When a gentleman is disposed to swear, it is not for any standers-by to curtail his oaths: Ha?

2 *Lord.* No, my lord; nor [*Aside.*] crop the ears of them.

*Clo.* Whoreson dog! I give him satisfaction! 'Would he had been one of my rank!

2 *Lord.* To have smelt like a fool. [*Aside.*]

*Clo.* I am not more vexed at any thing in the earth,—A pox out! I had rather not be so noble as I am; they dare not fight with me, because of the queen my mother: every jack-slave hath his belly full of fighting, and I must go up and down like a cock that nobody can match.

2 *Lord.* You are a cock and capon too; and you crow, cock, with your comb on. [*Aside.*]

*Clo.* Sayest thou?

1 *Lord.* It is not fit your lordship should undertake every companion; that you give offence to.

*Clo.* No, I know that: but it is fit I should commit offence to my inferiors.

2 *Lord.* Ay, it is fit for your lordship only.

*Clo.* Why, so I say.

1 *Lord.* Did you hear of a stranger that's come to court to-night?

*Clo.* A stranger! and I know not on't!

2 *Lord.* He's a strange fellow himself, and knows it not. [*Aside.*]

1 *Lord.* There's an Italian come; and, 'tis thought, one of Leonatus's friends.

*Clo.* Leonatus! a banished rascal: and he's another, whatsoever he be. Who told you of this stranger?

1 *Lord.* One of your lordship's pages.

*Clo.* Is it fit I went to look upon him? Is there no derogation in't?

1 *Lord.* You cannot derogate, † my lord.

*Clo.* Not easily, I think.

2 *Lord.* You are a fool granted; therefore your issues being foolish, do not derogate. [*Aside.*]

*Clo.* Come, I'll go see this Italian: What I have lost to-day at bowls, I'll win to night of him. Come, go.

2 *Lord.* I'll attend your lordship.

[*Exeunt CLOTEN and first LORD.*]  
That such a crafty devil as is his mother  
Should yield the world this ass! a woman, that  
Bears all down with her brain: and this her son

Cannot take two from twenty for his heart,  
And leave eighteen. Alas, poor princess,  
Thou divine Imogen, what then endurest!  
Betwixt a father by thy step-dame govern'd;  
A mother hourly coining plots; a wooer  
More hateful than the foul expulsion is

Of thy dear husband, than that horrid act  
Of the divorce he'd make! The heavens hold firm

The walls of thy dear honour; keep unshak'd  
That temple, thy fair mind; that thou may'st stand,

To enjoy thy banish'd lord, and this great land!  
[*Exit.*]

## SCENE II.—A Bed-chamber; in one part of it a Trunk.

IMOGEN reading in her Bed; a LADY attending,

*Imo.* Who's there? my woman Helen?

*Lady.* Please you, madam.

*Imo.* What hour is it?

*Lady.* Almost midnight, madam.

*Imo.* I have read three hours then: mine eyes are weak:—

Fold down the leaf where I have left: To bed: Take not away the taper, leave it burning; And if thou can'st awake by four o'clock, I pray thee call me. Sleep hath seiz'd me wholly. [*Exit Lady.*]

To your protection I commend me, gods! From fairies, and the tempters of the night, Guard me, beseech ye!

[*Sleeps. IACHIMO, from the Trunk.*]

*Jach.* The crickets sing, and man's o'er-labour'd sense

Repairs itself by rest: Our Tarquin thus

Did softly press the rushes,\* ere he waken'd

The chastity he wounded.—Cytherea,

How bravely thou becom'st thy bed! fresh lily!

And whiter than the sheets! That I might touch!

But kiss; one kiss!—Rubies unparagon'd,

How dearly they do't!—'Tis her breathing that

Perfumes the chamber thus: The flame o'the taper

Bows toward her; and would under-peep her lids,

To see the enclosed lights, now canopied

Under these windows: White and azure, lac'd

With blue of heaven's own tinct.—But my design!

To note the chamber:—I will write all down:—

Such and such pictures:—There the window:—Such

The adornment of her bed;—The array;—

figures, [*cloty*]

Why, such and such:—And the contents o'the

Ab, but some natural notes about her body,

Above ten thousand meaner moveables

Would testify, to enrich mine inventory:

O sleep, thou ape of death, lie dull upon her!

And be her sense but as a monument,

Thus in a chapel lying!—Come off, come off;—

[*Taking off her bracelet.*]

As slippery, as the Gordian knot was hard!

'Tis mine; and this will witness outwardly,

As strongly as the conscience does within,

To the madding of her lord. On her left breast

A mole cinque-spotted, like the crimson drops

o'the bottom of a cowslip: Here's a voucher,

Stronger than ever law could make: this secret

will force him think I have pick'd the lock, and

The treasure of her honour. No more.—To what end!

Why should I write this down, that's rivetted,

Screw'd to my memory? She hath been reading late

The tale of Terens; here the leaf's turn'd

Where Philomel gave up:—I have enough:

To the trunk again, and about the spring of it.

Swift, swift, you dragons of the night!—that

dawning

May bare the raven's eye: I lodge in fear;

\* He is describing his fate at bowls, the jack is the small bowl at which the others are aimed. † Fellow.  
‡ Degrade yourself.

\* It was anciently the custom to strew chambers with rushes. † L. c. The white skin lined with blue veins.  
‡ Tapestry.

Though this a heavenly angel, hell is here.

[Clock strikes.  
One, two, three.—Time, time! \*

[Goes into the Trunk. The Scene closes.

SCENE III.—An Antechamber adjoining  
IMOGEN'S Apartment.

Enter CLOTEN and LORDS.

1 Lord. Your lordship is the most patient man in loss, the most coldest that ever turned up ace.

Clo. It would make any man cold to lose.

1 Lord. But not every man patient, after the noble temper of your lordship; you are most hot and furious when you win.

Clo. Winning would put any man into courage; if I could get this foolish Imogen, I should have gold enough: It's almost morning, isn't it?

1 Lord. Day, my lord.

Clo. I would this music would come: I am advised to give her music o' mornings; they say, it will penetrate.

Enter MUSICIANS.

Come on; tune: If you can penetrate her with your fingering, so: we'll try with tongue too: if none will do, let her remain: but I'll never give o'er. First a very excellent good-concocted thing; after a wonderful sweet air, with admirable rich words to it,—and then let her consider.

SONG.

Hark! hark! the lark at heaven's gate  
And Phœbus' gins arise, [sings,  
His steeds to water at those springs  
On chaliced flowers that lies;  
And winking Mary-buds begin  
To ope their golden eyes;  
With every thing that pretty bin;  
My lady sweet, arise;  
Arise, arise.

So, get you gone: If this penetrate, I will consider your music the better: if it do not, it is a vice in her ears, which horse-hairs, and cats-guts, nor the voice of unpaired cunuch to boot, can never amend. [Exeunt MUSICIANS.

Enter CYMBELINE and QUEEN.

2 Lord. Here comes the king.

Clo. I am glad I was up so late; for that's the reason I was up so early: He cannot choose but take this service I have done, fatherly.—Good-morrow to your majesty, and to my gracious mother.

Cym. Attend you here the door of our stern Will she not forth? [daughter?

Clo. I have assailed her with music, but she vouchsafes no notice.

Cym. The exile of her minion is too new; She hath not yet forgot him; some more time must wear the print of his remembrance out, And then she's yours.

Queen. You are most bound to the king; Who lets go by no vantages, that may Prefer you to his daughter: Frame yourself To orderly sollicit; and be friended With aptness of the season: I make denials Increase your services: so seem, as if You were inspired to do those duties which You tender to her: that you in all obey her, Save when command to your dissimulation tends, And therein you are senseless.

Clo. Senseless? Not so.

Enter a MESSENGER.

Mess. So like you, Sir, ambassadors from Rome;

The one is Caius Lucius.

\* Imogen's maid has just told her mistress that it is twelve o'clock, so that three hours are dispatched in a twinkling!

† Will pay you more for it.

‡ With sollicitations not only proper but well-timed.

Cym. A worthy fellow, Albeit he comes on angry purpose now; But that's no fault of his: We must receive him.

According to the honour of his sender; And towards himself his goodness forespent on us. We must extend our notice.—Our dear son, When you have given good morning to your mistress, Attend the queen and us; we shall have need to employ you towards this Roman.—Come, our queen.

[Exeunt Cym. QUEEN, LORDS, and Mess.

Clo. If she be up, I'll speak with her; if not, Let her lie still, and dream.—By your leave ho!—

[Knocks.  
I know her women are about her; What If I do lose one of their hands? 'Tis gold Which buys admittance; oft it doth; yea, and makes

Diana's rangers false themselves, yield up Their deer to the stand of the stealer; and 'tis gold

Which makes the true man kill'd, and saves the thief;

Nay, sometime, hangs both thief and true man: What

Can it not do, and undo? I will make One of her women lawyer, to me; for I yet not understand the case myself. By your leave. [Knocks.

Enter a LADY.

Lady. Who's there, that knocks?

Clo. A gentleman.

Lady. No more?

Clo. Yes, and a gentlewoman's son.

Lady. That's more

Than some, whose are tailors as dear as you's, Can justify boast of: What's your lordship's pleasure?

Clo. Your lady's person: Is she ready?

Lady. Ay,

To keep her chamber.

Clo. There's gold for you: sell me your good report.

Lady. How! my good name? or to report of you

What I shall think is good?—The princess—

Enter IMOGEN.

Clo. Good-morrow, fairest sister: Your sweet hand.

Imo. Good-morrow, Sir: You lay out too much pains

For purchasing but trouble: the thanks I give, Is telling you that I am poor of thanks

And scarce can spare them.

Clo. Still, I swear I love you.

Imo. If you but said so, 'twere as deep with me:

If you swear still, your recompense is still That I regard it not.

Clo. This is no answer.

Imo. But that you shall not say I yield being silent,

I would not speak. I pray you, spare me: I'll faith,

I shall unfold equal discourtesy

To your best kindness; one of your great knowing

Should learn, being taught, forbearance.

Clo. To leave you in your madness, 'twere my sin:

I will not.

Imo. Fools are not mad folks.

Clo. Do you call me fool?

Imo. As I am mad, I do:

If you'll be patient, I'll no more be mad:

That cures us both. I am much sorry, Sir

You put me to forget a lady's manners, By being so verbal: \* and learn now, for all,

\* So verbose.

That I, which know my heart, do here pronounce,  
By the very truth of it, I care not for you;  
And am so near the lack of charity,  
(To accuse myself) I hate you: which I had rather  
You felt, than make't my boast.

*Clo.* You sin against  
Obedience, which you owe your father. For  
The contract you pretend with that base wretch,  
(One, bred of alms, and foster'd with cold  
dishes,  
With scraps o'the court,) it is no contract, none:  
And though it be allow'd in meaner parties,  
(Yet who, than he, more mean?) to knit their  
souls

(On whom there is no more dependency  
But brats and beggary) in self-figur'd knot; \*  
Yet you are curb'd from that enlargement by  
The consequence o'the crown; and must not soil  
The precious note of it with a base slave,  
A hiding† for a livery, a squire's cloth,  
A pantler, not so eminent.

*Imo.* Profane fellow!

Worth than the son of Jupiter, and no more  
But what thou art, besides, thou wert too base  
To be his groom: thou wert dignified enough,  
Even to the point of envy, if 'twere made  
Comparative for your virtues, to be styl'd  
The under-bangman of his kingdom; and hated  
For being preferr'd so well.

*Clo.* The south-fog rot him!

*Imo.* He never can meet more mischance,  
than come

To be but nam'd of thee. His meanest garment,  
That ever hath but clipp'd his body, is dearer,  
In my respect, than all the hairs above thee,  
Were they all made such men.—How now,  
Pisanio!

Enter PISANIO.

*Clo.* His garment? Now, the devil—

*Imo.* To Dorothy my woman hee thee presently:—

*Clo.* His garment?

*Imo.* I am sprighted; with a fool;  
Frighted, and anger'd worse:—Go, bid by my woman

Search for a jewel, that too casually  
Hath left mine arm; it was thy master's:  
'shrew me,

If I would lose it for a revenue  
Of any king's in Europe. I do think,  
I saw't this morn'g: confident I am,  
Last night 'twas on my arm; I kiss'd it:  
I hope it be not gone, to tell my lord  
That I kiss ought but he.

*Pis.* 'Twill not be lost.

*Imo.* I hope so: go and search.

[Exit Pis.]

*Clo.* You have abus'd me:—

His meanest garment!

*Imo.* Ay; I said so, Sir.

If you will mak't an action, call witness to't.

*Io.* I will inform your father.

*Imo.* Your mother too:

She's my good lady; and will conceive, I hope,  
But the worst of me. So I leave you, Sir,  
To the worst of discontent. [Exit.]

*Clo.* I'll be reveng'd:—

His meanest garment?—Well. [Exit.]

SCENE. IV.—Rome—An Apartment in  
PHILARIO'S House.

Enter POSTHUMUS and PHILARIO.

*Post.* Fear it not, Sir; I would I were so  
sure

To win the king, as I am bold her honour  
Will remain her's.

*Phi.* What means do you make to him?

\* In knots of their own tying.  
† A few fellows only fit to wear a livery.  
‡ Hissed.

*Post.* Not any; but abide the change of  
time;

Quake in the present winter's state, and wish  
That warmer days would come: In these fear'd  
hopes,

I barely gratify your love; they failing,  
I must die much your debtor.

*Phi.* Your very goodness, and your company,  
O'erpays all I can do. By this, your king  
Hath heard of great Augustus: Caius Lucius  
Will do his commission thoroughly: and, I  
think,

He'll grant the tribute, send the arrerages,  
Or look upon our Romans, whose remembrance  
is yet fresh in their grief.

*Post.* I do believe,

(Statist \* though I am none, nor like to be,) †  
That this will prove a war; and you shall hear  
The legions now in Gallia, sooner landed  
In our not-fearing Britain, than have tidings  
Of any penny tribute paid. Our countrymen  
Are men more ordered, than when Julius Cesar  
Smil'd at their lack of skill, but found their  
courage

Worthy his frowning at: Their discipline  
(Now mingled with their courages) will make  
known

To their approvers † they are people, such  
That mend upon the world.

Enter IACHIMO.

*Phi.* See! Iachimo!

*Post.* The swiftest harts have posted you by  
land:

And winds of all the corners kiss'd your sails,  
To make your vessel nimble.

*Phi.* Welcome, Sir.

*Post.* I hope the briefness of your answer made  
The speedliness of your return.

*Iach.* Your lady

Is one the fairest that I have look'd upon.

*Post.* And, therewithal, the best; or let her  
beauty

Look through a casement to allure false hearts,  
And be false with them.

*Iach.* Here are letters for you.

*Post.* Their t'avour good, I trust.

*Iach.* 'Tis very like.

*Phi.* Was Caius Lucius in the Britain court,  
When you were there;

*Iach.* He was expected then,  
But not approach'd.

*Post.* All is well yet.—  
Sparkles this stone as it was wont? or is't not  
Too dull for your good wearing?

*Iach.* If I have lost it,

I should have lost the worth of it in gold.

I'll make a journey twice as far to enjoy  
A second night of such sweet shortness, which  
Was mine in Britain; for the ring is won.

*Post.* The stone's too hard to come by.

*Iach.* Not a whit,

Your lady being so easy.

*Post.* Make not, Sir,

Your loss your sport: I hope you know that we  
Must not continue friends.

*Iach.* Good Sir, we must,  
If you keep covenant: Had I not brought  
The knowledge of your mistress home, I grant  
We were to question further: but I now  
Profess myself the winner of her honour,  
Together with your ring; and not the wronger  
Of her, or you, having proceeded but  
By both your wills.

*Post.* If you can make't apparent  
That you have tasted her in bed, my hand,  
And ring, is your's: if not, the foul opinion  
You had of her pure honour, gains, or loses,  
Your sword or mine; or masterless leaves both  
To who shall find them.

*Iach.* Sir, my circumstances,  
Being so near the truth, as I will make them,  
Must first induce you to believe: whose strength

\* Statesman.

† To those who try them.

I will confirm with oath; which, I doubt not, You'll give me leave to spare, when you shall find

You need it not.

*Post.* Proceed.

*Iach.* First, her bed-chamber, (Where, I confess, I slept not; but, profess, Had that was well worth watching,) it was hang'd

With tapestry of silk and silver: the story Proud Cleopatra, when she met her Roman, And Cydnus swell'd above the banks, or for The press of boats, or pride: A piece of work So bravely done, so rich, that it did strive In workmanship and value; which, I wonder'd, Could be so rarely and exactly wrought, Since the true life on't was—

*Post.* This is true;

And this you might have heard of here, by me, Or by some other.

*Iach.* More particulars Must justify my knowledge.

*Post.* So they must, Or do your honour injury.

*Iach.* The chimney Is south the chamber; and the chimney-piece, Chaste Dian bathing: never saw I figures So likely to report themselves: the cyprier Was as another nature, dumb; outwent her, Motion and breath left out.

*Post.* This is a thing, Which you might from relation likewise reap; Being, as it is, much spoke of.

*Iach.* The roof of the chamber With golden cherubims is fretted: Her auditoryons\*

(I had forgot them,) were two winking Cupids Of silver, each on one foot standing, nicely Depending on their brands.†

*Post.* This is her honour!—

Let it be granted, you have seen all this, (and praise

Be given to your remembrance,) the description Of what is in her chamber, nothing saves The wager you have laid.

*Iach.* Then if you can,

(*Pulling out the Bracelet.*) Be pale; I beg but leave to air this jewel: See!—

And now 'tis up again: It must be married To that your diamond; I'll keep them.

*Post.* Jove!—

Once more let me behold it: Is it that Which I left with her?

*Iach.* Sir, (I thank her,) that: She stripp'd it from her arm; I see her yet; Her pretty action did outsell her gift,

And yet enrich'd it too: She gave it me, and said, She priz'd it once.

*Post.* May be, she pluck'd it off, To send it me.

*Iach.* She writes so to you† doth she?

*Post.* O no, no, no; 'tis true. Here, take this too; [*Gives the Ring.*]

It is a basilisk unto mine eye, Kills me to look on't!—Let there be no honour, Where there is beauty; truth, where semblance; love

Where there's another man: The vows of women

Of no more bondage be, to where they are made, Than they are to their virtues; which is nothing:—

O above measure false!

*Phi.* Have patience, Sir, And take your ring again; 'tis not yet won; It may be probable, she lost it; or, Who knows if one of her women, being corrupted,

Hath stolen it from her.

*Post.* Very true;

And so, I hope, he came by't:—Back my ring;—

Render to me some corporal sign about her, More evident than this; for this was stolen.

*Iach.* By Jupiter, I had it from her arm.

*Post.* Hark you, he swears; by Jupiter he swears.

'Tis true;—nay, keep the ring—'tis true: I am sure,

She would not lose it: her attendants are All sworn and honourable:—They induc'd to steal it!

And by a stranger?—No, he hath enjoy'd her: The cognizance\* of her incontinency Is this,—she hath bought the name of whose thus dearly.—

There, take thy hire: and all the fiends of hell Divide themselves between you!

*Phi.* Sir, be patient:

This is not strong enough to be believ'd Of one persuaded well of—

*Post.* Never talk on't; She hath been colted by him.

*Iach.* If you seek For further satisfying, under her breast (Worthy the pressing,) lies a mole, right proud Of that most delicate lodging: By my life, I kiss'd it; and it gave me present hunger To feed again, though full. You do remember This stain upon her?

*Post.* Ay, and it doth confirm Another stain, as big as hell can hold, Were there no more but it.

*Iach.* Will you hear more?

*Post.* Spare your arithmetic: never count the Once, and a million! [*turns;*]

*Iach.* I'll be sworn,—

*Post.* No swearing.

If you will swear you have not done't, you lie; And I will kill thee, if thou dost deny

When I have made me cuckold.

*Iach.* I will deny nothing.

*Post.* O that I had her here, to tear her limb-meal!

I will go there, and do't; i'the court; before Her father:—I'll do something— [*Exit.*]

*Phi.* Quite besides

The government of patience!—You have won: Let's follow him, and pervert the present wrath He hath against himself.

*Iach.* With all my heart. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—The same.—Another Room in the same.

*Enter POSTHUMUS.*

*Post.* Is there no way for men to be, but women

Must be half-workers? We are bastards all;

And that most venerable man, which I

Did call my father, was I know not where

When I was stamp'd; some coiner with his tools

Made me a counterfeit: Yet my mother seem'd The Dian of that time; so doth my wife The nonpareil of this.—O vengeance, vengeance!

Me of my lawful pleasure she restrain'd, And pray'd me, oft, forbearance: did it with

A pudency† so rose, the sweet view on't Might well have warm'd old Saturn; that I

thought her [*devils!*—

As chaste as unsunn'd snow:—O all, the This yellow Iachimo, in an hour,—was't not?—

Or less,—at first: Perchance he spoke not; but,

Like a full-acorn'd boar, a German one, Cried *oh!* and mounted: found no opposition

But what he look'd for should oppose, and she Should from encounter guard. Could I find

out [*flout*]

The woman's part in me! For there's no mo-

That tends to vice in man, but I affirm

\* Ornamented iron bars which support wood burned in chimneys. † Torches in the hands of Cupids.

\* The token.

† Modesty.

It is the woman's part: Be it lying, note it,  
The woman's; flattering, her's; deceiving, her's;  
Ambitions, coverings, change of prides, disdain,  
Nice longings, slanders, mutability, (knows,  
All faults that may be nam'd, say, that hell  
Why her's in part, or all; but rather all:  
For even to vice  
They are not constant, but are changing still  
One vice, but of a minute old, for one  
Not half so old as that. I'll write against them,  
Detest them, curse them:—Yet 'tis greater skill  
In a true hate, to pray they have their will:  
The very devils cannot plague them better.

[Exit.

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—Britain.—A Room of State in CYMBELINE'S Palace.

Enter CYMBELINE, QUEEN, CLOTEN, and LORDS, at one Door; and at another, CAIUS LUCIUS, and Attendants.

Cym. Now say, what would Augustus Cesar with us?

Luc. When Julius Cesar (whose remembrance yet  
Lives in men's eyes, and will to ears and  
tongues,

Be theme and hearing ever,) was in this Britain,  
And conquer'd it, Cassibellan, thine uncle,  
(Famous in Cesar's praises, no whit less  
Than in his feats deserving it,) for him,  
And his succession, granted Rome a tribute,  
Yearly three thousand pounds; which by thee  
Is left untender'd. [lately

Queen. And, to kill the marvel,  
Shall be so ever.

Clo. There be many Cesars,  
Ere such another Julius. Britain is  
A world by itself; and we will nothing pay,  
For wearing our own noses.

Queen. That opportunity [sume  
Which then they had to take from us, to re-  
We have again.—Remember, Sir, my liege,  
The kings your ancestors; together with  
The natural bravery of your isle; which stands  
As Neptune's park, ribbed and paled in  
With rocks unscalable, and roaring waters;  
With sands, that will not bear your enemies'  
boats, [conquest

But suck them up to the top-mast. A kind of  
Cesar made here; but made not here his brag  
Of *came, and saw, and overcame*: with shame  
(The first that ever touch'd him,) he was carried [ping,

From off our coast, twice beaten; and his ship-  
(Poor ignorant baubles!) on our terrible seas,  
Like egg-shells mov'd upon their surges, crack'd  
As easily 'gainst our rocks: for joy whereof,  
The fam'd Cassibellan, who was once at point  
(O piglot\* fortune!) to unaster Cesar's sword,  
Made Lud's town with rejoicing fires bright,  
And Britons strut with courage.

Clo. Come, there's no more tribute to be paid:  
Our kingdom is stronger than it was at that  
time; and, as I said, there is no more such  
Cesars: other of them may have crooked noses;  
but, to owe such straight arms, none.

Cym. Son, let your mother end.

Clo. We have yet many among us can gripe  
as hard as Cassibellan: I do not say, I am one;  
but I have a hand.—Why tribute? why should  
we pay tribute? If Cesar can hide the sun  
from us with a blanket, or put the moon in his  
pocket, we will pay him tribute for light; else,  
Sir, no more tribute, pray you now.

Cym. You must know,

Till the injurious Romans did extort

This tribute from us, we were free: Cesar's  
ambition,

\* Strumpet.

(Which swell'd so much, that it did almost  
stretch

The sides o'the world,) against all colour, here  
Did put the yoke upon us; which, to shake off,  
Becomes a warlike people, whom we reckon  
Ourselves to be. We do say then to Cesar,  
Our ancestor was that Mulmutius, which  
Ordain'd our laws; (whose use the sword of  
Cesar

Hath too much mangled; whose repair and  
franchise,

Shall, by the power we hold, be our good deed,  
Though Rome be therefore angry;) Mulmutius,  
Who was the first of Britain, which did put  
His brows within a golden crown, and call'd  
Himself a king.

Luc. I am sorry, Cymbeline,  
That I am to pronounce Augustus Cesar  
(Cesar, that hath more kings his servants, than  
Thyself domestic officers,) thine enemy:  
Receive it from me, then:—War and confusion.  
In Cesar's name pronounce I 'gainst thee: look  
For fury not to be resisted:—Thus debed,  
I thank thee for myself.

Cym. Thon art welcome, Cains.

Thy Cesar knighted me; my youth I spent  
Much under him; \* of him I gather'd honour;  
Which be, to seek of me again, perforce,  
Behoves me keep at utterance; † I am perfect; ‡  
That the Pannonians and Dalmatians, for  
Their liberties, are now in arms: a precedent  
Which, not to read, would show the Britons  
cold:

So Cesar shall not find them.

Luc. Let proof speak.

Clo. His majesty bids you welcome. Make  
pastime with us a day or two longer: If you  
seek us afterwards in other terms, you shall  
find us in our salt-water girdle: if you beat us  
out of it, it is your's; if you fall in the adventu-  
re, our crowns shall fare the better for you;  
and there's an end.

Luc. So, Sir.

Cym. I know your master's pleasure, and be-  
lieve mine: [Lucius  
All the remain is, welcome. [Lucius

## SCENE II.—Another Room in the same.

Enter PISANIO.

Pis. How! of adultery? Wherefore write  
you not

What monster's her accuser?—Leonatus!  
O master! what a strange infection  
Is fallen into thy ear? What false Italian §  
(As poisonous tongue'd as handed,) hath  
prevail'd

On thy too ready hearing?—Disloyal? No:  
She's punish'd for her truth; and undergoes,  
More goddess-like than wife-like, such assaults  
As would take in † some virtue.—O my master!  
Thy mind to her is now as low, as were  
Thy fortunes.—How! that I should murder  
her?

Upon the love and truth and vows, which I  
Have made to thy command!—I, her?—her  
blood?

If it be so to do good service, never  
Let me counted serviceable. How look I,  
That I should seem to lack humanity,  
So much as this fact comes to? *Do't. The*  
*letter* [Reading.

*That I have sent her, by her own command*  
*Shall give thee opportunity:—O damn'd paper!*  
Black as the ink that's on thee! Senseless  
bauble.

Art thou a feodary\*\* for this act, and look'st  
So, virgin-like without? Lo, here she comes.

\* Kymbeline (says Hollinshed) was brought up at  
Rome, and there made knight by Augustus Cesar.

† At the extremity of defiance. ‡ Well-informed.  
§ About Shakespeare's time, poisoning was a very  
common practice in Italy.

¶ To take in a town, is to conquer it.

\*\* Confederates.

Enter IMOGEN.

I am ignorant in what I am commanded.

Imo. How now, Pisanio?

Pis. Madam, here is a letter from my lord.

Imo. Whose? thy lord? that is my lord? Leonatus?

O learn'd indeed were that astronomer,  
That knew the stars, as I his characters;  
He'd lay the future open.—You good gods,  
Let what is here contain'd relish of love,  
Of my lord's health, of his content,—yet not,  
That we two are asunder, let that grieve him,—  
(Some griefs are med'cuable;) that is one of  
them,

For it doth physic love;—of his content,  
All but in that!—Good wax, thy leave:—  
Bless'd be [Lovers]

You bees, that make these locks of counsel!  
And men in dangerous bonds pray not alike;  
Though forfeiters you cast in prison, yet  
You clasp young Cupid's tables. Good news,  
gods! [Reads]

*Justice, and your father's wrath, should he  
take me in his dominion, could not be so cruel  
to me, as you, O the dearest of creatures,  
would not even renew me with your eyes.  
Take notice, that I am in Cambria, at Mil-  
ford-Haven. What your own love will out  
of this advise you, follow. So, he wishes you  
all happiness, that remains loyal to his love,  
and your, increasing in love,*

LEONATUS POSTHUMUS.

O for a horse with wings!—Hear'st thou, Pisanio?

He is at Milford-Haven: Read, and tell me  
How far 'tis thither. If one of mean affairs  
May plod it in a week, why may not I  
Glide thither in a day?—Then, true Pisanio,  
(Who long'st, like me, to see thy lord; who  
long'st,—

O let me 'bate,—but not like me;—yet long'st,—  
But in a fainter kind:—O not like me;  
For mine's beyond, beyond,) say and speak  
thick,\*

(Love's counsellor should fill the bores of hear-  
To the smothering of the sense,) how far it is  
To this same blessed Milford: And, by the way,  
Tell me how Wales was made so happy, as  
To inherit such a haven: But, first of all,  
How we may steal from hence; and, for the  
gap, [going]  
That we shall make in time, from our hence-  
And our return, to excuse:—but first, bow get  
hence:

Why should excuse be born or e'er begot?  
We'll talk of that hereafter. Pr'ythee, speak,  
How many score of miles may we well ride  
'Twixt hour and hour?

Pis. One score, 'twixt sun and sun,  
Madam's enough for you; and too much too.

Imo. Why, one that iode to his execution,  
man,

Could never go so slow: I have heard of riding  
wagers,

Where horses have been nimbler than the sands  
That run i'the clock's behalf:—But this is  
foolery:—

Go, bid my woman fetch a sickness; say,  
She'll home to her father; and provide me,  
presently,

A riding suit; no costlier than would fit  
A franklin's housewife.

Pis. Madam, you're best consider.

Imo. I see before me, man, nor here, nor  
here,

Nor what ensues; but have a fog in them,  
That I cannot look through. Away, I prythee;  
Do as I bid thee: There's no more to say;  
Accessible is none but Milford way. [Exeunt.]

\* Crowd one word on another, as fast as possible.  
† A freetholder.

SCENE III.—Wales.—A mountainous Coun-  
try, with a Cave.

Enter BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.

Bel. A goodly day not to keep house, with  
such

Whose roof's as low as ours! Stoop, boys:  
This gate

instructs you how to adore the heavens; and  
bows you

To morning's holy office: The gates of monarchs  
Are arch'd so high, that giants may jet\* through  
And keep their impious turbands on, without  
Good morrow to the sun.—Hail, thou fair hea-  
ven!

We house i'the rock, yet use thee not so hardly  
As prouder livers do.

Gui. Hail, heaven!

Arv. Hail, heaven!

Bel. Now, for our mountain sport: Up to  
yon hill,

Your legs are young; I'll tread these flats.  
Consider,

When you above perceive me like a crow,  
That it is place which lessens, and sets off.  
And you may then revolve what tales I have  
told you,

Of courts, of princes, of the tricks in war:  
This service is not service, so being done,  
But being so allow'd: To apprehend thus,  
Draws us a profit from all things we see:

And often, to our comfort, shall we find  
The sharded† beetle in a safer hold  
Than is the full-wing'd eagle. O this life  
Is nobler, than attending for a check;

Richer, than doing nothing for a babe;  
Prouder, than rustling in unpaid-for silk:  
Such gain the cap of hum, that makes them  
hne,

Yet keeps his book uncross'd: no life to ours.‡  
Gui. Out of your proof you speak: we, poor  
unfedg'd,

Have never wing'd from view o'the nest: nor  
know not

What air's from home. Haply, this life is best,  
If quiet life be best; sweeter to you,  
That have a sharper known; well corresponding  
With your stiff age; but, unto us, it is

A cell of ignorance; travelling abed;  
A prison for a debtor, that not dares  
To stride a limit.§

Arv. What should we speak of,  
When we are old as you? when we shall hear  
The rain and wind beat dark December, how,  
In this our pinching cave, shall we discourse  
The freezing hours away? We have seen noth-  
ing:

We are beastly; subtle as the fox, for prey;  
Like warlike as the wolf, for what we eat:  
Our valour is, to chase what flies; our cage  
We make a quire, as doth the prison bird,  
And sing our bondage freely.

Bel. How you speak!  
Did you but know the city's usuries,  
And felt them knowingly; the art o'the court,  
As hard to leave as keep; whose top to climb  
Is certain falling, or so slippery, that  
The fear's as bad as falling; the toil of the war  
A pain that only seems to seek out danger  
I'the name of fame and honour, which dies i'the  
search,

And hath as oft a slanderous epitaph,  
As record of fair act; nay, many times,  
Doth ill deserve by doing well; what's worse,  
Must court'sey at the censure:—O boys, this  
story

The world may read in me: My body's mark'd  
With Roman swords; and my report was once  
First with the best of note: Cymbeline lov'd  
me;

And when a soldier was the theme, my name  
Was not far off: Then was I as a tree,

\* Walk proudly.

† Scaly-winged.

‡ I.e. Compared with ours.

§ To overpass his bounds.



Whose boughs did bend with fruit: but in one night,

A storm, or robbery, call it what you will, Snook down my mellow hangings, nay, my leaves,

And left me bare to weather.

*Gwi.* Uncertain favour!

*Bel.* My fault being nothing (as I have told you oft,)

But that two villains, whose false oaths prevail'd

Before my perfect honour, swore to Cymbeline, I was confederate with the Romans: so, Follow'd my banishment; and, this twenty years,

This rock, and these demesnes, have been my world:

Where I have liv'd at honest freedom; paid More pious debts to heaven, than in all The fore-end of my time.—But, up to the mountains;

This is not hunters' language:—He, that strikes The venison first, shall be the lord o' the feast. To him the other two shall minister; And we will fear no poison, which attends In place of greater state. I'll meet you in the valleys. [*Exeunt Gwi. and Arv.*]

How hard it is, to hide the sparks of nature! These boys know little, they are sons to the king;

Nor Cymbeline dreams that they are alive. They think they are mine: and, though train'd up thus mealy

[but] I'the cave wherein they bow, their thoughts do The roofs of palaces; and nature prompts them, In simple and low things to prince it, much Beyond the trick of others. This Polydore,—The heir of Cymbeline and Britain, whom The king his father call'd Guiderius,—Jove! When on my three-foot stool I sit, and tell The warlike feats I have done, his spirits fly out

Into my story: say,—*Thy mine enemy fell; And thus I set my foot on his neck;* even then

The princely blood flows in his cheek, he sweats, Straus his young nerves, and puts himself in posture

[wal,] That acts my words. The younger brother, Cad' (Once, Arviragus,) in as like a figure, Strikes life into my speech, and shows much more

His own conceiving. Hark! the game is rous'd!—O Cymbeline! heaven, and my conscience, knows,

Thou didst unjustly banish me: whereon, At three and two years old, I stole these babes; Thinking to bar thee of succession, as Thou rest'st me of my lands. Euriphile, Thou wast their nurse; they took thee for their mother,

And every day do honour to her grave: Myself, Belarius, that am Morgan call'd, They take for natural father. The game is up.

[*Exit.*]

#### ENE IV.—Near Milford-Haven.

*Enter PISANIO and IMOGEN.*

*Imo.* Thou told'st me, when we came from horse, the place Was near at hand: Ne'er long'd my mother so To see me first, as I have now:—Pisanio! Man!

Where is Posthumus? What is in thy mind, That makes thee stare thus? Wherefore breaks that sigh

From the inward of thee? One, but painted thus, Would be interpreted a thing perplex'd Beyond self-explication: Put thyself into a 'behaviour' of less fear, ere wildness Vanquish my staid sermons. What's the matter?

\* For behaviour.

Why tender'st thou that paper to me, with A look untender? 'Tis it be summer news, Smile to't before: if wint'ly, thou need'st But keep that countenance still.—My husband's hand!

That drug-damn'd Italy hath out-crafted him, And he's at some hard point.—Speak, man; thy tongue

May take off some extremity, which to read Would be even mortal to me.

*Pis.* Please you, read; And you shall find me, wretched man, a thing The most disdain'd of fortune.

*Imo.* [*Reads.*] *Thy mistress, Pisanio, hath played the strumpet in my bed; the testimonies whereof lie bleeding in me. I speak not out of weak surmises; from proof as strong as my grief, and as certain as I expect my revenge. That part, thou Pisanio, must act for me, if thy faith be not tainted with the breach of hers. Let thine own hands take away her life: I shall give thee opportunities at Milford-Haven: she hath my letter for the purpose: Where, if thou fear to strike, and to make me certain it is done, thou art the pander to her dishonour, and equally to me distoyal.*

*Pis.* What shall I need to draw my sword? the paper

Hath cut her throat already.—No, 'tis slander; Whose edge is sharper than the sword; whose tongue

[breath] Outvenoms all the worms of Nile; whose Rides on the posting winds, and doth belie All corners of the world: kings, queens, and states,

Maids, matrons, nay, the secrets of the grave This viperous slander enters.—What cheer, madam?

*Imo.* False to his bed! What is it, to be false? To lie in watch there, and to think on him? To weep 'twixt clock and clock? if sleep charge nature,

To break it with a fearful dream of him, And cry myself awake? that's false to his bed? Is it?

*Pis.* Alas, good lady!

*Imo.* I false? Thy conscience witness:—

fachimo, Thou didst accuse him of uncontinency; Thou then look'd'st like a villain; now, methinks,

Thy favour's good enough.—Some jay\* of Italy, Whose mother was her painting,† hath betray'd him:

Poor I am stale, a garment out of fashion: And, for I am richer than to hang by the walls, I must be ripp'd:—to pieces with me!—Oh! Men's vows are women's traitors! All good seeming,

By thy revolt, O husband, shall be thought Put on for villany; not born, where't grows; But worn, a bait for ladies.

*Pis.* Good madam, hear me.

*Imo.* True honest men being heard, like false

[weeping] *Ence,* Were, in his time, thought false: and Simon's Did scandal many a holy tear; took pity From most true wretchedness: so thou, Posthumus,

Wilt lay the leaven on all proper men; Goodly, and gallant, shall be false and perjur'd, From thy great fall.—Come, fellow, be thou honest: [him]

Do thou thy master's bidding: when thou see'st A little witness my obedience: Look! I draw the sword myself: take it; and hit The innocent mansion of my love, my heart: Fear not; 'tis empty of all things, but grief: Thy master is not there; who was, indeed, The riches of it: Do his bidding; strike. Thou mayst be valliant in a better cause; But now thou seem'st a coward.

\* *Palla*, in Italian, signifies both a jay and a whore.  
† *Licence*.

*Pis.* Hence, vile instrument!  
Thou shalt not damn my hand.

*Imo.* Why, I must die:  
And if I do not by thy hand, thou art  
No servant of thy master's: Against self  
slaughter

There is a prohibition so divine,  
That craves \* my weak hand. Come, here's  
my heart;  
Something's afoot!—Soft, soft; we'll no de-  
fence;

Obedient as the scabbard.—What is here?  
The scriptures † of the loyal Leonatus,  
All turn'd to heresy! Away, away,  
Corrupters of my faith! you shall no more  
Be stomachers to my heart! Thus may poor  
fools

Believe false teachers: Though those that are  
betray'd

Do feel the treason sharply, yet the traitor  
Stands in worse case of woe.  
And thou, Posthumus, thou that didst set up  
My disobedience 'gainst the king my father,  
And make me put into contempt the suits  
Of princely fellows, shalt hereafter find  
It is no act of common passage, but  
A strain of rareness: and I grieve myself,  
To think, when thou shalt be disedg'd by her  
That now thou trust'st on, how thy memory  
Will then be pang'd by me.—Pr'ythee, de-  
spatch:

The lamb entreats the butcher: Where's thy  
knife!

Thou art too slow to do thy master's bidding,  
When I desire it too.

*Pis.* O gracious lady,  
Since I receiv'd command to do this business,  
I have not slept one wink.

*Imo.* Do't, and to bed then.

*Pis.* I'll wake mine eye-balls blind first.

*Imo.* Wherefore then  
Didst undertake it? Why hast thou abus'd  
So many miles with a pretence? this place?  
Mine action, and thine own? our horses' la-  
bours?

The time inviting thee? the perturb'd court,  
For my being absent? whereunto I never  
Purpose return? Why hast thou gone so far,  
To be absent when thou hast ta'en thy stand,  
The elected deer before thee?

*Pis.* But to win time  
To lose so had employment in the which  
I have consider'd of a course: Good lady,  
Hear me with patience.

*Imo.* Talk thy tongue weary; speak:  
I have heard I am a strumpet; and mine ear,  
Therein false struck, can take no greater  
wound,

Nor tent to bottom that. But speak.

*Pis.* Then, madam,  
I thought you would not back again.

*Imo.* Most like;  
Bringing me here to kill me.

*Pis.* Not so, neither:  
But if I were as wise as honest, then  
My purpose would prove well. It cannot be,  
But that my master is abus'd:  
Some villain, ay, and singular in his art,  
Hath done you both this cursed injury.

*Imo.* Some Roman courtizan.

*Pis.* No, on my life.

I'll give but notice you are dead, and send  
him

Some bloody sign of it; for 'tis commanded  
I should do so: You shall be miss'd at court,  
And that will well confirm it.

*Imo.* Why, good fellow,  
What shall I do the while? Where bide? How  
live?

Or in my life what comfort, when I am  
Dead to my husband?

*Pis.* If you'll back to the court,—

\* Cowards.

† The letters.

‡ Feedest or prey's on.

*Imo.* No court, no father; nor no more ado  
With that harsh, noble, simple, nothing:  
That Cloten, whose love-suit hath been to me  
As fearful as a siege.

*Pis.* If not at court,  
Then not in Britain must you bide.

*Imo.* Where then?

Hath Britain all the sun that shines? Day,  
night,

Are they not but in Britain? I! the world's vo-  
lume

Our Britain seems as of it, but not in it;  
In a great pool, a swan's nest; Pr'ythee, think  
There's livers out of Britain.

*Pis.* I am most glad

You think of other place. The ambassador,  
Lucius the Roman, comes to Milford-Haven  
To-morrow: Now, if you could wear a mind  
Dark as your fortune is; and but disguise  
That, which, to appear itself, must not yet be,  
But by self-danger; you should tread a course  
Pretty, and full of view: yea, haply, near  
The residence of Posthumus; so high, at least,  
That though his actions were not visible, yet  
Report should render him hourly to your ear,  
As truly as he moves.

*Imo.* O for such means!  
Though peril to my modesty, not death on't,  
I would adventure.

*Pis.* Well then, here's the point:  
You must forget to be a woman; change  
Command into obedience; fear and niceness,  
(The handmaids of all women, or, more truly,  
Woman it's pretty self,) to a waggish courage;  
Ready in gibes, quick-answer'd, saucy, and  
As quarrelous as the vessel: nay, you must  
Forget that rarest treasure of your cheek,  
Exposing it (but, oh! the harder heart!  
Alack no remedy!) to the greedy touch  
Of common-kissing Titan; \* and forget  
Your labourious and dainty trims, wherein  
You made great Juno angry.

*Imo.* Nay, be brief:

I see into thy end, and am almost  
A man already.

*Pis.* First, make yourself but like one.  
Fore-thinking this, I have already it,  
(Tis in my cloak-bag,) doublet, hat, hose, all  
That answer to them: Would you, in their  
serving,

And with what imitation you can borrow  
From youth of such a season, fore noble Lu-  
cius

Present yourself, desire his service, tell him  
Wherein you are happy, † (which you'll make  
him know,

If that his head have ear in music,) doubtless,  
With joy he will embrace you: for he's hon-  
ourable,

And, doubling that, most holy. Your means  
abroad

You have me ‡ rich; and I will never fail  
Beginning, nor supplement.

*Imo.* Thou art all the comfort  
The gods will diet me with. Pr'ythee, away:  
There's more to be consider'd; but we'll even  
All that good time will give us: This attempt  
I'm soldier to, § and will abide it with  
A prince's courage. Away, I pr'ythee.

*Pis.* Well, madam, we must take a short fare-  
well:

Lest, being miss'd, I be suspected of  
Your carriage from the court. My noble mis-  
treas,

Here is a box; I had it from the queen;  
What's in't is precious; if you are sick at sea,  
Or stomach-quill'd at land, a dram of this  
Will drive away distemper.—To some shade,  
And fit you to your manhood.—May the gods  
Direct you to the best!

*Imo.* Amen: I thank thee.

[Exeunt.]

\* The sun.

† I. e. Wherein you are accomplished.

‡ As for your subsistence abroad, you may rely on me.

§ Equal to.

SCENE V.—A Room in CYMBELINE'S Palace.

Enter CYMBELINE, QUEEN, CLOTEN, LUCIUS, and LORDS.

Cym. Thus far; and so farewell.

Luc. Thanks, royal Sir.

My emperor hath wrote, I must from hence;  
And am right sorry, that I must report ye  
My master's enemy.

Cym. Our subjects, Sir,  
Will not endure his yoke; and for ourself  
To show less sovereignty than they, must  
needs

Appear unkinglike.

Luc. So, Sir, I desire of you  
A conduct over land, to Milford-Haven.—  
Madam, all joy befall your grace, and you!

Cym. My lords, you are appointed for that  
office;

The due of honour in no point omit:—

So, farewell, noble Lucius.

Luc. Your hand, my lord.

Clo. Receive it friendly: but from this time  
forth

I wear it as your enemy.

Luc. Sir, the event

Is yet to name the winner; Fare you well.

Cym. Leave not the worthy Lucius, good my  
lords,

Till he have cross'd the Severn.—Happiness!

[Exit LUCIUS and LORDS.]

Queen. He goes hence frowning: but it  
honours us,

That we have given him cause.

Clo. 'Tis all the better;

Your valiant Britons have their wishes in it.

Cym. Lucius hath wrote already to the em-  
peror

How it goes here. It fits us therefore, ripely,  
Our chariots and our horsemen be in readi-  
ness:

The powers that he already hath in Gallia  
Will soon be drawn to head, from whence he  
moves

His war for Britain.

Queen. 'Tis not sleepy business;

But must be look'd to speedily and strongly.

Cym. Our expectation that it would be thus,  
Hath made us forward. But, my gentle  
queen,

Where is our daughter? She hath not appear'd

Before the Roman, nor to us hath tender'd

The duty of the day: She looks us like

A thing more made of malice than of duty:

We have noted it.—Call her before us; for

We have been too slight in sufferance.

[Exit an ATTENDANT.]

Queen. Royal Sir,  
Since the exile of Posthumus, most retir'd  
Hath her life been; the cure whereof, my  
lord,

'Tis time must do. Beseech your majesty,  
Forbear sharp speeches to her: she's a lady  
So tender of rebukes, that words are strokes,  
And strokes death to her.

Re-enter an ATTENDANT.

Cym. Where is she, Sir? How

Can her contempt be answer'd?

Attend. Please you, Sir,

Her chambers are all lock'd; and there's no  
answer

That will be given to the loud'st of noise we  
make.

Queen. My lord, when last I went to visit  
her,

She pray'd me to excuse her keeping close;

Whereto constrain'd by her infirmity,

She should that duty leave unpaid to you,

Which daily she was bound to proffer: this

She wish'd me to make known; but our great  
court

Made me to blame in memory.

Cym. Her doors lock'd?

Not seen of late? Grant, heavens, that which I  
fear

Prove false!

[Exit.]

Queen. Son, I say, follow the king.

Clo. That man of her's, Pisanio, her old  
servant,

I have not seen these two days.

Queen. Go, look after.—

[Exit CLOTEN.]

Pisanio, thou that stand'st so for Posthumus!—

He hath a drug of mine. I pray his absence

Proceed by swallowing that; for he believes

It is a thing most precious. But for her,

Where is she gone? Haply, despair hath  
set'd her;

Or, wing'd with fervour of her love, she's flown

To her desir'd Posthumus: Gone she is

To death, or to dishonour; and my end

Can make good use of either: She being down,  
I have the placing of the British crown.

Re-enter CLOTEN.

How now, my son?

Clo. 'Tis certain she is fled:

Go in, and cheer the king; he rages; none

Dare come about him.

Queen. All the better: May

This night forestall him of the coming day!

[Exit QUEEN]

Clo. I love, and hate her; for she's fair and  
royal:

And that she hath all courtly parts more ex-  
quisite

Than lady, ladies, woman: \* from every one

The best she hath, and she, of all compounded,

Outsells them all; I love her therefore; But,

Disdaining me, and throwing favours on

The low Posthumus, slanders so her judgment,

That what's else rare, is chok'd; and in that  
point,

I will conclude to hate her, nay, indeed,

To be reveng'd upon her. For, when fools

Enter PISANIO,

Shall—Who is here? What! are you packing,  
Sirrah?

Come hither: Ah! you precious pander! Vil-  
lain,

Where is thy lady? In a word; or else

Thou art straightway with the flics.

Pis. O good my lord!

Clo. Where is thy lady? or, by Jupiter,

I will not ask again. Close villain,

I'll have this secret from thy heart, or rip

Thy heart to find it. Is she with Posthumus?

From whose so many weights of baseness can

A dram of worth be drawn. [not]

Pis. Alas, my lord, [mist'd?]

How can she be with him? When was she  
He is in Rome.

Clo. Where is she, Sir? Come nearer;

No further halting: satisfy me home,

What is become of her?

Pis. O my all-worthy lord!

Clo. All-worthy villain!

Discover where thy mistress is, at once,

At the next word.—No more of worthy lord,—

Speak, or thy silence on the instant is

Thy condemnation and thy death.

Pis. Then, Sir,

This paper is the history of my knowledge

Touching her flight.

[Presenting a Letter.]

Clo. Let's see't:—I will pursue her

Even to Augustus' throne.

Pis. Or this, or perish. [by this, }  
She's far enough; and what he learns } Aside.

May prove his travel, not her danger.

Clo. Humph!

Pis. I'll write to my lord she's dead. O

Imogen

Safe may'st thou wander, safe return again!

[Aside.]

\* Than any lady, than all ladies, than all woman-kind

*Clo.* Sirrah, is this letter true?

*Pis.* Sir, as I think.

*Clo.* It is Posthumus' hand; I know't.—Sirrah, if thou would'st not be a villain, but do me true service, undergo those employments, wherein I should have cause to use thee, with a serious industry,—that is, what villany so'er I bid thee do, to perform it, directly and truly,—I would think thee an honest man: thou should'st neither want my means for thy relief, nor my voice for thy preferment.

*Pis.* Well, my good lord.

*Clo.* Wilt thou serve me? For since patiently and constantly thou hast stuck to the bare fortune of that beggar Posthumus, thou canst not in the course of gratitude but be a diligent follower of mine. Wilt thou serve me?

*Pis.* Sir, I will.

*Clo.* Give me thy hand, here's my purse. Hast thou any of thy late master's garments in thy possession?

*Pis.* I have, my lord, at my lodging, the same suit he wore when he took leave of my lady and mistress.

*Clo.* The first service thou dost me, fetch that suit hither: let it be thy first service; go.

*Pis.* I shall, my lord. *[Exit.]*

*Clo.* Meet thee at Milford-Haven:—I forgot to ask him one thing; I'll remember't anon:—Even there thou villain, Posthumus, wilt I kill thee.—I would these garments were come. She said upon a time, (the bitterness of it I now belch from my heart,) that she held the very garment of Posthumus in more respect than my noble and natural person, together with the adornment of my qualities. With that suit upon my back, wilt I ravish her: First kill him, and in her eyes; there shall she see my valour, which will then be a torment to her contempt. He on the ground, my speech of insultment ended on his dead body,—and when my lust hath din'd, (which, as I say, to vex her, I will execute in the clothes that she so praised,) to the court I'll knock her back, foot her home again. She hath despised me rejoicingly, and I'll be merry in my revenge.

*Re-enter PISANIO, with the Clothes.*

Be those the garments?

*Pis.* Ay, my noble lord.

*Clo.* How long is't since she went to Milford-Haven?

*Pis.* She can scarce be there yet.

*Clo.* Bring this apparel to my chamber; that is the second thing that I have commanded thee. The third is, that thou shalt be a voluntary mute to my design. Be but duteous, and true preferment shall tender itself to thee.—My revenge is now at Milford: 'Would I had wings to follow it!—Come, and be true. *[Exit.]*

*Pis.* Thou bidd'st me to my loss: for, true to thee,

Were to prove false: which I will never be, To him that is most true. To Milford go, And fling not her whom thou pursu'st. Flow, flow, [speed] You heavenly blessings, on her! This fool's Be cross'd with slowness; labour be his need! *[Exit.]*

SCENE VI.—Before the Cave of BELARIUS.

*Enter IMOGEN, in Boy's Clothes.*

*Imo.* I see a man's life is a tedious one: I have tir'd myself; and for two nights together Have made the ground my bed. I should be sick,

But that my resolution helps me.—Milford, When from the mountain-top Pisanio show'd

thee, Thou wast within a ken: O Jove! I think Foundations fly the wretched: such, I mean, Where they should be reliev'd. Two beggars told me,

I could not miss my way: Will poor folks lie,

That have afflictions on them; knowing 'tis A punishment or trial? Yes; no wonder, When rich ones scarce tell true; To lapse in

fulness Is sorer, than to lie for need; and falsehood Is worse in kings than beggars.—My dear lord! Thou art one o'the false ones: Now I think on thee,

My hunger's gone; but even before, I was At point to sink for food.—But what is this? Here is a path to it: 'Tis some savage hold: I were best not call; I dare not call: yet famine,

Ere clean it o'erthrow nature, makes it valiant. Plenty and peace breeds cowards; hardness ever

Of hardness is mother.—Ho! who's here? If any thing that's civil, speak; if savage, Take, or lend.—Ho!—No answer? then I'll enter.

Best draw my sword; and if mine enemy But fear the sword like me, he'll scarcely look Such a foe, good heavens! *[You't.]*

*[She goes into the Cave.]*

*Enter BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.*

*Bcl.* You, Polydore, have prov'd best woodman,\* and

Are master of the feast: Cadwal and I Will play the cook and servant; 'tis our match: The sweat of industry would dry and die, But for the end it works to. Come; our stom-

achs Will make what's homely, savoury: Weariness Can snore upon the flint, when restive sloth Finds the down pillow hard.—Now, peace be Poor house, that keep'st thyself! *[Here,]*

*Gul.* I am thoroughly weary.

*Ar.* I am weak with toil, yet strong in appetite.

*Gul.* Their's cold meat i'the cave; we'll browse on that,

Whilst what we have kill'd be cook'd.

*Bcl.* Stay; come not in: *[Looking in.]*

But that it eats our victuals, I should think Here were a fairy.

*Gul.* What's the matter, Sir?

*Bcl.* By Jupiter, an angel! or, if not, An earthly paragon!—Behold divineness No elder than a boy!

*Enter IMOGEN.*

*Imo.* Good masters, harm me not: Before I enter'd here, I call'd; and thought To have begg'd, or bought, what I have took: Good troth,

I have stolen nought; nor would not, though I had found *[meat:]*

Gold strew'd o'the floor. Here's money for my I would have left it on the board, so soon

As I had made my meal; and parted With prayers for the provider.

*Gul.* Money, youth?

*Ar.* All gold and silver rather turn to dirt! As 'tis no better reckon'd, but of those Who worship duty gods.

*Imo.* I see you are angry: Know, if you kill me for my fault, I should Have died, had I not made it.

*Bcl.* Whither bound?

*Imo.* To Milford-Haven, Sir.

*Bcl.* What is your name?

*Imo.* Fidele, Sir: I have a kinsman, who Is bound for Italy: he embark'd at Milford; To whom being going, almost spent with hunger, I am fallen in; this offence.

*Bcl.* Pr'ythee, fair youth, Think us no churls; nor measure our good minds *[He'd:]*

By this rude place we live in. Well encount' 'Tis almost night: you shall have better cheer Ere you depart; and thanks to stay and eat Boys, bid him welcome. *[It.—]*

\* Best hunter. † Agreement. ‡ In, for into.

*Gai.* Were you a woman, youth, [honesty, I should woo hard, but be your groom.—In I bid for you, as I'd buy.

*Arv.* I'll make't my comfort,  
He is a man; I'll love him as my brother:—  
And such a welcome as I'd give to him,  
After long absence, such as your's:—Most welcome!

Be sprightly, for you fall 'mongst friends.

*Imo.* 'Mongst friends!

If brothers!—Would it had been so, that they  
Had been my father's sons! then had my prize  
Been less; and so more equal ballasting  
To thee, Posthumus. [Aside.]

*Bel.* He wrings at some distress.

*Gai.* 'Would, I could free't!

*Arv.* Or I; whate'er it be,  
What pain it cost, what danger! Gods!  
*Bel.* Hark, boys. [H'spering.]

*Imo.* Great men,

That had a court no bigger than this cave,  
That did attend themselves, and had the virtue  
Which their own conscience seal'd them, (lay-  
ing by

That nothing gift of differing\* multitudes,)  
Could not out-peer these twain. Pardon me,  
gods!

I'd change my sex to be companion with them,  
Since Leonatus's false.

*Bel.* It shall be so:

Boys, we'll go dress our hunt.—Fair youth,  
come in; [suppl'd,  
Discourse is heavy, fasting; when we have  
We'll mannerly demand thee of thy story,  
So far as thou wilt speak it.

*Gai.* Pray, draw near.

*Arv.* The night to the owl, and moon to the  
lark, less welcome.

*Imo.* Thanks, Sir.

*Arv.* I pray, draw near. [Exit.]

#### SCENE VII.—Rome.

Enter two SENATORS and TRIBUNES.

1 *Sen.* This is the tenour of the emperor's  
writ;

That since the common men are now in action  
'Gainst the Pannonians and Dalmatians;  
And that the legions now in Gallia are  
Full weak to undertake our wars against  
The fallen-off Britons; that we do incite  
The gentry to this business: He creates  
Lucius pro-consul: and to you the tribunes,  
For this immediate levy, he commands  
His absolute commission. Long live Cesar!

*Tri.* Is Lucius general of the forces?

2 *Sen.* Ay.

*Tri.* Remaining now in Gallia?

1 *Sen.* With those legions

Which I have spoke of, whereunto your levy  
Must be suppliant: The words of your com-  
mission

Will tie you to the numbers, and the time  
Of their despatch.

*Tri.* We will discharge our duty. [Exit.]

#### ACT IV.

#### SCENE I.—The Forest, near the Cave.

Enter CLOTEN.

*Clo.* I am near to the place where they  
should meet, if Pisanio have mapped it truly.  
How fit his garments serve me! Why should  
his mistress, who was made by him that made  
the tailor, not be fit too? the rather (saying re-  
verence of the word) for 'tis said, a woman's  
dress comes by fits. Therein I must play the  
workman. I dare speak it to myself, (for it is

not vain glory, for a man and his glass to con-  
ter; in his own chamber, I mean,) the lines of  
my body are as well drawn as his; no less  
young, more strong, not beneath him in for-  
tunes, beyond him in the advantage of the time,  
above him in birth, alike conversant in general  
services, and more remarkable in single oppo-  
sitions: \* yet this imperseverant thing loves him  
in my despite. What mortality is! Posthumus,  
thy head, which is now growing upon thy  
shoulders, shall within this hour be off; thy  
mistress enforced; thy garments cut to pieces  
before thy face: and all this done, spurn her  
home to her father; who may, haply, be a little  
angry for my so rough usage; but my mother,  
having power of his testiness, shall turn all into  
my commendations. My horse is tied up safe:  
Out, sword, and to a sore purpose! Fortune,  
put them into my hand! This is the very  
description of their meeting-place; and the  
fellow dares not deceive me. [Exit.]

#### SCENE II.—Before the Cave.

Enter, from the Cave, RELARIUS, GUIDERIUS,  
ARVINAGUS, and IMOGEN.

*Bel.* You are not well: [To IMOGEN.] remain  
here in the cave;

We'll come to you after hunting.

*Arv.* Brother, stay here: [To IMOGEN  
Are we not brothers?

*Imo.* So man and man should be;

But clay and clay differs in dignity,

Whose dust is both alike. I am very sick.

*Gai.* Go you to hunting, I'll abide with him.

*Imo.* So sick I am not,—yet I am not well.

But not so citizen a wanton, as

To seem to die, ere sick: So please you I ave me;  
Stuck to your journal† course: the breach of  
custom

Is breach of all. I am ill; but your being by me  
Cannot amend me: Society is no comfort  
To one not sociable: I'm not very sick, [here:  
Since I can reason of it. Pray you, trust me:  
I'll rob none but myself; and let me die,  
stealing so poorly.

*Gai.* I love thee; I have spoke it:

How much the quantity, the weight as much,  
As I do love my father.

*Bel.* What I how? how?

*Arv.* If it be sin to say so, Sir, I yoke me

In my good brother's fault: I know not why  
I love this youth; and I have heard you say,  
Love's reason's without reason; the bird at  
door,

And a demand who is't shall die, I'd say

My father, not this youth.

*Bel.* O noble strain!

O worthiness of nature! I breed of greatness!

Cowards father cowards, and base things are  
base:

Nature hath meal and bran: contempt and  
grace.

I am not their father; yet who this should be,  
Doth miracle itself, lov'd before me.— [Aside.  
'Tis the ninth hour of the morn.

*Arv.* Brother, farewell.

*Imo.* I wish ye sport.

*Arv.* You health.—So please you, Sir.

*Imo.* [Aside.] These are kind creatures.  
Gods, what lies I have heard!

Our courtiers say, all's savage but at court:

Experience, oh! thou disprov'st report!

The imperious; seas breed monsters; for the dish,

Poor tributary rivers as sweet fish.

I am sick still; heart-sick;—Pisanio,

I'll now taste of thy drug.

*Gai.* I could not stir him:

He said he was gentle, ‡ but unfortunate;

Dishonestly afflicted, but yet honest.

*Arv.* Thus did he answer me: yet said here-  
I might know more. [Enter]

\* Unsteady.

† I.e. Because.

\* In single combat.

† Imperial.

‡ Keep your daily course.

§ Well-born.

*Bel.* To the field, to the field :—  
We'll leave you for this time ; go in, and rest.

*Arr.* We'll not be long away.  
*Bel.* Pray, be not sick,  
For you must be our housewife.

*Imo.* Well, or ill,  
I am bound to you.

*Bel.* And so shalt be ever. [Exit IMOGEN.  
This youth, howe'er distress'd, appears he hath  
Good ancestors. [had

*Arr.* How angel-like he sings !  
*Gui.* But his neat cookery : He cut our roots  
in characters ;

And sauc'd our broths, as Juno had been sick,  
And he her dieter.

*Arr.* Nobly he yokes  
A smiling with a sigh ; as if the sigh  
Was that it was, for not being such a smile ;  
The smile mocking the sigh, that it would fly  
From so divine a temple, to commix  
With winds that sailors rail at.

*Gui.* I do note,  
That grief and patience, rooted in him both,  
Mingle their spurs \* together.

*Arr.* Grow, patience !  
And let the sinking elder, grief, untwine  
His perishing root, with the increasing vine !

*Bel.* It is great morning. Come ; away.—  
Who's there ?

*Enter CLOTEN.*

*Clo.* I cannot find those runagates ; that vil-  
lains knock'd me :—I am faint. [laid

*Bel.* Those runagates !  
Means he not us ? partly know him ; 'tis  
Cloten, the son o' the queen. I fear some am-  
bush.

I saw him not these many years, and yet  
I know 'tis he :—We are held as outlaws :—  
Hence.

*Gui.* He is but one : You and my brother  
search

What companies are near : pray you, away ;  
Let me alone with him.

[Enter BELARIUS and ARVIRAGUS.  
*Clo.* Soft ! What are you  
That fly me thus ? some villain mountaineers ?  
I have heard of such.—What slave art thou !

*Gui.* A thing  
More slavish did I ne'er, than answering  
A slave, without a knock.

*Clo.* Thou art a robber,  
A law-breaker, a villain : Yield thee, thief.

*Gui.* To who ? to thee ? What art thou ? Have  
not I

An arm as big as thine ? a heart as big ?  
Thy wounds, I grant, are bigger ; for I wear not  
My dagger in my mouth. Say, what thou art ;  
Why I should yield to thee ?

*Clo.* Thou villain base,  
Know'st me not by my clothes ?

*Gui.* No, nor thy tailor, rascal,  
Who is thy grandfather : he made those clothes,  
Which, as it seems maketh thee.

*Clo.* Thou precious varlet,  
My tailor made them not.

*Gui.* Hence then, and thank [fool ;  
The man that gave them thee. Thou art some  
I am loath to beat thee.

*Clo.* Thou luxurious thief,  
Hear but my name, and tremble.

*Gui.* What's thy name ?

*Clo.* Cloten, thou villain.

*Gui.* Cloten, thou double villain, be thy  
name ;

I cannot tremble at it ; were't loud, or adder,  
'Twould move me sooner.

*Clo.* To thy further fear,  
Nay, to thy mere confusion, thou shalt know  
I'm son to the queen.

*Gui.* I'm sorry for't ; not seeming  
So worthy as thy birth.

*Clo.* Art not afeard ?

*Gui.* Those that I reverence those I fear ;  
the wise :

At fools I laugh, not fear them.

*Clo.* Die the death :

When I have slain thee with my proper hand,  
I'll follow those that even now fled hence,  
And on the gates of Lud's town set your heads :  
Yield, rustic mountaineer. [Exeunt, fighting.

*Enter BELARIUS and ARVIRAGUS.*

*Bel.* No company's abroad.

*Arr.* None in the world : You did mistake  
him, sure.

*Bel.* I cannot tell : Long is it since I saw  
him, [favour =  
But time hath nothing blur'd those lines of  
Which then he wore ; the snatches in his voice,  
And burst of speaking, were as his : I am ab-  
solute,

'Twas very Cloten.

*Arr.* In this place we left them :  
I wish my brother make good time with him,  
You say he is so fell.

*Bel.* Being scarce made up,  
I mean, to man, he had not apprehension  
Of roaring terrors ; for the effect of judgment  
Is oft the cause of fear : But see, thy brother.

*Re-enter GUIDERIUS, with CLOTEN'S Head.*

*Gui.* This Cloten was a fool ; an empty purse,  
There was no money in't : not Hercules  
Could have knock'd out his brains, for he had  
none :

Yet I not doing this, the fool had borne  
My head, as I do his.

*Bel.* What hast thou done ?

*Gui.* I am perfect, what : cut off one Cloten's  
head,

Son to the queen, after his own report ;  
Who call'd me traitor, mountaineer ; and swore,  
With his own single hand he'd take us in ;  
Displace our heads, where (thank the gods !) they  
grow,

And set them on Lud's town.

*Bel.* We are all undone.

*Gui.* Why, worthy father, what have we to  
lose,

Ent, that he swore, to take our lives ? The law  
Protects not us : Then, why should we be ten-  
der,

To let an arrogant piece of flesh threaten us :

Play judge, and executioner, all himself ;

For we do fear the law ? What company  
Discover you abroad ?

*Bel.* No single soul

Can we set eye on, but, in all safe reason,  
He must have some attendants. Though his  
humour

Was nothing but mutation ; ay, and that  
From one bad thing to worse ; not frenzy, not  
Absolute madness could so far have rav'd

To bring him here alone : Although, perhaps,  
It may be heard at court, that such as we  
Came here, hunt here, are outlaws, and in time  
May make some stronger head : the which he  
hearing,

(As it is like him,) might break out, and swear  
He'd fetch us in ; yet is't not probable

To come alone, either he so undertaking,  
Or they so suffering : then on the ground we  
If we do fear this body hath a tail [fear

More perilous than the head.

*Arr.* Let ordinance  
Come as the gods foresay it : howso'er,  
My brother hath done well.

*Bel.* I had no mind

To hunt this day : the boy Fidele's sickness  
Did make my way long forth.

*Gui.* With his own sword, [fear  
Which he did wave against my throat, I have  
His head from him : I'll throw't into the creek

\* Countenance. † I am well-informed what.  
‡ Conquer, subdue. § Because.  
|| Change, alteration. ¶ Did make my walk tedious.

Behind our rock, and let it to the sea,  
And tell the fishes, he's the queen's son, Cloten :  
That's all I reck. *[Exit.]*

*Bel.* I fear 'twill be reveng'd :  
"Would, Polydore, thou had'st not done't !  
though valour

Becomes thee well enough.

*Arr.* "Would I had done't,  
So the revenge alone pursued me !—Polydore,  
I love thee brotherly ; but envy much,  
Thou hast robb'd me of this deed : I would  
revenges,

That possible strength might meet, would seek  
us through.

And put us to our answer.  
*Bel.* Well, 'tis done :—  
We'll hunt no more to-day, nor seek for danger  
Where there's no profit. I prythee to our rock ;  
You and Fidele play the cooks : I'll stay  
Till hasty Polydore return, and bring him  
To dinner presently.

*Arr.* Poor sick Fidele !  
I'll willingly to him : To gain + his colour,  
I'd let a parish of such Cloten's blood,  
And praise myself for charity. *[Exit.]*

*Bel.* O thou goddess,  
Thou divine Nature, how thyself thou blazon'st  
In these two princely boys ! They are as gentle  
As zephyrs, blowing below the violet,  
Not wagging his sweet head : and yet as rough,  
Their royal blood enchauf'd, as the rud'at wind,  
That by the top doth take the mountain pine,  
And make him stoop to the vale. 'Tis won-  
derful,

That an invisible instinct should frame them  
To royalty unlearn'd ; honour untaught ;  
Civility not seen from other ; valour,  
That wildly grows in them, but yields a crop  
As if it had been sow'd ! Yet still it's strange  
What Cloten's being here to us portends ;  
Or what his death will bring us.

*Re-enter GUIDERICS.*

*Gui.* Where's my brother ?  
I have sent Cloten's clotpoll down the stream,  
In embassy to his mother ; his body's hostage  
For his return. *[Solemn Music.]*

*Bel.* My ingenious instrument !  
Hark, Polydore, it sounds ! But what occasion  
Hath Cadwal now to give it motion ? Hark !

*Gui.* Is he at home ?

*Bel.* He went hence even now.

*Gui.* What does he mean ? since death of my  
dear'st mother

It did not speak before. All solemn things  
Should answer solemn accidents. The matter ?  
Triumphs for nothing, and lamenting toys ;  
Is jollity for apes, and grief for boys.  
Is Cadwal mad ?

*Re-enter ARVIRAGUS, bearing IMOGEN, as  
dead in his arms.*

*Bel.* Look, here he comes,  
And brings the dire occasion in his arms,  
Of what we blame him for !

*Arr.* The bird is dead,  
That we have made so much on. I had rather  
Have skip'd from sixteen years of age to sixty,  
To have turn'd my leaping time into a-crouch,  
Than have seen this.

*Gui.* O sweetest, fairest thy !  
My brother wears thee not the one half so well,  
As when thou grew'st thyself.

*Bel.* O melancholy !  
Who ever yet could sound thy bottom ? and  
The ooze, to show what coast thy sluggish  
care ;  
Might easiliest harbour in ?—Thou blessed thing !  
I see knows what man thou might'st have made !  
but I,  
Thou didst a most rare boy of melancholy !—  
How found you him ?

\* Care.

\* Follies.

† Regret, vexation.

‡ A slow-sailing unwieldy vessel.

*Arr.* Stark, \* as you see :  
Thus smiling, as some fly had tickled slumber,  
Not as death's dart, being laugh'd at : his right  
check

Reposing on a cushion.

*Gui.* Where ?

*Arr.* O'the floor :

His arms thus leagu'd : I thought he slept ; and  
put

My clouted brogues † from off my feet, whose  
rudeness

Answer'd my steps too loud.

*Gui.* Why, he but sleeps :

If he be gone, he'll make his grave a bed ;  
With female fairies will his tomb be haunted,  
And worms will not come to thee.

*Arr.* With fairest flowers,  
Whilst summer lasts, and I live here, Fidele,  
I'll sweeten thy sad grave : Thou shalt not lack  
The flower that's like thy face, pale primrose ;  
nor

The azur'd hare-bell, like thy veins ; no, nor  
The leaf of eglantine, whom not to slander,  
Out-sweeten'd not thy breath : the ruddock :  
would,

With charitable bill (O bill, sore-shaming  
Those rich-left heirs, that let their fathers lie  
Without a monument !) bring thee all this ;  
Yes, and furr'd moss besides, when flowers are  
none

To winter-ground § thy corse.

*Gui.* Prythee, have done ;  
And do not play in wench-like words with that  
Which is so serious. Let us bury him,  
And not protract with admiration what  
Is now due debt.—To the grave.

*Arr.* Say, where shall's lay him ?

*Gui.* By good Euriphile, our mother.

*Arr.* Be't so :

And let us, Polydore, though now our voices  
Have got the mannish crack, sing him to the  
ground,

As once our mother ; use like note and words,  
Save that Euriphile must be Fidele.

*Gui.* Cadwal,  
I cannot sing : I'll weep, and word it with thee :  
For notes of sorrow, out of tune, are worse  
Than priests and fauns that lie.

*Arr.* We'll speak it then.

*Bel.* Great griefs, I see, medicine the less : for  
Cloten

Is quite forgot. He was a queen's son, boys :  
And, though he came our enemy, remember,  
He was paid ‡ for that : Though mean and  
mighty rotting

Together have one dust ; yet reverence,  
(That angel of the world,) doth make distinction  
Of place 'tween high and low. Our foe was  
princely ;

And though you took his life, as being our foe,  
Yet bury him as a prince.

*Gui.* Pray you, fetch him hither.

Therites' body is as good as Ajax,  
When neither are alive.

*Arr.* If you'll go fetch him

We'll say our song the whilst.—Brother, begin.

*Gui.* Nay, Cadwal, we must lay his head to  
the east ;

My father hath a reason for't.

*Arr.* 'Tis true.

*Gui.* Come on then, and remove him.

*Arr.* So,—begin.

SONG.

*Gui.* Fear no more the heat o'the sun  
Nor the furious winter's rages ;  
Thou thy worldly task hast done,  
Home art gone, and taken thy wages :  
Golden lads and girls all must,  
As chimney-sweepers, come to dust.

\* Self.

‡ The red-cross.

§ The red-cross.

† Shoes plated with iron

‡ Probably a corrupt reading.

§ Fanned.

*Arv.* Fear no more the frown o'the great,  
Thou art past the tyrant's stroke;  
Care no more to clothe, and eat;  
To thee the reed is as the oak:  
The scythe, learning, physic, must  
All follow this, and come to dust.


*Gwi.* Fear no more the lightning-flash,  
*Arv.* Nor the all-dreaded thunder-stone;  
*Gwi.* Fear not slander, censure<sup>\*</sup> rash;  
*Arv.* Thou hast finish'd joy and moan:  
*Both.* All lovers young, all lovers must  
Consign<sup>†</sup> to thee and come to dust.

*Gwi.* No exorciser harm thee!  
*Arv.* Nor witchcraft charm thee.  
*Gwi.* Ghost unlaid forbear thee!  
*Arv.* Nothing ill come near thee!  
*Both.* Quiet consummation have;  
And renowned be thy grave!

*Re-enter BELARIUS, with the Body of CLOTEN.*

*Gwi.* We have done our obsequies; Come, lay him down.

*Bel.* Here's a few flowers, but about midnight more:  
The herbs, that have on them cold dew o'the  
Are strewings fit<sup>‡</sup> for graves.—Upon their  
faces:—

You were as flowers, now wither'd: even so  
These herb'lets shall, which  upon you  
strew.—

Come on, away: apart upon our knees.  
The ground that gave them first, has them  
again;

Their pleasures here are past, so is their pain.  
[*Exeunt BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.*]

*Imo.* [*Awaking.*] Yes, Sir, to Milford-Haven;  
Which is the way I—

I thank you.—By you bush!—Pray, how far  
thither?

'Ods pittikins!—can it be six miles yet?  
I have gone all night:—Faith, I'll lie down  
and sleep.

But, soft! no bedfellow:—O gods and god-  
deases!

[*Seeing the Body.*]  
These flowers are like the pleasures of the  
world;

This bloody man, the care on't.—I hope, I  
dream:

For, so, I thought I was a cave-keeper,  
And cook to honest creatures: But 'tis not so;  
'Twas but a bolt<sup>§</sup> of nothing, shot at nothing,  
Which the brain makes of fumes: Our very  
eyes

Are sometimes like our judgments, blind. Good  
faith,

I tremble still with fear: But if there be  
Yet left in heaven as small a drop of pity  
As a wren's eye, fear'd gods, a part of it!

The dream's here still: even when I wake, it is  
Without me as within me; not imagin'd, felt.  
A headless man!—The garments of Posthu-  
mus!

I know the shape of his leg: this is his hand;  
His foot Mercurial; his Martial thigh;  
The brawns of Hercules: but his Jovial face—  
Murder in heaven!—How!—'Tis gone.—Pisanio,  
All curses madd'd Hecuba gave the Greeks,  
And mine to boot, be darted on thee! Thou,  
Conspir'd with that irreligious<sup>¶</sup> devil, Cloten,  
Hast here cut off my lord.—To write and read,  
Be henceforth treacherous!—Damn'd Pisanio—  
Hath with his forged letters, damn'd Pisanio—  
From this most bravest vessel of the world  
Struck the male-top!—O Posthumus! alas,  
Where is thy head? where's that? Ah me!  
where's that?

Pisanio might have kill'd thee at the heart,

And left this head on.—How should this be?  
Pisanio?

'Tis he and Cloten: malice and lucre in them  
Have laid this woe here. O 'tis pregnant,  
pregnant!<sup>\*</sup>

The drug he gave me, which, he said, was pre-  
cious  
And oordial to me, have I not found it  
Murderous to the senses? That confirms it  
home:

This is Pisanio's deed, and Cloten's: O!—  
Give colour to my pale cheek with thy blood,  
That we the horrid may seem to those  
Which chance to find us: O my lord, my lord!

*Enter LUCIUS, a CAPTAIN, and other OFFI-  
CERS, and a SOUTHSAYER.*

*Cap.* To them the legions garrison'd in Gallia,  
After your will, have cross'd the sea attending.  
You here at Milford-Haven, with your ships:  
They are here in readiness.

*Luc.* But what from Rome?  
*Cap.* The senate hath sturr'd up the confiners,  
And gentlemen of Italy; most willing spirits,  
That promise noble service: and they come  
Under the conduct of bold Iachimo,  
Sienna's brother.

*Luc.* When expect you them?  
*Cap.* With the next benefit o'the wind.

*Luc.* This forwardness  
Makes our hopes fair. Command our present  
numbers [Sir,  
Be muster'd: bid the captains look to't.—Now,  
What have you dream'd, of late, of this war's  
purpose?

*Sooth.* Last night the very gods show'd me a  
vision:  
[I fast, and pray'd for their intelligence,]  
Thus:—

I saw Jove's bird, the Roman eagle, wing'd  
From the spongy south to this part of the west,  
There vanish'd in the sunbeams: which por-  
tends,  
(Unless my sins abuse my divination,)  
Success to the Roman host.

*Luc.* Dream often so,  
And never false.—Soft, ho! what trunk is here,  
Without his top? The ruin speaks, that some-  
time  
It was a worthy building.—How! a page!—  
Or dead, or sleeping on him? But dead, rather:  
For nature doth abhor to make his bed  
With the defunct, or sleep upon the dead.—  
Let's see the boy's face.

*Cap.* He is alive, my lord.  
*Luc.* He'll then instruct us of this body.—  
Young one,  
Inform us of thy fortunes; for, it seems,  
They crave to be demanded: Who is this,  
Thou mak'st thy bloody pillow? Or who was he  
That, otherwise than noble nature did,  
Hath alter'd that good picture? What's thy  
interest

In this sad wreck? How came it? Who is it?  
What art thou?

*Imo.* I am nothing: or if not,  
Nothing to be better. This was my mas-  
A very valiant Briton, and a good, [Sir,  
That here by mountaineers lies slain:—Alas!  
There are no more such masters: I may wander  
From east to occident, cry out for service,  
Try many, all good, serve truly, never  
Find such another master.

*Luc.* 'Luck, good youth!  
Thou mov'st no less with thy complaining,  
than  
Thy master in bleeding: Say his name, good  
friend.

*Imo.* Richard du Champ.—If I do him, and do  
No harm by it, though the gods hear, I charge  
[Lamenting]  
They'll pardon it.—Say you, Sir?

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.

And left this head on.—How should this be?  
Pisanio?

'Tis he and Cloten: malice and lucre in them  
Have laid this woe here. O 'tis pregnant,  
pregnant!<sup>\*</sup>

The drug he gave me, which, he said, was pre-  
cious

And oordial to me, have I not found it  
Murderous to the senses? That confirms it  
home:

This is Pisanio's deed, and Cloten's: O!—  
Give colour to my pale cheek with thy blood,  
That we the horrid may seem to those  
Which chance to find us: O my lord, my lord!

*Enter LUCIUS, a CAPTAIN, and other OFFI-  
CERS, and a SOUTHSAYER.*

*Cap.* To them the legions garrison'd in Gallia,  
After your will, have cross'd the sea attending.  
You here at Milford-Haven, with your ships:  
They are here in readiness.

*Luc.* But what from Rome?

*Cap.* The senate hath sturr'd up the confiners,  
And gentlemen of Italy; most willing spirits,  
That promise noble service: and they come  
Under the conduct of bold Iachimo,  
Sienna's brother.

*Luc.* When expect you them?

*Cap.* With the next benefit o'the wind.

*Luc.* This forwardness  
Makes our hopes fair. Command our present  
numbers [Sir,

Be muster'd: bid the captains look to't.—Now,  
What have you dream'd, of late, of this war's  
purpose?

*Sooth.* Last night the very gods show'd me a  
vision:  
[I fast, and pray'd for their intelligence,]  
Thus:—

I saw Jove's bird, the Roman eagle, wing'd  
From the spongy south to this part of the west,  
There vanish'd in the sunbeams: which por-  
tends,

(Unless my sins abuse my divination,)  
Success to the Roman host.

*Luc.* Dream often so,  
And never false.—Soft, ho! what trunk is here,  
Without his top? The ruin speaks, that some-  
time

It was a worthy building.—How! a page!—  
Or dead, or sleeping on him? But dead, rather:  
For nature doth abhor to make his bed  
With the defunct, or sleep upon the dead.—  
Let's see the boy's face.

*Cap.* He is alive, my lord.  
*Luc.* He'll then instruct us of this body.—  
Young one,

Inform us of thy fortunes; for, it seems,  
They crave to be demanded: Who is this,  
Thou mak'st thy bloody pillow? Or who was he  
That, otherwise than noble nature did,  
Hath alter'd that good picture? What's thy  
interest

In this sad wreck? How came it? Who is it?  
What art thou?

*Imo.* I am nothing: or if not,  
Nothing to be better. This was my mas-  
A very valiant Briton, and a good, [Sir,  
That here by mountaineers lies slain:—Alas!  
There are no more such masters: I may wander  
From east to occident, cry out for service,  
Try many, all good, serve truly, never  
Find such another master.

*Luc.* 'Luck, good youth!  
Thou mov'st no less with thy complaining,  
than  
Thy master in bleeding: Say his name, good  
friend.

*Imo.* Richard du Champ.—If I do him, and do  
No harm by it, though the gods hear, I charge  
[Lamenting]  
They'll pardon it.—Say you, Sir?

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.

\* Judgment. † Seal the same contract.  
‡ This diminutive adjection is derived from God's  
my pity. § An arrow. ¶ A face like  
Jove's. † Lawyers, licentious.



*Luc.* Thy name?

*Imo.* Fidele.

*Luc.* Thou dost approve thyself the very same:

Thy name well fits thy faith; thy faith, thy name.

Wilt take thy chance with me? I will not say, Thou shalt be so well master'd; but be sure, No less belov'd. The Roman emperor's letters, Sent by a consul to me, should not sooner Than thine own worth prefer thee: Go with me.

*Imo.* I'll follow, Sir. But first, an't please the gods,

I'll hide my master from the flies, as deep As these poor pickaxes \* can dig; and when With wild wood-leaves and weeds I have strew'd his grave,

And on it said a century of prayers, Such as I can, twice o'er, I'll weep and sigh; And, leaving so his service, follow you, So please you entertain me.

*Luc.* Ay, good youth; And rather father thee, than master thee.—My friends, The boy hath taught us many duties: Let us Find out the prettiest daisied plot we can, And make him with our pikes and partizans A grave: Come, arm him.—Boy, he is preferr'd

By thee to us; and he shall be interr'd, As soldiers can. Be cheerful; wipe thine eyes: Some falls are means the happier to arise. *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE III.—A Room in CYMBELINE'S Palace.

*Enter CYMBELINE, LORDS, and PISANIO.*

*Cym.* Again; and bring me word how 'tis with her.

A fever with the absence of her son;  
A madness, of which her life's in danger:—Heavens,

How deeply you at once do touch me! Imogen, The great part of my comfort, gone; my queen Upon a desperate bed; and in a time When fearful wars point at me, her son gone, So needful for this present: It strikes me, past

The hope of comfort.—But for thee, fellow, Who needs must know of her departure, and Dost seem so ignorant, we'll enforce it from thee

By a sharp torture.

*Pis.* Sir, my life is your's, I humbly set it at your will: But, for my mistress,

I nothing know where she remains, why gone, Nor when she purposes return. Beseech your highness,

Hold me your loyal servant.

*1 Lord.* Good my liege, The day that she was missing, he was here: I dare be bound he's true, and shall perform All parts of his subjection loyally.

*For Cloten.*—There wants no diligence in seeking him, And will no doubt, be found.

*Cym.* The time's troublesome: We'll slip you for a season; but our jealousy Does yet depend. *[To PISANIO.]*

*1 Lord.* So please your majesty, The Roman legions, all from Gallia drawn, Are landed on your coast with a supply Of Roman gentlemen, by the senate sent.

*Cym.* Now for the counsel of my son and queen:—

I am amaz'd with matter. †

*1 Lord.* Good my liege, Your preparation can affront ‡ no less Than what you hear of: come more, for more you're ready:

The want is, but to put those powers \* in motion, That long to move.

*Cym.* I thank you: Let's withdraw: And meet the time as it seeks us. We fear not What can from Italy annoy us; but We grieve at chances here.—Away: *[Exeunt.]*

*Pis.* I heard no letter from my master, since I wrote him, Imogen was slain: 'Tis strange: Nor hear I from my mistress, who did promise To yield me often tidings; Neither know I What is betid to Cloten; but remain Perplex'd in all. The heavens still must work: Wherein I am false, I am honest; not true, to be true.

These present wars shall find I love my country, Even to the note † o'the king, or I'll fall in them.

All other doubts, by time let them be clear'd: Fortune brings in some boats, that are not steer'd. *[Exit.]*

### SCENE IV.—Before the Cave.

*Enter BELARIUS, GUIDERICUS, and ANVIRAGUS.*

*Gui.* The noise is round about us.

*Bel.* Let us from it.

*Ans.* What pleasure, Sir, find we in life, to lock it

From action and adventure?

*Gui.* Nay, what hope Have we in hiding us? I this way, the Romans Must or for Britons slay us, or receive us For barbarous and unnatural revolts; During their use, and slay us after.

*Bel.* Sons, We'll higher to the mountains; there secure us. To the king's party there's no going; newness Of Cloten's death (we being not known, nor muster'd

Among the bands) may drive us to a render; Where we have liv'd; and so extort from us That which we have done, whose answer would be death

Drawn on with torture.

*Gui.* This is, Sir, a doubt, In such a time, nothing becoming you, Nor satisfying us.

*Ans.* It is not likely, That when they hear the Roman horses neigh, Behold their quarter'd fires, have both their eyes And ears so cloy'd importantly as now, That they will waste their time upon our note, † To know from whence we are.

*Bel.* O I am known Of many in the army: many years, Though Cloten then but young, you see, not wore him

From my remembrance. And, besides, the king Hath not deserv'd my service, nor your loves; Who find in my exile the want of breeding, The certainty of this hard life; yet hopeless To have the courtesy your cradle promis'd, But to be still hot summer's tawlings, and The shrinking slaves of winter.

*Gui.* Than be so, Better to cause to be. Pray, Sir, to the army: I and my brother are not known; yourself, So out of thought, and thereto so o'ergrown, Cannot be question'd.

*Ans.* By this sun that shines, I'll thither: What thing is it, that I never Did see man die? scarce ever look'd on blood, But that of coward hares, hot goats, and venison †

Never bestrid a horse, save one that had A rider like myself, who ne'er wore towel Nor iron on his heel? I am ashamed To look upon the holy sun, to have The benefit of his bless'd beams remaining So long a poor unknown.

*Gui.* By heavens, I'll go:

\* Her fingers. † Confounded by a variety of  
business. ‡ Encounter.

\* Forces. † Notice. ‡ Revelters.  
‡ An account. § Noticing us.

If you will bless me, Sir, and give me leave,  
I'll take the better care; but if you will not,  
The hazard therefore due fall on me, by  
The hands of Romans!

*Arv.* So say I; Amen.

*Bel.* No reason I, since on your lives you set  
So slight a valuation, should reserve  
My crack'd one to more care. Have with you,  
boys:

If in your country wars you chance to die,  
That is my bed too, lads, and there I'll lie:  
Lead, lead.—The time seems long; their blood  
thinks scorn, *[Aside.]*  
Till it fly out, and show them princes' born.

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—A Field between the British and  
Roman Camps.

*Enter POSTHUMUS, with a bloody Hand-kerchief.*

*Post.* Yea, bloody cloth, I'll keep thee; for  
I wish'd <sup>(ones)</sup>  
Thou should'st be colour'd thus. You married  
If each of you would take this course, how  
many <sup>(selves)</sup>  
Must murder wives much better than them-  
selves for wrying\* but a little!—O Pisanio!  
Every good servant does not all commands:  
No bond, but to do just ones.—Gods! if you  
Should have ta'en vengeance on my faults, I  
never

Had liv'd to put on † this: so had you sav'd  
The noble Imogen to repent; and struck  
Me wretch, more worth your vengeance. But,  
alack,

You snatch some hence for little faults; that's  
To have them fall no more: you some permit  
To second ills with ills, each elder worse;  
And make them dread it to the doer's thrill.  
But Imogen is your own: Do your best wills,  
And make me bless'd to obey!—I am brought  
hither

Among the Italian gentry, and to fight  
Against my lady's kingdom: 'Tis enough  
That, Britain, I have kill'd thy mistress; peace!  
I'll give no wound to thee. Therefore, good  
heavens,

Hear patiently my purpose: I'll disrobe me  
Of these Italian weeds, and suit myself  
As does a Briton peasant: so I'll fight  
Against the part I come in; so I'll die  
For thee, O Imogen, even for whom my life  
Is, every breath, a death: and thus, unknown,  
Pitied nor hated, to the face of peril  
Myself I'll dedicate. Let me make men know  
More valour in me, than my habits show.  
Gods, put the strength of the Leonati in me!  
To shame the guise of the world, I will begin  
The fashion, less without, and more within.

*[Exit.]*

## SCENE II.—The same.

*Enter at one side, LUCIUS, IACHIMO, and the  
Roman Army; at the other side, the British  
Army; LEONATUS POSTHUMUS following it,  
like a poor Soldier. They march over, and  
go out. Alarums. Then enter again in  
skirmish, IACHIMO, and POSTHUMUS: he  
vanquisheth and disarmeth IACHIMO, and  
then leaves him.*

*Jach.* This heaviness and guilt within my  
bosom

Takes off my manhood: I have belied a lady,  
The princess of this country and the air on't  
Revengefully enfeebles me: Or could this earl, ‡  
A very drudge of nature's, have subdu'd me,

In my profession? Knighthoods and honours  
borne

As I wear mine, are titles but of scorn.

If that thy gentry, Britain, go before

This lout, as he exceeds our lords, the odds

Is, that we scarce are men, and you are gods.

*[Exit.]*

*The Battle continues; the Britons fly;  
CYMBELINE is taken; then enter to his  
rescue, BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and AN-  
VIRAGUS.*

*Bel.* Stand, stand! We have the advantage of  
the ground;

The lane is guarded, nothing routs us, but  
The villany of our fears.

*Gui. Arv.* Stand, stand, and fight!

*Enter POSTHUMUS, and seconds the Britons:  
They rescue CYMBELINE, and exeunt. Then,  
enter LUCIUS, IACHIMO, and IMOGEN.*

*Luc.* Away, boy, from the troops, and save  
thyself:

For friends kill friends, and the disorder's such  
As war were hood-wink'd.

*Jach.* 'Tis their fresh supplies.

*Luc.* It is a day turn'd strangely: or betimes  
Let's re-enforce or fly. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE III.—Another Part of the Field.

*Enter POSTHUMUS and a British Lord.*

*Lord.* Cam'st thou from where they made  
the stand?

*Post.* I did:

Though you, it seems, come from the fliers.

*Lord.* I did.

*Post.* No blame be to you, Sir: for all was  
lost

But that the heavens fought: The king him- self  
Of his wings destitute, the army broken,  
And but the backs of Britons seen, all flying  
Through a strait lane; the enemy full-hearted,  
Lolling the tongue with slaughtering, having  
work

More plentiful than tools to do't, struck down  
Some mortally, some slightly touch'd, some  
falling. <sup>(damnd)</sup>

Merely through fear: that the strait pass was  
With dead men, hurt behind, and cowards living  
To die with lengthen'd shame.

*Lord.* Where was this lane?

*Post.* Close by the battle, ditch'd, and wall'd  
with turf;

Which gave advantage to an ancient soldier,—  
An honest one, I warrant; who deserved  
So long a breeding, as his white beard came to,  
In doing this for his country;—athwart the  
lane,

He with two striplings, (lads more like to run  
The country base, † than to commit such slaugh-  
ter;

With faces fit for masks, or rather fairer  
Than those for preservation cas'd, or shame,)  
Made good the passage; cry'd to those that fled,  
*Our Britain's hurts die flying, not our men:  
To darkness fleet, souls that fly backwards!*

*Stand;*

*Or we are Romans, and will give you that  
Like beasts, which you shun bestly; and may  
save,*

*But to look back in frown: stand, stand,—  
These three,*

Three thousand confident, in act as many,  
(For three performers are the file, when all  
The rest do nothing,) with this word, *stand,*  
*stand,*

Accommodat'd by the place, more charming,  
With their own nobleness, (which could have  
turn'd

A distaff to a lance,) gilded pale looks,  
Part, shame, part, spirit renew'd; that some,  
turn'd coward

\* Deviating from the right way. † Jachite, instigate.  
‡ Clown.

\* Blocked up.

† A country game called prison-break, vulgarly prison-house.

But by example (O a sin in war,  
Damsu'd in the first beginners!) 'gan to look  
The way that they did, and to grim like lions  
Upon the pikes o' the hunters. Then began  
A stop i' the chasser, a retire; anon,  
A rout, confusion thick: Forthwith they fly  
Chickens, the way which they stoop'd eagles;  
slaves, [cowards  
The strides they victors made: and now our  
(Like fragments in hard voyages,) became  
The life o' the need; having found the back-door  
open [wound!  
Of the unguarded hearts, Heavens, how they  
Some, slain before; some, dying; some, their  
friends  
O'erborne i' the former wave: ten, chas'd by one.  
Are now each one the slaughter-man of twenty:  
Those, that would die or ere resist, are grown  
The mortal bugs \* o' the field.

*Lord.* This was strange chance:  
A narrow lane! an old man, and two boys!  
*Post.* Nay, do not wonder at it: You are  
made

Rather to wonder at the things you hear,  
Than to work any. Will you rhyme upon't,  
And vent it for a mockery? Here is one:  
*Two boys, an old man, twice a boy, a lane,  
Preserv'd the Britons, was the Romans' bane.*

*Lord.* Nay, be not angry, Sir.  
*Post.* 'Lack, to what end?  
Who dares not stand his foe, I'll be his friend:  
For if he'll do, as he is made to do,  
I know, he'll quickly fly my friendship too.  
You have put me into rhyme.

*Lord.* Farewell, you are angry. [*Exit.*  
*Post.* Still going?—This is a lord! O noble  
misery!

To be the i' the field, and ask, what news, of me!  
To-day, how many would have given their  
honours

To have sav'd their carcasses? I took heel to do't,  
And yet died too! I, in mine own woe charm'd,  
Could not find death, where I did hear him  
groan;

Nor feel him where he struck: Being an ugly  
monster. [*beds,*  
'Tis strange, he hides him in fresh cups, soft  
Sweet words; or hath more ministers than we  
That draw his knives i' the war.—Well, I will  
find him:

For being now a favourite to the Roman,  
No more a Briton, I have resum'd again  
The part I came in: Fight I will no more,  
But yield me to the veriest hind, that shall  
Once touch my shoulder. Great the slaughter is  
Here made by the Roman; great the answer be  
Britons must take; for me my ransom's death;  
On either side I come to spend my breath,  
Which neither here I'll keep, nor bear again,  
But end it by some means for Imogen.

*Enter two British CAPTAINS, and Soldiers.*

1 *Cap.* Great Jupiter be prais'd! Lucius is  
taken; [*angels.*

'Tis thought, the old man and his sons were  
2 *Cap.* There was a fourth man, in a silly  
That gave the affront; [*habit,*

1 *Cap.* So 'tis reported:  
But none of 'em can be found.—Stand! who is  
there?

*Phst.* A Roman;  
Who had not now been drooping here, if ac-  
had answer'd him. [*conds*

2 *Cap.* Lay hands on him; a dog!  
A leg of Rome shall not return to tell  
What crows have peck'd them here: He brags  
his service  
As if he were of note: bring him to the king.

*Enter CYMBELINE, attended; BELARIUS, GUI-  
DERIUS, ARVIRAGUS, PISANIO, and ROMAN  
CAPTIVES. The CAPTAINS present POSTHU-*

*MUS to CYMBELINE, who delivers him over  
to a JAILER: after which, all go out.*

### SCENE IV.—A Prison.

*Enter POSTHUMUS, and two JAILERS.*

1 *Jail.* You shall not now be stolen, you have  
looks upon you;  
So gaze as you find pasture.

2 *Jail.* Ay, or a stomach. [*Enter JAILERS.*  
*Post.* Most welcome, bondage! for thou art a  
way,

I think to liberty: Yet am I better  
Than one that's sick o' the gout: since he had  
rather

Groan so in perpetuity, than be cur'd  
By the sure physician, death; who is the key  
To unbar these locks. My conscience! thou  
art fetter'd

More than my shanks and wrists: You good  
gods, give me

The penitent instrument, to pick that bolt,  
Then, free for ever! Is't enough, I am sorry?  
So children temporal fathers do appease;

Gods are more full of mercy. Must I repent?  
I cannot do it better than in gyves,\*

Desir'd, more than constrain'd: to satisfy,  
If of my freedom 'tis the main part, take  
No stricter render of me, than my all.

I know you are more clement than vile men  
Who of their broken debtors take a third,  
A sixth, a tenth, letting them thrive again  
On their abatement; that's not my desire:

For Imogen's dear life, take mine; and though  
'Tis not so dear, yet 'tis a life, you can't do it:  
'Tween man and man, they weigh not every  
stamp;

Though light, take pieces for the figure's sake:  
You rather mine, bring yours: And so great  
powers,

If you will take this audit, take this life,  
And cancel these cold bonds. O Imogen!  
I'll speak to thee in silence. [*He sleeps.*

*Solemn music.† Enter, as an Apparition,  
SICILIUS LEONATUS, Father to POSTHUMUS,  
an old Man, attired like a Warrior, lead-  
ing in his hand an ancient Matron, his  
Wife, and Mother to POSTHUMUS, with  
music before them. Then, after other mu-  
sic, follow the two young LEONATI, Brothers  
to POSTHUMUS, with Wounds, as they died  
in the Wars. They circle POSTHUMUS  
round, as he lies sleeping.*

*Sici.* No more, thou thunder master show  
Thy spite on mortal flies:  
With Mars fall out, with Juno chide,  
That thy adulteries

Rates and revenges.  
Hath my poor boy done ought but well,  
Whose face I never saw?

I died, whilst in the womb he stay'd  
Attending Nature's law.

Whose father then (as men report,  
Thou orphans' father art),  
Thou should'st have been, and shielded him  
From this earth-vexing smart.

*Moth.* Lucina lent not me her aid,  
But took me in my throes;  
That from me was Posthumus ript,  
Came crying 'mongst his foes,

A thing of pity!  
*Sici.* Great nature, like his ancestry,  
Moulded the stuff so fair,  
That he deserv'd the praise o' the world  
As great Sicilius' heir.

1 *Bro.* When once he was mature for man,  
In Britain where was he

\* Fetters.

† Shakespeare, who has conducted this fifth act with  
such matchless skill, could never have interrupted the  
fable by this contemptible nonsense; the unjustifiable  
interpolation of some monstrous blockhead.

That could stand up his parallel;

Or fruitful object be  
In eye of Imogen, that best  
Could deem his dignity?

*Moth.* With marriage wherefore was he  
To be exil'd and thrown  
From Leonati's seat, and cast  
From her his dearest one,  
Sweet Imogen?

*Sici.* Why did you suffer Iachimo,  
Slight thing of Italy,  
To taint his nobler heart and brain  
With needless jealousy;  
And to become the geck \* and scorn  
O' the other's villany?

*2 Bro.* For this, from stiller seats we came,  
Our parents, and us twain,  
That, striking in our country's cause,  
Fell bravely, and were slain;  
Our fealty, and Tenantius' right,  
With honour to maintain.

*1 Bro.* Like hardiment Posthumus hath  
To Cymbeline perform'd:  
Then Jupiter, thou king of gods,  
Why hast thou thus adjourn'd  
The graces for his merits due;  
Being all to dolours turn'd?

*Sici.* Thy crystal window ope; look out;  
No longer exercise,  
Upon a valiant race, thy harsh  
And potent injuries:

*Moth.* Since, Jupiter, our son is good,  
Take off his miseries.

*Sici.* Peep through thy marble mansion; help!  
Or we poor ghosts will cry  
To the shining synod of the rest,  
Against thy deity.

*2 Bro.* Help, Jupiter; or we appeal,  
And from thy justice fly.

*JUPITER descends in Thunder and Lightning,  
sitting upon an eagle; he throws a  
Thunder-bolt. The Ghosts fall on their  
knees.*

*Jup.* No more, you petty spirits of region  
low,

Offend our hearing; hush!—How dare you  
Accuse the thunderer, whose bolt you know,  
Sky-planted, batters all rebelling coasts!

*2 Bro.* shadows of Elysium, hence; and rest  
Upon your never-withering banks of flowers:

Be not with mortal accidents oppress;  
No care of yours 't is, you know, 't is ours.

Whom best I love, I cross; to make my gift,  
The more delay'd, delighted. Be content;

Your loss and son our godhead will uplift:  
His comforts thrive, his trials well are spent.

Our jovial star reign'd at his birth, and in  
Our temple was he married.—Rise, and fade!

He shall be lord of lady Imogen,  
And happier much by his affliction made.

This tablet lay upon his breast; wherein  
Our pleasure his full fortune doth confine;

And so, away: no further with your din  
Express impatience, lest you stir up mine.—

Mount, eagle, to my palace crystalline.

*[Ascends.]*  
*Sici.* He came in thunder; his celestial  
breath

Was sulphurous to smell: the holy eagle  
Stoop'd as to foot us: his ascension is

More sweet than our bless'd fields: his royal  
bird

Prunes the immortal wing, and cloyes his beak,  
As when his god is pleas'd.

*All.* Thanks, Jupiter!

*Sici.* The marble pavement closes, he is  
enter'd

His radiant roof:—Away! and, to be blest,  
Let us with care perform his great behest.

*[Ghosts vanish.]*  
*Post.* *[Waking.]* Sleep, thou hast been a  
grandelire, and begot

A father to me: and thou hast created  
A mother and two brothers: But (O scorn!)  
Gone! they went hence so soon as they were  
born.

And so I am awake.—Poor wretches that de-  
pend  
On greatness' favour, dream as I have done;

Wake, and find nothing.—But, alas, I swerve:  
Many dream not to find, neither deserve;

And yet are steep'd in favours; so am I,  
That have this golden chance, and know not  
why.

What furies haunt this ground? A book? O,  
rare one!

Be not, as is our fangled world, a garment  
Nobler than that it covers: let thy effects

So follow, to be most unlike our courtiers,  
As good as promise.

*[Reads.]* When as a lion's whelp shall, to  
himself unknown, without seeking find,  
and be embraced by a piece of tender air;  
and when from a stately cedar shall be  
lopped branches, which, being dead many  
years, shall after revive, be jointed to the  
old stock, and freshly grow; then shall  
Posthumus end his miseries, Britain be for-  
tunate, and flourish in peace and plenty.

'Tis still a dream; or else such stuff as madmen  
Tongue, and brain not: either both, or nothing:

Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such  
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,

The action of my life is like it, which  
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

*Re-enter JAILERS.*

*Jail.* Come, Sir, are you ready for death?

*Post.* Over-roasted rather: ready long ago.

*Jail.* Hanging is the word Sir, if you be  
ready for that, you are well cooked.

*Post.* So, if I prove a good repast to the  
spectators, the dish pays the shot.

*Jail.* A heavy reckoning for you, Sir: But  
the comfort is, you shall be called to no more  
payments, fear no more tavern bills: which are  
often the sadness of parting, as the procuring of  
mirth: you come in faint for want of meat,  
depart reeling with too much drink; sorry that  
you have paid too much, and sorry that you  
are paid too much; purse and brain both empty:

the brain the heavier for being too light, the  
purse too light, being drawn of heaviness: Oh!  
if this contradiction you shall now be quit.—Oh!  
if the charity of a penny cord! it sums up thou-  
sands in a trice: you have no true debtor and  
creditor but it; of what's past is, and to come,  
the discharge:—Your neck, Sir, is pen, book,  
and counters; so the acquaintance follows.

*Post.* I am merrier to die, than thou art to  
live.

*Jail.* Indeed, Sir, he that sleeps feels not the  
tooth-ache: But a man that were to sleep your  
sleep, and a hangman to help him to bed, I  
think he would change places with his officer:

for look you, Sir, you know not which way you  
shall go.

*Post.* Yes indeed do I, fellow.

*Jail.* Your death has eyes in's head then; I  
have not seen him so pictured: you must either  
be directed by some that take upon them to  
know; or take upon yourself that, which I am  
sure you do not know; or jump \* the after-inquiry  
on your own peril: and how you shall speed in  
your own journey's end, I think you'll never  
return to tell one.

*Post.* I tell thee, fellow, there are none want  
eyes to direct them the way I am going, but  
such as wink, and will not use them.

*Jail.* What an infinite mock is this, that a  
man should have the best use of eyes, to see the  
way of blindness! I am sure, hanging's the way  
of winking.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Knock off his manacles; bring your prisoner to the king.

*Post.* Thou bringest good news—I am called to be made free.

*Jail.* I'll be hang'd then.

*Post.* Thou shalt be then freer than a jailer; no bolts for the dead.

[*Exeunt POSTHUMUS and MESSENGER.*  
*Jail.* Unless a man would marry a gallows, and beget young gibbets, I never saw one so prone. \* Yet, on my conscience, there are verier knaves desire to live, for all he be a Roman: and there be some of them too, that die against their wills; so should I, if I were one. I would we were all of one mind, and one mind good; Oh! there were desolation of jailers, and gallowses! I speak against my present profit; but my wish hath a preterment in't. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—CYMBELINE'S TENT.

*Enter CYMBELINE, BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, ARVIRAGUS, PISANIO, Lords, Officers, and Attendants.*

*Cym.* Stand by my side, you whom the gods have made Preservers of my throne. Woe is my heart, That the poor soldier, that so richly fought, Whose rags sham'd gilded arms, whose naked breast Stepp'd before target of proof, cannot be found: He shall be happy that can find him, if Our grace can make him so.

*Ecl.* I never saw Such noble fury in so poor a thing; Such precious deeds in one that promis'd nought But beggary and poor looks.

*Cym.* No tidings of him?  
*Pis.* He hath been search'd among the dead and living, But no trace of him.

*Cym.* To my grief, I am The heir of his reward; which I will add To you the liver, heart and brain of Britain, [*To BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.* By whom, I grant, she lives; 'Tis now the time To ask of whence you are:—report it.

*Bel.* Sir, In Cambria are we born, and gentlemen: Further to boast, were neither true nor modest, Unless I add, we are honest.

*Cym.* Bow your knees: Arise my knights o'the battle: I create you Companions to our person, and will fit you With dignities becoming your estates.

*Enter CORNELIUS and LADIES.*

There's business in these faces:—Why so sadly Greet you our victory? You look like Romans, And not o'the court of Britain

*Cor.* Hail, great king! To sour your happiness, I must report The queen is dead.

*Cym.* Whom worse than a physician Would this report become? But I consider, By medicine life may be prolong'd, yet death Will seize the doctor too.—How ended she?

*Cor.* With horror, madly dying, like her life; Which, being cruel to the world, concluded Most cruel to herself. What she confess'd, I will report, so please you: These her women Can trip me if I err: who, with wet cheeks, Were present when she finish'd.

*Cym.* Pry'thee, say.  
*Cor.* First she confess'd she never lov'd you; only

Affected greatness got by you, not you: Married your royalty, was wife to your place; Abhor'd your person.

*Cym.* She alone new this.

And, but she spoke it dying, I would not Believe her lips in opening it. Proceed.  
*Cor.* Your daughter, whom she bore in hand No love

With such integrity, she did confess Was as a scorpion to her sight; whose life, But that her flight prevented it, she had Ta'en off by poison.

*Cym.* O most delicate fiend! Who is't can delude a woman?—Is there more?

*Cor.* More, Sir, and worse. She did confess, she had

For you a mortal mineral; which, being took, Should by the minute feed on life, and, long'ring By inches waste you: In which time she put—pos'd

By watching, weeping, tendance, kissing, to O'ercome you with her show; yes, and in time, (When she had fitted you with her craft,) to work

Her son into the adoption of the crown. But failing of her end by his strange absence, Grew shameless desperate: open'd, in despite Of heaven and men, her purposes; repented The evils she hatch'd were not effected; so, Despairing, died.

*Cym.* Heard you all this, her women?  
*Lady.* We did so, please your highness.

*Cym.* Mine eyes Were not in fault, for she was beautiful; Mine ears, that heard her flattery; nor my heart,

That thought her like her seeming; it had been vicious,

To have mistrusted her: yet, O my daughter! That it was folly in me, thou may'st say, And prove it in thy feeling. Heaven mend all!

*Enter LUCIUS, IACHIMO, the SOUTHSAYER, and other Roman Prisoners, guarded; POSTHUMUS behind, and LUGEN.*

Thou com'st not, Caius, now for tribute; that The Britons have raz'd out, though with the loss

Of many a bold one; whose kinsmen have made suit,

That their good souls may be appeas'd with: Of you their captives, which ourself have So, think of your estate.

*Luc.* Consider, Sir, the chance of war: the day

Was your's by accident; had it gone with us, We should not, when the blood was cool, have threaten'd

Our prisoners with the sword. But since the Will have it thus, that nothing but our lives May be call'd ransom, let it come: suffereth,

A Roman with a Roman's heart can suffer: Augustus lives to think on't: And so much

For my peculiar care. This one thing only I will entreat: My boy, a Briton born,

Let him be ransom'd; never master had A page so kind, so dutious, diligent,

So tender over his occasions, true, So feat, \* so nurse-like: let his virtue join

With my request, which, I'll make bold, your highness

Cannot deny: he hath done no Briton harm. 'Tis true he have serv'd a Roman: save him, Sir, And spare no blood beside.

*Cym.* I have surely seen him: His favour † is familiar to me:—

Boy, thou hast look'd thyself into my grace, And art mine own.—I know not why, nor

wherefore,

To say, live, boy: ne'er thank thy master: live: And ask of Cymbeline what boon thou wilt,

Fitting my bounty, and thy state, I'll give it; Yea, though thou do demand a prisoner,

The noblest ta'en.

*Imo.* I humbly thank your highness.

*Luc.* I do not bid thee beg my life, good lad; And yet, I know, thou wilt.

\* Forward.

† Target, shield.

\* Dextrous.

† Countenance.

*Imo.* No, no : alack,  
There's other work in hand : I see a thing  
Bitter to me as death : your life, good master,  
Must shun for itself.

*Luc.* The boy disdains me,  
He leaves me, scorns me : Briefly die their joys,  
That place them on the truth of girls and boys.—

Why stands he so perplex'd ?

*Cym.* What would'st thou, boy ?

I love thee more and more ; think more and more

What's best to ask. Know'st him thou look'st  
on I speak,

Wilt have him live ? Is he thy kin ? thy friend ?

*Imo.* He is a Roman ; no more kin to me,  
Than I to your highness ; who, being born your  
Am something nearer. [vassal,

*Cym.* Wherefore ev'nt him so ?

*Imo.* I'll tell you, Sir, in private, if you please  
To give me hearing.

*Cym.* Ay, with all my heart,

And lend my best attention. What's thy name ?

*Imo.* Fidele, Sir.

*Cym.* Thou art my good youth, my page ;  
I'll be thy master : Walk with me ; speak freely.

[CYMBELINE and IMOGEN converse apart.

*Bel.* Is not this boy reviv'd from death ?

*Art.* One said another

Not more resembles : That sweet rosy lad,

Who died, and was Fidele :—What think you ?

*Gut.* The same dead thing alive.

*Bel.* Peace, peace ! see further ; he eyes us  
not, forbear ;

Creatures may be alike : were't he, I am sure

He would have spoke to us.

*Gut.* But we saw him dead.

*Bel.* Be silent ; let's see further.

*Pis.* It is my mistress : [Aside.

Since she is living, let the time run on,

To good, or bad.

[CYMBELINE and IMOGEN come forward.

*Cym.* Come, stand thou by our side :

Make thy demand aloud.—Sir, [To Iach.] step  
you forth ;

Give answer to this boy, and do it freely ;

Or, by our greatness, and the grace of it,  
Which is our honour, better torture shall

Winnow the truth from falsehood.—On, speak  
to him

*Imo.* My boon is, that this gentleman may  
render

Of whom he had this ring.

*Post.* What's that to him ? [Aside.

*Cym.* That diamond upon your finger, say,  
How came it yours ?

*Iach.* Thou'lt torture me to leave unspoken  
that

Which, to be spoke, would torture thee.

*Cym.* How ! me ?

*Iach.* I am glad to be constrain'd to utter that  
which

Torments me to conceal. By villany

I got this ring ; 'twas Leonatus' jewel :

Whom thou didst banish ; and (which more may  
grieve thee,

As it doth me,) a nobler Sir ne'er liv'd

'Twixt sky and ground. Wilt thou hear more,  
my lord ?

*Cym.* All that belongs to this.

*Iach.* That paragon, thy daughter,—

For whom my heart drops blood, and my false  
spirits

Quail \* to remember,—Give me leave ; I faint.

*Cym.* My daughter ! what of her ? Renew  
thy strength :

I had rather thou should'st live while nature  
will,

Than die ere I hear more : strive man, and  
speak.

*Iach.* Upon a time, (unhappy was the clock  
That struck the hour !) it was in Rome, (accurs'd

The mansion where ! 'twas at a feast, (O 'would  
Our viands had been poison'd ! or at least,  
Those which I heav'd to head !) the good Post-  
hūmus,

(What should I say ? he was too good to be  
Where ill men were ; and was the best of all  
Amongst the rar'st of good ones.) sitting sadly,  
Hearing us praise our loves of Italy  
For beauty that made barren the swell'd boast  
Of him that best could speak : for feature, lam-  
ing

The shrine of Venus, or straight-pight Min-  
Postures beyond brief nature ; for condition,  
A shop of all the qualities that man  
Loves woman for ; besides, that hook of w'-  
ing,

Fairness which strikes the eye :—

*Cym.* I stand on fire :

Come to the matter.

*Iach.* All too soon I shall,

Unless thou would'st grieve quickly.—This Post-  
hūmus,

Most like a noble lord in love, and one  
That had a royal lover,) took his hint ;  
And, not dispraising whom he prais'd, (thereir  
He was as calm as virtue) he began  
His mistress' picture ; which by his tongue be-  
ing made,

And then a mind put in't, either our brags  
Were crack'd of kitchen trulls, or his description  
Provd' us unspeaking sots.

*Cym.* Nay, nay, to the purpose.

*Iach.* Your daughter's chastity—there it be-  
gins.

He spake of her as Dian had hot dreams,  
And she alone were cold : Whereat, I, wretch '  
Made scruple of his praise ; and waver'd with  
him

Pieces of gold, 'gainst this which then he wore  
Upon his honour'd finger, to attain  
In suit the place of his bed, and win this ring  
By her's and mine adultery : he, true knight,

No lesser of her honour confident  
Than I did truly find her, stakes this ring ;  
And would so, had it been a carbuncle  
Of Phœbus' wheel ; and might so safely, had it  
Been all the worth of his ear. Away to Bri-  
tan

Post I in this design : Well may you, Sir,  
Remember me at court, where I was taught  
Of your chaste daughter the wide difference  
'Twixt amorous and villainous. Being thus  
quench'd

Of hope, not longing, mine Italian brain  
'Gan in your duller Britain operate  
Most vilely ; for my vantage, excellent ;  
And, to be brief, my practice so prevail'd,  
That I return'd with simular \* proof enough  
To make the noble Leonatus mad,

By wounding his belief in her renown  
With tokens thus and thus : averring notes  
Of chamber-language, pictures, this her brace-  
let,

(O cunning, how I got it !) nay, some marks  
Of secret on her person, that he could not  
But think her bond of chastity quite crack'd,  
I having ta'en the forfeit. Whereupon,—  
Methinks, I see him now.—

*Post.* Ay, so thou dost. [Coming forward,  
Italian fiend—Ah ! me, most credulous fool,  
Egregious murderer, thief, any thing  
That's due to all the villains past, in being,  
To come !—O give me cord, or knife, or poison  
Some upright justice ! Thou king, send out  
For torturers ingenious : it is I  
That all the abhorred things o' the earth amend  
By being worse than they. I am Posthūmus,  
That kill'd thy daughter :—villain like, I lie ;  
That caus'd a lesser villain than myself,  
A sacrilegious, thief, to do't :—the temple  
Of virtue was she ; yea, and she herself. †  
Spit, and throw stones, cast mire upon me, set

\* Sink into dejection.

\* Apparent.

† Not only the temple of virtue, but virtue herself.

The dogs o'the street to bay me : every villain  
Be call'd Posthūmus Leouatus ; and  
Be villany less than 'twas ! O Imogen,  
My queen, my life, my wife ! O Imogen,  
Imogen, Imogen !

*Imo.* Peace, my lord ; hear, hear—

*Post.* Shall's have a play of this ? Thou scorn-  
ful page,  
There lie thy part. [*Striking her : she falls.*]

*Pis.* O gentlemen, help, help  
Mine, and your mistress :—O my lord Post-  
hūmus !

You ue'er kill'd Imogen till now ;—Help,  
help !—

Mine honour'd lady !

*Cym.* Does the world go round ?

*Post.* How come these staggers on me ?

*Pis.* Wake, my mistress !

*Cym.* If this be so, the gods do mean to  
strike me

To death with mortal joy

*Pis.* How fares my mistress ?

*Imo.* O get thee from my sight ;

Thou gav'st me poison : dangerous fellow, hence !  
Breathe not where princes are.

*Cym.* The tune of Imogen !

*Pis.* Lady.

The gods throw stones of sulphur on me, if  
That box I gave you was not thought by me  
A precious thing : I had it from the queen.

*Cym.* New matter still ?

*Imo.* It poison'd me.

*Cor.* O gods !—

I left out one thing which the queen confess'd,  
Which must approve thee honest : If Pisano  
Have, said she, given his mistress that confec-  
tion

Which I gave him for a cordial, she is serv'd  
As I would serve a rat.

*Cym.* What's this, Cornelius ?

*Cor.* The queen, Sir, very oft importun'd me  
The temper \* poisons for her ; still pretending  
The satisfaction of her knowledge, only  
In killing creatures vile, as cats and dogs  
Of no esteem : I, dreading that her purpose  
Was of more danger, did compound for her  
A certain stuff, which, being ta'en, would  
cease

The present power of life ; but, in short time,  
All offices of nature should again

Do their due functions.—Have you ta'en of it ?

*Imo.* Most like I did, for I was dead.

*Bel.* My boys,

There was our error.

*Gui.* This is sure, Fidele.

*Imo.* Why did you throw your wedded lady  
from you ?

Think, that you are upon a rock and now  
Throw me again. [*Embracing him.*]

*Post.* Hang there like fruit, my soul,  
Till the tree die !

*Cym.* How now, my flesh, my child ?

What, mak'st thou me a dullard in this act ?  
Wilt thou not speak to me ?

*Imo.* Your blessing, Sir. [*Kneeling.*]  
*Bel.* Though you did love this youth, I blame  
ye not ;

You had a motive for't.

[*To GUIDERIUS and ARVIRAGUS.*]

*Cym.* My tears that fall,  
Prove holy water on thee ! Imogen,  
Thy mother's dead.

*Imo.* I am sorry for't, my lord.

*Cym.* Oh ! she was naught ; and 'long of her  
it was,

That we meet here so strangely : But her son  
Is gone, we know not how, nor where.

*Pis.* My lord,

Now fear is from me, I'll speak truth. Lord  
Cloten,

Upon my lady's missing, came to me  
With his sword drawn ; foam'd at the mouth,  
and swore,

\* Mix, compound.

If I discover'd not which way she was gone,

It was my instant death : By accident,

I had a feigned letter of my master's

Then in my pocket ; which directed him

To seek her on the mountains near to Milford ;

Where, in a frenzy, in my master's garments,

Which he inform'd from me, away he posts

With unchaste purpose, and with oath to vi-  
late

My lady's honour : what became of him,

I further know not.

*Gui.* Let me end the story :

I slew him there.

*Cym.* Marry, the gods forfend ! \*

I would not thy good deeds should from my  
lips

Pluck a hard sentence : pr'ythee, valiant youth,  
Deny't again.

*Gui.* I have spoke it, and I did it.

*Cym.* He was a prince.

*Gui.* A most unchivl one : The wrongs he did  
me

Were nothing prince-like ; for he did provoke  
me

With language that would make me spurn the  
sea,

If it could roar so to me : I cut off's head ;

And am right glad, he is not standing here

To tell this tale of mine.

*Cym.* I am sorry for thee :

By thine own tongue thou art condemn'd, and  
must

Endure our law : Thou art dead.

*Imo.* That headless man

I thought had been my lord.

*Cym.* Bind the offender,

And take him from our presence.

*Bel.* Stay, Sir king :

This man is better than the man he slew,

As well descended as thyself ; and hath

More of thee merited, than a band of Clotens

Had ever scar for. Let his arms alone ;

[*To the Guards.*]

They were not born for bondage.

*Cym.* Why, old soldier,

Wilt thou undo the worth thou art unpaid for

By tasting of our wrath ? How of descent

As good as we ?

*Arv.* In that he spake too far.

*Cym.* And thou shalt die for't.

*Bel.* We will die all three,

But I will prove that two of us are as good

As I have given out him.—My sons, I must,

For mine own part, unfold a dangerous speech,

Though, haply, well for you.

*Arv.* Your danger is

Ours.

*Gui.* And our good his.

*Bel.* Have at it then.— [who]

By leave ;—Thou had'st, great king, a subject,

Was call'd Belarius.

*Cym.* What of him ? he is

A banish'd traitor.

*Bel.* He it is, that hath

Assum'd this age : indeed, a banish'd man ;

I know not how, a traitor.

*Cym.* Take him hence ;

The whole world shall not save him.

*Bel.* Not too hot :

First pay me for the nursing of thy sons ;

And let it be confiscate all, so soon

As I have receiv'd it.

*Cym.* Nursing of my sons ?

*Bel.* I am too blunt and saucy : Here's my

knee ;

Ere I arise I will prefer my sons ;

Then, spare not the old father. Mighty Sir,

These two young gentlemen, that call me fa-  
ther,

And think they are my sons, are none of mine ;

They are the issue of your loins, my liege,

And blood of your begetting.

*Cym.* How ! my issue ?

\* Forbid.

*Bel.* So sure as you your father's. I, old Morgan,  
Am that Belarius whom you sometime banish'd:  
Your pleasure was my mere offence, my punishment  
Itself, and all my treason; that I suffer'd,  
Was all the harm I did. These gentle princes  
(For such, and so they are,) these twenty years  
Have I train'd up: those arts they have, as I  
Could put into them; my breeding was, Sir,  
as  
Your highness knows. Their nurse, Euphrile,  
Whom for the theft I wedded, stole these children  
Upon my banishment; I mov'd her to't;  
Having receiv'd the punishment before,  
For that which I did then: Beaten for loyalty  
Excited me to treason: Their dear loss,  
The more of you 'twas felt, the more it shap'd  
Unto my end of stealing them. But, gracious  
Sir,  
Here are your sons again; and I must lose  
Two of the sweetest companions in the world:—  
The benediction of these covering heavens  
Fall on their heads like dew! for they are  
worthy  
To inlay heaven with stars.  
*Cym.* Thou weep'st, and speak'st.  
The service, that you three have done, is more  
Unlike than this thou tell'st: I lost my children:  
If these be they, I know not how to wish  
A pair of worthier sons.  
*Bel.* Be pleas'd a while.—  
This gentleman, whom I call Polydore,  
Most worthy prince, as your's, is true, Guiderius;  
This gentleman, my Cadwal, Arviragus,  
Your younger princely son; he, Sir, was hap'd  
In a most curious mantle wrought by the  
hand  
Of his queen mother, which, for more probation,  
I can with ease produce.  
*Cym.* Guiderius had  
Upon his neck a mole, a sanguine star;  
It was a mark of wonder.  
*Bel.* This is he;  
Who hath upon him still that natural stamp;  
It was wise nature's end in the donation,  
To be his evidence now.  
*Cym.* O what am I  
A mother to the birth of three? Ne'er mother  
Rejoic'd deliverance more: Bless'd may you  
be,  
That after this strange starting from your orbs,  
You may reign in them now!—O Imogen,  
Thou hast lost by this a kingdom.  
*Imo.* No, my lord;  
I have got two worlds' by't.—O my gentle  
brothers,  
Have we thus met? O never say hereafter,  
But I am truest speaker: you call'd me brother,  
When I was but your sister; I you brothers,  
When you were so indeed.  
*Cym.* Did you e'er meet?  
*Arv.* Ay, my good lord.  
*Gui.* And at first meeting lov'd;  
Continued so, until we thought he died.  
*Cor.* By the queen's dram she swallow'd.  
*Cym.* O rare instinct!  
When shall I hear all through? This fierce  
abridgment  
Hath to it circumstantial branches, which  
Distinction should be rich in.—Where? how  
hiv'd you?  
And when came you to serve our Roman captive?  
How parted with your brothers? how first met  
them?

\* Vehement, rapid.

† I.e. Which ought to be rendered distinct in an ample narrative.

Why fled you from the court? and whither?  
*These.*  
And your three motives to the battle, with  
I know not how much more, should be demanded;  
And all the other by-dependencies.  
From chance to chance; but nor the time, nor  
place,  
Will serve our long intergatories. See,  
Posthumus anchors upon Imogen;  
And she like harmless lightning, throws her eye  
On him, her brothers, me, her master; hitting  
Each object with a joy; the counterchange  
Is e'erally in all. Let's quit this ground,  
And smoke the temple with our sacrifices.—  
Thou art my brother; So we'll hold thee ever.  
[To BELARIUS.  
*Imo.* You are my father too: and did relieve me,  
To see this gracious season.  
*Cym.* All overjoy'd,  
Save these in bonds: let them be joyful too,  
For they shall taste our comfort.  
*Imo.* My good master,  
[Kneeling.  
*Luc.* Happy be you!  
*Cym.* The forlorn soldier, that so nobly fought,  
He would have well becom'd this place, and  
grac'd  
The thankings of a king.  
*Post.* I am, Sir,  
The soldier that did company these three  
In poor beseeching: 'twas a intent for  
The purpose I then follow'd,—That I was he,  
Speak, Iachimo: I had you down, and might  
Have made you finish.  
I will yet do you service.  
*Iach.* I am down again:  
But now my heavy conscience sinks my knee,  
As then your force did. Take that life, 'bec-  
seach you,  
Which I so often owe: but, your ring first:  
And here the bracelet of the truest princess,  
That ever swore her faith.  
*Post.* Kneel not to me:  
The power that I have on you, is to spare you,  
The malice towards you, to forgive you: Live,  
And deal with others better.  
*Cym.* Nobly doom'd!  
We'll learn our treeness of a son-in-law,  
Pardon's the word to all.  
*Arr.* You help us, Sir,  
As you did mean indeed to be our brother;  
Joy'd we are, that you are.  
*Post.* Your servant, princes.—Good my lord  
of Rome,  
Call forth your soothsayer: As I slept, methought,  
Great Jupiter, upon his eagle back,  
Appear'd to me, with other spiritly shows.\*  
Of mine own kindred: when I wak'd, I found  
This label on my bosom; whose containing  
Is so from sense in hardness, that I can  
Make no collection of it; let him show  
His skill in the construction.  
*Luc.* Philarnonus,—  
*Sooth.* Here, my good lord.  
*Iach.* Read: and declare the meaning.  
*Sooth.* [Reads.] *When as a lion's whelp shall, to himself unknown, without seeking find, and be embraced by a piece of tender air; and when from a stately cedar shall be lopped branches, which, being dead many years, shall after revive, be jointed to the old stock, and freshly grow; then shall Posthumus end his miseries, Britain be fortunate, and flourish in peace and plenty.*  
Thou, Leonatus, art the lion's whelp;  
The fit and apt construction of thy name,  
Being Leo-natus, doth import so much:  
The piece of tender air, thy virtuous daughter,  
[To CYMBELINE.  
Which we call *mollis acris*; and *mollis acris*

\* Ghostly appearances.



We term it *mulier* : which *mulier*, I divine,  
Is this most constant wife : who, even now,  
Answering the letter of the oracle,  
Unknown to you, unsought, were clipp'd about  
With this most tender air.

*Cym.* This hath some seeming.

*Sooth.* The lofty cedar, royal Cymbeline,  
Personates thee : and thy lopp'd branches  
point

Thy two sons forth : who, by Belarius stolen,  
For many years thought dead, are now reviv'd,  
To the majestic cedar join'd ; whose issue  
Promises Britain peace and plenty.

*Cym.* Well,

By peace we will begin :—And, Caius Lucius,  
Although the victor, we submit to Cesar,  
And to the Roman empire ; promising  
To pay our wonted tribute, from the which  
We were dissuaded by our wicked queen ;  
Whom heavens, in justice, (both on her and  
her's)  
Have laid most heavy hand.

*Sooth.* The fingers of the powers above do  
tune

The harmony of this peace. The vision  
Which I made known to Lucius, ere the stroke  
Of this yet scarce-cold battle, at this instant  
Is full accomplish'd : For the Roman eagle,  
From south to west on wing soaring aloft,  
Lessen'd herself, and in the beams o'the sun  
So vanish'd ; which foreshow'd our princely  
eagle,

The imperial Cesar, should again unite  
His favour with the radiant Cymbeline,  
Which shines here in the west.

*Cym.* Laud we the gods ;

And let our crook'd snakes climb \* to their  
nostrils

From our bless'd altars ! Publish we this peace  
To all our subjects. Set we forward : Let  
A Roman and a British ensign wave

\* Rise.

Friendly together : so through Lud's town  
march :

And in the temple of great Jupiter  
Our peace we'll ratify ; seal it with feasts.—  
Set on there :— Never was a war did cease,  
Ere bloody hands were wash'd, with such a  
peace. [Exeunt]

### A SONG,

Sung by Guiderius and Arviragus over Fidele, supposed  
to be dead.

BY WILLIAM COLLINS.

To fair Fidele's grassy tomb,  
Soft maids and village hands shall bring  
Each opening sweet, of earliest bloom,  
And ripe all the breathing spring.

No wailing ghost shall dare appear  
To vex with shrieks this quiet grove ;  
But shepherd lads assemble here,  
And melting virgins own their love.

No nither'd witch shall here be seen,  
No goblins lead their nightly crew :  
The female juys shall haunt the green,  
And dress thy grave with pearly dew.

The red-breast oft at evening hours  
Shall kindly lend his little aid,  
With hoary moss, and gather'd flowers,  
To deck the ground where thou art laid.

When howling winds and beating rain,  
In tempests shake the sylvan cell :  
Or midst the chace on every plain,  
The tender thought on thee shall dwell

Each lonely scene shall thee restore,  
For thee the tear be dut, shed  
Below'd, till life could charm no more ;  
And mourn'd, till pity's self be dead.

# KING LEAR.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE subject of this interesting tragedy, which was probably written in 1605, is derived from an old historical ballad, founded on a story in Holinshed's Chronicles, and originally told by Geoffrey of Monmouth. "Lear (says the Welsh historian) was the eldest son of Bladud, nobly governed his country for sixty years, and died about 800 years before Christ." Camden tells a similar story of Iseus, king of the West Saxons, and his three daughters. The episode of Gloucester and his sons is taken from Sidney's Arcadia. Tate, the laureat, greatly altered, and in a degree polished this play, inserting new scenes or passages, and transposing or omitting others. In particular, he avoided its original heart-rending catastrophe, by which the virtue of Cordelia was suffered to perish in a just cause, contrary to the natural ideas of justice, to the hope of the reader, and to the facts of the ancient narrative. He also introduced Edgar to the audience as the sutor of Cordelia, cancelling the excellent scene in which, after being rejected as dowerless, by Burgundy, her misfortunes and her goodness recommend her to the love of the king of France. Yet the restoration of the king, and the final happiness of Cordelia, have been censured (in the Spectator especially) as at variance with true tragic feeling and poetical beauty; although it may fairly be presumed, since mankind naturally love justice, that no attention to its dictates will never make a play worse, and that an audience will generally rise more satisfied where persecuted virtue is rewarded and triumphant. Lear's struggles against his accumulated injuries, and his own strong feelings of sorrow and indignation, are exquisitely drawn. The daughters severally working him up to madness, and his finally falling a martyr to that malady, is a more deep and skilful combination of dramatic portraiture than can be found in any other writer. "There is no play (says Dr. Johnson,) which keeps the attention so constantly fixed; which so much agitates our passions and interests our curiosity." The celebrated Dr. Warton, who minutely criticised this play in the Adventurer, objected to the instances of cruelty, as too savage and too shocking. But Johnson observes, that the barbarity of the daughters is an historical fact, to which Shakespeare has added little, although he cannot so readily apologize for the extrusion of Gloucester's eyes, which is too horrid an act for dramatic exhibition, and such is must always compel the mind to relieve its distresses by incredulity. Colman, as well as Tate, re-modelled this celebrated Drama, but it is acted, with trifling variations, on the original plan of the latter.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

LEAR, *King of Britain.*  
 KING OF FRANCE.  
 DUKE OF BURGUNDY.  
 DUKE OF CORNWALL.  
 DUKE OF ALBANY.  
 EARL OF KENT.  
 EARL OF GLOSTER.  
 EDGAR, *Son to Gloucester.*  
 EDMUND, *Bastard Son to Gloucester.*  
 CURAN, *a Courtier.*  
 OLD MAN, *Tenant to Gloucester.*  
 PHYSICIAN.  
 FOOL.

OSWALD, *Steward to Goneril.*  
 AN OFFICER, *employed by Edmund.*  
 GENTLEMAN, *Attendant on Cordelia.*  
 A HERALD.  
 SERVANTS to Cornwall.

GONERIL, }  
 RIGAN, } *Daughters to Lear.*  
 CORDELIA, }

*Knights attending on the King, Officers, Messengers, Soldiers, and Attendants.*

SCENE, Britain.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—*A Room of State in King LEAR'S Palace.*

*Enter KENT, GLOSTER, and EDMUND.*

*Kent.* I thought the king had more affected the duke of Albany than Cornwall.

*Glo.* It did always seem so to us: but now, in the division of the kingdom, it appears not which of the dukes he values most; for equalities are so weigh'd, that emulations in neither can make choice of either's moiety.†

*Kent.* Is not this your son, my lord?

*Glo.* His breeding, Sir, hath been at my charge: I have so often blush'd to acknowledge him, that now I am brazed to it.

*Kent.* I cannot conceive you.

*Glo.* Sir, this young fellow's mother could: whereupon she grew round-wombed; and had, indeed, Sir, a son for her cradle, ere she had a husband for her bed. Do you smell a fault?

*Kent.* I cannot wish the fault undone, the issue of it being so proper.\*

*Glo.* But I have, Sir, a son, by order of law, some year elder than this, who yet is no dearer

\* Exactest scrutiny

† Part or division

\* Handsome

my account : though this knave came some-  
what saucily into the world before he was sent  
for, yet his mother was fair ; there was good  
sport at his making, and the whoreson must be  
acknowledged.—Do you know this noble gentle-  
man, Edmund ?

*Edm.* No, my lord.

*Glo.* My lord of Kent : remember him here-  
after as my honourable friend.

*Edm.* My services to your lordship.

*Kent.* I must love you, and sue to know you  
better.

*Edm.* Sir, I shall study deserving.

*Glo.* He hath been out nine years, and away  
he shall again :—The king is coming.

[*Trumpets sound within.*]

*Enter LEAR, CORNWALL, ALBANY, GONERIL,  
REGAN, CORDELIA, and Attendants.*

*Lear.* Attend the lords of France and Bur-  
gundy. [Gundy,

*Glo.* I shall, my liege.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and EDMUND.*]

*Lear.* Meantime we shall express our darker \*  
purpose.

Give me the map there.—Know, that we have  
divided,

In three, our kingdom : and 'tis our fast intent †  
To shake all cares and business from our age ;  
Conferring them on younger strengths, while we  
Unburden'd crawl toward death.—Our son of  
Cornwall,

And you, our no less loving son of Albany,  
We have this hour a constant will to publish  
Our daughter's several dowers, that future  
strife

May be prevented now. The princes, France  
and Burgundy,

Great rivals in our youngest daughter's love,  
Long in our court have made their amorous  
sojourn,

And here are to be answer'd.—Tell me, my  
(Since now we will divest us, both of rule,  
Interest of territory, cares of state,)†  
Which of you, shall we say, doth love us most ?  
That we our largest bounty may extend  
Where merit doth most challenge it.—Goneril,  
Our eldest-born, speak first.

*Gon.* Sir, I [matter

Do love you more than words can wield the  
Dearer than eye-sight, space and liberty ;  
Beyond what can be valued, rich or rare ;  
No less than life, with grace, health, beauty,  
honour :

As much as child e'er lov'd, or father found :  
A love that makes breath poor, and speech  
unable ;

Beyond all manner of so much I love you.

*Cor.* What shall Cordelia do ? Love, and be  
silent. [Aside.

*Lear.* Of all these bounds, even from this  
line to this,

With shadowy forests and with champains  
rich'd,

With plenteous rivers and wide-skirted meads,  
We make thee lady : To thine and Albany's  
issue [daughter,

Be this perpetual.—What says our second  
Our dearest Regan, wife to Cornwall ? Speak.

*Reg.* I am made of that self metal as my  
sister,

And prize me at her worth. In my true heart,  
I find, she names my very deed of love ;  
Only she comes too short,—that I profess  
Myself an enemy to all other joys, [senses ;  
Which the most precious square ‡ of sense pos-  
And find I am alone felicitate §  
In your dear highness' love.

*Cor.* Then poor Cordelia ! [Aside.

And yet not so ; since, I am sure, my love's  
More richer than my tongue.

*Lear.* To thee and thine hereditary ever  
Remain this ample third of our fair kingdom ;

No less in space, validity, \* and pleasure,  
Than that confirm'd on Goneril.—Now, our joy, ¶  
Although the last, not least ; to whose young  
love

The vines of France, and milk of Burgundy,  
Strive to be interest'd : † what can you say, to  
draw

A third more opulent than your sisters ? Speak.

*Cor.* Nothing, my lord.

*Lear.* Nothing ?

*Cor.* Nothing.

*Lear.* Nothing can come of nothing : speak  
again.

*Cor.* Unhappy that I am, I cannot heave  
My heart into my mouth : I love your majesty  
According to my bond ; nor more, nor less.

*Lear.* How, how, Cordelia ? mend your  
speech a little,  
Lest it may mar your fortunes.

*Cor.* Good my lord,

You have begot me, bred me, lov'd me : I  
Return those duties back as are right fit,  
Obey you, love you, and most honour you.

Why have my sisters husbands, if they say,  
They love you all ? Happily, when I shall wed,  
That lord, whose hand must take my plight,  
shall carry

Half my love with him, half my care, and duty :  
Sure, I shall never marry like my sisters,  
To love my father all ?

*Lear.* But goes this with thy heart ?

*Cor.* Ay, good my lord.

*Lear.* So young, and so untender ?

*Cor.* So young, my lord, and true.

*Lear.* Let it be so.—Thy truth then be thy  
dower :

For, by the sacred radiance of the sun ;  
The mysteries of Hecate, and the night ;  
By all the operations of the orbs,  
From whom we do exist, and cease to be,  
Here I disclaim all my paternal care,  
Propinquity † and property of blood,  
And as a stranger to my heart and me  
Hold thee, from this, § for ever. The barbarous  
Scythian,

Or he that makes his generation ‡ messes  
To gorge his appetite, shall to my bosom  
Be as well neighbour'd, pitied, and reliev'd,  
As thou my sometime daughter.

*Kent.* Good my liege,—

*Lear.* Peace, Kent !

Come not between the dragon and his wrath :  
I lov'd her most, and thought to set my rest  
On her kind nursery.—Hence, and avoid my  
sight !— [To CORDELIA.

So be my grave my peace, as here I give  
Her father's heart from her !—Call France ;—  
Who stirs ?

Call Burgundy.—Cornwall and Albany,  
With my two daughter's dowers digest this  
third :

Let pride, which she calls plainness, marry her.  
I do invest you jointly with my power,  
Pre-eminence, and all the large effects  
That troop with majesty.—Ourselves, by monthly  
course,

With reservation of a hundred knights,  
By you to be sustain'd, shall our abode [retain  
Make with you by due turns. Only we still  
The name, and all the additions ¶ to a king ;

The sway,  
Revenue, execution of the rest, \*  
Beloved sons, be yours : which to confirm,  
This coronet part between you.

[*Giving the Crown.*]

*Kent.* Royal Lear,  
Whom I have ever honour'd as my king,  
Lov'd as my father, as my master follow'd,

As my great patron thought on in my prayers,—  
*Lear.* The bow is bent and drawn, make  
from the shaft.

\* Value.

† *Interest'd*, has the same meaning as *interested*, though  
one is derived from the French, the other from the  
Latin.

‡ Kindred. § From this time. ¶ His children.

\* Title.

\* More secret. † Determined resolution.

‡ Comprehension. § Made happy.

Scene 1.

KING LEAR.

291

*Kent.* Let it fall rather, though the fork invade  
The region of my heart: be Kent unmannerly,  
When Lear is mad. What wouldst thou do, old man?  
Think'st thou that duty shall have dread to  
When power to flattery bows? To plainness  
honour's bound,  
When majesty stoops to folly. Reverse thy  
And, in thy best consideration, check  
This hideous rashness: answer my life, my  
judgment,  
Thy youngest daughter does not love thee least;  
Nor are those empty-hearted, whose low sound  
Reverbs \* no hollowness.

*Lear.* Kent, on thy life, no more.

*Kent.* My life I never held but as a pawn  
To wage against thine enemies; nor fear to  
lose it,

Thy safety being the motive.

*Lear.* Out of my sight!

*Kent.* See better, Lear; and let me still re-  
The true blank † of thine eye. [main,

*Lear.* Now, by Apollo,—

*Kent.* Now, by Apollo, king,

Thou swear'st at thy gods in vain.

*Lear.* O vassal miscalent!

[Laying his Hand upon his Sword.

*Alb. Corn.* Dear Sir, forbear.

*Kent.* Do:

Kill thy physician, and the fee bestow  
Upon the foul disease. Revoke thy gift;  
Or, whilst I can vent clamour from my throat,  
I'll tell thee, thou dost evil.

*Lear.* Hear me, recreant!

On thine allegiance hear me!—  
Since thou hast sought to make us break our  
vow, [pride,

(Which we durst never yet,) and, with strain'd  
To come betwixt our sentence and our power;  
(Which nor our nature nor our place can bear,)  
Our potency make good, take thy reward.  
Five days we do allot thee, for provision  
To shield thee from diseases of the world;  
And, on the sixth, to turn thy hated back  
Upon our kingdom: if, on the tenth day follow-  
ing,

Thy banish'd trunk be found in our dominions,  
The moment is thy death: Away! By Jupiter,  
This shall not be revok'd.

*Kent.* Fare thee well, king: since thus thou  
wilt appear,

Freedom lives hence, and banishment is here.—  
The gods to their dear shelter take thee, maid,

[To CORDILIA.  
That justly think'st, and has most rightly said!—  
And your large speeches may your deeds approve,

[To REGAN and GONERIL.  
That good effects may spring from words of  
love.—

Thus Kent, O princes, bids you all adieu:  
He'll shape his old course ‡ in a country new.  
[Exit.

*Re-enter GLOSTER; with FRANCE, BURGUNDY,  
and Attendants.*

*Glo.* Here's France and Burgundy, my noble  
lord,

*Lear.* My lord of Burgundy,  
We first address towards you, who with this  
king [least,  
Hath rival'd for our daughter; What, in the  
Will you require in present dower with her,  
Or cease your quest of love? §

*Bur.* Most royal majesty,

I crave no more than hath your highness offer'd,  
Nor will you tender less.

*Lear.* Right noble Burgundy,  
When she was dear to us, we did hold her so;  
But now her price is fall'n: Sir, there she  
stands;

If aught within that little seeming \* substance,  
Or all of it, with our displeasure pleas'd,  
And nothing more, may hily like your grace,  
She's there, and she is yours.

*Bur.* I know no answer.

*Lear.* Sir,

Will you, with those infirmities she owes, †  
Unfriended, new adopted to our hate,  
Dower'd with our curse, and stranger'd with our  
oath,

Take her, or leave her?

*Bur.* Pardon me, royal Sir;

Election makes not up ‡ on such conditions.

*Lear.* Then leave her, Sir; for, by the power  
that made me,

I tell you all her wealth.—For you, great king,  
[To FRANCE.

I would not from your love make such a stray,  
To match you where I hate; therefore beseech  
you

To avert § your liking a more worthier way,  
Than on a wretch whom nature is ashamed  
Almost to acknowledge hers.

*France.* This is most strange!

That she, that even but now was your best object,  
The argument of your praise, balm of your age,  
Most best, most dearest, should in this trice of  
time

Commit a thing so monstrous, to dismantle  
So many folds of favour! Sure, her offence  
Must be of such unnatural degree,  
That monsters it, or your fore-vouch'd ‖ affection  
Fall into taint: ¶ which to believe of her,  
Must be a faith, that reason without miracle  
Could never plant in me.

*Cor.* I yet beseech your majesty,

(If for \*\* I want that glib and oily art, [intend.  
To speak and purpose not: since what I will  
I'll do't before I speak, that you make known  
It is no vicious blot, murder, or foulness,  
No unchaste action, or dishonour'd step,  
That hath depriv'd me of your grace and favour:  
But even for want of that, for which I am  
richer—

A still-soliciting eye, and such a tongue  
That I am glad I have not, though not to have it,  
Hath lost me in your liking.

*Lear.* Better thou

Hadst not been born, than not to have pleas'd  
me better.

*France.* Is it but this? a tardiness in nature,  
Which often leaves the history unspoke,  
That it intends to do?—My lord of Burgundy,  
What say you to the lady? Love is not love,  
When it is mingled with respects, that stand  
Aloof from the entire point. †† Will you have  
she is herself a dowry. [her ‡

*Bur.* Royal Lear,

Give but that portion which yourself propos'd,  
And here I take Cordelia by the hand,  
Duchess of Burgundy.

*Lear.* Nothing: I have sworn: I am firm.

*Bur.* I am sorry, then, you have so lost a  
That you must lose a husband. [father,

*Cor.* Peace be with Burgundy!

Since that respects of fortune are his love,  
I shall not be his wife.

*France.* Fairest Cordelia, thou art most rich,  
being poor;

Most choice, forsaken; and most lov'd, despis'd:  
Thee and thy virtues here I seize upon:  
Be it lawful, I take up what's cast away.

Gods, gods! 'tis strange, that from their cold'st  
neglect

My love should kindle to inflam'd respect.—  
Thy dowerless daughter, king, thrown to my  
chance,

Is queen of us, of ours, and our fair France:  
Not all the dukes of wat'rish Burgundy  
Shall buy this unpriz'd precious maid of me.—

\* Reverberates. † The mark to shoot at.  
‡ Follow his old mode of life. § Amorous expedition.

\* Specious. † Concludes not. ‡ Turn.  
† Former declaration of. ¶ Reproach.  
\*\* Because. †† "Who seeks for aught in love but love alone!"

And them farewell, Cordelia, though unkind:  
Thou lostest here, a better where\* to find.

*Lear.* Thou hast her, France: let her be thine;  
for we

Have no such daughter, nor shall ever see  
That face of her's again:—Therefore be gone,  
Without our grace, our love, our benison:—  
Come, noble Burgundy.

[*Flourish. Enter LEAR, BURGUNDY, CORNWALL, ALBANY, GLOSTER, and Attendants.*  
*France.* Bid farewell to your sisters.

*Cor.* The jewels of our father with wash'd  
eyes

Cordelia leaves you: I know you what you are;  
And, like a sister, am most loath to call  
Your faults as they are nam'd. Use well our  
father:

To your professed bosoms I commit him:

But yet, alas! stood I within his grace,  
I would prefer him to a better place.

So farewell to you both.

*Gon.* Prescribe not us our duties.

*Reg.* Let your study

Be to content your lord; who hath receiv'd you  
At fortune's alms. You have obedience scanted,  
And well are worth the want that you have  
wanted.

*Cor.* Time shall unfold what plaited; cunning  
hides;

Who cover faults, at last shame them derides.  
Well may you prosper!

*France.* Come, my fair Cordelia.

[*Exeunt FRANCE and CORDELIA.*

*Gon.* Sister, it is not a little I have to say, of  
what most nearly appertains to us both. I  
think our father will hence to-night.

*Reg.* That's most certain, and with you; next  
month with us.

*Gon.* You see how full of changes his age is;  
the observation we have made of it hath not  
been little: he always loved our sister most;  
and with what poor judgment he hath now cast  
her off, appears too grossly.

*Reg.* 'Tis the infirmity of his age: yet he hath  
ever but slenderly known himself.

*Gon.* The best and soundest of his time hath  
been but rash; then must we look to receive  
from his age, not alone the imperfections of  
long-engrafted condition, § but, therewithal, the  
unruly waywardness that infirm and choleric  
years bring with them.

*Reg.* Such unconstant starts are we like to  
have from him, as this of Kent's banishment.

*Gon.* There is further compliment of leave-  
taking between France and him. Pray you, let  
us shut together: If our father carry authority  
with such dispositions as he bears, this last sur-  
render of his will but offend us.

*Reg.* We shall further think of it.

*Gon.* We must do something, and i'the heat. ||  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—A Hall in the Earl of GLOSTER'S  
Castle.

*Enter EDMUND, with a Letter.*

*Edm.* Thou, nature, art my goddess; to thy  
law

My services are bound: Wherefore should I  
Stand in the plague\* of custom; and permit  
The curiosity\*\* of nations to deprive me,  
For that I am some twelve or fourteen moon-  
shines

Lag of a brother? Why hastard? wherefore base?  
When my dimensions are as well compact,  
My mind as generous, and my shape as true,  
As honest madman's issue? Why brand they us  
With base? with baseness? bastardy? base,  
base?

Who, in the lusty stealth of nature, take  
More composition and fierce quality,

Than doth, within a dull, stale, tired bed,  
Go to the creating a whole tribe of fops,  
Got 'tween asleep and wake?—Well then,  
Legitimate Edgar, I must have your land:  
Our father's love is to the bastard Edmund,  
As to the legitimate: Fine word,—legitimate!  
Well, my legitimate, if this letter speed,  
And my invention thrive, Edmund the base  
Shall top the legitimate. I grow; I prosper:—  
Now, gods, stand up for bastards!

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Kent banish'd thus! And France is  
cholier parted!

And the king gone to-night! subscrib'd\* his  
Confin'd to exhibition!† All this done [power]  
Upon the gad!‡—Edmund! How now, what  
news?

*Edm.* So please your lordship, none.

[*Putting up the Letter.*  
*Glo.* Why so earnestly seek you to put up that  
letter?

*Edm.* I know no news, my lord.

*Glo.* What paper were you reading?

*Edm.* Nothing, my lord.

*Glo.* No? What need'd then that terrible  
despatch of it into your pocket? the quality of  
nothing hath not such need to hide itself.  
Let's see: Come, if it be nothing, I shall not  
need spectacles.

*Edm.* I beseech you, Sir, pardon me: it is a  
letter from my brother, that I have not all o'er-  
read, for so much as I have perused, I find it  
not fit for your over-looking.

*Glo.* Give me the letter, Sir.

*Edm.* I shall offend, either to detain or give  
it. The contents, as in part I understand them,  
are to blame.

*Glo.* Let's see, let's see.

*Edm.* I hope, for my brother's justification,  
he wrote this but as an essay § or taste of my  
virtue.

*Glo.* [Reads.] *This policy and reverence  
of age makes the world bitter to the best of  
our times, keeps our fortunes from us till  
our oldness cannot relish them. I begin to  
find an idle and fond bondage in the op-  
pression of aged tyranny; who snays, not as  
it hath power, but as it is suffered. Come to  
me, that of this I may speak more. If our  
father should sleep till I waked him, you  
should enjoy half his revenue for ever, and  
live the beloved of your brother, Edgar.—  
Humph—Conspiracy!—Sleep till I waked him  
—you should enjoy half his revenue.—My son  
Edgar! Had he a hand to write this? a heart and  
brain to breed it in?—When came this to you?  
Who brought it?*

*Edm.* It was not brought me, my lord, there's  
the cunning of it; I found it thrown in at the  
casement of my closet.

*Glo.* You know the character to be your  
brother's?

*Edm.* If the matter were good, my lord, I  
durst swear it were his; but, in respect of that,  
I would fain think it were not.

*Glo.* It is his.

*Edm.* It is his hand, my lord; but, I hope his  
heart is not in the contents.

*Glo.* Hath he never heretofore sounded you  
in this business?

*Edm.* Never, my lord: But I have often  
heard him maintain† it to be fit, that, sons at  
perfect age, and fathers declining, the father  
should be as ward to the son, and the son  
manage his revenue.

*Glo.* O villain, villain!—His very opinion in  
the letter!—Abhorred villain! Unnatural, de-  
testable, brutish villain! worse than brutish!—Go  
sirrah, seek him; I'll apprehend him:—Abomi-  
nable villain!—Where is he?

*Edm.* I do not well know, my lord. If it

\* Place. † Blessing. ‡ Folded.  
§ Qualities of mind. ¶ Strike while the iron's hot.  
|| The injustice. \*\* The nicety of civil institutions.

\* Surrendered. † Allowance. ‡ Suddenly  
¶ Trial. ¶ Weak and foolish

shall please you to suspend your indignation against my brother, till you can derive from him better testimony of his intent, you shall run a certain course: where,\* if you violently proceed against him, mistaking his purpose, it would make a great gap in your own honour, and shake in pieces the heart of his obedience. I dare pawn down my life for him, that he hath writ this to feel my affection to your honour† and to no other pretence‡ of danger.

*Glo.* Think you so?

*Edm.* If your honour judge it meet, I will place you where you shall hear us confer of this, and by an auricular assurance have your satisfaction; and that without any further delay than this very evening.

*Glo.* He cannot be such a monster.

*Edm.* Nor is not, sure.

*Glo.* To his father, that so tenderly and entirely loves him.—Heaven and earth!—Edmund, seek him out: wind me into him, I pray you: frame the business after your own wisdom: I would unstate myself, to be in a due resolution.§

*Edm.* I will seek him, Sir, presently; convey|| the business as I shall find means, and acquaint you withal.

*Glo.* These late eclipses in the sun and moon portend no good to us: Though the wisdom of nature can reason it thus and thus, yet nature finds itself scourged by the sequent effects: love cools, friendship falls off, brothers divide: in cities, mutinies; in countries, discord; in palaces, treason; and the bond cracked between son and father. This villain of mine comes under the prediction; there's son against father: the king falls from bias of nature; there's father against child. We have seen the best of our time: Machinations, hollownests, treachery, and all ruinous disorders, follow us disquietly to our graves.—Find out this villain, Edmund, it shall lose thee nothing: do it carefully:—And the noble and true-hearted Kent banished! his offence, honesty!—Strange! strange! [Exit.]

*Edm.* This is the excellent foppery of the world! that, when we are sick in fortune, (often the surfeit of our own behaviour,) we make guilty of our disasters, the sun, the moon, and the stars; as if we were villains by necessity; fools, by heavenly compulsion; knaves, thieves, and treachers,\*\* by spherical predominance; drunkards, liars, and adulterers, by an enforced obedience of planetary influence; and all that we are evil in, by a divine thrusting on: An admirable evasion of whoremaster man, to lay his goatish disposition to the charge of a star! My father compounded with my mother under the dragon's tail; and my nativity was under wrsa major;†† so that it follows, I am rough and lecherous.—Tut, I should have been that I am, had the maidenliest star in the firmament twinkled on my bastardizing. Edgar—

*Enter EDGAR.*

and pat he comes, like the catastrophe of the old comedy: My cue is villainous melancholy, with a sigh like Toin o' Bedlam.—O these eclipses do portend these divisions! Fa, sol, la, mi, &c.

*Edg.* How now, brother Edmund? What serious contemplation are you in?

*Edm.* I am thinking, brother, of a prediction I read this other day, what should follow these eclipses.

*Edg.* Do you busy yourself with that?

*Edm.* I promise you, the effects he writes of succeed unhappily; as of unnaturalness between the child and the parent; death, dearth, dissolu-

tions of ancient amities; divisions in state; menaces and maledictions against king and nobles; needless dilidencies, banishment of friends, dissipation of cohorts, nuptial breaches, and I know not what.

*Edg.* How long have you been a sectary astronomical?

*Edm.* Come, come, when saw you my father last?

*Edg.* Why, the night gone by.

*Edm.* Spake you with him?

*Edg.* Ay, two hours together.

*Edm.* Parted you in good terms? Found you no displeasure in him, by word or countenance?

*Edg.* None at all.

*Edm.* Berthink yourself, wherein you may have offended him; and at my entreaty, forbear his presence, till some little time hath qualified the heat of his displeasure; which at this instant so rageth in him, that with the mischief of your person it would scarcely allay.

*Edg.* Some villain hath done me wrong.

*Edm.* That's my fear. I pray you, have a continent† forbearance, till the speed of his rage goes slower; and, as I say, retire with me to my lodging, from whence I will fitly bring you to hear my lord speak: Pray you, go; there's my key:—If you do stir abroad, go armed.

*Edg.* Armed, brother?

*Edm.* Brother, I advise you to the best: go armed; I am no honest man, if there be any good meaning towards you: I have told you what I have seen and heard, but faintly; nothing like the image and horror of it: Pray you, away.

*Edg.* Shall I hear from you anon?

*Edm.* I do serve you in this business.—

[Exit EDGAR.]

A credulous father, and a brother noble, Whose nature is so far from doing harm, That he suspects none: on whose foolish honesty

My practices ride easy!—I see the business.—

Let me, if not by birth, have lauds by wit:

All with me's meet, that I can fashion fit.

[Exit]

### SCENE III.—A Room in the Duke of ALBANY'S Palace.

*Enter GONERIL and STEWARD.*

*Gon.* Did my father strike my gentleman for chiding of his fool?

*Stew.* Ay, madam.

*Gon.* By day and night! he wrongs me; every hour

He flashes into one gross crime or other,

That sets us all at odds: I'll not endure it:

His knights grow riotous, and himself upbraids

us [ing]

On every trifle:—When he returns from hunt-

ing I will not speak with him; say, I am sick:—

If you come slack of former services,

You shall do well; the fault of it I'll answer.

*Stew.* He's coming, madam; I hear him.

[Horns within.]

*Gon.* Put on what weary negligence you

please, [question:]

You and your fellows; I'd have it come to

if he dislike it, let him to my sister,

Whose mind and mine, I know, in that are one,

Not to be over-ruled. Idle old man,

That still would manage those authorities,

That he hath given away!—Now, by my life,

Old fools are babes again; and must be used

With checks, as flatteries,—when they are seen

Remember what I have said. [about.]

*Stew.* Very well, madam.

*Gon.* And let his knights have colder looks

among you:

What grows of ill, no matter; advise your fel-

lows so:

\* Whereas. † The usual address to a lord. ‡ Design.

§ Descend from my dignity by privately listening, to be sure of the truth.

|| Manage. ¶ Following. \*\* Traitors

†† The constellation so named.

‡‡ These sounds are unnatural and offensive in music.

\* For cohorts some editors read courts. † Temperate.

I would breed from hence occasions, and I shall,  
That I may speak:—I'll write straight to my  
sister,  
To hold my very course:—Prepare for dinner.  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—A Hall in the same.

Enter KENT, disguised.

Kent. If but as well I other accents borrow,  
That can my speech diffuse,\* my good intent  
May carry through itself to that full issue  
For which I raz'd† my likeness.—Now, banish'd  
Kent,  
If thou canst serve where thou dost stand  
condemn'd,  
(So may it come!) thy master, whom thou lov'st,  
Shall find thee full of labours.

Horns within. Enter LEAR, KNIGHTS, and Attendants.

Lear. Let me not stay a jot for dinner: go,  
get it ready. [Exit an Attendant.] How now,  
what art thou?

Kent. A man, Sir.

Lear. What dost thou profess? What wouldst  
thou with us?

Kent. I do profess to be no less than I seem;  
to serve him truly, that will put me in trust;  
to love him that is honest; to converse with  
him that is wise, and says little; to fear judg-  
ment; to fight, when I cannot choose; and to  
eat no fish.

Lear. What art thou?

Kent. A very honest-hearted fellow, and as  
poor as the king.

Lear. If thou be as poor for a subject, as he  
is for a king, thou art poor enough. What  
would'st thou?

Kent. Service.

Lear. Who wouldst thou serve?

Kent. You.

Lear. Dost thou know me, fellow?

Kent. No, Sir; but you have that in your  
countenance, which I would fain call master.

Lear. What's that?

Kent. Authority.

Lear. What services canst thou do?

Kent. I can keep honest counsel, ride, run,  
mar a curious tale in telling it, and deliver a  
plain message bluntly: that which ordinary men  
are fit for, I am qualify'd in; and the best of  
me is diligence.

Lear. How old art thou?

Kent. Not so young, Sir, to love a woman for  
singing; nor so old, to dote on 'her for any  
thing: I have years on my back forty-eight.

Lear. Follow me: thou shalt serve me; if I  
like thee no worse after dinner, I will not part  
from thee yet.—Dinner, ho, dinner!—Where's  
my knave? my fool? Go you, and call my fool  
hither:

Enter STEWARD.

You, you, Sirrah, where's my daughter?

Stew. So please you,—

Lear. What says the fellow there? Call the  
clotpoll back.—Where's my fool, ho!—I think  
the world's asleep.—How now! where's that  
mongrel?

Knight. He says, my lord, your daughter is  
not well.

Lear. Why came not the slave back to me,  
when I call'd him?

Knight. Sir, he answer'd me in the roundest  
manner, he would not.

Lear. He would not!

Knight. My lord, I know not what the matter  
is; but, to my judgment, your highness is not  
constrain'd with that ceremonious affection as  
you were wont; there's a great abatement of

kindness appears, as well in the general depen-  
dants, as in the duke himself also, and your  
daughter.

Lear. Ha! say'st thou so?

Knight. I beseech you, pardon me, my lord,  
if I be mistaken; for my duty cannot be silent,  
when I think your highness is wrong'd.

Lear. Thou but remember'st me of mine own  
conception; I have perceived a most faint ne-  
glect of late; which I have rather blamed as  
mine own jealous curiosity,\* than as a very  
pretence† and purpose of unkindness: I will  
look further into't.—But where's my fool? I  
have not seen him these two days.

Knight. Since my young lady's going into  
France, Sir, the fool hath much pined away.

Lear. No more of that; I have noted it well.  
—Go you, and tell my daughter I would speak  
with her.—Go you, call hither my fool.—

Re-enter STEWARD.

O you Sir, you Sir, come you hither: Who am  
I, Sir?

Stew. My lady's father.

Lear. My lady's father? my lord's knave: you  
whoreson dog! you slave! you cur!

Stew. I am none of this, my lord; I beseech  
you, pardon me.

Lear. Do you bandy looks with me, you rascal?  
[Striking him.]

Stew. I'll not be struck, my lord.

Kent. Nor tripp'd neither; you base foot-  
ball player. [Tripping up his Heels.]

Lear. I thank thee, fellow; thou servest me,  
and I'll love thee.

Kent. Come, Sir, arise, away; I'll teach you  
differences; away, away: if you will measure  
your lubber's length again, tarry; but away: go  
to; have you wisdom? so.

[Pushes the STEWARD out.]

Lear. Now, my friendly knave, I thank thee;  
there's earnest of thy service.

[Giving KENT Money.]

Enter FOOL.

Fool. Let me hire him too;—Here's my cox-  
comb. [Giving KENT his Cap.]

Lear. How now, my pretty knave? how dost  
thou?

Fool. Sirrah, you were best take my cox-  
comb.

Kent. Why, fool?

Fool. Why? For taking one's part that is out  
of favour? Nay, an thou canst not smile as the  
wind sits, thou'lt catch cold shortly: There,  
take my coxcomb: Why, this fellow has banish'd  
two of his daughters, and did the third a  
blessing against his will; if thou follow him,  
thou must needs wear my coxcomb.—How now,  
nuncle! 'Would I had two coxcombs, and two  
daughters!

Lear. Why, my boy?

Fool. If I gave them all my living, I'd keep  
my coxcombs myself: There's mine; beg an-  
other of thy daughters.

Lear. Take heed, Sirrah; the whip.

Fool. Truth's a dog that must to kennel! he  
must be whipp'd out, when Lady, the brach, §  
may stand by the fire and stink.

Lear. A pestilent gall to me!

Fool. Sirrah, I'll teach thee a speech.

Lear. Do.

Fool. Mark it, nuncle:—

Have more than thou showest,  
Speak less than thou knowest,  
Lend less than thou owest, ¶  
Hide more than thou dost,  
Learn more than thou trowest, ¶  
Set less than thou throwest;  
Leave thy drink and thy whore,  
And keep in-a-door,

\* Penitential jealousy.

† Design.

‡ Kettle or property.

§ Bitch hound. ¶ Owest, possesseth. ¶ Believest.

\* Disorder, disguise.

‡ Keep company.

† Effaced.

And thou shalt have more

Than two tens to a score,

*Lear.* This is nothing, fool.

*Fool.* Then 'tis like the breath of an unfeeling lawyer; you gave me nothing for't: Can you make no use of nothing, nuncle?

*Lear.* Why, no, boy; nothing can be made out of nothing.

*Fool.* Pr'ythee, tell him, so much the rent of his land comes to; he will not believe a fool.

[To KENT.]

*Lear.* A bitter fool!

*Fool.* Dost thou know the difference, my boy, between a bitter fool and a sweet fool?

*Lear.* No, lad; teach me.

*Fool.* That lord, that counsel'd thee

To give away thy land,

Come place him here by me,

Or do thou for him stand:

The sweet and bitter fool

Will presently appear;

The one in motley here,

The other found out there.

*Lear.* Dost thou call me fool, boy?

*Fool.* All thy other titles thou hast given away; that thou wast born with.

*Kent.* This is not altogether fool, my lord.

*Fool.* No, 'faith, lords and great men will not let me; if I had a monopoly out, they would have part on't: and ladies too, they will not let me have all fool to myself; they'll be snatching.—Give me an egg, nuncle, and I'll give thee two crowns.

*Lear.* What two crowns shall they be?

*Fool.* Why, after I have cut the egg i'the middle, and eat up the meat, the two crowns of the egg. When thou clovest thy crown i'the middle, and gavest away both parts, thou borest thine ass on thy back over the dirt: Thou hadst little wit in thy bald crown, when thou gavest thy golden one away. If I speak like myself in this, let him be whipp'd that first finds it so.

[Singing.]

*Fools had ne'er less grace \* in a year;*

*For use men are grown foppish;*

*And know not how their wits to wear,*

*Their manners are so apish.*

*Lear.* When were you wont to be so full of songs, Sirrah?

*Fool.* I have used it, nuncle, ever since thou madest thy daughters thy mother: for when thou gavest them the rod, and put'st down thine own breeches,

*Then they for sudden joy did weep, [Singing.]*

*And I for sorrow sung,*

*That such a king should play bo-peep.*

*And go th' fools among.*

Pr'ythee, nuncle, keep a schoolmaster that can teach thy fool to lie; I would fain learn to lie.

*Lear.* If you lie, Sirrah, we'll have you whipp'd.

*Fool.* I marvel, what kin thou and thy daughters are: they'll have me whipp'd for speaking true, thou'lt have me whipp'd for lying; and, sometimes, I am whipp'd for holding my peace. I had rather be any kind of thing, than a fool: and yet I would not be thee, nuncle; thou hast pared thy wit o'both sides, and left nothing in the middle: Here comes one o'the parings.

Enter GONERIL.

*Lear.* How now, daughter! what makes that frontlet? on! Methinks, you are too much of late i'the frown.

*Fool.* Thou wast a pretty fellow, when thou hadst no need to care for her frowning; now thou art an O; without a figure: I am better than thou art now; I am a fool, thou art nothing.

\* Favour.

† Part of a woman's head-dress, to which Lear compares her frowning brow.

‡ A cypher.

ing.—Yes, forsooth, I will hold my tongue; so your face [To GON.] bids me, though you say nothing. Mum, mum,

He that keeps nor crust nor crum,

Weary of all, shall want some.—

That's a sheal'd peascock.\*

[Pointing to LEAR.]

*Gon.* Not only, Sir, this your all-licens'd fool,

But other of your insolent retinue

Do hourly carp and quarrel; breaking forth

in rank and not-to-be-endured riots. Sir

I had thought, by making this well known unto you,

To have found a safe redress; but now grow fearful,

By what yourself too late have spoke and done,

That you protect this course, and put it on

By your allowance; † which if you should, the fault

Would not 'scape censure, nor the redresses sleep;

Which, in the tender of a wholesome weal, ‡

Might in their working do you that offence,

Which else were shame, that then necessity

Will call discreet proceeding.

*Fool.* For you trow, nuncle,

The hedge-sparrow fed the cuckoo so long,

That it had its head bit off by its young.

So, out went the candle, and we were left darkling.

*Lear.* Are you our daughter?

*Gon.* Come, Sir, I would you could make use of that good wisdom whereof I know you are fraught; † and put away these dispositions, which of late transform you from what you rightly are.

*Fool.* May not an ass know when the cart draws the horse?—Whoop, Jug! I love thee.

*Lear.* Does any here know me?—Why this is not Lear: does Lear walk thus? speak thus? Where are his eyes? Either his notion weakens, or his discernings are lethargied.—Sleeping or waking?—Ha! sure, 'tis not so.—Who is it that can tell me who I am?—Lear's shadow? I would learn that; for by the marks of sovereignty, knowledge, and reason, I should be false persuaded I had daughters.—

*Fool.* Which they will make an obedient father.

*Lear.* Your name, fair gentilewoman?

*Gon.* Come, Sir;

This admiration is much o'the favour †

Of other your new pranks. I do beseech you

To understand my purposes aright:

As you are old and reverend, you should be wise:

Here do you keep a hundred knights and squires;

Men so disordered, so debauch'd, and bold,

That this our court, infected with their manners,

Shows like a riotous inn; epicurism and lust

Make it more like a tavern or a brothel,

Than a grave's palace. The shame itself doth

For instant remedy: Be thee desir'd † [speak]

By her, that else will take the thing she begs,

A little to disquantity your train;

And the remainder, that shall still depend,\*\*

To be such men as may besort your age,

And know themselves and you.

*Lear.* Darkness and devils!

Saddle my horses; call my train together.—

Degenerate bastard! I'll not trouble thee;

Yet have I left a daughter.

*Gon.* You strike my people; and your disorder'd rabble

Make servants of their betters.

Enter ALBANY.

*Lear.* Woo, that too late repents,—O Sir, are you come?

\* A mere hawk which contains nothing.

† Approbation. ‡ Well-governed estate.

§ Stored. ¶ Complexion.

\*\* Continue in service.

it may be made.



Is it your will? [To ALB.] Speak, Sir.—Prepare  
my horses.

Stude! thou marble-hearted fiend,  
More hideous, when thou show'st thee in a  
child,

Than the sea-monster!

ALB. Pray, Sir, be patient.

Lear. Defested kite! thou liest:

[To GONERIL.

My train are men of choice and rarest parts,  
That all particulars of duty know:  
And in the most exact regard support  
The worship of their name.—O most small

fault,  
How ugly didst thou in Cordelia show!

Which, like an engine,\* wrench'd my frame of  
nature

From the fix'd place; drew from my heart all  
And added to the gall. O Lear, Lear, Lear!

Beat at this gate that let thy folly in,  
[Striking his Head.

And thy dear judgment out!—Go, go, my  
people.

ALB. My lord, I am guiltless, as I am igno-  
Of what hath mov'd you: [rant

Lear. It may be so, my lord.—Hear, nature,  
hear;

Dear goddess, hear! Suspend thy purpose, if  
Thou didst intend to make this creature fruitful!  
Into her womb convey sterility!

Dry up in her the organs of increase;  
And from her derogate† body never spring

A babe to honour her! If she must teem,  
Create her child of spleen; that it may live,

And be a thwart disnatur'd torment to her!  
Let it stamp wrinkles in her brow of youth!

With cadent‡ tears fret channels in her cheeks;  
Turn all her mother's pails and benefits

To laughter and contempt; that she may feel  
How sharper than a serpent's tooth it is

To have a thankless child!—Away, away!  
[Exit.

ALB. Now, gods that we adore, whereof comes  
this?

Gon. Never afflict yourself to know the cause;  
But let his disposition have that scope  
That dotage gives it.

Re-enter LEAR.

Lear. What, fifty of my followers, at a clap!  
Within a fortnight!

ALB. What's the matter, Sir?

Lear. I'll tell thee:—Life and death! I am  
asham'd

That thou hast power to shake my manhood  
thus: [To GONERIL.

That these hot tears, which break from me  
perforce,

Should make thee worth them.—Blasts and fogs  
upon thee!

The untented§ woundings of a father's curse  
Pierce every sense about thee:—Old fond eyes,

Bewep this cause again, I'll pluck you out;  
And cast you, with the waters that you lose,

To temper clay.—Ha! it is come to this!  
Let it be so:—Yet have I left a daughter,

Who, I am sure, is kind and comfortable;¶  
When she shall hear this of thee, with her nails

She'll flay thy wolfish visage. Thou shalt find,  
That I'll resume the shape which thou dost  
think

I have cast off for ever; thou shalt, I warrant  
thee.

[Exit LEAR, KENT, and Attendants.

Gon. Do you mark that, my lord?

ALB. I cannot be so partial, Goneril,  
To the great love I bear you,—

Gon. Pray you, content.—What, Oswald, ho!  
You, Sir, more knave than fool, after your  
master.

[To the FOOL.  
Fool. Nuncie Lear, nuncie Lear, tarry, and  
take the fool with thee.

A fox, when one has caught her,

And such a daughter,

Should sure to the slaughter,

If my cap would buy a halter;

So the fool follows after. [Exit

Gon. This man hath had good counsel:—A  
hundred knights!

'Tis politic and safe to let him keep  
At point,\* a hundred knights! Yes, that on

every dream,

Each buzz, each fancy, each complaint, dislike,  
He may enguard his dotage with their powers,

And hold our lives in mercy.—Oswald, I say!—  
ALB. Well, you may fear too far.

Gon. Safer than trust:  
Let me still take away the harms I fear.

Not fear still to be taken. I know his heart:  
What he hath utter'd, I have writ my sister;

If she sustain'd him and his hundred knights,  
When I have show'd the unfitness—How now,  
Oswald?

Enter STEWARD.

What, have you wit that letter to my sister?  
Stew. Ay, madam.

Gon. Take you some company, and away to  
horse:

Inform her full of my particular fear;  
And thereto add such reasons of your own,

As may compact it more. Get you gone;  
And hasten your return. [Exit STEW.] No, no,

my lord,

This milky gentleness, and course of your's,  
Though I condemn it not, yet, under pardon,

You are much more attack'd‡ for want of wit  
Than prais'd for harmful mildness. [dom,

ALB. How far your eyes may pierce, I can  
not tell;

Striving to better, oft we mar what's well.  
Gon. Nay, then—

ALB. Well, well; the event. [Exit

SCENE V.—Court before the same.

Enter LEAR, KENT, and FOOL.

Lear. Go you before to Gloster with these let-  
ters: acquaint my daughter no farther with any  
thing you know, than comes from her demand

out of the letter: If your diligence be not speedy,  
I shall be there before you.

Kent. I will not sleep, my lord, till I have  
delivered your letter. [Exit.

Fool. If a man's brains were in his heels,  
wer't not in danger of kibes?

Lear. Ay, boy.

Fool. Then I pry'thee, be merry; thy wit  
shall not go slipshod.

Lear. Ha, ha, ha!

Fool. Shalt see, thy other daughter will use  
thee kindly: for though she's as like this as a  
crab is like an apple, yet I can tell what I can  
tell.

Lear. Why, what canst thou tell, my boy?

Fool. She will taste as like this, as a crab  
does to a crab. Thou canst tell, why one's nose  
stands i'th' middle of his face?

Lear. No.

Fool. Why, to keep his eyes on either side his  
nose; that what a man cannot smell out, he  
may spy into.

Lear. I did her wrong:—

Fool. Canst tell how an oyster makes his  
shell?

Lear. No.

Fool. Nor I neither; but I can tell why a  
snail has a house.

Lear. Why?

Fool. Why, to put his head in; not to give it  
away to his daughters, and leave his horns with-  
out a case.

Lear. I will forget my nature.—So kind a fa-  
ther!—Be my horses ready?

Fool. Thy asses are gone about 'em. The

\* The neck.

† Degraded.

‡ Falling.

§ Undressed.

\* Armed.

† Liable to reprehension.

reason why the seven stars are no more than seven, is a pretty ransou.

*Lear.* Because they are not eight?

*Fool.* Yes, indeed: Thou wouldst make a good fool.

*Lear.* To take it again perforce!—Monster ingratitude!

*Fool.* If thou wert my fool, muncle, I'd have thee beaten for being old before thy time.

*Lear.* How's that?

*Fool.* Thou shouldst not have been old, before thou hadst been wise.

*Lear.* O let me not be mad, not mad, sweet heaven!

Keep me in temper; I would not be mad!—

*Enter GENTLEMAN.*

How now! Are the horses ready?

*Gent.* Ready, my lord.

*Lear.* Come, boy.

*Fool.* She that is maid now, and laughs at my departure,

Shall not be a maid long, unless things be cut shorter. *[Exit.]*

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—A Court within the Castle of the Earl of GLOSTER.

*Enter EDMUND and CURAN, meeting.*

*Edm.* Save thee, Curan.

*Cur.* And you, Sir. I have been with your father; and given him notice, that the duke of Cornwall, and Regan his duchess, will be here with him to-night.

*Edm.* How comes that?

*Cur.* Nay, I know not: You have heard of the news abroad: I mean, the whispered ones, for they are yet but ear-kissing arguments?

*Edm.* Not I: 'Pray you, what are they?

*Cur.* Have you heard of no likely wars to ward, 'twixt the dukes of Cornwall and Albany?

*Edm.* Not a word.

*Cur.* You may then, in time. Fare you well, Sir. *[Exit.]*

*Edm.* The duke be here to-night? The better! Best!

This favours itself perforce into my business! My father hath set guard to take my brother; And I have one thing, of a queasy\* question, Which I must act:—Briefness, and fortune, work!—

Brother, a word; descend:—Brother, I say;

*Enter EDGAR.*

My father watches:—O Sir, fly this place; Intelligence is given where you are hid; You have now the good advantage of the night:—

Have you not spoken 'gainst the duke of Cornwall?

He's coming hither; now, i'the night, i'the haste,

And Regan with him; Have you nothing said Upon his party 'gainst the duke of Albany? Advise† yourself.

*Edg.* I am sure on't, not a word.

*Edm.* I hear my father coming,—Pardon me.—

In cunning, I must draw my sword upon you:—Draw: Seem to defend yourself: Now quit you well.

Yield:—come before my father;—Light, ho, here!—

Fly, brother;—Torches! torches!—So, farewell.— *[Exit EDGAR.]*

Some blood drawn on me would begot opinion *[Wounds his Arm.]*

*Delivers.*

† Consider, recollect yourself.

Of my more fierce endeavour: I have seen drunkards

Do more than this in sport.—Father! father! Stop, stop! No help! *a*

*Enter GLOSTER, and Servants with Torchets.*

*Glo.* Now, Edmund, where's the villain?

*Edm.* Here stood he in the dark, his sharp sword out,

Mumbling of wicked charms, conjuring the moon

To stand his auspicious mistress:—

*Glo.* But where is he?

*Edm.* Look, Sir, I bleed.

*Glo.* Where is the villain, Edmund?

*Edm.* Fled this way, Sir. When by no means he could—

*Glo.* Pursue him, ho!—Go after,—*[Exit Servant.]* By no means,—what?

*Edm.* Persuade me to the murder of your lordship;

But that I told him, the revenging gods 'Gainst parricides did all their thunders bend;

Spoke, with how manifold and strong a bond The child was bound to the father;—Sir, in fine,

Seeing how loathly opposite I stood

To his unnatural purpose, in fell motion, With his prepared sword, he charges home

My unprovided body, lanc'd mine arm: *some* But when he saw my best alarm'd spirits,

Bold in the quarrel's right, rous'd to the encounter,

Or whether gasted\* by the noise I made, Full suddenly he fled.

*Glo.* Let him fly far:

Not in this land shall he remain uncaught; And found—Despatch.—The noble duke my master,

My worthy arch† and patron, comes to-night: By his authority I will proclaim it,

That he, which fluds him, shall deserve our thanks,

Bringing the murd'rous coward to the stake; He, that conceals him, death.

*Edm.* When I dissuaded him from his intent, And found him pight‡ to do it, with curst§ speech

I threaten'd to discover him: He replied, *Thou unpossessing bastard! dost thou think, If I would stand against thee, would the reposal*

*Of any trust, i't virtue, or worth, in thee Make thy words faith? No: what I should deny,*

*(As this I would; ay, though thou didst produce*

*My very character ¶) I'd turn it all To thy suggestion, plot, and damned practice:*

*And thou must make a dullard of the world, If they not thought the profits of my death Were very pregnant and potential spurs To make thee seek it.*

*Glo.* Strong and fasten'd villain I Would he deny his letter?—I never got him. *[Trumpets within.]*

Hark, the duke's trumpets! I know not why he comes:—

All ports I'll bar: the villain shall not scape; The duke must grant me that: besides, his picture

I will send far and near, that all the kingdom May have due note of him; and of my land,

Loyal and natural boy, I'll work the means To make thee capable. ¶

*Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, and Attendants.*

*Corn.* How now, my noble friend! since I came hither,

\* Frighted.

† Pouched, fix'd.

‡ Handwriting.

§ L.e. Capable of succeeding to my land.

† Chief.

¶ Severn, harsh.

(Which I can call but now,) I have heard strange news,

Reg If it be true, all vengeance comes too short,

Which can pursue the offender. How dost, my lord?

Glo. O madam, my old heart is crack'd, is crack'd!

Reg. What, did my father's godson seek your life?

He whom my father nam'd? your Edgar?

Glo. O lady, lady, shame would have it hid!

Reg. Was he not companion with the riotous knights

That tend upon my father?

Glo. I know not, madam:

It is too bad, too bad.—

Edm. Yes, madam, he was.

Reg. No marvel then, though he were ill affected;

'Tis they have put him on the old man's death, To have the waste and spoil of his revenues. I have this present evening from my sister  
Been well inform'd of them; and with such cau-  
tions,

That, if they come to sojourn at my house,  
I'll not be there.

Corn. Nor I, assure thee, Regan.—

Edmund, I hear that you have shown your fa-  
ther

A child-like office.

Edm. 'Twas my duty, Sir.

Glo. He did bewray\* his practice; † and re-  
ceiv'd

This hurt you see, striving to apprehend him.

Corn. Is he pursued?

Glo. Ay, my good lord, he is.

Corn. If he be taken, he shall never more  
Be fear'd of doing harm: make your own pur-  
pose,

How in my strength you please.—For you, Ed-  
mund,

Whose virtue and obedience doth this instant  
So much commend itself, you shall be our's;  
Natures of such deep trust we shall much need;  
You we first seize on.

Edm. I shall serve you, Sir,  
Truly, however else.

Glo. For him I thank your grace.

Corn. You know not why we came to visit  
you,—

Reg. Thus out of season; threading dark-ey'd  
night.

Occasions noble Gloucester, of some poize, ‡  
Wherein we must have use of your advice:—  
Our father he hath writ, so hath our sister,  
Of differences, which I best thought it fit  
To answer from our home; the several mes-  
sengers

From hence attend despatch. Our good old  
friend,

Lay comforts to your bosom; and bestow  
Your needful counsel to our business,  
Which craves the instant use.

Glo. I serve you, madam:

Your graces are right welcome. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Before GLOSTER's Castle.

Enter KENT and STEWARD, severally.

Stew. Good dawning to thee, friend: Art of  
the house?

Kent. Ay.

Stew. Where may we set our horses?

Kent. I'll mire.

Stew. Prythee, if thou love me, tell me.

Kent. I love thee not.

Stew. Why, then I care not for thee.

Kent. If I had thee in Lipbury pinfold, I  
would make thee care for me.

Stew. Why dost thou use me thus? I know  
thee not.

Kent. Fellow, I know thee.

Stew. What dost thou know me for?

Kent. A knave, a rascal, an eater of broken  
meats; a base, proud, shallow, beggarly, three-  
suited, hundred-pound, filthy worsted-stocking  
knave; a fly-liver'd, action-taking knave; a  
whoreson, glass-gazing, superserviceable, flinical  
rogue; one-trunk-inheriting slave; one that  
wouldst be a bawd, in way of good-service, and  
art nothing but the composition of a knave, beg-  
gar, coward, pandar, and the son and heir of a  
mongrel bitch: one whom I will beat into cla-  
morous whining, if thou deny'st the least syllable  
of thy addition.\*

Stew. Why, what a monstrous fellow art thou,  
thus to rail on one, that is neither known of thee  
nor knows thee!

Kent. What a brazen-fac'd varlet art thou, to  
deny thou know'st me! Is it two days ago, since  
I tripp'd up thy heels, and beat thee, before the  
king? Draw, you rogue; for, though it be night,  
the moon shines: I'll make a sop i'the moon-  
shine of you: Draw, you whorson cullionly  
barber-monger, draw.

[Drawing his Sword.

Stew. Away; I have nothing to do with thee.

Kent. Draw, you rascal: you come with  
letters against the king: and take vanity † the  
puppet's part, against the royalty of her fa-  
ther: Draw, you rogue, or I'll so carbonado  
your shanks:—draw, you rascal; come your  
ways.

Stew. Help, ho! murder! help!

Kent. Strike, you slave; stand; ‡ rogue, stand;  
you neat slave, strike.

[Beating him.

Stew. Help, ho! murder! murder!

Enter EDMUND, CORNWALL, REGAN, GLOSTER,  
and Servants.

Edm. How now? What's the matter? Part.

Kent. With you, Goodman boy, if you please;  
come, I'll flesh you; come on, young master.

Glo. Weapons! arms! What's the matter  
here?

Corn. Keep peace, upon your lives;  
He dies, that strikes again: What is the mat-  
ter?

Reg. The messengers from our sister and the  
king.

Corn. What is your difference? I speak.

Stew. I am scarce in breath, my lord.

Kent. No marvel, you have so bestir'd your  
valour. You cowardly rascal, nature disclaims  
in thee; a tailor made thee.

Corn. Thou art a strange fellow: a tailor  
make a man?

Kent. Ay, a tailor, Sir; a stone-cutter or a  
painter could not have made him so ill, though  
they had been but two hours at the trade.

Corn. Speak yet, how grew your quarrel?

Stew. This and that ruffian, Sir, whose life I  
have spar'd.

At suit of his grey beard.—

Kent. Thou whoreson zed! thou unnecessary  
letter!—My lord, if you will give me leave, I  
will tread this unbolted villain into mortar, and  
dash the wall of a jakes † with him.—Spare my  
grey beard, you wagtail?

Corn. Peace, Sirrah!

You beastly knave, know you no reverence?

Kent. Yes, Sir; but anger has a privilege.

Corn. Why art thou angry?

Kent. That such a slave as this should wear a  
sword,

Who wears no honesty. Such smiling rogues as  
these,

Like rats, oft bite the holy cords atwain  
Which are too intrinsec ‡ I'll unloose: smooth every  
passion

That in the natures of their lords rebels:  
Bring oil to fire, snow to their colder moods;

\* Betray.  
† Wicked purpose.

‡ Weight.

\* Titles.

† Unrefined.

‡ A character in the old moralities  
§ Privy. § Perplexed.

Renegé, \* affirm, and turn their halcyon † beaks,  
With every gale and vary of their masters,  
As knowing nought, like dogs, but following.—  
A plague upon your epileptic visage!  
Smile you my speeches, as I were a fool?  
Goose, if I had you upon Sarum plain,  
I'd drive ye cackling home to Camelot. ‡

Corn. What, art thou mad, old fellow?

Glo. How fell you out?

† Say that.

Kent. No contraries hold more antipathy,  
Than I and such a knave.

Corn. Why dost thou call him knave? What's  
his offence?

Kent. His countenance likes me not. §

Corn. No more, perchance, does mine, or his,  
or her's.

Kent. Sir, 'tis my occupation to be plain;  
I have seen better faces in my time,  
Than stands on any shoulder that I see  
Before me at this instant.

Corn. This is some fellow, [affect  
Who, having been praised for bluntness, doth  
A saucy roughness; and constrains the garb,  
Quite from his nature: He cannot flatter, he!—  
An honest mind and plain,—he must speak  
truth:

And they will take it, so; if not, he's plain.  
These kind of knaves I know, which in this  
plainness

Harbour more craft, and more corrupter ends,  
Than twenty silly § ducking observants,  
That stretch their duties nicely.

Kent. Sir, in good sooth, in sincere verity,  
Under the allowance of your grand aspect,  
Whose influence, like the wreath of radiant fire  
On flickering Phœbus' front,—

Corn. What mean'st by this?

Kent. To go out of my dialect, which you dis-  
commend so much. I know, Sir, I am no flat-  
terer: he that beguiled you in a plain accent,  
was a plain knave; which, for my part, I will  
not be, though I should win your displeasure to  
entreat me to it.

Corn. What was the offence you gave him?

Sten. Never any:

It pleas'd the king his master, very late,  
To strike at me, upon his misconstruction;  
When he, conjunctly and flattering his displea-  
sure,

Tripp'd me behind; being down, insulted, rail'd,  
And put upon him such a deal of man,  
That worthy'd him, got praises of the king  
For him attempting who was self-subdu'd;  
And, in the fleshment of this dread exploit,  
Drew on me here.

Kent. None of these rogues, and cowards,  
But Ajax is their fool. ¶

Corn. Fetch forth the stocks, ho! [part,  
You stubborn ancient knave, you reverend brag-  
We'll teach you—

Kent. Sir, I am too old to learn:  
Call not your stocks for me: I serve the king;  
On whose employment I was sent to you:  
You shall do small respect, show too bold malice  
Against the grace and person of my master,  
Stocking his messenger.

Corn. Fetch forth the stocks:  
As I've life and honour, there shall he sit till  
noon.

Reg. Till noon! till night, my lord; and all  
night too.

Kent. Why, madam, if I were your father's  
You should not use me so. [dog,

Reg. Sir, being his knave, I will.

[Stocks brought out.

Corn. This is a fellow of the self-same colour

\* Disown.

† The bird called the king-fisher, which, when dried,  
and hung up by a thread, is supposed to turn his bill  
to the point from whence the wind blows.

‡ In Somersetshire, where are bred great quantities  
of geese.

§ Simple or rustic.

¶ I. e. Ajax is a fool to them.

Our sister speaks of:—Come, bring away the  
stocks.

Glo. Let me beseech your grace not to do so;  
His fault is much, and the good king his master  
Will check him for't: your purpos'd low correc-  
tion

Is such, as basest and contemn'd'st wretches,  
For pilferings and most common trespasses,  
Are punish'd with: the king must take it ill,  
That he's so slightly valued in his messenger,  
Should have him thus restrain'd.

Corn. I'll answer that.

Reg. My sister may receive it much more  
worse,

To have her gentleman abus'd, assaulted,  
For following her affairs.—Put in his legs.—

[KENT is put in the Stocks.

Come, my good lord; away.

[Exit REGAN and CORNWALL.

Glo. I am sorry for thee, friend; 'tis the  
duke's pleasure,

Whose disposition, all the world well knows,  
Will not be rubb'd nor stopp'd: I'll entreat for  
thee.

Kent. Pray, do not, Sir: I have watch'd, and  
travell'd hard;

Some time I shall sleep out, the rest I'll whistle.  
A good man's fortune may grow out at heels:

Give you good morrow!

Glo. The duke's to blame in this; 'twill be ill  
taken.

[Exit.

Kent. Good king, that must approve the com-  
mon saw!

Thou out of heaven's benediction com'st

To the warm sun!

Approach, thou comest to this under globe,

That by thy comfortable beams I may

Peruse this letter!—Nothing almost seems mira-  
cles,

But misery;—I know 'tis from Cordelia;  
Who hath most fortunately been inform'd  
Of my obscured course; and shall find time  
From this enormous state,—seeking to give  
Losses their remedies:—All weary and o'er-  
watch'd,

Take vantage, heavy eyes, not to behold

This shameful lodging.

Fortune, good night: smile once more; y turn thy  
wheel! †

[He sleeps

### SCENE III.—A part of the Heath.

Enter EDGAR.

Edg. I heard myself proclaim'd;  
And, by the happy hollow of a tree,  
Escap'd the hunt. No port is free; no place,  
That guard, and most unusual vigilance,  
Does not attend my taking. While I may  
escape,

I will preserve myself; and am bethought  
To take the basest and most poorest shape,

That every penury, in contempt of man,  
Brought near to beast: my face I'll grime with  
filth;

Blanket my loins; elf § all my hair in knots;  
And with presented nakedness outface  
The winds and persecutions of the sky.

The country gives me proof and precedent  
Of Bedlam beggars, who, with roaring voices,  
Strike in their numb'd and mortgag'd bare arms

Pins, wooden pricks, nails, sprigs of rose-  
mary:

And with this horrible object, from low farms,  
Poor pelling villages, sheep cotes and mills,

Sometime with lunatic bans § sometime with  
prayers,

Enforce their charity,—Poor Tom! good! poor  
Tom!

That's something yet:—Edgar I nothing am.

[Exit.

\* Saying or proverb.

† He begins reading her letter, and falls asleep.

‡ Hair thus knotted, was supposed to be the work of  
elves and fairies in the night.

§ Curses.

## SCENE IV. Before GLOSTER's Castle.

Enter LEAR, FOOL, and GENTLEMAN.

*Lear.* 'Tis strange that they should so depart from home,  
And not send back any messenger.

*Gent.* As I heard,  
The night before there was no purpose in them of this remove.

*Kent.* Hail to thee, noble master!

*Lear.* How!

Mak'st thou this shame thy pastime?

*Kent.* No, my lord.

*Fool.* Ha, ha; look! he wears cruel \* garters! Horses are tied by the heads; dogs and bears by the neck; monkeys by the loins, and men by the legs: when a man is over-lusty at legs, then he wears wooden nether-stocks.†

*Lear.* What's he, that hath so much thy place mistook

To set thee here?

*Kent.* It is both he and she,  
Your son and daughter.

*Lear.* No.

*Kent.* Yes.

*Lear.* No, I say.

*Kent.* I say, yea.

*Lear.* No, no; they would not.

*Kent.* Yes, they have.

*Lear.* By Jupiter, I swear, no.

*Kent.* By Juno, I swear, ay.

*Lear.* They durst not do't:

They could not, would not do't; 'tis worse than murder,

To do upon respect such violent outrage:  
Resolve me, with all modest haste, which way Thou might'st deserve, or they impose, this coming from us. [usage,

*Kent.* My lord, when at their home  
I did commend your highness' letters to them,  
Ere I was risen from the place that show'd  
My duty kneeling, came there a reeking post,  
Stew'd in his haste, half breathless, panting forth

From General his mistress, salutations;  
Deliver'd letters, spite of intermission,  
Which presently they read: on whose contents,  
They summon'd up their men; straight took horse;

Commanded me to follow, and attend [looks:  
The leisure of their answer; gave me cold  
And meeting here the other messenger,  
Whose welcome, I perceiv'd, had poison'd mine,  
(Being the very fellow that of late  
Display'd so saucily against your highness,)  
Having more man than wit about me, drew;  
He rais'd the house with loud and coward cries:

Your son and daughter found this trespass worth

The shame which here it suffers.

*Fool.* Winter's not gone yet, if the wild geese fly that way.

Fathers, that wear rags,

Do make their children blind;

But fathers, that bear bags,

Shall see their children kind.

Fortune, that arrant whore,

Ne'er turns the key to the poor.—

But, for all this, thou shalt have as many dolours‡ for thy daughters, as thou canst tell in a year.

*Lear.* O how this mother¶ swells up toward my heart!

*Hysterica passio!* down, thou climbing sorrow,  
Thy element's below!—Where is this daughter?

*Kent.* With the earl, Sir, here within.

*Lear.* Follow me not;

Stay here.

[Exit.

*Gent.* Made you no more offence than what you speak of?

*Kent.* None.

How chance the king comes with so small a train?

*Fool.* An thou hadst been set i'th' stocks for that question, thou hadst well deserv'd it.

*Kent.* Why, fool?

*Fool.* We'll set thee to school to an ant, to teach thee there's no labouring in the winter. All that follow their noses are led by their eyes, but blind men; and there's not a nose among twenty, but can smell him that's stinking. Let go thy hold when a great wheel runs down a hill, lest it break thy neck with following it; but the great one that goes up the hill, let him draw thee after. When a wise man gives thee better counsel, give me mine again: I would have none but knaves follow it, since a fool gives it.

That, Sir, which serves and seeks for gain,

And follows but for form,

Will pack, when it begins to rain,

And leave thee in the storm.

But I will tarry, the fool will stay,

And let the wise man fly:

The knave turns fool, that runs away;

The fool no knave, perdy.

*Kent.* Where learned you this, fool?

*Fool.* Not i'th' stocks, fool.

Re-enter LEAR, with GLOSTER.

*Lear.* Deny to speak with me? They are sick? they are weary?

They have travell'd hard to-night? More fetches;

The images of revolt and flying off!

Fetch me a better answer.

*Glo.* My dear lord,

You know the fiery quality of the duke;  
How unremovable and fix'd he is  
In his own course.

*Lear.* Vengeance! plague! death! confusion!

Fiery? what quality? Why Gloster, Gloster, I'd speak with the duke of Cornwall, and his wife.

*Glo.* Well, my good lord, I have inform'd them so.

*Lear.* Inform'd them! Dost thou understand me, man?

*Glo.* Ay, my good lord.

*Lear.* The king would speak with Cornwall; the dear rather

Would with his daughter speak, commands her service:

Are they inform'd of this?—My breath and blood!

Fiery! the fiery duke!—Tell the hot duke, that—No, but not yet:—may be, he is not well;

Infirmity doth still neglect all office,  
Whereto our health is bound; we are not our-

selves, [mind  
When nature, being oppress'd, commands the

To suffer with the body: I'll forbear;  
And am fallen out with my more headier will

To take the indispos'd and sickly fit  
For the sound man.—Death on my state!

wherefore [Looking on LEAR.  
Should he sit here? This act persuades me,

That this remotion\* of the duke and her  
Is practice† only. Give me my servant forth:

Go, tell the duke and his wife, I'd speak with them,

Now, presently: bid them come forth and hear me,

Or at their chamber door I'll beat the drum,  
Till it cry—Sleep to death.

*Glo.* I'd have all well betwixt you. [Exit.  
*Lear.* O me, my heart, my rising heart!—

but, down.  
*Fool.* Cry to it, uncle, as the cockney did to the eels, when she put them i'th' paste;

\* Removing from their own house.

† Artifice.

‡ Crust of a pie.

\* A quibble on *crewell*, *worsted*.

† The old word for stockings.

‡ People, train or retinue.

\* A quibble between *delours* and *dollars*.

† The disease called the mother.

alive; she rapped 'em o'the coxcombs with a stick, and cried, *Down, wantons, down*: 'Twas her brother, that in pure kindness to his horse, buttered his hay.

Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, GLOSTER, and Servants.

Lear. Good morrow to you both.

Corn. Hail to your grace!

[KENT is set at Liberty.]

Reg. I am glad to see your highness.

Lear. Regan, I think you are; I know what reason

I have to think so: If thou shouldst not be glad, I would divorce me from thy mother's tomb, Sepulchring an adulteress.—Oh! are you free?

[To KENT.]

Some other time for that.—Beloved Regan, Thy sister's naught: O Regan, she hath tied Sharp-tooth'd unkindness, like a vulture here;

[Points to his Heart.]

I can scarce speak to thee; thou'lt not believe, Of how depriv'd a quality—O Regan!

Reg. I pray you, Sir, take patience; I have hope,

You less know how to value her desert, Than she to scant \* her duty.

Lear. Say, how is that?

Reg. I cannot think my sister, in the least, Would fail her obligation: If, Sir, perchance, She have restrain'd the riots of your followers, 'Tis on such ground, and to such wholesome end,

As clears her from all blame.

Lear. My curses on her!

Reg. O Sir, you are old;

Nature in you stands on the very verge Of her confine: you should be rul'd, and led By some discretion, that discerns your state Better than you yourself: Therefore, I pray you,

That to our sister you do make return; Say, you have wrong'd her, Sir.

Lear. Ask her forgiveness!

Do you but mark how this becomes the house + Dear daughter, I confess that I am old, Age is unnecessary: on my knees I beg,

[Kneeling.]

That you'll vouchsafe me ratment, bed, and food.

Reg. Good Sir, no more; these are unsightly tricks:

Return you to my sister.

Lear. Never, Regan:

She hath abated me of half my train: Look'd black upon me; struck me with her tongue,

Most serpent-like, upon the very heart:—

All the stor'd vengeance of heaven fall On her ingrateful top! Strike her young bones, You taking airs, with lameness!

Corn. Fie, fie, fie!

Lear. You stibble lightnings, dart your blinding flames

Into her scornful eyes! Infect her beauty, You fen-suck'd fogs, drawn by the powerful sun, To fall and blast her pride!

Reg. O the bless'd gods!

So will you wish on me, when the rash mood's on.

Lear. No, Regan, thou shalt never have my curse: \*

Thy tender-hefted nature shall not give Thee o'er to harshness: her eyes are fierce, but thine

Do comfort, and not burn: 'Tis not in thee To grudge my pleasures, to cut off my train, To bandy hasty words, to scant my sizes,† And, in conclusion, to oppose the bolt Against my coming in: thou better know'st The offices of nature, bond of childhood, Effects of courtesy, dues of gratitude;‡

\* Be wanting in. † The order of families. ‡ Contract my allowances.

Thy half o'the kingdom hast thou not forgot, Wherein I thee endow'd.

Reg. Good Sir, to the purpose.

[Trumpets within.]

Lear. Who put my man i'the stocks?

Corn. What trumpet's that?

Enter STEWARD.

Reg. I know't, my sister's: this approves her letter,

That she would soon be here.—Is your lady [come?] Lear. This is a slave whose easy-borrow'd pride

Dwells in the fickle grace of her be follows:— Out, varlet, from my sight!

Corn. What means your grace?

Lear. Who stock'd my servant? Regan, I have good hope Thou didst not know of't.—Who comes here? O heavens,

Enter GONERIL.

If you do love old men, if your sweet sway Allow \* obedience, if yourselves are old, Make it your cause: send down, and take my part!—

Art not asham'd to look upon this beard?—

[To GONERIL.]

O Regan, wilt thou take her by the hand? Gon. Why not by the hand, Sir? How have I offended?

All's not offence that indiscretion finds, And dotage terms so.

Lear. O sisters, you are too tough!

Will you yet hold?—How came my man i'the stocks?

Corn. I set him there, Sir: but his own disorders

Deserv'd much less advancement.

Lear. You! did you?

Reg. I pray you, father, being weak, seem so If, till the expiration of your month, You will return and sojourn with my sister, Dismissing half your train, come then to me; I am now from home, and out of that provision

Which shall be needful for your entertainment.

Lear. Return to her, and fifty men dismiss'd! No, rather I abjure all roofs, and choose To wage † against the enmity o'the air; To be a comrade with the wolf and owl,—Necessity's sharp pinch!—Return with her? Why the hot-blooded France, that dowerless

took Our youngest born, I could as well be brought To knee his throne, and, squire-like, pension beg

To keep base life afoot:—Return with her? Persuade me rather to be slave and submit; To this detested groom.

[Looking on the STEWARD.]

Gon. At your choice, Sir.

Lear. I prithee, daughter, do not make me mad;

I will not trouble thee, my child; farewell: We'll no more meet, no more see one another:—

But yet thou art my flesh, my blood, my daughter;

Or, rather, a disease that's in my flesh, Which I must needs call mine: thou art a boil, A plague-sore, an embossed carbuncle, In my corrupted blood. But I'll not chide thee;

Let shame come when it will, I do not call it: I do not bid the thunder-bearer shoot,

Nor tell tales of thee to high-judging Jove: Mend, when thou canst; be better, at thy leisure:

I can be patient; I can stay with Regan, I, and my hundred knights.

Reg. Not altogether so, Sir;

\* Approves. † War. carries necessaries on a journey. ‡ A horse that swells.

I look'd not for you yet, nor am provided  
For your fit welcome: Give ear, Sir, to my sister;

For those that usin'g reason with your passion  
Must be content to think you old, and so—  
But she knows what she does.

*Lear.* Is this well spoken now?

*Reg.* I dare avouch it, Sir: What, fifty followers?

Is it not well? What should you need of more?  
Yea, or so many? sith \* that both charge and danger

Speak 'gainst so great a number? How, in one house,

Should many people, under two commands,  
Hold amity? 'Tis hard; almost impossible.

*Gon.* Why might not you, my lord, receive attendance  
For those that she calls servants, or from mine?

*Reg.* Why not, my lord? If then they chanc'd  
to slack you,  
We could control them: If you will come to me,

(For now I spy a danger,) I entreat you  
To bring but five and twenty; to no more

Will I give place or notice.

*Lear.* I gave you all—

*Reg.* And in good time you gave it.

*Lear.* Made you my guardians, my depositaries:

But kept a reservation to be follow'd  
With such a number: What, must I come to you

With five and twenty, Regan? said you so?

*Reg.* And speak it again, my lord; no more with me.

*Lear.* Those wicked creatures yet do look  
well-favour'd, <sup>(worst,</sup>

When others are more wicked; not being the  
Stands in some rank of praise:—I'll go with thee; <sup>[To GONERIL.]</sup>

Thy fifty yet doth double five and twenty,  
And thou art twice her love.

*Gon.* Hear me, my lord:

What need you five and twenty, ten, or five,  
To follow in a house, where twice so many

Have a command to tend you?

*Reg.* What need you?

*Lear.* Oh! reason not the need: our basest  
beggars

Are in the poorest thing superfluous:  
Allow not nature more than nature needs,

Man's life is cheap as beast's: thou art a lady;  
If only to go warm were gorgeous,

Why, nature needs not what thou gorgeous  
wears't,

Which scarcely keeps thee warm.—But, for  
true need,—

You heavens, give me that patience, patience  
I need!

You see me here, you gods, a poor old man,  
As full of grief as age; wretched in both!

If it be you that stir these daughters' hearts  
Against their father, fool me not so much

To bear it tamely; touch me with noble anger!  
O! let not women's weapons, water-drops,

Stain my man's cheeks!—No, you unnatural  
bags,

I will have such revenges on you both,  
That all the world shall—I will do such things,—

What they are, yet I know not; but they  
shall be.

The terrors of the earth. You think I'll weep;  
No, I'll not weep:—

I have full cause of weeping; but this heart  
Shall break into a hundred thousand flaws, or  
Or ere I'll weep:—O fool, I shall go mad!

<sup>[Exit LEAR, GLOSTER, KENT, and FOOL.]</sup>

*Corn.* Let us withdraw, 'twill be a storm.

<sup>[Storm heard at a distance.]</sup>

*Reg.* This house  
Is little; the old man and his people cannot  
Be well bestow'd.

\* Since.

† Finish.

*Gon.* 'Tis his own blame; he hath put  
Himself from rest, and must needs taste his  
folly.

*Reg.* For his particular, I'll receive him  
But not one follower. <sup>gladly,</sup>

*Gon.* So am I purpos'd.  
Where is my lord of Gloster?

<sup>Re-enter GLOSTER.</sup>

*Corn.* Follow'd the old man forth:—he is  
return'd.

*Glo.* The king is in high rage.

*Corn.* Whither is he going?

*Glo.* He calls to horse; but will I know not  
whither.

*Corn.* 'Tis best to give him way; he leads  
himself.

*Gon.* My lord, entreat him by no means to  
stay.

*Glo.* Alack, the night comes on, and the  
bleak winds

Do sorely ruffle; for many miles about  
There's scarce a bush.

*Reg.* O Sir, to wilful men,  
The injuries that they themselves procure,  
Must be their schoolmasters: Shut up your  
doors;

He is attended with a desperate train;  
And what they may incense \* him to, being apt  
To have his ear abus'd, wisdom bids fear.

*Corn.* Shut up your doors, my lord; 'tis a  
wild night;

My Regan counsels well: come out o'the storm.  
<sup>[Exit.]</sup>

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—A Heath.—A Storm is heard,  
with Thunder and Lightning.

*Enter KENT, and a GENTLEMAN, meeting,*

*Kent.* Who's here, beside foul weather?

*Gent.* One minded like the weather, most  
unquietly.

*Kent.* I know you; Where's the king?

*Gent.* Contending with the fretful element:  
Bids the wind blow the earth into the sea,  
Or swell the curled waters 'bove the main, a

That things might change, or cease: tears his  
white hair;

Which the impetuous blasts, with eyeless rage,  
Catch in their fury, and make nothing of:

Strives in his little world of man to outscorn  
The to-and-fro-conflicting wind and rain.

This night, wherein the cub-drawn bear † would  
The lion and the belly-pinched wolf <sup>[couch,</sup>

Keep their fur dry, unbuzzed he runs,  
And bids what will take all.

*Kent.* But who is with him?

*Gent.* None but the fool; who labours to  
outjest

His heart-struck injuries.

*Kent.* Sir, I do know you;  
And dare, upon the warrant of my art, ‡

Commend a dear thing to you. There is divi-  
sion,

Although as yet the face of it be cover'd  
With mutual cunning, 'twixt Albany and

Cornwall; <sup>[stays]</sup>

Who have (as who have not, that their great  
'Thron'd and set high) servants, who seem no

less;

Which are to France the spies and speculations  
Intelligent of our state; what hath been seen,

Either in snuffs and packings § of the dukes;  
Or the hard rein which both of them have borne,  
Against the old kind king: or something  
deeper,.

\* Instigate.

† Whose dogs are drawn dry by its young

‡ Which teaches us "to find the mind's construction  
in the face."

§ Snuffs are dishes, and packings underhand con-  
trivances.

Whereof, perchance, these are but furnish-  
ings.\*

[But, true it is, from France there comes a  
power] into this scatter'd kingdom; who already,  
Wise in our negligence, have secret feet  
In some of our best ports, and are at point  
To show their open banners.—Now to you:  
If on my credit you dare build so far  
To make your speed to Dover, you shall find  
Some that will thank you, making just report  
Of how unnatural and bemoaning sorrow  
The king hath cause to plain.  
I am a gentleman of blood and breeding;  
And, from some knowledge and assurance, offer  
This office to you.]

Gent. I will talk further with you.

Kent. No, do not.

For confirmation that I am much more  
Than my out wall, open this purse, and take  
What it contains: if you shall see Cordelia,  
(As fear not but you shall,) show her this ring;  
And she will tell you who your fellow† is  
That yet you do not know. Fie on this storm!  
I will go seek the king.

Gent. Give me your hand: Have you no more  
to say?

Kent. Few words, but to effect, more than all  
yet:

That, when we have found the king, (in which  
your pain) That way; I'll this;) he that first lights on him,  
Holla the other. [Exeunt severally.]

SCENE II.—Another Part of the Heath.—  
Storm continues.

Enter LEAR and FOOL.

Lear. Blow, wind, and crack your cheeks!  
rage! blow!  
You cataracts, and hurricanoes, spout  
Till you have drench'd our steeples, drown'd the  
cocks!

You sulphurous and thought-executing† fires,  
Vault couriers‡ to oak-cleaving thunderbolts,  
Singe my white head! And thou, all-shaking  
thunder,

Strike flat the thick rotundity o'the world!  
Crack nature's moulds, all germines spill at once,  
That make ingrateful man!

Fool. O nuncle, court holy-water|| in a dry  
house is better than this rain-water out o'door.  
Good nuncle, in, and ask thy daughter's blessing  
—here's a night pities neither wise men nor  
fools.

Lear. Rumble my bellyfull! Spit, fire, spout,  
rain!

Nor rain, wind, thunder, fire, are my daugh-  
1 tax not you, you elements, with unkindness;  
I never gave you kingdom, call'd you children;  
You owe me no subscription;¶ why then, let  
fall

Your horrible pleasure; here I stand, your  
A poor, infirm, weak, and despis'd old man:—  
But yet I call you servile ministers,  
That have with two pernicious daughters join'd  
Your high engender'd battles, 'gainst a head  
So old and white as this. O! O! 'tis foul!

Fool. He that has a house to put his head in,  
has a good head-piece.

*The cod-piece that will house,  
Before the head has any,  
The head and he shall louse;—  
So beggars, marry, many.  
The man that makes his toe  
What he his heart should make,  
Shall of a corn cry woe,  
And turn his sleep to wake.*

—for there was never yet fair woman, but she  
made mouths in a glass.

Enter KENT.

Lear. No, I will be the pattern of all patience;  
I will say nothing.

Kent. Who's there?

Fool. Marry, here's grace, and a cod-piece;  
that's a wise man, and a fool.

Kent. Alas, Sir, are you here? things that  
love night, Love not such nights as these; the wrathful  
Gallow\* the very wanderers of the dark,  
And make them keep their caves: Since I was  
man, Such sheets of fire, such bursts of horrid thun-  
der, Such groans of roaring wind and rain, I never  
Remember to have heard; man's nature cannot  
carry

The affliction, nor the fear.

Lear. Let the great gods,  
That keep this dreadful pother† o'er our heads,  
Find out their enemies now. Tremble, thou  
wretch,

That hast within thee undivulged crimes,  
Unwhipp'd of justice: Hide thee, thou bloody  
hand;

Thou perjur'd, and thou simular; man of vir-  
tue  
That art incestuous: Castiff, to pieces shake,  
That under covert and convenient seeming‡  
Hast practis'd on man's life!—Close pent-up  
guilt,

Rive your concealing continents, and cry  
These dreadful summoners grace. I—I am a  
man,

More sin'd against than sinning.

Kent. Alack, bare-headed!  
Gracious my lord, hard by here is a hovel;  
Some friendship will it lend you 'gainst the  
tempest;

Repose you there: while I to this hard house,  
(More hard than is the stone whereof 'tis rais'd;  
Which even but now, demanding¶ after you,  
Denied me to come in,) return, and force  
Their scantied courtesies.

Lear. My wits begin to turn.—

Come on, my boy: How dost, my boy? Art  
cold?

I am cold myself.—Where is this straw, my  
fellow?

The art of our necessities is strange, ●  
That can make vile things precious. Come,  
your hovel. [heart  
Poor fool and knave, I have one part in my  
That's sorry yet for thee.

Fool. He that has a little tiny wit,—  
With heigh, ho, the wind and the  
rain,—

Must make content with his fortunes  
fit;

For the rain it raineth every day.\*\*

Lear. True, my good boy.—Come, bring us  
to this hovel. [Exeunt LEAR and KENT.]

Fool. This is a brave night to cool a courte-  
zen.—I'll speak a prophecy ere I go;  
When pilests are more in word than matter;  
When brewers mar their malt with water;  
When nobles are their tailor's tutors;  
No heretics burn'd, but wenches' suitors:  
When every case in law is right;  
No squire in debt, nor no poor knight;  
When slanderers do not live in tongue;  
Nor cutpurses come not to thongs;  
When usurers tell their gold i'the field;  
And bawds and whores do churches build:—  
Then shall the realm of Albion  
Come to great confusion.

Then comes the time, who lives to see't,  
That going shall be us'd with feet.

This prophecy Merlin shall make; for I live  
before his time. [Exit.]

\* Samples. † Companion.  
‡ Quick as thought. § Ascent couriers, French.  
|| A proverbial phrase for fair words. ¶ Obedience.

\* Scare or frighten. † Blustering noise.  
‡ Counterfeit. § Appearance. ¶ Favour.  
¶ Inquiring.

\*\* Part of the Clown's song in Twelfth Night.



## SCENE III.—A Room in GLOSTER's Castle.

*Enter GLOSTER and EDMUND.*

*Glo.* Alack, alack, Edmund. I like not this unnatural dealing: When I desired their leave that I might pity him, they took from me the use of mine own house; charged me, on pain of their perpetual displeasure, neither to speak of him, entreat for him, nor any way sustain him.

*Edm.* Most savage, and unnatural!

*Glo.* Go to; say you nothing: There is division between the duke; and a worse matter than that: I have received a letter this night;—'tis dangerous to be spoken;—I have locked the letter in my closet: these injuries the king now bears will be revenged at home; there is part of a power already footed: \* we must incline to the king. I will seek him, and privily relieve him; go you, and maintain talk with the duke, that my charity be not of him perceived: If he ask for me, I am ill, and gone to bed. If I die for it, as no less is threatened me, the king my old master must be relieved. There is some strange thing toward, Edmund; pray you, be careful.

*Edm.* This courtesy, forbid thee, shall the duke

Instantly know; and of that letter too:—

'This seems a fair deserving, and must draw me That which my father loses; no less than all: The younger rises, when the old doth fall.

*Exit.*

## SCENE IV.—A Part of the Heath, with a Hotel.

*Enter LEAR, KENT, and FOOL.*

*Kent.* Here is the place, my lord; good, my lord, enter:

The tyranny of the open night's too rough For nature to endure. *(Storm still.)*

*Lear.* Let me alone.

*Kent.* Good my lord, enter here.

*Lear.* Will break my heart?

*Kent.* I'd rather break mine own: Good my lord, enter.

*Lear.* Thou think'st 'tis much, that this contentious storm

Invades us to the skin: so 'tis to thee; But where the greater malady is fix'd, The lesser is scarce felt. Thou'dst shun a bear: But if thy flight lay toward the raging sea, Thou'dst meet the bear i'th' mouth. When the mind's free,

The body's delicate: the tempest in my mind Doth from my senses take all feeling else, Save what beats there.—Filial ingratitude! Is it not as this month should tear this hand, For lifting food to't?—But I will punish home:—No, I will weep no more.—In such a night To shut me out!—Pour on; I will endure:—In such a night as this! O Regan, Goneril!—Your old kind father, whose frank heart gave all,—

Oh! that way madness lies: let me shun that; No more of that.—

*Kent.* Good my lord, enter here.

*Lear.* Pr'ythee, go in thyself; seek thine own ease:

This tempest will not give me leave to ponder On things would hurt me more.—But I'll go in: In, boy; go first.—*(To the FOOL.)* You houseless poverty,—

Nay, get thee in. I'll pray, and then I'll sleep.—*[FOOL goes in.]*

Poor naked wretches, wheresoe'er you are, That bide the pelting of this pitiless storm, How shall your houseless heads, and unfed sides,

Your loop'd and window'd raggedness, defend you

\* A force already landed.

From seasons such as these? Oh! I have ta'en Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp! Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel: That thou may'st shake the superflux to them, And show the heavens more just.

*Edg.* *[Within.]* Fathom and half, fathom and half! Poor Tom!

*[The FOOL runs out from the Hotel.]*

*Fool.* Come not in here, nuncle, here's a spirit.

Help me, help me!

*Kent.* Give me thy hand.—Who's there?

*Fool.* A spirit, a spirit; he says his name's poor Tom.

*Kent.* What art thou that dost grumble there i'th' straw?

Come forth.

*Enter EDGAR, disguised as a Madman.*

*Edg.* Away! the foul fiend follows me!—Through the sharp hawthorn blows the cold wind.—

Humph! go to thy cold bed, and warm thee.

*Lear.* Hast thou given all to thy two daughters? And art thou come to this?

*Edg.* Who gives any thing to poor Tom? whom the foul fiend hath led through fire and through flame, through ford and whirlpool, over bog and quagmire; that hath laid knives under his pillow, and halters in his pew; set ratsbane by his porridge; made him proud of heart, to ride on a bay trotting-horse over four-inch bridges, to course his own shadow for a traitor:—Bless thy five wits! Tom's a-cold. O, do de, do de, do de.—Bless thee from whirlwinds, star-blasting, and taking! \* Do poor Tom some charity, whom the foul fiend vexes: There could I have him now,—and there,—and there,—and there again, and there.

*[Storm continues.]*

*Lear.* What, have his daughters brought him in to this pass?—

Couldst thou save nothing? Didst thou give them all?

*Fool.* Nay, he reserved a blanket, else we had been all ashamed.

*Lear.* Now, all the plagues that in the pendulous air

Hang fated o'er men's faults, light on thy daughters!

*Kent.* He hath no daughters, Sir.

*Lear.* Death, traitor! nothing could have subdu'd nature

To such a lowliness, but his unkind daughters.—Is it the fashion, that discarded fathers Should have thus little mercy on their flesh? Judicious punishment! 'twas this flesh begot Those pelican daughters.

*Edg.* Pillicock sat on pillcock's-bill;—

Halloo, halloo, loo, loo!

*Fool.* This cold night will turn us all to fools and madmen.

*Edg.* Take heed o'th' foul field: Obey thy parents; keep thy word justly; swear not; commit not with man's sworn spouse; set not thy sweet heart on proud array: Tom's a-cold.

*Lear.* What hast thou been?

*Edg.* A serving-man, proud in heart and mind; that curled my hair; wore gloves in my cap; served the lust of my mistress' heart, and did the act of darkness with her; swore as many oaths as I spake words, and broke them in the sweet face of heaven: one, that slept in the contriving of lust, and waked to do it: Wine loved I deeply; dice dearly; and in woman, out-paramoured the Turk: False of heart, light of ear, bloody of hand; Hog in sloth, fox in stealth, wolf in greediness, dog in madness, lion in prey. Let not the creaking of shoes, nor the rustling of silks, betray thy poor heart to women: Keep thy foot out of brothels, thy hand out of

\* To take is to blast, or strike with malignant influence.

† It was the custom to wear gloves in the hut, as the favour of a mistress.

plackets, thy pen from lenders' books, and defy the foul fiend.—Still through the hawthorn blows the cold wind: Says suum, mun, ha no nonny, dolphiu my boy, my boy, sessa; let him trot by.

[Storm still continues.]

**Lear.** Why, thou wert better in thy grave, than to answer with thy uncovered body this extremity of the skies.—Is man no more than this? Consider him well: Thou owest the worm no silk, the beast no hide, the sheep no wool, the cat no perfume:—Ha! here's three of us are sophisticated!—Thou art the thing itself: unaccommodated man is no more but such a poor, bare, forked animal as thou art.—Off, off, you lendings:—Come; unbatten here.\*

[Tearing off his clothes.]

**Paul.** Pr'ythee, nuncle, be contented; this is a naughty night to swim in.—Now a little fire in a wild field were like an old lecher's heart; a small spark, all the rest of his body cold.—Look, here comes a walking fire.

**Lug.** This is the foul fiend Filibbertigibbet: he begins at curfew, and walks till the first cock; he gives the web and the pin,† squints the eye, and makes the hare-lip; mildews the white wheat, and hurts the poor creature of earth.

*Saint Withold; footed thrice the world, &  
He met the night-mare, and her nine-fold;*

*Bid her alight,*

*And her troth plight,*

*And, aroint thee, witch, aroint thee!*

**Kent.** How fares your grace?

*Enter GLOSTER, with a Torch.*

**Lear.** What's he?

**Kent.** Who's there? What is't you seek?

**Glo.** What are you there? Your names?

**Edg.** Poor Tom; that eats the swimming frog, the toad, the tadpole, the wall-newt, and the water;‡ that in the fury of his heart, when the foul fiend rages, eats cow-dung for sallies; swallows the old rat, and the ditch-dog; drinks the green mantle of the standing pool; who is whipped from tithing to tithing,\*\* and stock'd, punished, and imprison'd; who hath had three suits to his back, six shirts to his body, horse to ride, and weapon to wear,—

*But mice, and rats, and such small deer,  
Have been Tom's food for seven long year.*

Beware my follower:—Peace, Smolkin; †† peace, thou fiend!

**Glo.** What, hath your grace no better company?

**Edg.** The prince of darkness is a gentleman; Mado he's call'd, and Mahu;‡‡

**Glo.** Our flesh and blood, my lord, is grown so vile,

That it doth hate what gets it.

**Edg.** Poor Tom's a-cold.

**Glo.** Go in with me; my duty cannot suffer To obey in all your daughter's hard commands: Though their injunction be to bar my doors, And let this tyrannous night take hold upon you;

Yet have I ventur'd to come seek you out, And bring you where both fire and food is ready.

**Lear.** First let me talk with this philosopher:—

What is the cause of thunder?

**Kent.** Good, my lord, take his offer; Go into the house.

\* The words unbatten here, are probably only a marginal direction, & not to be taken into the matter.

† & ‡ Diseases of the eye.

‡ & § Sent to protect his devotees from the disease called the night-mare.

¶ Wild downs, so called in various parts of England.

‡ Aranunt. ¶ I.e. The water-newt.

\*\* A tithing is a division of a county.

†† Name of a spirit. ‡‡ The chief devil.

**Lear.** I'll talk a word with this same learned Theban:—

What is your study?

**Edg.** How to prevent the fiend, and to kill vermin.\*\*\*

**Lear.** Let me ask you one word in private.

**Kent.** Importune him once more to go, my lord,

His wits begin to unsettle.

**Glo.** Canst thou blame him?

His daughters seek his death:—Ah! that good

Kent!

He said it would be thus:—Poor banish'd man!

Thou say'st the king grows mad; I'll tell thee, fiend,

I am almost mad myself: I had a son, Now outlaw'd from my blood; he sought my

life,

But lately, very late; I lov'd him, friend,—

No father his son dearer: true to tell thee, The grief hath craz'd my wits. What a night's this!

I do beseech your grace,—

**Lear.** Oh! cry you mercy, Noble philosopher, your company.

**Edg.** Tom's a-cold.

**Glo.** In, fellow, there, to the hovel, keep thee warm.

**Lear.** Come, let's in all.

**Kent.** This way, my lord.

**Lear.** With him;

I will keep still with my philosopher.

**Kent.** Good, my lord, sooth him; let him take the fellow.

**Glo.** Take him you on.

**Kent.** Sirrah, come on; go along with us.

**Lear.** Come, good Athenian.

**Glo.** No words, no words:

Hush.

*Edg. Child \* Rowland to the dark tower  
came*

*His word was still,—Fie, foh, and fum,  
I smell the blood of a British man.*

[Exit.]

SCENE V.—A Room in GLOSTER's Castle.

*Enter CORNWALL and EDMUND.*

**Corn.** I will have my revenge, ere I depart his house.

**Edm.** How, my lord, I may be censured, that nature thus gives way to loyalty: something fears me to think of.

**Corn.** I now perceive it was not altogether your brother's evil disposition made him seek his death: but a provoking merit, set a-work by a reproveable badness in himself.

**Edm.** How malicious is my fortune, that I must repent to be just! This is the letter he spoke of, which approves him an intelligent party to the advantages of France. O heavens! that this treason were not, or not I the detector!

**Corn.** Go with me to the duchess.

**Edm.** If the matter of this paper be certain, you have mighty business in hand.

**Corn.** True, or false, it hath made thee earl of Gloster. Seek out where thy father is, that he may be ready for our apprehension.

**Edm.** [Aside.] If I find him comforting the king, it will stuff his suspicion more fully.—I will persevere in my course of loyalty, though the conflict be sore between that and my blood.

**Corn.** I will lay trust upon thee; and thou shalt find a dearer father in my love.

[Exit.]

\* Child is an old term for knight.

## SCENE VI.—A Chamber in a Farm-House, adjoining the Castle.

Enter GLOSTER, LEAR, KENT, FOOL, and EDGAR.

Glo. Here is better than the open air: take thankfully: I will piece out the comfort with what addition I can: I will not be long from you.

Kent. All the power of his wits has given way to his impatience:—The gods reward your kindness!

Edg. Frateretto calls me; and tells me, Nero is an angler in the lake of darkness. Pray, innocent,\* and beware the foul fiend.

Fool. Pr'ythee, nuncle, tell me, whether a madman be a gentleman, or a yeoman?

Lear. A king, a king!

Fool. No; he's a yeoman, that has a gentleman to his son: for he's a mad yeoman, that sees his son a gentleman before him.

Lear. To have a thousand with red burning spits Come hissing in upon them:—

Edg. The foul fiend bites my back.

Fool. He's mad, that trusts in the tameness of a wolf, a horse's health, a boy's love, or a whore's oath.

Lear. It shall be done, I will arraign them straight:—

Come, sit thou here, most learned justicer:—

[To EDGAR.]

Thou, sapient Sir, sit here. [To the FOOL.]—

Now, you she-foes!—

Edg. Look, where he stands and glares!—Wantest thou eyes at trial, madam?

Come o'er the bourn, † Bessy, to me:

Fool. Her boat hath a leak,

And she must not speak

Why she dares not come over to thee.

Edg. The foul fiend haunts poor Tom in the voice of a nightingale. Hopdance cries in Tom's belly for two white herrings. Croak not, black angel; I have no food for thee.

Kent. How do you, Sir? Stand you not so amazed:

Will you lie down and rest upon the cushions?

Lear. I'll see their trial first:—Bring in the evidence.—

Thou robbed man of justice, take thy place;

[To EDGAR.]

And thou, his yoke-fellow of equity,

[To the FOOL.]

Bench by his side:—You are of the commission,

Sit you too. [To KENT.]

Edg. Let us deal justly.

Sleepest, or wakest thou, jolly shepherd?

Thy sheep be in the corn;

And for one blast of thy minikin mouth,

Thy sheep shall take no harm.

Pnr! the cat is grey.

Lear. Arraign her first; 'tis Goneril. I here take my oath before this honourable assembly, she kicked the poor king her father.

Fool. Come hither, mistress; Is your name Goneril?

Lear. She cannot deny it.

Fool. Cry you mercy, I took you for a joint-stool.

Lear. And here's another, whose warp'd looks proclaim

What store her heart is made of.—Stop her there! Arms, arms, sword, fire!—Corruption in the place!

False justicer, why hast thou let her 'scape?

Idg. Bless thy five wits!

Kent. O pity!—Sir, where is the patience now, That you so oft have boasted to retain?

Edg. My tears begin to take his part so much. They'll mar my counterfeiting. [Aside.]

\* Addressed to the Fool, who were anciently called innocents.  
† Edgar is speaking in the character of a madman, who thinks he sees the fiend.  
‡ Brook or rivulet.

Lear. The little dogs and all, [mc. Tray, Blanch, and Sweet-heart, see, they bark at Edg. Tom will throw his head at them:—

Avauut, you curs!

Be thy mouth or black or white,

Tooth that poisons if it bite;

Mastiff, grey-bound, mongrel grim,

Hound, or spaniel, brach, or lyn; \*

Or bobtail tike, or trundle-tail;

Tom will make them weep and wail:

For, with throwing thus my head,

Dogs leap the hatch, and all are fled.

Do de, de de. Sessa. Come, march to wakes

and fairs, and market towns:—Poor Tom, thy

horn is dry.

Lear. Then let them anatomize Regan; see what breeds about her heart: Is there any cause in nature, that makes these hard hearts?—You, Sir, I entertain you for one of my hundred; only, I do not like the fashion of your garments: you will say, they are Persian attire; but let them be changed.

[To EDGAR.]

Kent. Now, good my lord, lie here, and rest awhile.

Lear. Make no noise, make no noise; draw the curtains: So, so, so: We'll go to supper 't' the morning: So, so, so.

Fool. And I'll go to bed at noon.

Re-enter GLOSTER.

Glo. Come hither, friend: Where is the king my master?

Kent. Here, Sir: but trouble him not, his wits are gone.

Glo. Good friend, I pr'ythee take him in thy arms;

I have o'er-heard a plot of death upon him: There is a litter ready; lay him in't,

And drive towards Dover, friend, where thou shalt meet

[ter,

Both welcome and protection. Take up thy master: If thou shouldst dally half an hour, his life,

With thine, and all that offer to defend him, Stand in assured loss: Take up, take up;

And follow me, that will to some provision Give thee quick conduct.

Kent. Oppress'd nature sleeps:— This rest might yet have balm'd thy broken

senses,

Which, if convenience will not allow, Stand in hard cure.—Come, help to bear thy

master;

[To the FOOL.]

Thou must not stay behind.

Glo. Come, come, away.

[Exit KENT, GLOSTER and the FOOL, bearing off the king.]

Edg. When we our betters see bearing our

woes,

We scarcely think our miseries our foes,

Who alone suffers, suffers most 't' the mind;

Leaving free things, and happy shows, behind:

But then the mind much sufferance doth o'er-

skip,

When grief hath mates, and bearing fellowship.

How light and portable my pain seems now,

When that, which makes me bend, makes the

king bow!

He childed, as I father'd!—Tom, away:

Mark the high noises; † and thyself bewray;

When false opinion, whose wrong thought denies thee,

In thy just proof, repeals, and reconciles thee.

What will hap more to-night, safe scape thee

king!

Lurk, lurk. [Exit.]

SCENE VII.—A Room in GLOSTER'S Castle.

Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, GONERIL, EDMUND,

and Servants.

Corn. Post speedily to my lord your husband;

\* A blood-hound.

† The great events that are approaching.

‡ Betray, discover.

show him this letter!—the army of France is landed!—Seek out the villain Gloucester.

[*Exeunt some of the Servants.*]

Reg. Hang him instantly.

Gon. Pluck out his eyes.

Corn. Leave him to my displeasure.—Edmund, keep you our sister company; the revenges we are bound to take upon your traitorous father, are not fit for your beholding. Advise the duke (where you are going) to a most *festinate* preparation; we are bound to the like. Our posts shall be swift, and intelligent betwixt us. Farewell, dear sister;—farewell, my lord of Gloucester.\*

[*Enter STEWARD.*]

How now? Where's the king?

Stew. My lord of Gloucester hath convey'd him hence:

Some five or six and thirty of his knights, Hot questuris† after him, met him at the gate; Who, with some other of the lord's dependants, Are gone with him towards Dover: where they boast

To have well-armed friends.

Corn. Get houses for your mistress.

Gon. Farewell, sweet lord, and sister.

[*Exeunt GONERIL and EDMUND.*]

Corn. Edmund, farewell.—Go, seek the traitor Gloucester,

Pinion him like a thief, bring him before us:

[*Exeunt other Servants.*]

Though well we may not pass upon his life Without the form of justice; yet our power Shall do a courtesy; to our wrath, which men May blame, but not control. Who's there? The traitor?

[*Re-enter SERVANTS, with GLOSTER.*]

Reg. Ingrateful fox! 'tis he.

Corn. Bind fast his corky‡ arms.

Glo. What mean your graces?—Good my friends, consider

You are my guests: do me no foul play, friends.

Corn. Bind him, I say.

[*Servants bind him.*]

Reg. Hard, hard:—O filthy traitor!

Glo. Unmerciful lady as you are, I am none.

Corn. To this chair bind him:—Villain, thou shalt find—

[*REGAN plucks his Beard.*]

Glo. By the kind gods, 'tis most ignobly done, To pluck me by the beard.

Reg. So white, and such a traitor!

Glo. Naughty lady,

These hairs, which thou dost ravish from my chin,

Will quicken,|| and accuse thee: I am your host; With robbers' hands, my hospitable favours¶ You should not ruffle thus. What will you do?

Corn. Come, Sir, what letters had you late from France?

Reg. Be simple-answer'd, for we know the truth.

Corn. And what confederacy have you with the traitors

Late footed in the kingdom?

Reg. To whose hands have you sent the lunatic king?

Speak.

Glo. I have a letter guessingly set down, Which came from one that's of a neutral heart, And not from one oppos'd.

Corn. Cunning.

Reg. And false.

Corn. Where hast thou sent the king?

Glo. To Dover.

Reg. Wherefore

To Dover? Wast thou not charg'd at thy peril—

Corn. Wherefore to Dover? Let him first answer that.

Glo. I am tied to the stake, and I must stand the course.

Reg. Wherefore to Dover?

Glo. Because I would not see thy cruel nail Pluck out his poor old eyes; nor thy fierce fist In his anointed flesh stick boarish fangs. The sea, with such a storm as his bare head In hell-black night endur'd, would have buoy'd up,

And quench'd the stelled\* fires: yet, poor old He help the heavens to rain.

If wolves had at thy gate howl'd that stern time Thou shouldst have said, *Good porter, turn the key;*

All cruels else subscrib'd:†—But I shall see The winged vengeance overtake such children.

Corn. See it shalt thou never:—Fellows, hold the chair:

Upon these eyes of thine I'll set my foot.

[*GLOSTER is held down in the Chair while CORNWALL plucks out one of his Eyes, and sets his Foot on it.*]

Glo. He, that will think to live till he be old Give me some help:—O cruel! O ye gods!

Reg. One side will mock another; the other too.

Corn. If you see vengeance,—

Serv. Hold your hand, my lord:

I have serv'd you ever since I was a child; But better service have I never done you, Than now to bid you hold.

Reg. How now, you dog?

Serv. If you did wear a beard upon your chin,

I'd shake it on this quarrel: What do you mean?

Corn. My villain!

[*Draus, and runs at him.*]

Serv. Nay, then come out, and take the chance of anger.

[*Draus. They fight. CORNWALL is wounded.*]

Reg. Give me thy sword.—[*To another Serv.*]

A peasant stand up thus!

[*Snatches a Sword, comes behind, and stabs him.*]

Serv. Oh! I am slain!—My lord, you have one eye left

To see some mischief on him:—O! [Dies.]

Corn. Lest it see more, prevent it:—Out, vile jelly!

Where is thy lustre now!

[*Tears out GLOSTER's other Eye, and throws it on the ground.*]

Glo. All dark and comfortless.—Where's my son Edmund?

Edmund, enkindle all the sparks of nature, To quit‡ this horrid act.

Reg. Out, treacherous villain!

Thou call'st on him that hates thee: it was he That made the overture§ of thy treasons to us; Who is too good to pity thee.

Glo. O my follies!

Then Edgar was abus'd.—

Kind gods, forgive me that, and prosper him!

Reg. Go, thrust him out at gates, and let him smell

His way to Dover.—How is't, my lord? How look you?

Corn. I have receiv'd a hurt:—Follow me, lady.—

Turn out that eyeless villain:—throw this slave Upon the dunghill—Regan, I bleed apace:

Untimely comes this hurt: Give me your arm.

[*Exit CORNWALL, led by REGAN:—Servants unbind GLOSTER, and lead him out.*]

1 Serv. I'll never care what wickedness I do, If this man comes to good.

2 Serv. If she live long, And, in the end, meet the whole course of death, Women will all turn monsters.

\* Meaning Edmund invested with his father's title.

† Inquirers.

‡ Bend to our wrath.

§ Decentful, *say*. ¶ Live.

¶ Features.

\* Starred.

† Yielded, submitted to the necessity of the occasion.

‡ Requite.

§ Laid open.

*I Serv.* Let's follow the old earl, and get the  
Bedlam\* [madness]  
lead him where he would; his roguish  
wits itself to any thing.  
*Serv.* Go thou; I'll fetch some flax, and  
whites of eggs,  
apply to his bleeding face. Now, heaven  
help him! [Exeunt severally.]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—The Heath.

Enter EDGAR.

*Edg.* Yet better thus, and known to be con-  
temn'd [worst],  
Than still contemn'd and flatter'd.† To be  
The lowest and most dejected thing of fortune,  
Stands still in esperance,‡ lives not in fear:  
The lamentable change is from the best;  
The worst returns to laughter. Welcome then,  
Thou unsubstantial air, that I embrace!  
The wretch, that thou hast blown unto the  
worst, [here?]  
Owes nothing to thy blasts. But who comes

Enter GLOSTER, led by an OLD MAN.

My father, poorly led?—World, world, O world!  
But that thy strange mutations§ make us hate  
thee,  
Life would not yield to age.

*Old Man.* O my good lord, I have been your  
tenant, and your father's tenant, these four-  
score years.

*Glo.* Away, get thee away; good friend, be-  
thy comforts can do me no good at all, [gone]:  
Thee they may hurt.

*Old Man.* Alack, Sir, you cannot see your  
way.

*Glo.* I have no way, and therefore want no  
eyes;

I stumbled when I saw: Full oft 'tis seen,  
Our mean, secures us, and our mere defects  
Prove our commodities.—Ah! dear son Edgar,  
The food of thy abused father's wrath!  
Might I but live to see thee in my touch,  
I'd say, I had eyes again!

*Old Man.* How now? Who's there?

*Edg.* [Aside.] O gods! Who is't can say, I  
am at the worst!¶

I am worse than e'er I was.

*Old Man.* 'Tis poor mad Tom.

*Edg.* [Aside.] And worse I may be yet: The  
worst is not,

So long as we can say, *This is the worst.*

*Old Man.* Fellow, where goest?

*Glo.* Is it a beggar-man?

*Old Man.* Madman and beggar too.

*Glo.* He has some reason, else he could not  
beg.

I'th' last night's storm I such a fellow saw;  
Which made me think a man a worm: My son  
Came then into my mind; and yet my mind  
Was then scarce friends with him: I have  
head more since:

As flies to wanton boys, are we to the gods;  
They kill us for their sport.

*Edg.* How should this be?

Bad is the trade must play the fool to sorrow,  
Ang'ring itself and others. [Aside.]—Bless  
thee, master!

*Glo.* Is that the naked fellow?

*Old Man.* Ay, my lord.

*Glo.* Then, pry'thee, get thee gone: If, for  
my sake,

Thou wilt o'ertake us, hence a mile or twain,  
I'th' way to Dover, do it for ancient love;  
And bring some covering for this naked soul,

Whom I'll entreat to lead me.

*Old Man.* Alack, Sir, he's mad.

*Glo.* 'Tis the time's plague, when madmen  
lead the blind.

Do as I bid thee, or rather do thy pleasure;  
Above the rest be gone.

*Old Man.* I'll bring him the best 'parel that  
I have,

Come on't what will. [Exit.]

*Glo.* Sirrah, naked fellow.

*Edg.* Poor Tom's a-cold—I cannot daub\* it  
further. [Aside.]

*Glo.* Come hither, fellow.

*Edg.* [Aside.] And yet I must.—Bless thy  
sweet eyes, they bleed.

*Glo.* Know'st thou the way to Dover?

*Edg.* Both stile and gate, horse-way and foot-  
path. Poor Tom hath been scared out of his good  
wits: Bless the good man from the foul fiend!  
[Five fiends have been in poor Tom at once;  
of lust, as *Obidicut*; *Hobbidance*, prince of  
dumbness; *Mahu*, of stealing; *Modo* of murder;  
and *Flibbertigibbet*, of mopping and mow-  
ing; who since possesses chamber-maids and  
waiting-women. So, bless thee, master!]

*Glo.* Here, take this purse, thou whom the  
heaven's plagues  
Have humbled to all strokes: that I am wretched,  
Makes thee the happier:—Heavens, deal so  
still!

Let the superfluous, and lust-dieted man,  
That slaves your ordnance,† that will not see  
Because he doth not feel, feel your power  
quickly;

So distribution should undo excess, [Dover?]  
And each man have enough.—Dost thou know

*Edg.* Ay, master.

*Glo.* There is a cliff, whose high and bend-  
ing head

Looks fearfully in the confined deep:‡

Bring me but to the very brink of it,

And I'll repair the misery thou dost bear,

With something rich above me: from that place  
I shall no leading need.

*Edg.* Give me thy arm;

Poor Tom shall lead thee. [Exit.]

SCENE II.—Before the Duke of ALBANY'S  
Palace.Enter GONERIL and EDMUND; STEWARD  
meeting them.

*Gon.* Welcome, my lord: I marvel, our mild  
husband [master]

Not met us on the way:—Now, where's your  
Stew. Madam, within; but never man so  
chang'd,

I told him of the army that was landed;

He smil'd at it: I told him, you were coming;

His answer was, *The worse*: of Gloucester's  
treachery,

And of the loyal service of his son,  
When I inform'd him, then he call'd me sot;

And told me, I had turn'd the wrong side  
out:—

What most he should dislike, seems pleasant  
What like, offensive. [To him;

*Gon.* Then shall you go no further,

[To EDMUND.]

It is the cowish terror of his spirit,  
That dares not undertake: he'll not feel  
wrongs,

Which tie him to an answer: Our wishes, on  
the way [ther;

May prove effects.† Back, Edmund, to my bro-  
Hasten his musters, and conduct his powers:

I must change arms at home, and give the  
distaff

Into my husband's hands. This trusty servant  
Shall pass between us: ere long you are like to  
hear,

\* Madman.  
† I.e. It is better to be thus contemned and know it,  
than to be flattered by those who secretly contemn us.  
‡ In hope

\* Disguise  
† I.e. To make it subject to us  
instead of acting in obedience to it.  
‡ I.e. Our  
wishes on the road may be completed.

If you dare venture in your own behalf,  
A mistress' command. Wear this; spare speech;  
[Giving a Favour.]  
Decline your head: this kiss, if it durst speak,  
Would stretch thy spirits up into the air;  
Conjunctive, and fare thee well.

Edm. Your's in the ranks of death.

Gon. My most dear Gloucester!

O, the difference of man, and man! To thee,  
A woman's services are due; my fool  
Usurps my bed.

Steu. Madam, here comes my lord.

[Exit STEWARD.]

Enter ALBANY.

Gon. I have been worth the whistle.\*

Alb. O Gloucester!

You are not worth the dust which the rude  
wind

Blows in your face.—I fear your disposition:  
That nature, which contemns its origin,  
Cannot be border'd certain in itself;  
She that herself will sliver and disbranch  
From her material sap, perforce must wither,  
And come to deadly use.

Gon. No more; the text is foolish.

Alb. Wisdom and goodness to the vile seem  
vile:

Filths savour but themselves. What have you  
done?

Tigers, not daughters, what have you per-  
form'd?

A father, and a gracious aged man,  
Whose reverence the head lugg'd bear would  
lick,

Most barbarous, most degenerate! have you  
maddened.

Could my good brother suffer you to do it?

A man, a prince, by him so benefited?

If that the heavens do not their visible spirits,

Send quickly down to tame these vile offences,

'Twill come,

Humanty must perforce prey on itself,

Like monsters of the deep.

Gon. Milk-liver'd man!

That bear'st a cheek for blows, a head for  
wrongs;

Who hast not in thy brows an eye discerning  
Thine honour from thy suffering; that not  
know'st,

Fools do those villains pity, who are punish'd  
Ere they have done their mischief. Where's  
thy drum?

France spreads his banners in our noiseless  
land;

With plumed helm thy slayer begins threats;

Whilst thou, a moral fool, sit'st still, and cry'st,  
*Alack! why does he so?*

Alb. See thyself, a devil!

Proper deformity seems not in the fiend  
So horrid, as in woman.

Gon. O vain fool!

Alb. Thou changed and self-cover'd thing,  
for shame,

Be-monster not thy feature. Were it my fitness  
To let these hands obey my blood,†

They are apt enough to dislocate and tear

Thy flesh and bones:—Howe'er thou art a fiend,  
A woman's shape doth shield thee.

Gon. Marry, your manhood now!

Enter a MESSENGER.

Alb. What news?

Mess. O my good lord, the Duke of Corn-  
wall's dead;

Slain by his servant, going to put out  
The other eye of Gloucester.

Alb. Gloucester's eyes!

Mess. A servant that he bred, thrill'd with  
remorse,

\* Worth calling for.

† Inclination

† Tear off.

Oppos'd against the act, bending his sword  
To his great master, who, thereat enrag'd,  
Flew on him, and amongst them fell'd him  
dead;

But not without that harmful stroke, which  
since

Hath pluck'd him after.

Alb. This shows you are above,  
You justicers, that these our nether crime—

So speedily can vengeance!—But, O poor Gloucester!  
Lost he his other eye?

Mess. Both, both, my lord.—

This letter, madam, craves a speedy answer;

'Tis from your sister.

Gon. [Aside.] One way I like this well;

But being widow, and my Gloucester with her,

May all the building in my fancy pluck

Upon my hateful life: Another way,

The news is not so tart.—I'll read and answer.

[Exit.

Alb. Where was his son, when they did take  
his eyes?

Mess. Come with my lady hither.

Alb. He is not here.

Mess. No, my good lord; I met him back  
again.

Alb. Knows he the wickedness?

Mess. Ay, my good lord; 'twas he inform'd  
against him;

And quit the house on purpose, that their pun-  
ishment

Might have the freer course.

Alb. Gloucester, I live

To thank thee for the love thou show'st the  
king,

And to revenge thine eyes.—Come hither,  
friend;

Tell me what more thou knowest. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The French Camp near Dover  
Enter KENT and a GENTLEMAN.

Kent. Why the king of France is so suddenly  
gone back know you the reason?

Gent. Something he left imperfect in the state,  
Which since his coming forth is thought of,  
which

Imports to the kingdom so much fear and  
danger,

That his personal return was most requir'd,  
And necessary.

Kent. Who hath he left behind him general?

Gent. The Mareschal of France, Monsieur  
le Fer.

Kent. Did your letters pierce the queen to any  
demonstration of grief?

Gent. Ay, Sir; she took them, read them in  
my presence;

And now and then an ample tear trill'd down  
Her delicate cheek: it seem'd, she was a queen

O'er her passion; who, most rebel-like  
Sought to be king o'er her.

Kent. Oh! then it mov'd her.

Gent. Not to a rage; patience and sorrow  
strove

Who should express her goodliest. You have  
Sunshine and rain at once: her smiles and  
tears

Were like a better day: Those happy smiles,  
That play'd on her ripe lip, seem'd not to know

What guests were in her eyes; which parted  
thence,

As pearls from diamonds dropp'd.—In brief,  
sorrow

Would be a rarity most belov'd, if all

Could so become it.

Gent. Made she no verbal question?

Kent. 'Faith, once, or twice, she heav'd the  
name of father

Pantingly forth, as if it press'd her heart;

Cried, *Sisters! sisters!—Shame of ladies!*  
*sisters!*

Kent! father! sisters! What? 't' the storm?  
't' the night?

\* Discourse, conversation.

*It pity not be believed!* \*—There she shook  
 her holy water from her heavenly eyes,  
 A clamour moisten'd; then away she started  
 To deal with grief alone.

*Kent.* It is the stars,  
 The spheres, globe us, govern our conditions; †  
 In one self mate and mate could not beget  
 Different issues. You spoke not with her  
 Alone, did you?

*Kent.* No.  
*Kent.* Was this before the king return'd?

*Kent.* Well, Sir: The poor distress'd Lear is  
 In the town:  
 So sometime, in his better tune, remembers  
 That we are come about, and by no means  
 Will yield to see his daughter.

*Kent.* Why, good Sir?  
*Kent.* A sovereign shame so elbows him: his  
 own unkindness,

That stripp'd her from his benediction, turn'd  
 her  
 To foreign casualties, gave her dear rights  
 To his dog-hearted daughters,—these things  
 sting  
 His mind so venomously, that burning shame  
 Detains him from Cordelia.

*Kent.* Alack, poor gentleman!

*Kent.* Of Albany's and Cornwall's powers;  
 you heard not?

*Kent.* 'Tis so; they are afoot.

*Kent.* Well, Sir, I'll bring you to our master  
 Lear,  
 And leave you to attend him: some dear cause  
 Will in concealment wrap me up awhile;  
 When I am known aright, you shall not grieve  
 Lending me this acquaintance. I pray you, go  
 Along with me. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV.—The same.—A Tent.

Enter CORDELIA, PHYSICIAN, and SOLDIERS.

*Cor.* Alack, 'tis he; why, he was met even  
 now

As mad as the vex'd sea: singing aloud;  
 Crown'd, with rank fumiter, and fukrow weeds,  
 With harlocks, hemlock, nettles, cuckoo-  
 flowers,

Darnel, and all the idle weeds that grow  
 In our sustaining corn.—A century send forth;  
 Search every acre in the high grown field,  
 And bring him to our eye.

[Exit an OFFICER.]

What can man's wisdom do,  
 In the restoring his bereaved sense?  
 He, that helps him, take all my outward worth.

*Phys.* There is means, madam:  
 Our foster-nurse of nature is repose,  
 The which he lacks; that to provoke in him,  
 Are many simples operative, whose power  
 Will close the eye of anguish.

*Cor.* All bless'd secrets,  
 All you unpublish'd virtues of the earth,  
 Spring with my tears! be aidant, and remediate,  
 In the good man's distress!—Seek, seek for  
 him;

Lest his ungovern'd rage dissolve the life  
 That wants the means to lead it. \*\*

#### Enter a MESSENGER.

*Mess.* Madam, news;  
 The British powers are marching hitherward.  
*Cor.* 'Tis known before; our preparation  
 stands

In expectation of them.—O dear father,  
 It is thy business that I go about;  
 Therefore great France  
 My mourning, and important †† tears, hath  
 pitied.

\* I. e. Let not pity be supposed to exist.

† Dispositions. ‡ Forces.

§ Important business. ¶ Fumitory.

¶ Charlocks.

\*\* I. e. The reason which should guide it.

†† Importunate.

No blown \* ambition doth our arms lucite,  
 But love, dear love, and our ag'd father's right;  
 Soon may I hear and see him. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE V.—A Room in GLOSTER's Castle.

Enter REGAN and STEWARD.

*Reg.* But are my brother's powers set forth?  
*Stew.* Ay, madam.

*Reg.* Himself

In person there?

*Stew.* Madam, with much ado:

Your sister is the better soldier.

*Reg.* Lord Edmund spake not with your lord  
 at home?

*Stew.* No, madam.

*Reg.* What might import my sister's letter to  
 him?

*Stew.* I know not, lady.

*Reg.* 'Faith, he is posted hence on serious  
 matter.

It was great ignorance, Gloster's eyes being  
 out,

To let him live; where he arrives, he moves  
 All hearts against us: Edmund, I think, is  
 gone,

In pity of his misery, to despatch  
 His nighted life; † moreover, to descry  
 The strength o'the enemy.

*Stew.* I must needs after him, madam, with  
 my letter.

*Reg.* Our troops set forth to-morrow; stay  
 with us;

The ways are dangerous.

*Stew.* I may not, madam;

My lady charg'd my duty in this business.

*Reg.* Why should she write to Edmund?  
 Might not you

Transport her purposes by word? Belike,  
 Something—I know not what:—I'll love thee  
 much,

Let me unseal the letter.

*Stew.* Madam, I had rather—

*Reg.* I know your lady does not love her bus-  
 band;

I am sure of that: and, at her late being here,  
 She gave strange orphans, and most speaking  
 looks

To noble Edmund: I know you are of her bos-  
 som.

*Stew.* I, madam?

*Reg.* I speak in understanding; you are, I  
 know it:

Therefore, I do advise you take this note: ‡  
 My lord is dead; Edmund and I have talk'd;

And more convenient is he for my hand,  
 Than for your lady's:—You may gather more.

If you do find him, pray you, give him this;  
 And when your mistress hears thus much from  
 you,

I pray, desire her call her wisdom to her.

So, fare you well.

If you do chance to hear of that blind traitor,  
 Pretermitt fall on him that cuts him off.

*Stew.* 'Would I could meet him, madam! I  
 would show

What party I do follow.

*Reg.* Fare thee well.

[Exeunt.]

#### SCENE VI.—The Country near Dover.

Enter GLOSTER, and EDGAR, dressed like a  
 Peasant.

*Glo.* When shall we come to the top of that  
 same hill?

*Edg.* You do climb up it now: look, how we  
 labour.

*Glo.* Methinks, the ground is even.

*Edg.* Horrible steep!

Hark, do you hear the sea?

*Glo.* No, truly.

\* Inflated, swelling.

† I. e. His life made dark as night.

‡ A cast, or significant glance of the eye.

§ Observe what I am saying. † Infer more.

*Edg.* Why, then your other senses grow imperfect

By your eyes' anguish.

*Glo.* So may it be, indeed :  
Methinks thy voice is alter'd ; and thou speak'st

In better phrase, and matter, than thou didst.

*Edg.* You are much deceiv'd ; in nothing am I chang'd,

But in my garments.

*Glo.* Methinks, you are better spoken.

*Edg.* Come on, Sir ; here's the place :—stand still.—How fearful

And dizzy 'tis, to cast one's eyes so low !

The crows, and choughs,\* that wing the mid-way air,

Show scarce so gross as beetles : Half way down

Hangs one that gathers samphire ; † dreadful trade !

Methinks he seems no bigger than his head :

The fishermen that walk upon the beach,  
Appear like mice ; and you' tail anchoring hark,

Diminish'd to her cock ! ‡ her cock, a buoy

Almost too small for sight : The murmuring surge,

That on the unnumber'd idle pebbles chafes,

Cannot be heard so high :—I'll look no more ;

Lest my brain turn, and the deficient sight

Topple down headlong.

*Glo.* Set me where you stand.

*Edg.* Give me your hand : You are now within a foot

Of the extreme verge : for all beneath the moon  
Would I not leap upright.

*Glo.* Let go my hand.

Here, friend, is another purse ; in it a jewel

Well worth a poor man's taking ; Fairies, and gods,

Prosper it with thee ! Go thou further off ;

Bid me farewell, and let me hear thee going.

*Edg.* Now fare you well, good Sir.

[*Seems to go.*]

*Glo.* With all my heart.

*Edg.* Why I do trouble thus with his despair,  
Is done to cure it.

*Glo.* O you mighty gods !

This world I do renounce ; and, in your sights,

Shake patiently my great affliction off :

It I could bear it longer, and not fall

To quarrel with your great opposess wills,

My sin, and loathed part of nature, should

Burn itself out. If Edgar live, O bless him !—

Now, fellow, fare thee well.

[*He leaps and falls along.*]

*Edg.* Gone, Sir ? farewell.—

And yet I know not how conceit may rob

The treasury of life, when life itself

Yields to the thief : Had he been where he

thought,

By this, had thought been past.—Alive, or dead ?

No, you Sir ! friend !—Hear you, Sir ?—speak !

This might he pass indeed : [—Yet he revives :

What are you, Sir ?

*Glo.* Away, and let me die.

*Edg.* Hadst thou been sought but gossamer,

feathers, air,

So many fathoms down precipitating,

Thou hadst shiver'd like an egg : but thou dost

breathe ;

Hadst heavy substance : bleed'st not ; speak'st ;

art sound.

Ten masts at each make not the altitude,

Which thou hast perpendicularly fell ;

Thy life's a miracle : Speak yet again.

*Glo.* But have I fallen, or no ?

*Edg.* From the dread summit of this chalky

bourne : †

Look up a-height ;—the shrill-gorg'd\* lark a far

Cannot be seen or heard : do but look up. ‡

*Glo.* Alack, I have no eyes.—

Is wretchedness depriv'd that benefit,

To end itself by death ? 'Twas yet some comfort,

When misery could beguile the tyrant's rage,

And frustrate his proud will.

*Edg.* Give me your arm :

Up :—So ;—How is't ? Feel you your legs ? You

stand.

*Glo.* Too well, too well.

*Edg.* This is above all strangeness.

Upon the crown o'the cliff, what thing was that

Which parted from you ?

*Glo.* A poor unfortunate beggar.

*Edg.* As I stood here below, methought, his

eyes

Were two full moons ; he had a thousand noses,

Horns whelk'd † and wav'd like the enridged

sea ;

It was some fiend : Therefore, thou happy fa-

ther,

Think that the clearest ‡ gods, who make them

honours

Of men's impossibilities, have preserv'd thee.

*Glo.* I do remember now : henceforth I'll

bear

Affliction, till it do cry out itself,

Enough, enough, and, die. That thing you

speak of,

I took it for a man ; often 'twould say,

The fiend, the fiend : he led me to that place.

*Edg.* Bear free and patient thoughts.—But

who comes here ?

*Enter LEAR, fantastically dressed up with*

*Flowers.*

The safer sense will ne'er accommodate

His master thus.

*Lear.* No, they cannot touch me for coining ;

I am the king himself.

*Edg.* O thou side-piercing sight !

*Lear.* Nature's above art in that respect.—

There's your press-money. † That fellow handles

his bow like a crow-keeper : draw me a

clothier's yard. ‡—Look, look, a mouse ! Peace,

peace,—this piece of toasted cheese will do't.

—There's my gauntlet ; I'll prove it on a giant.

—Bring up the brown bulls. [—O, well down,

bird !—I'the clout, I'the clout : † bawgh !—Give

the word. ‡

*Edg.* Sweet marjoram.

*Lear.* Pass.

*Glo.* I know that voice.

*Lear.* Ha ! Goneril !—with a white beard !—

They flatter'd me like a dog ; and told me I had

white hairs in my beard, ere the black ones were

there. To say *aye* and *no* to every that I said

aye and no to, was no good divinity. When the

rain came to wet me once, and the wind to make

me chatter ; when the thunder would not peace

at my bidding ; there I found them, there I

smelt them out. Go to, they are not men o'ther

words : they told me I was every thing ; 'tis a

lie : I am not *ague*-proof.

*Glo.* The trick †† of that voice I do well re-

member :

Is't not the king ?

*Lear.* Ay, every inch a king :

When I do stare, see, how the subject quakes.

I pardon that man's life : what was thy cause ?—

*Adultery.*—

Thou shalt not die : Die for adultery ! No :

The wren goes to't, and the small gilded fly

Does lecher in my sight.

Let copulation thrive, for Gloucester's bastard son

Was kinder to his father, than my daughters

Got 'twixen the lawful sheets.

\* Daws. † A vegetable gathered for pickling.

‡ Her cock-bait. † Tumble.

† This must he die in reality.

† I.e. This chalky boundary of England.

\* Shrill-throated. ‡ The parent.

† Twisted, convoluted. † Battle-axe.

† An arrow of a cloth yard long.

† The white mark for archers to aim at.

†† The watchword.

†† Likeness, manner



Oh, luxury, pell-mell, for I lack soldiers.—  
Hold you! smothering dame,  
Whose face between her forks presageth snow;  
That minces virtue, and does shake the head  
In hear of pleasure's name;  
Be hatched, nor the soiled horse, goes to't  
With a more riotous appetite.  
Down from the waist they are centaurs,  
Though women all above:  
But to the girdle do the gods inherit,  
T'neath is all the fiends'; there's hell, there's  
darkness,  
There is the sulphurous pit, burning, scalding,  
teach, consumption;—Fire, fire, fire! pah! pah!  
Give me an ounce of civet, good apothecary,  
to sweeten my imagination: there's money for  
hee.

*Glo.* O, let me kiss that hand!  
*Lear.* Let me wipe it first; it smells of mor-  
tality.

*Glo.* O ruin'd piece of nature! This great  
world

*Lear.* I remember thine eyes well enough.  
Dost thou squiny? at me? No, do thy worst,  
blind Cupid; I'll not love.—Read thou this  
challenge; mark but the penning of it.

*Glo.* Were all the letters suns, I could not see  
one.

*Edg.* I would not take this from report;—it is,  
and my heart breaks at it.

*Lear.* Read.

*Glo.* What, with the case of eyes?

*Lear.* O, ho, are you there with me? No  
yes in your head, nor no money in your purse?  
Your eyes are in a heavy case, your purse in a  
light: Yet you see how this world goes.

*Glo.* I see it feelingly.

*Lear.* What, art mad? A man may see how  
his world goes, with no eyes. Look with thine  
ears: see how yon' justice rails upon yon simple  
bief. Hark, in thine ear: Change places; and,  
sandy-dandy, which is the justice, which is the  
bief?—Thou hast seen a farmer's dog bark at a  
beggar?

*Glo.* Ay, sir.

*Lear.* And the creature run from the cur?  
There thou might'st behold the great image of  
authority: a dog's obeyed in office.

*Edg.* Rascal beadle, hold thy bloody hand!  
Why dost thou lash that whore? Strip thine own  
back;

Thou hotly lust'st to use her in that kind  
For which thou whipp'st her. The usurer hangs  
the cozener.

Through tatter'd clothes small vices do appear:  
Robes, and furr'd gowns, hide all. Plate sin  
with gold,

And the strong lance of justice hurtless breaks:  
Arm it in rage, a pigmy's straw doth pierce it.  
None does offend; none, I say, none; I'll able  
'em:

Take that of me, my friend, who have the power  
To seal the accuser's lips. Get thee glass eyes;  
And, like a scurvy politician, seem  
To see the things thou dost not.—Now, now,

now, now:  
Pull off my boots:—harder, harder; so.

*Edg.* O, matter and impertinency mix'd!  
Reason in madness!

*Lear.* If thou wilt weep my fortunes take my  
eyes.

I know thee well enough; thy name is Gloucester:  
Thou must be patient; we came crying hither.  
Thou know'st, the first time that we smell the  
air,

We wail, and cry:—I will preach to thee; mark  
*Glo.* Alack, alack the day!

*Lear.* When we are born, we cry, that we  
are come

To this great stage of fools;—This a good  
block is

\* Only.      † Fosses.      ‡ Took acquit.  
§ Head anciently signified the head part of a hat.

It were a delicate stratagem to shoe  
A troop of horse with felt: I'll put it in proof;  
And when I have stolen upon these sons-in-law,  
Then, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill.

*Enter a GENTLEMAN, with Attendants.*

*Gent.* O here he is, lay hand upon him,—Sir,  
Your most dear daughter—

*Lear.* No rescue? What, a prisoner? I am  
even

The natural fool of fortune.—Use me well;  
I am cut to the brains.

*Gent.* You shall have any thing.

*Lear.* No seconds? I all myself?

Why, this would make a man, a man of salt,  
To use his eyes for garden water-pots,  
Ay, and for laying autumn's dust.

*Gent.* Good Sir,—

*Lear.* I will die bravely, like a bridegroom:  
What?

I will be jovial; come, come; I am a king,  
My masters, know you that?

*Gent.* You are a royal one, and we obey you.

*Lear.* Then there's life in it. Nay, an you  
get it, you shall get it by running. Sa, sa, sa,  
sa. *[Exit, running; Attendants follow.]*

*Gent.* A sight most pitiful in the meanest  
wretch;

Past speaking of in a king!—Thou hast one  
daughter,

Who redeems nature from the general curse  
Which twain have brought her to.

*Edg.* Hail, gentle Sir.

*Gent.* Sir, speed you: What's your will?

*Edg.* Do you hear aught, Sir, of a battle to-  
ward?

*Gent.* Most sure, and vulgar: every one hears  
that,

Which can distinguish sound.

*Edg.* But, by your favour,  
How near's the other army?

*Gent.* Near, and on speedy foot; the main  
descry

Stands on the hourly thought.

*Edg.* I thank you, Sir: that's all.

*Gent.* Though that the queen on special cause  
is here,

Her army is mov'd on.

*Edg.* I thank you, Sir. *[Exit GENT.]*

*Glo.* You ever-gentle gods, take my breath  
from me;

Let not my worse spirit tempt me again  
To die before you please!

*Edg.* Well pray you, father.

*Glo.* Now, good Sir, what are you?

*Edg.* A most poor man, made tame by for-  
tune's blows;

Who, by the art of known and feeling sorrows,  
Am pregnant to good pity. Give me your hand  
I'll lead you to some bidding.

*Glo.* Heartily thanks:

The bounty and the benison of heaven  
To boot, and boot!

*Enter STEWARD.*

*Stew.* A proclaim'd prize! Most happy!

That eyeless head of thine was first fram'd  
flesh

To raise my fortunes.—Thou old unhappy trait-  
tor,

Briefly thyself remember:—The sword is out  
That must destroy thee.

*Glo.* Now let thy friendly hand

Put strength enough to it. *[Edgar opposes.]*

*Stew.* Wherefore, hold peasant,

Dar'st thou support a publish'd traitor? Hence;

Lest that the infection of his fortune take

Like hold on thee. Let go his arm.

\* I. e. A man of tears

† The main body is expected to be described every body.  
‡ Evil genius.      § Blessing.

¶ Reward, recompence.

¶ Quickly recollect the offences of thy life.

*Edg.* Ch'll not let go, Zir, without vurther 'casion.

*Stew.* Let go, slave, or thou diest.

*Edg.* Good gentleman, go your gait,\* and let poor folk pass. And ch'ud ha' been swager'd out of my life, 'twould not ha' been so long as 'tis by a vortnight. Nay, come, not near the old man; keep out, che vor'ye, or ise try whether your costard† or my bat‡ be the harder: Ch'll be plain with you.

*Stew.* Out, dunghill!

*Edg.* Ch'll pick your teeth, Zir: Come; no matter vor your foine. §

[*They fight; and EDGAR knocks him down.*]

*Stew.* Slave, thou hast slain me:—Villain, take my purse;  
If ever thou wilt thrive, bury my body;  
And give the letters, which thou find'st about me,

To Edmund earl of Gloster; seek him out  
Upon the British party:—O untimely death!

[*Dies.*]

*Edg.* I know thee well: A serviceable villain;  
As duteous to the vices of thy mistress,  
As badness would desire.

*Glo.* What, is he dead?  
*Edg.* Sit you down, father; rest you.—

Let's see his pockets: these letters; that he speaks of, [sorry]  
May be my friends.—He's dead; I am only  
He had no other death's-man.—Let us see:—  
Leave, gentle wax; and, manners, blame us not:

To know our enemies' minds, we'd rip their hearts;  
Their papers, is more lawful.]

[*Reads.*] *Let our reciprocal vows be remembered. You have many opportunities to cut him off: if your will want not, time and place will be fruitfully offered. There is nothing done, if he return the conqueror: Then am I the prisoner, and his bed my jail; from the loathed warmth whereof deliver me, and supply the place for your labour.*

*Your wife, (so I would say,) and your affectionate servant,*

GONFRIL.

O undistinguish'd space of woman's will!—  
A plot upon her virtuous husband's life;  
And the exchange, my brother!—Here, in the sands,

Therè I'll rake up, ¶ the post unsanctified  
Of murderous lechers: and, in the mature time,  
With this ungracious paper strike the sight  
Of the death-practis'd duke: For him 'tis well,  
That of thy death and business I can tell.

[*Exit EDGAR, dragging out the Body.*]

*Glo.* The king is mad: How stiff is my vile sense,

That I stand up, and have lugenious feeling  
Of my huge sorrows! Better I were distract:  
So should my thoughts be sever'd from my  
griefs;

And woes, by wrong imaginations, lose  
The knowledge of themselves.

*Re-enter EDGAR.*

*Edg.* Give me your hand:  
Far off, methinks I hear the beaten drum.  
Come, father, I'll bestow you with a friend.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—A Tent in the French Camp.—  
LEAR on a Bed, asleep: PHYSICIAN, GENTLEMAN, and others, attending.

*Enter CORDELIA and KENT.*

*Cor.* O thou good Kent, how shall I live and work,

To match thy goodness? My life will be too short,

And every measure fall me.

*Kent.* To be acknowledg'd, madam, is o'er-paid.

All my reports go with the modest truth;  
Nor more, nor clipp'd, but so.

*Cor.* Be better-suited: \*  
These weeds are memories† of those worse hours;

I prythee, put them off.

*Kent.* Pardon me, dear madam;  
Yet to be known, shortens my made intent: ‡  
My boon I make it, that you know me not,  
Till time and I think meet.

*Cor.* Then be it so, my good lord.—How does the king? [To the PHYSICIAN.]

*Phys.* Madam, sleeps still.

*Cor.* O you kind gods,  
Cure this great breach in his abused nature!

The untun'd and jarring senses, O wind up  
Of this child-changed father!

*Phys.* So please your majesty,  
That we may wake the king? he hath slept long.

*Cor.* Be govern'd by your knowledge, and proceed

In the sway of your own will. Is he array'd?

*Gent.* Ay, madam: in the heaviness of his sleep,

We put fresh garments on him.

*Phys.* Be by, good madam, when we do awake him;

I doubt not of his temperance.

*Cor.* Very well.

*Phys.* Please you, draw near.—Louder the music there.

*Cor.* O my dear father! Restoration, hang  
Thy medicine on my lips; and let this kiss  
Repair those violent harms, that my two sisters  
Have in thy reverence made!

*Kent.* Kind and dear princess!

*Cor.* Had you not been their father, these white flakes

Had challeng'd pity of them. Was this a face  
To be expos'd against the warring winds?

To stand against the deep dread-bolted thunder?  
In the most terrible and nimble stroke

Of quick, cross lightning? to watch, (poor perdu!) §

With this thin helm? ¶ Mine enemy's dog,  
Though he had bit me, should have stood that night

Against my fire: And wast thou fain, poor father,

To hovel thee with swine, and rogues forlorn,  
In short and musty straw? Alack, alack!

'Tis wonder, that thy life and wits at once  
Had not concluded all.—He wakes; speak to him.

*Phys.* Madam, do you: 'tis fittest.

*Cor.* How does my royal lord? How fares your majesty?

*Lear.* You do me wrong, to take me out o'the grave:—

Thou art a soul in bliss; but I am bound  
Upon a wheel of fire, that mine own tears  
Do scald like molten lead.

*Cor.* Sir, do you know me?

*Lear.* You are a spirit, I know; When did you die?

*Cor.* Still, still, far wide!

*Phys.* He's scarce awake; let him alone awhile.

*Lear.* Where have I been?—Where am I?—Fair day-light?—

I am mightily abus'd.—I should even die with pity,

To see another thus.—I know not what to say.—I will not swear, these are my hands:—let's see;

\* Dressed. † Memorials. ‡ Intent formed.

§ Go your way. ¶ Head. ‡ Club.

Thrusts. ¶ To rip their papers is more lawful.

§ The allusion is to the forlorn-hope in an army, called in French *enfans verdue*.

I feel this pin prick. 'Would I were assur'd  
Of my condition.

*Cor.* O look upon me, Sir,  
And hold your hands in benediction o'er me:—  
No, Sir, you must not kneel.

*Lear.* Pray, do not mock me:  
I am a very foolish fond old man,  
Fourscore and upward; and, to deal plainly,  
Fear I am not in my perfect mind.  
It thinks I should know you, and know this  
man:

Yet I am doubtful: for I am mainly ignorant  
What place this is; and all the skill I have  
Remembers not these garments; nor I know  
not

Where I did lodge last night: Do not laugh at  
me;

For as I am a man, I think this lady  
To be my child Cordelia.

*Cor.* And so I am, I am.

*Lear.* Be your tears wet? Yes, 'faith. I pray,  
weep not:

If you have poison for me, I will drink it.  
I know, you do not love me; for your sisters  
Have, as I do remember, done me wrong,  
You have some cause, they have not.

*Cor.* No cause, no cause.

*Lear.* Am I in France?

*Kent.* In your own kingdom, Sir.

*Lear.* Do not abuse me.

*Phys.* Be comforted, good madam: the great  
rage,

You see is cur'd in him: and yet it is danger  
To make him even \* o'er the time he has lost.  
Desire him to go in; trouble him no more,  
Till further settling.

*Cor.* Will't please your highness walk?

*Lear.* You must bear with me:

Pray now, forget and forgive: I am old and  
foolish.

[*Exit LEAR, CORDELIA, PHYSICIAN,  
and Attendants.*]

*Gent.* Holds it true, Sir,

That the duke of Cornwall was so slain?

*Kent.* Most certain, Sir.

*Gent.* Who is conductor of his people?

*Kent.* As 'tis said,

The bastard son of Gloucester.

*Gent.* They say, Edgar,  
His banish'd son, is with the earl of Kent  
in Germany.

*Kent.* Report is chancelable.

'Tis time to look about; the powers † o'the  
kingdom

Approach apace.

*Kent.* The arbitrement ‡ is like to be a bloody.  
Fare you well, Sir. [*Exit.*]

*Kent.* My point and period will be thoroughly  
wrought,

Or well, or ill, as this day's battle's fought.  
[*Exit.*]

# ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The Camp of the British Forces,  
near Dover.*

*Enter, with Drums, and Colours, EDMUND,  
REGAN, Officers, Soldiers, and others.*

*Edm.* Know of the duke, if his last purpose  
hold;

Or, whether since he is advis'd by aught  
To change the course: He's full of alteration,  
And self-reproving: bring his constant pleasure. §  
[*To an Officer, who goes out.*]

*Reg.* Our sister's man is certainly miscarried.

*Edm.* 'Tis to be doubted, madam.

*Reg.* Now, sweet lord,

You know the goodness I intend upon you:

\* To reconcile it to his apprehension.

† Forces.

‡ His settled resolution

§ Decision.

Tell me,—but truly,—but then speak the truth,  
Do you not love my sister?

*Edm.* In honour'd love.

*Reg.* But have you never found my brother a  
way

To the forefended \* place?

*Edm.* That thought abuses † you.

*Reg.* I am doubtful that you have been con-  
junct

And bosom'd with her, as far as we call hers.

*Edm.* No, by mine honour, madam.

*Reg.* I never shall endure her: Dear my lord,  
Be not familiar with her.

*Edm.* Fear me not:—

She, and the duke her husband,—

*Enter ALBANY, GONERIL, and Soldiers.*

*Gon.* I had rather lose the battle than that  
sister

Should loosen him and me. [*Aside.*]

*Alb.* Our very loving sister, well be met.—  
Sir, this I hear,—The king is come to his

daughter,  
With others, whom the rigour of our state  
Forc'd to cry out. Where I could not be honest,

I never yet was valiant: for this business,  
It touches us as France invades our land,

Not holds; the king; with others, whom, I  
fear,

Most just and heavy causes make oppose. §  
*Edm.* Sir, you speak nobly.

*Reg.* Why is this reason'd?

*Gon.* Combine together 'gainst the enemy: For these domestic and particular broils

Art not to question here.

*Alb.* Let us then determine

With the ancient of war on our proceedings.

*Edm.* I shall attend you presently at your  
tent.

*Reg.* Sister, you'll go with us?

*Gon.* No.

*Reg.* 'Tis most convenient; pray you, go  
with us.

*Gon.* O, ho, I know the riddle: [*Aside.*] I  
will go.

As they are going out, enter EDGAR disguised.

*Edg.* If e'er your grace had speech with man  
so poor,

Hear me one word.

*Alb.* I'll overtake you.—Speak.

[*Exit EDMUND, REGAN, GONERIL, Offi-  
cers, Soldiers, and Attendants.*]

*Edg.* Before you fight the battle, ope this  
letter.

If you have victory, let the trumpet sound  
For him that brought it: wretched though I  
seem,

I can produce a champion, that will prove  
What is avouched there: If you miscarry,

Your business of the world hath so an end,  
And machination ceases. ¶ Fortune love you!

*Alb.* Stay till I have read the letter.

*Edg.* I was forbid it.

When time shall serve, let but the herald cry,  
And I'll appear again. [*Exit.*]

*Alb.* Why, fare thee well; I will o'erlook  
thy paper.

Re-enter EDMUND.

*Edm.* The enemy's in view; draw up your  
powers

Here is the guess of their true strength and  
forces

By diligent discovery;—but your haste  
is now urg'd on you.

*Alb.* We will greet the time. ¶ *Exit.*

*Edm.* To both these sisters have I sworn my  
love;

\* Forbidden

† I. e. Emboldens him.

‡ I. e. All designs against your life will have an end.

§ Be ready to meet the occasion.

¶ Imposes on you.

¶ Opposition.

Each jealous of the other, as the stung  
Are of the adder. Which of them shall I take?  
Both? one? or neither? Neither can be enjoy'd,  
If both remain alive: To take the widow,  
Exasperates, makes mad her sister Goneril;  
And hardly shall I carry out my side,\*  
Her husband being alive. Now then, we'll use  
His countenance for the battle; which being  
done,  
Let her, who would be rid of him, devise  
His speedy taking off. As for the mercy  
Which he intends to Lear, and to Cordelia,—  
The battle done, and they within our power,  
Shall never see his pardon: for my state  
Stands on me to defend, not to debate. [Exit.

SCENE II.—A Field between the Two  
Camps.

Alarum within.—Enter, with Drum and Colours, LEAR, CORDELIA, and their Forces; and Exit.

Enter EDGAR and GLOSTER.

Edg. Here, father, take the shadow of this tree  
For your good host; pray that the right may  
thrive:

If ever I return to you again,  
I'll bring you comfort.

Glo. Grace go with you, Sir! [Exit EDGAR.

Alarums; afterwards a Retreat.—Re-enter EDGAR.

Edg. Away, old man, give me thy hand,  
away;

King Lear hath lost, he and his daughter ta'en:  
Give me thy hand, come on.

Glo. No further, Sir; a man may rot even here.

Edg. What, in ill thoughts again? Men must  
endure

Their going hence, even as their coming hither:  
Ripeness is all: † Come on.

Glo. And that's true too. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The British Camp near Dover.

Enter, in Conquest, with Drum and Colours,  
EDMUND, LEAR and CORDELIA, as Prisoners; Officers, Soldiers, &c.

Lum. Some officers take them away: good  
guard;

'Till their greater pleasures first be known  
That are to censure: them.

Cor. We are not the first,

Who, with best meaning, have incur'd the  
worst.

For thee, oppressed king, am I cast down;  
Myself could else out-trown false fortune's  
frown.—

Shall we not see these daughters, and these  
sisters?

Lear. No, no, no, no! Come, let's away to  
prison:

We two alone will sing like birds i'th' cage:  
When thou dost ask my blessing, I'll kneel  
down,

And ask of thee forgiveness: So we'll live,  
And pray, and sing, and tell old tales, and  
laugh

At gilded butterflies, and hear poor rogues  
Talk of court news: and we'll talk with them  
too,—

Who loses and who wins; who's in, who's  
out;—

And take upon us the mystery of things,  
As if we were God's spies: And we'll wear out,  
In a wall'd prison, packs and sects of great  
ones,

That ebb and flow by the moon.

Edm. Take them away.

Lear. Upon such sacrifices, my Cordelia,  
The gods themselves throw incense. Have  
caught thee?

He that parts us shall bring a brand from  
heaven,

And fire us hence, like foxes. Wipe thine eyes;  
The gowgers\* shall devour them, flesh, and  
fell, †

Ere they shall make us weep: we'll see them  
starve first.

Come.

[Exit LEAR, and CORDELIA guarded.

Edm. Come hither, captain; hark.

Take thou this note; [Giving a Paper.] go,  
follow them to prison:

One step I have advanc'd thee; if thou dost  
As this instructs thee, thou dost make thy way  
To noble fortunes: Know thou this,—thou men  
Are as the time is: to be tender-minded  
Does not become a sword:—Thy great employ-  
ment

Will not bear question; ‡ either say, thou'lt  
do't,

Or thrive by other means.

Off. I'll do't, my lord.

Edm. About it, and write happy, when thou  
hast done.

Mark,—I say, instantly; and carry it so,  
As I have set it down.

Off. I cannot draw a cart, nor eat dried oats;  
If it be man's work, I will do it.

[Exit OFFICER.

Flourish. Enter ALBANY, GONERIL, REGAN,  
OFFICERS, and Attendants.

Alb. Sir, you have shown to-day your valiant  
strain,

And fortune led you well: You have the cap-  
tives

Who were the opposites of this day's strife;  
We do require them of you; so to use them,  
As we shall find their merits and our safety  
May equally determine.

Edm. Sir, I thought it fit

To send the old and miserable king  
To some retention, and appointed guard;  
Whose age has charms in it, whose title more,  
To pluck the common bosom on his side,  
And turn our impress'd lances in our eyes  
Which do command them. With him I sent the  
queen;

My reason all the same; and they are ready  
To-morrow, or at further space to appear  
Where you shall hold your session. At this  
time,

We sweat, and bleed: the friend hath lost his  
friend;

And the best quarrels, in the heat, are curs'd  
By those that feel their sharpness:—

The question of Cordelia, and her father,  
Requires a sitter place. §

Alb. Sir, by your patience,

I hold you but a subject of this war,  
Not as a brother.

Reg. That's as we list to grace him.

methinks our pleasure might have been de-  
manded,

Ere you had spoke so far. He led our powers;  
Bore the commission of my place and person;  
The which immediacy || may well stand up,  
And call itself your brother.

Gon. Not so hot:

In his own grace he doth exalt himself,  
More than in your advancement.

Reg. In my rights,

By me invested, he compeers the best.

Gon. That were the most, if he should hus-  
band you.

Reg. Jesters do oft prove prophets.

\* The French disease. † Skin.

‡ Admit of debate.

§ To be discourag'd of in greater privacy.

|| Authority to act on his own judgment.

\* I. e. Make my party good.

† I. e. To be ready prepared, is all.

‡ Pass judgment on them.

*Gon.* Holloa, holloa!  
That eye that told you so, look'd but a-squint.\*  
*Reg.* Lady, I am not well; else I should answer  
From a full-flowing stomach.—General,  
Take thou my soldiers, prisoners, patrimony;  
Dispose of them, of me; the walls are thine:  
Witness the world, that I create thee here  
My lord and master.

*Gon.* Mean you to enjoy him?

*Alb.* The let-alone† lies not in your good will.

*Edm.* Nor in thine, lord.

*Alb.* Half-blooded fellow, yes.

*Reg.* Let the drum strike, and prove my title thine. [To EDMUND.]

*Alb.* Stay yet; hear reason:—Edmund, I arrest thee

On capital treason; and, in thy arrest,  
This gilded serpent: [Pointing to GON.]—for  
your claim, fair sister,

I bar it in the interest of my wife;

'Tis she is sub-contracted to this lord,

And I, her husband, contradict your bans.

If you will marry, make your love to me,  
My lady is bespoken.

*Gon.* An interlude!

*Alb.* Thou art arm'd, Gloster:—Let the trumpet sound:

If none appear to prove upon thy person,  
Thy heinous, manifest, and many treasons,  
There is my pledge; [Throwing down a Glove.]

I'll prove it on thy heart,

Ere I taste bread, thou art in nothing less  
Than I have here proclaim'd thee.

*Reg.* Sick, O, sick!

*Gon.* If not, I'll ne'er trust poison. [Aside.]

*Edm.* There's my exchange: [Throwing down a Glove.] what in the world he is

That names me traitor, villain-like he lies:  
Call by thy trumpet: he that dares approach,

On him, on you, (who not?) I will maintain  
My truth and honour firmly.

*Alb.* A herald, ho!

*Edm.* A herald, ho, a herald!

*Alb.* Trust to thy single virtue!‡ for thy soldiers,  
All levied in my name, have in my name  
Took their discharge.

*Reg.* This sickness grows upon me.

*Enter a HERALD.*

*Alb.* She is not well; convey her to my tent.  
[Exit REGAN, led.]

Come hither, herald,—Let the trumpet sound,—  
And read out this.

*Off.* Sound, trumpet. [A Trumpet sounds.]

*HERALD reads.*

If any man of quality or degree, within the  
lists of the army, will maintain upon ED-  
MUND, supposed earl of GLOSTER, that he is  
a manifold traitor, let him appear at the  
third sound of the trumpet: He is bold in his  
defence.

*Edm.* Sound. [1 Trumpet.]

*Her.* Again. [2 Trumpet.]

*Her.* Again. [3 Trumpet.]

[Trumpet answers within.]

*Enter EDGAR, armed, preceded by a Trumpet.*

*Alb.* Ask him his purposes, why he appears  
Upon this call of the trumpet.

*Her.* What are you?

Your name, your quality? and why you answer  
This present summons?

*Edg.* Know, my name is lost;

By treason's tooth bare-gnawn, and canker-bit:

Yet am I noble, as the adversary

I come to cope withal.

*Alb.* Which is that adversary?

\* Alluding to the proverb: "Love being jealous  
makes a good eye look a-squint."

† The hindrance.

‡ I. e. Valour

*Edg.* What's he, that speaks for Edmund earl  
of Gloster?

*Edm.* Himself:—What say'st thou to him?

*Edg.* Draw thy sword:

That, if my speech offend a noble heart,

Thy arm may do thee justice: here is mine.

Behold it is the privilege of mine honours,

My oath and my profession: I protest,—

Maugre\* thy strength, youth, place, and emi-  
nence,

Despite thy victor sword, and fire-new fortune,

Thy valour, and thy heart,—thou art a traitor:

False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father;

Conspiring† against this high illustrious prince;

And, from the extremest upward of thy head,

To the descent and dust beneath thy feet,

A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou, No,

This sword, this arm, and my best spirits, are  
beut

To prove upon thy heart, whereto I speak  
Thou liest.

*Edm.* In wisdom I should ask thy name: †

But, since thy outside looks so fair and war-  
like, [breathes,

And that thy tongue some 'say' of breeding

What safe and nicely I might well delay

By rule of knighthood, I disdain and spurn:

Back do I toss these treasons to thy head;

With the hell-hated lie o'erwhelm thy heart;

Which, (for they yet glance by, and scarcely  
bruise,) [way,

This sword of mine shall give them instant

Where they shall rest for ever.—Trumpets,  
speak.

[Alarums.—They fight.—EDMUND falls.]

*Alb.* O save him, save him!

*Gon.* This is mere practice, ‡ Gloster:

By the law of arms, thou wast not bound to  
answer

An unknown opposite: thou art not vanquish'd,

But cozen'd and beguild.

*Alb.* Shut your mouth, dame,

Or with this paper shall I stop it:—Hold, Sir:—

Thou worse than any name, read thine own  
evil:—

No tearing, lady; I perceive, you know it.

*Gon.* Say, if I do; the laws are mine, not  
Who shall arraign me for't? [thine:]

*Alb.* Most monstrous!

Know'st thou this paper?

*Gon.* Ask me not what I know.

[Exit GONNORIL.]

*Alb.* Go after her: she's desperate; govern  
her. [To an OFFICER, who goes out.]

*Edm.* What you have charg'd me with, that  
have I done; [out;

And more, much more: the time will bring it  
'Tis past, and so am I: But what art thou,

That hast this fortune on me? If thou art noble,  
I do forgive thee.

*Edg.* Let's exchange charity.

I am no less in blood than thou art, Edmund;

If more, the more thou hast wrong'd me.

My name is Edgar, and thy father's son.

The gods are just, and of our pleasant uses  
Make instruments to scourge us:

The dark and vicious place where thee he got,  
Cost him his eyes.

*Edm.* Thou hast spoken right, 'tis true;

The wheel is come full circle: I am here.

*Alb.* Methought, thy very gait did prophesy  
A royal nobleness:—I must embrace thee;

Let sorrow split my heart, if ever I  
Did hate thee, or thy father!

*Edg.* Worthy prince,

I know it well.

*Alb.* Where have you hid yourself? [ther?]

How have you known the miseries of your fa-  
ther? By nursing them, my lord.—List! a  
brief tale;—

\* Notwithstanding.

† Because if his adversary was not of equal rank, Ed-  
mund might have declined the combat.

‡ Sample.

§ Stratagem.

¶ Hear.

\* assay or proof.

And, when 'tis told, O that my heart would burst!—

The bloody proclamation to escape,  
That follow'd me so near, (O our lives' sweetness!)

That with the pain of death we'd hourly die,  
Rather than die at once! taught me to shift  
Into a madman's rags; to assume a semblance

That very dogs disdain'd: and in this habit  
Met I my father with his bleeding rings,  
Their precious stones new lost; became his guide,

Led him, begg'd for him, sav'd him from  
Never (O fault!) reveal'd myself unto him,  
Until some half hour past, when I was arm'd,  
Not sure, though hoping, of this good success,  
I ask'd his blessing, and from first to last  
Told him my pilgrimage: But his flawed heart,

(Alack, too weak the conflict to support!)

'Twixt two extremes of passion, joy and grief,  
Burst smilingly.

Edm. This speech of your's hath mov'd me,  
And shall, perchance, do good: but speak  
you on;

You look as you had something more to say.

Alb. If there be more, more woeful, hold it in;

For I am almost ready to dissolve,  
Hearing of this.

Edg. This would have seem'd a period  
To such as love not sorrow; but another,  
To amplify too much, would make much more,  
And top extremity.

Whilst I was big in clamour, came there a  
Who having seen me in my worst estate,  
Shunn'd my abhor'd society: but then, finding  
Who 'twas that so endur'd, with his strong arms

He fasten'd on my neck, and bellow'd out  
As he'd burst heaven; threw him on my father;

Told the most piteous tale of Lear and him,  
That ever ear receiv'd: which in recounting  
His grief grew piteous, and the strings of life  
Began to crack: twice then the trumpet  
sounded,

And there I left him tranc'd.

Alb. But who was this?

Edg. Kent, Sir, the banish'd Kent: who in  
disguise

Follow'd his enemy king, and did him service  
Improper for a slave.

Enter a GENTLEMAN hastily, with a bloody Knife.

Gent. Help! help! O help!

Edg. What kind of help?

Alb. Speak, man.

Edg. What means that bloody knife?

Gent. 'Tis hot, it smokes;

It came even from the heart of—

Alb. Who, man? speak.

Gent. Your lady, Sir, your lady: and her

By her is poison'd; she confesses it. [sister

Edm. I was contract'd to them both; all

Now marry in an instant. [three

Alb. Produce their bodies, be they alive or  
dead!

This judgment of the heavens, that makes us  
tremble,

Touches us not with pity. [Exit GENTLEMAN.

Enter KENT.

Edg. Here comes Kent, Sir.

Alb. O it is he.

The time will not allow the compliment,  
Which very manners urges.

Kent. I am come

To bid my king and master aye good night;

Is he not here?

Alb. Great thing of us forgot!—

• For star.

Speak, Edmund, where's the king? and where's  
Cordelia?

See'st thou this object, Kent?

[The Bodies of GONERIL and REGAN  
are brought in.

Kent. Alack, why thus?

Edm. Yet Edmund was below'd:

The one the other poison'd for my sake,  
And after slew herself.

Alb. Even so.—Cover their faces.

Edm. I pant for life:—Some good I mean to  
do,

Despite of mine own nature. Quickly send,—

Be brief in it,—to the castle; for my wit  
Is on the life of Lear, and on Cordelia;—

Nay, send in time.

Alb. Run, run, O run—

Edg. To whom, my lord?—Who has the office?

send

Thy token of reprieve.

Edm. Well thought on; take my sword,

Give it the captain.

Alb. Haste thee, for thy life. [Exit EDMUND.

Edm. He hath commission from thy wife  
and me

To hang Cordelia in the prison, and  
To lay the blame upon her own despair,

That she fordid herself.

Alb. The gods defend her! Bear him hence  
awhile. [EDMUND is borne off.

Enter LEAR, with CORDELIA dead in his  
Arms; EDGAR, OFFICER, and others.

Lear. Howl, howl, howl, howl!—O you are  
men of stones;

Had I your tongues and eyes, I'd use them so  
That heaven's vault should crack:—O she is  
gone for ever!

I know when one is dead, and when one lives;

She's dead as earth:—Lend me a looking-glass;

If that her breath will mist or stain the stone,  
Why, then she lives.

Kent. Is this the promis'd end?

Edg. Or image of that horror?

Alb. Fall, and cease!

Lear. This feather stirs: she lives! if it be so,

It is a chance that does redeem all sorrows  
That ever I have felt.

Kent. O my good master!

Lear. Pr'ythee, away.

Edg. 'Tis noble Kent, your friend.

Lear. A plague upon you, murderers, traitors  
all!

I might have sav'd her; now she's gone for  
Cordelia, Cordelia, stay a little. Ha!

What is't thou say'st?—Her voice was ever  
soft,

Gentle, and low; an excellent thing in woman  
I kill'd the slave that was a hanging!

Off. 'Tis true, my lords, he did.

Lear. Did I not, fellow?

I have seen the day, with my good biting falcon  
I would have made them skip: I am old now,

And these same crosses spoil me.—Who are  
you?

Mine eyes are none: O the best!—I'll tell you  
Kent. If fortune brag of two she lov'd and  
One of them we behold.

Lear. This is a dull sight: Are you not  
Kent?

Kent. The same.

Your servant Kent: Where is your servant  
Lear. He's a good fellow, I can tell you  
that;

He'll strike, and quickly too:—He's dead and  
Kent. No, my good lord; I am the very  
man;—

Lear. I'll see that straight.

Kent. That, from your first of difference and  
Have follow'd your sad steps.

Lear. You are welcome hither.

† Destroyed herself.

† The end of the world, or the horrible circumstance  
preceding it?

† I. e. Die; Albany speaks to Lear.

*Kent.* Nor no man else; all's cheerless, dark,  
and deadly.—

—Your eldest daughters have fore-doom'd them-  
selves,

And desperately are dead.

*Lear.* Ay, so I think.

*Alb.* He knows not what he says; and vain  
That we present us to him. [it is

*Edg.* Very bootless.\*

*Enter an OFFICER.*

*Off.* Edmund is dead, my lord.

*Alb.* That's but a trifle here.—

You lords, and noble friends, know our intent.  
What comfort to this great decay† may come,  
Shall be applied: For us, we will resign,  
During the life of this old majesty,  
To him our absolute power. You, to your  
rights; [To EDGAR and KENT.

With boot,‡ and such addition§ as your honours  
Have more than merited.—All friends shall  
taste

The wages of their virtue, and all foes

The cup of their deservings.—O see, see!

*Lear.* And my poor fool|| is hang'd! No, no,  
no life:

Why should a dog, a horse, a rat, have life,

\* Useless. † I. e. Lear. ‡ Benefit. § Titles.  
|| Poor fool, in the time of Shakespeare was an expres-  
sion of endearment. *referring to Cordelia.*

And thou no breath at all! O thou wilt come  
no more,

Never, never, never, never!—

Pray you, undo this button: Thank you, Sir.—

Do you see this? Look on her,—look,—her  
lips,—

Look there, look there!— [He dies

*Edg.* He faints!—My lord, my lord,—

*Kent.* Break, heart; I pr'ythee, break!

*Edg.* Look up, my lord.

*Kent.* Vex not his ghost: O let him pass: \*  
he hates him,

That would upon the rack of this tough world  
Stretch him out longer.

*Edg.* O he is gone, indeed.

*Kent.* The wonder is, he hath endur'd so long.  
He but usurp'd his life.

*Alb.* Bear them from hence.—Our present  
business

Is general woe. Friends of my soul, you twain  
[To KENT and EDGAR.

Rule in this realm, and the go'd state sustain.

*Kent.* I have a journey, Sir, shortly to go;  
My master calls, and I must not say, no.

*Alb.* The weight of this sad time we must obey;  
Speak what we feel, not what we ought to say.

The oldest hath borne most: we, that are young,  
Shall never see so much, nor live so long.

[Exeunt, with a dead March.

\* Die.

# MACBETH.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

IN this matchless tragedy Shakspeare has closely adhered to historical fact, excepting that Banquo, out of compliment to his descendant James I. is excluded from all participation in the murder of Duncan. In the reign of Charles II. the song of the witches were set to music by the celebrated Matthew Lock, and the play regarded as a semi-opera. The ghosts and witches, though admirably portrayed, have been censured as an insult to common sense; and cautions have been held out to the young and uninformed against imbibing the absurd principles of fatalism which are seemingly countenanced in many parts of this piece. But in the time of Shakspeare, the doctrine of witchcraft was at once established by law and by fashion, and it became not only unpolite, but criminal, to doubt it.—King James himself in his dialogues of *Demonomie*, re-printed in London soon after his succession, has speculated deeply on the illusions of spirits, the compact of witches, &c.; and our dramatist only turned to his advantage a system universally admitted. In representation, some uninteresting scenes are omitted; many of the witches' dialogues adapted to beautiful music, and a song or two, probably written by Sir W. Davenant, added to the parts. Betterton, amidst many bad alterations, hit upon the plan of making the witches deliver all the prophecies, by which a deal of the trap-work is avoided, and Garrick substituted some excellent passages to be uttered by Macbeth, whilst expiring, in lieu of the disgusting exposure of his head by Macduff. The nearest criticism upon the play, and the most concise record of its historical facts, are contained in the following extract from a standard publication: "Macbeth flourished in Scotland about the middle of the tenth century. At this period Duncan was king, a mild and humane prince, but not at all possessed of the genius requisite for governing a country so turbulent, and so infested by the intrigues and animosities of the great Macbeth, a powerful nobleman, and nearly allied to the crown. Not contented with curbing the king's authority, carried still further his mad ambition; he murdered Duncan at Inverness, and then seized upon the throne. Fearing lest his ill-gotten power should be stripped from him, he chased Malcolm Kenmore, the son and heir, into England, and put to death Mac Gill and Banquo, the two most powerful men in his dominions. Macduff next becoming the object of his suspicion, he escaped into England, but the inhuman usurper wreaked his vengeance on his wife and children, whom he caused to be cruelly butchered. Siward, whose daughter was married to Duncan, embraced, by Edward's orders, the protection of his distressed family. He marched an army into Scotland, and having defeated and killed Macbeth in battle, he restored Malcolm to the throne of his ancestors. The tragedy founded upon the history of Macbeth, though contrary to the rules of the drama, contains an infinity of beauties with respect to language, character, passion, and incident; and is thought to be one of the very best pieces of the very best masters in this kind of writing that the world ever produced. The danger of ambition is well described, and the passions are directed to their true ends; so that it is not only admirable as a poem, but one of the most moral pieces existing."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUNCAN, *King of Scotland.*  
MALCOLM, } *his Sons.*  
DONALDIN, }  
MACBETH, } *Generals of the King's Army.*  
BANQUO, }  
MACDUFF, }  
LENOX, }  
ROSS, } *Noblemen of Scotland.*  
MENAPTH, }  
ANGUS, }  
CATHNESS, }  
FLEANCE, } *Son to Banquo.*  
SIWARD, *Earl of Northumberland, General*  
*of the English Forces.*  
YOUNG SIWARD, *his Son.*

SLYTON, *an Officer attending on Macbeth.*  
Son to Macduff.  
An English Doctor.—A Scotch Doctor.  
A Soldier.—A Porter.—An old Man.

LADY MACBETH.  
LADY MACDUFF.  
Gentlewoman attending on Lady Macbeth.  
HECATE, and three Witches.

Lords, Gentlemen, Officers, Soldiers, Murderers, Attendants, and Messengers.

The Ghost of Banquo, and several other Apparitions.

SCENE, in the end of the fourth act, lies in England; through the rest of the play, in Scotland; and, chiefly, at Macbeth's Castle.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—An open Place.

Thunder and Lightning. Enter three WITCHES.

1 Witch. When shall we three meet again  
In thunder, lightning, or in rain?

2 Witch. When the hurlyburly's done,  
When the battle's lost and won,

• Tumb.

3 Witch. That will be ere set of sun.

1 Witch. Where the place?

2 Witch. Upon the heath:

3 Witch. There to meet Macbeth.

1 Witch. I come, Graymalkin!

All. Paddock calls:—Anon.—

Fair is foul, and foul is fair:

Hover through the fog and filthy air.

[WITCHES vanish.]



SCENE II.—A *Jamp near Fores.*

*Alarum within. Enter King DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, LENOX, with ATTENDANTS, meeting a bleeding SOLDIER.*

*Dun.* What bloody man is that? He can report,  
As seemeth by his plight, of the revolt  
The newest state.

*Mal.* This is the sergeant,  
Who, like a good and hardy soldier, fought  
'Gainst my captivity:—Hail, brave friend!  
Say to the king the knowledge of the broil,  
As thou didst leave it.

*Sold.* Doubtfully it stood;  
As two spent swimmers, that do cling together,  
And choke their art. The merciless Macdon-  
wald

(Worthy to be a rebel; for to that  
The multiplying villanies of nature  
Do swarm upon him,) from the western isles,  
Of kernes and gallowglasses is supplied;  
And fortune, on his damned quarrel† smiling,  
Show'd like a rebel's whore: But all's too weak:  
For brave Macbeth, (well he deserves that  
name),

Disdaining fortune, with his brandish'd steel,  
Which smok'd with bloody execution,  
Like valour's minion Carv'd out his passage,  
till he fac'd the slave;  
And ne'er shook hands, nor bade farewell to  
him,  
Till he unseam'd him from the nave to the chaps,  
And fix'd his head upon our battlements.

*Dun.* O valiant cousin! worthy gentleman!

*Sold.* As whence the sun 'gins his reflection,  
Shipwrecking storms and direful thunders break;  
So from that spring, whence comfort seem'd to  
come,

Discomfort† swells. Mark, King of Scotland,  
mark:

No sooner justice had, with valour arm'd,  
Compell'd these skipping kernes to trust their  
heels;

But the Norwegian lord, surveying vantage,  
With furbish'd arms and new supplies of men,  
Began a fresh assault.

*Dun.* Dismay'd not this  
Our captains, Macbeth and Banquo?

*Sold.* Yes;  
As sparrows, eagles; or the hare, the lion.  
If I say sooth, I must report they were  
As cannons‡ overcharg'd with double cracks;  
So they

Doubly redoubled strokes upon the foe:  
Except they meant to bathe in reeking wounds,  
Or memorize another Golgotha,§  
I cannot tell:—

But I am faint, my gashes cry for help.

*Dun.* So well thy words become thee, as thy  
wounds;

They smack of honour both:—Go, get him sur-  
geous. [Exit SOLDIER, attended.]

*Enter ROSSE.*

Who comes here?

*Mal.* The worthy thane of Rosse.

*Len.* What a haste looks through his eyes!  
So should he look;

That seems to speak things strange.

*Rosse.* God save the king!

*Dun.* Whence cam'st thou, worthy thane?

*Rosse.* From Fife, great king,  
Where the Norwegian banners flout\*\* the sky,  
And fan our people cold.

Norway himself, with terrible numbers,  
Assisted by that most disloyal traitor

The thane of Cawdor,† gan a dismal conflict:  
Till that Bellona's bridegroom,†† lapp'd in proof,‡‡

\* They were light and heavy armed troops.

† Cause. ‡ The opposite to comfort. § Truth.  
¶ Cannons were not invented until some centuries  
after this period.

¶ Make another Golgotha as memorable as the first.

\*\* Mock.

†† Shakespeare means Mars.

‡‡ Defended by armour of proof.

Confronted him with self-comparisons,  
Point against point, rebellious arm 'gainst arm,  
Curbing his lavish spirit: And, to conclude,  
The victory fell on us;—

*Dun.* Great happiness!

*Rosse.* That now

Sweno, the Norways' king, craves composition;  
Nor would we deign him burial of his men,  
Till he disburs'd, at Saint Colme's inch,\*  
Ten thousand dollars to our general use.

*Dun.* No more that thane of Cawdor shall  
deceive

Our bosom interest:—Go, pronounce his death,  
And with his former title greet Macbeth.

*Rosse.* I'll see it done.

*Dun.* What he hath lost, noble Macbeth hath  
won. [Exit.]

## SCENE III.—A Heath.—Thunder.

*Enter the three WITCHES.*

1 *Witch.* Where hast thou been, sister?

2 *Witch.* Killing swine.

3 *Witch.* Sister, where thou?

1 *Witch.* A Sailor's wife had chesnuts in her  
lap,

And mounch'd, and mounch'd, and mounch'd:—  
Give me, quoth I:

Aroint thee, witch! the rump-fed ronyou;  
cries.

Her husband's to Aleppo gone, master o'the  
But in a sieve I'll thither sail, [Tiger:]

And, like a rat without a tail,

I'll do, I'll do, I'll do.

2 *Witch.* I'll give thee a wind.

1 *Witch.* Thou art land.

3 *Witch.* And I another.

1 *Witch.* I myself have all the other;

And the very ports they blow,

All the quarters that they know

I'th shipman's card:§

I will drain him dry as hay:

Sleep shall, neither night nor day,

Hang upon his pent-house lid;

He shall live a man forbid:¶

Weary sev'n-nights, nine times nine,

Shall he dwindle, peak, and pine:

Though his bark cannot be lost,

Yet it shall be tempest-toss'd.

Look what I have.

2 *Witch.* Show me, show me.

1 *Witch.* Here I have a pilot's thumb,

Wreck'd, as homeward he did come. [Drum within.]

3 *Witch.* A drum, a drum;

Macbeth doth come.

All. The weird sisters,† hand in hand,

Posters of the sea and land,

Thus do go about, about;

Thrice to thine, and thrice to mine,

And thrice again, to make up nine:

Peace!—the charm's wound up.

*Enter MACBETH and BANQUO.*

*Macb.* So foul and fair a day I have not seen

*Ban.* How far is't call'd to Fores?—What  
are these,

So wither'd and so wild in their attire:

That look not like the inhabitants o'the earth,

And yet are on't? Live you? or are you aught

That man may question? You seem to unde-  
stand me.

By each at once her choppy finger laying  
Upon her skinny lips:—You should be women,  
And yet your beards forbid me to interpret  
That you are so.

*Macb.* Speak, if you can;—What are you?

1 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee,  
thane of Glamis!

\* A small island in the Firth of Edinburgh.

† A vaunt, begone.

‡ A scabby woman.

§ Sailor's chart.

¶ Accursed.

¶† prophetic sisters; the fates of the northern nations,  
the three hand-maidens of Odin.

Scene III.

MACBETH.

321

2 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee,  
thane of Cawdor!

3 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! that shalt be  
king hereafter.

*Ban.* Good Sir, why do you start, and seem  
to fear

Things that do sound so fair?—I'the name of  
truth,

Are ye fantastical \* or that indeed

Which outwardly ye show? My noble partner  
You greet with present grace, and great pre-  
diction

Of noble having, † and of royal hope, [not :  
That he seems rapt ‡ withal; to me you speak  
If you can look into the seeds of time,

And say which grain will grow, and which will  
not;

Speak then to me, who neither beg nor fear  
Your favours nor your hate.

1 *Witch.* Hail!

2 *Witch.* Hail!

3 *Witch.* Hail!

1 *Witch.* Lesser than Macbeth, and greater.

2 *Witch.* Not so happy, yet much happier.

3 *Witch.* Thou shalt get kings, though thou  
be none :

So, all hail, Macbeth and Banquo!

1 *Witch.* Banquo and Macbeth, all hail!

*Macb.* Stay, you imperfect speakers, tell me  
more :

By Sinel's death § I know I am thane of Glamis;  
But how of Cawdor? the 'thane of Cawdor lives,  
A prosperous gentleman; and, to be king,  
Stands not within the prospect of belief,  
No more than to be Cawdor. Say, from whence  
You owe this strange intelligence? or why  
Upon this blasted heath you stop our way  
With such prophetic greeting?—Speak, I charge  
you.

*Ban.* The earth hath bubbles, as the water  
has, [witches *tanish*.  
[ish'd?]

And these are of them:—Whither are they va-  
[tical,

*Macb.* Into the air; and what seem'd cor-  
poral melted

As breath into the wind.—'Would they had  
staid!

*Ban.* Were such things here, as we do speak  
about;

Or have we eaten of the insane root, ¶  
That takes the reason prisoner?

*Macb.* Your children shall be kings.

*Ban.* You shall be king.

*Macb.* And thane of Cawdor too; went it  
not so? [here?]

*Ban.* To the self-same tune and words. Who's

*Enter ROSS and ANGUS.*

*Rosse.* The king hath happily receiv'd, Mac-  
beth,

The news of thy success; and when he reads  
Thy personal venture in the rebels' fight,  
His wonders and his praises do contend,  
Which should be thine, or his: Silence'd with  
that,

In viewing o'er the rest o'the self-same day,  
He finds thee in the stout Norwegian ranks,  
Nothing afraid of what thyself didst make,  
Strange images of death. As thick as tale, ¶  
Came post with post; and every one did bear  
Thy praises in his kingdom's great defence,  
And pour'd them down before him.

*Ang.* We are sent,

To give thee, from our royal master, thanks;

To herald thee into his sight, not pay thee.

*Rosse.* And, for an earnest of a greater hon-  
our,

He bade me, from him, call thee thane of  
Cawdor :

In which addition, \* hail, most worthy thane!  
For it is thine.

*Ban.* What, can the devil speak true?

*Macb.* The thane of Cawdor lives: Why do  
you dress me  
In borrow'd robes?

*Ang.* Who was the thane, lives yet;  
But under heavy judgment bears that life  
Which he deserves to lose. Whether he was  
Comb'd with Norway; or did line the rebel  
With hidden help and vantage; or that with  
both

He labour'd in his country's wreck, I know not;  
But treasons capital, confess'd and prov'd,  
Have overthrown him.

*Macb.* Glamis and thane of Cawdor:

The greatest is behind.—Thanks for your  
pains.—

Do you not hope your children shall be kings,  
When those that gave the thane of Cawdor to  
Promis'd no less to them? [me,

*Ban.* That trusted home,

Might yet enkindle † you unto the crown,  
Besides the thane of Cawdor. But 'tis strange:  
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths;  
Win us with honest trifles, to betray us  
In deepest consequence.—

Cousins, a word, I pray you,

*Macb.* Two truths are told,  
As happy prologues to the swelling act  
Of the imperial theme.—I thank you, gentle-  
man. This supernatural soliciting; [men.—  
Cannot be ill; cannot be good:—If ill,  
Why hath it given me earnest of success,  
Commencing in a truth? I am thane of Caw-  
dor: §

If good, why do I yield to that suggestion ||  
Whose horrid image doth unfix my hair,  
And make my seated † heart knock at my ribs,  
Against the use of nature? Present fears  
Are less than horrible imaginings: [tical,  
My thought, whose murder yet is but fantas-  
Shakes so my single state of man, that function  
Is smother'd in surmise; \*\* and nothing is,  
But what is not.

*Ban.* Look, how our partner's rapt.

*Macb.* If chance will have me king, why,  
chance may crown me,  
Without my stir.

*Ban.* New honours come upon him

Like our strange garments; cleave not to ther-  
monld,

But with the aid of use.

*Macb.* Come what come may;

Time and the hour †† runs through the roughest  
day.

*Ban.* Worthy Macbeth, we stay upon your  
leisure.

*Macb.* Give me your favour: ††—my dull brain  
was wrought [pains  
With things forgotten. Kind gentlemen, your  
Are register'd where every day I turn  
The leaf to read them.—Let us toward the  
king; [time,  
Think upon what hath chanc'd; and, at more  
The interim having weigh'd it, let us speak  
Our free hearts each to other.

*Ban.* Very gladly.

*Macb.* Till then, enough.—Come, friends.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—Fores.—A Room in the Palace.

*Flourish.* Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONAL-  
BAIN, LENOX, and ATTENDANTS.

*Dun.* Is execution done on Cawdor? Are  
not  
Those in commission yet return'd?

\* Supernatural, spiritual.

† Rapturously affected.

‡ Sinel was Macbeth's father.

§ The root which makes insane.

¶ As fast as they could be counted.

\* Title. † Stimulate. ‡ Enrapture.

§ Glamis is still standing, and is the magnificent resi-  
dence of Earl Strathmore.

¶ Firmly fixed. \*\* The power of action are  
appressed by conjecture. †† Time and oppor-  
tunity. †† Parson.

†† Parson.

*Mal.* My liege,  
They are not yet come back. But I have spoke  
With one that saw him die; who did report,  
That very frankly he confess'd his treasons;  
Imploir'd your highness' pardon; and set forth  
A deep repentance: nothing in his life  
Became him, like the leaving it; he died  
As one that had been studied in his death,  
To throw away the dearest thing he ow'd,\*  
As 'twere a careless trifle.

*Dun.* There's no art,  
To find the mind's construction in the face: †  
He was a gentleman on whom I built  
An absolute trust.—O worst of cousins!

*Enter MACBETH, BANQUO, ROSS, and ANGUS.*

The sin of my ingratitude even now  
Was heavy on me: Thou art so far before,  
That swiftest wing of recompense is slow  
To overtake thee. 'Would thou hadst less de-  
serv'd;

That the proportion both of thanks and payment  
Might have been mine! only I have left to say,  
More is thy due than more than all can pay.

*Macb.* The service and the loyalty I owe,  
In doing it, pays itself. Your highness' part  
Is to receive our duties; and our duties  
Are to your throne and state, children, and  
servants,

Which do but what they should, by doing every  
thing

Safe toward your love and honour.

*Dun.* Welcome hither:

I have begun to plant thee, and will labour  
To make thee full of growing. ‡—Noble Banquo,  
That hast no less deserv'd, nor must be known  
No less to have done so, let me infold thee,  
And hold thee to my heart.

*Ban.* There if I grow,

The harvest is your own.

*Dun.* My plenteous joys,  
Wanton in fulness, seek to hide themselves  
In drops of sorrow.—Sons, kinsmen, thanes,  
And you whose places are the nearest, know,  
We will establish our estate upon [after,  
Our eldest Malcolm; whom we name here—  
The prince of Cumberland: which honour must  
Not, unaccompanied, invest him only,  
But signs of nobleness, like stars, shall shine  
On all deserv'ers.—From hence to Inverness, §  
And bind us further to you.

*Macb.* The rest is labour, which is not us'd  
for you:

I'll be myself the harbinger, and make joyful  
The hearing of my wife with your approach;  
So, humbly take my leave.

*Dun.* My worthy Cawdor!

*Macb.* The prince of Cumberland!—That is  
a step,

On which I must fall down, or else o'er-leap.

For in my way it lies. Stars, hide your fires! [Aside.  
Let not light see my black and deep desires.  
The eye wink at the hand! yet let that be  
Which the eye fears, when it is done, to see.

*Dun.* True, worthy Banquo; he is full so  
valiant; ||

And in his commendations, I am fed;  
It is a banquet to me. Let us after him,  
Whose care is gone before to bid us welcome:  
It is a peerless kinsman. [Flourish. *Exeunt.*

SCENE V.—Inverness.—A Room in  
MACBETH'S Castle.

*Enter Lady MACBETH, reading a letter.*

*Lady M.* They met me in the day of suc-  
cess; and I have learned by the perfectest

report,\* they have more in them than mortal  
knowledge. When I burned in desire to  
question them further, they made themselves  
—air, into which they vanished. Whiles I  
stood rapt in the wonder of it, came missives †  
from the king, who all-hail'd me, Thane of  
Cawdor; by which title, before, these weird  
sisters saluted me, and referred me to the  
coming on of time, with Hall king that shalt  
be! This have I thought good to deliver thee,  
my dearest partner of greatness; that thou  
mightest not lose the dues of rejoicing, by  
being ignorant of what greatness is promised  
thee. Lay it to thy heart, and farewell.  
Glamis thou art, and Cawdor; and shalt be  
What thou art promis'd:—Yet do I fear thy  
nature;

It is too full o' the milk of human kindness,  
To catch the nearest way: Thou would'st be  
great;

Art not without ambition; but without

The illness should attend it. What thou would'st  
highly, [false,

That would'st thou holily; would'st not play  
And yet would'st wrongly win: thou'd'st have  
great Glamis, [have it;

That which cries, 'Thou shalt do, if thou  
And that which rather thou dost fear to do,  
Than wishest should be undone. Hie thee  
hither,

That I may pour my spirits in thine ear;  
And chastise with the valour of my tongue  
All that impedes thee from the golden round, ‡  
Which fate and metaphysical § and doth seem  
To have thee crown'd withal.—What is your  
tiding?

*Enter an ATTENDANT.*

*Attend.* The King comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* Thou'rt mad to say it:

Is not thy master with him? who, we'rt so,  
Would have inform'd of preparation.

*Attend.* So please you, it is true; our thane  
is coming:

One of my fellows had the speed of him;  
Who, almost dead for breath, had scarcely  
more

That would make up his message.

*Lady M.* Give him tending,

He brings great news. The raven himself is  
hoarse, [Exit ATTENDANT.

That croaks the fatal entrance of Duncan  
Under my battlements. Come, come, you  
spirits

That tend on mortal || thought, unsex me here;  
And fill me, from the crown to the toe, top full  
Of direst cruelty! I make thick my blood,  
Stop up the access and passage to remorse, ¶  
That no compunctious visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
The effect and it! Come to my woman's breasts,  
And take my milk for gall, you murdering  
ministers,

Wherever in your sightless substances  
You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick  
night,

And pall \* the dunest smoke of hell!  
That my keen knife † see not the wound it  
makes;

Nor heaven peep through the blanket of the  
dark, Cawdor!

To cry, Hail, Hold!—Great Glamis! worthy

*Enter MACBETH.*

Greater than both, by the all-hail hereafter!

Thy letters have transported me beyond

This ignorant present, ‡ and I feel now

The future in the instant.

\* The best intelligence.

† Messengers. ‡ Diadem.

§ Supernatural. ¶ Murderous. ¶ City.

\*\* Wrap as in a mantle. † Knife accurately

meant a sword or dagger. ‡ I e. Beyond the

present time, which is according to the process of na-

ture ignorant of the future.

† Owned, possessed.

‡ We cannot construe the disposition of the mind by

the lineaments of the face. † Exuberant.

§ The walls of Macbeth's Castle at Inverness, are yet

standing. ‡ Full as valiant as described.

*Macb.* My dearest love,  
Duncan comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* And when goes hence †

*Macb.* To-morrow,—as he purposes.

*Lady M.* Oh! never

Shall sun that morrow see!

Your face, my thane, is as a book, where men  
May read strange matters:—To beguile the  
time,

Look like the time; bear welcome in your eye,  
Your hand, your tongue: look like the innocent  
flower,

But be the serpent under it. He that's coming  
Must be provided for: and you shall put  
This night's great business into my despatch;  
Which shall to all our nights and days to come  
Give solely sovereign sway and masterdom.

*Macb.* We will speak further.

*Lady M.* Only look up clear;

To alter favour\* ever is to fear:  
Leave all the rest to me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*The same.—Before the Castle.*

*Hautboys.—Servants of MACBETH attending.*

*Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALD BAIN, BANQUO, LENOX, MACDUFF, ROSS, ANGUS, and Attendants.*

*Dun.* This castle hath a pleasant seat; the air  
Nimble and sweetly recommends itself  
Unto our gentle senses.

*Ban.* This guest of summer,  
The temple-haunting martlet, does approve,  
By his lov'd mansionry, that the heaven's  
breath

Smells woefully here: no jutty, frieze, buttress,  
Nor coigne of vantage,† but this bird hath  
made

His pendent bed, and procreant cradle: Where  
they

Most breed and haunt, I have observ'd, the air  
Is delicate.

*Enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Dun.* See, see! our honour'd hostess:  
The love that follows us, sometime is our  
trouble,

Which still we thank as love. Herein I teach  
you,

How you shall bid God yield‡ us for your  
pains,

And thank us for your trouble.

*Lady M.* All our service  
In every point twice done, and then done  
double,

Write poor and single business, to contend  
Against those honours deep and broad, where-  
with

Your majesty loads our house: For those of old,  
And the late dignities heap'd up to them,  
We rest your hermits. §

*Dun.* Where's the thane of Cawdor?  
We cours'd him at the heels, and had a purpose  
To be his purveyor: but he rides well;

And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath holp  
him

To his home before us: Fair and noble hostess,  
We are your guest to-night.

*Lady M.* Your servants ever  
Have their's, themselves, and what is their's, in  
compt. ||

To make their audit at your highness' pleasure,  
Sull to return your own.

*Dun.* Give me your hand:  
Conduct me to mine host; we love him highly,  
And shall continue our graces towards him.

By your leave, hostess.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—*The same.—A Room in the Castle.*

*Hautboys and torches. Enter, and pass over the stage, a Sewer,\* and divers Servants with dishes and service. Then enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* If it were done, when 'tis done, then  
'twere well

It were done quickly: If the assassination  
Could trammel up the consequence, and catch,  
With his surcease, success; that but this blow  
Might be the be-all and the end-all here,  
But here, upon this bank and shoal of time,  
We'd jump the life to come.—But, in these  
cases,

We still have judgment here; that we but teach  
Bloody instructions, which, being taught, return  
To plague the inventor: This even-handed justice

Commends the ingredients of our poison'd  
chalice

To our own lips. He's here in double trust:  
First, as I am his kinsman and his subject,  
Strong both against the deed; then, as his host,  
Who should against his murderer shut the door,  
Not bear the knife myself. Besides, this Dun-

can  
Hath borne his faculties so meek, hath been  
So clear in his great office, that his virtues  
Will plead like angels, trumpet-tongued, against  
The deep damnation of his taking-off:  
And pity, like a naked new-born babe,  
Striding the blast, or heaven's cherubim, hors'd  
Upon the sightless couriers † of the air,  
Shall blow the horrid deed in every eye,  
That tears shall drown the wind.—I have no  
spur

To prick the sides of my intent, but only  
Vaulting ambition, which o'er-leaps itself,  
And falls on the other.—How now, what news ‡

*Enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* He has almost suppd; Why have  
you left the chamber?

*Macb.* Hain he ask'd for me?

*Lady M.* Know you not, he has?

*Macb.* We will proceed no further in this  
business:

He hath honour'd me of late; and I have bought  
Golden opinions from all sorts of people,  
Which would be worn now in their newest gloss,  
Not cast aside so soon.

*Lady M.* Was the hope drunk,  
Wherein you dress'd yourself? hath it slept  
since?

And wakes it now, to look so green and pale  
At what it did so freely? From this time,  
Such I account thy love. Art thou afraid  
To be the same in thine own act and valour,  
As thou art in desire? Would'st thou have  
that

Which thou esteem'st the ornament of life,  
And live a coward in thine own esteem;  
Letting I dare not wait upon I would,  
Like the poor cat i'th' adage?

*Macb.* Pr'ythee, peace:

I dare do all that may become a man;  
Who dares do more, is none.

*Lady M.* What beast was it then,  
That made you break this enterprise to me?

When you durst do it, then you were a man;  
And, to be more than what you were, you

would [place,  
Be so much more the man. Nor time, nor  
Did then adhere, ‡ and yet you would make  
both:

They have made themselves, and that their fit-  
ness now

Does unmake you. I have given suck; and

\* Look, countenance.

† Convenient corner. ‡ Reward.

‡ I.e. We as hermits shall ever pray for you.

|| Subject to account.

\* An officer so called from his placing the dishes on the table.

† Winds; sightless is invisible.

‡ In the same sense as cubers.

How tender 'tis to love the babe that milks me :  
I would, while it was smiling in my face,  
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless  
gums,  
And dash'd the brains out, had I so sworn, as  
you  
Have done to this.

*Macb.* If we should fail,—

*Lady M.* We fail!

But screw your courage to the sticking-place,  
And we'll not fail. When Duncan is asleep,  
(Where'to the rather shall his day's hard jour-  
ney

Soundly invite him,) his two chamberlains  
Will I with wine and wassel \* so convince, †  
That memory, the warder ‡ of the brain,  
Shall be a fume, and the receipt of reason  
A limbeck only : When in swinish sleep  
Their drenched natures lie, as in a death,  
What cannot you and I perform upon  
The unguarded Duncan ? what not put upon  
His spongy officers ; who shall bear the guilt  
Of our great quest ? §

*Macb.* Bring forth men-children only !  
For thy undaunted mettle should compose  
Nothing but males. Will it not be receiv'd,  
When we have mark'd with blood those sleepy  
two

Of his own chamber, and us'd their very dag-  
gers,

That they have don't ?

*Lady M.* Who dares receive it other,  
As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar  
Upon his death ?

*Macb.* I am settled, and bend up  
Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.  
Away, and mock the time with fairest show :  
False face must hide what the false heart doth  
know. [Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—The same.—Court within the Castle.

Enter BANQUO and FLEANCE, and a Servant,  
with a torch before them.

*Ban.* How goes the night, boy ?

*Fle.* The moon is down ; I have not heard the  
clock.

*Ban.* And she goes down at twelve.

*Fle.* I take't, 'tis later, Sir.

*Ban.* Hold, take my sword :—There's hus-  
bandry ¶ in heaven,  
Their caudles are all out.—Take thee that too.  
A heavy summons lies like lead upon me,  
And yet I would not sleep : Merciful powers !  
Restrain in me the cursed thoughts, that nature  
Gives way to in repose !—Give me my sword ;—

Enter MACBETH, and a Servant with a  
Torch.

Who's there ?

*Macb.* A friend.

*Ban.* What, Sir, not yet at rest ? The king's  
a-bed :

He hath been in unusual pleasure, and  
sent forth great largess ¶ to your offices ;  
This diamond he greets your wife withal,  
By the name of most kind hostess ; and shut up  
in measureless content.

*Macb.* Being unprepar'd,  
Our will became the servant to defect ;  
Which else should free have wrought. ✕

*Ban.* All's well.

I dreamt last night of the three weird sisters :  
To you they have show'd some truth.

*Macb.* I think not of them :

Yet, when we can entreat an hour to serve,

Would spend it in some words upon that busi-  
ness,

If you would grant the time.

*Ban.* At your kind'st leisure.

*Macb.* If you shall cleave to my consent,—  
when 'tis,  
It shall make honour for you.

*Ban.* So I lose none,  
In seeking to augment it, but still keep  
My bosom franchis'd and allegiance clear,  
I shall be counsel'd.

*Macb.* Good repose, the while !

*Ban.* Thanks, Sir ; The like to you !

*Macb.* Go, bid thy mistress, when my drink  
is ready, ✎  
She strike upon the bell. Get thee to bed.

[Exit Servant.]  
Is this a dagger, which I see before me,  
The handle toward my hand ? Come, let me  
clutch thee :—

I have thee not, and yet I see thee still.

Art thou not, fatal vision, sensible  
To feeling as to sight ? or art thou but  
A dagger of the mind ; a false creation,  
Proceeding from the heat-oppressed brain ?

I see thee yet, in form as palpable

As this which now I draw.

Thou marshal'st me the way that I was going ;  
And such an instrument I was to use.

Mine eyes are made the fools o'the other senses,  
Or else worth all the rest : I see thee still ;  
And on thy blade and dudgeon, gouts of blood,  
Which was not so before.—There's no such  
thing ;

It is the bloody business, which informs

Thus to mine eyes.—Now o'er the one half  
world

Nature seems dead, and wicked dreams abuse

The curtain'd sleep ; now witchcraft celebrates  
Pale Hecate's offerings ; and wither'd murder,  
Alarum'd by his sentinel, the wolf,  
Whose howl's his watch, thus with his stealthy  
pace

With Tarquin's ravishing strides, towards his  
design

Moves like a ghost.—Thou sure and firm-set  
earth,

Hear not my steps, which way they walk, for  
fear

Thy very stones prate of my where-about,  
And take the present horror from the time,  
Which now suits with it.—Whiles I threat, he  
lives ;

Words to the heat of deeds too cold breath  
gives. [A bell rings.]

I go, and it is done ! the bell invites me.

Hear it not, Duncan ; for it is a knell  
That summons thee to heaven or to hell.

[Exit.]

### SCENE II.—The same.

Enter Lady MACBETH.

*Lady M.* That which hath made them drunk,  
hath made me bold :

What hath quench'd them, them hath given me fire :  
—Hark !—Peace !

It was the owl that shriek'd, the fatal bellman,  
Which gives the stern'st good night. He is  
about it :

The doors are open ; and the surfeited grooms  
Do mock their charge with snueries : I have  
drugg'd their possets,  
That death and nature do contend about them,  
Whether they live, or die.

*Macb.* [Within.] Who's there ?—what, ho !  
*Lady M.* Alack ! I am afraid they have  
awak'd,

And 'tis not done ;—the attempt, and not the  
deed,  
Confounds us :—Hark !—I laid their daggers  
ready,

† Overpower.    \* Intemperance.    ‡ Sentinel.  
§ Murder.    ¶ Equity.    § Thrill.

• Haft.

He could not miss them.—Had he not resembled  
My father as he slept, I had done't.—My husband!

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* I have done the deed :—Didst thou not hear a noise?

*Lady M.* I heard the owl scream, and the crickets cry.

Did not you speak?

*Macb.* When?

*Lady M.* Now.

*Macb.* As I descended?

*Lady M.* Ay.

*Macb.* Hark!

Who lies i'the second chamber?

*Lady M.* Donalbain.

*Macb.* This is a sorry sight.

*Lady M.* A foolish thought, to say a sorry sight.

*Macb.* There's one did laugh in his sleep, and one cried, *murder!*

That they did wake each other; I stood and heard them:

But they did say their prayers, and address'd them  
Again to sleep.

*Lady M.* There are two lodg'd together.

*Macb.* One cried, *God bless us!* and *Amen*, the other;

As \* they had seen me, with these hangman's hands,

Listening their fear—I could not say, *Amen*,  
When they did say, *God bless us.*

*Lady M.* Consider it not so deeply.

*Macb.* But wherefore could not I pronounce *Amen?*

I had most need of blessing, and *Amen*  
Stuck in my throat.

*Lady M.* These deeds must not be thought  
After these ways; so, it will make us mad.

*Macb.* Methought, I heard a voice cry, *Sleep no more.*

*Macbeth does murder sleep, the innocent sleep;*

*Sleep, that knits up the ravel'd sleeve† of care,*

*The death of each day's life, sore labour's bath,*

*Balm of hurt minds, great nature's second course,*

*Chief nourisher in life's feast :—*

*Lady M.* What do you mean?

*Macb.* Still it cried, *Sleep no more!* to all the house:

*Glamis hath murder'd sleep; and therefore*

*Shall sleep no more. Macbeth shall sleep no more!*

*Lady M.* Who was it that thus cried? Why, worthy thane,

You do unbend your noble strength, to think  
So brainlessly of things :—Go, get some water,  
And wash this filthy witness from your hand.—

Why did you bring these daggers from the place?

They must lie there: Go, carry them; and smear

The sleepy grooms with blood.

*Macb.* I'll go no more:

I am afraid to think what I have done;

Look on't again, I dare not.

*Lady M.* Infirm of purpose!

Give me the daggers: The sleeping and the dead

Are but as pictures: 'tis the eye of childhood,  
That fears a painted devil. If he do bleed,  
I'll gild the faces of the grooms withal,  
For it must seem their guilt.

[*Exit. Knocking within.*

*Macb.* Whence is that knocking?

\* As if.

† Sleeve is unwrought silk.

How is't with me, when every noise appals me?  
What hands are here? Ha! they pluck out mine eyes!

Will all great Neptune's ocean wash this blood  
Clean from my hand? No; this my hand will rather

The multitudinous seas incarnadine,  
Making the green—one red.

*Re-enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* My hands are of your colour; but I shame

To wear a heart so white. [*Knock.*] I hear a

At the south entry :—retire we to our chamber:  
A little water clears us of this deed:

How easy is it then? Your constancy  
Hath left you unattended.—[*Knocking*] Hark!

more knocking:  
Get on your nightgown, lest occasion call us,  
And show us to be watchers :—Be not lost

So poorly in your thoughts.

*Macb.* To know my deed,—'twere best not know myself.

Wake Duncan with thy knocking! *Ay,* 'would thou could'st!

SCENE III.—The same.

*Enter a PORTER.*—[*Knocking within.*]

*Port.* Here's a knocking, indeed! If a man were porter of hell-gate, he should have old \* turning the key. [*Knocking.*] Knock, knock,

knock: Who's there, i'the name of Belzebub?

Here's a farmer, that hauged himself on the expectation of plenty: Come in time; have napkins † enough about you; here you'll sweat for't.

[*Knocking.*] Knock, knock: Who's there, i'the devil's name? 'Faith, here's an equivocator,

that could swear in both the scales against either scale; who committed treason enough for God's sake, yet could not equivocate to heaven:

O come in, equivocator. [*Knocking.*] Knock, knock, knock: Who's there? 'Faith here's an

English tailor come hither for stealing out of a French hose: Come in, tailor; here you may

roast your goose. [*Knocking.*] Knock, knock: Never at quiet! What are you?—But this place

is too cold for hell. I'll devil-porter it no further: I had thought to have let in some of all professions, that go the primrose way to the everlasting bonfire. [*Knocking.*] Anon, anon; I

pray you, remember the porter.

[*Opens the gate.*

*Enter MACDUFF and LENOX.*

*Macd.* Was it so late, friend, ere you went  
That you do lie so late? [*To bed,*

*Port.* 'Faith, Sir, we were carousing till the second cock: † and drink, Sir, is a great provoker

of three things.

*Macd.* What three things does drink especially provoke?

*Port.* Marry, Sir, nose-painting, sleep, and urine. Lechery, Sir, it provokes and unprovokes: it provokes the desire, but it takes away

the performance: Therefore, much drunk may be said to be an equivocator with lechery: it

makes him, and it mars him; it sets him on, and it takes him off; it persuades him, and disheartens him; makes him stand to, and not

stand to: in conclusion, equivocates him in a sleep, and giving him the lie, leaves him.

*Macd.* I believe, drink gave thee the lie last night.

*Port.* That it did, Sir, i'the very throat o'me: But I requited him for his lie; and, I think,

being too strong for him, though he took up my legs sometime, yet I made a shift to cast him.

*Macd.* Is thy master stirring?—  
Our knocking has awak'd him; here he comes.

\* Frequent.

† Cockcrowings. † Handkerchiefs.



There's daggers in men's smiles: the near in blood,  
The nearer bloody.

*Mal.* This murderous shaft that's shot,  
Hath not yet lighted; and our safest way  
Is, to avoid the aim. Therefore, to horse;  
And let us not be dainty of leave-taking,  
But shift away: There's warrant in that theft  
Which steals itself, when there's no mercy left.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—Without the Castle.

*Enter ROSS and an Old Man.*

*Old Man.* Threescore and ten I can remember well:

Within the volume of which time, I have seen  
Hours dreadful and things strange; but this sore night

Hath trifled former knowings.

*Rosse.* Ah! good father, [act,  
Thou see'st, the heavens, as troubled with man's  
Threaten his bloody stage: by the clock, 'tis day,  
And yet dark night strangles the travelling  
lamp:

Is it night's predominance, or the day's shame,  
That darkness does the face of earth entomb,  
When living light should kiss it?

*Old Man.* 'Tis unnatural,  
Even like the deed that's done. On Tuesday  
last,

A falcon, tow'ring in her pride of place,  
Was by a mousing owl hawk'd at, and kill'd.

*Rosse.* And Duncan's horses, (a thing most  
strange and certain,)

Beauteous and swift, the minions of their  
race, [out,  
Turn'd wild in nature, broke their stalls, flung  
Contending 'gainst obedience, as they would  
make

War with mankind.

*Old Man.* 'Tis said, they eat each other.

*Rosse.* They did so; to the amazement of  
mine eyes,  
That look'd upon't. Here comes the good Mac-  
duff:—

*Enter MACDUFF.*

How goes the world Sir, now?

*Macd.* Why, see you not?

*Rosse.* Is't known who did this more than  
bloody deed?

*Macd.* Those that Macbeth hath slain.

*Rosse.* Alas, the day!

What good could they pretend?

*Macd.* They were suborn'd:

Malcolm, and Donalbain, the king's two sons,  
Are stol'n away and fled; which puts upon  
them

Suspicion of the deed.

*Rosse.* 'Gainst nature still:

Thrillless ambition, that will ravine up  
Thine own life's means!—Then 'tis most like,  
The sovereignty will fall upon Macbeth.

*Macd.* He is already nam'd; and gone to  
Scone,  
To be invested.

*Rosse.* Where is Duncan's body?

*Macd.* Carried to Colme-kill;†  
The sacred storehouse of his predecessors,  
And guardian of their bones.

*Rosse.* Will you to Scone?

*Macd.* No, cousin, I'll to Fife.

*Rosse.* Well, I will thither.

*Macd.* Well, may you see things well done  
there!—adieu!—

Lest our old robes sit easier than our new!

*Rosse.* Father, farewell.

*Old Man.* God's benison go with you: and  
with those  
That would make good of bad, and friends of  
foes! [*Exeunt.*]

\* Intend to themselves.

† Colme-kill is the famous *lena*, one of the west.

ACT III.

SCENE I.—Fores.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter BANQUO.*

*Ban.* Thou hast it now—King, Cawdor, Glamis, all,  
As the weird women promis'd; and, I fear,  
Thou play'st most foully for't: yet it was said,  
It should not stand in thy posterity;  
But that myself should be the root and father  
Of many kings. If there come truth from  
them,

(As upon thee, Macbeth, their speeches shine,) Why, by the verities on thee made good,  
May they not be my oracles as well,  
And set me up in hope? But hush; no more.

*Senes sounded. Enter MACBETH, as King;  
Lady MACBETH, as Queen; LENOX, ROSS, Lords, Ladies, and Attendants.*

*Macb.* Here's our chief guest.

*Lady M.* If he had been forgotten,  
It had been as a gap in our great feast,  
And all things unbecoming.

*Macb.* To night we hold a solemn supper, Sir,  
And I'll request your presence.

*Ban.* Let your highness  
Command upon me; to the which, my duties  
Are with a most indissoluble tie  
For ever knit.

*Macb.* Ride you this afternoon?

*Ban.* Ay, my good lord.

*Macb.* We should have else desir'd your good  
advice [ious,  
(Which still hath been both grave and prosperous  
in this day's council; but we'll take to-morrow.  
Is't far you ride?)

*Ban.* As far, my lord, as will fill up the time  
Twixt this and supper: go not my horse the  
better,

I must become a borrower of the night.  
For a dark hour or twain.

*Macb.* Fail not our feast.

*Ban.* My lord, I will not.

*Macb.* We hear our bloody cousins are be-  
stow'd

In England and in Ireland; not confessing  
Their cruel parricide, filling their hearers  
With strange invention: But of that to-morrow;  
When, therewithal, we shall have cause of state,  
Craving us jointly. Hie you to horse: Adieu,  
Fill you return at night. Goes Fleance with  
you?

*Ban.* Ay, my good lord: our time does call  
upon us.

*Macb.* I wish your horses swift and sure  
of foot;

And so I do commend you to their backs.

Farewell— [Exit BANQUO.

Let every man be master of his time  
I'll seven at night; to make society  
The sweeter welcome, we will keep ourself  
Till supper-time alone: while then, God be with  
you.

[*Exeunt Lady MACBETH, Lords,  
Ladies, &c.*]

*Sirrah, a word: Attend those men our plea-  
sure?*

*Atten.* They are, my lord, without the palace  
gate.

*Macb.* Bring them before us.—[Exit ATTEN.]

To be thus, is nothing;

But to be safely thus:—Our fears in Banquo  
Stick deep; and in his royalty of nature  
Reigns that, which would be fear'd: 'Tis much  
he dares;

And, to that dauntless temper of his mind,  
He hath a wisdom that doth guide his valour  
To act in safety. There is none but he  
Whose being I do fear; and under him,  
My genius is rebuk'd; as, it is said,

\* Commit.

† Nobleness.



Mark Antony's was by Cesar. He chid the sisters,  
When first they put the name of king upon me,  
And bade them speak to him; then prophet-like,

They hail'd him father to a line of kings:  
Upon my head they plac'd a fruitless crown,  
And put a barren sceptre in my gripe,  
Thence to be wrench'd with an unlineal hand,  
No son of mine succeeding. If it be so,  
For Banquo's issue have I flid\* my mind;  
For them the gracious Duncan have I murder'd;

Put rancours in the vessel of my peace  
Only for them; and mine eternal jewel  
Given to the common enemy of man,  
To make them kings, the seed of Banquo kings!

Rather than so, come, fate, into the list,  
And champion me to the utterance! †—Who's there!—

*Re-enter ATTENDANT, with two MURDERERS.*  
Now to the door, and stay there till we call.

*[Exit ATTENDANT.]*  
Was it not yesterday we spoke together?

1 *Mur.* It was so, please your highness.

*Macb.* Well then, now  
Have you consider'd of my speeches? Know,  
That it was he, in the times past, which held you

So under fortune; which, you thought, had been  
Our innocent self: this I made good to you  
In our last conference; pass'd in probation;  
with you,

How you were born in hand; § how cross'd; the  
instruments;  
Who wrought with them; and all things else,  
that might,

To half a soul, and a notion craz'd,  
Say, Thus did Banquo.

1 *Mur.* You made it known to us.  
*Macb.* I did so; and went further, which is  
now

Our point of second meeting. Do you find  
Your patience so predominant in your nature,  
That you can let this go? Are you so gossell'd, ||

To pray for that good man and for his issue,  
Whose heavy hand hath bow'd you to the grave,  
And beggar'd yours for ever?

1 *Mur.* We are men, my liege.

*Macb.* Ay, in the catalogue ye go for men;  
As hounds, and greyhounds, mongrels, spaniels,  
curs,

Shoughs, ¶ water-rugs, and demi-wolves, are  
cleped \*\*

All by the name of dogs: the valued file  
Distinguishes the swift, the slow, the subtle,  
The house-keeper, the hunter, every one  
According to the gift which bounteous nature  
Hath in him clos'd; † whereby he does receive  
Particular addition, ‡ from the bill  
That writes them all alike: and so of men.  
Now, if you have a station in the file,  
And not in the worst rank of manhood, say it;  
And I will put that business in your bosom,  
Whose execution takes your enemy off;  
Grapples you to the heart and love of us,  
Who wear our health but sickly in his life,  
Which in his death were perfect.

2 *Mur.* I am one, my liege,  
Whom the vile blows and buffets of the world  
Have so incens'd, that I am reckless †† what  
I do, to spite the world.

1 *Mur.* And I another,  
So weary with disasters, tugg'd §§ with fortune,  
That I would set my life on any chance,  
To mend it or be rid on't.

\* For defiled.

† Challenge me to extremities.

‡ Proved.

§ Deluded.

|| Are you so obedient to the precepts of the Gospel.

¶ Wolf-dogs.

\*\* Called.

†† Fille.

‡‡ Careless.

§§ Worried.

*Macb.* Both of you  
Know, Banquo was your enemy.

2 *Mur.* True, my lord.

*Macb.* So is he mine: and in such bloody  
distance,\*

That every minute of his being thrusts  
Against my near'st of life: And though I could  
With bare-fac'd power sweep him from my  
sight,

And bid my will avouch it; yet I must not,  
For † certain friends that are both his and  
mine,

Whose loves I may not drop, but will his fall  
Whom I myself struck down: and thence it is,  
That I to your assistance do make love;  
Masking the business from the common eye,  
For sundry weighty reasons.

2 *Mur.* We shall, my lord,  
Perform what you command us.

1 *Mur.* Though our lives—

*Macb.* Your spirits shine through you. Within  
this hour, at most,

I will advise you where to plant yourselves.  
Acquaint you with the perfect spy o'the time,  
The moment on't; for't must be done to-night,  
And something from the palace; always thought,  
That I require a clearness; And with him,  
(To leave no rubs, nor botches, in the work,)  
Fleance his son, that keeps him company,  
Whose absence is no less material to me  
Than is his father's, must embrace the fate  
Of that dark hour. Resolve yourselves apart;  
I'll come to you anon.

2 *Mur.* We are resolv'd my lord.

*Macb.* I'll call upon you straight: abide  
within.

It is concluded:—Banquo, thy soul's flight,  
If it find heaven, must find it out to-night.  
*[Exit.]*

SCENE II.—The same.—Another Room.

*Enter Lady MACBETH, and a SERVANT.*

*Lady M.* Is Banquo gone from court?

*Serv.* Ay, madam, but returns again to-night.

*Lady M.* Say to the king, I would attend his  
leisure

For a few words.

*Serv.* Madam, I will. *[Exit.]*

*Lady M.* No night's had, all's spent,  
Where our desire is got without content:  
'Tis safer to be that which we destroy,  
Than, by destruction, dwell in doubtful joy.

*Enter MACBETH.*

How now, my lord? why do you keep alone,  
Of sorriest I fancies your companions making?  
Using those thoughts, which should indeed have  
died

With them they think on? Things without  
remedy,

Should be without regard: what's done, is done.

*Macb.* We have scotch'd the snake, not kill'd  
it; †

She'll close, and be herself; whilst our poor  
Remains in danger of her former tooth.

But let

The frame of things disjoint, both the worlds  
suffer,

Ere we will eat our meal in fear, and sleep  
In the affliction of these terrible dreams,

That shake us nightly: Better be with the  
dead,

Whom we, to gain our place, have sent to  
peace,

Than on the torture of the mind to lie  
In restless ecstasy. § Duncan is in his grave:

After life's fitful fever he sleeps well;  
Treason has done his worst: nor steel, nor

poison,  
Malice domestic, foreign levy, nothing,  
Can touch him further!

\* Mortal enemies.

† Most melancholy

‡ Because of.

§ Agony.

*Lady M.* Come on;  
Gentle my Lord, sleek o'er your rugged looks;  
Be bright and jovial 'mong your guests to-night.

*Macb.* So shall I, love; and so, I pray, be you.

Let your remembrance apply to Banquo;  
Present him eminence,\* both with eye and  
Unsatiate the while, that we [tongue:  
Must lave our honours in these battering  
streams;

And make our faces vizards to our hearts,  
Disguising what they are.

*Lady M.* You must leave this.

*Macb.* O full of scorpions is my mind, dear  
wife!

Thou know'st that Banquo and his Fleance, lives.

*Lady M.* But in them nature's copy's not  
eternie.

*Macb.* There's comfort yet; they are assail-  
able;

Then be thou jocund: Ere the bat hath flown  
His cloister'd flight; ere, to black Hecat's  
summons, [hums,  
The shard-borne beetle,† with his drowsy  
Hath rung night's yawning peal, there shall be  
A deed of dreadful note. [done

*Lady M.* What's to be done?

*Macb.* Be innocent of the knowledge, dearest  
chuck;‡ [night

Till thou applaud the deed. Come, seeling  
Sharf up the tender eye of pitiful day;  
And, with thy bloody and invisible hand,  
Cancel and tear to pieces that great bond  
Which keeps me pale!—Light thickens; and the  
crow

Makes wing to the rooky wood;  
Good things of day begin to droop and drowse;  
Whiles night's black agents to their prey do  
rouse [still;  
Thou mar'st at my words; but hold thee  
Things, bad begun, make strong themselves by  
ill:

So pry'th go with me. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—*The same.—A Park or Lawn,  
with a Gate leading to the Palace.*

*Enter three MURDERERS.*

1 *Mur.* But who did did thee join with us?

3 *Mur.* Macbeth.

2 *Mur.* He needs not our mistrust; since he  
delivers

Our offices, and what we have to do,  
To the direction just.

1 *Mur.* Then stand with us.

The west yet glimmers with some streaks of  
day:

Now spurs the lated traveller apace,  
To gain the timely inn; and near approaches  
The subject of our watch.

3 *Mur.* Hark! I hear horses.

*Ban.* [Within.] Give us a light there, ho!

2 *Mur.* Then it is he; the rest

That are within the note of expectation,‡  
Already are i'the court.

1 *Mur.* His horses go about.

3 *Mur.* Almost a mile; but he does usually,  
So all men do, from hence to the palace gate  
Make it their walk.

*Enter BANQUO and FLEANCE, a Servant with  
a torch preceding them.*

2 *Mur.* A light, a light!

3 *Mur.* 'Tis he.

1 *Mur.* Stand to't.

*Bay.* It will be rain to-night.

1 *Mur.* Let it come down.

[Assaults BANQUO.

\* Do him the highest honours.

† The beetle borne in the air by its shards or scaly  
wings. ‡ A term of endearment.

§ Blinding.  
1. i. e. They who are set down in the list of guests, and  
expected to supper.

*Ban.* O treachery! Fly, good Fleance, fly, fly,  
Thou may'st revenge. O slave! [Fly:  
[Dies. FLEANCE\* and Servant escape.

3 *Mur.* Who did strike out the light?

1 *Mur.* Was't not the way?

3 *Mur.* There's but one down; the son is fled  
2 *Mur.* We have lost best half of our affair.

1 *Mur.* Well, let's away, and say how much  
is done. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—*A Room of State in the Palace.*

*A Banquet prepared. Enter MACBETH, Lady  
MACBETH, ROSSE, LENOX, LORDS, and AT-  
TENDANTS.*

*Macb.* You know your own degrees, sit down:  
at first

And last, the hearty welcome.

*Lords.* Thanks to your majesty.

*Macb.* Ourselves will mingle with society,  
And play the humble host.

Our hostess keeps her state;† but in best time,  
We will require her welcome.

*Lady M.* Pronounce it for me, Sir, to all our  
friends;

For my heart speaks, they are welcome.

*Enter first MURDERER, to the door*

*Macb.* See, they encounter thee with their  
hearts' thanks:—

Both sides are even: Here I'll sit i'the midst:  
Be large in mirth; anon, we'll drink a measure  
The table round.—There's blood upon thy face.

*Mur.* 'Tis Banquo's then.

*Macb.* 'Tis better thee without, than he within.  
Is he despatch'd?

*Mur.* My lord, his throat is cut; that I did  
for him.

*Macb.* Thou art the best o'the cut-throats:  
Yet he's good

That did the like for Fleance: if thou didst it,  
Thou art the nonpareil.

*Mur.* Most royal Sir,

Fleance is 'scap'd.

*Macb.* Then comes my fit again: I had else  
been perfect;

Whole as the marble, founded as the rock;  
As broad and general as the casing air: [in  
But now, I am cabin'd, cribb'd, confin'd, bound  
To saucy doubts and fears. But Banquo's safe!

*Mur.* Ay, my good lord: safe in a ditch he  
bides,

With twenty trenched gashes on his head;  
The least a death to nature.

*Macb.* Thanks for that:—

There the grown serpent lies; the worm, that's  
Hath nature that in time will venom breed,  
No teeth for the present.—Get thee gone; to-  
morrow

We'll hear, ourselves again. [Exit MURDERER.

*Lady M.* My royal lord,

You do not give the cheer: the feast is sold,  
That is not often vouch'd, while 'tis a making,  
'Tis given with welcome: To feed, were best  
at home;

From thence, the sauce to meat is ceremony;  
Meeting were bare without it.

*Macb.* Sweet remembrancer!—

Now good digestion wait on appetite,  
And health on both!

*Len.* May it please your highness sit?

[The Ghost of BANQUO rises, and sits  
in MACBETH'S place.

*Macb.* Here had we now our country's ho-  
nour roof'd,

Were the grac'd person of our Banquo present;  
Who may I rather challenge for unkindness,  
Than ply for my chance!

*Rosse.* His absence, Sir, [highness  
Lays blame upon his promise. Please it your

To grace us with your royal company?  
*Macb.* The table's full.

\* James I. was descended in a direct line from this  
son of Banquo, by a daughter of the prince of Wales.  
† Continues in her chair of state.

*Len.* Here's a place reserv'd, Sir.

*Macb.* Where?

*Len.* Here my lord. What is't that moves your highness?

*Macb.* Which of you have done this?

*Lords.* What, my good lord?

*Macb.* Thou can'st not say I did it: never Thy gory locks at me. [shake]

*Rosse.* Gentlemen, rise; his highness is not well.

*Lady M.* Sit, worthy friends:—my lord is often thus, [seat;

And hath been from his youth: 'pray you, keep The fit is momentary; upon a thought\*

He will again be well: If much you note him, You shall offend him and extend his passion; † Feed, and regard him not.—Are you a man?

*Macb.* Ay, and a bold one that dare look on Which might appal the devil. [that

*Lady M.* O proper stuff!

This is the very painting of your fear: This is the air-drawn dagger, which, you said, Led you to Duncan. O these flaws; and starts

(Impostors to true fear,) would well become A woman's story at a winter's fire, Authoriz'd by her grandam. Shame itself! Why do you make such faces? When all's done, You look but on a stool.

*Macb.* Pr'ythee, see there! behold! look! lo! how say you?— [too.—

Why, what care I? If thou canst nod, speak If charnel-houses and our graves must send Those that we bury, back, our monuments Shall be the maws of kites. [Ghost disappears.

*Lady M.* What! quite unmann'd in folly?

*Macb.* If I stand here, I saw him.

*Lady M.* Fie, for shame!

*Macb.* Blood hath been shed ere now 't' the olden time,

Ere human statute purg'd the gentle weal; Ay, and since too, murders have been perform'd

Too terrible for the ear: the times have been, That, when the brains were out, the man would die,

And there an end; but now, they rise again, With twenty mortal murders on their crowns, And push us from our stools: This is more Than such a murder is. [strange

*Lady M.* My worthy lord, Your noble friends do lack you.

*Macb.* I do forget:—

Do not muse at me, my most worthy friends; I have a strange infirmity, which is nothing To those that know me. Come, love and health to all;

Then I'll sit down:—Give me some wine, fill full:—

I drink to the general joy of the whole table,

*Ghost rises.*

And to our dear friend Banquo, whom we miss;

Would he were here! to all and him, we thirst, And all to all. ‡

*Lords.* Our duties, and the pledge.

*Macb.* Avaunt! and quit my sight! Let the earth hide thee!

Thy bones are marrowless, thy blood is cold; Thou hast no speculation in those eyes Which thou dost glare with!

*Lady M.* Think of this, good peers, But as a thing of custom; 'tis no other; Only it spoils the pleasure of the time.

*Macb.* What man dare, I dare:

Approach thou like the rugged Russian bear, The arm'd rhinoceros, or the Hyrcan Tiger, Take any shape but that, and my firm nerves Shall never tremble: Or, be alive again, And dare me to the desert with thy sword;

If trembling I inhibit\* thee, protest me The baby of a girl. Hence, horrible shadow!

[Ghost disappears.

Unruly mockery, hence!—Why, so;—being gone,

I am a man again. Pray you, sit still.

*Lady M.* You have displac'd the mirth, broke the good meeting,

With most admir'd disorder.

*Macb.* Can such things be, And overcome† us like a summer's cloud, Without our special wonder? You make me strange

Even to the disposition that I owe; ‡ When now I think you can behold such sights, And keep the natural ruby of your cheeks, When mine are blanched with fear.

*Rosse.* What sights, my lord?

*Lady M.* I pray you, speak not; he grows worse and worse;

Question enrages him: at once, good night:— Stand not upon the order of your going, But go at once.

*Len.* Good night, and better health Attend his majesty!

*Lady M.* A kind good night to all!

[Exit LORDS and ATTENDANTS.

*Macb.* It will have blood; they say, blood will have blood:

Stones have been known to move, and trees to speak:

Angurs, and understood relations, have By magot-pies, § and choughs, and rooks, brought forth

The secret† of man of blood.—What is the night? *Macb.* Almost at odds with morning, which is which.

*Macb.* How say'st thou, that Macduff denies this person,

At our great bidding?

*Lady M.* Did you send to him, Sir?

*Macb.* I hear it by the way; but I will send: There's not a one of them, but in his house I keep a servant feed'd. I will to-morrow, (Belimes I will,) unto the weird sisters: More shall they speak; for now I am bent to know, [good,

By the worst means the worst: for mine own All causes shall give way; I am in blood Stepp'd in so far, that, should I wade no more, Returning were as tedious as go o'er: Strange things I have in head, that will to hand;

Which must be acted, ere they may be scann'd. †

*Lady M.* You lack the season of all natures, sleep.

*Macb.* Come, we'll to sleep: my strange and self-abuse

Is the ignatious fear that wants hard use:— We are yet but young in deed. [Exit.

### SCENE V.—The Heath.

*Thunder.* Enter HECATE, meeting the three WITCHES.

1 Witch. Why, how now, Hecate? you look angrily.

*Hec.* Have I not reason, beldams as you are, Saucy, and overbold? How did you dare To trade and traffic with Macbeth, In riddles and affairs of death; And I, the mistress of your charms, The close contriver of all harms, Was never call'd to bear my part, Or show the glory of our art? And, which is worse, all you have done Hath been but for a wayward son, Spiteful and wrathful; who, as others do, Loves for his own ends, not for you. But make amends now: Get you gone, And at the pit of Acheron,

\* As quick as thought. † Prolong his suffering.  
‡ Sudden gusts. § Woodcocks.  
‡ I. e. All good wishes to all.

\* Forbidden.  
† Possessive.  
‡ An individual.  
§ Past over.  
‡ Magpies.  
‡ Examined naturally.

Meet me i'the morning : thither he  
Will come to know his destiny.  
Your vessels and your spells provide  
Your charms and every thing beside :  
I am for the air ; this night I'll spend  
Unto a dismal-fatal end.  
Great business must be wrought ere noon :  
Upon the corner of the moon  
There hangs a vaporous drop profound :  
I'll catch it ere it come to ground :  
And that, distill'd by magic sights,  
Shall raise such artificial sprites,  
As, by the strength of their illusion  
Shall draw him on to his confusion :  
He shall spurn fate, scorn death, and bear  
His hopes 'bove wisdom, grace, and fear :  
And you all know, security  
Is mortal's chiefest enemy.

*Song. (Within.) Come away, come away, &c.*  
Hark, I am call'd ; my little spirit, see,  
Sits in a foggy cloud, and stays for me.

[*Exit.*]  
1 *Witch.* Come, let's make haste ; she'll soon  
be back again.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—Fores.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter LENOX and another LORD.

*Len.* My former speeches have but hit your  
thoughts,  
Which can interpret further : only, I say,  
Things have been strangely borne : The gracious  
Duncan  
Was pitied of Macbeth :—marry, he was dead :—  
And the right-valiant Banquo walk'd too late ;  
Whom, you may say, if it please you, Fleance  
kill'd,  
For Fleance fled. Men must not walk too late.  
Who cannot want the thought, how monstrous  
It was for Malcolm, and for Donalbain,  
To kill their gracious father ? damned fact !  
How it did grieve Macbeth ! did he not straight,  
In pious rage, the two delinquents tear,  
That were the slaves of drink, and thralls of  
sleep ?  
Was not that nobly done ? Ay, and wisely too ;  
For 'twould have anger'd any heart alive,  
To hear the men deny it. So that, I say,  
He has borne all things well : and I do think,  
That, had he Duncan's sons under his key,  
(As, an't please heaven, he shall not,) they  
should find  
What 'twere to kill a father ; so should Fleance.  
But, peace !—for from broad words, and cause  
he fail'd  
His presence at the tyrant's feast, I hear,  
Macduff lives in disgrace : Sir, can you tell  
Where he bestows himself ?

*Lord.* The son of Duncan,  
From whom this tyrant holds the due of birth  
Lives in the English court ; and is receiv'd  
Of the most pious Edward with such grace,  
That the malevolence of fortune nothing  
Takes from his high respect : Thither Macduff  
Is gone to pray the holy king, on his aid  
To wake Northumberland and warlike Siward :  
That, by the help of these, (with Him above  
To ratify the work,) we may again  
Grieve to our tables meat, sleep to our nights ;  
Free from our feasts and banquets bloody  
knives ;  
Do faithful homage, and receive free honours, †  
All which we pine for now : And this report  
Hath so exasperate ‡ the king, that he  
Prepares for some attempt of war.

*Len.* Sent he to Macduff ?  
*Lord.* He did : and with an absolute, Sir,  
not I,  
The cloudy messenger turns me his back,

And hums, as who should say, *You'll rue the time*

*That clogs me with this answer.*

*Len.* And that well might  
Advise him to a caution, to hold what distance  
His wisdom can provide. Some holy angel  
Fly to the court of England, and unfold  
His message ere he come ; that a swift blessing  
May soon return to this our suffering country  
Under a hand accurs'd !

*Lord.* My prayers with him ! [*Exeunt.*]

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—A dark Cave.—In the middle, a  
Cauldron boiling.

Thunder. Enter the three WITCHES.

1 *Witch.* Thrice the hinded cat hath mew'd.  
2 *Witch.* Thrice ; and once the hedge-pig  
whin'd.

3 *Witch.* Harper cries :—'Tis time, 'tis time.

1 *Witch.* Round about the cauldron go ;

In the poison'd entrails throw.—

Toad, that under cold-stone,

Days and nights hast thirty-one

Swelter'd \* venom sleeping got,

Boil thou first i'the charmed pot !

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble ;

Fire, burn ; and, cauldron, bubble.

2 *Witch.* Fillet of a fenny snake,

In the cauldron boil and bake :

Eye of newt, and toe of frog,

Wool of bat, and tongue of dog,

Adder's fork, and blind-worm's sting,

Lizard's leg, and owl's wing,

For a charm of powerful trouble,

Like a hell-broth boil and bubble.

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble ;

Fire, burn ; and, cauldron, bubble.

3 *Witch.* Scale of dragon, tooth of wolf ;

Witches' mummy ; maw and gulf, †

Of the rav'n'd ‡ salt-sea shark ;

Root of hemlock, digg'd i'the dark ;

Liver of blaspheming Jew ;

Gall of goat and slips of yew,

Silver'd in the moon's eclipse ;

Nose of Turk, and Tartar's lips ;

Finger of birth-strangled babe,

Dutch-deliver'd by a drab,

Make the griel thick and slab ;

Add thereto a tiger's chandron, §

For the ingredients of our cauldron.

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble ;

Fire, burn ; and, cauldron, bubble.

2 *Witch.* Cool it with a baboon's blood,

Then the charm is firm and good.

Enter HECATE, and the other three  
WITCHES.

*Hee.* Oh ! well done ! I commend your  
pains ;

And every one shall share i'the gains.

And now about the cauldron sing

Like elves and fairies in a ring,

Enchanting all that you put in.

SONG.

*Black spirits and white,*

*Red spirits and grey ;*

*Mingle, mingle, mingle,*

*You that mingle may.*

2 *Witch.* By the pricking of my thumbs,  
Something wicked this way comes :—  
Open, locks, whoever knocks.

\* This word is employed to signify that the animal  
was hot and sweating with venom, although sleeping  
under a cold stone.

† The throat.

‡ Entrails. § Ravenous.

‡ *L. c.* A drop that has deep or hidden qualities.

† Honours freely bestowed.

‡ For exasperated.

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* How now, you secret, black, and midnight hags?  
What is't you do?

*All.* A deed without a name.

*Macb.* I conjure you, by that which you profess,

(Howe'er you come to know it,) answer me:  
Though you unfit the winds, and let them fight  
Against the churches; though the yesty waves  
Confound and swallow navigation up;  
Though bladed corn be lodg'd,† and trees blown  
down;

Though castles topple‡ on their warders' heads;

Though palaces and pyramids do slope  
Their heads to their foundations; though the treasure

Of nature's germins § tumble all together,  
Even till destruction sicken, answer me  
To what I ask you.

1 *Witch.* Speak.

2 *Witch.* Demand.

3 *Witch.* We'll answer.

1 *Witch.* Say, if thou'd'st rather hear it from  
our mouths,

Or from our masters'?

*Macb.* Call them, let me see them.

1 *Witch.* Pour in sow's blood, that hath eaten

Her nine farrow; grease, that's sweaten  
From the murderer's gibbet, throw  
Into the flame.

*All.* Come, high, or low;

Thyself, and office, deftly ¶ show.

*Thunder.* An APPARITION of an Armed Head rises.

*Macb.* Tell me, thou unknown power,—

1 *Witch.* He knows thy thought;—

Hear his speech, but say thou nought.

*App.* Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth! beware  
Macduff;

Beware the thane of Fife.—Dismiss me:—Enough.

*Macb.* Whate'er thou art, for thy good cau-  
tion, thanks;

Thou hast harp'd ¶ my fear aright:—But one  
word more:

1 *Witch.* He will not be commanded: Here's  
another,

More potent than the first.

*Thunder.*—An APPARITION of a Bloody Child rises.

*App.* Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth!—

*Macb.* Had I three ears, I'd hear thee.

*App.* Be bloody, bold,  
And resolute: laugh to scorn the power of man,  
For none of woman born shall harm Macbeth.

*Macb.* Then live, Macduff; What need I fear  
of thee?

But yet I'll make assurance double sure  
And take a bond of fate: thou shalt not live;  
That I may tell pale-hearted fear, it lies,  
And sleep in spite of thunder.—What is this,

*Thunder.*—An APPARITION of a Child Crowned,  
with a Tree in his Hand, rises.

That rises like the issue of a king;  
And wears upon his baby brow the round  
And top of sovereignty? ¶

*All.* Listen, but speak not.

*App.* Be lion-mettled, proud; and take no  
care

• Frothy. † Laid flat by wind or rain.  
‡ Tumble.

§ Seeds which have begun to sprout. ¶ Adroitly.

¶ Touched on a passion as a harper touches a string.

•• The round is that part of a crown which encircles the head; the top is the ornament which rises above the crown.

Who chafes, who frets, or where conspirers are:  
Macbeth shall never vanquish'd be, until  
Great Birnam wood to high Dunsinane hill  
Shall come against him. [Descends.]

*Macb.* That will never be;  
Who can impress the forest; \* bid the tree  
Unfix his earth-bound root? sweet bodement's  
good!

Rebellious head, rise never, till the wood  
Of Birnam rise, and our high plac'd Macbeth  
Shall live the lease of nature, pay his breath  
To time and mortal custom.—Yet my heart  
Throbs to know one thing; Tell me, (if your  
art

Can tell so much,) shall Banquo's issue ever  
Reign in this kingdom?

*All.* Seek to know no more.

*Macb.* I will be satisfied: deny me this,  
And an eternal curse fall on you! Let me  
know:—

Why sinks that cauldron? and what noise † is  
this? [Hautboys.]

1 *Witch.* Show! 2 *Witch.* Show! 3 *Witch.*  
Show!

*All.* Show his eyes, and grieve his heart;  
Come like shadows, so depart.

*Eight Kings appear, and pass over the Stage  
in order; the last with a Glass in his  
hand; BANQUO following.*

*Macb.* Thou art too like the spirit of Banquo;  
down!

Thy crown does bear mine eye-balls:—And thy  
hair,

Thou other gold-bound brow, is like the first:—  
A third is like the former:—Filthy hags!

Why do you show me this?—A fourth?—Start,  
eyes!

What! will the line stretch out to the crack of  
doom? ‡

Another yet?—A seventh?—I'll see no more:—  
And yet the eighth appears, who bears a glass,  
Which shows me many more; and some I see,  
That two-fold balls and treble scepters carry:  
Horrible sight!—Ay, now, I see 'tis true;  
For the blood-bolter'd § Banquo smiles upon  
me,

And points at them for his.—What, is this so?  
1 *Witch.* Ay, Sir, all this is so:—But why  
Stands Macbeth thus amazedly?—  
Come, sisters, cheer we up his spirits, ¶  
And show the beat of our delights;  
I'll charm the air to give a sound,  
While you perform the antique round:  
That this great king may kindly say,  
Our duties did his welcome pay.

[Music. The WITCHES dance, and vanish.]

*Macb.* Where are they? Gone?—Let this petic-  
ious hour

Stand aye accus'd in the calendar!—  
Come in, without there!

*Enter LENOX.*

*Len.* What's your grace's will?

*Macb.* Saw you the weird sisters?

*Len.* No, my lord.

*Macb.* Came they not by you?

*Len.* No, indeed, my lord.

*Macb.* Infected be the air whereon they ride;  
And damn'd all those that trust them!—I did  
hear

The galloping of horse: Who was't came by?

*Len.* 'Tis two or three, my lord, that bring  
you word,

Macduff is fled to England.

*Macb.* Fled to England?

*Len.* Ay, my good lord.

*Macb.* Time, thou anticipat'st ¶ my dread ex-  
ploits:

• Who can command the forest to serve him like a  
soldier impressed.

† Music. ‡ The dissolution of nature.

§ Besmeared with blood. ¶ I. e. Spirit.

¶ Prevented, by taking away the opportunity.

The mighty purpose never is o'ertook,  
Unless the deed go with it: From this moment,  
The very firstlings of my heart shall be  
The driftings of my hand. And even now  
To crown my thoughts with acts, be it thought  
and done:

The castle of Macduff I will surprise;  
Seize upon Fife; give to the edge o' the sword  
His wife, his babes, and all unfortunate souls  
That trace his line. No boasting like a fool;  
This deed I'll do, before this purpose cool:  
But no more sights!—Where are these gentle-  
men?

Come, bring me where they are.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Fife.—A Room in MACDUFF'S Castle.*

*Enter Lady MACDUFF, her SON, and ROSSE.*

*L. Macd.* What had he done, to make him  
fly the land?

*Rosse.* You must have patience, madam.

*L. Macd.* He had none:

His flight was madness: When our actions do  
not,

Our fears do make us traitors.†

*Rosse.* You know not,  
Whether it was his wisdom, or his fear.

*L. Macd.* Wisdom! to leave his wife, to leave  
his babes,

His mansion, and his titles, in a place  
From whence himself does fly? He loves us  
not;

He wants the natural touch:‡ for the poor wren  
The most diminutive of birds, will fight, §  
Her young ones in her nest, against the owl.  
All is the fear, and nothing is the love;  
As little is the wisdom, where the flight  
So runs against all reason.

*Rosse.* My dearest coz,  
I pray you, school yourself: But, for your hus-  
band,

He is noble, wise, judicious, and best knows  
The fits o' the season. I dare not speak much  
further:

But cruel are the times, when we are traitors,  
And do not know ourselves; when we hold  
rumour

From what we fear, yet know not what we  
fear; ¶

But float upon a wild and violent sea,  
Each way, and move.—I take my leave of you:  
Shall not be long but I'll be here again:  
Things at the worst will cease, or else climb  
upward

To what they were before.—My pretty cousin,  
Blessing upon you!

*L. Macd.* Father'd he is, and yet he's father-  
less.

*Rosse.* I am so much a fool, should I stay  
longer,

It would be my disgrace, and your discomfort:  
I take my leave at once. [Exit *Rosse.*]

*L. Macd.* Sirrah, ¶ your father's dead;  
And what will you do now? How will you  
live?

*Son.* As birds do, mother.

*L. Macd.* What, with worms and flies?

*Son.* With what I get, I mean; and so do  
they.

*L. Macd.* Poor bird! thou'd'st never fear the  
net, nor lime,

The pit-fall nor the gun.

*Son.* Why should I, mother? Poor birds they  
are not set for.

My father is not dead, for all your saying.

*L. Macd.* Yes, he is dead; how wilt thou do  
for a father?

• Follow.

† I. e. Our flight is considered as evidence of our  
treason. ‡ Natural affection. § Fight  
for. ¶ Sirrah was not, in our author's time, a term  
of reproach.

*Son.* Nay, how will you do for a husband?

*L. Macd.* Why, I can buy me twenty at any  
market.

*Son.* Then you'll buy 'em to sell again.

*L. Macd.* Thou speak'st with all thy wit;  
and yet t'faith,

With wit enough for thee.

*Son.* Was my father a traitor, mother?

*L. Macd.* Ay, that he was.

*Son.* What is a traitor?

*L. Macd.* Why, one that swears and lies.

*Son.* And be all traitors, that do so?

*L. Macd.* Every one that does so, is a traitor  
and must be hanged.

*Son.* And must they all be hanged, that swear  
and lie?

*L. Macd.* Every one.

*Son.* Who must hang them?

*L. Macd.* Why, the honest men.

*Son.* Then the liars and swearers are fools:  
for there are liars and swearers enough to beat  
the honest men, and hang up thee.

*L. Macd.* Now, God help thee, poor monkey!  
But how wilt thou do for a father?

*Son.* If he were dead, you'd weep for him;  
if you would not, it were a good sign that I  
should quickly have a new father.

*L. Macd.* Poor prattler! how thou talk'st.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Bless you, fair dame! I am not to you  
known,

Though in your state of honour I am perfect.†  
I doubt some danger does approach you nearly:  
If you would take a homely man's advice,  
Be not found here; hence, with your little  
ones.

To fright you thus, methinks, I am too savage;  
To do worse to you, were fell cruelty,  
Which is too high your person. Heaven pre-  
serve you!

I dare abide no longer. [Exit *MESSENGER.*]

*L. Macd.* Whither should I fly?  
I have done no harm. But I remember now  
I am in this earthly world; where, to do harm,  
Is often laudable; to do good, sometime,  
Accounted dangerous folly: Why then, alas!  
Do I put up that womanly defence,  
To say I have done no harm?—What are these  
faces?

*Enter MURDERERS.*

*Mur.* Where is your husband?

*L. Macd.* I hope in no place so unsanctified,  
Where such as thou may'st find him.

*Mur.* He's a traitor.

*Son.* Thou ly'st, thou shag-eared villain.

*Mur.* What, you egg? [Stabbing him.]  
Young fry of treachery!

*Son.* He has killed me, mother;

Run away, I pray you. [Dies.]

[Exit *Lady MACDUFF*, crying murder,  
and pursued by the MURDERERS.]

SCENE III.—*England.—A Room in the King's Palace.*

*Enter MALCOLM and MACDUFF.*

*Mal.* Let us seek out some desolate shade,  
and there

Weep our sad bosoms empty.

*Macd.* Let us rather  
Hold fast the mortal sword; and, like good  
men,

Bestride our down-fall'n birthdom:‡ Each new  
New widows howl; new orphans cry; new  
sorrows

Strike heaven on the face, that it resounds

As if it felt with Scotland, and yell'd out

Like syllable of dolour.

*Mal.* What I believe, I'll wait;

• I am perfectly acquainted with your rank.

† Birthright.

What know, believe; and, what I can redress,  
As I shall find the time to friend, \* I will.  
What you have spoke, it may be so; perchance,  
This tyrant, whose sole name blisters our  
tongues,  
Was once thought honest: you have lov'd him  
well;

He hath not touch'd you yet. I am young;  
but something  
You may deserve of him through me; and  
wisdom

To offer up a weak, poor, innocent lamb,  
To appease an angry god.

*Macd.* I am not treacherous.

*Mal.* But Macbeth is.

A good and virtuous nature may recoil,  
In an imperial charge.† But crave your pardon;

That which you are, my thoughts cannot trans-  
pose:

Angels are bright still, though the brightest fell;  
Though all things foul would wear the brows of  
grace,

Yet grace must still look so.

*Macd.* I have lost my hopes.

*Mal.* Perchance, even there, where I did find  
my doubts.

Why in that rawness left you wife and child,  
(Those precious motives, those strong knots of  
love,)

Without leave taking?—I pray you,  
Let not my jealousies be your dishonours,  
But mine own safeties:—You may be rightly  
just,

Whatever I shall think.

*Macd.* Bleed, bleed, poor country!  
Great tyranny, lay thou thy basis sure,  
For goodness dares not check thee! wear thou  
thy wrongs,

Thy title is affect'd!‡—Fare thee well, lord:  
I would not be the villain that thou think'st  
For the whole space that's in the tyrant's  
grasp,

And the rich east to boot.

*Mal.* Be not offended:

I speak not as in an absolute fear of you.  
I think, our country sinks beneath the yoke;  
It weeps, it bleeds; and each new day a gash  
Is added to her wounds: I think, withal,  
There would be hands uplifted in my right;  
And here, from gracious England, have I offer  
Of goodly thousands: But, for all this,  
When I shall tread upon the tyrant's head,  
Or wear it on my sword, yet my poor country  
Shall have more voices than it had before;  
More suffer, and more sundry ways than ever,  
By him that shall succeed.

*Macb.* What should he be?

*Mal.* It is myself I mean: in whom I know  
All the particulars of vice so grafted,  
That, when they shall be open'd, black Macbeth  
Will seem as pure as snow; and the poor state  
Esteem him as a lamb, being compar'd  
With my confuseless harms.

*Macd.* Not in the legions  
Of horrid hell, can come a devil more damn'd  
In evils to top Macbeth.

*Mal.* I grant him bloody,  
Luxurious, § avaricious, false, deceitful,  
Sudden, ¶ malicious, smacking of every sin  
That has a name: But there's no bottom, none,  
In my voluptuousness: your wives, your daugh-  
ters,

Your matrons, and your maids, could not fill up  
The cistern of my lust; and my desire  
All continent impediments would o'er-bear,  
That did oppose my will: Better Macbeth,  
Than such a one to reign.

*Macd.* Boundless intemperance

\* Befriend.

† I. e. A good mind may recede from goodness in the  
execution of a royal commission.

‡ Legally settled by those who had the final adjudi-  
cation.

§ Lascivious.

¶ Passionate.

In nature is a tyranny; it hath been  
The untimely emptying of the happy throne,  
And fall of many kings. But fear not yet  
To take upon you what is yours: you may  
Convey your pleasures in a spacious plenty,  
And yet seem cold, the time you may so hood-  
wink.

We have willing dames enough; there cannot be  
That vulture in you to devour so many,  
As will to greatness dedicate themselves,  
Finding it so lucid'd.

*Mal.* With this, there grows,  
In my most ill-compos'd affection, such  
A stanceless avarice, that, were I king,  
I should cut off the nobles for their lands:  
Desire his jewels, and this other's house:  
And my more-having would be as a sauce  
To make me hunger more; that I should forge  
Quarrels unjust against the good, and loyal,  
Destroying them for wealth.

*Macd.* This avarice  
Sticks deeper; grows with more pernicious root  
Than summer-seeding lust: and it hath been  
The sword of our slain kings: Yet do not fear;  
Scotland hath foysons\* to fill up your will,  
Of your mere own: All these are portable,†  
With other graces weigh'd.

*Mal.* But I have none: The king-becoming  
graces,

As justice, verity, temperance, stablesness,  
Bounty, perseverance, mercy, lowliness,  
Devotion, patience, courage, fortitude,  
I have no relish of them; but about  
In the division of each several crime,  
Acting it many ways. Nay, had I power, I  
should

Pour the sweet milk of concord into hell,  
Uproar the universal peace, confound  
All unity on earth.

*Macd.* O Scotland! Scotland!

*Mal.* If such a one be fit to govern, speak:  
I am as I have spoken.

*Macd.* Fit to govern!

No, not to live.—O nation miserable,  
With an untitled tyrant bloody-scepter'd,  
When shalt thou see thy wholesome days again?  
Since that the truest issue of thy throne  
By his own interdiction stands accus'd,  
And does blaspheme his breed?—Thy royal  
father.

Was a most sainted king; the queen, that bore  
thee

Offner upon his knees than on her feet,  
Died every day she lived. Fare thee well!  
These evils thou repeat'st upon thyself,  
Have banish'd me from Scotland.—O my  
breast,

Thy hope ends here!

*Mal.* Macduff, this noble passion,  
Child of integrity, hath from my soul  
Wip'd the black scruples, reconcil'd my thoughts  
To thy good truth and honour. Devilish Mac-  
beth

By many of these trains hath sought to win me  
Into his power; and modest wisdom plucks me  
From over-credulous haste:‡ But God above  
Deal between thee and me! for even now  
I put myself to thy direction, and  
Unspeak mine own detraction: here abjure  
The taints and blames I laid upon myself,  
For strangers to my nature. I am yet  
Unknown to woman; never was forsworn;  
Scarcely have covet'd what was mine own;  
At no time broke my faith; would not betray  
The devil to his fellow; and delight  
No less in truth than life: my first false speak-  
ing

Was this upon myself: What I am truly,  
Is thine and my poor country's, to command  
Whither, indeed, before thy here-approach,  
Old Siward, with ten thousand warlike men,  
All ready at a point, was setting forth:

\* Plenty.

† May be endured.

‡ Over-hasty credulity.

Now we'll together: And the chances of good-  
ness,  
Be like our warranted quarrel? Why are you  
silent?

*Macd.* Such welcome and unwelcome things  
at once,  
'Tis hard to reconcile.

*Enter a Doctor.*

*Mal.* Well; more anon.—Comes the king  
forth, I pray you?

*Doct.* Ay, Sir: there are a crew of wretched  
souls,

That stay his cure: their malady convinces \*  
The great assay of art: but, at his touch,  
Such sanctity hath heaven given his hand,  
They presently amend.

*Mal.* I thank you, doctor. [*Exit Doctor.*]

*Macd.* What is the disease he means?

*Mal.* 'Tis call'd the evil:

A most miraculous work in this good king;  
Which often, since my here-remain in Eng-  
land,  
I have seen him do. How he solicits heaven,  
Himself best knows: but strangely-visited  
people,

All swollen and ulcerous, pitiful to the eye,  
The mere despair of surgery, he cures;  
Hanging a golden stamp † about their necks,  
Put on with holy prayers: and 'tis spoken,  
To the succeeding royalty he leaves  
The healing benediction. With this strange vir-  
tue,

He hath a heavenly gift of prophecy;  
And sundry blessings hang about his throne,  
That speak him full of grace.

*Enter Ross.*

*Macd.* See, who comes here?

*Mal.* My countryman; but yet I know him  
not.

*Macd.* My ever-gentle cousin, welcome hither.

*Mal.* I know him now: Good God, betimes  
remove

The means that make us strangers!

*Rosse.* Sir, Amen.

*Macd.* Stands Scotland where it did?

*Rosse.* Alas, poor country;  
Almost afraid to know itself! It cannot  
Be call'd our mother, but our grave: where  
nothing,

But who knows nothing, is once seen to smile;  
Where sighs and groans, and shrieks that rend  
the air,

Are made, not mark'd; where violent sorrow  
seems

A modern ecstasy: ‡ the dead man's knell  
Is there scarce ask'd, for who; and good men's  
Lives before the flowers in their caps, [lives,  
Dying, or ere they sicken.

*Macd.* O relation,  
Too nice, and yet too true!

*Mal.* What is the newest grief?

*Rosse.* That of an hour's age doth hiss the  
speaker;

Each minute teems a new one.

*Macd.* How does my wife?

*Rosse.* Why, well.

*Macd.* And all my children?

*Rosse.* Well too.

*Macd.* The tyrant has not batter'd at their  
peace?

*Rosse.* No; they were well at peace, when I  
did leave them.

*Macd.* Be not a niggard of your speech; How  
goes it?

*Rosse.* When I came hither to transport the  
tidings,

Which I have heavily borne, there ran a rumour  
Of many worthy fellows that were out;  
Which was to my belief witness'd the rather,

For that I saw the tyrant's power a-foot:  
Now is the time of help; your eye in Scotland  
Would create soldiers, make our women fight,  
To doff † their dire distresses.

*Mal.* Be it their comfort,  
We are coming thither; gracious England hath  
Lent us good Siward and ten thousand men;  
An older and a better soldier none  
That Christendom gives out.

*Rosse.* 'Would I could answer  
This comfort with the like! But I have words,  
That would be howl'd out in the desert air,  
Where hearing should not latch ‡ them.

*Macd.* What concern they?  
The general cause? or is it a fee-grief, §  
Due to some single breast?

*Rosse.* No mind, that's honest,  
But in it shares some woe; though the main part  
Pertains to you alone.

*Macd.* If it be mine,

Keep it not from me, quickly let me have it.

*Rosse.* Let not your ears despise my tongue  
for ever,

Which shall possess them with the heaviest  
That ever yet they heard.

*Macd.* Humph! I guess at it.

*Rosse.* Your castle is surpriz'd: your wife,  
and babes,

Savagely slaughter'd: to relate the manner,  
Were, on the quarry § of these murder'd deer,  
To add the death of you.

*Mal.* Merciful heaven!—

What, man! ne'er pull your hat upon your brows;  
Give sorrow words: the grief, that does not  
speak,

Whispers the o'er-fraught heart, and bids it  
break.

*Macd.* My children too?

*Rosse.* Wife, children, servants, all

That could be found.

*Macd.* And I must be from thence!

My wife kill'd too?

*Rosse.* I have said.

*Mal.* Be comforted;

Let's make us med'cines of our great revenge,  
To cure this deadly grief.

*Macd.* He has no children.—All my pretty  
ones!

Did you say, all?—O hell-kite!—All?

What, all my pretty chickens, and their dam,  
At one fell swoop!

*Mal.* Dispute it like a man.

*Macd.* I shall do so;

But I must also feel it as a man:

I cannot but remember such things were,

That were not precious to me.—Did heaven  
look on,

And would not take their part? Sinful Macduff,  
They were all struck for thee! naught that I am,  
Not for their own demerits, but for mine,  
Fell slaughter on their souls: Heaven rest them  
now!

*Mal.* Be this the whetstone of your sword:  
let grief

Convert to anger; blunt not the heart, enrage

*Macd.* O I could play the woman with mine  
eyes,

And braggart with my tongue!—But, gentle  
heaven,

Cut short all intermission; front to front,  
Bring thou this fiend of Scotland and myself;  
Within my sword's length set him; if he 'scape,  
Heaven forgive him too!

*Mal.* This tune goes manly.

Come, go we to the king; our power is ready;  
Our lack is nothing but our leave: Macbeth

Is ripe for shaking, and the powers above  
Put on their instruments. Receive what cheer

you may;  
The night is long, that never finds the day.

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Overpowers, subdues.

† A compliment to the Stuarts, who touched for the  
evil.

‡ Common distress of mind.

§ Put off.

‡ A grief that has a single owner.

§ The game after it is killed.

¶ All pause



To the last syllable of recorded time ;  
And all our yesterdays have lighted fools  
The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle !  
Life's but a walking shadow ; a poor player,  
That struts and frets his hour upon the stage,  
And then is heard no more ; it is a tale  
Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,  
Signifying nothing.—

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

Thou com'st to use thy tongue ; thy story quickly.

*Mess.* Gracious my lord,  
I shall report that which I say I saw,  
But know not how to do it.

*Macb.* Well, say, Sir.

*Mess.* As I did stand my watch upon the hill,

I look'd toward Birnam, and anon, methought,  
The wood began to move.

*Macb.* Liar and slave ! *[Striking him.]*

*Mess.* Let me endure your wrath, it's but no  
so :

Within this three mile may you see it coming ;  
I say, a moving grove.

*Macb.* If thou speak'st false,  
Upon the next tree shalt thou hang alive,  
Till famine cling \* thee : if thy speech be sooth,  
I care not if thou dost for me as much.—  
I pull in resolution, and begin

To doubt the equivocation of the fiend,  
That lies like truth : *Fear not, till Birnam*  
*wood*

*Do come to Dunsinane ;*—and now a wood  
Comes toward Dunsinane.—Arm, arm, and  
out !—

If this, which he avouches, does appear,  
There is nor flying hence, nor tarrying here,  
I 'gin to be a-weary of the sun,  
And wish the estate o' the world were now un-

done.— *[Wrack !]*  
Ring the alarum bell !—Blow, wind ! come,  
At least we'll die with harness † on our back.  
*[Exit.]*

*SCENE VI.—The same.—A Plain before the*  
*Castle.*

*Enter, with Drums and Colours, MALCOLM,*  
*old SIWARD, MACDUFF, &c. and their Army,*  
*with Boughs.*

*Mal.* Now near enough ; your heavy screens  
throw down,  
And show like those you are :—You, worthy  
uncle,

Shall, with my cousin, your right-noble son,  
Lead our first battle : worthy Macduff, and we,  
Shall, take upon us what else remains to do,  
According to our order.

*Sir.* Fare you well.—  
Do we but find the tyrant's power to-night,  
Let us be beaten, if we cannot fight.

*Macd.* Make all our trumpets speak ; give  
them all breath,  
Those clamorous harbingers of blood and death.  
*[Exit. Alarums continued.]*

*SCENE VII.—The same.—Another Part of*  
*the Plain.*

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* They have tied me to a stake : I cannot fly ;  
But, bear-like, I must fight the course.—What's  
he,  
That was not born of woman ? Such a one  
Am I to fear, or none.

*Enter young SIWARD.*

*Yo. Sir.* What is thy name ?

*Macb.* Thou'lt be afraid to hear it.

*Yo. Sir.* No ; though thou call'st thyself a  
hotter name  
Than any is in hell.

*Macb.* My name's Macbeth.

*Yo. Sir.* The devil himself could not pro-  
nounce a title  
More hateful to mine ear.

*Macb.* No, nor more fearful.

*Yo. Sir.* Thou liest, abhorred tyrant ; with  
my sword  
I'll prove the lie thou speak'st.

*[They fight, and young SIWARD is slain.]*

*Macb.* Thou wast born of woman.—  
But swords I smile at, weapons laugh to scorn,  
Brandish'd by man that's of a woman born.  
*[Exit.]*

*Alarums. Enter MACDUFF.*

*Macd.* That way the noise is :—Tyrant, show  
thy face :

If thou be'st slain, and with no stroke of mine  
My wife and children's ghost will haunt me  
still.

I cannot strike at wretched keenes, whose arms  
Are hir'd to bear their staves ; either thou, Mac-  
beth,

Or else my sword, with an unbrat'er'd edge,  
I sheathe again undecided. There thou should'st  
be ;

By this great clatter, one of greatest note  
Seems bruted : \* Let me find him, fortune !  
And more I beg not. *[Exit. Alarum]*

*Enter MALCOLM and SIWARD.*

*Sir.* This way, my lord ;—The castle's gently  
render'd :

The tyrant's people on both sides do fight ;  
The noble thane do bravely in the war,  
The day almost itself professes yours,  
And little is to do.

*Mal.* We have met with foes  
That strike beside us.

*Sir.* Enter, Sir, the castle.

*[Exit. Alarum]*

*Re-enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* Why should I play the Roman fool, and  
die *[gasps]*  
On mine own sword ? whilst I see lives, the  
Do better upon them.

*Re-enter MACDUFF.*

*Macd.* Turn, hell-hound, turn.

*Macb.* Of all men else I have avoided thee ;  
But get thee back, my soul is too much charg'd  
With blood of thine already.

*Macd.* I have no words,  
My voice is in my sword ; thou bloodier villain  
Than terms can give thee out !

*[They fight.]*

*Macb.* Thou lovest labour :  
As easy may'st thou the intricate air †  
With thy keen sword impress, as make me  
bleed :

Let fall thy blade on vulnerable crests ;  
I bear a charmed life, which must not yield  
To one of woman born.

*Macd.* Despair thy charm ;  
And let the angel, whom thou still hast serv'd,  
Tell thee, Macduff was from his mother's womb  
Untimely ripp'd.

*Macb.* Accurs'd be that tongue that tells me  
so,

For it hath cow'd my better part of man !  
And be these juggling fiends no more believ'd,  
That palter ‡ with us in a double sense ;  
That keep the word of promise to our ear,  
And break it to our hope.—I'll not fight with  
thee.

*Macd.* Then yield thee, coward,  
And live to be the show and gaze o' the time.  
We'll have thee, as our rarer monsters are,  
Palated upon a pole ; and underwrit,  
*Here may you see the tyrant.*

*Macb.* I'll not yield,

\* Shrivel

† Armour

\* Reported with clamour.

† The air which cannot be cut

‡ Shuffled

To kiss the ground before young Malcolm's feet,  
And to be baited with the rabble's curse.  
Though Birnam wood be come to Dunsinane,  
And thou oppos'd, being of no woman born,  
Yet I will try the last: Before my body  
I throw my warlike shield: lay on, Macduff;  
And damn'd be he that first cries, *Hold, enough.*  
[*Exeunt, fighting.*]

*Retreat. Flourish. Re-enter, with Drum and Colours, MALCOLM, old SIWARD, ROSSE, LENOX, ANGUS, CATHNESS, MENTETH, and Soldiers*

*Mal.* I would the friends we miss were safe arriv'd.

*Saw.* Some must go off: and yet, by these I see,

So great a day as this is cheaply bought.

*Mal.* Macduff is missing, and your noble son.  
*Rosse.* Your son, my lord, has paid a soldier's debt:

He only liv'd but till he was a man;  
The which no sooner had his prowess confirm'd  
In the unshrinking station where he fought,  
But like a man he died.

*Saw.* Then he is dead?

*Rosse.* Ay, and brought off the field: your cause of sorrow  
Must not be measur'd by his worth, for then  
It hath no end.

*Saw.* Had he his hurts before?

*Rosse.* Ay, on the front.

*Saw.* Why then, God's soldier be he!

Had I as many sons as I have hairs,  
I would not wish them to a fairer death:  
And so his knell is knoll'd.

*Mal.* He's worth more sorrow  
And that I'll spend for him.

*Siw.* He's worth no more;  
They say, he parted well, and paid his score:  
So, God be with him!—Here comes newer comfort.

*Re-enter MACDUFF, with MACBETH's Head on a Pole.*

*Macd.* Hail, king! for so thou art: Behold,  
where stands

The usurper's cursed head: the time is free;  
I see thee compass'd with thy kingdom's pearl,  
That speak my salutation in their minds;  
Whose voices I desire aloud with mine,—

Hail, king of Scotland!

*All.* King of Scotland, hail! [*Flourish.*]

*Mal.* We shall not spend a large expense of  
time,

Before we reckon with your several loves,  
And make us even with you. My thames and  
kinsmen,

Henceforth be earls, the first that ever Scotland  
In such an honour nam'd. What's more to do,  
Which would be planted newly with the time,—  
As calling home our exil'd friends abroad;

That fled the snares of watchful tyranny;  
Producing forth the cruel ministers  
Of this dead butcher, and his fiend-like queen;  
Who, as 'tis thought, by self and violent  
hands

Took off her life;—This, and what needful else  
That calls upon us, by the grace of Grace,  
We will perform in measure, time, and place:  
So thanks to all at once, and to each one,  
Whom we invite to see us crown'd at Scone.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

† The kingdom's wealth or ornament.

# KING JOHN.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THIS play was probably written in the year 1596. The action comprehends some of the principal events which occurred from the 34th year of King John's life to the time of his demise; or, during his short reign of seventeen years. Shakspeare has in some respects closely adhered to the old historians and chroniclers; but the Duke of Austria was not necessary to the death of Richard Cœur-de-lion; neither was John himself poisoned by a monk. However the gross licentiousness of the latter—his utter disregard of even the appearances of religion—and his habitual ridicule of the church, might favour such a supposition, it is certain that he died partly of grief, and partly of chagrin, at Newark. These incongruities, with the outline of Faulconbridge's character, our poet very likely derived from some previous dramatic production. With respect to the unfortunate Arthur, when he first fell into the power of his uncle, he was confined in the castle of Falaise, and the perfidious monarch endeavoured in vain to procure his assassination. He was afterwards conducted to the castle of Rouen, where John resided, and never afterwards heard of. The manner of his death is uncertain; but it is generally believed that the barbarous tyrant stabbed him with his own hand. Dr. Johnson says of this tragedy: "Though not written with the utmost power of Shakspeare, it is varied with a very pleasing interchange of incidents and characters: the lady's grief is very affecting; and the character of the Bastard contains that mixture of greatness and levity, which this author delighted to exhibit." The latter is, indeed, as odd a personage as any author ever drew; and his language is as peculiar as his ideas; but the scene in which John so darkly proposed to Hubert the murder of his innocent nephew, is beyond the commendation of criticism. Art could add little to its perfection; no change in dramatic taste can injure it, and time itself can subtract nothing from its beauties.—Colly Cibber altered this drama, though not for the best.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING JOHN.	PETER of Pomfret, a Prophet.
PRINCE HENRY, his Son; afterwards King Henry III.	PHILIP, King of France.
ARTHUR, Duke of Bretagne, Son of Geoffrey, late Duke of Bretagne, the elder Brother of King John.	LEWIS, the Dauphin.
WILLIAM MARESHALL, Earl of Pembroke.	ARCH-DUKE of Austria.
GEFFREY FITZ-PETER, Earl of Essex, Chief Justiciary of England.	CARDINAL PANDULPH, the Pope's legate.
WILLIAM LONGSWORD, Earl of Salisbury.	MELUN, a French Lord.
ROBERT BIGOT, Earl of Norfolk.	CHATILLON, Ambassador from France to King John.
HUBERT DE BURGH, Chamberlain to the King.	ELINOR, the Widow of King Henry II. and Mother of King John.
ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE, Son of Sir Robert Faulconbridge.	CONSTANCE, Mother to Arthur.
PHILIP FAULCONBRIDGE, his Half-brother, bastard Son to King Richard the First.	BLANCH, Daughter to Alphonso, King of Castile, and Niece to King John.
JAMES GURNEY, Servant to Lady Faulconbridge.	LADY FAULCONBRIDGE, Mother to the Bastard, and Robert Faulconbridge.
	Lords, Ladies, Citizens of Angiers, Shertiff, Herualds, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.

SCENE, sometimes in England, and sometimes in France.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Northampton.—A Room of State in the Palace.

Enter KING JOHN, QUEEN ELINOR, PEMBROKE, ESSEX, SALISBURY, and others, with CHATILLON.

K. John. Now, say, Chatillon, what would France with us?

Chat. Thus, after greeting, speaks the king of France,

In my behaviour, to the majesty, The borrow'd majesty of England here.

Elin. A strange beginning;—borrow'd majesty!

\* In the manner I now do.

K. John. Silence, good mother; hear the embassy.

Chat. Philip of France, in right and true behalf of thy deceased brother Geoffrey's son, [half Arthur Plantagenet, lays most lawful claim

To this fair island, and the territories;  
To Ireland, Poitiers, Anjou, Touraine, Maine;  
Desiring thee to lay aside the sword,  
Which sways usurpingly these several titles;  
And put the same into young Arthur's hand,  
Thy nephew, and right royal sovereign.

K. John. What follows, if we disallow of this?  
Chat. The proud control of fierce and bloody war,

To enforce these rights so forcibly withheld.

K. John. Here have we war for war, and blood for blood,

Controlment for controlment: so answer France.

*Chet.* Then take my king's defiance from my mouth,  
The furthest limit of my embassy.

*K. John.* Bear mine to him and so depart in peace:

Be thou as lightning in the eyes of France;  
For ere thou canst report I will be there,  
The thunder of my cannon shall be heard:  
So, hence! Be thou the trumpet of our wrath,  
And sullen presage of your own decay.—  
An honourable conduct let him have:—  
*Pembroke, look to't: Farewell, Chatillon.*

[*Exit CHATILLON and PEMBROKE.*]

*Eli.* What now, my son? have I not ever said,

How that ambitious Constance would not cease,  
Till she had kindled France, and all the world,  
Upon the right and party of her son?  
This might have been prevented, and made whole,

With very easy arguments of love;  
Which now the manage\* of two kingdoms must  
With fearful bloody issue arbitrate.

*K. John.* Our strong possession, and our right for us.

*Eli.* Your strong possession, much more than your right:

Or else it must go wrong with you and me:  
So much my conscience whispers in your ear;  
Which none but heaven, and you and I, shall hear.

*Enter the Sheriff of Northamptonshire, who whispers Essex.*

*Essex.* My liege, here is the strangest controversy,

Come from the country to be judg'd by you,  
That ere I heard: Shall I produce the men?

*K. John.* Let them approach.—

[*Exit Sheriff.*]

Our abbies, and our priories, shall pay.

*Re-enter Sheriff, with ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE, and PHILIP, his bastard Brother.*

This expedition's charge.—What men are you?

*Bast.* Your faithful subject I, a gentleman,  
Born in Northamptonshire; and eldest son,  
As I suppose, to Robert Faulconbridge;  
A soldier, by the honour-giving hand  
Of Cœur-de-lion knighted in the field.

*K. John.* What art thou?

*Rob.* The son and heir to that same Faulconbridge.

*K. John.* Is that the elder, and art thou the heir?

You came not of one mother then, it seems.

*Bast.* Most certain of one mother, mighty king,

That is well known; and, as I think, one father:

But, for the certain knowledge of that truth,  
I put you o'er to heaven and to my mother:  
Of that I doubt, as all men's children may.

*Eli.* Out on thee, rude man! thou dost shame thy mother,

And wound her honour with this diffidence.

*Bast.* I, madam? no, I have no reason for it;  
That is my brother's plea, and none of mine;  
The which if he can prove, 'a pops me out  
At least from fair five hundred pound a year:  
Heaven guard my mother's honour and my land!

*K. John.* A good blunt fellow:—Why, being younger born,

Doth he lay claim to thine inheritance?

*Bast.* I know not why, except to get the land!

But once he slander'd me with bastardy

But wher't I be as true-begot, or no,

That still I lay upon my mother's head;

But, that I am as well-begot, my liege,

(Fair fall the bones that took the pains for me!)  
Compare our faces, and be judge yourself.  
If old Sir Robert did beget us both,  
And were our father, and his son like him;—  
O old Sir Robert, father, on my knee  
I give heaven thanks, I was not like to thee.

*K. John.* Why, what a mad-cap hath heaven lent us here!

*Eli.* He hath a trick\* of Cœur-de-lion's face,  
The accent of his tongue affecteth him:  
Do you not read some tokens of my son  
In the large composition of this man?

*K. John.* Mine eye hath well examined his parts,  
And finds them perfect Richard.—[*Speak,*  
What doth move you to claim your brother's land?

*Bast.* Because he hath a half-face, like my father;  
With that half-face would he have all my land:  
A half-faced groat five hundred pounds a year!

*Rob.* My gracious liege, when that my father liv'd,

Your brother did employ my father much:—

*Bast.* Well, Sir, by this you cannot get my land;

Your tale must be, how he employ'd my mother,

*Rob.* And once despatch'd him in an embassy  
To Germany, there, with the emperor,  
To treat of high affairs touching that time:  
The advantage of his absence took the king,  
And in the mean time sojourn'd at my father's;  
Where how he did prevail, I shame to speak:  
But truth is truth; large lengths of seas and  
Between my father and my mother lay, [silence  
(As I have heard my father speak himself.)  
When this same lusty gentleman was got.  
Upon his death-bed he by will bequeath'd  
His lands to me; and took it, on his death,  
That this, my mother's son, was none of his,  
And if he were, he came into the world  
Full fourteen weeks before the course of time.  
Then, good my liege, let me have what is mine,  
My father's land, as was my father's will.

*K. John.* Sirrah, your brother is legitimate;  
Your father's wife did after wedlock bear him:  
And, if she did play false, the fault was her's;  
Which fault lies on the hazards of all husbands  
That marry wives. Tell me, how if my brother  
Who, as you say, took pains to get this son,  
Had of your father claim'd this son for his?  
In sooth, good friend, your father might have kept  
This calf, bred from his cow, from all the world;

In sooth he might: then, if he were my brother's,

My brother might not claim him: nor your  
Being none of his, refuse him: This con-

cludes,—

My mother's son did get your father's heir;

Your father's heir must have your father's land.

*Rob.* Shall then my father's will be of no force,

To dispossess that child which is not his?

*Bast.* Of no more force to dispossess me, Sir,

Than was his will to get me, as I think.

*Eli.* Whether hadst thou rather be a Faulconbridge,

And like thy brother, to enjoy thy land;

Or the reputed son of Cœur-de-lion,  
Lord of thy presence,† and no land beside?

*Bast.* Madam, as if my brother had my shape,

And I had his, Sir Robert his, like him;

And if my legs were two such riding-roads,  
My arms such eel-skins stuff'd; my face so

thin,

\* Conduct, administration.

† Whether.

\* Trace.

† Dignity of appearance.

That in my ear I durst not stick a rose,  
Lest men should say, Look, where three-far-  
things goes!

And, to his shape, were heir to all this land,  
'Would I might never stir from off this place,  
I'd give it every foot to have this face;  
I would not be Sir Noh\* in any case.

*Elc.* I like thee well; wilt thou forsake thy  
fortune,

Bequeath thy land to him, and follow me?  
I am a soldier and now bound to France.

*Bast.* Brother, take you my land, I'll take  
my chance:

Your face hath got five hundred pounds a year;  
Yet sell your face for fivepence, and 'tis dear.—  
Madam, I'll follow you unto the death.

*Elc.* Nay, I would have you go before me  
thither. [way.]

*Bast.* Our country manners give our betters  
*K. John.* What is thy name?

*Bast.* Philip, my liege; so is my name begun;  
Philip, good old Sir Robert's wife's eldest son.

*K. John.* From henceforth bear his name  
whose form thou bear'st:

Kneel thou down Philip, but arise more great:  
Arise Sir Richard and Plantagenet!

*Bast.* Brother, by the mother's side, give me  
your hand;

My father gave me honour, your's gave land:  
Now blessed be the hour, by night or day,  
When I was got, Sir Robert was away.

*Elc.* The very spirit of Plantagenet!  
I am thy grandame, Richard; call me so.

*Bast.* Madam, by chance, but not by truth:  
What though?

Something about, a little from the right,  
In at the window, or else o'er the hatch:

Who dares not stir by day, must walk by night;  
And have is have, however men do catch:

Near or far off, well won is still well shot;  
And I am I, however I was begot,

*K. John.* Go, Faulconbridge; now hast thou  
thy desire,

A landless knight makes thee a landed squire.—  
Come, madam, and come, Richard; we must  
speed

For France, for France; for it is more than  
need.

*Bast.* Brother, adieu; good fortune come to  
thee!

For thou wast got i' the way of honesty.

[*Exeunt all but the BASTARD.*]

A foot of honour better than I was;

But many a foot of land the worse.

Well, now can I make any Joan a lady:—

*Good den! Sir Richard, — God-a-mercy, fel-  
low! —*

And if his name be George, I'll call him Peter:  
For new-made honour doth forget men's names;

'Tis too respective, and too sociable,

For your conversion: Now, your traveller,—

He and his tooth-pick at my worship's mess;

And when my knightly stomach is suffic'd,

Why then I suck my teeth, and catechise

My picked man of countries: §—*My dear Sir,*  
(Thus leaning on mine elbows, I begin),

*I shall beseech you*—That is question now;

And then comes answer like an ABC-book:

*O Sir,* says answer, at your best command;

At your employment; at your service, *Sir*—

No, *Sir*, says question, *I, sweet Sir, at your's*:

And so, ere answer knows what question would,

(Saying in dialogue of compliment;

And talking of the Alps and Appennines,

The Pyrenean, and the river Po.)

It draws toward supper in conclusion so.

But this is worshipful society,

And tis the mounting spirit, like myself:

For he is but a bastard to the time,

That doth not smack of observation;

(And so am I, whether I smack, or no;)

And not alone in habit and device,

Exterior form, outward accoutrement;

But from the inward motion to deliver

Sweet, sweet, sweet poison for the age's tooth:

Which, though I will not practise to deceive,

Yet, to avoid deceit, I mean to learn;

For it shall strew the footsteps of my rising.—

But who comes in such haste, in riding robes?

What woman-post is this? hath she no hus-  
band,

That will take pains to blow a horn before her?

*Enter Lady FAULCONBRIDGE and JAMES  
GURNEY.*

O me! it is my mother:—How now, good lady!  
What brings you here to court so hastily?

*Lady F.* Where is that slave, thy brother?  
where is he?

That holds in chase mine honour up and down?  
*Bast.* My brother Robert? old Sir Robert's  
son?

Colbrand the giant, that same mighty man?

Is it Sir Robert's son, that you seek so?

*Lady F.* Sir Robert's son! Aye, thou un-  
verend boy, Robert?

Sir Robert's son: Why scorn'st thou at Sir  
He is Sir Robert's son; and so art thou.

*Bast.* James Gurney, wilt thou give us leave  
a while?

*Gur.* Good leave, good Philip.

*Bast.* Philip?—sparrow!—James,  
There's toy's abroad; anon I'll tell thee more.

[*Exit GURNEY.*]

Madam, I was not old Sir Robert's son,  
Sir Robert might have eat his part in me

Upon Good-friday, and ne'er brook his fast:

Sir Robert could do well: Marry, (to confess!)

Could he get me? Sir Robert could not do it.

We know his handy-work;—Therefore, good  
mother,

To whom am I beholden for these limbs?

Sir Robert never help to make this leg.

*Lady F.* Hast thou conspired with thy brother  
too, [honour!]

That for thine own gain should'st defend mine  
What means this scorn, thou most untoward  
knave?

*Bast.* Knight, knight, good mother,—Easi-  
liscolike: +

What! I am dubb'd; I have it on my shoulder.  
But, mother, I am not Sir Robert's son;

I have disclaim'd Sir Robert and my land;

Legitimation, name, and all is gone:

Then, good my mother, let me know my father,

Some proper man, I hope: Who was it, mo-  
ther?

*Lady F.* Hast thou denied thyself to Faul-  
conbridge?

*Bast.* As faithfully as I deny the devil.

*Lady F.* King Richard Cœur-de-lion was thy  
father;

By long and vehement suit I was seduc'd

To make room for him in my husband's bed:—

Heaven lay not my transgression to my charge!

Thou art the issue of my dear offence,

Which was so strongly urg'd, past my defence.

*Bast.* Now, by this light, were I to get again,

Madam, I would not wish a better father,

Some sins do bear their privilege on earth,

And so doth your's; your fault was not your  
folly:

Need must you lay your heart at his dispose:—

Subjected tribute to commanding love,—

Against whose fury and unmatched force

The aweless lion, could not wage the fight,

Nor keep his princely heart from Richard's  
hand.

He that perforce robs lions of their hearts,

May easily win a woman's. Ay, my mother,

With all my heart I thank thee for my father!

Who lives and dares but say thou didst not  
well,

When I was got, I'll send his soul to hell.

\* Robert.  
cf condition.

† Good evening.  
‡ My travelled fop

§ Change

\* Idle reports. † A satire upon a character  
in an old drama called *Soliman and Perseda*.

Come, lady, I will show thee to my kin;  
And they shall say, when Richard me begot,  
If thou hadst said him nay, it had been sin:  
Who says it was, he lies, I say, 'twas not.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II

## SCENE I.—France.—Before the Walls of Angiers.

*Enter, on one side, the ARCHDUKE of Austria, and Forces; on the other, PHILIP, King of France, and Forces; LEWIS, CONSTANCY, ARTHUR, and Attendants.*

*Lew.* Before Angiers well met, brave Austria.—

Arthur, that great fore-runner of thy blood,  
Richard, that rob'd the lion of his heart,  
And fought the holy wars in Palestine,  
By this brave duke came early to his grave: \*  
And, for amends to his posterity,  
At our importance hither is he come,  
To spread his colours, boy, in thy behalf;  
And to rebuke the usurpation  
Of thy unnatural uncle, English John:  
Embrace him, love him, give him welcome  
hither.

*Arch.* God shall forgive you Cour-de-lion's death,  
The rather, that you give his offspring life,  
Shadowing their right under your wings of war:

I give you welcome with a powerless hand,  
But with a heart full of unstained love:  
Welcome before the gates of Angiers, duke.

*Lew.* A noble boy! Who would not do thee right?

*Aust.* Upon thy cheek lay I this zealous kiss,  
As seal to this indenture of my love;  
That to my home I will no more return,  
Till Angiers, and the right thou hast in France,  
Together with that pale, that white-fac'd  
shore,

Whose foot spurns back the ocean's roaring  
tides,

And coops from other lands her islanders,  
Even till that England, hedg'd in with the  
main,

That water-walled bulwark, still secure  
And confident from foreign purposes,  
Even till that utmost corner of the west  
Salute thee for her king: till then, fair boy,  
Will I not think of home, but follow arms.

*Const.* O take his mother's thanks, a widow's  
thanks,

And your strong hand shall help to give him  
strength,

To make a more requital to your love.

*Aust.* The peace of heaven is theirs, that lift  
their swords

Yn such a just and charitable war.

*K. Phi.* Well then, to work; our cannon  
shall be bent

Against the brows of this resisting town.—

Call for our chiefest men of discipline,  
To cull the plots of best advantages.

We'll lay before this town our royal bones,  
Wade to the market-place in Frenchmen's  
blood,

But we will make it subject to this boy.

*Const.* Stay for an answer to your embassy  
Lest unadvis'd you stain your swords with  
blood:

My lord Chatillon may from England bring  
That right in peace, which here we urge in  
war;

And then we shall repent each drop of blood,  
That hot rash haste so indirectly shed.

\* The Duke of Austria died some time before Richard Cour-de-lion.

## Enter CHATILLON.

*K. Phi.* A wonder, lady!—lo, upon thy wish  
Our messenger Chatillon is arriv'd.—  
What England says, say briefly, gentle lord,  
We coldly pause for thee; Chatillon, speak.

*Chat.* Then turn your forces from this paltry  
siege,

And stir them up against a mightier task.  
England, impatient of your just demands,  
Hath put himself in arms; the adverse winds  
Whose leisure I have staid, have given him  
time

To land his legions all as soon as I:  
His marches are expedient \* to this town,  
His forces strong, his soldiers confident.  
With him along is come the mother-queen,  
An Até, stirring him to blood and strife;  
With her her niece, the lady Blanch of Spain;  
With them a bastard of the king deceas'd;  
And all the unsettled humours of the land,—  
Rash, inconsiderate, fiery volunteers,  
With ladies' faces, and fierce dragons' spleens,—  
Have sold their fortunes at their native homes,  
Bearing their birthrights proudly on their backs  
To make a hazard of new fortunes here,  
In brief, a brave choice of dauntless spirits,  
Than now the English bottoms have wait o'er,  
Did never float upon the swelling tide,  
To do offence and scath in Christendom.  
The interruption of their churlish drums

[*Drums beat*]  
Cuts off more circumstance: they are at hand,  
To parly or to fight; therefore, prepare.

*K. Phi.* How much unlook'd for is this ex-  
pedition!

*Aust.* By how much unexpected, by so much  
We must awake endeavour for defence;  
For courage mounteth with occasion:  
Let them be welcome then, we are prepar'd.

*Enter King JOHN, ELINOR, BLANCH, the  
BASTARD, PLMERKE, and Forces.*

*K. John.* Peace be to France: if France in  
peace permit

Our just and lineal entrance to our own!  
If not, bleed France, and peace ascend to hea-  
ven!

Whiles we, God's wrathful agent, do correct  
Their proud contempt that beat his peace to  
heaven.

*K. Phi.* Peace be to England; if that war  
return

From France to England, there to live in peace!  
England we love; and, for that England's sake,  
With burden of our armour here we sweat:  
This toil of ours should be a work of thine;  
But thou from loving England art so far,  
That thou has under-wrought † his lawful king  
Cut off the sequence of posterity,  
Outfaced infant state, and done a rape  
Upon the maiden virtue of the crown.

Look here upon thy brother Geoffrey's face;—  
These eyes, these brows, were moulded out of  
his:

This little abstract doth contain that large,  
Which died in Geoffrey; and the hand of time  
Shall draw this brief into as huge a volume.  
That Geoffrey was thy elder brother born,  
And this his son; England was Geoffrey's right,  
And this is Geoffrey's: In the name of God,  
How comes it then, that thou art call'd a king,  
When living blood doth in these temples beat,  
Which owe the crown that thou o'er-masterest?

*K. John.* From whom hast thou this great  
commission, France,

To draw my answer from thy articles?

*K. Phi.* From that supernal judge, that stirs  
good thoughts

In any breast of strong authority,  
To look into the plots and stans of right.  
That judge hath made me guardian to this boy:  
Under whose warrant, I impeach thy wrong;  
And, by whose help, I mean to chastise it.

\* Immediate.

† Undermined.

*K. John.* Alack, thou dost usurp authority.

*K. Phil.* Excuse it; it is to beat usurping down.

*Eli.* Who is it, thou dost call usurper, France?

*Const.* Let me make answer;—thy usurping son.

*Eli.* Out, insolent! thy bastard shall be king;

That thou may'st be a queen, and check the world!

*Const.* My bed was ever to thy son as true, As thine was to thy husband: and this boy Liked in feature to his father Geoffrey, Than thou and John in manners; being as like, As rain to water, or devil to his dam. My boy a bastard! By my soul, I think His father never was so true begot; It cannot be, an if thou wert his mother.

*Eli.* There's a good mother, boy, that blots thy father.

*Const.* There's a good grandam, boy, that would blot thee.

*Aust.* Peace!

*Bast.* Hear the crier.

*Aust.* What the devil art thou?

*Bast.* One that will play the devil, Sir, with you.

An 'a may catch your hide and you alone. You are the hare of whom the proverb goes, Whose valour plucks dead lions by the beard; I'll smoke your skin-coat,\* an I catch you right;

Sirrah, look to't; I'faith, I will, I'faith.

*Blanch.* O well did he become that lion's robe,

That did disrobe the lion of that robe!

*Bast.* It lies as sightly on the back of him, As great Alcides' shoes upon an ass:—

But, ass, I'll take that burden from your back; Or lay on that, shall make your shoulders crack.

*Aust.* What cracker is this same, that deafs our ears

With this abundance of superfluous breath? *K. Phil.* Lewis, determine what we shall do straight.

*Lew.* Women and fools, break off your conference.—

King John, this is the very sum of all,— England, and Ireland, Anjou, Touraine, Maine, In right of Arthur do I claim of thee: Wilt thou resign them, and lay down thy arms?

*K. John.* My life as soon:—I do defy thee, France.

Arthur of Bretagne, yield thee to my hand; And, out of my dear love, I'll give thee more Than e'er the coward hand of France can win: Submit thee, boy.

*Eli.* Come to thy grandam, child;

*Const.* Do, child, go to it! grandam, child; Give grandam kingdom, and it! grandam will Give it a plum, a cherry, and a fig: There's a good grandam.

*Arth.* Good my mother, peace!

I would that I were low laid in my grave; I am not worth this coil that's made for me.

*Eli.* His mother shames him so, poor boy, he weeps.

*Const.* Now shame upon you, whe'r † she does, or no!

His grandam's wrongs, and not his mother's shames,

Draw those heaven-moving pearls from his poor eyes,

Which heaven shall take in nature of a fee; Ay, with these crystal beads heaven shall be brib'd

To do him justice, and revenge on you.

*Eli.* Thou monstrous slanderer of heaven and earth!

*Const.* Thou monstrous injurer of heaven and earth!

\* Austria wears a lion's skin.

† Whether.

Call not me slanderer; thou, and thine usurp The dominations, royalties, and rights, Of this oppressed boy: This is thy eldest son's son,

Unfortunate in nothing but in thee; Thy sins are visited in this poor child;

The canon of the law is laid on him, Being but the second generation

Removed from thy sin-conceiving womb.

*K. John.* Bredam, have done.

*Const.* I have but this to say,— That he's not only plagued for her sin,

But God hath made her sin and her the plague On this removed issue, plagu'd for her,

And with her plague, her sin; his injury Her injury,—the headle to her sin;

All punish'd in the person of this child, And all for her; A plague upon her!

*Eli.* Thou unadvised scold, I can produce A will, that bars the title of thy son.

*Const.* Ay, who doubts that? a will! a wicked will;

A woman's will; a canker'd grandam's will!

*K. Phil.* Peace, lady; pause, or be more temperate:

It ill beseems this presence, to cry aim \*

To these ill-tuned repetitions.—

Some trumpet summon hither to the walls These men of Angiers; let us hear them speak,

Whose title they admit, Arthur's or John's.

*Trumpets sound. Enter CITIZENS upon the walls.*

*I Cit.* Who is it, that hath warned us to the walls?

*K. Phil.* 'Tis France, for England.

*K. John.* England, for itself:

You men of Angiers, and my loving subjects,—

*K. Phil.* You loving men of Angiers, Arthur's subjects,

Our trumpet call'd you to this gentle parle. †

*K. John.* For our advantage;—I therefore, hear us first.—

These flags of France, that are advanced here Before the eye and prospect of your town,

Have hither march'd to your endamagement: The cannons have their bowels full of wrath;

And ready mounted are they, to spit forth Their iron indignation 'gainst your walls:

All preparation for a bloody siege, And merciless proceeding by these French,

Confront your city's eyes, your winking gates; And, but for our approach, those sleeping stones,

That as a waist do girdle you about, —

By the compulsion of their ordnance, By this time from their fixed beds of lime

Had been disabited, and wide havoc made For bloody power to rush upon your peace.

But, on the sight of us, your lawful king,— Who painfully, with much expedient march,

Have brought a countercheck before your gates, To save unscratch'd your city's threaten'd cheeks,—

Behold, the French, amaz'd, vouchsafe a parle: And now, instead of bullets wrapp'd in fire,

To make a shaking fever in your walls, They shoot but calm words, folded up in smoke,

To make a faithless error in your ears: Which trust accordingly, kind citizens,

And let us in, your king; whose labour'd spirits, Forwearied ‡ in this action of swift speed,

Crave harbourage within your city walls.

*K. Phil.* When I have said, make answer to us both.

Lo, in this right hand, whose protection Is most divinely vow'd upon the right

Of him it holds, stands young Plantagenet Son to the elder brother of this man,

And king o'er him, and all that he enjoys:

\* To encourage

‡ Worn out.

† Conference.

For this down-trodden equity, we tread  
In warlike march these greens before your  
town;

Being no further enemy to you,  
Than the constraint of hospitable zeal,  
In the relief of this oppressed child,  
Religiously provokes. Be pleased then  
To pay that duty, which you truly owe,  
To him that owes\* it; namely this young  
prince:

And then our arms, like to a muzzled bear,  
Save in aspect, have all offence seal'd up;  
Our cannons' malice vainly shall be spent  
Against the invulnerable clouds of heaven;  
And, with a blessed and unweav'd retire,  
With unback'd swords, and helmets all un-  
brul'd,

We will bear home that lusty blood again,  
Which here we came to spout against your town,  
And leave your children, wives, and you, in  
peace.

But if you fondly pass our proffer'd offer,  
'Tis not the roundure† of your old fac'd walls  
Can hide you from our messengers of war;  
Though all these English, and their discipline,  
Were harbour'd in their rude circumference.  
Then, tell us, shall your city call us lord,  
In that behalf which we have challeng'd it?  
Or shall we give the signal to our rage,  
And stalk in blood to our possession?

I *Cit.* In brief, we are the king of England's  
subjects;

For him, and in his right, we hold this town.

K. *John.* Acknowledge then the king, and let  
me in.

I *Cit.* That can we not: but he that proves  
the king,  
To him will we prove loyal; till that time,  
Have we ramm'd up our gates against the  
world.

K. *John.* Doth not the crown of England  
prove the king?  
And, if not that, I bring you witnesses,  
Twice fifteen thousand hearts of England's  
breed.—

*Bast.* Bastards, and else.

K. *John.* To verify our title with their  
lives.

K. *Phi.* As many, and as well born bloods as  
those,—

*Bast.* Some bastards too.

K. *Phi.* Stand in his face, to contradict his  
claim.

I *Cit.* Till you compound whose right is  
worthiest,  
We, for the worthiest, hold the right from  
both.

K. *John.* Then God forgive the sin of all  
those souls,  
That to their everlasting residence,  
Before the dew of evening fall, shall fleet,  
In dreadful trial of our kingdom's king!

K. *Phi.* Amen, Amen!—Mount, chevaliers!  
to arms!

*Bast.* St. George,—that swing'd the dragon,  
and e'er since,  
Sits on his horseback at mine hostess' door,  
Teach us some fence!—Sirrah, were I at home,  
At your den, sirrah, [To AUSTRIA.] with your  
lioness,  
I'd set an ox-head to your lion's hide,  
And make a monster of you.

*Aust.* Peace; no more.

*Bast.* O tremble; for you hear the lion roar.

K. *John.* Up higher to the plain; where we'll  
set forth,

In best appointment, all our regiments.  
*Bast.* Speed then, to take advantage of the  
field.

K. *Phi.* It shall be so:—[To LEWIS.] and at  
the other hill

Command the rest to stand.—God and our right!  
[Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.—The same.

*Alarums and Excursions; then a Retreat.*  
*Enter a French HERALD, with trumpets,*  
*to the gates.*

F. *Her.* You men of Angiers, open wide your  
gates,

And let young Arthur, duke of Bretagne, in:  
Who, by the hand of France, this day hath made  
Much work for tears in many an English mo-  
ther,

Whose sons lie scatter'd on the bleeding ground:  
Many a widow's husband grovelling lies,  
Coldly embracing the discolour'd earth;  
And victory, with little loss, doth play  
Upon the dancing banners of the French;  
Who are at hand, triumphantly display'd,  
To enter conquerors, and to proclaim  
Arthur of Bretagne, England's king, and your's.

*Enter an English HERALD, with trumpets.*

E. *Her.* Rejoice, you men of Angiers, ring  
your bells!

King John, your king and England's doth ap-  
proach,

Commander of this hot malicious day!  
Their armours, that march'd hence so silver-  
bright,

Hither return all gilt with Frenchmen's blood,  
There stuck no plume in any English crest,  
That is removed by a staff of France;  
Our colours do return in those same hands  
That did display them when we first march'd  
forth;

And, like a jolly troop of huntsmen, come  
Our lusty English, all with purpled haunts,  
Died in the dying slaughter of their foes:  
Open your gates, and give the victors way.

*Cit.* Heralds, from off our towers we might  
behold,

From first to last, the onset and retire  
Of both your armies: whose equality  
By our best eyes cannot be censured: \*  
Blood hath bought blood, and blows have an-  
swer'd blows;

Strength match'd with strength, and power con-  
fronted power:

Both are alike: and both alike we like.  
One must prove greatest; while they weigh so  
even,

We hold our town for neither; yet for both.

*Enter, at one side, King JOHN, with his powers, ELINOR, BLANCH, and the BASTARD; at the other, King PHILIP, LEWIS, AUSTRIA, and Forces.*

K. *John.* France hast thou yet more blood to  
cast away?

Say, shall the current of our right run on?  
Whose passage, vex'd with thy impediment,  
Shall leave his native channel, and o'er-swell  
With course disturb'd even thy confining shores;  
Unless thou let his silver water keep  
A peaceful progress in the ocean.

K. *Phi.* England, thou hast not sav'd one  
drop of blood,

In this hot trial, more than we of France;  
Rather, lost more: And by this hand I swear,  
That sways the earth this climate overlooks.—  
Before we will lay down our just-borne arms  
We'll put thee down, 'gainst whom these arms  
we bear,

Or add a royal number to the dead;  
Gracing the scroll, that tells of this war's loss,  
With slaughter coupled to the name of kings.

*Bast.* Ha, majesty! how high thy glory  
towers,

When the rich blood of kings is set on fire!  
O now doth death line his dead claps with  
steel;

The swords of soldiers are his teeth, his fangs;  
And now he feasts, mounting the flesh of men,  
In undetermin'd differences of kings.—

\* Ours

† Circle.

\* Judged.



Why stand these royal fronts amazed thus?  
 Cry, havoc, kings! back to the stained field,  
 You equal potent, fiery-kindled spirits!  
 Then let confusion of one part confirm  
 The other's peace; till then, blows, blood, and  
 death!

*K. John.* Whose party do the townsmen yet  
 admit?

*K. Phi.* Speak, citizens, for England; who's  
 your king?

*1 Cit.* The king of England, when we know  
 the king.

*K. Phi.* Know him in us, that here hold up  
 his right.

*K. John.* In us, that are our own great deputy,  
 And bear possession of our person here;  
 Lord of our presence, Angiers, and of you.

*1 Cit.* A greater power than we, denies all  
 this;

And, till it be undoubted, we do lock  
 Our former scruple in our strong-barr'd gates:  
 King'd of our fears; until our fears, resolv'd,  
 Be by some certain king purg'd and depos'd.

*Bast.* By heaven, these scroyles of Angiers  
 flout you, kings;

And stand securely on their battlements,  
 As in a theatre, whence they gaze and point  
 At your industrious scenes and acts of death.

Your royal presences be rul'd by me;  
 Do like the mutines of Jerusalem,  
 Be friends a while, and both conjointly bend  
 Your sharpest deeds of malice on this town:

By east and west let France and England  
 mount

Their battering cannon, charged to the mouths;  
 Till their soul-fearing clamours have brawl'd  
 down

The flinty ribs of this contemptuous city:  
 I'd play incessantly upon these jades,  
 Even till unfenced desolation  
 Leave them as naked as the vulgar air.

That done, discover your united strengths,  
 And part your mingled colours once again;  
 Turn face to face, and bloody point to point:  
 Then, in a moment, fortune shall snail forth  
 Out of one side her happy minion;

To whom in favour she shall give the day,  
 And kiss him with a glorious victory.

How like you this wild counsel, mighty states?  
 Smacks it not something of the policy?

*K. John.* Now, by the sky that hangs above  
 our heads,

I like it well;—France, shall we knit our  
 powers,

And lay this Angiers even with the ground;  
 Then, after, fight who shall be king of it?

*Bast.* Ah! if thou hast the mettle of a king,—  
 Being wrong'd, as we are, by this peevish  
 town,—

Turn thou the mouth of thy artillery,  
 As we will our's, against these saucy walls:  
 And when that we have dash'd them to the  
 ground,

Why, then defy each other; and, pell-mell,  
 Make work upon ourselves, for heaven, or hell.

*K. Phi.* Let it be so:—Say, where will you  
 assault?

*K. John.* We from the west will send de-  
 struction

Into this city's bosom.

*Aust.* I from the north.

*K. Phi.* Our thunder from the south,  
 Shall rain their drift of bullets on this town.

*Bast.* O prudent discipline! From north to  
 south:

Austria and France shoot in each other's  
 mouth:

[*Aside.*  
 I'll stir them to it:—Come, away, away!

*1 Cit.* Hear us, great kings: vouchsafe a  
 while to stay,

And I shall show you peace, and fair-faced  
 league.

Win you this city without stroke or wound;  
 Rescue those breathing lives to die in beds,

That here come sacrifices for the field:  
 Perséver not, but hear me, mighty kings.

*K. John.* Speak on, with favour; we are  
 bent to hear.

*1 Cit.* That daughter there of Spain, the lady  
 Blanch,

Is near to England: Look upon the years  
 Of Lewis the Dauphin, and that lovely maid:

If lusty love should go in quest of beauty,  
 Where should he find it fairer than in Blanch?

If zealous love should go in search of virtue,  
 Where should he find it purer than in Blanch?

If love ambitious sought a match of birth,  
 Whose veins bound richer blood than lady  
 Blanch?

Such as she is, in beauty, virtue, birth,  
 Is the young Dauphin every way complete:

If not complete, O say, he is not she;  
 And she again wants nothing, to name want;

If want it be not, that she is not he:  
 He is the half part of a blessed man,  
 Left to be finished by such a she;

And she a fair divided excellence,  
 Whose fulness of perfection lies in him.

Oh! two such silver currents, when they join,  
 Do glorify the banks that bound them in:

And two such shores to two such streams made  
 one,

Two such controlling bounds shall you be,  
 kings,

To these two princes, if you marry them.

This union shall do more than battens can,  
 To our fast-closed gates; for, at this match,

With swifter spleen than powder can enforce,  
 The mouth of passage shall we fling wide open,

And give you entrance; but, without this  
 match,

The sea enraged is not half so deaf,  
 Lions more confident, mountains and rocks

More free from motion; no, not death himself  
 In mortal fury half so peremptory,

As we to keep this city.

*Bast.* Here's a stay,  
 That shakes the rotten carcass of old death

Out of his rags! Here's a large mouth, indeed,  
 That spits forth death, and mountain, rocks,

and seas:

Talks as familiarly of roaring lions,  
 As maids of thirteen do of puppy-dogs!

What cananner begot this lusty blood?  
 He speaks plain cannon, me, and smoke, and  
 bounce;

He gives the bastinado with his tongue;  
 Our ears are cudgel'd; not a word of his,

But buffets better than a fist of France:  
 Zounds! I was never so bethump'd with words,

Since I first call'd my brother's father, dad.

*Eli.* Son, list to this conjunction, make this  
 match;

Give with our niece a dowry large enough:  
 For by this knot thou shalt so sweetly tie

Thy now unsur'd assurance to the crown  
 That thy green boy shall have no sun to ripe

The bloom that promiseth a mighty fruit.  
 I see a yielding in the looks of France:

Mark, how they whisper: urge them while their  
 souls

Are capable of this ambition;  
 Lest zeal, now melted, by the windy breath

Of soft petitions, pity, and remorse,  
 Cool and congeal again to what it was.

*1 Cit.* Why answer not the double majesties,  
 This friendly treaty of our threaten'd town?

*K. Phi.* Speak England first, that hath been  
 forward first

To speak unto this city: What say you?

*K. John.* If that the Dauphin there, thy  
 princely son,

Can in this book of beauty read, I love,  
 Her dowry shall weigh equal with a queen:

For Anjou, and fair Touraine, Maine, Poic-  
 tiers,

And all that we upon this side the sea  
 Except this city now by us besieg'd

Find liable to our crown and dignity,

Shall gild her bridal bed; and make her rich  
In titles, honours, and promotions,  
As she in beauty, education, blood,  
Holds hand with any princess of the world.

*K. Phi.* What say'st thou, boy? look in the lady's face.

*Lew.* I do, my lord, and in her eye I find  
A wonder, or a wondrous miracle,  
The shadow of myself form'd in her eye;  
Which, being but the shadow of your son,  
Becomes a sun, and makes your son a shadow:  
I do protest, I never lov'd myself,  
Till now indeed I beheld myself,  
Drawn in the flattering table of her eye.

[*Whispers with BLANCH.*]

*Bast.* Drawn in the flattering table of her eye!—

Hang'd in the frowning wrinkle of her brow!—

And quarter'd in her heart!—he doth espy  
Himself love's traitor: This is pity now,  
That hang'd, and drawn, and quarter'd, there  
should be,

In such a love, so vile a lout as he.

*Blanch.* My uncle's will, in this respect, is mine:

If he see aught in you, that makes him like,  
That any thing he sees, which moves his liking,  
I can with ease translate it to my will;  
Or, if you will, (to speak more properly,)  
I will enforce it easily to my love.

Further I will not flatter you my lord,  
That all I see in you is worthy love,  
Than this,—that nothing do I see in you,  
(I though childish thoughts themselves should be  
your judge,)

That I can find should merit any hate.

*K. John.* What say these young ones? What say you, my niece?

*Blanch.* That she is bound in honour still to do

What you in wisdom shall vouchsafe to say.

*K. John.* Speak then, prince Dauphin, can you love this lady?

*Lew.* Nay, ask me if I can refrain from love;  
For I do love her most unfeignedly.

*K. John.* Then do I give Volquessen, Touraine, Maine,  
Poitiers, and Anjou, these five provinces,  
With her to thee, and this addition more,  
Fifty thirty thousand marks of English coin.—  
Philip of France, if thou be pleas'd withal,  
Command thy son and daughter to join hands.

*K. Phi.* It likes us well;—Young princes,  
close your hands.

*Aust.* And your lips too; for, I am well assur'd,

That I did so, when I was first assur'd.\*

*A. Phi.* Now, citizens of Angiers, open your gates,

Let in that amity which you have made:  
For at saint Mary's chapel, presently,  
The rites of marriage shall be solemniz'd.—  
Is not the lady Constance in this troop?—  
I know, she is not; for this match, made up,  
Her presence would have interrupted much:—  
Where is she and her son? tell me, who knows.

*Lew.* She is sad and passionate at your highness' tent.

*K. Phi.* And, by my faith, this league, that we have made,

Will give her sadness very little cure.—  
Brother of England, how may we content  
This widow lady? In her right we came;  
Which we, God knows, have turn'd another way,  
To our own vantage.

*K. John.* We will heal up all;

For we'll create young Arthur duke of Bre-  
tagne,  
And earl of Richmond; and this rich fair town  
We make him lord of.—Call the lady Con-  
stance;

\* Affianced.

Some speedy messenger bid her repair

To our solemnity:—I trust we shall,  
If not fill up the measure of her will,  
Yet in some measure satisfy her so,  
That we shall stop her exclamation.

Go we, as well as haste will suffer us,  
To this unlook'd for unprepared pomp.

[*Exeunt all but the BASTARD.—The CITI-  
ZENS retire from the walls.*]

*Bast.* Mad world! mad kings! mad com-  
position!

John, to stop Arthur's title in the whole,  
Hath willingly departed with a part:

And France, (whose armour conscience buck-  
led on;

Whom zeal and charity brought to the field,  
As God's own soldier,) rounded\* in the ear  
With that same purpose-changer, that sly devil;  
That broke, that still breaks the pate of faith,  
That daily break-vow; he that wins of all,  
Of kings, of beggars, old men, young men,  
maids:—

Who having no external thing to lose  
But the word maid,—cheats the poor maid of  
that,

That smooth-faced gentleman, tickling com-  
modity,†

Commodity, the bias of the world;  
The world, who of itself is peis'd‡ well,  
Made to run even, upon even ground;  
Till this advantage, this vile drawing bias,  
This sway of motion, this commodity,  
Makes it take head from all indifference,  
From all direction, purpose, course, intent:  
And this same bias, this commodity,

This hawk, this broker, this all-changing word,  
Clapp'd on the outward eye of tickle France,  
Hath drawn him from his own determin'd fate,  
From a resolv'd and honourable war,  
To a most base and vile-concluded peace.—

And why rail I on this commodity?

But for because he hath not woo'd me yet:  
Not that I have the power to clutch my hand;  
When his fair angels‡ would salute my palm;

But for my hand, as unattempted yet,  
Like a poor beggar, raileth on the rich.

Well, while I am a beggar, I will rail,  
And say,—there is no sin but to be rich;

And being rich, my virtue then shall be,  
To say,—there is no vice, but beggary;

Since kings break faith upon commodity,  
Gau be my lord! for I will worship thee!

[*Exit.*]

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—The same.—The French King's Tent.

Enter CONSTANCE, ARTHUR, and SALISBURY.

*Const.* Gone to be married! gone to swear a  
peace!

False blood to false blood join'd! Gone to be  
friends!

Shall Lewis have Blanch? and Blanch those  
provinces?

It is not so; thou hast mispoke, misheard;  
Be well advis'd, tell o'er thy tale again:

It cannot be; thou dost but say, 'tis so:  
I trust, I may not trust thee; for thy word

Is but the vain breath of a common man:  
Believe me, I do not believe thee, man;

I have a king's oath to the contrary.  
Thou shalt be punish'd for thus frightening me,

For I am sick, and capable of fears;  
Oppress'd with wrongs, and therefore full of  
fears;

A widow, husbandless, subject to fears;

\* Conspired.

† Interest.

‡ Peis'd, balanced.

§ Coin.

‡ Susceptible.

A woman naturally born to fears ;  
And though thou now confess, thou didst but  
jest,

With my vex'd spirits I cannot take a truce,  
But they will quake and tremble all this day.  
What dost thou mean by shaking of thy head ?  
Why dost thou look so sadly on my son ?  
What means that hand upon that breast of  
thine ?

Why holds thine eye that lamentable rheum,  
Like a proud river peering o'er his bounds ?  
Be these sad signs confirmers of thy words ?  
Then speak again ; not all thy former tale,  
But this one word, whether thy tale be true.

*Sal.* As true, as I believe you think them  
false,

That give you cause to prove my saying true.

*Const.* O if you teach me to believe this  
sorrow,

Teach thou this sorrow how to make me die ;  
And let belief and life encounter so,  
As doth the fury of two desperate men,  
Which, in the very meeting, fall, and die.—  
Lewis marry Blanch ! O boy, then where art  
thou ?

France friend with England ! what becomes of  
me !—

Fellow, be gone ; I cannot brook thy sight :  
This news hath made thee a most ugly man.

*Sal.* What other harm have I, good lady,  
done,

But spoke the harm that is by others done ?

*Const.* Which harm within itself so heinous is,  
As it makes harmful all that speak of it.

*Arth.* I do beseech you, madam, be content.

*Const.* If thou, that bid'st me be content,  
wert grim,

Ugly, and slaud'rous to thy mother's womb,  
Full of unpleasing blots, and sightless stains,  
Lame, foolish, crooked, swart, prodigious,  
Patch'd with foul moles, and eye-offending  
marks,

I would not care, I then would be content ;  
For then I should not love thee ; no, nor thou  
Become thy great birth, nor deserve a crown.  
But thou art fair ; and at thy birth, dear boy,  
Nature and fortune join'd to make thee great :  
Of nature's gifts thou may'st with lilies boast,  
And with the half-blown rose : but fortune, oh !  
She is corrupted, chang'd, and won from thee ;  
She adulterates hourly with thine uncle John ;  
And with her golden hand hath pluck'd on  
France

To tread down fair respect of sovereignty,  
And made his majesty the bawd of thy's.  
France is a bawd to fortune and king John ;  
That strumpet fortune, that usurping John :—  
Tell me, thou fellow, is not France forsworn ?  
Envenom him with words ; or get thee gone,  
And leave those woes alone, which I alone,  
Am bound to under-bear.

*Sal.* Pardon me, madam,

I may not go without you to the kings.

*Const.* Thou may'st, thou shalt, I will not go  
with thee :

I will instruct my sorrows to be proud ;  
For grief is proud, and makes his owner stout.  
To me, and to the state of my great grief,  
Let kings assemble ; for my grief's so great,  
That no supporter but the huge firm earth  
Can hold it up : here I and sorrow sit ;  
Here is my throne. bid kings come how to it.

[*She throws herself on the ground.*]

*Enter King JOHN, King PHILIP, LEWIS,  
BLANCH, ELINOR, BASTARD, AUSTRIA, and  
Attendants.*

*K. Phi.* 'Tis true, fair daughter ; and this  
blessed day,

Ever in France shall be kept festival :  
To solemnize this day, the glorious sun  
Stays in his course, and plays the alchemist ;  
Turning, with splendour of his precious eye,  
The meagre cloddy earth to glittering gold :

The yearly course, that brings this day about,  
Shall never see it but a holiday.

*Const.* A wicked day, and not a holiday !—

[*Rising.*]

What hath this day deserv'd, what hath it done,

That it in golden letters should be set,

Among the high tides, in the calendar ?

Nay, rather, turn this day out of the week ;

This day of shame, oppression, perjury :

Or, if it must stand still, let wives with child

Pray that their burdens may not fall this day,

Lest that their hopes prodigiously be cross'd :

But, \* on this day, let seamen fear no wreck ;

No bargains break, that are not this day made :

This day, all things begun come to ill end ;

Yea, faith itself to hollow falsehood change !

*K. Phi.* By heaven, lady, you shall have no  
cause

To curse the fair proceedings of this day :

Have I not pawn'd to you my majesty ?

*Const.* You have beguil'd me with a coun-  
terfeit,

Resembling majesty ; which, being touch'd, and

Proves valueless : You are forsworn, forsworn ;

You came in arms to spill mine enemies' blood,

But now in arms you strengthen it with your's .

The grappling vigour and rough frown of war

Is cold in amity and painted peace,

And our oppression hath made up this league :

Arm, arm, you heavens, against these perjur'd  
kings !

A widow cries ; be husband to me, heavens !

Let not the hours of this ungodly day

Wear out the day in peace ; but, ere sunset,

Set armed discord 'twixt these perjur'd kings !

Hear me, O hear me !

*Aust.* Lady Constance, peace.

*Const.* War ! war ! no peace ! peace is to me  
a war.

O Lymoges ! O Austria ! thou dost shame

That bloody spoil : Thou slave, thou wretch,

thou coward ;

Thou little valiant, great in villany !

Thou ever strong upon the stronger side !

Thou fortune's champion, that dost never fight

But when her humorous ladyship is by

To teach thee safety ! thou art perjur'd too,

And sooth'st up greatness. What a fool art  
thou !

A ramping fool ; to brag, and stamp, and swear,

Upon my party ! Thou cold-blooded slave,

Hast thou not spoke like thunder on my side ?

Being sworn my soldier ! bidding me depend

Upon thy stars, thy fortune, and thy strength ?

And dost thou now fall over to my foes ?

Thou wear a lion's hide ! doff it for shame,

And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

*Aust.* O that a man should speak those words  
to me !

*East.* And hang a calf's-skin on those re-  
creant limbs.

*Aust.* Thou dar'st not say so, villain, for thy  
life.

*East.* And hang a calf's-skin on those re-  
creant limbs.

*K. John.* We like not this ; thou dost forget  
thyself.

#### Enter PANDULPH.

*K. Phi.* Here comes the holy legate of the  
pope.

*Pand.* Hail, you anointed deputies of heaven !

To thee, king John, my holy errand is.

I Pandulph, of fair Milan cardinal,

And from pope Innocent the legate here,

Do, in his name, religiously demand,

Why thou against the church, our holy mother,

So wilfully dost spawn : and, force perforce,

Keep Stephen Langton, chosen archbishop

Of Canterbury, from that holy see ?

This, in our fore-said holy father's name,

Pope Innocent, I do demand of thee.

\* But here means except.

*K. John.* What earthly name to interrogatories,

Can task the free breath of a sacred king?  
Thou canst not, cardinal, devise a name  
So slight, unworthy, and ridiculous,  
To charge me to an answer, as the pope.  
Tell him this tale; and from the mouth of  
England,

Add thus much more,—That no Italian priest  
Shall tithe or toll in our dominions;  
But as we under heaven are supreme head,  
So, under him, that great supremacy,  
Where we do reign, we will alone uphold,  
Without the assistance of a mortal hand:  
So tell the pope; all reverence set apart,  
To him and his usurp'd authority.

*K. Phi.* Brother of England, you blasphemous  
in this.

*K. John.* Though you, and all the kings of  
Christendom,  
Are led so grossly by this meddling priest,  
Dreading the curse that money may buy out;  
And, by the merit of vile gold, dross, dust,  
Purchase corrupted pardon of a man,  
Who, in that sale, sells pardon from himself:  
Though you, and all the rest, so grossly led,  
This juggling witchcraft with revenue cherish;  
Yet I, alone, alone do me oppose  
Against the pope, and count his friends my  
foes.

*Pand.* Then, by the lawful power that I  
have,  
Thou shalt stand curs'd and excommunicate:  
And blessed shall he be, that doth revolt  
From his allegiance to an heretic;  
And meritorious shall that hand be call'd,  
Canonized, and worshipp'd as a saint,  
That takes away by any secret course  
Thy hateful life.

*Const.* O lawful let it be,  
That I have room with Rome to curse a while!  
Good father cardinal, cry thou Amen  
To my keen curses; for, without my wrong,  
There is no tongue hath power to curse him  
right.

*Pand.* There's law and warrant, lady, for my  
curse.

*Const.* And for mine too; when law can do  
no right,  
Let it be lawful that law bar no wrong:  
Law cannot give my child his kingdom here;  
For he, that holds his kingdom, holds the  
law:

Therefore, since law itself is perfect wrong,  
How can the law forbid my tongue to curse?

*Pand.* Philip of France, on peril of a curse,  
Let go the hand of that arch-heretic;  
And raise the power of France upon his head  
Unless he do submit himself to Rome.

*Lil.* Look'st thou pale, France? do not let go  
thy hand.

*Const.* Look to that, devil! lest that France  
repent,

And, by disjoining hands, hell lose a soul.

*Aust.* King Philip, listen to the cardinal.

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on his recreant  
limbs.

*Aust.* Well, ruffian, I must pocket up these  
wrongs,

Because—

*Bast.* Your breeches best may carry them.

*K. John.* Philip, what say'st thou to the car-  
dinal?

*Const.* What should he say, but as the car-  
dinal?

*Lew.* Bethink you, father; for the difference  
is, purchase of a heavy curse from Rome,  
Or the light loss of England for a friend:

Forego the easier.

*Blanch.* That's the curse of Rome.

*Const.* O Lewis, stand fast; the devil tempts  
thee here.

In likeness of a new untrimm'd \* bride.

*Blanch.* The lady Constance speaks not from  
her faith,  
But from her need.

*Const.* O if thou grant my need,  
Which only lives but by the death of faith,  
That need must needs infer this principle,—  
That faith would live again by death of need;  
O then tread down my need, and faith mounts  
up;

Keep my need up, and faith is trodden down.

*K. John.* The king is mov'd, and answers not  
to this.

*Const.* O be remov'd from him, and answer  
well.

*Aust.* Do so, king Philip; hang no more in  
doubt.

*Bast.* Hang nothing but a calf's-skin, most  
sweet lout.

*K. Phi.* I am perplex'd, and know not what  
to say.

*Pand.* What can'st thou say, but will perplex  
thee more,

If thou stand excommunicate and curs'd?

*K. Phi.* Good reverend father, make my per-  
son your's,

And tell me, how you would bestow yourself.  
This royal hand and mine are newly knit;  
And the conjunction of our inward souls  
Married in league, coupled and link'd together  
With all religious strength of sacred vows;  
The latest breath that gave the sound of words,  
Was deep-sworn faith, peace, amity, true love,  
Between our kingdoms, and our royal selves;  
And even before this truce, but new before,—  
No longer than we well could wash our hands,  
To clasp this royal bargain up of peace,—  
Heaven knows, they were besmeard and over-  
stain'd

With slaughter's pencil; where revenge did paint  
The fearful difference of incensed kings:  
And shall these hands, so lately purg'd of blood,  
So newly join'd in love, so strong in both,  
I yoke this seizure, and this kind regret? \*  
Play fast and loose with faith? so jest with  
heaven,

Make such unconstant children of ourselves,  
As now again to snatch our palm from palm;  
Unswear faith sworn; and on the marriage bed  
Of smiling peace to march a bloody host,  
And make a riot on the gentle brow  
Of true sincerity? O holy Sir,  
My reverend father, let it not be so:  
Out of your grace, devise, ordain, impose  
Some gentle order; and then we shall be  
bless'd

To do your pleasure, and continue friends.

*Pand.* All form is formless, order orderless,  
Save what is opposite to England's love.

Therefore to arms! be champion of our church!  
Or let the church, our mother, breathe her  
curse,

A mother's curse, on her revolting son.

France, thou may'st hold a serpent by the  
tongue.

A cased lion by the mortal paw,  
A fasting tiger sated by the tooth,

Thou keep in peace that hand which thou dost  
hold.

*K. Phi.* I may disjoin my hand, but not my  
faith.

*Pand.* So mak'st thou faith an enemy to  
And, like a civil war, set'st oath to oath, [faith];  
Thy tongue against thy tongue. O let thy vow  
First made to heaven, first be to heaven per-  
form'd;

That is, to be the champion of our church!  
What since thou swor'st, is sworn against thy-  
self,

And may not be performed by thyself:

For that, which thou hast sworn to do amiss,  
Is not amiss when it is truly done;

And being not done, where doing tends to ill,  
The truth is then most done not doing it:

The better act of purposes mistook  
Is, to mistake again; though indirect,  
Yet induction thereby grows direct,  
And falsehood falsehood cures; as fire cools  
fire,

Within the scorched veins of one new burn'd.  
It is religion, that doth make vows kept;  
But thou hast sworn against religion;  
By what thou swear'st, against the thing thou  
swear'st;

And mak'st an oath the surety for thy truth  
Against an oath: The truth thou art unsure  
To swear, swear only not to be forsworn;  
Else, what a mockery should it be to swear?  
But thou dost swear only to be forsworn;  
And most forsworn, to keep what thou dost  
swear.

Therefore, thy latter vows, against thy first,  
Is in thyself rebellion to thyself:  
And better conquest never can'st thou make,  
Than arm thy constant and thy nobler parts  
Against those giddy loose suggestions:  
Upon which better part our prayers come in,  
If thou vouchsafe them: but, if not, then know,  
The peril of our curses light on thee;  
So heavy, as thou shalt not shake them off,  
But, in despair, die under their black weight.

*Aust.* Rebellion, flat rebellion!

*Bast.* Will't not be?

Will not a calf's-skin stop that mouth of thine?

*Lew.* Father, to arms!

*Blanch.* Upon thy wedding day?

Against the blood that thou hast married?  
What, shall our feast be kept with slaughter'd  
men?

Shall braying trumpets, and loud charlish  
drums,—

Clamours of hell,—be measures \* to our pomp?  
O husband, hear me!—ah, alack, how new  
Is husband in my mouth!—even for that name,  
Which till this time my tongue did ne'er pro-  
nounce,

Upon my knee I beg, go not to arms  
Against mine uncle.

*Const.* O upon my knee,  
Made hard with kneeling, I do pray to thee,  
Thou virtuous Dauphin, alter not the doom  
Fore-thought by heaven.

*Blanch.* Now shall I see thy love; What mo-  
tive may

Be stronger with thee than the name of wife?

*Const.* That which upholdeth him that thee  
upholds,  
His honour: O thine honour, Lewis, thine  
honour!

*Lew.* I muse your majesty doth seem so  
cold,

When such profound respects do pull you on.

*Pand.* I will d' nounce a curse upon his head.

*K. Phil.* Thou shalt not need:—England, I'll  
fall from thee.

*Const.* O fair return of banish'd majesty!

*Eli.* O foul revolt of French inconstancy!

*K. John.* France, thou shalt rue this hour  
within this hour.

*East.* Old time the clock-setter, that bald  
sexton time.

Is it as he will? well then, France shall rue.

*Blanch.* The sun's o'ercast with blood: Fair  
day, adieu!

Which is the side that I must go withal?  
I am with both: each army hath a hand;  
And, in their rage, I having hold of both,  
They whirl asunder, and dismember me.

Husband, I cannot pray that thou may'st win;  
Uncle, I needs must pray that thou may'st  
lose;

Father, I may not wish the fortune thine;

Grandam, I will not wish thy wishes thrive:

Whoever wins, on that side shall I lose;

Assured I was, before the match be play'd.

*Lew.* Lady, with me; with me thy fortune  
lies.

*Blanch.* There where my fortune lives, there  
my life dies.

*K. John.* Cousin, go draw our puissance  
together.—[*Exit BASTARD.*]

France, I am burn'd up with inflaming wrath;  
A rage, whose heat hath this condition,  
Than nothing can allay, nothing but blood,  
The blood, and dearest-valued blood, of France.

*K. Phil.* Thy rage shall burn thee up, and  
thou shalt turn

To ashes, ere our blood shall quench that fire:  
Look to thyself, thou art in jeopardy.

*K. John.* No more than he that threatens.—To  
arms lets hie! [Exit.

#### SCENE II.—The same.—Plains near Angiers.

*Alarums, Excursions.*—Enter the BASTARD,  
with AUSTRIA's head.

*Bast.* Now, by my life, this day grows won-  
drous hot;

Some airy devil hovers in the sky,  
And pouts down mischief. Austria's head lie  
there,

While Philip breathes.

Enter King JOHN, ARTHUR, and HUBERT.

*K. John.* Hubert, keep this boy:—Philip,  
make up:

My mother is assailed in our tent,  
And ta'en, I fear.

*Bast.* My lord, I rescu'd her;  
Her highness is in safety, fear you not:

But oh, my liege: for very little pains  
Will bring this labour to a happy end.

[Exit.

#### SCENE III.—The same.

*Alarums; Excursions; Retreat.* Enter King  
JOHN, ELINOR, ARTHUR, the BASTARD, HUB-  
BERT, and Lords.

*K. John.* So shall it be; your grace shall  
stay behind, [To ELINOR.

So strongly guarded.—Cousin, look not sad:  
[To ARTHUR.

Thy grandam loves thee; and thy uncle will  
As dear be to thee as thy father was.

*Arth.* O this will make my mother die with  
grief.

*K. John.* Cousin, [To the BASTARD] away for  
England; haste before:

And, ere our coming, see thou shake the bags  
Of hoarding abbots; angels \* imprisoned

Set thou at liberty: the fat ribs of peace  
Must by the hungry now be fed upon:

Use our commission in his utmost force.

*Bast.* Bell, book, and candle shall not drive  
me back,

When gold and silver beck me to come on.

I leave your highness:—Grandam, I will pray  
(If ever I remember to be holy),

For your fair safety, so I kiss your hand.

*Eli.* Farewell, my gentle cousin.

*K. John.* Coz, farewell. [Exit BASTARD.

*Eli.* Come hither, little kinsman, hark, a  
word. [She takes ARTHUR aside.

*K. John.* Come hither, Hubert. O my gentle  
Hubert,

We owe thee much; within this wall of flesh  
There is a soul, counts thee her creditor,

And with advantage means to pay thy love:  
And, my good friend, thy voluntary oath

Lives in this bosom, dearly cherished.  
Give me thy hand. I had a thing to say,—

But I will fit it with some better time.  
By heaven, Hubert, I am almost asham'd

To say what good respect I have of thee.  
*Hub.* I am much bounden to your majesty.

*K. John.* Good friend, thou hast no cause to  
say so yet:

\* Music for dancing.

\* Gold coin.

But thou shalt have ; and creep time ne'er so slow,

Yet it shall come, for me to do thee good.

I had a thing to say,—But let it go :

The sun is in the heaven, and the proud day,

Attended with the pleasures of the world,

Is all too wanton, and too full of gawds,\*

To give me audience :—If the midnight bell

Had, with his iron tongue and brazen mouth,

Sound one unto the drowsy race of night ;

If this same were a church-yard where we stand,

And thou possessed with a thousand wrongs ;

Or if that surly spirit, melancholy,

Had bak'd thy blood, and made it heavy, thick ;

(Which, else, runs tickling up and down the veins,

Making that idiot, laughter, keep men's eyes,

And stain their cheeks to idle merriment,

A passion hateful to my purposes ;)

Or if that thou could'st see me without eyes,

Hear me without thine ears, and make reply

Without a tongue, using conceit alone,

Without eyes, ears, and harmful sound of words ;

Then, in despite of brooded watchful day,

I would into thy bosom pour my thoughts :

But ah, I will not :—Yet I love thee well ;

And, by my troth, I think thou lov'st me well.

*Hub.* So well, that what you bid me undertake,

Though that my death were adjunct to my act,

By heaven, I'd do't.

*K. John.* Do not I know, thou would'st ?

Good Hubert, Hubert, Hubert, throw thine eye

On you young boy : I'll tell thee what, my friend—

He is a very serpent in my way ;

And, whoso'er this foot of mine doth tread,

He lies before me : Dost thou understand me ?

Thou art his keeper.

*Hub.* And I will keep him so,

That he shall not offend your majesty.

*K. John.* Death.

*Hub.* My lord ?

*K. John.* A grave.

*Hub.* He shall not live.

*K. John.* Enough.

I could be merry now : Hubert, I love thee ;

Well, I'll not say what I intend for thee :

Remember.—Madaun, fare you well :

I'll send those powers o'er to your majesty.

*Hub.* My blessing go with thee !

*K. John.* For England, cousin :

Hubert shall be your man, attend on you

With all true duty.—On toward Calais, ho !

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same.*—*The French King's Tent.*

*Enter King PHILIP, LEWIS, PANDELPH, and Attendants.*

*K. Phi.* So, by a roaring tempest on the flood,

A whole armada of convicted sail

Is scatter'd and disjoin'd from fellowship.

*Pand.* Courage and comfort ! all shall yet go well.

*K. Phi.* What can go well, when we have run so ill ?

Are we not beaten ? Is not Angiers lost ?

Arthur ta'en prisoner ? divers dear friends slain ?

And bloody England into England gone,

O'erbearing interruption, spite of France ?

*Lew.* What he hath won, that hath he fortified :

So hot a speed with such advice dispos'd,

Such temperate order in so fierce a cause,

Doth want example : Who hath read, or heard,

Of any kindred action like to this ?

\* Showy ornaments.

† Conception.

*K. Phi.* Well could I bear that England had this praise,

So we could find some pattern of our shame.

*Enter CONSTANCE.*

Look, who comes here ! a grave unto a soul ;

Holding the eternal spirit against her will,

In the vile prison of afflicted breath :—

Pr'ythee, lady, go away with me.

*Const.* Lo, now I now see the issue of your peace !

*K. Phi.* Patience, good lady ! comfort, gentle Constance !

*Const.* No, I defy all counsel, all redress,

But that which ends all counsel, true redress,

Death, death :—O amiable lovely death !

Thou odoriferous stench ! sound rottenness !

Arise forth from the couch of lasting night,

Thou hate and terror to prosperity,

And I will kiss thy detestable bones ;

And put my eye-balls in thy vaulty brows ;

And ring these fingers with thy household worms ;

And stop this gap of breath with falsome dust,

And be a carrion monster like thyself :

Come, grin on me ; and I will think thou smile'st,

And bless thee as thy wife ! Misery's love,

O come to me !

*K. Phi.* O fair affliction, peace.

*Const.* No, no, I will not, having breath to cry :—

O that my tongue were in the thunder's mouth !

Then with a passion would I shake the world ;

And rouse from sleep, that fell anatomy,

Which cannot hear a lady's feeble voice,

Which scorns a modern invocation.

*Pand.* Lady, you utter madness, and not sorrow.

*Const.* Thou art not holy to belie me so ;

I am not mad : this hair I tear, is mine ;

My name is Constance ; I was Geoffrey's wife ;

Young Arthur is my son, and he is lost :

I am not mad ;—I would to heaven I were :

For then, 'tis like I should forget myself :

Oh ! if I could, what grief should I forget !—

Preach some philosophy to make me mad,

And thou shalt be canoniz'd, cardinal ;

For, being not mad, but sensible of grief,

My reasonable part produces reason.

How I may be deliver'd of these woes,

And teaches me to kill or hang myself :

If I were mad, I should forget my son ;

Or madly think, a babe of clouts were he :

I am not mad ; too well, too well I feel

The different plague of each calamity.

*K. Phi.* Bind up those tresses : O what love

I note

In the fair multitude of those her hairs !

Where but by chance a silver drop hath fallen,

Even to that drop ten thousand wily friends

Do clew themselves in sociable grief ;

Like true, inseparable, faithful loves,

Sticking together in calamity.

*Const.* To England, if you will.

*K. Phi.* Bind up your hairs.

*Const.* Yes, that I will ; and wherefore will I

do it ?

I tore them from their bonds ; and cried aloud,

O that these hands could save my son,

As they have given these hairs their liberty !

But now I envy at their liberty.

And will again commit them to their bonds,

Because my poor child is a prisoner.—

And, father cardinal, I have heard you say,

That we shall see and know our friends in

heaven :

If that be true, I shall see my boy again ;

For, since the birth of Cain, the first male child,

To him that did but yesterday suspire,

There was not such a gracious creature born.

But now will canker sorrow eat my bud,

And chase the native beauty from his cheek,

\* Common

And he will look as hollow as a ghost ;  
As dim and meagre as an ague's fit ;  
And so he'll die ; and, rising so again,  
When I shall meet him in the court of heaven  
I shall not know him : therefore never, never  
Must I behold my pretty Arthur more.

*Pand.* You hold too heliuous a respect of grief.

*Const.* He talks to me that never had a son.  
*K. Phi.* You are as fond of grief, as of your child.

*Const.* Grief fills the room of my absent child,  
Lies in his bed, walks up and down with me ;  
Puts on his pretty looks, repeats his words,  
Remembers me of all his gracious parts,  
Stuffs out his vacant garments with his form :  
Then, have I reason to be fond of grief.  
Fare you well ; had you such a loss as I,  
I could give better comfort than you do.—  
I will not keep this form upon my head,

[*Tearing off her Head-dress.*]

When there is such disorder in my wit.  
O lord, my boy, my Arthur, my fair son !  
My life, my joy, my food, my all the world !  
My widow-comfort, and my sorrows' cure !

*K. Phi.* I fear some outrage, and I'll follow her.

*Lew.* There's nothing in the world can make me joy :

Life is as tedious as a twice-told tale,  
Vexing the dull ear of a drowsy man ;  
And bitter shame hath spoil'd the sweet world's taste,  
That it yields naught, but shame and bitterness.

*Pand.* Before the curing of a strong disease,  
Even in the instant of repair and health,  
The fit is strongest ; evils, that take leave,  
On their departure most of all show evil :  
What have you lost by losing of this day ?

*Lew.* All days of glory, joy, and happiness.

*Pand.* If you have won it, certainly, you had.  
No, no : when fortune means to men most good,  
She looks upon them with a threatening eye.  
'Tis strange, to think how much King John hath lost

In this which he account's so clearly won :  
Are not you griev'd, that Arthur is his prisoner ?

*Lew.* As heartily, as he is glad he hath him.  
*Pand.* Your mind is all as youthful as your blood.

Now hear me speak, with a prophetic spirit :  
For even the breath of what I mean to speak  
Shall blow each dust, each straw, each little rub,  
Out of the path which shall directly lead  
Thy foot to England's throne ; and, therefore, mark.

John hath seiz'd Arthur ; and it cannot be,  
That, whiles warm life plays in that infant's veins,

The misplac'd John should entertain an hour,  
One minute, nay, one quiet breath of rest :  
A sceptre, snatch'd with an unruly hand,  
Must be as boisterously maintain'd as gain'd :  
And he, that stands upon a slippery place,  
Makes nice of no vile hold to stay him up :  
'Tis John may stand, then Arthur needs must fall ;

So be it, for it cannot be but so.

*Lew.* But what shall I gain by young Arthur's fall ?

*Pand.* You, in the right of lady Blanch your wife,

May then make all the claim that Arthur did.

*Lew.* And lose it, life and all, as Arthur did.  
*Pand.* How green are you, and fresh in this old world !

John lays you plots ; the times conspire with you :

For he, that steeps his safety in true blood,  
Shall find but bloody safety, and untrue.

This act, so evilly born, shall cool the hearts  
Of all his people, and freeze up their zeal ;  
That none so small advantage shall step forth,  
To check his reign, but they will cherish it :  
No natural exhalation in the sky,  
No scape of nature, no distemper'd day,  
No common wind, no custom'd event,  
But they will pluck away his natural cause,  
And call them meteors, prodigies, and signs,  
Abortives, présages and tongues of heaven,  
Plainly denouncing vengeance upon John.

*Lew.* May be, he will not touch young Arthur's life,  
But hold himself safe in his prisonment.

*Pand.* O Sir, when he shall hear of your approach,

If that young Arthur be not gone already,  
Even at that news he dies : and then the hearts  
Of all his people shall revolt from him,  
And kiss the lips of unacquainted change ;  
And pick strong matter of revolt and wrath,  
Out of the bloody fangers' ends of John.  
Methinks, I see this haily all on foot ;  
And oh ! what better matter breeds for you,  
Than I have nam'd !—The bastard Faulconbridge

Is now in England, ransacking the church,  
Offending charity : If but a dozen French  
Were there in arms, they would be as a call  
To train ten thousand English to their side ;  
Or, as a little snow, tumbled about,  
Anon becomes a mountain. O noble Dauphin,  
Go with me to the king : 'Tis wonderful,  
What may be wrought out of their discontent :  
Now that their souls are topfull of offence,  
For England go ; I will whet on the king.

*Lew.* Strong reasons make strong actions :

Let us go ;  
If you say, ay, the king will not say, no.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—Northampton.—A Room in the Castle.

*Enter HUBERT and two ATTENDANTS.*

*Hub.* Heat me these irons hot : and look thou stand

Within the arras : \* when I strike my foot  
Upon the bosom of the ground, rush forth :  
And bind the boy, which you shall find with me,

Fast to the chair : be heedful : hence, and watch.

*I Attend.* I hope your warrant will bear out the deed.

*Hub.* Uncleanly scruples ! Fear not you : look to't.—

[*Exeunt ATTENDANTS.*]

Young lad, come forth ; I have to say with you.

*Enter ARTHUR.*

*Auth.* Good morrow, Hubert.

*Hub.* Good morrow, little prince.

*Auth.* As little prince (having so great a title

To be more prince,) as may be.—You are sad.

*Hub.* Indeed, I have been merrier.

*Auth.* Mercy on me !

Methinks no body should be sad but I :  
Yet, I remember, when I was in France,  
Young gentlemen would be as sad as night,  
Only for wantonness. By my christendom,  
So I were out of prison, and kept sheep,  
I should be as merry as the day is long ;  
And so I would be here, but that I doubt  
My uncle practises more harm to me :  
He is afraid of me, and I of him :  
Is it my fault that I was Geoffrey's son ?

No, indeed, is't not; And I would to heaven,  
I were your son, so you would love me, Hu-  
bert.

*Hub.* If I talk to him, with his innocent prate  
He will awake my mercy, which lies dead:  
Therefore I will be sudden, and despatch.

*[Aside.]*  
*Arth.* Are you sick, Hubert? you look pale  
to-day:

In sooth, I would you were a little sick;  
That I might sit all night, and watch with you:  
I warrant I love you more than you do me.

*Hub.* His words do take possession of my bo-  
soun.—

Read here, young Arthur. *[Showing a paper.]*  
How now, foolish rheum! *[Aside.]*  
Turning disputeous, torture out of door!

I must be brief; lest resolution drop  
Out at mine eyes, in tender womanish tears.—  
Can you not read it? is it not fair writ?

*Arth.* Too fairly, Hubert, for so foul effect:  
Must you with hot irons burn out both mine  
eyes?

*Hub.* Young boy, I must.

*Arth.* And will you?

*Hub.* And will.

*Arth.* Have you the heart? When your head  
did but ache,

I knit my handkerchief about your brows,  
(The best I had, a princess wrought it me,)  
And I did never ask it you again;  
And with my hand at midnight held your head;  
And, like the watchful minutes to the hour,  
Still and anon cheere'd up the heavy time;  
Saying, What lack you? and, Where lies your  
grief?

Or, What good love may I perform for you?  
Many a poor man's son would have lain still,  
And ne'er have spoke a loving word to you;  
But you at your sick service had a prince.  
Nay, you may think my love was crafty love  
And call it cunning: Do, an it you will:  
If heaven be pleas'd that you must use me ill,  
Why, then you must.—Will you put out mine  
eyes?

These eyes, that never did, nor never shall,  
So much as frown on you!

*Hub.* I have sworn to do it;

And with hot irons must I burn them out.

*Arth.* Ah! none, but in this iron age, would  
do it!

The iron of itself, though heat red-hot,  
Approaching near these eyes, would drink my  
tears,

And quench his fiery indignation,  
Even in the matter of mine innocence;  
Nay, after that, consume away in rust,  
But for containing fire to harm mine eye.

Are you more stubborn-hard than hammer'd  
iron?

An if an angel should have come to me,  
And told me Hubert should put out mine eyes,  
I would not have believ'd no tongue, but Hu-  
bert's.

*Hub.* Come forth. *[Stamps.]*

*Re-enter ATTENDANTS, with Cord, Irons, &c.*

Do as I bid you do.

*Arth.* O save me, Hubert, save me! my eyes  
are out.

Even with the fierce looks of these bloody-men.  
*Hub.* Give me the iron, I say, and bind him  
here.

*Arth.* Alas, what need you be so boist'rous-  
rough?

I will not struggle, I will stand stone still.  
For heaven's sake, Hubert, let me not be  
bound!

Nay, hear me, Hubert! drive these men away,  
And I will sit as quiet as a lamb;  
I will not stir, nor wince, nor speak a word,  
Nor look upon the iron angrily:  
Thrust but these men away, and I'll forgive you,  
Whatever torment you do put me to.

*Hub.* Go, stand within; let me alone with  
him.

*1 Attend.* I am best pleas'd to be from such  
a deed. *[Exeunt ATTENDANTS.]*

*Arth.* Alas! I then have chid away my friend;  
He hath a stern look, but a gentle heart:—  
Let him come back, that his compassion may  
Give life to yours.

*Hub.* Come, boy, prepare yourself.

*Arth.* Is there no remedy?

*Hub.* None, but to lose your eyes.

*Arth.* O heaven!—that there were but a mote  
in your's,

A grain, a dust, a quail, a wand'ring hair,  
Any annoyance in that precious sense!  
Then, feeling what small things are boist'rous  
there,  
Your vile intent must needs seem horrible.

*Hub.* Is this your promise? go to, hold your  
tongue.

*Arth.* Hubert, the utterance of a brace of  
tongues

Must needs want pleading for a pair of eyes:  
Let me not hold my tongue; let me not, Hu-  
bert!

Or, Hubert, if you will, cut out my tongue,  
So I may keep mine eyes: O spare mine eyes;  
Though to no use, but still to look on you!  
Lo, by my troth, the instrument is cold,  
And would not harm me.

*Hub.* I can heat it, boy.

*Arth.* No, in good sooth; the fire is dead  
with grief.

(Being create for comfort) to be us'd  
In undeserv'd extremes: \* See else yourself;  
There is no malice in this burning coal;  
The breath of heaven hath blown his spirit out,  
And strew'd repentant ashes on his head.

*Hub.* But with my breath I can revive it, boy.

*Arth.* And if you do, you will but make it  
blush,

And glow with shame of your proceedings, Hu-  
bert:

Nay, it, perchance will sparkle in your eyes;  
And, like a dog that is compell'd to fight,  
Snatch at his master that doth tarre† him on.  
All things, that you should use to do me wrong,  
Deny their office: only you do lack.

That mercy, which fierce fire, and iron, extends,  
Creatures of note, for mercy-lacking uses.

*Hub.* Well, see to live; I will not touch thine  
eyes

For all the treasure that thine uncle owes:  
Yet am I sworn, and I did purpose, boy,  
With this same very iron to burn them out.

*Arth.* O how you look like Hubert! all this  
while

You were disguised.

*Hub.* Peace: no more. Adieu;

Your uncle must not know but you are dead:  
I'll fill these dogged spies with false reports.  
And, pretty child, sleep doubtless and secure,  
That Hubert, for the wealth of all the world,  
Will not offend thee.

*Arth.* O heaven!—I thank you, Hubert.

*Hub.* Silence; no more: Go closely in with  
me;

Much danger do I undergo for thee. *[Exeunt.]*

*SCENE II.—The same.—A Room of State in  
the Palace.*

*Enter King John, crowned; PEMBROKE, SALIS-  
BURY, and other Lords. The King takes  
his State.*

*K. John.* Here once again we sit, once again  
crown'd,

And look'd upon, I hope, with cheerful eyes.

*Pcm.* This once again, but that your highness  
pleas'd,

Was once superfluous: you were crown'd be-  
fore.

\* In cruelty I have not deserved.

† Set him on.  
2 A



And that high royalty was ne'er pluck'd off;  
The faiths of men ne'er stained with revolt;  
Fresh expectation troubled not the land,  
With any long'd-for change, or better state.

*Sal.* Therefore, to be possess'd with double pomp,

To guard \* a title that was rich before,  
To gild refined gold, to paint the lily,  
To throw a perfume on the violet,  
To smooth the ice, or add another hue  
Unto the rainbow, or with taper-light  
To seek the beauteous eye of heaven to garnish,  
Is wasteful and ridiculous excess.

*Pem.* But that your royal pleasure must be done,

This act is as an ancient tale new told;  
And, in the last repeating, troublesome,  
Being urged at a time unsavourable.

*Sal.* In this, the antique and well-noted face  
Of plain old form is much disfigured:  
And, like a shifted wind unto a sail,  
It makes the course of thoughts to fetch  
about:

Startles and frights consideration;  
Makes sound opinion sick, and truth sus-  
pected,

For putting on so new a fashion'd robe.

*Pem.* When workmen strive to do better than well,

They do confound their skill in covetousness:  
And, oftentimes, excusing of a fault,  
Doth make the fault the worse by the excuse;  
As patches, set upon a little breach,  
Discredit more in hiding of the fault  
Than did the fault before it was so patch'd.

*Sal.* To this effect, before you were new-  
crown'd,  
We breath'd our counsel: but it pleas'd your  
highness

To overbear it; and we are all well pleas'd;  
Since all and every part of what we would,  
Doth make a stand at what your highness will.

*K. John.* Some reasons of this double cor-  
ruption

I have possess'd you with, and think them  
strong;

And more, more strong, (when lesser is my  
fear,)

I shall induce you with: Mean time, but ask  
What you would have reform'd, that is not  
well,

And well shall you perceive, how willingly  
I will both hear and grant your requests.

*Pem.* Then I (as one that am the tongue of  
these,

To sound † the purposes of all their hearts,)  
Both for myself and them, (but, chief of all,  
Your safety, for the which myself and them  
Bend their best studies,) heartily request  
The enfranchisement of Arthur; whose re-  
straint

Doth move the murmuring lips of discontent  
To break into this dangerous argument,—  
If, what in rest you have, in right you hold,  
Why then your fears, (which, as they say, at-  
tend

The steps of wrong,) should move you to mew  
up

Your tender kinsman, and to choke his days  
With barbarous ignorance, and deny his youth  
The rich advantage of good exercise?  
That the time's enemies may not have this  
To grace occasions, let it be our suit,  
That you have bid us ask his liberty;  
Which for our goods we do no further ask,  
Than whereupon our weal, on you depending,  
Counts it your weal, he have his liberty.

*K. John.* Let it be so; I do commit his  
youth

*Enter HUBERT.*

To your direction.—Hubert, what news with  
you?

\* Lacc.

† Publish.

*Pem.* This is the man should do the bloody  
deed;

He show'd his warrant to a friend of mine:  
The image of a wicked heinous fault

Lives in his eye; that close aspect of his  
Does shew the mood of a much-troubled breast;  
And I do fearfully believe 'tis done,  
What we so fear'd he had a charge to do.

*Sal.* The colour of the king doth come and  
go,

Between his purpose and his conscience,  
Like heralds 'twixt two dreadful battles set:  
His passion is so ripe, it needs must break.

*Pem.* And, when it breaks, I fear will issue  
thence

The foul corruption of a sweet child's death.

*K. John.* We cannot hold mortality's strong  
hand:—

Good lords, although my will to give is living,  
The suit which you demand is gone and  
dead:

He tells us, Arthur is deceas'd to night.

*Sal.* Indeed we fear'd his sickness was past  
cure.

*Pem.* Indeed we heard how near his death he  
was,

Before the child himself felt he was sick:  
This must be answer'd, either here or hence.

*K. John.* Why do you bend such solemn  
brows on me?

Think you I hear the shears of destiny?

Have I commandment on the pulse of life?

*Sal.* It is apparent foul-play; and 'tis  
shame,

That greatness should so grossly offer it:  
So thrive it in your game! and so farewell.

*Pem.* Stay yet, lord Salisbury; I'll go with  
thee,

And find the inheritance of this poor child,  
His little kingdom of a forced grave.

That blood, which ow'd the breath of all this  
isle,

Three foot of it doth hold; Bad world the  
while!

This must not be thus borne: this will break  
out

To all our sorrows, and ere long, I doubt.

*K. John.* They burn in indignation; I re-  
pent;

There is no sure foundation set on blood;  
No certain life achiev'd by others' death.—

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

A fearful eye thou hast; Where is that blood,  
That I have seen inhabit in those cheeks?  
So foul a sky clears not without a storm:  
Pour down thy weather:—How goes all in  
France?

*Mess.* From France to England.—Never such  
a power

For any foreign preparation,  
Was levied in the body of a land!

The copy of your speed is learn'd by them;  
For, when you should be told they do prepare,  
The tidings come, that they are all arriv'd.

*K. John.* Oh! where hath our intelligence  
been drunk?

Where hath it slept? Where is my mother's  
care?

That such an army could be drawn in France,  
And she not hear of it?

*Mess.* My liege, her ear

Is stopp'd with dust; the first of April, died  
Your noble mother: And, as I hear, my lord,  
The lady Constance in a frenzy died  
Three days before: but this from rumour's  
tongue

I idly heard; if true or false, I know not.

*K. John.* Withhold thy speed, dreadful oc-  
casion!

Oh! make a league with me, till I have  
pleas'd

My discontented peers!—What! mother, dead?  
How wildly then walks my estate in France!—

Under whose conduct came these powers of France,  
That thou for truth giv'st out, are landed here?  
*Mess.* Under the Dauphin.

*Enter the BASTARD, and PETER of Pomfret.*

*K. John.* Thou hast made me giddy (world  
With these ill tidings.—Now, what says the  
To your proceedings? I do not seek to stuff  
My head with more ill news, for it is full.

*Bast.* But if you be afraid to bear the worst,  
Then let the worst, unheard, fall on your head.

*K. John.* Bear with me, cousin; For I was  
Under the tide: but now I breathe again [amaz'd  
Aloft the flood; and can give audience  
To any tongue, speak it of what it will. [men.

*Bast.* How I have sped among the clergy—  
The sums I have collected shall express.  
But as I travelled hither through the land,  
I find the people strangely fantasied;  
Possess'd with rumours, full of idle dreams;  
Not knowing what they fear, but full of fear:  
And here's a prophet, that I brought with me  
From forth the streets of Pomfret, whom I  
found

With many hundreds treading on his heels;  
To whom he sung, in rude harsh-sounding  
rhymes,

That, ere the next Ascension-day at noon,  
Your highness should deliver up your crown.

*K. John.* Thou idle dreamer, wherefore didst  
thou so?

*Peter.* Foreknowing that the truth will fall  
out so.

*K. John.* Hubert, away with him; imprison  
him:

And on that day at noon, whereon he says  
I shall yield up my crown, let him be hang'd:  
Deliver him to safety and return,  
For I must use thee.—O my gentle cousin,

[*Exit HUBERT, with PETER.*  
Hear'st thou the news abroad, who are arriv'd?

*Bast.* The French, my lord; men's mouths  
are full of it:

Besides, I met lord Bigot and lord Salisbury,  
(With eyes as red as new-enkindled fire),  
And others more, going to seek the grave  
Of Arthur, who they say, is kill'd to night  
On your suggestion.

*K. John.* Gentle kinsmen, go,  
And thrust yourself into their companies:  
I have a way to win their loves again;  
Bring them before me.

*Bast.* I will seek them out.

*K. John.* Nay, but make haste; the better  
foot before.—

O let me have no subject enemies,  
When adverse foreigners affright my towns  
With dreadful pomp of stout invasion!—  
Be Mercury, set feathers to thy heels;  
And fly, like thought, from them to me again.

*Bast.* The spirit of the time shall teach me  
speed. [*Exit.*

*K. John.* Spoke like a spritful noble gen-  
tleman.—

Go after him; for he, perhaps, shall need  
Some messenger betwixt me and the peers;  
And be thou he.

*Mess.* With all my heart, my liege. [*Exit.*

*K. John.* My mother dead!

*Re-enter HUBERT.*

*Hub.* My lord, they say five moons were  
seen to-night:

Four fixed; and the fifth did whirl about  
The other four, in wond'rous motion.

*K. John.* Five moons?

*Hub.* Old men, and beldams, in the streets  
Do prophecy upon it dangerously: [mouths:  
Young Arthur's death is common in their  
And when they talk of him, they shake their  
And whisper one another in the ear; [heads,  
And he, that speaks, doth gripe the hearer's  
wrist;

Whilst he that hears, makes fearful action,  
With wrinkled brows, with nods, with rolling  
eyes.

I saw a smith stand with his hammer, thus,  
The whilst his iron did on the anvil cool,  
With open mouth swallowing a tailor's news;  
Who, with his shears and measure in his hand,  
Standing on slippers, (which his nimble haste  
Had falsely thrust upon contrary feet.)

Told of a many thousand warlike French,  
That were embattel'd and rank'd in Kent:  
Another lean unwash'd artificer

Cuts off his tale, and talks of Arthur's death.

*K. John.* Why seek'st thou to possess me  
with these fears?

Why urgest thou so oft young Arthur's death?  
Thy hand hath murder'd him: I had mightily  
cause [him.

To wish him dead, but thou hadst none to kill  
*Hub.* Had none, my lord! why, did you not  
provoke me?

*K. John.* It is the curse of kings, to be at-  
tended [rant

by slaves, that take their humours for a war-  
To break within the bloody house of life,  
And, on the winking of authority,  
To understand a law; to know the meaning  
Of dangerous majesty when, perchance, it  
frowns

More upon humour than advis'd respect. \*

*Hub.* Here is your hand and seal for what I  
did.

*K. John.* O when the last account 'twixt  
heaven and earth

Is to be made, then shall this hand and seal  
Witness against us to damnation!

How oft the sight of means to do ill deeds,  
Makes deeds ill done! Hadest not thou been by,

A fellow by the hand of nature mark'd,  
Quoted, + and sign'd, to do a deed of shame,

This murder had not come into my mind:  
But, taking note of thy abhor'd aspect,

Finding thee fit for bloody villainy,  
Apt, liable, to be employ'd in danger,

I faintly broke with thee of Arthur's death;  
And thou, to be endear'd to a king,  
Made it no conscience to destroy a prince.

*Hub.* My lord,—  
*K. John.* Hadst thou but shook thy head, or  
made a pause,

When I spake darkly what I purpos'd;  
Or turn'd an eye of doubt upon my face,

As bid me tell my tale in express words;  
Deep shame had struck me dumb, made me  
break off, [in me:

And those thy fears might have wrought fears  
But thou didst understand me by my signs,

And didst in signs again parley with sin;  
Yea, without stop, didst let thy heart consent,

And, consequently, thy rude hand to act  
The deed which both our tongues held vile to  
name,—

Out of my sight, and never see me more!  
My nobles leave me; and my state is brav'd;  
Even at my gates, with ranks of foreign powers:

Nay, in the body of this fleshly land,  
This kingdom, this confus'd of blood and breath,  
Hostility and civil tumult reigns [death.

Between my conscience and my cousins  
*Hub.* Arm you against your other enemies,

I'll make a peace between your soul and you.  
Young Arthur is alive: This hand of mine  
Is yet a maiden and an innocent hand,

Not painted with the crimson spots of blood.  
Within this bosom never enter'd yet  
The dreadful motion of a murder's thought,  
And you have slander'd nature in my form;  
Which howsoever rude exteriorly,  
Is yet the cover of a fairer mind  
Than to be butcher of an innocent child. §

\* Deliberate consideration.

† Observed.

‡ His own body. § This is an assertion which  
his previous determination to murder the child, will  
scarcely uphold.

*K. John.* Doth Arthur live? O haste thee to the peers,  
Throw this report on their incensed rage,  
And make them tame to their obedience!  
Forgive the comment that my passion made  
Upon thy feature; for my rage was blind,  
And foul imaginary eyes of blood  
Presented thee more hideous than thou art.  
O answer not; but to my closet bring  
The angry lords, with all expedient haste;  
I conjure thee but slowly; run more fast.  
[Exit.

SCENE III.—The same.—Before the Castle.

*Enter ARTHUR, on the Walls.*

*Art.* The wall is high; and yet will I leap down:—  
Good ground, be pitiful, and hurt me not!—  
There's few, or none, do know me; if they did,  
This ship-boy's semblance hath disguis'd me  
I am afraid; and yet I'll venture it. [quite.  
If I get down, and do not break my limbs,  
I'll find a thousand shifts to get away:  
As good to die and go, as die and stay.  
[Leaps down.  
O me! my uncle's spirit is in these stones—  
Heaven take my soul, and England keep my bones! [Dies.

*Enter PEMBROKE, SALISBURY, and BIGOT.*

*Sal.* Lords, I will meet him at Saint Edmund's-Bury;  
It is our safety and we must embrace  
This gentle offer of the perilous time. [dinal?  
*Pem.* Who brought that letter from the car-  
*Sal.* The count Melun, a noble lord of France;  
Whose private with me, \* of the Dauphin's love,  
Is much more general than these lines import.  
*Big.* To-morrow morning let us meet him then.  
*Sal.* Or, rather then set forward: for 'twill be  
Two long days' journey, lords, or e'er we meet.

*Enter the BASTARD.*

*Bast.* Once more to-day well met, distemper'd lords! [straight.  
The king, by me, requests your presence  
*Sal.* The king hath dispossest himself of us;  
We will not linc his thus bestaun'd cloak  
With our pure honours, nor attend the foot  
That leaves the print of blood where-e'er it  
walks:  
Return and tell him so; we know the worst.  
*Bast.* Whate'er you think, good words, I  
think, were best. [now.  
*Sal.* Our griefs, and not our manners, reason  
*Bast.* But there is little reason in your grief;  
Therefore, 'twere reason you had manners  
now.  
*Pem.* Sir, Sir, impatience hath his privilege.  
*Bast.* 'Tis true; to hurt his master, no man  
else.  
*Sal.* This is the prison: What is he lies here?  
[Seeing ARTHUR.  
*Pam.* O death, made proud with pure and  
princely beauty!  
The earth had not a hole to hide this deed.  
*Sal.* Murder, as hating what himself hath  
Doth lay it open, to urge on revenge. [done.  
*Big.* Or, when he doom'd this beauty to a  
grave,  
Found it too precious-princely for a grave.  
*Sal.* Sir Richard, what think you? Have you  
beheld,  
Or have you read, or heard? or could you think?  
Or do you almost think, although you see,  
That you do see? could thought without this  
object,  
Form such another? This is the very top,  
The height, the crest, or crest unto the crest,

\* Private account.

\* Out of humour.

Of murder's arms: this is the bloodiest shame,  
The wildest savagery, the vilest stroke,  
That ever wall-ey'd wrath, or staring rage,  
Presented to the tears of soft remorse.\*

*Pem.* All murders past do stand excus'd in  
And this, so sole, and so unmatched, [this:  
Shall give a holliness, a purity,  
To the yet-unbought sin of time;  
And prove a deadly bloodshed but a jest,  
Exemplary by this heinous spectacle.

*Bast.* It is a damned and a bloody work;  
The graceless action of a heavy hand,  
If that it be the work of any hand.

*Sal.* If that it be the work of any hand?—  
We had a kind of light what would ensue:  
It is the shameful work of Hubert's hand;  
The practice and the purpose of the king.—  
From whose obedience I forbid my soul,  
Kneeling before this ruin of sweet life,  
And breathing to his breathless excellence  
The incense of a vow, a holy vow;  
Never to taste the pleasures of the world,  
Never to be infected with delight,  
Nor conversant with ease and idleness,  
Till I have set a glory to this hand,†  
By giving it the worship of revenge.

*Pem.* *Big.* Our souls religiously confirm thy  
words.

*Enter HUBERT.*

*Hub.* Lords, I am hot with haste in seeking  
you;  
Arthur doth live; the king hath sent for you.  
*Sal.* Oh! he is bold, and blushes not at  
death:—

Avaunt thou hateful villain, get thee gone!

*Hub.* I am no villain.

*Sal.* Must I rob the law?

[Drawing his sword.  
*Bast.* Your sword is bright, Sir: put it up  
again.

*Sal.* Not till I sheath it in a murderer's skin.

*Hub.* Stand back, lord Salisbury, stand back,  
I say; [your's:  
By heaven, I think my sword's as sharp as  
I would not have you, lord, forget yourself,  
Nor tempt the danger of my true defence;  
Lest I, by marking of your rage, forget  
Your worth, your greatness, and nobility.

*Big.* Out, dunghill! dar'st thou brave a  
nobleman?

*Hub.* Not for my life: but yet I dare defend  
My innocent life against an emperor.

*Sal.* Thou art a murderer.

*Hub.* Do not prove me so; † [false,  
Yet, I am none: Whose tongue so-e'er speaks  
Not truly speaks; who speaks not truly, lies.

*Pem.* Cut him to pieces.

*Bast.* Keep the peace, I say.

*Sal.* Stand by, or I shall gail you, Faulcon-  
bridge.

*Bast.* Thou wert better gail the devil, Salis-  
bury:

If thou but frown on me, or stir thy foot,  
Or teach thy hasty spleen to do me shame,  
I'll strike thee dead. Put up thy sword be-  
time;

Or I'll so mail you and your boasting-iron,  
That you shall think the devil is come from hell.

*Big.* What wilt thou do, renowned Faulcon-  
bridge?

Second a villain, and a murderer?

*Hub.* Lord Bigot, I am none.

*Big.* Who kill'd this prince?

*Hub.* 'Tis not an hour since I left him well:  
I honour'd him, I lov'd him; and will weep  
My date of life out, for his sweet life's loss.

*Sal.* Trust not those cunning waters of his  
eyes,

For villany is not without such rheum;  
And he long traded in it, makes it seem

\* Pity. † Hand should be head; a glory is the  
circle of rays which surrounds the heads of saints in  
pictures. ‡ By compelling me to kill you.

Like rivers of remorse, and innocence.  
Away with me, all you whose souls abhor  
The uncleanly savours of a slaughter-house,  
For I am stilled with this smell of sin.

*Big.* Away, toward Bury, to the Dauphin  
there!

*Pem.* There, tell the king, he may inquire us  
out. *[Exit Lords.]*

*Bast.* Here's a good world!—Knew you of  
this fair work?

Beyond the infinite and boundless reach  
Of mercy, if thou didst this deed of death,  
Art thou damn'd, Hubert.

*Hub.* Do but hear me, Sir.

*Bast.* Ha! I'll tell thee what;  
Thou art damn'd as black—nay, nothing is so  
black;

Thou art more deep damn'd than prince Lu-  
cifer:

There is not yet so ugly a fiend of hell  
As thou shalt be, if thou didst kill this child.

*Hub.* Upon my soul,—

*Bast.* It thou didst but consent  
To this most cruel act, do but despair,  
And, if thou want'st a cord, the smallest thread  
That ever spider twisted from her womb  
Will serve to strangle thee; a rush will be  
A beam to hang thee on; or would'st thou  
drown thyself,

Put but a little water in a spoon,  
And it shall be as all the ocean,  
Enough to stifle such a villain up.—  
I do suspect thee very grievously.

*Hub.* If I in act, consent, or sin of thought,  
Be guilty of the stealing that sweet breath  
Which was embowelled in this beautiful clay.  
Let hell want pains enough to torture me!  
I left him well.

*Bast.* Go, bear him in thine arms.—  
I am amaz'd, methinks; and lose my way  
Among the thorns and dangers of this world.—  
How easy dost thou take all England up!  
From teeth this morsel of dead royalty!  
The life, the right, and truth of all this realm  
Is fled to heaven; and England now is left  
To tug and scramble, and to part by the teeth  
The unwearied interest of proud-swelling state.  
Now, for the bare-pick'd bone of majesty,  
Doth dogged war bristle his angry crest,  
And snarlth in the gentle eyes of peace:  
Now powers from home, and discontents at  
home,

Meet in one line; and vast confusion waits  
(As doth a raven on a sick-fallen beast,)  
The imminent decay of wrested pomp.  
Now happy he, whose cloak and cincture can  
Hold out this tempest. Bear away that child,  
And follow me with speed; I'll to the king:  
A thousand businesses are brief in hand,  
And heaven itself doth frown upon the land.

*[Exit.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—The same—A Room in the Pa-  
lace.

*Enter King JOHN, PANDULF with the Crown,  
and Attendants.*

*K. John.* Thus have I yielded up into your  
hand

The circle of my glory.

*Pand.* Take again

From this my hand, as holding of the pope,  
Your sovereign greatness and authority.

*K. John.* Now keep your holy word: go meet  
the French;

And from His Holiness use all your power  
To stop their marches, 'fore we are inflam'd.  
Our discontented counties do revolt;  
Our people quarrel with obedience;

\* Unsworn.

† Girdle.

Swearing allegiance and the love of soul,  
To stranger blood, to foreign royalty.  
This inundation of mistemper'd humour  
Re ts by you only to be quailed.  
Then pause not; for the present time's so sick,  
That present medicine must be minister'd,  
Or overthrow incurable ensues.

*Pand.* It was my breath that blew this tem-  
pest up,

Upon your stubborn usage of the pope:  
But, since you are a gentle convertite,\*  
My tongue shall hush again this storm of war,  
And make fair weather in your blustering land.  
On this Ascension-day, remember well,  
Upon your oath of service to the pope,  
Go I to make the French lay down their arms.

*[Exit.]*

*K. John.* Is this Ascension-day? Did not the  
prophet †

Say, that, before Ascension-day at noon,  
My crown I should give off? Even so I have:  
I did suppose, it should be on constraint;  
But, heaven be thank'd, it is but voluntary.

*Enter the BASTARD.*

*Bast.* All Kent hath yielded; nothing there  
holds out,

But Dover castle: London hath receiv'd,  
Like a kind host, the Dauphin and his powers:  
Your nobles will not hear you, but are gone  
To offer service to your enemy;  
And wild amazement hurries up and down  
The little number of your doubtful friends.

*K. John.* Would not my lords return to me  
again,

After they heard young Arthur was alive †

*Bast.* They found him dead, and cast into  
the streets;

An empty casket, where the jewel of life  
By some damn'd hand was robb'd and ta'en  
away.

*K. John.* That villain Hubert told me he did  
live.

*Bast.* So, on my soul, he did, for aught he  
knew.

But wherefore do you droop? why look you sad?  
Be great in act, as you have been in thought;  
Let not the world see fear and sad distrust  
Govern the motion of a kingly eye:  
Be stirring as the time; be fire with fire;  
Threaten the threat'ner, and outface the brow  
Of bragging horror: so shall inferior eyes,  
That borrow their behaviours from the great  
Grow great by your example, and put on  
The dauntless spirit of resolution.

Away; and glisten like the god of war,  
When he intendeth to become the field:  
Show boldness, and aspiring confidence.  
What, shall they seek the lion in his den,  
And fright him there? and make him tremble  
there?

O let it not be said!—Forage, and run  
To meet displeasure further from the doors;  
And grapple with him, ere he come so nigh.

*K. John.* The legate of the pope hath been  
with me,

And I have made a happy peace with him;  
And he hath promis'd to dismiss the powers  
Led by the Dauphin.

*Bast.* O inglorious league!

Shall we, upon the footing of our land,  
Send fair-play orders, and make compromise  
Insinuation, parley, and base truce,  
To arms invasive? shall a beardless boy,  
A cocker'd †; silken wanton brave our fields  
And flesh his spirit in a warlike soil,  
Mocking the air with colours idly spread,  
And find no check? Let us, my liege, to arms:  
Perchance, the cardinal cannot make your  
peace!

Or if he do, let it at least be said  
They saw we had a purpose of defence.

\* Convert.

† This man was dragged at  
horses' tails to the town of Wareham, and there hanged  
on a gibbet with his son.—*Ham.*

‡ Foulled.

*K. John.* Have thou the ordering of this present time.

*Bast.* Away then, with good courage; yet I know,  
Our party may well meet a prouder foe.

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE II.—A Plain near St. Edmund's-Bury.*

*Enter, in arms, Lewis, Salisbury, Melun, Pembroke, Bagot, and Soldiers.*

*Lew.* My lord Melun, let this be copied out,  
And keep it safe for our remembrance:  
Return the precedent to these lords again;  
That, having our fair order written down,  
Both they and we, perusing o'er these notes,  
May know wherefore we took the sacrament,  
And keep our faiths firm and inviolable.

*Sal.* Upon our sides it never shall be broken.  
And, noble Dauphin, albeit we swear  
A voluntary zeal, and unurg'd faith,  
To your proceedings; yet, believe me, prince,  
I am not glad that such a sore of time  
Should seek a plaster by contemn'd revolt,  
And heal the inveterate canker of one wound,  
By making many: Oh! it grieves my soul,  
That I must draw this metal from my side  
To be a widow-maker; Oh! and there,  
Where honourable rescue and defence,  
Cries out upon the name of Salisbury:  
But such is the infection of the time,  
That, for the health and physic of our right,  
We cannot deal but with the very hand  
Of stern injustice and confused wrong.—  
And is't not pity, O my griev'd friends!  
That we, the sons and children of this isle,  
Were born to see so sad an hour as this;  
Wherein we step after a stranger march  
Upon her gentle bosom, and fill up [weep  
Her enemies' ranks, (I must withdraw and  
Upon the spot of this enforced cause,  
To grace the gentry of a land remote,  
And follow unacquainted colours here?  
What, here?—O nation, that thou could'st remove!

That Neptune's arms, who clippeth thee about,  
Would bear thee thence from the knowledge of thyself,

And grapple thee unto a pagan shore;  
Where these two Christian armies might combat  
The blood of malice in a vein of league, [bine  
And not to spend it so unneighbourly!

*Lew.* A noble temper dost thou show in this;  
And great affections, wrestling in thy bosom,  
Do make an earthquake of nobility.  
Oh! what a noble combat hast thou fought,  
Between compulsion, and a brave respect! \*  
Let me wipe off this honourable dew,  
That silverly doth progress on thy cheeks;  
My heart hath melted at a lady's tears,  
Being an ordinary inundation!  
But this effusion of such manly drops,  
This shower, blown up by tempest of the soul,  
Startles mine eyes, and makes me more amaz'd  
Than I had seen the vaulty top of heaven  
Flur'd quite o'er with burning meteors.  
Lift up thy brow, renowned Salisbury,  
And with a great heart heave away this storm.  
Commend these waters to those baby eyes,  
That never saw the giant world enrag'd;  
Nor met with fortune other than at feasts,  
Full warm of blood, of mirth, of gossiping.  
Come, come! for thou shalt thrust thy hand as deep

Into the purse of rich prosperity,  
As Lewis himself:—so, nobles, shall you all,  
That knit your sinews to the strength of mine.

*Enter PANDULPH, attended.*

And even there, methinks, an angel spake:  
Look where the holy legate comes apace,

\* Love of country.

To give us warrant from the hand of Heaven  
And on our actions set the name of right,  
With holy breath.

*Pand.* Hail, noble prince of France!  
The next is this,—king John hath reconcil'd  
Himself to Rome; his spirit is come in,  
That so stood out against the holy church,  
The great metropolis and see of Rome:  
Therefore thy threatening colours now wind up,  
And tame the savage spirit of wild war;  
That, like a lion foster'd up at hand,  
It may be gently at the foot of peace,  
And be no further harmful than in show.

*Lew.* Your grace shall pardon me, I will not  
back

I am too high-born to be property'd,\*  
To be a secondary at control,  
Or useful serving-man, and instrument,  
To any sovereign state throughout the world.  
Your breath first kindled the dead coal of wars,  
Between this chaste'd kingdom and myself,  
And brought in matter that should should feed  
this fire;

And now 'tis far too huge to be blown out  
With that same weak wind which enkindled it.  
You taught me how to know the face of right,  
Acquainted me with interest to this land,  
Yea, thrust this enterprize into my heart;  
And come you now to tell me, John hath made  
his peace with Rome? What is that peace to  
me?

I, by the honour of my marriage-bed,  
After young Arthur, claim this land for mine;  
And, now it is half-conquer'd, must I back,  
Because that John hath made his peace with  
Rome?

Am I Rome's slave? What penny hath Rome  
borne,

What men provided, what munition sent,  
To underprop this action? Is't not I,  
That undergo this charge? Who else but I,  
And such as to my claim are liable,  
Sweat in this business, and maintain this war?  
Have I not heard these islanders shout out,  
*'Vive le roy'* as I have bank'd their towns?  
Have I not here the best cards for the game,  
To win this easy match play'd for a crown?  
And shall I now give o'er the yielded set?  
No, on my soul, it never shall be said.

*Pand.* You look but on the outside of this  
work.

*Lew.* Outside or inside, I will not return  
Till my attempt so much be glorified  
As to my ample hope was promised  
Before I drew this gallant head of war,  
And cull'd these fiery spirits from the world,  
To outlook conquest, and to win renown  
Even in the jaws of danger and of death.—

[*Trumpet sounds.*]

What lusty trumpet thus doth summon us?

*Enter the BASTARD attended.*

*Bast.* According to the fair play of the  
world,

Let me have audience; I am sent to speak:—  
My holy lord of Milan, from the king  
I come, to learn how you have dealt for him;  
And, as you answer, I do know the scope  
And warrant limited unto my tongue.

*Pand.* The Dauphin is too wilful-opposite,  
And will not temporize with my entreaties;  
He flatly says, he'll not lay down his arms.

*Bast.* By all the flood that ever fury breath'd,  
The youth says well:—Now hear our English  
king;

For thus his royalty doth speak to me.  
He is prepar'd; and reason too, he should:  
This apish and unmannerly approach,  
This harness'd masque, and unadvised revel,  
This unbar'd sauciness, and boyish troops,  
The king doth smile at; and is well prepar'd  
To whip this dwarfish war, these pigmy arms,  
From out the circle of his territories.

\* Appropriated.

† Leap over the hatch.

That hand, which had the strength, even at your door,

To engulge you, and make you take the hatch ; \*  
To dive, like buckets, in concealed wells ;  
To crouch in litter of your stable planks ;  
To lie, like pawns, lock'd up in chests and trunks ;

To hug with swine ; to seek sweet safety out  
In vaults and prisons ; and to thrill, and shake,  
Even at the crying of your nation's crow, †  
Thinking his voice an armed Englishman ;—  
Shall that victorious hand be feebled here,  
That in your chambers gave you chastisement ?  
No : Know, the gallant monarch is in arms ;  
And like an eagle o'er his aeric towers,  
To souse annoyance that comes near his nest.—  
And you degenerate, you ingrate revolts,  
You bloody Neros, ripping up the womb  
Of your dear mother England, blush for shame :  
For your own ladies, and pale visag'd maids,  
Like Amazons, come tripping after drums ;  
Their thimbles into armed gauntlets change,  
Their needles ‡ to lances, and their gentle hearts  
To fierce and bloody inclination.

*Lew.* There end thy brave, § and turn thy face in peace ;

We grant thou canst outcold us : fare thee  
We hold our time too precious to be spent  
With such a brabblor.

*Pand.* Give me leave to speak.

*Bast.* No, I will speak.

*Lew.* We will attend to neither :—  
Strike up the drums ; and let the tongue of war  
Plead for our interest, and our being here.

*Bast.* Indeed, your drums, being beaten, will cry out ;

And so shall you, being beaten : Do but start  
And echo with the clamour of thy drum,  
And even at hand a drum is ready brad'd,  
That shall reverberate all as loud as thine ;  
Sound but another, and another shall  
As loud as thine, rattle the welkin's ear, (hand  
And mock the deep-mouth'd thunder : for at  
(Not trusting to this halting legate here,  
Whom he hath us'd rather for sport than need,)  
Is warlike John ; and in his forehead sits  
A bare-ribb'd death, whose office is this day  
To feast upon whole thousands of the French.

*Lew.* Strike up our drums, to find this danger out.

*Bast.* And thou shalt find it, Dauphin, do not doubt. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—The same.—A Field of Battle.

Alarums.—Enter King JOHN and HUBERT.

*K. John.* How goes the day with us ? O tell me, Hubert.

*Hub.* Badly, I fear : How fares your majesty ?

*K. John.* This fever, that hath troubled me so long,  
Lies heavy on me ; O my heart is sick !

Enter a MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My lord, your valiant kinsman, Faulconbridge,

Desires your majesty to leave the field ;  
And send him word by me, which way you go.

*K. John.* Tell him, toward Swinestead, to the abbey there.

*Mess.* Be of good comfort ; for the great supply,

That was expected by the Dauphin here,  
Are wreck'd three nights ago on Godwin sands.  
This news was brought to Richard but even now ;  
The French fight coldly, and retire themselves.

*K. John.* Ah me ! this tyrant fever burns me up,  
And will not let me welcome this good news.—  
Set on toward Swinestead : to my litter straight ;  
Weakness possesseth me, and I am faint.

[Exeunt.]

\* Leap over the hatch.

† The crowing of a cock.

‡ Needles.

§ Boast.

SCENE IV.—The same.—Another part of the same.

Enter SALISBURY, PEMBROKE, BIGOT, and others.

*Sal.* I did not think the king so stored with friends.

*Pem.* Up once again ; put spirit in the French ;  
If they miscarry, we miscarry too.\*

*Sal.* That misbegotten devil, Faulconbridge,  
In spite of spite, alone upholds the day.

*Pem.* They say, king John, sore sick, hath left the field.

Enter MELUN wounded, and led by Soldiers.

*Mel.* Lead me to the revolts of England here.  
*Sal.* When we were happy, we had other names.

*Pem.* It is the count Melun.

*Sal.* Wounded to death.

*Mel.* Fly, noble English, you are bought and  
Unthread the rude eye of rebellion, [sold ;  
And welcome home again discarded faith.

Seek out king John, and fall before his feet ;  
For, if the French be lords of this loud day,  
He † means to recompense the pains you take,  
By cutting off your heads : Thus hath he sworn,  
And I with him, and many more with me  
Upon the altar at Saint Edmund's-Bury ;  
Even on that altar, where we swore to you  
Dear amity and everlasting love.

*Sal.* May this be possible ? may this be true ?  
*Mel.* Have I not hideous death within my  
Retaining but a quantity of life : [view,  
Which bleeds away, even as a form of wax  
Resolved from his figure 'gainst the fire ? ‡  
What in the world should make me now deceive,  
Since I must lose the use of all deceit ?  
Why should I then be false ; since it is true  
That I must die here, and live hence by truth ?  
I say again, if Lewis do win the day,  
He is forsworn, if e'er those eyes of yours  
Behold another day break in the east : [breath  
But even this night,—whose black contagious  
Already smokes about the burning crest  
Of the old, feeble, and day-wearied sun,—  
Even this ill night, your breathing shall expire ;  
Paying the fine of rated treachery.  
Even with a treacherous fine of all your lives,  
If Lewis by your assistance win the day.  
Commend me to one Hubert, with your king ;  
The love of him,—and this respect besides,  
For that my grandsire was an Englishman,—  
Awakes my conscience to confess all this.  
In lieu whereof, I pray you, bear me hence  
From forth the noise and rumour of the field ;  
Where I may think the remnant of my thoughts  
In peace and part this body and my soul  
With contemplation and devout desires.

*Sal.* We do believe thee,—And besrew me  
But I do love the favour and the form [soul  
Of this most fair occasion, by the which  
We will untread the steps of damned flight ;  
And like a bated and retired flood,  
Leaving our rankness and irregular course,  
Stoop low within those bounds we have o'er-  
And calmly run on in obedience. [look'd,  
Even to our ocean, to our great king John.—  
My arm shall give thee help to bear thee hence ;  
For I do see the cruel pangs of death [sight ;  
Right § in thine eye.—Away, my friends ! New  
And happy newness, ¶ that intends old right.

[Exeunt, leading off MELUN.]

SCENE V.—The same.—The French Camp.

Enter LEWIS and his Train.

*Lew.* The sun of heaven, methought, was  
Loath to set ;

\* Pembroke was not amongst the revolvers : He  
maintained his loyalty unshaken, during the lowest  
fortune of the king. —Hume.

† An allusion to the images made by witches.  
‡ Immediate.

§ Innovation.

But stay'd, and made the western welkin blush,  
When the English meaur'd backward their own  
In faint retire : O bravely came we off, [ground,  
When with a valley of our needless shot,  
After such bloody toil, we bid good night ;  
And wound our tatter'd colours clearly up,  
Last in the field, and almost lords of it !

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Where is my prince the Dauphin ?

*Lew.* Here :—What news ?

*Mess.* The count Melan is slain ; the English lords,

By his persuasion, are again fallen off : [long,  
And your supply, which you have wish'd so  
Are cast away, and sunk, on Godwin sands.

*Lew.* Ah ! foul shrewd news !—Beshrew thy very heart !

I did not think to be so sad to-night,  
As this hath made me.—Who was he, that said  
King John did fly, an hour or two before  
The stumbling night did part our weary powers ?

*Mess.* Whoever spoke it, it is true, my lord.

*Lew.* Well ; keep good quarter and good care  
The day shall not be up so soon as I, [to-night ;  
To try the fair adventure of to-morrow.

[*Exeunt.*

*SCENE VI.—An open Place in the Neighbourhood of Swinstead-Abbey.*

*Enter the BASTARD and HUBERT, meeting.*

*Hub.* What's there ? speak, ho ! speak quickly, or I shoot.

*Bast.* A friend :—What art thou ?

*Hub.* Of the part of England.

*Bast.* Whither dost thou go ?

*Hub.* What's that to thee ? Why may not I demand

Of thine affairs, as well as thou of mine ?

*Bast.* Hubert, I think.

*Hub.* Thou hast a perfect thought :

I will upon all hazards, well believe  
Thou art my friend, that know'st my tongue so  
Who art thou ? [well :

*Bast.* Who thou wilt : an if thou please,  
Thou may'st befriend me so much, as to think  
I come one way of the Plantagenets.

*Hub.* Unkind remembrance ! thou, and eyeless night, [me,

Have done me shame :—Brave soldier, pardon  
That any accent, breaking from thy tongue,  
Should 'scape the true acquaintance of mine ear.

*Bast.* Come, come ; sans compliment, what news abroad ?

*Hub.* Why, here walk I, in the black brow  
To find you out.

*Bast.* Brief, then ; and what's the news ?

*Hub.* O my sweet Sir, news fitting to the night,  
Black, fearful, comfortless, and horrible.

*Bast.* Show me the very wound of this ill news ;

I am no woman, I'll not swoon at it.

*Hub.* The king, I fear, is poison'd by a monk :  
I left him almost speechless, and broke out  
To acquaint you with this evil : that you might  
The better arm you to the sudden time,  
Than if you had at leisure known of this.

*Bast.* How did he take it ? who did taste to him ?

*Hub.* A monk, I tell you ; a resolved villain,  
Whose bowels suddenly burst out : the king  
Yet speaks, and peradventure, may recover.

*Bast.* Who didst thou leave to tend his majesty ?

*Hub.* Why, know you not ? the lords are all come back,

And brought prince Henry in their company ;  
At whose request the king hath pardon'd them,  
And they are all about his majesty.

• Innovation.

*Bast.* Withhold thine indignation, mighty heaven,

And tempt us not to hear above our power !—  
I'll tell thee, Hubert, half my power this night,  
Passing these flats, are taken by the tide,  
These Lincoln washes have devoured them ; \*  
Myself, well-mounted, hardly have escap'd.  
Away, before I conduct me to the king ;  
I doubt, he will be dead, or ere I come.

[*Exeunt.*

*SCENE VII.—The Orchard of Swinstead-Abbey.*

*Enter Prince HENRY, SALISBURY, and BIGOT.*

*P. Hen.* It is too late ; the life of all his blood

Is touch'd corruptibly ; and his pure brain  
(Which some suppose the soul's frail dwelling-house,)

Doth, by the idle comments that it makes,  
Foretell the ending of mortality.

*Enter PEMBROKE.*

*Pem.* His highness yet doth speak ; and holds belief,

That, being brought into the open air,

It would allay the burning quality

Of that fell poison which assaileth him.

*P. Hen.* Let him be brought into the orchard here.—

Doth he still rage ? [Exit BIGOT.

*Pem.* He is more patient,

Than when you left him ; even now he sung.

*P. Hen.* O vanity of sickness ! fierce extremes,

In their continuance, will not feel themselves.

Death, having prey'd upon the outward parts,  
Leaves them insensible ; and his siege is now

Against the mind, the which he picks and wounds

With many legions of strange fantasies ;  
Which, in their throng and press to that last hold,

Confound themselves. 'Tis strange, that death should sing.—

I am the cygnet to this pale faint swan,  
Who chants a doleful hymn to his own death ;

And, from the organ-pipe of frailty, sings  
His soul and body to their lasting rest.

*Sal.* Be of good comfort, prince ; for you are born

To set a form upon that indigest

Which he hath left so shapeless and so rude.

*Re-enter BIGOT and Attendants, who bring in King JOHN in a Chair.*

*K. John.* Aye, marry, now my soul hath elbow-room ;

It would not out at windows, nor at doors,  
There is so hot a summer in my bosom,

That all my bowels crumble up to dust :  
I am a scribbled form, drawn with a pen

Upon a shrinkup ; and against this fire  
Do I shrink up.

*P. Hen.* How fares your majesty ?

*K. John.* Poison'd,—ill-fare ;—dead, forsook, cast off ;

And none of you will bid the winter come,  
To thrust his icy fingers in my maw ;

Nor let my kingdom's rivers take their course  
Through my burn'd bosom ; nor entreat the north

To make his bleak winds kiss my parched lips,  
And comfort me with cold :—I do not ask you much ;

I beg cold comfort ; and you are so strait,  
And so ingrateful, you deny me that,

*P. Hen.* O that there were some virtue in my tears,

That might relieve you !

• This occurred to King John himself.

*K. John.* The salt in them is hot.—  
Within me is a hell; and there the poison  
Is, as a fiend, confin'd to tyrannize  
On unreprieveable condemn'd blood.

*Enter the BASTARD.*

*Bast.* Oh! I am scalded with my violent  
motion,  
And spleen of speed to see your majesty.

*K. John.* O cousin, thou art come to set  
mine eye:

The tackle of my heart is crack'd and burn'd;  
And all the shrouds, wherewith my life should  
sail,

Are turned to one thread, one little hair:  
My heart hath one poor string to stay it by,  
Which holds but till thy news be uttered:  
And then all this thou see'st, is but a clod,  
And module of confounded royalty.

*Bast.* The Dauphin is preparing hitherward;  
Where, heaven he knows, how we shall answer  
him:

For, in a night, the best part of my power,  
As I upon advantage did remove,  
Were, in the washes, all unwarily,  
Devoured by the unexpected flood.

*[The King dies.]*

*Sal.* You breathe these dead news in as dead  
an ear.—

My liege! my lord!—But now a king,—now  
thus.

*P. Hen.* Even so must I run on, and even so  
stop.

What surety of the world, what hope, what  
stay,

When this was now a king, and now is clay!

*Bast.* Art thou gone so? I do but stay be-  
hind.

To do the office for thee of revenge; [heaven,  
And then my soul shall wait on thee to  
As it on earth hath been thy servant still.—

Now, now, you stars, that move in your right  
spheres, [faiths;

Where be your powers? Show now your mended  
And instantly return with me again,

To push destruction and perpetual shame  
Out of the weak-door of our fainting land:

Straight let us seek, or straight we shall be  
sought;

The Dauphin rages at our very heels.

*Sal.* It seems you know not then so much  
as we:

The cardinal Pandolph is within at rest,  
Who half an hour since came from the Dau-  
phin;

And brings from him such offers of our peace  
As we with honour and respect may take,  
With purpose presently to leave this war.

*Bast.* He will the rather do it, when he sees  
Ourselves well sinew'd to our defence.

*Sal.* Nay, it is in a manner done already;

For many carriages he hath despatch'd  
To the sea-side, and put his cause and quarrel  
To the disposing of the cardinal:

With whom yourself, myself, and other lords,  
If you think meet, this afternoon will post  
To consummate this business happily.

*Bast.* Let it be so;—And you, my noble  
prince,

With other princes that may best be spar'd,  
Shall wait upon your father's funeral.

*P. Hen.* At Worcester\* must his body be in-  
terr'd;

For so he will'd it.

*Bast.* Thither shall it then,  
And happily may your sweet self put on  
The lineal state and glory of the land!

To whom, with all submission, on my knee,  
I do bequeath my faithful services

And true subjection everlastingly.

*Sal.* And the like tender of our love we  
make,

To rest without a spot for evermore.

*P. Hen.* I have a kind soul, that would give  
you thanks,

And knows not how to do it, but with tears.

*Lust.* O let us pay the time but needful  
woe,

Since it hath been beforehand with our griefs.—  
This England never did, (nor never shall,)

Lie at the proud foot of a conqueror,  
But when it first did help to wound itself.

Now these her princes are come home again,  
Come the three corners of the world in arms,

And we shall shock them: Nought shall make  
us rue,

If England to itself do rest but true. *[Exeunt.]*

\* A stone coffin, containing the body of King John  
was discovered in Worcester cathedral, July 17, 1797.



THE  
LIFE AND DEATH  
OF  
KING RICHARD II.

---

LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE action of this drama comprises little more than the two last years of King Richard's reign. It commences with Bolinbroke's accusation of treason against Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, in 1398, and terminates with the murder of Richard at Pomfret Castle, about the year 1400. Shakspeare wrote the play in 1597, deriving his materials chiefly from Holinshed's Chronicle, many passages of which, he has almost literally embodied with his own. The speech of the Bishop of Carlisle, in defence of King Richard's unspeakable right, and immunity from human jurisdiction, is particularly copied from that old writer. The historical points of the tragedy are consequently accurate; for notwithstanding the Lancastrian prejudices of those who have recorded his reign, Richard was a weak prince, and unfit for government. He had capacity enough, but no solid judgment, nor good education: he was violent in temper, profuse in expence, fond of idle show, devoted to favourites, and addicted to low society. Yet his punishment outbalanced his offence. Dr. Johnson has remarked of this play, that it cannot be said "much to affect the passions, or enlarge the understanding," but it is impossible to contemplate the abject degradation of the unfortunate monarch, as drawn by the poet, without questioning the truth and judgment of this critical rescript. In dignity of thought and fertility of expression, it is certainly superior to many of Shakspeare's productions, however it may yield to them in attractive incident or highly-wrought catastrophe. Yet where can we find a combination of circumstances more truly pathetic, than those with which Shakspeare has surrounded the short career of Richard, from his landing in Wales, to his murder at Pomfret. If the bitterness of his sorrow when deserted by his friends, and bearded by his barons--if the lowliness and patience of his carriage, whilst exposed to the insults of the rabble, and greeted with the mockery of homage by his aspiring rival--if the majesty of his sentiments, soaring above conscious helplessness or constitutional imbecility--and if his heroic resistance when despatched by his savage assailants--are not calculated to "affect the passions, or enlarge the understanding," there is no dramatic portraiture that is capable of doing so.

---

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING RICHARD THE SECOND.	LORD ROSS.
EDMUND OF LANGLAY, <i>Duke of York,</i>	LORD WILLOUGHBY.
JOHN OF GAUNT, <i>Duke of Lancaster,</i>	LORD FITZWATER.
HENRY, <i>surnamed Bolingbroke, Duke of Hereford, Son to John of Gaunt; afterwards King Henry IV.</i>	BISHOP OF CARLISLE.
DUKE OF AUMERLE, <i>Son to the Duke of York.</i>	ABBOT OF WESTMINSTER.
MOWBRAY, <i>Duke of Norfolk.</i>	LORD MARSHAL; and another Lord.
DUKE OF SURREY.	SIR PIERCE OF EXTON.
EARL OF SALISBURY.	SIR STEPHEN SCROOP.
EARL BERKLEY.	<i>Captain of a Band of Welshmen.</i>
BUSHY,	QUEEN to King Richard.
BAGOT,	DUCHESS OF GLOSTER.
GREEN,	DUCHESS OF YORK.
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND.	LADY attending on the Queen.
HENRY PERCY, his Son.	Lords, Herald, Officers, Soldiers, two Gardeners, Keeper, Messenger, Groom, and other Attendants.

SCENE, dispersedly in England, and Wales.

---

ACT I.

SCENE I.—London.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter King RICHARD, attended; JOHN of GAUNT, and other Nobles, with him.*

*K. Rich.* Old John of Gaunt, time honour'd Lancaster,

Hast thou, according to thy oath and hand,\*  
Brought hither Henry Hereford thy bold son;  
Here to make good the boisterous late appeal,  
Which then our leisure would not let us hear,  
Against the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray?

\* Bond,

*Gaunt.* I have, my liege.

*K. Rich.* Tell me moreover, hast thou sounded him,

If he appeal the Duke on ancient malice;  
Or worthily as a good subject should,  
On some known ground of treachery in him?

*Gaunt.* As near as I could sift him on that argument,—

On some apparent danger seen in him,  
Aim'd at your highness, no inveterate malice.

*K. Rich.* Then call them to our presence;  
face to face,

And frowning brow to brow, ourselves will hear  
The accuser, and the accused, freely speak :—  
[*Exeunt some Attendants.*]

High-stomach'd are they both, and full of ire,  
In rage deaf as the sea, hasty as fire.

*Re-enter Attendants, with BOLINGBROKE and NORFOLK.*

*Boling.* May many years of happy days befall

My gracious sovereign, my most loving liege!

*Nor.* Each day still better other's happiness;  
Until the heavens, envying earth's good hap,  
Add an immortal title to your crown!

*K. Rich.* We thank you both: yet one but flatters us,

As well appeareth by the cause you come;  
Namely, to appeal\* each other of high treason.—

Consist of Hereford, what dost thou object  
Against the Duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray?

*Boling.* First, (heaven be the record of my speech!)

In the devotion of a subject's love,  
Tendering the precious safety of my prince,  
And free from other misbegotten hate,

Come I appellant to this princely presence.—

Now, Thomas Mowbray, do I turn to thee,  
And mark my greeting well; for what I speak,  
My body shall make good upon this earth,  
Or my divine soul answer it in heaven.

Thou art a traitor, and a miscreant;  
Too good to be so, and too bad to live;  
Since, the more fair and crystal is the sky,  
The uglier seem the clouds that in it fly.

Once more, the more to aggravate the note,  
With a foul traitor's name stuff I thy throat;  
And wish, (so please my sovereign,) ere I move,  
What my tongue speaks, my right-drawn sword  
may prove.

*Nor.* Let not my cold words here accuse my zeal;

'Tis not the trial of a woman's war  
(The bitter clamour of two eager tongues)  
Can arbitrate this cause betwixt us twain:  
The blood is hot, that must be cool'd for this,  
Yet can I not of such tame patience boast,  
As to be hush'd, and naught at all to say:  
First, the fair reverence of your highness curbs me

From giving reins and spurs to my free speech;  
Which else would post until it had return'd  
These terms of treason doubled down his throat.

Setting aside his high blood's royalty,  
And let him be no kinsman to my liege.  
I do defy him, and I spit at him;

Call him—a slanderous coward, and a villain;  
Which to maintain, I would allow him odds;  
And meet him, were I tied to run a-foot

Even to the frozen ridges of the Alps,  
Or any other ground inhabitable  
Where ever Englishman durst set his foot.

Mean time, let this defend my loyalty,  
By all my hopes, most falsely doth he lie.

*Boling.* Pale trembling coward, there I throw  
my glove,

Disclaiming here the kindred of a king;  
And lay aside my high blood's royalty,  
Which fear, not reverence, makes thee to except:

\* Charge.

If guilty dread hath left thee so much strength,  
As to take up mine honour's pawn, then stoop:  
By that, and all the rights of kighthood else,  
Will I make good against thee, arm to arm,  
What I have spoke, or thou can'st worst devise.

*Nor.* I take it up; and, by that sword I swear,  
Which gently laid my knighthood on my shoulder,

I'll answer thee in any fair degree,  
Or chivalrous design of knightly trial:  
And, when I mount, alive may I not light,  
If I be traitor, or unjustly fight!

*K. Rich.* What doth our cousin lay to Mowbray's charge?

It must be great, that can inherit\* us  
So much as of a thought of ill in him.

*Boling.* Look, what I speak my life shall  
prove it true;—

That Mowbray hath receiv'd eight thousand  
nobles,

In name of lendings for your highness' soldiers:  
The which he hath detain'd for lewd\* employments,

Like a false traitor and injurious villain.

Besides I say, and will in battle prove,—

Or here, or elsewhere, to the furthest verge

That ever was survey'd by English eye,—

That all the treasons, for these eighteen years

Complotted and contrived in this land,

Fetch from false Mowbray their first head and spring.

Further I say,—and further will maintain

Upon his bad life, to make all this good,—

That he did plot the Duke of Gloucester's death;

Suggest; his soon-believing adversaries;

And, consequently, like a traitor coward,  
Slur'd out his innocent soul through streams of blood:

Which blood, like sacrificing Abel's, cries

Even from the tongueless caverns of the earth,

To me, for justice and rough chastisement;

And, by the glorious worth of my descent,

This arm shall do it, or this life be spent.

*K. Rich.* How high a pitch his resolution  
soars!

Thomas of Norfolk, what say'st thou to this?

*Nor.* Oh! let my sovereign turn away his face,

And bid his ears a little while be deaf,

Till I have told this slander of his blood,

How God and good men hate so foul a liar.

*K. Rich.* Mowbray, impartial are our eyes and ears:

Were he my brother, nay, my kingdom's heir,

(As he is but my father's brother's son,)

Now by my sceptre's awe I make a vow,

Such neighbour nearness to our sacred blood

Should nothing privilege him, nor partialize;

The unstopping firmness of my upright soul;

He is our subject, Mowbray, so art thou;

Free speech, and fearless, I to thee allow.

*Nor.* Then, Bolingbroke, as low as to thy heart,

Through the false passage of thy throat, thou liest!

The parts of that receipt I had for Calais,

Disburst I duly to his highness' soldiers:

The other part reserv'd I by consent;

For that my sovereign liege was in my debt,

Upon remainder of a dear account,

Since last I went to France to fetch his queen:

Now swallow down that lie.—For Gloucester's death,

I slew him not; but to my own disgrace,

Neglected my sworn duty in that case,—

For you, my noble lord of Lancaster,

The honourable father to my foe,

Once did I lay in ambush for your life

A trespass that doth vex my grieved soul:

But, ere I last receiv'd the sacrament,

I did confess it; and exactly begg'd

Your grace's pardon, and, I hope, I had it.

\* Possess.

† Wicked.

‡ Prompt.

This is my fault: As for the rest appeal'd,\*  
It issues from the rancour of a villain,  
A recreant and most degenerate traitor:  
Which in myself I boldly will defend;  
And interchangeably hurl down my gage  
Upon this overweening traitor's foot,  
To prove myself a loyal gentleman  
Even in the best blood chamber'd in his bosom:

In haste whereof, most heartily I pray  
Your highness to assign our trial day.

*K. Rich.* Wrath-kindled gentlemen, be rul'd by me;

Let's purge this choler without letting blood:  
This we prescribe though no physician;  
Deep malice makes too deep incision:  
Forget, forgive; conclude, and be agreed;  
Our doctors say, this is no time to bleed.—  
Good uncle, let this end where it begun;  
We'll calm the duke of Norfolk, you your son.

*Gaunt.* To be a make-peace shall become my age:

Throw down, my son, the duke of Norfolk's gage.

*K. Rich.* And, Norfolk, throw down his.

*Gaunt.* When, Harry, when

Obedience bids, I should not bid again.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, throw down; we bid; there is no boot.

*Nor.* Myself I throw, dread sovereign, at thy foot;

My life thou shalt command, but not my shame;

The one my duty owes: but my fair name,  
(Despite of death, that lives upon my grave,)  
To dark dishonour's use thou shalt not have.  
I am disgrac'd, impeach'd, and baffled here;  
Pierc'd to the soul with slander's venom'd spear;

The which no balm can cure, but his heart-blood

Which breath'd this poison.

*K. Rich.* Rage must be withstood:

Give me his gage: Lions make leopards tame.

*Nor.* Yea, but not change their spots: take but my shame,

And I resign my gage. My dear dear lord,  
The purest treasure mortal times afford,  
Is—spotless reputation; that away,  
Men are but gilded loam, or painted clay.  
A jewel in a ten-times-barr'd-up chest  
Is—a bold spirit in a loyal breast.

Mine honour is my life; both grow in one;  
Take honour from me and my life is done;  
Then, dear my liege, mine honour let me try;  
In that I live, and for that will I die.

*K. Rich.* Cousin, throw down your gage; do you begin.

*Boling.* O God, defend my soul from such foul sin!

Shall I seem crest-fallen in my father's sight?  
Or with pale beggar-tear impeach my height  
Before this out-dar'd dastard! Ere my tongue  
Shall wound mine honour with such feeble wrong,

Or sound so base a parlie, my teeth shall tear  
The slavish motive of recanting fear;  
And spit it bleeding in his high disgrace,  
Where shame doth harbour, even in Mowbray's face.

[Exit GAUNT.]

*K. Rich.* We were not born to sue, but to command:

Which since we cannot do to make you friends,

Be ready, as your lives shall answer it,  
At Coventry, upon Saint Lambert's day;  
There shall your swords and lances arbitrate  
The swelling difference of your settled hate;  
Since we cannot atone you, we shall see  
Justice design the victor's rivalry.—  
Marshal, command our officers at arms  
Be ready to direct these home-alarms.

[Exeunt.]

\* Charged against me.

SCENE II.—The same.—A Room in the Duke of LANCASTER'S Palace.

Enter GAUNT, and Duchess of GLOSTER.

*Gaunt.* Alas! the part\* I had in Gloucester's blood

Doth more solicit me, than your exclains,  
To stir against the butchers of his life.  
But since correction lieth in those hands,  
Which made the fault that we cannot correct,  
Put we our quarrel to the will of heaven;  
Who when he sees the horns ripe on earth,  
Will rain hot vengeance on offenders' heads.

*Duch.* Finds brotherhood in thee no sharper spur?

Hath love in thy old blood no living fire?  
Edward's seven sons, whereof thyself art one,  
Were as seven phials of his sacred blood,  
Or seven fair branches springing from one root:  
Some of those seven are dried by nature's course,

Some of those branches by the destinies cut:  
But Thomas, my dear lord, my life, my Gloucester,—

One phial full of Edward's sacred blood,  
One flourishing branch of his most royal root,—  
Is crack'd, and all the precious liquor spilt;  
Is hack'd down, and his summer leaves all faded,

By envy's hand, and murder's bloody axe.  
Ah! Gaunt, his blood was thine; that bed, that womb,

That mettle, that self mould, that fashion'd thee,  
Made him a man; and though thou liv'st, and breath'st,

Yet art thou slain in him: Thou dost consent  
In some large measure to thy father's death,  
In that thou seest thy wretched brother die  
Who was the model of thy father's life.

Call it not patience, Gaunt, it is despair:  
In suffering thus thy brother to be slaughter'd,  
Thou show'st the naked pathway to thy life,  
Teaching stern murder how to butcher thee:  
That which in mean men we entitle—patience,  
Is pale cold cowardice in noble breasts.

What shall I say? to safeguard thine own life,  
The best way is—to 'venge my Gloucester's death.

*Gaunt.* Heaven's is the quarrel; for heaven's substitute,

His deputy anointed in his sight,  
Hath caus'd his death: the which, if wrongfully,

Let heaven revenge; for I may never lift  
An angry arm against his minister.

*Duch.* Where then, alas! may I complain myself?

*Gaunt.* To heaven, the widow's champion and defence.

*Duch.* Why then, I will. Farewell, old Gaunt.

Thou go'st to Coventry, there to behold  
Our cousin Hereford, and fell Mowbray fight:  
O sit my husband's wrongs on Hereford's spear,

That it may enter butcher Mowbray's breast!  
Or, if misfortune miss the first career,  
Be Mowbray's sins so heavy in his bosom,  
That they may break his foaming courser's back,

And throw the rider headlong in the lists,  
A catiff recreant to my cousin Hereford!  
Farewell, old Gaunt; thy sometime brother's wife,

With her companion grief must end her life.

*Gaunt.* Sister, farewell; I must to Coventry:  
As much good stay with thee, as go with me!

*Duch.* Yet one word more;—Grief boundeth where it falls,  
Not with the empty hollowness, but weight:  
I take my leave before I have begun;  
For sorrow ends not when it seemeth done.

\* Relationship.

Commend me to my brother, Edmund York.  
Lo, this is all :—Nay, yet depart not so ;  
Though this be all, do not so quickly go ;  
I shall remember more. Bid him—Oh ! what !—  
With all good speed at *Plashy* \* visit me.  
Alack, and what shall good old York there see,  
But empty lodgings and unfurnish'd walls,  
Unpeopled offices, untrodden stones ?  
And what cheer there for welcome, but my  
groans ?  
Therefore commend me ; let him not come  
there,  
To seek out sorrow that dwells every where :  
Desolate, desolate, will I hence, and die ;  
The last leave of thee takes my weeping eye.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Gosford Green, near Coventry.*

*Lists set out, and a Throne. HERALDS, &c.*  
*attending.*

*Enter the Lord MARSHAL, and AUMERLE.*

*Mar.* My lord Aumerle, is Harry Hereford  
arm'd ?

*Aum.* Yea, at all points ; and longs to enter  
in.

*Mar.* The duke of Norfolk, sprightly and  
bold,  
Stays but the summons of the appellant's trumpet.

*Aum.* Why then, the champions are prepar'd,  
and stay,  
For nothing but his majesty's approach.

*Flourish of Trumpets.—Enter KING RICHARD,*  
*who takes his seat on his throne ; GAUNT,*  
*and several Noblemen, who take their*  
*places. A Trumpet is sounded, and an-*  
*swered by another Trumpet within. Then*  
*enter NORFOLK in armour preceded by a*  
*Herald.*

*K. Rich.* Marshal, demand of yonder cham-  
pion

The cause of his arrival here in arms :  
Ask him his name ; and orderly proceed  
To swear him in the justice of his cause.

*Mar.* In God's name, and the king's, say who  
thou art,  
And why thou com'st, thus knightly clad in  
arms :

Against what man thou com'st, and what thy  
quarrel ;

Speak truly, on thy knighthood, and thy oath ;  
And so defend thee, heaven and thy valour !

*Nor.* My name is Thomas Mowbray, duke of  
Norfolk ;

Who hither come engaged by my oath,  
(Which, heaven defend, a knight should violate !)  
Both to defend my loyalty and truth,  
To God, my king, and my succeeding issue,  
Against the duke of Hereford that appeals me ;  
And, by the grace of God, and this mine arm,  
To prove him in defending of himself,  
A traitor to my God, my king, and me ;  
And, as I truly fight, defend me, heaven !

[*He takes his seat.*]

*Trumpet sounds.—Enter BOLINGBROKE, in*  
*armour ; preceded by a Herald.*

*K. Rich.* Marshal, ask yonder knight in  
arms,  
Both who he is, and why he cometh hither,  
Thus plated in habiliments of war ;  
And formally, according to our law,  
Depose him in the justice of his cause.

*Mar.* What is thy name ? and wherefore  
com'st thou hither,  
Before King Richard in his royal lists ?  
Against whom comest thou ; and what's thy  
quarrel ?

Speak like a true knight, so defend thee heaven !

\* Her house in Essex.

*Boling.* Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and  
Derby,

Am I ; who ready here do stand in arms,  
To prove, by heaven's grace, and my body's  
valour,

In lists, on Thomas Mowbray duke of Norfolk,  
That he's a traitor, foul and dangerous,  
To God of heaven, king Richard, and to me ;  
And as I truly fight, defend me, heaven !

*Mar.* On pain of death, no person be so bold,  
Or daring-hardy, as to touch the lists ;  
Except the marshal, and such officers  
Appointed to direct these fair desigus.

*Boling.* Lord Marshal, let me kiss my sove-  
reign's hand,

And bow my knee before his majesty :  
For Mowbray and myself are like two men  
That vow a long and weary pilgrimage ;  
Then let us take a ceremonious leave,  
And loving farewell of our several friends.

*Mar.* The appellant in all duty greets your  
highness,

And craves to kiss your hand, and take his  
leave.

*K. Rich.* We will descend, and fold him in  
our arms.

Cousin of Hereford, as thy cause is right,  
So be thy fortune in this royal fight !  
Farewell, my blood ; which if to-day thou shed,  
Lament we may, but not revenge thee dead.

*Boling.* O let no noble eye profane a tear  
For me, if I be gored with Mowbray's spear ;  
As confident, as is the falcon's flight  
Against a bird, do I with Mowbray fight.—  
My loving lord, [*To Lord MARSHAL.*] I take  
my leave of you ;—

Of you, my noble cousin, lord Aumerle :—  
Not, sick, although I have to do with death ;  
But lusty, young, and cheerly drawing breath.—  
Lo, as at English feasts, so I regret  
The dainties last, to make the end most sweet :  
O thou, the earthly author of my blood,—

[*To GAUNT.*]

Whose youthful spirit, in me regenerate,  
Doth with a two-fold vigour lift me up  
To reach at victory above my head,—  
Add proof unto mine armour with thy prayers ;  
And with thy blessings steel my lance's point,  
That it may enter Mowbray's waven coat,  
And furnish new the name of John of Gaunt,  
Even in the lusty 'haviour of his son.

*Gaunt.* Heaven in thy good cause make thee  
prosperous !

Be swift like lightning in the execution ;  
And let thy blows, doubly redoubled,  
Fall like amazing thunder on the casque  
Of thy adverse pernicious enemy :  
Rouse up thy youthful blood, be valiant and  
live.

*Boling.* Mine innocence, and Saint George to  
thrive ! [*He takes his seat.*]

*Nor.* [*Rising.*] However heaven, or fortune,  
cast my lot,

There lives or dies, true to king Richard's  
throne,

A loyal, just, and upright gentleman :  
Never did captive with a freer heart  
Cast off his chains of bondage, and embrace  
His golden uncontrol'd enfranchisement,  
More than my dancing soul doth celebrate  
This feast of battle with mine adversary.—  
Most mighty liege, and my companion peers,  
Take from my mouth the wish of happy years :

As gentle and as jocund, as to jest,  
Go I to fight ; Truth hath a quiet breast.  
*K. Rich.* Farewell, my lord : securely I espy  
Virtue with valour couched in thine eye,—  
Order the trial, marshal, and begin.

[*The KING and the lords return to their*  
*seats.*]

*Mar.* Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and  
Derby,

Receive thy lance ; and God defend the right !

*Boling.* [*Rising.*] Strong as a tower in hope.  
I cry—Amen.

*Mar.* Go hear this haunce [To an Officer.] to Thomas duke of Norfolk.

1 *Her.* Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby,

Stands here for God, his sovereign, and himself, On pain to be found false and recreant, To prove the duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mowbray, A traitor to his God, his king, and him, And dares him to set forward to the fight.

2 *Her.* Here standeth Thomas Mowbray, duke of Norfolk,

On pain to be found false and recreant, Both to defend himself, and to approve Henry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby, To God, his sovereign, and to him disloyal; Courageously, and with a free desire, Attending but the signal to begin.

*Mar.* Sound, trumpets; and set forward, combatants. [A Charge sounded.] Stay, the king hath thrown his warder down.

*K. Rich.* Let them lay by their helmets and their spears,

And both return back to their chairs again:— Withdraw with us:—and let the trumpets sound,

While we return these dukes what we decree.—

[A long flourish. To the Combatants.] Draw near,

And list, what with our council we have done. For that our kingdom's earth should not be soil'd

With that dear blood which it hath fostered And for our eyes do hate the dire aspect Of civil wounds plough'd up with neighbour's swords;

[And for we think the eagle-winged pride Of sky-aspiring and ambitious thoughts, With rival-hating envy, set you on To wake our peace, which in our country's cradle

Draws the sweet infant breath of gentle sleep;] Which so roas'd up with boisterous untun'd

drams, With harsh resounding trumpets' dreadful bray, And grating shock of wrathful iron arms, Might from our quiet confines fright fair peace, And make us wade even in our kindred's blood:—

Therefore, we banish you our territories:— You, cousin Hereford, upon pain of death, Till twice five summers have enrich'd our fields, Shall not regret our fair dominions, But tread the stranger paths of banishment.

*Boling.* Your will be done: This must my comfort be,—

That sun, that warms you here, shall shine on me;

And those his golden beams, to you here lent, Shall point on me, and gild my banishment.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, for thee remains a heavier doom,

Which I with some unwillingness pronounce: The fly-slow hours shall not determinate The dateless limit of thy dear exile:— The hopeless word of—never to return Breathe I against thee, upon pain of life.

*Nor.* A heavy sentence, my most sovereign liege,

And all unlook'd for from your highness' mouth: A dearer merit, not so deep a main As to be cast forth in the common air, Have I deserved at your highness' hand.

The language I have learn'd these forty years, My native English, now I must forego: And now my tongue's use is to me no more, Than an unstringed viol or a harp; Or like a cunning instrument cas'd up, Or, being open, put into his hands

That knows no touch to tune the harmony. Within my mouth you have enjoin'd my tongue, Doubly portcullis'd, with my teeth and lips; And dull, unfeeling, barren ignorance

Is made my jailer to attend on me. I am too old to fawn upon a nurse, Too far in years to be a pupil now;

What is thy sentence then, but speechless death, Which robs my tongue from breathing native breath?

*K. Rich.* It boots thee not to be compassionate;\*

After our sentence plaining comes too late.

*Nor.* Then thus I turn me from my country's light,

To dwell in solemn shades of endless night.

[Retiring.]

*K. Rich.* Return again, and take an oath with thee,

Lay on our royal sword your banish'd hands; Swear by the duty that you owe to heaven, (Our part therein we banish with yourselves,)

To keep the oath that we administer: You never shall (so help you truth and heaven!)

Embrace each other's love in banishment; Nor never look upon each other's face;

Nor never write, regret, nor reconcile This lowering tempest of your home-bred hate,

Nor never by advised purpose meet, To plot, contrive, or compass any ill,

'Gainst us, our state, our subjects, or our land. *Boling.* I swear.

*Nor.* And I, to keep all this.

*Boling.* Norfolk, so far as to mine enemy:— By this time, had the king permitted us,

One of our souls had wander'd in the air, Banish'd this frail sepulchre of our flesh,

As now our flesh is banish'd from this land: Confess thy treasons, ere thou fly the realm;

Since thou hast far to go, bear not along The clogging burden of a guilty soul.

*Nor.* No, Bolingbroke; if ever I were traitor, My name be blotted from the book of life,

And I from heaven banish'd, as from hence! But what thou art, heaven, thou, and I do

know; And all too soon, I fear, the king shall rue.— Farewell, my liege:—Now no way can I stray;

Save back to England, all the world's my way. [Exit.]

*K. Rich.* Uncle, even in the glasses of thine eyes

I see thy griev'd heart: thy sad aspect Hath from the number of his banish'd years,

Pluck'd four away:—Six frozen winters spent, Return [To *Boling.*] with welcome home from banishment.

*Boling.* How long a time lies in one little word!

Four lagging winters, and four wanton springs, End in a word: Such is the breath of kings.

*Gaunt.* I thank my liege, that, in regard of me,

He shortens four years of my son's exile: But little vantage shall I reap thereby;

For, ere the six years that he hath to spend, Can change their moons, and bring their times

about, My oil-dried lamp, and time-bewasted light, Shall be extinct with age, and endless night.

My inch of taper will be burnt and done, And blindfold death not let me see my son.

*K. Rich.* Why, uncle, thou hast many years to live.

*Gaunt.* But not a minute, king, that thou canst give:

Shorten my days thou canst with sullen sorrow, And pluck nights from me, but not lend a

morrow; Thou canst help time to furrow me with age,

But stop no wrinkle in his pilgrimage; Thy word is current with him for my death;

But, dead, thy kingdom cannot buy my breath.

*K. Rich.* Thy son is banish'd upon good advice,

Whereto thy tongue a party verdict gave;

Why at our justice seem'st thou then to lower?

*Gaunt.* Things sweet to taste, prove in digestion sour.

\* To move compassion.  
† Had a part or share.

Scene IV.

KING RICHARD II.

367

You urg'd me as a judge : but I had rather,  
You would have bid me argue like a father :—  
I had it been a stranger, not my child,  
To smooth his fault I should have been more  
mild :

A partial slander \* sought I to avoid,  
And in the sentence my own life destroy'd.  
Alas, I look'd, when some of you should say,  
I was too strict, to make mine own away ;  
But you gave leave to my unwilling tongue,  
Against my will, to do myself this wrong.

K. Rich. Cousin, farewell :—and, uncle, bid  
him so ;

Six years we banish him, and he shall go.

[Flourish. *Exeunt* K. RICHARD and  
Train.

Aum. Cousin, farewell : what presence must  
not know,

From where you do remain, let paper show.

Nar. My lord, no leave take I : for I will  
ride,

As far as land will let me, by your side.

Gaunt. O to what purpose dost thou board  
thy words,

That thou return'st not greeting to thy friends ?

Boling. I have too few to take my leave of  
you,

When the tongue's office should be prodigal

To breathe the abundant dolour of the heart.

Gaunt. Thy grief is but thy absence for a  
time.

Boling. Joy absent, grief is present for that  
time.

Gaunt. What is six winters ? they are quickly  
gone.

Boling. To men in joy ; but grief makes one  
hour ten.

Gaunt. Call it a travel that thou tak'st for  
pleasure.

Boling. My heart will sigh, when I miscall it  
so,

Which finds it an enforced pilgrimage.

Gaunt. The sullen passage of thy weary steps  
Esteem a foil, wherein thou art to act

The precious jewel of thy home return.

Boling. Nay, rather, every tedious stride I  
make

Will but remember me, what a deal of world

I wander from the jewels that I love.

Must I not serve a long apprenticeship

To foreign passages ; and in the end,

Having my freedom, boast of nothing else,

But that I was a journeyman to grief ?

Gaunt. All places that the eye of heaven  
visits,

Are to a wise man ports and happy havens :

Teach thy necessity to reason thus ;

There is no virtue like necessity.

Think not, the king did banish thee ;

But thou the king : Woe doth the heavier sit,

Where it perceives it is but faintly borne.

Go, say—I sent thee forth to purchase honour,

And not—The king exil'd thee : or suppose,

Devoting pestilence hangs in our air,

And thou art flying to a fresher clime.

Look, what thy soul holds dear, imagine it

To lie that way thou go'st, not whence thou  
com'st :

Suppose the singing birds, musicians ;

The grass whereon thou tread'st, the presence \*  
strew'd ;

The flowers, fair ladies : and thy steps, no more

Than a delightful measure, or a dance :

For enailing sorrow hath less power to bite

The man that mocks at it, and sets it light.

Boling. Oh ! who can hold a fire in his hand,

Y thinking on the frosty Caucasus ?

Or cloy the hungry edge of appetite,

By bare imagination of a feast ?

Or wallow naked in December's snow,

By thinking on fantastic summer's heat ?

Oh ! no : the apprehension of the good

\* Reproach of partiality.

† Presence chamber at court.

Gives but the greater feeling to the woe :  
Fell sorrow's tooth doth never rankle more,  
Than when it bites, but lanceth not the sore.

Gaunt. Come, come, my son, I'll bring thee  
on thy way :

Had I thy youth, and cause, I would not stay.

Boling. Then, England's ground, farewell ;  
sweet soul, adieu ;

My mother, and my nurse, that bears me yet !

Where'er I wander, boast of this I can,—

Though banish'd yet a trueborn Englishman. [*Exeunt*

SCENE IV.—The same.—A Room in the  
King's Castle.

*Enter* King RICHARD, BAGOT, and GREEN ;  
AUMERLE following.

K. Rich. We did observe.—Cousin Aumerle,  
How far brought you high Hereford on his  
way ?

Aum. I brought high Hereford, if you call  
him so,

But to the next highway, and there I left him.

K. Rich. And say what store of parting tears  
were shed ?

Aum. Faith, none by me : except the north-  
east wind.

Which then blew bitterly against our faces,  
Awak'd the sleeping rheum ; and so, by chance,  
Did grace our hollow parting with a tear.

K. Rich. What said our cousin, when you  
parted with him.

Aum. Farewell :

And, for my heart disdained that my tongue  
Should so profane the word, that taught me  
craft

To counterfeit oppression of such grief,  
That words seem'd buried in my sorrow's grave.

Marry, would the word farewell have lengthen'd  
hours.

And added years to his short banishment ;  
He should have had a volume of farewells ;

But, since it would not, he had none of me.

K. Rich. He is our cousin, cousin ; but 'tis  
doubt,

When time shall call him home from banish-  
ment.

Whether our kinsman come to see his friends.

Ourselves, and Bushy, Bagot here, and Green,

Observ'd his courtship to the common people :—

How he did seem to dive into their hearts,

With humble and familiar courtesy ;

What reverence he did throw away on slaves ;

Wooling poor craftsmen, with the craft of  
smiles,

And patient underbearing of his fortune,

As 'twere, to banish their effects with him.

Off goes his bonnet to an oyster-wench ;

A brace of draymen bid—God speed him well,

And had the tribute of his supple knee,

With—*Thanks my countrymen, my loving  
friends ;*

As were our England in reversion his,

And he our subjects next degree in hope.

Green. Well, he is gone ; and with him go  
these thoughts.

Now for the rebels, which stand out in Ire-  
land :—

Expedient \* manage must be made, my liege ;

Ere further leisure yield them further means,

For their advantage, and your highness' loss.

K. Rich. We will ourselves in person to this  
war.

And, for our coffers with too great a count,

And liberal largess, are grown somewhat light,

We are enforc'd to farm our royal realm ;

The revenue whereof shall furnish us

For our affairs in hand : If that come short,

Our substitutes at home shall have blank char-  
ters :

Whereto, when they shall know what men are  
rich,

\* Expeditious

† Because.

They shall subscribe, them for large sums of gold,  
And send them after to supply our wants;  
For we will make for Ireland presently.

*Enter BUSHY.*

Bushy, what news?

*Bushy.* Old John of Gaunt is grievous sick,  
my lord;

Suddenly taken; and hath sent post haste,  
To entreat your majesty to visit him.

*K. Rich.* Where lies he?

*Bushy.* At Ely-house.

*K. Rich.* Now put it, heaven, in his physician's mind,

To help him to his grave immediately!

The lining of his coffers shall make coats

To deck our soldiers for these Irish wars.—

Come, gentlemen, let's all go visit him:

Pray God, we may make haste, and come too late!

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

*SCENE I.—London.—A Room in Ely-house.*

*GAUNT on a Couch; the Duke of YORK, and others standing by him.*

*Gaunt.* Will the king come? that I may breathe my last

In wholesome counsel to his untaught youth.

*York.* Vex not yourself, nor strive not with your breath;

For all in vain comes counsel to his ear.

*Gaunt.* Oh! but they say the tongues of dying men

Enforce attention, like deep harmony:

Where words are scarce, they are seldom spent in vain:

For they breathe truth, that breathe their words in pain.

He, that no more may say, is listen'd more

Then they whom youth and ease have taught to glose;

More are men's ends mark'd, than their lives before;

The setting sun and music at the close,

As the last taste of sweets, is sweetest last;

Writ in remembrance, more than things long past:

Though Richard my life's counsel would not

My death's sad tale may yet undeaf his ear.

*York.* No; it is stopp'd with other flattering sounds,

As, praises of his state: then, there are found

Lascivious metres; to whose venom sound

The open ear of youth doth always listen:

Report of fashions in proud Italy;

Whose manners still our tardy apish nation

Limps after, in base imitation,

Where doth the world thrust forth a vanity,

(So it be new, there's no respect how vile,)

That is not quickly buzz'd into his ears?

Then all too late comes counsel to be heard,

Where will doth mutiny with wit's regard,

Direct not him, whose way himself will choose;

'Tis breath thou lack'st, and that breath wilt thou lose.

*Gaunt.* Methinks I am a prophet new inspir'd;

And thus, expiring, do foretell of him;

His rash fierce blaze of riot cannot last;

For violent fires soon burn out themselves:

Small showers last long, but sudden storms are short;

He tires betimes, that spurs too fast betimes:

With eager feeding, food doth choke the feeder:

Light vanity (insatiate cormorant,

Consuming means) soon preys upon itself.

This royal throne of kings, this scepter'd isle,

This earth of majesty, this seat of Mars,

\* Flatter.

This other Eden, demi-paradise;

This fortress, built by nature for herself,

Against infection, and the hand of war;

This happy breed of men, this little world;

This precious stone set in the silver sea,

Which serves it in the office of a wall,

Or as a moat defensive to a house,

Against the envy of less happier lands;

This blessed plot, this earth, this realm, this England,

This nurse, this teeming womb of royal kings,

Fear'd by their breed, and famous by their birth,

Renowned for their deeds as far from home,

(For Christian service, and true chivalry,)

As is the sepulchre in stubborn Jewry,

Of the world's ransom, blessed Mary's son:

This land of such dear souls, this dear dear land,

Dear for her reputation through the world,

Is now less than out (I die pronouncing it,)

Like to a tument, or pelting\* farm:

England, bound in with the triumphant sea,

Whose rocky shore beats back the envious siege

Of watery Neptune, is now bound in with shame,

With ink blot, and rotten parchment bonds;

That England, that was wont to conquer others,

Hath made a shameful conquest of itself:

Oh! would the scandal vanish with my life,

How happy then were my ensuing death!

*Enter King RICHARD, and QUEEN; AUWERLE, BUSHY, GREEN, BAGOT, ROSS, and WILLOUGHBY.*

*York.* The king is come: deal mildly with his youth;

For young hot colts, being rag'd, do rage the more.

*Queen.* How fares our noble uncle, Lancaster?

*K. Rich.* What comfort, man? How is't with aged Gaunt?

*Gaunt.* Oh! how that name befits my composition!

Old Gaunt, indeed; and Gaunt in being old:

Within me grief hath kept a tedious last;

And who abstains from meat, that is not Gaunt?

For sleeping England long time have I watch'd;

Watching breeds leanness, leanness is all Gaunt:

The pleasure, that some fathers feed upon,

Is my strict fast, I mean—my children's looks,

And, therein fasting, hath thou made me Gaunt:

Gaunt am I for the grave, Gaunt as a grave,

Whose hollow womb inherits nought but bones.

*K. Rich.* Can sick men play so nicely with their names?

*Gaunt.* No, misery makes sport to mock itself:

Since thou dost seek to kill my name in me,

I mock my name, great king, to flatter thee.

*K. Rich.* Should dying men flatter with those that live?

*Gaunt.* No, no; men living flatter those that die.

*K. Rich.* Thou, now a dying, say'st—thou flatter'st me.

*Gaunt.* Oh! no; thou diest, though I the sicker be.

*K. Rich.* I am in health, I breathe, and see thee ill.

*Gaunt.* Now He that made me knows I see thee ill;

Ill in myself to see, and in thee seeing ill.

Thy death-bed is no less than the land,

Wherein thou liest in reputation sick:

And thou, too careless patient as thou art,

Commit'st thy anointed body to the cure

Of those physicians that first wounded thee:

A thousand flatterers sit within thy crown,

Whose compass is no bigger than thy head;

And yet, incaged in so small a verge,

The waste is no whit lesser than thy land.

Oh! had thy grandsire, with a prophet's eye,

Seen how his son's son should destroy his sons,

\* Paltry.

† Lean.

From forth thy reach he would have laid thy shame;

Deposing thee before thou wert possess'd,  
Which art possess'd \* now to depose thyself.  
Why, cousin, wert thou regent of the world,  
It were a shame to let this land by lease:  
But, for thy world, enjoying but this land,  
Is it not more than shame, to shame it so?  
Landlord of England art thou now, not king:  
Thy state of law is bondslave to the law;  
And thou—

*K. Rich.*—A lunatic lean-witted fool,  
Presuming on an eagle's privilege,  
Dar'st with thy frozen admonition  
Make pale our cheek; chasing the royal blood,  
With fury, from his native residence.  
Now by my seat's right royal majesty,  
Wert thou not brother to great Edward's son,  
This tongue that runs so roundly in thy head,  
Should run thy head from thy unreverend  
shoulders.

*Gaunt.* O spare me not, my brother Edward's son,  
For that I was his father Edward's son;  
That blood already, like the pelican,  
Hast thou tapp'd out, and drunkenly carous'd:  
My brother Gloster, plain well-meaning soul,  
(Whom fair befall in heaven 'mongst happy  
souls!)

May be a precedent and witness good,  
That thou respect'st not spilling Edward's  
blood;  
Join with the present sickness that I have;  
And thy unkindness be like crooked age,  
To crop at once a too-long withered flower.  
Live in thy shame, but die not shame with  
thee!—

These words hereafter thy tormentors be!—  
Convey me to my bed, then to my grave:  
Love they to live, that love and honour have.

[*Exit, borne out by his Attendants.*  
*K. Rich.* And let them die that age and sul-  
lens have:

For both hast thou, and both become the grave.  
*York.* 'Beseech your majesty, impute his  
To wayward sickness and age in him: [words  
He loves you, on my life, and holds you dear  
As Harry duke of Hereford, were he here.

*A. Rich.* Right; you say true; as Hereford's  
love, so his:  
As theirs, so mine; and all be as it is.

*Enter NORTHUMBERLAND.*

*North.* My liege, old Gaunt commends him  
to your majesty.

*K. Rich.* What says he now?

*North.* Nay, nothing; all is said:

His tongue is now a strumless instrument;

Words, life, and all, old Lancaster hath spent.

*York.* Be York the next that must be bank-  
rupt so!

Though death be poor, it ends a mortal woe.

*A. Rich.* The ripest fruit first falls, and so  
doth he;

His time is spent, our pilgrimage must be:

So much for that.—Now for our Irish wars:

We must supplant those rough rug-headed  
kerns;†

Which live like venom, where no venom else,

But only they, hath privilege to live.‡

And for these great affairs do ask some charge,

Towards our assistance, we do seize to us

The plate, coin, revenues, and moveables,

Whereof our uncle Gaunt did stand possess'd.

*York.* How long shall I be patient? Ah!

how long

Shall tender duty make me suffer wrong?

Not Gloster's death, nor Hereford's banishment,

Not Gaunt's rebukes, nor England's private

wrongs,

Nor the prevention of poor Bolingbroke

About his marriage, nor my own disgrace,

\* Mad.

† Irish soldiers.

‡ Venomous reptiles are said not to exist in Ireland.

Have ever made me sour my patient cheek,  
Or bend one wrinkle on my sovereign's face.—  
I am the last of noble Edward's sons,  
Of whom thy father, prince of Wales, was  
first;

In war, was never lion rag'd more fierce,  
In peace, was never gentle lamb more mild,  
Than was that young and princely gentleman:  
His face thou hast, for even so look'd he,  
Accomplish'd with the number of thy hours;  
But, when he frown'd, it was against the

French,

And not against his friends: his noble hand  
Did win what he did spend, and spent not that  
Which his triumphant father's hand had won:  
His hands were guilty of no kindred's blood,  
But bloody with the enemies of his kin.

O Richard! York is too far gone with grief,  
Or else he never would compare between.

*K. Rich.* Why, uncle, what's the matter?  
*York.* O my liege,

Pardon me, if you please; if not, I, pleas'd  
Not to be pardon'd, am content withal.  
Seek you to seize, and gripe into your hands,  
The royalties and rights of banish'd Hereford?  
Is not Gaunt dead? and doth not Hereford  
live?

Was not Gaunt just? and is not Harry true?  
Did not the one deserve to have an heir?  
Is not this heir a well-deserving son?  
Take Hereford's rights away, and take from time  
His charters, and his customary rights;  
Let not to-morrow then ensue to-day;  
Be not thyself, for how art thou a king,  
But by fair sequence and succession?  
Now, afore God (God forbid, I say true!)  
If you do wrongfully seize Hereford's rights,  
Call in the letters patent that he bath  
By his attorney-general to sue  
His livery, and deny his offer'd homage,  
You pluck a thousand dangers on your head,  
You lose a thousand well-disposed hearts,  
And prick my tender patience to those thoughts  
Which honour and allegiance cannot think.

*K. Rich.* Think what you will; we seize into  
our hands

His plate, his goods, his money, and his lands.

*York.* I'll not be by the while. My liege,  
farewell:

What will ensue hereof, there's none can tell;  
But by bad courses may be understood,  
That their events can never fall out good.

[*Exit.*

*K. Rich.* Go, Bushy, to the earl of Wiltshire  
straight;

Bid him repair to us to Ely-house,

To see this business: To-morrow next

We will for Ireland; and 'tis time, I trow;

And we create, in absence of ourselves,

Our uncle York lord governor of England,

For he is just, and always lov'd us well.—

Come on, our queen: to-morrow must we part;

Be merry, for our time of stay is short.

[*Flourish.*  
[*Exeunt KING, QUEEN, BUSHY, AUMERLE,*  
*GREEN, and BAGON.*

*North.* Well, lords, the duke of Lancaster is  
dead.

*Ross.* And living too; for now his son is  
duke.

*Will.* Barely in title, not in revenue.

*North.* Richly in both, if justice had her  
right.

*Ross.* My heart is great; but it must break  
with silence,

Ere't be disorder'd with a liberal tongue.

*North.* Nay, speak thy mind; and let him  
ne'er speak more,

That speaks thy words again, to do thee harm!  
*Will.* Tends that thou'dst speak, to the duke  
of Hereford?

If it be so, out with it boldly, man;  
Quick is mine ear to hear of good towards  
him.

*Ross.* No good at all, that I can do for him;



Unless you call it good to pity him,  
Dereft and gelded of his patrimony.

*North.* Now, afore heaven, 'tis shame, such  
wrongs are borne,

In him a royal prince, and many more  
Of noble blood in this declining land.  
The king is not himself, but basely led  
By flatterers; and what they will inform,  
Merely in hate, 'gainst any of us all,  
That will the king severely prosecute  
'Gainst us, our lives, our children, and our  
heirs.

*Ross.* The commons hath he pill'd \* with  
grievous taxes,  
And lost their hearts: the nobles hath he flud<sup>†</sup>  
For ancient quarrels, and quite lost their hearts.

*Will.* And daily new exactions are devis'd;  
As blanks, benevolences, and I wot not what:  
But what, o'God's name, doth become of this?

*North.* Wars have not wasted it, for warri'd<sup>‡</sup>  
he hath not,  
But basely yielded upon compromise  
That which his ancestors achiev'd with blows:  
More hath he spent in peace, than they in  
wars.

*Ross.* The earl of Wiltshire hath the realm in  
farm.

*Will.* The king's grown bankrupt, like a  
broken man.

*North.* Reproach, and dissolution, hangeth  
over him.

*Ross.* He hath not money for these Irish wars,  
His burdensome taxations notwithstanding,  
But by the robbing of the banish'd duke.

*North.* His noble kinsman: most degenerate  
king!

But, lords, we hear this fearful tempest sing,  
Yet seek no shelter to avoid the storm:  
We see the wind sit sore upon our sails,  
And yet we strike not, but securely perish.†

*Ross.* We see the very wreck that we must  
suffer:

And unavoids is the danger now,  
For suffering so the causes of our wreck.

*North.* Not so; even through the hollow eyes  
of death,

I spy life peering; but I dare not say  
How near the tidings of our comfort is.

*Will.* Nay, let us share thy thoughts, as thou  
dost ours.

*Ross.* Be confident to speak, Northumber-  
land:

We three are but thyself; and, speaking, so,  
Thy words are: but as thoughts; therefore, be  
bold.

*North.* Then thus:—I have from Port le Blanc,  
a bay

In Brittany, receiv'd intelligence,  
That Harry Hereford, Reinhold lord Cobham,  
[The son of Richard Earl of Arundel,] \*  
That late broke from the duke of Exeter,  
His brother, archbishop late of Canterbury,  
Sir Thomas Erpingham, sir John Ramston,  
Sir John Norbery, sir Robert Waterton, and  
Francis Quinot,—

All these well furnish'd by the duke of Bretagne,  
With eight tall ships, three thousand men of  
war,

Are making hither with all due expedience,  
And shortly mean to touch our northern shore:  
Perhaps, they had ere this; but that they stay  
The first departing of the king for Ireland.  
If then we shall shake off our slavish yoke,  
Imp out our drooping country's broken wing,  
Redeem from broking pawn the blemish'd  
crown,

Wipe off the dust that hides our sceptre's gilt,  
And make high majesty look like itself,  
Away with me in post to Ravenspurg:  
But if you faint, as fearing to do so,  
Stay, and be secret, and myself will go.

\* Pillaged.

† Perish by confidence in our security  
‡ Supply with new feathers.

*Ross.* To horse, to horse I urge doubts to them  
that fear.

*Will.* Hold out my horse, and I will flit be  
there. [Exeunt]

### SCENE II.—The same.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter QUEEN, BUSHY, and BAGOT.

*Bushy.* Madam, your majesty is too much  
sad:

You promis'd, when you parted with the king,  
To lay aside life-harming heaviness,  
And entertain a cheerful disposition.

*Queen.* To please the king, I did; to please  
myself,

I cannot do it; yet I know no cause  
Why I should welcome such a guest as grief,  
Save bidding farewell to so sweet a guest  
As my sweet Richard: Yet, again, methinks,  
Some unborn sorrow, ripe in fortune's womb,  
Is coming towards me: and my inward soul  
With nothing trembles: at something it grieves,  
More than with parting from my lord the king.

*Bushy.* Each substance of a grief hath twenty  
shadows,

Which show like grief itself, but are not so:  
For sorrow's eye, glazed with blinding tears,  
Divides one thing entire to many objects;  
Like perspectives,\* which, rightly gaz'd upon,  
Show nothing but confusion; ey'd awry,  
Distinguish form: so your sweet majesty,  
Looking awry upon your lord's departure,  
Finds shapes of grief, more than himself, to  
wail;

Which, look'd on as it is, is nought but shadows  
Of what is not. Then, thrice-gracious queen,  
More than your lord's departure weep not; moit's  
not seen:

Or if it be, 'tis with false sorrow's eye,  
Which, for things true, weeps things imaginary.

*Queen.* It may be so; but yet my inward  
soul

Persuades me, it is otherwise: How'er it be,  
I cannot but be sad; so heavy sad,  
As,—though, in thinking, on no thought I  
think,—

Makes me with heavy nothing faint and shrink.

*Bushy.* 'Tis nothing but conceit,† my gracious  
lady.

*Queen.* 'Tis nothing less: conceit is still de-  
riv'd

From some fore-father grief; mine is not so;  
For nothing hath begot my something grief,  
On something hath the nothing that I grieve:  
'Tis in reversion that I do possess;  
But, what it is, that is not yet known; what  
I cannot name; 'tis nameless woe, I wot:‡

Enter GREEN.

*Green.* God save your majesty!—and well  
met, gentleman:—

I hope the king is not yet shipp'd for Ireland.

*Queen.* Why hop'st thou so? 'tis better hope.  
he is;

For his designs crave haste, his haste good hope:  
Then wherefore dost thou hope, he is not  
shipp'd?

*Green.* That he, our hope, might have retu'd  
his power,§

And driven into despair an enemy's hope,  
Who strongly hath set footing in this land:  
The banish'd Bolingbroke repels himself,  
And with uplifted arms is safe arriv'd  
At Ravenspurg.

*Queen.* Now God in heaven forbid!

*Green.* O madam, 'tis too true: and that is  
worse,—

The lord Northumberland, his young son Henry  
Percy,

The lords of Roos, Beaumont, and Willoughby,  
With all their powerful friends, are fled to him.

\* Perspectives.  
‡ Know.

† Fanciful conceptions.  
§ Draw it back.

Scene III.

KING RICHARD II.

371

*Bushy.* Why have you not proclaim'd Northumberland,  
And all the rest of the revolting faction  
Traitors?

*Green.* We have: whereon the earl of Worcester

Hath broke his staff, resign'd his stewardship,  
And all the household servants fled with him  
To Bolingbroke.

*Queen.* So, Green, thou art the midwife to my woe,  
And Bolingbroke my sorrow's dismal heir:  
Now hath my soul brought forth her prodigy:  
And I, a gasping new-deliver'd mother,  
Have woe to woe, sorrow to sorrow join'd.

*Bushy.* Despair not, madam.  
*Queen.* Who shall hinder me?

I will despair, and be at enmity  
With cozening hope; he is a flatterer,  
A parasite, a keeper-back of death,  
Who gently would dissolve the bands of life,  
Which false hope lingers in extremity.

*Enter York.*

*Green.* Here comes the duke of York.

*Queen.* With signs of war about his aged neck;

O full of careful business are his looks!—

Uncle, should I do so, I should belie my thoughts:

For heaven's sake, speak comfortable words.

*York.* Should I do so, I should belie my thoughts:  
Comfort's in heaven; and we are on the earth,  
Where nothing lives but crosses, care, and grief.

Your husband he is gone to save far off,  
Whilst others come to make him lose at home:  
Here am I left to underprop his land;  
Who, weak with age, cannot support myself:—  
Now comes the sick hour that his surfeit made:  
Now shall he try his friends that flatter'd him.

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Serv.* My lord, your son was gone before I came.

*York.* He was?—Why, so!—go all which way it will!

The nobles they are fled, the commons cold,  
And will, I fear, revolt on Hereford's side.—  
*Servant.*

Get thee to Plashy, to my sister Gloucester;  
Bid her send me presently a thousand pound:  
Hold, take my ring.

*Serv.* My lord, I had forgot to tell your lordship—

To-day, as I came by, I called there;

But I shall grieve you to report the rest.

*York.* What is it, I have?

*Serv.* An hour before I came, the duchess died.

*York.* God for his mercy! what a tide of woes

Comes rushing on this woeful land at once!  
I know not what to do:—I would to God,  
'So my untruth' had not provok'd him to it.)

The king had cut off my head with my brother's—

What, are these posts despatch'd for Ireland?—  
How shall we do for money for these wars?—

Come, sister,—cousin, I would say: pray pardon me.—

Go, fellow, [To the SERVANT.] get thee home,  
provide some carts,  
And bring away the armour that is there.—

[Exit SERVANT.]

Gentlemen, will you go muster men? if I know  
How, or which way, to order these affairs,  
Thus thrust disorderly into my hands,  
Never believe me. Both are my kinsmen:—  
The one's my sovereign, whom both my oath  
And duty binds defend; the other again,  
Is my kinsman, whom the king hath wrong'd;  
Whom conscience and my kindred bids to right.

• Disloyalty.

Well, somewhat we must do.—Come, cousin, I'll

Dispose of you:—Go, muster up your men  
And meet me presently at Berkley-castle.

I should to Plashy too;—

But time will not permit:—All is uneven,

And every thing is left at six and seven.

[Exit YORK and QUEEN.]

*Bushy.* The wind sits fair for news to go to Ireland,

But none returns. For us to levy power,  
Proportionable to the enemy,  
Is all impossible.

*Green.* Besides our nearness to the king in love,

Is near the hate of those love not the king.

*Bagot.* And that's the wavering commons:  
for their love

Lies in their purses; and whoso empties them,  
By so much fills their hearts with deadly hate.

*Bushy.* Wherein the king stands generally condemn'd.

*Bagot.* If judgment lie in them, then so do we,

Because we ever have been near the king.

*Green.* Well, I'll for refuge straight to Bristol castle:

The earl of Wiltshire is already there.

*Bushy.* Thither will I with you: for little office

The hateful commons will perform for us:

Except like curs to tear us all to pieces.—

Will you go along with us?

*Bagot.* No: I'll to Ireland to his majesty.

Farewell: if heart's presages be not vain,  
We three here part, that ne'er shall meet again.

*Bushy.* That's as York thrives to beat back Bolingbroke.

*Green.* Alas, poor duke! the task he undertakes

Is—numb'ring sands, and drinking oceans dry;  
Where one on his side fights, thousands will fly.

*Bushy.* Farewell at once; for once, for all, and ever.

*Green.* Well, we may meet again,  
*Bagot.* I fear me, never. [Exit.]

SCENE III.—The Woods in Gloucestershire.

*Enter BOLINGBROKE and NORTHUMBERLAND, with Forces.*

*Boling.* How far is it, my lord, to Berkley now?

*North.* Believe me, noble lord,  
I am a stranger here in Gloucestershire.

These high wild hills, and rough uneven ways,  
Draw out our miles, and make them wearisome:

And yet your fair discourse hath been as sugar,  
Making the hard way sweet and delectable.

But, I bethink me, what a weary way  
From Ravenspurg to Cotswold, will be found

in Ross and Willoughby, waating your company:

Which, I protest hath very much beguil'd  
The tediousness and process of my travel:

But there's is sweeten'd with the hope to have  
The present benefit which I possess:

And hope to joy, is little less in joy,  
Than hope enjoy'd: by this the weary lords

Shall make their way seem short; as mine hath done

By sight of what I have, your noble company.

*Boling.* Of much less value is my company,  
Than your good words. But who comes here?

*Enter HARRY PERCY.*

*North.* It is my son, young Harry Percy,  
Sent from my brother Worcester, whence so ever.—

*Harry.* How fares your uncle?

*Percy.* I had thought, my lord, to have learn'd his health of you.

*North.* Why, is he not with the queen?

*Percy.* No, my good lord; he hath forsok the court,  
Broken his staff of office, and dispers'd  
The household of the king.

*North.* What was his reason?  
He was not so resolv'd, when last we spake  
together.

*Percy.* Because your lordship was proclaimed  
traitor.

But he, my lord, is gone to Ravenspurg,  
To offer service to the duke of Hereford;  
And sent me o'er by Berkley to discover  
What power the duke of York had levied there;  
Then with direction to repair to Ravenspurg.

*North.* Have you forgot the duke of Here-  
ford, boy?

*Percy.* No, my good lord; for that is not  
forgot,  
Which ne'er I did remember: to my know-  
ledge,  
I never in my life did look on him.

*North.* Then learn to know him now; this is  
the duke.

*Percy.* My gracious lord, I tender you my  
service,  
Such as it is, being tender, raw, and young;  
Which elder days shall ripen, and confirm  
To more approved service and desert.

*Boling.* I thank thee, gentle Percy; and be  
sure,  
I count myself in nothing else so happy,  
As in a soul rememb'ring my good friends;  
And, as my fortune ripens with thy love,  
It shall be still thy true love's recompense:  
My heart this covenant makes, my hand thus  
seals it.

*North.* How far is it to Berkley? And what  
still  
Keeps good old York there, with his men of  
war?

*Percy.* There stands the castle, by yon tuft  
of trees,  
Mann'd with three hundred men, as I have  
heard:  
And in it are the lords of York, Berkley, and  
Seymour;  
None else of name, and noble estimate.

*Enter ROSS and WILLOUGHBY.*

*North.* Here come the lords of Ross and  
Willoughby,  
Bloody with spurring, fiery-red with haste.

*Boling.* Welcome, my lords: I wot\* your  
love pursues

A banish'd traitor; all my treasury  
Is yet but unfelt thanks, which, more enrich'd,  
Shall be your love and labour's recompense.

*Ross.* Your presence makes us rich, most  
noble lord.

*Willoughby.* And far surmounts our labour to at-  
tain it.

*Boling.* Evermore thanks the exchequer of  
the poor;

Which, till my infant fortune come to years,  
Stands for my bounty. But who comes here?

*Enter BERKLEY.*

*North.* It is my lord of Berkley, as I guess.  
*Berk.* My lord of Hereford, my message is  
to you.

*Boling.* My lord, my answer is—to Lan-  
caster;

And I am come to seek that name in England:  
And I must find that title in your tongue,  
Before I make reply to aught you say.

*Berk.* Mistake me not, my lord; 'tis not my  
meaning,

To raze one title of your honour out:—  
To you, my lord, I come, (what lord you will,)  
From the most glorious regent of this land,  
The duke of York; to know, what pricks you on  
To take advantage of the absent time,†  
And fright our native peace with self-born  
arms.

\* Know.

† Time of the king's absence

*Enter YORK attended.*

*Boling.* I shall not need transport my words  
by you;

Here comes his grace in person.—My noble  
uncle! *(Kneels.)*

*York.* Show me thy humble heart, and not  
thy knee,

Whose duty is deceivable and false.

*Boling.* My gracious uncle!

*York.* Tut, tut!

Grace me no grace, nor uncle me no uncle:  
I am no traitor's uncle; and that word—grace,  
In an ungracious mouth, is but profane.

Why have those banish'd and forbidden legs  
Dar'd once to touch a dust of England's

ground?

But then more why;—Why have they dar'd  
to march

So many miles upon her peaceful bosom;  
Fighting her pale-fac'd villages with war,  
And ostentation of despised arms?

Com'st thou because the anointed king is hence?  
Why, foolish boy, the king is left behind,  
And in my loyal bosom lies his power.

Were I but now the lord of such hot youth,  
As when brave Gaunt, thy father, and myself,  
Rescued the Black Prince, that young Mais of

men,

From forth the ranks of many thousand French  
O then, how quickly should this arm of mine,  
Now prisoner to the palsy, chastise thee,  
And minister correction to thy fault!

*Boling.* My gracious uncle, let me know my  
fault;

On what condition stands it, and wherein?

*York.* Even in condition of the worst de-  
gree,—

In gross rebellion and detested treason:  
Thou art a banish'd man, and here art come,  
Before the expiration of thy time,  
In braving arms against thy sovereign.

*Boling.* As I was banish'd, I was banish'd  
Hereford:

But as I come, I come for Lancaster.  
And, noble uncle, I beseech your grace,  
Look on my wrongs with an indifferent\* eye:

You are my father, for, methinks in you  
I see old Gaunt alive; O then, my father!

Will you permit that I shall stand condemn'd  
A wand'ring vagabond; my rights and royal-  
ties

Pluck'd from my arms perforce, and given  
away

To upstart unthrifths? Wherefore was I born?  
If that my cousin king be king of England,  
It must be granted, I am duke of Lancaster.

You have a son, Aumerle, my noble kinsman,  
Had you first died, and he been thus trod  
down,

He should have found his uncle Gaunt a father,  
To rouse his wrongs,† and chase them to the  
bay.

I am denied to sue my livery‡ here,  
And yet my letters-patent give me leave:

My father's goods are all distraint'd and sold;  
And these, and all, are all amiss employ'd.

What would you have me do? I am a subject,  
And challenge law: attorneys are denied me;  
And therefore personally I lay my claim  
To my inheritance of free descent.

*North.* The noble duke hath been too much  
abus'd.

*Ross.* It stands your grace upon, § to do him  
right.

*Willoughby.* Base men by his endowments are  
made great.

*York.* My lords of England, let me tell you  
this,—

I have had feeling of my cousin's wrongs,  
And labour'd all I could to do him right:  
But in this kind to come, in braving arms,  
Be his own carver, and cut out his way,

\* Immortal.

† Possession of my land, &c.

‡ The persons who wrong him.

§ It is your interest

To find out right with wrong.—It may not be ;  
And you, that do abet him in this kind,  
Cherish rebellion, and are rebels all.

*North.* The noble duke hath sworn his coming is

But for his own : and for the right of that,  
We all have strongly sworn to give him aid ;  
And let him ne'er see joy, that breaks that oath.

*York.* Well, well, I see the issue of these arms ;

I cannot mend it, I must needs confess,  
Because my power is weak, and all ill left :  
But if I could, by him that gave me life  
I would attach you all, and make you stoop  
Unto the sovereign mercy of the king ;  
But, since I cannot, be it known to you,  
I do remain as neuter. So fare you well ;—  
Unless you please to enter in the castle,  
And there repose you for this night.

*Boling.* An offer, uncle, that we will accept.  
But we must win your grace, to go with us  
To Bristol castle ; which, they say, is held  
By Bushy, Bagot, and their complices,  
The caterpillars of the commonwealth,  
Which I have sworn to weed, and pluck away.

*York.* It may be I will go with you :—but yet  
I'll pause ;

For I am loath to break our country's laws.  
Nor friends, nor foes, to me welcome you are :  
Things past redress, are now with me past care.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV.—A Camp in Wales.

*Enter SALISBURY, and a CAPTAIN.*

*Capt.* My lord of Salisbury, we have staid ten days,

And hardly kept our countrymen together,  
And yet we hear no tidings from the king ;  
Therefore we will disperse ourselves : farewell.

*Sal.* Stay yet another day, thou trusty Welshman ;

The king reposeth all his confidence  
In thee.

*Capt.* 'Tis thought, the king is dead ; we will  
not stay.

The bay-trees in our country are all wither'd,  
And meteors fright the fixed stars of heaven ;  
The pale-fac'd moon looks bloody on the earth,  
And lean-look'd prophets whisper fearful change ;  
Rich men look sad, and ruffians dance and leap ;

The one, in fear to lose what they enjoy,  
The other, to enjoy by rage and war :  
These signs forerun the death or fall of kings.—

Farewell ; our countrymen are gone and fled,  
As well assur'd, Richard their king is dead.

[*Exit.*]

*Sal.* Ah ! Richard ! with the eyes of heavy  
mind,

I see thy glory, like a shooting star,  
Fall to the base earth from the firmament !  
Thy sun sets weeping in the lowly west,  
Witnessing storms to come, woe, and unrest ;  
Thy friends are fled, to wait upon thy foes ;  
And crossing to thy good all fortune goes.

[*Exit.*]

#### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—BOLINGBROKE'S Camp at Bristol.

*Enter BOLINGBROKE, YORK, NORTHUMBERLAND, PERCY, WILLOUGHBY, ROSS : Officers behind with BUSHY and GREEN, Prisoners.*

*Boling.* Bring forth these men.—

Bushy, and Green, I will not vex your souls  
(Since presently your souls must part your bodies.)

With too much urging your pernicious lives,

For 'twere no charity : yet, to wash your blood  
From off my hands, here, in the view of men,  
I will unfold some causes of your death.

You have misled a prince, a royal king,  
A happy gentleman in blood and lineaments,  
By you unhappied and disgrac'd clean.  
You have, in manner, with your sinful hours,  
Made a divorce betwixt his queen and him,  
Broke the possession of a royal bed,  
And stain'd the beauty of a fair queen's cheeks  
With tears drawn from her eyes by your foul wrongs.

Myself—a prince, by fortune of my birth,  
Near to the king in blood, and near in love,  
Till you did make him misinterpret me,—  
Have stoop'd my neck under your injuries,  
And sigh'd my English breath in foreign clouds,

Eating the bitter bread of banishment ;  
Whilst you have fed upon my signories,  
Disparc'd my parks, and sell'd my forest woods ;

From my own windows torn my household coat,†

Raz'd out my impress,‡ leaving me no sign,  
Save men's opinions, and my living blood,  
To show the world I am a gentleman.

This, and much more, much more than twice  
all this,

Condemns you to the death :—See them deliver'd  
over

To execution and the hand of death.

*Bushy.* More welcome is the stroke of death  
to me,

Than Bolingbroke to England.—Lords, farewell.

*Green.* My comfort is,—that heaven will take  
our souls,

And plague injustice with the pains of hell.

*Boling.* My lord Northumberland, see them  
despatch'd.

[*Exeunt NORTHUMBERLAND and others, with Prisoners.*]

Uncle, you say, the queen is at your house ;  
For heaven's sake, fairly let her be entreated :

Tell her, I send to her my kind commendments ;§  
Take special care my greetings be deliver'd.

*York.* A gentleman of mine I have despatch'd  
With letters of your love to her at large.

*Boling.* Thanks, gentle uncle.—Come, lords,  
away :

To fight with Glendower and his complices ;  
Awhile to work, and, after, holiday. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II.—The Coast of Wales.—A castle in view.

*Flourish : Drums and Trumpets. Enter King RICHARD, Bishop of CARLISLE, AUMERLE, and Soldiers.*

*K. Rich.* Baulkously castle call you this at  
hand ?

*Aum.* Yea, my lord : how brooks your grace  
the air,

After late tossing on the breaking seas ?

*K. Rich.* Needs must I like it well : I weep  
for joy.

To stand upon my kingdom once again.—  
Dear earth, I do salute thee with my hand,

Though rebels wound thee with their horses' hoofs :

As a long parted mother with her child  
Plays fondly with her tears, and smiles in  
meeting ;

So, weeping, smiling, greet I thee, my earth,  
And do thee favour with my royal hands.

Feed not thy sovereign's foe, my gentle earth,  
Nor with thy sweets comfort his ravenous sense ;

But let thy spiders, that suck up thy venom,  
And heavy-gaited toads, lie in their way ;

Doing annoyance to the treacherous feet,  
Which with usurping steps do trample thee.

\* Completely.

† Thrown down the hedges.

‡ Of arms.

§ Motto.

¶ Commendations.

Yield stinging nettles to mine enemies ;  
And when they from thy bosom pluck a flower,  
Guard it, I pray thee, with a lurking adder ;  
Whose double tongue may with a mortal touch  
Throw death upon thy sovereign's enemies.—  
Mock not my senseless conjuration, lords ;  
This earth shall have a feeling, and these stones  
Prove armed soldiers, ere her native king  
Shall falter under foul rebellious arms.

*Car.* Fear not, my lord ; that Power, that  
made you king,  
Hath power to keep you king in spite of all.  
The means that heaven yields must be embrac'd,

And not neglected ; else, if heaven would,  
And we will not, heaven's offer we refuse ;  
The proffer'd means of succour and redress.

*Aum.* He means, my lord, that we are too remiss ;  
Whilst Bolingbroke, through our security,  
Grows strong and great, in substance and in friends.

*K. Rich.* Discomfortable consin ! know'st thou not,

That when the searching eye of heaven is hid  
Behind the globe, and lights the lower world,  
Then thieves and robbers range abroad unseen,  
In murders and in outrage bloody here ;  
But when, from under this terrestrial ball,  
He fires the proud tops of the eastern pines,  
And darts his light through every guilty hole,  
Then murders, treasons, and detested sins,  
The cloak of night being pluck'd from off their backs,

Stand bare and naked, trembling at themselves ?

So when this thief, this traitor Bolingbroke,  
(Who all this while hath revel'd in the night,  
Whilst we were wand'ring with the antipodes,)  
Shall see us rising in our throne the east,  
His treasons will sit blushing in his face,  
Not able to endure the sight of day,  
But, self-affrighted, tremble at his sin.  
Not all the water in the rough rude sea  
Can wash the balm from an anointed king :  
The breath of worldly men cannot depose  
The deputy elected by the Lord ;  
For every man that Bolingbroke hath press'd,  
To lift shrewd steel against our golden crown,  
God for his Richard hath in heavenly pay  
A glorious angel : then, if angels fight,  
Weak men must fall ; for heaven still guards  
the right.

*Enter SALISBURY.*

Welcome, my lord ; How far off lies your power ?

*Sal.* Nor near, nor further off, my gracious lord,

Than this weak arm : Discomfort guides my tongue,

And bids me speak of nothing but despair.  
One day too late, I fear, my noble lord,  
Hath clouded all thy happy days on earth :  
O call back yesterday, bid time return,  
And thou shalt have twelve thousand fighting men !

To-day, to-day, unhappy day, too late,  
O'erthrows thy joys, friends, fortune, and thy state ;

For all the Welshmen, hearing thou wert dead,  
Are gone to Bolingbroke, dispers'd, and fled.

*Aum.* Comfort, my liege : why looks your grace so pale ?

*K. Rich.* But now, the blood of twenty thousand men

Did triumph in my face, and they are fled ;  
And, till so much blood thither come again,  
Have I not reason to look pale and dead ?  
All souls that will be safe, fly from my side ;  
For time hath set a blot upon my pride.

*Aum.* Comfort, my liege ; remember you you are.

*K. Rich.* I had forgot myself : Am I not king ?

Awake, thou sluggard majesty ! thou sleep'st.  
Is not the king's name forty thousand names ?  
Arm, arm, my name ! a puny subject strikes  
At thy great glory.—Look not to the ground,  
Ye favourites of a king : Are we not high ?  
High be our thoughts : I know my uncle's

York

Hath power enough to serve our turn. But who comes here ?

*Enter SCROOP.*

*Scroop.* More health and happiness betide my liege,

Than can my care-tun'd tongue deliver him.

*K. Rich.* Mine ear is open, and my heart prepar'd ;

The worst is worldly loss, thou canst unfold.  
Say, is my kingdom lost ? why, 'twas my care ;  
And what loss is it, to be rid of care ?  
Strives Bolingbroke to be as great as we ?  
Greater he shall not be ; if he serve God,  
We'll serve him too, and be his fellow so :  
Revolt our subjects ? that we cannot mend ;  
They break their faith to God, as well as us :  
Cry woe, destruction, ruin, loss, decay ;  
The worst is—death, and death will have his day.

*Scroop.* Glad am I that your highness is so arm'd

To bear the tidings of calamity.

Like an unseasonable stormy day,  
Which makes the silver rivers drown their shores,

As if the world were all dissolv'd to tears ;  
So high above his limits swells the rage  
Of Bolingbroke, covering your fearful land  
With hard bright steel, and hearts harder than steel.

White-beards have arm'd their thin and hairless scalps

Against thy majesty ; boys, with women's voices,

Strive to speak big, and clap their female joints  
In stiff unwieldy arms against thy crown :  
Thy very badsmen learn to bend their bows  
Of double-fatal yew against thy state ;  
Yea, distaff-women manage rusty bills  
Against thy seat : both young and old rebel,  
And all goes worse than I have power to tell.

*K. Rich.* Too well, too well, thou tell'st a tale so ill.

Where is the earl of Wiltshire ? where is Eagon ?

What is become of Busby ? where is Green ?

That they have let the dangerous enemy

Measure our confines with such peaceful steps ?

If we prevail, their heads shall pay for it.

I warrant they have made peace with Bolingbroke.

*Scroop.* Peace have they made with him, indeed, my lord.

*K. Rich.* O villains, vipers, damn'd without redemption !

Dogs, easily won to fawn on any man !  
Snakes, in my heart-blood warm'd, that sting my heart !

Three Judasses, each one thrice worse than Judas !

Would they make peace ? terrible hell make war

Upon their spotted souls for this offence !

*Scroop.* Sweet love, I see, changing his property,

Turns to the sourest and most deadly hate :—

Again curse their souls ; their peace is made  
With heads, and not with hands : those whom  
you curse, [found,

Have felt the worst of death's destroying  
And lie full low, grav'd in the hollow ground.

*Aum.* Is Busby, Green, and the earl of Wiltshire, dead ?

*Scroop.* Yea, all of them at Bristol lost their heads.

*Aum.* Where is the duke my father with his power ?

*K. Rich.* No matter where; of comfort no man speak;  
Let's talk of graves, of worms, and epitaphs;  
Make dust our paper, and with rainy eyes  
Write sorrow on the bosom of the earth.  
Let's choose executors, and talk of wills:  
And yet not so,—for what can we bequeath,  
Save our deposed bodies to the ground?  
Our lands, our lives, and all are Bolingbroke's  
And nothing can we call our own, but death;  
And that small model of the barren earth,  
Which serves as paste and cover to our bones.  
For heaven's sake, let us sit upon the ground,  
And tell sad stories of the death of kings:—  
How some have been depos'd, some slain in war;

Some haunted by the ghosts they have depos'd;  
Some poison'd by their wives, some sleeping kill'd;

All murder'd:—For within the hollow crown,  
That rounds the mortal temples of a king,  
Keeps death his court; and there the antic sits,

Scorning his state, and grinning at his pomp;  
Allowing him a breath, a little scene  
To monarchize, be fear'd, and kill with looks;  
Infusing him with self and vain conceit,  
As it this flesh, which walls about our life,  
Were brass impregnable; and, humour'd thus,  
Comes at the last, and with a little pin  
Bores through his castle wall, and—farewell king!

Cover your heads, and mock not flesh and blood  
With solemn reverence; throw away respect,  
Tradition, form, and ceremonious duty,  
For you have but mistook me all this while:  
I live with bread like you, feel want, taste grief,

Need friends:—Subjected thus,  
How can you say to me—I am a king?  
*Car.* My lord, wise men ne'er wall their present woes,  
But presently prevent the ways to wail.

To fear the foe, since fear oppresseth strength,  
Gives, in your weakness, strength unto your foe;  
And so your follies fight against yourself.  
Fear, and be slain; no worse can come, to fight:

And fight and die, is death destroying death;  
While fearing dying, pays death servile breath.  
*Aum.* My father hath a power, enquire of him;

And learn to make a body of a limb.  
*K. Rich.* Thou chid'st me well:—Proud Bolingbroke I come

To change blows with thee for our day of doom.  
Theague-fit of fear is over-blown  
An easy task it is, to win our own.—  
Say, Scroop, where lies our uncle with his power?

Speak sweetly, man, although thy looks be sour.  
*Scroop.* Men judge by the complexion of the sky

The state and inclination of the day:  
So may you by my dull and heavy eye,  
My tongue hath but a heavier tale to say.

I play the torturer by small and small,  
To lengthen out the worst that must be spoken:  
Your uncle York hath join'd with Bolingbroke;  
And all your northern castles yielded up,  
And all your southern gentlemen in arms  
Upon his party.

*K. Rich.* Thou hast said enough.—  
Besbrew thee, cousin, which did'st lead me forth  
[To Aumerle.]

Of that sweet way I was in to despair!  
What say you now? What comfort have we now?  
By heaven I'll hate him everlastingly,

\* Part.

† Ill betide.

That bids me be of comfort any more.  
Go to Flint castle; there I'll pine away;  
A king, woe's slave, shall kingly woe obey.  
That power \* I have, discharge; and let them go

To ear † the land that hath some hope to grow,  
For I have none.—Let no man speak again  
To alter this, for counsel is but vain.

*Aum.* My liege, one word.  
*K. Rich.* He does me double wrong,  
That wounds me with the flatteries of his tongue.

Discharge my followers, let them hence;—  
Away,  
From Richard's night, to Bolingbroke's fair day.  
[Exeunt.]

## SCENE III.—Wales.—Before Flint Castle.

*Enter, with Drum and Colours, BOLINGBROKE, and Forces; YORK, NORTHUMBERLAND, and others.*

*Boling.* So that by this intelligence we learn,  
The Welshmen are dispers'd; and Salisbury  
Is gone to meet the king, who lately landed,  
With some few private friends, upon this coast.

*North.* The news is very fair and good, my lord;  
Richard, not far from hence, hath hid his head.

*York.* It would beseem the lord Northumberland,  
To say—king Richard:—Alack the heavy day,  
When such a sacred king should hide his head!

*North.* Your grace mistakes me; only to be brief,  
Left I his title out.

*York.* The time hath been,  
Would you have been so brief with him, he would

Have been so brief with you, to shorten you,  
For taking so the head, ‡ your whole head's length.

*Boling.* Mistake not, uncle, further than you should.

*York.* Take not, good cousin, further than you should,  
Lest you mistake: The heavens are o'er your head.

*Boling.* I know it, uncle; and oppose not  
Myself against their will.—But who comes here?

## Enter PERCY.

Well, Harry; what, will not this castle yield  
*Percy.* The castle royally is mann'd, my lord,  
Against thy entrance.

*Boling.* Royally!  
Why, it contains no king?

*Percy.* Yes, my good lord,  
It doth contain a king; king Richard lies  
Within the limits of yon lime and stone:  
And with him are the lord Aumerle, lord Salisbury,

Sir Stephen Scroop, besides a clergyman  
Of holy reverence; who, I cannot learn.

*North.* Believe it, is the bishop of Carlisle.  
*Boling.* Noble lord, [To NORTH.]  
Go to the rude ribs of that ancient castle;  
Through broken brass trumpet send the breath of  
[parle]

Into his ruin'd ears, and thus deliver.  
Harry Bolingbroke  
On both his knees doth kiss king Richard's  
hand;

And sends allegiance, and true faith of heart,  
To his most royal person; hither come  
Even at his feet to lay my arms and power;

Provided that, my banishment repeal'd,  
And lands restor'd again, be freely granted:  
If not, I'll use the advantage of my power

\* Force.

† Plough.

‡ Short.

§ Such liberty

¶ Parly.

And lay the summer's dust with showers of blood,  
Rain'd from the wounds of slaughter'd English-  
men :

The which, how far off from the mind of Bol-  
ingbroke

It is, such crimson tempest should bedrench  
The fresh green lap of fair king Richard's land,  
My stooping duty tenderly shall show.  
Go, signify as much ; while here we march  
Upon the grassy carpet of this plain.—

[NORTHUMBERLAND advances to the  
Castle, with a Trumpet.

Let's march without the noise of threat'ning  
drum,

That from the castle's totter'd battlements  
Our fair appointments may be well perus'd.  
Methinks, king Richard and myself should  
meet

With no less terror than the elements  
Of fire and water, when their thund'ring shock  
At meeting tears the cloudy cheeks of heaven.  
Be he the fire, I'll be the yielding water :  
The rage be his, while on the earth I rain  
My waters ; on the earth, and not on him.  
March on, and mark king Richard how he  
looks.

*A parle sounded, and answered by another  
Trumpet within. Flourish. Enter on the  
walls King RICHARD, the Bishop of CAR-  
LISLE, AUMERLE, SCHOOR, and SALISBURY.*

*York.* See, see, king Richard doth himself  
appear,

As doth the blushing discontented sun  
From out the fiery portal of the east ;  
When he perceives the envious clouds are bent  
To dim his glory, and to stain the track  
Of his bright passage to the occident.  
Yet looks he like a king ; behold, his eye,  
As bright as is the eagle's, lightens forth  
Controlling majesty ; Alack, alack, for woe,  
That any harm should stain so fair a show !

*K. Rich.* We are amaz'd ; and thus long have  
we stood

To watch the fearful bending of thy knee,  
[To NORTHUMBERLAND.

Because we thought ourself thy lawful king ;  
And if we be, how dare thy joints forget  
To pay their awful duty to our presence ?  
If we be not, show us the hand of God  
That hath dismiss'd us from our stewardship ;  
For well we know, no hand of blood and bone  
Can gripe the sacred handle of our sceptre,  
Unless he do profane, steal, or usurp.  
And though you think, that all, as you have  
done,

Have torn their souls, by turning them from  
us,

And we are barren, and bereft of friends ;—  
Yet know,—my master, God omnipotent,  
Is mustering in his clouds, in our behalf,  
Armies of pestilence ; and they shall strike  
Your children yet unborn and unbegot,  
That lift your vassal hands against my head,  
And threaten the glory of my precious crown.  
Tell Bolingbroke, (for yond methinks he is,)  
That every stride he makes upon my land,  
Is dangerous treason : He is come to ope  
The purple testament of bleeding war ;  
But e'er the crown he looks for live in peace,  
Ten thousand bloody crowns of mothers' sons  
Shall ill become the flower of England's face ;  
Change the complexion of her maid-pale peace  
To scarlet indignation, and bedew  
Her pastures' grass with faithful English blood.

*North.* The king of heaven forbid, our lord  
the king.

Should so with civil and uncivil arms  
Be rush'd upon ! Thy thrice-noble cousin,  
Harry Bolingbroke, doth humbly kiss thy hand ;  
And by the honourable tomb he swears,  
That stands upon thy royal grandsire's bones ;

• Soil.

And by the royalties of both your bloods,  
Currents that spring from one most gracious  
head ;

And by the buried hand of warlike Gaunt ;  
And by the worth and honour of himself,  
Comprising all that may be sworn or said,—  
His coming hither hath no further scope,  
Than for his lineal royalties, and to beg  
Enfranchisement immediate on his knees :  
Which on thy royal party granted once,  
His glittering arms he will commend \* to rust,  
His barbed steeds to stables, and his heart  
To faithful service of your majesty,  
This swears he, as he is a prince, is just ;  
And, as I am a gentleman, I credit him.

*K. Rich.* Northumberland, say,—thus the  
king returns :—

His noble cousin is right welcome hither ;  
And all the number of his fair demands  
Shall be accomplish'd without contradiction :  
With all the gracious utterance thou hast  
Speak to his gentle hearing kind commendations.—  
We do debase ourself, cousin, do we not,

[To AUMERLE.  
To look so poorly, and to speak so fair ?  
Shall we call back Northumberland, and send  
Defiance to the traitor, and so die ?

*Aum.* No, good my lord ; let's fight with gen-  
tle words,  
Till time lend friends, and friends their helpful  
swords.

*K. Rich.* O God ! O God ! that e'er this  
tongue of mine,  
That laid the sentence of dread banishment  
On yon proud man, should take it off again  
With words of sooth ! O, that I were as great  
As is my grief, or lesser than my name !  
Or that I could forget what I have been !  
Or not remember what I must be now !  
Swell'st thou, proud heart ? I'll give thee scope  
to beat,  
Since foes have scope to beat both thee and  
me.

*Aum.* Northumberland comes back from Bol-  
ingbroke.

*K. Rich.* What must the king do now ? Must  
he submit ?

The king shall do it. Must he be depos'd ?  
The king shall be contented : Must he lose  
The name of king ? O God's name, let it go :  
I'll give my jewels, for a set of beads ;  
My gorgeous palace, for a hermitage ;  
My gay apparel, for an alms-man's gown ;  
My figur'd goblets, for a dish of wood ;  
My sceptre, for a palmer's walking staff ;  
My subjects, for a pair of carved saints ;  
And my large kingdom, for a little grave,  
A little little grave, an obscure grave :—  
Or I'll be buried in the king's highway,  
Some way of common trade, where subjects' <sup>feet</sup>

May hourly trample on their sovereign's head :  
For on my heart they tread, now whilst I  
live ;

And, buried once, why not upon my head ?—  
Aumerle, thou weep'st ; My tender-hearted  
cousin—

We'll make foul weather with despised tears ;  
Our sighs and they shall lodge the summer  
corn,

And make a dearth in this revolting land.  
Or shall we play the wantons with our woes,  
And make some pretty match with shedding  
tears ?

As thus :—To drop them still upon one place,  
Till they have fretted us a pair of graves  
Within the earth ; and, therein laid,—*There  
lies*

*Two kinsmen, digg'd their graves with weep-  
ing eyes*

Would not this ill do well ?—Well, well, I  
see

I talk but idly, and you mock at me.—

• Commis.

† Soften-s.

Most mighty prince, my lord Northumberland,  
What says king Bolingbroke? will his majesty  
Give Richard leave to live till Richard die?  
You make a leg,\* and Bolingbroke says—ay.

*North.* My lord, in the base† court he doth  
attend [down?]  
To speak with you; may't please you to come  
*K. Rich.* Down, down, I come; like glister-  
ing Phaeton,  
Wanting the manage of unruly jades.

[*NORTH. retires to BOLING.*  
In the base court? Base court, where kings  
grow base,  
To come at traitors' calls, and do them grace.  
In the base court? Come down? Down, court!  
down, king!

For night-owls shriek, where mounting larks  
should sing. [*Exeunt, from above.*

*Boling.* What says his majesty?  
*North.* Sorrow and grief of heart  
Makes him speak foully,‡ like a frantic man:  
Yet he is come.

*Enter King RICHARD, and his Attendants below.*

*Boling.* Stand all apart,  
And show fair duty to his majesty.—  
My gracious lord,— [*Kneeling.*

*K. Rich.* Fair cousin, you debase your prince-  
ly knee,  
To make the base earth proud with kissing it;  
Me rather had, my heart might feel your love,  
Than my unpleas'd eye see your courtesies.  
Up, cousin, up; your heart is up, I know,  
Thus high at least, [*Touching his own head.*  
although your knee be low.

*Boling.* My gracious lord, I come but for  
mine own.

*K. Rich.* Your own is your's, and I am your's,  
and all.

*Boling.* So far be mine, my most redoubted  
lord,

As my true service shall deserve your love.  
*K. Rich.* Well you deserve:—They well de-  
serve to have, [get.—

That know the strong'st and surest way to  
Uncle, give me your hand: nay, dry your eyes;  
Tears show their love, but want their reime-  
dies.—

Cousin, I am too young to be your father,  
Though you are old enough to be my heir.  
What you will have, I'll give, and willing too;  
For do we must, what force will have us do.—  
Set on towards London:—Cousin, is it so?

*Boling.* Yea, my good lord.  
*K. Rich.* Then I must not say, no.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—Langley.—The Duke of YORK'S  
Garden.

*Enter the QUEEN, and two LADIES.*

*Queen.* What sport shall we devise here in  
this garden,

To drive away the heavy thought of care?  
*1 Lady.* Madam, we'll play at bowls.

*Queen.* 'Twill make me think,  
The world is full of rubs, and that my fortune  
Runs 'gainst the bias.§

*1 Lady.* Madam, we will dance.  
*Queen.* My legs can keep no measure in de-  
light,

When my poor heart no measure keeps in  
grief:

Therefore, no dancing, girl; some other sport.

*1 Lady.* Madam, we'll tell tales.  
*Queen.* Of sorrow or of joy?

*1 Lady.* Of either, madam.

*Queen.* Of neither, girl.  
For if of joy, being altogether wanting,  
It doth remember me the more of sorrow;

Or if of grief, being altogether had,  
It adds more sorrow to my want of joy:  
For what I have, I need not to repeat;  
And what I want, it hoots\* not to complain.

*1 Lady.* Madam, I'll sing.  
*Queen.* 'Tis well that thou hast cause;  
But thou should'st please me better, would'st  
thou weep.

*1 Lady.* I could weep, madam, would it do  
you good.

*Queen.* And I could weep, would weeping do  
me good,  
And never borrow any tear of thee.  
But stay, here come the gardeners:  
Let's step into the shadow of these trees.—

*Enter a GARDENER, and two SERVANTS.*

My wretchedness unto a row of pins,  
They'll talk of state; for every one doth so  
Against a change: Woe is forerun with woe.

[*QUEEN AND LADIES retire.*  
*Gard.* Go, bind thou up you' dangling apri-  
cocks,

Which, like unruly children, make their sire  
Stoop with oppression of their prodigal weight;  
Give some suppittance to the bending twigs.—  
Go thou, and like an executioner,  
Cut off the heads of too-fast-growing sprays,  
That look too lofty in our commonwealth:  
All must be even in our government.—  
You thus employ'd, I will go root away  
The noisome weeds, that without prunt suck  
The soil's fertility from wholesome flowers.

*1 Serv.* Why should we in the compass of a  
pale,†

Keep law, and form, and due proportion,  
Showing, as in a model, our firm estate?  
When our sea-walled garden, the whole land,  
Is full of weeds; her fairest flowers chok'd up,  
Her fruit-trees all unprun'd, her hedges ruin'd,  
Her knots‡ disorder'd, and her wholesome  
herbs

Swarming with caterpillars?

*Gard.* Hold thy peace:—  
He that hath suffer'd this disorder'd spring,  
Hath now himself met with the fall of leaf:  
The weeds that his broad-spreading leaves did  
shelter,

That seem'd in eating him to hold him up,  
Are pluck'd up, root and all, by Bolingbroke  
I mean, the earl of Wiltshire, lushy, Green.

*1 Serv.* What, are they dead?  
*Gard.* They are; and Bolingbroke  
Hath seiz'd the wasteful king.—Oh! What  
pity is it, [land,

That he had not so trimm'd and dress'd his  
As we this garden! We at time of year  
Do wound the bark, the skil of our fruit-trees;  
Lest being over-proud with sap and blood,  
With too much riches it confound itself:  
Had he done so to great and growing men,  
They might have liv'd to bear, and he to taste  
Their fruits of duty. All superfluous branches  
We lop away, that bearing boughs may live:  
Had he done so, himself had borne the crown,  
Which waste of idle hours hath quite thrown  
down.

*1 Serv.* What think you then the king shall  
be depos'd?

*Gard.* Depress'd he is already; and depos'd,  
'Tis doubt,§ he will be: Letters came last  
night

To a dear friend of the good duke of York's,  
That tell black tidings.

*Queen.* O I am press'd to death,  
Through want of speaking!—Thou, old Adam's like-  
ness, [*Coming from her concealment.*  
Set to dress this garden, how darest  
Thy harsh-rude tongue sound this unpleasing  
news?

What Eve, what serpent, hath suggested thee  
To make a second fall of cursed man?

\* A bow. † Lower. ‡ Foolishly.  
§ A weight fixed on one side of the bowl which turns  
it from the straight line.

• Profits. † Inclosure. ‡ Figures planted in box.  
§ No doubt



Why dost thou say King Richard is depos'd?  
 Dar'st thou, thou little better thing than earth,  
 Divine his downfall? Say, where, when, and  
 how, [wretch.]

Cam'st thou by these ill tidings? speak, thou  
*Gard.* Pardon me, madam: little joy have I,  
 To breathe this news; yet, what I say, is true.  
 King Richard, he is in the mighty hold  
 Of Bolinbroke; their fortunes both are weigh'd:  
 In your lord's scale is nothing but himself,  
 And some few vanities that make him light;  
 But in the balance of great Bolingbroke,  
 Besides himself, are all the English peers,  
 And with that odds he weighs King Richard  
 down.

Post you to London, and you'll find it so;  
 I speak no more than every one doth know.

*Queen.* Nimble mischance, that art so light  
 of foot,

Doth not thy embassy belong to me,  
 And am I last that knows it? O thou think'st  
 To serve me last, that I may longest keep  
 Thy sorrow in my breast.—Come, ladies, go,  
 To meet at London London's king in woe.—  
 What, was I born to this! that my sad look  
 Should grace the triumph of great Boling-  
 broke?—

*Gardener,* for telling me this news of woe,  
 I would the plants thou graft'st may never grow.

[*Exit* QUEEN AND LADIES.]

*Gard.* Poor queen! I so that thy state might  
 be no worse,

I would my skill were subject to thy curse.—  
 Here did she drop a tear; here, in this place,  
 I'll set a bank of rue, sour herb of grace.

Rue, even for ruth,\* here shortly shall be seen,  
 In the remembrance of a weeping queen.

[*Exit*.]

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—London.—Westminster Hall.

*The Lords spiritual on the right side of the  
 Throne; the Lords temporal on the left;  
 the Commons below. Enter BOLINGBROKE,  
 AUMERLE, SURREY, NORTHUMBERLAND,  
 PERCY, FITZWATER, another LORD, Bishop  
 of Carlisle, Abbot of Westminster,  
 and Attendants. Officers behind, with  
 BAGOT.*

*Boling.* Call forth Bagot:—

Now, Bagot, freely speak thy mind;  
 What thou dost know of noble Gloster's death;  
 Who wrought it with the king, and who per-  
 form'd

The bloody office of his timeless end.

*Bagot.* Then set before my face the lord Au-  
 merle.

*Boling.* Cousin, stand forth, and look upon  
 that man.

*Bagot.* My lord Aumerle, I know your dar-  
 ing tongue

Scorns to unsay what once it hath deliver'd.  
 In that dead time when Gloster's death was  
 plotted,

I heard you say,—*Is not my arm of length,  
 That reacheth from the restless English court  
 As far as Calais, to my uncle's head?*

Amongst much other talk, that very time,  
 I heard you say, that you had rather refuse  
 The offer of a hundred thousand crowns,

Than Bolingbroke's return to England;

Adding withal, how blest this land would be,  
 In this your cousin's death.

*Aum.* Prince, and noble lords,

What answer shall I make to this base man?  
 Shall I so much dishonour my fair stars,  
 On equal terms to give him chastisement?

Either I must or have mine honour soil'd  
 With the attainer of his slanderous lips.—

\* Pity.

† Untimely.

There is my gage, the manual seal of death,  
 That marks thee out for hell: I say thou liest,  
 And wilt maintain what thou hast said is false,  
 In thy heart-blood, though being all too base  
 To stain the temper of my knightly sword.

*Boling.* Bagot, forbear, thou shalt not take  
 it up.

*Aum.* Excepting one, I would he were the  
 best

In all this presence, that hath mov'd me so.

*Fitz.* If that thy valour stand on sympathies  
 There is my gage, Aumerle, in gage to thine:

By that fair sun that shows me where thou  
 stand'st,

I heard thee say, and vauntingly thou spak'st it,  
 That thou wert cause of noble Gloster's death.

If thou deny'st it, twenty times thou liest;  
 And I will turn thy falsehood to thy heart,  
 Where it was forged, with my rapier's point.

*Aum.* Thou dar'st not, coward, live to see  
 that day.

*Fitz.* Now, by my soul, I would it were this  
 hour.

*Aum.* Fitzwater, thou art damn'd to hell for  
 this.

*Percy.* Aumerle, thou liest; his honour is as  
 true,

In this appeal, as thou art all unjust;  
 And, that thou art so, there I throw my gage,

To prove it on thee to the extremest point  
 Of mortal breathing: seize it, if thou dar'st.

*Aum.* And if I do not, may my hands rot off,  
 And never brandish more revengeful steel  
 Over the glittering helmet of my foe!

*Lord.* I take the earth to the like, forsworn  
 Aumerle;

And spur thee on with full as many lies  
 As may be holla'd in thy treacherous ear.

From sun to sun: there is my honour's pawn;  
 Engage it to the trial, if thou dar'st.

*Aum.* Who sets me else? by heaven, I'll  
 throw at all;

I have a thousand spirits in one breast,  
 To answer twenty thousand such as you.

*Surrey.* My lord Fitzwater, I do remember  
 well

The very time Aumerle and you did talk.

*Fitz.* My lord, 'tis true: you were in presence  
 then;

And you can witness with me, this is true.

*Surrey.* As false, by heaven, as heaven itself  
 is true,

*Fitz.* Surrey, thou liest.

*Surrey.* Dishonourable boy!

That he shall lie so heavy on my sword,  
 That it shall render vengeance and revenge,

Till thou the lie-giver, and that he, do lie  
 In earth as quiet as thy father's scull.

In proof whereof, there is my honour's pawn;  
 Engage it to the trial if thou dar'st.

*Fitz.* How fondly dost thou spur a forward  
 horse?

If I dare eat, or drink, or breathe, or live,  
 I dare meet Surrey in a wilderness,

And spit upon him, whilst I say he lies,  
 And lies, and lies: there is my bond of faith,

To tie thee to my strong correction.—  
 As I intend to thrive in this new world,

Aumerle is guilty of my true appeal:

Besides, I heard the banish'd Norfolk say,  
 That thou, Aumerle, didst send two of thy men  
 To execute the noble duke at Calais.

*Aum.* Some honest Christian trust me with a  
 gage,

That Norfolk lies: here do I throw down this,  
 If he may be repeal'd to try his honour.

*Boling.* These differences shall all rest under  
 gage,

Till Norfolk be repeal'd: repeal'd he shall be,  
 And, though mine enemy, restor'd again

To all his land and signories; when he's re-  
 turn'd,

Against Aumerle we will enforce his trial.

*Car.* That honourable day shall ne'er be  
 seen.—

Many a time hath banish'd Norfolk fought  
For Jesu Christ, in glorious Christian field,  
Streaming the ensign of the Christian cross,  
Against black Pagans, Turks, and Saracens;  
And, toil'd with works of war, retir'd himself  
To Italy; and there, at Venice, gave  
His body to that pleasant country's earth,  
And his pure soul unto his captain Christ,  
Under whose colours he had fought so long

*Boling.* Why, bishop, is Norfolk dead?  
*Car.* As sure as I live, my lord.

*Boling.* Sweet peace conduct his sweet soul  
to the bosom  
Of good old Abraham!—Lords appellants,  
Your differences shall all rest under gage,  
Till we assign you to your days of trial.

*Enter York, attended.*

*York.* Great duke of Lancaster, I come to  
thee  
From plume-pluck'd Richard; who with willing  
soul  
Adopts thee heir, and his high sceptre yields  
To the possession of thy royal hand:  
Ascend his throne, descending now from him,—  
And long live Henry, of that name the fourth!

*Boling.* In God's name, I'll ascend the regal  
throne.

*Car.* Marry, God forbid!—  
Wist in this royal presence may I speak,  
Yet best becoming me to speak the truth.  
Would God, that any in this noble presence  
Were enough noble to be upright judge  
Of noble Richard; then true nobless\* would  
Learn him forbearance from so foul a wrong.  
What subject can give sentence on his king?  
And who sits here, that is not Richard's sub-  
ject?

Thieves are not judg'd, but they are by to hear,  
Although apparent guilt be seen in them:  
And shall the figure of God's majesty,  
His captain, steward, deputy elect,  
Anointed, crowned, planted many years,  
Be judg'd by subject and inferior breath,  
And be himself not present? O forbid it, God,  
That, in a Christian climate, souls refin'd  
Should show so heinous, black, obscene a deed!  
I speak to subjects, and a subject speaks,  
Stirr'd up by heaven thus boldly for his king.  
My lord of Hereford here, whom you call king,  
Is a foul traitor to proud Hereford's king:  
And if you crown him, let me prophesy,—  
The blood of English shall manure the ground,  
And future ages groan for this foul act;  
Peace shall go sleep with Turks and infidels,  
And, in this seat of peace, tumultuous wars  
Shall kin with kin, and kind with kind con-  
found?

Disorder, horror, fear, and mutiny,  
Shall here inhabit, and this land be call'd  
The field of Golgotha, and dead men's skulls.  
Oh! if you rear this house against this house,  
It will the woofest division prove,  
That ever fell upon this cursed earth:  
Prevent, resist it, let it not be so,  
Lest child, child's children, cry against you—  
woe!

*North.* We'll have you argu'd, Sir; and for  
your pains,  
Of capital treason we arrest you here:—  
My lord of Westminster, be it your charge  
To keep him safely till his day of trial.—  
May't please you, lords, to grant the commons'  
suit.

*Boling.* Fetch hither Richard, that in common  
view

He may surrender; so we shall proceed  
Without suspicion.

*York.* I will be his conduct.

[*Exit.*

*Boling.* Lords, you that are here under our  
arrest,

\* Nobleness.

† This Bishop of Carlisle was the only person who  
had the courage or the virtue to speak in behalf of an  
old master.

Procure your sureties for your days of answer:—  
Little are we beholden to your love, [To CAR-  
LISLE.]

And little look'd for at your helping hands.

*Re-enter York, with King RICHARD, and  
Officers bearing the Crown, &c.*

*K. Rich.* Alack, why am I sent for to a king,  
Before I have shook off the regal thoughts  
Wherewith I reign'd? I hardly yet have learn'd  
To insinuate, flatter, bow, and bend my knee;—  
Give sorrow leave a while to tutor me  
To this submission. Yet I well remember  
The favours\* of these men: Were they not  
mine?

Did they not sometime cry, all hail! to me?  
So Judas did to Christ: but he, in twelve,  
Found truth in all, but one: I, in twelve thou-  
sands, none.

God save the king!—Will no man say, amen?  
Am I both priest and clerk? well then, amen.  
God save the king! although I be not he:  
And yet amen, if heaven do think him me.—  
To do what service am I sent for hither?

*York.* To do that office, of thine own good  
will,  
Which tired majesty did make thee offer,—  
The resignation of thy state and crown  
To Henry Bolingbroke.

*K. Rich.* Give me the crown:—Here, cousin,  
seize the crown;  
Here, on this side, my hand; on that side,  
thine.

Now is this golden crown like a deep well,  
That owes† two buckets filling one another;  
The emptier ever dancing in the air,  
The other down, unseen, and full of water:  
That bucket down, and full of tears, am I,  
Drinking my grief, whilst you mount up on high.

*Boling.* I thought you had been willing to re-  
sign.

*K. Rich.* My crown, I am; but still my griefs  
are mine;  
You may my glories and my state depose,  
But not my griefs: still am I king of those.

*Boling.* Part of your cares you give me with  
your crown.

*K. Rich.* Your cares set up, do not pluck my  
cares down.

My care is—loss of care, by old care done;  
Your care is—gain of care, by new care won:  
The cares I give, I have, though given away;  
They tend† the crown, yet still with me they  
stay.

*Boling.* Are you contented to resign the  
crown?

*K. Rich.* Ay, no;—no, ay; for I must no  
thing be!

Therefore no, no, for I resign to thee.  
Now mark me how I will undo myself:—  
I give this heavy weight from off my head,  
And this unwieldy sceptre from my hand;  
The pride of kingly sway from out my heart;  
With mine own tears I wash away my balm,‡  
With mine own hands I give away my crown,  
With mine own tongue deny my sacred state,  
With mine own breath release all dangerous  
oaths;

All pomp and majesty I do forswear;  
My manors, rents, revenues, I forego;  
My acts, decrees, and statutes, I deny:  
God pardon all oaths that are broke to me!  
God keep all vows unbroke, are made to thee!  
Make me, that nothing have, with nothing  
griev'd;

And thou with all pleas'd, that hast all achiev'd!  
Long may'st thou live in Richard's seat to sit,  
And soon lie Richard in an earthly pit!  
God save king Henry, unking'd Richard says,  
And send him many years of sunshine days!—  
What more remains?

\* Countenances.

† Owes. ‡ Attend.

§ Oil of consecration.

*North.* No more, but that you read

[*Offering a Paper.*  
These accusations, and these grievous crimes,  
Committed by your person and your followers,  
Against the state and profit of this land;  
That, by confessing them, the souls of men  
May deem that you are worthily depos'd.

*K. Rich.* Must I do so? and must I ravel  
out

My weav'd-up follies? Gentle Northumberland,  
If thy offences were upon record,  
Would it not shame thee in so fair a troop,  
To read a lecture of them? If thou would'st,  
There should'st thou find one heinous article,—  
Containing the deposing of a king,  
And cracking the strong warrant of an oath,—  
Mark'd with a blot, damu'd in the book of  
heaven:—

Nay, all of you, that stand and look upon me,  
Whilst that my wretchedness doth bait my-  
self,—

Though some of you, with Pilate, wash your  
hands,  
Showing an outward pity: yet yon Pilates  
Have here deliver'd me to my sour cross,  
And water cannot wash away your sin,

*North.* My lord, despatch; read o'er these  
articles,

*K. Rich.* Mine eyes are full of tears, I cannot  
see:

And yet salt water blinds them not so much,

But they can see a sort \* of traitors here.

Nay, if I turn mine eyes upon myself,

I find myself a traitor with the rest:

For I have given here my soul's consent,

To undeck the pompous body of a king;

Make glory base; and sovereignty a slave;

Proud majesty a subject; stately a peasant.

*North.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* No lord of thine, thou haught,† in-  
sulting man,

Nor no man's lord; I have no name, no title,

No, not that name was given me at the font,—

But 'tis usurp'd:—Alack the heavy day,

That I have worn so many winters out,

And know not now what name to call myself!

O that I were a mockery king of snow,

Standing before the sun of Bolingbroke,

To melt myself away in water-drops!

Good king,—great king,—(and yet not greatly  
good,)

As if my word be sterling yet in England,

Let it command a mirror hither straight;

That it may show me what a face I have,

Since it is bankrupt of his majesty.

*Boling.* Go some of you, and fetch a looking-  
glass.

[*Exit an Attendant.*

*North.* Read o'er this paper, while the glass  
doth come.

*K. Rich.* Fiend! thou torment'st me ere I  
come to hell.

*Boling.* Urge it no more, my lord Northum-  
berland.

*North.* The commons will not then be satis-  
fied.

*K. Rich.* They shall be satisfied: I'll read  
enough,

When I do see the very book indeed

Where all my sins are writ, and that's—my-  
self.

*Re-enter Attendant, with a Glass.*

Give me that glass, and therein will I read.—

No deeper wrinkles yet? Hath sorrow struck

So many blows upon this face of mine,

And made no deeper wounds?—O flattering

glass,

Like to my followers in prosperity,

Thou dost beguile me! Was this face the face,

That every day under his household roof

Did keep ten thousand men? Was this the

face,

That, like the sun, did make beholders wink?

\* Pack.

† Haughty.

Was this the face, that fac'd so many follies,  
And was at last out-fac'd by Bolingbroke?  
A brittle glory sheweth in this face:

As brittle as the glory is the face:

• [*Dashes the glass against the ground.*

For there it is, crack'd in a hundred shivers.—

Mark, silent king, the moral of this sport,—

How soon my sorrow hath destroy'd my face.

*Boling.* The shadow of your sorrow hath

destroy'd

The shadow of your face.

*K. Rich.* Say that again.

The shadow of my sorrow? Ha! let's see:—

'Tis very true, my grief lies all within;

And these external manner of lament

Are merely shadows to the unseen grief,

That swells with silence in the tortur'd soul;

There lies the substance: and I thank thee, king,

For thy great bounty, that not only giv'st

Me cause to wail, but teachest me the way

How to lament the cause. I'll beg one boon,

And then be gone, and trouble you no more.

Shall I obtain it?

*Boling.* Name it, fair cousin.

*K. Rich.* Fair cousin? Why, I am greater than

a king:

For, when I was a king, my flatterers

Were then but subjects: being now a subject,

I have a king here to my flatterer.

Being so great, I have no need to beg.

*Boling.* Yet ask.

*K. Rich.* And shall I have?

*Boling.* You shall.

*K. Rich.* Then give me leave to go.

*Boling.* Whither?

*K. Rich.* Whither you will, so I were from

your sighs.

*Boling.* Go, some of you, convey him to the

Tower.

*K. Rich.* O good! Convey?—Conveyers \* are

you all,

That rise thus nimbly by a true king's fall.

[*Exit K. RICHARD, some Lords, and*

*a Guard.*

*Boling.* On Wednesday next, we solemnly set

down

Our coronation: lords, prepare yourselves.

[*Exit all but the Abbot, Bishop of*

*CARLISLE, and AUMERLE.*

*Abbot.* A woeful pageant have we here be-  
held.

*Car.* The woe's to come; the children yet un-  
born

Shall feel this day as sharp to them as thorn.

*Aum.* You holy clergymen, is there no plot

To rid the realm of this pernicious blot?

*Abbot.* Before I freely speak my mind herein,

You shall not only take the sacrament

To bury† mine intents, but to effect

Whatever I shall happen to devise:—

I see your brows are full of discontent,

Your hearts of sorrow, and your eyes of tears:

Come home with me to supper; I will lay

A plot, shall show us all a merry day.

[*Exit.*

# ACT V.

SCENE I.—London.—A Street leading to  
the Tower.

Enter QUEEN, and Ladies.

Queen. This way the king will come; this is  
the way

To Julius Cæsar's ill-erected tower;‡

To whose flint bosom my condemned lord

Is doom'd a prisoner, by proud Bolingbroke:

Here let us rest if this rebellious earth

Have any resting for her true king's queen.

\* Jugglers.

† Conceal.

‡ The tower of London is, traditionally, said to have  
been raised by Julius Cæsar.

*Enter King RICHARD, and Guards.*

But soft, but see, or rather do not see,  
My fair rose wither; Yet look up; behold;  
That you in pity may dissolve to dew,  
And wash him fresh again with true-love  
tears.—

Ah! thou, the model where old Troy did stand;  
Thou map\* of honour; thou king Richard's  
tomb

And not king Richard; thou most beauteous inn,  
Why should hard-favour'd grief be lodg'd in  
thee,

When triumph is become an ale-house guest?

*K. Rich.* Join not with grief, fair woman, do  
not so,

To make my end too sudden: learn, good soul,  
To think our former state a happy dream;  
From which awak'd, the truth of what we are  
Shows us but this; I am sworn brother, sweet,  
To grim necessity; and he and I  
Will keep a league till death. Hie thee to  
France,

And cloister thee in some religious house:  
Our holy lives must win a new world's crown,  
Which our profane hours here have stricken  
down.

*Queen.* What, is my Richard both in shape  
and mind

Transform'd and weakened? Hath Bolingbroke  
Depos'd thine intellect? hath he been in thy  
heart?

The lion, dying, thrusteth forth his paw,  
And wounds the earth, if nothing else, with  
rage

To be o'erpower'd; and wilt thou, pupil-like,  
Take thy correction mildly? kiss the rod;  
And fawn on rage with base humility,  
Which art a lion, and a king of beasts?

*K. Rich.* A king of beasts, indeed; if aught  
but beasts,

I had been still a happy king of men.  
Good sometime queen, prepare thee hence for  
France:

Think I am dead; and that even here thou  
tak'st,

As from my death-bed, my last living leave.  
In winter's tedious nights, sit by the fire  
With good old folks; and let them tell thee tales  
Of woful ages, long ago betid: †

And, ere thou bid good night, to quit ‡ their  
grief,

Tell thou the lamentable fall of me,  
And send the hearers weeping to their beds.  
For why, the senseless brands will sympathize  
The heav' accent of thy moving tongue,  
And, in compassion, weep the fire out:  
And some will mourn in ashes, some coal-black,  
For the deposing of a rightful king.

*Enter NORTHUMBERLAND attended.*

*North.* My lord, the mind of Bolingbroke is  
chang'd;

You must to Pomfret, not unto the Tower.—  
And, madam, there is order ta'en for you;  
With all swift speed you must away to France.

*K. Rich.* Northumberland, thou ladder where-  
withal

The mounting Bolingbroke ascends my throne,  
The time shall not be many hours of age  
More than it is, ere foul sin, gathering head,  
Shall break into corruption: thou shalt think,  
Though he divide the realm, and give thee half,  
It is too little, helping him to all;  
And he shall think that thou, which know'st the  
way

To plant unrightful kings, wilt know again,  
Being ne'er so little ur'd, another way

To pluck him headlong from the usurped  
throne.

The love of wicked friends converts to fear;  
That fear, to hate; and hate turns one, or both,  
To worthy danger, and deserved death.

\* Picture of greatness.

† Passed

‡ Be even with them.

*North.* My guilt be on my head, and there an  
end.

Take leave, and part; for you must part forth-  
with.

*K. Rich.* Doubly divorc'd?—Bad man, ye  
violate

A twofold marriage; 'twixt my crown and me;  
And then, betwixt me and my married wife.—

Let me unlock the oath 'twixt thee and me;  
And yet not so, for with a kiss 'twas made.—

Part us, Northumberland; I towards the north,  
Where shivering cold and sickness pines the north,  
clime;

My wife to France; from whence set forth in  
pomp,

She came adorned hither like sweet May,  
Sent back like Hallowmas,\* or short'st of day.

*Queen.* And must we be divided? must we  
part?

*K. Rich.* Ay, hand from hand, my love, and  
heart from heart.

*Queen.* Banish us both, and send the king  
with me.

*North.* That were some love, but little policy.

*Queen.* Then whither he goes, thither let me  
go †

*K. Rich.* So two, together weeping, make one  
woe.

Weep thou for me in France, I for thee here;  
Better far off, than—near, be ne'er the near. ‡

Go, count thy way with sighs; I, mine with  
groans.

*Queen.* So longest way shall have the longest  
moans.

*K. Rich.* Twice for one step I'll groan, the  
way being short,

And piece the way out with a heavy heart,  
Come, come, in wooing sorrow let's be brief,

Since, wedding it, there is such length in grief.  
One kiss shall stop our mouths, and dumbly  
part;

Thus give I mine, and thus I take thy heart.

*Queen.* Give me mine own again; 'twere no  
good part,

To take on me to keep, and kill thy heart.

*Kiss again.*  
So, now I have my own again, begone,  
That I may strive to kill it with a groan.

*K. Rich.* We make woe wanton with this fond  
delay:

Once more, adieu; the rest let sorrow say.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—The same.—A Room in the Duke  
of YORK's Palace.

*Enter YORK, and his DUCHESS.*

*Duch.* My lord, you told me you would tell  
the rest,

When weeping made you break the story off  
Of our two cousins coming into London.

*York.* Where did I leave?

*Duch.* At that sad stop, my lord,  
Where rude misgovern'd hands, from window's  
tops,

Threw dust and rubbish on King Richard's  
head.

*York.* Then, as I said, the duke, great Bol-  
ingbroke,—

Mounted upon a hot and fiery steed,  
Which his aspiring rider seem'd to know,—

With slow but stately pace, kept on his course,  
While all tongues cried—God save thee, Bol-  
ingbroke!

You would have thought the very windows  
spake,

So many greedy looks of young and old  
Through casements darted their desiring eyes

Upon his visage; and that all the walls,  
With painted imag'ry, † had said at once,—

\* All-hallows, & c. All-saints, Nov. 1.

† Never the nigher.

‡ Tapestry hung from the windows.

Jean preserve thee! welcome, Bolingbroke!  
Whilst he, from one side to the other turning,  
Bare-headed, lower than his proud steed's neck,  
Bespake them thus,—I thank you, countrymen!  
And thus still doing, thus he pass'd along.

*Duch.* Alas, poor Richard! where rides he the while?

*York.* As in a theatre, the eyes of men,  
After a well-grac'd actor leaves the stage,  
Are idly bent \* on him that enters next,  
Thinking his prattle to be tedious:  
Even so, or with much more contempt, men's eyes

Did scowl on Richard; no man cried, God save him;

No joyful tongue gave him his welcome home;  
But dust was thrown upon his sacred head;  
Which with such gentle sorrow he shook off,—  
His face still combating with tears and smiles,  
The badges of his grief and patience,—  
That had not God, for some strong purpose, steel'd

The hearts of men, they must perforce, have melted,  
And barbarism itself have pitied him.

But heaven hath a hand in these events;  
To whose high will we bound our calm contents.  
To Bolingbroke are we sworn subjects now,  
Whose state and honour I for aye † allow.

*Enter Aumerle.*

*Duch.* Here comes my son Aumerle.

*York.* Aumerle that was;

But that is lost, for being Richard's friend,  
And, madam, you must call him Rutland now:  
I am in parliament pledge for his truth,  
And lasting fealty to the new-made king.

*Duch.* Welcome, my son: Who are the violets now,  
That strew the green lap of the new-come spring?

*Aum.* Madam, I know not, nor I greatly care not:

God knows, I had as lief be none, as one.

*York.* Well, hear you well in this new spring of time,  
Lest you be clogg'd before you come to prime,  
What news from Oxford? hold those justs; and triumphs?

*Aum.* For aught I know, my lord, they do.

*York.* You will be there, I know.

*Aum.* If God prevent it not; I purpose so.

*York.* What seal is that, that hangs without thy bosom?

Yea, look'st thou pale? let me see the writing.

*Aum.* My lord, 'tis nothing.

*York.* No matter then who sees it:

I will be satisfied, let me see the writing.  
*Aum.* I do beseech your grace to pardon me;  
It is a matter of small consequence,  
Which for some reasons I would not have seen.

*York.* Which for some reasons, Sir, I mean to see.

I fear, I fear,—

*Duch.* What should you fear?

'Tis nothing but some bond that he is enter'd into

For gay apparel, 'gainst the triumph day.

*York.* Bound to himself? what doth he with a bond

That he is bound to? Wife, thou art a fool.—  
Boy, let me see the writing.

*Aum.* I do beseech you, pardon me; I may not show it.

*York.* I will be satisfied; let me see it, I say.

[Snatches it, and reads.]

Treason! foul treason!—villain! traitor! slave!

*Duch.* What is the matter, my lord?

*York.* Ho! who is within there? [Enter a

Servant.] Saddle my horse.

God for his mercy! what treachery is here!

*Duch.* Why, what is it, my lord?

*York.* Give me my boots, I say; saddle my horse:—

Now by mine honour, by my life, my troth,  
I will appeach the villain. [Exit Servant.]

*Duch.* What's the matter?

*York.* Peace, foolish woman.

*Duch.* I will not peace:—What is the matter, son?

*Aum.* Good mother, be content; it is no more

Than my poor life must answer.

*Duch.* Thy life answer!

*Re-enter Servant, with Boots.*

*York.* Bring me my boots, I will unto the king

*Duch.* Strike him, Aumerle.—Poor boy, thou art amaz'd:

Hence, villain! never more come in my sight.—

[To the Servant]

*York.* Give me my boots, I say.

*Duch.* Why, York, what wilt thou do?

Wilt thou not hide the trespass of thine own?

Have we more sons? or are we like to have?

Is not my teeming \* date drunk up with time?

And wilt thou pluck my fair son from mine age,

And rob me of a happy mother's name?

Is he not like thee? is he not thine own?

*York.* Thou fond mad woman,

Wilt thou conceal this dark conspiracy?

A dozen of them here have ta'en the sacrament,

And interchangeably set down their hands,

To kill the king at Oxford.

*Duch.* He shall be none; [him?]

We'll keep him here: Then what is that to

*York.* Away,

Fond woman! were he twenty times my son,

I would appeach him.

*Duch.* Hadst thou groan'd for him,

As I have done, thou'd'st be more pitiful.

But now I know thy mind; thou dost suspect,

That I have been disloyal to thy bed,

And that he is a bastard, not thy son:

Sweet York, sweet husband, be not of that mind:

He is as like thee as a man may be,

Not like to me, or any of my kin,

And yet I love him.

*York.* Make way, unruly woman. [Exit.]

*Duch.* After, Aumerle; mount thee upon his horse;

Spur, post; and get before him to the king,

And beg thy pardon ere he do accuse thee.

I'll not be long behind: though I be old,

I doubt not but to ride as fast as York:

And never will I rise up from the ground,

Till Bolingbroke have pardon'd thee: Away;

Begone. [Exit.]

SCENE III.—Windsor.—A Room in the Castle.

*Enter BOLINGBROKE as King; PERCY, and other LORDS.*

*Boling.* Can no man tell of my unthrifty son?  
'Tis full three months since I did see him last:—

If any plague hang over us, 'tis he.

I would to God, my lords, he might be found:

Inquire at London, 'mongst the taverns there,

For there, they say, he daily doth frequent,

With unrestrained loose companions;

Even such, they say, as stand in narrow lanes,

And beat our watch, and rob our passengers;

While he, young, wanton, and effeminate boy,

Takes on the point of honour, to support

So dissolute a crew.

*Percy.* My lord, some two days since I saw

the prince;

And told him of these triumphs held at Ox-

ford.

*Boling.* And what said the gallant?

*Percy.* His answer was,—he would unto the

stews;

\* Carelessly turned.

† Ever.

‡ Tilts and tournaments.

• Breeding.

And from the common't creature pluck a glove

And wear it as a favour; and with that He would unhorse the lustiest challenger.

*Boling.* As dissolute as desperate; yet through both

I see some sparkles of a better hope, Which elder days may happily bring forth. But who comes here?

*Enter AUMERLE, hastily.*

*Aum.* Where is the king?

*Boling.* What means

Our cousin, that he stares and looks so wildly?

*Aum.* God save your grace. I do beseech your majesty,

To have some conference with your grace alone.

*Boling.* Withdraw yourselves, and leave us here alone.—

*[Exeunt PERCY and LORDS.]*

What is the matter with our cousin now?

*Aum.* For ever may my knees grow to the earth,

My tongue cleave to my roof within my mouth,

Unless a pardon, ere I rise or speak.

*Boling.* Intended or committed, was this fault?

If but the first, how heinous ere it be,

To win thy after-love, I pardon thee.

*Aum.* Thou give me leave that I may turn the key,

That no man utter till my tale be done.

*Boling.* Have thy desire.

*[AUMERLE locks the door.]*

*York.* *[Within.]* My liege, beware; look to thyself!

I thou hast a traitor in thy presence there.

*Boling.* Villain, I'll make thee safe.

*[Drawing.]*

*Aum.* Stay thy revengeful hand;

Thou hast no cause to fear.

*York.* *[Within.]* Open the door, secure, fool-hardy king:

Shall I, for love, speak treason to thy face?

Open the door, or I will break it open.

*[BOLINGBROKE opens the door.]*

*Enter YORK.*

*Boling.* What is the matter, uncle? speak;

Recover breath; tell us how near is danger,

That we may arm us to encounter it.

*York.* Peruse this writing here, and thou shalt know

The treason that my haste forbids me show.

*Aum.* Remember, as thou read'st, thy promise past:

I do repent me; read not my name there,

My heart is not confederate with my hand.

*York.* 'Twas, villain, ere thy hand did set it down.—

I tore it from the traitor's bosom, king:

I fear, and not love, begets his penitence:

Forget to pity him, lest thy pity prove

A serpent that will sting thee to the heart.

*Boling.* O heinous, strong, and bold conspiracy!

O royal father of a treacherous son!

Thou sheer,\* immaculate, and silver fountain,

From whence this stream through muddy passages,

Hath held his current, and defil'd himself!

Thy overflow of good converts to bad;

And thy abundant goodness shall excuse

This deadly blot in thy digressing† son.

*York.* So shall my virtue be his vice's bawd;

And he shall spend mine honour with his shame,

As thriftless sons their scraping fathers' gold.

Mine honour lives when his dishonour dies,

Or my sham'd life in his dishonour lies:

Thou kill'st me in his life; giving him breath, The traitor lives, the true man's put to death.

*Duch.* *[Within.]* What ho, my liege! for God's sake let me in.

*Boling.* What shrill-voice'd suppliant makes this eager cry?

*Duch.* A woman, and thine aunt, great king, 'tis I.

Speak with me, pity me, open the door;

A beggar begs, that never begg'd before.

*Boling.* Our scene is alter'd,—from a serious thing,

And now chang'd to *The Beggar and the King.*\*

My dangerous cousin, let your mother in;

I know she's come to pray for your foul sin.

*York.* If thou do pardon, whosoever pray,

More sins, for this forgiveness, prosper may;

This fester'd joint cut off, the rest rests sound;

This, let alone, will all the rest confound.

*Enter DUCHESS.*

*Duch.* O king, believe not this hard-hearted man;

Love, loving not itself, none other can.

*York.* Thou frantic woman, what dost thou make † here?

Shall thy old dugs once more a traitor rear?

*Duch.* Sweet York, be patient: Hear me, gentle liege. *[Kneels.]*

*Boling.* Rise up, good aunt,

*Duch.* Not yet, I thee beseech:

For ever will I kneel upon my knees,

And never see day that the happy sees,

Till thou give joy; until thou bid me joy,

By pardoning Rutland, my transgressing boy.

*Aum.* Unto my mother's prayers, I bend my knee.

*York.* Against them both, my true joints bended be. *[Kneels.]*

Ill may'st thou thrive, if thou grant any grace!

*Duch.* Plead'st he in earnest? look upon his face;

His eyes do drop no tears, his prayers are in

just;

His words come from his mouth, ours from our

breast:

He prays but faintly, and would be denied;

We pray with heart, and soul, and all be-

side:

His weary joints would gladly rise, I know;

Our knees shall kneel till to the ground they

grow;

His prayers are full of false hypocrisy;

Ours of true zeal and deep integrity.

Our prayers do out-play his; then let them

have

That mercy, which true prayers ought to have.

*Boling.* Good aunt, stand up.

*Duch.* Nay, do not say—stand up;

But, pardon, first; and afterwards stand up.

And if I were thy nurse, thy tongue to teach,

Pardon should be the first word of thy speech.

I never long'd to hear a word till now;

Say pardon, king; let pity teach thee how;

The word is short, but not so short as sweet;

No word like pardon, for kings' mouths so

meet.

*York.* Speak it in French, king; say, *par-*

*donnez moy. ‡*

*Duch.* Dost thou teach pardon pardon to de-

stroy;

Ah! my sour husband, my hard-hearted lord,

That set'st the word itself against the word!—

Speak, pardon, as 'tis current in our land;

The chopping French we do not understand.

Thine eye begins to speak, set thy tongue

there:

Or, in thy piteous heart plant thou thine ear;

That, hearing, how our plants and prayers do

pierce,

Pity may move thee, pardon to rehearse.

\* Transparent.

† Transgressing.

‡ Do.

\* An old ballad.

‡ Excuse me.

*Boling.* Good aunt, stand up.  
*Duch.* I do not sue to stand,  
 Pardon is all the suit I have in hand.

*Boling.* I pardon him, as God shall pardon me.

*Duch.* O happy vantage of a kneeling knee !  
 Yet am I sick for fear : speak it again ;  
 Twice saying pardon, doth not pardon twain,  
 But makes one pardon strong.

*Boling.* With all my heart  
 I pardon him.

*Duch.* A god on earth thou art.

*Boling.* But for our trusty brother-in-law,—  
 and the abbot,

With all the rest of that consorted crew,—  
 Destruction straight shall dog them at the heels.—

Good uncle, help to order several powers \*  
 To Oxford, or where'er these traitors are :  
 They shall not live within this world, I swear,  
 But I will have them, if I once know where  
 Uncle, farewell,—and cousin too, adieu :  
 Your mother well hath pray'd, and prove you true.

*Duch.* Come, my old son :—I pray God make thee new. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE IV.

*Enter EXTON, and a SERVANT.*

*Exton.* Did'st thou not mark the king, what words he spake ?  
*Have I no friend will rid me of this living fear ?*

Was it not so ?

*Serv.* Those were his very words.

*Exton.* *Have I no friend ?* quoth he : he spake it twice,

And urg'd it twice together ; did he not ?

*Serv.* He did.

*Exton.* And, speaking it, he wistfully look'd on me ;

As who should say,—I would thou wert the man

That would divorce this terror from my heart ;  
 Meaning, the king at Pomfret. Come, let's go ;

I am the king's friend, and will rid his foe. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE V.—*Pomfret.—The Dungeon of the Castle.*

*Enter King RICHARD.*

*K. Rich.* I have been studying how I may compare

This prison where I live, unto the world ;  
 And, for because the world is populous,  
 And here is not a creature but myself,  
 I cannot do it ;—Yet I'll hammer it out.

My brain I'll prove the female to my soul ;  
 My soul, the father : and these two beget  
 A generation of still-breeding thoughts,  
 And these same thoughts people this little world ; †

In humours like the people of this world,  
 For no thought is contented. The better sort,—

As thoughts of things divine,—are intermix'd  
 With scruples, and do set the word itself  
 Against the word : ‡

As thus,—*Come little ones ;* and then again,—  
*It is as hard to come, as for a camel*

*To thread the postern § of a needle's eye.*  
 Thought tending to ambition, they do plot  
 Unlikely wonders : how these vain weak nails

May tear a passage through the flinty ribs  
 Of this hard world, my ragged prison walls ;  
 And, for they cannot, die in their own pride.

Thoughts tending to content, flatter themselves,—

That they are not the first of fortune's slaves,

\* Forces.

‡ Holy scripture

† His own body.

‡ Little gate.

Nor shall not be the last ; like silly beggars,  
 Who, sitting in the stocks redden their shame,—  
 That many have, and others must sit there :  
 And in this thought they find a kind of ease,  
 Bearing their own misfortune on the back  
 Of such as have before endur'd the like,  
 Thus play I, in one person, many people,  
 And none contented : Sometimes am I king ;  
 Then treason makes me wish myself a beggar,  
 And so I am : Then crushing penury  
 Persuades me I was better when a king ;  
 Then am I king'd again : and, by-and-by,  
 Think that I am unking'd by Bolingbroke,  
 And straight am nothing :—But, whate'er I am  
 Nor I, nor any man, that but man is,  
 With nothing shall be pleas'd, till he be eas'd  
 With being nothing.—Music do I hear ?

*[Music.]*

Ha, ha ! keep time :—How sour sweet music is,

When time is broke, and no proportion kept !  
 So is it in the music of men's lives.

And here have I the daintiness of ear,  
 To check time broke in a disorder'd string ;  
 But for the concord of my state and time,  
 Had not an ear to hear my true time broke.

I wasted time, and now doth time waste me.  
 For now hath time made me his numb'ring

clock :

My thoughts are minutes ; and, with sighs,  
 They jar \* [watch]

Their watches on to mine eyes, the outward  
 Whereto my finger, like a dial's point,

Is pointing still, in cleansing them from tears.  
 Now, Sir, the sound, that tells what hour it is,

Are clamorous groans, that strike upon my  
 heart,

Which is the bell : So sighs, and tears, and  
 groans, [time]

Show minutes, times, and hours :—but my  
 Runs posting on in Bolingbroke's proud joy,

While I stand fooling here, is Jack o' the clock. †

This music mads me, let it sound no more ;  
 For, though it have holpe madmen to their

wits,  
 In me, it seems it will make wise men mad.

Yet blessing on his heart that gives it me !  
 For 'tis a sign of love ; and love to Richard

Is a strange brooch ‡ in this all-hating world.

*Enter GROOM.*

*Groom.* Hail, royal prince !

*K. Rich.* Thanks, noble peer ;  
 The cheapest of us is ten groats too dear.

What art thou ? and how comest thou hither,  
 Where no man never comes, but that sad dog

That brings me food, to make misfortune live ?  
*Groom.* I was a poor groom of thy stable

king,  
 When thou wert king ; who, travelling towards

York,  
 With much ado, at length have gotten leave

To look upon my sometimes § master's face.  
 Oh ! how it yearn'd my heart, when I beheld,

In London streets, that coronation day,  
 When Bolingbroke rode on roan Barbary !

The horse, that thou so often hast bestrid ;  
 That horse, that I so carefully have dress'd !

*K. Rich.* Rode he on Barbary ? Tell me,  
 gentle friend,

How went he under him ?  
*Groom.* So proudly, as if he disdain'd the

ground.  
*K. Rich.* So proud that Bolingbroke was on

his back !  
 That jade hath eat bread from my royal hand ;

This hand hath made him proud with clapping  
 him.

Would he not stumble ? Would he not fall  
 down, [kick]

(Since pride must have a fall,) and break the

\* Tick.

† An ornamented buckle,

and also a jewel in general.

‡ Strike for him, like the figure

of a man on a bell.

§ Finner

Of that proud man that did usurp his back?

Forgiveness, horse! why do I rail on thee,  
Since thou, created to be aw'd by man,  
Was born to bear? I was not made a horse;  
And yet I bear a burden like an ass,  
Spur-gall'd, and tir'd, by jaunting \* Bolingbroke.

*Enter KEEPER, with a Dish.*

*Keep.* Fellow, give place; here is no longer stay.

[*To the GROOM.*]

*K. Rich.* If thou love me, 'tis time thou wert away.

*Groom.* What my tongue dares not, that my heart shall say. [*Exit.*]

*Keep.* My lord, wilt please you to fall to?

*K. Rich.* Taste of it first, as thou art wont to do.

*Keep.* My lord, I dare not; Sir Pierce of Exton, who lately came from the king, commands the contrary.

*K. Rich.* The devil take Henry of Lancaster, and thee!

Patience is stale, and I am weary of it.

[*Beats the KEEPER.*]

*Keep.* Help, help, help!

*Enter EXTON, and Serrants, armed.*

*K. Rich.* How now? what means death in this rude assault?

Villain, thy own hand yields thy death's instrument.

[*Snatching a weapon and killing one.*]

Go thou, and fill another room in hell.

[*He kills another, then EXTON strikes him down.*]

That hand shall burn in never-quenching fire,

That staggers thus my person.—Exton, thy fierce hand

Hath with the king's blood stain'd the king's own laud. [high;]

Mount, mount, my soul! thy seat is up on high;  
Whilst my gross flesh sinks downward, here to die. [*Dies.*]

*Exton.* As full of valour, as of royal blood:  
Both have I spilt; O would the deed were good!

For now the devil, that told me I did well,  
Says that this deed is choricied in hell.  
This dead king to the living king I'll bear;—  
Take hence the rest, and give them burial here.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*Windsor.*—A Room in the Castle.

*Flourish.* *Enter BOLINGBROKE, and YORK, with LORDS and ATTENDANTS.*

*Boling.* Kind uncle York, the latest news we hear

Is—that the rebels have consum'd with fire  
Our town of Cicestre in Gloucestershire; [not.]  
But whether they be ta'en, or slain, we hear

*Enter NORTHUMBERLAND.*

Welcome, my lord: What is the news?

*North.* First, to thy sacred state wish I all happiness.

\* Jaunting

The next news is I have to London sent  
The heads of Salisbury, Spencer, Blunt, and

Kent:

The manner of their taking may appear

At large discours'd in this paper here.

[*Presenting a paper.*]

*Boling.* We thank thee, gentle Percy, for thy pains;

And to thy worth will add right worthy gains.

*Enter FITZWATER.*

*Fitz.* My lord, I have from Oxford sent to London

The heads of Brocas, and Sir Bennet Seely;

Two of the dangerous consorted traitors,

That sought at Oxford thy dire overthrow.

*Boling.* Thy pains, Fitzwater, shall not be forgot;

Right noble is thy merit, well I wot.

*Enter PERCY, with the Bishop of CARLISLE.*

*Percy.* The grand conspirator, abbot of Westminster,

With clog of conscience, and sour melancholy,

Hath yielded up his body to the grave;

But here is Carlisle living to abide

Thy kingly doom and sentence of his pride.

*Boling.* Carlisle, this is your doom:—

Choose out some secret place, some reverend room,

More than thou hast, and with it joy thy life;

So, as thou liv'st in peace, die free from strife;

For though mine enemy thou hast ever been,  
High sparks of honour in thee have I seen.

*Enter EXTON, with ATTENDANTS bearing a Coffin.*

*Exton.* Great king, within this coffin I present

Thy buried fear: herein all breathless lies

The mightiest of thy greatest enemies,

Richard of Bourdeaux, by me hither brought.

*Boling.* Exton, I thank thee not; for thou hast wrought

A deed of slander with thy fatal hand,

Upon my head, and all this famous land.

*Exton.* From your own mouth, my lord, did I this deed.

*Boling.* They love not poison that do poison need,

Nor do I thee; though I did wish him dead,

I hate the murderer, love him murdered.

The guilt of conscience take thou for thy labour,

But neither my good word, nor princely favour:

With Cain go wander through the shade of night,

And never show thy head by day nor light.—

Lords, I protest my soul is full of woe,  
That blood should sprinkle me, to make me grow:

Come, mourn with me for what I do lament,  
And put on sullen black incontinent; \*

I'll make a voyage to the Holy Land,  
To wash this blood off from my guilty hand:—

March sadly after; grace my mournings here,

In weeping after this untimely bier,

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Immediately.

It was long the prevailing opinion that Sir Piers Exton, and others of his guards, fell upon Richard in the castle of Pomfret, where he was confined, and despatched him with their halberds. But it is more probable that he was starved to death in prison; and it is said that he prolonged his unhappy life for a fortnight, after all sustenance was denied him, before he reached the end of his miseries.—*Hume.*



# FIRST PART

OF

## KING HENRY IV.

### LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

SHAKSPEARE wrote this dramatic history about the year 1597, founding it upon six old plays previously published. The action commences with Hotspur's defeat of the Scots at Halidown Hill, Sep. 14, 1402; and closes with the defeat and death of that leader at Shrewsbury, July 21, 1403. None of Shakspeare's plays are perhaps so frequently read, as this and the one which succeeds it, but the want of ladies, and matter to interest females, lies so heavily upon it, that even with an excellent Falstaff, it can only enjoy occasional life upon the stage. The speeches of King Henry, though clothed in a fine, stately, and nervous diction, are much too long; and a deal of the humour, sparkling as it is, cannot be heard without a blush. The scene of the carriers is grossly indecent, and so very low, that it might be rejected without the slightest injury to the piece. The choleric Hotspur, and the mad-cap Prince of Wales, are, however, charming portraits; great, original, and just, exhibiting the nicest discernment in the character of mankind, and presenting a moral of very general application. But the subtle roguery of Falstaff---his laughable soliloquies---his whimsical investigations,---and his invincible assumption---(the richer and more ludicrous when opposed to his sneaking cowardice) are strokes of dramatic genius which render this 'fat old man' the leading attraction of the play; and though his character is vicious in every respect, he is furnished with so much wit, as to be almost too great a favourite.

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE FOURTH.  
 HENRY, *Prince of Wales*, } *Sons to the*  
 PRINCE JOHN of Lancaster, } *King.*  
 EARL OF WESTMORELAND, } *Friends to the*  
 SIR WALTER BLUNT, } *King.*  
 THOMAS PERCY, *Earl of Worcester.*  
 HENRY PERCY, *Earl of Northumberland.*  
 HENRY PERCY, surnamed HOTSPUR, his Son.  
 EDWARD MORTIMER, *Earl of March.*  
 SCROOP, *Archbishop of York.*  
 ARCHIBALD, *Earl of Douglas.*  
 OWEN GLENDOWER.  
 SIR RICHARD VERNON  
 SIR JOHN FALSTAFF.  
 POINS.

GADSHILL.  
 PETO.  
 BARDOLPH.

LADY PERCY, *Wife to Hotspur, and Sister to Mortimer.*

LADY MORTIMER, *Daughter to Glendower, and Wife to Mortimer.*

MRS. QUICKLY, *Hostess of a Tavern in Eastcheap.*

*Lords, Officers, Sheriff, Vintner, Chamberlain, Drawers, two Carriers, Travellers, and Attendants*

SCENE, England.

### ACT I.

*SCENE I.—London.—A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter KING HENRY, WESTMORELAND, Sir WALTER BLUNT, and others.*

*K. Hen.* So shaken as we are, so wan with care,

Find we a time for frightened peace to pant,  
 And breathe short-winded accents of new broils  
 To be commenc'd in stronds \* afar remote.  
 No more the thirsty Erinny's † of this soil  
 Shall daub her lips with her own children's  
 blood;

No more shall trenching war channel her fields,  
 Nor bruise her flowerets with the armed hoofs  
 Of hostile paces: those opposed eyes,

\* Strands.

† The fury of discord.

Which,—like the meteors of a troubled heaven,  
 All of one nature, of one substance bred,—  
 Did lately meet in the intestine shock  
 And furious close of civil butchery,  
 Shall now, in mutual well-beseeming ranks,  
 March all one way; and be no more oppos'd  
 Against acquaintance, kindred, and allies:  
 The edge of war, like an ill-sheathed knife,  
 No more shall cut his master. Therefore, friends,  
 As far as to the sepulchre of Christ,  
 (Whose soldier now, under whose blessed cross  
 We are impress'd and engag'd to fight,)  
 Forthwith a power of English shall we levy;  
 Whose arms were moulded in their mothers'   
 womb

To chase these pagans, in those holy fields,  
 Over whose acres walk'd those blessed feet,  
 Which, fourteen hundred years ago, were nail'd  
 For our advantage, on the bitter cross.  
 But this our purpose is a twelve-month old,

# Scene I. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.

387

And bootless 'tis to tell you—we will go;  
Therefore we meet not now:—Then let me hear  
Of you, my gentle cousin Westmoreland,  
What yesternight our council did decree,  
In forwarding this dear expedience.\*

*West.* My liege, this haste was hot in question,

And many limits† of the charge set down  
But yesternight; when, all athwart, there came  
A post from Wales, laden with heavy news;  
Whose worst was,—that the noble Mortimer,  
Leading the men of Herefordshire to fight  
Against the irregular and wild Glendower,  
Was by the rude hands of that Welshman taken,  
And a thousand of his people butchered;  
Upon whose dead corps there was such misuse,  
Such beastly, shameless transformation,  
By those Welshwomen done, as may not be,  
Without much shame, re-told or spoken of.

*K. Hen.* It seems then, that the tidings of this broil

Brake off our business for the Holy Land.

*West.* This, match'd with other, did, my gracious lord;

For more uneven and unwelcome news  
Came from the north, and thus it did import.  
On Holy-rod day, the gallant Hotspur there,  
Young Harry Percy, and brave Archibald,  
That ever-valiant and approved Scot,  
At Holmedon met,  
Where they did spend a sad and bloody hour;  
As by discharge of their artillery,  
And shape of likelihood, the news was told;  
For he that brought them, in the very heat  
And pride of their contention did take horse,  
Uncertain of the issue any way.

*K. Hen.* Here is a dear and true-industrious friend,

Sir Walter Blunt, new lighted from his horse,  
Stam'd§ with the variation of each soil  
Betwixt that Holmedon and this seat of ours;  
And he hath brought us smooth and welcome news.

The earl of Douglas is discomfited;  
Ten thousand bold Scots, two-and-twenty knights,  
Balk'd|| in their own blood, did Sir Walter see  
On Holmedon's plains: Of prisoners, Hotspur took

Mordake the earl of Fife, and eldest son  
To beaten Douglas; and the earls of Athol,  
Of Murray, Angus, and Menteith.  
And is not this an honourable spoil?  
A gallant prize? ha, cousin, is it not?

*West.* In faith,

It is a conquest for a prince to boast of.

*K. Hen.* Yea, there thou mak'st me sad, and mak'st me sin,

In envy that my lord Northumberland  
Should be the father of so blest a son:  
A son, who is the theme of honour's tongue;  
Amongst a grove, the very straightest plant;  
Who is sweet fortune's minion, and her pride;  
Whilst I, by looking on the praise of him,  
See not and dishonour stain the brow  
Of my young Harry. Oh! that it could be  
prov'd,

That some night-tripping fairy had exchang'd  
In cradle-clothes our children where they lay,  
And call'd mine Percy, his, Plantagenet!  
Then would I have his Harry, and he mine,  
But let him from my thoughts:—What think you coz?

Of this young Percy's pride? the prisoners,  
Which he in this adventure hath surpris'd,  
To his own use he keeps; and sends me word,  
I shall have none but Mordake earl of Fife.

*West.* This is his uncle's teaching, this is Worcester,

Malevolent to you in all aspects;  
Which makes him prune himself, and bristle up  
The crest of youth against your dignity.

*K. Hen.* But I have sent for him to answer this;

And, for this cause, awhile we must neglect  
Our holy purpose to Jerusalem.

Cousin, on Wednesday next our council we  
Will hold at Windsor, so inform the lords:  
But come yourself with speed to us again;  
For more is to be said, and to be done,  
Than out of anger can be uttered.

*West.* I will, my liege.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—The same.—Another Room in the Palace.

Enter HENRY Prince of Wales, and FALSTAFF.

*Fal.* Now, Hal, what time of day is it, lad?

*P. Hen.* Thou art so fat-witted, with drinking of old sack, and unbuttoning thee after supper, and sleeping upon benches after noon, that thou hast forgotten to demand that truly which thou would'st truly know. What the devil hast thou to do with the time of the day? unless hours were cups of sack, and minutes capons, and clocks the tongues of bawds, and dials the signs of leaping-houses, and the blessed sun himself a fair hot wench in flame-colour'd taffata; I see no reason why thou should'st be so superfluous to demand the time of the day.

*Fal.* Indeed, you come near me now, Hal; for we, that take purses, go by the moon and seven stars; and not by Phœbus,—he, that wandering knight so fair. And, I pray thee, sweet wag, when thou art king,—as God save thy grace, (majesty I should say, for grace thou wilt have none.)—

*P. Hen.* What, none?

*Fal.* No, by my troth; not so much as will serve to be prologue to an egg and butter.

*P. Hen.* Well, how then? come, roundly, roundly.

*Fal.* Marry, then, sweet wag, when thou art king, let not us, that are squires of the night's body, be called thieves of the day's beauty; let us be—Diana's foresters, gentlemen of the shade, minions\* of the moon: And let men say we be men of good government; being governed as the sea is, by our noble and chaste mistress the moon, under whose countenance we—steal.

*P. Hen.* Thou say'st well; and it holds well too: for the fortune of us, that are the moon's men, doth ebb and flow like the sea; being governed as the sea is, by the moon. As for proof now: A purse of gold most resolutely snatched on Monday night, and most dissolutely spent on Tuesday morning; got with swearing—lay by;† and spent with crying—bring in:‡ now, in as low an ebb as the foot of the ladder, and by and by, in as high a flow as the ridge of the gallows.

*Fal.* By the Lord, thou say'st true, lad. And is not my hostess of the tavern a most sweet wench?

*P. Hen.* As the honey of Hybla, my old lad of the castle. And is not a buff jerkin a most sweet robe of durance?§

*Fal.* How now, how now, mad wag? what, in thy quips, and thy quiddities? what a plague have I to do with a buff jerkin?

*P. Hen.* Why, what a fox have I to do with my hostess of the tavern?

*Fal.* Well, thou hast called her to a reckoning many a time and oft.

*P. Hen.* Did I ever call for thee to pay thy part?

*Fal.* No; I'll give thee thy due, thou hast paid all these.

*P. Hen.* Yea, and elsewhere, so far as my coin would stretch; and where it would not, I have used my credit.

*Fal.* Yea, and so used it, that were it not here

\* Expedition.

† Estimates.

§ September 14. § Covered with dirt of different colours.

¶ Piled up in a heap.

¶ Trim, as birds clean their feathers.

\* Favourites.

† Stand still.

‡ More wine.

§ The dress of sheriff's officers.

apparent that thou art heir apparent.—But I pry'thee, sweet wag, shall there be gallows standing in England when thou art king? and resolution thus fobbed as it is, with the rusty crub of old father autic the law? Do not thou, when thou art king, hang a thief.

*P. Hen.* No; thou shalt.

*Fal.* Shall I? O rare! By the Lord, I'll be a brave judge.

*P. Hen.* Thou judgest false already; I mean, thou shalt have the hanging of the thieves, and so become a rare hangman.

*Fal.* Well, Hal, well; and in some sort it jumps with my humour, as well as waiting in the court, I can tell you.

*P. Hen.* For obtaining of suits?

*Fal.* Yea, for obtaining of suits: whereof the hangman hath no lean wardrobe. 'Sblood, I am as melancholy as a gib\* cat, or a lugged bear.

*P. Hen.* Or an old lion; or a lover's lute.

*Fal.* Yea, or the drone of a Lincolnshire bagpipe.

*P. Hen.* What sayest thou to a hare, or the melancholy of Moor ditch?

*Fal.* Thou hast the most unsavoury similes; and art, indeed, the most comparative, rascal-liest, sweet young prince.—But, Hal, I pry'thee, trouble me no more with vanity. I would to God, thou and I knew where a commodity of good names were to be bought: An old lord of the council rated me the other day in the street about you, Sir; but I marked him not: and yet he talked very wisely; but I regarded him not: and yet he talked wisely, and in the street too.

*P. Hen.* Thou didst well; for wisdom cries out in the streets, and no man regards it.

*Fal.* O thou hast damnable iteration;† and art indeed able to corrupt a saint. Thou hast done much harm upon me, Hal,—God forgive thee for it! Before I knew thee, Hal, I knew nothing; and now am I, if a man should speak truly, little better than one of the wicked. I must give over this life, and I will give it over; by the Lord, an I do not, I am a villain; I'll be damned for never a king's son in Christendom.

*P. Hen.* Where shall we take a purse to-morrow, Jack?

*Fal.* Where thou wilt, lad, I'll make one; an I do not, call me villain, and baffle‡ me.

*P. Hen.* I see a good amendment of life in thee; from prying to purse-taking.

*Enter Poins, at a distance.*

*Fal.* Why, Hal, 'tis my vocation, Hal; 'tis no sin for a man to labour in his vocation. Poins!—Now shall we know if Gadshill hath set a match. § O if men were to be saved by merit, what hole in hell were hot enough for him? This is the most omnipotent villain, that ever cried, Stand, to a true man.

*P. Hen.* Good morrow, Ned.

*Poins.* Good morrow, sweet Hal.—What says monsieur Remorse? What says Sir John Sack-and-Sugar? Jack, how agrees the devil and thee about thy soul, that thou soldest him on Good-Friday last, for a cup of Madeira and a cold capon's leg?

*P. Hen.* Sir John stands by his word, the devil shall have his bargain; for he was never yet a breaker of proverbs, he'll give the devil his due.

*Poins.* Then art thou damned for keeping thy word with the devil.

*P. Hen.* Else he had been damned for cozening the devil.

*Poins.* But, my lads, my lads, to-morrow morning, by four o'clock, early at Gadshill: There are pilgrims going to Canterbury with

rich offerings, and traders riding to London with fat purses: I have visors\* for you all, you have horses for yourselves; Gadshill lies to-night in Rochester; I have bespoke supper to-morrow night in Eastcheap; we may do it as secure as sleep: If you will go, I will stuff your purses full of crowns; if you will not, tarry at home, and be hanged.

*Fal.* Hear me, Yedward: if I tarry at home, and go not, I'll hang you for going.

*Poins.* You will, chops?

*Fal.* Hal, wilt thou make one?

*P. Hen.* Who, I rob? I a thief? not I, by my faith.

*Fal.* There's neither honesty, manhood, nor good fellowship in thee, nor thou comest not of the blood royal, if thou darest not stand for ten shillings.†

*P. Hen.* Well, then, once in my days I'll be a mad-cap.

*Fal.* Why, that's well said.

*P. Hen.* Well, come what will, I'll tarry at home.

*Fal.* By the Lord, I'll be a traitor then, when thou art king.

*P. Hen.* I care not.

*Poins.* Sir John, I pry'thee leave the prince and me alone; I will lay him down such reasons for this adventure, that he shall go.

*Fal.* Well, may'st thou have the spirit of persuasion, and be the ears of profiting, that what thou speakest may move, and what he hears may be believed, that the true prince may (for recreation sake), prove a false thief; for the poor abuses of the time want countenance. Farewell: You shall find me in Eastcheap.

*P. Hen.* Farewell, thou latter spring! Farewell, All-hallow summer!‡

*[Exit FALSTAFF.]*

*Poins.* Now, my good sweet honey lord, ride with us to-morrow; I have a jest to execute, that I cannot manage alone. Falstaff, Bardolph, Peto, and Gadshill, shall rob those men that we have already way-laid; yourself and I will not be there; and when they have the booty, if you and I do not rob them, cut this head from my shoulders.

*P. Hen.* But how shall we part from them in setting forth?

*Poins.* Why, we will set forth before or after them, and appoint them a place of meeting, wherein it is at our pleasure to fail; and then will they adventure upon the exploit themselves, which they shall have no sooner achieved, but we'll set upon them.

*P. Hen.* Ay, but 'tis like that they will know us, by our horses, by our habits, and by every other appointment, to be ourselves.

*Poins.* Tut! our horses they shall not see, I'll tie them in the wood; our visors we will change, after we leave them; and, surah, I have cases of buckram for the nonce, to immask our noted outward garments.

*P. Hen.* But I doubt they will be too hard for us.

*Poins.* Well, for two of them, I know them to be as true-bred cowards as ever turned back; and for the third, if he fight longer than he sees reason, I'll forswear arms. The virtue of this jest will be, the incomprehensible lies that this same fat rogue will tell us, when we meet at supper: how thirty, at least, he fought with; what wards, what blows, what extremities he endured; and, in the reproof of this, lies the jest.

*P. Hen.* Well, I'll go with thee; provide us all things necessary, and meet me to-morrow night in Eastcheap, there I'll snp. Farewell.

*Poins.* Farewell, my lord. *[Exit POINS.]*

*P. Hen.* I know you all, and will a while uphold

• Masks.

† The value of a coin called real or royal.

\* A Scotch term for a castrated cat.

† Citation of holy texts.

‡ Treat me with ignominy.

§ Made an appointment.

|| Honest.

‡ Fine weather at All-hallow-tide, &c. All-hallow, Nov. 1st) is called a All-hallow summer.

The unyok'd humour of your idleness :  
Yet herein will I imitate the sun,  
Who doth permit the base contagious clouds  
To smother up his beauty from the world,  
That, when he please again to be himself,  
Being wanted, he may be more wonder'd at,  
By breaking through the foul and ugly mists  
Of vapours, that did seem to strangle him.  
If all the year were playing holidays,  
To sport would be as tedious as to work ;  
But, when they seldom come, they wish'd-for  
come,

And nothing pleaseth but rare accidents.  
So, when this loose behaviour I throw off,  
And pay the debt I never promised,  
By how much better than my word I am,  
By so much shall I falsify men's hopes ;  
And, like bright metal on a sullen ground,  
My reformation, glittering o'er my fault,  
Shall show more goodly, and attract more eyes,  
Than that which hath no foil to set it off.  
I'll so offend, to make offence a skill ;  
Redeeming time, when men think least I will.

[Exit.]

SCENE III.—The same.—Another Room in the Palace.

Enter King HENRY, NORTHUMBERLAND, WORCESTER, HOTSPUR, Sir WALTER BLUNT, and others.

K. Hen. My blood hath been too cold and temperate,  
Unapt to stir at these indignities,  
And you have found me ; for accordingly,  
You tread upon my patience : but be sure  
I will from henceforth rather be myself,  
Mighty and to be fear'd, than my condition,\*  
Which hath been smooth as oil, soft as young  
down ;

And therefore lost that title of respect,  
Which the proud soul ne'er pays, but to the proud.

Wor. Our house, my sovereign liege, little deserves  
The scourge of greatness to be used on it ;  
And that same greatness too which our own  
hands

Have help to make so poorly.

North. My lord,—

K. Hen. Worcester, get thee gone, for I see danger

And disobedience in thine eye : O Sir,  
Your presence is too bold and peremptory,  
And majesty might never yet endure  
The moody frowner of a servant brow.  
You have good leave to leave us ; when we  
need

Your use and counsel, we shall send for you.—

[Exit WORCESTER.]

You were about to speak. [To NORTH.]

North. Yea, my good lord.  
Those prisoners in your highness' name demanded,

Which Harry Percy here at Holmedon took,  
Where, as he says, not with such strength de-  
As is deliver'd to your majesty : [nied]

Either envy, therefore, or misprision,  
Is guilty of this fault, and not my son.

Hot. My liege, I did deny no prisoners.  
But, I remember, when the fight was done,  
When I was dry with rage and extreme toil,  
Breathless and faint, leaning upon my sword,  
Came there a certain lord, neat, trimly dress'd,  
Fresh as a bridegroom, and his chin, new  
reap'd,

Show'd like a stubble-land at harvest home ;  
He was perturbed like a milliner ;  
And 'twixt his finger, and his thumb he held  
A pouncet-box which ever and anon  
He gave his nose, and took't away again ;—  
Who, therewith angry, when it next came  
there,

\* Disposition.

† Forehead.

Took it in snuff :—and still he smil'd, and  
talk'd ;

And, as the soldiers bore dead bodies by,  
He call'd them untaught knaves, unmanly,  
To bring a slovenly unbandsoned corse  
Betwixt the wind and his nobility.

With many holiday and lady terms  
He question'd me ; among the rest demanded  
My prisoners, in your majesty's behalf.

I then, all smarting, with my wounds being  
cold,

To be so pester'd with a popinjay,\*  
Ont of my grief† and my impatience,  
Answer'd, neglectingly, I know not what ;  
He should, or he should not ;—for he made me  
mad,

To see him shine so brisk, and smell so sweet,  
And talk so like a waiting-gentlewoman,  
Of guns, and drums, and wounds, (God save  
the mark !)

And telling me, the sovereign'st thing on earth  
Was parmaceti for an inward bruise ;

And that it was great pity, so it was,  
That villainous saltpetre should be digg'd  
Out of the bowels of the harmless earth,

Which many a good tall † fellow had destroy'd  
So cowardly ; and but for these vile guns  
He would himself have been a soldier.

This bald unjointed chat of his, my lord,  
I answer'd indirectly, as I said ;

And, I beseech you, let not this report  
Come current for an accusation,  
Betwixt my love and your high majesty.

Blunt. The circumstance consider'd, good my  
lord,

Whatever Harry Percy then hath said,  
To such a person, and in such a place,

At such a time, with all the rest re-told,  
May reasonably die, and never rise

To do him wrong, or any way impeach  
What then he said, so he unsay it now.

K. Hen. Why, yet he doth deny his pri-  
soners,

But with proviso, and exception,—  
That we, at our own charge, shall ransom  
straight

His brother-in-law, the foolish Mortimer ;  
Who, on my soul, hath wilfully betray'd  
The lives of those that he did lead to fight  
Against the great magician, damn'd Glen-  
dower ;

Whose daughter, as we hear, the Earl of  
March

Hath lately married. Shall our coffers then  
Be emptied, to redeem a traitor home ?

Shall we buy treason and indent with fears,  
When they have lost and forfeited themselves ?  
No, on the barren mountains let him starve ;  
For I shall never hold that man my friend,  
Whose tongue shall ask me for one penny cost  
To ransom home revolted Mortimer.

Hot. Revolted Mortimer !  
He never did fall off, my sovereign liege,  
But by the chance of war : To prove that true,  
Needs no more but one tongue for all those  
wounds,

Those mouth'd wounds, which valiantly he  
took,

When on the gentle Severn's sedgy bank,  
In single opposition, hand to hand,  
He did confound || the best part of an hour  
In changing hardiment ¶ with great Glen-  
dower :

Three times they breath'd, and three times did  
they drink,

Upon agreement, of swift Severn's flood ;  
Who then, affrighted with their bloody looks,  
Ran fearfully among the trembling reeds,  
And hid his crisp head in the hollow bank,  
Blood-stained with these valliant combatants.  
Never did bare and rotten polley

\* Parrot.

† Pain.

‡ Brave.

§ Sign an indenture.

Expend.

¶ Hardiness.

Colour her working with such deadly wounds ;  
Nor never could the noble Mortimer  
Receive so many, and all willingly :  
Then let him not be slander'd with revolt.

*K. Hen.* Thou dost belie him, Percy, thou  
dost belie him ;

He never did encounter with Glendower :  
I tell thee,  
He durst as well have met the devil alone,  
As Owen Glendower for an enemy.  
Art not ashamed ? But, Sirrah, henceforth  
Let me not hear you speak of Mortimer :  
Send me your prisoners with the speediest  
means,

Or you shall hear in such a kind from me  
As will displease you.—My lord Northumber-  
land,

We license your departure with your son :—  
Send us your prisoners, or you'll hear of it.

[*Exeunt King HENRY, BLUNT, and Train.*]

*Hot.* And if the devil come and roar for  
them,

I will not send them :—I will after straight,  
And tell him so ; for I will ease my heart,  
Although it be with hazard of my head.

*North.* What, drunk with choler ? stay, and  
pause awhile ;  
Here comes your uncle.

*Re-enter WORCESTER.*

*Hot.* Speak of Mortimer ?

Zounds, I will speak of him ; and let my soul  
Want mercy, if I do not join with him :  
Yea, on his part, I'll empty all these veins,  
And shed my dear blood drop by drop i'the dust,  
But I will lift the down-trod Mortimer  
As high i'the air as this unthankful king,  
As this ingrate and canker'd Bolingbroke.

*North.* Brother, the king hath made your ne-  
phew mad. [*To Worcester.*]

*Wor.* Who struck this heat up, after I was  
gone ?

*Hot.* He will, forsooth, have all my prisoners ;  
And when I urg'd the ransom once again  
Of my wife's brother, then his cheek look'd  
pale ;

And on my face he turn'd an eye of death,  
Trembling even at the name of Mortimer.

*Wor.* I cannot blame him : Was he not pro-  
claim'd,

By Richard that dead is, the next of blood ?

*North.* He was ; I heard the proclamation :  
And then it was, when the unhappy king  
(Whose wrongs in us God pardon !) did set forth  
Upon his Irish expedition ;  
From whence he, intercepted, did return  
To be depos'd, and shortly, murdered.

*Wor.* And for whose death, we in the world's  
wide mouth

Live scandaliz'd, and foully spoken of.

*Hot.* But, soft, I pray you : Did king Richard  
then

Proclaim my brother Edmund Mortimer  
Heir to the crown ?

*North.* He did ; myself did hear it.

*Hot.* Nay, then I cannot blame his cousin  
king,  
That wish'd him on the barren mountains  
starv'd.

But shall it be, that you, that set the crown  
Upon the head of this forgetful man ;  
And, for his sake, wear the detested blot  
Of murd'rous subordination,—shall it be,  
That you a word of curses undergo ;  
Being the agents, or base second means,  
The cords, the ladder, or the hangman rather ?—  
O pardon me, that I descend so low,  
To show the line and the predicament  
Wherein you range under this subtle king.

Shall it, for shame, be spoken in these days,  
Or fill up chronicles in time to come,  
That men of your nobility and power,  
Did gage them both in an unjust behalf,—  
As both of you, God pardon it ! have done,—  
To put down Richard, that sweet lovely rose,

And plant this thorn, this canker, Bolingbroke ?  
And shall it, in more shame, be further spoken  
That you are fool'd, discarded, and shook off  
By him, for whom these shames ye underwent ?  
No ; yet time serves, wherein you may redeem  
Your banish'd honours, and restore yourselves  
Into the good thoughts of the world again :  
Revenge the jeering and disdain'd contempt  
Of this proud king ; who studies, day and  
night,

To answer all the debt he owes to you,  
Even with the bloody payment of your deaths.  
Therefore, I say,—

*Wor.* Peace, cousin, say no more :  
And now I will unclasp a secret book,  
And to your quick-conceiving discontents  
I'll read you matter deep and dangerous ;  
As full of peril and adventurous spirit,  
As to o'er-walk a current, roaring loud,  
On the unsteady footing of a spear.

*Hot.* If he fall in, good night :—or sink or  
swim :

Send danger from the east unto the west,  
So honour cross it from the north to south,  
And let them grapple :—Oh ! the blood more  
stirs,

To rouse a lion than to start a hare

*North.* Imagination of some great exploit,  
Drives him beyond the bounds of patience.

*Hot.* By heaven methinks it were an easy  
leap,

To pluck bright honour from the pale-fac'd  
moon ;

Or dive unto the bottom of the deep,  
Where fathom-line could never touch the ground,  
And pluck up drowned honour by the locks ;  
So he, that doth redeem her thence, might  
wear,

Without co-rival,—all her dignities :  
But out upon this half-fac'd fellowship !

*Wor.* He apprehends a world of figure-  
here,

But not the form of what he should attend.—  
Good cousin, give me audience for a while.

*Hot.* I cry you mercy.

*Wor.* Those same noble Scots,  
That are your prisoners,—

*Hot.* I'll keep them all ;  
By heaven he shall not have a Scot of them :

No, if a Scot would save his soul, he shall not :  
I'll keep them, by this hand.

*Wor.* You start away,  
And lend no ear unto my purposes.—

Those prisoners you shall keep.

*Hot.* Nay, I will ; that's flat :—  
He said he would not ransom Mortimer ;

Forbade my tongue to speak of Mortimer ;  
But I will find him when he lies asleep,  
And in his ear I'll holla—Mortimer !

Nay,  
I'll have a startling shall be taught to speak  
Nothing but Mortimer, and give it him,  
To keep his anger still in motion.

*Wor.* Hear you,  
Cousin ; a word.

*Hot.* All studies here I solemnly defy,†  
Save how to gall and pinch this Bolingbroke :

And that same sword-and-buckler, Prince of  
Wales.—

But that I think his father loves him not,  
And would be glad he met with some mis-  
chance,

I'd have him poison'd with a pot of ale.

*Wor.* Farewell, kinsman ! I will talk to you,  
When you are better temper'd to attend.

*North.* Why, what a wasp-stung and im-  
patient fool

Art thou, to break into this woman's mood ;  
Tying thine ear to no tongue but thine own ?

*Hot.* Why, look you, I am whipp'd and  
scourg'd with rods,

\* Shapes created by his imagination.

† Refuse.

‡ The term for a blistering quarrelsome fellow.

Nettled, and stung with pismires, when I hear  
Of this vile politician, Bolingbroke.  
In Richard's time,—What do you call the  
place?—

A plague upon't!—it is in Glostershire;—  
'Twas where the mad-cap duke his uncle  
kept;

His uncle York;—where I first bow'd my knee  
Unto this king of smiles, this Bolingbroke,  
When you and he came back from Raven-  
spurg.

North. At Berkley castle.

Hot. You say true:—

Why, what a candy \* deal of courtesy  
This fawning greyhound then did proffer me!  
Look,—when his infant fortune came to  
age,

And, gentle Harry Percy, and, kind cousin,—  
Oh! the devil take such cozeners!—God for-  
give me!—

Good uncle, tell your tale, for I have done.

Wor. Nay, if you have not, to't again;

We'll stay your leisure.

Hot. I have done, i'faith.

Wor. Then once more to your Scottish pri-  
soners.

Deliver them up without their ransom straight,  
And make the Douglas' son your only mean  
For powers in Scotland; which, for divers  
reasons

Which I shall send you written, be assur'd  
Will easily be granted.—You, my lord,

[To NORTHUMBERLAND.]

Your son in Scotland being thus employ'd,  
Shall secretly into the bosom creep  
Of that same noble prelate, well belov'd,  
The archbishop.

Hot. O! York, is't not?

Wor. True—who bears hard  
His brother's death at Bristol the lord Scroop.  
I speak not this in estimation,†  
As what I think might be, but what I know  
Is ruminated, plotted, and set down;  
And only stays but to behold the face  
Of that occasion that shall bring it on.

Hot. I smell it; upon my life, it will do  
well.

North. Before the game's a-foot, thou still  
let'st slip.

Hot. Why, it cannot choose but be a noble  
plot:—

And then the power of Scotland, and of York,—  
To join with Mortimer, ha?

Wor. And so they shall.

Hot. In faith, it is exceedingly well aim'd.  
Wor. And 'tis no little reason bids us speed,  
To save our heads by raising of a head:‡  
For, hear ourselves as even as we can,  
The king will always think him in our debt,  
And think we think ourselves unsatisfied,  
Till he hath found a time to pay us home.  
And see, already, how he doth begin  
To make us strangers to his looks of love.

Hot. He does, he does; we'll be reveng'd on  
him.

Wor. Cousin, farewell:—No further go in  
this,  
Than I by letters shall direct your course.  
When time is ripe, (which will be suddenly,)  
I'll steal to Glendower and lord Mortimer;  
Where you and Douglas, and our powers at  
once,

(As I will fashion it,) shall happily meet,  
To bear our fortunes in our own strong arms,  
Which now we hold at much uncertainty.

North. Farewell, good brother: we shall  
thrive, I trust.

Hot. Uncle, adieu:—Oh! let the hours be  
short,

Till fields, and blows, and groans applaud our  
sport!

[Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Rochester.—An Inn Yard.

Enter a CARRIER, with a Lantern in his  
hand.

1 Car. Heigh ho! An't be not four by the  
day, I'll be hanged: Charles' wain\* is over the  
new chimney, and yet our horse not packed.  
What, ostler!

Ost. [Within.] Anon, anon.

1 Car. I pry'thee Tom, beat Cut's† saddle,  
put a few flocks in the point; the poor jade is  
wring in the withers out of all cess.‡

Enter another CARRIER.

2 Car. Pease and beans are as dank§ here as  
a dog, and that is the next way to give poor  
jades the bots:¶ this house is turned upside  
down, since Robin ostler died.

1 Car. Poor fellow; never joyed since the  
price of oats rose; it was the death of him.

2 Car. I think this be the most villainous  
house in all London road for fleas: I am stung  
like a tench.¶

1 Car. Like a tench? by the mass, there is  
ne'er a king in Christendom could be better bit  
than I have been since the first cock.

2 Car. Why, they will allow us ne'er a jorden,  
and then we leak in your chimney; and your  
chamber-lie breeds fleas like a louch.\*\*

1 Car. What, ostler! come away and be  
hanged, come away.

2 Car. I have a gammon of bacon, and two  
razes of ginger, to be delivered as far as Charing-  
cross.

1 Car. 'Odsboddy! the turkies in my pannier  
are quite starved.—What, ostler!—A plague on  
thee: hast thou never an eye in thy head?  
canst not hear? An 'twere not as good a deed  
as drink, to break the pate of thee, I am a very  
villain.—Come, and be hanged:—Hast no faith  
in thee?

Enter GADSHILL.

Gads. Good morrow, carriers. What's  
o'clock?

1 Car. I think it be two o'clock.

Gads. I pry'thee lend me thy lantern, to see  
my gelding in the stable.

1 Car. Nay, soft, I pray ye; I know a trick  
worth two of that, i'faith.

Gads. I pry'thee lend me thine.

2 Car. Ay, when? canst tell?—Lend me thy  
lantern, quoth a!—marry, I'll see thee hanged  
first.

Gads. Sirrah carrier, what time do you mean  
to come to London?

2 Car. Time enough to go to bed with a can-  
dle, I warrant thee.—Come, neighbour Mugs,  
we'll call up the gentlemen; they will along  
with company, for they have great charge.

[Exit CARRIERS.]

Gads. What ho! chamberlain!

Cham. [Within.] At hand, quoth pick-purse.††

Gads. That's even as fair as—at hand, quoth  
the chamberlain: for thou varrest no more from  
picking of purses, than giving direction doth  
from labouring; thou lay'st the plot how.

Enter CHAMBERLAIN.

Cham. Good morrow, master Gadshill. It  
holds current that I told you yesternight: There's  
a franklin‡‡ in the wild of Kent, hath brought  
three hundred marks with him in gold: I heard  
him tell it to one of his company, last night at  
supper; a kind of auditor; one that hath abun-  
dance of charge too, God knows what. They  
are up already, and call for eggs and butter:  
They will away presently.

\* The constellation Ursa major.

† Name of his horse.

‡ Measure.

§ Wet.

¶ Worms.

¶ Spotted like a tench.

\*\* A small fish supposed to breed fleas.

†† A proverb, from the pick-purse being always  
ready.

‡‡ Freeholder.

\* Sugared.

† Conjecture.

‡ A body of forces.

*Gads.* Sirrah, if they meet not with saint Nicholas' clerks,\* I'll give thee this ueck.

*Cham.* No, I'll none of it: I prythee, keep that for the hangman; for I know thou worship'st saint Nicholas as truly as a man of falsehood may.

*Gads.* What talkest thou to me of the hangman? if I hang, I'll make a fat pair of gallows: for if I hang, old Sir John hangs with me; and thou knowest he's no starving. Tut! there are other Trojans that thou dreamest not of; the which, for sport sake, are content to do the profession some grace, that would, if matters should be looked into, for their own credit sake, make all whole. I am joined with no foot land-rakers,† no long-staff, sixpenny strikers; none of these mad, mustachio purple-hued malt-worms: but with nobility and tranquillity; burgomasters and great oneyers;‡ such as can hold in; such as will strike sooner than speak, and speak sooner than drink, and drink sooner than pray: And yet I lie; for they pray continually to their saint, the commonwealth; or, rather, not pray to her, but prey on her; for they ride up and down on her, and make her their boots.§

*Cham.* What, the commonwealth their boots? will she hold out water in foul way?

*Gads.* She will, she will; justice hath liquored her.¶ We steal us in a castle, cocksure; we have the receipt of fern-seed, we walk invisible.

*Cham.* Nay, by my faith! I think you are more beholden to the night than to fern-seed, for your walking invisible.

*Gads.* Give me thy hand: thou shalt have a share in our purchase, as I am a true man.

*Cham.* Nay, rather let me have it as you are a false thief.

*Gads.* Go to; *Homo* is a common name to all men. Bid the ostler bring my gelding out of the stable. Farewell, you muddy knave.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II.—The Road by Gadshill.

*Enter Prince HENRY and POINS; BARDOLPH and PETO, at some distance.*

*Poins.* Come, shelter, shelter; I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.

*P. Hen.* Stand close.

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!

*P. Hen.* Peace, ye fat-kidneyed rascal; What a bawling dost thou keep?

*Fal.* Where's Poins, Hal?

*P. Hen.* He is walked up to the top of the hill; I'll go seek him.

[*Pretends to seek POINS.*]

*Fal.* I am accursed to rob in that thief's company: the rascal hath removed my horse, and tied him I know not where. If I travel but four foot by the squire¶ further afoot, I shall break my wind. Well, I doubt not but to die a fair death for all this, if I 'scape hanging for killing that rogue. I have forsworn his company hourly any time this two-and-twenty years, and yet I am bewitched with the rogue's company. If the rascal have not given me medicines to make me love him, I'll be hanged; it could not be else; I have drunk medicines.—Poins!—Hal!—a plague upon you both!—Bardolph!—Peto!—I'll starve, ere I'll rob a foot further. An 'twere not as good a deed as drink, to turn true man, and leave these rogues, I am the veriest varlet that ever chewed with a tooth. Eight yards of uneven ground, is threescore and ten miles

afoot with me; and the stony-hearted villains know it well enough: A plague upon't, when thieves cannot be true to one another! [*They whistle.*] Whew!—A plague upon you all! Give me my horse, you rogues; give me my horse, and be hanged.

*P. Hen.* Peace, ye fat guts! lie down: lay thine ear close to the ground, and list if thou canst bear the tread of travellers.

*Fal.* Have you any levers to lift me up again, being down? 'Sblood, I'll not bear mine own flesh so far afoot again, for all the coin in thy father's exchequer. What a plague mean ye to colt\* me thus?

*P. Hen.* Thou liest, thou art not colted, thou art uncolted.

*Fal.* I prythee, good prince Hal, help me to my horse; good king's son.

*P. Hen.* Out, you rogue! shall I be your ostler!

*Fal.* Go, hang thyself in thy own heir-apparent garters! If I be ta'en, I'll peach for this. An I have not ballads made on you all, and sung to filthy tunes, let a cup of sack be my poison: When a jest is so forward, and afoot too, —I hate it.

*Enter GADSHILL.*

*Gads.* Stand.

*Fal.* So I do, against my will,

*Poins.* O 'tis our setter: I know his voice

*Enter BARDOLPH*

*Bard.* What news?

*Gads.* Case ye, case ye; on with your visors; there's money of the king's coming down the hill; 'tis going to the king's exchequer.

*Fal.* You lie, you rogue; 'tis going to the king's tavern.

*Gads.* There's enough to make us all.

*Fal.* To be hanged.

*P. Hen.* Sirs, you four shall front them in the narrow lane; Ned Poins and I will walk lower: if they 'scape from your encounter, then they light on us.

*Peto.* How many be there of them?

*Gads.* Some eight, or ten.

*Fal.* 'Zounds! will they not rob us?

*P. Hen.* What, a coward, Sir John Paunch?

*Fal.* Indeed, I am not John of Gaunt, your grandfather; but yet no coward, Hal.

*P. Hen.* Well, we leave that to the proof

*Poins.* Sirrah Jack, thy horse stands behind the hedge; when thou needest him, there thou shalt find him. Farewell, and stand fast.

*Fal.* Now cannot I strike him, if I should be hanged.

*P. Hen.* Ned, where are our disguises?

*Poins.* Here, hard by; stand close.

[*Exeunt P. HENRY and POINS.*]

*Fal.* Now, my masters, happy man be his dole, say I; every man to his business.

*Enter TRAVELLERS.*

1 Trav. Come, neighbour; the boy shall lead our horses down the hill: we'll walk afoot a while, and ease our legs.

*Thieves.* Stand.

*Trav.* Jesu bless us!

*Fal.* Strike; down with them; cut the villains' throats: Ah! whoreson caterpillars! bacon-fed knaves! they hate us youth: down with them; fleece them.

1 Trav. O we are undone, both we and our's, for ever.

*Fal.* Hang ye, gorbellied knaves; Are ye undone? No, ye fat chuffs; I would your store were here! On, bacons, on! What, ye knaves? young men must live: You are grand jurors are ye? We'll jure ye, I'faith.

[*Exeunt FALSTAFF, &c. Driving the TRAVELLERS out.*]

\* Make a youngster of me.

\* Cant term for highwaymen.  
† Footpads.  
‡ Public accountants.  
§ Booty.  
¶ Oiled, smoothed her over.  
¶ Square.

*Re-enter Prince HENRY and POINS.*

*P. Hen.* The thieves have bound the true men: Now could thou and I rob the thieves, and go merrily to London, it would be argument for a week, laughter for a month, and a good jest for ever.

*Poins.* Stand close, I hear them coming.

*Re-enter Thieves.*

*Fal.* Come, my masters, let us share, and then to horse before day. An the prince and Poins be not two arrant cowards, there's no equity stirring; there's no more valour in that Poins, than in a wild duck.

*P. Hen.* Your money.

*[Rushing out upon them.]*

*Poins.* Villains.

*[As they are sharing, the PRINCE and POINS set upon them. FALSTAFF, after a blow or two, and the rest, run away, leaving their booty behind them.]*

*P. Hen.* Got with much ease. Now merrily to horse:

The thieves are scatter'd, and possess'd with fear

So strongly, that they dare not meet each other: Each takes his fellow for an officer.

Away, good Ned. Falstaff sweats to death, And lards\* the lean earth as he walks along: Wer't not for laughing, I should pity him.

*Poins.* How the rogue roar'd! *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III.—Warkworth.—A Room in the Castle.

*Enter HOTSPUR, reading a Letter.*

—But, for mine own part, my lord, I could be well contented to be there, in respect of the love I bear your house.—He could be contented,—Why is he not then? In respect of the love he bears our house—he shows in this he loves his own barn better than he loves our house. Let me see some more. *The purpose you undertake is dangerous*—Why, that's certain; 'tis dangerous to take a cold, to sleep, to drink: but I tell you, my lord fool, out of this nettle, danger, we pluck this flower, safety. *The purpose you undertake, is dangerous; the friends you have nam'd, uncertain; the time itself unsorted; and your whole plot too light, for the counterpoise of so great an opposition.*—Say you so, say you so? I say unto you again, you are a shallow cowardly hind, and you lie. What a lack-brain is this? By the Lord, our plot is a good plot as ever was laid; our friends true and constant: a good plot, good friends, and full of expectation: an excellent plot, very good friends. What a frosty-spirited rogue is this? Why, my lord of York commends the plot, and the general course of the action. 'Zounds, an I were now by this rascal, I could brain him with his lady's fan. Is there not my father, my uncle, and myself? lord Edward Mortimer, my lord of York, and Owen Glendower? is there not, besides, the Douglas? Have I not all their letters, to meet me in arms by the ninth of the next month? and are they not, some of them, set forward already? What a pagan rascal is this! an infidel! Ha! you shall see now, in very sincerity of fear and cold heart, will be to the king, and lay open all our proceedings. O I could divide myself, and go to buffets, for moving such a dish of skimmed milk with so honourable an action! Hang him! let him tell the king: We are prepared; I will set forward to-night.

*Enter Lady PERCY.*

How now, Kate? I must leave you within these two hours.

*Lady.* O my good lord, why are you thus alone?

For what offence have I, this fortnight, been

\* Fattens.

A banish'd woman from my Harry's bed? Tell me, sweet lord, what is't that takes from thee

Thy stomach, pleasure, and thy golden sleep? Why dost thou bend thine eyes upon the earth, And start so often when thou sit'st alone? Why hast thou lost the fresh blood in thy cheeks;

And given my treasures, and my rights of thee, To thick-ey'd musing, and curs'd melancholy? In thy faint slumbers, I by thee have watch'd, And heard thee murmur tales of iron wars: Speak terms of manage to thy bounding steed; *Cry, Courage!—to the field!* And thou hast talk'd

Of sallies and retires; of trenches, tents, Of palisadoes, frontiers, parapets; Of basilisks, of cannon, culverin; Of prisoners' ransom, and of soldiers slain, And all the currents\* of a heady fight. Thy spirit within thee hath been so at war, And thus hath so bestir'd thee in the sleep, That beads of sweat have stood upon thy brow,

Like bubbles in a late-disturbed stream: And in thy face strange motions have appear'd,†

Such as we see when men restrain their breath On some great sudden haste. O what portents are these?

Some heavy business hath my lord in hand, And I must know it, else he loves me not.

*Hot.* What, ho! is Gilekams with the packet gone?

*Enter SERVANT.*

*Serv.* He is, my lord, an hour ago.

*Hot.* Hath Butler brought these horses from the sheriff?

*Serv.* One horse, my lord, he brought even now.

*Hot.* What horse? a roan, a crop-ear, is it not?

*Serv.* It is, my lord.

*Hot.* That roan shall be my throne

Well, I will back him straight: O *esperance!*†— Bid Butler lead him forth into the park. *[Exit SERVANT.]*

*Lady.* But hear you, my lord.

*Hot.* What say'st, my lady?

*Lady.* What is it carries you away?

*Hot.* My horse,

My love, my horse.

*Lady.* Out, you mad-headed ape!

A weasel hath not such a deal of spleen, As you are toss'd with. In faith, I'll know your business, Harry, that I will. I fear my brother Mortimer doth sur About his title: and hath sent for you, To line‡ his enterprise; and But if you go—

*Hot.* So far afoot, I shall be weary, love.

*Lady.* Come, come, you paraquito, answer me

Directly to this question that I ask.

In faith, I'll break thy little finger, Harry, An if thou wilt not tell me all things true.

*Hot.* Away,

Away, you trifter!—Love?—I love thee not, I care not for thee, Kate: this is no world, To play with mamnets, and to tilt with lips: We must have bloody noses, and crack'd crowns,

And pass them current too.—Gods me, my horse!—

What say'st thou, Kate? what would'st thou have with me?

*Lady.* Do you not love me? do you not indeed?

Well, do not then; for, since you love me not, I will not love myself. Do you not love me? Nay, tell me, if you speak in jest or no.

*Hot.* Come, wilt thou see me ride? And when I am o'horse-back, I will swear

\* Occurrences.

† Motto of the Percy family. ‡ Strengthen.



I love thee infinitely. But hark you, Kate; I must not have you henceforth question me Whither I go, nor reason whereabout: Whither I must, I must; and, to conclude, This evening must I leave you, gentle Kate. I know you wise; but yet no further wise, Than Harry Percy's wife: constant you are; But yet a woman; and for secrecy, No lady closer; for I well believe, Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know; And so far will I trust thee, gentle Kate!

*Lady.* How! so far?

*Hof.* Not an inch farther. But hark you, Kate!

Whither I go, thither shall you go too; To-day will I set forth, to-morrow you.— Will this content you, Kate?

*Lady.* It must, of force.

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE IV.—Eastcheap—A Room in the Boar's Head Tavern.*

*Enter Prince HENRY and POINS.*

*P. Hen.* Ned, prythee come out of that fat room, and lend me thy hand to laugh a little.

*Poins.* Where hast been, Hal?

*P. Hen.* With three or four loggerheads, amongst three or four score hog'sheads. I have sounded the very base string of humility. Sirrah, I am sworn brother to a leash\* of drawers; and can tell them all by their Christian names, as—Tom, Dick, and Francis. They take it already upon their salvation, that though I be but prince of Wales, yet I am the king of courtesy; and tell me flatly, I am no proud Jack, like Falstaff; but a Corinthian, a lad of mettle, a good boy,—by the Lord, so they call me; and when I am king of England, I shall command all the good lads in Eastcheap. They call drinking deep, dying scarlet; and when you breathe in your watering, they cry—hem! and bid you play it off. To conclude, I am so good a proficient in one quarter of an hour, that I can drink with any tinker in his own language during my life. I tell thee, Ned, thou hast lost much honour, that thou wert not with me in this action. But, sweet Ned,—to sweeten which name of Ned, I give thee this pennyworth of sugar, clapped even now in my hand by an under-sinker; one that never spake other English in his life, than—*Eight shillings and sixpence*,—and—*You are welcome*; with this shrill addition;—*Anon, anon, Sir! Score a pint of bastard in the Half-moon*, or so. But, Ned, to drive away the time till Falstaff come, I prythee do thou stand in some by-room, while I question my puny drawer, to what end he gave me the sugar; and do thou never leave calling—Francis, that his tale to me may be nothing but—anon. Step aside, and I'll show thee a precedent.

*Poins.* Francis!

*P. Hen.* Thou art perfect.

*Poins.* Francis!

[*Exit POINS.*]

*Enter FRANCIS.*

*Fran.* Anon, anon, Sir,—Look down into the Pomegranate, Ralph.

*P. Hen.* Come hither, Francis.

*Fran.* My lord.

*P. Hen.* How long hast thou to serve, Francis?

*Fran.* Forsooth, five year, and as much as to—

*Poins.* [Within.] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, anon, Sir.

*P. Hen.* Five years! by'r lady, a long lease for the clinking of pewter. But, Francis, darest thou be so valiant, as to play the coward with thy indenture, and to show it a fair pair, of heels, and run from it?

*Fran.* O lord, Sir! I'll be sworn upon all the books in England, I could find in my heart—

*Poins.* [Within.] Francis!

\* Three.

† Tapster

*Fran.* Anon, anon, Sir.

*P. Hen.* How old art thou, Francis?

*Fran.* Let me see,—About Michaelmas next I shall be—

*Poins.* [Within.] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, Sir.—Pray you, stay a little my lord.

*P. Hen.* Nay, but hark you, Francis: For the sugar thou gavest me,—'twas a pennyworth, was't not?

*Fran.* O lord, Sir! I would it had been two.

*P. Hen.* I will give thee for it a thousand pound; ask me when thou wilt, and thou shalt have it.

*Poins.* [Within.] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, anon.

*P. Hen.* Anon, Francis? No, Francis: but to-morrow, Francis; or, Francis, on Thursday; or, indeed, Francis, when thou wilt. But, Francis,—

*Fran.* My lord?

*P. Hen.* Wilt thou rob this leathern jerkin, crystal-button, nodd-pated, agate-ring, puke-sucking, caddis-garter, smooth-tongue, Spanish-pouch,—

*Fran.* O lord, Sir, who do you mean?

*P. Hen.* Why then, your brow bastard\* is your only drink; for, look you, Francis, your white causs doublet will sully: in Barbary, Sir, it cannot come to so much.

*Fran.* What, Sir?

*Poins.* [Within.] Francis!

*P. Hen.* Away, you rogue; dost thou not hear them call?

[*Here they both call him; the Drawer starts amazed, not knowing which way to go.*]

*Enter VINTNER.*

*Vint.* What! stand'st thou still, and hear'st such a calling? Look to the guests within.

[*Exit FRAN.*] My lord, old Sir John, with half a dozen more, are at the door. Shall I let them in?

*P. Hen.* Let them alone awhile, and then open the door. [*Exit VINTNER.*] *Poins.*

*Re-enter POINS.*

*Poins.* Anon, anon, Sir.

*P. Hen.* Sirrah, Falstaff and the rest of the thieves are at the door; Shall we be merry?

*Poins.* As merry as crickets, my lad. But hark ye; What cunning match have you made with this jest of the drawer? come, what's the issue?

*P. Hen.* I am now of all humours, that have show'd themselves humours, since the old days of Goodman Adam, to the pupil age of this present twelve o'clock at midnight. [*Re-enter FRANCIS with Wine.*] What's o'clock, Francis?

*Fran.* Anon, anon, Sir?

*P. Hen.* That ever this fellow should have fewer words than a parrot, and yet the son of a woman!—His industry is—up-stairs, and down-stairs; his eloquence, the parcel of a reckoning. I am not yet of Percy's mind, the Hotspur of the north; he that kills me some six or seven dozen of Scots at a breakfast, washes his hands, and says to his wife,—*Fie upon this quiet life! I want work.* O my sweet Harry, says she, *how many hast thou killed to day? Give my roan horse a drench*, says he; and answers, *Some fourteen*; an hour after, a *trifle*, a *trifle*. I prythee, call in Falstaff; I'll play Percy, and that damned brawn shall play dame Mortimer, his wife. *Alvo*, says the drunkard. Call in ribs, call in tallow.

*Enter FALSTAFF, GADSHILL, BARDOLPH, and PETRO.*

*Poins.* Welcome, Jack. Where hast thou been?

*Fal.* A plague of all cowards, I say, and a vengeance too! marry, and amen! Give me a

\* A sweet wind.

cup of sack, boy.—Ere I lead this life long, I'll sew netherstocks, \* and mend them, and foot them too. A plague of all cowards!—Give me a cup of sack, rogue.—Is there no virtue extant?

[He drinks.]

*P. Hen.* Didst thou never see Titan kiss a dist of butter? pitiful hearted Titan, that melted at the sweet tale of the son! if thou didst, then behold that compound.

*Fal.* You rogue, here's lime in this sack too: There is nothing but rogues to be found in villainous man: Yet a coward is worse than a cup of sack with lime in it; a villainous coward.—Go thy ways, old Jack; die when thou wilt, if manhood, good manhood, be not forgot upon the face of the earth, then am I a shotten herling. There live not three good men unbanged in England; and one of them is fat, and grows old: God help the while! a bad world, I say; I would I were a weaver; I could sing psalms or any thing; A plague of all cowards, I say still.

*P. Hen.* How now, wool-sack? what mutter you?

*Fal.* A king's son! If I do not beat thee out of thy kingdom with a dagger of lath, and drive all thy subjects afore thee like a flock of wild geese, I'll never wear hair on my face more. You prince of Wales!

*P. Hen.* Why, you whoreson round man! what's the matter!

*Fal.* Are you not a coward? answer me to that; and Poin's there?

*Poin's.* 'Zounds, ye fat paunch, an ye call me coward, I'll stab thee.

*Fal.* I call thee coward! I'll see thee damned ere I call thee coward: but I would give a thousand pound, I could run as fast as thou canst. You are straight enough in the shoulders, you care not who sees your back: Call you that backing of your friends? A plague upon such backing! give me them that will race me.—Give me a cup of sack:—I am a rogue, if I drunk to-day.

*P. Hen.* O villain! thy lips are scarce wiped since thou drunk'st last.

*Fal.* All's one for that. A plague of all cowards, still say I. [He drinks.]

*P. Hen.* What's the matter?

*Fal.* What's the matter? there be four of us here have ta'en a thousand pound this morning.

*P. Hen.* Where is it, Jack? where is it?

*Fal.* Where is it? taken from us it is: a hundred upon poor four of us.

*P. Hen.* What, a hundred, man?

*Fal.* I am a rogue, if I were not at half-sword with a dozen of them two hours together. I have 'scap'd by miracle. I am eight times thru'through the doublet; four, through the hose; my buckler cut through and through; my sword backed like a hand-saw, *ecce signum*. I never dealt better since I was a man; all would not do. A plague of all cowards!—Let them speak: if they speak more or less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of darkness.

*P. Hen.* Speak, Sirs; how was it?

*Gads.* We four set upon some dozen,——

*Fal.* Sixteen, at least, my lord.

*Gads.* And bound them.

*Peto.* No, no, they were not bound.

*Fal.* You rogue, they were bound, every man of them; or I am a Jew else, an Ebrew Jew.

*Gads.* As we were sharing, some six or seven fresh men set upon us,——

*Fal.* And unbound the rest, and then come in the other.

*P. Hen.* What, fought ye with them all?

*Fal.* All? I know not what ye call, all; but if I fought not with fifty of them, I am a bunch of radish: if there were not two or three and

fifty upon poor old Jack, then I am no two-legged creature.

*Poin's.* Pray God, you have not murdered some of them.

*Fal.* Nay, that's past praying for: for I have peppered two of them: two, I am sure, I have paid; two rogues in buckram suits. I tell thee what, Hal,—if I tell thee a lie, spit in my face, call me horse. Thou knowest my old ward:—here I lay, and thus I bore my point. Four rogues in buckram let drive at me.—

*P. Hen.* What, four? thou said'st but two, even now.

*Fal.* Four, Hal; I told thee four.

*Poin's.* Ay, ay, he said four.

*Fal.* These four came all a-front, and mainly thrust at me. I made me no more ado, but took all their seven points in my target, thus.

*P. Hen.* Seven? why, there were but four even now.

*Fal.* In buckram.

*Poin's.* Ay, four, in buckram suits.

*Fal.* Seven by these hilts, or I am a villain else.

*P. Hen.* Pr'ythee, let him alone; we shall have more anon.

*Fal.* Dost thou hear me, Hal?

*P. Hen.* Ay, and mark thee too, Jack.

*Fal.* Do so, for it is worth the listening to, These nine in buckram, that I told thee of,—

*P. Hen.* So, two more already.

*Fal.* Their points being broken,——

*Poin's.* Down fell their hose.

*Fal.* Began to give me ground: But I followed me close, came in foot and hand; and, with a thought, seven of the eleven I paid

*P. Hen.* O monstrous! eleven buckram men grown out of two!

*Fal.* But, as the devil would have it, three misbegotten knaves, in Kendal green, came at my back, and let drive at me;—for it was so dark, Hal, that thou could'st not see thy hand.

*P. Hen.* These lies are like the father that begets them; gross as a mountain, open, palpable. Why, thou clay-brained guts; thou knotty-pated fool; thou whoreson, obscene, greasy tallow-keech,——

*Fal.* What, art thou mad? art thou mad? is not the truth the truth?

*P. Hen.* Why, how could'st thou know these men in Kendal green, when it was so dark thou could'st not see thy hand? come, tell us your reason? What sayest thou to this?

*Poin's.* Come, your reason, Jack, your reason.

*Fal.* What, upon compulsion? No; were I at the strappado, or all the racks in the world, I would not tell you on compulsion. Give you a reason on compulsion! if reasons were as plenty as blackberries, I would give you a reason upon compulsion, I.

*P. Hen.* I'll be no longer guilty of this sin: this sanguine coward, this bed-presser, this horse-back-breaker, this huge hill of flesh:—

*Fal.* Away, you starveling, you elf-skin, you dried neat's-tongue, bull's pizzle, you stock-fish,—O for breath to utter what is like thee!—you tailor's yard you sheath, you bow-case, you vile standing tuck;——

*P. Hen.* Well, breathe awhile, and then to it again; and when thou hast tired thyself in base comparisons, hear me speak but this.

*Poin's.* Mark, Jack.

*P. Hen.* We two saw you four set on four; you bound them, and were masters of their wealth; (mark now, how plain a tale shall put you down,) then did we two set on you four, and, with a word, out-faced you from your prize, and have it; yea, and can show it you here in the house:—and, Falstaff, you carried your gins away as nimbly, with as quick dexterity, and roared for mercy, and still ran and roared, as ever I heard a bull-calf. What a slave art thou, to hack thy sword as thou hast done, and then

saw it was in fight? What trick, what device, what starting-hole, canst thou now find out to hide thee from this open and apparent shame?

*Poins.* Come, let's hear, Jack: What trick hast thou now?

*Fal.* By the Lord, I knew ye, as well as he that made ye. Why, hear ye, my masters: Was it for me to kill the heir apparent? Should I turn upon the true prince? Why, thou knowest I am as valiant as Hercules: but beware instinct; the lion will not touch the true prince. Instinct is a great matter; I was a coward on instinct. I shall think the better of myself and thee, during my life: I, for a valiant lion, and thou, for a true prince. But, by the Lord, lads, I am glad you have the money.—Hostess, clap to the doors; watch to-night, pray to-morrow.—Gallants, lads, boys, hearts of gold, all the titles of good fellowship come to you! What, shall we be merry? shall we have a play extempore?

*P. Hen.* Content;—and the argument shall be, thy running away.

*Fal.* Ah! no more of that, Hal, an thou lovest me.

#### Enter Hostess.

*Host.* My lord the prince,—

*P. Hen.* How now, my lady the hostess, what say'st thou to me?

*Host.* Marry, my lord, there is a nobleman of the court at door, would speak with you: he says he comes from your father.

*P. Hen.* Give him as much as will make him a royal man, and send him back again to my mother.

*Fal.* What manner of man is he?

*Host.* An old man.

*Fal.* What doth gravity out of his bed at midnight?—Shall I give him his answer?

*P. Hen.* Prythee, do, Jack.

*Fal.* Faith, and I'll send him packing.

[Exit.]

*P. Hen.* Now, Sirs; by'r lady, you fought fair;—so did you, Peto;—so did you, Bardolph: you are lions too, you ran away upon instinct, you will not touch the true prince: no,—fie!

*Bard.* Faith, I ran when I saw others run.

*P. Hen.* Tell me now in earnest, How came Falstaff's sword so hacked?

*Peto.* Why, he hacked it with his dagger, and said, he would swear truth out of England, but he would make you believe it was done in fight; and persuaded us to do the like.

*Bard.* Yea, and to tickle our noses with spear-grass, to make them bleed; and then to beslobber our garments with it, and swear it was the blood of true men. I did that I did not this seven year before, I blushed to hear his monstrous devices.

*P. Hen.* O villain, thou stolest a cup of sack eighteen years ago, and wert taken with the manner, \* and ever since thou hast blusht extempore: Thou badst fire and sword on thy side, and yet thou ranst away; What instinct badst thou for it?

*Bard.* My lord, do you see these meteors? Do you behold these exhalations?

*P. Hen.* I do.

*Bard.* What think you they portend?

*P. Hen.* Hot livers and cold purses.†

*Bard.* Choler, my lord, if rightly taken.

*P. Hen.* No, if rightly taken, halter.

#### Re-enter FALSTAFF.

Here comes lean Jack, here comes barebone. How now, my sweet creature of bombast?‡ How long is't ago, Jack, since thou sawest thine own knee?

*Fal.* My own knee? when I was about thy

years, Hal, I was not an eagle's talon in the waist: I could have crept into an alderman's thumb-ring: A plague of sighing and grief: it blows a man up like a bladder. There's villainous news abroad: here was Sir John Bracy from your father; you must to the court in the morning. That same mad fellow of the north, Percy; and he of Wales, that gave Annamoun the bastinado, and made Lucifer cuckold, and swore the devil his true liegeman upon the cross of a Welsh hook,—What, a plague, call you him?

*Poins.* Oh! Glendower.

*Fal.* Owen, Owen; the same;—and his son-in-law, Mortimer; and old Northumberland; and that sprightly Scot of Scots, Douglas, that runs o'horseback up a hill perpendicular.

*P. Hen.* He that rides at high speed, and with his pistol kills a sparrow flying.

*Fal.* You have hit it.

*P. Hen.* So did he never the sparrow.

*Fal.* Well, that rascal hath good mettle in him; he will not run.

*P. Hen.* Why, what a rascal art thou then, to praise him so for running?

*Fal.* O'horseback, ye cuckoo! but, afoot, he will not budge a foot.

*P. Hen.* Yes, Jack, upon instinct.

*Fal.* I grant ye, upon instinct. Well, he is there too, and one Mordake, and a thousand blue-caps† more: Worcester is stolen away to-night; thy father's beard is turned white with the news; you may buy land now as cheap as stinking mackerel.

*P. Hen.* Why then, 'tis like, if there come a hot June, and this civil buffeting hold, we shall buy maidenheads as they buy hobsnails, by the hundreds.

*Fal.* By the mass, lad, thou sayest true; it is like we shall have good trading that way.—But, tell me, Hal, art thou not horribly afraid? I thou being heir apparent, could the world pick thee out three such enemies again, as that fiend Douglas, that spirit Percy, and that devil Glendower? Art thou not horribly afraid? doth not thy blood thrill at it?

*P. Hen.* Not a whit, 'faith; I lack some of thy instinct.

*Fal.* Well, thou wilt be horribly chid to-morrow, when thou comest to thy father: if thou love me, practise an answer.

*P. Hen.* Do thou stand for my father, and examine me upon the particulars of my life.

*Fal.* Shall I? content:—This chair shall be my state,‡ this dagger my sceptre, and this cushion my crown.

*P. Hen.* Thy state is taken for a joint-stool thy golden sceptre for a leaden dagger, and thy precious rich crown, for a pitiful bald crown!

*Fal.* Well, an the fire of grace be not quite out of thee, now shalt thou be moved.—Give me a cup of sack, to make mine eyes look red, that it may be thought I have wept; for I must speak in passion, and I will do it in King Cambyses's vein.

*P. Hen.* Well, here is my leg.‖

*Fal.* And here is my speech:—Stand aside, nobility.

*Host.* This is excellent sport, 'faith.

*Fal.* Weep not, sweet queen, for trickling tears are vain.

*Host.* O the father, how he holds his countenance!

*Fal.* For God's sake, lords, convey my tristful queen,

For tears do stop the flood-gates of her eyes.

*Host.* O rare! he doth it as like one of these harlotry players, as I ever see.

\* A demon; described as one of the four kings, who govern all other demons.

† Beesmen in blue bonnets.

‡ Chair of state.

§ A character in a Tragedy by T. Preston, 1570.

|| Obsessance.

¶ Borrowful.

\* In the fact.

† Drunkenness and poverty.

‡ Bombast is the stuffing of clothes.

*Fal.* Peace, good point-pot; peace, good tickle-brain.—"Harry, I do not only marvel where thou spendest thy time, but also how thou art accompanied: for though the camomile, the more it is trodden on, the faster it grows, yet youth, the more it is wasted, the sooner it wears. That thou art my son, I have partly thy mother's word, partly my own opinion; but chiefly, a villanous trick of thine eye, and a foolish bawling of thy nether lip, that doth warrant me. If then thou be son to me, here lies the point:—Why, being son to me, art thou so pointed at? Shall the blessed sun of heaven prove a mitcher, and eat black-berries? a question not to be asked. Shall the son of England prove a thief, and take purses? a question to be asked. There is a thing, Harry, which thou hast often heard of, and it is known to many in our land by the name of pitch: this pitch, as ancient writers do report, doth defile: so doth the company thou keepest: for, Harry, now I do not speak to thee in drink, but in tears; not in pleasure, but in passion; not in words only, but in woes also:—And yet there is a virtuous man, whom I have often noted in thy company, but I know not his name.

*P. Hen.* What manner of man, an it like your majesty?

*Fal.* A good portly man, i'faith, and a corpulent; of a cheerful look, a pleasing eye, and a most noble carriage; and, as I think, his age some fifty, or, by'r lady, inclining to three-score; and now I remember me, his name is Falstaff: if that man should be lawfully given, he deceiveth me; for, Harry, I see virtue in his looks. If then the tree may be known by the fruit, as the fruit by the tree, then, peremptorily I speak it, there is virtue in that Falstaff: him keep with, the rest banish. And tell me now, thou naughty varlet, tell me, where hast thou been this month?

*P. Hen.* Dost thou speak like a king? Do thou stand for me, and I'll play my father.

*Fal.* Depose me! if thou dost it half so gravely, so majestically, both in word and matter, hang me up by the heels for a rabbit-sucker, or a poulter's hare.

*P. Hen.* Well, here I am set.

*Fal.* And here I stand:—judge, my masters.

*P. Hen.* Now, Harry? whence come you?

*Fal.* My noble lord, from Eastcheap.

*P. Hen.* The complaints I hear of thee are grievous.

*Fal.* 'Blood, my lord, they are false:—nay, I'll tickle ye for a young prince, i'faith.

*P. Hen.* Swearst thou, ungracious boy? henceforth ne'er look on me. Thou art violently carried away from grace: there is a devil haunts thee, in the likeness of a fat old man: a tun of man is thy companion. Why dost thou converse with that trunk of humours, that bolting-butch of beastliness, that swoln parcel of dropsies, that huge bombard of sack, that stuffed cloak-bag of guts, that roasted Manningtree ox with the pudding in his belly, that reverend vice, that grey iniquity, that father ruffian, that vanity in years? Wherein is he good, but to taste sack and drink it? wherein neat and cleanly, but to carve a capon and eat it? wherein cunning but in craft? wherein crafty, but in villany? wherein villanous, but in all things? wherein worthy, but in nothing?

*Fal.* I would your grace would take me with you;—Whom means your grace?

*P. Hen.* That villanous abominable misleader of youth, Falstaff, that old white-bearded Satan.

*Fal.* My lord, the man I know.

*P. Hen.* I know thou dost.

\* Name of a strong liquor.

† A truant boy. ‡ A young rabbit

§ The machine which separates flour from bran

|| A leather black jack to hold beer.

¶ In Essex, where a large ox was roasted whole.

\*\* Specia, no faster than I can follow

*Fal.* But to say I know more harm in him than in myself, were to say more than I know. That he is old, (the more the pity,) his white hairs do witness it; but that he is (saving your reverence,) a whoremaster, that I utterly deny. If sack and sugar be a fault, God help the wicked! If to be old and merry be a sin, then many an old host that I know, is damned: it to be fat be to be hated, then Pharaoh's lean kine are to be loved. No, my good lord; banish Peto, banish Baidolph, banish Poins: but for sweet Jack Falstaff, kind Jack Falstaff, true Jack Falstaff, valiant Jack Falstaff, and therefore more valiant, being, as he is, old Jack Falstaff, banish not him thy Harry's company; banish plump Jack, and banish all the world.

*P. Hen.* I do, I will. [A knocking heard.  
(*Exeunt* HOSTESS, FRANCIS, and BARDOLPH.)

*Re-enter* BARDOLPH, running.

*Bard.* O my lord, my lord; the sheriff, with a most monstrous watch, is at the door.

*Fal.* Out, you rogue! play out the play: I have much to say in the behalf of that Falstaff.

*Re-enter* HOSTESS, hastily.

*Host.* O Jesu, my lord, my lord!—

*Fal.* Heigh, heigh! the devil rides upon a fiddlestick: What's the matter?

*Host.* The sheriff and all the watch are at the door: they are come to search the house; Shall I let them in?

*Fal.* Dost thou hear, Hal? never call a true piece of gold a counterfeit: thou art essentially mad, without seeming so.

*P. Hen.* And thou a natural coward, without instinct.

*Fal.* I deny your major: if you will deny the sheriff, so; if not, let him enter: if I become not a cart as well as another man, a plague on my bringing up! I hope I shall as soon be strangled with a halter, as another.

*P. Hen.* Go, hide thee behind the arras;—the rest walk up above. Now, my masters, for a true face, and good conscience.

*Fal.* Both which I have had: but their date is out, and therefore I'll hide me.

[*Exeunt* all but the PRINCE and POINS.]

*P. Hen.* Call in the sheriff.—

*Enter* SHERIFF and CARRIER.

Now, master sheriff; what's your will with me?

*Sher.* First, pardon me, my lord. A hue and cry

Hath follow'd certain men unto this house.

*P. Hen.* What men?

*Sher.* One of them is well known, my gracious lord,

A gross fat man.

*Cur.* As fat as butter.

*P. Hen.* The man, I do assure you, is not here;

For I myself at this time have employ'd him.

And, sheriff, I will engage my word to thee,

That I will, by to-morrow dinner-time,

Send him to answer thee or any man,

For any thing he shall be charg'd withal: \*

And so let me entreat you leave the house.

*Sher.* I will, my lord: There are two gentlemen

Have in this robbery lost three hundred marks.

*P. Hen.* It may be so: if he have robb'd these men,

He shall be answerable: and so, farewell.

*Sher.* Good night, my noble lord.

*P. Hen.* I think it is good morrow; is it not?

*Sher.* Indeed, my lord, I think it be two o'clock.

[*Exeunt* SHERIFF and CARRIER.]

*P. Hen.* This oily rascal is known as well as Paul's. Go, call him forth.

*Poins.* Falstaff!—fast asleep behind the arras, and snorting like a horse.

*P. Hen.* Hark, how hard he fetches breath: Search his pockets. [*POINS searches.*] What hast thou found?

*Poins.* Nothing but papers, my lord.

*P. Hen.* Let's see what they be: read them.

*Poins.* Item, A capon, 2s. 2d.

Item, Sauce 4d.

Item, Sack, two gallons, 5s. 8d.

Item, Anchovies, and sack after supper, 2s. 6d.

Item, Bread, a halfpenny.

*P. Hen.* O monstrous! but one half penny-worth of bread to this intolerable deal of sack!

—What there is else, keep close; we'll read it at more advantage: there let him sleep till day. I'll to the court in the morning: we must all to the wars, and there place shall be honourable. I'll procure this fat rogue a charge of foot; and, I know, his death will be a march of twelvescore. The money shall be paid back again with advantage. Be with me betimes in the morning; and so good morrow, *Poins.*

*Poins.* Good morrow, good my lord. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*Bangor.*—A Room in the Archdeacon's House.

Enter HOTSPUR, WORCESTER, MORTIMER, and GLENDOWER.

*Mort.* These promises are fair, the parties sure,

And our induction \* full of prosperous hope.

*Hot.* Lord Mortimer, and cousin Glendower,

Will you sit down?—

And, uncle Worcester:—A plague upon it!

I have forgot the map.

*Glend.* No, here it is.

Sit, cousin Percy; sit, good cousin Hotspur:

For by that name as oft as Lanca-ter

Doth speak of you, his cheek looks pale, and, with

A rising sigh, he wisheth you in heaven.

*Hot.* And you in hell, as often as he hears Owen Glendower spoke of.

*Glend.* I cannot blame him: at my nativity,

The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes,

Of burning cressets; † and, at my birth,

The flame and huge foundation of the earth

Shak'd like a coward.

*Hot.* Why, so it would have done

At the same season, if your mother's cat had

But kitten'd, though yourself had we'er been born.

*Glend.* I say the earth did shake when I was born.

*Hot.* And I say the earth was not of my mind,

If you suppose, as fearing you it shook.

*Glend.* The heavens were all on fire, the earth did tremble.

*Hot.* Oh! then the earth shook to see the heavens on fire,

And not in fear of your nativity.

Diseased nature oftentimes breaks forth

In strange eruptions: oft the teeming earth

Is with a kind of colic pinch'd and vex'd

By the imprisoning of unruly wind

Within her womb; which, for enlargement

striving, [down

Shakes the old beldame earth, and topples ‡

Steeple and moss-grown towers. At your birth,

Our grandam earth, having this distemperature,

In passion shook.

*Glend.* Cousin, of many men

I do not hear these crossings. Give me leave

To tell you once again, that, at my birth,

The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes; The goats ran from the mountains, and the herds

Were strangely clamorous to the frighted fields.

These signs have mark'd me extraordinary;

And all the courses of my life do show,

I am not in the roll of common men.

Where is he living,—clipp'd in with the sea

That chides the banks of England, Scotland,

Wales,—

Which calls me pupil, or hath read to me?

And bring him out, that is but woman's son,

Can trace me in the tedious ways of art,

And hold me pace in deep experiments.

*Hot.* I think there is no man speaks better Welsh:—

I will to dinner.

*Mort.* Peace, cousin Percy; you will make him mad.

*Glend.* I can call spirits from the vasty deep.

*Hot.* Why, so can I; or so can any man:

But will they come when you do call for them?

*Glend.* Why, I can teach you, cousin, to command the devil. [mand

*Hot.* And I can teach thee, coz, to shame the devil,

By telling truth; Tell truth, and shame the devil.—

If thou have power to raise him, bring him

hither,

And I'll be sworn I have power to shame him

hence.

Oh! while you live, tell truth and shame the devil.

*Mort.* Come, come,

No more of this unprofitable chat.

*Glend.* Three times hath Henry Bolingbroke made head

Against my power: thrice from the banks of Wye,

And sandy-bottom'd Severn, have I sent him.

Bootless \* home, and weather beaten back,

*Hot.* Home without boots, and in foul weather too!

How 'scapes he agues, in the devil's name?

*Glend.* Come, here's the map: Shall we divide our right,

According to our three-fold order ta'en?

*Mort.* The archdeacon hath divided it

Into three limits, very equally:

England, from Trent and Severn hitherto,

By south and east, is to my part assign'd;

All westward, Wales beyond the Severn shore,

And all the fertile land within that bound,

To Owen Glendower:—and, dear coz, to you

The remnant northward, lying off from Trent.

And our indentures tripartite † are drawn;

Which, being sealed interchangeably,

(A business that this night may execute,)

To-morrow, cousin Percy, you and I,

And my good lord of Worcester, will set forth,

To meet your father and the Scottish power,

As is appointed us at Shrewsbury.

My father Glendower is not ready yet,

Nor shall we need his help these fourteen days:—

Within that space, [To GLEND.] you may have drawn together

Your tenants, friends, and neighbouring gentlemen.

*Glend.* A shorter time shall send me to you, lords,

And in my conduct shall your ladies come:

From whom you now must steal, and take no leave;

For there will be a world of water shed,

Upon the parting of your wives and you.

*Hot.* Methinks my moiety, ‡ north from Burton here,

In quantity equals not one of your's:

See, how this river comes me cranking in

And cuts me from the best of all my land,

\* Beginning † Lights set cross ways upon taccos and also upon poles, which were used in procession, &c.

‡ Tunnels.

\* Unsuccessful. † Three copies. ‡ Portion.

A huge half moon, a monstrous cantle \* out.  
I'll have the current in this place damm'd up;  
And here the snug and silver Trent shall run,  
In a new channel, fair and evenly:  
It shall not wind with such a deep indent,  
To rob me of so rich a bottom here.

*Glend.* Not wind? it shall, it must: you see it doth.

*Mort.* Yea,  
But mark how he bears his course, and runs me up

With like advantage on the other side;  
Gelding the opposed continent as much,  
As on the other side it takes from you.

*Mort.* Yea, but a little charge will trench him here,

And on this north side w.n this cape of land;  
And then he runs straight and even.

*Hot.* I'll have it so; a little charge will do it.

*Glend.* I will not have it alter'd.

*Hot.* Will not you?

*Glend.* No, nor you shall not.

*Hot.* Who shall say me nay?

*Glend.* Why, that will I.

*Hot.* Let me not understand it then,  
Speak it in Welsh.

*Glend.* I can speak English, lord, as well as you:

For I was train'd up in the English court:  
Where, being but young, I fram'd to the harp  
Many an English ditty, lovely well,  
And gave the tongue a helpful ornament;  
A virtue that was never seen in you.

*Hot.* Marry, and I'm glad of it with all my heart;

I had rather be a kitten, and cry mew,  
Than one of these same metre ballad-mongers:  
I had rather hear a brazen cantick † turn'd,  
Or a dry wheel grate on an axle-tree;  
And that would set my teeth nothing on edge,  
Nothing so much as muzzing poetry;  
'Tis like the forc'd gait of a shuffling nag.

*Glend.* Come, you shall have Trent turn'd.

*Hot.* I do not care: I'll give thrice so much land

To any well-deserving friend;  
But, in the way of bargain, mark ye me,  
I'll cavil on the ninth part of a hair.

Are the indentures drawn? shall we be gone?

*Glend.* The moon shines fair, you may away by night:

I'll haste the writer, † and, withal,  
Break with your wives of your departure hence:  
I am afraid my daughter will run mad,  
So much she doth on her Mortimer.

[Exit.]

*Mort.* Fie, cousin Percy! how you cross my father!

*Hot.* I cannot choose: sometimes he angers me,

With telling me of the moldwarp and the ant,  
Of the dreamer Merlin and his prophecies;  
And of a dragon and a finless fish,  
A clip-wing'd giffin, and a moulten raven,  
A coughing lion, and a ramping cat,  
And such a deal of skumble-skamble stuff  
As puts me from my faith. I tell you what,—  
He held me, but last night, at least nine hours,

In reckoning up the several devils' names,  
That were his lackeys: I cried, humph,—and well,—go to,—

But mark'd him not a word. Oh! he's as tedious

As is a tired horse, a railing wife;  
Worse than a smoky house.—I had rather live

With cheese and garlic, in a windmill, far,  
Than feed on cates, and have him talk to me,  
In any summer-house in Christendom.

*Mort.* In faith, he is a worthy gentleman;  
Exceedingly well read, and plottid

In strange concealments; valiant as a lion,  
And wondrous affable; and as bountiful  
As mines of India. Shall I tell you, cousin?  
He holds your temper in a high respect,  
And curbs himself even of his natural scope,  
When you do cross his humour; faith, he does:

I warrant you, that man is not alive,  
Might so have tempted him as you have done  
Without the taste of danger and reproof;  
But do not use it oft, let me entreat you.

*Wor.* In faith, my lord, you are too wilful-blame;

And since your coming hither have done enough  
To put him quite beside his patience.

You must needs learn, lord, to amend this fault:

Though sometimes it show greatness, courage, blood,

(And that's the dearest grace it renders you,)

Yet oftentimes it doth present harsh rage,  
Defect of manners, want of government,  
Pride, haughtiness, opinion, and disdain:

The least of which, haunting a nobleman,  
Loseth men's hearts; and leaves behind a stain

Upon the beauty of all parts besides,  
Beginning them of commendation.

*Hot.* Well, I am school'd; good manners be your speed!

Here comes our wives, and let us take our leave.

Re-enter GLENDOWER, with the LADIES.

*Mort.* This is the deadly spite that angers me,—

My wife can speak no English, I no Welsh.

*Glend.* My daughter weeps; she will not part with you,

She'll be a soldier too, she'll to the wars.

*Mort.* Good father tell her, that she and my aunt Percy,

Shall follow in your conduct \* speedily

[GLENDOWER speaks to his Daughter in Welsh, and she answers him in the same.]

*Glend.* She's desperate here; a peevish self-will'd hallotry.

One no persuasion can do good upon.

[Lady M. speaks to MORTIMER in Welsh.]

*Mort.* I understand thy looks: that pretty Welsh

Which thou pourest down from these swelling heavens,

I am too perfect in; and, but for shame,

In such a parley would I answer thee. [Lady M. speaks.]

I understand thy kisses, and thou mine,

And that's a feeling disputation;

But I will never be a truant, love,

Till I have learn'd thy language; for thy tongue

Makes Welsh as sweet as ditties highly penn'd,  
Sung by a fair queen in a summer's bower,  
With ravishing division, to her lute.

*Glend.* Nay, if you melt, then will she run mad. [Lady M. speaks again.]

*Mort.* Oh! I am ignorance itself in this.

*Glend.* She bids you

Upon the wanton rushes lay you down,  
And rest your gentle head upon her lap,  
And she will sing the song that pleaseth you,  
And on your eyelids crown the god of sleep,  
Charming your blood with pleasing heaviness;  
Making such difference 'twixt wake and sleep,  
As is the difference betwixt day and night,  
The hour before the heavenly-harness'd team  
Begins his golden progress in the east.

*Mort.* With all my heart I'll sit, and hear her sing:

By that time will our book, † I think, be drawn

*Glend.* Do so;  
And those musicians that shall play to you,

\* Corner † Candlestick.  
† The writer of the articles.

\* Escort. † Our paper of conditions.

Hang in the air a thousand leagues from hence;  
Yet straight they shall be here: sit, and attend.

*Hot.* Come, Kate, thou art perfect in lying down: Come, quick, quick; that I may lay my head in thy lap.

*Lady P.* Go, ye giddy goose.

*GLENDOWER speaks some Welsh words, and then the Music plays.*

*Hot.* Now I perceive the devil understands Welsh:

And 'tis no marvel he's so humorous.  
By'r lady, he's a good musician.

*Lady P.* Then should you be nothing but musical; for you are altogether governed by humours. Lie still, ye thief, and hear the lady sing in Welsh.

*Hot.* I had rather hear *Lady*, my brach,\* bowl in Irish.

*Lady P.* Would'st thou have thy head broken?

*Hot.* No.

*Lady P.* Then be still.

*Hot.* Neither; 'tis a woman's fault.

*Lady P.* Now God help thee!

*Hot.* To the Welsh lady's bed.

*Lady P.* What's that?

*Hot.* Peace! she sings.

*A Welsh Song sung by Lady M.*

*Hot.* Come, Kate, I'll have your song too.

*Lady P.* Not mine, in good sooth.

*Hot.* Not yours, in good sooth! 'Heart, you swear like a conit-maker's wife! Not you, in good sooth; and, As true as I live; and, As God shall mend me; and, As sure as day: And giv'st such sarcent surety for thy oaths, As if thou never walk'dst further than Finsbury.†

Swear me, Kate, like a lady, as thou art, A good mouth-filling oath; and leave me sooth, And such protest of pepper-gingerbread, To velvet-guards; and Sunday-citizens. Come, sing.

*Lady P.* I will not sing.

*Hot.* 'Tis the next way to turn tailor, or be redbreast teacher. An the indentures be drawn, I'll away within these two hours; and so come in when ye will. [Exit.]

*Glend.* Come, come, lord Mortimer; you are as slow,

As hot lord Percy is on fire to go.

By this our book's drawn; we'll but seal, and then

To horse immediately.

*Mort.* With all my heart. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—London.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter King HENRY, Prince of WALES, and Lords.

*K. Hen.* Lords, give us leave; the prince of Wales and I, Must have some conference: But be near at hand,

For we shall presently have need of you.—

[Exeunt Lords.]  
I know not whether God will have it so, For some displeasing service I have done, That in his secret doom, out of my blood He'll breed revengement and a scourge for me:

But thou dost, in thy passages of life, Make me believe, that thou art only mark'd For the hot vengeance and the rod of heaven, To punish my mis-treadings. Tell me else, Could such inordinate and low desires, Such poor, such bare, such lewd, such mean attempts,

Such barren pleasures, rude society,

As thou art match'd withal, and grafted to, Accompany the greatness of thy blood, And hold their level with thy princely heart?

*K. Hen.* So please your majesty, I would I could

Quit all offences with as clear excuse, As well as, I am doubtless, I can purge Myself of many I am charg'd withal: Yet such extenuation let me beg, As, in reproof of many tales devis'd, Which oft the ear of greatness needs must hear, By smiling pick-thanks\* and base newsmongers,

I may, for some things true, wherein my youth Hath faulty wander'd and irregular, Find pardon on my true submission.

*K. Hen.* God pardon thee!—yet let me wonder, Harry,

At thy affections which do hold a wing Quite from the flight of all thy ancestors. Thy place in council thou hast rudely lost, Which by thy younger brother is supplied; And art almost an alien to the hearts Of all the court and princes of my blood: The hope and expectation of thy time Is ruin'd; and the soul of every man Prophetically does fore-think thy fall. Had I so lavish of my presence been, So common-backney'd in the eyes of men, So stale and cheap to vulgar company; Opinion, that did help me to the crown, Had still kept loyal to possession;† And left me in reputable banishment, A fellow of no mark, nor likelihood. By being seldom seen, I could not stir But, like a comet, I was wonder'd at: That men would tell their children, That is he; Others would say,—Where? which is Bolingbroke?‡

And then I stole all courtesy from heaven, And dress'd myself in such humility, That I did pluck allegiance from men's hearts, Loud shouts and salutations from their mouths, Even in the presence of the crowned king. Thus did I keep my person fresh and new; My presence, like a robe pontifical, Ne'er seen, but wonder'd at: and so my state, Seldom but sumptuous, showed like a feast; And won, by rareness, such solemnity. The skipping king, he ambled up and down With shallow jesters, and rash bavin wit. Soon kindled, and soon burn'd: carded his state;

Mingled his royalty with capering fools; Had his great name profaned with their scorn; And gave his countenance, against his name, To laugh at glib boys, and stand the push Of every heedless vain comparative: § Grew a companion to the common streets, Enfeoff'd || himself to popularity: That being daily swallow'd by men's eyes, They surfeited with honey; and began To loathe the taste of sweetness, whereof a little

More than a little is by much too much.

So, when he had occasion to be seen, He was but as the cuckoo is in June, Heard, not regarded; seen, but with such eyes,

As, sick and blunted with community, Afford no extraordinary gaze, Such as is bent on sun-like majesty When it shines seldom in admiring eyes: But rather drow'd, and hung their eye-lids down,

Slept in his face, and render'd such aspect As cloudy men use to their adversaries; Being with his presence glutted, gorg'd, and full.

And in that very line, Harry, stand'st thou; For thou hast lost thy princely privilege,

\* Ilound. † In Moorfields  
‡ The finery of cockneys

\* Officious parasites.  
† True to him that had then possession of the crown.  
‡ Brushwood. § Rival. || Possess ad.

With vile participation ; not an eye  
But is a-weary of thy common sight,  
Save mine, which hath desir'd to see thee  
more ;  
Which now doth that I would not have it do,  
Make blind itself with foolish tenderness.

*P. Hen.* I shall hereafter, my thrice-gracious  
lord,

Be more myself.

*K. Hen.* For all the world,  
As thou art to this hour, was Richard then,  
When I from France set foot at Ravenspurge ;  
And even as I was then, is Percy now.  
Now by my sceptre, and my soul to boot,  
He hath more worthy interest to the state,  
Than thou, the shadow of succession :  
For, of no right, nor colour like to right,  
He doth fill fields with harness\* in the realm ;  
Turns head against the lion's armed jaws ;  
And, being no more in debt to years than  
thou,

Leads ancient lords and reverend bishops on  
To bloody battles and to bruising arms.  
What never-dying honour hath he got  
Against renowned Douglas ; whose high deeds,  
Whose hot incursions, and great name in arms,  
Holds from all soldiers chief majority,  
And military title capital,  
Through all the kingdoms that acknowledge  
Christ ?

Thrice hath this Hotspur Mars in swathing  
clothes,  
This infant warrior, in his enterprizes,  
Discomfited great Douglas : ta'en him once,  
Enlarged him, and made a friend of him,  
To fill the mouth of deep defiance up,  
And shake the peace and safety of our throne.

And what say you to this ? Percy, Northum-  
berland,  
The archbishop's grace of York, Douglas,  
Mortimer.

Capitulate† against us and are up.  
But wherefore do I tell these news to thee ?  
Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my foes,  
Which art my near'st and dearest ; enemy †  
Thou that art like enough (through vassal  
fear,

Base inclination, and the start of spleen,) †  
To fight against me under Percy's pay,  
To dog his heels, and court'sy at his frowns, †  
To show how much degenerate thou art.

*P. Hen.* Do not think so, you shall not find  
it so ;  
And God forgive them, that have so much  
sway'd

Your majesty's good thoughts away from me !  
I will redeem all this on Percy's head,  
And, in the closing of some glorious day,  
He bold to tell you that I am your son ;  
When I will wear a garment all of blood,  
And stain my favours with a bloody mask,  
Which, wash'd away, shall scour my shame  
with it.

And that shall be the day, when'er it lights,  
That this same child of honour and renown,  
This gallant Hotspur, this all-praised knight,  
And your unthought-of Harry, chance to meet :  
For every honour sitting on his helm,  
Would they were multitudes ; and on my  
head

My shames redoubled ! for the time will come,  
That I shall make this northern youth exchange  
His glorious deeds for my indignities.  
Percy is but my factor, good my lord,  
To engross up glorious deeds on my behalf ;  
And I will call him to so strict account,  
That he shall render every glory up,  
Yea, even the slightest worship of his time,  
Or I will tear the reckoning from his heart.  
This, in the name of God, I promise here :  
The which, if he be pleas'd I shall perform,  
I do beseech your majesty, may salve

The long-grown wounds of my intemperance ;  
If not, the end of life cancels all bands ;  
And I will die a hundred thousand deaths,  
Ere break the smallest parcel of this vow.

*K. Hen.* A hundred thousand rebels die in  
this :—  
Thou shalt have charge, and sovereign trust,  
herein.

*Enter BLUNT.*

How now, good Blunt ! thy looks are full of  
speed.

*Blunt.* So hath the business that I come to  
speak of.

Lord Mortimer of Scotland hath sent word,  
That Douglas and the English rebels met,  
The eleventh of this month, at Shrewsbury :  
A mighty and a fearful head they are,  
If promises be kept on every hand,  
As ever offer'd foul play in a state.

*K. Hen.* The earl of Westmoreland set forth  
to-day ;

With him my son, lord John of Lancaster ;  
For this advertisement is five days old :—  
On Wednesday next, Harry, you shall set  
forward ; on Thursday, we ourselves will  
march :

Our meeting is Bridgnorth : and, Harry, you  
shall march through Gloucestershire ; by which  
account,

Our business valued, some twelve days hence  
Our general forces at Bridgnorth shall meet.  
Our hands are full of business : let's away ;  
Advantage feeds him fat, while men delay.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III.—*Eastcheap.—A Room in the  
Boar's Head Tavern.*

*Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* Bardolph, am I not fallen away vilely  
since this last action ? do I not bate ? do I not  
dwindle ? Why, my skin hangs about me like  
an old lady's loose gown ; I am wither'd like  
an old apple-John. Well, I'll repent, and that  
suddenly, while I am in some liking ; \* I shall  
be out of heart shortly, and then I shall have  
no strength to repent. An I have not forgotten  
what the inside of a church is made of, I am  
a pepper-corn, a brewer's horse ; the inside of  
a church ! Company, villainous company, hath  
been the spoil of me.

*Bard.* Sir John, you are so fretful, you can  
not live long.

*Fal.* Why, there is it :—come, sing me a  
bawdy song ; make me merry. I was as vir-  
tuously given, as a gentleman need to be ; vir-  
tuously enough : swore little ; dined, not above  
seven times a week ; went to a bawdy-house,  
not above once in a quarter—of an hour ; paid  
money that I borrowed, three or four times ;  
lived well, and in good compass : and now I  
live out of all order, out of all compass.

*Bard.* Why, you are so fat, Sir John, that  
you must needs be out of all compass ; out of  
all reasonable compass, Sir John.

*Fal.* Do thou amend thy face, and I'll amend  
my life : Thou art our admiral, † thou bearest  
the lantern in the poop,—but 'tis in the nose of  
thee ; thou art the knight of the burning  
lamp.

*Bard.* Why, Sir John, my face does you no  
harm.

*Fal.* No, I'll be sworn ; I make as good use  
of it as many a man doth of a death's head, or  
a memento mori : I never see thy face, but I  
think upon hell-fire, and Dives that lived in  
purple ; for there he is in his robes, burning,  
burning. If thou wert any way given to virtue,  
I would swear by thy face ; my oath should  
be, By this fire : but thou art altogether given  
over ; and wert indeed, but for the light in thy

\* Armour.

† Combines.

‡ Most fatal.

\* Have some flesh.  
† Admiral's ship.



face, the son of utter darkness. When thou ran'st up Gads-hill in the night to catch my horse, if I did not think thou hadst been an *ignis fatuus*, or a ball of wildfire, there's no purchase in money. O thou art a perpetual triumph, an everlasting bonfire-light! Thou hast sav'd me a thousand marks in links and torches, walking with thee in the night betwixt tavern and tavern: but the sack that thou hast drunk me, would have bought me lights as good cheap, at the dearest chandler's in Europe. I have maintain'd that salamander of your's with fire, any time this two and thirty years; Heaven reward me for it!

*Bard.* 'Sblood, I would my face were in your belly!

*Fal.* God-a-mercy! so should I be sure to be heart-burned.

#### Enter Hostess.

How now, dame Parliet the hen? \* have you inquired yet who picked my pocket?

*Host.* Why, Sir John! what do you think, Sir John? Do you think I keep thieves in my house? I have searched, I have inquired, so has my husband, man by man, boy by boy, servant by servant: the tithe of a hair was never lost in my house before.

*Fal.* You lie, hostess; Bardolph was shaved, and lost many a hair: and I'll be sworn, my pocket was picked: Go to, you are a woman, go.

*Host.* Who, I? I defy thee: I was never called so in mine own house before.

*Fal.* Go to, I know you well enough.

*Host.* No, Sir John, you do not know me, Sir John: I know you, Sir John: you owe me money, Sir John, and now you pick a quarrel to beguile me of it: I bought you a dozen of shirts to your back.

*Fal.* Dowlas, bakers' dowlas; I have given them away to filth's wives, and they have made bolters of them.

*Host.* Now, as I am a true woman, holland of eight shillings an ell. You owe money here besides, Sir John, for your diet, and by-drinkings, and money lent you, four and twenty pound.

*Fal.* He had his part of it; let him pay.

*Host.* He? alas, he is poor; he hath nothing.

*Fal.* How! poor? look upon his face; What call you rich! let them coin his nose, let them coin his cheeks; I'll not pay a denier. What, will you make a younker of me? shall I not take mine ease in mine inn, but I shall have my pocket picked? I have lost a seal-ring of my grandfather's worth forty mark.

*Host.* O Jesu! I have heard the prince tell him, I know not how oft, that that ring was copper.

*Fal.* How! the prince is a Jack,† a sneak-up; and if he were here, I would cudgel him like a dog, if he would say so.

*Enter Prince Henry and Poins, marching.*  
*FALSTAFF meets the PRINCE, playing on his truncheon like a fife.*

*Fal.* How now, lad? is the wind in that door? faith? must we all march?

*Bard.* Yea, two and two, Newgate-fashion?

*Host.* My lord, I pray you, hear me.

*P. Hen.* What sayest thou, mistress Quickly? How does thy husband? I love him well, he is an honest man.

*Host.* Good my lord, hear me.

*Fal.* Pr'ythee let her alone, and list to me.

*P. Hen.* What sayest thou, Jack?

*Fal.* The other night I fell asleep here behind the arras, and had my pocket picked: this house ‡ turned bawdy-house, they pick pockets.

*P. Hen.* What didst thou lose, Jack?

*Fal.* Wilt thou believe me, Hal: three or four bonds of forty pound a-piece, and a seal-ring of my grandfather's.

*P. Hen.* A trifle, some eight-penny matter.

*Host.* So I told him, my lord; and I said I heard your grace say so: And, my lord, he speaks most vilely of you, like a foul-mouthed man as he is: and said he would cudgel you.

*P. Hen.* What! he did not?

*Host.* There's neither faith, truth, nor womanhood in me else.

*Fal.* There's no more faith in thee than in a stewed prune; nor no more truth in thee, than in a drawn fox; and for womanhood, maid Marian \* may be the deputy's wife of the ward to thee. Go, you thing, go.

*Host.* Say, what thing? what thing?

*Fal.* What thing? why a thing to thank God on.

*Host.* I am no thing to thank God on, I would thou should'st know it; I am an honest man's wife; and, setting thy knighthood aside, thou art a knave to call me so.

*Fal.* Setting thy womanhood aside, thou art a beast to say otherwise.

*Host.* Say what beast, thou knave, thou?

*Fal.* What beast? why an otter.

*P. Hen.* An otter, Sir John? why an otter?

*Fal.* Why? she's neither fish nor flesh, a man knows not where to have her.

*Host.* Thou art an unjust man in saying so; thou or any man knows where to have me, thou knave thou!

*P. Hen.* Thou sayest true, hostess; and he slanders thee most grossly.

*Host.* So he doth you, my lord; and said this other day you owed him a thousand pound.

*P. Hen.* Sirrah, do I owe you a thousand pound?

*Fal.* A thousand pound, Hal? a million: thy love is worth a million; thou owest me thy love.

*Host.* Nay, my lord, he called you Jack, and said he would cudgel you.

*Fal.* Did I, Bardolph?

*Bard.* Indeed, Sir John, you said so.

*Fal.* Yea; if he said my ring was copper.

*P. Hen.* I say 'tis copper: darest thou be as good as thy word now?

*Fal.* Why, Hal, thou knowest, as thou art but man, I dare: but, as thou art prince, I fear thee as I fear the roaring of the lion's whelp.

*P. Hen.* And why not, as the lion?

*Fal.* The king himself is to be feared as the lion: Dost thou think I'll fear thee as I fear thy father? nay, an I do, I pray God my girdle break!

*P. Hen.* Oh! if it should, how would thy guts fall about thy knees! But, sirrah, there's no room for faith, truth, nor honesty, in this bosom of thine; it is filled up with guts and midriff. Charge an honest woman with picking thy pocket! Why, thou whoreson, impudent embossed† rascal, if there were any mirth in thy pocket but tavern-reckonings, memorandums of bawdy-houses, and one poor penny-worth of sugar-candy to make thee long winded; if thy pocket were enriched with any other injurie: but these, I am a villain. And yet you will stand to it: you will not pocket up wrong: Art thou not ashamed?

*Fal.* Dost thou hear, Hal? thou knowest, in the state of innocence, Adam fell; and what should poor Jack Falstaff do, in the days of villainy? Thou seest I have more flesh than another man; and therefore more frailty.—You confess then, you picked my pocket?

*P. Hen.* It appears so by the story.

*Fal.* Hostess, I forgive thee: Go, make

\* In the story-book of Reynard the Fox.  
† A term of contempt frequently used by Shakespeare.

\* A man dressed like a woman, who attends Morris dancers.

† Swollen.

ready breakfast; love thy husband, look to thy servants, cherish thy guests: thou shalt find me tractable to any honest reason: thou seest I am pacified.—Still?—Nay, prythee, be gone. [*Exit Hostess.*] Now, Hal, to the news at court: for the robbery, lad,—How is that answered?

*P. Hen.* O my sweet beef, I must still be good angel to thee:—The money is paid back again.

*Fal.* O I do not like that paying back, 'tis a double labour.

*P. Hen.* I am good friends with my father, and may do any thing.

*Fal.* Rob me the exchequer the first thing thou doest, and do it with unwashed hands too.

*Bard.* Do, my lord.

*P. Hen.* I have procured thee, Jack, a charge of foot.

*Fal.* I would it had been of horse. Where shall I find one that can steal well? O for a fine thief, of the age of two and twenty, or thereabouts! I am heinously unprovided. Well, God be thanked for these rebels, they offend none but the virtuous; I laud them, I praise them.

*P. Hen.* Bardolph—

*Bard.* My lord.

*P. Hen.* Go bear this letter to lord John of Lancaster, My brother John; this to my lord of Westmoreland.—

Go, Poins, to horse, to horse; for thou and I Have thirty miles to ride yet ere dinner time.—

Jack, Meet me to-morrow i'th temple hall

At two o'clock i'th afternoon:

There shalt thou know thy charge: and there receive

Money, and order for thy furniture.

The land is butting; Percy stands on high;

And either they, or we, must lower lie.

[*Exit PRINCE, POINS, and BARDOLPH.*]

*Fal.* Rare words! brave world!—Hostess, my breakfast; come:—

O I could wish this tavern were my drum.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*The Rebel Camp near Shrewsbury.*

*Enter HOTESPUR, WORCESTER, and DOUGLAS.*

*Hot.* Well said, my noble Scot: if speaking truth,

In this fine age, were not thought flattery, Such attribution should the Douglas\* have, As not a soldier of this season's stamp Should go so general current through the world. By heaven, I cannot flatter; I defy The tongues of soothers; but a braver place In my heart's love, hath no man than yourself;

Nay, task me to the word; approve me, lord.

*Doug.* Thou art the king of honour:

No man so potent breathes upon the ground, But I will beard him.

*Hot.* Do so, and 'tis well.—

*Enter a MESSENGERS, with letters.*

What letters hast thou there?—I can but thank you.

*Mess.* These letters come from your father,—

*Hot.* Letters from him! why comes he not himself?

*Mess.* He cannot come, my lord; he's grievous sick.

\* This expression is applied by way of preeminence to the head of the Douglas family.

† Meet him face to face.

*Hot.* 'Tisounds! how has he the leisure to be sick, In such a justling time? Who leads his power? Under whose government come they along?

*Mess.* His letters bear his mind, not I, my lord.

*Wor.* I prythee, tell me, doth he keep his bed?

*Mess.* He did, my lord, four days ere I set forth;

And at the time of my departure thence,

He was much fear'd by his physicians.

*Wor.* I would the state of time had first been whole,

Ere he by sickness had been visited;

His health was never better worth than now.

*Hot.* Sick now! droop now! this sickness doth infect

The very life-blood of our enterprise;

'Tis catching hither, even to our camp.—

He writes me here,—that inward sickness—

And that his friends by deputation could not

So soon be drawn; nor did he think it meet,

To lay so dangerous and dear a trust

On any soul remov'd but on his own.

Yet doth he give us bold advertisement,—

That with our small conjunction, we should on,

To see how fortune is dispos'd to us:

For, as he writes, there is no quailing now;

Because the king is certainly possess'd

Of all our purposes. What say you to it?

*Wor.* Your father's sickness is a unum to us.

*Hot.* A perilous gash, a very lumb lopp'd off!

And yet, in faith, 'tis not; his present want Seems more than we shall find it:—Were it good,

To set the exact wealth of all our states

All at one cast; to set so rich a main

On the nice hazard of one doubtful hour?

It were not good: for therein should we read

The very bottom and the soul of hope;

The very list,\* the very utmost bound

Of all our fortunes.

*Doug.* 'Faith, and so we should!

Where† now remains a sweet reversion:

We may boldly spend upon the hope of what

Is to come in:

A comfort of retirement lives in this.

*Hot.* A rendezvous, a home to fly unto,

If that the devil and mischance look big

Upon the maidenhead of our affairs.

*Wor.* But yet I would your father had been

here,

The quality and hair of our attempt

Brooks no division: It will be thought

By some, that know not why he is away,

That wisdom, loyalty, and mere dislike

Of our proceedings, kept the earl from hence;

And think, how such an apprehension

May turn the tide of fearful faction,\*

And breed a kind of question in our cause:

For well you know, we of the offering side

Must keep aloof from strict arbitrement;

And stop all sight-holes, every loop, from

whence

The eye of reason may pry in upon us:

This absence of your father's draws a curtain,

That shews the ignorant a kind of fear

Before not dreamt of.

*Hot.* You strain too far.

I, rather, of his absence make this use;—

It lends a lustre, and more great opinion,

A larger dare to our great enterprise,

Than if the earl were here: for men must

think,

If we, without his help, can make a head

To push against the kingdom: with his help,

We shall o'erturn it topsy-turvy down.—

Yet all goes well, yet all our joints are whole.

*Doug.* As heart can think: there is not such a

word

Spoke of in Scotland, as this term of fear.

\* Line.

† Whereas,

*Enter* Sir RICHARD VERNON.

*Hot.* My cousin Vernon! welcome, by my soul.

*Vern.* Pray God, my news be worth a welcome, lord.

The earl of Westmoreland, seven thousand strong,  
Is marching hitherwards; with him, prince John.

*Hot.* No harm: What more?

*Vern.* And further, I have learn'd,—  
The king himself in person is set forth,  
Or hitherwards intended speedily,  
With strong and mighty preparation.

*Hot.* He shall be welcome too. Where is his son,

The nimble-footed mad-cap prince of Wales,  
And his comrades, that daff'd the world aside.  
And bid it pass?

*Vern.* All turnish'd, all in arms,  
All plum'd like estridges\* that wing the wind;  
Bated like eagles having lately bath'd;†  
Glittering in golden coats, like images;  
As full of spirit as the month of May,  
And gorgeous as the sun at midsummer;  
Wanton as youthful goats, wild as young bulls.  
I saw young Harry, with his beaver on,  
His cuisses‡ on his thighs, gallantly arm'd,  
Rise from the ground like feather'd Mercury,  
And vaulted with such ease into his seat,  
As if an angel dropp'd down from the clouds,  
To turn and wind a fiery Pegasus,  
And witch the world with noble horsemanship.

*Hot.* No more, no more; worse than the sun  
in March,

This praise doth nourish agues. Let them come;  
They come like sacrifices in their trim,  
And to the fire-ey'd maid of smoky war,  
All hot, and bleeding, will we offer them:  
The mailed Mars shall on his altar sit,  
Up to the ears in blood. I am on fire,  
To hear this rich reprisal is so nigh,  
And yet not our's:—Come, let me take my horse,

Who is to bear me, like a thunderbolt,  
Against the bosom of the prince of Wales:  
Harry to Harry shall, hot horse to horse,  
Meet, and ne'er part, till one drop down a  
course.—

O that Glendower were come!

*Vern.* There is more news:  
I learn'd in Worcester, as I rode along,  
He cannot draw his power this fourteen days.

*Doug.* That's the worst tidings that I hear of  
yet.

*Wor.* Ay, by my faith, that bears a frosty  
sound.

*Hot.* What may the king's whole battle reach  
unto?

*Vern.* To thirty thousand.

*Hot.* Forty let it be;

My father and Glendower being both away,  
The powers of us may serve so great a day.

Come, let us make a muster speedily:  
Doomsday is near; die all, die merrily.

*Doug.* Talk not of dying; I am out of fear  
Of death, or death's hand, for this one half year.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—A Public Road near Coventry.

*Enter* FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.

*Fal.* Bardolph, get thee before to Coventry;  
fill me a bottle of sack: our soldiers shall  
march through; we'll to Sutton-Colfield to-  
night.

*Bard.* Will you give me money, captain?

*Fal.* Lay out, lay out.

*Bard.* This bottle makes an angel.

*Fal.* An if it do, take it for thy labour; and  
if it make twenty, take them all, I'll answer

the coinage. Bid my lieutenant Peto meet me  
at the town's end.

*Bard.* I will, captain: farewell. [*Exit.*]

*Fal.* If I be not ashamed of my soldiers, I  
am a sourced garnet.\* I have misused the king's  
press damnably. I have got, in exchange of a  
hundred and fifty soldiers, three hundred and odd  
pounds. I press me none but good householders,  
yeomen's sons: inquire me out contracted bach-  
elors, such as had been asked twice on the banns;  
such a commodity of warm slaves, as had as  
lief hear the devil as a drum; such as fear the  
report of a caliver,† worse than a struck fowl,  
or a hurt wild duck. I pressed me none but  
such toasts and butter, with hearts in their  
bellies no bigger than pins' heads, and they  
have bought out their services; and now my  
whole charge consists of ancient, corporals,  
lieutenants, gentlemen of companies, slaves as  
ragged as Lazarus in the painted cloth, where  
the glutton's dogs licked his sores; and such  
as, indeed, were never soldiers; but discarded  
unjust serving-men, younger sons to younger  
brothers, revolted tapsters, and ostlers trade-  
fallen; the cankers of a calm world, and a long  
peace; ten times more dishonourably ragged  
than an old faced ancient;‡ and such have I, to  
fill up the rooms of them that have bought out  
their services, that you would think that I had a  
hundred and fifty tattered prodigals, lately come  
from swine-keeping, from eating draft and husks.  
A mad fellow met me on the way, and told me  
I had unloaded all the gibbets, and pressed the  
dead bodies. No eye hath seen such scare-crows.  
I'll not march through Coventry with them,  
that's flat:—Nay, and the villous march wide  
betwixt the legs, as if they had gyves on; for,  
indeed, I had the most of them out of prison.  
There's but a shirt and a half in all my com-  
pany; and the half-shirt is two napkins, tacked  
together, and thrown over the shoulders like a  
herald's coat without sleeves; and the shirt, to  
say the truth, stolen from my host at Saint  
Alban's, or the red-nose inn-keeper of Dainty.¶  
But that's all one; they'll find linen enough on  
every hedge.

*Enter* Prince HENRY and WESTMORE-  
LAND.

*P. Hen.* How now, blown Jack? how now,  
quilt?

*Fal.* What, Hal? How now, mad wag? what  
a devil dost thou in Warwickshire?—My good  
lord of Westmoreland, I cry you mercy; I  
thought your honour had already been at Shrews-  
bury.

*West.* 'Faith, Sir John, 'tis more than time  
that I were there, and you too; but my powers  
are there already: The king, I can tell you,  
looks for us all; we must away all night.

*Fal.* Tut, never fear me; I am as vigilant as  
a cat to steal cream.

*P. Hen.* I think to steal cream indeed; for  
thy theft hath already made thee butter. But  
tell me, Jack; Whose fellows are these that  
come after?

*Fal.* Mine, Hal, mine.

*P. Hen.* I did never see such pitiful rascals.

*Fal.* Tut, tut; good enough to toss; food for  
powder, too good for powder; they'll fill a pit, as  
well as better: tush, man, mortal men, mortal  
men.

*West.* Ay, but, Sir John, methinks they are  
exceeding poor and bare; too beggarly.

*Fal.* 'Faith, for their poverty, I know not  
where they had that: and for their bareness, I  
am sure they never learned that of me.

*P. Hen.* No, I'll be sworn; unless you call  
three fingers on the ribs, bare. But, sirrah,  
make haste; Percy is already in the field.

*Fal.* What is the king encamped?

\* Dressed with Ostrich feathers.  
† Fresh as birds just washed.  
‡ Armour

\* A fish.  
‡ Standard.

† A gun.  
‡ Fetters.

¶ Daventry.

*West.* He is, Sir John ; I fear, we shall stay too long.

*Fal.* Well,  
To the latter end of a fray, and the beginning  
of a feast,  
Fits a dull fighter, and a keen guest.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The Rebel Camp near Shrewsbury.*

*Enter Hotspur, Worcester, Douglas, and Vernon.*

*Hot.* We'll fight with him to-night.

*Wor.* It may not be.

*Doug.* You give him then advantage.

*Fer.* Not a whit.

*Hot.* Why say you so ? looks he not for supply ?

*Fer.* So do we.

*Hot.* His is certain, our's is doubtful.

*Wor.* Good cousin, be advis'd ; stir not to-night.

*Fer.* Do not, my lord.

*Doug.* You do not counsel well ;

You speak it out of fear, and cold heart.

*Fer.* Do me no slander, Douglas : by my life,

(And I dare well maintain it with my life,) If well respected honour bid me on, I hold as little counsel with weak fear, As you my lord, or any Scot that lives :— Let it be seen to-morrow in the battle, Which of us fears.

*Doug.* Yea, or to-night.

*Fer.* Content.

*Hot.* To-night, say I.

*Fer.* Come, come, it may not be.

I wonder much, being men of such great leading,\*

That you foresee not what impediments Drag back our expedition : Certain horse Of my cousin Vernon's are not yet come up : Your uncle Worcester's horse came but to-day ;

And now their pride and mettle is asleep, Their courage with hard labour tame and dull, That not a horse is half the half himself.

*Hot.* So are the horses of the enemy In general, journey-bated, and brought low ; The better part of our's is full of rest.

*Wor.* The number of the king exceedeth ours :

For God's sake, cousin, stay till all come in.

[*The Trumpet sounds a parley.*]

*Enter Sir Walter Blunt.*

*Blunt.* I come with gracious offers from the king,

If you vouchsafe me hearing and respect.

*Hot.* Welcome, Sir Walter Blunt ; And 'would to God,

You were of our determination !

Some of us love you well ; and even those some Envy your great deserving, and good name ; Because you are not of our quality,† But stand against us like an enemy.

*Blunt.* And God defend, but still I should stand so,

So long as, out of limit and true rule,

You stand against anointed majesty !

But, to my charge.—The king hath sent to know The nature of your griefs ; ‡ and whereupon You compare from the breast of civil peace Such bold hostility, teaching this duteous land Audacious cruelty : If that the king Have any way your good deserts forgot, Which he confesseth to be manifold, He bids you name your griefs, and, with all speed,

You shall have your desires with interest ;

\* Skill.

‡ Grievances.

† Fellowship.

And pardon absolute yourself, and these, Herein mislead by your suggestion.

*Hot.* The king is kind ; and, well we know, the king

Knows at what time to promise, when to pay.

My father, and my uncle, and myself,

Did give him that same royalty he wears :

And,—when he was not six and twenty strong,

Sick in the world's regard, wretched and low,

A poor unminded outlaw sneaking home,—

My father gave him welcome to the shore :

And,—when he heard him swear, and vow to God,

He came but to be duke of Lancaster,

To sue his livery,\* and beg his peace ;

With tears of innocency, and terms of zeal,—

My father, in kind heart and pity mov'd,

Swore him assistance, and perform'd it too.

Now, when the lords and barons of the realm

Perceiv'd Northumberland did lean to him,

The more and less came in with cap and knee ;

Met him in boroughs, cities, villages ;

Attended him on bridges, stood in lanes,

Laid gifts before him, proffer'd him their oaths

Gave him their heirs ; as pages follow'd him,

Even at the heels, in golden multitudes.

He presently,—as greatness knows itself,—

Steps me a little higher than his vow

Made to my father, while his blood was poor,

Upon the naked shore at Ravenspur ;

And now, forsooth, takes on him to reform

Some certain edicts, and some strait decrees,

That lie too heavy on the commonwealth :

Cries out upon abuses, seems to weep

Over his country's wrongs ; and, by this face,

This seeming brow of justice, did he win

The hearts of all that he did angle for.

Proceeded further ; cut me off the heads

Of all the favourites, and the absent king

In deputation left behind him here,

When he was personal in the Irish war.

*Blunt.* Tut, I came not to hear this.

*Hot.* Then, to the point.—

In short time after, he deposed the king ;

Soon after that, depriv'd him of his life ;

And, in the neck of that, task'd the whole state :

To make that worse, suffer'd his kinsman

March

(Who is, if every owner were well plac'd,

Indeed his king,) to be incag'd in Wales,

There without ransom to be forfeited ;

Disgrac'd me in my happy victories ;

Sought to entrap me by intelligence ;

Rated my uncle from the council-board :

In rage dismiss'd my father from the court ;

Broke oath on oath, committed wrong on wrong :

And, in conclusion, drove us to seek out

This head of safety ; and, withal, to pry

Into his title, the which we find

Too indirect for long continuance.

*Blunt.* Shall I return this answer to the king ?

*Hot.* Not so, Sir Walter ; we'll withdraw awhile.

Go to the king ; and let there be impawn'd

Some surety for a safe return again,

And in the morning early shall mine uncle

Bring him our purposes : and so farewell.

*Blunt.* I would you would accept of grace

and love.

*Hot.* And, may be, so we shall.

*Blunt.* 'Pray heaven, you do ! [ *Exeunt.* ]

SCENE IV.—*York.—A Room in the Archbishop's house.*

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK, and a GENTLEMAN.*

*Arch.* Hie, good Sir Michael, bear this sealed brief,

With winged haste, to the lord marshal ;

This to my cousin Scroop ; and all the rest

\* The delivery of his lands.

† The greater and the less.

To whom they are directed : if you knew  
How much they do import, you would make  
haste.

*Gent.* My good lord,  
I guess their tenor.

*Arch.* Like enough, you do.

To-morrow, good Sir Michael, is a day,  
Wherein the fortune of ten thousand men  
Must 'bide the touch : For, Sir, at Shrewsbury,  
As I am truly given to understand,  
The king, with mighty and quick-raised power,  
Meets with lord Harry : and I fear, Sir Mi-  
chael,—

What with the sickness of Northumberland,  
(Whose power was in the first proportion,)  
And what with Owen Glendower's absence,  
thence,

(Who with them was a rated sinew too,\*  
And comes not in, o'er-ruled by prophecies,)—  
I fear the power of Percy is too weak  
To wage an instant trial with the king.

*Gent.* Why, good my lord, you need not fear ;  
there's Douglas,

And Mortimer.

*Arch.* No, Mortimer's not there.

*Gent.* But there is Moidake, Vernon, lord  
Harry Percy,

And there's my lord of Worcester ; and a head  
Of gallant warriors, noble gentlemen.

*Arch.* And so there is : but yet the king hath  
drawn,

The special head of all the land together :—  
The prince of Wales, lord John of Lanca-ter,  
The noble Westmoreland, and warlike Blunt ;  
And many more couriers, and dear men  
Of estimation and command in arms.

*Gent.* Doubt not, my lord, they shall be well  
oppo'd.

*Arch.* I hope no less, yet needful 'tis to fear ;  
And, to prevent the worst, Sir Michael, speed :  
For, if lord Percy thrive not, ere the king  
Dismiss his power, he means to visit us,—  
For he hath heard of our confederacy,—  
And 'tis but wisdom to make strong against  
him ;

Therefore, make haste : I must go write again  
To other friends ; and so farewell, Sir Michael.  
[*Exeunt severally.*]

# ACT V.

## SCENE I.—The King's Camp near Shrews- bury.

*Enter King HENRY, Prince HENRY, Prince  
JOHN of Lancaster, Sir WALTER BLUNT,  
and Sir JOHN FALSTAFF.*

*K. Hen.* How bloodily the sun begins to peer  
Above yon busky hill ! the day looks pale  
At his distemperature,

*P. Hen.* The southern wind  
Doth play the trumpet to his purposes ;  
And, by his hollow whistling in the leaves,  
Foretells a tempest, and a blustering day.

*K. Hen.* Then with the losers let it sym-  
pathize ;  
For nothing can seem foul to those that win.—

*Trumpet.—Enter WORCESTER and VERNON.*  
How now, my lord of Worcester ? 'tis not well,  
That you and I should meet upon such terms  
As now we meet : You have deceiv'd our trust ;  
And made us doff our easy robes of peace,  
To crush our old limbs in ungentle steel :  
This is not well, my lord, this is not well.  
What say you to't ? will you again unknot  
This churlish knot of all-abhorred war ?  
And move in that obedient orb again,  
Where you would give a fair and natural light ;

And be no more an exhal'd meteor,  
A prodigy of fear, and a portent  
Of broached mischief to the unborn times ?

*Wor.* Hear me, my liege :

For mine own part, I could be well content  
To entertain the lag-end of my life  
With quiet hours ; for, I do protest,  
I have not sought the day of this dislike.

*K. Hen.* You have not sought for it ! how  
comes it then ?

*Fal.* Rebellion lay in his way, and he found  
it.

*K. Hen.* Peace, chewet,\* peace.

*Wor.* It pleas'd your majesty to turn your  
looks

Of favour, from myself and all our house ;  
And yet I must remember you, my lord,  
We were the first and dearest of your friends.

For you, my staff of office did I break  
In Richard's time ; and posted day and night  
To meet you on the way, and kiss your hand,  
When yet you were in place and in account  
Nothing so strong and fortunate as I.

It was myself, my brother, and his son,  
That brought you home, and boldly did out-  
dare,

The dangers of the time : You swore to us,—

And you did swear that oath at Doncaster,—  
That you did nothing purpose 'gainst the state ;  
Nor claim no further than your new-tat'n  
right,

The seat of Gaunt, dukedom of Lancaster :  
To this we swore our aid. But, in short space,  
It ran'd down fortune showering on your  
head ;

And such a flood of greatness fell on you,—  
What with our help ; what with the absent  
king ;

What with the injuries of a wanton time ;  
The seeming sufferances that you had borne ;  
And the contrarious winds, that held the king  
So long in his unlucky Irish wars,

That all in England did repute him dead,—  
And, from this swarm of fair advantages,  
You took occasion to be quickly woo'd

To gripe the general sway into your hand :  
Forgot your oath to us at Doncaster ;

And, being fed by us, you fed us so  
As that ungentle gull, the cuckoo's bird,  
Useth the sparrow : did oppress our nest ;

Grew by our feeding to so great a bulk,  
That even our love durst not come near your  
sight

For fear of swallowing ; but with nimble wing  
We were enforc'd, for safety sake, to fly  
Out of your sight, and raise this present head :

Whereby we stand opposed by such means  
As you yourself have long'd against yourself ;

By unkind usage, dangerous countenance,  
And violation of all faith and troth

Sworn to us in your younger enterprise.

*K. Hen.* These things, indeed, you have arti-  
culated,

Proclaim'd at market-crosses, read in churches ;  
To face the garment of rebellion

With some fine colour, that may please the  
eye

Of fickle changelings, and poor discontents,  
Which gape, and rub the elbow, at the news  
Of burlyburly innovation :

And never yet did insurrection want  
Such water-colours, to impart his cause ;

Nor moody beggars, starving for a time  
Of pell-mell havoc and confusion.

*P. Hen.* In both our armies, there is many  
a soul

Shall pay full dearly for this encounter,  
If once they join in trial. Tell your nephew,  
The prince of Wales doth join with all the  
world

In praise of Henry Percy ; By my hopes,  
This present enterprise set off his head,

\* A strength on which they reckoned.  
† Woody.

\* A chattering bird, a pite

I do not think a braver gentleman,  
More active-valiant, or more valiant young,  
More daring, or more bold, is now alive,  
To grace this latter age with noble deeds.  
For my part, I may speak it to my shame,  
I have a truant been to chivalry;  
And so, I hear, he doth account me too:  
Yet thus before my father's majesty,  
I am content, that he shall take the odds  
Of his great name and estimation;  
And will, to save the blood on either side,  
Tiv' fortune with him in a single fight.

*K. Hen.* Aud, prince of Wales, so dare we venture thee:—

Albeit, considerations infinite  
Do make against it:—No, good Worcester, no,  
We love our people well; even those we love,  
That are misled upon your cousin's part:  
And, will they take the offer of our grace,  
Both he, and they, and you, yea, every man  
Shall be my friend again, and I'll be his:  
So tell your cousin, and bring me word  
What he will do:—But if he will not yield,  
Rebuke and dread correction wait on us,  
And they shall do their office. So, be gone;  
We will not now be troubled with reply:  
We offer fair, take it advisedly.

[*Alcunt WORCESTER and VERNON.*  
*P. Hen.* It will not be accepted, on my life:  
The Douglas and the Hotspur, both together  
Are confident against the world in arms.

*K. Hen.* Hence, therefore, every leader to his charge:

For, on their answer, will we set on them:  
And God befriend us, as our cause is just!

[*Alcunt KING, BLUNT, and Prince JOHN.*  
*Fal.* Hal, if thou see me down in the battle,  
and bestride me so; 'tis a point of friendship.

*P. Hen.* Nothing but a Colossus can do thee  
thou friendship. Say thy prayers, and farewell.

*Fal.* I would it were bed-time, Hal, and all well.

*P. Hen.* Why, thou owest God a death.

[*Exit.*  
*Fal.* 'Tis not due yet; I would be loath to pay him before his day. What need I be so forward with him that calls not on me? Well, 'tis no matter; Honour pricks me on. Yea, but how if honour prick me off when I come on: how then? Can honour set to a leg? No. Or an arm? No. Or take away the grief of a wound? No. Honour hath no skill in surgery then? No. What is honour? a word. What is in that word, honour? What is that honour? Air. A tum reckoning!—Who hath it? He that died o' Wednesday. Doth he feel it? No. Doth he hear it? No. Is it insensible then? Yea, to the dead. But will it not live with the living? No. Why? Detraction will not suffer it:—therefore I'll none of it: Honour is a mere scutcheon, and so ends my catechism. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—The Rebel Camp.—Enter WORCESTER and VERNON.

*Wor.* O no, my nephew must not know, Sir Richard,

The liberal kind offer of the king.

*Ver.* 'Twere best he did.

*Wor.* Then are we all undone.

It is not possible, it cannot be,  
The king should keep his word in loving us:  
He will suspect us still, and find a time  
To punish this offence in other faults:  
Suspicion shall be all stuck full of eyes:  
For treason is but trusted like the fox;  
Who, ne'er so tame, so cherish'd, and lock'd  
up,

Will have a wild trick of his ancestors.  
Look how we can, or sad, or merrily,

\* It is common for the king to be here seated on a drum, and to rise at this time: when Falstaff, who is strangely placed behind him, tumbles down, to create a very ill-timed Bartholomew-fair laugh.

Interpretation will misquote our looks;  
And we shall feed like oxen at a stall,  
The better cherish'd, still the nearer death.  
My nephew's trespass may be well forgot,  
It hath the excuse of youth, and heat of blood;  
And an adopted name of privilege,—  
A hair-brain'd Hotspur, govern'd by a spleen:  
All his offences live upon my head,  
And on his father's;—we did train him on;  
And, his corruption being taken from us,  
We, as the spring of all, shall pay for all.  
Therefore, good cousin, let not Harry know,  
In any case, the offer of the king.

*Ver.* Deliver what you will, I'll say, 'tis so.  
Here comes your cousin.

Enter HOTSPUR and DOUGLAS; and Officers and Soldiers, behind.

*Hot.* My uncle is return'd:—Deliver up  
My lord of Westmoreland.—Uncle, what news?

*Hor.* The king will bid you battle presently.

*Doug.* Defy him by the lord of Westmoreland.

*Hot.* Lord Douglas, go you and tell him so.

*Doug.* Marry, and shall, and very willingly. [*Exit.*]

*Wor.* There is no seeming mercy in the king.

*Hot.* Did you beg any? God forbid!

*Wor.* I told him gently of our grievances,  
Of his oath-breaking; which he mended thus,—

By now forswearing that he is forsworn:  
He calls us rebels, traitors; and will scourge  
With haughty arms this hateful name in us.

Re-enter DOUGLAS.

*Doug.* Arm, gentlemen; to arms! for I have thrown

A brave defiance in king Henry's teeth,  
And Westmoreland, that was engaged, did bear it:

Which cannot choose but bring him quickly on.

*Hor.* The prince of Wales stepp'd forth before the king,

And nephew, challeng'd you to single fight.

*Hot.* O 'would the quarrel lay upon our heads;

And that no man might draw short breath to-day,  
But I and Harry Monmouth! Tell me, tell me,  
How show'd his tasking? seem'd it in contempt?

*Ver.* No, by my soul; I never in my life  
Did hear a challenge urg'd more modestly,  
Unless a brother should a brother dare  
To gentle exercise and proof of arms.  
He gave you all the duties of a man;  
Trim'm'd up your praises with a princely tongue;

Spoke your deservings like a chronicle;  
Making you ever better than his praise,  
By still dispraising praise, valued with you:  
And, which became him like a prince indeed,  
He made a blushing tit of himself;  
And chid his truant youth with such a grace,  
As if his master'd there a double spirit  
Of teaching and of learning, instantly.  
There did he pause: but let me tell the world,—

If he outlive the envy of this day,  
England did never owe so sweet a hope,  
So much misconstrued in his wantonness.

*Hot.* Cousin, I think thou art enamour'd  
Upon his follies; never did I hear  
Of any prince, so wild, at liberty:—  
But, be he as he will, yet once ere night  
I will embrace him with a soldier's arm,  
That he shall shrink under my courtesy.—  
Arm, arm, with speed:—And, fellows, soldiers,  
friends,

Better consider what you have to do,  
Than I, that have not well the gift of tongue,  
Can lift your blood up with persuasion.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* My lord, here are letters for you.

*Hof.* I cannot read them now.—

O gentlemen, the time of life is short :  
To spend that shortness basely, were too long,  
If life did ride upon a dial's point,  
Still ending at the arrival of an hour.  
An if we live, we live to tread on kings ;  
If die, brave death, when princes die with us !  
Now for our conscience,—the arms are fair,  
When the intent of bearing them is just.

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* My lord, prepare ; the king comes on apace.

*Hof.* I thank him that he cuts me from my tale,

For I profess not talking : Only this—  
Let each man do his best : and here draw I  
A sword, whose temper I intend to stain  
With the best blood that I can meet withal  
In the adventure of this perilous day.  
Now,—Expectance!—Percy!—And set on.  
Sound all the lofty instruments of war,  
And by that music let us all embrace!  
For, heaven to earth, some of us never shall  
A second time do such a courtesy.

[*The Trumpets sound. They embrace, and exeunt.*]

*SCENE III.—Plain near Shrewsbury.*

*Excursions, and Parties fighting. Alarum to the Battle. Then enter DOUGLAS and BLUNT, meeting.*

*Blunt.* What is thy name, that in the battle thus  
Thou crossest me? what honour dost thou seek  
Upon my head?

*Doug.* Know then, my name is Douglas ;  
And I do haunt thee in the battle thus,  
Because some tell me that thou art a king.

*Blunt.* They tell thee true.

*Doug.* The lord of Stafford dear to-day hath  
bought

Thy likeness ; for, instead of thee, king Harry,  
This sword hath ended him : so shall it thee,  
Unless thou yield thee as my prisoner. [*Scot.*]

*Blunt.* I was not born a yielder, thou proud  
And thou shalt find a king that will revenge  
Lord Stafford's death.

[*They fight, and BLUNT is slain.*]

*Enter HOTSPUR.*

*Hof.* O Douglas, hadst thou fought at Hol-  
medon thus,  
I never had triumph'd upon a Scot.

*Doug.* All's done, all's won ; here breathless  
lies the king.

*Hof.* Where?

*Doug.* Here.

*Hof.* This, Douglas? no, I know this face  
full well :

A gallant knight he was, his name was Blunt ;  
Sensibly \* furnish'd like the king himself.

*Doug.* A fool go with thy soul, whither it  
A borrow'd title hast thou bought too dear. [*goes :*]  
Why didst thou tell me that thou wert a king?

*Hof.* The king hath many marching in his  
coats.

*Doug.* Now, by my sword, I will kill all his  
coats ;  
I'll murder all his wardrobe, piece by piece,  
Until I meet the king.

*Hof.* Up, and away ;

Our soldiers stand full fairly for the day.  
[*Exeunt.*]

*Other Alarums.—Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Though I could 'scape shot-free at Lon-  
don, I fear the shot here ; here's no scoring,  
but upon the pate.—Soft! who art thou? Sir

Walter Blunt ; —there's honour for you : Here's  
no vanity!—I am as hot as molten lead, and as  
heavy too : God keep lead out of me! I need no  
more weight than mine own bowels.—I have led  
my ragamuffins where they are peppered :  
there's but three of my hundred and fifty left  
alive ; and they are for the town's end, to beg  
during life. But who comes here?

*Enter Prince HENRY.*

*P. Hen.* What, stand'st thou idle here? I lend  
me thy sword :

Many a nobleman lies stark and stiff  
Under the hoofs of vaunting enemies,  
Whose deaths are unreveng'd : Pr'ythee, lend  
thy sword :

*Fal.* O Hal, I pr'ythee, give me leave to  
breathe a while.—Turk Gregory never did such  
deeds in arms, as I have done this day. I have  
paid Percy, I have made him sure.

*P. Hen.* He is, indeed ; and living to kill  
thee. Lend me thy sword, I pr'ythee.

*Fal.* Nay, before God, Hal, if Percy be alive,  
thou get'st not my sword ; but take my pistol,  
if thou wilt.

*P. Hen.* Give it me : What, is it in the case?  
*Fal.* Ay, Hal ; 'tis hot, 'tis hot ; there's that  
will sack a city.

[*The Prince draws out a bottle of sack.*]

*P. Hen.* What, is't a time to jest and dally  
now? [*Throu's it at him and exit.*]

*Fal.* Well, if Percy be alive, I'll pierce him.  
If he do come in my way, so : if he do not, if I  
come in his willingly, let him make a carbun-  
nado \* of me. I like not such grinning honour  
as Sir Walter hath : Give me life : which if I  
can save, so ; if not, honour comes unlooked for,  
and there's an end. [*Exit.*]

*SCENE IV.—Another part of the Field.*

*Alarums.—Excursions.—Enter the KING,  
Prince HENRY, Prince JOHN, and WEST-  
MORELAND.*

*K. Hen.* I pr'ythee, [much :—]  
Harry, withdraw thyself ; thou bleed'st too  
Lord John of Lancaster, go you with him.

*P. John.* Not I, my lord, unless I did bleed  
too.

*P. Hen.* I do beseech your majesty, make up,  
Lest your retirement do amaze your friends.

*K. Hen.* I will do so :—  
My lord of Westmoreland, lead him to his tent.

*West.* Come, my lord, I will lead you to  
your tent

*P. Hen.* Lead me, my lord? I do not need  
your help :  
And heaven forbid a shallow scratch should  
drive

The prince of Wales from such a field as this ;  
Where stain'd nobility lies trodden on,  
And rebel's arms triumph in massacres!

*P. John.* We breathe too long :—Come, coun-  
sin Westmoreland,  
Our duty this way lies ; for God's sake, come.

[*Exeunt Prince JOHN and WESTMORELAND.*]

*P. Hen.* By heaven, thou hast deceiv'd me,  
Lancaster,

I did not think thee lord of such a spirit :  
Before I lov'd thee as a brother, John ;  
But now, I do respect thee as my soul.

*K. Hen.* I saw him hold lord Percy at the  
point,

With lustier maintenance than I did look for  
Of such an ungrown warrior.

*P. Hen.* Oh! this boy  
Leads mettle to us all! [*Exit.*]

*Alarums.—Enter DOUGLAS.*

*Doug.* Another king! they grow like Hydra's  
heads :  
I am the Douglas, fatal to all those

\* In resemblance.

\* A piece of meat cut crossways for the gridiron.

# Scene IV. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY IV.

409

That wear those colours on them.—What art that counterfeit'st the person of a king? [thou,

*K. Hen.* The king himself; who, Douglas, grieves at heart,

So many of his shadows thou hast met, And not the very king. I have two boys, Seek Percy and thyself about the field: But, seeing thou fall'st on me so luckily, I will assay thee; so defend thyself.

*Doug.* I fear thou art another counterfeit; And yet, in faith, thou bear'st thee like a king: But mine, I am sure, thou art, who'er thou be, And thus I win thee.

[*They fight; the King being in danger, enter Prince Henry.*]

*P. Hen.* Hold up thy head, vile Scot, or thou art like

Never to hold it up again! the spirits Of Shirley, Stafford, Blunt, are in my arms: It is the prince of Wales that threatens thee; Who never promiseth, but he means to pay.—

[*They fight; Douglas flies.*]

Cheerily, my lord; How tares your grace?— Sir Nicholas Gawsney hath for succour sent, And so hath Clifton; I'll to Clifton straight.

*K. Hen.* Stay, and breathe a while:— Thou hast redeem'd thy lost opinion; \* [life, And show'd thou mak'st some tender of my In this fair rescue thou hast brought to me.

*P. Hen.* O heaven! they did me too much injury, That ever said I hearken'd for your death. If it were so, I might have let alone

The insulting hand of Douglas over you; Which would have been as speedy in your end, As all the poisonous potions in the world, And sav'd the treacherous labour of your son.

*K. Hen.* Make up to Clifton, I'll to Sir Nicholas Gawsney. [*Exit King Henry.*]

*Enter Hotspur.*

*Hot.* If I mistake not, thou art Harry Monmouth.

*P. Hen.* Thou speak'st as if I would deny my name.

*Hot.* My name is Harry Percy.

*P. Hen.* Why, then I see

A very valiant rebel of the name.

I am the prince of Wales; and think not, Percy, To share with me in glory any more: Two stars keep not their motion in one sphere; Nor can one England brook a double reigu, Of Harry Percy and the prince of Wales.

*Hot.* Nor shall it, Harry, for the hour is come To end the one of us; And 'would to God, Thy name in arms were now as great as mine!

*P. Hen.* I'll make it greater, ere I part from And all the budding honours on thy crest [thee; I'll crop to make a garland for my head.

*Hot.* I can no longer brook thy vanities.

[*They fight.*]

*Enter Falstaff.*

*Fal.* Well said, Hal! to it, Hal!—Nay, you shall find no boy's play here, I can tell you.

*Enter Douglas; he fights with Falstaff, who falls down as if he were dead, and exit Douglas. Hotspur is wounded, and falls.*

*Hot.* O Harry, thou hast robb'd me of my I better brook the loss of brittle life, [youth, Than those proud titles thou hast won of me; They wound my thoughts, worse than thy sword my flesh;—

But thought'st the slave of life, and life time's And time, that takes survey of all the world, Must have a stop. O I could prophesy, But that the earthy and cold hand of death Lies on my tongue:—No, Percy, thou art dust, And food for— [Dies.

\* There is no reason to suppose that Hotspur was slain by the Prince of Wales: he probably fell by an unknown hand.

† Reputation.

*P. Hen.* For worms, brave Percy: Fare thee well, great heart!—

Ill weav'd ambition, how much art thou shrunk! When that this body did contain a spirit, A kingdom for it was too small a bound: But now, two paces of the vilest earth Is room enough;—This earth, that bears thee dead, Bears not alive so stout a gentleman. [dead, If thou wert sensible of courtesy, I should not make so dear a show of zeal:— But let my favours \* hide thy mangled face; And, even in thy behalf, I'll thank myself For doing these fair rites of tenderness. Adieu, and take thy praise with thee to heaven! Thy ignomy sleep with thee in the grave, But not remembered in thy epitaph!—

[*He sees Falstaff on the ground.*]

What! old acquaintance! could not all this flesh Keep in a little life? Poor Jack, farewell! I could have better spar'd a better man. O I should have a heavy miss of thee, If I were much in love with vanity.

Death hath not struck so fat a deer to-day, Though many dearer, in this bloody fray:— Embowell'd will I see thee by and by; Till then, in blood by noble Percy lie. [*Exit.*]

*Fal.* [*Rising slowly.*] Embowell'd I if thou embowel me to-day, I'll give you leave to powder me, and eat me too, to-morrow. 'Shlood, 'twas time to counterfeit, or that hot termagant Scot had paid me scot and lot too. Counterfeit? I lie, am no counterfeit: To die, is to be a counterfeit; for he is but the counterfeit of a man, who hath not the life of a man: but to counterfeit dying, when a man thereby liveth, is to be no counterfeit, but the true and perfect image of life indeed. The better part of valour is—discretion; in the which better part, I have saved my life. 'Zounds, I am afraid of this gunpowder Percy, though he be dead: How, if he should counterfeit too, and rise? I am afraid he would prove the better counterfeit. Therefore I'll make him sure: yea, and I'll swear I killed him. Why may not he rise, as well as I? nothing confutes me but eyes, and nobody sees me. Therefore, Sirrah, [*Stabbing him.*] with a new wound in your thigh, come you along with me. [*Takes Hotspur on his back.*]

*Re-enter Prince Henry and Prince John.*

*P. Hen.* Come, brother John, full bravely hast thou flesh'd Thy maiden sword.

*P. John.* But, soft! whom have we here?

Did you not tell me, this fat man was dead?

*P. Hen.* I did; I saw him dead, breathless, Upon the ground.— [and bleeding

Art thou alive? or is it fantasy? [speak: That plays upon our eyesight? I pry thee We will not trust our eyes, without our ears:— Thou art not what thou seem'st.

*Fal.* No, that's certain; I am not a double man: but, if I be not Jack Falstaff, then am I a Jack. There is Percy: [*Throwing the body down.*] if your father will do me any honour so; if not, let him kill the next Percy himself. I look to be either earl or duke, I can assure you.

*P. Hen.* Why, Percy I killed myself, and saw thee dead.

*Fal.* Didst thou? Lord, Lord, how this world is given to lying!—I grant you, I was down, and out of breath; and so was he: but we arose both at an instant, and fought a long hour by Shrewsbury clock. If I may be believed, so; if not, let them that should reward valour bear the sin upon their own heads. I'll take it upon my death, I gave him this wound in the thigh: if the man were alive, and would deny it, I would make him eat a piece of my sword.

*P. John.* This is the strangest tale that e'er I heard.

\* Scarf, with which he covers Percy's face.

† Salt.



*P. Hen.* This is the straughtest fellow, brother John.—  
Come, bring your luggage nobly on your back ;  
For my part, if a lie may do thee grace,  
I'd gild it with the happiest terms I have.

[*A Retreat is sounded.*  
The trumpet sounds retreat, the day is ours.  
Come, brother, let's to the highest of the field,  
To see what friends are living, who are dead.

[*Exeunt Prince Henry and Prince John.*  
*Fal.* I'll follow, as they say for reward. He  
that rewards me, God reward him ! If I do  
grow great, I'll grow less ; for I'll purge, and  
leave sack, and live cleanly, as a nobleman  
should do. [*Exit, bearing off the body.*

*SCENE V.—Another part of the Field.*

*The Trumpets sound.—Enter King Henry,  
Prince Henry, Prince John, Westmoreland  
and others, with Worcester and Vernon, prisoners.*

*P. Hen.* Thus ever did rebellion find rebuke.—

Dis-spirited Worcester ! did we not send grace,  
Pardon, and terms of love to all of you ?  
And would'st thou turn our offers contrary ?  
Mistake the tenor of thy kinsman's trust !  
Three knights upon our party slain to-day,  
A noble earl, and many a creature else,  
Had been alive this hour,  
If, like a Christian, thou hadst truly borne  
Betwixt our armies true intelligence.

*Hor.* What I have done, my safety urged me  
to ;

And I embrace this fortune patiently,  
Since not to be avoided it falls on me.

*K. Hen.* Bear Worcester to the death, and  
Vernon too :

Other offenders we will pause upon.—

[*Exeunt Worcester and Vernon, guarded*  
How goes the field ?

*P. Hen.* The noble Scot, lord Douglas, when  
he saw

The fortune of the day quite turn'd from him,  
The noble Percy slain and all his men  
Upon the foot of fear,—fled with the rest ;  
And, falling from a hill, he was so bruised,  
That the pursuers took him. At my tent  
The Douglas is ; And I beseech your grace,  
I may dispose of him.

*K. Hen.* With all my heart.

*P. Hen.* Then, brother John of Lancaster to  
This honourable bounty shall belong : [you  
Go to the Douglas and deliver him  
Up to his pleasure, ransomless, and free :  
His valour, shown upon our crests to-day,  
Hath taught us how to cherish such high deeds,  
Even in the bosom of our adversaries.

*K. Hen.* Then this remains, that we divide  
our power.—

You, son John, and my cousin Westmoreland,  
Towards York shall bend you, with your dearest  
speed,

To meet Northumberland and the prelate  
Scroop,

Who, as we hear, are busily in arms :  
Myself and you, son Harry, will towards Wales,  
To fight with Glendower and the earl of March.  
Rebellion in this land shall lose his sway,  
Meeting the check on such another day :  
And since this business so fair is done,  
Let us not leave till all our own be won.

[*Exeunt.*

# SECOND PART

OF

## KING HENRY IV.

### LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

SHAKESPEARE is supposed to have written this play in 1598. Its action comprehends a period of nine years, commencing with Hotspur's death, 1403, and terminating with the coronation of Henry V. 1412-13. Many of the tragic scenes in this second portion of the history are forcible and pathetic; but the comedy is of a much looser and more indecent character, than any in the preceding part. *Shallow* is an odd though pleasing portrait of a brainless magistrate, and a character, it is to be feared, not peculiar to Gloucestershire only. In thus exhibiting his worship to the ridicule of an audience, Shakspeare amply revenged himself on his old Warwickshire prosecutor. On the character of Falstaff, as exhibited in the two plays, Dr. Johnson makes the following admirable remarks: "Falstaff! unimitated, unimitable Falstaff, how shall I describe thee; thou compound of sense and vice, of sense which may be admired, but not esteemed; of vice which may be despised, but hardly detested. Falstaff is a character loaded with faults, and with those faults which naturally produce contempt. He is a thief and a glutton, a coward and a boaster; always ready to cheat the weak, and prey upon the poor; to terrify the timorous, and insult the defenceless. At once obsequious and malignant, he satirizes in their absence those whom he lives by flattering. He is familiar with the prince, only as an agent of vice; but of this familiarity he is so proud, as not only to be supercilious and haughty with common men, but to think his interest of importance to the Duke of Lancaster. Yet the man thus corrupt, thus despicable, makes himself necessary to the prince that despises him, by the most pleasing of all qualities, perpetual gait, by an unfailing power of exciting laughter, which is the more freely indulged, as his wit is not of the splendid or ambitious kind, but consists in easy escapes and sallies of levity, which make sport, but raise no envy. It must be observed, that he is stained with no enormous or sanguinary crimes, so that his licentiousness is not so offensive but that it may be borne for his mirth."

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE FOURTH.	TRAVERS and MORTON, <i>Domestics of Northumberland.</i>
HENRY, <i>Prince of Wales, afterwards King Henry V.</i>	FALSTAFF, BARDOLPH, PISTOL, and PAGE.
THOMAS, <i>Duke of Clarence,</i>	POINS and PLETO, <i>Attendants on Prince Henry.</i>
PRINCE JOHN of Lancaster, <i>afterwards Duke of Bedford;</i>	SHALLOW and SILENCE, <i>Country Justices.</i>
PRINCE HUMPHREY of Gloster, <i>afterwards Duke of Gloster,</i>	DAVY, <i>Servant to Shallow.</i>
EARL OF WARWICK,	MOULDY, SHADOW, WART, FEEBLE, and BULLCAMP, <i>Recruits.</i>
EARL OF WESTMORELAND,	FANG and SNARE, <i>Sheriff's Officers.</i>
GOWER, — HARCOURT,	RUMOUR. — A PORTER.
LORD CHIEF JUSTICE of the King's Bench.	A DANCER, <i>Speaker of the Epilogue</i>
A GENTLEMAN attending on the Chief Justice.	LADY NORTHUMBERLAND. — LADY PERCY,
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND,	<i>Hostess QUICKLY. — DOLL TEAR-SHEET.</i>
SCROOP, <i>Archbishop of York,</i>	<i>Lords and other Attendants, Officers, Soldiers, Messenger, Drawers, Beadles, Grooms, &amp;c.</i>
LORD MOWBRAY; LORD HASTINGS,	
LORD BARDOLPH; SIR JOHN COLLEVILE,	

SCENE, England.

### INDUCTION.

*Warkworth.—Before Northumberland's Castle.*

*Enter RUMOUR, painted full of Tongues.*

*Rum.* Open your ears; For which of you will stop

The vent of hearing, when loud Rumour speaks?

I, from the orient to the drooping west,  
Making the wind my post-horse, still unfold  
The acts commenced on this ball of earth;  
Upon my tongues continual slanders ride;  
The which in every language I pronounce,  
Stuffing the ears of men with false reports.  
I speak of peace, while covert enmity,  
Under the smile of safety wounds the world;  
And who but Rumour, who but only I,

Make earful musters and prepar'd defence;  
Whilst the big year, swell'd with some other  
grief,

Is thought with child by the stern tyrant war,  
And no such matter? Rumour is a pipe  
Blown by surmises, jealousies, conjectures;  
And of so easy and so plain a stop,  
That the blunt monster with uncounted heads,  
The still discordant wavering multitude,  
Can play upon it. But what need I thus  
My well-known body to anatomize  
Among my household? Why is Rumour here?  
I run before king Harry's victory;  
Who, in a bloody field by Shrewsbury,  
Hath beaten down young Hotspur, and his  
troops,

Quenching the flame of bold rebellion  
Even with the rebel's blood. But what mean I  
To speak so true at first? my office is  
To noise abroad,—that Harry Monmouth fell  
Under the wrath of noble Hotspur's sword;  
And that the king before the Douglas' rage  
Stoop'd his anointed head as low as death.  
This have I rumour'd through the peasant  
towns

Between that royal field of Shrewsbury  
And this worm-eaten hold of ragged stone,\*  
Where Hotspur's father, old Northumberland,  
Lies crafty-sick: the posts come tiring on,  
And not a man of them brings other news  
Than they have learn'd of me; From Rumour's  
tongues

They bring smooth comforts false, worse than  
true wrongs. [Exit.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—The same.—The PORTER before  
the Gate; Enter Lord BARDOLPH.

Bard. Who keeps the gate here, ho!—  
Where is the earl?

Port. What shall I say you are?

Bard. Tell thou the earl,

That the lord Bardolph doth attend him here.

Port. His lordship is walk'd forth into the  
orchard;

Please it your honour, knock but at the gate,  
And he himself will answer.

Enter NORTHUMBERLAND.

Bard. Here comes the earl.

North. What news, lord Bardolph? every  
minute now

Sho'd be the father of some stratagem: †  
The times are wild; contention, like a horse  
Full of high feeding, madly hath broke loose,  
And bears down all before him.

Bard. Noble earl,

I bring you certain news from Shrewsbury.

North. Good, an heaven will!

Bard. As good as heart can wish:—

The king is almost wounded to the death;

And, in the fortune of my lord your son,  
Prince Harry slain outright; and both the  
Blunts

Kill'd by the hand of Douglas: young prince  
John,

And Westmoreland, and Stafford, fled the field;

And Harry Monmouth's brawn, the bulk Sir John,  
Is prisoner to your son: O such a day,

So fought, so follow'd, and so fairly won,  
Came not, till now, to dignify the times,  
Since Cæsar's fortunes!

North. How is this deriv'd?

Saw you t' e field? came you from Shrewsbury?

Bard. I spake with one, my lord, that came  
from thence;

A gentleman well bred, and of good name,  
That freely render'd me these news for true.

\* Northumberland castle.

† Important or dreadful event.

North. Here comes my servant, Travers,  
whom I sent

On Tuesday last to listen after news.

Bard. My lord, I over-rode him on the way;  
And he is furnish'd with no certainties,  
More than he haply may retain from me.

Enter TRAVERS.

North. Now, Travers, what good tidings come  
with you?

Tra. My lord, Sir John Umfreville turn'd me  
back

With joyful tidings; and, being better hors'd,  
Out-rode me. After him, came spurring hard,  
A gentleman almost forspent with speed,  
That stopp'd by me to breathe his bloodied  
horse:

He ask'd the way to Chester; and of him  
I did demand, what news from Shrewsbury.  
He told me, that rebellion had bad luck,  
And that young Harry Percy's spur was cold;  
With that, he gave his able horse the head,  
And, bending forward, struck his armed heels  
Against the panting sides of his poor jade  
Up to the rowel-head; and, starting so,  
He seem'd in running to devour the way,  
Staying no longer question.

North. Ha!—Again.

Said he, young Harry Percy's spur was cold!  
Of Hotspur, coldspur! that rebellion  
Had met ill-luck!

Bard. My lord, I'll tell you what;—  
If my young lord your son have not the day,  
Upon mine honour, for a silken point\*  
I'll give my barony: never talk of it.

North. Why should the gentleman, that rode  
by Travers,

Give then such instances of loss?

Bard. Who, he?

He was some bilding fellow, that had stol'n  
The horse he rode on; and, upon my life,  
Spoke at a venture. Look, here comes more  
news.

Enter MORTON.

North. Yea, this man's brow, like to a title  
leaf,

Fortells the nature of a tragic volume:  
So looks the strong, wheron the imperious flood  
Hath left a witness'd usurpation. †—

Say, Morton, didst thou come from Shrews-  
bury?

Mor. I ran from Shrewsbury, my noble lord;  
Where hateful death put on his ugliest mask,  
To fright our party.

North. How doth my son and brother?  
Thou tremblest; and the whiteness in thy cheek  
Is apter than thy tongue to tell thy errand.

Even such a man, so faint, so spiritless,  
So dull, so dead in look, so woe-begone,  
Drew Priam's curtain in the dead of night,  
And would have told him, half his Troy was  
burn'd:

But Priam found the fire, ere he his tongue,  
And I my Percy's death, ere thou report'st it.

This thou would'st say,—Your son did thus and  
thus,

Your brother, thus; so fought the noble Doug-  
las;

Stopp'ing my greedy ear with their bold deeds:  
But in the end, to stop mine ear indeed,

Thou hast a sigh to blow away this praise,  
Ending with—brother, son, and all are dead.

Mor. Douglas is living, and your brother, yet.  
But, for my lord your son,—

North. Why, he is dead.

See, what a ready tongue suspicion hath?  
He that but fears the thing he would not  
know,

Hath, by instinct, knowledge from other's eyes,  
That what he fear'd is chanced. Yet speak,

Morton;

Tell thou thy earl, his divination lies;

\* Lace tagged.

† An attestation of us ravage.

And I will take it as a sweet disgrace,  
And make thee rich for doing me such wrong.

*Mor.* You are too great to be by me galled;  
Your spirit is too true, your fears too certain.

*North.* Yet, for all this, say not that Percy's dead.

I see a strange confession in thine eye:  
Thou shak'st thy head, and hold'st it fear or sin,  
To speak a truth. If he be slain, say so:  
The tongue offends not, that reports his death:  
And he doth sin, that doth belie the dead;  
Not he, which says the dead is not alive.  
Yet the first bringer of unwelcome news  
Hath but a losing office; and his tongue  
Sounds ever after as a sullen bell,  
Remember'd knolling a departing friend.

*Bard.* I cannot think, my lord, your son is dead.

*Mor.* I am sorry I should force you to believe

That, which I would to heaven I had not seen:  
But these mine eyes saw him in bloody state,  
Rend'ring faint quittance,\* wearied and out-  
breath'd

To Harry Monmouth: whose swift wrath beat down

The never-daunted Percy to the earth,  
From whence with life he never more sprung up.

In few,† his death (whose spirit lent a fire  
Even to the dullest peasant in his camp,)  
Being bruited; once, took fire and heat away  
From the best temper'd courage in his troops:  
For from his metal was his party steel'd;  
Which once in him abated, all the rest  
Turn'd on themselves, like dull and heavy lead.  
And as the thing that's heavy in itself,  
Upon enforcement, flies with greatest speed;  
So did our men, heavy in Hotspur's loss,  
Lend to this weight such lightness with their fear,

That arrows did not swifter toward their aim,  
Than did our soldiers, aiming at their safety,  
Fly from the field: Then was that noble Worcester

Too soon ta'en prisoner: and that furious Scot,  
The bloody Douglas, whose well-labouring sword

Had three times slain the appearance of the king,

'Gan vail ‡ his stomach, and did grace the shame

Of those that turn'd their backs; and, in his flight,

Stumbling in fear, was took. The sum of all  
Is, that the king hath won; and hath sent out  
A speedy power to encounter you, my lord,  
Under the conduct of young Lancaster,  
And Westmoreland; this is the news at full.

*North.* For this I shall have time enough to mourn.

In poison there is physic; and these news,  
Having been well, that would have made me sick,

Being sick, have in some measure made me well:  
And as the wretch whose fever-weakn'd joints,  
Like strengthless hinges, buckle under life,  
Impatient of his fit, breaks like a fire  
Out of his keeper's arms; even so my limbs,  
Weaken'd with grief, being now enrag'd with grief,

Are thrice themselves: hence therefore, thou nice ¶ crutch;

A scaly gauntlet now, with joints of steel,  
Must glove this hand: and hence, thou sickly quoit, ¶

Thou art a guard too wanton for the head,  
Which princes, flesh'd with conquest, aim to hit.

Now bind my brows with iron; and approach

The ragg'd † sour that time and spite dare bring,

To frown upon the enrag'd Northumberland!  
Let heaven kiss earth! Now let not nature's hand

Keep the wild flood confin'd! let order die!  
And let this world no longer be a stage,  
To feed contention in a lingering act;  
But let one spirit of the first-born Cain  
Reign in all bosoms, that each heart being set  
On bloody courses, the rude scene may end,  
And darkness be the burier of the dead!

*Tya.* This strained passion doth you wrong, my lord.

*Bard.* Sweet earl, divorce not wisdom from your honour.

*Mor.* The lives of all your loving complies  
Lean on your health; the which, if you give o'er

To stormy passion, must perforce decay.  
You cast the event of war, my noble lord,

And summ'd † the account of chance, before you said,—

Let us make head. It was your presumise,  
That in the dole \* of blows your son might drop:

You knew he walk'd o'er perils, on an edge,  
More likely to fall in, than to get o'er:  
You were advis'd, his flesh was capable  
Of wounds, and scars; and that his forward spirits

Would lift him where most trade of danger rang'd;

Yet did you say,—Go forth; and none of this,  
Though strongly apprehended, could restrain  
The stiff-borne action: What hath then befallen,

Or what hath this bold enterprise brought forth,  
More than that being which was like to be?

*Bard.* We all, that are engaged to this loss,  
Knew that we ventur'd on such dangerous seas,

That, if we wrought out life, 'twas ten to one:  
And yet we ventur'd, for the gain propos'd  
Chok'd the respect of likely peril fear'd;  
And, since we are o'er-set, venture again.  
Come, we will all put forth; body and goods.

*Mor.* 'Tis more than time: And, my most noble lord,

I hear for certain, and do speak the truth,—  
The gentle archbishop of York is up,  
With well-appointed powers; he is a man,  
Who with a double surety binds his followers.  
My lord your son had only but the corps,  
But shadows, and the shows of men, to fight:  
For that same word, rebellion, did divide  
The action of their bodies from their souls;  
And they did fight with queasiness, constrain'd,  
As men drunk potions; that their weapons only  
Seem'd on our side, but for their spirits and souls,

This word, rebellion, it had froze them up,  
As fish are in a pond: But now the bishop  
Turns insurrection to religion:  
Suppos'd sincere and holy in his thoughts,  
He's follow'd both with body and with mind;  
And doth enlarge his rising with the blood  
Of fair king Richard, scrap'd from Pomfret stones.

Derives from heaven his quarrel and his cause;  
Tells them he doth bestride a bleeding land,  
Gasping for life under great Bolingbroke;  
And more, † and less, do flock to follow him.

*North.* I knew of this before; but to speak truth,

This present grief hath wip'd it from my mind.  
Go in with me; and counsel every man  
The aptest way for safety and revenge:  
Get posts, and letters, and make friends with speed;

Never so few, and never yet more need.

[Exeunt.]

\* Return of blows.  
† Reported.  
‡ Trifling.

† In few words.  
‡ Let fall.  
¶ Cap.

\* Distribution.

† Greater.

## SCENE II.—London.—A Street.

Enter Sir JOHN FALSTAFF, with his PAGE bearing his Sword and Buckler.

Fal. Sirrah, you giant, what says the doctor to my water?

Page. He said, Sir, the water itself was a good healthy water: but, for the party that owed it, he might have more diseases than he knew for.

Fal. Men of all sorts take a pride to gird at me: The brain of this foolish-compounded clay, man, is not able to vent any thing that tends to laughter, more than I invent, or is invented on me: I am not only witty in myself, but the cause that wit is in other men. I do here walk before thee, like a sow, that hath overwhelmed all her litter but one. If the prince put thee into my service for any other reason than to set me off, why then I have no judgment. Thou whoreson mandrake, thou art fitter to be worn in my cap, than to wait at my heels. I was never manned with an agate till now: but I will set you neither in gold nor silver, but in vile apparel, and send you back again to your master, for a jewel, the juvenal, the prince your master, whose chin is not yet fledged. I will sooner have a beard grow in the palm of my hand, than he shall get one on his cheek: and yet he will not stick to say, his face is a face-royal: God may finish it when he will, it is not a hair amiss yet: he may keep it still as a face-royal, for a barber shall never earn sixpence out of it; and yet he will be crowing, as if he had writ man ever since his father was a bachelor. He may keep his own grace, but he is almost out of mine. I can assure him.—What said master Dumbleton about the satin for my short cloak and slops?

Page. He said, Sir, you should procure him better assurance than Bardolph: he would not take his bond and your's; he liked not the security.

Fal. Let him be damned like a glutton! may his tongue be hotter!—A whoreson Achitophel! a rascally yea-forsooth knave! to bear a gentleman in hand, and then stand upon security!—The whoreson smooth-pates do now wear nothing but high shoes, and bunches of keys at their girdles; and if a man is thorough with them in honest taking up, then they must stand upon security. I had as lief they would put rilsbane in my mouth, as offer to stop it with security. I looked he should have sent me two and twenty yards of satin, as I am a true knight, and he sends me security. Well, he may sleep in security; for he hath the horn of abundance, and the lightness of his wife shines through it: and yet cannot he see, though he have his own lantern to light him.—Where's Bardolph?

Page. He's gone into Smithfield, to buy your worship a horse.

Fal. I bought him in Paul's, and he'll buy me a horse in Smithfield: an I could get me but a wife in the stews, I were manned, horsed, and wived.†

Enter the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE‡ and an ATTENDANT.

Page. Sir, here comes the nobleman that committed the prince for striking him about Bardolph.

Fal. Wait close, I will not see him.

Ch. Just. What's he that goes there?

Atten. Falstaff, an't please your lordship.

Ch. Just. He that was in question for the robbery?

Atten. He, my lord: but he hath since done good service at Shrewsbury; and as I hear, is now going with some charge to the lord John of Lancaster.

Ch. Just. What, to York? Call him back again.

Atten. Sir John Falstaff!

Fal. Boy, tell him, I am deaf.

Page. You must speak louder, my master is deaf.

Ch. Just. I am sure he is, to the hearing of any thing good.—Go, pluck him by the elbow; I must speak with him.

Atten. Sir John,—

Fal. What! a young knave, and beg! Is there not wars? is there not employment? Doth not the king lack subjects? do not the rebels need soldiers? Though it be a shame to be on any side but one, it is worse shame to beg than to be on the worst side, were it worse than the name of rebellion can tell how to make it.

Atten. You mistake me, Sir.

Fal. Why, Sir, did I say you were an honest man! setting my knighthood and my soldier-ship aside, I had lied in my throat if I had said so.

Atten. I pray you, Sir, then set your knighthood and your soldier-ship aside; and give me leave to tell you, you lie in your throat, if you say I am any other than an honest man!

Fal. I give thee leave to tell me so! I lay aside that which grows to me! If thou get'st any leave of me, hang me! It thou takest leave, thou wert better be hanged: You hunt-counter, hence! avaunt!

Atten. Sir, my lord would speak with you.

Ch. Just. Sir John Falstaff, a word with you.

Fal. My good lord!—God give your lordship good time of day. I am glad to see your lordship abroad: I heard say, your lordship was sick; I hope your lordship goes abroad by advice. Your lordship, though not clean past your youth, hath yet some smack of age in you, some relish of the saltness of time; and I most humbly beseech your lordship, to have a reverend care of your health.

Ch. Just. Sir John, I sent for you before your expedition to Shrewsbury.

Fal. An c please your lordship, I bear his majesty's return with some discomfort from Wales.

Ch. Just. I talk not of his majesty:—You would not come when I sent for you.

Fal. And I bear moreover, his highness is fallen into this same whoreson apoplexy.

Ch. Just. Well, heaven mend him! I pray, let me speak with you.

Fal. This apoplexy is, as I take it, a kind of lethargy, an't please your lordship; a kind of sleeping in the blood, a whoreson tingling.

Ch. Just. What tell you me of it? be it as it is.

Fal. It hath its original from much grief: from study, and perturbation of the brain: I have read the cause of his effects in Galen; it is a kind of deafness.

Ch. Just. I think, you are fallen into the disease; for you hear not what I say to you.

Fal. Very well, my lord, very well: rather, an't please you, it is the disease of not listening, the malady of not marking, that I am troubled withal.

Ch. Just. To punish you by the heels, would amend the attention of your ears; and I care not, if I do become your physician.

Fal. I am as poor as Job, my lord, but not so patient: your lordship may minister the potion of imprisonment to me, in respect of poverty; but how I should be your patient to follow your prescriptions, the wise may make some dram of a scruple, or, indeed, a scruple itself.

\* Bailiff.

\* Owned. † A root supposed to have the shape of a man. ‡ A little figure cut in an agate. § In their debt. ¶ Alluding to an old proverb: Who goes to Westminster for a wife, to St. Paul's for a man, and to Smithfield for a horse, may meet with a whore, a knave, and a jade. \*\* Sir William Gascoigne, Chief Justice of the King's Bench.

## Scene II. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

415

*Ch. Just.* I sent for you, when there were matters against you for your life, to come speak with me.

*Fal.* As I was then advised by my learned counsel in the laws of this land-service, I did not come.

*Ch. Just.* Well, the truth is, Sir John, you live in great infamy.

*Fal.* He that buckles him in my belt, cannot live in less.

*Ch. Just.* Your means are very slender, and your waste is great.

*Fal.* I would it were otherwise; I would my means were grater, and my waist slenderer.

*Ch. Just.* You have misled the youthful prince.

*Fal.* The young prince hath misled me: I am the fellow with the great belly, and he my tooz.

*Ch. Just.* Well, I am loath to gail a new-healed wound; your day's service at Shrewsbury hath a little gilded over your night's exploit on Gads-hill: you may thank the unquiet time for your quiet o'er-posting that action.

*Fal.* My lord?

*Ch. Just.* But since all is well, keep it so: wake not a sleeping wolf.

*Fal.* To wake a wolf, is as bad as to smell a fox.

*Ch. Just.* What! you are as a candle, the better part burnt out.

*Fal.* A wassel candle, my lord; all tallow: if I did say of wax, my growth would approve the truth.

*Ch. Just.* There is not a white hair on your face, but should have his effect of gravity.

*Fal.* His effect of gravity, gravity.

*Ch. J. S.* You follow the young prince up and down, like his ill angel.

*Fal.* Not so, my lord; your ill angel is light; but, I hope, he that looks upon me, will take me without weighing. And yet, in some respects, I grant, I cannot go, I cannot tell: Virtue is of so little regard in these costermonger times, that true valour is turned bear-herd: Pregnancy is made a tapster, and hath his quick wit wasted in giving reckonings: all the other gifts appertinent to man, as the malice of this age shapes them, are not worth a gooseberry. You, that are old, consider not the capacities of us that are young; you measure the heat of our livers with the bitterness of your galls; and we that are in the taward of our youth, I must confess, are wags too.

*Ch. Just.* Do you set down your name in the scroll of youth, that are written down old with all the characters of age? Have you not a meek eye? a dry hand? a yellow cheek? a white beard? a decreasing leg? an increasing belly? Is not your voice broken? your wind short? your chin double? your wit single? and every part about you blasted with antiquity? and will you yet call yourself young? Fie, fie, fie, Sir John!

*Fal.* My lord, I was born about three of the clock in the afternoon, with a white head, and something a round belly. For my voice,—I have lost it with hollaring, and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not: the truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding; and he that will caper with me for 2 thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box o'the ear that the prince gave you,—he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it; and the young lion repents: marry, not in ashes and sackcloth; but in new silk and old sack.

*Ch. Just.* Well, heaven send the prince a better companion!

*Fal.* Heaven send the companion a better prince! I cannot rid my hands of him.

*Ch. Just.* Well, the king hath severed you and Prince Harry: I hear you are going with lord

John of Lancaster, against the archbishop and the earl of Northumbreland.

*Fal.* Yea; I thank your pretty sweet wit for it. But look you pray, all you that kiss my lady peace at home, that our armies join not in a hot day! for, by the Lord I take but two shirts out with me, and I mean not to sweat extraordinarily: if it be a hot day, an I brandish any thing but my bottle, I would I might never spit white again. There is not a dangerous action can peep out his head, but I am thrust upon it: Well, I cannot last ever! But it was always yet the trick of our English nation, if they have a good thing, to make it too common. If you will needs say, I am an old man, you should give me rest. I would to God, my name were not so terrible to the enemy as it is. I were better to be eaten to death with rust, than to be scoured to nothing with perpetual motion.

*Ch. Just.* Well, be honest, be honest; And God bless your expedition!

*Fal.* Will your lordship lend me a thousand pound, to furnish me forth?

*Ch. Just.* Not a penny, not a penny; you are too impatient to bear crosses. Fare you well: Commend me to my cousin Westmoreland.

[*Exit* CHIEF JUSTICE AND ATTENDANT.  
*Fal.* If I do, fillip me with a three-man beetle. \*—A man can no more separate age and covetousness, than he can part young limbs and lechery: but the gout galls the one, and the pox pinches the other; and so both the degrees prevent my curses.—Boy!—

*Page.* Sir?

*Fal.* What money is in my purse?

*Page.* Seven groats and twopence.

*Fal.* I can get no remedy against this consumption of the purse: borrowing only lingers and lingers it out, but the disease is incurable.—Go, bear this letter to my lord of Lancaster; this to the prince; this to the earl of Westmoreland; and this to old mistress Ursula, whom I have weekly sworn to marry since I perceived the first white hair on my chin: About it; you know where to find me. [*Exit* PAGE.] A pox of this gout! or, a gout of this pox! for the one or the other plays the rogue with my great toe. It is no matter, if I do halt; I have the wars for my colour, and my pension shall seem the more reasonable: A good wit will make use of any thing; I will turn diseases to commodity.

[*Exit*.]

### SCENE III.—York.—A Room in the Archbishop's Palace.

*Enter* the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK, the Lords HASTINGS, MOWBRAY, and BARDOLPH.

*Arch.* Thus have you heard our cause, and known our means;

And, my most noble friends, I pray you all, Speak plainly your opinions of our hopes: And first, lord marshal, what say you to it?

*Mowb.* I well allow the occasion of our arms; But gladly would be better satisfied, How, in our means, we should advance ourselves.

To look with forehead bold and big enough Upon the power and puissance of the king.

*Hast.* Our present musters grow upon the file.

To five and twenty thousand men of choice; And our supplies live largely in the hope Of great Northumbreland, whose bosom burns With an increased fire of injuries.

*Bard.* The question then, lord Hastings, standeth thus:—

Whether our present five and twenty thousand

May hold up head without Northumbreland.

*Hast.* With him, we may.

\* A large wooden hammer so heavy as to require three men to wield it.  
† Anticipate.

*Bard.* Ay, marry, there's the point :  
But if without him we be thought too feeble,  
My judgment is, we should not step too far  
Till we had his assistance by the hand :  
For, in a theme so bloody-fac'd as this,  
Conjecture, expectation, and surmise  
Of aids uncertain, should not be admitted.

*Arch.* 'Tis very true, lord Bardolph ; for,  
indeed,  
It was young Hotspur's case at Shrewsbury.

*Bard.* It was, my lord ; who lin'd himself with  
hope,  
Eating the air on promise of supply,  
Flattering himself with project of a power  
Much smaller than the smallest of his thoughts :  
And so, with great imagination,  
Proper to madmen, led his powers to death,  
And, winking, leap'd into destruction.

*Hast.* But, by your leave, it never yet did  
hurt,  
To lay down likelihoods, and forms of hope.

*Bard.* Yes, in this present quality of  
war :—  
Indeed the instant action, (a cause on foot,)  
Lives so in hope, as in an early spring  
We see the appearing buds ; which, to prove  
fruit,

Hope gives not so much warrant, as despair,  
That frosts will bite them. When we mean to  
build,

We first survey the plot, then draw the model ;  
And when we see the figure of the house,  
Then must we rate the cost of the erection :  
Which if we find outweighs ability,  
What do we then, but draw anew the model  
In fewer offices ; or, at least, desist  
To build at all ? Much more, in this great  
work,

(Which is, almost, to pluck a kingdom down,  
And set another up,) should we survey  
The plot of situation, and the model ;  
Consent upon a sure foundation ;  
Question surveyors ; know our own estate,  
How able such a work to undergo,  
To weigh against his opposite ; or else,  
We fortify in paper, and in figures,  
Using the names of men, instead of men :  
Like one, that draws the model of a house  
Beyond his power to build it ; who, half  
through,

Gives o'er, and leaves his part created cost  
A naked subject to the weeping clouds,  
And waste for churlish winter's tyranny.

*Hast.* Grant that our hopes (yet likely for  
fair birth,)  
Should be still-born, and that we now pos-  
sess'd

The utmost man of expectation ;  
I think we are a body strong enough,  
Even as we are, to equal with the king.

*Bard.* What ! is the king but five and twenty  
thousand ?

*Hast.* To us, no more ; nay, not so much,  
lord Bardolph.

For his divisions, as the times do brawl,  
Are in three heads : one power against the  
French,

And one against Glendower ; perforce, a third  
Must take up us : So is the uniform king  
In three divided ; and his coffers sound  
With hollow poverty and emptiness.

*Arch.* That he should draw his several  
strengths together,

And come against us in full puissance,  
Need not be dreaded.

*Hast.* If he should do so,  
He leaves his back unarm'd, the French and  
Welsh

Baying him at the heels : never fear that.

*Bard.* Who is it like should lead his forces  
hither ?

*Hast.* The duke of Lancaster, and West-  
moreland :  
Against the Welsh, himself and Harry Mon-  
mouth :

But who is substituted 'gainst the French, \*  
I have no certain notice.

*Arch.* Let us on ;  
And publish the occasion of our arms.  
The commonwealth is sick of their own choice,  
Their over-greedy love hath surfeited :—  
A habitation giddy and unsure

Hath he, that buildeth on the vulgar heart.  
O thou fond many ! with what loud applause  
Didst thou beat heaven with blessing Boling-  
broke,

Before he was what thou wouldst have him be ?  
And being now trimm'd in thine own desires,  
Thou, beastly feeder, art so full of him,  
That thou provok'st thyself to cast him up.  
So, so, thou common dog, didst thou disguise  
Thy glutton bosom of the royal Richard ;  
And now thou wouldst eat thy dead vomit up,  
And howl'st to find it. What trust is in these  
times ?

They that, when Richard liv'd, would have him  
die,  
Are now become enamour'd on his grave ;  
Thou, that threw'st dust upon his goodly head,  
When through proud London he came sighing  
on

After the admired heels of Bolingbroke,  
Cry'st now, *O earth, yield us that king again,  
And take thou this ! O thoughts of men accurat !  
Past, and to come, seem best ; things present,  
worst.*

*Mowb.* Shall we go draw our numbers, and  
set on ?

*Hast.* We are time's subjects, and time bids  
be gone. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—London.—A Street.

*Enter Hostess ; Fang, and his Boy, with  
her ; and Snare following.*

*Host.* Master Fang, have you entered the  
action ?

*Fang.* It is entered.

*Host.* Where is your yeoman ? Is it a lusty  
yeoman ? will a' stand to't ?

*Fang.* Sirrah, where's Snare ?

*Host.* O lord, ay : good master Snare.

*Snare.* Here, here.

*Fang.* Snare, we must arrest Sir John Fal-  
staff.

*Host.* Yea, good master Snare ; I have en-  
tered him and all.

*Snare.* It may chance cost some of us our  
lives, for he will stab.

*Host.* Alas the day ! take heed of him ; he  
stabbed me in mine own house, and that most  
beastly : in good faith, 'a cares not what mis-  
chief he doth, if his weapon be out : he will  
toss like any devil ; he will spare neither  
man, woman, nor child.

*Fang.* If I can close with him, I care not for  
his thrust.

*Host.* No, nor I neither : I'll be at your  
elbow.

*Fang.* An I but fist him once ; an 'a come  
but within my vice :—

*Host.* I am undone by his going ; I warrant  
you, he's an infinite thing upon my score :—  
Good master Fang, hold him sure ;—good mas-  
ter Snare, let me not escape. He comes con-  
tinuantly to Pie-corner, (saving your man-  
hoods,) to buy a saddle ; and he's indicted to  
dinner to the lubbar's head in Lambert-street,  
to master Smooth's the silkman : I pray ye,  
since my exion is entered, and my case so  
openly known to the world, let him be brought  
in to his answer. A hundred mark is a long

\* 12,000 Frenchmen landed at Milford Haven during  
this rebellion to aid Glendower. † Thrust.

loan for a poor lone woman to bear : and I have borne, and borne, and borne ; and have been fubbed off, and fubbed off, and fubbed off, from this day to that day, that it is a shame to be thought on. There is no honesty in such dealing ; unless a woman should be made an ass, and a beast, to bear every knave's wrong.—

*Enter Sir JOHN BASTAFF, PAGE, and BARDOLPH.*

Yonder he comes ; and that arrant malmsey-nose knave, Bardolph, with him. Do your offices, do your offices, master Fang, and master Snare ; do me, do me, do me your offices.

*Fal.* How now ? whose mare's dead ? what's the matter ?

*Fang.* Sir John, I arrest you at the suit of mistresses Quickly.

*Fal.* Away, varlets !—Draw, Bardolph ; cut me off the villain's head ; throw the quean in the channel.

*Host.* Throw me in the channel ? I'll throw thee in thee channel. Wilt thou ? wilt thou ? thou bastardy rogue !—Murder, murder ! O thou honey-suckle \* villain ! wilt thou kill God's officers, and the king's ? O thou honey-seed † rogue ! thou art a honey-seed ; a man-queller, and a woman-queller.

*Fal.* Keep them off, Bardolph.

*Fang.* A rescue ! a rescue !

*Host.* Good people, bring a rescue or two.—Thou wot'st, wot'st thou ? thou wot'st, wot'st thou ? do, do, thou rogue ! do, thou hemp-seed !

*Fal.* Away, you scullion ! you rampallian ! you fustilianian ! I'll tickle your catastrophe.

*Enter the Lord CHIEF JUSTICE, attended.*

*Ch. Just.* What's the matter ? keep the peace here, ho !

*Host.* Good my lord, be good to me ! I beseech you, stand to me !

*Ch. Just.* How now, Sir John ? what, are you brawling here ?

Doth this become your place, your time, and business ?

You should have been well on your way to York.—

Stand from him, fellow ; Wherefore hang'st thou on him ?

*Host.* O my most worshipful lord, an't please your grace, I am a poor widow of Eastcheap, and he is arrested at my suit.

*Ch. Just.* For what sum ?

*Host.* It is more than for some, my lord : it is for all, all I have : he hath eaten me out of house and home ; he hath put all my substance into that fat belly of his :—but I will have some of it out again, or I'll ride these o' nights, like the mare.

*Fal.* I think, I am as like to ride the mare, if I have any vantage of ground to get up.

*Ch. Just.* How comes this, Sir John ? Fie ! what man of good temper would endure this tempest of exclamation ? Are you not ashamed, to enforce a poor widow to so rough a course to come by her own ?

*Fal.* What is the gross sum that I owe thee ?

*Host.* Marry, if thou wert an honest man, thyself and the money too. Thou didst swear to me upon a parcel-gilt † goblet, sitting in my Dolphin chamber, at the round table, by a sea-coal fire, upon Wednesday in Whitsun-week, when the prince broke thy head for liking his father to a singing-man of Windsor : thou didst swear to me then, as I was washing thy wound, to marry me, and make me my lady thy wife. Canst thou deny it ? Did not goodwife Keech, the butcher's wife, come in then, and call me gossip Quickly ? coming in to borrow a mess of vinegar ; telling us, she had a good dish of prawns : whereby thou didst desire to eat some ; whereby I told thee, they were ill for a green

wound ? And didst thou not, when she was gone down stairs, desire me to be no more so familiarly with such poor people ; saying, that ere long they should call me madam ? And didst thou not kiss me, and bid me fetch thee thirty shillings ? I put thee now to thy book-oath ; deny it, if thou canst.

*Fal.* My lord, this is a poor mad soul ; and she says, up and down the town, that her eldest son is like you : she hath been in good case, and the truth is, poverty hath distracted her. But for these foolish officers, I beseech you, I may have redress against them.

*Ch. Just.* Sir John, Sir John, I am well acquainted with your manner of wrenching the true cause the false way. It is not a confident blow, nor the throng of words that come with such more than impudent sauciness from you, can thrust me from a level consideration : you have, as it appears to me, practised upon the easy-yielding spirit of this woman, and made her serve your uses both in purse and person.

*Host.* Yea, in troth, my lord.

*Ch. Just.* Pr'ythee, peace :—Pay her the debt you owe her, and unpay the villainy you have done with her : the one you may do with sterling money, and the other with current repentance.

*Fal.* My lord, I will not undergo this sneap \* without reply. You call honourable boldness, impudent sauciness : if a man will make count'sy, and say nothing, he is virtuous : No, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your sutor ; I say to you, I do desire demerence from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the king's affairs.

*Ch. Just.* You speak as having power to do wrong : but answer in the effect of your reputation, † and satisfy the poor woman.

*Fal.* Come hither, hostess.

[Taking her aside.]

*Enter GOWER.*

*Ch. Just.* Now, master Gower ; What news ?  
*Gow.* The king, my lord, and Harry prince of Wales,

Are near at hand : the rest the paper tells.

*Fal.* As I am a gentleman ;—

*Host.* Nay, you said so before.

*Fal.* As I am a gentleman ;—Come, no more words of it.

*Host.* By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate, and the tapestry of my dining-chambers.

*Fal.* Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking ; and for thy walls,—a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the prodigal, or the German hunting in water-work, is worth a thousand of these bed-hangings, and these fly-bitten tapestries. Let it be ten pound, if thou canst. Come, an it were not for thy humours, there is not a better wench in England. Go, wash thy face, and draw thy action : Come, thou must not be in this humour with me ; dost not know me ? Come, come, I know thou wast set on to this.

*Host.* Pray thee, Sir John, let it be but twenty nobles ; I faith I am loath to pawn my plate, in good earnest, la.

*Fal.* Let it alone ; I'll make other shift : you'll be a fool still.

*Host.* Well, you shall have it, though I pawn my gown. I hope you'll come to supper : You'll pay me all together ?

*Fal.* Will I live ?—Go, with her, with her ; [To BARDOLPH.] hook on, hook on.

*Host.* Will you have Doll Tear-sheet meet you at supper ?

*Fal.* No more words of ; let's have her.

[Exit Hostess, BARDOLPH, Officers, and PAGE.]

*Ch. Just.* I have heard better news.

*Fal.* What's the news, my good lord ?

*Ch. Just.* Where lay the king last night ?

\* Snub.

† Suitable to your character.

2 E

\* Homicidal.

‡ Party gift.

† Homicide



*Gow.* At Basingstoke, my lord.

*Fal.* I hope, my lord, all's well: What's the news, my lord?

*Ch. Just.* Come all his forces back?

*Gow.* No; fifteen hundred foot, five hundred horse,

Are march'd up to my lord of Lancaster.

Against Northumberland, and the archbishop.

*Fal.* Comes the king back from Wales, my noble lord?

*Ch. Just.* You shall have letters of me presently: Come, go along with me, good master Gower.

*Fal.* My lord!

*Ch. Just.* What's the matter?

*Fal.* Master Gower, shall I entreat you with me to dinner?

*Gow.* I must wait upon my good lord here: I thank you, good Sir John.

*Ch. Just.* Sir John, you loiter here too long, seeing you are to take soldiers up in counties as you go.

*Fal.* Will you snp with me, master Gower?

*Ch. Just.* What foolish master taught you these manners, Sir John?

*Fal.* Master Gower, if they become me not, he was a fool that taught them me.—This is the right fencing grace, my lord; tap for tap, and so part fair.

*Ch. Just.* Now the Lord lighten thee! thou art a great fool. [*Ereunt.*]

#### SCENE II.—The same.—Another Street.

*Enter Prince HENRY and POINS.*

*P. Hen.* Trust me, I am exceeding weary.

*Poins.* Is it come to that? I had thought weariness durst not have attached one of so high blood.

*P. Hen.* 'Faith, it does me: though it discolors the complexion of my greatness to acknowledge it. Doth it not show vilely in me, to desire small beer?

*Poins.* Why, a prince should not be so loosely studied, as to remember so weak a composition.

*P. Hen.* Belike then, my appetite was not pinnely got; for, by my troth, I do now remember the poor creature, small beer. But, indeed, these humble considerations make me out of love with my greatness. What a disgrace is it to me, to remember thy name? or to know thy face to-morrow? or to take note how many pair of silk stockings thou hast; viz. these, and those that were the peach-colour'd ones? or to bear the inventory of thy shirts; as, one for superfluity, and one other for use?—but that, the tennis-court keeper knows better than I; for it is a low ebb of linen with thee, when thou keepest not racket there; as thou hast not done a great while, because the rest of thy low-countries have made a shift to eat up thy Holland: and God knows, whether those that bawl out the ruins of thy linen,\* shall inherit his kingdom: but the midwives say, the children are not in the fault; whereupon the world increases, and kindreds are mightily strengthened.

*Poins.* How ill it follows, after you have laboured so hard, you should talk so idly? Tell me, how many good young princes would do so, their fathers being so sick as yours at this time is?

*P. Hen.* Shall I tell thee one thing, Poins?

*Poins.* Yes; and let it be an excellent good thing.

*P. Hen.* It will serve among wits of no higher breeding than thine.

*Poins.* Go to: I stand the push of your one thing that you will tell.

*P. Hen.* Why, I tell thee,—it is not meet that I should be sad, now my father is sick: albeit I could tell to thee, (as to one it pleases me, for

fault of a better, to call my friend,) I could be sad, and sad indeed too.

*Poins.* Very hardly, upon such a subject.

*P. Hen.* By this hand, thou think'st me as far in the devil's book, as thou and Falstaff, for obduracy and persistency: Let the end try the man. But I tell thee,—my heart bleeds inwardly, that my father is so sick: and keeping such a little company as thou art, hath in reason taken from me all ostentation of sorrow.

*Poins.* The reason?

*P. Hen.* What would'st thou think of me, if I should weep?

*Poins.* I would think thee a most princely hypocrite.

*P. Hen.* It would be every man's thought: and thou art a blessed fellow, to think as every man thinks; never a man's thought in the world keeps the road-way better than thine: every man would think me a hypocrite indeed. And what accites your most worshipful thought, to think so?

*Poins.* Why, because you have been so lewd, and so much engrafted to Falstaff.

*P. Hen.* And to thee.

*Poins.* By this light, I am well spoken of, I can hear it with my own ears; the worst that they can say of me is, that I am a second brother, and that I am a proper fellow of my hands; and those two things, I confess, I cannot help. By the mass, here comes Bardolph.

*P. Hen.* And the boy that I gave Falstaff: he had him from me Christian; and look, if the fat villain hath not transformed him ape.

*Enter BARDOLPH and PAGE.*

*Bard.* 'Save your grace!

*P. Hen.* And your's, most noble Bardolph!

*Bard.* Come, you virtuous ass, [*To the PAGE.*] you bashful fool, must you be blushing? wherefore blush you now? What a maidenly man at arms are you become? Is it such a matter, to get a pottle-pot's maidenhead.

*Page.* He called me even now, my lord, through a red lattice,\* and I could discern no part of his face from the window: at last, I spied his eyes; and, methought, he had made two holes in the ale-wife's new petticoat, and peeped through.

*P. Hen.* Hath not the boy profited?

*Bard.* Away, you whoreson upright rabbit, away!

*Page.* Away, you rascally Althea's dream, away!

*P. Hen.* Instruct us, boy: What dream, boy?

*Page.* Marry, my lord, Althea dreamed she was delivered of a fire-brand; and therefore I call him her dream.

*P. Hen.* A crown's worth of good interpretation.—There it is, boy. [*Gives him money.*]

*Poins.* O that this good blossom could be kept from cankers!—Well, there is sixpence to preserve thee.

*Bard.* An you do not make him be hanged among you, the gallows shall have wrong.

*P. Hen.* And how doth thy master, Bardolph?

*Bard.* Well, my lord. He heard of your grace's coming to town; there's a letter for you.

*Poins.* Delivered with good respect.—And how doth the martlemas,† your master?

*Bard.* In bodily health, Sir.

*Poins.* Marry, the immortal part needs a physician: but that moves not him; though that be sick, it dies not.

*P. Hen.* I do allow this wen‡ to be as familiar with me as my dog: and he holds his place; for look you how he writes.

*Poins.* [*Reads.*] John Falstaff, knight.—Every man must know that, as oft as he has occasion to name himself. Even like those that

\* Children wrangled up in his old shirts.

\* An ale-house window.  
† Martinmas, St. Martin's day is Nov. 11.  
‡ Swollen excrescence.

are kin to the king; for they never prick their finger, but they say, *There is some of the king's blood spilt: How comes that?* says he, that takes upon him not to conceive: the answer is as ready as a borrower's cap, *I am the king's poor cousin, Sir.*

*P. Hen.* Nay, they will be kin to us, or they will fetch it from Japhet. But the letter:—

*Poins.* Sir John Falstaff, knight, to the son of the king, nearest his father, Harry Prince of Wales, greeting.—Why, this is a certificate.

*P. Hen.* Peace.

*Poins.* I will imitate the honourable Roman in brevity:—he sure means brevity in breath; short-winded.—*I commend me to thee, I commend thee, and I leave thee. Be not too familiar with Poins; for he misuses thy favours so much, that he swears thou art to marry his sister Nell. Repent at idle times as thou may'st, and so farewell.*

*Thine, by yea and no, (which is as much as to say, as thou usest him,)*

*Jack Falstaff, with my familiars; John, with my brothers and sisters, and Sir John, with all Europe.*

My lord, I will steep this letter in sack, and make him eat it.

*P. Hen.* That's to make him eat twenty of his words. But do you use me thus, Ned? must I marry your sister?

*Poins.* May the wench have no worse fortune! but I never said so.

*P. Hen.* Well, thus we play the fools with the time; and the spirits of the wise sit in the clouds and mock us.—Is your master here in London?

*Bard.* Yes, my lord.

*P. Hen.* Where sups he? doth the old boar feed in the old trunk?

*Bard.* At the old place, my lord; in East-church.

*P. Hen.* What company?

*Page.* Lphesians, my lord; of the old church.

*P. Hen.* Sup any women with him?

*Page.* None, my lord, but old mistress Quickly, and mistress Doll Tear-sheet.

*P. Hen.* What Pagan may that be?

*Page.* A proper gentlewoman, Sir, and a kinswoman of my master's.

*P. Hen.* Even such kin, as the parish heifers are to the town bull.—Shall we steal upon them, Ned, at supper?

*Poins.* I am your shadow, my lord; I'll follow you.

*P. Hen.* Sirrah, you boy,—and Bardolph;—no word to your master, that I am yet come to town. There's for your silence.

*Bard.* I have no tongue, Sir.

*Page.* And for mine, Sir,—I will govern it.

*P. Hen.* Fare ye well; go. [*Exeunt BARDOLPH and PAGE.*]—This Doll Tear-sheet should be some road.

*Poins.* I warrant you, as common as the way between Saint Alban's and London.

*P. Hen.* How might we see Falstaff bestow himself to-night in his true colours, and not ourselves be seen?

*Poins.* Put on two leather jerkins and aprons, and wait upon him at his table as drawers.

*P. Hen.* From a gold to a bull? a heavy descension! it was Jove's case. From a prince to a prentice! a low transformation! that shall be mine: for, in every thing, the purpose must weigh with the folly. Follow me, Ned. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Warkworth.—Before the Castle.

*Enter NORTHUMBERLAND, Lady NORTHUMBERLAND, and Lady PERCY.*

*North.* I pray thee, loving wife, and gentle daughter,

Give even way unto my rough affairs:

Put not you on the visage of the times,

And be, like them, to Percy troublesome.

*Lady N.* I have given over, I will speak no more:

Do what you will; your wisdom be your guide.

*North.* Alas, sweet wife, my honour is at pawn;

And, but my going, nothing can redeem it.

*Lady P.* O yet, for God's sake, go not to these wars!

The time was, father, that you broke your word, When you were more endear'd to it than now;

When your own Percy, when my heart's dear Harry,

Threw many a northward look to see his father Bring up his powers; but he did long in vain.

Who then persuaded you to stay at home?

There were two honours lost; your's and your son's.

For your's—may heavenly glory brighten it! For his,—it stuck upon him, as the sun

In the grey vault of heaven; and, by his light, Did all the chivalry of England move

To do brave acts: he was indeed, the glass Wherein the noble youth did dress themselves.

He had no legs, that practised not his gait: And speaking thick, which nature made his

blemish, Became the accents of the valiant;

For those that could speak low, and tardily, Would turn their own perfection to abuse,

To seem like him: So that, in speech, in gait, In diet, in affections of delight,

In military rules, humours of blood, He was the mark and glass, copy and book,

That fashion'd others. And him,—O wondrous him!

O miracle of men!—him did you leave, (Second to none, unseconded by you,)

To look upon the hideous god of war In disadvantage; to abide a field,

Where nothing but the sound of Hotspur's name

Did seem defensible:—so you left him: Never, O never, do his ghost the wrong,

To hold your honour more precise and nice With others than with him; let them alone,

The marshal and the archbishop are strong: Had my sweet Harry had but half their num-

bers, To-day might I, hanging on Hotspur's neck, Have talk'd of Monmouth's grave.

*North.* Beshrew your heart, Fair daughter! you do draw my spirits from me,

With new lamenting ancient oversights. But I must go, and meet with danger there;

Or it will seek me in another place, And find me worse provided.

*Lady N.* O fly to Scotland, Till that the nobles, and the armed commons,

Have of their puissance made a little taste.

*Lady P.* If they get ground and vantage of the king,

Then join you with them like a rib of steel, To make strength stronger; but, for all our

loves, First let them try themselves: So did your son;

He was so suffer'd; so came I a widow; And never shall have length of life enough,

To rain upon remembrance with mine eyes, That it may grow and sprout as high as heaven

For recordation to my noble husband.

*North.* Come, come, go in with me: 'tis with my mind,

As with the tide swell'd up unto its height, That makes a still-stand, running neither way,

Fain would I go to meet the archbishop, But many thousand reasons hold me back:—

I will resolve for Scotland; there am I, Till time and vantage crave my company.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—London.—A Room in the Boar's Head Tavern, in Eastcheap.

Enter two DRAWERS.

1 Draw. What the devil hast thou brought there? apple-Johns? thou know'st, Sir John cannot endure an apple-John.\*

2 Draw. Mass, thou sayest true: The prince once set a dish of apple-Johns before him, and told him, there were five more Sir Johns; and, putting off his hat, said, *I will now take my leave of these six dry, round, old, wither'd knights.* It angered him to the heart; but he hath forgot that.

1 Draw. Why then, cover, and set them down: And see if thou canst find out Sneak's noise;† mistress Tear-sheet would fain hear some music. Despatch!—The room where they supped is now hot: they'll come in straight.

2 Draw. Sirrah, here will be the prince and master Poins anon; and they will put on two of our jerkins and aprons; and Sir John must not know of it: Bardolph hath brought word.

1 Draw. By the mass, here will be old utis;‡

2 Draw. I'll see if I can find out Sneak.

[Exit.]

Enter HOSTESS and DOLL TEAR-SHEET.

Host. I'faith, sweet heart, methinks now you are in an excellent good temperality; your pulse beats as extraordinarily as heart would desire; and your colour, I warrant you, is as red as any rose: But, I'faith, you have drunk too much canaries; and that's a marvellous searching wine, and it perfumes the blood ere one can say,—What's this? How do you now?

Dol. Better than I was. Hem!

Host. Why, that's well said; a good heart's worth gold. Look, here comes Sir John.

Enter FALSTAFF, singing.

Fal. When Arthur first in Court—Empty the jordan.—And was a worthy king: [Exit DRAWER.] How now, mistress Doll?

Host. Sick of a calm: yea, good sooth.

Fal. So is all her sect; an they be once in a calm, they are sick.

Dol. You muddy rascal, is that all the comfort you give me?

Fal. You make fat rascals, mistress Doll.

Dol. I make them! gluttony and diseases make them; I make them not.

Fal. If the cook help to make the gluttony, you help to make the diseases, Doll: we catch of you, Doll, we catch of you; grant that, my poor virtue, grant that.

Dol. Aye, marry; our chains, and our jewels.

Fal. Your brooches, pearls, and onches:—for to serve bravely, is to come halting off, you know: To come off the breach with his pike bent bravely, and to surgery bravely; to venture upon the charged chambers § bravely:—

Dol. Hang yourself, you muddy conger, hang yourself!

Host. By my troth, this is the old fashion; you two never meet, but you fall to some discord: you are both, in good troth, as rheumatic as two dry toasts; you cannot one bear with another's confinities. What the good-year I one must bear, and that must be you: [To DOLL.] you are the weaker vessel, as they say, the emptier vessel.

Dol. Can a weak empty vessel bear such a huge full hog'shead? there's a whole merchant's venture of Bourdeaux stuff in him; you have not seen a hulk better stuffed in the hold.—Come, I'll be friends with thee, Jack: thou art going to the wars; and whether I shall ever see thee again, or no, there is nobody cares.

Re-enter DRAWER.

Draw. Sir, ancient\* Pistol's below, and would speak with you.

Dol. Hang him, swaggering rascal! let him not come hither: it is the foul mouth'dst rogue in England.

Host. If he swagger, let him not come here: no, by my faith; I must live amongst my neighbours; I'll no swaggers: I am in good name and fame with the very best:—Shut the door:—there comes no swaggers here: I have not lived all this while, to have swaggering now:—shut the door, I pray you.

Fal. Dost thou hear, hostess?—

Host. Pray you, pacify yourself, Sir John; there comes no swaggers here.

Fal. Dost thou hear? it is mine ancient.

Host. Tilly-fally, Sir John, never tell me; your ancient swaggers come not in my doors. I was before master Tisick, the deputy, the other day; and, as he said to me,—it was no longer ago than Wednesday last,—Neighbour Quickly, says he;—master Dumb, our minister, was by them;—Neighbour Quickly, says he; receive those that are civil; for, saith he, you are in an ill name;—now he said so, I can tell whereupon; for, says he, you are an honest woman, and well thought on; therefore take heed what guests you receive: Receive, says he, no swaggering companions.—There comes none here;—you would bless you to hear what he said;—no, I'll no swaggers.

Fal. He's no swaggerer, hostess; a tame cheater,† he; you may stroke him as gently as a puppy greyhound: he will not swagger with a Barbary hen, if her feathers turn back in any show of resistance.—Call him up, drawer.

Host. Cheater, call you him? I will bar no honest man my house, nor no cheater: But I do not love swaggering; by my troth, I am the worse, when one says—swagger: feel, masters, how I shake; look you, I warrant you.

Dol. So you do, hostess.

Host. Do I? yea, in very truth, do I, an 'twere an aspen leaf: I cannot abide swaggers.

Enter PISTOL, BARDOLPH, and PAGE.

Pist. 'Save you, Sir John!

Fal. Welcome, ancient Pistol. Here, Pistol, I charge you with a cup of sack: do you discharge upon mine hostess.

Pist. I will discharge upon her, Sir John, with two bullets.

Fal. She is pistol proof, Sir; you shall hardly offend her.

Host. Come, I'll drink no proofs, nor no bullets: I'll drink no more than will do me good, for no man's pleasure, I.

Pist. Then to you, mistress Dorothy; I will charge you.

Dol. Charge me? I scorn you, scurvy companion. What! you poor, base, rascally, cheating, lacklinc nate! Away you mouldy rogue, away! I am meat for your master.

Pist. I know you, mistress Dorothy.

Dol. Away, you cut-purse rascal! you filthy hung, away! by this wine, I'll thrust my knife in your mouldy chaps, an you play the saucy cuttle with me. Away, you bottle-ale rascal! you basket-hilt stale juggler, you!—Since when, I pray you, Sir?—What, with two points † on your shoulder I much I §

Pist. I will murder your ruff for this.

Fal. No more, Pistol; I would not have you go off here: discharge yourself of your company, Pistol.

Host. No, good captain Pistol; not here, sweet captain.

Dol. Captain! thou abominable damned cheater, art thou not ashamed to be called—

\* An apple that will keep two years.

† Sneak was a street minstrel: a noise of musicians anciently signified a concert. ‡ Merry doings.

§ Small pieces of ordnance.

\* Ensign.

† Gamster. § Lacer, marks of his commission.

‡ An expression of disdain.

captain? If captains were of my mind, they would truncheon you out, for taking their names upon you before you have earned them. You a captain, you slave! for what? for tearing a poor whore's ruff in a bawdy-house?—He a captain! Hang him, rogue! He lives upon mouldy stewed prunes, and dired cakes. A captain! these villains will make the word captain as odious as the word occupy; which was an excellent good word before it was ill-sorted; therefore captains had need look to it.

*Bard.* Pray thee, go down, good ancient.

*Fal.* Hark thee hither, mistress Doll.

*Pist.* Not I: tell thee what, corporal Bardolph;—I could tear her!—I'll be revenged on her.

*Page.* Pray thee, go down.

*Pist.* I'll see her damned first;—to Pluto's damned lake, to the infernal deep, with Erebus and tortures vile also. Hold hook and line, say I. Down, down, dogs! down fators! Have we not hired here!

*Host.* Good captain Peesel, be quiet; it is very late, i'faith: I beseech you now, aggravate your choler.

*Pist.* These be good humours, indeed! Shall pack horses,

And hollow pamper'd jades of Asia,  
Which cannot go but thirty miles a day,  
Compare with Casars and with Cannibals,†  
And Troyan Greeks? nay, rather damn them with

King Cerberus; and let the welkin roar.

Shall we fall foul for toys?

*Host.* By my troth, captain, these are very bitter words.

*Bard.* Be gone, good ancient: this will grow to a brawl anon.

*Pist.* Die men, like dogs; give crowns like pins. Have we not hired here?

*Host.* O' my word, captain, there's none such here. What the good-yea! do you think I would deny her! for God's sake, be quiet.

*Pist.* Then feed, and be fat, my fair Calipolis: ‡

Come, give's some sack.

*Si fortuna me tormenta, sperato me contenta.*—

Fear we broadsides? no, let the fiend give fire: Give me some sack;—and, sweetheart, he thou there.

*[Laying down his sword.]*  
Come we to full points here; and are *et cetera's* nothing?

*Fal.* Pistol, I would be quiet.

*Pist.* Sweet knight, I kiss thy neif: § What! we have seen the seven stars.

*Doll.* Thrust him down stairs; I cannot endure such a fustian rascal.

*Pist.* Thrust him down stairs! know we not Galloway nags? ||

*Fal.* Quot ¶ him down, Bardolph, like a shove-groat shilling: nay, if he do nothing but speak nothing, he shall be nothing here.

*Bard.* Come, get you down stairs.

*Pist.* Whaf! shall we have incision? shall we imbue?—*[Snatching up his sword.]* Then death rock me asleep, abridge my doleful days \*\*

Why then, let grievous, ghastly gaping wounds  
Untwine the sisters three! Come, Atropos, I say!

*Host.* Here's goodly stuff toward!

*Fal.* Give me my rapier, boy.

*Doll.* I pray thee, Jack, I pray thee, do not draw.

*Fal.* Get you down stairs.

*[Drawing and driving PISTOL out.]*

*Host.* Here's a goodly tumult! I'll furswear

keeping house, afore I'll be in these tiritris and fighits. So; murder, I warrant now.—Alas, alas! put up your naked weapons, put up your naked weapons.

*[Exeunt PISTOL and BARDOLPH.]*

*Doll.* I pray thee, Jack, be quiet; the rascal is gone. Ah! your whoreson little valiant villain, you.

*Host.* Are you not hurt i' the groin? methought, he made a shrewd thrust at your belly.

*Re-enter BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* Have you turned him out of doors?

*Bard.* Yes, Sir. The rascal's drunk: you have hurt him, Sir, in the shoulder.

*Fal.* A rascal! to brave me!

*Doll.* Ah! you sweet little rogue, you! Alas, poor ape, how thou sweat'st! Come, let me wipe thy face;—come on, you whoreson chops:—Ah, rogue! i'faith, I love thee. Thou art as valorous as Hector of Troy, worth five of Agamemnon, and ten times better than the nine worthies. Ah villain!

*Fal.* A rascally slave! I will toss the rogue in a blanket.

*Doll.* Do, if thou darest for thy heart: if thou dost, I'll canvas thee between a pair of sheets.

*Enter Music.*

*Page.* The music is come, Sir.

*Fal.* Let them play:—Play, Sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! the rogue fled from me like quicksilver.

*Doll.* I'faith, and thou follow'dst him like a church. Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, when wilt thou leave fighting o'days, and fouting o' nights, and begin to patch up thine old body for heaven?

*Enter behind PRINCE HENRY and POINS, disguised like Drapers.*

*Fal.* Peace, good Doll! do not speak like a death's head: do not bid me remember mine end.

*Doll.* Sirrah, what humour is the prince of?

*Fal.* A good shallow young fellow: he would have made a good pautler, he would have clipped bread well.

*Doll.* They say Poins has a good wit.

*Fal.* He a good wit? hang him, baboon! his wit is as thick as Tewksbury mustard; there is no more conceit in him, than is in a mallet.

*Doll.* Why does the prince love him so then!

*Fal.* Because their legs are both of a bigness: and he plays at quoits well; and eats conger and fennel; and drinks off candles' ends for flap-dragns; and rides the wild mare with the boys; and jumps upon joint stools; and swears with a good grace; and wears his boot very smooth, like unto the sign of the leg; and breeds no bate with telling of discreet stories, and such other gambol faculties he hath, that show a weak mind and an able body, for the which the prince admits him: for the prince himself is such another: the weight of a hair will turn the scales between their avowdpois.

*P. Hen.* Would not this nave of a wheel have his ears cut off?

*Poins.* Let's beat him before his whore.

*P. Hen.* Look, if the withered elder hath not his poll clawed like a parrot.

*Poins.* Is it not strange, that desire should se many years outlive performance?

*Fal.* Kiss me, Doll.

*P. Hen.* Saturn and Venus this year in conjunction! what says the almanack to that?

*Poins.* And, look, whether the fiery Trigon, \* his man, be not lipping to his master's old tables; his note-book, his counsel-keeper.

*Fal.* Thou dost give me flattering busses.

\* A quotation from a play of G. Peele's.

† Blunder for Hannibals.

‡ Parody of a line in the *Battle of Alcasar*, an old play.

§ *Pist.* Common hackneyes.

¶ *Thou.*

\*\* Part of an ancient song.

\* An astronomical term.

*Dol.* Nay, truly; I kiss thee with a most constant heart.

*Fal.* I am old, I am old.

*Dol.* I love thee better than I love e'er a scurvy young boy of them all.

*Fal.* What stuff wilt have a kirtle o' if I shall receive money on Thursday: thou shalt have a cap to-morrow. A merry song, come; it grows late, we'll to bed. Thou'lt forget me, when I am gone.

*Dol.* By my troth, thou'lt set me a weeping, an thou sayest so: prove that ever I dress myself handsome till thy return.—Well, hearken the end.

*Fal.* Some sack, Francis.

*P. Hen. Poins.* Anon, anon, Sir.

*[Advancing.] Fal.* Ha! a bastard son of the king's!—And art not thou Poins his brother?

*P. Hen.* Why, thou globe of sinful continents, what a life dost thou lead?

*Fal.* A better than thou: I am a gentleman, thou art a drawer.

*P. Hen.* Very true, Sir; and I come to draw you out by the ears.

*Host.* O the Lord preserve thy good grace! by my troth, welcome to London.—Now the Lord bless that sweet face of thine! O Jesu, are you come from Wales?

*Fal.* Thou whoreson mad compound of majesty,—by this light flesh and corrupt blood, thou art welcome.

*[Leaning his hand upon DOLL.]*

*Dol.* How! you fat fool, I scorn you.

*Poins.* My lord, he will drive you out of your revenge, and turn all to a merriment, if you take not the heat.

*P. Hen.* You whoreson candle-mine, you; how vilely did you speak of me even now, before this honest, virtuous, civil gentleman?

*Host.* Blessing o' your good heart! and so she is, by my troth.

*Fal.* Didst thou hear me?

*P. Hen.* Yes; and you knew me, as you did when you ran away by Gad's-hill: you knew, I was at you back, and spoke it on purpose, to try my patience.

*Fal.* No, no, no; not so; I did not think thou wast within hearing.

*P. Hen.* I shall drive you then to confess the wilful abuse; and then I know how to handle you.

*Fal.* No abuse, Hal, on mine honour; no abuse.

*P. Hen.* Not! to dispraise me; and call me—pantler, and bread-chipper; and I know not what!

*Fal.* No abuse, Hal.

*Poins.* No abuse!

*Fal.* No abuse, Ned, in the world; honest Ned, none. I dispraised him before the wicked, that the wicked might not fall in love with him;—in which doing, I have done the part of a careful friend and a true subject, and thy father is to give me thanks for it. No abuse, Hal; none, Ned, none;—no, boys, none.

*P. Hen.* See now, whether pure fear, and entire cowardice, doth not make thee wrong this virtuous gentleman to close with us? Is she of the wicked? Is thine hostess here of the wicked? Or is the boy of the wicked? Or honest Bardolph, whose zeal burns in his nose, of the wicked?

*Poins.* Answer, thou dead elm, answer.

*Fal.* The fiend hath pricked down Bardolph irrecoverable: and his face is Lucifer's privy kitchen, where he doth nothing but roast malt-worms. For the boy,—there is a good angel about him; but the devil outbids him too.

*P. Hen.* For the women,—

*Fal.* For one of them,—she is in hell already, and burns poor soul! For the other,—I owe

her money; and whether she be damned for that, I know not.

*Host.* No, I warrant you.

*Fal.* No, I think thou art not; I think thou art quit for that: Marry, there is another indictment upon thee, for suffering flesh to be eaten in thy house, contrary to the law; for the which I think, thou wilt howl.

*Host.* All victuallers do so: What's a joint of mutton or two in a whole Lent?

*P. Hen.* You, gentlewoman,—

*Dol.* What says your grace?

*Fal.* His grace says that which his flesh rebels against.

*Host.* Who knocks so loud at door? look to the door there, Francis.

*Enter PETO.*

*P. Hen.* Peto, how now? what news?

*Peto.* The king your father is at Westminster;

And there are twenty weak and wearied posts, Come from the north: and, as I came along, I met and overtook a dozen captains, Bare-headed, sweating, knocking at the taverns,

And asking every one for Sir John Falstaff.

*P. Hen.* By heaven, Poins, I feel me much to blame,

So idly to profane the precious time;

When tempest of commotion, like the south

Borne with black vapour, doth begin to melt,

And drop upon our bare unarm'd heads.

Give me my sword and cloak:—Falstaff, good night.

*[Exeunt Prince HENRY, POINS, PETO, and BARDOLPH.]*

*Fal.* Now comes in the sweetest morsel of the night, and we must hence, and leave it unpicked. *[Knocking heard.]* More knocking at the door?

*Re-enter BARDOLPH.*

How now? what's the matter?

*Bard.* You must away to court, Sir, presently; a dozen captains stay at door for you.

*Fal.* Pay the musicians, sirrah. *[To the PAGE.]*—Farewell, hostess;—farewell, Doll.—You see, my good wenches, how men of merit are sought after: the undercerver may sleep, when the man of action is called on. Farewell, good wenches: If I be not sent away post, I will see you again ere I go.

*Dol.* I cannot speak:—If my heart be not ready to burst:—Well, sweet Jack, have a care of thyself.

*Fal.* Farewell, farewell.

*[Exeunt FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.]*

*Host.* Well, fare thee well: I have known thee these twenty-nine years, come peascod-time, but an honest, and truer-hearted man,—Well, fare thee well.

*Bard.* *[Within.]* Mistress Tear-sheet,—

*Host.* What's the matter?

*Bard.* *[Within.]* Bid Mistress Tear-sheet come to my master.

*Host.* O run, Doll, run; run, good Doll.

*[Exeunt.]*

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter King HENRY in his Night-gown, with a PAGE.*

*K. Hen.* Go, call the earls of Surrey and of Warwick;

But, ere they come, bid them o'er-read these letters,

And well consider of them: Make good speed—*[Exit PAGE.]*

How many thousand of my poorest subjects  
Are at this hour asleep!—Sleep, gentle sleep,  
Nature's soft nurse, how have I frightened thee,  
That thou no more wilt weigh my eyelids down,  
And steep my senses in forgetfulness?  
Why rather, sleep, liest thou in smoky cribs,  
Upon uneasy pallets stretching thee,  
And hush'd with buzzing night-flies to thy  
slumber?  
Than in the perfum'd chambers of the great,  
Under the canopies of costly state,  
And lull'd with sounds of sweetest melody?  
O thou dull god, why liest thou with the vile,  
In loathsome beds; and leav'st the kingly  
couch,  
A watch-case, or a common 'larum bell?  
Wilt thou upon the high and giddy mast  
Seal up the ship-boy's eyes, and rock his  
brains  
In cradle of the rude imperious surge,  
And in the visitation of the winds,  
Who take the ruffian billows by the top,  
Curling them monstrous heads, and hanging  
them  
With dreading clamours in the slippery clouds,  
That, with the hurly, \* death itself awakes?  
Canst thou, O partial sleep! give thy repose  
To the wet sea-boy in an hour so rude;  
And, in the calmest and most stillest night,  
With all appliances and means to boot,  
Deny it to a king? Then happily low† lie down!  
Lucky lies the head that wears a crown.

Enter WARWICK AND SURREY.

War. Many good morrows to your majesty!

K. Hen. Is it good morrow, lords?

War. 'Tis one o'clock, and past.

K. Hen. Why then, good morrow to you all,

my lords,

Have you read o'er the letters that I sent you?

War. We have, my liege.

K. Hen. Then you perceive, the body of our

kingdom

How foul it is, what rank diseases grow,

And with what danger, near the heart of it.

War. It is but as a body, yet, distemper'd;

Which to his former strength may be restor'd,

With good advice, and little medicine:—

My lord Northumberland will soon be cool'd.

K. Hen. O heaven! that one might read the

book of fate;

And see the revolution of the times

Make mountains level, and the continent

(Wearied of solid firmness,) melt itself

Into the sea! and, other times, to see

The beaughty girdle of the ocean

Too wide for Neptune's hips: how chances

mock,

And changes fill the cup of alteration

With divers liquors! O if this were seen,

The happiest youth, viewing his progress

through,

What perils past, what crosses to ensue,—

Would shut the book, and sit him down and

'Tis not ten years gone, [die.

Since Richard and Northumberland, great

friends,

Did feast together, and in two years after,

Were they at wars: It is but eight years, since

This Percy was the man nearest my soul;

Who like a brother toil'd in my affairs,

And laid his love and life under my foot;

Yea, for my sake, even to the eyes of Richard,

Gave him defiance. But which of you was by,

(You, cousin Nevil, as I may remember.)

[To WARWICK.

When Richard, with his eye brimfull of tears,

Then check'd and rated by Northumberland,

Did speak these words, now prov'd a prophecy?

Northumberland, thou ladder, by the which

My cousin Bolingbroke ascends my throne;—

Though then, heaven knows, I had no such

intent;

But that necessity so bow'd the state,  
That I and greatness were compell'd to kiss:—  
*The time shall come*, thus did he follow it,  
*The time will come*, that foul sin, gathering  
head,

*Shall break into corruption*:—so went on,  
Foretelling this same time's condition,  
And the division of our unity.

War. There is a history in all men's lives,  
Figuring the nature of the times deceased:  
The which observ'd, a man may prophesy,  
With a near aim, of the main chance of things  
As yet not come to life; which in their seeds,  
And weak beginnings, lie intresured.  
Such things become the hatch and brood of  
time;

And by the necessary form of this,  
King Richard might create a perfect guess,  
That great Northumberland, then false to him,  
Would, of that seed, grow to a greater false-  
ness;

Which should not find a ground to root upon,  
Unless on you.

K. Hen. Are these things then necessities?  
Then let us meet them like necessities;  
And that same word even now cries out on us:  
They say, the bishop and Northumberland  
Are fifty thousand strong.

War. It cannot be, my lord;  
Rumour doth double, like the voice and echo,  
The numbers of the fear'd:—Please it your  
grace,

To go to bed; upon my life, my lord,  
The powers that you already have sent forth,  
Shall bring this prize in very easily.

To comfort you the more, I have receiv'd  
A certain instance, that Glendower is dead.\*  
Your majesty hath been this fortnight ill;  
And these unseason'd hours, perforce, must add  
Unto your sickness.

K. Hen. I will take your counsel:  
And, were these inward wars once out of hand,  
We would, dear lords, unto the Holy Land.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Court before Justice SHALLOW's  
House in Gloucestershire.

Enter SHALLOW AND SILENCE, meeting,  
MOULDY, SHADOW, WART, FEEBLE, BULL-  
CALF, and Servants, behind.

Shal. Come on, come on, come on; give me  
your hand, Sir, give me your hand, Sir: an  
early stirrer, by the rood.† And how doth my  
good cousin Silence?

Sil. Good morrow, good cousin Shallow.

Shal. And how doth my cousin, your bedfel-  
low? and your fairest daughter, and mine, my  
god-daughter Ellen?

Sil. Alas, a black ouzel, cousin Shallow.

Shal. By yea and nay, Sir, I dare say my  
cousin William is become a good scholar: He  
is at Oxford still, is he not?

Sil. Indeed, Sir, to my cost.

Shal. He must then to the inns of court  
shortly: I was once of Clement's-inn; where I  
think, they will talk of mad Shallow yet.

Sil. You were called—lusty Shallow, then,  
cousin.

Shal. By the mass, I was called any thing;  
and I would have done any thing, indeed, and  
roundly too. There was I, and little John Doit  
of Staffordshire, and black George Bare, and  
Francis Pickbone, and Will Squeale, a Cotswold  
man,—you had not four such swinge-bucklers‡  
in all the inns of court again: and, I may say  
to you, we knew where the bona-robas§ were;  
and had the best of them all at commandment.  
Then was Jack Falstaff, now Sir John, a boy  
and page to Thomas Mowbray duke of Nor-  
folk.

\* Glendower surrized Henry IV.

† Cross.

‡ Rakers, or rioters.

§ Ladies of pleasure.

• Noise.

† Those in lowly situations.

*Sil.* This Sir John, cousin, that comes hither anon about soldiers?

*Shal.* The same Sir John, the very same. I saw him break Shogan's head at the court gate, when he was a crack,\* not thus high; and the very same day did I fight with one Sampson Stockish, a frutereer, behind Gray's-inn. O the mad days that I have spent! and to see how many of mine old acquaintance are dead!

*Sil.* We shall all follow, cousin.

*Shal.* Certain, 'tis certain; very sure, very sure: death, as the Psalmist saith, is certain to all; all shall die. How a good yoke of bullocks at Stamford fair?

*Sil.* Truly, cousin, I was not there.

*Shal.* Death is certain.—Is old Double of your town living yet?

*Sil.* Dead, Sir.

*Shal.* Dead!—See, see!—he drew a good bow;—And dead;—he shot a line shoot;—John of Gaunt loved him well, and betted much money on his head. Dead!—he would have clapped i' the clout at twelve score;† and carried you a forehand shaft a fourteen and fourteen and a half, that 'a would have done a man's heart good to see.—How a score of ewes now?

*Sil.* Thereafter as they be: a score of good ewes may be worth ten pounds.

*Shal.* And is old Double dead!

*Enter BARDOLPH, and one with him.*

*Sil.* Here come two of Sir John Falstaff's men, as I think.

*Bard.* Good morrow, honest gentlemen: I beseech you, which is justice Shallow?

*Shal.* Fain Robert Shallow, Sir; a poor esquire of this county, and one of the king's justices of the peace: What is your good pleasure with me?

*Bard.* My captain, Sir, commends him to you: my captain, Sir John Falstaff: a tall gentleman, by heaven, and a most gallant leader.

*Shal.* He greets me well, Sir; I knew him a good backwards man: How doth the good knight? may I ask how my lady his wife doth?

*Bard.* Sir, pardon; a soldier is better accommodated than with a wife.

*Shal.* It is well said, in faith, Sir; and it is well said indeed too. Better accommodated!—it is good; yea, indeed, it is: good phrases are surely, and ever were, very commendable. Accommodated!—it comes from *accommodo*: very good: a good phrase.

*Bard.* Pardon me, Sir: I have heard the word. Phrase, call you it? By this good day, I know not the phrase: but I will maintain the word with my sword, to be a soldier-like word, and a word of exceeding good command. Accommodated; That is, when a man is, as they say, accommodated: or, when a man is,—being,—thereby,—he may be thought to be accommodated; which is an excellent thing.

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Shal.* It is very just:—Look, here comes good Sir John.—Give me your hand, give me your worship's good hand: By my troth, you look well, and bear your years very well: welcome, good Sir John.

*Fal.* I am glad to see you well, good master Robert Shallow.—Master Sure-card, as I think.

*Shal.* No, Sir John; it is my cousin Silence, in commission with me.

*Fal.* Good master Silence, it well befits you should be of the peace.

*Sil.* Your good worship is welcome.

*Fal.* I! this is hot weather.—Gentlemen, have you provided me here half a dozen sufficient men?

*Shal.* Marry, have we, Sir. Will you sit?

*Fal.* Let me see them, I beseech you.

*Shal.* Where's the roll? where's the roll? where's the roll?—Let me see, let me see. So, so, so, so: Yea, marry, Sir.—Ralph Mouldy:—let them appear as I call; let them do so, let them do so.—Let me see; Where is Mouldy?

*Moul.* Here, an't please you.

*Shal.* What think you, Sir John? a good limbed fellow: young, strong, and of good friends.

*Fal.* Is thy name Mouldy?

*Moul.* Yea, an't please you.

*Fal.* 'Tis the more time thou wert used.

*Shal.* Ha, ha, ha! most excellent, i' faith! things that are mouldy lack use: Very singular good!—In faith, well said, Sir John: very well said.

*Fal.* Prick him.

*Moul.* I was pricked well enough before, an you could have let me alone: my old dame will be undone now, for one to do her husband, and her drudgery; you need not to have pricked me; there are other men utter to go out than I.

*Fal.* Go to; peace, Mouldy, you shall go. Mouldy, it is time you were spent.

*Moul.* Spent!

*Shal.* Peace, fellow, peace; stand aside; Know you where you are?—For the other, Sir John:—let me see;—Simon Shadow!

*Fal.* Ay marry, let me have him to sit under: he's like to be a cold soldier.

*Shal.* Where's Shadow?

*Shad.* Here Sir.

*Fal.* Shadow, whose son art thou?

*Shad.* My mother's son, Sir.

*Fal.* Thy mother's son! like enough; and thy father's shadow: so the son of the female is the shadow of the male: It is often so, indeed; but not much of the father's substance.

*Shal.* Do you like him, Sir John?

*Fal.* Shadow will serve for summer,—prick him;—for we have a number of shadows to fill up the muster-book.

*Shal.* Thomas Wart!

*Fal.* Where's he?

*Wart.* Here, Sir.

*Fal.* Is thy name Wart?

*Wart.* Yea, Sir.

*Fal.* Thou art a very ragged wart.

*Shal.* Shall I prick him, Sir John?

*Fal.* It were superfluous; for his apparel is built upon his back, and the whole frame stands upon pins: prick him no more.

*Shal.* Ha, ha, ha!—you can do it, Sir; you can do it: I commend you well.—Francis Feeble!

*Fal.* Here, Sir.

*Fal.* What trade art thou, Feeble?

*Fee.* A woman's tailor, Sir.

*Shal.* Shall I prick him, Sir?

*Fal.* You may; but if he had been a man's tailor, he would have pricked you.—Wilt thou make as many holes in an enemy's battle, as thou hast done in a woman's petticoat?

*Fee.* I will do my good will, Sir; you can have no more.

*Fal.* Well said, good woman's tailor! well said, courageous Feeble! Thou wilt be as valiant as the watchful dove, or most magnanimous mouse.—Prick the woman's tailor well master Shallow; deep, master Shallow.

*Fee.* I would, Wart might have gone, Sir.

*Fal.* I would, thou wert a man's tailor; that thou might'st mend him, and make him fit to go. I cannot put him to a private soldier, that is the leader of so many thousands: Let that suffice, most forcible Feeble.

*Fee.* It shall suffice, Sir.

*Fal.* I am bound to thee, reverend Feeble.—Who is next?

*Shal.* Peter Bull-calf of the green!

*Fal.* Yea, marry, let us see Bull-calf.

*Bull.* Here, Sir.

\* Boy.

† Hit the white mark at twelve score yards.

*Fal.* 'Fore God, a likely fellow!—Come, prick me Bull-calf till he roar again.

*Bull.* O lord I good my lord captain,—  
*Fal.* What, dost thou roar before thou art pricked?

*Bull.* O lord, Sir I I am a diseased man.

*Fal.* What disease hast thou?

*Bull.* A whoreson cold, Sir; a cough, Sir; which I caught with ringing in the king's affairs, upon his coronation day, Sir.

*Fal.* Come, thou shalt go to the wars in a gown; we will have away thy cold; and I will take such order, that thy friends shall ring for thee.—Is here all?

*Shal.* Here is two more called than your number; you must have but four here, Sir;—and so, I pray you, go in with me to dinner.

*Fal.* Come, I will go drink with you, but I cannot tarry dinner. I am glad to see you, in good troth, master Shallow.

*Shal.* O Sir John, do you remember since we lay all night in the windmill in St. George's fields.

*Fal.* No more of that, good master Shallow, no more of that.

*Shal.* Ha, it was a merry night. And is Jane Night-work alive?

*Fal.* She lives, master Shallow.

*Shal.* She never could away with me.

*Fal.* Never, never: she would always say, she could not abide master Shallow.

*Shal.* By the mass, I could anger her to the heart. She was then a bona-roba. Doth she hold her own well?

*Fal.* Old, old, master Shallow.

*Shal.* Nay, she must be old; she cannot choose but be old: certain, she's old; and had Robin Night-work by old Night-work, before I came to Clement's-inn.

*Fal.* That's fifty-five year ago.

*Shal.* Ha, cousin Silence, that thou hadst seen that that this knight and I have seen!—Ha, Sir John, said I well?

*Fal.* We have heard the chimes at midnight, master Shallow.

*Shal.* That we have, that we have, that we have; in faith, Sir John, we have; our watch-word was, *Hem, boys!*—Come, let's to dinner; come, let's to dinner:—O the days that we have seen!—Come, come.

[*Exeunt FALSTAFF, SHALLOW, and SILENCE.*]

*Bard.* Good master corporate Bardolph, stand my friend; and here is four Harry ten shillings in French crowns for you. In very truth, Sir, I had as lief be hanged, Sir, as go: and yet, for mine own part, Sir, I do not care; but, rather, because I am unwilling, and, for mine own part, have a desire to stay with my friends; else, Sir, I did not care, for mine own part, so much.

*Bard.* Go to; stand aside.

*Moul.* And good master corporal captain, for my old dame's sake, stand my friend: she has nobody to do any thing about her, when I am gone: and she is old, and cannot help herself: you shall have forty, Sir.

*Bard.* Go to; stand aside.

*Fec.* By my troth I care not;—a man can die but once;—we owe God a death;—I'll ne'er bear a base mind;—an't be my destiny, so; an't be not, so: No man's too good to serve his prince; and, let it go which way it will, be that dies this year, is quit for the next.

*Bard.* Well said; thou'rt a good fellow.

*Fec.* 'Faith, I'll bear no base mind.

*Re-enter FALSTAFF, and Justices.*

*Fal.* Come, Sir, which men shall I have?

*Shal.* Four, of which you please.

*Bard.* Sir, a word with you:—I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bull-calf.

*Fal.* Go to; well.

*Shal.* Come, Sir John, which four will you have.

*Fal.* Do you choose for me.

*Shal.* Marry then,—Mouldy, Bull-calf, Feeble, and Shadow.

*Fal.* Mouldy, and Bull-calf;—For you, Mouldy, stay at home still; you are past service:—and, for your part, Bull-calf,—grow till you come unto it; I will none of you.

*Shal.* Sir John, Sir John, do not yourself wrong: they are your likeliest men, and I would have you served with the best.

*Fal.* Will you tell me, master Shallow, how to choose a man? Care I for the limb, the thewes, the stature, bulk, and big assemblance of a man? Give me the spirit, master Shallow.—Here's Wart;—you see what ragged appearance it is: he shall charge you, and discharge you, with the motion of a pewterer's hammer; come off, and on, swifter than he that gibbets on the brewer's bucket. And this same half-fac'd fellow, Shadow,—give me this man; he presents no mark to the enemy; the foeman may with as great aim level at the edge of a penknife: And, for a retreat,—how swiftly will this Feeble, the woman's tailor, run off? Oh! give me the spare men, and spare me the great ones.—Put me a caliver into Wart's hand, Bardolph.

*Bard.* Hold, Wart, traverse, thus, thus, thus.

*Fal.* Come, manage me your caliver. So:—very well:—go to:—very good:—exceeding good.—O give me always a little, lean, old chapped, bald shot.—Well said, 'Faith Wart; thou'rt a good scab: hold, there's a tester for thee.

*Shal.* He is not his craft's-master, he doth not do it right. I remember at Mile-end green, (when I lay at Clement's inn,—I was then Sir Daconet in Aithur's show,) there was a little quiver fellow, and 'a would manage you his piece thus: and 'a would about, and about, and come you in, and come you in: *rah, tah, tah*, would 'a say; *bounce*, would 'a say, and away again would 'a go, and again would 'a come:—I shall never see such a fellow.

*Fal.* These fellows will do well, master Shallow.—God keep you, master Silence; I will not use many words with you:—Fare you well, gentlemen both: I thank you: I must a dozen mile to night.—Bardolph, give the soldiers coats.

*Shal.* Sir John, heaven bless you, and prosper your affairs, and send us peace! As you return, visit my house; let our old acquaintance be renewed: peradventure I will with you to the court.

*Fal.* I would you would, master Shallow.

*Shal.* Go to: I have spoke at a word. Fare you well. [*Exeunt SHALLOW and SILENCE.*]

*Fal.* Fare you well, gentle gentlemen. On, Bardolph; lead the men away. [*Exeunt BARDOLPH, RECRUITS, &c.*] As I return, I will fetch off these justices: I do see the bottom of justice Shallow. Lord, lord, how subject we old men are to this vice of lying!—This same starved justice hath done nothing but prate to me of the wildness of his youth, and the feats he hath done about Turnbull-street; \* and every third word a lie, drier paid to the hearer than the Turk's tribute. I do remember him at Clement's-inn, like a man made after supper of a cheese-paring: when he was naked, he was, for all the world like a forked radish, with a head fantastically carved upon it with a knife: he was so forlorn, that his dimensions to any thick sight were invisible: he was the very Genius of famine; yet lecherous as a monkey, and the whores called him mandrake; he came ever in the rear-ward of the fashion: and sung those tunes to the over-scuted huswives that he heard the carmen whistle, and aware—they were his fancies, or his good-nights.† And now is this Vice's dagger‡ become a squire; and talks as familiarly of John of Gaunt, as if he had

\* Clerkenwell.

† Titles of little poems.

‡ A wooden dagger like that used by the modern Harlequin.



been sworn brother to him; and I'll be sworn he never saw him but once in the Tilt-yard; and then he burst his head, for crowding among the marshal's men. I saw it; and told John of Gaunt, he beat his own name: for you might have truss'd him, and all his apparel, into an eel-skin; the case of a treble haut-boy was a mansion for him, a court; and now has he land and beeves. Well; I will be acquainted with him, if I return: and it shall go hard, but I will make him a philosopher's two stones to me: If the young dace be a bait for the old pike, I see no reason, in the law of nature, but I may snap at him. Let time shape, and there an end. *[Exit.]*

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—A Forest in Yorkshire.

*Enter the ARCHBISHOP OF YORK, MOWBRAY, HASTINGS, and others.*

*Arch.* What is this forest call'd?

*Hast.* 'Tis Gaultree forest, au't shall please your grace.

*Arch.* Here stand, my lords; and send discoverers forth,  
To know the numbers of our enemies.

*Hast.* We have sent forth already.

*Arch.* 'Tis well done.

My friends, and brethren in these great affairs,  
I must acquaint you that I have receiv'd  
New-dated letters from Northumberland;  
Their cold intent, tenor, and substance thus:—  
Here doth he wish his person, with such powers  
As might hold sojourn with his quality,  
The which he could not levy, whereupon  
He is retir'd, to ripe his growing fortunes,  
To Scotland; and concludes in hearty prayers,  
That your attempts may overlie the hazard,  
And fearful meeting of their opposite.

*Mowb.* Thus do the hopes we have in him  
touch ground,  
And dash themselves to pieces.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Hast.* Now, what news?

*Mess.* West of this forest, scarcely off a mile,  
In goodly form comes on the enemy:  
And, by the ground they hide, I judge their number

Upon, or near, the rate of thirty thousand.

*Mowb.* The just proportion that we gave them  
out.

Let us sway on, and face them in the field.

*Enter WESTMORELAND.*

*Arch.* What well-appointed leader fronts us here?

*Mowb.* I think, it is my lord of Westmoreland.

*West.* Health and fair greeting from our general,

The prince, lord John and duke of Lancaster.

*Arch.* Say on, my lord of Westmoreland, in  
What doth concern your coming? *[peace]*

*West.* Then, my lord,  
Unto your grace do I in chief address  
The substance of my speech. If that rebellion  
Came like itself, in base and abject routs,  
Led on by bloody youth, guarded with rage,  
And countenanc'd by boys and beggary;  
I say, if damn'd commotion so appear'd,  
In his true, native, and most proper shape,  
You, reverend father, and these noble lords,  
Had not been here, to dress the ugly form  
Of base and bloody insurrection *[bishop,]*  
With your fair honours. You, lord arch-  
Whose see is by a civil peace maintain'd;  
Whose beard the silver hand of peace hath  
touch'd;  
Whose learning and good letters peace hath  
touch'd;  
Whose white investments figure innocence,

The dove and very blessed spirit of peace,—  
Wherefore do you so ill translate yourself,  
Out of the speech of peace, that bears such  
grace,

Into the harsh and boist'rous tongue of war?  
Turning your books to graves, your ink to  
blood,

Your pens to lances; and your tongue divine  
To a loud trumpet, and a point of war?

*Arch.* Wherefore do I this?—so the question  
stands.

Briefly to this end:—We are all diseas'd;  
And, with our surfeiting and wanton hours,  
Have brought ourselves into a burning fever,  
And we must bleed for it: of which disease

Our late king, Richard, being infected, died.  
But, my most noble lord of Westmoreland,

I take not on me here as a physician;  
Nor do I, as an enemy to peace,

Troop in the throngs of military men;  
But, rather, show a while like fearful war,

To diet rank minds, sick of happiness;  
And purge the obstructions, which begin to stop

Our very veins of life. Heat me more plainly.  
I have in equal balance justly weigh'd

What wrongs our arms may do, what wrongs we  
suffer,

And find our griefs heavier than our offences.  
We see which way the stream of time doth run,

And are entor'd from our most quiet sphere  
By the rough torrent of occasion:

And have the summary of all our griefs,  
When time shall serve, to show in attitude;

Which, long ere this, we offer'd to the king,  
And might by no suit gain our audience:

When we are wound'd, and would unfold our  
grievs,

We are denied access unto his person  
Even by those men that most have done us

wrong.  
The dangers of the days but newly gone,

(Whose memory is written on the earth  
With yet-appearing blood,) and the examples

Of every minute's instance, (present now,)  
Have put us in these ill-becoming arms;

Not to break peace, or any branch of it;  
But to establish here a peace indeed,

Concurring both in name and quality.  
*West.* When ever yet was your appeal deny'd?

Wherein have you been galled by the king?  
What peer hath been suborn'd to grate on you?

That you should seal this lawless bloody book  
Of forg'd rebellion with a seal divine,

And consecrate commotion's bitter edge?

*Arch.* My brother general, the common  
wealth,

To brother torn an household cruelty,  
I make my quarrel in particular.

*West.* There is no need of any such redress;  
Or, if there were, it not belongs to you.

*Mowb.* Why not to him, in part; and to us  
That feel the bruises of the days before? *[all]*

And suffer the condition of these times  
To lay a heavy and unequal hand

Upon our honours?

*West.* O my good lord Mowbray,  
Construe the times to their necessities,

And you shall say indeed,—it is the time,  
And not the king, that doth you injuries.

Yet for your part, it not appears to me,  
Either from the king, or in the present time,

That you should have an inch of any ground  
To build a grief on: Were you not restor'd

To all the duke of Norfolk's signories,  
Your noble and right-well-remember'd father's

*Mowb.* What thing, in honour, had my father  
lost,

That need to be reviv'd, and breath'd in me?  
The king, that lov'd him, as the state stood

then,  
Was, force perforce, compell'd to banish him:

And then, when Harry Bolingbroke and he,—  
Being mounted, and both roused in their

seats,

**Scene I. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.**

427

Their neighing coursers daring of the spur,  
Then armed staves in charge, their beavers  
down,

Their eyes of fire sparkling through sights of  
steel,

And the loud trumpet blowing them together;  
Then, then, when there was nothing could have  
staid

My father from the breast of Bolingbroke,  
O when the king did throw his warder down,  
His own life hung upon the staff he threw;  
Then threw he down himself; and all their  
lives,

That, by indictment, and by dint of sword,  
Have since miscarried under Bolingbroke.

*West.* You speak, lord Mowbray, now you  
know not what

The earl of Hereford was reputed then  
In England the most valiant gentleman;  
Who knows, on whom fortune would then have  
smil'd?

But, if your father had been victor there,  
He ne'er had borne it out of Coventry:  
For all the country, in a general voice,  
Cried bate upon him; and all their prayers, and  
love,

Were set on Hereford, whom they doted on,  
And bless'd, and grac'd indeed, more than the  
king.

But this is mere digression from my purpose.—  
Here come I from our princely general,  
To know your griefs; to tell you from his  
grace,

That he will give you audience; and wherein  
It shall appear that your demands are just,  
You shall enjoy them; every thing set off,  
That might so much as think you enemies.

*Mowb.* But he hath forc'd us to compel this  
offer;

And it proceeds from policy, not love.

*West.* Mowbray, you overween to take it  
so;

This offer comes from mercy, not from fear:  
For, lo! within a ken, our army lies;  
Upon mine honour, all too confident  
To give admittance to a thought of fear.

Your battle is more full of names than your's,  
Our men more perfect in the use of arms,  
Our armour all as strong, our cause the best;  
Then reason wills, our hearts should be as  
good:—

Say you not then, our offer is compell'd.

*Mowb.* Well, by my will, we shall admit no  
parley.

*West.* That argues but the shame of your  
offence:

A rotten case abides no handling.

*Hast.* Hath the prince John a full commis-  
sion,

In very ample virtue of his father,  
To hear, and absolutely to determine

Of what conditions we shall stand upon?

*West.* That is intended in the general's  
name:

I muse you make so slight a question.

*Arch.* Then take, my lord of Westmoreland,  
this schedule:

For this contains our general grievances:—  
Each several article herein redress'd;  
All members of our cause, both here and hence,  
That are misus'd to this action,  
Acquitted by a true substantial form;  
And present execution of our wills  
To us, and to our purposes, consign'd;  
We come within our awful banks again,  
And knit our powers to the arm of peace.

*West.* This will I show the general. Please  
you, lords,

In sight of both our battles we may meet:  
And either end in peace, which heaven so  
frame!

Or to the place of difference call the swords  
Which must decide it.

*Arch.* My lord, we will do so.

[Exit WEST.]

*Mowb.* There is a thing within my bosom,  
tells me,

That no conditions of our peace can stand.

*Hast.* Fear you not that: if we can make our  
peace

Upon such large terms, and so absolute,  
As our conditions shall consist upon,  
Our peace shall stand as firm as rocky moun-  
tains.

*Mowb.* Ay, but our valuation shall be such,  
That every slight and false-derived cause,  
Yea, every idle, nice, and wanton reason,  
Shall, to the king, taste of this action:  
That were our royal faiths martyrs in love,  
We shall be winnow'd with so rough a wind,  
That, even our corn shall seem as light as chaff,  
And good from bad had no partition.

*Arch.* No, no, my lord: Note this,—the king  
is weary

Of dainty and such picking grievances:  
For he hath found, to end one doubt by  
death,

Revives two greater in the heirs of life.

And therefore will he wipe his tables clean;

And keep no tell tale to his memory,

That may repeat and history his loss

To new remembrance: For full well he knows,

He cannot so precisely weed this land,

As his misdoubts present occasion:

His foes are so enrooted with his friends,

That, plucking to unfix an enemy,

He doth unfasten so, and shake a friend.

So that this land, like an offensive wife,

That hath enrag'd him on to offer strokes;

As he is striking, holds his infant up,

And hangs resolv'd correction in the arm

That was uprear'd to execution.

*Hast.* Besides the king hath wasted all his  
rods

On late offenders, that he now doth lack

The very instruments of chastisement:

So that his power, like a fangless lion,

Mav offer, but not hold.

*Arch.* 'Tis very true;—

And therefore be assur'd, my good lord mar-  
shal,

If we do now make our atonement well,

Our peace will, like a broken limb united,

Grow stronger for the breaking.

*Mowb.* Be it so.

Here is return'd my lord of Westmoreland.

*Re-enter WESTMORELAND.*

*West.* The prince is here at hand: Pleaseth  
your lordship,

To meet his grace just distance 'tween our ar-  
mies?

*Mowb.* Your grace of York, in God's name  
then set forward.

*Arch.* Before, and greet his grace:—my lord,  
we come. [Exeunt.]

**SCENE II.—Another part of the Forest.**

*Enter, from one side, MOWBRAY, the ARCH-  
BISHOP, HASTINGS, and others; from the  
other side, Prince JOHN of Lancaster,  
WESTMORELAND, Officers, and Attendants.*

*P. John.* You are well encounter'd here, my  
cousin Mowbray:—

Good day to you, gentle lord Archbishop;—  
And so to you, lord Hastings,—and to all.—  
My lord of York, it better show'd with you,  
When that your flock, assembled by the bell,  
Encircled you, to hear with reverence  
Your exposition on the holy text;

Than now to see you here an iron man,  
Cheering a rout of rebels with your drum,

Turning the word to sword, and life to death.  
That man, that sits within a monarch's heart,

And ripens in the sunshine of his favour,  
Would he abuse the countenance of the king,

Alack, what mischiefs might he set abroad,  
In shadow of such greatness! With you, lord  
bishop,

It is even so:—Who hath not heard it spoken,  
How deep you were within the books of God?  
To us, the speaker in his parliament;  
To us, the imagin'd voice of God himself;  
The very opener, and intelligencer,  
Between the grace, the sanctities of heaven,  
And our dull workings: Oh! who shall be-  
lieve,  
But you misuse the reverence of your place;  
Employ the countenance and grace of heaven,  
As a false favourite doth his prince's name,  
In deeds dishonourable? You have taken up,  
Under the counterfeited zeal of God,  
The subjects of his substitute, my father;  
And, both against the peace of heaven and  
him,

Have here up-swarm'd them.

*Arch.* Good my lord of Lancaster,  
I am not here against your father's peace:  
But, as I told my lord of Westmoreland,  
The time un-order'd doth, in common sense,  
Croud us, and crush us, to this monstrous  
form,

To hold our safety up. I sent your grace  
The parcels and particulars of our grief;  
The which hath been with scorn shov'd from the  
court,

Whereon this Hydra son of war is born:  
Whose dangerous eyes may well be charm'd  
asleep,

With grant of our most just and right desires;  
And true obedience of this madness cur'd,  
Sloop tamely to the foot of majesty.

*Mowb.* If not, we ready are to try our for-  
tunes,

To the last man.

*Hast.* And though we here fall down,  
We have supplies to second our attempt;  
If they miscarry, their's shall second them:  
And so, success† of mischief shall be born;  
And heir from heir shall hold this quarrel up,  
While England shall have generation.

*P. John.* You are too shallow, Hastings, much  
too shallow,

To sound the bottom of the after-times.

*West.* Pleased your grace, to answer them  
directly,

How far-forth you do like their articles?

*P. John.* I like them all, and do allow them  
well:

And swear here by the honour of my blood,  
My father's purposes have been mistook;  
And some about him have too lavishly  
Wrested his meaning and authority.—  
My lord, these griefs shall be with speed re-  
dress'd;

Upon my soul, they shall. If this may please  
you,

Discharge your powers unto the several counties,  
As we will our's: and here, between the ar-  
mies,

Let's drink together friendly, and embrace;  
That all their eyes may bear those tokens home,  
Of our restored love, and amity.

*Arch.* I take your princely word for these re-  
dresses.

*P. John.* I give it you, and will maintain my  
word:

And thereupon I drink unto your grace.

*Hast.* Go, captain, [To an Officer.] and de-  
liver to the army

This news of peace; let them have pay, and  
part:

I know it will well please them: Hie thee, cap-  
tain. [Exit Officer.]

*Arch.* To you, my noble lord of Westmore-  
land.

*West.* I pledge your grace: And, if you knew  
what pains

I have bestow'd, to breed this present peace,  
You would drink freely: but my love to you  
shall show itself more openly hereafter.

*Arch.* I do not doubt you.

• Raised arms.

† Succession.

*West.* I am glad of it.—

Health to my lord and gentle cousin Mowbray.

*Mowb.* You wish me health in very happy  
season;

For I am, on the sudden, something ill.

*Arch.* Against ill chances, men are ever  
merry;

But heaviness foreruns the good event.

*West.* Therefore be merry, coz; since sud-  
den sorrow

Serves to say thus.—Some good thing comes to-  
morrow.

*Arch.* Believe me, I am passing light in  
spirit.

*Mowb.* So much the worse, if your own rule  
be true. [Shouts within.]

*P. John.* The word of peace is render'd; Hark,  
how they shout!

*Mowb.* This had been cheerful, after victory.

*Arch.* A peace is of the nature of a con-  
quest;

For then both parties nobly are subdued,

And neither party loser.

*P. John.* Go, my lord,  
And let our army be discharged too.—

[Exit WESTMORELAND.]  
And, good my lord, so please you, let our  
trains

March by us: that we may peruse the men

We should have cop'd withal.

*Arch.* Go, good lord Hastings,

And, ere they be dismiss'd, let them march by.  
[Exit HASTINGS.]

*P. John.* I trust, my lords, we shall lie to-  
night together.—

#### Re-enter WESTMORELAND.

Now, cousin, wherefore stands our army still?

*West.* The leaders having charge from you to  
stand,

Will not go off until they hear you speak.

*P. John.* They know their duties.

#### Re-enter HASTINGS.

*Hast.* My lord, our army is dispers'd already:  
Like youthful steers unyok'd, they take their  
courses

[up,  
East, west, north, south; or, like a school broke  
Each hurries toward his home and sporting-  
place.

*West.* Good tidings, my lord Hastings; for the  
which

I do arrest thee, traitor, of high treason:—  
And you, lord archbishop; and you, lord Mow-  
bray,

Of capital treason I attach you both.

*Mowb.* Is this proceeding just and honour-  
able?

*West.* Is your assembly so?

*Arch.* Will you thus break your faith?

*P. John.* I pawn'd thee none:—

I promis'd you redress of these same grievances,  
Whereof you did complain; which, by mine  
honour,

I will perform with a most Christian care.

But for you, rebels, look to taste the due  
Meet for rebellion, and such acts as your's.

Most shallowly did you these arms commence,  
Fondly† brought here, and foolishly sent hence.

Strike up our drums, pursue the scatter'd stray;  
Heaven, and not we, have safely fought to-day.

Some guard these traitors to the block of death;  
Treason's true bed, and yielder up of breath.

[Exit.

#### SCENE III.—Another part of the Forest.

*Alarum: Excursions. Enter FALSTAFF and  
COLEVILLE, meeting.*

*Fal.* What's your name, Sir? of what condi-  
tion are you; and of what place, I pray?

• This was an act of atrocious baseness on the part of  
the Lancastrian chief.

† Foolishly.

Scene III. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV. 429

*Cole.* I am a knight, Sir; and my name is—  
Coleville of the dale.

*Fal.* Well then, Coleville is your name; a knight is your degree; and your place, the dale: Coleville shall still be your name; a traitor your degree; and the dungeon your place,—a place deep enough; so shall you still be Coleville of the dale.

*Cole.* Are not you Sir John Falstaff?

*Fal.* As good a man as he, Sir, whose'er I am. Do ye yield, Sir? or shall I sweat for you? If I do sweat, they are drops of thy lovers, and they weep for thy death: therefore rouse up fear and trembling, and do observance to my mercy.

*Cole.* I think, you are Sir John Falstaff; and, in that thought, yield me.

*Fal.* I have a whole school of tongues in this belly of mine; and not a tongue of them all speaks any other word but my name. An I had but a belly of any indifferency, I were simply the most active fellow in Europe: My womb, my womb, my womb undoes me.—Here comes our general.

*Enter Prince JOHN of Lancaster, WESTMORELAND, and others.*

*P. John.* The heat is past, follow no further now;—

Call in the powers, good cousin Westmoreland.—  
[*Exit WEST.*]  
Now, Falstaff, where have you been all this while?

When every thing is ended, then you come: These tardy tricks of your's will, on my life, One time or other break some gallows' back.

*Fal.* I would be sorry, my lord, but it should be thus; I never knew yet, but rebuke and check was the reward of valour. Do you think me a swallow, an arrow, or a bullet? have I, in my poor and old motion, the expedition of thought? I have speeded hither with the very extremest luck of possibility; I have foundered nine-score and odd posts: and here, travel-tainted as I am, have, in my pure and immaculate valour, taken Sir John Coleville of the dale, a most furious knight and valorous enemy: But what of that? he saw me, and yielded; that I may justly say with the hook-nosed fellow of Rome,\*—I came, saw, and overcame.

*P. John.* It was more of his courtesy than your deserving.

*Fal.* I know not; here he is, and here I yield him: and I beseech your grace, let it be booked with the rest of this day's deeds; or, by the Lord, I will have it in a particular ballad else, with mine own picture on the top of it, Coleville kissing my foot: To the which course if I be enforced, if you do not all show like gilt twopences to me; and I, in the clear sky of fame, o'ershine you as much as the full moon doth the cinders of the element, which show like pins' heads to her; believe not the word of the noble: Therefore let me have right, and let desert mount.

*P. John.* Thine's too heavy to mount.

*Fal.* Let it shine then.

*P. John.* Thine's too thick to shine.

*Fal.* Let it do something, my good lord, that may do me good, and call it what you will.

*P. John.* Is thy name Coleville?

*Cole.* It is, my lord.

*P. John.* A famous rebel art thou, Coleville.

*Fal.* And a famous true subject took him.

*Cole.* I am, my lord, but as my betters are,

That led me hither: had they been rul'd by me,

You should have won them dearer than you have.

*Fal.* I know not how they sold themselves:

but thou, like a kind fellow, gavest thyself away; and I thank thee for thee.

*Re-enter WESTMORELAND.*

*P. John.* Now, have you left pursuit?

*West.* Retreat is made, and execution stay'd.

*P. John.* Send Coleville, with his confederates,

To York, to present execution:—

Blunt, lead him hence; and see you guard him sure.

[*Exeunt some with COLEVILLE.*]

And now despatch we toward the court, my lords;

I hear the king my father is sore sick: Our news shall go before us to his majesty, Which, cousin, you shall bear, to comfort him; And we with sober speed will follow you.

*Fal.* My lord, I beseech you, give me leave to go through Gloucestershire: and when you come to court, stand my good lord,\* 'play, in your good report.

*P. John.* Fare you well, Falstaff: I, in my condition,†

Shall better speak of you than you deserve.

[*Exit.*]

*Fal.* I would, you had but the wit; 'twere better than your dukedom.—Good faith, this same young sober-blooded boy doth not love me; nor a man cannot make him laugh;—but that's no marvel, he drinks no wine. There's never any of these demure boys come to any proof: for thin drink doth so over-cool their blood, and making many fish-meals, that they fall into a kind of male green-sickness; and then, when they marry, they get wenches: they are generally fools and cowards;—which some of us should be too, but for inflammation. A good sherriesack had a two-fold operation in it. It ascends me into the brain; dries me there all the foolish, and dull, and crudy vapours which environ it: makes it apprehensive, quick, forgetive, full of nimble, fiery, and delectable shapes; which delivered o'er to the voice, (the tongue,) which is the birth, becomes excellent wit. The second property of your excellent sherries is,—the warming of the blood; which, before cold and settled left the liver white and pale, which is the badge of pusillanimity and cowardice: but the sherries warms it, and makes it course from the inwards to the parts extreme. It illumineth the face; which, as a beacon, gives warning to all the rest of this little kingdom, man, to arm: and then the vital commoners, and inland petty spirits, muster me all to their captain, the heart; who, great and puffed up with this retinue, doth any deed of courage; and this valour comes of sherries: So that skill in the weapon is nothing, without sack; for that sets it a-work; and learning a mere hoard of gold kept by a devil; till sack commences it, and sets it in act and use. Hereof comes it, that prince Harry is vallant: for the cold blood he did naturally inherit of his father, he hath, like lean, sterile, and bare land, manured, husbanded, and tilled, with excellent endeavour of drinking good, and good store of fertile sherries; that he is become very hot and valiant. If I had a thousand sons, the first human principle I would teach them, should be,—to forswear thin potations, and addict themselves to sack.

*Enter BARDOLPH.*

How now, Bardolph?

*Bard.* The army is discharged all, and gone.

*Fal.* Let them go. I'll through Gloucestershire; and there will I visit master Robert Shallow, esquire: I have him already tempering between my finger and my thumb, and shortly will I seal with him.‡ Come away.

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Stand my good friend.

† In my present temper.

‡ An allusion to the old use of sealing with soft wax.

## SCENE IV.—Westminster.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter King HENRY, CLARENCE, Prince HUMPHREY, WARWICK, and others.

*K. Hen.* Now, lords, if heaven doth give successful end

To this debate that bleedeth at our doors,  
We will our youth lead on to higher fields,  
And draw no swords but what are sanctified.  
Our navy is address'd,\* our power collected,  
Our substitutes in absence well invested,  
And every thing lies level to our wish:  
Only, we want a little personal strength;  
And pause us, till these rebels, now atoot,  
Come underneath the yoke of government.

*War.* Both which we doubt not but your majesty  
Shall soon enjoy.

*K. Hen.* Humphrey, my son of Gloster,  
Where is the prince your brother?

*P. Humph.* I think he's gone to hunt, my lord, at Windsor.

*K. Hen.* And how accompanied?

*P. Humph.* I do not know, my lord.

*K. Hen.* Is not his brother, Thomas of Clarence with him?

*P. Humph.* No, my good lord; he is in presence here.

*Cla.* What would my lord and father?

*K. Hen.* Nothing but well to thee, Thomas of Clarence.

How chance, thou art not with the prince thy brother?

He loves thee, and thou dost neglect him, Thomas;

Thou hast a better place in his affection,  
Than all thy brothers: cherish it, my boy;  
And noble offices thou may'st effect  
Of mediation, after I am dead,  
Between his greatness and thy other brethren:—  
Therefore, omit him not; blunt not his love:  
Nor lose the good advantage of his grace,  
By seeming cold, or careless of his will.

For he is gracious, if he be observ'd;†  
He hath a tear for pity, and a hand  
Open as day for melting charity:  
Yet notwithstanding, being incens'd, he's flint;  
As humorous as winter, and as sudden  
As flaws congealed in the spring of day.

His temper, therefore, must be well observ'd:  
Chide him for faults, and do it reverently,  
When you perceive his blood inclin'd to mirth:  
But, being moody, give him line and scope;  
Till that his passions, like a whale on ground,  
Confound themselves with working. Learn this,  
Thomas,

And thou shalt prove a shelter to thy friends;  
A hoop of gold, to bind thy brothers in;  
That the united vessel of their blood,  
Mingled with venom of suggestion,  
(As, force perforce, the age will pour it in,)  
Shall never leak, though it do work as strong  
As acaniticum,‡ or rash gunpowder.

*Cla.* I shall observe him with all care and love.

*K. Hen.* Why art thou not at Windsor with him, Thomas?

*Cla.* He is not there to-day; he dines in London.

*K. Hen.* And how accompanied? can'st thou tell that?

*Cla.* With Poins, and others his continual followers.

*K. Hen.* Most subject is the fattest soil to weeds;

And he, the noble image of my youth,  
Is overspread with them: Therefore my grief  
Stretches itself beyond the hour of death;  
The blood weeps from my heart, when I do  
shape,

In forms imaginary, the unguided days,

And rotten times, that you shall look upon  
When I am sleeping with my ancestors.  
For when his headstrong riot hath no curb,  
When rage and hot blood are his counsellors,  
When means and lavish manners meet together,  
O with what wings shall his affections fly  
Towards floating peril and oppos'd decay!

*War.* My gracious lord, you look beyond him quite:

The prince but studies his companions,  
Like a strange tongue: wherein, to gain the language,

'Tis needful that the most immodest word  
Be look'd upon and learn'd: which once attain'd,

Your highness knows, comes to no further use,  
But to be known and hated. So, like gross terms,

The prince will, in the perfectness of time,  
Cast off his followers: and their memory  
Shall as a pattern or a measure live,  
By which his grace must mete the lives of others;

Turning past evils to advantages.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis seldom, when the bee doth leave her comb  
In the dead carrion.—Who's here? Westmoreland?

## Enter WESTMORELAND.

*West.* Health to my sovereign! and new happiness

Added to that that I am to deliver!

Prince John, your son, doth kiss your grace's hand:

Mowbray, the bishop Scroop, Hastings, and all,  
Are brought to the correction of your law,  
There is not now a rebel's sword unsheath'd,  
But peace pats forth her olive every where.  
The manner how this action hath been borne,  
Here at more leisure may your highness read;  
With every course, in his particular.\*

*K. Hen.* O Westmoreland, thou art a summer bird,  
Which ever in the haunch of winter sings  
The lifting up of day. Look! here's more news.

## Enter HARCOURT.

*Harc.* From enemies heaven keep your majesty;

And when they stand against you, may they fall  
As those that I am come to tell you of!

The earl of Northumberland, and the lord Bar-  
dolph,

With a great power of English and of Scots,  
Are by the sheriff of Yorkshire overthrown:  
The manner and true order of the fight,  
This packet, please it you, contains at large.

*K. Hen.* And wherefore should these good news make me sick?

Will fortune never come with both hands full,  
But write her fair words still in foulest letters?  
She either gives a stomach, and no food,—  
Such are the poor, in health; or else a feast,  
And takes away the stomach,—such are the rich!  
That have abundance, and enjoy it not.

I should rejoice now at this happy news;  
And now my sight fails, and my brain is gid-  
dy:—

O me! come near me, now I am much ill.

[Swoons.]

*P. Humph.* Comfort, your majesty!

*Cla.* O my royal father!

*West.* My sovereign lord, cheer up yourself,  
look up!

*War.* Be patient, princes; you do know, these fits

Are with his highness very ordinary.  
Stand from him, give him air; he'll straight be well.

*Cla.* No, no; he cannot long hold out these pangs;  
The incessant care and labour of his mind

\* Prepared. † Has attention shown him.  
‡ Wolf's bane, a poisonous herb.

\* The detail contained in Prince John's letter.

Scene IV. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

431

Hath wrought the mure that should confine it  
in,  
So thin, that life looks through, and will break  
out.

*P. Humph.* The people fear me; \* for they do  
observe  
Unfather'd heirs, and loathly birds of nature:  
The seasons change their manners, as the year  
Had found some months asleep, and leap'd  
them over.

*Cla.* The river had thrice flow'd, no ebb be-  
tween †:  
And the old folk, time's doting chronicles,  
Say it did so a little time before  
That our great grandsire, Edward, sick'd and  
died.

*War.* Speak lower, princes, for the king re-  
covers.

*P. Humph.* This apoplex will, certain, be his  
end.

*K. Hen.* I pray you, take me up, and bear me  
hence  
Into some other chamber: softly, 'pray.

[*They convey the King into an inner part  
of the room, and place him on a Bed.*  
Let there be no noise made, my gentle friends;  
Unless some dull ‡ and favourable hand  
Will whisper music to my weary spirit.

*War.* Call for the music in the other room.

*A. Hen.* Set me the crown upon my pillow  
here. §

*Cla.* His eye is hollow, and he changes  
much.

*War.* Less noise, less noise.

*Enter Prince HENRY.*

*P. Hen.* Who saw the duke of Clarence?

*Cla.* I am here, brother, full of heaviness.

*P. Hen.* How now! rain within doors, and  
none abroad!

How doth the king?

*P. Humph.* Exceeding ill.

*P. Hen.* Heard he the good news yet?

*P. Humph.* He alter'd much upon the hear-  
ing it.

*P. Hen.* It he be sick  
With joy, he will recover without physic.

*War.* Not so much noise, my lords:—sweet  
prince, speak low;

The king your father is dispos'd to sleep.

*Cla.* Let us withdraw into the other room.

*War.* Will't please your grace to go along  
with us?

*P. Hen.* No; I will sit and watch here by  
the king.

[*Exeunt all but P. HENRY.*

Why doth the crown lie there upon his pillow,  
Being so troublesome a bedfellow?

O pos'd'd perturbation! golden care!  
That keeps the ports of slumber open wide

To many a watchful night!—sleep with it now!  
Yet not so sound, and half so deeply sweet,

As he whose brow, with homely biggin || bound,  
SnORES out the watch of night. O majesty!

When thou dost pinch thy bearer, thou dost sit  
Like a rich armour worn in heat of day,

That scalds with safety. By his gates of breath  
There lies a downy feather, which stirs not:

Did he aspire, that light and weightless down  
Perforce must move.—My gracious lord! my

father!—  
This sleep is sound indeed; this is a sleep,

That from this golden rigol ¶ hath divorc'd  
So many English kings. Thy due, from me,

Is tears, and heavy sorrows of the blood;  
Which nature, love, and filial tenderness,

Shall, O dear father, pay thee plenteously:  
My due, from thee, is this imperial crown;

\* Make me afraid.

† This actually

occurred Oct. 12, 1411.

‡ Melancholy, soothing.

§ It is still the custom in France to set the crown upon  
the king's pillow when he is dying.

|| Cap.

¶ Circle.

Which, as immediate from thy place and blood,  
Derives itself to me. Lo, here it sits—

[*Putting it on his head.*  
Which heaven shall guard: And put the world's  
whole strength

Into one giant arm: it shall not force  
This lineal honour from me: This from thee  
Will I to mine leave, as 'tis left to me.

*K. Hen.* Warwick! Gloster! Clarence! [*Exit.*

*Re-enter WARWICK, and the rest.*

*Cla.* Doth the king call?

*War.* What would your majesty? How fares  
your grace?

*K. Hen.* Why did you leave me here alone,  
my lords?

*Cla.* We left the prince my brother here  
my liege.

Who undertook to sit and watch by you.

*K. Hen.* The prince of Wales? Where is he?  
let me see him:

He is not here.

*War.* This door is open; he is gone this  
way.

*P. Humph.* He came not through the cham-  
ber where we stay'd.

*K. Hen.* Where is the crown? who took it  
from my pillow?

*War.* When we withdrew, my liege, we left it  
here.

*K. Hen.* The prince hath ta'en it hence:—go,  
seek him out,

Is he so hasty, that he doth suppose  
My sleep my death?

Find him, my lord of Warwick; chide him  
hither. [*Exit WARWICK.*

This part of his conjoints with my disease,  
And helps to end me.—See, sons, what things  
you are!

How quickly nature falls into revolt,  
When gold becomes her object!

For this the foolish over-careful fathers  
Have broke their sleep with thoughts, their

brains with care,  
Their bones with industry;

For this they have engrossed and pil'd up  
The canker'd heaps of strange-achieved gold;

For this they have been thoughtful to invest  
Their sons with arts and martial exercises:

When, like the bee, tolling \* from every flower  
The virtuous sweets;

Our thighs pack'd with wax, our mouths with  
honey,

We bring it to the hive; and, like the bees,  
Are murder'd for our pains. This bitter taste

Yields his engrossments † to the ending father,—

*Re-enter WARWICK.*

Now, where is he that will not stay so long  
Till his friend sickness hath determin'd ‡ me?

*War.* My lord, I found the prince in the next  
room,

Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks;  
With such a deep demeanour in great sorrow,

That tyranny, which never quaff'd but blood,  
Would, by beholding him, have wash'd his

knife  
With gentle eye-drops. He is coming hither.

*K. Hen.* But wherefore did he take away the  
crown?

*Re-enter Prince HENRY.*

Lo, where he comes.—Come hither to me,  
Harry:—

Depart the chamber, leave us here alone.  
[*Exeunt CLARENCE, Prince HUMPHREY*

*LORDS, &c.*

*P. Hen.* I never thought to hear you speak  
again.

*K. Hen.* Thy wish was father, Harry, to that  
thought:

\* Taking toll,

‡ Ended.

† Accumulations.

I stay too long for thee, I weary thee.  
Dost thou so hunger for my empty chair,  
That thou wilt needs invest thee with mine honours

Before thy hour be ripe? O foolish youth!  
Thou seek'st the greatness that will overwhelm thee.

Stay but a little; for my cloud of dignity  
Is held from falling with so weak a wind,  
That it will quickly drop: my day is dim.  
Thou hast stol'n that, which, after some few hours,

Were thine without offence; and, at my death,  
Thou hast seal'd up my expectation: \*  
Thy life did manifest thou lov'dst me not,  
And thou wilt have me die assured of it.  
Thou hid'st a thousand daggers in thy thoughts;  
Which thou hast whetted on thy stony heart,  
To stab at half an hour of my life.  
What! canst thou not forbear me half an hour?

Then get thee gone, and dig my grave thyself;  
And bid the merry bells ring to thine ear,  
That thou art crowned, not that I am dead.  
Let all the tears that should bedew my hearse,  
Be drops of balm, to sanctify thy head:  
Only compound me with forgotten dust;  
Give that, which gave thee life, unto the worms;  
Pluck down my officers, break my decrees;  
For now a time is come to mock at form.  
Harry the fifth is crown'd:—Up, vanity!  
Down royal state! all you sage counsellors,  
hence!

And to the English court assemble now,  
From every region, apes of idleness!  
Now, neighbour confines, purge you of your  
scum: [dance,

Have you a ruffian, that will swear, drink,  
Revel the night, rob, murder, and commit  
The oldest sins the newest kind of ways?  
Be happy, he will trouble you no more:  
England shall double gild his treble guilt;  
England shall give him office, honour, might:  
For the fifth Harry from curb'd licence plucks  
The muzzle of restraint, and the wild dog  
Shall flesh his tooth in every innocent.  
O my poor kingdom, sick with civil blows!  
When that my care could not withhold thy  
riots,

What wilt thou do, when riot is thy care?  
O thou wilt be a wilderness again,  
Peopled with wolves, thy old inhabitants!

P. Hen. O pardon me, my liege! but for  
my tears, [Kneeling.

The moist impediments unto my speech,  
I had forestall'd this dear and deep rebuke,  
Ere you with grief had spoke, and I had heard  
The course of it so far. There is your crown;  
And He that wears the crown immortally,  
Long guard it yours! If I affect it more,  
Than as your honour, and as your renown,  
Let me no more from this obedience rise,  
(Which my most true and inward-duteous  
spirit

Teacheth,) this prostrate and exterior bending!  
Heaven witness with me, when I here came in,  
And found no course of breath within your  
majesty,

How cold it struck my heart! if I do feign,  
O let me in my present wildness die;  
And never live to show the incredulous world  
The noble change that I have purposed!  
Coming to look on you, thinking you dead,  
(And dead almost, my liege, to think you  
were.)

I spake unto the crown as having sense,  
And thus upbraided it: *The cure on thee de-*  
*pending,*

*Hath fed upon the body of my father;  
Therefore, thou, best of gold, art worst of  
gold;*

*Other, less fine in carat, is more precious,  
Preserving life in medicine potable;*

\* Confirmed my opinion.

*But thou, most fine, most honour'd, most re-*  
*noun'd,*

*Hast eat thy bearer up.* Thus, my most  
royal liege,

Accusing it, I put it on my head;  
To try with it,—as with an enemy,  
That had before my face murder'd my father,—  
The quarrel of a true inheritor.  
But if it did infect my blood with joy,  
Or swell my thoughts to any strain of pride;  
If any rebel or vain spirit of mine  
Did with the least affection of a welcome,  
Give entertainment to the might of it,  
Let God for ever keep it from my head,  
And make me as the poorest vassal is,  
That doth with awe and terror kneel to it!

K. Hen. O my son!  
Heaven put it in thy mind to take it hence,  
That thou might'st win the more thy father's  
love,

Pleading so wisely in excuse of it.  
Come hither, Harry, sit thou by my bed;  
And hear, I think, the very latest counsel  
That ever I shall breathe. Heaven knows, my  
son,

By what by-paths and indirect crook'd ways,  
I met this crown; and I myself know well,  
How troublesome it sat upon my head:  
To thee it shall descend with better quiet,  
Better opinion, better confirmation;  
For all the soul of the achievement goes  
With me into the earth. It seem'd in me,  
But as an honour snatch'd with boisterous  
hand;

And I had many living to upbraid  
My gain of it by their assistances;  
Which daily grew to quarrel and to bloodshed,  
Wounding supposed peace: all these bold  
fears,

Thou seest with peril I have answered:  
For all my reign hath been but as a scene  
Acting that argument; and now my death  
Changes the mode: for what in me was pur-  
chas'd,

Falls upon thee in a more fairer sort;  
So thou the garland wear'st successively.  
Yet, though thou stand'st more sure than I  
could do,

Thou art not firm enough, since griefs are  
green;  
And all thy friends, which thou must make thy  
friends,

Have but their stings and teeth newly ta'en  
out;

By whose fell working I was first advanc'd,  
And by whose power I well might lodge a  
fear

To be again displac'd: which to avoid,  
I cut them off; and had a purpose now  
To lead out many to the Holy Land:  
Lest rest, and lying still, might make them  
look

Too near unto my state. Therefore, my Harry,  
Be it thy course to busy giddy minds  
With foreign quarrels; that action hence borne  
out,

May waste the memory of the former days.  
More would I, but my lungs are wasted so,  
That strength of speech is utterly denied me.  
How I came by the crown, O God, forgive!  
And grant it may with thee in true peace  
live!

P. Hen. My gracious liege,  
You won it, wore it, kept it, gave it me:  
Then plain, and right, must my possession be:  
Which I, with more than with a common pain,  
'Gainst all the world will rightfully maintain.

Enter Prince JOHN of Lancaster, WARWICK,  
Lords, and others.

K. Hen. Look, look, here comes my John of  
Lancaster.

P. John. Health, peace, and happiness, to  
my royal father!

*K. Hen.* Thou bring'st me happiness, and peace, son John ;  
 But health, alack, with youthful wings is flown  
 From this bare, wither'd trunk : upon thy sight,  
 My worldly business makes a period.—  
 Where is my lord of Warwick ?  
*P. Hen.* My lord of Warwick !  
*K. Hen.* Doth any name particular belong  
 Unto the lodging where I first did swoon ?  
*War.* 'Tis called Jerusalem, my noble lord.  
*K. Hen.* Laid be to God!—even there my  
 life must end.  
 It hath been prophesied to me many years,  
 I should not die but in Jerusalem ;  
 Which vainly I suppos'd the Holy Land :—  
 But, bear me to that chamber ; there I'll lie :  
 In that Jerusalem shall Harry die. *[Exeunt.]*

ACT V.

SCENE I.—*Glostershire.—A Hall in SHALLOW'S House.*

*Enter SHALLOW, FALSTAFF, BARDOLPH, and PAGE.*

*Shal.* By cock and pye, Sir, you shall not away to night.—What, Davy, I say !  
*Fal.* You must excuse me, master Robert Shallow.  
*Shal.* I will not excuse you : you shall not be excused ; excuses shall not be admitt'd ; there is no excuse shall serve ; you shall not be excused.—Why, Davy !

*Enter DAVY.*

*Davy.* Here, Sir.  
*Shal.* Davy, Davy, Davy,—let me see, Davy ; let me see :—yea, marry, William cook, bid him come hither.—Sir John, you shall not be excused.  
*Davy.* Marry, Sir, thus ;—those precepts cannot be served : and, again, Sir,—Shall we sow the headland with wheat ?  
*Shal.* With red wheat, Davy. But for William cook :—Are there no young pigeons ?  
*Davy.* Yes, Sir.—Here is now the smith's note for shoeing, and plough-irons.  
*Shal.* Let it be cast, and paid :—Sir John, you shall not be excused.  
*Davy.* Now, Sir, a new link to the bucket must needs be had :—And, Sir, do you mean to stop any of William's wages, about the sack he lost the other day at Huckleby fair ?  
*Shal.* He shall answer it :—Some pigeons, Davy ; a couple of short-legg'd hens ; a joint of mutton ; and any pretty little tiny kickshaws, tell William cook.  
*Davy.* Doth the man of war stay all night, Sir ?  
*Shal.* Yes, Davy. I will use him well ; A friend i'the court is better than a penny in purse. Use his men well, Davy ; for they are arrant knaves, and will backbite.  
*Davy.* No worse than they are back-bitten, Sir ; for they have marvellous foul linen.  
*Shal.* Well conceited, Davy. About thy business, Davy.  
*Davy.* I beseech you, Sir, to countenance William Visor of Wincot, against Clement Perkes of the hill.

*Shal.* There are many complaints, Davy, against that Visor ; that Visor is an arrant knave on my knowledge.  
*Davy.* I grant your worship, that he is a knave, Sir : but yet, God forbid, Sir, but a knave should have some countenance at his friend's request. An honest man, Sir, is able to speak for himself, when a knave is not. I have served your worship truly, Sir, this eight years ; and if I cannot once or twice in a quarter bear out a knave against an honest man, I have but a very little credit with your worship. The knave is mine honest friend, Sir ; there

fore, I beseech your worship, let him be countenanced.

*Shal.* Go to ; I say, he shall have no wrong. Look about, Davy. *[Exit DAVY.]* Where are you, Sir John ? Come, off with your boots.—Give me your hand, master Bardolph.

*Bard.* I am glad to see your worship.  
*Shal.* I thank thee with all my heart, kind master Bardolph :—and welcome, my tall fellow. *[To the PAGE.]* Come, Sir John.

*[Exit SHALLOW.]*  
*Fal.* I'll follow you, good master Robert Shallow. Bardolph, look to our horses. *[Exeunt BARDOLPH and PAGE.]* If I were sawed into quantities, I should make four dozen of such bearded hermit's-staves as master Shallow. It is a wonderful thing, to see the semblable coherence of his men's spirits and his : They, by observing him, do bear themselves like foolish justices ; he, by conversing with them, is turned into a justice-like serving-man ; their spirits are so married in conjunction with the participation of society, that they flock together in consent, like so many wild-geese. If I had a suit to master Shallow, I would humour his men, with the imputation of being near their master : if to his men, I would curry with master Shallow, that no man could better command his servants. It is certain, that either wise bearing or ignorant carriage, is caught, as men take diseases, one of another : therefore, let men take heed of their company. I will give matter enough out of this Shallow, to keep prince Harry in continual laughter, the wearing-out of six fashions, (which is four terms, or two actions,) and he shall laugh without intervallum. Oh ! it is much, that a lie with a slight oath, and a jest, with a sad brow, will do with a fellow that never had the ache in his shoulders ! Oh ! you shall see him laugh, till his face be like a wet cloak ill laid up.\*

*Shal.* *[Within.]* Sir John !

*Fal.* I come, master Shallow : I come, master Shallow. *[Exit FALSTAFF.]*

SCENE II.—*Westminster.—A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter WARWICK, and the Lord CHIEF JUSTICE.*

*War.* How now, my lord chief justice ? whither away ?

*Ch. Just.* How doth the king ?

*War.* Exceeding well ; his cares are now all ended.

*Ch. Just.* I hope, not dead.

*War.* He's walk'd the way of nature ;

And, to our purposes, he lives no more.

*Ch. Just.* I would, his majesty had call'd me with him :

The service that I truly did his life,

Hath left me open to all injuries.

*War.* Indeed, I think the young king loves you not.

*Ch. Just.* I know, he doth not ; and do arm myself,

To welcome the condition of the time : Which cannot look more hideously on me Than I have drawn it in my fantasy.

*Enter Prince JOHN, Prince HUMPHREY, CLARENCE, WESTMORELAND, and others.*

*War.* Here comes the heavy issue of dead Harry :

O that the living Harry had the temper Of him, the worst of these three gentlemen ! How many nobles then should hold their places, That must strike sail to spirits of vile sort !

*Ch. Just.* Alas ! I fear, all will be overturn'd.

*P. John.* Good morrow, cousin Warwick.

*P. Humph. Cla.* Good morrow, cousin.

*P. John.* We meet like men that had forgo to speak.

*War.* We do remember ; but our argument is all too heavy to admit much talk.

\* That is, full of wrinkles : a most laughable simile.  
 2 F



*P. John.* Well, peace be with him that hath made us heavy!

*Ch. Just.* Peace be with us, lest we be heavier!

*P. Humph.* O good my lord, you have lost a friend indeed: And I dare swear, you borrow not that face Of seeming sorrow; it is, sure, your own.

*P. John.* Though no man be assur'd what grace to find, You stand in coldest expectation: I am the sorrier; 'twould 'twere otherwise.

*Cla.* Well, you must now speak Sir John Falstaff fair; Which swims against our stream of quality.

*Ch. Just.* Sweet princes, what I did in honour, Led by the impartial conduct of my soul; And never shall you see, that I will beg A ragged and forestall'd remission.— If truth and upright innocency fail me, I'll to the king my master that is dead, And tell him who hath sent me after him. *War.* Here comes the prince.

*Enter King HENRY V.*

*Ch. Just.* Good morrow; and heaven save your majesty!

*King.* This new and gorgeous garment, majesty,

Sits not so easy on me as you think.— Brothers, you mix your sadness with some fear.

This is the English, not the Turkish court; Not Amurath an Amurath\* succeeds, But Harry Harry: Yet be sad, good brothers, For, to speak truth, it very well becomes you; So now so royally in you appears, That I will deeply put the fashion on, And wear it in my heart. Why then, be sad: But entertain no more of it, good brothers, Than a joint burden laid upon us all. For me, by heaven, I bid you be assur'd, I'll be your father and your brother too; Let me but bear your love, I'll bear your cares. Yet weep, that Harry's dead; and so will I: But Harry lives, that shall convert those tears, By number, into hours of happiness.

*P. John, &c.* We hope no other from your majesty.

*King.* You all look strangely on me:—and you most: [*To the Ch. JUSTICE.* You are, I think, assur'd I love you not.

*Ch. Just.* I am assur'd, if I be measur'd rightly, Your majesty hath no just cause to hate me.

*King.* No! How might a prince of my great hopes forget So great indignities you laid upon me? What a rate, rebuke, and roughly send to prison The immediate heir of England? Was this easy? May this be wash'd in Lethe, and forgotten?

*Ch. Just.* I then did use the person of your father;

The fume of his power lay then in me: And, in the administration of his law, Whiles I was busy for the commonwealth, Your highness pleased to forget my place, The majesty and power of law and justice, The fume of the king whom I presented, And struck me in my very seat of judgment: Whereon, as an offender to your father, I gave bold way to my authority, And did commit you. If the deed were ill, Be you contented, wearing now the garland, To have a son set your decrees at naught; To pluck down justice from your awful bench; To trip the course of law, and blunt the sword That guards the peace and safety of your person;

Nay, more, to spurn at your most royal image,

\* Emperor of the Turks, died in 1389; his son who succeeded him had all his brothers strangled.

And mock your workings in a second body;\* Question your royal thoughts, make the case yours.

Be now the father, and propose a son; Hear your own dignity so much profan'd, See your most dreadful laws so loosely slighted, Behold yourself so by a son disinclined, And then imagine me taking your part, And, in your power, soft silencing your son: After this cold consideration, sentence me; And, as you are a king, speak in your state, † What I have done that misbecame my place, My person, or my liege's sovereignty.

*King.* You are right, justice, and you weigh this well;

Therefore still bear the balance and the sword; And I do wish your honours may increase, Till you do live to see a son of mine Offend you, and obey you, as I did. So shall I live to speak my father's words:— *Happy am I, that have a man so bold, That dares do justice on my proper son: And not less happy, having such a son, That would deliver up his greatness so Into the hands of justice.*—You did commit me;

For which, I do commit into your hand [bear; The unstained sword that you have us'd to With this remembrance,—That you use the same

With the like bold, just, and impartial spirit, As you have done 'gainst me. There is my hand;

You shall be as a father to my youth: [ear; My voice shall sound as you do prompt mine And I will stoop and humble my intents To your well-practis'd wise directions.— And, princes all, believe me, I beseech you;— My father is gone wild into his grave, For in his tomb lie my affections; And with his spirit sadly I survive. To mock the expectation of the world; To frustrate prophecies; and to raze out Rotten opinion, who hath writ me down After my seeming. The tide of blood in me Hath proudly flow'd in vanity, till now: Now doth it turn, and ebb back to the sea; Where it shall mingle with the state of floods, And flow henceforth in formal majesty. Now call we our high court of parliament: And let us choose such limbs of noble counsel, That the great body of our state may go In equal rank with the best-govern'd nation That war, or peace, or both at once, may be As thing acquainted and familiar to us:— In which you, father, shall have foremost hand.— [*To the Lord Ch. JUSTICE.* Our coronation done, we will accede. As I before remember'd, all our state: And (God consigning to my good intents,) No prince, nor peer, shall have just cause to say—

Heaven shorten Harry's happy life one day. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*Glostershire.—The Garden of SHALLOW's house.*

*Enter FALSTAFF, SHALLOW, SILENCE, BAR-DOLFE, the PAGE, and DAVY.*

*Shal.* Nay, you shall see mine orchard: where, in an arbour, we will eat a last year's pippin of my own grafting, with a dish of carraways, and so forth;—come, cousin Silence;—and then to bed.

*Fal.* Fore God, you have here a goodly dwelling, and a rich.

*Shal.* Barren, barren, barren; beggars all, beggars all, Sir John:—marry, good sir.— Spread, Davy; spread, Davy; well said, Davy.

*Sal.* This Davy serves you for good use; he is your serving-man; and your husbandman. *Shal.* A good varlet, a good varlet, a very

\* Treat with contempt your acts executed by a representative. † In your regal character and office.

# Scene III SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

435

good varlet, Sir John.—By the mass, I have drunk too much sack at supper:—a good varlet. Now sit down, now sit down:—come, cousin.

*Sil.* Ah, sirrah! quoth a,—we shall do nothing but eat, and make good cheer,

And praise heaven for the merry year;  
If hen flesh is cheap, and females dear,  
And lusty lads roam here and there,  
So merrily,

And ever among so merrily.

*Fal.* There's a merry heart!—Good master Silence, I'll give you a health for that anon.

*Shal.* Give master Bardolph some wine, Davy.

*Davy.* Sweet Sir, sit; [*Seating BARDOLPH and the PAGE at another table.*] I'll be with you anon:—most sweet Sir, sit.—Master Page, good master Page, sit: proface! What you want in meat, we'll have in drink. But you must bear; The heart's all. [*Exit.*]

*Shal.* Be merry, master Bardolph;—and my little soldier there, be merry.

*Sil.* Be merry, be merry, my wife's as all; †

For women are shrews, both short and tall:  
'Tis merry in hall, when beards wag all,  
And welcome merry shrove-tide.  
Be merry, be merry, &c.

*Sil.* I did not think master Silence had been a man of this mettle.

*Sil.* Who? I? I have been merry twice and once, ere now.

*Re-enter DAVY.*

*Davy.* There is a dish of leather-coats ‡ for you.

[*Setting them before BARDOLPH.*]

*Shal.* Davy,—

*Davy.* Your worship?—I'll be with you straight. [*To BARD.*]—A cup of wine, Sir?  
*Sil.* A cup of wine, that's brisk and fine,  
And drink unto the leman † mine;

[*Singing.*]

And a merry heart lives long-a.

*Fal.* Well said, master Silence.

*Sil.* And we shall be merry;—now comes in the sweet of the night.

*Fal.* Health and long life to you, master Silence.

*Sil.* Fill the cup, and let it come;

*Fal.* I'll pledge you a mile to the bottom.

*Shal.* Honest Bardolph, welcome: if thou wantest any thing, and wilt not call, beshrew thy heart.—Welcome, my little tiny thief; [*To the PAGE.*]—Welcome, indeed, too.—I'll drink to master Bardolph, and to all the cavaleroes about London.

*Davy.* I hope to see London once ere I die.

*Bard.* Al I might see you there Davy,—

*Shal.* By the mass, you'll crack a quart together. Ha! will you not, master Bardolph?

*Bard.* Yes, Sir, in a pottle pot.

*Shal.* I thank thee.—The knave will stick by thee, I can assure thee that: he will not out; he is true bred.

*Bard.* And I'll stick by him, Sir.

*Shal.* Why, there spoke a king. Lack nothing, be merry. [*Knocking heard.*] Look who's at door there: Ho! who knocks?

[*Exit DAVY.*]

*Fal.* Why, now you have done me right.

[*To SILENCE, who drinks a bumper.*]

*Sil.* Do me right, [*Singing.*]

And dub me knight: ‡

*Samingo †*

Is't not so?

*Fal.* 'Tis so.

*Sil.* Is't so? Why, then say an old man can do somewhat.

*Re-enter DAVY.*

*Davy.* An it please your worship, there's one Pistol come from the court with news.

*Fal.* From the court, let him come in.—

*Enter PISTOL.*

*Fal.* How now, Pistol?

*Pist.* God save you, Sir John!

*Fal.* What wind blew you hither, Pistol?

*Pist.* Not the ill wind which blows no man to good.—Sweet knight, thou art now one of the greatest men in the realm.

*Sil.* By'r lady, I think 'a be; but Goodman Puff of Barston.

*Pist.* Puff?

Puff in thy teeth, most recreant coward base!—Sir John, I am thy Pistol, and thy friend, And helter-skelter have I rode to thee; And tidings do I bring, and lucky joys, And golden times, and happy news of price.

*Fal.* I pry'thee now, deliver them like a man of this world.

*Pist.* A fount for the world, and worldlings base!

I speak of Africa, and golden joys.

*Fal.* O base Assyrian knight, what is thy news?

Let king Cophetua know the truth thereof.

*Sil.* And Robin Hood, Scarlet, and John.

[*Sings.*]

*Pist.* Shall dunghill curs confront the Mellicons?

And shall good news be baffled?

Then, Pistol, lay thy head in Furies' lap.

*Shal.* Honest gentleman, I know not your breeding.

*Pist.* Why then, lament therefore.

*Shal.* Give me pardon, Sir:—If, Sir, you come with news from the court, I take it, there is but two ways; either to utter them, or to conceal them. I am, Sir, under the king, in some authority.

*Pist.* Under which king, Bezonian? speak, or die.

*Shal.* Under king Harry.

*Pist.* Harry the fourth? or fifth?

*Shal.* Harry the fourth.

*Pist.* A fount for thine office!—

Sir John, thy tender lambkin now is king;

Harry the fifth's the man. I speak the truth:

When Pistol lies, do this; and fig me, like

The bragging Spaniard.

*Fal.* What! is the old king dead?

*Pist.* As nail in door: The things I speak, are just.

*Fal.* Away, Bardolph; saddle my horse.—Master Robert Shallow, choose what office thou wilt in the land, 'tis thine.—Pistol, I will double-charge thee with dignities.

*Bard.* O joyful day!—I would not take a knighthood for my fortune.

*Pist.* What! I do bring good news?

*Fal.* Carry master Silence to bed.—Master Shallow, my lord Shallow, be what thou wilt, I am fortune's steward. Get on thy boots; we'll ride all night:—O sweet Pistol!—Away, Bardolph. [*Exit BARD.*]—Come, Pistol, utter to more to me; and, withal, devise something, to do thyself good.—Boot, boot, master Shallow; I know, the young king is sick for me. Let us take any man's horses; the laws of England are at my commandment. Happy are they which have been my friends; and woe to my lord chief justice!

*Pist.* Let vultures vile seize on his lungs also!

Where is the life that late I led, say they:

Why, here it is; Welcome these pleasant days.

[*Exit.*]

\* Much good may it do you. † As all women are.  
‡ Applies commonly called russeties. § Sweetheart.  
¶ He who drank a bumper on his knees to the health of his mistress, was dubbed a knight for the evening.  
‡ It should be Domingo; it is a part of a song in one of Nashe's plays.

## SCENE IV.—London.—A Street.

*Enter BEADLES, dragging in Hostess QUICKLY, and DOLL TEAR-SHEET.*

*Host.* No, thou arrant knave: I would I might die, that I might have thee hanged: thou hast drawn my shoulder out of joint.

*1 Bead.* The constables have delivered her over to me; and she shall have whipping-cheer enough, I warrant her: There hath been a man or two lately killed about her.

*Dol.* Nut-hook, nut-hook,\* you lie. Come; on; I'll tell thee what, thou damned tripe-visaged rascal: an the child I now go with, do miscarry, thou hadst better thou hadst struck thy mother, thou paper-faced villain.

*Host.* O the Lord that Sir John were come; he would make this a bloody day to somebody. But I pray God the fruit of her womb miscarry!

*1 Bead.* If it do, you shall have a dozen of cushions† again; you have but eleven now. Come, I charge you both go with me; for the man is dead, that you and Pistol beat among you.

*Dol.* I'll tell thee what, thou thin man in a censer! I will have you as soundly swung for this, you blue-bottle rogue!‡ you filthy famished correctioner! if you be not swung, I'll forswear half-kirtles.

*1 Bead.* Come, come, you she knight-errant, come.

*Host.* O that right should thus overcome might! Well; of surffiance comes ease.

*Dol.* Come, you rogue, come; bring me to a justice.

*Host.* Ay; come, you starved blood-bound.

*Dol.* Goodman death! goodman bones!

*Host.* Thou atomy, thou!

*Dol.* Come, you thin thing; come, you rascal!

*1 Bead.* Very well. *(Exeunt.)*

## SCENE V.—A public Place near Westminster Abbey.

*Enter two GROOMS, strewing rushes.*

*1 Groom.* More rushes, more rushes.

*2 Groom.* The trumpets have sounded twice.

*1 Groom.* It will be two o'clock ere they come from the coronation: Despatch, despatch.

*(Exeunt GROOMS.)*

*Enter FALSTAFF, SHALLOW, PISTOL, BARDOLPH, and the PAGE.*

*Fal.* Stand here by me, master Robert Shallow; I will make the king do you grace: I will leer upon him, as a comes by; and do but mark the countenance that he will give me.

*Pist.* God bless thy lungs, good knight.

*Fal.* Come here, Pistol; stand behind me.—O if I had had time to have made new liveries, I would have bestowed the thousand pound I borrowed of you. *(To SHALLOW.)* But 'tis no matter; this poor show doth better: this doth infer the zeal I had to see him.

*Shal.* It doth so.

*Fal.* It shows my earnestness of affection.

*Shal.* It doth so.

*Fal.* My devotion.

*Shal.* It doth, it doth, it doth.

*Fal.* As it were, to ride day and night; and not to deliberate, not to remember, not to have patience to shift me.

*Shal.* It is most certain.

*Fal.* Not to stand stained with travel, and sweating with desire to see him: thinking of nothing else; putting all affairs else in oblivion; as if there were nothing else to be done, but to see him.

*Pist.* 'Tis *semper idem*, for *absque hoc nihil est*:  
'Tis all in every part.

\* A term of reproach for a catchpoll.

† To counterfeit pregnancy.

‡ Beadles usually wore a blue livery.

*Shal.* 'Tis so, indeed.

*Pist.* My knight, I will inflame thy noble liver, And make thee rage.

Thy Doll, and Helen of thy noble thoughts, Is in base durance, and contagious prison; Haul'd thither

By most mechanical and dirty hand:

Rouse up revenge from upon den with fell Alecto's snake,

For Doll is in; Pistol speaks nought but truth.

*Fal.* I will deliver her.

*(Shouts within, and the Trumpets sound.)*

*Pist.* There roar'd the sea, and trumpet-clangor sounds.

*Enter the KING and his Train, the CHIEF JUSTICE among them,*

*Fal.* God save thy grace, king Hal! my royal Hal!

*Pist.* The heavens thee guard and keep, most royal imp\* of fame!

*Fal.* God save thee, my sweet boy!

*King.* My lord chief justice, speak to that vain man.

*Ch. Just.* Have you your wits? know you what 'tis you speak?

*Fal.* My king! my Jove! I speak to thee, my heart!

*King.* I know thee, not, old man: Fall to thy prayers;

How ill white hairs become a fool and jester! I have long dream'd of such a kind of man, So surfeit-swoll'n, so old, and so profane; But, being awake, I do despise my dream. Make less thy body hence, and more thy grace; Leave gormandizing; know, the grave doth laugh For thee thrice wider than for other men:—Reply not to me with a fool-born jest; Presume not that I am the thing I was: For heaven doth know, so shall the world perceive,

That I have turn'd away my former self; So will I those that kept me company. When thou dost hear I am as I have been, Approach me; and thou shalt be as thou wast, The tutor and the feeder of my riots: Till then, I banish thee† on pain of death, As I have done the rest of my misleaders, Not to come near our person by ten mile. For competence of life, I will allow you, That lack of means enforce you not to evil; And, as we hear you do reform yourselves, We will,—according to your strength, and qualities,

Give you advancement.—Be it your charge, my To see perform'd the tenor of our word.

*Set on.* *(Exeunt KING, and his Train.)*

*Fal.* Master Shallow, I owe you a thousand pound.

*Shal.* Ay, marry, Sir John; which I beseech you to let me have home with me.

*Fal.* That can hardly be, master Shallow. Do not you grieve at this: I shall be sent for in private to him: look you, he must seem thus to the world. Fear not your advancement; I will be the man yet, that shall make you great.

*Shal.* I cannot perceive how; unless you give me your doublet, and stuff me out with straw. I beseech you, good Sir John, let me have five hundred of my thousand.

*Fal.* Sir, I will be as good as my word; this that you heard, was but a colour.

*Shal.* A colour, I fear, that you will die in, Sir John.

*Fal.* Fear no colours; go with me to dinner. Come, lieutenant Pistol;—come, Bardolph:—I shall be sent for soon at night.

*Re-enter Prince JOHN, the CHIEF JUSTICE, Officers, &c.*

*Ch. Just.* Go, carry Sir John Falstaff to the Fleet;

Take all his company along with him.

\* Child.

† This fact is recorded at length by Hollinshed.

Fal. My lord, my lord,—

Ch. Just. I cannot now speak : I will hear you  
Take them away. [soon.]

Pist. *Si fortuna me tormenta, spero me  
contenta.*

[*Exeunt* FAL. SHAL. PIST. BARD. PAGE,  
and Officers.]

P. John. I like this fair proceeding of the  
king's :

He hath intent, his wonted followers  
Shall all be very well provided for ;  
But all are banish'd, till their conversations  
Appear more wise and modest to the world.

Ch. Just. And so they are.

P. John. The king hath call'd his parliament,  
my lord.

Ch. Just. He hath.

P. John. I will lay odds, that, ere this year  
expire,

We bear our civil swords, and native fire,  
As far as France : I heard a bird so sing,  
Whose music, to my thinking, pleas'd the king.  
Come, will you hence ? [Exeunt.]

### EPILOGUE

SPOKEN BY A DANCER

First, my fear ; then, my court'sy ; last, my  
speech. My fear is, your displeasure ; my  
court'sy, my duty ; and my speech, to beg your  
pardons. If you look for a good speech now,  
you undo me : for what I have to say is of mine  
own making ; and what, indeed, I should say,

will, I doubt, prove mine own marring. But to  
the purpose, and so to the venture.—Be it known  
to you, (as it is very well,) I was lately here in  
the end of a displeasing play, to pray your pati-  
ence for it, and to promise you a better. I did  
mean, indeed, to pay you with this : which, if,  
like an ill venture, it come unluckily home, I  
break, and you, my gentle creditors, lose. Here,  
I promised you, I would be, and here I commit  
my body to your mercies : bate me some, and I  
will pay you some, and, as most debtors do,  
promise you infinitely.

If my tongue cannot entreat you to acquit me,  
will you command me to use my legs ? and yet  
that were but light payment,—to dance out of  
your debt. But a good conscience will make any  
possible satisfaction, and so will I. All the gen-  
tlewomen here have forgiven me ; if the gentle-  
men will not, then the gentlemen do not agree  
with the gentlewomen, which was never seen  
before in such an assembly.

One word more, I beseech you. If you be not  
too much cloyed with fat meat, our humble  
author will continue the story, with Sir John in  
it, and make you merry with fair Katharine of  
France : where, for any thing I know, Falstaff  
shall die of a sweat, unless already he be killed  
with your hard opinions ; for Oldcastle died a  
martyr, and this is not the man. My tongue is  
weary ; when my legs are too, I will bid you  
good night : and so kneel down before you ;—  
but, indeed, to pray for the queen.\*

\* Most of the ancient interludes conclude with a  
prayer for the King or Queen. Hence, perhaps, the  
*Vicent Rex et Regina*, at the bottom of our modern play-  
bills.

# KING HENRY V.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE transactions comprized in this historical play commence about the latter end of the first, and terminate in the eighth, year of King Henry's reign; or with the marriage between him and Katharine, princess of France, which reconciled the differences of the two crowns. It was written in the year 1599, at the time when Elizabeth's forces in Ireland were commanded by the Earl of Essex. Shakspeare, who had shewn the boundless foibles and dissipation of Henry, whilst a prince, was under the necessity of portraying the dignity and lustre of his character as a monarch. In this, with one exception (the scene of his courtship) he has fully succeeded. The old woman's account of Falstaff's death is admirably written: it is simply pathetic, and naturally circumstantial: every reader must regret bidding adieu to the facetious old knight, whose jokes so invariably produced a smile. Of Pistol, Dr Johnson says, "his character has perhaps been the model of all the bullies that have yet appeared on the English stage."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE FIFTH.  
DUKE OF GLOSTER, } *Brothers to the King.*  
DUKE OF BEDFORD, }  
DUKE OF EXETER, } *Uncle to the King.*  
DUKE OF YORK, } *Cousin to the King.*  
EARLS OF SALISBURY, WESTMORELAND, and  
WARWICK.  
ARCHBISHOP OF CANTERBURY. \*  
BISHOP OF ELY.  
EARL OF CAMBRIDGE, } *Conspirators against*  
LORD SCROOP, } *the King.*  
SIR THOMAS GREY, }  
SIR THOMAS ERPINGHAM, GOWER, FLUELLEN,  
MACMORRIS, JAMY, } *Officers in King*  
*Henry's Army.*  
BATES, COURT, WILLIAMS, } *Soldiers in the*  
*same.*  
NYM, BARDOLPH, PISTOL, } *formerly Servants*  
*to Falstaff, now Soldiers in the same.*  
BOT, } *Servant to them.*—A HERALD.—CHORUS.

CHARLES THE SIXTH, *King of France.*  
LEWIS, *the Dauphin.*  
DUKES OF BURGUNDY, ORLEANS, and BOURBON.  
*The Constable of France.*  
RAMBURES, and GRANDPRE, *French Lords.*  
GOVERNOR OF HARFLEUR. MONTJOY, *a French Herald.*  
AMBASSADORS to the King of England.  
ISABEL, *Queen of France.*  
KATHARINE, *Daughter of Charles and Isabel.*  
ALICE, *a Lady attending on the Princess Katharine.*  
QUICKLY, *Pistol's wife, a Hostess.*  
*Lords, Ladies, Officers, French and English Soldiers, Messengers, and Attendants.*

THE SCENE, at the beginning of the play, lies in England; but afterwards wholly in France.

### Enter CHORUS.

Oh! for a muse of fire,\* that would ascend  
The brightest heaven of invention!  
A kingdom for a stage, princes to act,  
And monarchs to behold the swelling scene!  
Then should the waike Harry, like himself,  
Assume the port of Mars; and, at his heels,  
Leash'd in like hounds, should famine, sword,  
and fire,  
Crouch for employment. But pardon, gentles  
all,  
The flat unrais'd spirit that hath dar'd  
On this unworthy scaffold to bring forth  
So great an object: Can this cockpit hold  
The vasty fields of France; or may we cram  
Within this wooden O,† the very casques,  
That did affright the air at Agincourt?  
O pardon! since a crooked figure may

\* Alluding to the Peripatetic system; which imagined several heavens one above another; the last and highest of which was one of fire.

† An allusion to the circular form of the theatre.

Attest, in little place, a million;  
And let us, ciphers to this great account,  
On your imaginary forces\* work:  
Suppose, within the girdle of these walls  
Are now confin'd two mighty monarchs,  
Whose high up-reared and abutting fronts  
The perilous, narrow ocean parts asunder.  
Piece out our imperfections with your thoughts;  
Into a thousand parts divide one man,  
And make imaginary puissance:  
Think, when we talk of horses, that you see them  
Printing their proud hoofs i' the receiving earth:  
For 'tis your thoughts that now must deck our  
kings,  
Carry them here and there: jumping o'er times;  
Turning the accomplishment of many years  
Into an hour glass; For the which supply,  
Admit me chorns to this history;  
Who, prologue-like, your humble patience pray,  
Gently to hear, kindly to judge, our play.

\* Powers of fancy.

## ACT I.

**SCENE I.**—*London.—An Antechamber in the King's Palace.*

*Enter the Archbishop of CANTERBURY, and Bishop of ELY.*

*Cant.* My lord, I'll tell you, that self bill is urg'd,  
Which, in the eleventh year o'the last king's reign

Was like, and had indeed against us pass'd,  
But that the scrambling and unquiet time  
Did push it out of further question.

*Ely.* But how, my lord, shall we resist it now?

*Cant.* It must be thought on. If it pass against us,

We lose the better half of our possession;  
For all the temporal lauds which men devout  
By testament have given to the church,  
Would they strip from us; being valued thus,—  
As much as would maintain, to the king's honour,

Full fifteen earls, and fifteen hundred knights;  
Six thousand and two hundred good esquires;  
And to relief of lazars, and weak age,  
Of indigent faint souls, past corporal toil,  
A hundred alms-houses right-well supplied;  
And to the coffers of the king beside,  
A thousand pounds by the year: Thus runs the bill.

*Ely.* This would drink deep.

*Cant.* 'Twould drink the cup and all.

*Ely.* But what prevention?

*Cant.* The king is full of grace and fair regard.

*Ely.* And a true lover of the holy church.

*Cant.* The courses of his youth promis'd it not.

The breath no sooner left his father's body,  
But that his wildness, mortified in him,  
Seem'd to die too: yea, at that very moment,  
Consideration like an angel came,  
And whipp'd the offending Adam out of him;  
Leaving his body as a paradise,  
To envelop and contain celestial spirits.  
Never was such a sudden scholar made;  
Never came reformation in a flood,\*  
With such a heady current scouring faults;  
Nor never Hydra-headed wilfulness  
So soon did lose his seat, and all at once,  
As in this king.

*Ely.* We are blessed in the change.

*Cant.* Hear him but reason in divinity,  
And, all-admiring, with an inward wish  
You would desire the king were made a prelate:

Hear him debate of commonwealth affairs,  
You would say, It hath been all-in-all his study:

List his discourse of war, and you shall hear  
A fearful battle render'd you in music:  
Turn him to any cause of policy,  
The Gordian knot of it he will unloose,  
Familiar as his garter; that, when he speaks,  
The air, a charter'd libertine, is still,  
And the mute wonder lurketh in men's ears,  
To steal his sweet and honeyed sentences;  
So that the art and practice-part of life  
Must be the mistress to this theoretic:†  
Which is a wonder, how his grace should glean it,

Since his addiction was to courses vain;  
His companies; unletter'd, rude, and shallow;  
His hours fill'd up with riots, banquets, sports;

And never noted in him any study,  
Any retirement, any sequesteration  
From open haunts and popularity.

*Ely.* The strawberry grows underneath the nettle;

And wholesome berries thrive and ripen best,  
Neighbour'd by fruit of baser quality:  
And so the prince obscur'd his contemplation  
Under the veil of wildness; which, no doubt,  
Grew like summer grass, fastest by night,  
Unseen, yet crescent\* in his faculty.

*Cant.* It must be so: for miracles are ceas'd  
And therefore we must needs admit the means  
How things are perfected.

*Ely.* But, my good lord,  
How now for mitigation of this bill  
Urg'd by the commons? Doth his majesty  
Incline to it or no?

*Cant.* He seems indifferent;  
Or, rather, swaying more upon our part,  
Than cherishing the exhibitors against us:  
For I have made an offer to his majesty,  
(Upon our spiritual convocation;  
And in regard of causes now in hand,  
Which I have open'd to his grace at large,  
As touching France, to give a greater sum  
Than ever at one time the clergy yet  
Did to his predecessors part withal.

*Ely.* How did this offer seem receiv'd, my lord?

*Cant.* With good acceptance of his majesty;  
Save, that there was not time enough to hear  
(As I perceiv'd, his grace would fain have done.)

The severals and unhidden passages  
Of his true titles to some certain dukedom:  
And, generally, to the crown and seat of France,

Deriv'd from Edward, his great grandfather.

*Ely.* What was the impediment that broke this off?

*Cant.* The French ambassador, upon that instant

Civ'd audience; and the hour I think is come,  
To give him hearing: Is it four o'clock?

*Ely.* It is.

*Cant.* Then go we in to know his embassy;  
Which I could, with a ready guess, declare,  
Before the Frenchman speak a word of it.

*Ely.* I'll wait upon you; and I long to hear it. *[Exeunt.]*

**SCENE II.**—*The same.—A Room of State in the same.*

*Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, BEDFORD, EXETER, WARWICK, WESTMORELAND, and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Where is my gracious lord of Canterbury?

*Exe.* Not here in presence.

*K. Hen.* Send for him, good uncle.

*West.* Shall we call in the ambassador, my liege?

*K. Hen.* Not yet, my cousin; we would be resolv'd,  
Before we hear him, of some things of weight,  
That task our thoughts, concerning us and France.

*Enter the Archbishop of CANTERBURY, and Bishop of ELY.*

*Cant.* God and his angels guard your sacred throne,  
And make you long become it!

*K. Hen.* Sure, we thank you.  
My learned lord, we pray you to proceed;

And justly and religiously unfold,  
Why the law Salique, that they have in France  
Or should, or should not, bar us in our claim.  
And God forbid, my dear and faithful lord,  
That you should fashion, wrest, or bow your reading,

Or nicely charge your understanding soul  
With opening titles miscreate,† whose right  
Suits not in native colours with the truth;  
For God doth know how many now in health

\* Alluding to the method by which Hercules cleansed the Augean stable: viz. turning a river through it.  
† Theory.

‡ Companions.

\* Increasing.

† Spurious.

Shall drop their blood in approbation  
Of what your reverence shall incite us to :  
Therefore take heed how you impawn our  
person ;

How you awake the sleeping sword of war :—  
We charge you in the name of God, take heed :  
For never two such kingdoms did contend,  
Without much fall of blood ; whose guiltless  
drops

Are every one a woe, a sore complaint,  
'Gainst him, whose wrongs give edge unto the  
swords

That make such waste in brief mortality.  
Under this conjunction, speak, my lord ;  
And we will hear, note, and believe in heart,  
That what you speak is in your conscience  
wash'd

As pure as sin with baptism.

*Cant.* Then hear me, gracious sovereign,—  
and you peers,

That owe your lives, your faith, and services,  
To this imperial throne :—There is no bar \*  
To make against your highness' claim to France,  
But this, which they produce from Phara-  
mond,—

*In terram Salicam mulieres ne succedant,  
No woman shall succeed in Salique land ;*  
Which Salique land the French unjustly glose,†  
To be the realm of France, and Pharamond  
The founder of this law and female bar.  
Yet their own authors faithfully affirm,  
That the land Salique lies in Germany,  
Between the floods of Sala and of Elbe :  
Where Charles the great, having subdued the  
Saxons,

There left behind and settled certain French ;  
Who, holding in disdain the German women,  
For some dishonour manners of their life,  
Establish'd there this law,—to wit, no female  
Should be inheritrix in Salique land ;  
Which Salique, as I said, 'twixt Elbe and  
Sala,

Is at this day in Germany call'd Meisen.  
Thus doth it well appear, the Salique law  
Was not devised for the realm of France :  
Nor did the French possess the Salique land  
Until four hundred one and twenty years  
After defunction of king Pharamond,  
Idly suppos'd the founder of this law ;  
Who died within the year of our redemption  
Four hundred twenty-six ; and Charles the  
great

Subdued the Saxons, and did seat the French  
Beyond the river Sala, in the year  
Eight hundred five. Besides, their writers say,  
King Pepin, which deposed Childerick,  
Did, as heir general, being descended  
Of Blithild, which was the daughter to Clo-  
thair,

Make claim and title to the crown of France.  
Hugh Capet also, that usurp'd the crown  
Of Charles the duke of Lorraine, sole heir male  
Of the true line and stock of Charles the  
great.

To due ‡ his title with some show of truth,  
(Though in pure truth, it was corrupt and  
naught.)

Convey'd § himself as heir to the lady Lingare,  
Daughter to Charlemain, who was the son  
To Lewis the emperor, and Lewis the son  
Of Charles the great. Also king Lewis the  
great,

Who was sole heir to the usurper Capet,  
Could not keep quiet in his conscience,  
Wearing the crown of France, till satisfied  
That fair queen Isabel, his grandmother,  
Was issue of the lady Ermengare,  
Daughter to Charles the foresaid duke of  
Lorraine :

By the which marriage, the line of Charles the  
great

\* The whole of this long speech is from Holli-  
shed.

† Explain.

‡ Make showy or specious.

§ Derived his title.

Was re-united to the crown of France.

So that, as clear as is the summer's sun,  
King Pepin's title, and Hugh Capet's claim,  
King Lewis his satisfaction, all appear  
To hold in right and title of the female ;  
So do the kings of France unto this day ;  
Howbeit they would hold up this Salique law,  
To bar your highness claiming from the female ;  
And rather choose to hide them in a net,  
Than amply to linchare \* their crooked titles  
Usurp'd from you and your progenitors.

*K. Hen.* May I, with right and conscience,  
make this claim †

*Cant.* The sin upon my head, dread so-  
vereign ! ‡

For in the book of Numbers is it writ,  
When the son dies, let the inheritance  
Descend unto the daughter. Gracious lord,  
Stand for your own ; unwind your bloody flag ;  
Look back unto your mighty ancestors :  
Go, my dread lord, to your great grandsire's  
tomb,  
From whom you claim ; invoke his warlike  
spirit,

And your great uncle's Edward the black  
prince ;

Who on the French ground play'd a tragedy,  
Making defeat on the full power of France ;  
Whiles his most mighty father on a hill  
Stood smiling, to behold his lion's help  
Forage in blood of French nobility. \*  
O noble English that could entertain  
With half their forces the full pride of France ;  
And let another half stand laughing by,  
All out of work, and cold for action !

*Ely.* Awake remembrance of these valiant  
dead,

And with your puissant arm renew their feats :  
You are their heir, you sit upon their throne ;  
The blood and courage, that renowned them,  
Runs in your veins ; and my thrice-puissant  
liege

Is in the very May-morn of his youth,  
Ripe for exploits and mighty enterprises.

*Etc.* Your brother kings and monarchs of  
the earth

Do all expect that you should rouse yourself,  
As did the former lions of your blood.

*West.* They know your grace hath cause, and  
means, and might ;

So hath your highness ; never king of England  
Had nobles richer and more loyal subjects ;  
Whose hearts have left their bodies here in  
England,

And lie pavilion'd in the fields of France.

*Cant.* O let their bodies follow, my dear  
liege,

With blood, and sword, and fire, to win your  
right :

In aid whereof, we of the spirituality  
Will raise your highness such a mighty sum,  
As never did the clergy at one time  
Bring in to any of your ancestors.

*K. Hen.* We must not only arm to invade the  
French ;

But lay down our proportions to defend  
Against the Scot, who will make road upon us  
With all advantages.

*Cant.* They of those marches, § gracious so-  
vereign,

Shall be a wall sufficient to defend  
Our inland from the pelfing borderers.

*K. Hen.* We do not mean the coursing snat-  
chers only ;

But fear the main intentment ¶ of the Scot,  
Who hath been still a giddy neighbour to us ;  
For you shall read, that my great grandfather  
Never went with his forces into France,  
But that the Scot, on his unfurnish'd kingdom,

\* Lay open.

† This Chichey, archbishop of Canterbury, recom-  
mended an attack upon France, to save the moveables of  
Mather Church in France.

‡ At the battle of  
Crécy.

§ The borders of England and Scot-  
land.

¶ General disposition.

Came pouring like the tide unto a breach,  
With ample and brim-fulness of his force;  
Galling the gleaned land with hot essays;  
Guiding with grievous siege castles and towns;  
That England, being empty of defence,  
Hath shook and trembled at the ill neighbour-  
hood.

*Canst.* She hath been then more fear'd \* than  
harm'd, my liege:

For hear her but exampled by herself,—  
When all her chivalry hath been in France,  
And she a mourning widow of her nobles,  
She hath herself not only well defended,  
But taken and impounded as a stray,  
The king of Scots; whom she did send to  
France.

To fill king Edward's fame with prisoner  
kings;

And make your chronicle as rich with praise,  
As is the ooze and bottom of the sea  
With sunken wreck and sumless treasures.

*H'est.* But there's a saying, very old and  
true,—

*If that you will France win,  
Then with Scotland first begin:*

For once the eagle England being in prey,  
To her unguarded nest the weasel Scot  
Comes sneaking; and so sucks her princely  
eggs;

Playing the mouse, in absence of the cat,  
To spoil and havoc more than she can eat.

*Ere.* It follows then, the cat must stay at  
home:

Yet that is but a curs'd necessity;  
Since we have locks to safeguard necessities,  
And pretty traps to catch the petty thieves.  
While that the armed hand doth fight abroad,  
The advised head defends itself at home:  
For government, though high, and low, and  
lower,

Put into parts, doth keep in one consent; †  
Congruing ‡ in a full and natural close,  
Like music.

*Canst.* True: therefore doth heaven divide  
The state of man in divers functions,  
Setting endeavour in continual motion:  
To which is fixed, as an aim or butt,  
Obedience: for so work the honey bees;  
Creatures, that, by a rule in nature, teach  
The act of order to a peopled kingdom.  
They have a king, and officers of sorts: §  
Where some, like magistrates, correct at home;  
Others, like merchants, venture trade abroad;  
Others, like soldiers, armed in their stings,  
Make boot upon the summer's velvet buds;  
Which pillage they with merry march bring  
To the tent-royal of their emperor: [home

Who, busied in his majesty, surveys  
The singing masons building roofs of gold;  
The civil || citizens kneading up the honey;  
The poor mechanic porters crowding in  
Their heavy burdens at his narrow gate;  
The sad-eyed justice, with his surly hum,  
Delivering o'er to executors ¶ pale  
The lazy yawning drone. I this infer,—  
That many things, having full reference  
To our consent, may work contrariwise;  
As many arrows, loosed several ways,  
Fly to one mark;  
As many several ways meet in one town;  
As many fresh streams run in one self sea:  
As many lines close in the dial's centre;  
So many a thousand actions, once afoot,  
End in one purpose, and be all well borne  
Without defeat. Therefore to France, my  
liege.

Divide your happy England into four;  
Whereof take you one quarter into France,  
And you withal shall make all Gallia shake.  
If we, with thrice that power left at home,

Cannot defend our own door from the dog,

Let us be worried; and our nation lose  
The name of hardiness and policy.

*K. Hen.* Call in the messengers sent from  
the Dauphin.

[*Exit an Attendant. The King ascends  
his Throne.*]

Now are we well resolv'd; and, by God's  
help

And your's the noble sinews of our power,  
France being our's, we'll bend it to our awe,  
Or break it all to pieces: Or there we'll sit,  
Ruling, in large and ample empery,  
O'er France, and all her almost kingly duke-  
doms;

Or lay these bones in an unworthy urn,  
Tombless, with no remembrance over them:  
Either our history shall, with full mouth,  
Speak freely of our acts; or else our grave,  
Like Turkish mute, shall have a tongueless  
mouth,  
Not worship'd with a waxen epitaph.

*Enter Ambassadors of France.*

Now are we well prepar'd to know the plea-  
sure

Of our fair cousin Dauphin; for, we hear,  
Your greeting is from him, not from the king.

*Amb.* May it please your majesty, to give us  
leave

Freely to render what we have in charge;

Or shall we sparingly show you far off

The Dauphin's meaning, and our embassy?

*K. Hen.* We are no tyrant, but a Christian  
king;

Unto whose grace our passion is as subject,  
As are our wretches fetter'd in our prisons:  
Therefore, with frank and with uncurbed plain-  
ness,

Tell us the Dauphin's mind.

*Amb.* Thus then, in few.

Your highness, lately sending into France,  
Did claim some certain dukedoms, in the right  
Of your great predecessor, king Edward the  
third.

In answer of which claim, the prince our  
master

Says, that you savour too much of your youth;  
And bids you be advis'd, there's nought in  
France,

That can be with a nimble galliard † won;  
You cannot revel into dukedoms there:  
He therefore sends you, meet for your spirit,  
This tun of treasure; and in lieu of this,  
Desires you let the dukedoms that you claim,  
Hear no more of you. This the Dauphin  
speaks.

*K. Hen.* What treasure, uncle ‡

*Ere.* Tennis-balls, my liege.

*K. Hen.* We are glad the Dauphin is so plea-  
sant with us; †

His present, and your pains, we thank you for:  
When we have match'd our rackets to these  
balls,

We will, in France, by God's grace, play a set,  
Shall strike his father's crown into the hazard:  
Tell him, he hath made a match with such a  
wrangler,

That all the courts of France will be disturb'd  
With chaces. And we understand him well,  
How he comes o'er us with our wilder days,  
Not measuring what use we made of them.  
We never valu'd this poor seat of England;  
And therefore, living hence, did give ourself  
To barbarous licence: As 'tis ever common,  
That men are merriest when they are from  
home.

But, tell the Dauphin, I will keep my state;  
Be like a king, and show my sail of greatness,  
When I do rouse me in my throne of France;

\* Dominion.

† An ancient dance.

‡ This story is by no means credible: the great officers  
made by France, to avert the war, shew that they enter-  
tain'd a just idea of Henry's character.—*Hume.*

• Frightened.  
‡ Agreeing  
§ Sober, grave.

† Harmony.  
‡ Different degrees.  
¶ Executioners.



For that I have laid by my majesty,  
 And piddled like a man for working days;  
 But I will rise there with so full a glory,  
 That I will dazzle all the eyes of France,  
 Yea, strike the Dauphin blind to look on us.  
 And tell the pleasant prince, this mock of his  
 Hath turn'd his balls to gun-stones;\* and his  
 soul [geance  
 Shall stand sore charged for the wasteful ven-  
 That shall fly with them: for many a thousand  
 widows [bands;  
 Shall this his mock mock out of their dear hus-  
 Mock mothers from their sons, mock castles  
 down;  
 And some are yet ungotten, and unborn,  
 That shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's  
 scorn.  
 But this lies all within the will of God,  
 To whom I do appeal, and, in whose name,  
 Tell you the Dauphin I am coming on,  
 To venge me as I may, and to put forth  
 My rightful hand in a well-hallow'd cause.  
 So, get you hence in peace; and tell the Dau-  
 His jest will savour but of shallow wit, [phin,  
 When thousands weep, more than did laugh  
 at it.—  
 Convey them with safe conduct.—Fare you well.

[*Exeunt AMBASSADORS.*]

Ere. This was a merry message.

K. Hen. We hope to make the seuder blush  
 at it. [*Descends from his Throne.*]

Therefore, my lords, omit no happy hour,  
 That may give furtherance to our expedition:  
 For we have now no thought in us but France;  
 Save those to God, that run before our business.  
 Therefore, let our proportion for these wars  
 Be soon collected; and all things thought upon,  
 That may, with reasonable swiftness, add  
 More feathers to our wings; for, God before,  
 We'll chide this Dauphin at his father's door.  
 Therefore, let every man now task his thought,  
 That this fair action may on foot be brought.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## Enter CHORUS.

Chor. Now, all the youth of England are on  
 fire,

And silken dalliance in the wardrobe lies:  
 Now thrive the armourers, and honour's thought  
 Reigns solely in the breast of every man:  
 They sell the pasture now, to buy the horse;  
 Following the mirror of all Christian kings,  
 With winged heels, as English Mercuries.  
 For now sits Expectation in the air;  
 And hides a sword, † from hills unto the point,  
 With crowns imperial, crowns, and coronets,  
 Promis'd to Harry and his followers.  
 The French, advis'd by good intelligence  
 Of this most dreadful preparation,  
 Shake in their fear; and with pale policy  
 Seek to divert the English purposes.  
 O England! model to thy inward greatness,  
 Like little body with a mighty heart,  
 What might'st thou do, that honour would thee do,  
 Were all thy children kind and natural!  
 But see thy fault! France, bath in thee found out  
 A nest of hollow bosoms, which he ‡ fills  
 With treacherous crowns: and three corrupted  
 men,  
 One, Richard earl of Cambridge; and the second,  
 Henry lord Scroop of Marston; and the third,  
 Sir Thomas Grey knight of Northumberland,  
 Have for the gilt § of France, (O guilt, indeed!)

\* Balls of stone were discharged from ordnance formerly.

† Shakespeare perhaps took this idea from the figure of Edward III. in the ancient armoury of the tower; that king being represented with two crowns upon the point of his sword, in allusion to the two kingdoms of France and England.

‡ I. e. The king of France.

§ Golden money.

Confirm'd conspiracy with fearful France;  
 And by their hands this grace of kings must die,  
 (If hell and treason hold their promises,) Ere he take ship for France, and in Southamp-  
 ton.

Linger your patience on; and well digest  
 The abuse of distance, while we force a play.  
 The sun is paid; the traitors are agreed;  
 The king is set from London; and the scene  
 Is now transported, gentles, to Southampton:  
 There is the playhouse now, there must you sit:  
 And thence to France shall we convey you safe,  
 And bring you back, charming the narrow seas  
 To give you gentle pass: for, if we may,  
 We'll not offend one stomach with our play.  
 But, till the king come forth, and not till then,  
 Unto Southampton do we shift our scene.

[*Exit.*]

## SCENE I.—The same.—Eastcheap.

## Enter NYM and BARDOLPH.

Bard. Well met, corporal Nym.  
 Nym. Good morrow, lieutenant Bardolph.

Bard. What, are ancient Pistol and your  
 friends yet?

Nym. For my part, I care not: I say little;  
 but when time shall serve, there shall be  
 smiles;—but that shall be as it may. I dare  
 not fight; but I will wink, and hold out mine hon-  
 It is a simple one: but what thought! it will  
 toast cheese: and it will endure cold as another  
 man's sword will: and there's the humour of it.

Bard. I will bestow a breakfast, to make you  
 friends: and we'll be all three sworn brothers  
 to France: let it be so, good corporal Nym.

Nym. Faith, I will live so long as I may,  
 that's the certain of it; and when I cannot live  
 any longer, I will do as I may: that is my  
 rest, \* that is the rendezvous of it.

Bard. It is certain, corporal, that he is mar-  
 ried to Nell Quickly; and, certainly, she did you  
 wrong; for you were troth-plight to her.

Nym. I cannot tell; things must be as they  
 may: men may sleep, and they may have their  
 throats about them at that time; and, some say,  
 knives have edges. It must be as it may: then, in  
 patience be a tired mare, yet she will plod.  
 There must be conclusions. Well, I cannot  
 tell.

## Enter PISTOL and Mrs. QUICKLY.

Bard. Here comes ancient Pistol, and his  
 wife:—good corporal, be patient here.—How  
 now, mine host Pistol?

Pist. Base tike, † call'st thou me host?  
 Now, by this hand I swear, I scorn the term;  
 Nor shall my Nell keep lodgers.

Quick. No, by my troth, not long: for we  
 cannot lodge and board a dozen or fourteen  
 gentlewomen, that live honestly by the pick of  
 their needles, but it will be thought we keep a  
 bawdy-house straight. [*Nym draws his sword.*]  
 O well-a-day, Lady, if he be not drawn now!  
 O Lord! here's corporal Nym's—now shall we  
 have wilful adultery and murder committed.  
 Good lieutenant Bardolph,—good corporal, offer  
 nothing here.

Nym. Pish!

Pist. Pish for thee, Iceland dog! thou prick-  
 eared cur of Iceland!

Quick. Good corporal Nym, show the valour  
 of a man, and put up thy sword.

Nym. Will you shog off? I would have you  
 solus. [*Sheathing his sword.*]

Pist. Solus, egregious dog? O viper vile!  
 The solus in thy most marvellous face;  
 The solus in thy teeth, and in thy throat,  
 And in thy hateful lungs, yea, in thy maw,  
 perdy; ‡

And, which is worse, within thy nasty mouth!  
 I do retort the solus in thy bowels:  
 For I can take, and Pistol's cock is up,  
 And flashing fire will follow.

\* What I am resolved on. † Clown. ‡ Per Dieu!

*Nym.* I am not Barbason; \* you cannot conjure me. I have a humour to knock you indifferently well: if you grow foul with me Pistol, I will scour you with my rapier, as I may, in fair terms: if you would walk off, I would prick your guts a little, in good terms, as I may; and that's the humour of it.

*Pist.* O braggard vile, and damned furious wight!

The grave doth gape, and dotting death is near; Therefore exhale. † [*Pistol and Nym draw.*]

*Bard.* Hear me, hear me what I say:—he that strikes the first stroke, I'll run him up to the hilts, as I am a soldier. [*Draws.*]

*Pist.* An oath of mickle might; and fury shall abate.

Give me thy fist, thy fore-foot to me give; Thy spirits are most tall.

*Nym.* I will cut thy throat, one time or other, in fair terms; that is the humour of it.

*Pist.* *Coup le gorge*, that's the word!—I thee defy again.

O hound of Crete, ‡ think'st thou my spouse to get?

No; to the spital § go, And from the powdering tub of infamy

Fetch forth the lazar kite of Cressid's kind, || Doll Tear-sheet she by name, and her espouse:

I have, and I will hold, the *quondam* ¶. Quickly For the only she; and—*Pauca*, there's enough.

*Enter the Boy.*

*Roy.* Mine host Pistol, you must come to my master,—and you, hostess;—he is very sick, and would to bed.—Good Bardolph, put thy nose between his sheets, and do the office of a warming-pan: 'faith, he's very ill.

*Bard.* Away, you rogue.

*Quick.* By my troth, he'll yield the crow a pudding one of these days: the king has killed his heart.—Good husband, come home presently,

[*Exeunt Mrs. Quickly and Boy.*]

*Bard.* Come, shall I make you two friends? We must to France together; Why, the devil, should we keep knives to cut one another's throats?

*Pist.* Let floods o'erswell, and floods for food bowl on!

*Nym.* You'll pay me the eight shillings I won of you at betting?

*Pist.* Base is the slave that pays.

*Nym.* That now I will have; that's the humour of it.

*Pist.* As mauhood shall compound: Push home.

*Bard.* By this sword, he that makes the first thrust, I'll kill him: by this sword, I will.

*Pist.* Sword is an oath, and oaths must have their course.

*Bard.* Corporal Nym, as thou wilt be friends, be friends: as thou wilt not, why then be enemies with me too. Prythee, put up.

*Nym.* I shall have my eight shillings I won of you at betting.

*Pist.* A noble \*\* shalt thou have, and present pay;

And liquor likewise will I give to thee, And friendship shall combine, and brotherhood;

I'll live by Nym, and Nym shall live by me:—Is not this just?—for I shall suter be Unto the camp, and profits will accrue.

Give me thy hand.

*Nym.* I shall have my noble?

*Pist.* In cash most justly paid.

*Nym.* Well then, that's the humour of it.

*Re-enter Mrs. Quickly.*

*Quick.* As ever you came of women, come in

\* Name of a demon.

† Breathe your last.

‡ Blood hound.

§ Hospital.

|| Of Cressida's nature: see the play of *Trilus* and *Cressida*.

¶ Formerly.

\*\* A coin, value six shillings and eight pence.

quickly to Sir John: Ah! poor heart! he is so shaken of a burning quotidian tertian, that it is most lamentable to behold. Sweet men, come to him.

*Nym.* The king hath run bad humours on the knight, that's the even of it.

*Pist.* Nym, thou hast spoke the right; His heart is fracted and corroborate.

*Nym.* The king is a good king; but it must be as it may; he passes some humours, and careers.

*Pist.* Let us condole the knight; for, lambskins, we will live. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE II.—Southampton.—A Council-Chamber.*

*Enter EXETER, BEDFORD, and WESTMORELAND.*

*Bcd.* 'Fore God, his grace is bold, to trust these traitors.

*Exe.* They shall be apprehended by and by.

*West.* How smooth and even they do bear themselves!

As if allegiance in their bosoms sat, Crowned with faith, and constant loyalty.

*Bcd.* The king hath note of all that they intend,

By interception which they dream not of.

*Exe.* Nay, but the man that was his bed-fellow,

Whom he hath cloy'd and grac'd with princely favours,

That he should, for a foreign purse, so sell His sovereign's life to death and treachery!

*Trumpet sounds. Enter King HENRY, SCROOP, CAMBRIDGE, GREY, Lords, and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Now sits the wind fair, and we will aboard.

My lord of Cambridge,—and my kind lord of Masham,—

And you, my gentle knight,—give me your thoughts:

Think you not, that the powers we bear with us, Will cut their passage through the force of France,

Doing the execution, and the act, For which we have in head \* assembled them?

*Scroop.* No doubt, my liege, if each man do his best.

*K. Hen.* I doubt not that: since we are well persuaded,

We carry not a heart with us from hence, That grows not in a fair consent with our's:

Nor leave not one behind, that doth not wish Success and conquest to attend on us.

*Cam.* Never was monarch better fear'd and lov'd, [subject,

Than is your majesty; there's not, I think, a That sits in heart-grief and uneasiness

Under the sweet shade of your government.

*Grey.* Even those, that were your father's enemies,

Have steep'd their galls in honey; and do serve you

With hearts create † of duty and of zeal.

*K. Hen.* We therefore have great cause of thankfulness;

And shall forget the office of our hand, Sooner than quittance ‡ of desert and merit,

According to the weight and worthiness.

*Scroop.* So service shall with steeld sinews toil;

And labour shall refresh itself with hope, To do your grace incessant services.

*K. Hen.* We judge no less.—Uncle of Exeter Enlarge the man committed yesterday,

That rail'd against our person: we consider, It was excess of wine that set him on;

And, on his more advice, § we pardon him.

\* Force.

† Compounded.

‡ Recompence.

§ Better information.

*Scroop.* That's mercy, but too much security :  
Let him be punish'd, sovereign ; lest example  
Breed, by his surffiance, more of such a kind.

*A. Hen.* O let us yet be merciful.

*Cam.* So may your highness, and yet punish  
too.

*Grey.* Sir, you show great mercy, if you give  
him life,  
After the taste of much correction.

*K. Hen.* Alas ! your too much love and care  
of me

Are heavy orisons \* 'gainst this poor wretch.

If little faults, proceeding on distemper,  
Shall not be wink'd at, how shall we stretch  
our eye,

When capital crimes, chew'd, swallow'd, and  
digested,†

Appear before us ?—We'll yet enlarge that man,  
Though Cambridge, Scroop, and Grey, in their  
dear care,

And tender preservation of our person,  
Would have him punish'd. And now to our  
French causes ;

Who are the late † commissioners ?

*Cam.* I one, my lord :

Your highness bade me ask for it to-day. \*

*Scroop.* So did you me, my liege.

*Grey.* And me, my royal sovereign.

*K. Hen.* Then, Richard, earl of Cambridge,  
there is your's :—

There your's, lord Scroop of Masham ;—and  
Sir knight,

Grey of Northumberland, this same is your's :—  
Read them ; and know, I know your worth-  
iness.—

My lord of Westmoreland, and uncle Exeter,  
We will aboard to-night.—Why, how now gen-  
tlemen ?

What see you in those papers, that you lose  
So much complexion ?—look ye, how they changel  
their cheeks are paper. Why, what read you  
there,

That hath so cowarded and chas'd your blood  
Out of appearance ?

*Cam.* I do confess my fault :

And do submit me to your highness' mercy.

*Grey.* Scroop. To which we all appeal.

*K. Hen.* The mercy, that was quick † in us  
but late,

By your own counsel is suppress'd and kill'd :  
You must not dare, for shame, to talk of mercy ;  
For your own reasons turn into your bosoms,  
As dogs upon their masters, worrying them.

See you, my princes, and my noble peers,  
These English monsters ! My lord of Cambridge  
here,—

You know, how apt our love was, to accord  
To furnish him with all appertinents

Belonging to his honour ; and this man

Hath, for a few light crowns, lightly conspir'd,

And sworn unto the practices of France,

To kill us here in Hampton : to the which,  
This knight, no less for bounty bound to us

Than Cambridge is, hath likewise sworn—  
But oh !

What shall I say to thee, lord Scroop ; thou  
cruel,

Ingrateful, savage, and inhuman creature !

Thou, that didst bear the key of all my coun-  
sels,

That knew'st the very bottom of my soul,  
That almost might'st have coin'd me into gold,

Would'st thou have practis'd on me for thy use ?  
May it be possible, that foreign hire

Could out of thee extract one spark of evil,  
That might annoy my finger ? 'tis so strange,

That though the truth of it stands off as gross  
As black from white, my eye will scarcely  
see it.

Treason and murder ever kept together,

As two yoke-devils sworn to either's purpose,

Working so grossly in a natural cause,

That admiration did not whoop at them ;

But thou, 'gainst all proportion, didst bring in

Wonder, to wait on treason and on murder :

And whatsoever cunning fiend it was,

That wrought upon thee so preposterously,

Hath got the voice in hell for excellence.

And other devils, that suggest by treasons,

Do botch and bungle up damnation

With patches, colours, and with forms being

fetch'd

From glistening semblances of piety ;

But he, that temper'd \* thee, bade thee stand up,

Gave thee no instance why thou should'st do

treason,

Unless to dub thee with the name of traitor.

If that same demon, that hath gull'd thee thus,

Should with his lion gait † walk the whole

world,

He might return to vasty Tartar ‡ back,

And tell the legions— I can never win

A soul so easy as that Englishman's.

Oh ! how hast thou with jealousy infected

The sweetness of affiance ! Show men dutiful ?

Why, so didst thou : Seem they grave and

learn'd †

Why, so didst thou : Come they of noble family ?

Why, so didst thou : Seem they religious ?

Why, so didst thou : Or are they spare in diet ;

Free from gross passion, or of mirth, or anger ;

Constant in spirit, not swerving with the

blood ;

Garnish'd and deck'd in modest complement ; §

Not working with the eye, without the ear,

And, but in purged judgment trusting neither ?

Such, and so finely bolted, † didst thou seem :

And thus thy fall hath left a kind of blot,

To mark the full-fraught man, and best in-  
duced, ¶

With some suspicion. I will weep for thee ;

For this revolt of thine, methinks, is like

Another fall of man.—Their faults are open,

Arrest them to the answer of the law ;

And God acquit them of their practices !

† Ere I arrest thee of high treason, by the name

of Richard earl of Cambridge.

† I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of

Henry lord Scroop of Masham.

† I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of

Thomas Grey, knight of Northumberland.

Scroop. Our purposes God justly hath dis-  
cover'd ;

And I repent my fault more than my death :

Which I beseech your highness to forgive,

Although my body pay the price of it.

Cam. For me,—the gold of France did not  
seduce ;

Although I did admit it as a motive,

The sooner to effect what I intended :

But God be thanked for prevention ;

Which I in surffiance heartily will rejoice,

Beseeching God, and you, to pardon me.

Grey. Never did faithful subject more re-  
joice

At the discovery of most dangerous treason,

Than I do at this hour joy o'er myself,

Prevented from a damned enterprise :

My fault, but not my body, pardon, sovereign.

K. Hen. God quit you in his mercy ! Hear  
your sentence.

You have conspir'd against our royal person,

Join'd with an enemy proclaim'd, and from his  
coffers

Receiv'd the golden earnest of our death ;

Wherein you would have sold your king to  
slaughter,

His princes and his peers to servitude,

His subjects to oppression and contempt,

And his whole kingdom unto desolation.

Touching our person, seek we no revenge ;

But we our kingdom's safety must so tender,

Whose ruin you three sought, that to her laws

\* Prayers.

† Lately appointed.  
‡ Living.

• Rendered thee pliable.  
‡ Tattered.  
† Shifted.

† Pace, step.  
‡ Accomplishment.  
¶ Endowed.

We do deliver you. Get you therefore hence,  
 Poor miserable wretches, to your death :  
 The taste whereof, God, of his mercy, give you  
 Patience to endure, and true repentance  
 Of all your dear offences !—Bear them hence.

[*Exeunt Conspirators, guarded.*  
 Now, lords, for France : the enterprize whereof  
 Shall be to you, as us, like glorious.  
 We doubt not of a fair and lucky war ;  
 Since God so graciously hath brought to light  
 This dangerous treason, lurking in our way,  
 To hinder our beginnings, we doubt not now,  
 But every rub is smoothed on our way.  
 Then, forth, dear countrymen ! let us deliver  
 Our puissance into the hand of God,  
 Putting it straight in expedition.  
 Cheerly to sea ; the signs of war advance :  
 No king of England, if not king of France.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—London.—Mrs. QUICKLY'S  
 House in Eastcheap.

Enter PISTOL, Mrs. QUICKLY, NYM, BARDOLPH, and BOY.

Quick. Pr'ythee, honey-sweet husband, let me  
 bring \* thee to Staines.

Pist. No ; for my manly heart doth yearn :—  
 Bardolph, be blithe ;—Nym, Iouse thy vaunting  
 veins ;

Boy, bristle thy courage up ; for Falstaff he is  
 dead,  
 And we must yearn therefore.

Bard. 'Would, I were with him, wheresome'er  
 he is, either in heaven or in hell !

Quick. Nay, sure, he's not in hell : he's in  
 Arthur's bosom, if ever man went to Arthur's  
 bosom. 'A made a finer end, and went away,  
 an it had been any christom ; child : 'a parted  
 even just between twelve and one, e'en at turn-  
 ing o'the tide : for after I saw him fumble with  
 the sheets, § and play with flowers, and smile  
 upon his fingers' ends, I knew there was but one  
 way ; for his nose was as sharp as a pen, and 'a  
 babbled of green fields. How now, Sir John ?  
 quoth I : what, man ! be of good cheer. So 'a  
 cried out—God, God, God ! three or four times :  
 now I, to comfort him, bid him, 'a should not  
 think of God ; I hoped there was no need to  
 trouble himself with any such thoughts yet : So,  
 'a bade me lay more clothes on his feet : I put  
 my hand into the bed, and felt them, and they  
 were as cold as any stone ; then I felt to his  
 knees, and so upward, and upward, and all was  
 as cold as any stone.

Nym. They say, he cried out of sack.

Quick. Ay, that 'a did.

Bard. And of women.

Quick. Nay, that 'a did not.

Boy. Yes, that 'a did ; and said, they were  
 devils incarnate.

Quick. 'A could never abide carnation ; 'twas  
 a colour he never liked.

Boy. 'A said once, the devil would have him  
 about women.

Quick. 'A did in some sort, indeed, handle  
 women : but then he was rheumatic ; || and talked  
 of the whore of Babylon.

Boy. Do you not remember, 'a saw a flea stick  
 upon Bardolph's nose ; and 'a said, it was a black  
 soul burning in hell-fire ?

Bard. Well, the fuel is gone, that maintained  
 that fire : that's all the riches I got in his ser-  
 vice.

Nym. Shall we shog off ? the king will be gone  
 from Southampton.

Pist. Come, let's away.—My love, give me  
 thy lips.

Look to my chattels, and my moveables :

\* Attend.

† Grieve.

‡ A child not more than a month old.

§ This indication of approaching death is enumerated  
 by Celsius, Longinus, Hippocrates, and Galen.

|| Mrs. Quickly means lunatic.

Let senses rule ; the word is, *Pitch and Pay* ;  
 Trust none ;

For oaths are straws, men's faiths are wafer  
 cakes,

And hold-fast is the only dog, my duck ;

Therefore *cave to* be thy counsellor.

Go, clear thy crystals. \*—Yoke-fellows in arms,  
 Let us to France ! like horse-leeches, my boys.

To suck, to suck, the very blood to suck !

Boy. And that is but unwholesome food they  
 say.

Pist. Touch her soft mouth, and march.

Bard. Farewell, hostess. [*Kissing her.*

Nym. I cannot kiss, that is the humour of it ;  
 but adieu.

Pist. Let housewifery appear ; keep close, I  
 thee command.

Quick. Farewell ; adieu. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—France.—A Room in the French  
 King's Palace.

Enter the FRENCH KING attended ; the DAU-  
 PHIN, the Duke of BURGUNDY, the CON-  
 STABLE, and others.

Fr. King. Thus come the English with full  
 power upon us ;

And more than carefully it us concerns,

To answer royally in our defences.

Therefore the dukes of Berry, and of Bretagne,  
 Of Brabant and of Orleans, shall make forth,—

And you, prince Dauphin,—with all swift des-  
 patch,

To line, and new repair, our towns of war,  
 With men of courage, and with means defend-  
 ant :

For England his approaches makes as fierce

As waters to the sucking of a gulph.

It fits us then, to be as provident

As fear may teach us, out of late examples

Left by the fatal and neglected English

Upon our fields.

Dau. My most redoubted father,

It is most meet we arm us 'gainst the foe :

For peace itself should not so dull a kingdom.

(Though war, nor no known quarrel, were au-

question.)

But that defences, musters, preparations,

Should be maintain'd, assembled, and col-

lected,

As were a war in expectation.

Therefore, I say, 'tis meet we all go forth,

To view the sick and feeble parts of France :

And let us do it with no show of fear ;

No, with no more, than if we heard that Eng-

land

Were busied with a Whitsun morris-dance :

For, my good liege, she is so idly king'd,

Her sceptre so fantastically borne

By a vain, giddy, shallow, humorous youth,

That fear attends her not.

Con. O peace, prince Dauphin !

You are too much mistaken in this king :

Question your grace the late ambassadors,—

With what great state he heard their embassy,

How well supplied with noble counsellors,

How modest in exception, † and, withal,

How terrible in constant resolution,—

And you shall find, his vanities fore-spent §

Were but the outside of the Roman Brutus,

Covering discretion with a coat of folly ;

As gardeners do with ordure hide those roots

That shall first spring, and be most delicate.

Dau. Well, 'tis not so, my lord high con-

stable,

But though we think it so, it is no matter :

In cases of defence, 'tis best to weigh

The enemy more mighty than he seems,

So the proportions of defence are fill'd ;

Which, of a weak and niggardly projection,

Doth, like a miser, spoil his coat, with scanting

A little cloth.

\* Dry thy eyes.

† Render it callous, insensible.

‡ In making objections.

§ Wasted, exhausted.

*Fr. King.* Think we king Harry strong;  
And, princes, look you strongly arm to meet him.

The kindied of him hath been flesh'd upon us;  
And he is bred out of that bloody strain,\*  
That haunted us in our familiar paths:  
Witness our too much memorable shame,  
When Cressy battle fatally was struck,  
And all our princes, captiv'd, by the hand  
Of that black name, Edward black prince of Wales;

Whiles that his mountain sire, on mountain standing,  
Up in the air, crown'd with the golden sun,  
Saw his heroidal seed, and smil'd to see him  
Mangle the work of nature, and deface  
The patterns that by God and by French fathers

Had twenty years been made. This is a stem  
Of that victorious stock; and let us fear  
The native mightiness and fate of him.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Ambassadors from Henry King of England

Do crave admittance to your majesty.

*Fr. King.* We'll give them present audience.  
Go, and bring them.

[*Exeunt Mess. and certain LORDS.*]  
You see, this chase is hotly follow'd, friends.

*Dau.* Turn head, and stop pursuit: for coward dogs  
Most spend their mouths, when what they seem  
To threaten,

Runs far before them. Good my sovereign,  
Take up the English short; and let them know

Of what a monarchy you are the head:  
Self-love, is not so vile a sin  
As self-neglecting.

*Re-enter LORDS, with EXETER and Train.*

*Fr. King.* From our brother England?

*Exe.* From him; and thus he greets your majesty.

He wills you, in the name of God Almighty,  
That you divest yourself, and lay apart  
The borrow'd glories, that, by gift of heaven,  
By law of nature, and of nations, 'long  
To him and to his heirs; namely the crown,  
And all wide-stretched honours that pertain,  
By custom and the ordinance of times,  
Unto the crown of France. That you may know,

'Tis no sinister, nor no awkward claim,  
Pick'd from the worm-holes of long-vanish'd days,

Nor from the dust of old oblivion rak'd,  
He sends you this most memorable live,

[*Gives a paper.*]  
In every branch truly demonstrative;

Willing you, overlook this pedigree:

And, when you find him ever'y deriv'd

From his most fam'd of famous accessors,

Edward the third, he bids you then resign

Your crown and kingdom, indirectly held

From him the native and true challenger.

*Fr. King.* Or else what follows?

*Exe.* Bloody constraint; for if you hide the crown

Even in your hearts, there will he rake for it:

And therefore in fierce tempest is he coming,

In thunder, and in earthquake, like a Jove;

(That, if requiring fail, he will compel);

And bids you, in the bowels of the Lord,

Deliver up the crown; and to take mercy

On the poor souls, for whom this hungry war

Opens his vasty jaws; and on your head

Turns he the widows' tears, the orphan's cries,

The dead men's blood, the pining maidens' groans,

For husbands, fathers, and betrothed lovers,

That shall be swallow'd in this controversy.

\* Lineage.

This is his claim, his threatening, and my message;

Unless the Dauphin be in presence here,

To whom expressly I bring greeting too.

*Fr. King.* For, us, we will consider of this further:

To-morrow shall you bear our full intent

Back to our brother England.

*Dau.* For the Dauphin,

I stand here for him: What to him from England?

*Exe.* Scorn and defiance; slight regard, contempt,

And any thing that may not misbecome

The mighty sender, doth he prize you at.

Thus says my king: and, if your father's highness

Do not, in grant of all demands at large,

Sweeten the bitter mock you sent his majesty,

He'll call you to so hot an answer for it,

That caves and wombly vaultages of France

Shall chide\* your trespass, and return your mock

In second accent of his ordinance.

*Dau.* Say, if my father render fair reply,

It is against my will: for I desire

Nothing but odds with England; to that end,

As matching to his youth and vanity,

I did present him with those Paris balls.

*Exe.* He'll make your Paris Louve shake for it,

Were it the mistress court of mighty Europe;

And, be assur'd, you'll find a difference,

(As we his subjects have in wonder found,) Between the promise of his greener days,

And these he masters now; now he weighs time,

Even to the utmost grain; which you shall read

In your own losses, if he stay in France.

*Fr. King.* To-morrow shall you know our mind at full.

*Exe.* Despatch us with all speed, lest that our king

Come here himself to question our delay;

For he is footed in this land already.

*Fr. King.* You shall be soon despatch'd with fair condition:

A night is but small breath, and little pause,

To answer matters of this consequence. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

### Enter CHORUS.

*Chor.* Thus with imagin'd wing our swift scene flies,

In motion of no less celerity

Than that of thought. Suppose, that you have seen

The well-appointed king at Hampton pier

Embark his royalty; and his brave fleet

With silken streamers the young Phœbus fan-

ning.

Play with your fancies; and in them behold,

Upon the hempen tackle, ship-boys climbing:

Hear the shrill whistle, which doth order give

To sounds confus'd: behold the threaten'd sails,

Borne with the invisible and creeping wind,

Draw the huge bottoms through the furrow'd sea,

Breasting the lofty surge: O do but think,

You stand upon the rivage,† and behold

A city on the inconstant billows dancing;

For so appears this fleet majestical,

Holding due course to Harfleur. Follow, fol-

low!

Grapple your minds to sternage‡ of this navy;

And leave your England, as dead midnight still,

\* Resound echo.

† Bank or shore

‡ Sterns of the ships.

Guarded with grandsires, babies, and old women,  
 Either past, or not arriv'd to plith and puis-  
 For who is he, whose chin is but enrich'd  
 With one appearing hair, that will not follow  
 These cull'd and choice-drawn cavaliers to  
 France?  
 Work, work your thoughts, and therein see a  
 siege:  
 Behold the ordnance on their carriages,  
 With fatal mouths gaping on girded Harfleur.  
 Suppose, the ambassador from the French comes  
 back;  
 Tells Harry—that the king doth offer him  
 Katherine his daughter; and with her, to  
 dowry,  
 Some petty and unprofitable dukedoms.  
 The offer likes not: and the nimble gunner  
 With linstock\* now the devilish cannon touches.  
 [Alarums; and Chambers† go off.  
 And down goes all before them. Still be kind,  
 And eke out our performance with your mind.  
 [Exit.

## SCENE I.—The same.—Before Harfleur.

Alarums. Enter King HENRY, EXETER, BED-  
 FORD, GLOSTER, and Soldiers, with Scaling  
 Ladders.

K. Hen. Once more unto the breach, dear  
 friends, once more;  
 Or close the wall up with our English dead!  
 In peace, there's nothing so becomes a man,  
 As modest stillness and humility;  
 But when the blast of war blows in our ears,  
 Then imitate the action of the tiger;  
 Stiffen the sinews, summon up the blood,  
 Disguise fair nature with hard-favour'd rage;  
 Then lend the eye a terrible aspect;  
 Let it pry through the portage of the head,  
 Like the brass cannon; let the brow o'erwhelm  
 As fearfully, as doth a galled rook. [It  
 O'erhang and jutty† his confounded base,  
 Swill'd with the wild and wasteful ocean.  
 Now set the teeth, and stretch the nostril wide;  
 Hold hard the breath, and bend up every spirit  
 To his full height!—On, on, you noblest Eng-  
 lish,  
 Whose blood is fet from fathers of war-proof!  
 Fathers, that like so many Alexanders,  
 Have, in these parts, from morn till even  
 fought  
 And sheath'd their swords for lack of argu-  
 ment:‡  
 Dishonour not your mothers; now attest,  
 That those, whom you call'd fathers, did beget  
 you!  
 Be copy now to men of grosser blood,  
 And teach them how to war!—And you, good  
 yeomen,  
 Whose limbs were made in England, show us  
 here  
 The mettle of your pasture; let us swear  
 That you are worth your breeding; which I  
 doubt not:  
 For there is none of you so mean and base,  
 That hath not noble lustre in your eyes.  
 I see you stand like greyhounds in the slips,  
 Straining upon the start. The game's afoot;  
 Follow your spirit; and, upon this charge,  
 Cry—God for Harry! England! and Saint  
 George!  
 [Exeunt. Alarums and Chambers go off.

## SCENE II.—The same.

Forces pass over; then enter NYM, BARDOLPH,  
 PISTOL, and BOY.

Bard. On, on, on, on, on! to the breach, to  
 the breach!

\* The staff which holds the match used in firing cannon.

† Small pieces of ordnance.

‡ A mole to withstand the encroachment of the tide.

§ Worn, wasted. ¶ Etched. ¶ Matter, subject.

Nym. 'Pray thee, corporal, stay; the knocks  
 are too hot; and, for mine own part, I have not  
 a case of lives; the humour of it is too hot,  
 that is the very plain-song of it.

Pistol. The plain-song is most just; for hu-  
 mours do abound; [die;

Knocks go and come; God's vassals drop and  
 And sword and shield,  
 In bloody field,

Doth win immortal fame.

Boy. 'Would I were in an alehouse in Lon-  
 don! I would give all my fame for a pot of ale,  
 and safety.

Pistol. And I:

If wishes would prevail with me,  
 My purpose should not fail with me,  
 But thither would I hie.

Boy. As duly, but not as truly, as bird doth  
 sing on bough.

## Enter FLUELLEN.

Flu. Got's blood!—Up to the preaches, you  
 rascals! will you not up to the preaches?

[Driving them forward.

Pistol. Be merciful, great duke,\* to men of  
 mould!†

Abate thy rage, abate thy manly rage!

Abate thy rage, great duke!

Good bawcock, bate thy rage! use lenity, sweet  
 chuck!

Nym. These be good humours!—your honour  
 wins bad humours.

[Exeunt NYM, PISTOL, and BARDOLPH  
 followed by FLUELLEN.

Boy. As young as I am, I have observed  
 three swashers. I am boy to them all three;  
 but all they three, though they would serve me,  
 could not be man to me; for indeed, three such  
 antics do not amount to a man. For Bardolph,  
 —he is white-livered, and red-faced; by the  
 means whereof, 'a faces it out, but fights not.  
 For Pistol,—he hath a killing tongue, and a quiet  
 sword; by the means whereof 'a breaks words,  
 and keeps whole weapons. For Nym,—he hath  
 heard, that men of few words are the best; men;  
 and therefore he scorns to say his prayers, lest  
 'a should be thought a coward: but his few bad  
 words are matched with as few good deeds; for  
 'a never broke any man's head but his own; and  
 that was against a post, when he was drunk.  
 They will steal any thing, and call it,—purchase.  
 Bardolph stole a lute-case; bore it twelve leagues,  
 and sold it for three halfpence. Nym, and  
 Bardolph, are sworn brothers in filching; and  
 in Calais they stole a fire-shovel: I knew, by  
 that piece of service, the men would carry coals.‡  
 They would have me as familiar with men's  
 pockets, as their gloves or their handkerchiefs:  
 which makes much against my manhood, if I should  
 take from another's pocket, to put into mine;  
 for it is plain pocketing up of wrongs. I must  
 leave them, and seek some better service: their  
 villainy goes against my weak stomach, and  
 therefore I must cast it up. [Exit BOY.

## Re-enter FLUELLEN, GOWER following.

Gow. Captain Fluellen, you must come pre-  
 sently to the mines; the duke of Gloster would  
 speak with you.

Flu. To the mines! tell you the duke, it is  
 not so good to come to the mines: For, look  
 you, the mines is not according to the disciplines  
 of the war; the concavities of it is not sufficient;  
 for, look you, th' adversary (you may discuss  
 unto the duke, look you,) is dight|| himself four  
 yards under the countermines: by Cheshu, I  
 think 'a will plow¶ up all, if there is not better  
 directions.

Gow. The duke of Gloster, to whom the or-  
 der of the siege is given, is altogether directed  
 by an Irishman; a very valiant gentleman,  
 I faith.

\* Commander.

† Earth.

‡ Bravest.

¶ Digged.

¶ Blow.

*Flu.* It is captain Macmorris, is it not?

*Gow.* I think, it be.

*Flu.* By Cheshu, he is an ass, as in the 'orld: I will verify as much in his peard: he has no more directions in the true disciplines of the wars, look you, of the Roman disciplines, than is a puppy-dog.

*Enter MACMORRIS and JAMY at a distance.*

*Gow.* Here 'a comes, and the Scots captain, captain Jamy, with him.

*Flu.* Captain Jamy is a marvellous valorous gentleman, that is certain; and of great expedition, and knowledge, in the ancient wars, upon my particular knowledge of his directions: by Cheshu, he will maintain his argument as well as any military man in the 'orld, in the disciplines of the pristine wars of the Romans.

*Jamy.* I say, gud-day, captain Fluellen.

*Flu.* God-deu to your worship, goot captain Jamy.

*Gow.* How now, captain Macmorris? have you quit the mines? have the pioneers given o'er?

*Mac.* By Chrish la, tish ill done: the work ish give over, the trumpet sound the retreat. By my hand, I swear, and by my father's soul, the work ish ill done; it ish give over: I would have blowed up the town so Chrish save me, la, in an hour. Oh! tish ill done, tish ill done; by my hand, tish ill done!

*Flu.* Captain Macmorris, I peseech you now, will you voutsafe me, look you, a few disputations with you, as partly touching or concerning the disciplines of the war, the Roman wars, in the way of argument, look you, and friendly communication; partly to satisfy my opinion, and partly for the satisfaction, look you, of my mind, as touching the direction of the military discipline; that is the point.

*Jamy.* It sall be very gud, gud feith, gud captains baith: and I sall quit \* you with gud leve, as I may pick occasion; that sall I, marry.

*Mac.* It is no time to discourse, so Chrish save me, the day is hot, and the weather, and the wars, and the king, and the dukes; it is no time to discourse. The town is beseeched, and the trumpet calls us to the breach; and we talk, and, by Chrish, do nothing; 'tis shame for us all: so God sa' me, 'tis shame to stand still; it is shame, by my hand: and there is throats to be cut, and works to be done; and there ish nothing done, so Chrish sa' me, la.

*Jamy.* By the mess, ere theise eyes of mine tak themselves to slumber, aile do gude service, or aile ligge i'the grund for it; ay, or go to death; and aile pay it as valorously as I may, that sall I surely do, that is the breff and the long: Marry, I wad full fain heard some question 'tween you tway.

*Flu.* Captain Macmorris, I think, look you, under your correction, there is not many of your nation—

*Mac.* Of my nation? What ish my nation? ish a villain, and a bastard, and a knave, and a rascal? What ish my nation? Who talks of my nation?

*Flu.* Look you, if you take the matter otherwise than is meant, captain Macmorris, peradventure, I shall think you do not use me with that affability as in discretion you ought to use me, look you, being as goot a man as yourself, both in the disciplines of wars, and in the derivation of my birth, and in other particularities.

*Mac.* I do not know you so good a man as myself: so Chrish save me, I will cut off your head.

*Gow.* Gentlemen both, you will mistake each other.

*Jamy.* Au! that's a foul fault.

[A Parley sounded.]

*Gow.* The town sounds a parley.

*Flu.* Captain Macmorris, when there is more better opportunity to be required, look you, I will be so bold as to tell you, I know the disciplines of war; and there is an end.

[Exeunt.]

*SCENE III.—The same.—Before the Gates of Harfleur.*

*The GOVERNOR and some Citizens on the Walls; the English Forces below. Enter King HENRY and his Train.*

*K. Hen.* How yet resolves the governor of the town?

This is the latest parle we will admit: Therefore, to our best mercy give yourselves, Or, like to men proud of destruction, Defy us to our worst: for, as I am a soldier, (A name that in my thoughts becomes me best,)

If I begin the battery once again, I will not leave the half-achieved Harfleur, Till in her ashes she lie buried.

The gates of mercy shall be all shut up; And the flesh'd soldier,—rough and hard of heart,—

In liberty of bloody hand, shall range With conscience wide as hell; mowing like grass

Your fresh-fair virgins, and your flowering infants.

What is it then to me, if impious war, Array'd in flames, like to the prince of fiends, Do, with his smirch'd \* complexion, all fell † seats

Enlink'd to waste and desolation? What is't to me, when you yourselves are cause,

If your pure maidens fall into the hand Of hot and forcing violation?

What reign can hold licentious wickedness, When down the hill he holds his fierce career? We may as bootless ‡ spend our vain command Upon the enraged soldiers in their spoil, As send precepts to the Leviathan

To come ashore. Therefore, you men of Harfleur,

Take pity of your town and of your people, Whiles yet my soldiers are in my command; Whiles yet the cool and temperate wind of grace

O'erblows the filthy and contagious clouds Of deadly murder, spoil, and villainy.

If not, why, in a moment, look to see The blind and bloody soldier with foul hand Defile the locks of your shrill-shrieking daughters;

Your fathers taken by the silver beards, And their most reverend heads dash'd to the walls;

Your naked infants spitted upon pikes; Whiles the mad mothers with their howls confus'd

Do break the clouds, as did the wives of Jewry

At Herod's bloody-hunting slaughtermen. What say you? will you yield, and thus avoid? Or, guilty in defence, be thus destroy'd?

*Gow.* Our expectation hath this day an end: The Dauphin, whom of succour we entreated, Returns us—that his powers are not yet ready To raise so great a siege. Therefore, dread king,

We yield our town and lives to thy soft mercy: Enter our gates; dispose of us, and ours; For we no longer are defensible.

*K. Hen.* Open your gates.—Come, uncle Exeter, Go you and enter Harfleur; there remain,

\* Requite, answer.

\* Soiled

† Cruel.

‡ Without success.

And fortify it strongly 'gainst the French ;  
Use mercy to them all. For us, dear uncle,—  
The winter coming on, and sickness growing  
Upon our soldiers,—we'll retire to Calais.  
To-morrow in Harfleur will we be your guest :  
To-morrow for the march are we address'd.\*  
[Flourish. The King, &c, enter the Town.]

SCENE IV.—Roüen.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter KATHARINE and ALICE.

Kath. Alice, tu as esté en Angleterre, et tu parles bien le language.

Alice. Un peu madame.

Kath. Je te prie, m'enseigneux ; il faut que j'apprenne à parler. Comment appelez vous la main, en Anglois ?

Alice. La main ? elle est appellée de hand.

Kath. De hand. Et les doigts ?

Alice. Les doigts ? may joy, je oublie les doigts ; mais je me souviendray. Les doigts ? je pense, qu'ils sont appellés de fingers ; ouy, de fingers.

Kath. La main, de hand ; les doigts, de fingers. Je pense, que je suis le bon escolier. J'ay gagné deux mots d'Anglois vistement. Comment appelez vous les ongles ?

Alice. Les ongles ? les, appellons, de nails.

Kath. De nails. Escoutez ; dites moy, si je parle bien : de hand, de fingers, de nails.

Alice. C'est bien dit, madame ; il est fort bon Anglois.

Kath. Dites moy en Anglois, le bras.

Alice. De arm, madame.

Kath. Et le coude ?

Alice. De elbow.

Kath. De elbow. Je m'en faitz la repetition de tous les mots, que vous m'avez appris des a present.

Alice. Il est trop difficile, madame, comme je pense.

Kath. Excusez moy, Alice ; escoutez : De hand, de finger, de nails, de arm, de bilbow.

Alice. De elbow, madame.

Kath. O Seigneur Dieu ! je m'en oublie ; De elbow. Comment appelez vous le col ?

Alice. De neck, madame.

Kath. De neck : Et le menton ?

Alice. De chin.

Kath. De sin. Le col, de neck : le menton, de sin.

Alice. Ouy. Sauf vostre honneur : en vérité, vous prononcez les mots aussi droit que les natifs d'Angleterre.

Kath. Je ne doute point d'apprendre par la grace de Dieu ; et en peu de temps.

Alice. N'avez vous pas déjà oublié ce que je vous ay enseigné ?

Kath. Non, je reciteray à vous promptement. De hand, de finger, de nails,—

Alice. De nails, madame.

Kath. De nails, de arme, de ilbow.

Alice. Sauf vostre honneur, de elbow.

Kath. Ainsi dis je ; de elbow, de neck, et de sin : Comment appelez vous le pied et la robe ?

Alice. De foot, madame ; et de con.

Kath. De foot et de con ? O Seigneur Dieu ! ces sont mots de son mauvais, corruptible, grosse, et impudique, et non pour les dames d'honneur d'user : Je ne voudrais prononcer ces mots devant les Seigneurs de France, pour tout le monde. Il faut de foot, et de con, neant-moins. Je reciterai une autre fois ma leçon ensemble : De hand, de finger, de nails, de arm, de elbow, de neck, de sin, de foot, de con.

Alice. Excellent, madame !

Kath. C'est assez pour une fois ; allons nous à cîner. [Eleunt.]

SCENE V.—The same.—Another Room in the same.

Enter the French KING, the DAUPHIN, Duke of BOURBON, the CONSTABLE of France, and others.

Fr. King. 'Tis certain, he hath pass'd the river Some.

Con. And if he be not fought withal, my lord, Let us not live in France ; let us quit all, And give our vineyards to a barbarous people.

Dau. O Dieu vivant ! shall a few sprays of us,—

The emptying of our father's luxury,\* Our scions, put in wild and savage stock, Spirt up so suddenly into the clouds, And overlook their grafters ?

Bour. Normans, but bastard Normans, Norman bastards !

Mort de ma vie ! if they march along Unfought withal, but I will sell my dukedom, To buy a slobbery and a dirty farm In that nook-shotten† isle of Albion.

Con. Dieu de batailles ! where have they this mettle ?

Is not their climate foggy, raw, and dull ? On whom, as in despite, the sun looks pale, Killing their fruit with frowns ! Cau sodden water,

A drench for sur-rein'd‡ jades, their barley broth,

Decoct their cold blood to such valiant heat ? And shall our quick blood, spirited with wine, Seem frosty ? Oh ! for honour of our land, Let us not hang like roping icicles Upon our houses' thatch, whiles a more frosty people

Sweat drops of gallant youth in our rich fields ; Pool, we may call them, in their native lords.

Dau. By faith and honour, Our madams mock at us ; and plainly say, Our mettle is bled out ; and they will give Their bodies to the lust of English youth, To new-store France with bastard warriors.

Bour. They bid us, to the English dancing-schools,

And teach lavoltas § high, and swift corantos ; Saying, our grace is only in our heels, And that we are most lofty runaways.

Fr. King. Where is Montjoy, the herald ? speed him hence ;

Let him greet England, with our sharp defiance.—

Up, princes ; and, with spirit of honour edg'd, More sharper than your swords, hie to the field :

Charles De-la-bret, high constable of France ; You dukes of Orleans, Bourbon, and of Berry, Alençon, Brabant, Bar, and of Burgundy ; Jaques Chatillion, Rambures, Vaudenont, Beaumont, Grandpré, Roussi, and Fauconberg,

Foix, Lestrale, Bouciqualt, and Charolois ; High dukes, great princes, barons, lords, and knights,

For your great seats, now quit you of great shames,

Bar Harry England, that sweeps through our land

With pennons || painted in the blood of Harfleur :

Rush on his host, as doth the melted snow Upon the vallies ; whose low vassal seat The Alps doth spit and void his rheum upon : Go down upon him,—you have power enough,— And in a captive chariot, into Roüen, Bring him our prisoner.

Con. This becomes the great. Sorry am I, his numbers are so few

His soldiers sick, and famish'd in their march ; For, I am sure, when he shall see our army,

\* Prepared.

† Lust. † Protected. ‡ Over-strained.  
§ Dances. ¶ Pendants, small flags.



He'll drop his heart into the sink of fear,  
And, for achievement, offer us his ransom.

*Fr. King.* Therefore, lord constable, haste on  
Montjoy :

And let him say to England, that we send  
To know what willing ransom he will give.—  
Prince Dauphin, you shall stay with us in  
Roën.

*Dow.* Not so, I do beseech your majesty.

*Fr. King.* Be patient, for you shall remain  
with us.—

Now, forth, lord constable, and princes all ;  
And quickly bring us word of England's fall.

[*Exeunt.*]

**SCENE VI.—The English Camp in Picardy.**

*Enter GOWER and FLUELLEN.*

*Gow.* How now, captain Fluellen ? come you  
from the bridge ?

*Flu.* I assure you, there is very excellent  
service committed at the bridge.

*Gow.* Is the duke of Exeter safe ?

*Flu.* The duke of Exeter is as magnanimous  
as Agamemnon ; and a man that I love and  
honour with my soul, and my heart, and my  
duty, and my life, and my livings, and my utter-  
most powers : he is not, (God be praised, and  
pleased !) any hurt in the world : but keeps the  
bridge most valiantly, with excellent discipline.  
There is an ensign there at the bridge,—I think,  
in my very conscience, he is as valiant as Mark  
Antony ; and he is a man of no estimation in  
the world : but I did see him do gallant service.

*Gow.* What do you call him ?

*Flu.* He is called—ancient Pistol.

*Gow.* I know him not.

*Enter PISTOL.*

*Flu.* Do you not know him ? Here comes the  
man.

*Pist.* Captain, I thee beseech to do me fa-  
vours :

The duke of Exeter doth love thee well.

*Flu.* Ay, I praise God ; and I have merited  
some love at his hands.

*Pist.* Bardolph, a soldier, firm and sound of  
heart,

Of buxom valour,\* hath, by cruel fate,  
And giddy fortune's furious fickle wheel,  
That goddess blind,  
That stands upon the rolling restless stone,—

*Flu.* By your patience, ancient Pistol. For-  
tune is painted blind, with a muffler † before her  
eyes, to signify to you that fortune is blind :  
And she is painted also with a wheel, to signify  
to you, which is the moral of it, that she is  
turning and inconstant, and variations, and mu-  
tabilities : and her foot, look you, is fixed upon  
a spherical stone, which rolls, and rolls, and  
rolls ;—in good truth, the poet is make a most  
excellent description of fortune : fortune, look  
you, is an excellent moral.

*Pist.* Fortune is Bardolph's foe, and frowns  
on him :

For he hath stol'n a piz, ‡ and hanged must 'a be.  
A damned death !

Let gallows gape for dog, let man go free,

And let not hemp his wind-pipe suffocate :

But Exeter hath given the doom of death,

For piz of little price. [voice]

Therefore go speak, the duke will hear thy  
And let not Bardolph's vital thread be cut  
With edge of penny cord, and vile reproach :  
Speak captain, for his life, and I will thee re-  
quite.

*Flu.* Ancient Pistol, I do partly understand  
your meaning.

*Pist.* Why then rejoice therefore.

*Flu.* Certainly, ancient, it is not a thing to  
rejoice at : for if, look you, he were my brother,

\* Valour under good command.

† A fold of linen which partially covered the face.

‡ A small box in which were kept the consecrated  
wafers.

I would desire the duke to use his good plea-  
sure, and put him to executions ; for disciplines  
ought to be used.

*Pist.* Die and be damn'd : and figo\* for thy  
friendship !

*Flu.* It is well.

*Pist.* The fig of Spain ! †

[*Exit PISTOL.*]

*Flu.* Very good.

*Gow.* Why, this is an arrant counterfeit  
rascal ; I remember him now ; a bawd ; a cut-  
purse.

*Flu.* I'll assure you, 'a utter'd as grave words  
at the bridge, as you shall see in a summer's  
day : But it is very well ; what he has spoke to  
me, that is well, I warrant you, when time is  
serve.

*Gow.* Why, 'tis a gull, a fool, a rogue ; that  
now and then goes to the wars, to grace  
himself, at his return into London, under the  
form of a soldier. And such fellows are perfect  
in great commanders' names ; and they will  
learn you by rote, where services were done ;—  
at such and such a sounce, ‡ at such a breach,  
at such a convoy ; who came off bravely, who  
was shot, who disgraced, what terms the enemy  
stood on ; and this they can perfectly in the  
phrase of war, which they trick up with new-  
tuned oaths : And what a beard of the general's  
cut, and a horrid suit of the camp, will do  
among foaming bottles, and ale-washed wits, is  
wonderful to be thought on ! but you must learn  
to know such slanders of the age, or else you  
may be marvellous mistook.

*Flu.* I tell you what, captain Gower ;—I do  
perceive, he is not the man that he would gladly  
make show to the world he is ; if I find a hole  
in his coat, I will tell him my mind. [*Drum  
heard.*] Hark you, the king is coming ; and I  
must speak with him from the bridge.

*Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, and Soldiers.*

*Flu.* Got pless your majesty.

*K. Hen.* How now, Fluellen ? camest thou  
from the bridge ?

*Flu.* Ay, so please your majesty. The duke  
of Exeter has very gallantly maintained the  
bridge ; the French is gone off, look you ; and  
there is gallant and most brave passages ; Marry,  
th'athversary was have possession of the bridge ;  
but he is enforced to retire, and the duke of  
Exeter is master of the bridge : I can tell your  
majesty, the duke is a brave man.

*K. Hen.* What men have you lost, Fluellen ?

*Flu.* The perdition of th'athversary hath been  
very great, very reasonable great : marry, for  
my part, I think the duke hath lost never a  
man, but one that is like to be executed for  
robbing a church : one Bardolph, if your majes-  
ty know the man : his face is all bubukles, and  
whelks, and knobs, and flames of fire ; and his  
lips plows at his nose, and it is like a coal of  
fire, sometimes blue, and sometimes red ; but  
his nose is executed, and his fire's out.

*K. Hen.* We would have all such offenders  
so cut off :—and we give express charge, that in  
our marches through the country, there be no-  
thing compelled from the villages, nothing taken  
but paid for ; none of the French upbraided, or  
abused in disdainful language ; for when leuty  
and cruelty play for a kingdom, the gentler  
gamester is the soonest winner.

*Tucket sounds. Enter MONTJOY.*

*Mont.* You know me by my habit. †

*K. Hen.* Well then, I know thee ; What shall  
I know of thee ?

*Mont.* My master's mind.

*K. Hen.* Unfold it.

*Mont.* Thus says my king :—Say thou to

\* An allusion to the custom in Spain and Italy of giv-  
ing poisoned figs.

† The objects of Spanish or Italian revenge have  
generally poisoned figs given to them.

‡ An intrenchment hastily thrown up.

§ I.e. By his herald's coat.

Harry of England, Though we seemed dead, we did not sleep; Advantage is a better soldier, than rashness. Tell him, we could have rebuked him at Harfleur; but that we thought not good to bruise an injury, till it were full ripe:—now we speak upon our cue,\* and our voice is imperial: England shall repent his folly, see his weakness, and admire our suzerainty. Bid him, therefore, consider of his ransom; which must proportion the losses we have borne, the subjects we have lost, the disgrace we have digested; which, in weight to re-answer, his pettiness would bow under. For our losses, his exchequer is too poor; for the effusion of our blood, the muster of his kingdom too faint a number; and for our disgrace, his own person kneels at our feet, out a weak and worthless satisfaction. To this add—defiance: and tell him, for conclusion, he hath betrayed his followers, whose condemnation is pronounced. So far my king and master; so much my office.

*K. Hen.* What is thy name? I know thy quality.

*Mont.* Montjoy.

*K. Hen.* Thou dost thy office fairly. Turn thee back,

And tell thy king,—I do not seek him now; But could be willing to march on to Calais Without impeachment: for, to say the sooth, (Though 'tis no wisdom to confess so much Unto an enemy of craft and vantage,) My people are with sickness much enfeebled; My numbers lessen'd; and those few I have, Almost no better than so many French; Who when they were in health, I tell thee, herald,

I thought, upon one pair of English legs Did march three Frenchmen.—Yet, forgive me, God,

That I do brag thus!—this your air of France Hath blown that vice in me; I must repent. Go, therefore, tell thy master, here I am; My ransom, is this frail and worthless trunk; My army, but a weak and sickly guard; Yet, God before,† tell him we will come on, Though France himself, and such another neighbour,

Stand in our way. There's for thy labour, Montjoy.

Go, bid thy master well advise himself: It may pass, we will; if we be hinder'd, We will your tawny ground with your red blood

Discolour. And so, Montjoy, fare you well. The sum of all our answer is but this: We would not seek a battle, as we are; Nor, as we are, we say we will not shun it; So tell your master.

*Mont.* I shall deliver so. Thanks to your highness.

*Glo.* I hope, they will not come upon us now.

*K. Hen.* We are in God's hand, brother, not in theirs.

March to the bridge; it now draws toward night:—

Beyond the river we'll encamp ourselves; And on to-morrow bid them march away.

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE VII.—The French Camp, near Agincourt.*

*Enter the CONSTABLE of France, the Lord RAMBURES, the Duke of ORLEANS, DAUPHIN, and others.*

*Con.* Tut! I have the best armour of the world, —'Would, it were day!

*Orl.* You have an excellent armour; but let my horse have his due.

*Con.* It is the best horse of Europe.

*Orl.* Will it never be morning?

*Dau.* My lord of Orleans, and my lord high constable, you talk of horse and armour,—

*Orl.* You are as well provided of both, as any prince in the world.

*Dau.* What a long night is this!—I will not change my horse with any that treads but on four pasterns, *Ca ha!* He bounds from the earth, as if his entrails were hairs; \* *le cheval volant*, the Pegasus, *qui a les narines de feu!* When I bestride him, I soar, I am a hawk: he trots the air; the earth sings when he touches it; the basest horn of his hoof is more musical than the pipe of Hermes.

*Orl.* He's of the colour of the nutmeg.

*Dau.* And of the heat of the ginger. It is a beast for Perseus: he is pure air and fire; and the dull elements of earth and water never appear in him, but only in patient stillness, while his rider mounts him: he is, indeed, a horse; and all other jades you may call—beasts.

*Con.* Indeed, my lord, it is a most absolute and excellent horse.

*Dau.* It is the prince of palfreys; his neigh is like the bidding of a monarch, and his countenance enforces homage.

*Orl.* No more, cousin.

*Dau.* Nay, the man hath no wit, that cannot, from the rising of the lark to the lodging of the lamb, vary deserved praise on my palfrey: it is a theme as fluent as the sea: turn the sands into eloquent tongues, and my horse is argument for them all: 'tis a subject for a sovereign to reason on, and for a sovereign's sovereign to ride on; and for the world (familiar to us, and unknown,) to lay apart their particular functions, and wonder at him. I once writ a sonnet in his praise, and began thus: *Wonder of nature,*—

*Orl.* I have heard a sonnet begin so to one's mistress.

*Dau.* Then did they imitate that which I composed to my courser; for my horse is my mistress.

*Orl.* Your mistress bears well.

*Dau.* Me well; which is the prescript praise and perfection of a good and particular mistress.

*Con.* *Ma foy!* the other day, methought, your mistress shrewdly shook your back.

*Dau.* So, perhaps did your's.

*Con.* Mine was not bridled.

*Dau.* Oh! then, believe, she was old and gentle! and you rode like a kernie† of Ireland, your French hose off, and in your strait trousers.‡

*Con.* You have good judgment in horsemanship.

*Dau.* Be warned by me then: they that ride so, and ride not warily, fall into foul bogs; I had rather have my horse to my mistress.

*Con.* I had as lief have my mistress a jade.

*Dau.* I tell thee, constable, my mistress wears her own hair.

*Con.* I could make as true a boast as that, if I had a sow to my mistress.

*Dau.* *Le chien est retourné à son propre vomissement, et la truie lavée au boubier;* thou makest use of any thing.

*Con.* Yet do I not use my horse for my mistress; or any such proverb, so little kin to the purpose.

*Ram.* My lord constable, the armour, that I saw in your tent to-night, are those stars, or suns, upon it?

*Con.* Stars, my lord,

*Dau.* Some of them will fall to-morrow, I hope.

*Con.* And yet my sky shall not want.

*Dau.* That may be, for you bear a many superfluously; and 'twere more honour, some were away.

\* Alluding to the bounding of tennis balls, which were stuffed with hair.

† Soldier.

‡ Trowsers.

\* In our turn. † Hindrance.

‡ Then used for God being my guide.

*Con.* Even as your horse bears your praises; who would trot as well, were some of your brags dismounted.

*Dau.* 'Would I were able to load him with his desert! Will it never be day? I will trot to-morrow a mile, and my way shall be paved with English faces.

*Con.* I will not say so, for fear I should be faced out of my way: But I would it were morning, for I would fain be about the ears of the English.

*Ram.* Who will go to hazard with me for twenty English prisoners?

*Con.* You must first go yourself to hazard, ere you have them.

*Dau.* 'Tis midnight I'll go arm myself.

[*Exit.*

*Orl.* The Dauphin longs for morning.

*Ram.* He longs to eat the English.

*Con.* I think, he will eat all he kills.

*Orl.* By the white hand of my lady, he's a gallant prince.

*Con.* Swear by her foot, that she may tread out the oath.

*Orl.* He is, simply, the most active gentleman of France.

*Con.* Doing is activity: and he will still be doing.

*Orl.* He never did harm, that I heard of.

*Con.* Nor will do none to-morrow; he will keep that good name still.

*Orl.* I know him to be valiant.

*Con.* I was told that, by one that knows him better than you.

*Orl.* What's he

*Con.* Maury, he told me so himself; and he said, he cared not who knew it.

*Orl.* He needs not, it is no hidden virtue in him.

*Con.* By my faith, Sir, but it is; never any body saw it, but his lackey: 'tis a hooded valour; and, when it appears, it will bate.\*

*Orl.* Ill will never said well.

*Con.* I will cap that proverb with—There is flattery in friendship.

*Orl.* And I will take up that with—Give the devil his due.

*Con.* Well placed; there stands your friend for the devil: have at the very eye of that proverb, with—A pox of the devil.

*Orl.* You are the better at proverbs, by how much—A fool's bolt is soon shot.

*Con.* You have shot over.

*Orl.* 'Tis not the first time you were over-shot.

[*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* My lord high constable, the English lie within fifteen hundred paces of your tent.

*Con.* Who hath measured the ground?

*Mess.* The lord Grandpré.

*Con.* A valiant and most expert gentleman.—Would it were day!—Alas, poor Harry of England!—he longs not for the dawning, as we do.

*Orl.* What a wretched and peevish fellow is this king of England, to mope with his fat-brained followers so far out of his knowledge!

*Con.* If the English had any apprehension, they would run away.

*Orl.* That they lack; for if their heads had any intellectual armour, they could never wear such heavy head-pieces.

*Ram.* That island of England breeds very valiant creatures; their mastiffs are of unmatchable courage.

*Orl.* Foolish curs! that run winking into the mouth of a Russian bear, and have their heads crushed like rotten apples: You may as well say that's a valiant flea, that dare eat his breakfast on the lip of a lion.

\* An equivocal in terms in falconry: he means, his valour is hid from every body but his lackey, and when it appears, it will fall off.

\* Foolish.

*Con.* Just, just; and the men do sympathize with the mastiffs, in robustions and rough coming on, leaving their wits with their wives: and then give them great meals of beef, and iron, and steel, they will eat like wolves, and fight like devils.

*Orl.* Ay, but these English are shrewdly out of beef.

*Con.* Then we shall find to-morrow—they have only stomachs to eat, and none to fight. Now is it time to arm: Come, shall we about it?

*Orl.* It is now two o'clock: but, let me see,—by ten,

We shall have each a hundred Englishmen.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

[*Enter CHORUS.*

*Chor.* Now entertain conjecture of a time, When creeping murmur, and the poring dark, Fills the wide vessel of the universe.

From camp to camp, through the foul womb of night,

The hum of either army stilly\* sounds, That the fix'd sentinels almost receive

The secret whispers of each other's watch: Fire answers fire; and through their paly flames

Each battle sees the other's number'd† face: Steed threatens steed, in high and boastful

neighs Piercing the night's dull ear; and from the tents

The armourers, accomplishing the knight, With busy hammers closing rivets up,

Give dreadful note of preparation. The country cocks do crow, the clocks do toll,

And the third hour of drowsy morning name. Proud of their numbers, and secure in soul,

The confident and over-lusty; French Do the low-rated English play at dice;

And chide the cripple tardy-gaited night, Who, like a foul and ugly wit, doth limp

So tediously away. The poor condemned English,

Like sacrifices, by their watchful fires Sit patiently, and only ruminate

The morning's danger; and their gesture sad, Investing lank-lean cheeks, and war-worn coats

Presenteth them unto the gazing moon So many horrid ghosts. Oh! now, who will be-

hold The royal captain of this ruin'd band,

Walking from watch to watch, from tent to tent,

Let him cry—Praise and glory on his head! For forth he goes, and visits all his host;

Bids them good-morrow, with a modest smile; And calls them brothers, friends, and countrymen.

Upon his royal face there is no note, How dread an army hath enrouned him;

Nor doth he dedicate one jot of colour Unto the weary and all-watch'd night:

But freshly looks, and over-bears attaint, With cheerful semblance, and sweet majesty;

That every wretch, pining and pale before, Beholding him, plucks comfort from his looks;

A largess universal, like the sun, His liberal eye doth give to every one,

Thawing cold fear. Then, mean and gentle all, Behold, as may unworthiness define,

A little touch of Harry in the night: And so our scene must to the battle fly;

Where (O for pity!) we shall much disgrace— With four or five most vile and ragged foils,

Right ill dispos'd, in brawl ridiculous,— The name of Agincourt: Yet, sit and see;

Minding‡ true things, by what their mockeries be.

[*Exit.*

\* Gently, lowly.

† Discoloured by the gleam of the fires.

‡ Over-saucy

§ Calling to remembrance.

Scene I.

KING HENRY V.

453

SCENE I.—The English Camp at Agincourt.

Enter KING HENRY, BEDFORD, and GLOSTER.

*K. Hen.* Gloster, 'tis true, that we are in great danger;  
The greater therefore should our courage be.—  
Good-morrow, brother Bedford.—God Almighty!  
There is some soul of goodness in things evil,  
Would men observingly distil it out;  
For our bad neighbour makes us early stirrers,  
Which is both healthful and good husbandry:  
Besides, they are our outward consciences,  
And preachers to us all; admonishing,  
That we should dress us fairly for our end.  
Thus may we gather honey from the weed,  
And make a moral of the devil himself.

Enter ERPINGHAM.

Good-morrow, old Sir Thomas Erpingham:  
A good soft pillow for that good white head  
Were better than a churlish turf of France.  
*Erp.* Not so, my liege; this lodging likes me better,  
Since I may say—now lie I like a king.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis good for men to love their present pains,  
Upon example; so the spirit is eased;  
And, when the mind is quicken'd out of doubt,  
The organs, though defunct and dead before,  
Break up their drowsy grave, and newly move  
With casted slough\* and fresh legerity†  
Lend me thy cloak, Sir Thomas.—Brothers both,

Commend me to the princes in our camp:  
Do my good-morrow to them; and, anon,  
Desire them all to my pavilion.

*Glo.* We shall, my liege.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and BEDFORD.*]

*Erp.* Shall I attend your grace?

*K. Hen.* No, my good knight;  
Go with my brothers to my lords of England:  
I and my bosom must debate a while,  
And then I would no other company.

*Erp.* The Lord in heaven bless thee, noble Harry!

[*Exit ERPINGHAM.*]

*K. Hen.* God-a-mercy, old heart! thou speakest cheerfully.

Enter PISTOL.

*Pist.* Qui va là!

*K. Hen.* A friend.

*Pist.* Discuss unto me; art thou officer;  
Or art thou base, common, and popular?

*K. Hen.* I am a gentleman of a company.

*Pist.* Traiest thou the puissant pike?

*K. Hen.* Even so: What are you?

*Pist.* As good a gentleman as the emperor.

*K. Hen.* Then you are a better than the king.

*Pist.* The king's a bawcock, and a heart of gold,

A lad of life, an imp† of fame;  
Of parents good, of fist most valiant;  
I kiss his dirty shoe, and from my heart-strings

I love the lovely bully. What's thy name?

*K. Hen.* Harry le Roy.

*Pist.* Le Roy! a Cornish name: art thou of Cornish crew?

*K. Hen.* No, I am a Welshman.

*Pist.* Knowest thou Fluellen?

*K. Hen.* Yes.

*Pist.* Tell him, I'll knock his leek about his pate,

Upon Saint Davy's day.

*K. Hen.* Do not you wear your dagger in your cap that day, lest he knock that about yours.

*Pist.* Art thou his friend?

*K. Hen.* And his kinsman too.

*Pist.* The figo for thee then!

*K. Hen.* I thank you: God be with you!

*Pist.* My name is Pistol called. [*Exit.*]

*K. Hen.* It sorts\* well with your fierceness.

Enter FLUELLEN and GOWER, severally.

*Gow.* Captain Fluellen!

*Flu.* So! in the name of Cheshu Christ, speak lower. It is the greatest admiration in the universal world, when the time and ancient prerogatives and laws of the wars is not kept: if you would take the pains but to examine the wars of Pompey the Great, you shall find, I warrant you, that there is no little taddle, or pibble pabble, in Pompey's camp: I warrant you, you shall find the ceremonies of the wars, and the cares of it, and the forms of it, and the sobriety of it, and the modesty of it, to be other-wise.

*Gow.* Why the enemy is loud; you heard him all night.

*Flu.* If the enemy is an ass and a fool, and a prating coxcomb; is it meet, think you that we should also, look you, be an ass and a fool, and a prating coxcomb; in your own conscience now?

*Gow.* I will speak lower.

*Flu.* I pray you, and beseech you, that you will. [*Exeunt GOWER and FLUELLEN.*]

*K. Hen.* Though it appear a little out of fashion,  
There is much care and valour in this Welshman.

Enter BATES, COURT, and WILLIAMS.

*Court.* Brother John Bates, is not that the morning which breaks yonder?

*Bates.* I think it be: but we have no great cause to desire the approach of day.

*Will.* We see yonder the beginning of the day, but, I think, we shall never see the end of it.—Who goes there?

*K. Hen.* A friend.

*Will.* Under what captain serve you?

*K. Hen.* Under Sir Thomas Erpingham.

*Will.* A good old commander, and a most kind gentleman: I pray you, what thinks he of our estate?

*K. Hen.* Even as men wrecked upon a sand, that look to be washed off the next tide.

*Bates.* He hath not told his thought to the king?

*K. Hen.* No; nor it is not meet he should. For, though I speak it to you, I think the king is but a man, as I am: the violet smells to him, as it doth to me; the element shows to him, as it doth to me; all his senses have but human conditions: † his ceremonies laid by, in his nakedness he appears but a man; and though his affections are higher mounted than ours, yet, when they stoop, they stoop with the like wing; therefore when he sees reason of fears, as we do, his fears, out of doubt, be of the same relish as our's are: Yet, in reason, no man should possess him with any appearance of fear, lest he, by showing it, should dishearten his army.

*Bates.* He may show what outward courage he will; but, I believe, as cold a night as 'tis, he could wish himself in the Thames up to the neck; and so I would he were, and I by him, at all adventures, so we were quit here.

*K. Hen.* By my troth, I will speak my conscience of the king; I think, he would not wish himself any where but where he is.

*Bates.* Then, 'would he were here alone; so should he be sure to be ransomed, and a many poor men's lives saved.

*K. Hen.* I dare say you love him not so ill, to wish him here alone; howsoever you speak this, to feel other men's minds: Methinks, I could not die any where so contented, as in the king's company; his cause being just, and his quarrel honourable.

\* Slough is the skin which serpents annually throw off.  
† Lightness nimbleness  
‡ Son

\* Agrees.

† Qualities.

*Will.* That's more than we know.

*Bates.* Ay, or more than we should seek after; for we know enough, if we know we are the king's subjects; if his cause be wrong, our obedience to the king wipes the crime of it out of us.

*Will.* But, if the cause be not good, the king himself hath a heavy reckoning to make; when all those legs, and arms, and heads, chopped off in a battle, shall join together at the latter day,\* and cry all—We died at such a place; some, swearing; some, crying for a surgeon; some, upon their wives left poor behind them; some upon the debts they owe; some upon their children rawly† left. I am afraid there are few die well, that die in battle; for how can they charitably dispose of any thing, when blood is their argument! Now, if these men do not die well, it will be a black matter for the king that led them to it; whom to disobey, were against all proportion of subjection.

*K. Hen.* So, if a son, that is by his father sent about merchandise, do sinfully miscarry upon the sea, the imputation of his wickedness, by your rule, should be imposed upon his father that sent him; or if a servant under his master's command, transporting a sum of money, be assailed by robbers, and die in many irreconcilable iniquities, you may call the business of the master the author of the servant's damnation?—But this is not so: the king is not bound to answer the particular endings of his soldiers, the father of his son, nor the master of his servant; for they purpose not their death, when they purpose their services. Besides, there is no king, be his cause never so spotless if it come to the arbitrement of swords, can try it out with all unspotted soldiers. Some, peradventure, have on them the guilt of premeditated and contrived murder; and of beguiling virgins with the broken seals of perjury; ~~some, making the wars their bulwark, that have before gored the gentle bosom of peace with pillage and robbery.~~ Now, if these men have defeated the law, and outrun native punishment;‡ though they can outstrip men, they have no wings to fly from God: war is his vengeance; so that here men are punished, for before-breath of the king's laws, in now the king's quarrel: where they feared the death, they have borne life away; and where they would be safe, they perish: Then if they die unprovided, no more is the king guilty of their damnation, than he was before guilty of those impieties for the which they are now visited. Every subject's duty is the king's; but every subject's soul is his own. Therefore should every soldier in the wars do as every sick man in his bed, wash every mote out of his conscience; and dying so, death is to him advantage; or not dying, the time was blessedly lost, wherein such preparation was gained: and, in him that escapes, it were not sin to think, that making God so free an offer, he let him outlive that day to see his greatness, and to teach others how they should prepare.

*Will.* ~~The~~ certain, that every man that dies ill, the ill is upon his own head, the king is not to answer for it.

*Bates.* I do not desire he should answer for me; and yet I determine to fight lustily for him.

*K. Hen.* I myself heard the king say, he would not be ransomed.

*Will.* Ay, he said so, to make us fight cheerfully: but, when our throats are cut, he may be ransomed, and we ne'er the wiser.

*K. Hen.* If I live to see it, I will never trust his word after.

*Will.* 'Mass, you'll pay § him then! That's a perilous shot out of an elder gun, that a poor and private displeasure can do against a mon-

arch? you may as well go about to turn the sun to ice, with fanning in his face with a peacock's feather. You'll never trust his word after I coin it, 'tis a foolish saying.

*K. Hen.* Your reproof is something too round; § I should be angry with you, if the time were convenient.

*Will.* Let it be a quarrel between us, if you live.

*K. Hen.* I embrace it.

*Will.* How shall I know thee again.

*K. Hen.* Give me any gage of thine, and I will wear it in my bonnet: then, if ever thou dar'est acknowledge it, I will make it my quarrel.

*Will.* Here's my glove; give me another of thine.

*K. Hen.* There.

*Will.* This will I also wear in my cap: if ever thou come to me and say, after to-morrow, *This is my glove*, by this hand, I will take thee a box on the ear.

*K. Hen.* If ever I live to see it, I will challenge it.

*Will.* Thou dar'st as well be hanged.

*K. Hen.* Well, I will do it, though I take thee in the king's company.

*Will.* Keep thy word: fare thee well.

*Bates.* Be friends, you English fools, be friends; we have French quarrels enough, it you could tell how to reckon.

*K. Hen.* Indeed, the French may lay twenty French crowns to one, they will beat us; for they bear them on their shoulders: But it is no English treason to cut French Crowns; and to-morrow, the king himself will be a clipper.

[*Exeunt Soldiers.*]

Upon the king! let us our lives, our souls,  
Our debts, our careful wives, our children,  
and

Our sins lay on the king;—we must bear all.

O hard condition! twin-born with greatness,  
Subjected to the breath of every fool,  
Whose sense no more can feel but his own  
wringing!

What infinite heart's ease must kings neglect,  
That private men enjoy!  
And what have kings, that privates have not  
too,

Save ceremony, save general ceremony?—  
And what art thou, thou idol ceremony?  
What kind of god art thou, that suffer'st more  
Of mortal griefs, than do thy worshippers?  
What are thy rents? what are thy comings in?  
O ceremony, show me but thy worth!

What is the soul of adoration? †  
Art thou aught else but place, degree, and  
form,

Creating awe and fear in other men?  
Wherein thou art less happy being fear'd  
Than they in fearing.

What drink'st thou oft, instead of homage  
sweet, [ness,  
But poison'd flattery? O be sick, great great-  
And bid thy ceremony give thee cure!

Think'st thou, the fiery fever will go out  
With titles blown from adulation?  
Will it give place to flexure and low bending?

Canst thou, when thou command'st the beggar's  
knee,  
Command the health of it? No, thou proud  
dread;

That play'st so subtly with a king's repose;  
I am a king, that find thee; and I know,  
'Tis not the balm, the sceptre, and the ball,  
The sword, the mace, the crown imperial,  
The enter-tissued robe of gold and pearl,  
The farced § title running 'fore the king,  
The throne he sits on, nor the tide of pomp  
That beats upon the high shore of this world,

\* The last day, the day of judgment.

† Suddenly.

‡ I. e. Punishment in their native country.

§ To pay here signifies to bring to account, to punish.

\* Too rough.

†† What is the real worth and intrinsic value of adoration? ‡ Farc'd is stuffed. The tumbler puffs titles with which a king's name is introduced

No, not all these, thrice-gorgeous ceremony,  
Not all these, laid in bed majestical,  
Can sleep so soundly as the wretched slave;  
Who, with a body fill'd, and vacant mind,  
Gets him to rest, cramm'd with distressful  
bread;

Never sees horrid night, the child of hell;  
But, like a lackey, from the rise to set,  
Sweats in the eye of Phoebus, and all night  
Sleeps in Elysium; next day, after dawn,  
Doth rise and help Hyperion\* to his horse;  
And follows so the ever-running year  
With profitable labour, to his grave;  
And, but for ceremony, such a wretch,  
Winding up days with toil, and nights with  
sleep,

Had the fore-hand and vantage of a king.  
The slave, a member of the country's peace,  
Enjoys it; but in gross brain little wots,  
What watch the king keeps to maintain the  
peace,  
Whose hours the peasant best advantages.

Enter ERPINGHAM.

Erp. My lord, your nobles, jealous of your  
absence,  
Seek through your camp to find you.

K. Hen. Good old knight,  
Collect them all together at my tent:  
I'll be before thee.

Erp. I shall do't, my lord.

[Exit.

K. Hen. O God of battles! steel my soldiers'  
hearts!

Possess them not with fear; take from them  
now

The sense of reckoning, if the opposed num-  
bers

Pluck their hearts from them!—Not to-day, O  
Lord,

O not to-day, think not upon the fault  
My father made in compassing the crown!  
Richard's body have interred new;  
And on it have bestow'd more contrite tears,  
Than from it issued forced drops of blood.

Five hundred poor I have in yearly pay,  
Who twice a day their wither'd hands hold up  
Toward heaven, to pardon blood; and I have  
built

Two chantries, where the sad and solemn  
priests

Sing still for Richard's soul. More will I do:  
Though all that I can do, is nothing worth;  
Since that my penitence comes after all,  
Imploring pardon.

Enter GLOSTER.

Glo. My liege!

K. Hen. My brother Gloster's voice?—Ay;  
I know thy errand, I will go with thee:  
The day, my friends, and all things stay for me.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—The French Camp.

Enter DAUPHIN, ORLEANS, RAMBURES, and  
others.

Orl. The sun doth gild our armour; up, my  
lords.

Dau. Montez a cheval:—My horse! valet!  
lacquay! ha!

Orl. O brave spirit!

Dau. Via!—les eaux et le terre—

Orl. Rien puis? l'air et le feu—

Dau. Ciel! cousin Orleans.—

Enter CONSTABLE.

Now, my lord Constable!

\* The sun.

† An old encouraging exclamation.

Con. Hark, how our steeds for present ser-  
vice neigh.

Dau. Mount them, and make incision in their  
hides:

That their hot blood may spin in English eyes,  
And dunt\* them with superfluous courage:  
Ha!

Ram. What, will you have them weep our  
horses' blood?

How shall we then behold their natral tears?

Enter a MESSENGER.

Mess. The English are embattled, you French  
peers.

Con. To horse you gallant princes! straight  
to horse!

Do but behold yon poor and starv'd band,  
And your fair show shall suck away their souls,  
Leaving them but the shales and husks of men.  
There is not work enough for all our hands;  
Scarce blood enough in all their sickly veins,  
To give each naked curtle-axe a stain,  
That our French gallants shall to-day draw out,  
And sheath for lack of sport; let us but blow on  
them,

The vapour of our valour will o'erturn them.  
'Tis positive 'gainst all exceptions, lords,  
That our superfluous lackeys, and our peasants,—  
Who, in unnecessary action, swarm  
About our squares of battle,—were enough  
To purge this field of such a hiding† foe;  
Though we, upon this mountain's basis by  
Took stand for idle speculation:  
But that our honours must not. What's to say?  
A very little little let us do,  
And all is done. Then let the trumpets sound  
The tucket-souvançe,† and the note to mount:  
For our approach shall so much dare the field,  
That England shall couch down in fear, and  
yield.

Enter GRANDPRE.

Grand. Why do you stay so long, my lords  
of France?

You ishind carriages, desperate of their bones,  
Ill-favour'dly become the morning field:  
Their ragged curtains § poorly are let loose,  
And our air shakes them passing scornfully.  
Big Mars seems bankrupt in their beggar'd  
host,

And faintly through a rusty beaver peeps.  
Their horsemen sit like fixed candlesticks,  
With torch-staves in their hand: and their poor  
jades

Lob down their heads, dropping their hides and  
hips; [eyes:  
The gum down-roping from their pale dead  
And in their pale dull mouths the gimmal || bit  
Lies foul with chew'd grass, still and motion-  
less;

And their executors, the knavish crows,  
Fly o'er them all, impatient for their hour.  
Description cannot suit itself in words,  
To demonstrate the life of such a battle  
In life so lifeless as it shows itself.

Con. They have said their prayers, and they  
stay for death.

Dau. Shall we go send them dinners, and  
fresh suits,  
And give their fasting horses provender,  
And after fight with them?

Con. I stay but for my guard; On, to the  
field:

I will the banner from a trumpet take,  
And use it for my haste. Come, come away;  
The sun is high, and we outwear the day.  
[Exeunt.

\* Do them out, extinguish them.

† Mean, despicable. ‡ The name of an in-  
troduitory flourish on the trumpet. § Colours.

|| Ring.

## SCENE III.—The English Camp.

Enter the English Host : GLOSTER, BEDFORD, EXETER, SALISBURY, and WESTMORELAND.

Glo. Where is the king?

Bed. The king himself is rode to view their battle.

West. Of fighting men they have full three-score thousand.

Ere. There's five to one; besides they all are fresh.

Sal. God's arm strike with us! 'tis a fearful odds.

God be wi' you, princes all; I'll to my charge:

If we no more meet, till we meet in heaven,

Then, joyfully, my noble lord of Bedford,

My dear lord Gloster, and my good lord

Exeter,

And my kind kinsman, warriors all, adieu!

Bed. Farewell, good Salisbury; and good

luck go with thee!

Ere. Farewell, kind lord; fight valiantly to-day:

And yet I do thee wrong, to mind thee of it,

For thou art fram'd of the firm truth of valour.

[Exit SALISBURY.]

Bed. He is as full of valour, as of kindness;

Princely in both.

West. O that we now had here

Enter King HENRY.

But one ten thousand of those men in England,

That do no work to-day!

K. Hen. What's he, that wishes so?

My cousin Westmoreland?—No, my fair cousin:

If we are mark'd to die, we are enough

To do our country loss; and if to live,

The fewer men, the greater share of honour.

God's will! I pray thee, wish not one man more.

By Jove, I am not covetous for gold:

Nor care I, who doth feed upon my cost;

It yearns\* me not, if men my garments wear;

Such outward things dwell not in my desires:

But, if it be a sin to covet honour,

I am the most offending soul alive.

No, 'faith, my coz, wish not a man from Eng-

land:

God's peace! I would not lose so great an

honour,

As one man more, methinks would share from

me,

For the best hope I have. Oh I do not wish one

more:

Rather proclaim it, Westmoreland, through my

host,

That he, which hath no stomach to this fight,

Let him depart: his passport shall be made,

And crowns for convoy put into his purse:

We would not die in that man's company,

That fears his fellowship to die with us.

This day is call'd the feast of Crispian;†

He that outlives this day, and comes safe

home,

Will stand a tip-toe when this day is nam'd,

And rouse him at the name of Crispian:

He that shall live this day, and see old age,

Will yearly on the vigil feast his friends,

And say—to-morrow is Saint Crispian:

Then will he strip his sleeve, and show his

scars,

And say, these wounds I had on Crispian's day.

Old men forget; yet shall not all forget;

But he'll remember, with advantages,

What feats he did that day: Then shall our

names,

Familiar in their mouths as household words,

Harry the king, Bedford, and Exeter,

Warwick and Talbot, Salisbury and Gloster,

Be in their flowing cups freshly remember'd:

This story shall the good man teach his son;

And Crispin Crispian shall ne'er go by  
From this day to the ending of the world,  
But we in it shall be remembered:  
We few, we happy few, we band of brothers;  
For he to-day that sheds his blood with me,  
Shall be my brother: he ne'er so vile,  
This day shall gentle his condition:  
And gentlemen in England, now a-bed,  
Shall think themselves accurs'd they were not  
here!  
And hold their manhoods cheap, while any  
speaks,  
That fought with us upon Saint Crispin's day.

Enter SALISBURY.

Sal. My sovereign lord, bestow yourself with speed:

The French are bravely\* in their battles set,  
And will with all expedience† charge on us.

K. Hen. All things are ready, if our minds be so.

West. Perish the man, whose mind is backward now!

K. Hen. Thou dost not wish more help from England, cousin?

West. God's will, my liege, 'would you and I alone,

Without more help, might fight this battle out!

K. Hen. Why, now thou hast unwish'd five thousand men;

Which likes me better, than to wish us one.—  
You know your places: God be with you all!

Tucket.—Enter MONTJOY.

Mont. Once more I come to know of thee, king Harry,

If for thy ransom thou wilt now compound,  
Before thy most assured overthrow:

For, certainly, thou art so near the gulf,  
Thou needs must be englutted. Besides, in

mercy,  
The Constable desires thee, thou wilt mind ‡  
Thy followers of repentance; that their souls

May make a peaceful and a sweet retire  
From off these fields, where (wretches) their

poor bodies  
Must lie and fester.

K. Hen. Who hath sent thee now?

Mont. The Constable of France.

K. Hen. I pray thee, bear my former answer back;

Bid them achieve me, and then sell my bones.  
Good God! why should they mock poor fellows

thus?†  
The man that once did sell the lion's skin

While the beast liv'd, was kill'd with hunting him.

As many of our bodies shall, no doubt,  
Find native graves; upon the which I trust,

Shall witness live in brass § of this day's work:  
And those that leave their valiant bones in

France,  
Dying like men, though buried in your dung-

hills,  
They shall be fam'd; for there the sun shall

greet them,  
And draw their honours reeking up to heaven;

Leaving their earthly parts to choke your clime,  
The smell whereof shall breed a plague in

France.  
Mark then a bounding valour in our English;

That, being dead, like to the bullet's grazing,  
Break out into a second course of mischief,

Killing in relapse of mortality.  
Let me speak proudly;—Tell the Constable,

We are but warriors for the working-day, ||  
Our gayness, and our gilt, ¶ are all besmirch'd\*\*

With rainy marching in the painful field;

\* Gallantly.

† Expedition.

‡ Remind.

§ I. e. In brazen plates anciently set into tomb-stones.

|| We are soldiers but coarsely dressed.

¶ Golden shows, superficial gilding. \*\* Soiled.

\* Grieves.

† The battle of Agincourt was fought October 25,

St. Crispin's day.

There's not a piece of feather in our host,  
(Good argument, I hope, we shall not fly.)  
And time hath worn us into slovenry;  
But, by the mass, our hearts are in the trim:  
And my poor soldiers tell me, yet, ere night,  
They'll be in fresher robes; or they will pluck  
The gay new coats o'er the French soldiers'  
heads,  
And turn them out of service. If they do this,  
(As, if God please, they shall,) my ransom then  
Will soon be levied. Herald, save thou thy labour;  
Come thou no more for ransom, gentle herald;  
They shall have none, I swear, but these my joints:  
Which if they have as I will leave 'em to them,  
Shall yield them little, tell the Constable.  
*Mont.* I shall, king Harry. And so fare thee well:  
Thou never shalt hear herald any more. [*Exit.*]  
*K. Hen.* I fear, thou'lt once more come again for ransom.

*Enter the Duke of York.*

*York.* My lord, most humbly on my knee I beg  
The leading of the vaward.\*

*K. Hen.* Take it, brave York.—Now, soldiers,  
And how thou pleasest, God, dispose the day!  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—The field of Battle.

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter FRENCH SOLDIER, PISTOL, and BOY.*

*Pist.* Yield, cur.

*Fr. Sol.* Je pense, que vous'estes le gentilhomme de bonne qualité.

*Pist.* Quality, call you me?—Construe me, art thou a gentleman? What is thy name? discuss.

*Fr. Sol.* O seigneur Dieu!

*Pist.* Oh! sieigneur Dew should be a gentleman:—

Perpend my words, O sieigneur Dew, and mark:—

O sieigneur Dew, thou diest on point of fox,† except, O sieigneur, thou do give to me Egregious ransom.

*Fr. Sol.* O, prenez misericorde! ayez pitié de moy!

*Pist.* Moy shall not serve, I will have forty moys;

For I will fetch thy rim‡ out at thy throat, in drops of crimson blood.

*Fr. Sol.* Est il impossible d'eschapper la force de ton bras?

*Pist.* Brass, cur! Thou damned and luxurious § mountain goat, Offer'st me brass!

*Fr. Sol.* O pardonnez moy!

*Pist.* Say'st thou me so? is that a ton of moys?||—

Come hither, boy; Ask me this slave in French, What is his name.

*Boy.* Escoutez; Comment estes vous appelé?

*Fr. Sol.* Monsieur le Fer.

*Boy.* He says, his name is—master Fer.

*Pist.* Master Fer! I'll fer him, and firκ ¶ him, and ferret him;—discuss the same in French unto him.

*Boy.* I do not know the French for fer, and ferret, and firκ.

*Pist.* Bid him prepare, for I will cut his throat.

*Fr. Sol.* Que dit-il, monsieur?

*Boy.* Il me commande de vous dire que vous faites vous prest; car de soldat icy

\* Vanguard.

† An old cant word for a sword, so called from a famous sword cutler of the name of Fox.

‡ The diaphragm.

§ Pieces of money.

¶ Lascivious.

¶ Chastise.

est dispose tout a cette heure de couper vostre gorge.

*Pist.* Ouy, couper gorge, par ma foy, pesant, Unless thou give me crowns, brave crowns; Or mangled shalt thou be by this my sword.

*Fr. Sol.* O, je vous supplie pour l'amour de Dieu me pardonner! Je suis gentilhomme de bonne maison: gardez ma vie, et je vous donneray deux cents escus.

*Pist.* What are his words?

*Boy.* He prays you to save his life: he is a gentleman of a good house; and, for his ransom, he will give you two hundred crowns.

*Pist.* Tell him,—my fury shall abate, and I The crowns will take.

*Fr. Sol.* Petit monsieur, que dit-il?

*Boy.* Encore qu'il est contre son jurement, de pardonner aucun prisonnier; neanmoins, pour les escus que vous l'avez promis, il est content de vous donner la liberté, le franchisement.

*Fr. Sol.* Sur mes genoux, je vous donne mille remerciemens; et je m'estime heureux que je suis tombé entre les mains d'un chevalier, je pense, le plus brave, vaillant, et très distingué seigneur d'Angleterre.

*Pist.* Expound unto me, boy.

*Boy.* He gives you, upon his knees, a thousand thanks; and he esteems himself happy that he hath fallen into the hands of (as he thinks) the most brave, valorous, and thrice-worthy sieigneur of England.

*Pist.* As I suck blood, I will some mercy show.—

Follow me, cur.

[*Exit PISTOL.*]

*Boy.* Suivez vous le grand capitaine.

[*Exit FRENCH SOLDIER.*]

I did never know so full a voice issue from so empty a heart: but the saying is true.—The empty vessel makes the greatest sound. Bardolph and Nym had ten times more valour than this roaring devil i'the old play, that every one may pare his nails with a wooden dagger; and they are both hanged; and so would this be, if he durst steal any thing adventurously. I must stay with the lackeys, with the luggage of our camp: the French might have a good prey of us, if he knew of it; for there is none to guard it. but boys. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—Another part of the Field of Battle.

*Alarum. Enter DAUPHIN, ORLEANS, BOURBON, CONSTABLE, RAMBURES, and others.*

*Con.* O diable?

*Orl.* O seigneur!—Le jour est perdu, tout est perdu!

*Dau.* Mort de ma vie! all is confounded, all!

Reproach and everlasting shame

Sits mocking in our plumes.—O meschante fortune!

Do not run away.

[*A short Alarum.*]

*Con.* Why, all our ranks are broke.

*Dau.* O perdurable \* shame!—let's stab ourselves.

Be these the wretches that we play'd at dice for?

*Orl.* Is this the king we sent to for his ransom?

*Bour.* Shame, and eternal shame, nothing but shame!

Let us die instant. Once more back again;

And he that will not follow Bourbon now,

Let him go hence, and, with his cap in hand,

Like a base pander, hold the chamber-door,

Whilst by a slave, no gentler than my dog,†

His fairest daughter is contaminate.

*Con.* Disorder, that hath spoil'd us, friend us now!

Let us, in heaps, go offer up our lives

Unto these English, or else die with fame.

\* Lusting.

† L. e. Who has no more gentility.



*Orl.* We are enough, yet living in the field,  
To smother up the English in our throngs,  
If any order might be thought upon.

*Bour.* The devil take order now! I'll to the  
thrung;

Let life be short; else, shame will be too long.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—Another part of the Field.

*Alarums. Enter King HENRY and Forces;  
EXETER, and others.*

*K. Hen.* Well have we done, thrice-valiant  
countrymen:

But all's not done, yet keep the French the field.

*Ere.* The duke of York commends him to  
your majesty.

*K. Hen.* Lives he, good uncle? thrice, with-  
in this hour,  
I saw him down; thrice up again, and fighting;  
From helmet to the spur, all blood he was.

*Ere.* In which array, (brave soldier,) doth  
he lie,

Larding the plain: and by his bloody side,  
(Yoke-fellow to his honour-owing wounds),  
The noble earl of Suffolk also lies.

Suffolk first died, and York, all haggled over,  
Comes to him, where in gore he lay insteep'd,  
And takes him by the beard; kisses the gashes,  
That bloodily did yawn upon his face;  
And cries aloud.—*Tarry, dear cousin Suffolk!*  
*My soul shall thine keep company to heaven:*  
*Tarry, sweet soul, for mine, then fly a-*  
*breast;*

*As, in this glorious and well-foughten field,*  
*We kept together in our chivalry!*

Upon these words I came, and cheer'd him up:  
He smil'd me in the face, caught me his hand,  
And, with a feeble gripe, says,—*Dear my lord,*  
*Commend my service to my sovereign.*  
So did he turn, and over Suffolk's neck  
He threw his wounded arm, and kiss'd his lips;  
And so, espous'd to death, with blood he seal'd  
A testament of noble-ending love.

The pretty and sweet manner of it forc'd  
Those waters from me, which I would have  
stopp'd;

But I had not so much of mine in me,  
But all my mother came into mine eyes,  
And gave me up to tears.

*A. Hen.* I blame you not;  
For, hearing this, I must perceive compound  
With mistful eyes, or they will issue too.—

[*Alarum.*]  
But, hark! what new alarum is this same?—  
The French have reinforc'd their scatter'd  
men:—

Then every soldier kill his prisoners;  
Give the word through. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—Another part of the Field.

*Alarums. Enter FLUELLEN and GOWER.*

*Flu.* Kill the poys and the luggage! 'tis ex-  
pressly against the law of arms: 'tis as arrant  
a piece of knavery, mark you now, as can be  
offer'd, in the world; In your conscience now,  
is it not?

*Gow.* 'Tis certain, there's not a boy left alive;  
and the cowardly rascals, that ran from the bat-  
tle, have done this slaughter: besides, they have  
burned and carried away all that was in the  
king's tent; wherefore the king, most worthily,  
hath caused every soldier to cut his prisoner's  
throat. Oh! 'tis a gallant king.

*Flu.* Ay, he was born at Monmouth, captain  
Gower: What call you the town's name, where  
Alexander the pig was born?

*Gow.* Alexander the great.

*Flu.* Why, I pray you, is not pig, great? The  
pig, or the great, or the mighty, or the huge, or  
the magnanimous, are all one reckonings, save  
the phrase is a little variations.

• Reached.

*Gow.* I think, Alexander the great was born  
in Macedon; his father was called—Phillip of  
Macedon, as I take it.

*Flu.* I think, it is in Macedon, where Alex-  
ander is born. Tell you, captain,—If you look  
in the maps of the world, I warrant, you shall  
find, in the comparisons between Macedon and  
Monmouth, that the situations, look you, is both  
alike. There is a river in Macedon; and there  
is also moreover a river at Monmouth: it is called  
Wye, at Monmouth: but it is out of my  
prais, what is the name of the other river; but  
'tis all one, 'tis so like as my fingers is to my  
fingers, and there is salmons in both. If you  
mark Alexander's life well, Harry of Monmouth's  
life is come after it indifferently well; for there  
is figures in all things. Alexander (God knows,  
and you know,) in his rages and his furies, and  
his wraaths, and his cholers, and his moods, and  
his displeasures, and his indignations, and also  
being a little intoxicated in his prais, did, in his  
ales and his angers, look you, kill his pest  
friend, Clytus.

*Gow.* Our king is not like him in that; he  
never killed any of his friends.

*Flu.* Is it not well done, mark you now, to  
take tales out of my mouth, ere it is made an  
end and finished. I speak but in the figures  
and comparisons of it: As Alexander is kill his  
friend Clytus, being in his ales and his cups;  
so also Harry Monmouth, being in right wits  
and his good judgments, is turn away the fat  
knight with the great pelly-doublet: he was full  
of jests, and gipes, and knaveries, and mocks; I  
am forget his name.

*Gow.* Sir John Falstaff.

*Flu.* That is he: I can tell you, there is gout  
men born at Monmouth.

*Gow.* Here comes his majesty.

*Alarum. Enter King HENRY, with a part of  
the English Forces: WARWICK, GLOSTER,  
EXETER, and others.*

*K. Hen.* I was not angry since I came to  
France

Until this instant.—Take a trumpet, herald;  
Ride thou unto the horsemen on yon hill;  
If they will fight with us, bid them come down,  
Or void the field; they do offend our sight:  
If they'll do neither, we will come to them;  
And make them skirr away as swift as stones  
Enforced from the old Assyrian slings:  
Besides, we'll cut the throats of those we have;  
And not a man of them, that we shall take,  
Shall taste our mercy:—Go, and tell them so.

*Enter MONTJOY.*

*Ere.* Here comes the herald of the French,  
my liege.

*Glo.* His eyes are humbler than they us'd to  
be.

*K. Hen.* How now, what means this, herald?  
know'st thou not,  
That I have fin'd these bones of mine for ran-  
som?

Com'st thou again for ransom?

*Mont.* No, great king:

I come to thee for charitable license,  
That we may wander o'er this bloody field  
To book our dead, and then to bury them;  
To sort our nobles from our common men;  
For many of our princes (woe the while!)  
Lie drown'd and soak'd in mercenary blood;  
(So do our vulgar drench their peasant limbs  
In blood of princes;) and their wounded steeds  
Fret fetlock deep in gore, and, with wild rage,  
Yerk out their armed heels at their dead mas-  
ters,

Killing them twice. O give us leave, great king,  
To view the field in safety, and dispose  
Of their dead bodies.

*K. Hen.* I tell thee truly, herald,  
I know not if the day be ours or no;

• Scout.

For yet a many of your horseman peer,  
And gallop o'er the field.

*Mont.* The day is yours.

*K. Hen.* Praised be God, and not our strength,  
for it!

What is this castle call'd, that stands hard by?

*Mont.* They call it—Aguincourt.

*K. Hen.* Then call we this—the field of Agincourt,

Fought on the day of Crispin Crispianus.

*Flu.* Your grandfather of famous memory, an't please your majesty, and your great-uncle Edward the plack prince of Wales, as I have read in the chronicles, fought a most prave battlie here in France.

*K. Hen.* They did, Fluellen.

*Flu.* Your majesty says very true: If your majesties is remembered of it, the Welshman did goot service in a garden where leeks did grow, weaing leeks in their Monmouth caps; which, your majesty knows, to this hour is an honourable padge of the service; and, I do believe, your majesty takes no scorn to wear leek upon Saint Tavy's day.

*K. Hen.* I wear it for a memorable honour: For I am Welsh, you know, good countryman.

*Flu.* All the water in Wye cannot wash your majesty's Welsh blood out of your pody, I can tell you that: Got pless it and preserve it, as long as it pleases his grace, and his majesty too!

*K. Hen.* Thanks, good my countryman.

*Flu.* By Cheshu, I am your majesty's countryman, I care not who know it; I will confess it to all the world: I need not to be ashamed of your majesty, praised be God, so long as your majesty is an honest man.

*K. Hen.* God keep me so!—Our heralds go with him;

Bring me just notice of the numbers dead

On both our parts.—Call yonder fellow hither.

[*Points to WILLIAMS. Enter MONTJOY and others.*]

*Etc.* Soldier, you must come to the king.

*K. Hen.* Soldier, why wear'st thou that glove in thy cap?

*Will.* An't please your majesty, 'tis the paged of one that I should fight withal, if he be alive.

*K. Hen.* An Englishman?

*Will.* An't please your majesty, a rascal, that swaggered with me last night: who, if 'a live, and ever dare to challenge this glove, I have sworn to take him a box o'the ear: or, if I can see my glove in his cap, (which he swore, as he was a soldier, he would wear, if alive,) I will strike it out soundly.

*K. Hen.* What think you, captain Fluellen; is it fit this soldier keep his oath?

*Flu.* He is a craven\* and a villain else, an't please your majesty, in my conscience.

*K. Hen.* It may be, his enemy is a gentleman of great sort,† quite from the answer of his degree.

*Flu.* Though he be as goot a gentleman as the devil is, as Lucifer and Belzebub himself, it is necessary, look your grace, that he keep his vow and his oath; if he be perjured, see you now, his reputation is as arrant a villain, and a Jack-sauce,† as ever his plack shoe trod upon Got's ground and his earth, in my conscience, la.

*K. Hen.* Then keep thy vow, sirrah, when thou meet'st the fellow.

*Will.* So I will, my liege, as I live.

*K. Hen.* Who servest thou under?

*Will.* Under captain Gower, my liege.

*Flu.* Gower is a goot captain; and is good knowledge and literature in the wars.

*K. Hen.* Call him hither to me, soldier.

*Will.* I will, my liege. [Exit.]

*K. Hen.* Here, Fluellen; wear thou this favour for me, and stick it in thy cap: When Alençon

and myself were down together, I plucked this glove from his helm: if any man challenge this, he is a friend to Alençon and an enemy to our person; if thou encounter any such, apprehend him, an thou dost love me.

*Flu.* Your grace does me as great honours, as can be desired in the hearts of his subjects: I would fain see the man, that has but two legs, that shall find himself aggrieved at this glove, that is all; but I would fain see it once; an please Got of his grace, that I might see it.

*K. Hen.* Knowest thou Gower?

*Flu.* He is my dear friend, an please you.

*K. Hen.* Pray thee, go seek him, and bring him to my tent.

*Flu.* I will fetch him. [Exit.]

*K. Hen.* My lord of Warwick, and my brother Gloster,

Follow Fluellen closely at the heels: The glove, which I have given him for a favour, May, haply, purchase him a box o'the ear; It is the soldier's: I, by bargain, should Wear it myself. Follow, good cousin Warwick:

If that the soldier strike him, (as, I judge By his blunt bearing, he will keep his word,) Some sudden mischief may arise of it;

For I do know Fluellen valiant,

And, touch'd with choler, hot as gunpowder,

And quickly will return an injury:

Follow, and see there be no harm between them.—

Go you with me, uncle of Exeter. [Exit.]

SCENE VIII.—Before King HENRY's Pavilion.

Enter GOWER and WILLIAMS.

*Will.* I warrant it is to knight you, captain.

Enter FLEUellen.

*Flu.* Got's will, and his pleasure, captain, I pesserch you now, come apace to the king: there is more goot toward you, peradventure, than is in your knowledge to dream of.

*Will.* Sir, know you this glove?

*Flu.* Know the glove? I know the glove is a glove.

*Will.* I know this; and thus I challenge it. [Strikes him.]

*Flu.* 'Sblud, an arrant traitor, as any's in the universal world, or in France, or in England.

*Gow.* How now, Sir? I villain!

*Will.* Do you think I'll be forsworn?

*Flu.* Stand away, captain Gower; I will give treason his payment into plows, I warrant you.

*Will.* I am no traitor.

*Flu.* That's a lie in thy throat.—I charge you in his majesty's name, apprehend him; he's a friend of the duke of Alençon's.

Enter WARWICK and GLOSTER.

*War.* How now, how now! what's the matter?

*Flu.* My lord of Warwick, here is (praised be Got for it!) a most contagious treason come to light, look you, as you shall desire in a summer's day. Here is his majesty.

Enter King HENRY and EXETER.

*K. Hen.* How now! what's the matter?

*Flu.* My liege, here is a villain and a traitor, that, look your grace, has struck the glove which your majesty is take out of the helmet of Alençon.

*Will.* My liege, this was my glove; here is the fellow of it: and he, that I gave it to in change, promised to wear it in his cap; I promised to strike him, if he did: I met this man with my glove in his cap, and I have been as good as my word.

*Flu.* Your majesty hear now, (saving your majesty's manhood,) what an arrant, rascally,

\* Coward                    † High rank  
                                      ; For sancy Jack.

beggarly, lowsy knave it is: I hope, your majesty is plear me testimony, and witness, and avouchments, that this is the glove of Alençon, that your majesty gave me, in your conscience now.

*K. Hen.* Give me thy glove, soldier: Look, here is the fellow of it. 'Twas I, indeed, thou promised'st to strike; and thou hast given me most bitter terms.

*Flu.* An please your majesty, let his neck answer for it, if there is any martial law in the world.

*K. Hen.* How canst thou make me satisfaction?

*Will.* All offences, my liege, come from the heart: never came any from mine, that might offend your majesty.

*K. Hen.* It was ourself thou didst abuse.

*Will.* Your majesty came not like yourself: you appeared to me but as a common man; witness the night, your garments, your lowliness; and what your highness suffered under that shape, I beseech you take it for your own fault, and not mine: for had you been as I took you for, I made no offence; therefore, I beseech your highness, pardon me.

*K. Hen.* Here, uncle Exeter, fill this glove with crowns, And give it to this fellow.—Keep it, fellow; And wear it for an honour in thy cap, Till I do challenge it.—Give him the crowns:—And, captain, you must needs be friends with him.

*Flu.* By this day and this light, the fellow has mettle enough in his pelly:—Hold, there is twelve pence for you, and I pray you to serve God, and keep you out of prawns, and prabbles, and quarrels, and dissensions, and, I warrant you, it is the petter for you.

*Will.* I will none of your money.

*Flu.* It is with a goot will; I can tell you, it will serve you to mend your shoes: Come, wherefore should you be so painful? your shoes is not so goot: 'tis a goot silling, I warrant you, or I will change it.

*Enter an English HERALD.*

*K. Hen.* Now, herald; are the dead number'd?

*Her.* Here is the number of the slaughter'd French. [*Delivers a Paper.*]

*K. Hen.* What prisoners of good sort are taken, uncle?

*Exc.* Charles duke of Orleans, nephew to the king;

John duke of Bourbon, and lord Bouciquart: Of other lords and barons, knights and squires, Full fifteen hundred, besides common men.

*K. Hen.* This note doth tell me of ten thousand French,

That in the field lie slain: of princes, in this number,

And nobles bearing banners, there lie dead One hundred twenty-six: added to these,

Of knights, esquires, and gallant gentlemen, Light thousand and four hundred; of the which,

Five hundred were but yesterday dubb'd knights:

So that, in these ten thousand they have lost, There are but sixteen hundred mercenaries;

The rest are—princes, barons, lords, knights, 'squires.

And gentlemen of blood and quality.

The name of those their nobles that lie dead,—

Charles De-la-bret, high Constable of France;

Jaques of Chatillon, admiral of France;

The master of the cross-bows, lord Rambures;

Great-master of France, the brave Sir Guischart

Dauphin;

John duke of Alençon; Antony duke of Brabant,

The brother to the duke of Burgundy;

And Edward duke of Bar: of lusty earls,

Grandpré and Roussi, Fauconberg and Foix,

Beaumont and Marle, Vaudemont and Lestrale, Here was a royal fellowship of death!—

Where is the number of our English dead?

[*HERALD presents another Paper.*]

Edward the duke of York, the earl of Suffolk,

Sir Richard Ketley, Davy Gam, esquire:

None else of name; and, of all other men,

But five and twenty. O God, thy arm was here,

And not to us, but to thy arm alone,

Ascribe we all.—When, without stratagem,

But in plain shock, and even play of battle,

Was ever known so great and little loss,

On one part and on the other?—Take it, God,

For it is only thine!

*Exc.* 'Tis wonderful!

*K. Hen.* Come, go we in procession to the

village:

And be it death proclaimed through our host,

To boast of this, or take the praise from God,

Which is his only.

*Flu.* Is it not lawful, an please your majesty,

to tell how many is killed?

*K. Hen.* Yes, captain; but with this acknow-

ledgement,

That God fought for us.

*Flu.* Yes, my conscience, he did us great

goot.

*K. Hen.* Do we all holy rites:

Let there be sung *Non nobis*, and *Te Deum*.

The dead with charity enclos'd in clay,

We'll then to Calais; and to England then;

Where ne'er from France arriv'd more happy

men. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### Enter CHORUS.

*Chor.* Vouchsafe to those that have not read the story,

That I may prompt them: and of such as have,

I humbly pray them to admit the excuse

Of time, of numbers, and due course of things,

Which cannot in their huge and proper life

Be here presented. Now we bear the king

Toward Calais: grant him there; there seen,

Heave him away upon your winged thoughts,

Athwart the sea: Behold, the English brach

Pales in the flood with men, with wives, and

boys,

Whose shouts and claps out-voice the deep

mouth'd sea,

Which, like a mighty whiffier, 'fore the king,

Seems to prepare his way: so let him land.

And, solemnly, see him set on to London.

So swift a pace hath thought, that even now

You may imagine him upon Blackheath;

Where that his lords desire him to have boine

His bruised helmet, and his bended sword,

Before him through the city: he forbids it,

Being free from vainness and self-glorious

pride;

Giving full trophy, signal, and ostent,

Quite from himself to God. But now behold,

In the quick forge and workinghouse of thought,

How London doth pour out her citizens!

The mayor, and all his brethren, in best sort,—

Like to the senators of the antique Rome,

With the plebeians swarming at their heels,—

Go forth, and fetch their conquering Cæsar in:

As, by a lower but by loving likelihood,

Were now the general of our gracious em-

press†

(As, in good time, he may,) from Ireland

coming,

Bringing rebellion broach'd § on his sword,

How many would the peaceful city quit,

\* The king (says the Chronicler,) caused the psalm

In exitu Israel de Egypto, to be sung after the victory.

† An officer who walks first in processions.

‡ The earl of Essex, in the reign of Elizabeth.

§ Spited, transfixed.

To welcome him? much more, 'and much more  
cause,  
Did they this Harry. Now in London place  
him;  
(As yet the lamentation of the French  
Invites the king of England's stay at home:  
The emperor's coming in behalf of France,  
To order peace between them;) and omit  
All the occurrences, whatever chance'd,  
Till Harry's back-return again to France;  
There must we bring him; and myself have  
play'd  
The interim, by remembering you—'tis past.  
Then brook abridgment; and your eyes ad-  
vance  
After your thought, straight back again to  
France. \* [Exit.]

SCENE I.—France.—An English Court of  
Guard.

Enter FLUELLEN and GOWER.

Gow. Nay, that's right; but why wear you  
your leek to-day? Saint Davy's day is past.

Flu. There is occasions and causes why 'and  
wherefore in all things: I will tell you, as my  
friend, captain Gower; The rascally, scald, beg-  
garly, lousy, prugging knave, Pistol, which you  
and yourself, and all the 'orld, know to be no  
petter than a fellow, look you now, of no me-  
rits, he is come to me, and prungs me pread  
and salt yesterday, look you, and bid me eat  
my leek: it was in a place where I could not  
breed no contentions with him; but I will be  
so pold as to wear it in my cap till I see him  
once again, and then I will tell him a little  
piece of my desires.

Enter PISTOL.

Gow. Why, here he comes, swelling like a  
turkey-cock.

Flu. 'Tis no matter for his swellings, nor his  
turkey-cocks.—Got bless you, ancient Pistol, you  
survey, lousy knave, Got bless you!

Pist. Ha! art thou Bedlam? dost thou thirst,  
base Trojan,

To have me fold up Parca's fatal web?†  
Hence! I am qualmish at the smell of leek.

Flu. I peseech you heartily, scurvy, lousy  
knave, at my desires, and my requests, and my  
petitions, to eat, look you, this leek; because,  
look you, you do not love it, nor your affec-  
tions, and your appetites, and your digestions,  
does not agree with it, I would desire you to  
eat it.

Pist. Not for Qadwallader, and all his  
goats.

Flu. There is one goat for you. [Strikes him.]  
Will you be so goot, scald knave, as eat it?

Pist. Base Trojan, thou shalt die.

Flu. You say very true, scald knave, when  
Got's will is: I will desire you to live in the  
mean time, and eat your victuals; come, there  
is sauce for it. [Striking him again.] You  
called me yesterday, mountain-squire; but I will  
make you to-day a squire of low degree. I pray  
you fall to; if you can mock a leek, you can  
eat a leek.

Gow. Enough, captain; you have astonished;  
him.

Flu. I say, I will make him eat some part of  
my leek, or I will peat his pate four days:—  
Pite, I pray you; it is goot for your green  
wound, and your bloody coxcomb.

Pist. Must I bite?

Flu. Yes, certainly; and out of doubt, and  
out of questions too, and ambiguities.

Pist. By this leek, I will most horribly re-  
venge; I eat, and eke I swear—

\* Henry did not strike a blow in France, for two  
years after the decisive battle of Agincourt, but imme-  
diately concluded a truce for that period.—Hume.  
† "Dost thou desire to have me put thee to death?"  
‡ Stunned.

Flu. Eat, I pray you: Will you have some  
more sauce to your leek? there is not enough  
leak to swear by.

Pist. Quit thy cudgel; thou dost see I eat.

Flu. Much goot do you, sculd knave, heartily.  
Nay, 'pray you, throw none away; the skin is  
goot for your poken coxcomb. When you take  
occasions to see leeks hereafter, I pray you,  
mock at them; that is all.

Pist. Good.

Flu. Ay, leeks is goot:—Hold you, there is a  
groat to heal your pate.

Pist. Me a groat!

Pist. Yes, verily, and in truth, you shall take  
it; or I have another leek in my pocket, which  
you shall eat.

Pist. I take thy groat, in earnest of revenge.

Flu. If I owe you any thing, I will pay you  
in cudgels; you shall be a woodmonger, and  
buy nothing of me but cudgels. God be wi' you,  
and keep you, and heal your pate. [Exit.]

Pist. All hell shall stir for this.

Gow. Go, go; you are a counterfeit cowardly  
knave. Will you mock at an ancient tradition,  
—begun upon an honourable respect, and worn  
as a memorable trophy of predeceased valour,—  
and dare not avouch in your deeds any of your  
words? I have seen you gleeking \* and galling at  
this gentleman twice or thrice. You thought  
because he could not speak English in the na-  
tive garb, he could not therefore handle an En-  
glish cudgel: you find it otherwise; and hence-  
forth let a Welsh correction teach you a good  
English condition.† Fare ye well.

[Exit.]

Pist. Doth fortune play the huswife ‡ with  
me now?

News have I, that my Nell is dead i'the spital §  
Of malady of France;  
And there my rendezvous is quite cut off.  
Old I do wax; and from my weary limbs  
Honour is cudgell'd. Well, band will I turn,  
And something lean to curpse of quick hand.  
To England will I steal, and there I'll steal;  
And patches will I get unto these scars,  
And swear I got them in the Gallia wars.

[Exit.]

SCENE II.—Troyes in Champagne.—An A-  
partment in the French King's Palace.

Enter, at one door, King HENRY, BEDFORD,  
GLOSTER, EXETER, WARWICK, WESTMOR-  
LAND, and other Lords; at another; the  
FRENCH KING, Queen ISABEL, the Princess  
KATHARINE, Lords, Ladies, &c. the Duke  
of BURGUNDY, and his Train.

K. Hen. Peace to this meeting, wherefore we  
are met!

Unto our brother France, and to our sister,  
Health and fair time of day, joy and goot  
wishes

To our most fair and princely cousin Katha-  
rine—  
And (as a branch and member of this royalty  
By whom this great assembly is contriv'd,)  
We do salute you, duke of Burgundy;—  
And princes French, and peers, health to you  
all!

Fr. King. Right joyous are we to behold  
your face,  
Most worthy brother England; fairly met:  
So are you, princes English, every one.

Q. Isa. So happy be the issue, brother Eng-  
land,  
Of this good day, and of this gracious meeting,  
As we are now glad to behold your eyes;  
Your eyes, which hitherto have borne in them  
Against the French, that met them, in their  
bent,  
The fatal balls of murdering basilisks:  
The venom of such looks, we fairly hope,

† Temper

\* Scoffing, sneering.

‡ For jilt.

§ Hospital.

Have lost their quality; and that this day  
Shall change all griefs, and quarrels, into love.

*K. Hen.* To cry amen to that, thus, we appear.

*Q. Isa.* You English princes all, I do salute you.

*Bur.* My duty to you both, on equal love,  
Great kings of France and England! That I  
have laboured

With all my wits, my pains, and strong endeavours,

To bring your most imperial majesties  
Unto this bar \* and royal interview,  
Your mightiness on both parts best can witness.  
Since then my office hath so far prevail'd,  
That face to face, and royal eye to eye,  
You have congregated; let it not disgrace me,  
If I demand, before this royal view,  
What rub, or what impediment there is,  
Why that the naked, poor, and mangled peace,  
Dear nurse of arts, plenty, and joyful births,  
Should not, in this best garden of the world,  
Our fertile France, put up her lovely visage?  
Alas! she hath from France too long been  
chas'd;

And all her husbandry doth lie on heaps,  
Corrupting in its own fertility.  
Her vine, the merry cheerer of the heart,  
Unpruned dies; her hedges even-placed,—  
Like prisoners wildly over-grown with hair,  
Put forth disorder'd twigs: her fallow leas  
The darnel hemlock, and rank fumitory,  
Doth root upon; while that the coulter † rusts,  
That should deracinate ‡ such savagery:  
The even mead, that erst brought sweetly forth  
The freckled crowslip, burnet, and green clover  
Wanting the scythe, all uncorrected, rank,  
Conceives by idleness; and nothing teems,  
But hateful docks, rough thistles, kecksies,  
burs,

Losing both beauty and utility.  
And as our vineyards, fallows, meads, and  
hedges,  
Defective in their natures, grow to wildness;  
Even so our houses, and ourselves, and chil-  
dren,

Have lost, or do not learn, for want of time,  
The sciences that should become our country;  
But grow, like savages, as soldiers will,  
That nothing do but meditate, on blood,  
To swearing, and stern looks, diffus'd † attire,  
And every thing that seems unnatural.  
Which to reduce into our former favour, ||  
You are assembled: and my speech entreats,  
That I may know the let, ¶ why gentle peace  
Should not expel these inconveniences,  
And bless us with her former qualities.

*K. Hen.* If, duke of Burgundy, you would  
the peace,

Whose want gives growth to the imperfections  
Which you have cited, you must buy that peace  
With full accord to all our just demands;  
Whose tenors and particular effects  
You have, enschedul'd briefly, in your hands.

*Bur.* The king hath heard them; to the  
which, as yet,  
There is no answer made.

*K. Hen.* Well then, the peace,  
Which you before so urg'd, lies in his answer.

*Fr. King.* I have but with a cursory eye  
O'er-glanc'd the articles: pleaseth your grace  
To appoint some of your council presently  
To sit with us once more, with better need  
To re-survey them, we will, suddenly,  
Pass our accept, and peremptory answer.

*K. Hen.* Brother, we shall.—Go, uncle Exe-  
ter.

And brother Clarence, and you, brother Glos-  
ter,—

Warwick and Huntingdon, go with the king:

And take with you free power, to ratify,  
Augment, or alter, as your wisdoms best  
Shall see advantageous for our dignity,  
Any thing in, or out of, our demands;  
And we'll consign thereto.—Will you, fair sis-  
ter,

Go with the princes, or stay here with us?

*Q. Isa.* Our gracious brother, I will go with  
them;

Haply a woman's voice may do some good,  
When articles, too nicely urg'd, be stood on.

*K. Hen.* Yet leave our cousin Katharine here  
with us;

She is our capital demand, compris'd  
Within the fore-rank of our articles.

*Q. Isa.* She hath good leave.

[*Exeunt all but HENRY, KATHARINE,  
and her Gentlewoman.*]

*K. Hen.* Fair Katharine, and most fair!  
Will you vouchsafe to teach a soldier terms  
Such as will enter at a lady's ear,  
And plead his love-suit to her gentle heart?

*Kath.* Your majesty shall mock at me; I can-  
not speak your English.

*K. Hen.* O fair Katharine, if you will love  
me soundly with your French heart, I will be  
glad to hear you confess it brokenly with your  
English tongue. Do you like me, Kate?

*Kath.* Pardonnez moy, I cannot tell what is—  
like me.

*K. Hen.* An angel is like you, Kate; and you  
are like an angel.

*Kath.* Que dit-il? que je suis semblable à les  
anges?

*Alice.* Ouy, vrayment, (sauf vostre grace)  
ainsi dit il.

*K. Hen.* I said so, dear Katharine; and I  
must not blush to affirm it.

*Kath.* O bon Dieu! les langues des hom-  
mes sont pleines de tromperies.

*K. Hen.* What says she, fair one? that the  
tongues of men are full of deceits?

*Alice.* Ouy; dat de tongues of de maus is be  
full of deceits: dat is de princess.

*K. Hen.* The princess is the better English-  
woman. I'faith, Kate, my wooing is fit for thy  
understanding: I am glad thou can'st speak  
no better English; for, if thou could'st, thou  
would'st find me such a plain king, that thou  
would'st think I had sold my farm to buy my  
crown. I know no ways to mince it in love,  
but directly to say—I love you: then, if you  
urge me farther than to say—Do you in faith?  
I wear out my suit. Give me your answer;  
I'faith, do; and so clap hands and a bargain:  
How say you, lady?

*Kath.* Sauf vostre honneur, me understand  
well.

*K. Hen.* Marry, if you would put me to ver-  
ses, or to dance for your sake, Kate, why you  
undid me: for the one, I have neither words  
nor measure; and for the other, I have no  
strength in measure,\* yet a reasonable mea-  
sure in strength. If I could win a lady at leap-  
frog, or by vaulting into my saddle with my  
armour on my back, under the correction of  
bragging be it spoken, I should quickly leap  
into a wife. Or, if I might buffet for my love,  
or bound my horse for her favours, I could lay  
on like a butcher, and sit like a jack-an-apes,  
never off; but, before God, I cannot look green-  
ly,† nor gasp out my eloquence, nor I have  
no cunning in protestation; only downright  
oaths, which I never use till urg'd, nor never  
break for urging. If thou canst love a fellow  
of this temper, Kate, whose face is not worth  
sun-burning, that never looks in his glass for  
love of any thing he sees there, let thine eye be  
thy cook. I speak to thee plain soldier: If  
thou canst love me for this, take me: if not, to  
say to thee, that I shall die, is true; but for  
thy love, by the Lord, no; yet I love thee too.

† Ploughshare.  
up the roots.  
\* Barrier.  
‡ To deracinate is to force  
up.  
§ Extravagant.  
|| Hinderance.  
| Appearance.

\* In dancing.  
† I. e. Like a young lover, awkward.

And while thou livest, dear Kate, take a fellow of plain and uncoined \* constancy; for he perforce must do thee right, because he hath not the gift to woo in other places: for these fellows of infinite tongue, that can rhyme themselves into ladies' favours,—they do always reason themselves out again. What! a speaker is but a prater; a rhyme is but a ballad. A good leg will fall: † a straight back will stoop: a black beard will turn white; a curled pate will grow bald; a fair face will wither; a full eye will wax hollow: but a good heart, Kate, is the sun and moon; or rather the sun, and not the moon; for it shines bright, and never changes, but keeps his course truly. If thou would have such a one, take me: And take me, take a soldier: take a soldier, take a king: And what sayest thou then to my love? speak, my fair, and fairly, I pray thee.

*Kath.* Is it possible dat I should love de enemy of France?

*K. Hen.* No; it is not possible you should love the enemy of France, Kate: but in loving me, you should love the friend of France; for I love France so well, that I will not part with a village of it; I will have it all mine: and, Kate, when France is mine, and I am your's, then your's is France, and you are mine.

*Kath.* I cannot tell wat is dat.

*K. Hen.* No, Kate? I will tell thee in French; which, I am sure, will hang upon my tongue like a new-married wife about her husband's neck, hardly to be shook off. *Quand j'ay la possession de France, et quand vous avez la possession de moi,* (let me see, what then? Saint Dennis be my speed!)—*donc vostre est France, et vous estes mienne.* It is as easy for me, Kate, to conquer the kingdom, as to speak so much more French: I shall never move thee in French: unless it be to laugh at me.

*Kath.* *Sauf vostre honneur, le François que vous parlez, est meilleur que l'Anglois le quel je parle.*

*K. Hen.* No, 'faith, 'tis not, Kate: but thy speaking of my tongue, and I thine, most truly falsely, must needs be granted to be much at one. But, Kate, dost thou understand thus much English? Canst thou love me?

*Kath.* I cannot tell.

*K. Hen.* Can any of your neighbours tell, Kate? I'll ask them. Come, I know, thou lovest me: and at night, when you come into your closet, you'll question this gentlewoman about me; and I know, Kate, you will, to her, dispraise those parts in me, that you love with your heart: but, good Kate, mock me mercifully: the rather, gentle princess, because I love thee cruelly. If ever thou be'st mine, Kate, (as I have a saving faith within me, tells me thou shalt,) I get thee with scrambling, and thou must therefore needs prove a good soldier-breeder: Shall not thou and I, between Saint Dennis and Saint George, compound a boy, half French, half English, that shall go to Constantinople, and take the Turk by the beard? shall we not? what sayest thou, my fair flower-de-luce?

*Kath.* I do not know dat.

*K. Hen.* No; 'tis hereafter to know, but now to promise: do but now promise, Kate, you will endeavour for your French part of such a boy; and, for my English moiety, take the word of a king and a bachelor. How answer you, *la plus belle Katharine du monde mon tres chere et divine deesse?*

*Kath.* Your majesté 'ave fausse French enough to deceive de most sage demoiselle dat is en France.

*K. Hen.* Now, lie upon my false French!

By mine honour in true English, I love thee, Kate: by which honour I dare not swear thou lovest me; yet my blood begins to flatter me that thou dost, notwithstanding the poor and untempering effect of my visage. \* Now beshrew my father's ambition! he was thinking of civil wars when he got me; therefore was I created with a stubborn outside, with an aspect of iron, that, when I come to woo ladies I fright them. But in faith, Kate, the elder I wax, the better I shall appear: my comfort is, that old age, that ill layer-up of beauty, can do no more spoil upon my face: thou hast me, if thou hast me, at the worst; and thou shalt wear me, if thou wear me, better and better; And therefore tell me, most fair Katharine, will you have me? Put off your maiden blushes; avouch the thoughts of your heart with the looks of an empress; take me by the hand, and say—Harry of England, I am thine: which word thou shalt no sooner bless mine ear withal, but I will tell thee aloud—England is thine, Ireland is thine, France is thine, and Henry Plantagenet is thine; who, though I speak it before his face, if he be not fellow with the best king, thou shalt find the best king of good fellows. Come, your answer in broken music; for thy voice is music, and thy English broken: therefore, queen of all, Katharine, break thy mind to me in broken English. Wilt thou have me?

*Kath.* Dat is, as it shall please de *roy mon pere.*

*K. Hen.* Nay, it will please him well, Kate; it shall please him, Kate.

*Kath.* Den it shall also content me.

*K. Hen.* Upon that I will kiss your hand, and I call you—my queen.

*Kath.* *Laissez, mon sieigneur, laissez, laissez: ma joy, je ne veux point que vous abusiez vostre grandeur, en baisant la main d'une vostre indigne serviteure; excusez moy, je vous supplie, mon tres puissant seigneur.*

*K. Hen.* Then I will kiss your lips, Kate.

*Kath.* *Les dames, et damoiselles, pour estre baisees devant leur nopees il n'est pas le contume de France.*

*K. Hen.* Madam, my interpreter, what says she?  
*Alice.* Dat it is not be de fashion *pour les ladies of France*,—I cannot tell what is *baiser en English.*

*K. Hen.* To kiss.

*Alice.* Your Majesty *entendre* better *que moy.*

*K. Hen.* It is not the fashion for the maid in France to kiss before they are married, would she say?

*Alice.* *Ouz, vrayment.*

*K. Hen.* O Kate, nice customs curt'sy to great kugs. Dear Kate, you and I cannot be confined within the weak list of a country's fashion: we are the makers of manners, Kate; and the liberty that follows our places, stops the mouths of all find-faults; as I will do your's, for upholding the nice fashion of your country, in denying me a kiss: therefore, patiently, and yielding. [*Kissing her.*] You have witchcraft in your lips, Kate: there is more eloquence in a sugar touch of them, than in the tongues of the French Council; and they should sooner persuade Harry of England, than a general petition of monarchs. Here comes your father.

*Enter the FRENCH KING and QUEEN, BURGUNDY, BEDFORD, GLOSTER, EXETER, WESTMORELAND, and other French and English Lords.*

*Bur.* God save your majesty! my royal cousin, teach you our princess English?

*K. Hen.* I would have her learn, my fair cousin, how perfectly I love her; and that is good English.

*Bur.* Is she not apt?

\* J. e. Though my face has no power to soften you.  
† Slight barrier.

\* He means, resembling a plain piece of metal which has not yet received any impression. † Fall away.  
‡ Henry V. had been dead 31 years before the Turks became possessed of Constantinople: that event took place in 1453.

*K. Hen.* Our tongue is rough, coz; and my condition\* is not smooth: so that, having neither the voice nor the heart of flattery about me, I cannot so conjure up the spirit of love in her, that he will appear in his true likeness.

*Bur.* Pardon the frankness of my mirth, if I answer you for that. If you would conjure in her you must make a circle: if conjure up love in her in his true likeness, he must appear naked and blind: Can you blame her then, being a maid yet rosed over with the virgin crimson of modesty, if she deny the appearance of a naked blind boy in her naked seeing self? It were, my lord, a hard condition for a maid to consign to.

*K. Hen.* Yet they do wink and yield; as love is blind, and enforces.

*Bur.* They are then excused, my lord, when they see not what they do.

*K. Hen.* Then, good my lord, teach your cousin to consent to winking.

*Bur.* I will wink on her to consent, my lord, if you will teach her to know my meaning: for maids, well summered and warm kept, are like flies at Bartholomew-tide, blind, though they have their eyes; and then they will endure handling, which before would not abide looking on.

*K. Hen.* This moral ties me over to time, and a hot summer; and so I will catch the fly, your cousin, in the latter end, and she must be blind too.

*Bur.* As love is, my lord, before it loves.

*K. Hen.* It is so: and you may, some of you, thank love for my blindness; who cannot see many a fair French city, for one fair French maid that follows in my way.

*Fr. King.* Yes, my lord, you see them respectively, the cities turned into a maid; for they are all girdled with maiden walls, that war hath never entered.

*K. Hen.* Shall Kate be my wife?

*Fr. King.* So please you.

*K. Hen.* I am content; so the maiden cities you talk of, may wait on her: so the maid, that stood in the way of my wish, shall show me the way to my will.

*Fr. King.* We have consented to all terms of reason.

*K. Hen.* Is't so, my lords of England?

*West.* The king hath granted every article: His daughter, first; and then, in sequel all, According to their firm proposed natures.

*Exc.* Only, he hath not yet subscribed this:—Where your majesty demands,—That the king of France, having any occasion to write for matter of grant, shall name your highness in this form, and with this addition, in French,—*Notre tres cher filz Henry roy d'Angleterre, heretier de France*; and thus in Latin,—*Precclarissimus filius noster Henricus, rex Anglia, et heres Francie*.

*Fr. King.* Nor this I have not, brother, so denied,

But your request shall make me let it pass.

\* Temper.

*K. Hen.* I pray you then, in love and dear alliance,

Let that one article rank with the rest:

And, thereupon, give me your daughter.

*Fr. King.* Take her, fair son; and from her blood raise up

Issue to me: that the contending kingdoms Of France and England, whose very shores

look pale With envy of each other's happiness, [tion May cease their hatred: and this dear conjunction Plant neighbourhood and Christian-like accord In their sweet bosoms, that never war advance His bleeding sword 'twixt England and fair France.

*All.* Amen!

*K. Hen.* Now welcome, Kate:—and bear me witness all, That here I kiss her as my sovereign queen.

*Q. Isa.* God, the best maker of all marriages, [Flourish.

Combine your hearts in one, your realms in one!

As man and wife, being two, are one in love, So be there 'twixt your kingdoms such a spousal, That never may ill office, or fell jealousy, Which troubles oft the bed of blessed marriage,

Thrust in between the paction of these kingdoms,

To make divorce their incorporate league; That English may as French, French Englishmen,

Receive each other!—God speak this Amen!

*All.* Amen!

*K. Hen.* Prepare we for our marriage:—on which day,

My lord of Burgundy, we'll take your oath, And all the peers', for surety of our leagues.—Then shall I swear to Kate, and you to me: And may our oaths well kept and prosperous be! [Exeunt.

*Enter CHORUS.*

Thus far, with rough, and all unable pen, Our bending\* author hath pursued the story; In little room confining mighty men, Mangling by starts the full course of their glory.

Small time, but in that small, most greatly [In'd This star of England: fortune made his sword; By which the world's best garden† he achiev'd, And of it left his son imperial lord.

Henry the sixth, in infant bands crown'd king Of France and England did this king succeed;

Whose state so many had the managing, That they lost France, and made his England bleed:

Which oft our stage hath shown; and, for their sake,

In your fair minds let this acceptance take. [Exit.

\* L. a. Unequal to the weight of the subject. † France.

# FIRST PART

## OF

# KING HENRY VI.

### LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

MALONE supposes this portion of Henry VI. to have been written in 1589; but doubts, with Theobald, whether the three plays comprised under the title of Henry VI. were actually composed by Shakspeare. Dr. Johnson however maintains, that they exhibit "no marks of spuriousness," and that they "are declared to be genuine by the voice of Shakspeare himself. The transactions of the piece are scattered through a period of thirty years, and introduced with little regard to historical accuracy. Lord Talbot who is killed at the end of the fourth act, did not in reality fall until July 13, 1453; and the second part of Henry VI. opens with the king's marriage, which was solemnized in the year 1445, or eight years before Talbot's death. In the same part, Dame Eleanor Cobham is introduced to insult Queen Margaret; though her penance and banishment for sorcery happened three years before that princess arrived in England.—These deviations from the page of history are of little consequence to the mere lover of dramatic literature, as they neither weaken the gratification, nor diminish the effect of the scenic narrative. Poetry appeals to the passions, and imagination, like a true magician, lends her most powerful spells to excite or subdue them. But there are many to whom the great events of history are known only through the fascinating medium of a play or a romance; and it is frequently difficult, if not disagreeable to efface, in after life, the distorted impressions which they leave upon the memory. When viewed in the sober simplicity of historic truth, a favourite hero often loses much of his glitter, and a detested villain some portion of his turpitude. It is therefore of no little consequence to examine the materials of a dramatic fabric, to separate truth from fiction, and to shew "the age and body of the time, his form and pressure" because, in lauding the productions of Shakspeare (particularly those historical pieces upon which he exercised such masterly talents,) it has been the fashion to represent them not only as morally entertaining, but also as *politically instructive*; an attribute with which, examination shows, it is dangerous to invest them.

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.  
DUKE OF GLOSTER, *Uncle to the King, and Protector.*  
DUKE OF BEDFORD, *Uncle to the King, and Regent of France.*  
THOMAS BEAUFORT, *Duke of Exeter, great Uncle to the King.*  
HENRY BEAUFORT, *great Uncle to the King, Bishop of Winchester; and afterwards Cardinal.*  
JOHN BEAUFORT, *Earl of Somerset; afterwards Duke.*  
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *eldest son of Richard, late Earl of Cambridge; afterwards Duke of York.*  
EARL OF WARWICK.—EARL OF SALISBURY.—EARL OF SUFFOLK.  
LORD TALBOT, *afterwards Earl of Shrewsbury.*  
JOHN TALBOT, *his Son.*  
EDMUND MORTIMER, *Earl of March.*  
MORTIMER'S KEEPER, and a LAWYER.  
SIR JOHN FASTOLFE.—SIR WILLIAM LUCY.  
SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE.—SIR THOMAS GARRAVE.  
MAYOR OF LONDON.  
WOODVILLE, *Lieutenant of the Tower.*

VERNON, *of the White Rose, or York Faction.*  
BASSET, *of the Red Rose, or Lancaster Faction.*  
CHARLES, *Dauphin, and afterwards King of France.*  
REIGNIER, *Duke of Anjou, and titular King of Naples.*  
DUKE OF BURGUNDY.—DUKE OF ALENÇON.  
GOVERNOR OF PARIS.—BASTARD OF ORLEANS.  
MASTER-GUNNER OF ORLEANS, and his Son.  
GENERAL OF THE FRENCH FORCES in Bourdeaux.  
A FRENCH SERGEANT.—A PORTER.  
AN OLD SHEPHERD, *Father to Joan la Pucelle.*  
MARGARET, *Daughter to Reignier; afterwards married to King Henry.*  
COUNTESS OF AUVERGNE.  
JOAN LA PUCELLE, *commonly called Joan of Arc.*  
*Fiends appearing to La Pucelle, Lords, Warders of the Tower, Herald, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and several Attendants both on the English and French.*

SCENE, partly in England, and partly in France.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—Westminster Abbey.

*Dead march. Corpse of King HENRY the Fifth discovered, lying in state; attended on by the Dukes of BEDFORD, GLOSTER, and EXETER; the Earl of WARWICK, the Bishop of WINCHESTER, Heralds, &c.*

*Bed.* Hung be the heavens with black, yield day to night!

Comets, importing change of times and states,  
Brandish your crystal tresses in the sky;  
And with them scourge the bad revolting stars,  
That have consented unto Henry's death!  
Henry the fifth too famous to live long!  
England ne'er lost a king of so much worth.  
*Glo.* England ne'er had a king, until his time.  
Virtue he had, deserving to command:  
His brandish'd sword did blind men with his beams;



His arms spread wider than a dragon's wings ;  
His sparkling eyes replete with wrathful fire,  
More dazzled and drove back his enemies,  
Than mid-day sun, fierce bent against their faces.

What should I say? his deeds exceed all speech :  
He ne'er lift up his hand, but conquered.

*Ere.* We mourn in black ; Why mourn we not in blood ?

Henry is dead, and never shall revive :

Upon a wooden coffin we attend ;  
And death's dishonourable victory

We with our stately presence glorify,  
Like captives bound to a triumphant car,

What? shall we curse the planets of mishap,  
That plotted thus our glory's overthrow?

Or shall we think the subtle-witted French  
Conjurers and sorcerers, that, afraid of him,

By magic verses \* have contriv'd his end?  
*Win.* He was a king bless'd of the King of kings.

Unto the French the dreadful judgment day  
So dreadful will not be, as was his fight.

The battles of the Lord of hosts he fought ;  
The church's prayers made him so prosperous.

*Glo.* The church! where is it? Had not churchmen pray'd,

His thread of life had not so soon decay'd :  
None do you like but an effeminate prince,

Whom like a school-boy you may over-awe.  
*Win.* Gloster, whatever we like, thou art protector,

And lookest to command the prince and realm,  
Thy wife is proud ; she holdeth thee in awe,

More than God, or religious churchmen, may.  
*Glo.* Name not religion, for thou lov'st the flesh ;

And ne'er throughout the year to church thou go'st,

Except it be to pray against thy foes.  
*Bed.* Cease, cease these jars, and rest your minds in peace!

Let's to the altar :—Heralds, wait on us :—  
Instead of gold, we'll offer up our arms ;

Since arms avail not, now that Henry's dead.—  
Postetly, await for wretched years, [suck ;

When at their mothers' moist eyes babes shall  
Our isle be made a nourish† of salt tears,

And none but women left to wail the dead.  
Henry the fifth! thy ghost I invoke ;

Prosper this realm, keep it from civil broils!  
Combat with adverse planets in the heavens!

A far more glorious star thy soul will make,  
Than Julius Cæsar, or bright—

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* My honourable lords, health to you all!

Sad tidings bring I to you out of France,  
Of loss, of slaughter, and discomfort :

Guienne, Champagne, Rheims, Orleans,  
Paris, Gisors, Poitiers, are all quite lost.

*Bed.* What say'st thou, man, before dead Henry's corse?

Speak softly ; or the loss of those great towns  
Will make him burst his lead, and rise from death.

*Glo.* Is Paris lost? is Rouen yielded up?  
If Henry were recall'd to life again,

These news would cause him once more yield the ghost.

*Ere.* How were they lost? what treachery was us'd?

*Mess.* No treachery ; but want of men and money.

Among the soldiers this is muttered,—  
That here you maintain several factions ;

And whilst a field should be despatch'd and fought,  
You are disputing of your generals.

One would have ling'ring wars, with little cost ;

Another would fly swift but wanteth wings ;  
A third man thinks, without expense at all,  
By guileful fair words peace may be obtain'd.

Awake, awake, English nobility!  
Let not sloth dim your honours, new-begot :

Cropp'd are the flower-de-luces in your arms ;  
Of England's coat one half is cut away.

*Ere.* Were our tears wanting to this funeral,  
These tidings would call forth her \* flowing tides.

*Bed.* Me they concern ; regent I am of France :—

Give me my steeled coat, I'll fight for France.—  
Away with these disgraceful wailing robes!

Wounds I will lend the French, instead of eyes,  
To weep their intermissive miseries.†

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

*2 Mess.* Lords, view these letters, full of bad mischance,

France is revolted from the English quite ;  
Except some petty towns of no import :

The dauphin Charles is crowned king in Rheims :

The bastard of Orleans with him is join'd,  
Reignier, duke of Anjou, doth take his part ;

The duke of Alençon fieth to his side.  
*Ere.* The Dauphin crowned king! all fly to him!

O whether shall we fly from this reproach?  
*Glo.* We will not fly, but to our enemies' throats :

Bedford, if thou be slack, I'll fight it out  
*Bed.* Gloster, why doubt'st thou of my forwardness!

An army have I muster'd in my thoughts  
Wherewith already France is over-run.

*Enter a third MESSENGER.*

*3 Mess.* My gracious lords,—to add to your laments,

Wherewith you now bedew King Henry's hearse,—  
I must inform you of a dismal fight,

Betwixt the stout lord Talbot and the French.  
*Win.* What! wherein Talbot overcame? is't so?

*3 Mess.* O no ; wherein lord Talbot was o'erthrown :

The circumstance I'll tell you more at large.  
The tenth of August last, this dreadful lord,

Retiring from the siege of Orleans,  
Having full scarce six thousand in his troop,

By three and twenty thousand of the French  
Was round encompassed and set upon :

No leisure had he to enrank his men ;  
He wanted pikes to set before his archers ;

Instead whereof, sharp stakes, pluck'd out of hedges,

They pitched in the ground confusedly,  
To keep the horsemen off from breaking in.

More than three hours the fight continued ;  
Where vallant Talbot, above human thought,

Enacted wonders with his sword and lance.  
Hundreds he sent to hell, and none durst stand him ;

Here, there, and every where, enrag'd he slew :  
The French exclaim'd, The devil was in arms ;

All the whole army stood amaz'd on him :  
His soldiers, spying his undaunted spirit,

A Talbot! a Talbot! cried out again,  
And rush'd into the bowels of the battle.

Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up,  
If Sir John Fastolfe had not play'd the coward ;

He being in the vaward, (plac'd behind,  
With purpose to relieve and follow them.)

Cowardly fled, not having struck one stroke :  
Hence grew the general wreck and massacre ;

Enclosed were they with their enemies :  
A base Walloon, to win the Dauphin's grace,

Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back ;

\* There was a notion long prevalent, that life might be taken away by metrical charms.  
† Nurse was anciently so spelt.

\* Her, i. e. England's.  
† I. e. Their miseries which have had only a short intermission.

Whom all France, with their chief assembled strength,

Durst not presume to look once in the face.

*Bed.* Is Talbot slain? then I will slay myself,  
For living idly here, in pomp and ease,  
Whilst such a worthy leader, wanting aid,  
Unto his dastard foe-man is betray'd.

*3 Mess.* O no, he lives; but is took prisoner,  
And lord Scales with him, and lord Hungerford:

Most of the rest slaughter'd, or took, likewise.

*Bed.* His ransom there is none but I shall pay:

I'll hale the Dauphin headlong from his throne,  
His crown shall be the ransom of my friend;  
Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours.—

Farewell, my masters; to my task will I;  
Bonfires in France forthwith I am to make,  
To keep our great Saint George's feast withal:  
Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take,  
Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe quake.

*3 Mess.* So you had need; for Orleans is besieg'd;

The English army is grown weak and faint:  
The earl of Salisbury craveth supply,  
And hardly keeps his men from mutiny,  
Since they, so few, watch such a multitude.

*Etc.* Remember, lords, your oaths to Henry sworn:

Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,  
Or bring him in obedience to your yoke.

*Bed.* I do remember it; and here take leave,  
To go about my preparation. *[Exit.]*

*Glo.* I'll to the Tower, with all the haste I can,

To view the artillery and munition;  
And then I will proclaim young Henry king.

*[Exit.]*

*Etc.* To Eltham will I, where the young king is,

Being ordain'd his special governor;  
And for his safety there I'll best advise.

*[Exit.]*

*Win.* Each hath his place and function to attend:

I am left out; for me nothing remains.  
But long I will not be Jack-out-of-office;  
The king from Eltham I intend to send,  
And sit at chiefest stern of public weal.

*[Exit. Scene closes.]*

SCENE II.—France.—Before Orleans.

*Enter CHARLES, with his Forces; ALENCON, REIGNIER, and others.*

*Char.* Mars his true moving, even as in the heavens,

So in the earth to this day is not known:  
Late did he shine upon the English side;  
Now we are victors upon us be smiles.

What towns of any moment, but we have?  
At pleasure here we lie, near Orleans;  
Otherwhiles, the famish'd English, like pale ghosts,

Faintly besedge us one hour in a month.

*Alen.* They want their porridge, and their fat bull-beeves:

Either they must be dieted like mules,  
And have their provender tyed to their mouths,  
Or piteous they will look, like drowned mice.

*Reig.* Let's raise the siege; Why live we idly here?

Talbot is taken, whom we wont to fear:  
Remaineth none but mad-brain'd Salisbury;  
And he may well in fretting spend his gall,  
Nor men, nor money, hath he to make war.

*Char.* Sound, sound alarum; we will rush on them.

Now for the honour of the forlorn French:—  
Him I forgive my death, that killeth me,  
When he sees me go back one foot, or fly.

*[Exeunt.]*

*Alarums; Excursions; afterwards a Retreat.*

*Re-enter CHARLES, ALENCON, REIGNIER, and others.*

*Char.* Who ever saw the like? what men have I?

*Dogs!* cowards! dastards!—I would ne'er have fled,

But that they left me midst my enemies.  
*Reig.* Salisbury is a desperate homicide;  
He fighteth as one weary of his life.

The other lords, like lions wanting food,  
Do rush upon us as their hungry prey.

*Alen.* Froissard, a countryman of our's, records,

England all Olivers and Rowlands† bred,  
During the time Edward the third did reign.

More truly now may this be verified;  
For none but Samsons and Goliasses,  
It sendeth forth to skirmish. One to ten!  
Lean raw-bon'd rascals! who would e'er suppose

They had such courage and audacity?

*Char.* Let's leave this town; for they are hair-brain'd slaves,

And hunger will enforce them to be more eager:

Of old I know them; rather with their teeth  
The walls they'll tear down, than forsake the siege.

*Reig.* I think, by some odd gimmals‡ or device,

Their arms are set, like clocks, still to strike on;  
Else ne'er could they hold out so, as they do.

By my consent, we'll e'en let them alone.

*Alen.* Be it so.

*Enter the BASTARD of Orleans.*

*Bast.* Where's the prince Dauphin, I have news for him.

*Char.* Bastard of Orleans, thrice welcome to us.

*Bast.* Methinks, your looks are sad, your cheer|| appall'd;

Hath the late overthrow wrought this offence?  
Be not dismay'd, for succour is at hand:

A holy maid hither with me I bring,  
Which, by a vision sent to her from heaven,  
Ordained is to raise this tedious siege,  
And drive the English forth the bounds of France.

The spirit of deep prophesy she hath,  
Exceeding the nine sibyls¶ of old Rome;  
What's past, and what's to come, she can descry.

Speak, shall I call her in? Believe my words,  
For they are certain and infallible.

*Char.* Go, call her in: *[Exit BASTARD.]* But first, to try her skill,

Reignier, stand thou as Dauphin in my place:  
Question her proudly, let thy looks be stern:—  
By this means shall we sound what skill she hath. *[Retires.]*

*Enter LA PUCELLE, BASTARD of Orleans, and others.*

*Reig.* Fair maid, is't thou wilt do these wonderous feats?

*Puc.* Reignier, is't thou that thinkest to beguile me?

Where is the Dauphin?—come, come from behind;

I know thee well, though never seen before.  
Be not amaz'd, there's nothing hid from me:

In private will I talk with thee apart:—

\* I.e. The prey for which they are hungry.

† These were two of the most famous in Charlemagne's list of peers.

‡ A gimmal is a piece of jointed work, where one piece moves within another; here it is taken at large for an engine.

§ This was not in former times a term of reproach.

|| Countenance.

¶ Shakespeare mistakes the nine Sibylline books, for nine Sibyls.

Stand back, you lords, and give us leave awhile.

*Reig.* She takes upon her bravely at first dash.

*Puc.* Dauphin, I am by birth a shepherd's daughter,

My wit untrain'd in any kind of art.  
Heaven, and our lady gracious, hath it pleas'd  
To shine on my contemptible estate:  
Lo, whilst I waited on my tender lambs,  
And to sun's parching heat display'd my cheeks,  
God's mother deigned to appear to me;  
And, in a vision full of majesty,  
Will'd me to leave my base vocation,  
And free my country from calamity:  
Her aid she promis'd, and assur'd success:  
In complete glory she reveal'd herself;  
And, whereas I was black and swart before,  
With those clear rays which she infus'd on me,  
That beauty am I bless'd with, which you see.  
Ask me what question thou canst possible,  
And I will answer unpremeditated:  
My courage try by combat, if thou dar'st,  
And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex.  
Resolve on this: \* Thou shalt be fortunate,  
If thou receive me for thy warlike mate.

*Char.* Thou hast astonish'd me with thy high terms;

Only this proof I'll of thy valour make,—  
In single combat thou shalt buckle with me;  
And, if thou vanquishest, thy words are true;  
Otherwise, I renounce all confidence.

*Puc.* I am prepar'd: here is my keen-edg'd sword,

Deck'd with five flour-de-luces on each side;  
The which at Touraine, in Saint Katharine's

church-yard,  
Out of a deal of old iron I chose forth.

*Char.* Then come o' God's name, I fear no woman.

*Puc.* And, while I live, I'll ne'er fly from a man. *[They fight.]*

*Char.* Stay, stay thy hands; thou art an Amazon.

And fightest with the sword of Deborah.

*Puc.* Christ's mother helps me, else I were too weak.

*Char.* Whoe'er helps thee, 'tis thou that must help me:

Impatiently I burn with thy desire;  
My heart and hands thou hast at once subdu'd.  
Excellent Pucelle, if thy name be so,  
Let me thy servant, and not sovereign be;  
'Tis the French Dauphin sueth to thee thus.

*Puc.* I must not yield to any rites of love,  
For my profession's sacred from above:  
When I have chased all thy foes from hence,  
Then will I think upon a recompense.

*Char.* Meantime, look gracious on thy prostrate thrall.

*Reig.* My lord, methinks, is very long in talk.

*Alen.* Doubtless he shrives this woman to her smock:

Else ne'er could he so long protract his speech.

*Reig.* Shall we disturb him, since he keeps no mean?

*Alen.* He may mean more than we poor men do know:

These women are shrewd tempters with their tongues.

*Reig.* My lord, where are you? what devise you on?

Shall we give over Orleans or no?

*Puc.* Why, no, I say, distrustful recreants!  
Fight till the last gasp; I will be your guard.

*Char.* What she says, I'll confirm; we'll fight it out.

*Puc.* Assign'd am I to be the English scourge.  
This night the siege assuredly I'll raise:  
Expect Saint Martin's summer,† halcyon days,  
Since I have entered into these wars.  
Glory is like a circle in the water,

Which never ceaseth to enlarge itself,  
Till by broad spreading, it disperse to nought.  
With Henry's death, the English circle ends;  
Dispersed are the glories it included.  
Now am I like that proud insulting ship,  
Which Cæsar and his fortune bare at once.

*Char.* Was Mahomet inspired with a dove?‡  
Thou with an eagle art inspired then.  
Helen, the mother of great Constantine,  
Nor yet Saint Philip's daughters,† were like thee.  
Bright star of Venus, fall'n down on the earth,  
How may I reverently worship thee enough?

*Alen.* Leave off delays, and let us raise the siege.

*Reig.* Woman, do what thou can'st to save our honours;

Drive them from Orleans, and be immortaliz'd.

*Char.* Presently we'll try:—Come let's away about it:

No prophet will I trust, if she prove false.

*[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE III.—London.—Hill before the Tower.

*Enter, at the Gates, the Duke of GLOSTER, with his Serving-men, in blue coats.*

*Glo.* I am come to survey the Tower this day; Since Henry's death, I fear, there is conveyance.‡—Where be these wardens, that they wait not here? Open the gates: Gloster it is that calls. *[SERVANTS knock]*

*1 Ward. [Within.]* Who is there that knocks so imperiously?

*1 Serv.* It is the noble Duke of Gloster.

*2 Ward. [Within.]* Whoe'er he be you may not be let in.

*1 Serv.* Answer you so the lord protector, villains?

*1 Ward. [Within.]* The Lord protect him! so we answer him:

We do no otherwise than we are will'd.

*Glo.* Who will'd you? or whose will stands but mine?

There's none protector of the realm, but I.—  
Break up § the gates, I'll be your warrantize:  
Shall I be flouted thus by dunghill grooms?

*SERVANTS rush at the Tower Gates. Enter, to the Gates, WOODVILLE, the Lieutenant.*

*Wood. [Within.]* What noise is this? what traitors have we here?

*Glo.* Lieutenant, is it you, whose voice I hear?

Open the gates: here's Gloster that would enter.

*Wood. [Within.]* Have patience noble duke. I may not open;

The cardinal of Winchester forbids:  
From him I have express commandment,

That thou, nor none of thine, shall be let in.

*Glo.* Faint-hearted Woodville, prizest him for me?

Arrogant Winchester? that haughty prelate,  
Whom Harry, our late sovereign, ne'er could brook?

Thou art no friend to God or to the king:  
Open the gates, or I'll shut thee out shortly.

*1 Serv.* Open the gates unto the lord protector; *[quickly.]*

Or we'll burst them open, if that you come not.

*Enter WINCHESTER, Attended by a Train of Servants in tawny Coats.*

*Win.* How now, ambitious Humphry? what means this?

*Glo.* Piel'd priest, † dost thou command me to be shut out?

\* Mahomet persuaded his followers that a dove which he had taught when hungry to light upon his shoulder, and thrust its bill into his mouth, was the *Holy Ghost*!  
† Meaning the four daughters of Philip mentioned in Acts xxi. 9.  
‡ Theft.  
§ Break open.  
|| Alluding to his shaven crown.

\* Be firmly persuaded of it.  
† Expect prosperity after misfortune.

# Scene III. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI.

469

*Win.* I do, thou most usurping proditor,\*  
And not protector of the king or realm.  
*Glo.* Stand back, thou manifest conspirator;  
Thou, that contriv'dst to murder our dead lord;  
Thou that giv'st whored's indulgences to sin:  
I'll canvas thee in thy broad cardinal's hat,  
If thou proceed in this thy insolence.

*Win.* Nay, stand thou back, I will not budge  
a foot;  
This be Damascus, be thou cursed Cain,  
To slay thy brother Abel if thou wilt.  
*Glo.* I will not slay thee, but I'll drive thee  
back:  
Thy scarlet robes, as a child's bearing-cloth  
I'll use, to carry thee out of this place.

*Win.* Do what thou dar'st; I beard thee to  
thy face.  
*Glo.* What? am I dar'd, and bearded to my  
face?—  
Draw, men, for all this privileged place;  
Blue-coats to tawny-coats. Priest, beware  
your beard;

[*Gloster and his Men attack the Bishop.*  
I mean to tug it, and to cuff you soundly:  
Under my feet I stamp thy cardinal's hat;  
In spite of pope or dignities of church,  
Here by the cheeks I'll drag thee up and down.  
*Win.* Gloster, thou'lt answer this before the  
pope.

*Glo.* Winchester goose, § I cry—a rope! a  
rope!— [stay]—  
Now beat them hence. Why do you let them  
Thee I'll chase hence, thou wolf in sheep's  
array.—  
Out, tawny coats!—out, scarlet || hypocrite!

*Here a great Tumult. In the midst of it,  
Enter the MAYOR of London, and Officers.*  
*May.* Fie, lords! that you, being supreme  
magistrates,  
Thus contumeliously should break the peace!  
*Glo.* Peace, mayor; thou know'st little of  
my wrongs:  
Here's Beaufort that regards nor God nor king,  
Hath here o'gistrin'd the Tower to his use.

*Win.* Here's Gloster too a foe to citizens:  
One that still motions war, and never peace,  
O'ercharging your free purses with large fines;  
That seeks to overthrow religion,  
Because he is protector of the realm;  
And would have armour here out of the Tower  
To crown himself king, and suppress the prince.  
*Glo.* I will not answer thee with words, but  
blows. [Here they skirmish again.]  
*May.* Nought rest for me, in this tumultuous  
strife,  
But to make open proclamation:—  
Come, officer; as loud as e'er thou canst cry.

*Off.* Ill manner of men assembled here in  
arms this day, against God's peace and the  
king's, we charge and command you, in his  
highness' name, to repair to your several  
dwelling-places; and not to wear, handle,  
or use any sword, weapon, or dagger, hence-  
forward, upon pain of death.

*Glo.* Cardinal, I'll be no breaker of the law:  
But we shall meet, and break our minds at  
large.  
*Win.* Gloster, we'll meet; to thy dear cost  
be sure:  
Thy heart blood I will have, for this day's work.  
*May.* I'll call for clubs, ¶ if you will not  
away:—  
This cardinal is more haughty than the devil.  
*Glo.* Mayor, farewell: thou dost but what  
thou may'st.  
*Win.* Abominable Gloster! guard thy head;  
For I intend to have it ere long. [Exit.]

*Off.* Ill manner of men assembled here in  
arms this day, against God's peace and the  
king's, we charge and command you, in his  
highness' name, to repair to your several  
dwelling-places; and not to wear, handle,  
or use any sword, weapon, or dagger, hence-  
forward, upon pain of death.

*Glo.* Cardinal, I'll be no breaker of the law:  
But we shall meet, and break our minds at  
large.  
*Win.* Gloster, we'll meet; to thy dear cost  
be sure:  
Thy heart blood I will have, for this day's work.  
*May.* I'll call for clubs, ¶ if you will not  
away:—  
This cardinal is more haughty than the devil.  
*Glo.* Mayor, farewell: thou dost but what  
thou may'st.  
*Win.* Abominable Gloster! guard thy head;  
For I intend to have it ere long. [Exit.]

\* Traitor. † The public stewards were formerly licensed  
by the Bishop of Winchester, and their inmates ob-  
tained the name of Winchester geese. ‡ Sift.  
§ A strumpet. ¶ An allusion to the Bishop's habit.  
|| That is, for peace-officers armed with clubs or staves.

*May.* See the coast clear'd, and then we will  
depart.—  
Good God! that nobles should such stomachs \*  
bear!  
I myself fight not once in forty year. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE IV.—France.—Before Orleans.

*Enter, on the Walls, the MASTER-GUNNER  
and his SON.*

*M. Gun.* Sirrah, thou know'st how Orleans  
is besieg'd;

And how the English have the suburbs won.

*Son.* Father, I know; and oft have shot at  
them,

Howe'er, unfortunate, I miss'd my aim.

*M. Gun.* But now thou shalt not. Be thou  
rul'd by me:

Chief master-gunner am I of this town;

Something I must do, to procure me grace: †

The prince's espials; ‡ have informed me,

How the English, in the suburbs close in-  
trench'd,

Wont, through a secret gate of iron bars  
In yonder tower, to overpeer the city;

And thence discover how, with most advan-  
tage,

They may vex us, with shot or with assault.

To intercept this inconvenience,

A piece of ordnance 'gainst it I have plac'd;

And fully even these three days have I watch'd,

If I could see them. Now, boy, do thou watch,

For I can stay no longer.

If thou spy'st any run and bring me word;

And thou shalt find me at the governor's. [Exit.]

*Son.* Father, I warrant you; take you no  
care;

I'll never trouble you, if I may spy them.

*Enter, in an upper Chamber of a Tower,  
the Lords SALISBURY and TALBOT, Sir  
WILLIAM GLANSDALE, Sir THOMAS GAR-  
GRAVE, and others.*

*Sal.* Talbot, my life, my joy, again return'd!

How wert thou handled, being prisoner?

Or by what means got'st thou to be releas'd?

Discourse, I pry thee on this turret's top.

*Tal.* The duke of Bedford had a prisoner,  
Called—the brave lord Ponton de Sanctaillies;

For him I was exchang'd and ransomed.

But with a baser man of arms by far, [me]  
Once, in contempt, they would have baited

Which I, disdainful, scorn'd: and craved death  
Rather than I would be so pil'd esteemed. §

In fine, redeem'd I was as I desir'd.

But oh! the treacherous Fastolfe wounds my heart:

Whom with my bare fists I would execute,  
If I now had him brought into my power.

*Sal.* Yet tell'st thou not, how thou wert en-  
tertain'd.

*Tal.* With scoffs, and scorns, and contume-  
lious taunts.

In open market-place produc'd they me,  
To be a public spectacle to all;

Here, said they, is the terror of the French,  
The scare-crow that affrights our children so.

Then broke I from the officers that led me;  
And with my nails digg'd stones out of the  
ground,

To hurl at the beholders of my shame.

My grisly countenance made others fly;

None durst come near for fear of sudden  
death.

In iron walls they deem'd me not secure;

So great fear of my name 'mongst them was  
spread,

That they suppos'd I could rend bars of steel,  
And spurn in pieces posts of adamant:

Wherefore a guard of chosen shot I had,  
That walk'd about me every minute-while;

And if I did but stir out my bed  
Ready they were to shoot me to the heart.

\* Pride. † Favour. ‡ Spies.

§ So stripped of honours.

*Sal.* I grieve to hear what torments you endur'd ;  
But we will be reveng'd sufficiently.  
Now it is supper time in Orleans :  
Here, through this grate, I can count every  
one,  
And view the Frenchmen how they fortify ;  
Let us look in, the sight will much delight  
thee.—

*Sir Thomas Gargrave, and Sir William Glansdale,*  
Let me have your express opinions,  
Where is best place to make our battery next.

*Gar.* I think, at the north gate ; for there stand lords.

*Glan.* And I, here, at the bulwark of the bridge.

*Tal.* For aught I see, this city must be famish'd,

Or with light skirmishes enfeebled.

*[Shot from the Town. SALISBURY and Sir THO. GARGRAVE fall.]*

*Sal.* O Lord have mercy on us, wretched sinners !

*Gar.* O Lord have mercy on me, woeful man !

*Tal.* What chance is this, that suddenly hath cross'd us ?—

Speak, Salisbury ; at least, if thou canst speak ;  
How far'st thou, mirror of all martial men ?  
One of thy eyes, and thy cheek's side struck off !—

Accurs'd tower ! accurs'd fatal hand,  
That have contriv'd this woeful tragedy !

In thirteen battles Salisbury o'ercame ;  
Henry the fifth he first train'd to the wars ;

Whilst any trumpet did sound, or drum struck up,

His sword did ne'er leave striking in the field.—

Yet liv'st thou, Salisbury ? though thy speech doth fail,

One eye thou hast, to look to heaven for grace :

The sun with one eye vieweth all the world.—  
Heaven, be thou gracious to none alive,

If Salisbury wants mercy at thy hands !—  
Bear hence his body, I will help to bury it,—

*Sir Thomas Gargrave, hast thou any life ?*  
Speak unto Talbot ; nay, look up to him.

Salisbury, cheer thy spirit with this comfort ;  
Thou shalt not die, whilst—

He beckons with his hand, and smiles on me ;  
As who should say, *When I am dead and gone,*

*Remember to avenge me on the French.*—  
Plantagenet, I will ; and Nero-like,

Play on the lute, beholding the towns burn :  
Wretched shall France be only in my name.

*[Thunder heard ; afterwards an Alarum.]*  
What stir is this ? What tumult's in the heavens ?

Whence cometh this alarum, and the noise ?

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* My lord, my lord, the French have gathered head :

The Dauphin with one Joan la Pucelle join'd,—  
A holy propheteess, new risen up,—

Is come with a great power to raise the siege.  
*[SALISBURY groans.]*

*Tal.* Hear, hear, how dying Salisbury doth groan !

It hras his heart, he cannot be reveng'd.—  
Frenchmen, I'll be a Salisbury to you :—

Pucelle or puzel, \* dolphin or dogfish,  
Your hearts I'll stamp out with my horse's heels,

And make a quagmire of your mingled brains.—  
Convey me Salisbury into his tent,

And then we'll try what these dastardly Frenchmen dare.

*[Exit, bearing out the Bodies.]*

\* A dirty wench.

*SCENE V.—The same.—Before one of the Gates.*

*Alarum. Skirmishings. TALBOT pursueth the DAUPHIN, and driveth him in : then enter JOAN LA PUCELLE, driving Englishmen before her. Then enter TALBOT.*

*Tal.* Where is my strength, my valour, and my force ?

Our English troops retire, I cannot stay them ;  
A woman clad in armour, chaseth them.

*Enter LA PUCELLE.*

Here, here she comes :—I'll have a bout with thee :

Devil or devil's dam, I'll conjure thee :  
Blood will I draw on thee, \* thou art a witch,

And straightway give thy soul to him thou serv'st.

*Puc.* Come, come, 'tis only I that must disgrace thee ; *[They fight.]*

*Tal.* Heavens, can you suffer hell so to prevail ?

My breast I'll burst with straining of my courage,

And from my shoulders crack my arms asunder,  
But I will chastise this high-minded strumpet.

*Puc.* Talbot, farewell ; thy hour is not yet come :

I must go victual Orleans forthwith.

O'ertake me, if thou canst ; I scorn thy strength.

Go, go, cheer up thy hunger-starved men ;  
Help Salisbury to make his testament :

This day is ours, as many more shall be.  
*[PUCELLE enters the Town, with Soldiers.]*

*Tal.* My thoughts are whirled like a potter's wheel ;

I know not where I am, nor what I do :  
A witch, by fear, not force, like Hannibal,

Drives back our troops, and conquers, as she lists :

So bees with smoke, and doves with noisome stench,

Are from their hives and houses driven away.  
They call'd us, for our fierceness English dogs ;

Now, like to whelps, we crying run away.  
*[A short Alarum.]*

Hark, countrymen ! either renew the fight,  
Or tear the lions out of England's coat ;

Renounce your soil, give sheep in lion's stead :  
Sheep run not half so timorous from the wolf,

Or horse, or oxen, from the leopard,  
As you fly from your oft subdued slaves.

*[Alarum. Another Skirmish.]*  
It will not be :—Retire into your trenches :

You all consented unto Salisbury's death,  
For none would strike a stroke in his revenge.—

Pucelle is enter'd into Orleans,  
In spite of us, or aught that we could do.

O would I were to die with Salisbury !  
The shame hereof will make me hide my head.

*[Alarum. Retreat. Exit TALBOT and his Forces, &c.]*

*SCENE VI.—The same.*

*Enter, on the Walls : PUCELLE, CHARLES, REIGNIER, ALENÇON, and Soldiers.*

*Puc.* Advance our waving colours on the walls ;

Rescu'd is Orleans from the English wolves :—  
Thus Joan la Pucelle hath perform'd her word.

*Char.* Divinest creature, bright Astraea's daughter,

How shall I honour thee for this success ?  
Thy promises are like Adonis' gardens,

That one day bloom'd, and fruitful were the next.—

\* The superstition of those times taught, that he who could draw a witch's blood was free from her power.

France, triumph in thy glorious prophetic!  
Recover'd is the town of Orleans:  
More blessed hap did ne'er befall our state.

*Reig.* Why ring not out the bells throughout the town?

Dauphin, command the citizens make bonfires,  
And feast and banquet in the open streets,  
To celebrate the joy that God hath given us.

*Alen.* All France will be replete with mirth and joy,

When they shall hear how we have play'd the men.

*Char.* 'Tis Joan, not we, by whom the day is won;

For which, I will divide my crown with her:  
And all the priests and friars in my realm  
Shall, in procession, sing her endless praise.

A statelier pyramis to her I'll rear,  
Than Rhodope's,\* or Memphis, ever was:

In memory of her, when she is dead,  
Her ashes, in an urn more precious

Than the rich-jewell'd coffer of Darius†

Transported shall be at high festivals

Before the kings and queens of France.

No longer on St. Dennis will we cry,  
But Joan la Pucelle shall be France's saint.

Come in; and let us banquet royally,

After this golden day of victory.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—The same.

*Enter to the Gates, a French SERGEANT, and two SENTINELS.*

*Serg.* Sirs, take your places, and be vigilant:  
If any noise, or soldier, you perceive,  
Near to the walls, by some apparent sign,  
Let us have knowledge at the court of guard.†

1 *Sent.* Sergeant, you shall. [*Exit SERGEANT.*]

Thus are poor servitors  
(When others sleep upon their quiet beds,  
Constrain'd to watch in darkness, rain, and cold.

*Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, and Forces, with scaling Ladders; their Drums beating a dead march.*

*Tal.* Lord regent, and redoubted Burgundy,  
By whose approach, the regions of Artois,  
Walloon, and Picardy, are friends to us,  
This happy night, the Frenchmen are secure,  
Having all day carous'd and banquetted:  
Embrace we then this opportunity;

As fitting best to quitance their deceit,  
Contriv'd by art, and baleful sorcery.

*Bed.* Coward of France!—how much he wrongs his fame,

Despairing of his own arm's fortitude,  
To join with witches, and the help of hell.

*Bur.* Traitors have never other company.—  
But what's that Pucelle, whom they term so pure?

*Tal.* A maid, they say.

*Bed.* A maid! and be so martial!

*Bur.* Pray God, she prove not masculine ere long.

If underneath the standard of the French,  
She carry armour, as she hath begun.

*Tal.* Well, let them practise and converse with spirits.

God is our fortress; in whose conquering name,  
Let us resolve to scale their flinty bulwarks.

*Bed.* Ascend, brave Talbot; we will follow thee.

\* Rhodope, a famous strumpet, built one of the pyramids from the profits of her trade. † When Alexander took Gaza, he found an exceeding rich and beautiful casket, in which he ordered to be placed a copy of Homer's Iliad. ‡ The same as guard-room.

*Tal.* Not all together: better far, I guess,  
That we do make our entrance several ways;  
That, if it chance the one of us do fail,  
The other yet may rise against their force.

*Bed.* Agreed: I'll to you corner.

*Bur.* And I to this.

*Tal.* And here will Talbot mount, or make his grave.—

Now Salisbury! for thee, and for the right  
Of English Henry, shall this night appear  
How much in duty I am bound to both.

[*The English scale the Walls, crying St. George! a Talbot! and all enter by the Town.*]

*Sent.* [*Within.*] Arm, arm! the enemy doth make assault!

*The French leap over the Walls in their Shirts. Enter, several ways, BASTARD, ALENÇON, REIGNIK, half ready, and half unready.*

*Alen.* How now, my lords! what, all unready \* so?

*Bast.* Unready? ay, and glad we 'scap'd so well.

*Reig.* 'Twas time, I trow, to wake and leave our beds,

Hearing alarms at our chamber doors.

*Alen.* Of all exploits, since first I follow'd arms,

Ne'er heard I of a wardike enterprize

More venturous, or desperate than this.

*Bast.* I think, this Talbot be a fiend of hell.

*Reig.* If not of hell, the heavens sure favour him.

*Alen.* Here cometh Charles; I marvel, how he sped.

*Enter CHARLES, and LA PUCELLE.*

*Bast.* Tut! holy Joan was his defensive guard.

*Char.* Is this thy cunning, thou deceitful dame?

Didst thou at first, to flatter us withal

Make us partakers of a little gain,

That now our loss might be ten times so much?

*Puc.* Wherefore is Charles impatient with his friend?

At all times will you have my power alike?

Sleeping or waking must I still prevail,

Or will you blame and lay the fault on me?—

Improvident soldiers! had your watch been good,

This sudden mischief never could have fall'n.

*Char.* Duke of Alençon, this was your default;

That, being captain of the watch to-night,

Did look no better to that weighty charge.

*Alen.* Had all your quarters been as safely kept,

As that whereof I had the government,  
We had not been thus shamefully surpriz'd.

*Bast.* Mine was secure.

*Reig.* And so was mine, my lord.

*Char.* And, for myself, most part of all this night,

Within her quarter, and mine own precinct,

I was employ'd in passing to and fro,

About relieving of the sentinels:

Then how, or which way, should they first break in?

*Puc.* Question, my lords, no further of the case,

How, or which way; 'tis sure, they found some place

But weakly guarded, where the breach was made.

And now there rests no other shift but this  
To gather our soldiers, scatter'd and dispers'd,  
And lay new platforms † to endanger them.

\* Undressed.

† Plans, schemes.

*Alarm. Enter an English SOLDIER, crying, a Talbot! a Talbot! They fly, leaving their clothes behind.*

*Sold.* I'll be so bold to take what they have left.

The cry of Talbot serves me for a sword;  
For I have loaden me with many spoils,  
Using no other weapon but his name. *[Exit.]*

**SCENE II.—Orleans.—Within the Town.**

*Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, a CAPTAIN, and others.*

*Bed.* The day begins to break, and night is fled,  
Whose pitchy mantle over-vell'd the earth.  
Here sound retreat, and cease our hot pursuit.  
*[Retreat sounded.]*

*Tal.* Bring forth the body of old Salisbury;  
And here advance it in the market-place,  
The middle centre of this cursed town.—  
Now have I paid my vow unto his soul!  
For every drop of blood was drawn from him,  
There hath at least five Frenchmen died to-night.

And, that hereafter ages may behold  
What ruin happen'd in revenge of him,  
Within their chiefest temple I'll erect  
A tomb, wherein his corpse shall be interr'd:  
Upon the which, that every one may read,  
Shall be engrav'd the sack of Orleans;  
The treacherous manner of his mournful death,  
And what a terror he had been to France.  
But, lords, in all our bloody massacre,  
I muse \* we met not with the Dauphin's grace;  
His new-come champion, virtuous Joan of Arc;  
Nor any of his false confederates.

*Bed.* 'Tis thought, lord Talbot, when the fight began,  
Rous'd on the sudden from their drowsy beds,  
They did, amongst the troops of armed men,  
Leap o'er the walls for refuge in the field.

*Bur.* Myself (as far as I could well discern,  
For smoke, and dusky vapours of the night,)  
Am sure I scar'd the Dauphin and his trull;  
When arm in arm they both came swiftly run-  
Like to a pair of loving turtle-doves, *[singing]*  
That could not live asunder day or night.  
After that things are set in order here,  
We'll follow them with all the power we have.

**Enter a MESSENGER.**

*Mess.* All hail, my lords! which of this princely train  
Call ye the warlike Talbot, for his acts  
So much applauded through the realm of France?

*Tal.* Here is the Talbot; who would speak with him?

*Mess.* The virtuous lady, countess of Auvergne,  
With modesty admiring thy renown,  
By me entreats, good lord, thou wouldst vouchsafe

To visit her poor castle where she lies; †  
That she may boast, she hath beheld the man  
Whose glory fills the world with loud report.

*Bur.* Is it even so? Nay, then, I see our wars  
Will turn into a peaceful comic sport,  
When ladies crave to be encounter'd with.—  
You may not, my lord, despise her gentle suit.

*Tal.* We'll trust me then; for, when a world of men

Could not prevail with all their oratory,  
Yet with a woman's kindness over-ruled:—  
And therefore tell her, I return great thanks;  
And in submission will attend on her.—  
Will not your honours bear me company?

*Bed.* No, truly; it is more than manners will:  
And I have heard it said,—Unbidden guests  
Are often welcomest when they are gone.

*Tal.* Well then, alone, since there's no remedy,

I mean to prove this lady's courtesy.  
Come hither, captain. *[Whispers.]*—You perceive my mind.

*Capt.* I do, my lord; and mean accordingly. *[Exeunt.]*

**SCENE III.—Auvergne.—Court of the Castle.**

*Enter the COUNTESS and her PORTER.*

*Count.* Porter, remember what I gave in charge;  
And, when you have done so, bring the keys to me.

*Port.* Madam, I will. *[Exit.]*  
*Count.* The plot is laid: If all things fall out right,

I shall as famous be by this exploit,  
As Scythian Thomyris by Cyrus' death.  
Great is the rumour of this dreadful night,  
And his achievements of no less account:  
Fain would mine eyes be witness with mine ears,  
To give their censure \* of these rare reports.

**Enter MESSENGER and TALBOT.**

*Mess.* Madam,  
According as your ladyship desir'd,  
My message crav'd, so is lord Talbot come.

*Count.* And he is welcome. What! is this the man?

*Mess.* Madam, it is.  
*Count.* Is this the scourge of France?  
Is this the Talbot, so much fear'd abroad,  
That with his name the mothers still their babes?

I see, report is fabulous and false:  
I thought, I should have seen some Hercules,  
A second Hector, for his grim aspect,  
And large proportion of his strong-knit limbs.  
Alas! this is a child, a silly dwarf:  
It cannot be, this weak and writhled † shrimp  
Should strike such terror to his enemies.

*Tal.* Madam, I have been bold to trouble you:

But, since your ladyship is not at leisure,  
I'll sort some other time to visit you.

*Count.* What means he now?—Go ask him, whither he goes.

*Mess.* Stay, my lord Talbot; for my lady craves  
To know the cause of your abrupt departure.  
*Tal.* Marry, for that she's in a wrong belief,  
I go to certify her Talbot's here.

**Re-enter PORTER, with Keys.**

*Count.* If thou be he, then art thou prisoner.—  
*Tal.* Prisoner! to whom?

*Count.* To me, blood-thirsty lord;  
And for that cause I train'd thee to my house.  
Long time thy shadow hath been thrall to me,  
For in my gallery thy picture hangs:  
But now the substance shall endure the like;  
And I will chain these legs and arms of thine,  
That hast by tyranny, these many years,  
Wasted our country, slain our citizens,  
And sent our sons and husbands captivate.

*Tal.* Ha, ha, ha!  
*Count.* Laughest thou, wretch? thy mirth shall turn to moan.

*Tal.* I laugh to see your ladyship so fond ‡  
To think that you have aught but Talbot's shadow.

Whereon to practise your severity.  
*Count.* Why, art not thou the man?  
*Tal.* I am indeed.

*Count.* Then have I substance too.  
*Tal.* No, no, I am but shadow of myself:  
You are deceiv'd, my substance is not here;  
For what you see, is but the smallest part  
And least proportion of humanity:  
I tell you, madam, were the whole frame here,

\* Wonder.

† L.e. Where she dwells.

\* For opinion.

† Wrinkled.

‡ Foolish.

It is of such a spacious lofty pitch,  
Your roof were not sufficient to contain it.

*Count.* This is a riddling merchant for the nonce; \*

He will be here, and yet he is not here :  
How can these contrarieties agree ?

*Tal.* That will I show you presently.

*He winds a Horn. Drums heard ; then a Peal of Ordnance. The Gates being forced, enter Soldiers.*

How say you, madam ? are you now persuaded,  
That Talbot is but shadow of himself ?  
These are his substance, sinews, arms, and strength,

With which he yoketh your rebellious necks,  
Razeth your cities, and subverts your towns,  
And in a moment makes them desolate.

*Count.* Victorious Talbot ! pardon my abuse :  
I find, thou art no less than fame hath bruited, †  
And more than may be gather'd by thy shape.  
Let my presumption not provoke thy wrath ;  
For I am sorry, that with reverence  
I did not entertain thee as thou art.

*Tal.* Be not dismay'd, fair lady ; nor misconstrue

The mind of Talbot, as you did mistake  
The outward composition of his body.

What you have done, hath not offended me :

No other satisfaction do I crave,  
But only (with your patience,) that we may  
Taste of your wine, and see what cates you have :

For soldiers' stomachs always serve them well.

*Count.* With all my heart ; and think me honoured

To feast so great a warrior in my house.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—London.—The Temple Garden.

*Enter the Earls of SOMERSET, SUFFOLK, and WARWICK ; RICHARD PLANTAGENET, VERNON, and another LAWYER.*

*Plan.* Great lords, and gentlemen, what means this silence ?

Dare no man answer in a case of truth ?

*Suff.* Within the temple hall we were too loud ;

The garden here is more convenient.

*Plan.* Then say at once, if I maintain'd the truth ;

Or, else, was wrangling Somerset in the error ?

*Suff.* 'Faith, I have been a truant in the law ;  
And never yet could frame my will to it ;  
And, therefore, frame the law unto my will.

*Som.* Judge you, my lord of Warwick, then between us.

*War.* Between two hawks, which flies the higher pitch,

Between two dogs, which hath the deeper mouth,

Between two blades, which bears the better temper,

Between two horses, which doth bear him best, †  
Between two girls, which hath the merriest eye,

I have, perhaps, some shallow spirit of judgment :

But in these nice sharp quillets of the law,

Good faith, I am no wiser than a daw.

*Plan.* Tut, tut, here is a mannerly forbearance :

The truth appears so naked on my side,

That any purblind eye may find it out.

*Som.* And on my side it is so well apparell'd,  
So clear, so shiuing, and so evident,  
That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye.

*Plan.* Since you are tongue-ty'd, and so loath to speak,

In dumb significants proclaim your thoughts :  
Let him, that is a true-born gentleman,

And stands upon the honour of his birth,  
If he suppose that I have pleaded truth,

From off this brier pluck a white rose with me.

*Som.* Let him that is no coward, nor no flatterer,

But dare maintain the party of the truth,

Pluck a red rose from off this thorn with me.

*War.* I love no colours ; \* and, without all colour

Of base insinuating flattery,

I pluck this white rose, with Plantagenet :

*Suff.* I pluck this red rose, with young Somerset ;

And say withal, I think he held the right.

*Ver.* Stay, lords, and gentlemen : and pluck no more,

Till you conclude—that he, upon whose side

The fewest roses are crop'd from the tree,  
Shall yield the other in the right opinion.

*Som.* Good master Vernon, it is well objected ; †

If I have fewest, I subscribe in silence.

*Plan.* And I.

*Ver.* Then, for the truth and plainness of the case,

I pluck this pale and maiden blossom here,

Giving my verdict on the white rose side.

*Som.* Pick not your finger as you pluck it off ;

Least bleeding, you do paint the white rose red,

And fall on my side so against your will.

*Ver.* If I, my lord, for my opinion bleed,

Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt,

And keep me on the side where still I am.

*Som.* Well, well, come on : Who else ?

*Law.* Unless my study and my books be false,

The argument you held, was wrong in you ;

[*To SOMERSET.*]

In sign whereof, I pluck a white rose too.

*Plan.* Now, Somerset, where is your argument ?

*Som.* Here, in my scabbard ; meditating that,  
Shall die your white rose in a bloody red.

*Plan.* Meantime, your cheeks do counterfeit our roses ;

For pale they look with fear, as witnessing

The truth on our side.

*Som.* No, Plantagenet,

'Tis not for fear ; but anger,—that thy cheeks

Blush for pure shame, to counterfeit our roses :

And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error.

*Plan.* Hath not thy rose a canker, Somerset ?

*Som.* Hath not thy rose a thorn, Plantagenet ?

*Plan.* Ay, sharp and piercing, to maintain his truth ;

Whiles thy consuming canker eats his falsehood.

*Som.* Well, I'll find friends to wear my bleeding roses,

That shall maintain what I have said is true,

Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen.

*Plan.* Now, by this maiden blossom in my hand,

I scorn thee and thy fashion, peevish boy.

*Suff.* Turn not thy scorn this way, Plantagenet.

*Plan.* Proud Poole, I will ; and scorn both him and thee.

*Suff.* I'll turn my part thereof into thy throat.

*Som.* Away, away, good William De-la-Poole !

We grace the yeoman, by conversing with him.

*War.* Now by God's will, thou wrong'st him, Somerset ;

His grandfather was Lionel, duke of Clarence,  
Third son to the third Edward king of Eng-

land ;  
Spring crestless yeoman ‡ from so deep a root ?

\* For a purpose.

† Announced loudly.

‡ L. c. Regulate his motions most adroitly.

\* Tints and decolours : a play on the word.

† Justly proposed.

‡ L. c. These who have no right to arms.



*Plan.* He bears him on the place's privilege,\*  
Or durst not, for his craven heart, say thus.

*Som.* By him that made me, I'll maintain  
my words

On any plot of ground in Christendom :

Was not thy father, Richard, earl of Cambridge,

For treason executed on our late king's days ?

And, by his treason, stand'st not thou attainted,

Corrupted, and exempt † from ancient gentry ?

His trespass yet lives guilty in thy blood ;

And till thou be restor'd, thou art a yeoman.

*Plan.* My father was attached, not attainted ;

Condemn'd to die for treason, but no traitor ;

And that I'll prove on better men than Somerset,

Were growing time once ripen'd to my will.

For your partaker ‡ Poole, and you yourself,

I'll note you in my book of memory,

To scourge you for this apprehension : §

Look to it well ; and say you are well warn'd.

*Som.* Ay, thou shalt find us ready for thee  
still :

And know us, by these colours, for thy foes ;

For these my friends, in spite of thee, shall  
wear.

*Plan.* And, by my soul, this pale and angry  
rose,

As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate,

Will I for ever, and my faction, wear ;

Until it wither with me to the grave,

Or flourish to the height of my degree.

*Suff.* Go forward, and be chok'd with thy  
ambition !

And so farewell, until I meet thee next.

*Som.* Have with thee, Poole.—Farewell, ambitious Richard. *[Exit.]*

*Plan.* How I am brav'd, and must perforce  
endure it !

*War.* This blot, that they object against your  
house,

Shall be wip'd out in the next parliament,

Call'd for the truce of Winchester and Gloster :

And, if thou be not then created York,

I will not live to be accounted Warwick.

Meantime, in signal of my love to thee,

Against proud Somerset, and William Poole,

Will I upon thy party wear this rose :

And here I prophesy.—This brawl to-day,

Grown to this faction, in the Temple-garden,

Shall send between the red rose and the  
white,

A thousand souls to death and deadly night.

*Plan.* Good master Vernon, I am bound to  
you,

That thou on my behalf would pluck a flower.

*Ver.* In your behalf still will I wear the  
same.

*Law.* And so will I.

*Plan.* Thanks, gentle Sir.

Come let us four to dinner : I dare say,

This quarrel will drink blood another day.

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE V.—The same—A Room in the Tower.

Enter MORTIMER, brought in a Chair by two  
Keepers.

*Mor.* Kind keepers of my weak decaying  
age,

Let dying Mortimer here rest himself.—

Even like a man new haled from the rack,

So fare I, wrung with long imprisonment :

And these grey locks, the pursuivants of death,

Nestor'd † aged, in an age of care,

Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer ‡

These eyes, like lamps whose wasting oil is  
spent,

\* The temple, being a religious house, was a sanctuary. † Enlarged. ‡ Confederate.

§ Opinion. ¶ This scene is not consistent with historical truth, for Mortimer served under Henry V. in 1422, and died unconfin'd in Ireland in 1424.

Wax dim, as drawing to their exigent :

Weak shoulders, overborne with burd'ning  
grief ;

And pithless arms, like to a wither'd vine

That droops his sapless branches to the ground :—

Yet are these feet whose strengthless stay is  
numb,

Unable to support this lump of clay,

Swift-winged with desire to get a grave,

As witting I no other comfort have.—

But tell me, keeper, will my nephew come ?

*I Keep.* Richard Plantagenet, my lord, will  
come :

We sent unto the Temple, to his chamber ;

And answer was return'd that he will come.

*Mor.* Enough ; my soul shall then be satisfied.—

Poor gentleman ! his wrong doth equal mine.

Since Henry Monmouth first began to reign,

(Before whose glory I was great in arms,) †

This loathsome sequestration have I had ;

And even since then hath Richard been ob-  
scur'd.

Depriv'd of honour and inheritance :

But now, the arbitrator of despairs,

Just death, kind umpire of men's miseries,

With sweet enlargement doth dismiss me  
hence :

I would, his troubles likewise were expir'd,

That so he might recover what was lost.

Enter RICHARD PLANTAGENET.

*I Keep.* My lord, your loving nephew now is  
come.

*Mor.* Richard Plantagenet, my friend ? Is he  
come ?

*Plan.* Ay, noble uncle, thus ignobly us'd,  
Your nephew, late-despised ‡ Richard, comes.

*Mor.* Direct mine arms, I may embrace his  
neck,

And in his bosom spend my latter gasp :

O tell me, when my lips do touch his cheeks,

That I may kindly give one fainting kiss.—

And now declare, sweet stem from York's great  
stock,

Why didst thou say—of late thou wert despis'd ?

*Plan.* First, lean thine aged back against  
mine arm :

And, in that ease, I'll tell thee my disease. †

This day in argument upon a case,

Some words there grew 'twixt Somerset and  
me :

Among which terms he used his lavish tongue,

And did upbraid me with my father's death ;

Which obloquy set bars before my tongue,

Else with the like I had requited him :

Therefore, good uncle,—for my father's sake,

In honour of a true Plantagenet,

And for alliance' sake,—declare the cause

My father, earl of Cambridge, lost his head.

*Mor.* That cause, fair nephew, that imprison'd  
me,

And hath detain'd me, all my flow'ring youth,

Within a loathsome dungeon, there to pine,

Was cursed instrument of his disease.

*Plan.* Discover more at large what cause that  
was ;

For I am ignorant, and cannot guess.

*Mor.* I will ; if that my fading breath  
permit,

And death approach not ere my tale be done.

Henry the fourth, grandfather to this king,

Depos'd his nephew Richard ; Edward's son,

The first-begotten, and the lawful heir

Of Edward king, the third of that descent :

During whose reign, the Percees of the north,

Finding his usurpation most unjust,

Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne :

The reason mov'd these warlike lords to this,

Was—for that (young king Richard thus re-  
mov'd,

Leaving no heir begotten of his body.)

\* Late-ly-despised.

† Unconscious, discontent.

I was the next by birth and parentage ;  
 For by my mother I derived am  
 From Lionel duke of Clarence, the third son  
 To king Edward the fourth, whereas he,  
 From John of Gaunt doth bring his pedigree,  
 Being but fourth of that heroic line.  
 But mark ; as, in this haughty \* great attempt,  
 They laboured to plant the rightful heir,  
 I lost my liberty, and they their lives.  
 Long after this, when Henry the fifth,  
 Succeeding his father Bolingbroke, did reign,  
 Thy father, earl of Cambridge, then deriv'd  
 From famous Edmund Langley, duke of York,  
 Marrying my sister, that thy mother was,  
 Again, in pity of my hard distress,  
 Levied an army ; weening † to redeem,  
 And have install'd me in the diadem :  
 But, as the rest, so fell that noble earl,  
 And was beheaded. Thus the Mortimers,  
 In whom the title rested, were suppress'd.

*Plan.* Of which, my lord, your honour is the last.

*Mor.* True ; and thou 'seest that I no issue have ;

And that my fainting words do warrant death :  
 Thou art my heir ; the rest, I wish thee gather :  
 But yet be wary in thy studious care.

*Plan.* Thy grave admonishments prevail with me :

But yet, methinks, my father's execution  
 Was nothing less than bloody tyranny.

*Mor.* With silence, nephew, be thou politic ;  
 Strong-fixed is the house of Lancaster,  
 And, like a mountain, not to be remov'd.  
 But now thy uncle is removing hence ;  
 As princes do their courts, when they are cloy'd

With long continuance in a settled place.

*Plan.* O uncle, 'would some part of my young years

Might but redeem the passage of your age ;

*Mor.* Thou dost then wrong me : as the slaught'ring doth,

Which giveth many wounds, when one will kill.  
 Mourn not, except thou sorrow for my good ;  
 Only, give order for my funeral ;  
 And so farewell : ‡ and fair be all thy hopes !  
 And prosperous be thy life, in peace, and war !

[*Dies.*]

*Plan.* And peace, no war, befall thy parting soul !

In prison hast thou spent a pilgrimage,  
 And like a hermit overpass'd thy days.—  
 Well, I will lock his counsel in my breast ;  
 And what I do imagine, let that rest.—  
 Keepers, convey him hence ; and I myself  
 Will see his burial better than his life.—

[*Exeunt* KEEPERS, bearing out MORTIMER.

Here dies the dusky torch of Mortimer,  
 Chok'd with ambition of the meaner sort :—  
 And, for those wrongs, those bitter injuries,  
 Which Somerset hath offer'd to my house,  
 I doubt not, but with honour to redress :  
 And therefore haste I to the parliament ;  
 Either to be restored to my blood,  
 Or make my ill § the advantage of my good.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same.*—*The Parliament-house.*

*Flourish.* Enter King HENRY, EYETER, GLOSTER, WARWICK, SOMERSET, and SUFFOLK ; the Bishop of WINCHESTER, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, and others. GLOSTER offers to put up a Bill ; || WINCHESTER snatches it, and tears it.

*Win.* Com'st thou with deep premeditated lues,

\* High.

† Thinking.

‡ Lucky, prosperous.

§ My ill, is my ill usage. || L. e. Articles of accusation.

With written pamphlets studiously devis'd,  
 Humphrey of Gloster ? if thou canst accuse,  
 Or ought intend'st to lay unto my charge,  
 Do it without invention suddenly ;  
 As I with sudden and extemporal speech  
 Purpose to answer what thou canst object.

*Glo.* Presumptuous priest ! this place commands my patience.

Or thou should'st find thou hast dishonour'd me.  
 Think not, although in writing I prefer'd  
 The manner of thy vile outrageous crimes,  
 That therefore I have forg'd, or am not able  
*Verbatim* to rehearse the method of my pen :  
 No, prelate ; such is thy audacious wicked-

ness,  
 Thy lewd, pestiferous, and dissentious pranks,  
 As very infants prattle of thy pride.

Thou art a most pernicious usurer ;  
 Froward by nature, enemy to peace ;  
 Lascivious, wanton, more than well becomes  
 A man of thy profession, and degree ;  
 And for thy treachery, What's more manifest ?  
 In that thou laid'st a trap to take my life,  
 As well at London bridge, as at the Tower ?  
 Beside, I fear me, if thy thoughts were sifted,  
 The king thy sovereign, is not quite exempt  
 From envious malice of thy swelling heart.

*Win.* Gloster, I do defy thee.—Lords, vouch-

safe

To give me hearing what I shall reply.

If I were covetous, ambitious, or perverse,  
 As he will have me, how am I so poor ?  
 Or how haps it, I seek not to advance  
 Or raise myself, but keep my wonted calling :  
 Or for dissention, who preferreth peace

More than I do, except I be provok'd ?  
 No, my good lords, it is not that offends ;  
 It is not that, that hath incens'd the duke :  
 It is, because no one should sway but he ;  
 No one, but he, should be about the king ;  
 And that engenders thunder in his breast,  
 And makes him roar these accusacions forth.

But he shall know, I am as good—

*Glo.* As good ?

Thou bastard of my grandfather !—

*Win.* Ay, lordly Sir ; For what are you, I pray,

But one imperious in another's throne ?

*Glo.* Am I not the protector, saucy priest ?

*Win.* And am I not a prelate of the church ?

*Glo.* Yes, as an outlaw in a castle keeps,  
 And useth it to patronage his theft.

*Win.* Unreverent Gloster !

*Glo.* Thou art reverent,

Touching thy spiritual function, not thy life.

*Win.* This Rome shall remedy.

*War.* Roam thither then.

*Som.* My lord, it were your duty to forbear.

*War.* Ay, see the bishop be not overborne.

*Som.* Methinks, my lord should be religious,

And know the office that belongs to such.

*War.* Methinks, his lordship should be hum-

bler ;

It fitteth not a prelate so to plead.

*Som.* Yes, when his holy state is touch'd so

near.

*War.* State holy, or unhallow'd, what of

that ?

Is not his grace protector to the king ?

*Plan.* Plantagenet, I see, must hold his

tongue ;

Lest it be said, *Speak, sirrah, when you*

*should ;*

*Must your bold verdict enter talk with lords ?*

Else would I have a fling at Winchester.

[*Aside.*]

*K. Hen.* Uncles of Gloster and of Winches-

ter,

The special watchmen of our English weal ;

I would prevail, if prayers might prevail,

To join your hearts in love and amity.

O what a scandal is to our crown,

That two such noble peers as ye should jar !

Believe me, lords, my tender years can tell,

Civil dissension is a viperous worm,

That gnaws the bowels of the commonwealth.—  
[A noise within; Down with the tawny coats! What tumult! this?]

*War.* An uproar, I dare warrant,  
Begun through malice of the bishop's men.  
[A noise again; Stones! Stones!]

*Enter the Mayor of London, attended.*

*May.* O my good lords,—and virtuous Henry,—

Pity the city of London, pity us!  
The bishop and the duke of Gloster's men,  
Forbidden late to carry any weapon,  
Have fill'd their pockets full of pebble-stones;  
And banding themselves in contrary parts,  
Do pelt so fast at one another's pate,  
That many have their giddy brains knock'd out:  
Our windows are broke down in every street,  
And we, for fear, compell'd to shut our shops.

*Enter, skirmishing, the Retainers of GLOSTER, and WINCHESTER, with bloody pates.*

*K. Hen.* We charge you, on allegiance to  
ourselves,

To hold your slaughtering hands, and keep the  
peace.

Pray, uncle Gloster, mitigate this strife.

1 *Serv.* Nay, if we be

Forbidden stones, we'll fall to it with our teeth.

2 *Serv.* Do what ye dare, we are as resolute.

[Skirmish again.]

*Glo.* Yon of my household, leave this peevish  
broil,

And set this unaccustom'd \* fight aside.

1 *Serv.* My lord, we know your grace to be a  
man

Just and upright; and, for your royal birth,  
Inferior to none but his majesty:

And ere that we will suffer such a prince,  
So kind a father of the commonweal,

To be disgraced by an inkhorn mate,†  
We, and our wives, and children, all will fight,

And have our bodies slaughter'd by thy foes.

2 *Serv.* Ay, and the very parings of our nails

Shall pitch a field, when we are dead.

[Skirmish again.]

*Glo.* Stay, stay, I say!

And if you love me, as you say you do,  
Let me persuade you to forbear a while.

*K. Hen.* O how this discord doth afflict my  
soul!—

Can you, my lord of Winchester, behold  
My sighs and tears, and will not once relent?

Who should be pitiful, if you be not?  
Or who should study to prefer a peace,

If holy churchmen take delight in broils?

*War.* My lord protector, yield;—yield, Win-

chester;—

Except you mean, with obstinate repulse,  
To slay your sovereign, and destroy the realm.

You see what mischief, and what murder too,  
Hath been enacted through your enmity:

Then be at peace, except ye thirst for blood.

*Win.* He shall submit, or I will never yield.

*Glo.* Compassion on the king commands me  
stoop;

Or, I would see his heart out, ere the priest  
Should ever get that privilege of me.

*War.* Behold, my lord of Winchester, the  
duke

Hath banish'd moody discontented fury,  
As by his smother'd brows it doth appear:

Why look you still so stern, and tragical?

*Glo.* Here, Winchester, I offer thee my hand.

*K. Hen.* Fie, uncle Beaufort! I have heard  
you preach,

That malice was a great and grievous sin:  
And will not you maintain the thing you teach,

But prove a chief offender in the same?

*War.* Sweet king!—The bishop hath a kindly  
gird.‡

For shame, my lord of Winchester! relent;  
What, shall a child instruct you what to do?

*Win.* Well, duke of Gloster, I will yield to  
thee;

Love for thy love, and hand for hand I give.

*Glo.* Ay; but, I fear me, with a hollow  
heart.—

See here, my friends, and loving countrymen;  
This token serveth for a flag of truce,

Betwixt ourselves and all our followers:  
So help me God, as I dissemble not!

*Win.* So help me God, as I intend it not!  
[Aside.]

*K. Hen.* O loving uncle, kind duke of Glo-

ster,

How joyful am I made by this contract!—  
Away, my masters! trouble us no more;

But join in friendship, as your lords have  
done.

1 *Serv.* Content; I'll to the surgeon's.

2 *Serv.* And so will I.

3 *Serv.* And I will see what physic the tavern  
affords. [Exeunt SERVANTS,

MAYOR, &c.]

*War.* Accept this scroll, most gracious sove-

reign;

Which, in the right of Richard Plantagenet,  
We do exhibit to your majesty.

*Glo.* Well ur'd, my lord of Warwick;—for,  
sweet prince,

An if your grace mark every circumstance,  
You have great reason to do Richard right:

Especially, for those occasions  
At Eltham-place I told your majesty.

*K. Hen.* And those occasions, uncle, were of  
force:

Therefore, my loving lords, our pleasure is,  
That Richard be restored to his blood.

*War.* Let Richard be restored to his blood;  
So shall his father's wrongs be recompens'd.

*Win.* As will the rest, so willethe Winches-

ter.

*K. Hen.* If Richard will be true, not that  
alone,

But all the whole inheritance I give,  
That doth belong unto the house of York,

From whence you spring by lineal descent.

*Plan.* Thy humble servant vows obedience,  
And humble service, till the point of death.

*K. Hen.* Stoop then, and set your knee against  
my foot;

And, in requerdon \* of that duty done,  
I girt thee with the valiant sword of York:

Rise, Richard, like a true Plantagenet;  
And rise created princely duke of York.

*Plan.* And so thrive Richard, as thy foes may  
fall!

And as my duty springs so perish they  
That grudge one thought against your majesty!

*All.* Welcome, high prince, the mighty duke  
of York!

*Som.* Perish, base prince, ignoble duke of  
York! [Aside.]

*Glo.* Now will it beat avail your majesty,  
To cross the seas, and to be crown'd in France:

The presence of a king engenders love  
Amongst his subjects, and his loyal friends;

As it disanimates his enemies.

*K. Hen.* When Gloster says the word, king  
Henry goes;

For friendly counsel cuts off many foes.

*Glo.* Your ships already are in readiness.

[Exeunt all but EXETER.]

*Exe.* Ay, we may march in England, or in  
France,

Not seeing what is likely to ensue:  
This late dissention, grown betwixt the peers,

Burns under fetter'd ashes of forg'd love,  
And will at last break out into a flame:  
As fester'd members rot but by degrees,  
Till bones, and flesh, and sinews, fall away,  
So will this base and envious discord breed.  
And now I fear that fatal prophecy,

\* Unseemly, indecent.

† This was a term of reproach toward men of learning.

‡ Feels an emotion of kind remorse.

\* Recompence.

# Scene II. FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI.

477

Which, in the time of Henry, nam'd the fifth,  
Was in the mouth of every sucking babe,—  
That Henry, born at Monmouth, should win  
all;  
And Henry, born at Windsor, should lose all:  
Which is so plain, that Exeter doth wish  
His days may flnish ere that hapless time.

[Exit.

## SCENE II.—France.—Before Rouën.

Enter LA PUCELLE disguised, and SOLDIERS  
dressed like Countrymen, with Sacks upon  
their Backs.

Puc. These are the city gates, the gates of  
Rouën,  
Through which our policy must make a breach:  
Take heed, be wary how you place your words;  
Talk like the vulgar sort of market-men,  
That come to gather money for their corn.  
If we have entrance, (as I hope we shall,)  
And that we find the slothful watch but weak,  
I'll by a sign give notice to our friends,  
That Charles the Dauphin may encounter  
them.

1 Sold. Our sacks shall be a mean to sack the  
city,  
And we be lords and rulers over Rouën;  
Therefore we'll knock. [Knocks.

Guard. [Within.] Qui est là?

Puc. Pisans, pauvres gens de France:  
Poor market-folks, that come to sell their  
corn.

Guard. Enter, go in; the market-bell is rung.

[Opens the Gates.

Puc. Now, Rouën, I'll shake thy bulwarks to  
the ground.

[PUCELLE, &c. enter the City.

Enter CHARLES, BASTARD of Orleans, ALEN-  
SON, and Forces.

Char. Saint Dennis bless this happy strata-  
gem!

And once again we'll sleep secure in Rouën.

Bast. Here enter'd Pucelle, and her prac-  
tisans! \*

Now she is there, how will she specify

Where is the best and safest passage in?

Alen. By thrusting out a torch from yonder  
tower;

Which, once discern'd, shows, that her mean-  
ing is,

No way to that, † for weakness, which she enter'd.

Enter LA PUCELLE on a Battlement: hold-  
ing out a Torch burning.

Puc. Behold, this is the happy wedding  
torch,

That joineth Rouën unto her countrymen:

But burning fatal to the Talbotites.

Bast. See, noble Charles! the beacon of our  
friend,

The burning torch in yonder turret stands.

Char. Now shine it like a comet of revenge,  
A prophet to the fall of all our foes!

Alen. Defer no time, Delays have dangerous  
ends;

Enter, and cry—The Dauphin!—presently,

And then do execution on the watch.

[They enter.

Alarum. Enter TALBOT, and certain  
English.

Tal. France, thou shalt rue this treason with  
thy tears,

If Talbot but survive thy treachery.—

Pucelle, that witch, that damned sorceress,  
Hath wrought this hellish mischief unawares,

That hardly we escap'd the pride ‡ of France.  
[Exit to the Town.

\* Confederates in stratagems.

† I. e. No way equal to that.

‡ Haughty power.

Alarum: Excursions. Enter from the Town,  
BEDFORD, brought in sick, in a Chair, with  
TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and the English  
Forces. Then, enter on the Walls, LA  
PUCELLE, CHARLES, BASTARD, ALENÇON,  
and others.

Puc. Good morrow, gallants! want ye corn  
for bread?

I think the duke of Burgundy will fast,  
Before he'll buy again at such a rate:  
'Twas full of darnel; Do you like the taste?

Bur. Scoff on, vile fiend, and shameless cour-  
tezan!

I trust, ere long, to choke thee with thine own,  
And make thee curse the harvest of that corn.

Char. Your grace may starve, perhaps, before  
that time.

Bed. O let no words, but deeds, revenge this  
treason!

Puc. What will you do, good grey-beard?  
break a lance,

And run a tilt at death within a chair?

Tal. Foul fiend of France, and bag of all de-  
spite,

Encompass'd with thy lustful paramours!

Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age,

And twit with cowardice a man half dead?

Damsel, I'll have a bout with you again,

Or else let Talbot perish with this shame.

Puc. Are you so hot, Sir?—Yet, Pucelle, hold  
thy peace;

If Talbot do but thunder, rain will follow.—

[TALBOT, and the rest consult together.  
God speed the parliament! who shall be the  
speaker?

Tal. Dare ye come forth, and meet us in the  
field?

Puc. Belike, your lordship takes us then for  
fools,

To try if that our own be our's or no.

Tal. I speak not to that railing Hecate,

But unto thee, Alençon, and the rest;

Will ye, like soldiers, come and fight it out?

Alen. Signior, no.

Tal. Signior, hang!—base muleteers of  
France!

Like peasant foot-boys do they keep the walls,

And dare not take up arms like gentlemen.

Puc. Captains, away: let's get us from the  
walls;

For Talbot means no goodness, by his looks.—

God be wi' you, my lord! we came, Sir, but to  
tell you

That we are here.

[Exit LA PUCELLE, &c. from the Walls.

Tal. And there will we be too, ere it be long,

Or else reproach be Talbot's greatest fame!—

Vow, Burgundy, by honour of thy house,

(Prick'd on by public wrongs, sustain'd in  
France,)

Either to get the town again, or die:

And I,—as sure as English Henry lives,

And as his father here was conqueror;

As sure as in this late-betrayed town

Great Cœur-de-lion's heart was buried;

So sure I swear, to get the town, or die.

Bur. My vows are equal partners with thy  
vows.

Tal. But, ere we go, regard this dying prince

The valiant duke of Bedford:—Come, my lord,

We will bestow you in some better place,

Fitter for sickness, and for crazy age.

Bed. Lord Talbot, do not so dishonour me:

Here will I sit before the walls of Rouën,

And will be partner of your weal, or woe.

Bur. Courageous Bedford, let us now persuade  
you.

Bed. Not to be gone from hence; for once I  
read,

That stout Pendracon, \* in his litter, sick,

Came to the field, and vanquished his foes:

Methinks, I should revive the soldiers' hearts,

Because I ever found them as myself.

\* Brother to Aurelius, and father to king Arthur

*Tal.* Undaunted spirit in a dying breast!—  
Then be it so:—Heavens keep old Bedford  
safe!—

And now no more ado, brave Burgundy,  
But gather we our forces out of hand,  
And set upon our boasting enemy.

[*Exeunt* BURGUNDY, TALBOT, and *Forces*,  
leaving BEDFORD, and *others*.]

*Alarums: Excursions.* Enter Sir JOHN FASTOLFE, and a CAPTAIN.

*Cap.* Whither away, Sir John Fastolfe, in such haste?

*Fast.* Whither away! to save myself by flight;

We are like to have the overthrow again.

*Cap.* What! will you fly, and leave lord Talbot?

*Fast.* Ay, All the Talbots in the world to save my life.

*Cap.* Cowardly knight! ill fortune follow thee! [Exit.]

*Retreat: Excursions.* Enter from the Town, LA PUCELLE, ALENCON, CHARLES, &c. and *Exeunt, flying*.

*Bed.* Now, quiet soul, depart when heaven please;

For I have seen our enemies' overthrow.

What is the trust or strength of foolish man?

They, that of late were daring with their scoffs,

Are glad and fawn by flight to save themselves.

[*Dies, and is carried off in his Chair.*]

*Alarm: Enter* TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and *others*.

*Tal.* Lost, and recover'd in a day again!

This is a double honour, Burgundy:

Yet, heavens have glory for this victory!

*Bur.* Warlike and martial Talbot, Burgundy

Enshrines thee in his heart; and there erects

Thy noble deeds, as valour's monument.

*Tal.* Thanks, gentle duke. But where is Pucelle now?

I think, her old familiar is asleep:

Now where's the Bastard's braves, and Charles his gleeks?

What, all a-mort!† Rouen hangs her head for grief,

That such a valiant company are fled.

Now will we take some order in the town,

Placing therein some expert officers;

And then depart to Paris, to the king;

For there young Harry, with his nobles, lies.

*Bur.* What wills lord Talbot, pleaseth Burgundy.

*Tal.* But yet, before we go, let's not forget

The noble duke of Bedford, late deceas'd,

But see his exequies; fulfill'd in Rouen;

A braver soldier never couched lance;

A gentler heart did never away in court;

But kings and mightiest potentates must die;

For that's the end of human misery.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.—The Plains near the City.*

Enter CHARLES, the BASTARD, ALENCON, LA PUCELLE, and *Forces*.

*Puc.* Dismay not, princes, at this accident,  
Nor grieve that Rouen is so recovered;

Care is we cure, but rather corrosive.

For things that are not to be remedied.

Let frantic Talbot triumph for a while,

And like a peacock sweep along his tail;

We'll pull his plumes, and take away his train,

If Dauphin, and the rest, will be but rul'd.

*Char.* We have been guided by these hitherto,

And of thy cunning had no defence;

One sudden foil shall never breed distrust.

*Bast.* Search out thy wit for secret policies,  
And we will make thee famous through the world.

*Alen.* We'll set thy statue in some holy place,  
And have thee reverenc'd like a blessed saint;

Employ thee then, sweet virgin, for our good.

*Puc.* Then thus it must be; this doth Joan devise:

By fair persuasions, mix'd with sugar'd words,  
We will entice the duke of Burgundy

To leave the Talbot, and to follow us.

*Char.* Ay, marry, sweeting, if we could do that,

France were no place for Henry's warriors;

Nor should that nation boast it so with us,  
But be extirp'd\* from our provinces.

*Alen.* For ever should they be expuls'd† from France,

And not have title to an earldom here.

*Puc.* Your honours shall perceive how I will work,

To bring this matter to the wished end.

[*Drums heard.* Hark! by the sound of drum, you may perceive  
Their powers are marching unto Paris-waid.

*An English March.* Enter, and pass over at a distance, TALBOT, and his *Forces*.

There goes the Talbot, with his colours spread;  
And all the troops of English after him.

*A French March.* Enter, the duke of BURGUNDY and *Forces*.

Now, in the rearward, comes the duke, and his;

Fortune, in favour, make him lag behind.  
Summon a parley, we will talk with him.

[*A Parley sounded.* *Char.* A parley with the duke of Burgundy.

*Bur.* Who craves a parley with the Burgundy?

*Puc.* The princely Charles of France, thy countryman.

*Bur.* What say'st thou, Charles? for I am marching hence.

*Char.* Speak, Pucelle; and enchant him with thy words.

*Puc.* Brave Burgundy, undoubted hope of France;

Stay, let thy humble handmaid speak to thee.

*Bur.* Speak on; but be not over-tedious.

*Puc.* Look on thy country, look on fertile France,

And see the cities and the towns defac'd  
By wasting ruin of the cruel foe!

As looks the mother on her lowly babe,  
When death doth close his tender dying eyes,

See, see, the pining malady of France;  
Behold the wounds, the most unnatural wounds,

Which thou thyself hast given her woeful breast!  
O turn thy edged sword another way;

Strike those that hurt, and hurt not those that help!

One drop of blood, drawn from thy country's bosom,

Should grieve thee more than streams of foreign gore;

Return thee, therefore, with a flood of tears,  
And wash away thy country's stained spots!

*Bur.* Either she hath bewitch'd me with her words,  
Or nature makes me suddenly relent.

*Puc.* Besides, all French and France exclaims on thee,  
Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny.

Who join'd† thou with, but with a lordly nation,  
That will not trust thee, but for profit's sake?

When Talbot hath set footing once in France,  
And fashion'd thee that instrument of ill,

Who then but English Henry, will be lord,

\* Scoffs.

† Make some necessary dispositions.

† Funeral rites.

\* Rooted out.

† Expelled.

And thou be thrust out, like a fugitive?  
Call we to mind,—and mark but this, for proof;—

Was not the duke of Orleans thy foe?  
And was he not in England prisoner?  
But, when they heard he was thine enemy,  
They set him free, without his ransom paid,  
In spite of Burgundy, and all his friends.  
See then! thou fight'st against thy countrymen,  
And join'st with them will be thy slaughtermen,  
Come, come, return; return, thou wand'ring lord;  
Charles, and the rest, will take thee in their arms.

*Bur.* I am vanquished; these haughty \* words of her's  
Have batter'd me like roaring cannon-shot,  
And made me almost yield upon my knees.—  
Forgive me, country, and sweet countrymen!  
And, lords, accept this hearty kind embrace:  
My forces and my power of men are your's;—  
So, farewell, Talbot; I'll no longer trust thee.

*Puc.* Done like a Freuchman, turn, and turn again!

*Char.* Welcome, brave duke! thy friendship makes us fresh.

*Bast.* And doth beget new courage in our breasts.

*Alen.* Pucelle hath bravely played her part in this,

And doth deserve a coronet of gold.

*Char.* Now let us on, my lords, and join our powers;

And seek how we may prejudice the foe. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV.—Paris.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, and other Lords, VERNON, BASSET, &c. To them TALBOT, and some of his Officers.*

*Tal.* My gracious prince, and honourable peers,

Hearing of your arrival in this realm,  
I have a while given truce unto my wars,  
To do my duty to my sovereign:  
In sign whereof, this arm—that hath reclaim'd  
To your obedience fifty fortresses,  
Twelve cities, and seven walled towns of strength,

Beside five hundred prisoners of esteem,—  
Lets fall his sword before your highness' feet;  
And, with submissive loyalty of heart,  
Ascribes the glory of his conquest got,  
First to my God, and next unto your grace.

*K. Hen.* Is this the lord Talbot, uncle Gloucester,  
That hath so long been resident in France?  
*Glo.* Yes, if it please your majesty, my liege.

*K. Hen.* Welcome, brave captain, and victorious lord!

When I was young, (as yet I am not old,)  
I do remember how my father said,  
A stout champion never handled sword.  
Long since we were resolved † of your truth,  
Your faithful service, and your toil in war;  
Yet never have you tasted our reward,  
Or been requerd'd ‡ with so much as thanks,  
Because till now we never saw your face:  
Therefore, stand up; and, for these good deserts,

We here create you earl of Shrewsbury;  
And in our coronation take your place.

*[Exeunt King HENRY, GLOSTER, TALBOT, and Nobles.]*

*Ver.* Now, Sir, to you, that were so hot at sea,

Disgracing of these colours, that I wear  
In honour of my noble lord of York,—

Dar'st thou maintain the former words thou spak'st?

*Bast.* Yes, Sir; as well as you dare patronage  
The envious bawking of your saucy tongue  
Against my lord the duke of Somerset.

*Ver.* Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is.

*Bas.* Why, what is he? as good a man as York.

*Ver.* Hark ye; not so: in witness, take ye that. *[Strikes him.]*

*Bas.* Villain, thou know'st the law of arms is such,

That who so draws a sword, 'tis present death;  
Or else this blow should broach thy dearest blood.

But I'll unto his majesty, and crave  
I may have liberty to 'venge this wrong;  
When thou shalt see, I'll meet thee to thy cost.

*Ver.* Well, miscreant, I'll be there as soon as you:

And, after, meet you sooner than you would. *[Exeunt.]*

ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The same.—A Room of State.

*Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, EXETER, YORK, SUFFOLK, SOMERSET, WINCHESTER, WARWICK, TALBOT, the GOVERNOR of Paris, and others.*

*Glo.* Lord bishop, set the crown upon his head.

*Win.* God save king Henry, of that name the sixth!

*Glo.* Now, governor of Paris, take your oath,— *[GOVERNOR kneels.]*

That you elect no other king but him:  
Esteem none friends, but such as are his friends;

And none your foes, but such as shali pretend \*  
Malicious practices against his state:  
This shall ye do, so help you righteous God!  
*[Exeunt GOV. and his Train.]*

*Enter Sir JOHN FASTOLFE.*

*Fast.* My gracious sovereign, as I rode from Calais,

To haste unto your coronation,  
A letter was deliver'd to my hands,  
Writ to your grace from the duke of Burgundy.

*Tal.* Shame to the duke of Burgundy and thee!  
I vow'd, base knight, when I did meet thee next,

To tear the garter from thy craven's † leg. *[Plucking it off]*

(Which I have done) because unworthily  
Thou wast installed in that high degree.—  
Pardon me, princely Henry, and the rest:

This dastard, at the battle of Patay,  
When but in all I was six thousand strong,  
And that the French were almost ten to one,  
Before we met, or that a stroke was given,  
Like to a trusty squire, did run away;  
In which assault we lost twelve hundred men;  
Myself, and divers gentlemen beside,  
Were there surpris'd, and taken prisoners.  
Then judge, great lords, if I have done amiss;  
Or whether that such cowards ought to wear  
This ornament of knighthood, yea or no.

*Glo.* To say the truth, this fact was infamous,  
And ill beseming any common man;  
Much more a knight, a captain, and a leader.

*Tal.* When first this order was ordain'd, my lords,

Knights of the garter were of noble birth;  
Valiant and virtuous, full of haughty ‡ courage.  
Such as were grown to credit by the wars;  
Not fearing death, nor shrinking for distress,  
But always resolute in most extremes. §

\* Elevated.

† Confirmed in opinion.  
‡ Rewarded.

\* Design.  
‡ High.

† Mean, dastardly.  
§ E. in greatest extremities

He then, that is not furnish'd in this sort,  
Doth but usurp the sacred name of knight.  
Profaning this most honourable order ;  
And should (if I were worthy to be judge,)  
Be quite degraded, like a hedge-born swain  
That doth presume to boast of gentle blood.

*K. Hen.* Stain to thy countrymen I thou hear'st  
thy doom :

Be packing therefore, thou that wast a knight :  
Henceforth we banish thee, on pain of death.—

[*Exit FASTOLFE.*]

And now, my lord protector, view the letter  
Sent from our uncle duke of Burgundy.

*Glo.* What means his grace, that he hath  
chang'd his style !

[*Viewing the superscription.*]

No more but, plain and bluntly,—*To the king ?*

Hath he forgot, be is his sovereign ?

Or doth this churlish superscription

Pretend \* some alteration in good will ?

What's here !—*I have, upon especial cause,—*

[*Reads.*]

*Mov'd with compassion of my country's  
wreck,*

*Together with the pitiful complaints*

*Of such as your oppression feeds upon,*

*Forsaken your pernicious faction,*

*And join'd with Charles, the rightful king  
of France.*

O monstrous treachery ! Can this be so ;

That in alliance, amity, and oaths, [guile.  
There should be tound such false dissembling

*K. Hen.* What ! doth my uncle Burgundy  
revolt ?

*Glo.* He doth, my lord ; and is become your  
foe.

*K. Hen.* Is that the worst this letter doth  
contain ?

*Glo.* It is the worst, and all, my lord, he  
writes.

*K. Hen.* Why then, lord Talbot there shall  
talk with him,

And give him chastisement for this abuse :—

My lord, how say you ? are not you content ?

*Tal.* Content, my liege ? Yes ; but that I am  
prevented,†

I should have begg'd I might have been em-  
ploy'd.

*K. Hen.* Then gather strength, and march  
unto him straight :

Let him perceive, how ill we brook his trea-  
son.

And what offence it is, to flout his friends.

*Tal.* I go, my lord ; in heart desiring still,  
You may behold confusion of your foes. [*Exit.*]

*Enter VERNON and BASSET.*

*Ver.* Grant me the combat, gracious sove-  
reign !

*Bas.* And me, my lord, grant me the combat  
too !

*York.* This is my servant : Hear him, noble  
prince !

*Som.* And this is mine : Sweet Henry, favour  
him !

*K. Hen.* Be patient, lords ; and give them  
leave to speak.—

Say, gentlemen, what makes you thus exclaim ?  
And wherefore crave you combat ? or with  
whom ?

*Ver.* With him my lord ; for he hath done  
me wrong.

*Bas.* And I with him ; for he hath done me  
wrong.

*K. Hen.* What is that wrong whereof you  
both complain ?

First let me know, and then I'll answer you.

*Bas.* Crossing the sea from England into  
France,

This fellow here with envious carping tongue,

Upbraided me about the rose I wear ;

Saying—the sanguine colour of the leaves

Did represent my master's blushing cheeks,

\* Design.

† Anticipated.

When stubbornly he did repugn \* the truth,  
About a certain question in the law,  
Argu'd betwixt the duke of York and him ;  
With other vile and ignominious terms :  
In confutation of which rude reproach,  
And in defence of my lord's worthiness,  
I crave the benefit of law of arms.

*Ver.* And that is my petition, noble lord :  
For though he seem, with forged quaint con-  
ceit,

To set a gloss upon his bold intent,  
Yet know, my lord, I was provok'd by him ;  
And he first took exceptions at this badge,  
Pronouncing that the paleness of this flower  
Bewray'd † the faintness of my master's heart.

*York.* Will not this malice, Somerset, be  
left ?

*Som.* Your private grudge, my lord of York,  
will out,

Though ne'er so cunningly you smother it.

*K. Hen.* Good lord ! what madness rules in  
brain-sick men ;

When, for so slight and frivolous a cause,

Such factious emulations shall arise !—

Good cousins both, of York and Somerset,

Quiet yourselves, I pray, and be at peace.

*York.* Let this dissension first be tied by  
fight,

And then your highness shall command a  
peace.

*Som.* The quarrel toucheth none but us  
alone ;

Betwixt ourselves let us decide it then.

*York.* There is my pledge : accept it, So-  
merset.

*Ver.* Nay, let it rest where it began at first.

*Bas.* Confirm it so, mine honourable lord.

*Glo.* Confirm it so ! Confounded be your  
strife !

And perish ye, with your audacious prate !

Presumptuous vassals ! are you not asham'd,

With this immodest clamorous outrage

To trouble and disturb the king and us !

And you, my lords,—methinks, you do not  
well,

To bear with their perverse objections ;

Much less to take occasion from their mouths

To raise a mutiny betwixt yourselves :

Let me persuade you take a better course.

*Etc.* It grieves his highness ;—Good my  
lords ; be friends.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, you that would be  
combatants :

Henceforth, I charge you, as you love our  
favour,

Quite to forget this quarrel, and the cause.—

And you, my lords,—remember where we are ;  
In France, amongst a fickle wavering nation :

If they perceive dissension in our looks,

And that within ourselves we disagree,

How will their grudging stomachs be provok'd

To wilful disobedience, and rebel ?

Beside, what infamy will there arise,

When foreign princes shall be certified,

That, for a toy, a thing of no regard,

King Henry's peers, and chief nobility,

Destroy'd themselves, and lost the realm of  
France †

O think upon the conquest of my father,

My tender years ; and let us not forego

That for a trifle, that was bought with blood :

Let me be umpire in this doubtful strife.

I see no reason, if I wear this rose.

[*Putting on a red Rose.*]

That any one should therefore be suspicious  
I more incline to Somerset than York :

Both are my kinsmen, and I love them both :

As well they may upbraid me with my crown,

Because forsooth the king of Scots is crown'd.

But your discretions better can persuade,

Than I am able to instruct or teach :

And therefore, as we hither came in peace,

So let us still continue peace and love.—

\* Resist.

† Betrayed.

Cousin of York, we institute your grace  
To be our regent in these parts of France :—  
And good my lord of Somerset, unite  
Your troops of horsemen with his bands of  
foot ;—

And, like true subjects, sons of your progeni-  
tors,  
Go cheerfully together, and digest  
Your angry cholour on your enemies.  
Ourself, my lord protector, and the rest,  
After some respite, will return to Calais ;  
From thence to England ; where I hope ere  
long  
To be presented, by your victories,  
With Charles, Alençon, and that traitorous  
rout.

[*Flourish. Exeunt King HENRY, GLO. SOM.  
WIN. SUF. and BASSET.*]

War. My lord of York, I promise you, the  
king  
Prettily, methought, did play the orator.  
York. And so he did ; but yet I like it not,  
In that he wears the badge of Somerset.  
War. Tush ! that was but his fancy, blame  
him not :

I dare presume, sweet prince, he thought no  
harm.

York. And if I wist he did,—But let it  
rest ;  
Other affairs must now be managed.

[*Exeunt YORK, WARWICK, and VERNON.*  
Etc. Well didst thou, Richard, to suppress  
thy voice :

For, had the passions of thy heart burst out,  
I fear we should have seen decipher'd there,  
More rancorous spite, more furious raging broils,  
Than yet can be imagin'd or suppos'd.  
But howsoever, no simple man that sees  
This jarring discord of nobility,  
This should'ring of each other in the court,  
This factious bandying of their favourites,  
But that it doth presage some ill event.  
'Tis much, \* when sceptres are in children's  
hands ;

But more, when envy breeds unkind † divi-  
sion ;

There comes the ruin, there begins confusion.  
[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE II.—France.—Before Bourdeaux.

*Enter TALBOT with his Forces.*

Tal. Go to the gates of Bourdeaux, tram-  
petter,  
Summon their general unto the wall.

*Trumpet sounds a Parley. Enter, on the  
Walls, the GENERAL of the French Forces,  
and others.*

English John Talbot, captains, calls you forth,  
Servant in arms to Harry king of England ;  
And thus he would,—Open your city gates,  
Be humble to us ; call my sovereign your's,  
And do him homage as obedient subjects,  
And I'll withdraw me and my bloody power :  
But, if you frown upon this proffer'd peace,  
You tempt the fury of my three attendants,  
Lean famine, quartering steel, and climbing  
fire ;

Who, in a moment, even with the earth  
Shall lay your stately and air-braving towers,  
If you forsake the offer of their love.

Gen. Thou ominous and fearful owl of death,  
Our nation's terror, and their bloody scourge !  
The period of thy tyranny approacheth.  
On us thou canst not enter, but by death :  
For, I protest, we are well fortified,  
And strong enough to issue out and fight :  
If thou retire, the Dauphin, well appointed,  
Stands with the snares of war to tangle thee :  
On either hand thee there are squadrons pitch'd,

To wall thee from the liberty of flight :  
And no way canst thou turn thee for redress,  
But death doth front thee with apparent spoil,  
And pale destruction meets thee in the face.  
Ten thousand French have ta'en the sacra-  
ment,

To rive their dangerous artillery  
Upon no Christian soul but English Talbot.  
Lo ! there thou stand'st, a breathing valiant  
mau,

Of an invincible unconquer'd spirit :  
This is the latest glory of thy praise,  
That I, thy enemy, due \* thee withal ;  
For ere the glass, that now begins to run,  
Finish the process of his sandy hour,  
These eyes, that see thee now well coloured,  
Shall see thee wither'd, bloody, pale, and dead.  
[*Drum afar off.*]

Hark ! hark ! the Dauphin's drum, a warning  
bell,

Sings heavy music to thy timorous soul ;  
And mine shall ring thy dire departure out.  
[*Exeunt GENERAL, &c. from the Walls.*]

Tal. He tables not, I hear the enemy ;—  
Out, some light horsemen, and peruse their  
wings.—

O negligent and heedless discipline !  
How are we park'd, and bounded in a pale ;  
A little herd of England's timorous deer,  
Maz'd with a yelping kennel of French curs !  
If we be English deer, be then in blood : †  
For rascal-like, ‡ to fall-down with a pinch ;  
But rather moody-mad, and desperate stags  
Turn on the bloody bounds with heads of  
steel,  
And make the cowards stand aloof at bay :  
Sell every man his life as dear as mine,  
And they shall find dear deer of us, my  
frienos.—

God and Saint George ! Talbot and England's  
right !  
Prosper our colours in this dangerous fight !  
[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE III.—Plains in Gascony.

*Enter YORK, with Forces ; to him a Mus-  
SENGER.*

York. Are not the speedy scouts return'd  
again,

That dogg'd the mighty army of the Dauphin ?  
Mess. They are return'd, my lord ; and give  
it out,

That he is march'd to Bourdeaux with his  
power,  
To fight with Talbot ; as he march'd along,  
By your espials § were discovered  
Two mightier troops than that the Dauphin led ;  
Which join'd with him, and made their march  
for Bourdeaux.

York. A plague upon that villain Somerset ;  
That thus delays my promised supply  
Of horsemen, that were levied for this siege !  
Renowned Talbot doth expect my aid ;  
And I am low'd ¶ by a traitor villain,  
And cannot help the noble chevalier :  
God comfort him in this necessity !  
If he miscarry, farewell wars in France.

*Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY.*

Lucy. Thou princely leader of our English  
strength,

Never so needful on the earth of France,  
Spur to the rescue of the noble Talbot ;  
Who now is girdled with a waist of iron,  
And hemm'd about with grim destruction :  
To Bourdeaux, warlike duke ! to Bourdeaux,  
York !

Else, farewell, Talbot, France, and England's  
honour.

York. O God ! that Somerset—who in proud  
heart

\* 'Tis strange, or wonderful.

† Ennemy.

‡ Unnatural.

\* Endue, honour.

† In high spirit.

‡ A rascal deer is the term of chase for lean poor deer.

§ Espies.

¶ Vanquished, baffled.



Doth stop my cornets—were in Talbot's place !  
So should we save a valiant gentleman,  
By forfeiting a traitor and a coward.  
Mad re, and wrathful fury, makes me weep,  
That thus we die, while remiss traitors sleep.

Lucy. O send some succour to the distress'd lord !

York. He dies, we lose ; I break my warlike word :

We mourn, France smiles ; we lose, they daily get ;

All 'long of this vile traitor Somerset.

Lucy. Then, God take mercy on brave Talbot's soul !

And on his son, young John ; whom two hours since,

I met in travel toward his warlike father !

This seven years did not Talbot see his son ;

And now they meet where both their lives are done.\*

York. Alas ! what joy shall noble Talbot have,

To bid his young son welcome to his grave ?

Away ! vexation almost stops my breath,

That sunder'd friends greet in the hour of death.—

Lucy, farewell : no more my fortune can,

But curse the cause I cannot aid the man.—

Maine, Blois, Poitiers, and Tours, are won away,

'Long all of Somerset, and his delay.

[Exit.

Lucy. Thus, while the vulture + of seditious Feeds in the bosom of such great commanders, Sleeping neglect doth betray to loss The conquest of our scarce-cold conqueror, That ever-living man of memory, Henry the fifth :—Whiles they each other cross, Lives, honours, lands, and all, hurry to loss.

[Exit.

#### SCENE IV.—Other Plains of Gascony.

Enter SOMERSET, with his Forces ; an Officer of TALBOT's with him.

Som. It is too late ; I cannot send them now ; This expedition was by York and Talbot, Too rashly plotted ; all our general force Might with a sally of the very town Be buckled with : the over-daring Talbot Hath sullied all his gloss of former honour, By this unheeded, desperate, wild adventure : York set him on to fight, and die in shame, That Talbot dead, great York might bear the name.

Offr. Here is Sir William Lucy, who with me Set from our o'er-match'd forces forth for aid.

Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY.

Som. How now, Sir William ? whither were you sent ?

Lucy. Whither, my lord ? from bought and sold lord Talbot ; †

Who, ring'd about § with bold adversity,

Cries out for noble York and Somerset,

To beat assailing death from his weak legs.

And whiles the honourable captain there

Drops bloody sweat from his war-wearied limbs,

And, in advantage ling'ring, looks for rescue,

You, his false hopes, the trust of England's honour,

Keep off aloof with worthless emulation.

Let not your private discord keep away

The levied succours that should lend him aid,

While he, renowned noble gentleman,

Yields up his life unto a world of odds :

Orieans the Bastard, Charles, and Burgundy,

Alençon, Reigner, compass him about,

And Talbot perisheth by your default.

\* Expended, consumed.

† Alluding to the tale of Prothespatha.

‡ L. e. From one utterly ruined by the treacherous practices of others.

§ Encircled.

Som. York set him on, York should have sent him aid.

Lucy. And York as fast upon your grace exclaims :

Swearing that you withhold his levied host, Collected for this expedition.

Som. York lies ; he might have sent and had the hoise :

I owe him little duty, and less love ;

And take foul scorn, to fawn on him by sending.

Lucy. The fraud of England, not the force of France,

Hath now entrapp'd the noble-minded Talbot :

Never to England shall he bear his life ;

But dies, betray'd to fortune by your strife.

Som. Come, go : I will despatch the horsemen straight :

Within six hours they will be at his aid.

Lucy. Too late comes rescue : he is ta'en, or slain :

For fly he could not, if he would have fled ;

And fly would Talbot never, though he might.

Som. If he be dead, brave Talbot then adieu !

Lucy. His fame lives in the world, his shame in you. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE V.—The English Camp, near Bourdeaux.

Enter TALBOT and JOHN his Son.

Tal. O young John Talbot ! I did send for thee,

To tutor thee in stratagems of war ;

That Talbot's name might be in thee reviv'd

When sapless age, and weak unable limbs,

Should bring thy father to his drooping chair.

But, O malignant and ill-hoding stars !

Now thou art come unto a feast of death,\*

A terrible and unavoyd'd danger :

Therefore, dear boy, mount on my swiftest

horse ;

And I'll direct thee how thou shalt escape.

By sudden flight : come, dally not, be gone.

John. Is my name Talbot ? and am I your

son ?

And 'shall I fly ? Oh ! if you love my mother,

Dishonour not her honourable name,

To make a bastard and a slave of me :

The world will say—He is not Talbot's blood,

That basely fled, when noble Talbot stood.

Tal. Fly, to revenge my death, if I be slain.

John. He that flies so, will ne'er return

again.

Tal. If we both stay, we both are sure to

die.

John. Then let me stay ; and, father, do

you fly :

Your loss is great, so your regard † should be ;

My worth unknown, no loss is known in me.

Upon my death the French can little boast ;

In your's they will, in you all hopes are lost.

Flight cannot stain the honour you have won ;

But mine it will, that no exploit have done :

You fled for vantage every one will swear ;

But, if I bow, they'll say—it was for fear.

There is no hope that ever I will stay,

If, the first hour, I shrink and run away.

Here, on my knee, I beg mortakty,

Rather than life preserv'd with infamy.

Tal. Shall all thy mother's hopes lie in one

tomb ?

John. Ay, rather than I'll shame my mother's

womb.

Tal. Upon my blessing I command thee go.

John. To fight I will, but not to fly the foe.

Tal. Part of thy father may be sav'd in thee

John. No part of him, but will be shame in

me.

Tal. Thou never hadst renown, nor canst not

lose it.

\* To a field where death will be feasted with slaughter.

† For unavoidable.

‡ Your care of your own

safety.

# Scene VI FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI.

483

*John.* Yes, your renowned name; Shall fight abuse it?

*Tal.* Thy father's charge shall clear thee from that stain.

*John.* You cannot witness for me being slain.

If death be so apparent, then both fly.

*Tal.* And leave my followers here, to fight, and die?

My age was never tainted with such shame.

*John.* And shall my youth be guilty of such blame?

No more can I be sever'd from your side,

Thou can yourself yourself in twain divide:

Stay, go, do what you will, the like do I;

For live I will not, if my father die.

*Tal.* Then here I take my leave of thee, fair son,

Born to eclipse thy life this afternoon.

Come, side by side, together live and die;

And soul with soul from France to heaven fly.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VI.—A Field of Battle.

*Alarum:* Excursions, wherein TALBOT'S Son is hemmed about, and TALBOT rescues him.

*Tal.* Saint George and victory! fight, soldiers, fight!

The regent hath with Talbot broke his word,

And left us to the rage of France his sword.

Where is John Talbot?—pause, and take thy breath;

I gave thee life, and rescu'd thee from death.

*John.* O twice my father! twice am I thy son:

The life, thou gav'st me first, was lost and done;

Till with thy warlike sword, despite of fate,

To my determin'd\* time thou gav'st new date.

*Tal.* When from the Dauphin's crest thy sword struck fire,

It waru'd thy father's heart with proud desire

Of bold fac'd victory. Then leaden age,

Quicken'd with youthful spleen, and warlike rage,

Beat down Alençon, Orleans, Burgundy,

And from the pride of Gallia rescu'd thee.

The useful bastard Orleans—that drew blood

From thee, my boy; and had the maidenhood

Of thy first fight—I soon encountered;

And, interchanging blows, I quickly shed

Some of his bastard blood; and, in disgrace,

Bespoke him thus: Contaminated, base,

And misbegotten blood I spill of thine,

Mean and right poor; for that pure blood of mine,

Which thou didst force from Talbot, my brave boy:—

Here, purposing the Bastard to destroy,

Came in strong rescue. Speak, thy father's care;

Art not thou weary, John? How dost thou fare?

Wilt thou yet leave the battle, boy, and fly,

Now thou art seal'd the son of chivalry?

Fly, to revenge my death, when I am dead;

The help of one stands me in little stead.

O too much folly is it, well I wot,

To hazard all our lives in one small boat.

If I to-day die not with Frenchmen's rage,

To-morrow I shall die with mickle age:

By me they nothing gain, and if I stay,

'Tis but the short'ning of my life one day:

In thee thy mother dies, our household's name,

My death's revenge, thy youth, and England's fame:

All these, and more, we hazard by thy stay;

All these are sav'd, if thou wilt fly away.

\* Ended.

*John.* The sword of Orleans hath not made me smart,

These words of yours draw life-blood from my heart:

On that advantage, bought with such a shame,

(To save a paltry life, and slay bright fame,) Before young Talbot from old Talbot fly,

The coward horse, that bears me, fall and die;

And like\* me to the peasant boys of France;

To be shame's scorn, and subject of mischance!

Surely, by all the glory you have won,

And if I fly, I am not Talbot's son:

Then talk no more of flight, it is no boot;

If son to Talbot, die at Talbot's foot.

*Tal.* Then follow thou thy desperate sire of Crete,

Thou Icarus; thy life to me is sweet:

If thou wilt fight, fight by thy father's side;

And, commendable prov'd, let's die in pride.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VII.—Another part of the same.

*Alarum:* Excursions. Enter TALBOT wounded supported by a SERVANT.

*Tal.* Where is my other life?—mine own is gone;—

O where's young Talbot? where is valiant John?

Triumphant death, smear'd with captivity!+

Young Talbot's valour makes me smile at thee:

When he perceiv'd me shrink, and on my knee,

His bloody sword he brandish'd over me,

And, like a hungry lion, did commence

Rough deeds of rage, and stern impatience;

But when my angry guardant stood alone,

Tend'ring my ruin, and assail'd of none,

Dizzy e'd fury, and great rage of heart,

Suddenly made him from my side to start

Into the cinst'ring battle of the French:

And in that sea of blood my boy did drench

His overmounting spirit; and there died

My Icarus, my blossom, in his pride.

Enter Soldiers, bearing the Body of JOHN TALBOT.

*Serv.* O my dear lord! lo, where your son is borne!

*Tal.* Thou antic death, which laugh'st us here to scorn,

Anon, from thy insulting tyranny,

Coupled in bonds of perpetuity,

Two Talbots, winged through the lither \$ sky.

In thy despite, shall 'scape mortality.—

O thou whose wounds become hard-favour'd death,

Speak to thy father, ere thou yield thy breath:

Brave death by speaking, whether he will, or no;

Imagine him a Frenchman, and thy foe.—

Poor boy! he smiles, methinks; as who should say—

Had death been French, then death had died to-day.

Come, come, and lay him in his father's arms;

My spirit can no longer bear these harms.

Soldiers, adieu! I have what I would have,

Now my old arms are young John Talbot's grave.

[*Dies.*]

*Alarums.* *Exeunt Soldiers and Servants, leaving the two Bodies.* Enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, BURGUNDY, BASTARD, LA PUCELLE, and Forces.

*Char.* Had York and Somerset brought rescue in,

We should have found a bloody day of this.

*Bas.* How the young whelp of Talbot's, raging-wood, |

\* Like me, reduce me to a level with.

+ Death stained and discoloured with captivity.

\$ "Watching me with tenderness in my fall."

† Flexible, yielding. | Raving mad.

Did flesh his puny sword in Frenchmen's blood !

*Puc.* Once I encounter'd him, and thus I said,

*Thou maiden youth, be vanquish'd by a maid :*

But, with a proud, majestic high scorn,  
He answer'd thus ; *Young Talbot was not born*

*To be the pillage of a giglot \* wench :*  
So, rushing in the bowels of the French,  
He left me proudly as unworthy fight.

*Bur.* Doubtless, he would have made a noble knight :

See, where he lies inersed in the arms  
Of the most bloody nurser of his harms.

*Bast.* Hew them to pieces, hack their bones  
asunder ;  
Whose life was England's glory, Gallia's wonder.

*Char.* O no ; forbear : For that which we  
have fled  
During the life, let us not wrong it dead.

*Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY, attended ; a French Herald preceding.*

*Lucy.* Herald,  
Conduct me to the Dauphin's tent ; to know  
Who hath obtain'd the glory of the day.

*Char.* On what submissive message art thou sent ?

*Lucy.* Submission, Dauphin ? 'tis a mere French word ;

We English warriors wet not what it means.  
I come to know what prisoners thou hast ta'en,  
And to survey the bodies of the dead.

*Char.* For prisoners ask'st thou ? hell our prison is.

But tell me whom thou seek'st.

*Lucy.* Where is the great Alcides of the field,  
Valiant lord Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury ?  
Created, for his rare success in arms,  
Great Earl of Washford, Waterford, and Valence ;

Lord Talbot of Goodrig and Urchingfield,  
Lord Strange of Blackmere, lord Verdun of Alton,  
Lord Cromwell of Wingfield, lord Furnival of Shemeld,

The thrice victorious lord of Falconbridge ;  
Knight of the noble order of Saint George,  
Worthy saint Michael, and the golden fleece ;  
Great mareschal to Henry the sixth,  
Of all his wars within the realm of France ?

*Puc.* Here is a silly stately style indeed !  
The Turk, that two and fifty kingdoms hath,  
Writes not so tedious a style as this.—

Him, that thou magnifest with all these titles,  
Stinking, and fly-blown, lies here at our feet.

*Lucy.* Is Talbot slain ; the Frenchmen's only scourge,

Your kingdom's terror and black Nemesis ?  
O were mine eye-balls into bullets turn'd,  
That I, in rage, might shoot them at your faces !

O that I could but call these dead to life !  
It were enough to fright the realm of France :  
Were but his picture left among you here,  
It would amaze y the proudest of you all.  
Give me their bodies ; that I may bear them hence,

And give them burial as beseems their worth.

*Puc.* I think, this upstart is old Talbot's ghost,

He speaks with such a proud commanding spirit.

For God's sake, let him have 'em : to keep them here,

They would but stink, and putrify the air.

*Char.* Go, take their bodies hence.

*Lucy.* I'll bear them hence :

But from their ashes shall be rear'd  
A phoenix that shall make all France afraid.

\* Wanton.

† Confound.

*Char.* So we be rid of them, do with 'em what thou wilt.

And now to Paris, in this conquering vein ;  
All will be our's, now bloody Talbot's slain.  
[*Exeunt.*]

# ACT V.

*SCENE I.—London.—A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, and EXETER.*

*K. Hen.* Have you perus'd the letters from the pope,

The emperor and the earl of Armagnac ?

*Glo.* I have, my lord ; and their intent is this,—

They humbly sue unto your excellence,

To have a godly peace concluded of,

Between the realms of England and of France.

*K. Hen.* How doth your grace affect their motion ?

*Glo.* Well, my good lord ; and as the only means

To stop effusion of our Christian blood,

And 'stablish quietness on every side.

*K. Hen.* Ay, marry, uncle ; for I always thought,

It was both impious and unnatural,

That such inhumanity \* and bloody strife

Should reign among professors of one faith

*Glo.* Beside, my lord,—the sooner to elect,

And surer bind, this knot of amity,—

The earl of Armagnac, near knit to Charles,

A man of great authority in France,—

Proffers his only daughter to your grace

In marriage, with a large and sumptuous dowry.

*K. Hen.* Marriage, uncle ! alas, my years are young ;

And fitter is my study and my books,

Than wanton dalliance with a paramour.

Yet, call the ambassadors ; and, as you please,

So let them have their answers every one :  
I shall be well content with any choice,

Tends to God's glory, and my country's weal.

*Enter a LEGATE, and two AMBASSADORS, with WINCHESTER, in a Cardinal's Habit.*

*Ecc.* What ! is my lord of Winchester un-

stall'd,  
And call'd unto a cardinal's degree !

Then, I perceive, that will be verified,  
Henry the fifth did sometime prophesy,—

*If once he come to be a cardinal,*  
*He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown.*

*K. Hen.* My lords ambassadors, your several suits

Have been consider'd and debated on.  
Your purpose is both good and reasonable :

And, therefore, are we certainly resolv'd  
To draw conditions of a friendly peace ;

Which, by my lord of Winchester, we mean  
Shall be transported presently to France.

*Glo.* And for the proffer of my lord your master,—

I have inform'd his highness so at large,  
As—liking of the lady's virtuous gifts,  
Her beauty, and the value of her dower,—

He doth intend she shall be England's queen.

*K. Hen.* In argument and proof of which contract,  
Bear her this jewel, [To the Amb.] pledge of my affection.

And so, my lord protector, see them guarded,  
And safely brought to Dover ; where, in shipp'd,  
Commit them to the fortune of the sea.

[*Exeunt King HENRY and Train ; GLOSTER, EXETER, and AMBASSADORS.*]  
*Win.* Stay, my lord legate ; you shall first receive.

\* Barbarity, savageness.

The sum of money, which I promised  
Should he deliver'd to his holiness  
For clothing me in these grave ornaments.

*Leg.* I will attend upon your lordship's leisure.

*Win.* Now, Winchester will not submit I trow,

Or be inferior to the proudest peer.  
Humphrey of Gloster, thou shalt well perceive,  
That, neither in birth, or for authority,  
The bishop will be overborne by thee:  
I'll either make thee stoop, and bend thy knee,  
Or sack this country with a mutiny.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—France.—Plains in Anjou.

*Enter CHARLES, BURGUNDY, ALENÇON, LA PUCELLE, and Forces marching.*

*Char.* These news, my lords, may cheer our drooping spirits:

'Tis said, the stout Parisians do revolt,  
And turn again unto the warlike French.

*Alen.* Then march to Paris, royal Charles of France,  
And keep not back your powers in dalliance.

*Puc.* Peace be amongst them, if they turn to us;  
Else, ruin combat with their palaces!

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Success unto our valiant general,  
And happiness to his accomplices!

*Char.* What tidings send our scouts? I pry-thee, speak.

*Mess.* The English army, that divided was  
Into two parts, is now conjoin'd in one;  
And means to give you battle presently.

*Char.* Somewhat too sudden, Sirs, the warning is;

But we will presently provide for them.

*Bur.* I trust the ghost of Talbot is not there;

Now he is gone, my lord, you need not fear.

*Puc.* Of all base passions, fear is most accurate:—

Command the conquest, Charles, it shall be thine;

Let Henry fret, and all the world repine.

*Char.* Then out, my lords; And France be fortunate!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—The same.—Before Angiers.

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter LA PUCELLE.*

*Puc.* The regent conquers, and the Frenchmen fly.—

Now help, ye charming spells, and periapts;\*  
And ye choice spirits that admonish me,  
And give me signs of future accidents!

[*Thunder.*]  
You speedy helpers, that are substitutes  
Under the lordly monarch of the north,†  
Appeal, and aid me in this enterprize!

*Enter Fiends.*

This speedy quick appearance argues proof  
Of your accustomed diligence to me.

Now, ye familiar spirits, that are call'd  
Out of the powerful regions under earth,  
Help me this once, that France may get the field.

[*They walk about and speak not.*]  
O hold me not with silence over-long!

Where I was wout to feed you with my blood,  
I'll lop a member off, and give it you,  
In earnest of a further benefit;

So you do condescend to help me now.—  
[*They hang their heads.*]

No hope to have redress?—My body shall  
Pay recompense, if you will grant my suit.

[*They shake their heads.*]

Cannot my body, nor blood-sacrifice,  
Entreat you to your wouted furtherance?  
Then take my soul; my body, soul, and all,  
Before that England give the French the foil.

[*They depart.*]

See! they forsake me. Now the time is come,  
That France must vail\* her lofty-plumed crest,  
And let her head fall into England's lap.  
My ancient incantations are too weak,  
And hell too strong for me to buckle with:  
Now, France, thy glory droopeth to the dust.

[*Exit.*]

*Alarums. Enter French and English, fighting. LA PUCELLE and YORK fight hand to hand. LA PUCELLE is taken. The French fly.*

*York.* Damsel of France, I think I have you fast:

Unchain your spirits now with spelling charms,  
And try if they can gain your liberty.—

A goodly prize, fit for the devil's grace!  
See, how the ugly witch doth bend her brows,  
As if, with Circe, she would change my shape.

*Puc.* Chang'd to a worse shape thou canst not be.

*York.* O Charles the Dauphin is a proper man;

No shape but his can please your dainty eye.

*Puc.* A plaguing mischief light on Charles, and thee!

And may you both be suddenly surpris'd  
By bloody hands, in sleeping on your beds!

*York.* Fell, bawling† hag! enchantress, hold thy tongue.

*Puc.* I pry-thee, give me leave to curse a while.

*York.* Curse, miscreant, when thou comest to the stake.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Alarums. Enter SUFFOLK, Leading in Lady MARGARET.*

*Suff.* Be what thou wilt, thou art my prisoner.

[*Gazes on her.*]

O fairest beauty, do not fear, nor fly;  
For I will touch thee but with reverent hands,  
And lay them gently on thy tender side.

I kiss these fingers [*Kissing her hand.*] for eternal peace:

Who art thou? say, that I may honour thee.

*Mar.* Margaret my name; and daughter to a king,

The king of Naples, whosoe'er thou art.

*Suff.* An earl I am, and Suffolk am I call'd.  
Be not offended, nature's miracle,

Thou art allotted to be ta'en by me:  
So doth the swan her downy cygnaets save,  
Keeping them prisoners underneath her wings.

Yet, if this servile usage once offend,  
Go, and be free again as Suffolk's friend.

[*She turns away as going.*]

O stay!—I have no power to let her pass;  
My hand would free her, but my heart says—

no.

As plays the sun upon the glassy streams,  
Twinkling another counterfeited beam,

So seems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes.  
Fain would I woo her, yet I dare not speak:

I'll call for pen and ink, and write my mind:  
Fie, De la Poole! disable not thyself;†

Hast not a tongue? is she not here thy prisoner?

Wilt thou be daunted at a woman's sight?  
Ay; beauty's princely majesty is such,  
Confounds the tongue, and makes the senses rough.

*Mar.* Say earl of Suffolk,—if thy name be so,—

\* Charms sow'd up: of these, the first chapter of St. John's gospel was deemed the most efficacious.

† This north was supposed to be the particular habitation of bad spirits.

\* Lower. † To ban is to curse.  
‡ Do not represent thyself so weak."

What ransom must I pay before I pass?  
For, I perceive, I am thy prisoner.

*Suff.* How can'st thou tell, she will deny thy suit,

Before thou make a trial of her love? [*Aside.*]

*Mar.* Why speak'st thou not? what ransom must I pay?

*Suff.* She's beautiful; and therefore to be woo'd:

She is a woman; therefore to be won. [*Aside.*]

*Mar.* Wilt thou accept of ransom, yea, or no?

*Suff.* Fond man! remember that thou hast a wife;

Then how can Margaret be thy paramour? [*Aside.*]

*Mar.* I were best leave him, for he will not hear.

*Suff.* There all is marr'd; there lies a cooling card.

*Mar.* He talks at random: sure, the man is mad.

*Suff.* And yet a dispensation may be had.

*Mar.* And yet I would that you would answer me.

*Suff.* I'll win this lady Margaret. For whom? Why, for my king: Tush! that's a wooden thing.\*

*Mar.* He talks of wood: It is some carpenter.

*Suff.* Yet so my fancy may be satisfied, And peace established between these realms.

But there remains a scruple in that too: For though her father be the king of Naples,

Duke of Anjou and Maine, yet is he poor, And our nobility will scorn the match. [*Aside.*]

*Mar.* Hear ye, captain! Are you not at leisure?

*Suff.* It shall be so, disdain they ne'er so much:

Henry is youthful, and will quickly yield.—

Madam, I have a secret to reveal.

*Mar.* What though I be enthral'd? he seems a knight,

And will not any way dishonour me. [*Aside.*]

*Suff.* Lady, vouchsafe to listen what I say.

*Mar.* Perhaps, I shall be rescu'd by the French;

And then I need not crave his courtesy. [*Aside.*]

*Suff.* Sweet madam, give me hearing in a cause—

*Mar.* Tush! women have been captive ere now. [*Aside.*]

*Suff.* Lady, wherefore talk you so?

*Mar.* I cry you in mercy, 'tis but quid pro quo.

*Suff.* Say, gentle princess, would you not suppose

Your bondage happy, to be made a queen?

*Mar.* To be a queen in bondage, is more vile Than is a slave in base servility;

For princes should be free.

*Suff.* And so shall you,

If happy England's royal king be free.

*Mar.* Why, what concerns his freedom unto me?

*Suff.* I'll undertake to make thee Henry's queen;

To put a golden sceptre in thy hand, And set a precious crown upon thy head,

If thou wilt condescend to be my—

*Mar.* What?

*Suff.* His love.

*Mar.* I am unworthy to be Henry's wife.

*Suff.* No, gentle madam; I unworthy am To woo so fair a dame to be his wife,

And have no portion in the choice myself.

How say you, madam: are you so content?

*Mar.* An if my father please, I am content.

*Suff.* Then call our captain and our colours forth:

And, madam, at your father's castle walls We'll crave a parley, to confer with him.

[*Troops come forward.*]

A Parley sounded. Enter REIGNIER, on the Walls.

*Suff.* See, Reignier, see, thy daughter prisoner.

*Reig.* To whom?

*Suff.* To me.

*Reig.* Suffolk, what remedy?

I am a soldier; and unapt to weep, Or to exclaim on fortune's fickleness.

*Suff.* Yes, there is remedy enough, my lord: Consent (and for thy honour give consent,) Thy daughter shall be wedded to my king;

Whom I with pain have woo'd and won thereto; And thus her easy-held imprisonment Hath gain'd thy daughter princely liberty.

*Reig.* Speaks Suffolk as he thinks?

*Suff.* Fair Margaret knows, That Suffolk doth not flatter, face, or feign.

*Reig.* Upon thy princely warrant, I descend, To give thee answer of thy just demand.

*Suff.* And here I will expect thy coming. [*Exit, from the Walls.*]

Trumpets sounded. Enter REIGNIER, below.

*Reig.* Welcome, brave earl, into our territories;

Command in Anjou what your honour pleases.

*Suff.* Thanks, Reignier, happy for so sweet a child,

Fit to be made companion with a king: What answer makes your grace unto my suit?

*Reig.* Since thou dost deign to woo her little worth,

To be the princely bride of such a lord; Upon condition I may quietly

Enjoy mine own, the county Maine, and Anjou, Free from oppression, or the stroke of war,

My daughter shall be Henry's, if he please.

*Suff.* That is her ransom, I deliver her; And those two counties, I will undertake,

Your grace shall well and quietly enjoy.

*Reig.* And I again,—in Henry's royal name, As deputy unto that gracious king,

Give thee her hand, for sign of plighted faith.

*Suff.* Reignier of France, I give thee kingly thanks,

Because this is in traffic of a king: And yet, methinks, I could be well content

To be mine own attorney in this case. [*Aside.*]

I'll over then to England with this news, And make this marriage to be solemniz'd;

So, farewell, Reignier! Set this diamond safe In golden palaces, as it becomes.

*Reig.* I do embrace thee, as I would embrace The Christian prince, king Henry, were he here.

*Mar.* Farewell, my lord! Good wishes, praise, and prayers,

Shall Suffolk ever have of Margaret. [*Going.*]

*Suff.* Farewell, sweet madam! But hark you, Margaret;

No princely commendations to my king?

*Mar.* Such commendations as become a maid,

A virgin, and his servant say to him.

*Suff.* Words sweetly plac'd and modestly directed.

But, madam, I must trouble you again,—

No loving token to his majesty?

*Mar.* Yes, my good lord; a pure unspotted heart,

Never yet taint with love, I send the king.

*Suff.* And this withal. [*Kisses her.*]

*Mar.* That for thyself;—I will not so presume, To send such peevish tokens to a king.

[*Exeunt REIGNIER and MARGARET.*]

*Suff.* O wert thou for myself!—But, Suffolk, stay;

\* An awkward business, an undertaking not likely to succeed.

† Love.

\* Play the hypocrite.

† Childish.

Thou may'st not wander in that labyrinth;  
There Minotaur and ugly treasours lurk;  
Solicit Henry with her wondrous praise:  
Bethink thee on her virtues that surmount;  
Mad, \* natural graces that extinguish art;  
Repeat their semblance often on the seas,  
That, when thou com'st to kneel at Henry's  
feet,  
Thou may'st bereave him of his wits with won-  
der. [Exit.]

SCENE IV.—Camp of the duke of York in  
Anjou.

Enter YORK, WARWICK, and others.

YORK. Bring forth that sorceress, condemn'd  
to burn.

Enter LA PUCELLE, guarded, and a SHEP-  
HERD.

SHEP. Ah! Joan! this kills thy father's heart  
outright!  
Have I sought every country far and near,  
And now it is my chance to find thee out,  
Must I behold thy timeless† cruel death!  
Ah! Joan, sweet daughter Joan, I'll die with  
thee!

PUC. Decrepit miser! † base ignoble wretch!  
I am descended of a gentler blood;  
Thou art no father, nor no friend of mine.

SHEP. Out, out!—My lords, an please you, 'tis  
not so;

I did beset her, all the parish knows:  
Her mother liveth yet, can testify,  
She was the first fruit of my bachelorship.

WAR. Graceless! wilt thou deny thy parent-  
age?

YORK. This argues what her kind of life hath  
been;

Wicked and vile; and so her death concludes.  
SHEP. Fie, Joan! that thou wilt be so ob-  
stacle! ‡

God knows, thou art a collop of my flesh;  
And for thy sake have I shed many a tear:  
Deny me not, I pray thee, gentle Joan.

PUC. Peasant, avaunt!—You have suborn'd  
this man,  
Of purpose to obscure my noble birth.

SHEP. 'Tis true, I gave a noble to the priest,  
The morn that I was wedded to her mother.—  
Kneel down and take my blessing, good my  
girl.

Wilt thou not stoop? Now cursed be the time  
Of thy nativity! I would the milk  
Thy mother gave thee, when thou suck'dst her  
breast,

Had been a little ratsbane for thy sake!  
Or else, when thou didst keep my lambs a-field,  
I wish some ravenous wolf had eaten thee!  
Dost thou deny thy father, cursed drab?  
O burn her, burn her; hanging is too good.

YORK. Take her away; for she hath liv'd too  
long.

To fill the world with vicious qualities.

PUC. First, let me tell you whom you have  
condemn'd:

Not me begotten of a shepherd swain,  
But issu'd from the progeny of kings;  
Virtuous and holy; chosen from above,  
By inspiration of celestial grace,

To work exceeding miracles on earth.

I never nad to do with wicked spirits;  
But you, that are polluted with your lusts,  
Stain'd with the guiltless blood of innocents  
Corrupt and tainted with a thousand vices,—

Because you want the grace that others have,  
You judge it straight a thing impossible  
To compass wonders, but by help of devils.

No, misconceived! † Joan of Arc hath been

\* Wild.

† Untimely.

‡ Miser here simply means a miserable creature.

§ A corruption of obstinate.

|| "No, ye misconceivers, ye who mistake me and my  
qualities"

A virgin from her tender infancy,  
Chaste and immaculate in very thought;  
Whose maiden blood, thus rigorously effus'd,  
Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heaven.

YORK. Ay, ay;—away with her to execution.

WAR. And hark ye, Sirs; because she is a  
maid,

Spare for no fagots, let there be enough:  
Place barrels of pitch upon the fatal stake,  
That so her torture may be shortened.

PUC. Will nothing turn your unrelenting  
hearts?—

Then, Joan, discover thine infirmity,  
That warranteth by law to be thy privilege.—  
I am with child, ye bloody homicides:

Murder not then the fruit within my womb,  
Although ye hale me to a violent death.

YORK. Now heaven forfend! the holy maid  
with child?

WAR. The greatest miracle that e'er ye  
wrought:

Is all your strict preciseness come to this?

YORK. She and the Dauphin have been jug-  
gling:

I did imagine what would be her refuge.

WAR. Well, go to; we will have no bastards  
live;

Especially, since Charles must father it.

PUC. You are deceiv'd; my child is none of  
his;

It was Alençon, that enjoy'd my love.

YORK. Alençon! that notorious Machiavel!  
It dies, an if it had a thousand lives.

PUC. O give me leave, I have deluded you;  
'Twas neither Charles, nor yet the duke I  
nam'd,

But Reiguiet, king of Naples, that prevail'd.

WAR. A married man! that's most intoler-  
able.

YORK. Why, here's a girl! I think she knows  
not well,

There were so many, whom she may accuse.

WAR. It's sign she hath been liberal and  
free.

YORK. And, yet, forsooth, she is a virgin  
pure.—

Strumpet, thy words condemn thy brat and thee:  
Use no entreaty, for it is in vain.

PUC. Then lead me hence;—with whom I  
leave my curse:

May never glorious sun reflex his beams  
Upon the country where you make abode!

But darkness and the gloomy shade of death  
Environ you; till mischief, and despair,  
Drive you to break your necks, or hang your-  
selves! [Exit, guarded.]

YORK. Break thou in pieces, and consume to  
ashes,

Thou foul accurs'd minister of hell!

Enter Cardinal BEAUFORT, attended.

CAR. Lord regent, I do greet your excellence  
With letters of commission from the king.

For, know, my lords, the states of Christendom,  
Mov'd with remorse\* of these outrageous  
broils,

Have earnestly implor'd a general peace  
Betwixt our nation and the aspiring French;

And here at hand the Dauphin, and his train,  
Approacheth, to confer about some matter.

YORK. Is all our travail turn'd to this effect?  
After the slaughter of so many peers,

So many captains, gentlemen, and soldiers,  
That in this quarrel have been overthrow'n,  
And sold their bodies for their country's be-  
nefit,

Shall we at last conclude effeminate peace?  
Have we not lost most part of all the towns,

By treason, falsehood, and by treachery,  
Our great progenitors had conquered?—  
O Warwick, Warwick! I foresee with grief  
The utter loss of all the realm of France.

\* Compassion.

*War.* Be patient, York: if we conclude a peace,  
It shall be with such strict and severe covenants,  
As little shall the Frenchmen gain thereby.

*Enter CHARLES, attended; ALENCON, BISTARD, REIGNIER, and others.*

*Char.* Since, lords of England, it is thus agreed,  
That peaceful truce shall be proclaim'd in France,

We come to be informed by yourselves  
What the conditions of that league must be.

*York.* Speak, Winchester; for boiling cholera chokes

The hollow passage of my poison'd voice,  
By sight of these our hateful \* enemies.

*Win.* Charles, and the rest, it is enacted thus:

That—in regard king Henry gives consent,  
Of mere compassion, and of lenity,  
To ease your country of distressful war,  
And suffer you to breathe in fruitful peace,—  
You shall become true liegemen to his crown:  
And, Charles, upon condition thou wilt swear  
To pay him tribute, and submit thyself,  
Thou shalt be plac'd as viceroy under him,  
And still enjoy thy regal dignity.

*Alen.* Must he be then as shadow of himself,

Adorn his temples with a coronet,†  
And yet, in substance and authority,  
Retain but privilege of a private man?  
This proffer is absurd and reasonless.

*Char.* 'Tis known, already, that I am possess'd

With more than half the Gallian territories,  
And therein reverenc'd for their lawful king:  
Shall I, for lucre of the rest unvanquish'd,  
Detract so much from that prerogative,  
As to be call'd but viceroy of the whole?  
No, lord ambassador; I'll rather keep  
That which I have, than, coveting for more,  
Be cast from possibility of all.

*York.* Insulting Charles! hast thou by secret means

Used intercession to obtain a league;  
And, now the matter grows to compromise,  
Stand'st thou aloof upon comparison?  
Either accept the title thou usurp'st,  
Of benefit† proceeding from our king,  
And not of any challenge of desert,  
Or we will plague thee with incessant wars.

*Reig.* My lord, you do not well in obstinacy  
To cavil in the course of this contract:  
If once it be neglected, ten to one,  
We shall not find like opportunity.

*Alen.* To say the truth, it is your policy,  
To save your subjects from such massacre,  
And ruthless slaughters, as are daily seen  
By our proceeding in hostility:  
And therefore take this compact of a truce,  
Although you break it when your pleasure serves.

[*Aside, to CHARLES.*]  
*War.* How say'st thou, Charles? shall our condition stand?

*Char.* It shall:  
Only reserv'd, you claim no interest  
In any of our towns of garrison.

*York.* Then swear allegiance to his majesty;  
As thou art knight, never to disobey,  
Nor be rebellious to the crown of England,  
Thou, nor thy nobles, to the crown of England.—

[*CHARLES, and the rest, give Tokens of fealty.*]

So, now dismiss your army when ye please;  
Hang up your ensigns, let your drums be still,  
For here we entertain a solemn peace.

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Baneful.

† Coronet is here used for crown.

‡ "Be content to live as the beneficiary of our King."

SCENE V.—London.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter KING HENRY, in conference with Suffolk; GLOSTER and EXETER following.*

*K. Hen.* Your wondrous rare description,  
noble earl,

Of beauteous Margaret bath astonish'd me:  
Her virtues, graced with external gifts,  
Do breed love's settled passions in my heart:  
And like 'as rigour in tempestuous gusts  
Provokes the mightiest hulk against the tide;  
So am I driven, by breath of her renown,  
Either to suffer shipwreck, or arrive  
Where I may have fruition of her love.

*Suff.* Tush! my good lord! this superficial tale  
Is but a preface of her worthy praise:  
The chief perfections of that lovely dame,  
(Had I sufficient skill to utter them,)  
Would make a volume of enticing lines,  
Able to ravish any dull conceit.

And which is more, she is not so divine,  
So full replete with choice of all delights,  
But, with as humble lowliness of mind,  
She is content to be at your command;  
Command, I mean, of virtuous chaste intents,  
To love and honour Henry as her lord.

*K. Hen.* And otherwise will Henry ne'er presume.

Therefore, my lord protector, give consent,  
That Margaret may be England's royal queen.

*Glo.* So should I give consent to flatter sin.  
You know, my lord, your highness is betroth'd  
Unto another lady of esteem;  
How shall we then dispense with that contract,  
And not deface your honour with reproach?

*Suff.* As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths;  
Or one, that, at a triumph\* having vow'd  
To try his strength, forsaketh yet the lists  
By reason of his adversary's odds:  
A poor earl's daughter is unequal odds,  
And therefore may be broke without offence.

*Glo.* Why what, I pray is Margaret more than that?

Her father is no better than an earl,  
Although in glorious titles he excel.

*Suff.* Yes, my good lord, her father is a king;  
The king of Naples and Jerusalem;  
And of such great authority in France,  
As his alliance will confirm our peace,  
And keep the Frenchmen in allegiance.

*Glo.* And so the earl of Armagnac may do,  
Because he is near kinsman unto Charles.

*Exe.* Beside, his wealth doth warrant liberal dower;

While Reignier sooner will receive than give.

*Suff.* A dower, my lords! disgrace not so your king,

That he should be so abject, base, and poor,  
To choose for wealth, and not for perfect love.  
Henry is able to enrich his queen,  
And not to seek a queen to make him rich:  
So worthless peasants bargain for their wives,  
As market-men for oxen, sheep, or horse.

Marriage is a matter of more worth,  
Than to be dealt in by attorneyship,†

Not whom we will, but whom his grace affects,  
Must be companion of his nuptial bed:

And therefore, lords, since he affects her most,  
It most of all these reasons bindeth us,  
In our opinions she should be preferred.

For what is wedlock forced, but a hell,  
An age of discord and continual strife?

Whereas the contrary bringeth forth bliss,  
And is a pattern of celestial peace.

Whom should we match with Henry, being a king,  
But Margaret, that is daughter to a king?

Her peerless feature, joined with her birth,  
Approves her fit for none, but for a king:

Her valiant courage, and undaunted spirit,  
(More than in women commonly is seen,)  
Will answer our hope in issue of a king;

\* A triumph then signified a public exhibition; such as a mask, or revel.

† By the discretionary agency of another.

For Henry, son unto a conqueror  
Is likely to beget more conquerors,  
If with a lady of so high resolve,  
As is fair Margaret, he be link'd in love.  
Then yield, my lords; and here conclude with  
me,  
That Margaret shall be queen, and none but  
she.

*K. Hen.* Whether it be through force of your  
report,

My noble lord of Suffolk; or for what  
My tender youth was never yet attain'd  
With any passion of inflaming love,  
I cannot tell: but this I am assur'd,  
I feel such sharp dissension in my breast,  
Such fierce alarms both of hope and fear,  
As I am sick with working of my thoughts.  
Take, therefore, shipping; post, my lord to  
France:

Agree to any covenants: and procure  
That lady Margaret do vouchsafe to come  
To cross the seas to England, and be crown'd  
King Henry's faithful and anointed queen:

For your expenses and sufficient charge,  
Among the people gather up a tenth.  
Be gone, I say: for, till you do return,  
I rest perplexed with a thousand cares.—  
And you, good uncle, banish all offence:  
If you do censure me by what you were,  
Not what you are, I know it will excuse  
This sudden execution of my will.  
And so conduct me, where from company,  
I may revolve and ruminate my grief. [*Exit.*  
*Glo.* Ay, grief, I fear me, both at first and  
last. [*Exeunt GLOSTER and EXETER.*  
*Suff.* Thus Suffolk hath prevail'd: and thus he  
goes,  
As did the youthful Paris once to Greece;  
With hope to find the like event in love,  
But prosper better than the Trojan did.  
Margaret shall now be queen, and rule the  
king;

But I will rule both her, the king, and realm. [*Exit.*

• Judge,



# SECOND PART

OF

## KING HENRY VI.

### LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

**SHAKESPEARE** is said to have formed this and the succeeding part of Henry VI. from a dramatic production entitled, *The Contention of the two famous Houses of York and Lancaster*; "altering, retrenching, or amplifying," as his genius or his judgment suggested. The present drama embraces the transactions of ten years, commencing with the king's marriage, A. D. 1445, and closing with the battle of St. Alban's, won by the York faction, A. D. 1455.

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

**KING HENRY THE SIXTH.**  
**HUMPHREY, Duke of Gloster, his Uncle.**  
**CARDINAL BEAUFORT, Bishop of Winchester,**  
*Great Uncle to the King.*  
**RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.**  
**EDWARD and RICHARD, his Sons.**  
**DUKE OF SOMERSET,**  
**DUKE OF SUFFOLK,**  
**DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM,**  
**LORD CLIFFORD,**  
**YOUNG CLIFFORD, his Son,**  
**EARL OF SALISBURY,**  
**EARL OF WARWICK,**  
**LORD SCALES, Governor of the Tower.**  
**LORD SAY.**  
**SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD, and his Brother.**  
**SIR JOHN STANLEY.**  
**A SEA-CAPTAIN, MASTER, MASTER'S MATE, and**  
**WALTER WHITMORE.**  
**TWO GENTLEMEN, Prisoners with Suffolk.**  
**A HERALD.—VAUX.**  
**HUME and SOUTHWELL, two Priests.**

*} Of the King's  
Party.*

*} Of the York Faction.*

**BOLINGBROKE, a Conjuror.**  
**A SPIRIT raised by Bolingbroke.**  
**THOMAS HORNER, an Armourer.**  
**PETER, his Man.**  
**CLERK OF CHATHAM.**  
**MAYOR OF SAINT ALBAN'S.**  
**SIMPCOX, an Impostor.**  
**TWO MURDERERS.**  
**JACK CADE, a Rebel.**  
**GEORGE, JOHN, DICK, SMITH, the Waiter,**  
**MICHAEL, &c. his Followers.**  
**ALEXANDER IDEN, a Kentish Gentleman.**

**MARGARET, Queen to King Henry.**  
**ELEANOR Duchess of Gloster.**  
**MARGERY JOURDAIN, a Witch.**  
**WIFE TO SIMPCOX.**

*Lords, Ladies, and Attendants; Petitioners,  
Aldermen, a Beadle, Sheriff, and Officers;  
Citizens, Prentices, Falconers, Guards,  
Soldiers, Messengers, &c.*

SCENE, dispersedly in various parts of England.

### ACT I.

**SCENE I.—London.—A Room of State in the Palace.**

*Flourish of Trumpets: then Hautboys. Enter, on one side, King HENRY, Duke of GLOSTER, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and Cardinal BEAUFORT; on the other, Queen MARGARET, led in by SUFFOLK; YORK, SOMERSET, BUCKINGHAM, and others, following.*

*Suf.* As by your high imperial majesty,  
I had in charge at my depart for France,  
As procurator to your excellence,  
To marry princess Margaret for your grace;  
So, in the famous ancient city, Tours,  
In presence of the kings of France and Sicil,  
The dukes of Orleans, Calaber, Bretaigne, and  
Alençon, *[bishops]*  
Seven earls, twelve barons, twenty reverend

I have perform'd my task, and was espous'd:  
And humbly now upon my bended knee,  
In sight of England and her lordly peers,  
Deliver up my title in the queen  
To your most gracious hands, that are the substance  
Of that great shadow I did represent;  
The happiest gift that ever marquiss gave,  
The fairest queen that ever king receiv'd.  
*K. Hen.* Suffolk, arise.—Welcome, queen  
Margaret:  
I can express no kinder sign of love,  
Than this kind kiss.—O Lord, that lends me  
life,  
Lend me a heart replete with thankfulness!  
For thou hast given me, in this beauteous  
face,  
A world of earthly blessings to my soul,  
If sympathy of love unite our thoughts.  
*Q. Mar.* Great king of England, and my  
gracious lord;

The mutual conference that my mind hath had \*

By day, by night, waking, and in my dreams,  
In courtly company, or at my beads,  
With you mine alder-liest† sovereign,  
Makes me the bolder to salute my king  
With ruder terms; such as my wit affords,  
And over-joy of heart doth minister.

*K. Hen.* Her sight did ravish: but her grace  
in speech,  
Her words y-clad with wisdom's majesty,  
Makes me, from wondering fall to weeping  
joys,  
Such is the fulness of my heart's content.—  
Lords, with one cheerful voice, welcome my  
love.

*All.* Long live queen Margaret, England's  
happiness!

*Q. Mar.* We thank you all. [*Flourish.*]

*Suf.* My lord protector, so it please your  
grace,

Here are the articles of contracted peace,  
Between our sovereign and the French king  
Charles,

For eighteen months concluded by consent.

*Glo.* [*Reads.*] Imprimis, *It is agreed be-  
tween the French King, Charles, and Wil-  
liam de la Poole, marquis of Suffolk, ambas-  
sador for Henry king of England, that the  
said Henry shall espouse the lady Margaret,  
daughter unto Reignier king of Naples, Si-  
cilia, and Jerusalem; and crown her queen  
of England, ere the thirtieth of May next  
ensuing.*—Item,—*That the dutchy of Anjou  
and the county of Maine, shall be released  
and delivered to the king her father—*

*K. Hen.* Uncle, how now?

*Glo.* Pardon me, gracious lord;  
Some sudden qualm hath struck me at the  
heart,

And dimm'd mine eyes, that I can read no  
further.

*K. Hen.* Uncle of Winchester, I pray, read  
on.

*Win.* Item,—*It is further agreed between  
them, that the dutchies of Anjou and Maine  
shall be released and delivered over to the  
king her father; and she sent over of the king  
of England's own proper cost and charges,  
without having dowry.*

*K. Hen.* They please us well.—Lord mar-  
quis, kneel down;

We here create thee the first duke of Suffolk,  
And girt thee with the sword.

Cousin of York, we here discharge your grace  
From being regent in the parts of France,  
Till term of eighteen months be full expir'd.  
Thaunks, uncle Winchester, Gloster, York, and  
Buckingham,

Somerset, Salisbury, and Warwick:  
We thank you all for this great favour done,  
In entertainment to my princely queen.  
Come, let us in; and with all speed provide  
To see her coronation be perform'd.

[*Exeunt KING, QUEEN, and SUFFOLK.*]

*Glo.* Brave peers of England, pillars of the  
state,

To you duke Humphrey must unload his grief,  
Your grief, the common grief of all the land.  
What I did my brother Henry spend his youth,  
His valour, coin, and people, in the wars?  
Did he so often lodge in open field,  
In winter's cold, and summer's parching heat,  
To conquer France, his true inheritance?  
And did my brother Bedford toil his wits,  
To keep by policy what Henry got?  
Have you yourselves, Somerset, Buckingham,  
Brave York, Salisbury, and victorious War-  
wick,  
Receiv'd deep scars in France and Normandy?

\* I am the bolder to address you, having already fa-  
miliarized you to my imagination.  
† Released above all things.

Or hath my uncle Beaufort, and myself,  
With all the learned council of the realm,  
Studied so long, sat in the council-house,  
Early and late, debating to and fro  
How France and Frenchmen might be kept  
in awe?

And hath his highness in his infancy  
Been crown'd in Paris, in despite of foes?  
And shall these labours, and these honours,  
die?

Shall Henry's conquest, Bedford's vigilance,  
Your deeds of war, and all our counsel, die?  
O peers of England, shameful is this league!  
Fatal this marriage, cancelling your fame;  
Blotting your names from books of memory;  
Razing the characters of your renown;  
Defacing monuments of conquer'd France;  
Undoing all, as all had never been!

*Car.* Nephew, what means this passionate dis-  
course?

This peroration with such circumstance? \*

For France, 'tis our's: and we will keep it still.

*Glo.* Ay, uncle, we will keep it, if we can;  
But now it is impossible we should:  
Suffolk, the new-made duke that rules the  
roast,

Hath given the dutchies of Anjou and Maine  
Unto the poor king Reignier, whose large style  
Agrees not with the leanness of his purse.

*Sal.* Now, by the death of him that died for  
all,

These counties were the keys of Normandy:—  
But wherefore weeps Warwick, my valiant  
son?

*War.* For grief, that they are past recovery:  
For, were there hope to conquer them again,  
My sword should shed hot blood, mine eyes lo  
tears.

Anjou and Maine I myself did win them both;  
Those provinces these arms of mine did con-  
quer:

And are the cities, that I got with wounds,

Deliver'd up again with peaceful words?

Mort Dieu!

*York.* For Suffolk's duke—may he be suffo-  
cate,

That dims the honour of this warlike isle!  
France should have torn and rent my very  
heart,

Before I would have yielded to this league.  
I never read but England's kings have had  
Large sums of gold, and dowries, with their  
wives:

And our king Henry gives away his own,

To match with her that brings no vantages.

*Glo.* A proper jest, and never heard before,  
That Suffolk should demand a whole fifteenth,  
For costs and charges in transporting her!  
She should have staid in France, and starv'd in  
France,

Before—

*Car.* My lord of Gloster, now you grow too  
hot;

It was the pleasure of my lord the king.

*Glo.* My lord of Winchester, I know your  
mind;

'Tis not my speeches that you do mislike,  
But 'tis my presence that doth trouble you.  
Rancour will out: Proud prelate, in thy face  
I see thy fury: if I longer stay,  
We shall begin our ancient bickerings.—  
Lordings, farewell; and say, when I am gone,  
I prophesied—France will be lost ere long.

[*Exit.*]

*Car.* So, there goes our protector in a rage.

'Tis known to you he is mine enemy:

Nay, more, an enemy unto you all;

And no great friend, I fear me, to the king.

Consider, lords, he is the next of blood,

And heir apparent to the English crown;

Had Henry got an empire by his marriage,

\* This speech crowded with so many circumstances of  
aggravation.  
† Skirmishings.

And all the wealthy kingdoms of the west,  
There's reason he should be displeas'd at it.  
Look to it, lords: let not his smoothing words  
Bewitch your hearts: be wise, and circumspect.

What though the common people favour him,  
Calling him—*Humphrey, the good duke of Gloster*;  
Clapping their hands, and crying with loud voice—

*Jesu maintain your royal excellence!*  
With—*God preserve the good duke Humphrey!*

I fear me, lords, for all this flattering gloss,  
He will be found a dangerous protector.

*Buck.* Why should he then protect our sovereign,

He being of age to govern of himself?—  
Cousin of Somerset, join you with me,  
And all together, with the duke of Suffolk,  
We'll quickly hoise duke Humphrey from his seat.

*Car.* This weighty business will not brook delay;

I'll to the duke of Suffolk presently. [*Exit.*  
*Som.* Cousin of Buckingham, though Humphrey's pride,

And greatness of his place be grief to us,  
Yet let us watch the haughty cardinal;  
His insolence is more intolerable  
Than all the princes in the land beside;

If Gloster be displac'd, he'll be protector.

*Buck.* Or thou, or I, Somerset, will be protector,

Despight duke Humphrey, or the cardinal.

[*Exeunt BUCKINGHAM and SOMERSET.*  
*Sal.* Pride went before, ambition follows him.

While these do labour for their own preferment,

Behoves it us to labour for the realm.  
I never saw but Humphrey duke of Gloster  
Did bear him like a noble gentleman.  
Oft have I seen the haughty cardinal,  
More like a soldier than a man o'the church,  
As stout, and proud as he were lord of all,  
Swear like a ruffian, and demean himself  
Unlike the ruler of a common-weal.—

Warwick, my son, the comfort of my age!  
Thy deeds, thy plainness, and thy house-keeping,  
Hath won the greatest favour of the commons,  
Excepting none but good duke Humphrey.—  
And, brother York, thy acts in Ireland,  
In bringing them to civil discipline;  
Thy late exploits, done in the heart of France,  
When thou wert regent for our sovereign,  
Have made thee fear'd and honour'd of the people:—

Join we together for the public good:  
In what we can to bridle and suppress  
The pride of Suffolk and the cardinal,  
With Somerset's and Buckingham's ambition;  
And, as we may, cherish duke Humphrey's deeds,

While they do tend the profit of the land.  
*War.* So God help Warwick, as he loves the land,

And common profit of his country!  
*York.* And so says York, for he hath greatest cause.

*Sal.* Then let's make haste away, and look unto the main.

*War.* Unto the main! O father, Maine is lost;

That Maine, which by main force, Warwick did win,

And would have kept, so long as breath did last:

Main chance, father, you meant; but I meant Maine;

Which I will win from France, or else be slain.

[*Exeunt WARWICK and SALISBURY.*  
*York.* Anjou and Maine are given to the French;

Paris is lost; the state of Normandy  
Stands on a tickle\* point, now they are gone:  
Suffolk concluded on the articles:  
The peers agreed; and Henry was well pleas'd,  
To change two dukedoms for a duke's fair daughter.

I cannot blame them all; what is't to them?  
'Tis thine they give away, and not their own.  
Pirates may make cheap pennyworths of their pillage,

And purchase friends, and give to courtezans,  
Still revelling, like lords, till all be gone:  
While as the silly owner of the goods  
Weeps over them, and wrings his hapless hands,

And shakes his head, and trembling stands aloof,

While all is shar'd, and all is borne away;  
Ready to starve, and dare not touch his own.  
So York must sit, and fret, and bite his tongue,  
While his own lands are bargain'd for and sold. [*Ireland.*

Metinks, the realms of England, France, and  
Bear that proportion to my flesh and blood,  
As did the fatal brand Althea burn'd,  
Unto the prince's heart of Calydon.†  
Anjou and Maine, both given unto the French!  
Cold news for me; for I had hope of France,  
Even as I have of fertile England's soil.

A day will come, when York shall claim his own;

And therefore I will take the Nevil's parts,  
And make a show of love to proud duke Humphrey,

And, when I spy advantage, claim the crown;

For that's the golden mark I seek to hit:  
Nor shall proud Lancaster usurp my right,  
Nor hold the sceptre in his childish fist,  
Nor wear the diadem upon his head,  
Whose church-like humours fit not for a crown.  
Then, York, be still awhile, till time do serve:  
Watch thou, and wake, when others be asleep,  
To pry into the secrets of the state:  
Till Henry, surfeiting in joys of love,  
With his new bride, and England's dear-bought queen,

And Humphrey with the peers be fall'n at jars:

Then will I raise aloft the milk-white rose,  
With whose sweet smell the air shall be perfum'd;

And in my standard bear the arms of York.  
To grapple with the house of Lancaster,  
And, force perforce, I'll make him yield the crown,  
Whose bookish rule hath pull'd fair England down. [*Exit.*

SCENE II.—*The same.*—*A Room in the Duke of GLOSTER's House.*

*Enter GLOSTER and the DUCHESS.*

*Duch.* Why droops my lord, like over-ripen'd corn,

Hanging the head at Ceres' plementous load?  
Why doth the great duke Humphrey knit his brows,

As frowning at the favours of the world?  
Why are thine eyes fix'd to the sullen earth,  
Gazing on that which seems to dim thy sight?  
What see'st thou there? king Henry's diadem,  
Enchas'd with all the honours of the world?  
If so, gaze on, and grovel on thy face,  
Until thy head be circled with the same.  
Put forth thy hand, reach at the glorious gold:—

What, is't too short? I'll lengthen it with mine:  
And, having both together heav'd it up,  
We'll both together lift our heads to heaven;

\* For ticklish.

† Malenger; whose life was to continue only so long as a certain firebrand should last. His mother Althea having thrown it into the fire, he expired in torment.

And never more abase our sight so low,  
As to vouchsafe one glance unto the ground.

*Glo.* O Nell, sweet Nell, if thou dost love thy lord,  
Banish the canker of ambitious thoughts :  
And may that thought, when I imagine ill  
Against my king and nephew, virtuous Henry,  
Be my last breathing in this mortal world !  
My troublous dream this night doth make me sad.

*Duch.* What dream'd my lord ? tell me, and I'll requite it  
With sweet rehearsal of my morning's dream.

*Glo.* Methought this staff, mine office-badge in court,  
Was broke in twain, by whom, I have forgot,  
But, as I think, it was by the cardinal ;  
And on the pieces of the broken wand  
Were plac'd the heads of Edmund duke of Somerset,

And William de la Poole first duke of Suffolk.  
This was my dream ; what it doth bode, God knows.

*Duch.* Tut, this was nothing but an argument,  
That he that breaks a stick of Gloster's grove,  
Shall lose his head for his presumption.  
But list to me, my Humphrey, my sweet duke :  
Methought, I sat in seat of majesty,  
In the cathedral church of Westminster,  
And in that chair where kings and queens are crown'd :  
Where Henry, and dame Margaret, kneel'd to me,  
And on my head did set the diadem.

*Glo.* Nay, Eleanor, then must I chide outright :  
Presumptuous dame, ill-natur'd \* Eleanor !  
Art thou not second woman in the realm ;  
And the protector's wife, below'd of him ?  
Hast thou not worldly pleasure at command,  
Above the reach or compass of thy thought ?  
And wilt thou still be hammering treachery,  
To tumble down thy husband, and thyself,  
From top of honour to disgrace's feet ?  
Away from me, and let me hear no more.

*Duch.* What, what, my lord ! are you so choleric

With Eleanor, for telling but her dream ?  
Next time, I'll keep my dreams unto myself,  
And not be check'd.

*Glo.* Nay, be not angry, I am pleas'd again.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* My lord protector, 'tis his highness' pleasure,  
You do prepare to ride unto Saint Alban's,  
Whereas † the king and queen do mean to hawk.

*Glo.* I go.—Come, Nell, thou wilt ride with us ?

*Duch.* Yes, good my lord, I'll follow presently.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and MESSENGER.*  
Follow I must, I cannot go before,  
While Gloster bears this base and humble mind.

Were I a man, a duke, and next of blood,  
I would remove these tedious stumbling-blocks,  
And smooth my way upon their headless necks :

And, being a woman, I will not be slack  
To play my part in fortune's pageant.  
Where are you there ? Sir John ! ‡ nay, fear not, man,  
We are alone ; here none but thee, and I.

*Enter HUME.*

*Hume.* Jesu preserve your royal majesty !

*Duch.* What say'st thou, majesty ! I am but grace.

*Hume.* But, by the grace of God, and Hume's advice,

Your grace's title shall be multiplied.

*Duch.* What say'st thou, man ? hast thou as yet confer'd

With Margery Jourdain, the cunning witch ;  
And Roger Bolingbroke, the conjurer ?  
And will they undertake to do me good ?

*Hume.* They they have promised,—to show your highness

A spirit rais'd from depth of under ground,  
That shall make answer to such questions,  
As by your grace shall be propounded him

*Duch.* It is enough ; I'll think upon the questions :

When from Saint Alban's we do make return  
We'll see these things effected to the full.

Here, Hume, take this reward ; make merry, man,

With thy confederates in this weighty cause.

[*Exit DUCHESS.*

*Hume.* Hume must make merry with the duchess' gold ;

Marry, and shall. But how now, Sir John Hume ?

Seal up your lips and give no words but—mum !

The business asketh silent secrecy.

Dame Eleanor gives gold, to bring the witch :  
Gold cannot come amiss, were she a devil.

Yet have I gold, flies from another coast :  
I dare not say, from the rich cardinal,

And from the great and new-made duke of Suffolk ;

Yet I do find it so : for, to be plain,  
They, knowing dame Eleauor's aspiring humour,

Have hired me to undermine the duchess,  
And buz these conjurations in her brain.

They say, a crafty knave does need no broker ;  
Yet am I Suffolk and the cardinal's broker.

Hume, if you take not heed, you shall go near  
To call them both—a pair of crafty knaves,

Well, so it stands : And thus, I fear, at last,  
Hume's knavery will be the duchess' wreck ;

And her attainure will be Humphrey's fall :  
Sort how it will, \* I shall have gold for all.

[*Exit.*

SCENE III.—The same.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter PETER, and others, with Petitions.*

1 *Pet.* My masters, let's stand close ; my lord protector will come this way by and by, and then we may deliver our supplications in the quill. †

2 *Pet.* Marry, the Lord protect him, for he's a good man ! Jesu bless him !

*Enter SUFFOLK and Queen MARGARET.*

1 *Pet.* Here 'a comes, methinks, and the queen with him : I'll be the first, sure.

2 *Pet.* Come back, fool : this is the duke of Suffolk, and not my lord protector.

*Suf.* How now, fellow ? would'st any thing with me ?

1 *Pet.* I pray, my lord, pardon me ! I took ye for my lord protector.

*Q. Mar.* [Reading the superscription.] To my lord protector ! are your supplications to his lordship ? Let me see them : What is this ?

1 *Pet.* Mine is, an't please your grace, against John Goodman, my lord cardinal's man, for keeping my house, and lands, and wife, and all, from me.

*Suf.* Thy wife too ? that is some wrong, indeed.—What's your's ?—What's here ! [Reads.] Against the duke of Suffolk for enclosing the commons of Hedeford.—How now, sir knave ?

\* Ill-educated.

† For where.

‡ A title frequently bestowed on the clergy.

\* Let the issue be what it will.

† With great exactness and observance of form.

**Pet.** Alas, Sir, I am but a poor petitioner of our whole township.

**Peter.** [*Presenting his Petition.*] Against my master, Thomas Horner, for saying, That the duke of York was rightful heir to the crown.

**Q. Mar.** What say'st thou? Did the duke of York say he was rightful heir to the crown?

**Peter.** That my master was? No, forsooth: my master said, That he was; and that the king was an usurper.

**Suf.** Who is there? [*Enter Servants.*]—Take this fellow in, and send for his master with a pursuivant presently:—we'll hear more of your matter before the king.

[*Exeunt Servants with PETER.*]

**Q. Mar.** And as for you, that love to be protected

Under the wings of our protector's grace,  
Begin your suits anew, and sue to him.

[*Tears the Petition.*]

Away, base cullions!—Suffolk, let them go.

**All.** Come, let's be gone.

[*Exeunt PETITIONERS.*]

**Q. Mar.** My lord of Suffolk, say, is this the guise,

Is this the fashion in the court of England?

Is this the government of Britain's isle,

And this the royalty of Albion's king?

What, shall king Henry be a pupil still,

Under the surly Gloster's governance?

Am I a queen in title, and in style,

And must be made a subject to a duke?

I tell thee, Poole, when in the city Tours

Thou ran'st a tilt in honour of my love,

And stol'st away the ladies' hearts of France;

I thought king Henry had resembled thee,

In courage, courtship, and proportion:

But all his mind is bent to holiness,

To number *Axe-Maries* on his beads:

His champions are the prophets and apostles;

His weapons, holy saws of sacred writ;

His study is his tilt-yard, and his loves

Are brazen images of canoniz'd saints.

I would the college of cardinals

Would choose him pope, and carry him to

Rome,

And set the triple crown upon his head;

That were a state fit for his holiness.

**Suf.** Madam, be patient: as I was cause

Your highness came to England, so will I

In England work your grace's full content.

**Q. Mar.** Beside the haught protector, have

we Beaufort,

The imperious churchman; Somerset, Buck-

ingham,

And grumbling York: and not the least of

these,

But can do more in England than the king.

**Suf.** And he of these that can do most of

all,

Cannot do more in England than the Nevils:

Salisbury and Warwick are no simple peers.

**Q. Mar.** Not all these lords do vex me half

so much.

As that proud dame, the lord protector's wife.

She sweeps it through the court with troops of

ladies,

More like an empress than duke Humphrey's

wife;

Strangers in court do take her for the queen;

She bears a duke's revenues on her back,

And in her heart she scorns her poverty:

Shall I not live to be aveng'd on her?

Contemptuous base-born callat! as she is,

She vaunted 'mongst her minions t'other day,

The very train of her worst wearing-gown

Was better worth than all my father's lands,

Till Suffolk gave two dukedoms for his daughter.

**Suf.** Madam, myself have lim'd a bush for

her;

And plac'd a quire of such enticing birds,  
That she will light to listen to the lays,  
And never mount to trouble you again.

So, let her rest: And, madam, list to me;  
For I am bold to counsel you in this.

Although we fancy not the cardinal,  
Yet must we join with him, and with the lords,  
Till we have brought duke Humphrey in disgrace.

As for the duke of York,—this late complaint  
Will make but little for his benefit:  
So, one by one, we'll weed them all at last,  
And you yourself shall steer the happy helm.

**Enter King HENRY, YORK, and SOMERSET**  
*conversing with him; Duke and Duchess*  
*of GLOSTER, Cardinal BEAUFORT, BUCKING-*  
*HAM, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.*

**K. Hen.** For my part, noble lords, I care  
not which:

Or Somerset or York, all's one to me.

**York.** If York have ill demean'd himself in  
France,

Then let him be deny'd the regentship.

**Som.** If Somerset be unworthy of the place,  
Let York be regent, I will yield to him.

**War.** Whether your grace be worthy, yea  
or no,

Dispute not that: York is the worthier.

**Car.** Ambitious Warwick, let thy betters  
speak.

**War.** The cardinal's not my better in the  
field.

**Buck.** All in this presence are thy betters,  
Warwick.

**War.** Warwick may live to be the best of  
all.

**Sal.** Peace, son;—and show some reason,  
Buckingham,

Why Somerset should be preferr'd in this.

**Q. Mar.** Because the king, forsooth, will have  
it so.

**Glo.** Madam, the king is old enough himself  
To give his censure: these are no women's  
matters.

**Q. Mar.** If he be old enough, what needs  
your grace

To be protector of his excellence?

**Glo.** Madam, I am protector of the realm;

And, at his pleasure, will resign my place.

**Suf.** Resign it then, and leave thine insolence.

Since thou wert king, (as who is king, but  
thou?)

The commonwealth hath daily run to wreck:

The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the seas;  
And all the peers and nobles of the realm

Have been as bondmen to thy sovereignty.

**Car.** The commons hast thou rack'd; the  
clergy's bags

Are lank and lean with thy extortions.

**Som.** Thy sumptuous buildings, and thy wife's  
attire,

Have cost a mass of public treasury.

**Buck.** Thy cruelty in execution,  
Upon offenders, hath exceeded law,

And left thee to the mercy of the law.

**Q. Mar.** Thy sale of offices, and towns in  
France,

If they were known, as the suspect is great,  
Would make thee quickly hop without thy  
head.

[*Exit GLOSTER. The Queen drops her Fan.*  
Give me my fan; What, minion! can you not

[*Gives the DUCHESS a box on the Ear*  
I cry you mercy, madam; Was it you?

**Duch.** Was't I? yea, I it was, proud French  
woman:

Could I come near your beauty with my nails,  
I'd set my ten commandments in your face. §

\* I. e. The complaint of Peter the armourer's man  
against his master.

† Deny is frequently  
used instead of deny among the old writers.

‡ Censure here means simply judgment or opinion.

§ The marks of her fingers and thumbs.

† Sayings.

\* Secondale.

‡ Drab, troll,

*K. Hen.* Sweet aunt, be quiet; 'twas against her will.

*Duch.* Against her will! Good king, look to't in time;

She'll hamper thee, and dandle thee like a baby;

Though in this place most master wear no breeches,

She shall not strike dame Eleanor unreveng'd.

[*Exit DUCHESS.*]

*Buck.* Lord cardinal, I will follow Eleanor, And listen after Humphrey, how he proceeds:

She's tickled now; her fume can need no spurs,

She'll gallop fast enough to her destruction.

[*Exit BUCKINGHAM.*]

*Re-enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Now, lords, my choler being over-blown, With walking once about the quadrangle I come to talk of commonwealth affairs.

As for your spiteful false objections, Prove them, and I lie open to the law:

But God in mercy so deal with my soul, As I in duty love my king and country!

But, to the matter that we have in hand:— I say, my sovereign, York is meekest man

To be your regent in the realm of France.

*Suf.* Before we make election, give me leave To show some reason, of no little force,

That York is most unmeet of any man.

*York.* I'll tell thee, Suffolk, why I am unmeet.

First, for I cannot flatter thee in pride:

Next, if I be appointed for the place, My lord of Somerset will keep me here,

Without discharge, money, or furniture, Till France be won into the Dauphin's hands.

Last time, I danc'd attendance on his will, Till Paris was besieg'd, famish'd, and lost.

*War.* That I can witness; and a fouler fact Did never traitor in the land commit.

*Suf.* Peace, head-strong Warwick!

*War.* Image of pride, why should I hold my peace?

*Enter Servants of SUFFOLK, bringing in HORNER and PETER.*

*Suf.* Because there is a man accus'd of treason;

Pray God, the duke of York excuse himself!

*York.* Doth any one accuse York for a traitor?

*K. Hen.* What mean'st thou, Suffolk? tell me: What are these?

*Suf.* Please it your majesty, this is the man That doth accuse his master of high treason:

His words were these;—that Richard, duke of York,

Was rightful heir unto the English crown; And that your majesty was an usurper.

*K. Hen.* Say, man, were these thy words?

*Hor.* An't shall please your majesty, I never said nor thought any such matter: God is my witness, I am falsely accused by the villain.

*Pet.* By these ten bones, my lords, [*Holding up his hands.*] he did speak them to me in the garret one night, as we were scouring my lord of York's armour.

*York.* Base dunghill villain, and mechanical,

I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's speech:— I do beseech your royal majesty,

Let him have all the rigour of the law.

*Hor.* Alas, my lord, hang me, if ever I spake the words. My accuser is his prentice; and when I did correct him for his fault the other day, he did vow upon his knees he would be even with me: I have good witness of this; therefore, I beseech your majesty, do not cast away an honest man for a villain's accusation.

*K. Hen.* Uncle, what shall we say to this in law?

*Glo.* This doom, my lord, if I may judge.

Let Somerset be regent o'er the French, Because in York this breeds suspicion: And let these have a day appointed them For single combat in convenient place; For he hath witness of his servant's malice: This is the law, and this duke Humphrey's doom.

*K. Hen.* Then be it so. My lord of Somerset,

We make your grace lord regent o'er the French.

*Som.* I humbly thank your royal majesty.

*Hor.* And I accept the combat willingly.

*Pet.* Alas, my lord, I cannot fight; for God's sake, pity my case! the spite of man prevaileth against me. O Lord, have mercy upon me! I shall never be able to fight a blow: O Lord, my heart!

*Glo.* Sirrah, or you must fight, or else be hang'd.

*K. Hen.* Away with them to prison: and the day

Of combat shall be the last of the next month.

Come, Somerset, we'll see thee sent away.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same.*—*The duke of GLOSTER's Garden.*

*Enter MARGERY JOURDAIN, HUMME, SOUTHWELL, and BOLINGBROKE.*

*Hume.* Come, my masters; the duchess, I tell you, expects performance of your promises.

*Boling.* Master Hume, we are therefore provided: Will her ladyship behold and hear our exorcisms? \*

*Hume.* Ay; What else? fear you not her courage?

*Boling.* I have heard her reported to be a woman of an invincible spirit: But it shall be convenient, master Hume, that you be by her aloft,

while we be busy below; and so, I pray you, go in God's name, and leave us. [*Exit HUMME.*]

Mother Jourdain, be you prostrate, and grovel on the earth:—John Southwell, read you; and let us to our work.

*Enter DUCHESS, above.*

*Duch.* Well said, my masters; and welcome all. To this gear: † the sooner the better.

*Boling.* Patience, good lady; wizards know their times:

Deep night, dark night, the silent of the night, The time of night when Troy was set on fire;

The time when screech-owls cry, and bandogs ‡ howl,

And spirits walk, and ghosts break up their graves,

That time best fits the work we have in hand.

Madam, sit you, and fear not; whom we raise,

We will make fast within a ballow'd verge.

[*Here they perform the Ceremonies appertaining, and make the Circle; BOLINGBROKE, or SOUTHWELL, reads, Conjuro te, &c. It thunders and lightens terribly; then the SPIRIT riseth.*]

*Spir.* Adsum.

*M. Jourd.* Asmath,

By the eternal God, whose name and power Thou tremblest at, answer that I shall ask;

For, till thou speak, thou shalt not pass from hence.

*Spir.* Ask what thou wilt:—That I had said and done!

*Boling.* First, of the king. What shall of him become?

[*Reading out of a Paper.*]

\* By exorcise Shakespeare invariably means to raise spirits, and not to lay them.

† Matter or business.

‡ Village dogs.

*Spir.* The duke yet lives, that Henry shall depose;  
But him outlive, and die a violent death.

[*As the SPIRIT speaks, SOUTHWELL writes the answer.*]

*Boling.* What fate awaits the duke of Suffolk?

*Spir.* By water shall he die, and take his end.

*Boling.* What shall befall the duke of Somerset?

*Spir.* Let him shun castles;  
Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains.

Than where castles mounted stand.  
Have done, for more I hardly can endure.

*Boling.* Descend to darkness, and the burning lake:

False fiend, avoid!

[*Thunder and Lightning. SPIRIT descends.*]

*Enter YORK and BUCKINGHAM, hastily, with their Guards, and others.*

*York.* Lay hands upon these traitors, and their trash.

Beldame, I think, we watch'd you at an inch.—  
What, madam, are you there? the king and commonweal

Are deeply indebted for this piece of pains;  
My lord protector will, I doubt it not,

See you well gue'dou'd† for these good deserts.

*Duch.* Not half so bad as thine to England's king,

Injurious duke: that threat'st where is no cause.

*Buck.* True, madam, none at all. What call you this? [*Showing her the papers.*]

Away with them; let them be clapp'd up close,  
And kept asunder.—You, madam, shall with us:

Stafford, take her to thee,—

[*Exit DUCHESSES from above.*]

We'll see your trinkets here all forth-coming;  
All.—Away!

[*Exeunt Guards, with SOUTH BOLING. &c.*]

*Lord Buckingham*, methinks, you watch'd her well:

A pretty plot, well chosen to build upon!  
Now, pray, my lord, let's see the devil's writ.

What have we here? [*Reads.*]

*The duke yet lives, that Henry shall depose;*

*But him outlive, and die a violent death.*

Why, this is just,  
*Aio te, Æacida, Romanos vincere posse.*

Well, to the rest:  
Tell me what fate awaits the duke of Suffolk?

*By water shall he die, and take his end.—*

*What shall betide the duke of Somerset?*

*Let him shun castles;*

*Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains,*

*Than where castles mounted stand.*

Come, come, my lords;  
These oracles are hardly attain'd,

And hardly understood.  
The king is now in progress toward Saint Alban's.

With him, the husband of this lovely lady:  
Thither go these news, as fast as horse can carry them:

A sorry breakfast for my lord protector.

*Buck.* Your grace shall give me leave, my lord of York,

To be the post, in hope of his reward.  
*York.* At your pleasure, my good lord.—  
Who's within there, ho!

*Enter a SERVANT.*

Invite my lords of Salisbury and Warwick,  
To sup with me to-morrow night.—Away!

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Rewarded.

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—Saint Alban's.

*Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, GLOSTER, CARDINAL, and SUFFOLK, with Falconers, hollaring.*

*Q. Mar.* Believe me, lords, for flying at the brook,\*

I saw not better sport these seven years' day.  
Yet, by your leave the wind was very high;

And, ten to one, old Joan had not gone out.

*K. Hen.* But what a point, my lord, your falcon made,

And what a pitch she flew above the rest!—

To see how God in all his creatures works!  
Yea, man and birds, are faint of climbing high.

*Suf.* No, marvel, an it like your majesty,  
My lord protector's hawks do tower so well;

They know their master loves to be aloft,  
And bears his thoughts above his falcon's pitch.

*Glo.* My lord, 'tis but a base ignoble mind  
That mounts no higher than a bird can soar.

*Car.* I thought as much; he'd be above the clouds.

*Glo.* Ay, my lord cardinal; How think you by that?

Were it not good, your grace could fly to heaven?

*K. Hen.* The treasury of everlasting joy!

*Car.* Thy heaven is on earth: thine eyes and thoughts

Beat on a crown,† the treasure of thy heart;  
Pernicious protector, dangerous peer,

That smooth'st it so with king and commonweal!

*Glo.* What, cardinal, is your priesthood grown peremptory?

*Tantane animis caelestibus tre?*

Churchmen so hot? good uncle, hide such malice.

With such holiness can you do it?

*Suf.* No malice, Sir; no more than well becomes

So good a quarrel, and so bad a peer.

*Glo.* As who, my lord?

*Suf.* Why, as you, my lord;

An't like your lordly lord-protectorship.

*Glo.* Why, Suffolk, England knows thine insolence.

*Q. Mar.* And thy ambition, Gloster.

*K. Hen.* I pry'thee, peace,  
Good queen and whet not on these furious peers,

For blessed are the peacemakers on earth.

*Car.* Let me be blessed for the peace I make,

Against this proud protector, with my sword!

*Glo.* 'Faith, holy uncle, 'would 'twere come to that!

[*Aside to the CARDINAL.*]

*Car.* Marry, when thou dar'st.

*Glo.* Make up no factious numbers for the matter,

In thine own person answer thy abuse.

[*Aside.*]

*Car.* Ay, where thou dar'st not peep: an if thou dar'st,

This evening on the east side of the grove.

[*Aside.*]

*K. Hen.* How now, my lords?

*Car.* Believe me, cousin Gloster,  
Had not your man put up the fowl so suddenly,  
We had had more sport.—Come with thy two-hand sword.

[*Aside to GLO.*]

\* The falconer's term for hawking at water fowl.

† Fond.

‡ I.e. Thy mind is working on a crown.

Now, by God's mother, priest, I'll shave your crown for this,  
Or all my fence \* shall fall. [Aside.  
*Car. Medice tripsum;*  
Protectoi, see to't well, protect yourself.

*K. Hen.* The winds grow high; so do your stomachs, lords.  
How iksome is this music to my heart!  
When such strings jai, what hope of harmony?  
I pray, my lords, let me compound this strife.

*Enter an INHABITANT of Saint Alban's crying, A Miracle!*

*Glo.* What means this noise?  
Fellow, what miracle dost thou proclaim?  
*Inhab.* A miracle! a miracle!  
*Suf.* Come to the king, and tell him what miracle.  
*Inhab.* Forsooth, a blind man at Saint Alban's shrine.

Within this half hour hath receiv'd his sight:  
A man that ne'er saw in his life before.  
*K. Hen.* Now, God be prais'd! that to believing souls  
Gives light in darkness comfort in despair!

*Enter the MAYOR of Saint Alban's, and his Brethren; and SIMPCOX, borne between two persons in a Chair; his Wife, and a great multitude following.*

*Car.* Here come the townsmen on procession,  
To present your highness with the man.

*K. Hen.* Great is his comfort in this earthly vale,  
Although by his sight his sin be multiplied.

*Glo.* Stand by, my masters, bring him near the king,  
His highness' pleasure is to talk with him.

*K. Hen.* Good fellow, tell us here the circumstance,  
That we for thee may glorify the Lord.

What, hast thou been long blind, and now restor'd?

*Simp.* Born blind, an't please your grace.  
*Wife.* Ay, indeed, was he.

*Suf.* What woman is this?  
*Wife.* His wife, an't like your worship.

*Glo.* Had'st thou been his mother, thou could'st have better told.

*K. Hen.* Where wert thou born?  
*Simp.* At Berwick in the north, an't like your grace.

*K. Hen.* Poor soul! God's goodness hath been great to thee:  
Let never day nor night unballow'd pass,

But still remember what the Lord hath done.  
*Q. Mar.* Tell me, good fellow, can'st thou here by chance,

Or of devotion, to this holy shrine?  
*Simp.* God knows, of pure devotion; being call'd

A hundred times, and oftener, in my sleep by good Saint Alban; who said,—*Simpcox, come;*

*Come, offer at my shrine, and I will help thee.*

*Wife.* Most true, forsooth; and many time and oft

Myself have heard a voice to call him so.  
*Car.* What, art thou lame?

*Simp.* Ay, God Almighty help me!  
*Suf.* How can'st thou so?

*Simp.* A fall off a tree.  
*Wife.* A plum-tree, master.

*Glo.* How long hast thou been blind?  
*Simp.* Oh! born so, master.

*Glo.* What, and would'st climb a tree?  
*Simp.* But that in all my life, when I was a youth.

*Wife.* Too true; and bought his climbing very dear.

\* Fence is the art of defence.

*Glo.* 'Mass, thou lov'd'st plums well, that would'st venture so.

*Simp.* Alas, good master, my wife desir'd some damsons,

And made me climb, with danger of my life!  
*Glo.* A subtle knave! but yet it shall not serve.—

Let me see thine eyes:—wink now;—now open them:—

In my opinion yet thou see'st not well.  
*Simp.* Yes, master, clear as day; I thank God and Saint Alban.

*Glo.* Say'st thou me so? What colour is this cloak of?

*Simp.* Red, master; red as blood.  
*Glo.* Why, that's well said: What colour is my gown of?

*Simp.* Black, forsooth; coal-black, as jet.  
*K. Hen.* Why then, thou know'st what colour jet is of?

*Suf.* And yet, I think, jet did he never see.  
*Glo.* But cloaks and gowns before this day a many.

*Wife.* Never, before this day, in all his life.  
*Glo.* Tell me, sirrah, what's my name?

*Simp.* Alas, master, I know not.  
*Glo.* What's his name?

*Simp.* I know not.  
*Glo.* Nor his?

*Simp.* No, indeed, master.  
*Glo.* What's thine own name?

*Simp.* Saunder Simpcox, an if it please you, master.

*Glo.* Then, Saunder, sit thou there, the lyingest knave  
In Christendom. If thou hadst been born blind,

Thou might'st as well have known our names as thus  
To name the several colours we do wear.

Sight may distinguish of colours; but suddenly  
To nominate them all's impossible.—

My lords, Saint Alban here hath done a miracle;  
And would ye not think that cunning to be great,

That could restore this cripple to his legs?  
*Simp.* O master, that you could!

*Glo.* My masters of Saint Albans, have you not beades in your town, and things called whips?

*May.* Yes, my lord, if it please your grace.  
*Glo.* Then send for one presently.

*May.* Sirrah, go fetch the beadle lither straight.

[Exit an ATTENDANT.

*Glo.* Now fetch me a stool hither by and by.  
[A Stool brought out.] Now, sirrah, if you mean to save yourself from whipping, leap me over this stool, and run away.

*Simp.* Alas, master, I am not able to stand alone; You go about to torture me in vain.

Re-enter ATTENDANT, with the BEADLE.

*Glo.* Well, Sir, we must have you find your legs. Sirrah, beadle, whip him till he leap over that same stool.

*Bead.* I will, my lord.—Come on, sirrah; off with your doublet quickly.

*Simp.* Alas, master, what shall I do? I am not able to stand.

[After the BEADLE hath hit him once, he leaps over the Stool, and runs away; and the People follow and cry A miracle!

*K. Hen.* O God, see'st thou this, and bear'st so long!

*Q. Mar.* It made me laugh, to see the villain run.

*Glo.* Follow the knave; and take this drab away.

*Wife.* Alas, Sir, we did it for pure need.  
*Glo.* Let them be whipped through every market town till they come to Berwick, whence they came.

[Exitunt MAYOR, BEADLE, WIFE, &c.



*Car.* Duke Humphrey<sup>†</sup> has done a miracle to-day.

*Suf.* True; made the lame to leap, and fly away.

*Glo.* But you have done more miracles than I; You made, in a day, my lord, whole towns to fly.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*K. Hen.* What tidings with our cousin Buckingham?

*Buck.* Such as my heart doth tremble to unfold.

A sort<sup>\*</sup> of naughty persons, lewdly bent,  
Under the countenance and confederacy  
Of lady Eleanor, the protector's wife,  
The ringleader and head of all this rout,  
Have practis'd dangerously against your state,  
Dealing with witches, and with conjurers;  
Whom we have apprehended in the fact;  
Raising up wicked spirits from under ground,  
Demanding of King Henry's life and death,  
And other of your highness' privy council,  
As more at large your grace shall understand.

*Car.* And so, my lord protector, by this means

Your lady is forthcoming; yet at London,  
This news<sup>†</sup> I think, hath turn'd your weapon's edge;

'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your hour.  
[*Aside to GLOSTER.*]

*Glo.* Ambitious churchman, leave to afflict my heart!

Sorrow and grief have vanquish'd all my powers:

And, vanquish'd as I am, I yield to thee,  
Or to the meanest groom.

*K. Hen.* O God, what mischiefs work the wicked ones;

Heaping confusion on their own heads thereby!

*Q. Mar.* Gloster, see here the tainture of thy nest;

And look thyself be faultless, thou wert best.

*Glo.* Madam, for myself, to heaven I do appeal,

How I have lov'd my king and commonweal:  
And, for my wife, I know not how it stands;  
Sorry I am to hear what I have heard:  
Noble she is; but if she have forgot  
Honour and virtue, and convers'd with such  
As, like to pitch, defile nobility,  
I banish her, my bed and company;  
And give her, as a prey, to law and shame,  
That hath dishonour'd Gloster's honest name.

*K. Hen.* Well, for this night, we will repose us here:

To-morrow, toward London, back again,  
To look into this business thoroughly,  
And call these foul offenders to their answers;  
And poise<sup>‡</sup> the cause in justice' equal scales,  
Whose beam stands sure, whose rightful cause prevails.  
[*Flourish. Exit.*]

SCENE II.—London.—The Duke of York's Garden.

*Enter YORK, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.*

*York.* Now, my good lords of Salisbury and Warwick,

Our simple supper ended, give me leave,  
In this close walk, to satisfy myself,  
In craving your opinion of my title,  
Which is infallible to England's crown.

*Sal.* My lord, I long to hear it at full.

*War.* Sweet York, begin: and if thy claim be good,

The Netles are thy subjects to command.

*York.* Then thus:—

Edward the Third, my lords, had seven sons:  
The first Edward the Black Prince, prince of Wales;

The second, William of Hatfield; and the third, Lionel duke of Clarence; next to whom, Was John of Gaunt, the duke of Lancaster: The fifth, was Edmund Langley, duke of York; The sixth, was Thomas of Woodstock, duke of Gloucester;

William of Windsor was the seventh, and last. Edward, the Black Prince, died before his father;

And left behind him Richard, his only son, Who, after Edmund the Third's death, reign'd as king;

Till Henry Bolingbroke, duke of Lancaster, The eldest son and heir of John of Gaunt, Crown'd by the name of Henry the Fourth, Seiz'd on the realm; depos'd the rightful king; Sent his poor queen to France, from whence she came,

And him to Pomfret: where, as all you know, Harmless Richard was murder'd traitorously.

*War.* Father, the duke hath told the truth; Thus got the house of Lancaster the crown.

*York.* Which now they hold by force, and not by right;

For Richard, the first son's heir being dead, The issue of the next son should have reign'd.

*Sal.* But William of Hatfield died without an heir.

*York.* The third son, duke of Clarence, (from whose line

I claim the crown,) had issue—Philippe, a daughter,

Who married Edmund Mortimer, earl of March, Edmund had issue—Roger, earl of March:

Roger had issue—Edmund, Anne, and Eleanor.

*Sal.* Thus Edmund, in the reign of Bolingbroke,

As I have read, laid claim unto the crown; And, but for Owen Glendower, had been king,

Who kept him in captivity till he died. But, to the rest.

*York.* His eldest sister, Anne, My mother being heir unto the crown,

Married Richard, earl of Cambridge; who was son

To Edmund Langley, Edward the Third's fifth son.

By her I claim the kingdom: she was heir To Roger, earl of March; who was the son Of Edmund Mortimer; who married Philippe, Sole daughter unto Lionel, duke of Clarence: So, if the issue of the elder son Succeed before the younger, I am king.

*War.* What plain proceedings are more plain than this?

Henry doth claim the crown from John of Gaunt,

The fourth son; York claims it from the third. Till Lionel's issue fails, his should not reign:

It fails not yet; but flourishes in thee, And in thy sons, fair slips of such a stock.—

Then, father Salisbury, kneel we both together;

And, in this private plot<sup>\*</sup> be we the first, That shall salute our rightful sovereign

With honour of his birthright to the crown.

*Both.* Long live our sovereign Richard, England's king!

*York.* We thank you, lords. But I am not your king

Till I be crown'd; and that my sword be stain'd

With heart-blood of the house of Lancaster. And that's not suddenly to be perform'd;

But with advice, and silent secrecy. Do you, as I do, in these dangerous days,

Wink at the duke of Suffolk's insolence, At Beaufort's pride, at Somerset's ambition,

At Buckingham, and all the crew of them, Till they have snar'd the shepherd of the flock,

That virtuous prince, the good duke Humphrey:

<sup>†</sup> Wickedly

<sup>\*</sup> A company.

<sup>‡</sup> I. e. Your lady is in custody. Weigh.

<sup>\*</sup> Sequestered spot.

*'Tis that they seek ; and they in seeking that,  
Shall find their deaths, if York can prophesy.*

*Sal.* My lord, break we off ; we know your  
mind at full.

*War.* My heart assures me, that the earl of  
Warwick

Shall one day make the Duke of York a king.

*York.* And, Nevil, this I do assure myself,—  
Richard shall live to make the earl of War-  
wick

The greatest man in England, but the king.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.*—*A Hall of Justice.*

*Trumpets sounded. Enter KING HENRY,  
QUEEN MARGARET, GLOSTER, YORK, SUFFOLK,  
and SALISBURY ; the DUCHESSES of GLOSTER,  
MARGERY JOURDAIN, SOUTHWELL, HUME,  
and BOLINGBROKE, under guard.*

*K. Hen.* Stand forth, dame Eleanor Cob-  
ham, Gloster's wife ;

In sight of God and us, your guilt is great ;  
Receive the sentence of the law, for sins  
Such as by God's book are adjudg'd to death.—  
You four, from hence to prison back again ;

[*To JOURD.* 4c.

From thence, unto the place of execution :  
The witch in Smithfield shall be burn'd to  
ashes,

And you three shall be strangled on the gal-  
lows.

You, madam, for you are more nobly born,  
Despoiled of your honour in your life,  
Shall, after three days' open penance done,  
Live in your country here, in banishment,  
With Sir John Stanley, in the isle of Man.

*Duch.* Welcome is banishment, welcome  
were my death.

*Glo.* Eleanor, the law, thou seest, hath  
judg'd thee ;

I cannot justify whom the law condemns.—  
[*Exeunt the DUCHESSES, and the other priso-  
ners, guarded.*]

Mine eyes are full of tears, my heart of grief,  
Ah ! Humphrey, this dishonour in thine age  
Will bring thy head with sorrow to the  
ground !—

I beseech your majesty, give me leave to go ;  
Sorrow would solace, and mine age would  
ease.\*

*K. Hen.* Stay, Humphrey duke of Gloster :  
ere thou go,

Give up thy staff ; Henry will to himself  
Protector be ; and God shall be my hope,  
My stay, my guide, and lantern to my feet ;  
And go in peace, Humphrey ; no less belov'd,  
Than when thou wert protector to thy king.

*Q. Mar.* I see no reason, why a king of  
years

Should be to be protected like a child.  
God and king Henry govern England's helm :  
Give up your staff, Sir, and the king his  
realm.

*Glo.* My staff ?—here, noble Henry, is my  
staff :

As willingly do I the same resign,  
As e'er my father Henry made it mine ;  
And even as willingly at thy feet I leave it,  
As others would ambitiously receive it. [gone,  
Farewell, good king : When I am dead and  
May honourable peace attend thy throne !

[*Exit.*]

*Q. Mar.* Why, now is Henry king, and Mar-  
garet queen ;

And Humphrey, duke of Gloster, scarce him-  
self,

That bears so shrewd a maim ; two pulls at  
once,—

His lady banish'd, and a limb lopp'd off ;  
This staff of honour rought :—There let it stand,  
Where it best fits to be, in Henry's hand.

\* i. e. Sorrow requires solace, and age requires ease.  
† Reused.

*Suf.* Thus droops this lofty pine, and hangs  
his sprays ;

Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest  
days.

*York.* Lords, let him go.—Please it your  
majesty,

This is the day appointed for the combat ;  
And ready are the appellant and defendant,  
The armourer and his man, to enter the lists  
So please your highness to behold the fight.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord : for purposely  
therefore

Left I the court to see this quarrel tried.

*K. Hen.* O' God's name, see the lists and  
all things fit ;

Here let them end it, and God defend the  
right !

*York.* I never saw a fellow worse best-  
ed,\*

Or more afraid to fight, than is the appellant,  
The servant of this armourer, my lords.

*Enter on one side, HORNER and his neigh-  
bours, drinking to him so much that he is  
drunk ; and he enters bearing his staff with  
a sand-bag fastened to it ; a drum before  
him : at the other side, PETER, with a drum  
and a similar staff ; accompanied by 'Prent-  
ices drinking to him.*

*1 Neigh.* Here, neighbour Horner, I drink  
to you in a cup of sack ; and fear not, neigh-  
bour, you shall do well enough.

*2 Neigh.* And here, neighbour, here's a cup  
of charneco.†

*3 Neigh.* And here's a pot of good double  
beer, neighbour : drink, and fear not your  
man.

*Hor.* Let it come, I'faith, and I'll pledge you  
all ; And a fig for Peter !

*1 Pren.* Here, Peter, I drink to thee ; and be  
not afraid.

*2 Pren.* Be merry, Peter, and fear not thy  
master ; fight for credit of the 'prentices.

*Peter.* I thank you all : drink, and pray for  
me, I pray you ; for, I think, I have taken my  
last draught in this world.—Here, Robin, an  
if I die, I give thee my apron ; and, Will, thou  
shalt have my hammer : and here, Tom, take  
all the money that I have.—O Lord, bless me,  
I pray God I for I am never able to deal with  
my master, he hath learnt so much fence al-  
ready.

*Sal.* Come, leave your drinking, and fall to  
blows.—Sirrah, what's thy name ?

*Peter.* Peter, forsooth.

*Sal.* Peter ! what more ?

*Peter.* Thump.

*Sal.* Thump ! then see thou thump thy master  
well.

*Hor.* Masters, I am come hither, as it were,  
upon my man's instigation, to prove him a  
knave and myself an honest man : and touch-  
ing the duke of York,—will take my death, I  
never meant him any ill, nor the king, nor the  
queen : And therefore, Peter have at thee  
with a downright blow, as Bevis of Southampton  
fell upon Ascapart.

*York.* Despatch :—this knave's tongue be-  
gins to double.

Sound trumpets, alarum to the combatants.

[*Alarum. They fight, and PETER strikes  
down his Master.*]

*Hor.* Hold, Peter, hold ! I confess, I confess  
treason. [Dies.]

*York.* Take away his weapon :—Fellow,  
Thank God, and the good wine in thy master's  
way.

*Peter.* O God ! have I overcome mine ene-  
mies in this presence ? O Peter, thou hast pre-  
vail'd in right !

*K. Hen.* Go, take hence that traitor from our  
sight ;

\* In a worse plight.

† A sort of sweet wine.

For, by his death, we do perceive his guilt : \*  
And God, in justice, hath reveal'd to us  
The unth and innocence of this poor fellow,  
Which he had thought to have murder'd wrong-  
fully.—

Come, fellow, follow us for thy reward.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same.*—A Street.

*Enter GLOSTER and SERVANTS, in mourning Cloaks.*

*Glo.* Thus sometimes, hath the brightest day a cloud ;  
And, after summer, ever more succeeds  
Barren winter, with his wrathful nipping cold :  
So cares and joys abound, as seasons fleet. †  
Sirs, what's o'clock ?

*Serv.* Ten, my lord.

*Glo.* Ten is the hour that was appointed me  
To watch the coming of my punish'd duchess :  
Unearth ‡ may she endure the flinty streets,  
To tread them with her tender-feeling feet.  
Sweet Nell, ill can thy noble mind brook  
The abject people gazing on thy face,  
With envious † looks, still laughing at thy  
shame ;

That erst did follow thy proud chariot wheels,  
When thou didst ride in triumph through the  
streets.

But soft ! I think she comes ; and I'll prepare  
My tear stain'd eyes to see her miseries.

*Enter the Duchess of GLOSTER, in a white sheet, with pavers pinned upon her back, her feet bare, and a taper burning in her hand ; Sir JOHN STANLEY, a SHERIFF, and officers.*

*Serv.* So please your grace, we'll take her from the sheriff.

*Glo.* No, stir not, for your lives ; let her pass by.

*Duch.* Come you, my lord, to see my open shame ?

Now thou dost penance too. Look, how they gaze !

See, how the giddy multitude do point,  
And nod their heads, and throw their eyes on thee ;

Ah ! Gloster, hide thee from their hateful looks ;  
And, in thy closet pent up, rue my shame,

And ban † thine enemies, both mine and thine.

*Glo.* Be patient, gentle Nell ; forget this grief.

*Duch.* Ah ! Gloster, teach me to forget myself :

For, whilst I think I am thy married wife,  
And thou a prince, protector of this land  
Methinks I should not thus be led along,  
Mail'd up in shame, ¶ with papers on my back :  
And follow'd with a rabble, that rejoice  
To see my tears, and hear my deep-set \*\*  
groans.

The ruthless that doth cut my tender feet ;  
And, when I start, the envious people laugh,  
And bid me be advised how I tread.

Ah ! Humphrey, can I bear this shameful yoke ?  
Trow'st thou, that e'er I'll look upon the world ;

Or count them happy, that enjoy the sun ?  
No ; dark shall be my light, and night my day ;  
To think upon my pomp, shall be my hell.  
Sometime I'll say, I am duke Humphrey's  
wife ;

And he a prince, and ruler of the land :  
Yet so he rul'd, and such a prince he was,  
As he stood by, whilst I, his forlorn duchess,  
Was made a wouder, and a pointing-stock,  
To every idle rascal follower.

But be thou mild, and blush not at my shame,

\* The death of the vanquished person was always regarded as certain evidence of his guilt.  
† Change. ‡ Not easily. § Malicious. ¶ Curse.  
¶ Wrapped up in disgrace ; alluding to the sheet of penance.  
\*\* Deep-fetched.

Nor stir at nothing, till the axe of death  
Hang over thee, as, sure, it shortly will.  
For Suffolk,—he that can do all in all  
With her that hateth thee and hates us all,—  
And York, and impious Beaufort, that false

priest,  
Have all him'd bushes to betray thy wings,  
And, fly thou how thou canst, they'll tangle  
thee :

But fear not thou, until thy foot be snar'd,  
Nor never seek prevention of thy foes.

*Glo.* Ah ! Nell, forbear ; thou almost all awry ;  
I must offend, before I be attained :  
And had I twenty times so many foes,  
And each of them had twenty times their power,  
All these could not procure me any scathe,\*  
So long as I am loyal, true, and crimeless.  
Would'st have me rescue thee from this re-  
proach !

Why, yet thy scandal were not wip'd away,  
But I in danger for the breach of law.  
Thy greatest help is quiet, gentle Nell :  
I pray thee sort thy heart to patience :  
These few days' wonder will be quickly worn.

*Enter a HERALD.*

*Her.* I summon your grace to his majesty's  
parliament, holden at Bury the first of this next  
month.

*Glo.* And my consent ne'er ask'd herein be-  
fore !

This is close dealing.—Well, I will be there.

[*Exit HERALD.*]

My Nell, I take my leave :—and, master she-  
riff,  
Let not her penance exceed the king's commis-  
sion.

*Sher.* An't please your grace, here my com-  
mission stays :

And Sir John Stanley is appointed now  
To take her with him to the isle of Man.

*Glo.* Must you, Sir John, protect my lady  
here ?

*Stan.* So am I given in charge, may't please  
your grace.

*Glo.* Entreat her not the worse, in that I pray  
You use her well : the world may laugh again ; †  
And I may live to do you kindness, if  
You do it her. And so, Sir John, farewell.

*Duch.* What gone, my lord ; and bid me not  
farewell ?

*Glo.* Witness my tears, I cannot stay to speak.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and SERVANTS.*]

*Duch.* Art thou gone too ? All comfort go  
with thee !

For none abides with me : my joy is—death ;  
Death, at whose name I oft have been afraid,  
Because I wish'd this world's eternity.—  
Stanley, I pry'thee, go, and take me hence  
I care not whither, for I beg no favour,  
Only convey me where thou art commanded.

*Stan.* Why, madam, that is to the isle of  
Man ;

There to be used according to your state.

*Duch.* That's bad enough, for I am but re-  
proach :

And shall I then be us'd reproachfully ?

*Stan.* Like to a duchess, and duke Hum-  
phrey's lady,

According to that state you shall be used.

*Duch.* Sheriff, farewell, and better than I  
fare ;

Although thou hast been conduct † of my  
shame !

*Sher.* It is my office ; and, madam, pardon  
me.

*Duch.* Ay, ay, farewell ; thy office is dis-  
charg'd.—

Come, Stanley, shall we go ?

*Stan.* Madam, your penance done, throw off  
this sheet,

And go we to attire you for our journey.

\* Harm, mischief.

† I.e. The world may look again favourably on her.

‡ For conductor.

*Duch.* My shame will not be shifted with my sheet :

No, it will hang upon my richest robes,  
And show itself, attire me how I can.  
Go, lead the way ; I long to see my prison.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The Abbey at Bury.*

*Enter to the Parliament, King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, Cardinal BEAUFORT, SUFFOLK, YORK, BUCKINGHAM, and others.*

*K. Hen.* I muse \* my lord of Gloster is not come :

'Tis not his wont to be the hindmost man,  
Whate'er occasion keeps him from us now.

*Q. Mar.* Can you not see ? or will you not observe

The strangeness of his alter'd countenance ?  
With what a majesty he bears himself ;  
How insolent of late he is become,  
How proud, peremptory, and unlike himself ?  
We know the time, since he was mild and affable ;

And, if we did but glance a far-off look,  
Immediately he was upon his knee,  
That all the court admir'd him for submission :  
But, meet him now, and, be it in the morn,  
When every one will give the time of day,  
He knits his brow, and shows an angry eye,  
And passeth by with stiff unbowed knee,  
Disdaining duty that to us belongs.

Small curs are not regarded when they grin,  
But great men tremble when the lion roars ;  
And Humphrey is no little man in England.  
First, note, that he is near you in descent ;  
And should you fall, he is the next will mount.  
Me seemeth then, it is no policy,—

Respecting what a rancorous mind he bears,  
And his advantage following your decease,—  
That he should come about your royal person,  
Or be admitted to your highness' council.  
By flattery hath he won the commons' hearts ;  
And, when he please to make commotion,  
'Tis to be fear'd, they all will follow him.

Now 'tis the spring, and weeds are shallow-rooted ;

Suffer them now, and they'll o'ergrow the garden,

And choke the herbs for want of husbandry.  
The reverent care I bear unto my lord,  
Made me collect these dangers in the duke.  
If it be found, I call it a woman's fear ;  
Which fear, if better reason can supplant,  
I will subscribe, and say I wrong'd the duke.  
My lord of Suffolk, Buckingham, and York,  
Reprove my allegation if you can ;  
Or else conclude my words effectual.

*Suf.* Well hath your highness seen into this duke ;

And, had I not been put to speak my mind,  
I think I should have told your grace's tale.  
The duchess, by his subornation,  
Upon my life began her devilish practices :  
Or if he were not privy to those faults,  
Yet, by reputing of his high descent, §  
(As next the king, he was successive heir,)  
And such high vaunts of his nobility,  
Did instigate the bedlam brain-sick duchess,  
By wicked means to frame our sovereign's fall.  
Smooth runs the water, where the brook is deep ;

And in his private show he harbours treason.  
The fox baits not, when he would steal the lamb.

No, no, my sovereign ; Gloster is a man  
Unsound'd yet and full of deep deceit.

*Car.* Did he not, contrary to form of law,  
Devise strange deaths for small offences done ?

\* Wonder. † I. e. Assemble by observation.

‡ Foolish. § I. e. Valuing himself on his high descent.

*York.* And did he not, in his protectorship,  
Levy great sums of money through the realm,  
For soldiers' pay in France, and never sent it ?  
By means whereof, the towns each day re-  
volted.

*Buck.* Tut ! these are petty faults to faults  
unknown,  
Which time will bring to light in smooth duke  
Humphrey.

*K. Hen.* My lords, at once : The care you  
have of us,  
To mow down thorns that would annoy our  
foot,  
Is worthy praise : But shall I speak my con-  
science ?

Our kinsman Gloster is as innocent  
From meaning treason to our royal person,  
As is the sucking lamb, or harmless dove :  
The duke is virtuous, mild ; and too well  
given,

To dream on evil, or to work my downfall.

*Q. Mar.* Ah ! what's more dangerous than  
this fond alliance !

Seems he a dove ? his feathers are but hor-  
row'd,

For he is disposed as the hateful raven.  
Is he a lamb ? his skin is surely lent him,  
For he's inclin'd as are the ravenous wolves,  
Who cannot steal a shaw, that means deceit ;  
Take heed, my lord ; the welfare of us all  
Hangs on the cutting short that fraudulent man.

*Enter SOMERSET.*

*Som.* All health unto my gracious sovereign !

*K. Hen.* Welcome, lord Somerset. What  
news from France ?

*Som.* That all your interest in those terri-  
tories

Is utterly bereft you ; all is lost.

*K. Hen.* Cold news, lord Somerset : But God's  
will be done !

*York.* Cold news for me ; for I had hopes of  
France,

As firmly as I hope for fertile England.

Thus are my blossoms blasted in the bud,

And caterpillars eat my leaves away :

But I will remedy this gear \* ere long,

Or sell my title for a glorious grave.

[*Aside.*]

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* All happiness unto my lord the king !

Pardon, my liege, that I have staid so long.

*Suf.* Nay, Gloster, know that thou art come  
too soon,

Unless thou wert more loyal than thou art :  
I do arrest thee of high treason here.

*Glo.* Well, Suffolk, yet thou shalt not see  
me blush,

Nor change my countenance for this arrest ;

A heart unspotted is not easily daunted.

The purest spring is not so free from mud,

As I am clear from treason to my sovereign :

Who can accuse me ? wherein am I guilty ?

*York.* 'Tis thought, my lord, that you took  
bribes of France,

And, being protector, stay'd the soldiers' pay ;  
By means whereof his highness hath lost  
France.

*Glo.* Is it but thought so ? What are they  
that think it ?

I never robb'd the soldiers of their pay,  
Nor ever had one penny bribe from France.

So help me God, as I have watch'd the night,  
Ay, night by night, in studying good for Eng-  
land !

That dolt that e'er I wrested from the king,  
Or any great I hoarded to my use,

Be brought against me at my trial day !  
No ! many a pound of mine own proper store,

Because I would not tax the needy commons,  
Have I dispurisd to the garrisons,

And never ask'd for restitution.

\* Gear was a general word for things or matters.

*Car.* It serves you well, my lord, to say so much.

*Glo.* I say no more than truth, so help me God!

*York.* In your protectorship, you did devise Strange tortures for offenders, never heard of, That England was defam'd by tyranny.

*Glo.* Why, 'tis well known, that whiles I was protector,

Pity was all the fault that was in me; For I should melt at an offender's tears And lowly words were ransom for their fault. Unless it were a bloody murderer, Or foul felonious thief that need'd poor passengers,

I never gave them condign punishment: Murder, indeed, that bloody sin, I tortur'd Above the felon, or what trespass else.

*Suf.* My lord, these faults are easy,\* quickly answer'd;

But mightier crimes are laid upon your charge, Whereof you cannot easily purge yourself. I do arrest you in his highness' name; And here commit you to my lord cardinal To keep, until your further time of trial.

*K. Hen.* My lord of Gloster, 'tis my special hope,

That you will clear yourself from all suspects; My conscience tells me you are innocent.

*Glo.* Ah! gracious lord, these days are dangerous!

Virtue is chok'd with foul ambition, And charity chas'd hence by rancour's hand; Foul subornation is predominant, And equity exil'd your highness' land. I know their plot is to have my life; And, if my death might make this island happy, And prove the period of their tyranny, I would expend it with all willingness: But mine is made the prologue to their play; For thousands more, that yet suspect no peril, Will not conclude their plotted tragedy. Beaufort's red sparkling eyes blab his heart's malice,

And Suffolk's cloudy brow, his stormy hate; Sharp Buckingham unburdens with his tongue The envious load that lies upon his heart; And dogged York, that reaches at the moon, Whose overweening aim I have pluck'd back, By false accuse † doth level at my life:— And you, my sovereign lady, with the rest, Causeless have laid disgraces on my head; And, with your best endeavour, have stirr'd up My liege ‡ I liege to be mine enemy:— Ay, all of you have laid your heads together Myself had notice of your conventicles, I shall not want false witness to condemn me, Nor store of treasons to augment my guilt; The ancient proverb will be well affected,— A staff is quickly found to beat a dog.

*Car.* My liege, his railing is intolerable: If those that care to keep your royal person From treason's secret knife, and traitor's rage, Be thus upbraided, chid, and rated at, And the offender granted scope of speech, 'Twill make them cool in zeal unto your grace.

*Suf.* Hath he not twit our sovereign lady here,

With ignominious words, though clerly couch'd, As if she had suborned some to swear False allegations to o'erthrow his state?

*Q. Mar.* But I can give the loser leave to chide.

*Glo.* Far truer spoke than meant: I too indeed:—

Bestrew the winners, for they play'd me false! And well such losers may have leave to speak.

*Buck.* He'll wreat the scence, and hold us here all day:—

Lord cardinal he is your prisoner.

*Car.* Sirs, take away the duke, and guard him sure.

*Glo.* Ah! thus king Henry throws away his crutch,

Before his legs be firm to bear the body: Thus is the shepherd beaten from thy side, And wolves are quarling who shall gnaw thee first.

Ah! that my fear were false! ah! that it were; For, good king Henry, thy decay I fear.

[*Exit ATTENDANTS, with GLOSTER.*]

*K. Hen.* My lords, what to your wisdoms seemeth best,

Do, or undo, as if ourself were here.

*Q. Mar.* What, will your highness leave the parliament?

*K. Hen.* Ay, Margaret; my heart is drown'd with grief,

Whose flood begins to flow within mine eyes; My body round engirt with misery;

For what's more miserable than discontent?— Ah! uncle Humphrey, in thy face I see

The map of honour, truth, and loyalty; And yet, good Humphrey, is the hour to come,

That e'er I prov'd thee false, or fear'd thy faith. What low'ring star now envies thy estate,

That these great lords, and Margaret our queen, Do seek subversion of thy harmless life?

Thou never didst them wrong, nor do man wrong:

And as the butcher takes away the calf, And binds the wretch, and beats it when it strays,

Bearing it to the bloody slaughter-house; Even so, remorseless, have they borne him hence.

And as the dam runs lowing up and down, Looking the way her harmless young one went,

And can do nought but wail her darling's loss; Even so myself bewails good Gloster's case,

With sad unhelpful tears; and with dimm'd eyes

Look after him, and cannot do him good; So mightily are his vowed enemies.

His fortunes I will weep; and 'twixt each groan,

Say—*Who's a traitor?* Gloster he is none.

[*Exit.*]

*Q. Mar.* Free lords, cold snow melts with the sun's hot beams.

Henry my lord is cold in great affairs, Too full of foolish pity; and Gloster's show

Beguiles him, as the mournful crocodile With sorrow squares relenting passengers;

Or as the snake, roll'd in a flowering bank,\* With shining checker'd slough, † doth sting a child,

That for the beauty, thinks it excellent. Believe me, lords, were none more wise than I,

(And yet, herein, I judge mine own wit good,) This Gloster should be quickly rid the world,

To rid us from the fear we have of him.

*Car.* That he should die, is worthy policy; But yet we want a colour for his death:

'Tis meet he be condemn'd by course of law.

*Suf.* But, in my mind, that were no policy: The king will labour still to save his life,

The commons haply ‡ rise to save his life; And yet we have but trivial argument,

More than mistrust that shows him worthy death.

*York.* So that, by this, you would not have him die.

*Suf.* Ah! York, no man alive so fain as I.

*York.* 'Tis York that hath more reason for his death.—

But, my lord cardinal, and you, my lord of Suffolk,—

Say as you think, and speak it from your souls,—

Wer't not all one, an empty eagle were set To guard the chicken from a hungry kite,

As place duke Humphrey for the king's protector?

\* For easily.    † For accusation.    ‡ Dearest.

\* *I.e.* In the flowers growing on a bank.    † Perhaps.

*Q. Mar.* So the poor chicken should be sure of death.

*Suf.* Madam, 'tis true : And wer't not madness then,

To make the fox surveyor of the fold ?  
Who being accus'd a crafty murderer,  
His guilt should be but idly proved over,  
Because his purpose is not executed.  
No ; let him die, in that he is a fox,  
By nature prov'd an enemy to the flock,  
Before his chaps be stain'd with crimson blood ;  
As Humphrey, prov'd by reasons, to my liege,  
And do not stand on quilllets, how to slay him :  
Be it by gins, by snares, by subtilty,  
Sleeping or waking, 'tis no matter how,  
So he be dead ; for that is good deceit  
Which mates \* him first, that first intends de-  
ceit.

*Q. Mar.* Thrice-noble Suffolk, 'tis resolutely spoke.

*Suf.* Not resolute, except so much were done ;

For things are often spoke, and seldom meant :  
But, that my heart accordeth with my tongue,—  
Seeing the deed is meritorious,  
And to preserve my sovereign from his foe,—  
Say but the word, and I will be his priest.

*Car.* But I would have him dead, my lord of Suffolk,

Ere you can take due orders for a priest :  
Say you consent, and censure well the deed,  
And I'll provide his executioner,  
I tender so the safety of my liege.

*Suf.* Here is my hand, the deed is worthy doing.

*Q. Mar.* And so say I.

*York.* And I : and now we three have spoke it,

It skills not greatly † who impugns our doom.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Great lords, from Ireland am I come again,

To signify—that rebels there are up,  
And put the Englishmen unto the sword :  
Send succours, lords, and stop the rage betime,  
Before the wound do grow incurable ;  
For, being green, there is great hope of help.

*Car.* A breach, that craves a quick expedient † stop !

What counsel give you in this weighty cause ?

*York.* That Somerset be sent as regent thither :

'Tis meet that lucky ruler be employ'd ;  
Witness the fortune he hath had in France.

*Som.* If York, with all his far-fet † policy,  
Had been the regent there instead of me,

He never would have staid in France so long.

*York.* No, not to lose it all, as thou hast done :

I rather would have lost my life betimes,  
Than bring a burden of dishonour home,  
By staying there so long, till all were lost.  
Show me one scar character'd on thy skin :  
Men's flesh preserv'd so whole, do seldom win.

*Q. Mar.* Nay then, this spark will prove a raging fire,

If wind and fuel be brought to feed it with :—  
No more, good York ;—sweet Somerset, be still ;

Thy fortune, York, had'st thou been regent there,

Might happily have prov'd far worse than his.

*York.* What, worse than naught † nay, then a shame take all !

*Som.* And, in the number, thee, that wishest shame !

*Car.* My lord of York, try what your fortune is.

The uncivil Kernes of Ireland are in arms,  
And temper clay with blood of Englishmen :  
To Ireland will you lead a band of men,

Collected choicely, from each county some,  
And try your hap against the Irishmen ?

*York.* I will, my lord, so please his majesty.

*Suf.* Why, our authority is his consent ;  
And what we do establish, he confirms :

Then, noble York, take thou this task in hand.

*York.* I am content : Provide me soldiers, lords,

Whiles I take order for mine own affairs.

*Suf.* A charge, lord York, that I will see per-  
form'd.

But now return we to the false duke Humphrey.

*Car.* No more of him ; for I will deal with him,

That, henceforth, he shall trouble me no more.  
And so break off ; the day is almost spent :

Lord Suffolk, you and I must talk of that event.

*York.* My lord of Suffolk, within fourteen days,  
At Bristol I expect my soldiers ;

For there I'll ship them all for Ireland.

*Suf.* I'll see it truly done, my lord of York.

*York.* Now, York, or never, steel thy fearful thoughts,

And change misdooubt to resolution :

Be that thou hop'st to be ; or what thou art  
Resign to death, it is not worth the enjoying :

Let pale-fac'd fear keep with the mean-born man,

And find no harbour in a royal heart.

Faster than spring-time showers, comes thought on thought ;

And not a thought, but thinks on dignity.

My brain, more busy than the labouring spider,  
Weaves tedious snares to trap mine enemies.

Well, nobles, well, it's politicly done,  
To send me packing with a host of men :

I fear me, you but warm the starved snake,  
Who, cherish'd in your breasts, will sting your hearts.

'Twas men I lack'd, and you will give them me ;  
I take it kindly ; yet, be well assur'd

You put sharp weapons in a madman's hands.

Whiles I in Ireland nourish a mighty band,  
I will stir up in England some black storm,

Shall blow ten thousand souls to heaven or hell :

And this fell tempest shall not cease to rage  
Until the golden circuit on my head,

Like to the glorious sun's transparent beams,  
Do calm the fury of this mad-bred flaw \*

And, for a minister of my intent,  
I have seduc'd a head-strong Kentishman,

John Cade of Ashford,  
To make commotion, as full well he can,

Under the title of John Mortimer.

In Ireland have I seen this stubborn Cade  
Oppose himself against a troop of Kernes ; †

And fought so long, till that his thighs with darts

Were almost like a sharp-quill'd porcupine :

And, in the end being rescu'd, I have seen him  
Caper upright like a wild Morsico, †

Shaking the bloody darts, as he his bells.

Full often, like a shag-hair'd crafty Kerue,  
Hath he conversed with the enemy ;

And undiscover'd come to me again,  
And given me notice of their villanies.

This devil here shall be my substitute ;  
For that John Mortimer, which now is dead,  
In face, in gait, in speech, he doth resemble :

By this I shall perceive the commons' mind,  
How they affect the house and claim of York.

Say, he be taken, rack'd, and tortured :  
I know no pain they can inflict upon him,

Will make him say—I mov'd him to those arms.  
Say, that he thrive, (as 'tis great like he will,)  
Why, then from Ireland come I with my strength,

\* Confounds. † Is of no importance.  
‡ Expeditious. § Far-fetched.

\* A violent gust of wind.  
† Irish foot-soldiers, light-armed.  
‡ A Moor in a morris-dance.

And reap the harvest which that rascal sow'd :  
For, Humphrey being dead, as he shall be,  
And Henry put apart, the next for me.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—Bury.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter certain MURDERERS, hastily.

1 Mur. Run to my lord of Suffolk, let him know,  
We have despatch'd the duke, as he commanded.

2 Mur. O that it were to do!—What have we done?

Didst ever hear a man so penitent?

Enter SUFFOLK.

1 Mur. Here comes my lord.

Suf. Now, Sirs, have you despatch'd this thing?

1 Mur. Ay, my good lord, he's dead.

Suf. Why, that's well said. Go, get you to my house;

I will reward you for this venturesome deed.  
The king and all the peers are here at hand :—  
Have you laid fair the bed? are all things well,

According as I gave directions?

1 Mur. 'Tis, my good lord.

Suf. Away, be gone! [Exit MURDERERS.

Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, Cardinal BEAUFORT, SOMERSET, Lords, and others.

K. Hen. Go, call our uncle to our presence straight:

Say, we intend to try his grace to-day,  
If he be guilty, as 'tis published.

Suf. I'll call him presently, my noble lord.

[Exit.

K. Hen. Lords, take your places;—And, I pray you all,

Proceed no straiter 'gainst our uncle Gloster,  
Than from true evidence, of good esteem,  
He be approv'd in practice culpable.

Q. Mar. God forbid any malice should prevail,

That faultless may condemn a nobleman!

Pray God, he may acquit him of suspicion!

K. Hen. I thank thee, Margaret; these words content me much.—

Re-enter SUFFOLK.

How now? why look'st thou pale? why tremblest thou?

Where is our uncle? what is the matter, Suffolk?

Suf. Dead in his bed, my lord: Gloster is dead.

Q. Mar. Marry, God forefend!

Car. God's secret judgment;—I did dream to-night,

The duke was dumb, and could not speak a word.

Q. Mar. How fares my lord?—Help, lords! the king is dead.

Som. Rear up his body; ring him by the nose.

Q. Mar. Run, go, help, help!—O Henry, open thine eyes!

Suf. He doth revive again;—Madam, be patient.

K. Hen. O heavenly God!

Q. Mar. How fares my gracious lord?

Suf. Comfort, my sovereign! gracious Henry, comfort!

K. Hen. What, doth my lord of Suffolk comfort me?

Came he right now \* to sing a raven's note,  
Whose dismal tune bereft my vital powers;  
And thinks he that the chirping of a wren,

By crying comfort from a hollow breast,  
Can chase away the first-conceived sound?  
Hide not thy poison with such sugar'd words;  
Lay not thy hands on me; forbear, I say;  
Their touch affrights me, as a serpent's sting.  
Thou baleful messenger, out of my sight!  
Upon thy eye-balls murderous tyranny  
Sits in grim majesty, to fright the world.  
Look not upon me, for thine eyes are wounding!

Yet do not go away :—Come, basilisk,  
And kill the innocent gazer with thy sight:  
For in the shade of death I shall find joy;  
In life, but double death, now Gloster's dead.

Q. Mar. Why do you rate my lord of Suffolk thus?

Although the duke was enemy to him,  
Yet he, most Christian-like, laments his death:  
And for myself, too as he was to me,  
Might liquid tears, or heart-offending groans,  
Or blood-consuming sighs recall his life,  
I would he blind with weeping, sick with

groans,  
Look pale as primrose, with blood-drinking

sighs,  
And all to have the noble duke alive.

What know I how the world may deem of me?

For it is known we were but hollow friends;

It may be judg'd, I made the duke away:

So shall my name with slander's tongue be wounded,

And princes' counts be fill'd with my reproach.

This get I by his death: Ah! me, unhappy!

To be a queen, and crown'd with infamy!

K. Hen. Ah! woe is me for Gloster, wretched man!

Q. Mar. Be woe for me \* more wretched than he is.

What, dost thou turn away, and hide thy face?

I am no loathsome leper, look on me.

What art thou, like the adder, waxen deaf?

Be poisonous too, and kill thy forlorn queen.

Is all thy comfort shut in Gloster's tomb?

Why, then, dame Margaret was not thy joy;

Erect his statue then, and worship it,

And make my image but an idlehouse sign.

Was I, for this high wreck'd upon the sea;

And twice by awkward wind from England's bank

Drove back again unto my native clime?

What boded this, but well-forwarning wind

Did seem to say,—Seek not a scorpion's nest,

Nor set no footing on this unkind shore?

What did I then, but curs'd the gentle gusts,

And he that loos'd them from their brazen caves;

And bid them blow towards England's blessed shore,

Or turn our stern upon a dreadful rock?

Yet Æolus would not be a murderer,

But left that hateful office unto thee:

The pretty vaulting sea refus'd to drown me;

Knowing that thou, would'st have me drown'd on shore,

With tears as salt as sea through thy unkindness:

The splitting rocks cower'd in the sinking sands,

And would not dash me with their ragged sides;

Because thy flinty heart, more hard than they,

Might in thy palace perish Margaret.

As far as I could ken thy chalky cliff,

When from the shore the tempest beat us back,

I stood upon the hatches in the storm:

And when the dusky sky began to rob

My earnest-gaping sight of thy land's view,

I took a costly jewel from my neck,

(A heart it was, bound in with diamonds,)

And threw it towards thy land;—the sea receiv'd it;

And so, I wish'd, thy body might my heart:

\* Just now.

\* I. e. Let not woe be to thee for Gloster, but for me.

And even with this, I lost fair England's view,

And bid mine eyes be packing with my heart;  
And call'd them blind and dusky spectacles,  
For losing ken of Albion's wished coast.  
How often have I tempted Suffolk's tongue  
(The agent of thy foul inconstancy.)

To sit and watch me, as Ascanius did,  
When he to madding Dido, would unfold  
His father's acts, commencing in burning Troy?  
Am I not witch'd like her? or thou not false  
like him?

Ah! me, I can no more! Die, Margaret!  
For Henry weeps, that thou dost live so long.

Noise within. Enter WARWICK and SALISBURY. The Commons press to the door.

War. It is reported, mighty sovereign,  
That good duke Humphrey traitorously is murder'd

By Suffolk and the cardinal Beaufort's means:  
The commons, like an angry hive of bees,  
That want their leader, scatter up and down,  
And care not who they sting in his revenge.  
Myself have calm'd their spleenful mutiny,  
Until they hear the order of his death.

K. Hen. That he is dead, good Warwick, 'tis too true;

But how he died, God knows, not Henry:  
Enter his chamber, view his breathless corpse,  
And comment then upon his sudden death.

War. That I shall do, my liege:—Stay, Salisbury,  
With the rude multitude, till I return.

[WARWICK goes into an inner Room, and SALISBURY retires.]

K. Hen. O thou that judgest all things, stay my thoughts:

My thoughts, that labour to persuade my soul,  
Some violent hands were laid on Humphrey's life!

If my suspect be false, forgive me, God;  
For judgment only doth belong to thee!  
Fain would I go to chafe his paly lips  
With twenty thousand kisses, and to drain  
Upon his face an ocean of salt tears;  
To tell my love unto his dumb deaf trunk,  
And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling:  
But all in vain are these mean obsequies;  
And, to survey his dead and earthly image,  
What were it but to make my sorrow greater?

The folding Doors of an inner Chamber are thrown open, and GLOSTER is discovered dead in his Bed: WARWICK and others standing by it.

War. Come hither, gracious sovereign, view this body.

K. Hen. That is to see how deep my grave is made:

For, with his soul, fled all my worldly solace;  
For seeing him, I see my life in death.\*

War. As surely as my soul intends to live  
With that dread King that took our state upon him

To free us from his Father's wrathful curse,  
I do believe that violent hands were laid  
Upon the life of this thrice-lamed duke.

Suf. A dreadful oath, sworn with a solemn tongue!

What instance gives lord Warwick for his vow?

War. See, how the blood is settled in his face!

Oft have I seen a timely-parted ghost,†  
Of ashy semblance, meagre, pale, and bloodless,

Being all descended to the labouring heart;  
Who, in the conflict that it holds with death,

\* I.e. I see my life destroyed or endangered by his death.

† A body become inanimate in the common course of nature; to which violence has not brought a timeless end.

Attracts the same for aidance 'gainst the enemy;

Which with the heart there cools and ne'er returneth

To blush and beautify the cheek again.  
But see, his face is black, and full of blood,  
His eye-balls farther out than when he liv'd,  
Staring full ghastly like a strangled man:

His hair uprear'd, his nostrils stretch'd with struggling;

His hands abroad display'd, as one that grasp'd  
And tug'd for life, and was by strength subdu'd.

Look on the sheets his hair, you see, is sticking;

His well proportioned beard made rough and rugged,

Like to the summer's corn by tempest lodg'd.  
It cannot be, but he was murder'd here;

The least of all these signs were probable.

Suf. Why, Warwick, who should do the duke to death?

Myself and Beaufort had him in protection;  
And we, I hope, Sir, are no murderers.

War. But both of you were vow'd duke Humphrey's foes;

And you, forsooth, had the good duke to keep:  
'Tis like, you would not feast him like a friend;

And 'tis well seen he found an enemy.

Q. Mar. Then you, be like, suspect these noblemen

As guilty of duke Humphrey's timeless death.

War. Who finds the heifer dead, and bleeding fresh,

And sees fast by a butcher with an axe,  
But will suspect 'twas he that made the slaughter?

Who finds the partridge in the pottcock's nest,  
But may imagine how the bird was dead,

Although the kite soar with unblooded beak?  
Even so suspicious is this tragedy.

Q. Mar. Are you the butcher, Suffolk; where's your knife?

Is Beaufort term'd a kite? where are his talons?

Suf. I wear no knife, to slaughter sleeping men;

But here's a vengeful sword, rusted with ease,  
That shall be scoured in his rancorous heart,

That slanders me with murder's crimson badge:

Say, if thou dar'st, proud lord of Warwickshire,

That I am faulty in duke Humphrey's death.

[Exit CARDINAL, SUM. and others.]

War. What dares not Warwick, if false Suffolk dare him?

Q. Mar. He dares not calm his contumelious spirit,

Nor cease to be an arrogant controller,  
Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand times.

War. Madam, be still: with reverence may I say,

For every word you speak in his behalf,  
Is slander to your royal dignity.

Suf. Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demeanour!

If ever lady wrong'd her lord so much,  
Thy mother took unto her blameful bed

Some stern untutor'd churl, and noble stock  
Was grafted with crab-tree slip; whose fruit thou art,

And never of the Nevils' noble race.

War. But that the guilt of murder bucklers thee,

And I should rob the deathman of his fee,  
Quitting thee thereby of ten thousand shames

And that my sovereign's presence makes me mild,

I would, false murderous coward, on thy knee,  
Make thee beg pardon for thy passed speech,

And say,—it was thy mother that thou mean'st,  
That thou thyself wast born in bastardy:



And, after all this fearful homage done,  
Give thee thy hire, and send thy soul to hell,  
Pernicious blood-sucker of sleeping men  
*Suf.* Thou shalt be waking, while I shed thy blood.

If from this presence thou dar'st go with me.

*War.* Away even now, or I will drag thee hence:

Unworthy though thou art, I'll cope with thee,  
And do some service to duke Humphrey's ghost.

[*Exeunt SUFFOLK and WARWICK.*]

*K. Hen.* What stronger breast-plate than a heart untainted?

Thrice is he arm'd, that hath his quarrel just;  
And he but naked, though lock'd up in steel,  
Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted.

[*A Noise within.*]

*Q. Mar.* What noise is this?

*Re-enter SUFFOLK and WARWICK, with their Weapons drawn.*

*K. Hen.* Why, how now, lords? your wrathful weapons drawn

Here in our presence? dare you be so bold?

Why, what tumultuous clamour have we here?

*Suf.* The traitorous Warwick, with the men of Bur,

Set all upon me, mighty sovereign.

*Noise of a Crowd within. Re-enter SALISBURY.*

*Sal.* Sirs, stand apart; the king shall know your mind.—

[*Speaking to those within.*]

Dread lord, the commoners send you word by me,

Unless false Suffolk straight be done to death,  
Or banished far England's territories,  
They will by violence tear him from your palace,

And torture him with grievous lingering death  
They say, by him the good duke Humphrey died;

They say, in him they fear your highness' death;  
And mere instinct of love and loyalty,  
Free from a stubborn opposite intent,  
As being thought to contradict your liking,  
Makes them thus forward in his banishment.  
They say, in care of your most royal person,  
That, if your highness should intend to sleep,  
And charge—that no man should disturb your rest,

In pain of your dislike, or pain of death;  
Yet notwithstanding such a strait edict,  
Were there a serpent seen, with forked tongue,  
That shily glided towards your majesty,  
It were but necessary you were wak'd;  
Lest, being suffer'd in that harmful slumber,  
The mortal worm\* might make the sleep eternal:

And therefore do they cry, though you forbid,  
That they will guard you, wh'er you will, or no,

From such fell serpents as false Suffolk is;  
With whose envenomed and fatal sting,  
Your loving uncle, twenty times his worth,  
They say, is shamefully bereft of life.

*Commons. [Within.]* An answer from the king, my lord of Salisbury.

*Suf.* 'Tis like, the commoners, rude unpolish'd birds,

Could send such message to their sovereign:  
But you, my lord, were glad to be employ'd,  
To show how quaint† and orator you are:  
But all the honour Salisbury hath won,  
Is—that he was the lord ambassador,  
Bent from a sort‡ of thinkers to the king.

*Commons. [Within.]* An answer from the king, or we'll all break in.

*K. Hen.* Go, Salisbury, and tell them all from me,

I thank them for their tender loving care:  
And had I not been 'cited so by them,  
Yet did I purpose as they do entreat;  
For sure, my thoughts do hourly prophesy  
Mischaunce unto my state by Suffolk's means.  
And therefore, by His majesty I swear,  
Whose far unworthy deputy I am,  
He shall not breathe infection in this air\*  
But three days longer, on the pain of death.

[*Exit SALISBURY.*]

*Q. Mar.* O Henry, let me plead for gentle Suffolk!

*K. Hen.* Ungentle queen, to call him gentle Suffolk.

No more, I say; if thou dost plead for him,  
Thou wilt but add increase unto my wrath.  
Had I but said, I would have kept my word;  
But, when I swear, it is irrevocable:—  
If, after three days space, thou here be'st found  
On any ground that I am ruler of,  
The world shall not be ransom for thy life.—  
Come, Warwick, come good Warwick, go with me;

I have great matters to impart to thee.

[*Exeunt HENRY, WARWICK, LORDS, &c.*]

*Q. Mar.* Mischaunce and sorrow go along with you!

Heart's discontent, and sour affliction,  
Be playfellows to keep you company!  
There's two of you; the devil make a third!  
And threefold vengeance tend upon your step!†

*Suf.* Cease, gentle queen, these execrations,  
And let thy Suffolk take his heavy leave.

*Q. Mar.* Fie, coward woman, and soft-hearted wretch!

Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemies?

*Suf.* A plague upon them! wherefore should I curse them?

Would curses kill, as doth the mandrake's groan,

I would invent as bitter-searching terms,  
As curst, as harsh, and horrible to hear,  
Deliver'd strongly through my fixed teeth,  
With full as many signs of deadly hate,  
As lean-fac'd Envy in her loathsome cave:  
My tongue should stumble in mine earnest words;

Mine eyes should sparkle like the beaten flint,  
My hair be riv'd on end, as one distract;  
Ay, every joint should seem to curse and ban:  
And even now my burden'd heart would break,  
Should I not curse them. Poison be their drink!

Gall, worse than gall, the daintiest that they taste!

Their sweetest shade, a grove of cypress trees!  
Their chiefest prospect, murdering basilisks!  
Their softest touch, as smart as lizards' stings!  
Their music, frightful as the serpent's hiss;  
And boding screech-owls make the concert full!

All the foul terrors in dark-seated hell—

*Q. Mar.* Enough, sweet Suffolk; thou torment'st thyself;

And these dread curses—like the sun 'gainst glass,

Or like an overcharged gun,—recoil,  
And turn the force of them upon thyself.

*Suf.* You bade me ban,† and will you bid me leave!

Now, by the ground that I am banish'd from,  
Well could I curse away a winter's night,  
Though standing naked on a mountain top,  
Where biting cold would never let grass grow,  
And think it but a minute spent in sport.

*Q. Mar.* O let me entreat thee, cease! Give me thy hand,

That I may dew it with my mournful tears;  
Nor let the rain of heaven wet this place,  
To wash away my woful monuments.

Oh! could this kiss be printed in thy hand;  
[*Kisses his hand.*]

\* Deadly serpent. † A company.  
† Dexterity.

\* I.e. He shall not contaminate this air with his infected breath.  
† Curse.

That thou might'st think upon these by the seal,  
Through whom a thousand sighs are breath'd for thee!

So, get thee gone, that I may know my grief;  
'Tis but surmis'd whilst thou art standing by,  
As one that surfeits thinking on a want.

I will repeat thee, or, be well assur'd,  
Adventure to be banish'd myself:  
And banish'd I am, if but from thee.

Go, speak not to me; even now be gone.—  
Oh! go not yet!—Even thus two friends condemn'd

Embrace and kiss, and take ten thousand leaves,

Loather a hundred times to part than die.  
Yet now farewell; and farewell life with thee!

*Suf.* Thus is poor Suffolk ten-times banish'd,  
Once by the king, and three times thrice by thee

'Tis not the land I care for; wert thou hence,  
A wilderness is populous enough,  
So Suffolk had thy heavenly company:  
For where thou art, there is the world itself,  
With every several pleasure in the world;  
And where thou art not, desolation.  
I can no more:—Live thou to joy thy life;  
Myself no joy in nought, but that thou livest.

*Enter VAUX.*

*Q. Mar.* Whither goest Vaux so fast? What news, I pry thee?

*Vaux.* To signify unto his majesty,  
That Cardinal Beaufort is at point of death:  
For suddenly a grievous sickness took him,  
That makes him gasp and stare, and catch the air,

Blaspheming God, and cursing men on earth.  
Sometime he talks as if duke Humphrey's ghost

Were by his side: sometimes he calls the king,

And whispers to his pillow, as to him,

The secrets of his overcharged soul:

And I am sent to tell his majesty,

That even now he cries aloud for him.

*Q. Mar.* Go, tell this heavy message to the king.  
*[Exit VAUX.]*

Ah me! what is this world? What news are these?

But wherefore grieve I at an hour's poor loss,  
Omitting Suffolk's exile, my soul's treasure?

Why only, Suffolk, mourn I not for thee,  
And with the southern clouds contend in tears;  
Their's for the earth's increase, mine for my sorrows?

Now, get thee hence: the king thou know'st is coming;

If thou be found by me, thou art but dead.

*Suf.* If I depart from thee, I cannot live;

And in thy sight to die, what were it else,

But like a pleasant slumber in thy lap?

Here could I breathe my soul into the air,!

As mild and gentle as the cradle babe,

Dying with mother's dug between its lips:

Where,\* from thy sight I should be raging mad,

And cry out for thee to close up mine eyes.

To have thee with thy lips to stop my mouth;

So shouldst thou either turn my flying soul,

Or I should breathe it so into thy body,

And then it liv'd in sweet Elysium.

To die by thee were but to die in jest;

From thee to die, were torture more than death:

O let me stay, befall what may befall.

*Q. Mar.* Away, though parting be a fretful

corrosive,

It is applied to a deathful wound.

To France, sweet Suffolk: Let me hear from thee;

For wheresoe'er thou art in this world's globe,

I'll have an Irish that shall find you out.

*Suf.* I go.

*Q. Mar.* And take my heart with thee.

\* For whereas.

† The messenger of Juno.

*Suf.* A jewel lock'd into the woeful'st cask  
That ever did contain a thing of worth.  
Even as a splitted bark, so sunder we:  
This way fall I to death.

*Q. Mar.* This way for me.

*[Exeunt, severally.]*

SCENE III.—London.—Cardinal BEAUFORT'S Bed-chamber.

*Enter King HENRY, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and others.—The CARDINAL in Bed; Attendants with him.*

*K. Hen.* How fares my lord? Speak, Beaufort, to thy sovereign.

*Car.* If thou be'st death, I'll give thee England's treasure,

Enough to purchase such another island,  
So thou wilt let me live, and feel no pain.

*K. Hen.* Ah! what a sign it is of evil life,  
When death's approach is seen so terrible!

*War.* Beaufort, it is thy sovereign speaks to thee.

*Car.* Bring me unto my trial when you will.

Died he not in his bed? Where should he die?

Can I make men live, wh'er they will or no?

Oh! torture me no more, I will confess—

Alive again? Then show me where he is;

I'll give a thousand pounds\* to look upon him.—

He hath no eyes, the dust hath blinded them.—

Comb down his hair; look! look! it stands upright,

Like lime-twigs set to catch my winged soul!—

Give me some drink; and bid the apothecary

Bring the strong poison that I bought of him.

*K. Hen.* O thou eternal Mover of the heavens,

Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch!

(I beat away the busy meddling fiend,

That lays strong siege upon this wretch's soul,

And from his bosom purge this black despair!

*War.* See how the pangs of death doth make

him grin.

*Sal.* Disturb him not, let him pass peaceably.

*K. Hen.* Peace to his soul, if God's pleasure be!

Lord cardinal, if thou think'st on heaven's bliss,

Hold up thy hand, make signal of thy hope.—

He dies, and makes no sign; O God, forgive him!

*War.* So bad a death argues a monstrous life.

*K. Hen.* Forbear to judge, for we are sinners all.—

Close up his eyes, and draw the curtain close;

And let us all to meditation. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Kent.—The sea-shore near Dover.

*Firing heard at sea.—Then enter from a Boat, a CAPTAIN, a MASTER, a MASTER'S-MATE, WALTER, WHITMORE, and others; with them SUFFOLK, and other Gentlemen, Prisoners.*

*Cap.* The gaudy, blabbing, and remorseful\* day

Is crept into the bosom of the sea;

And now loud-howling wolves arouse the jades

That drag the tragic melancholy night:

Who, with their drowsy, slow, and flapping

wings

Clip dead men's graves, and from their misty

jaws

Breathe foul contagious darkness in the air.

Therefore, bring forth the soldiers of our prize;

For, whilst our pinnace anchors in the Downs,

Here shall they make their ransom on the sand,

Or with their blood stain this discolour'd shore,

\* Pitiful.

Master, this prisoner freely give I thee :—  
And thou that art his mate, make boot of this :—

The other, [*Pointing to Suffolk*.] Walter Whitmore, is thy share.

1 *Gent* What is my ransom, master? Let me know.

*Master*. A thousand crowns, or else lay down your head.

*Mate*. And so much shall you give, or off goes your's.

*Cap*. What, think you much to pay two thousand crowns,

And bear the name and port of gentlemen?—  
Cut both the villains' throats;—for die you shall;

The lives of those which we have lost in fight.  
Cannot be counterpoised with such a petty sum.

1 *Gent* I'll give it, Sir; and therefore spare my life.

2 *Gent*. And so will I, and write home for it straight.

*Whit*. I lost mine eye in laying the prize aboard,

And therefore to revenge it, shalt thou die;

• And so should these, if I might have my will.

*Cap*. Be not so rash; take ransom, let him live.

*Suf*. Look on my George. I am a gentleman;

Rate me at what thou wilt, thou shalt be paid.

*Whit*. And so am I: my name is Walter Whitmore.

How now? Why start'st thou? What, doth death affright?

*Suf*. Thy name affrights me, in whose sound is death.

A cunning man did calculate my birth,  
And told me that by *Water* I should die:

Yet let not this make thee be bloody-minded;

Thy name is—*Gualtier*, being rightly sounded

*Whit*. *Gualter*, or *Walter*, which it is, I care not;

Ne'er yet did base dishonour blur our name,  
But with our sword we wiped away the blot;

Therefore, when merchant-like I sell revenge,  
Broke be my sword, my arms torn and detach'd,

And I proclaim'd a coward through the world!

[*Lays hold on Suffolk*.]

*Suf*. Stay, Whitmore; for thy prisoner is a prince.

The duke of Suffolk, William de la Poole.

*Whit*. The duke of Suffolk muffled up in rags!

*Suf*. Ay, but these rags are no part of the duke:

Jove sometime went disguised, and why not I?

*Cap*. But Jove was never slain, as thou shalt be.

*Suf*. Obscure and lowly swain, king Henry's blood,

The honourable blood of Lancaster,  
Must not be shed by such a jaded groom.\*

Hast thou not kiss'd thy hand, and held my stirrup?

Bare-headed plodded by my foot-cloth mule,  
And thought thee happy when I shook my head?

How often hast thou waited at my cup,  
Fed from my trencher, kneel'd down at the board,

When I have feasted with queen Margaret?  
Remember it, and let it make thee crest-fallen;

Ay, and allay this thy abortive pride:†  
How in our voiding lobby hast thou stood,  
And duly waited for my coming forth?

This hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf,  
And therefore shall it charm thy riotous tongue.

*Whit*. Speak, captain, shall I stab the forlorn swain?

*Cap*. First let my words stab him, as he hath me.

*Suf*. Base slave! thy words are blunt, and so art thou.

*Cap*. Convey him hence, and in our long-boat's side

Strike off his head.

*Suf*. Thou dar'st not for thy own.

*Cap*. Yes, Poole.

*Suf*. Poole?

*Cap*. Poole? Sir Poole? lord?

Ay, kennel, puddle, sink; whose filth and dirt  
Troubles the silver spring where England drinks,

Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth,  
For swallowing the treasure of the realm;

Thy lips that kissed the queen, shall sweep the ground;

And thou that smil'dst at good duke Humphrey's death,

Against the senseless winds shall grin in vain,  
Who, in contempt, shall hiss at thee again;

And wedded be thou to the hags of hell,  
For daring to affy\* a mighty lord

Unto the daughter of a worthless king,  
Having neither subject, wealth, nor diadem.

By devilish policy art thou grown great,  
And, like ambitious Sylla, overcored

With goblets of thy mother's bleeding heart.  
By thee, Anjou and Maine were sold to France;

The false revolting Normans thorough thee,  
Di-dain to call us lord; and Picardy

Hath slain our governors, surprised our forts,  
And sent the ragged soldiers wounded home,

The princely Warwick and the Nevils all,  
Whose dreadful swords were never drawn in vain.

As hating thee, are rising up in arms;  
And now the house of York thrust from the crown,

By shameful murder of a guiltless king,  
And lofty proud encroaching tyranny,

Burns with revenging fire? whose hopeful colours  
Advance our half-faced sun, striving to shine,

Under the which is writ—*Iustus nobilitas*.  
The commons here in Kent are up in arms;

And, to conclude, reproach and beggary,  
Is crept into the palace of our king.

And all by thee.—Away! Convey him hence.

*Suf*. O that I were a god to shoot forth thunder

Upon these paltry, servile, abject drudges?  
Small things make base men proud: this villain here,

Being captain of a pinnace,† threatens more  
Than Burgulus the strong Illyrian pirate.

Drones suck not eagles' blood, but rob beehives.

It is impossible that I should die  
By such a lowly vassal as thyself.

Thy words move rage, and not remorse, in me:  
I go of message from the queen to France;

I charge thee, waft me safely cross the channel.

*Cap*. Walter,—

*Whit*. Come, Suffolk, I must waft thee to thy death.

*Suf*. *Goldus timor occupat artus*:—'Tis thee I fear.

*Whit*. Thou shalt have cause to fear, before I leave thee.

What are ye daunted now? Now will ye stoop?

1 *Gent*. My gracious lord, entreat him, speak him fair.

*Suf*. Suffolk's imperial tongue is stern and rough,

Used to command, untaught to plead for favour.  
Far be it we should honour such as these

With humble suit: no, rather let my head  
Stoop to the block, than these knees bow to any,

Save to the God of heaven and to my king;  
And sooner dance upon a bloody pole,

Than stand uncover'd to the vulgar groom.  
True nobility is exempt from fear:—

More can I bear, than you dare execute.

\* A low fellow.  
† Pride that has had birth too soon.

\* To betroth in marriage  
† A pinnace then signified a ship of small burden.

*Cap.* Hail him away, and let him talk no more.

*Suf.* Come, soldiers, show what cruelty ye can, That this my death may never be forgot! Great men oft die by vile bezonians: \* A Roman saviour and banditto slave, Murder'd sweet Tully; Brutus' bastard hand Stabb'd Julius Cæsar; savage islanders, Pompey the great; and Suffolk dies by pirates.

[*Exit Suf. with WHITMORE and others.*]

*Cap.* And us for these whose ransom we have set,

It is our pleasure one of them depart:— Therefore come you with us, and let him go. [*Exeunt all but the first GENTLEMAN.*]

*Re-enter WHITMORE with SUFFOLK'S Body.*

*Whit.* There let his head and lifeless body lie,

Until the queen his mistress bury it. [*Exit.*]

*1 Gent.* O barbarous and bloody spectacle! His body will I bear unto the king: If he revenge it not, yet will his friends; So will the queen, that living held him dear.

[*Exit with the Body.*]

SCENE II.—Blackheath.

*Enter GEORGE BEVIS, and JOHN HOLLAND.*

*Geo.* Come, and get thee a sword, though made of a lath; they have been up these two days.

*John.* They have the more need to sleep now than.

*Geo.* I tell thee, Jack Cade the clothier means to cross the commonwealth, and turn it, and set a new nap upon it.

*John.* So he had need, for 'tis threadbare. Well, I say, it was never merry world in England, since gentlemen came up.

*Geo.* O miserable age! Virtue is not regarded in handicrafts-men.

*John.* The nobility think scorn to go in leather aprons.

*Geo.* My more, the king's council are no good workmen.

*John.* True: and yet it is said,—Labour in thy vocation: which is as much to say, as,—let the magistrates be labouring men: and therefore should we be magistrates.

*Geo.* Thou hast hit it, for there's no better sign of a brave mind, than a hard hand.

*John.* I see them! I see them! There's Best's son, the tanner of Wingham;—

*Geo.* He shall have the skins of our enemies, to make dog's leather of.

*John.* And Dick the butcher,—

*Geo.* Then is sin stuck down like an ox, and inquiry's throat cut like a calf.

*John.* And Smith the weaver:—

*Geo.* Argo, their thread of life is spun.

*John.* Come, come, let's fall in with them.

*Drum.—Enter CADE, DICK the Butcher, SMITH the Weaver; and others in great number.*

*Cade.* We John Cade, so term'd of our supposed father,—

*Dick.* Or rather, of stealing a cade of herrings.† [*Aside.*]

*Cade.*—for our enemies shall fall before us, inspired with the spirit of putting down kings and princes,—Command silence.

*Dick.* Silence!

*Cade.* My father was a Mortimer,—

*Dick.* He was an honest man, and a good bricklayer. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* My mother a Plantagenet,—

*Dick.* I knew her well, she was a midwife. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* My wife descended of the Lacies,—

*Dick.* She was, indeed, a pedlar's daughter, and sold many laces. [*Aside.*]

*Smith.* But, now of late, not able to travel with her furred pack, she washes backs here at home. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* Therefore am I of an honourable house.

*Dick.* Ay, by my faith, the field is honourable; and there was he born, under a hedge; for his father had never a house, but the cade.

*Cade.* Valiant I am. [*Aside.*]

*Smith.* 'A must needs; for beggary is valiant. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* I am able to endure much.

*Dick.* No question of that; for I have seen him whipp'd three market days together. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* I fear neither sword nor fire.

*Smith.* He need not fear the sword, his coat is of proof. [*Aside.*]

*Dick.* But, methinks, he should stand in fear of fire, being bunt i'the hand for stealing of sheep. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* Be brave then; for your captain is brave, and vows reformation. There shall be, in England, seven halpenny loaves sold for a penny: the three-hoop'd pot shall have ten hoops; and I will make it felony to drink small beer: all the realm shall be in common, and in Cheap-side shall my palfrey go to grass. And, when I am king, (as king I will be)—

*All.* God save your majesty!

*Cade.* I thank you, good people:—There shall be no money; all shall eat and drink on my score; and I will apparel them all in one livery, that they may agree like brothers, and worship me their lord.

*Dick.* The first thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers.

*Cade.* Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this a lamentable thing, that of the skin of an innocent lamb should be made parchment? That parchment, being scribbled o'er, should undo a man? Some say, the bee stings; but I say, 'tis the bee's wax: for I did but seal once to a thing, and I was never mine own man since. How now? Who's there?

*Enter some, bringing in the CLERK of Chatham.*

*Smith.* The clerk of Chatham: he can write and read, and cast account.

*Cade.* O monstrous!

*Smith.* We took him setting of boys' copies.

*Cade.* Here's a villain!

*Smith.* He's a book in his pocket, with red letters in't.

*Cade.* Nay, then he is a conjurer.

*Dick.* Nay, he can make obligations, and write court-hand.

*Cade.* I am sorry for't: the man is a proper man, on mine honour; unless I find him guilty, he shall not die.—Come hither, sirrah, I must examine thee: What is thy name?

*Clerk.* Emmanuel.

*Dick.* They use to write it on the top of letters:—'Twill go hard with you.

*Cade.* Let me alone:—Dost thou use to write thy name? or hast thou a mark to thyself, like a honest plain-dealing man?

*Clerk.* Sir, I thank God, I have been so well brought up, that I can write my name.

*All.* He hath confess'd: away with him; he's a villain and a traitor.

*Cade.* Away with him, I say: hang him with his pen and inkhorn about his neck:

[*Exeunt some with the CLERK.*]

*Enter MICHAEL.*

*Mich.* Where's our general?

*Cade.* Here I am, thou particular fellow.

*Mich.* Fly, fly, fly! Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother are hard by, with the king's forces.

*Cade.* Stand, villain, stand, or I'll fell thee

\* Low price.

† A barrel of herrings.

down: he shall be encounter'd with a man as good as himself: he is but a knight, is 'a?

*Mich. No.*

*Cade.* To equal him I will make myself a knight presently; rise up Sir John Mortimer. Now have at him.

*Enter Sir HUMPHREY STAFFORD, and WILLIAM his Brother, with Drum and Forces.*

*Staf.* Rebellious hinds, the filth and scum of Kent,  
Mark'd for the gallows,—lay your weapons down,

Home to your cottages, forsake this groom:  
The king is merciful if you revolt.

*W. Staf.* But angry, wrathful, and inclined to blood,  
If you go forward: therefore yield, or die.

*Cade.* As for these silken-coated slaves, I pass not;

It is to you, good people, that I speak,  
O'er whom, in time to come, I hope to reign;  
For I am rightful heir unto the crown.

*Staf.* Villain, thy father was a plasterer;  
And thou thyself a sheerman, art thou not?

*Cade.* And Adam was a gardenier.  
*W. Staf.* And what of that?  
*Cade.* Marry, this:—Edmund Mortimer, earl of March,  
Married the duke of Clarence's daughter; did he not?

*Staf.* Ay, Sir.

*Cade.* By her he had two children at one birth.

*W. Staf.* That's false.

*Cade.* Ay, there's the question; but I say 'tis true:

The elder of them, being put to nurse,  
Was by a beggar-woman stolen away:  
And, ignorant of his birth and parentage,  
Became a bricklayer when he came to age:  
His son am I; deny it if you can.

*Dick.* Nay, 'tis too true; therefore he shall be king.

*Smith.* Sir, he made a chimney in my father's house, and the bricks are alive at this day to testify it; therefore, deny it not.

*Staf.* And will you credit this base drudge's words,

That speaks he knows not what?

*All.* Ay, marry, will we; therefore get ye gone.

*W. Staf.* Jack Cade, the duke of York hath taught you this.

*Cade.* He lies, for I invented it myself.  
[*Aside.*—Go to, Sirrah, tell the king from me, that for his father's sake, Henry the Fifth, in whose times boys went to span-counter for French crowns, I am content he shall reign; but I'll be protector over him.

*Dick.* And, furthermore, we'll have the lord Say's head, for selling the dukedom of Maine.

*Cade.* And good reason; for thereby is England main'd, and fain to go with a staff, but that my puissance holds it up. Fellow kings, I tell you, that that lord Say hath gelded the commonwealth, and made it a eunuch; and more than that, he can speak French, and therefore he is a traitor.

*Staf.* O gross and miserable ignorance!

*Cade.* Nay, answer, if you can: the Frenchmen are our enemies: go to then, I ask but this; can he that speaks with the tongue of an enemy, be a good counsellor, or no?

*All.* No, no; and therefore, we'll have his head.

*W. Staf.* Well, seeing gentle words will not prevail,

Assail them with the army of the king.

*Staf.* Herald, away: and, throughout every town

Proclaim them traitors that are up with Cade;  
That those which fly before the battle ends,  
May, even in their wives' and children's sight,  
Be hang'd up for example at their doors:—  
And you, that be the king's friends, follow me.

[*Exeunt the two STAFFORDS and Forces.*

*Cade.* And you, that love the commons, follow me.—

Now show yourselves men, 'tis for liberty.  
We will not leave one lord, one gentleman:  
Spare none, but such as go in clouted shoon;\*  
For they are thrifty honest men, and such  
As would (but that they dare not) take our parts.

*Dick.* They are all in order, and march towards us.

*Cade.* But then are we in order, when we are most out of order. Come, march forward.

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III.—Another part of Blackheath.

*Alarums.—The two Parties enter, and fight, and both the STAFFORDS are slain.*

*Cade.* Where's Dick, the butcher of Ashford?  
*Dick.* Here, Sir.

*Cade.* They tell before thee like sheep and oxen, and thou behavedst thyself as if thou hadst been in thine own slaughter-house: therefore thus will I reward thee.—The Lent shall be as long again as it is; and thou shalt have a licence to kill for a hundred, lacking one.

*Dick.* I desire no more.

*Cade.* And to speak truth, thou deservest no less. This monument of the victory will I bear; and the bodies shall be dragg'd at my horse's heels, till I do come to London, where we will have the mayor's sword borne before us.

*Dick.* If we mean to thrive and do good, break open the jails, and let out the prisoners.

*Cade.* Fear not that, I warrant thee. Come, let's march towards London.

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE IV.—London.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter King HENRY, reading a Supplication; the duke of BUCKINGHAM, and Lord SAY with him: at a distance, Queen MARGARET, mourning over SUFFOLK's head.*

*Q. Mar.* Oft have I heard—that grief softens the mind,

And makes it tearful and degenerate;  
Think therefore on revenge, and cease to weep.

But who can cease to weep, and look on this? Here may his head lie on my throbbing breast: But where's the body that I should embrace?

*Buck.* What answer makes your grace to the rebel's supplication?

*K. Hen.* I'll send some holy bishop to entreat:

For God forbid, so many simple souls Should perish by the sword! And I myself, Rather than bloody war shall cut them short, Will parley with Jack Cade their general.— But stay, I'll read it over once again.

*Q. Mar.* Ah! barbarous villains! Hath this lovely face,

Rul'd like a wandering planet over me: † And could it not enforce them to relent, That were unworthy to behold the same?

*K. Hen.* Lord Say, Jack Cade hath sworn to have thy head.

*Say.* Ay, but I hope your highness shall have his.

\* Shoes.

† Predominated irresistibly over my passions; as the planets over those born under their influence.

\* I pay them no regard.

*K. Hen.* How now, madam! Still  
Lamenting and mourning for Suffolk's death?  
I fear, my love, if that I had been dead,  
Thou would'st not have mourn'd so much for  
me.

*Q. Mar.* No, my love, I should not mourn  
but die for thee.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*K. Hen.* How now! What news? Why  
comest thou in such haste?

*Mes.* The rebels are in Southwark; Fly, my  
lord!

Jack Cade proclaims himself Lord Mortimer,  
Descended from the duke of Clarence' house;  
And calls your grace usurper openly,  
And vows to crown himself in Westminster.  
His army is a ragged multitude  
Of hinds and peasants, rude and merciless:  
Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother's death  
Hath given them heart and courage to pro-  
ceed:

All scholars, lawyers, courtiers, gentlemen,  
They call false caterpillars, and intend their  
death.

*K. Hen.* O graceless men!—They know not  
what they do.

*Buck.* My gracious lord, retire to Kenel-  
worth,

Until a power be raised to put them down.

*Q. Mar.* Ah! I were the duke of Suffolk now  
alive,

These Kentish rebels would be soon appeased.

*K. Hen.* Lord Say, the traitors bate thee,  
Therefore away with us to Kenelworth.

*Say.* So might your grace's person be in  
danger:

The sight of me is odious in their eyes:  
And therefore in this city, will I stay,  
And live alone as secret as I may.

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

*2 Mes.* Jack Cade hath gotten London-bridge;  
the citizens

Fly and forsake their houses:  
The rascal people, thirsting after prey,  
Join with the traitor; and they jointly swear,  
To spoil the city, and your royal court.

*Buck.* Then linger not, my lord: away, take  
horse!

*K. Hen.* Come, Margaret; God, our hope,  
will succour us.

*Q. Mar.* My hope is gone, now Suffolk is de-  
ceased.

*K. Hen.* Farewell, my lord; trust not the  
Kentish rebels.

[*To LORD SAY.*]

*Buck.* Trust nobody, for fear you be be-  
tray'd.

*Say.* The trust I have is in mine innocence,  
And therefore am I bold and resolute.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—The same.—The Tower.

*Enter Lord SCALES, and others, on the Walls.*  
—Then enter certain CITIZENS below.

*Scales.* How now? Is Jack Cade slain?

*1 Cit.* No, my lord, nor likely to be slain;  
for they have won the bridge, killing all  
that withstand them: the lord mayor craves aid  
of your honour from the Tower, to defend the  
city from the rebels.

*Scales.* Such aid as I can spare, you shall  
command;

But I am troubled here with them myself;  
The rebels have assay'd to win the Tower  
But get you to Smithfield, and gather news.  
And thither I will send you Matthew Gough:  
Fight for your king, your country, and your  
lives;

And so farewell, for I must hence again.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—The same.—Cannon Street.

*Enter JACK CADE and his Followers.—He  
strikes his Staff on London-stone.*

*Cade.* Now is Mortimer lord of this city.  
And here, sitting upon London-stone, I charge  
and command, that of the city's cost, the pis-  
sing-conduit run nothing but claret wine this  
first year of our reign. And now, henceforward  
it shall be treason for any that calls me other  
than lord Mortimer.

*Enter a SOLDIER, running.*

*Sold.* Jack Cade! Jack Cade!

*Cade.* Knock him down there.

[*They kill him.*]  
*Smith.* If this fellow be wise, he'll never call  
you Jack Cade more; I think he hath a very fair  
warning.

*Dick.* My lord, there's an army gather'd to-  
gether in Smithfield.

*Cade.* Come then, let's go fight with them:  
but first, go and set London-bridge on fire; and,  
if you can, burn down the Tower too. Come,  
let's away. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—The same.—Smithfield.

*Alarum.—Enter, on one side, CADE and his  
Company; on the other, Citizens and the  
King's Forces, headed by MATTHEW GOUGH.*  
—They fight; the Citizens are routed, and  
MATTHEW GOUGH is slain.

*Cade.* So, Sirs!—Now go some and pull  
down the Savoy; others to the inns of court;  
down with them all.

*Dick.* I have a suit unto your lordship.

*Cade.* Be it a lordship, thou shalt have 'it for  
that word.

*Dick.* Only that the laws of England may  
come out of your mouth.

*John.* Mass, 'twill be sore law then; for he  
was thrust in the mouth with a spear, and 'tis  
not whole yet.

*Smith.* Nay, John, it will be stinking law;  
for his breath stinks with eating roasted  
cheese. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* I have thought upon it, it shall be so.  
Away, burn all the records of the realm; my  
mouth shall be the parliament of England.

*John.* Then we are like to have biting sta-  
tutes, unless his teeth be pull'd out. [*Aside.*]

*Cade.* And henceforward all things shall be  
in common.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mes.* My lord, a prize, a prize! Here's the  
lord Say, which sold the towns in France; he  
that made us pay one and twenty fifteens,  
and one shilling to the pound, the last sub-  
sidy.

*Enter GEORGE BEVIS, with the Lord SAY.*

*Cade.* Well, he shall be beheaded for it ten  
times.—Ah! thou say'st thou serge, nay, thou  
buckram lord! Now art thou within point  
blank of our jurisdiction legal. What canst thou  
answer to my majesty, for giving up of Nor-  
mandy unto monsieur Basinecu, the dauphin of  
France? For it known unto thee by these pre-  
sence of lord Mortimer, that I am the besom  
that must sweep the court clean of such filth as  
thou art. Thou hast most traitorously corrupted  
the youth of the realm, in erecting a grammar-  
school; and whereas, before, our forefathers  
had no other books but the score and the tally,  
thou hast caused printing to be used; and, con-  
trary to the king, his crown and dignity, thou  
hast built a paper-mill. It will be proved to thy  
face that thou hast men about thee, that usually  
talk of a noun and a verb; and such abomina-

\* A fifteen was the fifteenth part of all the moveables,  
or personal property, of each subject  
† Say was a kind of serge.

ble words, as no Christian ear can endure to hear. Thou hast appointed justices of peace, to call poor men before them about matters they were not able to answer. Moreover, thou hast put them in prison; and, because they could not read, thou hast hanged them;\* when, in deed, only for that cause they have been most worthy to live. Thou dost ride on a foot-cloth,† dost thou not?

Say. What of that?

Cade. Marry, thou oughtest not to let thy horse wear a cloak, when honest men than thou go in their hose and doublets.

Dick. And work in their shirt too; as myself, for example, that am a butcher.

Say. You men of Kent,—

Dick. What say you of Kent?

Say. Nothing but this: 'Tis *bona terra, mala gens*.

Cade. Away with him, away with him! he speaks Latin.

Say. Hear me but speak, and bear me where you will.

Kent, in the commentaries Caesar writ, Is term'd the civil<sup>st</sup> place of all this isle; Sacred is the country, because full of riches; The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy; Which makes me hope you are not void of pity.

I sold not Mame, I lost not Normandy; Yet, to recover them, would lose my life. Justice with favour have I always done; Prayers and tears have mov'd me, gifts could never.

When have I aught exacted at your hands, Kent to maintain, the king, the realm, and you? Large gifts have I bestow'd on learned clerks, Because my book prefer'd me to the king; And—seeing ignorance is the curse of God, Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to heaven,—

Unless you be possess'd With devilish spirits, You cannot but forbear to murder me. This tongue hath paileys unto foreign kings For your behoof,—

Cade. Tut! When struck'st thou one blow in the field?

Say. Great men have reaching hands: oft have I struck

Those that I never saw, and struck them dead.

Geo. O monstrous coward! what, to come behind folks?

Say. These cheeks are pale for † watching for your good.

Cade. Give him a box o'the ear, and that will make 'em red again.

Say. Long sitting to determine poor men's causes

Hath made me full of sickness and diseases.

Cade. Ye shall have a hempen caudle then, and the pap of a batchet.

Dick. Why dost thou quiver, man?

Say. The palsy, and not fear, provoketh me.

Cade. Nay, he nods at us; as who should say, I'll be even with you. I'll see if his head will stand steadier on a pole, or no: Take him away, and behead him.

Say. Tell me, wherein I have offended most? Have I affected wealth, or honour? Speak? Are my chests fill'd up with extorted gold? Is my apparel sumptuous to behold? Whom have I injured, that ye seek my death? These hands are free from guiltless blood-shedding,‡

This breast from barbouling foul deceitful thoughts.

O let me live!

Cade. I feel remorse in myself with his words:

but I'll bridle it; he shall die, as it be but for plucking so well for his life. Away with him! he has a familiar\* under his tongue; he speaks not o' God's name. Go, take him away! I say, and strike off his head presently: and then break into his son-in-law's house, Sir James Cromer, and strike off his head, and bring them both upon two poles hither.

All. It shall be done.

Say. Ah! countrymen, if, when you make your prayers, God should be so obdurate as yourselves, How would it fare with your departed souls? And therefore yet relent, and save my life.

Cade. Away with him, and do as I command ye. [Exeunt some with Lord Say.]

The proudest peer in the realm shall not wear a head on his shoulders, unless he pay me tribute; there shall not a maid be married, but she shall pay to me her maidenhead ere they have it: men shall hold of me *in capite*; and we charge and command that their wives be as free as heart can wish, or tongue can tell.

Dick. My lord, when shall we go to Chertsey-side, and take up commodities upon our bills?

Cade. Marry, presently.

All. O brave!

Re-enter Rebels with the Heads of Lords Say and his Son-in-law.

Cade. But is not this braver!—Let them kiss one another,‡ for they loved well, when they were alive. Now part them again, lest they consult about the giving up of some more towns in France. Soldiers, deter the spoil of the city until night: for with these horns before us, instead of maces, will we ride through the streets; and at every corner have them kiss—away! [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE VIII.—Southwark.

Alarum. Enter CADE, and all his Rabblement.

Cade. Up Fash street! Down Saint Magnus' corner! Kill and knock down! Throw them into Thames.

[A Parley sounded, then a Retreat.] What noise is this I hear? Dare any be so bold to sound retreat or parley, when I command them kill?

Enter BUCKINGHAM, and old CLIFFORD, with Forces.

Buck. Ay, here they be that dare and will disturb thee:

Know, Cade, we come ambassadors from the king

Unto the commons, whom thou hast misled; And here pronounce free pardon to them all, that will forsake thee, and go home in peace.

Clif. What say ye, countrymen? will ye relent,

And yield to mercy whilst 'tis offer'd you; Or let a rabble lead you to your deaths?

Who loves the king, and will embrace his pardon,

Fling up his cap, and say—God save his majesty!

Who hateth him, and honours not his father, Henry the fifth, that made all France to quake, Shake he his weapon at us, and pass by.

All. God save the king! God save the king!

Cade. What, Buckingham and Clifford, are ye so brave?—And you, base peasants, do ye believe him? Will you needs be hang'd with your pardons about your necks? Hath my sword therefore broke through London gates, that you should leave me at the White Hart in Southwark? I thought ye would never have given out these arms, till you had recover'd your ancient freedom: but you are all recreants and dastards.

\* I.e. They were hanged because they could not claim the benefit of the clergy.

† A foot-cloth was a kind of housings, which covered the body of the horse.

‡ I.e. These hands are free from shedding guiltless blood.

\* A demon who was supposed to attend at call.

‡ This piece of barbarity is recorded by Holinshed.

tards; and delight to live in slavery to the nobility. Let them break your backs with burdens, take your houses over your heads, ravish your wives and daughters before your faces: For me,—I'll make shift for one: and so—God's curse light upon you all!

*All.* We'll follow Cade, we'll follow Cade.

*Clif.* Is Cade the son of Henry the Fifth, That thus you do exclaim you'll go with him? Will he conduct you through the heart of France,

And make the meanest of you earls and dukes! Alas, he hath no home, no place to fly to; Nor knows he how to live, but by the spoil, Unless by robbing of your friends and us. We'll not a shame, that whilst you live at jar, The fearful French, whom you late vanquished, Should make a stait o'er seas, and vanquish you?

Methinks, already, in this civil broil, I see them lording it in London streets, Crying—*Villagours!* unto all they meet. Better ten thousand base-born Cades miscarry, Than you should stoop unto a Frenchman's mercy.

To France, to France, and get what you have lost;

Spare England, for it is your native coast: Henry hath money, you are strong and manly; God on our side, doubt not of victory.

*All.* A Clifford! A Clifford! We'll follow the king, and Clifford.

*Cade.* Was ever feather so lightly blown to and fro, as this multitude? The name of Henry the Fifth hales them to a hundred mischiefs, and makes them leave me desolate. I see them lay their heads together, to surprise me: my sword make way for me, for here is no staying.—In despite of the devil and hell have through the very midst of you! And heavens and honour be witness, that no want of resolution in me, but only my followers' base and ignominious treasons, makes me betake me to my heels.

[*Exit.*]

*Buck.* What, is he fled! Go some, and follow him;

And he that brings his head unto the king, Shall have a thousand crowns for his reward—

[*Exitunt some of them.*]

Follow me, soldiers; we'll devise a mean To reconcile you all unto the king. [*Exitunt.*]

SCENE IX.—*Kenelworth Castle.*

*Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, and SOMERSET, on the Terrace of the Castle.*

*K. Hen.* Was ever king, that joy'd an earthly throne,

And could command no more content than I? No sooner was I crept out of my cradle, But I was made a king at nine months old: Was never subject long'd to be a king, As I do long and wish to be a subject.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM and CLIFFORD.*

*Buck.* Health and glad tidings to your majesty!

*K. Hen.* Why, Buckingham, is the traitor Cade surprized? Or is he but retired to make him strong?

*Enter below, a great number of CADE's Followers, with Halberds, about their Necks.*

*Clif.* He's fled, my lord, and all his powers do yield;

And humbly thus with halberds on their necks, Expect your highness' doom, of life or death.

*K. Hen.* Then, heaven, set ope thy everlasting gates,

To entertain my vows of thanks and praise!—Soldiers, this day have you redeem'd your lives, And show'd how well you love your prince and country:

Continue still in this so good a mind, And Henry, though he be unfortunate,

Assure yourselves, will never be unkind: And so, with thanks, and pardon to you all, I do dismiss you to your several countries.

*All.* God save the king! God save the king!

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Please it your grace to be advertised, The duke of York is newly come from Ireland; And with a puissant and a mighty power Of gallowglasses and stout kernes, Is marching hitherward in proud array; And still proclaimeth, as he comes along, His arms are only to remove from thee The duke of Somerset, whom he terms a traitor.

*K. Hen.* Thus stands my state, 'twixt Cade and York distress'd;

Like to a ship, that, having escaped a tempest, Is straightway calm'd, and boarded with a pirate: But now\* is Cade driven back, his men dispersed;

And now is York in arms to second him.—I pray thee, Buckingham, go and meet him; And ask him, what's the reason of these arms. Tell him I'll send duke Edmund to the Tower;—And, Somerset, we will commit these luther, Until his army be dismiss'd from him.

*Som.* My lord, I'll yield myself to prison willingly. Or unto death, to do my country good.

*K. Hen.* In any case, be not too rough in terms; [*Guage.*]

For he is fierce, and cannot brook hard language. *Buck.* I will, my lord; and doubt not so to deal

As all things shall redound unto your good.

*K. Hen.* Come, wife, let's in, and learn to govern better;

For yet may England curse my wretched reign. [*Exitunt.*]

SCENE X.—*Kent.—IDEN's Garden.*

*Enter CADE.*

*Cade.* Tie on ambition! Fie on myself; that have a sword, and yet am ready to famish! These five days have I hid me in these woods; and durst not peep out, for all the country is layed for me; but now am I so hungry, that I might have a lease of my life for a thousand years, I could stay no longer. Wherefore, on a brick-wall have I climbed into this garden; to see if I can eat grass, or pick a sallat another while, which is not amiss to cool a man's stomach this hot weather. And I think this word sallat was born to do me good for many a time, but for a sallat, my brain-pan had been cleft with a brown bill; and many a time, when I have been dry, and bravely marching, it hath serv'd me instead of a quart-pot to drink in; and now the word sallat must serve me to feed on.

*Enter IDEN, with Servants.*

*Iden.* Lord, who would live turmoiled in the court,

And may enjoy such quiet walks as these! This small inheritance, my father left me, Contenteth me, and is worth a monarchy. I seek not to wax great by other's waning; Or gather wealth, I care not with what envy; Sufficeth, that I have maintains my state, And sends the poor well pleased from my gate.

*Cade.* Here's the lord of the soil come to seize me for a stray, for entering his fee simple without leave. Ah! villain thou wilt betray me, and get a thousand crowns of the king for carrying my head to him; but I'll make thee eat iron like an ostridge, and swallow my sword like a great pin, ere thou and I part.

*Iden.* Why, rude companion, whatso'er thou be,

\* Only just now.

† A kind of helmet.





# Scene I. SECOND PART OF KING HENRY VI.

515

*K. Hen.* The head of Cade?—Great God, how just art thou!—

O let me view his visage being dead,  
That living wrought me such exceeding trouble.  
Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that slew him?

*Iden.* I was, an't like your majesty.

\* *K. Hen.* How art thou call'd? and what is thy degree?

*Iden.* Alexander Iden, that's my name;

A poor esquire of Kent, that loves his king.  
*Back.* So please it you, my lord, 'twere not amiss

He were created knight for his good service.

*K. Hen.* Iden, kneel down; [*He kneels.*]  
Rise up a knight.

We give thee for reward a thousand marks;

And will that thou henceforth attend on us.

*Iden.* May Iden live to merit such a bounty,  
And never live but true unto his liege!

*K. Hen.* See, Buckingham! Somerset comes with the queen;

Go, bid her hide him quickly from the duke.

*Enter Queen MARGARET and SOMERSET.*

*Q. Mar.* For thousand Yorks he shall not hide his head,

But boldly stand, and front him to his face.

*York.* How now! Is Somerset at liberty?  
Then, York, unloose thy long-imprison'd thoughts,

And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart.  
Shall I endure the sight of Somerset?—

False king! why hast thou broken faith with me,  
Knowing how hardly I can brook abuse?

King did I call thee? no, thou art not king;  
Not fit to govern and rule multitudes,

Which da'st not, no, nor canst not rule a traitor,  
That head of thine doth not become a crown;

Thy hand is made to grasp a palmer's staff,  
And not to grace an awful princely sceptre:

That gold must round enlure these brows of mine;

Whose smile and frown, like to Achilles' spear,  
Is able with the change to kill and cure.

Here is a hand to hold a sceptre up,  
And with the same to act controuling laws.

Give place; by Heaven, thou shalt rule no more  
'Till him, whom heaven created for thy ruler.

*Som.* O monstrous traitor!—I arrest thee,  
*York,*

Of capital treason 'gainst the king and crown:  
Obey, audacious traitor; kneel for grace.

*York.* Would'st have me kneel? first let me ask of these,

If they can brook I bow a knee to man.—  
Strah, call in my sons to be my bail;

[*Exit an ATTENDANT.*]  
I know, ere they will have me go to ward,\*

They'll pawn their swords for my enfranchisement.

*Q. Mar.* Call hither Clifford; bid him come  
To say, if that the bastard boys of York [amaun,

Shall be the surety for their traitor father.  
*York.* O blood-bespotted Neapolitan,

Outcast of Naples, England's bloody scourge!  
The sons of York, thy betters in their birth,

Shall be their father's bail; and bane to those  
That for my surety will refuse the boys.

*Enter EDWARD and RICHARD PLANTAGENET,*  
*with Forces, at one side; at the other, with*

*Forces also, old CLIFFORD and his Son.*  
See where they come; I'll warrant they'll make it good.

*Q. Mar.* And here comes Clifford to deny their bail.

*Clif.* Health and all happiness to my lord the king!

*York.* I thank thee, Clifford; Say, what news with thee?

Nay, do not fright us with an angry look:  
We are thy sovereign, Clifford, kneel again;

For thy mistaking so, we pardon thee.

\* Custody, confinement.

*Clif.* This is my king, York, I do not mistake;

But thou mistak'st me much, to think I do:—  
To Bedlam with him! is the man grown mad?

*K. Hen.* Ay, Clifford; a bedlam and ambitious humour

Makes him oppose himself against his king.  
*Clif.* He is a traitor; let him to the Tower,

And chop away that factious pate of his.

*Q. Mar.* He is arrested, but will not obey;  
His sons, he says, shall give their words for him.

*York.* Will you not, sons?

*Edw.* Ay, noble father, if our words will serve.

*Rich.* And if words will not, then our weapons shall.

*Clif.* Why, what a brood of traitors have we here!

*York.* Look in a glass, and call thy image so;  
I am thy king, and thou a false-heart traitor.—

Call hither to the stake my two brave bears,\*  
That, with the very shaking of their chains,

They may astonish these fell lurking curs;  
Bid Salisbury and Warwick come to me.

*Drums. Enter WARWICK and SALISBURY,*  
*with Forces.*

*Clif.* Are these thy bears? we'll bait thy bears to death,

And manacle the bear-ward † in their chains,  
If thou da'st bring them to the bathing-place.

*Rich.* Oft have I seen a hot o'erweening cur  
Run back and bite, because he was withlaid:

Who, being suffer'd with the bear's fell paw,  
Hath clapp'd his tail between his legs, and cry'd:

And such a piece of service will you do,  
If you oppose yourselves to match lord War-

*Clif.* Hence, heap of wrath, foul indigested lump,

As crooked in thy manners as thy shape!

*York.* Nay, we shall heat you thoroughly anon.

*Clif.* Take heed, lest by your heat you burn yourselves.

*K. Hen.* Why, Warwick, hath thy knee forgot to bow?—

Old Salisbury,—shame to thy silver hair,  
Thou mad misleader of thy brain-sick son!—

What, wilt thou on thy death-bed play the ruffian,

And seek for sorrow with thy spectacles?  
O where is faith! O where is loyalty!

If it be banish'd from the frosty head,  
Where shall it find a harbour in the earth?—

Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war,  
And shame thine honourable age with blood?

Why art thou old, and want'st experience?  
Or wherefore dost abuse it, if thou hast it?

For shame! in duty bend thy knee to me,  
That bows unto the grave with mickle age.

*Sal.* My lord, I have consider'd with myself  
The title of this most renowned duke;

And, in my conscience, do repute his grace  
The rightful heir to England's royal seat.

*K. Hen.* Hast thou not sworn allegiance unto me?

*Sal.* I have.

*K. Hen.* Canst thou dispense with heaven for such an oath?

*Sal.* It is great sin, to swear unto a sin;  
But greater sin, to keep a sinful oath.

Who can be bound by any solemn vow  
To do a murderous deed, to rob a man,

To force a spotless virgin's chastity,  
To leave the orphan of his patrimony,

To wring the widow from her custom'd right;  
And have no other reason for this wrong,

But that he was bound by a solemn oath?

*Q. Mar.* A subtle traitor needs no sophister.

\* The Nevils, heirs of Warwick, had a bear and raggot staff for their crest.  
† Bear-keeper.

*K. Hen.* Call Buckingham, and bid him arm himself.

*York.* Call Buckingham, and all the friends thou hast,

I am resolv'd for death or dignity.

*Clif.* The first I warrant thee, if dreams prove true,

*War.* You were best to go to bed, and dream again,

To keep thee from the tempest of the field.

*Clif.* I am resolv'd to bear a greater storm,

Than any thou canst conjure up to-day;

And that I'll write upon thy burgonet,

Might I but know thee by thy household badge.

*War.* Now, by my father's badge, old Nevil's crest.

The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged staff,  
This day I'll wear aloft my burgonet,\*

(As on a mountain-top the cedar shows,  
That keeps his leaves in spite of any storm,)

Even to affright thee with the view thereof.

*Clif.* And from thy burgonet I'll rend thy bear,  
And tread it under foot with all contempt,

Despite the bear-ward that protects the bear.

*Y. Clif.* And so to arms, victorious father,

To quell the rebels, and their 'complices.

*Rich.* Fie! charity, for shame! I speak not in spite,

For you shall sup with *Jesu Christ* to-night.

*Y. Clif.* Foul stigmatic,† that's more than thou canst tell.

*Rich.* If not in heaven, you'll surely sup in hell.  
[*Exeunt severally.*]

### SCENE II.—Saint Albans.

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter WARWICK.*

*War.* Clifford of Cumberland, 'tis Warwick calls!

And if thou dost not hide thee from the bear,

Now, when the angry trumpet sounds alarm,

And dead men's cries do fill the empty air,

Clifford, I say, come forth and fight with me!

Proud northern lord, Clifford of Cumberland,

Warwick is hoarse with calling thee to arms.

*Enter YORK.*

How now, my noble lord? what, all a-foot?

*York.* The deadly-handed Clifford slew my steed;

But match to match I have encounter'd him,

And made a prey for carrion kites and crows

Even of the bonny beast he lov'd so well.

*Enter CLIFFORD,*

*War.* Of one or both of us the time is come.

*York.* Hold, Warwick, seek thee out some other chase,

For I myself must hunt this deer to death.

*War.* Then, nobly, York; 'tis for a crown thou fight'st.—

As I intend, Clifford, to thrive to-day,

It grieves my soul to leave thee unassail'd.

[*Exit WARWICK.*]

*Clif.* What seest thou in me, York? why dost thou pause?

*York.* With thy brave bearing should I be in love,

But that thou art so fast mine enemy.

*Clif.* Nor should thy prowess want praise and esteem,

But that 'tis shown ignobly and in treason.

*York.* So let it help me now against thy sword,

As I in justice and true right express it!

*Clif.* My soul and body on the action both!—

*York.* A dreadful lay!†—address thee instantly.

[*They fight, and CLIFFORD falls.*]

*Clif.* *La fin couronne les auvres.* [*Dies.*]

\* Helmet.

† One on whom nature hath set a mark of deformity, a stigma. † A dreadful wager; a tremendous stake.

*York.* Thus war hath given thee peace, for thou art still.

Peace with his soul, heaven, if it be thy will!  
[*Exit.*]

*Enter young CLIFFORD.*

*Y. Clif.* Shame and confusion! all is on the rout!

Fear frames disorder, and disorder wounds  
Where it should guard. O war, thou son of

hell,

Whom angry heavens do make their minister,

Throw in the frozen bosoms of our part

Hot coals of vengeance!—Let no soldier fly:

He that is truly dedicate to war,

Hath no self-love; nor he, that loves himself,

Hath not essentially, but by circumstance,

The name of valour.—O let the vile world end,  
[*Seeing his dead Father.*]

And the premised\* flames of the last day

Knit earth and heaven together!

Now let the general trumpet blow his blast,

Particularities and petty sounds

To cease!†—Vast thou ordain'd, dear father,

To lose thy youth in peace, and to achieve;

The silver livery of advised‡ age;

And, in thy reverence and thy chair-days thus

To die in Russian battle?—Even at this sight,

My heart is turn'd to stone; and, while, 'tis mine,

It shall be stony. York not our old men spares;

No more will I their babes: tears virginal

Shall be to me even as the dew to fire;

And beauty, that the tyrant oft reclaims,

Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax.

Henceforth, I will not have to do with pity:

Meet I an infant of the house of York,

Into as many gobbets will I cut it,

As wild Medea young Absyrtus did:

In cruelty will I seek out my fame.

Come, thou new ruin of old Clifford's house;

[*Taking up the Body.*]

As did Æneas old Anchises bear,

So bear I thee upon my manly shoulders;

But then Æneas bare a living load,

Nothing so heavy as these woes of mine.  
[*Exit.*]

*Enter RICHARD PLANTAGENET and SOMERSET, fighting, and SOMERSET is killed.*

*Rich.* So, lie thou there;—

For, underneath an alehouse' paltry sign,

The Castle in Saint Alban's, Somerset

Hath made the wizard famous in his death.—

Sword, hold thy temper; heart, be wrathful

still;

Priests pray for enemies, but princes kill.  
[*Exit.*]

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, and others, retreating.*

*Q. Mar.* Away, my lord! you are slow; for shame away!

*K. Hen.* Can we outrun the heavens? good Margaret, stay.

*Q. Mar.* What are you made of? you'll not fight nor fly;

Now is it manhood, wisdom, and defence,

To give the enemy way; and to secure us

By what we can, which can no more but fly.  
[*Alarums afar off.*]

If you be ta'en, we then should see the bottom

Of all our fortunes: but if we haply scape,

(As well we may, if not through your neglect,)

We shall to London get; where you are lov'd;

And where this breach, now in our fortunes

made,

May readily be stopp'd.

\* Sent before their time.

† Obtain.

‡ Stop.

§ Considerate.

*Enter young CLIFFORD.*

*Y. Cliff.* But that my heart's on future mischief set,  
I would speak blasphemy ere bid you fly;  
But fly you must; incurable discomfit  
Reigns in the hearts of all our present parts.\*  
Away, for your relief! and we will live  
To see their day, and them our fortune give:  
Away, my lord, away! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Fields near Saint Albans.

*Alarum: Retreat. Flourish; then enter YORK, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, WARWICK, and Soldiers, with Drum and Colours.*

*York.* Of Salisbury, who can report of him;  
That winter lion, who in rage forgets  
Aged contusions and all brush of time; †  
And, like a gallant in the brow of youth, ‡  
Repairs him with occasion? this happy day  
Is not itself, nor have we won one foot,  
If Salisbury be lost.

*Rich.* My noble father,  
Three times to-day I help him to his horse,  
Three times bestrid him, thrice I led him off,  
Persuaded him from any further act:

\* For parties.

† *I. e.* The gradual detrition of time.

‡ *I. e.* The height of youth: the brow of a hill is its summit.

But still, where danger was, still there I met him;  
And like rich hangings in a homely house,  
So was his will in his old terrible body,  
But, noble as he is, look where he comes.

*Enter SALISBURY.*

*Sal.* Now, by my sword, well hast thou fought to-day;  
By the mass, so did we all.—I thank you, Richard:  
God knows how long it is I have to live;  
And it hath pleas'd him, that three times to-day  
You have defended me from imminent death.—  
Well, lords, we have not got that which we have: \*  
'Tis not enough our foes are this time fled,  
Being opposites of such repairing nature. †

*York.* I know our safety is to follow them;  
For, as I hear, the king is fled to London,  
To call a present court of parliament.

Let us pursue him ere the writs go forth:—  
What says lord Warwick; shall we after them?

*War.* After them I may, before them, if we can.  
Now by my faith, lords, 'twas a glorious day;  
Saint Alban's battle, won by famous York,  
Shall be eterniz'd in all age to come.—  
Sound, drums and trumpets;—and to London all:  
And more such days as these to us befall!  
[*Exeunt.*]

\* *I. e.* We have not secured that which we have acquired.

† *I. e.* Being enemies that are likely soon to rally and recover themselves from this defeat

# THIRD PART

## OF

# KING HENRY VI.

### LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE action of this play comprehends a period of sixteen years. It commences with the events immediately succeeding the disastrous battle of St. Alban's, 1455, and concludes with the murder of King Henry VI. and the birth of Prince Edward, (afterwards Edward V.) 1471. Dr. Johnson says, "Of these three plays, I think the second the best. The truth is, they have not sufficient variety of action, for the incidents are too often of the same kind; yet many of the characters are well discriminated. King Henry and his queen, King Edward, the Duke of Gloucester, and the Earl of Warwick, are very strongly and distinctly painted."

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE SIXTH.	SIR JOHN MORTIMER, } <i>Uncles to the Duke</i>
EDWARD, Prince of Wales, his Son.	SIR HUGH MORTIMER, } <i>of York.</i>
LEWIS XI. King of France.	HENRY, Earl of Richmond, a Youth.
DUKE OF SOMERSET,	LORD RIVERS, Brother to Lady Grey.
DUKE OF EXETER,	SIR WILLIAM STANLEY.
EARL OF OXFORD,	SIR JOHN MONTGOMERY.
EARL OF NORTHUMBERLAND,	SIR JOHN SOMERVILLE.
EARL OF WESTMORELAND,	TUTOR to Rutland.
LORD CLIFFORD,	MAYOR of York.
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, Duke of York.	LIEUTENANT of the Tower.
EDWARD Earl of March, afterwards King Edward IV.	A NOBLLMAN.
EDMUND, Earl of Rutland,	TWO KEEPERS.—A HUNTSMAN.—A Son that
GEORGE, afterwards Duke of Clarence,	has killed his Father.—A Father that has
RICHARD, afterwards Duke of Gloucester.	killed his Son.
DUKE OF NORFOLK,	QUEEN MARGARET.
MARQUIS OF MONTAGUE,	LADY GREY, afterwards Queen to Edward VI.
EARL OF WARWICK,	BONA, Sister to the French Queen.
EARL OF PEMBROKE,	Soldiers, and other attendants on King Henry
LORD HASTINGS,	and King Edward, Messengers, watch-
LORD STAFFORD,	men, &c.

SCENE, during part of the third Act, in France; during all the rest of the Play, in England.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—London—The Parliament-House.

*Drums. Some Soldiers of York's party break in. Then, enter the Duke of YORK, EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and others with White Roses in their Hats.*

*War.* I wonder how the king escap'd our hands.  
*York.* While we pursued the horsemen of the He silly stole away, and left his men: North, Whereat the great lord of Northumberland, Whose warlike ears could never brook retreat, Cheer'd up the drooping army; and himself, Lord Clifford, and lord Stafford, all abreast, Charg'd our main battle's front, and, breaking in,  
 Were by the swords of common soldiers slain.

*Edw.* Lord Stafford's father, duke of Buckingham;  
 Is either slain, or wounded dangerous:  
 I cleft his beaver with a downright blow;  
 That this is true, father, behold his blood.

[*Showing his bloody Sword.*  
*Mont.* And, brother, here's the earl of Wiltshire's blood,

[*To YORK, showing his*  
 Whom I encounter'd as the battles join'd.

*Rich.* Speak thou for me, and tell them what I did,

[*Throwing down the duke of Somerset's Head.*

*York.* Richard hath best deserv'd of all my sons.—

What, is your grace dead, my lord of Somerset?

*Norf.* Such hope have all the line of John of Gaunt;

# Scene I. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI.

519

*Rich.* Thus do I hope to shake king Henry's head.

*War.* And so do I.—Victorious prince of York,

Before I see thee seated in that throne  
Which now the house of Lancaster usurps,  
I vow by heaven these eyes shall never close.  
This is the palace of the fearful king,  
And this the regal seat : possess it, York :  
For this is thine, and not king Henry's heirs.

*York.* Assist me then, sweet Warwick, and I will ;

For hither we have broken in by force.

*Norf.* We'll all assist you ; he that flies shall die.

*York.* Thanks, gentle Norfolk,—Stay by me, my lords :—

And, soldiers, stay, and lodge by me this night.

*War.* And when the king comes, offer him no violence,

Unless he seek to thrust you out by force.

*(They retire.)*

*York.* The queen, this day, here holds her parliament,

But little thinks we shall be of her council :

By words, or blows, here let us win our right.

*Rich.* Aim'd as we are, let's stay within this house.

*War.* The bloody parliament shall this be call'd,

Unless Plantagenet, duke of York, be king ;  
And bashful Henry depos'd, whose cowardice  
Hath made us by-words to our enemies.

*York.* Then leave me not, my lords : be resolute ;

I mean to take possession of my right.

*War.* Neither the king, nor he that loves him best,

The proudest he that holds up Lancaster,  
Dates stir a wing, if Warwick shake his bells. \*  
I'll plant Plantagenet, root him up who dares :—  
Resolve thee, Richard ; claim the English crown.

*[WARWICK leads YORK to the Throne, who seats himself.]*

*Flourish.* Enter King HENRY, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, WESTMORELAND, EXETER, and others, with red Roses in their Hats.

*K. Hen.* My lords, look where the sturdy rebel sits,

Even in the chair of state ! belike, he means  
*(Back'd by the power of Warwick, that false peer.)*

To aspire unto the crown, and reign as king.—  
Earl of Northumberland, he slew thy father ;  
And thine, lord Clifford ; and you both have  
vow'd revenge

On him, his sons, his favourites, and his friends.

*North.* If I be not, heavens, be reveng'd on me !

*Clif.* The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn in steel.

*West.* What, shall we suffer this ? let's pluck him down :

My heart for anger burns, I cannot brook it.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle earl of Westmoreland.

*Clif.* Patience is for poltroons, and such as he ;

He durst not sit there had your father liv'd.

My gracious lord, here in the parliament

Let us assail the family of York.

*North.* Well hast thou spoken, cousin ; be it so.

*K. Hen.* Ah ! know you not, the city favours them,

And they have troops of soldiers at their beck ?

*Etc.* But when the duke is slain, they'll quickly fly.

*K. Hen.* Far be the thought of this from Henry's heart,

To make a shambles of the parliament-house !  
Cousin of Exeter, frowns, words, and threats,  
Shall be the war that Henry means to use.—

*[They advance to the Duke]*

Thou factious duke of York, descend my throne,  
And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet ;  
I am thy sovereign.

*York.* Thou art deceiv'd, I am thine.

*Etc.* For shame, come down ; he made thee duke of York.

*York.* 'Twas my inheritance, as the earldom was.

*Etc.* Thy father was a traitor to the crown.

*War.* Exeter, thou art a traitor to the crown,  
In following this usurping Henry.

*Clif.* Whom should he follow, but his natural king ?

*War.* True, Clifford ; and that's Richard, duke of York.

*K. Hen.* And shall I stand, and thou sit in my throne ?

*York.* It must and shall be so. Content thyself.

*War.* Be duke of Lancaster, let him be king.

*West.* He is both king and duke of Lancaster :

And that the lord of Westmoreland shall maintain.

*War.* And Warwick shall disprove it. You forget,

That we are those which chas'd you from the field,

And slew your fathers, and with colours spread  
March'd through the city to the palace gates.

*North.* Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my grief ;

And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall rue it.

*West.* Plantagenet, of thee, and these thy sons,

Thy kinsmen, and thy friends, I'll have more lives,

Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

*Clif.* Urge it no more ; lest that, instead of words,

I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger,  
As shall revenge his death, before I stir.

*War.* Poor Clifford ! how I scorn his worth less threats !

*York.* Will you we show our title to the crown ?

If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.

*K. Hen.* What title hast thou, traitor, to the crown ?

Thy father was, as thou art, duke of York ;  
Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, earl of March :

I am the son of Henry the Fifth,  
Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop,

And seiz'd upon their towns and provinces.

*War.* Talk not of France, sith \* thou hast lost it all.

*K. Hen.* The lord protector lost it, and not I  
When I was crown'd, I was but nine months old.

*Rich.* You are old enough now, and yet methinks, you lose :—

Father, tear the crown from the usurper's head

*Edw.* Sweet father, do so ; set it on your head.

*Mont.* Good brother, *[To YORK.]* as thou lov'st and honour'st arms,

Let's fight it out, and not stand cavilling thus.

*Rich.* Sound drums and trumpets, and the king will fly.

*York.* Sons, peace !

*K. Hen.* Peace thou ! and give king Henry leave to speak.

*War.* Plantagenet shall speak first :—hear him, lords ;

\* Hawks had sometimes little bells hung on them, perhaps to dare the birds ; that is, fright them from them.

\* Since.

And be you silent and attentive too,  
For he that interrupts him shall not live.

*K. Hen.* Think'st thou, that I will leave my kingly throne,  
Wherein my grandsire and my father sat?  
No: first shall war unpeople this my realm;  
Ay, and their colours, often borne in France;  
And now in England, to our heart's great sorrow,

Shall be my winding sheet.—Why faint you, lords?

My title's good, and better far than his.

*War.* But prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be king.

*K. Hen.* Henry the fourth by conquest got the crown.

*York.* 'Twas by rebellion against his king.

*K. Hen.* I know not what to say; my title's weak.

Tell me, may not a king adopt an heir?

*York.* What then?

*K. Hen.* And if he may, then am I lawful king:

For Richard, in the view of many lords,

Resign'd the crown to Henry the fourth;

Whose heir my father was, and I am his.

*York.* He rose against him, being his sovereign,

And made him to resign his crown perforce.

*War.* Suppose, my lords, he did it unconstrain'd,

Think you, 'twere prejudicial to his crown? \*

*Ere.* No; for he could not so resign his crown.

But that the next heir should succeed and reign.

*K. Hen.* Art thou against us, duke of Exeter?

*Ere.* His is the right, and therefore pardon me.

*York.* Why whisper you, my lords, and answer not?

*Ere.* My conscience tells me he is lawful king.

*K. Hen.* All will revolt from me, and turn to him.

*North.* Plantagenet, for all the claim thou lay'st,

Think not that Henry shall be so depos'd.

*War.* Depos'd he shall be, in despite of all.

*North.* Thou art deceiv'd: 'tis not thy southern power,

Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,

Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud,

Can set the duke up, in despite of me.

*Clif.* King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,

Lord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence:

May that ground gape, and swallow me alive,  
Where I shall kneel to him that slew my father!

*K. Hen.* O Clifford, how thy words revive my heart!

*York.* Henry of Lancaster, resign thy crown:—

What matter you, for what conspire you, lords?

*War.* Do right unto this princely duke of York;

Or I will fill the house with armed men,

And, o'er the chair of state, where now he sits,

Write up his title with usurping blood.

[*He stamps and the Soldiers show themselves.*]

*K. Hen.* My lord of Warwick, hear me but one word:—

Let me, for this my life-time, reign as king.

*York.* Confirm the crown to me, and to mine heirs,

And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou liv'st.

*K. Hen.* I am content: Richard Plantagenet,

Enjoy the kingdom after my decease.

*Clif.* What wrong is this unto the prince your son?

*War.* What good is this to England and himself?

*West.* Base, fearful, and despairing Henry!  
*Clif.* How hast thou in ur'd both thyself and us?

*West.* I cannot stay to hear these articles.

*North.* Nor I.

*Clif.* Come, cousin, let us tell the queen these news.

*West.* Farewell, faint-hearted and degenerate king.

In whose cold blood no spark of honour bides.

*North.* Be thou a prey unto the house of York,

And die in bands for this unmanly deed!

*Clif.* In dreadful war may'st thou be overcome!

Or live in peace, abandon'd and despis'd!

[*Exeunt NORTHUMBERLAND, CLIFFORD, and WESTMORELAND.*]

*War.* Turn this way, Henry, and regard them not.

*Ere.* They seek revenge, and therefore will not yield.

*K. Hen.* Ah! Exeter:

*War.* Why should you sigh, my lord?

*K. Hen.* Not for myself, lord Warwick, but my son,

Whom I unnaturally shall disinherit.

But, be it as it may:—I here entail  
The crown to thee, and to thine heirs for ever;

Conditionally, that here thou take an oath

To cease this civil war, and, whilst I live,

To honour me as thy king and sovereign;

And neither by treason, nor hostility,

To seek to put me down and reign thyself.

*York.* This oath I willingly take, and will perform. [*Coming from the Throne.*]

*War.* Long live king Henry!—Plantagenet embrace him.

*K. Hen.* And long live thou, and these thy forward sons!

*York.* Now York and Lancaster are reconcil'd.

*Ere.* Accurs'd be he that seeks to make them foes!

[*Scenet. The Lords come forward.*]

*York.* Farewell, my gracious lord, I'll to my castle.

*War.* And I'll keep London, with my soldiers.

*Norw.* And I to Norfolk, with my followers.

*Mont.* And I unto the sea, from whence I came.

[*Exeunt YORK, and his Sons, WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, Soldiers, and Attendants.*]

*K. Hen.* And I with grief and sorrow to the court.

*Enter Queen MARGARET and the Prince of WALES.*

*Ere.* Here comes the queen, whose looks betray \* her anger:

I'll steal away.

*K. Hen.* Exeter, so will I. [*Going.*]

*Q. Mar.* Nay, go not from me, I will follow thee.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle queen, and I will stay.

*Q. Mar.* Who can be patient in such extremes?

Ah! wretched man! 'would I had died a maid,

And never seen thee, never borne thee son,  
Seeing thou hast prov'd so unnatural a father!

Hath he deserv'd to lose his birthright thus?

Hadst thou but lov'd him half so well as I;

Or felt that pain which I did for him once;

Or nourish'd him, as I did with my blood;

Thou wouldest have left thy dearest heart-blood

there,

Rather than made that savage duke thine heir

And disinherited thine only son.

\* *I. e.* Detrimental to the general rights of hereditary loyalty.

\* *Betray, discover.*

*Prince.* Father, you cannot disinherit me:  
If you be king, why should not I succeed?

*K. Hen.* Pardon me, Margaret;—pardon me,  
sweet son;—  
The earl of Warwick and the duke enforce'd  
me.

*Q. Mar.* Enforce'd thee I art thou king, and  
will be forc'd?

I shame to hear thee speak. Ah! timorous  
wretch!

Thou hast undone thyself, thy son, and me;  
And given unto the house of York such head,  
As thou shalt reign but by their sufferance.  
To entail him and his heirs unto the crown,  
What is it, but to make thy sepulchre,  
And creep into it far before thy time?  
Warwick is chancellor, and the lord of Calais;  
Stein Faulconbridge commands the narrow  
seas;

The duke is made protector of the realm;  
And yet shalt thou be safe? such safety finds  
The trembling lamb, environed with wolves.  
Had I been there, which am a silly woman,  
The soldiers should have toss'd me on their  
pikes,

Before I would have granted to that act.  
But thou prefer'st thy life before thine ho-  
nour:

And seeing thou dost, I here divorce myself,  
Both from thy table, Henry, and thy bed,  
Until that act of parliament be repeal'd,  
Whereby my son is disinherited.  
The northern lords, that have forsworn thy  
colours,

Will follow mine, if once they see them spread:  
And spread they shall be; to thy foul dis-  
grace,  
And utter ruin of the house of York.

Thus do I leave thee;—Come, son, let's away;  
Our army's ready; come, we'll alter them.

*K. Hen.* Stay, gentle Margaret, and hear me  
speak.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hast spoke too much already;  
get thee gone.

*K. Hen.* Gentle son Edward, thou wilt stay  
with me?

*Q. Mar.* Ay, to be murder'd by his enemies.  
*Prince.* When I return with victory from the  
field,

I'll see your grace: till then, I'll follow her.

*Q. Mar.* Come, son, away; we may not linger  
thus.

[*Exeunt Queen MARGARET and the PRINCE.*  
*K. Hen.* Poor queen! how love to me, and  
to her son,

Hath made her break out into terms of rage!  
Revenge'd may she be on that hateful duke;  
Whose haughty spirit, winged with desire,  
Will cost my crown, and, like an empty eagle,  
Tear \* on the flesh of me and of my son!  
The loss of those three lords torments my  
heart;

I'll write unto them, and entreat them fair!—  
Come, cousin, you shall be the messenger.

*Edw.* And I, I hope, shall reconcile them all.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—A Room in Sandal Castle,  
near Wakefield, in Yorkshire.

*Enter EDWARD, RICHARD, and MONTAGUE.*

*Rich.* Brother, though I be youngest, give  
me leave.

*Edw.* No, I can better play the orator.  
*Mont.* But I have reasons strong and for-  
cible.

*Enter YORK.*

*York.* Why, how now, sons and brother, at  
a strife?

What is your quarrel? how began it first?

*Edw.* No quarrel, but a slight contention.

*York.* About what?

*Rich.* About that which concerns your grace  
and us;

The crown of England, father, which is yours.  
*York.* Mine, boy? not till king Henry be  
dead.

*Rich.* Your right depends not on his life, or  
death.

*Edw.* Now you are heir, therefore enjoy 't now:  
By giving the house of Lancaster leave to  
breathe,

It will outrun you, father, in the end.

*York.* I took an oath, that he should quietly  
reign.

*Edw.* But, for a kingdom, any oath may be  
broken:

I'd break a thousand oaths to reign one year.  
*Rich.* No; God forbid, your grace should be  
forsworn.

*York.* I shall be, if I claim by open war.

*Rich.* I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear  
me speak.

*York.* Thou canst not, son; it is impossible.

*Rich.* An oath is of no moment, being not  
look

Before a true and lawful magistrate,  
That hath authority over him that swears:  
Henry had none, but did usurp the place;  
Then, seeing 'twas he that made you to de-  
pose,

Your oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous.  
Therefore, to arms. And, father, do but think,  
How sweet a thing it is to wear a crown;  
Within whose circuit is Elysium,  
And all that poets teach of bliss and joy.  
Why do we linger thus? I cannot rest,  
Until the white rose that I wear be dyed  
Even in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart.

*York.* Richard, enough; I will be king, or  
die.

Brother, thou shalt to London presently,  
And whet on Warwick to this enterprise.  
Thou, Richard, shalt unto the duke of Norfolk,  
And tell him privily of our intent.  
You, Edward, shall unto my lord Cobham,  
With whom the Kentishmen will willingly  
rise:

In them I trust; for they are soldiers,  
Witty \* and courteous, liberal, full of spirit.  
While you are thus employ'd, what resteth  
more,

But that I seek occasion how to rise;  
And yet the king not privy to my drift,  
Nor any of the house of Lancaster?

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

But, stay; What news? Why com'st thou in  
such post?

*Mess.* The queen, with all the northern earls  
and lords,

Intend here to besiege you in your castle:  
She is hard by with twenty thousand men;  
And therefore fortify your hold, my lord.

*York.* Ay, with my sword. What! think'st  
thou that we fear them?

Edward and Richard, you shall stay with me;—  
My brother Montague shall post to London:  
Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest,  
Whom we have left protectors of the king,  
With powerful policy strengthen themselves,  
And trust not simple Henry, nor his oaths.

*Mont.* Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear it  
not:

And thus most humbly I do take my leave.  
[*Exit.*]

*Enter Sir JOHN and Sir HUGH MORTIMER.*

*York.* Sir John, and Sir Hugh Mortimer,  
mine uncles,

You are come to Sandal in a happy hour  
The army of the queen mean to besiege us.

*Sir John.* She shall not need, we'll meet her  
in the field.



*York.* What! with five thousand men?  
*Rich.* Ay, with five hundred, father, for a need.

*A woman's general; What should we fear?*  
*[A March afar off, let's set our men in order;*

*And issue forth, and bid them battle straight.*  
*York.* Five men to twenty!—though the odds be great,

*I doubt not, uncle, of our victory,*  
*Many a battle have I won in France,*  
*When as the enemy hath been ten to one;*  
*Why should I not now have the like success?*  
*[Alarum. Exeunt.]*

*SCENE III.—Plains near Sandal Castle.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter RUTLAND and his TUTOR.*

*Rut.* Ah! whither shall I fly to 'scape their hands?  
*Ah! tutor, look, where bloody Clifford comes!*

*Enter CLIFFORD, and Soldiers.*

*Clif.* Chaplain, away! thy priesthood saves thy life.

*As for the brat of this accursed duke,*  
*Whose father slew my father,—he shall die.*

*Tut.* And I, my lord, will bear him company.

*Clif.* Soldiers, away with him.

*Tut.* Ah! Clifford, murder not this innocent child,  
*Lest thou be hated both of God and man.*

*[Exit, forced off by Soldiers.]*

*Clif.* How now! is he dead already? O! is it fear,  
*That makes him close his eyes?—I'll open them.*

*Rut.* So looks the pent-up lion o'er the wretch  
*That trembles under his devouring paws;*  
*And so he walks, insulting o'er his prey;*  
*And so he comes to rend his limbs asunder.—*  
*Ah! gentle Clifford, kill me with thy sword,*  
*And not with such a cruel threatening look.*  
*Sweet Clifford, hear me speak before I die;—*  
*I am too mean a subject for thy wrath,*  
*Be thou reveng'd on men, and let me live.*

*Clif.* In vain thou speak'st, poor boy; my father's blood

*Hath stopp'd the passage where thy words should enter.*

*Rut.* Then let my father's blood open it again;

*He is a man, and, Clifford, cope with him.*

*Clif.* Had I thy brethren here, their lives and thine

*Were not revenge sufficient for me;*  
*No, if I digg'd up thy forefather's graves,*  
*And hung their rotten coffins up in chains,*  
*It could not slake mine ire, nor ease my heart.*  
*The sight of any of the house of York*  
*Is as a fury to torment my soul;*  
*And till I root out their accursed line,*  
*And leave not one alive, I live in hell.*

*Therefore— [Lifting his hand.]*

*Rut.* O let me pray before I take my death:—  
*To thee I pray; Sweet Clifford, pity me!*

*Clif.* Such pity as my rapier's point affords.

*Rut.* I never did thee harm; Why wilt thou slay me?

*Clif.* Thy father hath.

*Rut.* But 'twas ere I was born.

*Thou hast one son, for his sake pity me;*  
*Lest, in revenge thereof, sith\* God is just,*  
*He be as miserably slain as I.*

*Ah! let me live in prison all my days;*  
*And when I give occasion of offence,*  
*Then let me die, for now thou hast no cause.*

*Clif.* No cause?

*Since,*

*Thy father slew my father; therefore, die.*  
*[CLIFFORD stabs him]*

*Rut. Diu faciant, laudis summa sit ista tue!*<sup>\*</sup>

*[Dies.]*

*Clif.* Plantagenet! I come, Plantagenet!  
*And thus thy son's blood cleaving to my blade,*  
*Shall rust upon my weapon, till thy blood,*  
*Congel'd with this, do make me wipe off both.*  
*[Exit.]*

*SCENE IV.—The same.*

*Alarum.—Enter YORK.*

*York.* The army of the queen hath got the field:

*My uncles both are slain in rescuing me;*  
*And all my followers to the eager foe*  
*Turn back, and fly, like ships before the wind,*  
*Or lambs pursu'd by hunger-starv'd wolves.*  
*My sons—God knows, what hath bechanced them:*

*But this I know, they have demean'd themselves*

*Like men born to renown, by life, or death.*  
*Three times did Richard make a lane to me;*  
*And thrice cried,—Courage, father! fight it out:*

*And full as oft came Edward to my side,*  
*With purple Faulchion, painted to the hilt*  
*In blood of those that had encounter'd him:*  
*And when the hardest warriors did retire,*  
*Richard cried,—Charge! and give no foot of ground!*

*And cried,—A crown, or else a glorious tomb:*  
*A sceptre! or an earthly sepulchre!*

*With this, we charg'd again; but, out, alas!*  
*We bodg'd† again; as I have seen a swan*  
*With bootless labour swim against the tide,*  
*And spend her strength with over-matching waves.*  
*[A short Alarum within.]*

*Ah! hark! the fatal followers do pursue;*  
*And I am faint, and cannot fly their fury:*  
*And, were I strong, I would not shun their fury:*

*The sands are number'd, that make up my life!*

*Here must I stay, and here my life must end.*

*Enter QUEEN MARGARET, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, and Soldiers.*

*Come, bloody Clifford,—rough Northumberland,—*

*I dare your quenchless fury to more rage;*  
*I am your butt, and I abide your shot.*

*North.* Yield to our mercy, proud Plantagenet.

*Clif.* Ay, to such mercy as his ruthless arm,  
*With downright payment, show'd unto my father.*

*Now Phaeton hath tumbled from his car,*  
*And made an evening at the noontide prick.*

*York.* My ashes, as the Phoenix, may bring forth

*A bird that will revenge upon you all:*

*And, in that hope, I throw mine eyes to heaven,*

*Scorning what'er you can afflict me with*  
*Why come you not? what! multitudes, and fear?*

*Clif.* So cowards fight, when they can fly no farther;

*So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons;*  
*So desperate thieves, all hopeless of their lives,*

*Breathe out invectives 'gainst the officers.*

*York.* O Clifford, but bethink thee once again,

*And in thy thought o'er-run my former time:*

\* "Heaven grant this may be your greatest boast."

† *Quod'st Epist. from Phaulx to Demophoon.*

‡ *I.e. We buggled, made bad, or bungling work of our attempt to rally.*

§ Noontide point on the dial.

And, if thou canst for blushing view this face:  
And bite thy tongue, that slanders him with cowardice,  
Whose frown hath made thee faint and flye eye this.

*Clif.* I will not bandy with thee word for word;  
But buckle with thee blows, twice two for one.

*Q. Mar.* Hold, valiant Clifford! for a thousand causes,  
I would prolong awhile the traitor's life:—  
Wrath makes him deaf; speak thou, Northumberland.

*North.* Hold, Clifford; do not honour him so much,  
To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart:  
What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,  
For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,  
When he might spurn him with his foot away?  
It is war's prize to take all vantages;  
And ten to one is no impeach of valour.

*[They lay hands on YORK, who struggles.]*  
*Clif.* Ay, ay, so strives the woodcock with the gin.

*North.* So doth the coney struggle in the net.  
*[YORK is taken prisoner.]*

*York.* So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd booty;  
So true men\* yield, with robbers so o'er-matched.

*North.* What would your grace have done unto him now?

*Q. Mar.* Brave warriors, Clifford and Northumberland,  
Come make him stand upon this molehill here;  
That taught† at mountains with outstretched arms,  
Yet parted but the shadow with his hand.—

What! was it you, that would be England's king?

Was't you that revell'd in our parliament,  
And made a preachment of your high descent?  
Where are your mess of sons to back you now?  
The wanton Edward, and the lusty George?  
And where's that valiant crook-back prodigy,  
Dicky your boy, that, with his grumbling voice,

Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?  
Or, with the rest, where is your darling Rutland?

Look, York; I stain'd this napkin‡ with the blood

That valiant Clifford, with his rapier's point,  
Made issue from the bosom of the boy:  
And, if thine eyes can water for his death,  
I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.  
Alas, poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,  
I should lament thy miserable state.

I pry thee grieve, to make me merry, York;  
Stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and dance.

What, hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine entrails,

That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death?  
Why art thou patient, man? thou should'st be mad;

And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus.  
Thou would'st be fed'd, I see, to make me sport:

York cannot speak, unless he wear a crown.  
A crown for York;—and, lords, bow low to him.

Hold you his hands, whilst I do set it on.

*[Putting a paper Crown on his Head.]*

Ay, marry, Sir, now looks he like a king!  
Ay, this is he that took king Henry's chair;  
And this is he was his adopted heir.  
But how is it that great Plantagenet  
Is crown'd so soon, and broke his solemn oath?  
As I bethink me, you should not be king,  
Till our king Henry had shook hands with death,

\* Honest men. † Reached. ‡ Handkerchief.

And will you pale\* your head in Henry's glory  
And rob his temples of the diadem,  
Now in his life, against your holy oath?  
Oh! 'tis a fault too unpardonable!—  
Off with the crown; and, with the crown, his head;

And, whilst we breathe, take time to do him dead.†

*Clif.* That is my office, for my father's sake.  
*Q. Mar.* Nay, stay; let's hear the orisons he makes.

*York.* She-wolf of France, but worse than wolves of France,  
Whose tongue more poisonous than the adder's tooth,

How ill-beseeming is it in thy sex,  
To triumph, like an Amazonian trull,  
Upon their woes whom fortune captivates?  
But that thy face is, visor-like, unchanging,  
Made impudent with use of evil deeds,  
I would assay proud queen, to make thee blush;

To tell thee whence thou cam'st, of whom deriv'd,

Were shame enough to shame thee, wert thou not shameless,

Thy father bears the type‡ of king of Naples,  
Of both the Sicils and Jerusalem.

Yet not so wealthy as an English Roman.  
Hath that poor monarch taught thee to insult?

It needs not, nor it boots thee not, proud queen;

Unless the adage must be verified,  
That beggars, mounted, run their horse to death

'Tis beauty that doth oft make women proud;  
But, God be knows, thy share thereof is small;

'Tis virtue that doth make them most admir'd;  
The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at:

'Tis government§ that makes them seem divine;

The want thereof makes thee abominable:  
Thou art as opposite to every good,

As the Antipodes are unto us,  
Or as the south to the septentrion.¶

O tiger's heart, wrapp'd in a woman's hide!  
How could'st thou drain the life-blood of the

To bid the father wipe his eyes withal, [child,  
And yet be seen to hear a woman's face?

Women are soft, mild, pitiful, and flexible;  
Thou stern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorseless,

Bid'st thou me rage? why, now thou hast thy wish:  
Would'st have me weep? why, now thou hast thy will:

For raging wind blows up incessant showers,  
And, when the rage allays, the rain begins.

These tears are my sweet Rutland's obsequies;

And every drop cries vengeance for his death,

'Gainst thee, fell Clifford, and thee, false French-woman.

*North.* Beshrew me, but his passions ¶ move me so,

That hardly can I check my eyes from tears.

*York.* That face of his the hungry cannibals  
Would not have touch'd, would not have stain'd

with blood

But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,  
O ten times more, than tigers of Hyrcania.

See, ruthless queen, a hapless father's tears:  
This cloth thou dipp'st in blood of my sweet boy,

And I with tears do wash the blood away.  
Keep thou the napkin, and go boast of this:

*[He gives back the Handkerchief.]*

And, if thou tell'st the heavy story right,  
Upon my soul, the hearers will shed tears;

Yea, even my foes will shed fast falling tears;

\* Impale, encircle with a crown. † Kill him.  
‡ The distinguishing mark.

§ Government, in the language of the time, signified evenness of temper, and decency of manners.

¶ The North. ¶ Sufferings.

And say,—Alas, it was piteous deed !—  
There, take the crown, and, with the crown, my  
cuisse ;

And, in thy need, such comfort come to thee,  
As now I reap at thy too cruel hand !—  
Hard-hearted Clifford, take me from the world ;  
My soul to heaven, my blood upon your heads !  
North. Had he been slaughterman to all my  
kin,

I should not weep for my life but weep with him,  
To see how intly sorrow gripes his soul.

Q. Mar. What, weeping-ripe, my lord North-  
umberland ?

Think but upon the wrong he did us all,  
And that will quickly dry thy melting tears.

Cliff. Here's for my oath, here's for my fa-  
ther's death. [Stabbing him.

Q. Mar. And here's to right our gentle-heart-  
ed king. [Stabbing him.

York. Open thy gate of mercy, gracious God !  
My soul flies through these wounds to seek out  
thee. [Dies.

Q. Mar. Off with his head, and set it on  
York gates ;

So York may overlook the town of York. [Exeunt.

### ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Plain near MORTIMER'S  
Cross, in Herefordshire.

Drums.—Enter EDWARD and RICHARD, with  
their Forces, marching.

Edw. I wonder how our princely father  
'scaped,

Or whether he be 'scaped away or no,  
From Clifford's and Northumberland's pursuit ;  
Had he been ta'en, we would have heard the  
news ;

Had he been slain, we should have heard the  
news ;

Or, had he 'scaped, methinks we should have  
heard

The happy tidings of his good escape.—

How fares my brother ? Why is he so sad ?

Rich. I cannot joy, until I be resolved  
Where our right valiant father is become.  
I saw him in the battle range about ;  
And watch'd him how he singled Clifford  
forth,

Methought he bore \* him in the thickest troop,  
As doth a lion in a herd of neat : †  
Or as a bear, encompass'd round with dogs ;  
Who, having pinch'd a few, and made them  
cry,

The rest stand all aloof, and bark at him.

So far'd our father with his enemies ;  
So fled his enemies my warlike father ;  
Methinks, 'tis prize enough to be his son.  
See, how the morning opens her golden gates,  
And takes her farewell of the glorious sun ! ‡  
How well resembles it the prime of youth,  
Trimmi'd like a youngier, prancing to his love ?

Edw. Dazzle mine eyes, or do I see three  
suns ?

Rich. Three glorious suns, each one a perfect  
sun ;

Not separated with the racking clouds, §  
But sever'd in a pale clear-shining sky.  
See, see ! they join, embrace, and seem to kiss,  
As if they vow'd some league inviolable :  
Now are they but one lamp, one light, one  
sun.

In this the heaven figures some event.

Edw. 'Tis wondrous strange, the like yet  
never heard of.

I think it cites us, brother, to the field ;

\* Demanded himself.

† Neat cattle, cows, oxen, &c.

‡ Aurora takes for a time her farewell of the sun,  
when she dismisses him to his diurnal course.

§ The clouds in rapid tumultuary motion.

That we, the sons of brave Plamagenet,  
Each one already blazing by our deeds,\*  
Should notwithstanding, join our lights to-  
gether,

And over-shine the earth, as this the world.  
Whate'er it bodes, henceforward will I bear  
Upon my target three tan shining suns.

Rich. Nay, bear three daughters ;—By your  
leave I speak it,  
You love the breeder better than the male.

Enter a MESSENGER.

But what art thou, whose heavy looks foretell  
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue ?

Mess. Ah ! one that was a woeful looker on,  
When as the noble duke of York was slain,  
Your princely father, and my loving lord.

Edw. O speak no more ! for I have heard too  
much.

Rich. Say how he died, for I will hear it  
all.

Mess. Environed he was with many foes ;  
And stood against them, as the hope of Troy †  
Against the Greeks, that would have enter'd  
Troy.

But Hercules himself must yield to odds ;  
And many strokes, though with a little axe,  
Hew down and fell the hardest-timber'd oak.

By many hands your father was subdued ;  
But only slaughter'd by the ireful arm  
Of unrelenting Clifford, and the queen ‡  
Who crown'd the gracious duke, in high de-  
spight ;

Laugh'd in his face ; and when with grief he  
wept,

The ruthless queen gave him, to dry his cheeks,  
A napkin steeped in the harmless blood  
Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford  
slain ;

And, after many scorns, many foul taunts,  
They took his head, and on the gates of York  
They set the same ; and there it doth remain,  
The saddest spectacle that e'er I view'd.

Edw. Sweet duke of York, our prop to lean  
upon ;

Now thou art gone, we have no staff, no  
stay !—

O Clifford, boast'rous Clifford, thou hast slain  
The flower of Europe for his chivalry ;  
And treacherously hast thou vanquish'd him,  
For, hand to hand, he would have vanquish'd  
thee !

Now my soul's palace is become a prison :  
Ah ! would she break from hence, that this my  
body

Might in the ground be closed up in rest :

For never henceforth shall I joy again,  
Never, O never, shall I see more joy.

Rich. I cannot weep : for all my body's mois-  
ture

Scarce serves to quench my furnace-burning  
heart :

Nor can my tongue unload my heart's great  
burden ;

For self-same wind, that I should speak withal,  
Is kindling coals, that tie all my breast,  
And burn me up with flames, that tears would  
quench.

To weep, is to make less the depth of grief :  
Tears, then, for babes ; blows and revenge for  
me !—

Richard, I bear thy name, I'll venge thy death,  
Or die renowned by attempting it.

Edw. His name that valiant duke hath left  
with thee :

His dukedom and his chair with me is left.

Rich. Nay, if thou be that princely eagle's  
bird,

Show thy descent by gazing 'gainst the sun ;  
For chair and dukedom, throne and kingdom

say ;  
Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his.

# Scene I. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI.

525

*March.—Enter WARWICK and MONTAGUE, with Forces.*

*War.* How now, fair lords? What fare?  
What news abroad?

*Rich.* Great lord of Warwick, if we should recount

Our baleful news, at each word's deliverance,  
Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told,  
The words would add more anguish than the wounds.

O valiant lord, the duke of York is slain.

*Edu.* O Warwick! Warwick! that Plantagenet,  
Which held thee dearly as his soul's redemption,  
Is by the stern lord Clifford done to death.\*

*War.* Ten days ago I drown'd these news in tears:

And now, to add more measure to your woes,  
I come to tell you things since then befall'n.  
After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,  
Where your brave father breathed his latest gasp,

Tidings, as swiftly as the post could run,  
Were brought me of your loss and his depart.  
I then in London, keeper of the king,  
Muster'd my soldiers, gather'd flocks of friends,

And very well appointed, as I thought,  
March'd towards Saint Alban's to intercept the queen,

Beating the king in my behalf along:  
For by my scouts I was advertised,  
That she was coming with a full intent  
To dash our late decree in parliament,  
Touching king Henry's oath, and your succession.

Short tale to make,—we at St. Alban's met,  
Our battles join'd, and both sides fiercely fought:

But, whether 'twas the coldness of the king,  
Who look'd full gently on his warlike queen,  
That robb'd my soldiers of their hated spleen;  
Or whether 'twas report of her success:  
Or more than common fear of Clifford's rigour,  
Who thunders to his captives, blood and death,

I cannot judge: but, to conclude with truth,  
Their weapons like to lightning came and went;

Our soldiers—like the night-owl's lazy flight,  
Or like a lazy thrasher with a flail,—  
Fell gently down, as if they struck their friends.  
I cheer'd them up with justice of our cause,  
With promise of high pay and great rewards:  
But all in vain; they had no heart to fight,  
And we, in them, no hope to win the day,  
So that we fled: the king unto the queen;  
Lord George your brother, Norfolk, and myself,

In haste, post-haste, are come to join with you;

For in the marches here, we heard, you were,  
Making another head to fight again.

*Edu.* Where is the duke of Norfolk, gentle Warwick?

And when came George from Burgundy to England?

*War.* Some six miles off the duke is with the soldiers;

And for your brother,—he was lately sent,  
From your kind aunt, duchess of Burgundy,  
With aid of soldiers to this needful war.

*Rich.* 'Twas odds, belike, when valiant Warwick fled.

Of late I heard his praises in pursuit,  
But ne'er till now, his scandal of retire.

*War.* Nor now my scandal, Richard, dost thou hear;

For thou shalt know, this strong right hand of mine

Can pluck the diadem from saint Henry's head,

And wing the awful sceptre from his fist;  
Were he as famous and as bold in war,  
As he is famed for mildness, peace, and prayer.

*Rich.* I know it well, lord Warwick; blame me not:

'Tis love I bear thy glories makes me speak.  
But, in this troublous time, what's to be done?  
Shall we go throw away our coats of steel,  
And wrap our bodies in black mourning gowns,

Numb'ring our Ave-Maries with our beads?  
Or shall we on the helmets of our foes  
Tell our devotion with revengeful aims?  
If for the last, say—Ay, and to it, lords.

*War.* Why, therefore Warwick came to seek you out:

And therefore comes my brother Montague.  
Attend me, lords. The proud insulting queen,  
With Clifford, and the haught' Northumberland,

And of their feather, many more proud birds,  
Have wrought the easy melting king, like wax.  
He swore consent to your succession,  
His oath enrolled in the parliament;  
And now to London all the crew are gone,  
To frustrate both his oath, and what beside  
May make against the house of Lancaster.

Their power, I think, is thirty thousand strong:  
Now, if the help of Norfolk and myself,  
With all the friends that thou, brave earl of March,

Amongst the loving Welchmen canst procure,

Will but amount to five and twenty thousand,  
Why, *Via!* To London will we march again:  
And once again bestride our foaming steeds,  
And once again cry—Charge upon our foes!  
But never once again turn back and fly.

*Rich.* Ay, now, methinks, I hear great Warwick speak;

Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day,  
That cries—Retire, if Warwick bid him stay.

*Edu.* Lord Warwick, on thy shoulder will I lean;

And when thou fall'st, (as God forbid the hour!)

Must Edward fall, which peril heaven foretold!

*War.* No longer earl of March, but duke of York;

The next degree is, England's royal throne;  
For king of England shalt thou be proclaim'd  
In every borough as we pass along;  
And he, that throws not up his cap for joy,  
Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head.  
King Edward,—valiant Richard,—Montague,—  
Stay we no longer dreaming of renown,  
But sound the trumpets, and about our task.

*Rich.* Then, Clifford, were thy heart as hard as steel,

(As thou hast shown it flinty by thy deeds,) I come to pierce it, or to give thee name.

*Edu.* Then strike up, drums;—God and Saint George for us!

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*War.* How now? What news?

*Mess.* The duke of Norfolk sends you word by me,

The queen is coming with a puissant host;  
And craves your company for speedy counsel.

*War.* Why then it soits, brave warriors: Let's away. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—Before York.

*Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, the Prince of WALES, CLIFFORD, and NORTHUMBERLAND, with Forces.*

*Q. Mar.* Welcome, my lord, to this brave town of York:—

Yonder's the head of that arch enemy,  
That sought to be encompass'd with your  
crown :

Doth no the object cheer your heart, my lord ?  
*A. Hen.* Ay, as the rocks cheer them that  
fear their wreck ;

To see this sight, it irks my very soul.  
Withhold revenge, dear God ! 'tis not my fault,  
Not wittingly have I infringed my vow. \*

*Clif.* My gracious liege, this too much lenity  
And harmful pity, must be laid aside.

To whom do lions cast their gentle looks ?  
Not to the beast that would usurp their den.  
Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick ?  
Not his, that spoils her young before her face.  
Who 'scapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting ?  
Not he, that sets his foot upon her back.  
The smallest worm will turn, being trodden on ;  
And doves will peck, in safeguard of their  
brood.

Ambitious York did level at thy crown,  
Thou smiling, while he knit his angry brows :  
He, but a duke, would have his son a king,  
And raise his issue, like a loving sire :  
Thou, being a king blessed with a goodly son,  
Did'st yield consent to disinheret him,  
Which argued thee a most unloving father.  
Unreasonable creatures feed their young

And though man's face be fearful to their  
eyes,

Yet in protection of their tender ones,  
Who hath not seen them (even with those wings  
Which sometime they have used with fearful  
flight.)

Make war with him that clumb'd unto their nest,  
Offering their own lives in their young's de-  
fence ?

For shame, my liege, make them your prece-  
dent !

Were it not pity, that this goodly boy  
Should lose his birthright by his father's  
fault ?

And long hereafter say unto his child,—  
*What my great-grandfather and grand-sire  
got,*

*My careless father fondly gave away ?*  
Ah ! what a shame were this ! Look on the  
boy ;

And let his manly face, which promiseth  
Successful fortune, steel thy melting heart,  
To hold thine own, and leave thine own with  
him.

*K. Hen.* Full well hath Clifford play'd the  
orator,

Inferring arguments of mighty force.

But, Clifford, tell me, didst thou never hear,  
That things ill got had ever bad success ?

And happy always was it for that son,  
Whose father for his hoarding went to hell ?

I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind ;  
And 'would my father had left me no more !

For all the rest is held at such a rate,  
As brings a thousand-fold more care to keep,

Than in possession any jot of pleasure.  
Ah ! cousin York ! 'would thy best friends did  
know,

How it doth grieve me that thy head is here !  
*Q. Mar.* My lord, cheer up your spirits ! Our  
foes are nigh,

And this soft courage makes your followers  
faint.

You promised knighthood to our forward son ;  
Unsheath your sword, and dub him presently.—  
Edward, kneel down.

*K. Hen.* Edward Plantagenet, arise a knight ;  
And learn this lesson,—Draw thy sword in  
right.

*Prince.* My gracious father, by your kingly  
leave

I'll draw it as apparent to the crown,  
And in that quarrel use it to the death.

*Clif.* Why, that is spoken like a toward  
prince.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Royal commanders, be in readiness ;  
For, with a band of thirty thousand men,  
Comes Warwick, backing of the duke of York ;  
And, in the towns as they do march along,  
Proclaims him king, and many fly to him :  
D'arraign your battle \* for they are at hand.

*Clif.* I would your highness would depart the  
field ;

The queen hath best success when you are  
absent.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, good, my lord, and leave us to  
our fortune.

*K. Hen.* Why, that's my fortune too ; there-  
fore I'll stay.

*North.* Be it with resolution then to fight.

*Prince.* My royal father, cheer these noble  
lords,

And hearten those that fight in your defence ;  
Unsheath your sword, good father ; cry *St.*  
*George !*

*March.*—*Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD,  
WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, and Sol-  
diers.*

*Edu.* Now, perjured Henry ! wilt thou kneel  
for grace,

And set thy diadem upon my head ;  
Or bide the mortal fortune of the field ?

*Q. Mar.* Go rate thy mimious, proud insulting  
boy !

Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms,  
Before thy sovereign and thy lawful king ?

*Edu.* I am his king, and he should bow his  
knee ;

I was adopted heir by his consent ;  
Since when, his oath is broke ; for, as I hear,  
You—that are king, though he do wear the  
crown,—

Have caused him, by new act of parliament,  
To blot out me, and put his own son in.

*Clif.* And reason too ;

Who should succeed the father, but the son ?

*Rich.* Are you there, butcher ?—O I cannot  
speak.

*Clif.* Ay, crook-back ; here I stand, to answer  
thee,

Or any be the proudest of thy sort.

*Rich.* 'Twas you that kill'd young Rutland,  
was it not ?

*Clif.* Ay, and old York, and yet not satisfied

*Rich.* For God's sake, lords, give signal to the  
fight.

*War.* What say'st thou, Henry, wilt thou yield  
the crown ?

*Q. Mar.* Why, how now long-tongued War-  
wick ? Dare you speak ?

When you and I met at St. Alban's last,  
Your legs did better service than your hands.

*War.* Then 'twas my turn to fly, and now 'tis  
thine.

*Clif.* You said so much before, and yet you  
fled.

*War.* 'Twas not your valour, Clifford, drove  
me thence.

*North.* No, nor your manhood, that durst  
make you stay.

*Rich.* Northumberland, I hold thee reve-  
rently !—

Break off the parle ; for scarce I can refrain  
The execution of my big-swollen heart.

Upon that Clifford, that cruel child-killer.

*Clif.* I slew thy father : call'st thou him a  
child ?

*Rich.* Ay, like a dastard, and a treacherous  
coward,

As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland ;  
But, ere sun-set, I'll make thee curse the deed.

*K. Hen.* Have done with words, my lords,  
and hear me speak.

\* Henry was a very amiable and pious monarch ; he  
founded the munificent college of Eton ; and also King's  
College, Cambridge.

† Foolishly.

\* I. e. Arrange your host, put your host in order

*Q. Mar.* Defy them then, or else hold close thy lips.

*K. Hen.* I prythee, give no limits to my tongue.

I am a king, and privileged to speak.

*Clif.* My liege, the wound that bred this meeting here,

Cannot be cured by words; therefore be still.

*Rich.* Then, executioner, unsheath thy sword; By him that made us all, I am resolved,\*

That Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue.

*Edw.* Say, Henry, shall I have my right, or no?

A thousand men have broke their fasts to-day,  
That ne'er shall dine, unless thou yield the crown,

*War.* If thou deny, their blood upon thy head;

For York in justice puts his armour on.

*Prince.* If that be right, which Warwick says is right,

There is no wrong, but every thing is right.

*Rich.* Whoever got thee, there thy mother stands;

For, well I wot, thou hast thy mother's tongue.

*Q. Mar.* But thou art neither like thy sire, nor dam;

But like a foul misshapen stigmatic,

Mark'd by the destinies to be avoided,

As venom toads, or lizard's dreadful stings.

*Rich.* Iron of Naples, hid with English gilt,<sup>2</sup>

Whose father bears the title of a king,

(As it a channel should be call'd the sea,)

Shamest thou not, knowing whence thou art ex-  
traught,

To let thy tongue detect thy base-born heart?

*Edw.* A wisp of straw were worth a thousand crowns,

To make this shameless callet know herself.—  
Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou,

Although thy husband may be Menelaus:\*\*

And ne'er was Agamemnon's brother wrong'd

By that false woman, as this king by thee.

His father rell'd in the heart of France,

And tamed the king, and made the dauphin stoop;

And, had he match'd according to his state,

He might have kept that glory to this day:

But, when he took a beggar to his bed,

And grav'd thy poor sire with his bridal day;

Even then that sunshine brew'd a shower for him,

That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of France,

And heap'd sedition on his crown at home.

For what hath broach'd this tumult, but thy pride?

Hadst thou been meek, our title still had slept;

And we, in pity of the gentle king,

Had shipp'd our claim until another age.

*Geo.* But, when we saw our sunshine made  
thy spring,

And that thy summer bred us no increase,

We set the axe to thy usurping root;

And though the edge hath something hit our-  
selves,

Yet, know thou since we have begun to strike,

We'll never leave, till we have hewn thee down,

Or bathed thy growing with our heated bloods.

*Edw.* And, in this resolution, I defy thee;

Not willing any longer conference,

Since thou deny'st the gentle king to speak.—

Sound trumpets!—Let our bloody colours wave!

And either victory, or else a grave.

*Q. Mar.* Stay, Edward.

*Edw.* No, wrangling woman; we'll no longer stay:

These words will cost ten thousand lives to day.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—A Field of Battle between  
Tewton and Saxon in Yorkshire.

Alarums: Excursions.—Enter WARWICK.

*War.* Forspent with toil, as runners with a  
race,

I lay me down a little while to breathe:

For strokes received, and many blows repaid,

Have robb'd my strong-knit sinews of their  
strength,

And, spite of spite, needs must I rest a while.

Enter EDWARD, running.

*Edw.* Smile, gentle heaven! or strike, un-  
gentle death!

For this world frowns, and Edward's sun is  
clouded.

*War.* How now, my lord? What hap? What  
hope of good?

Enter GEORGE.

*Geo.* Our hap is loss, our hope but sad des-  
pair;

Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us:

What counsel give you, whither shall we fly?

*Edw.* Bootless is fight, they follow us with  
wings;

And weak we are, and cannot shun pursuit.

Enter RICHARD.

*Rich.* Ah! Warwick, why hast thou withdrawn  
thyself?

Thy brother's blood the thirsty earth hath  
drunk,

Broach'd with the steely point of Clifford's  
lance:

And, in the very pangs of death, he cried,

Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,

Warwick, revenge! Brother, revenge my  
death!

So underneath the belly of their steeds,

That stain'd their fetlocks in his smoking  
blood,

The noble gentleman gave up the ghost.

*War.* Then let the earth be drunken with our  
blood:

I'll kill my horse, because I will not fly.

Why stand we like soft hearted women here,

Wailing our losses, whiles the foe doth rage;

And look upon,\* as if the tragedy

Were play'd in jest by counterfeiting actors?

Here on my knee I vow to God above,

I'll never pause again, never stand still,

Till either death hath closed these eyes of mine,

Or fortune given me measure of revenge.

*Edw.* O Warwick, I do bend my knee with  
thine;

And, in this vow, do chain my soul to thine.—  
And ere my knee rise from the earth's cold  
face,

I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to thee,

Tbou setter up and plucker down of kings!

Beseeking thee, if with thy will it stands,

That to my foes this body must be prey,

Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may ope,

And give sweet passage to my sinful soul!—

Now, lords, take leave until we meet again,

Where'er it be, in heaven, or on earth.

*Rich.* Brother, give me thy hand,—and gentle  
Warwick,

Let me embrace thee in my weary arms:—

I, that did never weep, now melt with woe,

That winter should cut off our spring-time so.

*War.* Away, away! Once more, sweet lords,  
farewell.

*Geo.* Yet let us all together to our troops,  
And give them leave to fly that will not stay:

And call them pillars, that will stand to us;

\* It is my firm persuasion.

† One branded by nature.

‡ Gilt is a superficial covering of gold.

§ Kennel was then pronounced channel.

|| To show thy meanness of birth by thy indecent rail-  
ings.

¶ Drab.

•• I.e. A cuckold.

• And are mere spectators,

And, if we thrive, promise them such rewards  
As victors wear at the Olympian games :  
This may plant courage in their quailing \*  
breasts ;  
For yet is hope of life and victory.—  
Fore-slow † no longer, make we hence amain.

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE IV.—The same.—Another part of the field.*

*Excursions.—Enter RICHARD and CLIFFORD.*

*Rich.* Now, Clifford, I have singled thee alone :

Suppose, this arm is for the duke of York,  
And this for Rutland ; both bound to revenge,  
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall.

*Clif.* Now, Richard, I am with thee here alone :

This is the hand, that stabb'd thy father York ;  
And this the hand, that slew thy brother Rutland :

And here's the heart, that triumphs in their death,  
And cheers these hands, that slew thy sire and brother,

To execute the like upon thyself ;  
And so, have at thee.

[*They fight—WARWICK enters ; CLIFFORD flies.*]

*Rich.* Nay, Warwick, single out some other chase ;

For I myself will hunt this wolf to death.

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE V.—Another part of the field.*

*Alarm.—Enter King HENRY.*

*K. Hen.* This battle faies like to the morning's war,  
When dying clouds contend with growing light ;  
What time the shepherd, blowing of his nails,  
Can neither call it perfect day or night.  
Now sways it this way, like a mighty sea,  
Forced by the tide to combat with the wind ;  
Now sways it that way, like the self-same sea,  
Forced to retire by fury of the wind :  
Sometime, the flood prevails ; and then, the wind ;

Now, one the better ; then, another best ;  
Both tugging to be victors, breast to breast,  
Yet neither conqueror, nor conquered :  
So is the equal poise of the fell war.  
Here on this molehill will I sit me down.  
To whom God will, there be the victory !  
For Margaret, my queen, and Clifford too,  
Have chid me from the battle ; swearing both,  
They prosper best of all when I am thence.  
\*Would I were dead ! if God's good will were so :

For what is in this world, but grief and woe ?  
O God ! methinks, it were a happy life,  
To be no better than a homely swain ;  
To sit upon a hill, as I do now,  
To carve out dials quaintly, point by point,  
Thereby to see the minutes how they run ;  
How many make the hour full complete,  
How many hours bring about the day,  
How many days will finish up the year,  
How many years a mortal man may live.  
When this is known, then to divide the times :  
So many hours must I tend my flock ;  
So many hours must I take my rest ;  
So many hours must I contemplate ;  
So many hours must I sport myself ;  
So many days my ewes have been with young ;  
So many weeks ere the poor fools will yean ;  
So many years ere I shall shear the fleece :  
So minutes, hours, days, weeks, months, and years,

Pass'd over to the end they were created,  
Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave.

\* Sinking into dejection.

† To fore-slow is to be dilatory, to loiter.

Ah ! what a life were this ! How sweet ! How lovely !

Gives not the hawthorn bush a sweeter shade  
To shepherds, looking on their silly sheep,  
Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy  
To kings, that tear their subjects' treachery ?  
O yes, it doth : a thousand fold it doth.  
And to conclude,—The shepherd's homely curds,  
His cold thin drink out of his father bottle,  
His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade,  
All which secure and sweetly he enjoys,  
Is far beyond a prince's delicates,  
His vands sparkling in a golden cup,  
His body couched in a curious bed,  
When care, mistrust, and treason wait on him.

*Alarm.—Enter a Son that has killed his Father, dragging in the dead Body.*

*Son.* Ill blows the wind, that profits nobody.—

This man, whom hand in hand I slew in fight,  
May be possessed with some store of crowns :  
And I, that haply take them from him now,  
May yet ere night, yield both my life and them  
To some man else, as this dead man doth to me.—

Who's this ?—O God ! it is my father's face,  
Whom in this conflict I unawares have kill'd.  
O heavy times, begetting such events !  
From London by the king was I press'd forth ;  
My father, being the earl of Warwick's man,  
Came on the part of York, press'd by his master ;

And I, who at his hands receiv'd my life,  
Have by my hands of late bereav'd him.—  
Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did !  
And pardon, father, for I knew not thee !  
My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks ;  
And no more words till they have flow'd their fill.

*K. Hen.* O piteous spectacle ! O bloody times !

Whilst lions war, and battle for their dens,  
Poor harmless lambs abide their unity.—  
Weep, wretched man, I'll add thee tear for tear :

And let our hearts, and eyes, like civil war,  
Be blind with tears, and break o'ercharged with grief.

*Enter a FATHER who hath killed his Son, with the Body in his arms.*

*Fath.* Thou that so stoutly had resisted me,  
Give me thy gold, it thou hast any gold ;  
For I have bought it with a hundred blows.—  
But let me see :—Is this our foeman's face ?  
Ah ! no, no, no, it is mine only son !—  
Ah ! boy, if any life be left in thee,  
Throw up thine eye ; see, see, what showers arise,

Blown with the windy tempest of my heart,  
Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart !—

O pity, God, this miserable age !  
What stratagems,\* how fell, how butcherly,  
Erroneous, nutritious, and unnatural,  
This deadly quarrel daily doth beget !—  
O boy, thy father gave thee life too soon,  
And hath bereft thee of thy life too late !

*K. Hen.* Woe above woe ! Grief more than common grief !

O that my death would stay these ruthless deeds !

O pity, pity, gentle heaven, pity ;—  
The red rose and the white are on his face,  
The fatal colours of our striving houses :  
The one his purple blood right well resembles ;  
The other, his pale cheek, methinks, present :  
Wither one rose, and let the other flourish !  
If you contend, a thousand lives must wither.

*Son.* How will my mother, for a father's death,

Take on with me and ne'er be satisfied !

\* This word here means dreadful events.

*Fath.* How will my wife, for slaughter of my son,

Shed seas of tears, and ne'er be satisfied ?

*K. Hen.* How will the country, for these woeful chances,

Misthink \* the king, and not be satisfied ?

*Son.* Was ever son, so rued a father's death ?

*Fath.* Was ever father, so bemoan'd a son ?

*K. Hen.* Was ever king, so grieved for subjects' woe ?

Much is your sorrow ; mine, ten times so much.

*Son.* I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep my fill. *[Exit with the Body.]*

*Fath.* These arms of mine shall be thy winding sheet :

My heart, sweet boy, shall be thy sepulchre ;

For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go.

My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell ;

And so obsequious will thy father be,

Sad for the loss of thee, having no more,

As Pity was for all his valiant sons.

I'll bear thee hence ; and let them fight that will,

For I have murder'd where I should not kill.

*[Exit with the Body.]*

*K. Hen.* Sad-hearted men, much overgone with care,

Here sits a king more woeful than you are.

*Alarums : Excursions.—Enter Queen MARGARET, PRINCE OF WALES, and EXETER.*

*Prince* Fly, father, fly ! for all your friends are fled,

And Warwick rages like a chafed bull :

Away ! for death doth hold us in pursuit.

*Q. Mar.* Monnt you, my lord, towards Berwick post again ;

Edward and Richard, like a brace of greyhounds,

Having the fearful flying hare in sight,

With fiery eyes, sparkling for very wrath,

And bloody steel grasp'd in their ireful hands,

Are at our backs ; and therefore hence again.

*Eae.* Away ! for vengeance comes along with them :

Nay, stay not to expostulate, make speed ;

Or else come after, I'll away before.

*K. Hen.* Nay, take me with thee, good sweet Exeter :

Not that I fear to stay, but love to go

Whither the queen intends. Forward ; away !

*[Exit.]*

SCENE VI.—The same.

*A loud Alarum.—Enter CLIFFORD wounded.*

*Clif.* Here burns my caudle out ; ay, here it dies,

Which, while it lasted, gave king Henry light.

O Lancaster ! I fear thy overthrow,

More than my body's parting with my soul.

My love and fear glew'd many friends to thee ;

And, now I fall, thy tough commixtures melt,

Imparting Henry's, strengthening mis-proud York.

The common people swarm like summer flies :

And whither fly the gnats, but to the sun ?

And who shines now, but Henry's enemies ?

O Phœbus ! hadst thou never given consent

That Phœton should check thy fiery steeds,

'Thy burning car never had scorched the earth :

Aud, Henry, hadst thou sway'd as kings

should do,

Or as thy father, and his father, did,

Given no ground unto the house of York,

They never then had sprung like summer flies ;

I, and ten thousand in this luckless realm,

Had left no mourning widows for our death,

And thou this day hadst kept thy chair in

peace.

For what doth cherish weeds, but gentle air ?

And what make robbers bold, but too much

lenity ?

\* Think unfavourably of.

Bootless are plaints, and cureless are my wounds ;

No way to fly, nor strength to hold out flight :

The foe is merciless, and will not pity ;

For, at their hands, I have deserved no pity ;

The air hath got into my deadly wounds,

And much effuse of blood doth make me

faint :—

Come, York and Richard, Warwick and the rest ;

I stab'd your father's bosoms, split my breast.

*[He faints.]*

*Alarum and Retreat.—Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers.*

*Edw.* Now breathe we, lords ; good fortune bids us pause,

And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks.—

Some troops pursue the bloody-minded queen ;

That led calm Henry, though he were a king,

As doth a sail, fill'd with a fretting gust,

Command an argosy to stern the waves.

But think you, lords, that Clifford fled with them ?

*War.* No, 'tis impossible he should escape ;

For, though before his face I speak the words,

Your brother Richard mark'd him for the grave :

And, wheresoe'er he is, he's surely dead.

*[CLIFFORD groans and dies.]*

*Edw.* Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave ?

*Rich.* A deadly groan, like life and death's departing.

*Edw.* See who it is : and now the battle's ended,

If friend or foe, let him be gently used.

*Rich.* Revoke that doom of mercy, for 'tis Clifford ;

Who, not contented that he lopp'd the branch,

In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth,

But set his murdering knife unto the root

From whence that tender spray did sweetly

spring,

I mean our princely father, duke of York.

*War.* From off the gates of York fetch down the head,

Your father's head, which Clifford placed there : Instead whereof, let this supply the room ;

Measure for measure must be answered.

*Edw.* Bring forth this fatal screech-owl to our house,

That nothing sung but death to us and our's :

Now death shall stop his disual threatening sound,

And his ill-boding tongue no more shall speak.

*[Attendants bring the Body forward.]*

*War.* I think his understanding is bereft :—

Speak, Clifford, dost thou know who speaks to thee ?—

Dark cloudy death o'ershades his beams of life, And he nor sees, nor hears us what we say.

*Rich.* O 'would he did ! And so, perhaps, he doth ;

'Tis but his policy to counterfeit, Because he would avoid such bitter taunts

Which in the time of death he gave our father.

*Geo.* If so thou think'st, vex him with eager words.\*

*Rich.* Clifford, ask mercy, and obtain no grace.

*Edw.* Clifford, repent in bootless penitence.

*War.* Clifford, devise excuses for thy faults.

*Geo.* While we devise fell tortures for thy faults.

*Rich.* Thou didst love York, and I am son to York.

*Edw.* Thou pitied'st Rutland, I will pity thee.

*Geo.* Where's captain Margaret to fence you now ?

*War.* They mock thee, Clifford ! Swear as thou wast wont.

\* Sour words, words of asperity.



*Rich.* What not an oath? Nay, then the world goes hard,  
When Clifford cannot spare his friends an oath:—

I know by that, he's dead; and, by my soul,  
If this right hand, would buy him two hours' life.

That I in all despite might rail at him,  
This hand should chop it off; and, with the issuing blood,

Stifle the villain, whose unstaunched thirst  
York and young Rutland could not satisfy.

*War.* Ay, but he's dead; Off with the traitor's head,

And rear it in the place your father's stands.—  
And now to London with triumphant march,  
There to be crowned England's royal king.

From whence shall Warwick cut the sea to France,

And ask the lady Bona for thy queen:

So shalt thou sinew both these lands together;  
And, having France thy friend, thou shalt not dread

The scatter'd foe, that hopes to rise again;  
For though they cannot greatly sting to hurt,

Yet look to have them buz, to offend thine ears.  
First, will I see the coronation;

And then to Brittany I'll cross the sea,  
To effect this marriage, so it please my lord.

*Edu.* Even as thou wilt, sweet Warwick, let it be:

For on thy shoulder do I build my seat;  
And never will I undertake the thing,

Wherein thy counsel and consent is wanting.—  
Richard, I will create thee duke of Gloucester;—

And George, of Clarence:—Warwick, as ourself,

Shall do and undo, as him pleaseth best.

*Rich.* Let me be duke of Clarence, George of Gloucester;

For Gloucester's dukedom is too ominous.

*War.* Tut, that's a foolish observation;  
Richard, be duke of Gloucester: now to London,  
To see these honours in possession.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—A Chase in the North of England.

*Enter Two KEEPERS, with Cross-bows in their Hands.*

1 *Keep.* Under this thick-grown brake\* we'll shroud ourselves:

For through this laund† anon the deer will come;

And in this covert will we make our stand,  
Culling the principal of all the deer.

2 *Keep.* I'll stay above the hill, so both may shoot.

1 *Keep.* That cannot be; the noise of thy cross-bow

Will scare the herd, and so my shoot is lost.  
Here stand we both and aim we at the best:

And, for the time shall not seem tedious,  
I'll tell thee what befell on me a day,

In this self-place where now we mean to stand.

3 *Keep.* Here comes a man, let's stay till he be past.

*Enter King HENRY, disguised, with a Prayer-book.*

*K. Hen.* From Scotland am I stolen, even of pure love,

To greet mine own land with my wishful sight.  
No, Harry, Harry, 'tis no land of thine;

Thy place is fill'd, thy sceptre wrung from thee,  
Thy balm wash'd off, wherewith thou wast anointed;

No bending knee will call thee Cæsar now,

\* Thicket. † A plain extended between woods

No humble suitors press to speak for right,  
No, not a man comes for redress of thee;  
For how can I help them, and not myself?

1 *Keep.* Ay, here's a deer whose skin's a keeper's fee:

This is the *quondam* king; let's seize upon him.

*K. Hen.* Let me embrace these our adversaries;

For wise men say, it is the wisest course.

2 *Keep.* Why linger we? Let us lay hands upon him.

1 *Keep.* Forbear awhile; we'll hear a little more.

*K. Hen.* My queen and son are gone to France for aid;

And, as I hear, the great commanding Warwick

Is thither gone, to crave the French king's sister

To wife for Edward: if this news be true,  
Poor queen, and son, your labour is but lost;

For Warwick is a subtle orator,  
And Lewis a prince soon won with moving words

By this account, then, Margaret may win him;  
For she's a woman to be pitied much:

Her sighs will make a battery in his breast;  
Her tears will pierce into a marble heart;

The tiger will be mild, while she doth mourn;  
And Nero will be tainted with remorse,

To hear and see her plaints, her brinish tears.  
Ay, but she's come to beg; Warwick, to give:

She, on his left side, craving aid for Henry;  
He, on his right, asking a wife for Edward.

She weeps and says—her Henry is deposed;  
He smiles, and says—his Edward is install'd;

That she, poor wretch, for grief can speak no more:

Whiles Warwick tells his title, smooths the wrong,

Inferreth arguments of mighty strength;  
And, in conclusion, wins the king from her,

With promise of his sister, and what else,  
To strengthen and support king Edward's place.

O Margaret, thus 'twill be: and thou, poor soul,

Art then forsaken, as thou went'st forlorn.

2 *Keep.* Say, what art thou, that talk'st of kings and queens?

*K. Hen.* More than I seem, and less than I was born to:

A man at least, for less I should not be;  
And men may talk of kings, and why not I?

2 *Keep.* Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou wert a king.

*K. Hen.* Why, so I am, in mind; and that's enough.

2 *Keep.* But, if thou be a king, where is thy crown?

*K. Hen.* My crown is in my heart, not on my head;

Not deck'd with diamonds and Indian stones,  
Nor to be seen: my crown is call'd content;

A crown it is, that seldom kings enjoy.

2 *Keep.* Well, if you be a king crown'd with content,

Your crown content, and you must be contented

To go along with us: for, as we think,  
You are the king, king Edward hath depos'd;

And we his subjects, sworn in all allegiance,  
Will apprehend you as his enemy.

*K. Hen.* But did you never swear, and break an oath?

2 *Keep.* No, never such an oath; nor will not now.

*K. Hen.* Where did you dwell when I was king of England?

2 *Keep.* Here in this country where we now remain.

*K. Hen.* I was anointed king at nine months old;

My father and my grandfather were kings;  
And you were sworn true subjects unto me:

And tell me, then, have you not broke your oaths ?

1 *Keep*. No ;

For we were subjects, but while you were king.

*K. Hen.* Why, am I dead ? Do I not breathe a man ?

Ah ! simple men, you know not what you swear. Look, as I blow this feather from my face, And as the air blows it to me again, Obeying with my wind when I do blow, And yielding to another when it blows, Commanded always by the greater gust ; Such is the lightness of you common men. But do not break your oaths ; for, of that sin My mild entreaty shall not make you guilty. Go where you will, the king shall be commanded ;

And be you kungs ; command, and I'll obey.

1 *Keep*. We are true subjects to the king, king Edward.

*K. Hen.* So would you be again to Henry, If he were seated as king Edward is.

1 *Keep*. We charge you in God's name, and in the king's,

To go with us unto the officers.

*K. Hen.* In God's name, lead ; your king's name be obey'd :

And what God will, then let your king perform, And what he will, I humbly yield unto.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. — London. — A Room in the Palace.

Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, CLARENCE, and Lady GREY.

*K. Edw.* Brother of Gloster, at Saint Alban's field

The lady's husband, Sir John Grey, was slain ; His lands then seized on by the conqueror : Her suit is now to repossess those lands ; Which we in justice cannot well deny, Because in quarrel of the house of York The worthy gentleman did lose his life.

*Glo.* Your highness shall do well to grant her suit :

It were dishonour to deny it her.

*K. Edw.* It were no less ; but yet I'll make a pause.

*Glo.* Yea ! is it so ?

I see the lady hath a thing to grant, Before the king will grant her humble suit.

*Clar.* He knows the game ; how true he keeps the wind ?

*Glo.* Silence !

*K. Edw.* Widow, we will consider of your suit,

And come some other time to know our mind.

*L. Grey.* Right gracious lord, I cannot brook delay :

May it please your highness to resolve me now ;

And what your pleasure is, shall satisfy me.

*Glo.* [*Aside.*] Ay, widow ! Then I'll warrant you all your lands,

An if what pleases him, shall pleasure you.

Fight closer, or, good faith, you'll catch a blow.

*Clar.* I fear her not, unless she chance to fall.

*Glo.* God forbid that ! for he'll take 'vantage.

*K. Edw.* How many children hast thou, widow ? Tell me.

*Clar.* I think he means to beg a child of her.

*Glo.* Nay, whip me then ; he'll rather give her two.

*L. Grey.* Three, my most gracious lord.

*Glo.* You shall have four, if you'll be rul'd by him.

*K. Edw.* 'Twere pity, they should lose their father's land.

*L. Grey.* Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it then.

*K. Edw.* Lords, give us leave ; I'll try this widow's wit.

*Glo.* Ay, good leave \* have you ; for you will have leave, Till youth take leave, and leave you to the crutch.

[*GLOSTER and CLARENCE retire to the other side.*]

*K. Edw.* Now tell me, madam, do you love your children ?

*L. Grey.* Ay, full as dearly as I love myself.

*K. Edw.* And would you not do much to do them good ?

*L. Grey.* To do them good, I would sustain some harm.

*K. Edw.* Then get your husband's land, to do them good.

*L. Grey.* Therefore I came unto your majesty.

*K. Edw.* I'll tell you how these lands are to be got.

*L. Grey.* So shall you bind me to your highness' service.

*K. Edw.* What service wilt thou do me, if I give them ?

*L. Grey.* What you command, that rests in me to do.

*K. Edw.* But you will take exceptions to my boon.

*L. Grey.* No, gracious lord, except I cannot do it.

*K. Edw.* Ay, but thou canst do what I mean to ask.

*L. Grey.* Why, then I will do what your grace commands.

*Glo.* He plies her hard ; and much rain wears the marble.

*Clar.* As red as fire ! Nay, then her wax must melt.

*L. Grey.* Why stops my lord ? Shall I not hear my task ?

*K. Edw.* An easy task ; 'tis but to love a king.

*L. Grey.* That's soon perform'd, because I am a subject.

*K. Edw.* Why, then, thy husband's lands I freely give thee.

*L. Grey.* I take my leave, with many thousand thanks.

*Glo.* The match is made ; she seals it with a curt'sy.

*K. Edw.* But stay thee, 'tis the fruits of love I mean.

*L. Grey.* The fruits of love I mean, my loving liege.

*K. Edw.* Ay, but, I fear me, in another sense.

What love, think'st thou, I sue so much to get ?

*L. Grey.* My love till death, my humble thanks, my prayers ;

That love which virtue begs, and virtue grants.

*K. Edw.* No, by my troth, I did not mean such love.

*L. Grey.* Why, then you mean not as I thought you did.

*K. Edw.* But now you partly may perceive my mind.

*L. Grey.* My mind will never grant what I perceive

Your highness aims at, if I aim aright.

*K. Edw.* To tell thee plain, I am to lie with thee.

*L. Grey.* To tell you plain, I had rather be in prison.

*K. Edw.* Why, then thou shalt not have thy husband's lands.

*L. Grey.* Why, then mine honesty shall be my dowry ;

For by that loss I will not purchase them.

*K. Edw.* Therein thou wrong'st thy children mightily.

*L. Grey.* Herein your highness wrongs both them and me.

But, mighty lord, this merry inclination,

\* This phrase implies readiness of ascent.

Accords not with the sadness \* of my suit;  
Please you dismiss me, either with ay or no.

*K. Edw.* Ay; if thou wilt say ay to my request:

No; if thou dost say no to my demand.

*L. Grey.* Then, no, my lord. My suit is at an end.

*Glo.* The widow likes him not, she knits her brows.

*Clar.* He is the bluntest wooer in Christendom.

*K. Edw.* [*Aside.*] Her looks do argue her replete with modesty;

Her words do show her wit incomparable;

All her perfections challenge sovereignty;

One way, or other, she is for a king;

And she shall be my love, or else my queen.—

*Say*, that king Edward take thee for his queen?

*L. Grey.* 'Tis better said than done, my gracious lord:

I am a subject fit to jest withal,

But far unfit to be a sovereign.

*K. Edw.* Sweet widow, by my state, I swear to thee.

I speak no more than what my soul intends;

And that is to enjoy thee for my love.

*L. Grey.* And that is more than I will yield unto:

I know I am too mean to be your queen,

And yet too good to be your concubine.

*K. Edw.* You cavil, widow; I did mean, my queen.

*L. Grey.* 'Twill grieve your grace, my sons should call you—father.

*K. Edw.* No more, than when thy daughters call thee mother.

Thou art a widow, and thou hast some children;

And, by God's mother, I, being but a bachelor,

Have other some: why, 'tis a happy thing

To be the father unto many sons.

Answer no more, for thou shalt be my queen.

*Glo.* The ghostly father now hath done his shrift.

*Clar.* When he was made a shriver, 'twas for shrift.

*K. Edw.* Brothers, you muse what chat we two have had.

*Glo.* The widow likes it not, for she looks sad.

*K. Edw.* You'd think it strange, if I should marry her.

*Clar.* To whom, my lord?

*K. Edw.* Why, Clarence, to myself.

*Glo.* That would be ten days' wonder, at the least.

*Clar.* That's a day longer than a wonder lasts.

*Glo.* By so much is the wonder in extremes.

*K. Edw.* Well, jest on, brothers: I can tell you both,

Her suit is granted for her husband's lands.

*Enter a Nobleman.*

*Nob.* My gracious lord, Henry your foe is taken,

And brought your prisoner to your palace gate.

*K. Edw.* See that he be convey'd unto the Tower:—

And go we, brothers, to the man that took him,

To question of his apprehension.—

Widow, go you along;—Lords, use her honourable.

[*Exeunt King EDWARD, Lady GREY, CLARENCE, and Lords.*]

*Glo.* Ay, Edward will use women honourably.

Would he were wasted, marrow, bones, and all,  
That from his loins no hopeful branch may spring,

To cross me from the golden time I look for!  
And yet, between my son's desire and me,

(The lustful Edward's title buried,)

Is Clarence, Henry, and his son young Edward,

And all the unlook'd-for issue of their bodies,

To take their rooms, ere I can place myself:

A cold premeditation for my purpose!

Why, then I do but dream on sovereignty;

Like one that stands upon a promontory,

And spies a far-off shore where he would tread,

Wishing his foot were equal with his eye;

And chides the sea that sunders him from thence,

Saying—he'll lade it dry to have his way:

So do I wish the crown being so far off;

And so I chide the means that keep me from it;

And so I say—I'll cut the causes off,

Flattering me with impossibilities.—

My eye's too quick, my heart o'erweens too much,

Unless my hand and strength could equal them.

Well, say there is no kingdom then for Richard;

What other pleasure can the world afford?

I'll make my heaven in a lady's lap,

And deck my body in gay ornaments,

And witch sweet ladies with my words and looks.

O miserable thought! and more unlikely,

Than to accomplish twenty golden crowns!

Why, love forswore me in my mother's womb:

And, for I should not deal in her soft laws,

She did corrupt frail nature with a bribe

To shrink mine arm up like a wither'd shrub;

To make an envious mountain on my back,

Where sits deformity to mock my body;

To shape my legs of an unequal size;

To disproportion me in every part,

Like to a chaos, or an unlick'd bear-whelp,

That carries no impression like the dam.

And am I then a man to be belov'd?

O monstrous fault, to harbour such a thought!

Then, since this earth affords no joy to me,

But to command, to check, to o'erbear such

As are of better person than myself,

I'll make my heaven—to dream upon the crown;

And, whiles I live, to account this world but hell,

Until my misshap'd trunk that bears this head,

Be round impaled \* with a glorious crown.

And yet I know not how to get the crown,

For many lives stand between me and home:

And I, like one lost in a thorny wood,

That rents the thorns, and is rent with the thorns;

Seeking a way, and straying from the way;

Not knowing how to find the open air,

But toiling desperately to find it out,

Torment myself to catch the English crown:

And from that torment I will free myself,

Or hew my way out with a bloody axe.

Why, I can smile, and murder while I smile;

And cry content, to that which grieves my heart;

And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,

And frame my face to all occasions.

I'll drown more sailors than the mermaid shall;

I'll slay more gazers than the basilisk;

I'll play the orator as well as Nestor,

Deceive more shily than Ulysses could,

And, like a Sinon, take another Troy:

I can add colours to the camelion;

Change shapes with Proteus, for advantages,

And set the murderous Machiavel to school.

Can I do this, and cannot get a crown?

Tut! I were it further off, I'll pluck it down.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—France.—A Room in the Palace.

*Flourish.* Enter *Lewis the French King*, and *Lady Bona*, attended; the *King* takes his *State*. Then enter *Queen MARGARET*, *Prince EDWARD* her son, and the *Earl of OXFORD*.

*K. Lew.* Fair queen of England, worthy Margaret,

Sit down with us; it ill befits thy state,

\* The seriousness.

\* Encircled.

Scene III. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI.

533

And birth, that thou should'st stand, while  
Lewis doth sit.

*Q. Mar.* No, mighty king of France; now  
Margaret

Must strike her sail, and learn a while to serve,  
Where kings command. I was, I must confess,

Great Albion's queen in former golden days:  
But now mischance hath trod my title down,  
And with dishonour laid me on the ground;  
Where I must take like seat unto my fortune,  
And to my humble seat conform myself.

*K. Lew.* Why, say, fair queen, whence springs  
this deep despair?

*Q. Mar.* From such a cause as fills mine eyes  
with tears,  
And stops my tongue, while heart is drown'd in  
care.

*K. Lew.* What'er it be, be thou still like  
thyself,

And sit thee by our side: yield not thy neck  
[*Sits her by him.*]

To fortune's yoke, but let thy dauntless mind  
Still ride in triumph over all mischance.  
Be plain, queen Margaret, and tell thy grief;  
It shall be eas'd, if France can yield relief.

*Q. Mar.* Those gracious words revive my  
drooping thoughts,  
And give my tongue-tied sorrows leave to  
speak.

Now, therefore, be it known to noble Lewis,  
That Henry, sole possessor of my love,  
Is, of a king, become a banish'd man,  
And forc'd to live in Scotland a forlorn;  
While proud ambitious Edward, duke of York,  
Usurps the regal title, and the seat  
Of England's true-anointed lawful king.  
This is the cause, that I, poor Margaret,  
With this my son, prince Edward, Henry's  
heir.

Am come to crave thy just and lawful aid;  
And, if thou fail us, all our hope is done:  
Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help;  
Our people and our peers are both misled;  
Our treasure seiz'd, our soldiers put to flight.  
And, as thou see'st, ourselves in heavy plight.

*K. Lew.* Renowned queen, with patience calm  
the storm,  
While we bethink a means to break it off.

*Q. Mar.* The more we stay the stronger grows  
our foe.

*K. Lew.* The more I stay, the more I'll suc-  
cure thee.

*Q. Mar.* O but impatience walteth on true  
sorrow:

And see, where comes the breeder of my sorrow.

*Enter WARWICK, attended.*

*K. Lew.* What's he, approacheth boldly to  
our presence?

*Q. Mar.* Our earl of Warwick, Edward's  
greatest friend.

*K. Lew.* Welcome, brave Warwick! What  
brings thee to France?

[*Descending from his State, Queen  
MARGARET rises.*]

*Q. Mar.* Ay, now begins a second storm to  
rise;

For this is he, that moves both wind and tide.  
*War.* From worthy Edward, king of Albion,  
My lord and sovereign, and thy vowed friend,  
I come,—in kindness and unfeigned love,—  
First, to do greetings to thy royal person;  
And, then, to crave a league of amity;  
And, lastly, to confirm that amity  
With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant  
That virtuous lady Bona, thy fair sister,  
To England's king in lawful marriage.

*Q. Mar.* If that go forward, Henry's hope is  
done.

*War.* And, gracious madam, [To BONA.] in  
our king's behalf,

I am commanded, with your leave and favour,  
Humbly to kiss your hand, and with my tongue  
To tell the passion of my sovereign's heart;

Where fame, late entering at his heedful ears,  
Hath plac'd thy beauty's image, and thy virtue.

*Q. Mar.* King Lewis,—and lady Bona,—hear  
me speak,

Before you answer Warwick. His demand  
Springs not from Edward's well-meant honest  
love,

But from deceit, bred by necessity;  
For how can tyrants safely govern home,  
Unless abroad they purchase great alliance?  
To prove him tyrant this reason may suffice,  
That Henry liveth still; but were he dead,  
Yet here prince Edward stands, king Henry's  
son.

Look therefore, Lewis, that by this league and  
marriage

Thou draw not on thy danger and dishonour:  
For though usurpers sway the rule a while,  
Yet heavens are just, and time suppresseth  
wrongs.

*War.* Injurious Margaret!

*Prince.* And why not queen?

*War.* Because thy father Henry did usurp;  
And thou no more art prince, than she is  
queen.

*Q. Mar.* Then Warwick disannuls great John of  
Gaunt.

Which did subdue the greatest part of Spain;  
And, after John of Gaunt, Henry the fourth,  
Whose wisdom was a mirror to the wisest;  
And, after that wise prince, Henry the fifth,  
Who by his prowess conquered all France;  
From these our Henry lineally descends.

*War.* Oxford, how haps it, in this smooth  
discourse,

You told not how Henry the sixth hath lost  
All that which Henry the fifth had gotten?  
Methinks, these peers of France should smile at  
that.

But for the rest,—You tell a pedigree  
Of threescore and two years; a silly time  
To make prescription for a kingdom's worth.

*Oxf.* Why, Warwick, canst thou speak against  
thy liege,

Whom thou obey'st thirty and six years,  
And not bewray thy treason with a blush?

*War.* Can Oxford, that did ever fence the  
right,

Now buckler falsehood with a pedigree?  
For shame, leave Henry, and call Edward king.

*Oxf.* Call him my king, by whose injurious  
doom

My elder brother, the lord Aubrey Vere,  
Was done to death? and more than so, my  
father

Even in the downfall of his fellow'd years,  
When nature brought him to the door of death?  
No, Warwick, no; while life upholds this arm,  
This arm upholds the house of Lancaster.

*War.* And I the house of York.

*K. Lew.* Queen Margaret, prince Edward, and  
Oxford,

Vouchsafe, at our request, to stand aside.

While I use further conference with Warwick.

*Q. Mar.* Heaven grant, that Warwick's words  
bewitch him not!

[*Retiring with the PRINCE and OXFORD.*]

*K. Lew.* Now, Warwick, tell me, even upon  
thy conscience,  
Is Edward your true king? for I were loath,  
To link with him that were not lawful chosen.

*War.* Thereon I pawn my credit: and mine  
honour.

*K. Lew.* But is he gracious in the people's  
eye?

*War.* The more, that Henry was unfortunate.

*K. Lew.* Then further, all dissembling set  
aside,

Tell me for truth the measure of his love  
Unto our sister Bona.

*War.* Such it seems,

As may become a monarch like himself.

Myself have often heard him say, and swear,  
That this his love was an eternal plant;  
Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground,

The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's  
sun;

Exempt from envy,\* but not from disdain,  
Unless the lady Bona quit his pain.

*K. Lew.* Now, sister, let us hear your firm  
resolve.

*Bona.* Your grant, or your denial, shall be  
mine:—

Yet I confess, [To WAR.] that often ere this  
day,

When I have heard your king's desert re-  
counted,

Mine ear hath tempted judgment to desire.

*K. Lew.* Then, Warwick, thus,—Our sister  
shall be Edward's;

And now forthwith shall articles be drawn

Touching the jointure that your king must  
make,

Which with her dowry shall be counterpois'd:—  
Draw near, queen Margaret; and be a witness,

That Bona shall be wife to the English king.

*Prince.* To Edward, but not to the English  
king.

*Q. Mar.* Decentful Warwick! it was thy de-  
vice

By this alliance to make void my suit;

Before thy coming, Lewis was Henry's friend.

*K. Lew.* And still is friend to him and Mar-  
garet:

But if your title to the crown be weak,

(As may appear by Edward's good success,)

Then 'tis but reason that I be releas'd

From giving aid, which late I promised.

Yet shall you have all kindness at my hand,

That your estate requires, and mine can yield.

*War.* Henry now lives in Scotland, at his  
ease;

Where having nothing, nothing he can lose.

And as for you yourself, our *quondam* queen,—

You have a father able to maintain you;

And better 'twere, you troubled him than  
France.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, impudent and shameless War-  
wick, peace:

Proud setter-up and puller-down of kings:

I will not hence, till with any talk and tears,

Both full of truth, I make king Lewis behold

Thy sly conveyance,† and thy lord's false  
love;

For both of you are birds of self-same feather.

[A Horn sounded within.]

*K. Lew.* Warwick, this is some post to us  
or thee.

Enter a MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My lord ambassador, these letters are  
for you;

Sent from your brother, marquis Montague.

These from our king unto your majesty.—

And, madam, these for you; from whom, I  
know not,

[To MARGARET. They all read their  
letters.]

*Oxf.* I like it well, that our fair queen and  
mistress

Smiles at her news, while Warwick frowns at  
his.

*Prince.* Nay, mark, how Lewis stamps as he  
were nettled:

I hope, all's for the best.

*K. Lew.* Warwick, what are thy news? and  
your's fair queen?

*Q. Mar.* Mine, such as fill my heart with  
unhop'd joys.

*War.* Mine, full of sorrow and heart's dis-  
content.

*K. Lew.* What! has your king married the  
lady Grey?

And now, to sooth your forgery and his,

Sends me a paper to persuade me patience?

Is this the alliance that he seeks with France?

May he presume to scorn us in this manner?

\* Malice, or hatred.

† Juggling.

*Q. Mar.* I told your majesty as much before  
This proveth Edward's love and Warwick's  
honesty.

*War.* King Lewis, I here protest,—in sight  
of heaven,

And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss,—

That I am clear from this misdeed of Edward's;

No more my king, for he dishonours me:

But most himself, if he could see his shame.—

Did I forget, that by the house of York

My father came untimely to his death?

Did I let pass the abuse done to my niece?

Did I impale him with the regal crown?

Did I put Henry from his native right;

And am I guerdon'd\* at the last, with shame?

Shame on himself! for my desert is honour.

And, to repair my honour lost for him,

I here renounce him, and return to Henry:

My noble queen, let former grudges pass,

And henceforth I am thy true servitor;

I will revenge his wrong to lady Bona,

And replant Henry in his former state.

*Q. Mar.* Warwick, these words have turn'd  
my hate to love;

And I forgive and quite forget old faults,

And joy that thou become'st king Henry's  
friend.

*War.* So much his friend, ay, his unfeign'd  
friend,

That, if king Lewis vouchsafe to furnish us

With some few bands of chosen soldiers,

I'll undertake to lift them on our coast,

And force the tyrant from his seat by war;

'Tis not his new-made bride shall succor him:

And as for Clarence, as my letters tell me,

He's very likely now to fall from him;

For matching more for wanton lust than honour,

Or than for strength and safety of our country.

*Bona.* Dear brother, how shall Bona be re-  
veng'd?

But by the help to this distressed queen?

*Q. Mar.* Renowned prince, how shall poor  
Henry live,

Unless thou rescue him from foul despair?

*Bona.* My quarrel, and this English queen's  
are one.

*War.* And mine, fair lady Bona, joins with  
your's.

*K. Lew.* And mine, with her's, and thine, and  
Margaret's.

Therefore, at last, firmly am resolv'd,

You shall have aid.

*Q. Mar.* Let me give humble thanks for all  
at once.

*K. Lew.* Then England's messenger return to  
post;

And tell false Edward, thy supposed king,

That Lewis of France is sending over maskers,

To revel it with him and his new bride:

Thou see'st what's past, go fear† thy king withal.

*Bona.* Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widow  
er shortly,

I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.

*Q. Mar.* Tell him, my mourning weeds are  
laid aside,

And I am ready to put armour on.

*War.* Tell him from me, that he hath done  
me wrong;

And therefore I'll uncrown him, ere't be long.

There's thy reward; be gone. [Exit MESS.]

*K. Lew.* But, Warwick, thou,

And Oxford, with five thousand men,

Shall cross the seas, and bid false Edward  
battle:

And, as occasion serves, this noble queen

And prince shall follow with a fresh supply,

Yet, ere thou go, but answer me one doubt;—

What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty?

*War.* This shall assure my constant loy-  
alty:—

That, if our queen and this young prince  
agree,

\* Reward.

† Fright.

# Scene I. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI.

535

I'll join mine eldest daughter, and my joy,  
To him forthwith in holy wedlock bands.

*Q. Mar.* Yes, I agree, and thank you for  
your motion:—

Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous,  
Therefore delay not, give thy hand to War-  
wick;

And, with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable,  
That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine.

*Prince.* Yes, I accept her, for she well de-  
serves it;

And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand.

[*He gives his hand to Warwick.*]

*K. Lew.* Why stay we now? These soldiers  
shall be levied,

And thou, lord Bourbon, our high admiral,  
Shalt wait them over with our royal fleet.—  
I long, till Edward fall by war's mischance,  
For mocking marriage with a dame of France.

[*Exeunt all but Warwick.*]

*War.* I came from Edward as ambassador,  
But I return his sworn and mortal foe:  
Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,  
But dreadful war shall answer his demand.  
Had he none else to make a stale,\* but me?  
Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow.  
I was the chief that rais'd him to the crown,  
And I'll be chief to bring him down again:  
Not that I pity Henry's misery,  
But seek revenge on Edward's mockery.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—London.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter GLOSTER, CLARENCE, SOMERSET, MON-  
TAGUE, and others.*

*Glo.* Now tell me, brother Clarence, what  
think you  
Of this new marriage with the lady Grey?  
Hath not our brother made a worthy choice?

*Clar.* Alas, you know, 'tis far from hence to  
France;

How could he stay till Warwick made return?

*Som.* My lords, forbear this talk; here comes  
the king.

*Flourish. Enter King EDWARD, attended,  
Lady GREY, as Queen; PEMBROKE, STAF-  
FORD, HASTINGS, and others.*

*Glo.* And his well-chosen bride.

*Clar.* I muid to tell him plainly what I  
think.

*K. Edw.* Now brother of Clarence, how like  
you our choice,

That you stand pensive, as half malecontent?

*Clar.* As well as Lewis of France, or the  
earl of Warwick;

which are so weak of courage, and in judg-  
ment

That they'll take no offence at our abuse.

*K. Edw.* Suppose they take offence without a  
cause.

They are but Lewis and Warwick; I am Ed-  
ward,

Your king and Warwick's, and must have my  
will.

*Glo.* And you shall have your will, because  
our king;

Yet hasty marriage seldom proveth well.

*K. Edw.* Yea, brother Richard, are you of-  
fended too?

*Glo.* Not I:

No; God forbid that I should wish them se-  
ver'd

Whom God hath join'd together: ay, and  
'twere pity,

To sunder them that yoke so well together.

*K. Edw.* Setting your scorns, and your mis-  
like aside,

\* A stalling horse, a pretence.

Tell me some reason, why the lady Grey  
Should not become my wife, and England's  
queen:—

And you too, Somerset and Montague,  
Speak freely what you think.

*Clar.* Then this is my opinion,—that king  
Lewis

Becomes your enemy, for mocking him  
About the marriage of the lady Bona.

*Glo.* And Warwick, doing what you gave in  
charge,  
Is now dishonoured by this new marriage.

*K. Edw.* What, if both Lewis and Warwick  
be appeas'd,

But such invention as I can devise?

*Mont.* Yet to have join'd with France in such  
alliance,

Would more have strengthen'd this our common-  
wealth

'Gainst foreign storms, than any home-bred  
marriage.

*Hast.* Why, knows not Montague, that of  
itself

England is safe, if true within itself!

*Mont.* Yes; but the safer, when 'tis back'd  
with France.

*Hast.* 'Tis better using France, than trusting  
France,

Let us be back'd with God, and with the seas,\*  
Which he hath given for fence impregnable,

And with their helps only defend ourselves,  
In them and in ourselves, our safety lies.

*Clar.* For this one speech, lord Hastings we'll  
deserves

To have the heir of the lord Hungerford.

*K. Edw.* Ay, what of that? it was my will,  
and giant;

And, for this once, my will shall stand for law.

*Glo.* And yet, methinks, your grace hath not  
done well,

To give the heir and daughter of lord Scales

Unto the brother of your loving bride;

She better would have fitted me or Clarence:

But in your bride you bury brotherhood.

*Clar.* Or else you would not have bestow'd  
the heir?

Of the lord Bunville on your new wife's son  
And leave your brothers to go speed else-  
where.

*K. Edw.* Alas, poor Clarence! is it for a  
wife,

That thou art malecontent? I will provide  
thee.

*Clar.* In choosing for yourself you show'd  
your judgment:

Which, being shallow, you shall give me leave

To play the broker in mine own behalf;

And, to that end, I shortly mind to leave you.

*K. Edw.* Leave me, or tarry, Edward will be  
king,

And not be tied unto his brother's will.

*Q. Eliz.* My lords, before it pleas'd his ma-  
jesty

To raise my state to title of a queen,

Do me but right, and you must all confess

That I was not ignoble of descent,

And meaner than myself have had like fortune.

But as this title honours me and mine,

So your dislikes, to whom I would be pleasing,

Do cloud my joys with danger and with sor-  
row.

*K. Edw.* My love, forbear to fawn upon their  
frowns:

What danger, or what sorrow can befall thee

So long as Edward is thy constant friend,

And their true sovereign, whom they must  
obey?

Nay, whom may shall obey, and love thee  
too,

Unless they seek for hatred at my hands:

\* This has been the advice of every man who in any  
age understood and favoured the interests of England.  
The heresses of great estates were in the wardship  
of the king, who arbitrarily and often scandalously  
matched them to his favourites.

Which if they do, yet will I keep thee safe,  
And they shall feel the vengeance of my wrath.

*Glo.* I hear, yet say not much, but think the more. *[Aside.]*

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*K. Edw.* Now, messenger, what letters, or what news,  
From France?

*Mess.* My sovereign liege, no letters and few words;  
But such as I, without your special pardon,  
Dare not relate.

*K. Edw.* Go to, we pardon thee: therefore, in brief,  
Tell me their words as near as thou canst guess them.

What answer makes king Lewis unto our letters?  
*Mess.* At my depart, these were his very words;

*Go tell false Edward, thy supposed king,  
That Lewis of France is sending over maskers,*

*To revel it with him and his new bride.*

*K. Edw.* Is Lewis so brave? belike, he thinks me Henry.

But what said lady Bona to my marriage?

*Mess.* These were her words, utter'd with mild disdain;

*Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly,*

*I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.*

*K. Edw.* I blame not her, she could say little less;

She had the wrong. But what said Henry's queen;

For I have heard, that she was there in place,\*

*Mess.* Tell him, quoth she, my mourning weeds are done,†

*And I am ready to put armour on.*

*K. Edw.* Belike, she mends to play the Amazon.

But what said Warwick to these injuries?

*Mess.* He, more incens'd against your majesty  
Than all the rest, discharg'd me with these words;

*Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong,  
And therefore I'll uncrown him, ere't be long.*

*K. Edw.* Ha! durst the traitor breathe out so proud words?

Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn'd:  
They shall have wars, and pay for their presumption.

But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret?

*Mess.* Ay, gracious sovereign; they are so link'd in friendship,

That young prince Edward marries Warwick's daughter.

*Clar.* Belike, the elder; Clarence will have the younger.

Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,  
For I will hence to Warwick's other daughter;

That, though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage

I may not prove inferior to yourself.—

You, that love me and Warwick, follow me.

*[Exit CLARENCE, and SOMERSET follows.]*

*Glo.* Not I:

My thoughts aim at a further matter; I  
Stay not for love of Edward, but the crown.

*[Aside.]*

*K. Edw.* Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick!

Yet am I arm'd against the worst can happen;

And haste is needful in this desperate case.—

Pembroke, and Stafford, you in our behalf

Go levy men, and make prepare for war:

They are already, or quickly will be landed:

Myself in person will straight follow you.

*[Exit PEMBROKE and STAFFORD.]*

But, ere I go, Hastings, and Montague,

Resolve my doubt. You twain, of all the rest,

Are near to Warwick, by blood and by alliance:

Tell me, if you love Warwick more than me?

If it be so, then both depart to him;

I rather wish you foes, than hollow friends;

But if you mind to hold your true obedience,

Give me assurance with some friendly vow,

That I may never have you in suspect.

*Mont.* So God help Montague, as he proves true!

*Hast.* And Hastings, as he favours Edward's cause!

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us?

*Glo.* Ay, in despite of all that shall withstand you.

*K. Edw.* Why so; then am I sure of victory.

Now therefore let us hence; and lose no hour,

Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power. *[Exeunt]*

### SCENE II.—A plain in Warwickshire.

*Enter WARWICK and OXFORD, with French and other Forces.*

*War.* Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well;

The common people by numbers swarm to us.

*Enter CLARENCE and SOMERSET.*

But see, where Somerset and Clarence come;—  
Speak suddenly, my lords, are we all friends?

*Clar.* Fear not that, my lord.

*War.* Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick;

And welcome, Somerset:—I hold it cowardice,

To rest mistrustful where a noble heart

Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love;

Else might I think, that Clarence, Edward's

brother,

Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings;

But welcome, Clarence; my daughter shall be

thine

And now what rest, but, in night's overture,

Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd,

His soldiers lurking in the town's about,

And but attended by a simple guard,

We may surprize and take him at our pleasure?

Our scouts have found the adventure very

easy:

That as Ulysses, and stout Diomedes,

With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus'

tents,

And brought from thence the Thracian fatal

steeds;

So we, well cover'd with the night's black

mantle;

At unawares may beat down Edward's guard,

And seize himself; I say not—slaughter him,

For I intend but only to surprize him.—

You, that will follow me to this attempt,

Applaud the name of Henry, with your leader.

*[They all cry, Henry]*

Why, then, let's on our way in silent sort:

For Warwick and his friends, God and Saint

George! *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE III.—Edward's Camp, near Warwick.

*Enter certain WATCHMEN, to guard the King's Tent.*

1 *Watch.* Come on, my masters, each man

take his stand:

The king, by this, is set him down to sleep.

2 *Watch.* What, will he not to-bed?

1 *Watch.* Why, no: for he hath made a so-

lemn vow

Never to lie and take his natural rest,

Till Warwick, or himself, be quite suppress'd.

2 *Watch.* To-morrow then, belike, shall be

the day,

If Warwick be so near as men report.

3 *Watch.* But say, I pray, what nobleman is

that,

That with the king here resteth in his tent?

\* Present.

† Thrown off.

1 *Watch.* 'Tis the lord Hastings, the king's chiefest friend.

3 *Watch.* Oh! is it so? But why commands the king,

That his chief followers lodge in towns about him,

While he himself keepeth in the cold field?

2 *Watch.* 'Tis the more honour, because more dangerous.

3 *Watch.* Ay; but give me worship and quietness,

I like it better than a dangerous honour.

If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,

'Tis to be doubted, he would waken him.

1 *Watch.* Unless our halberts did shut up his passage.

2 *Watch.* Ay: wherefore else guard we his royal tent,

But to defend his person from night-foes?

*Enter WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET, and Forces.*

*War.* This is his tent; and see, where stand his guard.

Courage, my masters: honour now, or never! But follow me, and Edward shall be ours.

1 *Watch.* Who goes there?

2 *Watch.* Stay, or thou diest.

[*WARWICK, and the rest, cry all—Warwick! Warwick! and set upon the guard; who fly, crying—Arim! Arim!—WARWICK, and the rest following them.*

*The Drum beating, and Trumpets sounding, Re-enter WARWICK, and the rest, bringing the KING out in a Gown, sitting in a Chair; GLOSTER and HASTINGS fly.*

*Som.* What are they that fly there?

*War.* Richard and Hastings: let them go, here's the duke.

*K. Edw.* The duke! why, Warwick, when we parted last,

Thou call'dst me king?

*War.* Ay, but the case is alter'd:

When you disgrac'd me in my embassade,

Then I degrad'd you from being king,

And come now to create you duke of York.

Alas! how should you govern any kingdom,

That know not how to use ambassadors?

Nor how to be contented with one wife?

Nor how to use your brothers brotherly?

Nor how to study for the people's welfare?

Nor how to shroud yourself from enemies?

*K. Edw.* Yea, brother of Clarence, art thou here too?

Nay, then I see that Edward needs must down.—

Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance,

Of thee thyself, and all thy complices,

Edward will always bear himself as king:

Though fortune's malice overthrow my state,

My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.

*War.* Then, for his mind, \* be Edward England's king;

But Henry now shall wear the English crown,

And be true king indeed: thou but the shadow.—

My lord of Somerset, at my request,

See that forthwith duke Edward be convey'd

Unto my brother, archbishop of York.

When I have fought with Pembroke and his fellows,

I'll follow you, and tell what answer

Lewis, and the lady Bona, send to him:—

Nor, for a while, farewell, good duke of York.

*K. Edw.* What fates impose, that men must needs abide;

It boots not to resist both wind and tide.

[*Exit King EDWARD, led out; SOMERSET, with him.*

*Oxf.* What now remains, my lord, for us to do,

But march to London with our soldiers?

\* *I.e.* In his mind: as far as his own mind goes.

*War.* Ay, that's the first thing that we have to do;

To free king Henry from imprisonment,

And see him seated in the regal throne.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—London.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH and RIVERS.*

*Riv.* Madam, what makes you in this sudden change?

*Q. Eliz.* Why, brother Rivers, are you yet to learn,

What late misfortune is befall'n king Edward?

*Riv.* What, loss of some pitch'd battle against Warwick?

*Q. Eliz.* No, but the loss of his own royal person.

*Riv.* Then is my sovereign slain?

*Q. Eliz.* Ay, almost slain, for he is taken prisoner;

Either betray'd by falsehood of his guard,

Or by his foe surpriz'd at unawares;

And, as I further have to understand,

Is new committed to the bishop of York,

Fell Warwick's brother, and by that our foe.

*Riv.* These news, I must confess, are full of grief:

Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may;

Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day.

*Q. Eliz.* Till then, fair hope must hinder His decay.

And I the rather wean me from despair,

For love of Edward's offspring in my womb:

This is it that makes me bridle passion,

And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross;

Ay, ay, for this I draw in many a tear,

And stop the rising of blood-sucking sighs,

Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown

King Edward's fruit, true heir to the English crown.

*Riv.* But, madam, where is Warwick then become?

*Q. Eliz.* I am informed, that he comes towards London,

To set the crown once more on Henry's head:

Guess thou the rest; king Edward's friends must down.

But, to prevent the tyrant's violence,

(For trust not him that hath once broken faith,)

I'll hence forthwith unto the sanctuary,

To save at least the heir of Edward's right;

There shall I rest secure from force and fraud.

Come therefore, let us fly, while we may fly;

If Warwick take us, we are sure to die.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.—A Park near Middleham Castle in Yorkshire.

*Enter GLOSTER, HASTINGS, Sir WILLIAM STANLEY, and others.*

*Glo.* Now, my lord Hastings, and Sir William Stanley,

Leave off to wonder why I drew you hither,

Into this chiefest thicket of the park.

Thus stands the case: You know, our king my brother,

Is prisoner to the bishop here, at whose hands

He hath good usage and great liberty;

And often, but attended with weak guard,

Comes hunting this way to disport himself.

I have advertis'd him by secret means,

That if about this hour, he make this way,

Under the colour of his usual game,

He shall here find his friends, with horse and men,

To set him free from his captivity.



*Enter King EDWARD, and a HUNTSMAN.*

*Hunt.* This way, my lord; for this way lies the game.

*K. Edw.* Nay, this way, man; see, where the huntsmen stand.—  
Now, brother of Gloster, lord Hastings, and the rest,

Stand you thus close, to steal the bishop's deer?  
*Glo.* Brother, the time and case requireth haste;

Your horse stands ready at the park corner.

*K. Edw.* But whither shall we then?

*Hast.* To Lynn, my lord; and ship from thence to Flanders.

*Glo.* Well guess'd, believe me; for that was my meaning.

*K. Edw.* Stanley, I will requite thy forwardness.

*Glo.* But wherefore stay we? 'tis no time to talk.

*K. Edw.* Huntsman, what say'st thou? wilt thou go along?

*Hunt.* Better do so, than tarry and be hang'd.

*Glo.* Come then, away; let's have no more ado.

*K. Edw.* Bishop, farewell: shield thee from Warwick's frown;  
And pray that I may repossess the crown.

*[Exit.*

*SCENE VI.—A Room in the Tower.*

*Enter King HENRY, CLARENCE, WARWICK, SOMERSET, young RICHMOND, OXFORD, MONTAGUE, LIEUTENANT of the Tower, and Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Master lieutenant, now that God and friends

Have shaken Edward from the regal seat,  
And turn'd my captive state to liberty,  
My fear to hope, my sorrows unto joys;

At our enlargement what are thy due fees?  
*Lieu.* Subjects may challenge nothing of their sovereigns;

But, if an humble prayer may prevail,  
I then crave pardon of your majesty.

*K. Hen.* For what, lieutenant? for well using me?

Nay, be thou sure, I'll well requite thy kindness,

For that it made my imprisonment a pleasure:  
Ay, such a pleasure as fucagied birds  
Conceive, when, after many moody thoughts,  
At last, by notes of household harmony,  
They quite forget their loss of liberty.—

But, Warwick, after God, thou set'st me free,  
And chiefly therefore I thank God and thee;  
He was the author, thou the instrument.

Therefore, that I may conquer fortune's spite,  
By living low, where fortune cannot hurt me;  
And that the people of this blessed land  
May not be punish'd with my thwarting stars;  
Warwick, although my head still wear the crown,

I here resign my government to thee,  
For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds.

*War.* Your grace hath still been fam'd for virtuous;

And now may seem as wise as virtuous,  
By spying and avoiding fortune's malice,  
For few men rightly temper with the stars: \*  
Yet in this one thing let me blame your grace,  
For choosing me, when Clarence is in place. †

*Clar.* No, Warwick, thou art worthy of the sway,

To whom the heavens, in thy nativity,  
Adjudg'd an olive branch and laurel crown,  
As likely to be blessed in peace and war;  
And therefore I yield thee my free consent.

*War.* And I choose Clarence only for protector.

\* Few men conform their temper to their destiny.  
† Present.

*K. Hen.* Warwick and Clarence, give me both your hands;

Now join your hands, and, with your hands, your hearts;

That no dissention hinder government:

I make you both protectors of this land;

While I myself will lead a private life,

And in devotion spend my latter days,

To sin's rebuke, and my Creator's praise.

*War.* What answers Clarence to his sovereign's will?

*Clar.* That he consents, if Warwick yield consent;

For on thy fortune I repose myself.

*War.* Why then, though loath, yet must I be content:

We'll yoke together, like a double shadow

To Henry's body, and supply his place;

I mean, in bearing weight of government,  
While he enjoys the honour and his ease.

And, Clarence, now then it is more than needful,

Forthwith that Edward be pronounc'd a traitor,

And all his lands and goods be confiscate.

*Clar.* What else? and that succession be determin'd.

*War.* Ay, therein Clarence shall not want his part.

*K. Hen.* But, with the first of all your chief affairs,

Let me entreat, (for I command no more,)

That Margaret your queen, and my son Edward,  
Be sent for, to return from France with speed:

For, till I see them here, by doubtful sea  
My joy of liberty is half eclips'd.

*Clar.* It shall be done, my sovereign, with all speed.

*K. Hen.* My lord of Somerset, what youth is that,

Of whom you seem to have so tender care?

*Som.* My liege, it is young Henry; call of Richmond.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, England's hope: in secret powers

*[Lays his Hand on his Head.*

Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts,  
This pretty lad \* will prove our country's bliss.

His looks are full of peaceful majesty;  
His head by nature fram'd to wear a crown,

His hand to wield a sceptre; and himself  
Likely, in time, to bless a regal throne.

Make much of him, my lords; for this is he,  
Must help you more than you are hurt by me.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*War.* What news, my friend?

*Mess.* That Edward is escaped from your brother,

And fled, as he hears since, to Burgundy.

*War.* Unsavoury news: But how made he escape?

*Mess.* He was convey'd by Richard duke of Gloster,

And the lord Hastings, who attended † him

In secret ambush on the forest side,  
And from the bishop's huntsmen rescued him;

For hunting was his daily exercise.

*War.* My brother was too careless of his charge.—

But let us hence, my sovereign, to provide

A salve for any sore that may betide.

*[Exit King HENRY, WAR, CLAR, LIEUT. and Attendants.]*

*Som.* My lord, I like not of this flight of Edward's:

For, doubtless, Burgundy will yield him help;

And we shall have more wars, before't be long.

As Henry's late presaging prophecy

Did glad my heart, with hope of this young Richmond;

\* Afterward Henry VII. who put an end to the civil war between the two houses.  
† I. e. Waited for him.

So doth my heart misgive me, in these conflicts  
What may befall him, to his harm and our's :  
Therefore, lord Oxford, to prevent the worst,  
Forthwith we'll send him hence to Brittany,  
Till storms be past of civil enmity.

*Oxf.* Ay ; for if Edward repossess the crown,  
'Tis like that Richmond with the rest shall  
down.

*Som.* It shall be so ; he shall to Brittany.  
Come therefore, let's about it speedily.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—*Before York.*

*Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, HASTINGS,  
and Forces.*

*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, lord Hast-  
ings, and the rest ;  
Yet thus far fortune maketh us amends,  
And says, that once more I shall interchange  
My waned state for Henry's regal crown.  
Well have we pass'd, and now repass'd the  
seas,  
And brought desired help from Burgundy :  
What thou remains, we being thus arriv'd  
From Ravenspurg haven before the gates of  
York,

But that we enter, as into our dukedom ?

*Glo.* The gates made fast !—Brother, I like  
not this ;  
For many men, that stumble at the threshold,  
Are well foretold—that danger lurks within.

*K. Edw.* Tush, man ! abodements must not  
now fright us :

By fair or foul means we must enter in,  
For hither our friends repair to us.

*Hast.* My liege, I'll knock once more, to  
summon them.

*Enter, on the Walls, the MAYOR of York,  
and his Brethren.*

*May.* My lords, we were forewarned of your  
coming,  
And shut the gates for safety of ourselves ;  
For now we owe allegiance unto Henry.

*K. Edw.* But, master mayor, if Henry be  
your king,

Yet Edward, at the least, is duke of York.

*May.* True, my good lord ; I know you for  
no less.

*K. Edw.* Why, and I challenge nothing but  
my dukedom ;

As being well content with that alone.

*Glo.* But, when the fox hath once got in his  
nose,

He'll soon find means to make the body follow.

[*Aside.*]

*Hast.* Why, master mayor, why stand you in  
a doubt ?

Open the gates, we are king Henry's friends.

*May.* Ay, say you so ? the gates shall then be  
open'd.

[*Exeunt from above.*]

*Glo.* A wise stout captain, and persuaded  
soon !

*Hast.* The good old man would fain that all  
were well,

So 'twere not 'long of him : \* but, being enter'd,  
I doubt not, I, but we shall soon persuade  
Both him, and all his brothers, unto reason.

*Re-enter the MAYOR and two ALDERMEN,  
below.*

*K. Edw.* So, master mayor : these gates must  
not be shut,

But in the night, or in the time of war.

What I fear not, *may*, but yield me up the  
keys ;

[*Takes his keys.*]

For Edward will defend the town and thee,  
And all those friends that deign to follow me.

\* The mayor is with us should enter, so he may  
not be blamed.

*Drum.—Enter MONTGOMERY and Forces,  
marching.*

*Glo.* Brother, this is Sir John Montgomery,  
Our trusty friend, unless I be deceiv'd.

*K. Edw.* Welcome, Sir John ! But why come  
you in arms ?

*Mont.* To help king Edward in his time of  
storm,

As every loyal subject ought to do.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, good Montgomery : But we  
now forget

Our title to the crown ; and only claim  
Our dukedom, till God please to send the rest.

*Mont.* Then fare you well, for I will hence  
again ;

I came to serve a king, and not a dpke,—  
Drummer, strike up, and let us march away.

[*A March begun.*]

*K. Edw.* Nay, stay, Sir John, a while ; and  
we'll debate,

By what safe means the crown may be re-  
cover'd.

*Mont.* What talk you of debating ? in few  
words,

If you'll not here proclaim yourself our king,  
I'll leave you to your fortune ; and be gone,

To keep them back that come to succour you :  
Why should we fight, if you pretend no title ?

*Glo.* Why brother, wherefore stand you on  
nice points ?

*K. Edw.* When we grow stronger, then we'll  
make our claim,

Till then, 'tis wisdom to conceal our meaning.

*Hast.* Away with scrupulous wit ! now arms  
must rule.

*Glo.* And fearless minds climb soonest unto  
crowns.

Brother, we will proclaim you out of hand ;  
The bruit \* thereof will bring you many friends.

*K. Edw.* Then be it as you will ; for 'tis my  
right,

And Henry but usurps the diadem.

*Mont.* Ay, now my sovereign speaketh like  
himself ;

And now will I be Edward's champion.

*Hast.* Sound, trumpet ; Edward shall be here  
proclaim'd :—

Come, fellow-soldier, make thou proclamation.

[*Gives him a Paper. Flourish.*]

*Sold.* [*Reads.*] *Edward the fourth, by the  
grace of God, king of England and France,  
and lord of Ireland, &c.*

*Mont.* And whosoe'er gainsays king Edward's  
right,

By this I challenge him to single fight.

[*Throws down his Gauntlet.*]

*All.* Long live king Edward the fourth !

*K. Edw.* Thanks, brave Montgomery ;—and  
thanks unto you all.

If fortune serve me, I'll requite this kindness.  
Now, for this night, let's harbour here in York :

And when the morning sun shall raise his car  
Above the border of this horizon,

We'll forward towards Warwick and his mates ;  
For well I wot † that Henry is no soldier.—

Ah ! froward Clarence, how evil it becoms  
thee,

To flatter Henry, and forsake thy brother !

Yet, as we may, we'll meet both thee and  
Warwick.—

Come on, brave soldiers ; doubt not of the  
day ;

And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VIII.—*London.—A Room in the  
Palace.*

*Enter King HENRY, WARWICK, CLARENCE,  
MONTAGUE, EXETER, and OXFORD.*

*War.* What counsel, lords ? Edward from  
Belgia,

\* Noise, report.

† Know.

With hasty Germans, and blunt Hollanders,  
Hath pass'd in safety through the narrow seas,  
And with his troops doth march amain to  
London;

And many giddy people flock to him.

*Oxf.* Let's levy men, and beat him back  
again.

*Clar.* A little fire is quickly trodden out:  
Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.

*War.* In Warwickshire I have true-hearted  
friends,

Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war;  
Those will I muster up:—and thou, son Cla-  
rence,

Shalt stir, in Suffolk, Norfolk, and in Kent,  
The knights and gentlemen to come with  
thee:—

Thou, brother Montague, in Buckingham,  
Northampton, and in Leicestershire, shalt find  
Men well inclin'd to hear what thou com-  
mand'st:—

And thou, brave Oxford, wondrous well-belov'd,  
In Oxfordshire shall muster up thy friends.—  
My sovereign, with the loving citizens.

Like to his island, girt in with the ocean,  
Or modest Dian, circled with her nymphs,  
Shall rest in London, till we come to him.—  
Fair lords, take leave, and stand not to reply.—  
Farewell, my sovereign.

*K. Hen.* Farewell, my Hector, and my Troy's  
true hope.  
*Clar.* In sign of truth, I kiss your highness'  
hand.

*K. Hen.* Well-minded Clarence, be thou for-  
tunate!

*Mont.* Comfort, my lord;—and so I take my  
leave.

*Oxf.* And thus [*Kissing HENRY's hand.*] I  
seal my truth, and bid adieu.

*K. Hen.* Sweet Oxford, and my loving Mon-  
tague,  
And all at once, once more a happy farewell.

*War.* Farewell, sweet lords; let's meet at  
Coventry.

[*Exeunt WAR. CLAR. OXF. and MONT.*  
*K. Hen.* Here at the palace will I rest  
a while.

Cousin of Exeter, what thinks your lordship?  
Methinks, the power that Edward hath in field,  
Should not be able to encounter mine.

*Exe.* The doubt is, that he will seduce the  
rest.

*K. Hen.* That's not my fear, my need \* hath  
got me fame.

I have not stopp'd mine ears to their demands,  
Nor posted off their suits with slow delays;  
My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds,  
My mildness hath allay'd their swelling griefs,  
My mercy dry'd their water-flowing tears;  
I have not been desirous of their wealth,  
Nor much oppress'd them with great subsidies,  
Nor forward of revenge, though they much err'd:  
Then why should they love Edward more than  
me?

No, Exeter, these graces challenge grace:

And, when the lion tawns upon the lamb,

The lamb will never cease to follow him.

[*Shout within.*] A Lancaster! A Lancaster!  
*Exe.* Hark, hark, my lord! what shouts are  
these!

*Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, and Soldiers.*

*K. Edw.* Seize on the shame-fac'd Henry,  
bear him hence,

And once again proclaim us king of England.

You are the fount, that makes small brooks to  
flow;

Now stops thy spring; my sea shall suck them  
dry,

And swell so much the higher by their ebb.—  
Hence with him to the Tower; let him not  
speak.

[*Exeunt some with King HENRY.*

\* Merit.

And, lords, towards Coventry bend we our  
course,

Where peremptory Warwick now remains:

The sun shines hot, and, if we use delay,

Cold biting winter mars our hop'd-for hay.\*

*Glo.* Away betimes, before his forces join,

And take the great-grown traitor unawares:

Brave warriors, march amain towards Coventry.  
[*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—Coventry.

*Enter, upon the Walls, WARWICK, the Mayor  
of Coventry, two MESSENGERS and others.*

*War.* Where is the post, that came from  
valiant Oxford?

How far hence is thy lord, mine honest fel-  
low?

*1 Mess.* By this at Dunsmore, marching hi-  
therward.

*War.* How far off is our brother Monta-  
gue?

Where is the post that came from Montague?

*2 Mess.* By this at Dalbury, with a puissant  
troop.

*Enter Sir JOHN SOMERVILLE.*

*War.* Say, Somerville, what says my loving  
son?

And, by the guess, how nigh is Clarence now?

*Som.* At Southam I did leave him with his  
forces,

And do expect him here some two hours hence.  
[*Drum heard.*

*War.* Then Clarence is at hand, I hear his  
drum.

*Som.* It is not his, my lord; here Southam,  
lies;

The drum your honour hears, marcheth from  
Warwick.

*War.* Who should that be? belike, unlook'd-  
for friends.

*Som.* They are at hand, and you shall quickly  
know.

*Drums.* *Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER,  
and Forces, marching.*

*K. Edw.* Go, trumpet, to the walls, and  
sound a parol.

*Glo.* See how the surly Warwick mans the  
wall.

*War.* O unbild spite! is sportful Edward  
come?

Where slept our scouts, or how are they  
seduc'd,

That we could hear no news of his repair?

*K. Edw.* Now, Warwick, wilt thou ope the  
city gates,  
Speak gentle words, and humbly bend thy  
knee?—

Call Edward—king, and at his hands beg  
mercy,

And he shall pardon thee these outrages.

*War.* Nay, rather, wilt thou draw thy forces  
hence,

Confess who set thee up, and pluck'd thee  
down?—

Call Warwick—patron, and be penitent,  
And thou shalt still remain the duke of York.

*Glo.* I thought, at least, he would have said  
—the king;

Or did he make the jest against his will?

*War.* Is not a dukedom, Sir, a goodly gift?

*Glo.* Ay, by my faith, for a poor earl to give?  
I'll do thee service for so good a gift.

*War.* 'Twas I, that gave the kingdom to thy  
brother.

\* The allusion is to the proverb, "Make hay while  
the sun shines."

† I. e. Enroll myself among thy dependents.

*K. Edw.* Why, then 'tis mine, if but by Warwick's gift.

*War.* Thou art no Atlas, for so great a weight :

And, weakling, Warwick takes his gift again ;  
And Henry is my king, Warwick his subject.

*K. Edw.* But Warwick's king is Edward's prisoner :

And, gallant Warwick, do but answer this,—  
What is the body, when the head is off ?

*Glo.* Alas, that Warwick had no more forecast,

But, whilst he thought to steal the single ten,  
The king was slyly finger'd from the deck ! \*  
You left poor Henry at the bishop's palace,  
And, ten to one, you'll meet him in the Tower.

*K. Edw.* 'Tis even so ; yet you are Warwick still.

*Glo.* Come, Warwick, take the time, kneel down, kneel down :

Nay, when ? strike now, or else the iron cools.

*War.* I had rather chop this hand off at a blow,

And with the other fling it at thy face.  
Thou bear so low a sail, to strike to thee.

*K. Edw.* Sail how thou canst, have wind and tide thy friend ;

This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black hair,

Shall, whilst the head is warm, and new cut off,

Write in the dust this sentence with thy blood.—

*Wind-changing* Warwick now can change no more.

*Enter OXFORD, with Drum and Colours.*

*War.* O cheerful colours ! see, where Oxford comes !

*Oxf.* Oxford, Oxford, for Lancaster !  
[*Oxford and his Forces enter the City.*

*Glo.* The gates are open, let us enter too.

*K. Edw.* So other toes may set upon our backs,

Stand we in good array ; for they, no doubt,  
Will issue out again, and bid us battle :

If not, the city, being but of small defence,  
We'll quickly rouse the traitors in the same.

*War.* O welcome Oxford ! for we want thy help.

*Enter MONTAGUE, with Drum and Colours.*

*Mont.* Montague, Montague, for Lancaster !  
[*He and his Forces enter the City.*

*Glo.* Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason

Even with the dearest blood your bodies bear.

*K. Edw.* The harder match'd, the greater victory ;

My mind presageth happy gain, and conquest.

*Enter SOMERSET, with Drum and Colours.*

*Som.* Somerset, Somerset, for Lancaster !  
[*He and his Forces enter the City.*

*Glo.* Two of thy name, both dukes of Somerset,

Have sold their lives unto the house of York ;  
And thou shalt be the third, if this sword hold.

*Enter CLARENCE, with Drum and Colours.*

*War.* And lo, where George of Clarence sweeps along,

Of force enough to bid his brother battle ;  
With whom an upright zeal to right prevails,

More than the nature of a brother's love :—  
Come, Clarence, come ; thou wilt, if Warwick calls.

*Clar.* Father of Warwick, know you what this means ;

[*Taking the red Rose out of his Cap.*

*Clar.* Father of Warwick, know you what this means ;

[*Taking the red Rose out of his Cap.*

*Clar.* Father of Warwick, know you what this means ;

[*Taking the red Rose out of his Cap.*

Look here, I throw my infamy at thee :  
I will not rubrate my father's house,  
Who gave his blood to lime \* the stones to-  
gether,

And set up Lancaster. Why, trow'st thou, Warwick,

That Clarence is so harsh, so blunt, † unnatural,  
To bend the fatal instruments of war

Against his brother and his lawful king ?  
Perhaps thou wilt object my holy oath :

To keep that oath, were more impiety  
Than Jephtha's, when he sacrific'd his daughter.

I am so sorry for my trespass made,  
That, to deserve well at my brother's hands,

I here proclaim myself thy mortal foe ;  
With resolution, whereso'er I meet thee,

(As I will meet thee, if thou stir abroad,) ‡  
To plague thee for thy foul misleading me.

And so, proud-hearted Warwick, I defy thee,  
And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks.—

Pardon me, Edward, I will make amends ;  
And, Richard, do not frown upon my faults,

For I will henceforth be no more unconstant.  
*K. Edw.* Now welcome more, and ten times

more belov'd,  
Than if thou never hadst deserv'd our hate.

*Glo.* Welcome, good Clarence ; this is brother-like.

*War.* O passing † traitor, perjurd and unjust !

*K. Edw.* What, Warwick, wilt thou leave the town and fight ?

Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears ?  
*War.* Alas, I am not coop'd here for defence :

I will away towards Barnet presently,  
And bid thee battle, Edward, if thou dar'st.

*K. Edw.* Yes, Warwick, Edward dares, and leads the way :—

Lords to the field ; Saint George and victory.  
[*March. Exit.*

## SCENE II.—A Field of Battle near Barnet.

*Alarums, and Excursions. Enter King EDWARD, bringing in WARWICK wounded.*

*K. Edw.* So lie thou there : die thou, and die our fear ;

For Warwick was a hng, ‡ that fear'd || us all.—  
Now, Montague, sit fast ; I seek for thee,

That Warwick's bones may keep thine company.  
[*Exit.*

*War.* Ah ! who is nigh ? come to me, friend, or for,

And tell me, who is victor, York or Warwick ?  
Why ask I that ? my mangled body shows,

My blood, my want of strength, my sick heart shows,

That I must yield my body to the earth,  
And, by my fall, the conquest to my foe.

Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge,  
Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle,

Under whose shade the ramping lions slent ?  
Whose top-branch overpeer'd Jove's spreading

tree,  
And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful

wind.  
These eyes, that now are dimm'd with death's

black veil,  
Have been as piercing as the mid-day sun,

To search the secret treasons of the world :  
The wrinkles in my brows, now fill'd with

blood,  
Were liken'd oft to kingly sepulchres ;

For who liv'd king, but I could dig his grave ?  
And who durst smile, when Warwick bent his

brow ?  
Lo, now my glory smear'd in dust and blood !

My parks, my walks, my manors that I had,  
Even now forsake me ; and, of all my lands,

\* A pack of cards was anciently term'd a deck of cards.

† Stupid, insensible of paternal fondness.

‡ Eminent, egregious.

§ Bugbear.

¶ Terrified.

Is nothing left me, but my body's length!  
Why, what is pomp, rule, reign, but earth and dust?  
And, live we how we can, yet die we must.

*Enter OXFORD and SOMERSET.*

*Som.* Ah! Warwick, Warwick! wert thou as we are,  
We might recover all our loss again!  
The queen from France hath brought a puissant power;  
Even now we heard the news: Ah! could'st thou fly!

*War.* Why, then I would not fly.—Ah! Montague,  
If thou be there, sweet brother, take my hand,  
And with thy lips keep in my soul a while!  
Thou lov'st me not; for, brother, if thou didst,

Thy tears would wash this cold congealed blood,  
That glews my lips, and will not let me speak.  
Come quickly, Montague, or I am dead.

*Som.* Ah! Warwick, Montague hath breath'd his last;

And to the latest gasp, cried out for Warwick.  
And said—Commend me to my valiant brother.

And more he would have said; and more he spoke,  
Which sounded like a cannon in a vault,  
That might not be distinguish'd; but, at last,  
I wel might hear deliver'd with a groan,—  
O farewell, Warwick!

*War.* Sweet rest to his soul!—  
Fly, lords, and save yourselves; for Warwick bids  
You all farewell, to meet again in heaven.

[*Dies.*  
*Oxf.* Away, away, to meet the queen's great power!

[*Exeunt, bearing off WARWICK'S BODY.*

*SCENE III.—Another part of the Field.*

*Flourish.—Enter King EDWARD in triumph; with CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and the rest.*

*K. Edw.* Thus far our fortune keeps an upward course,  
And we are grac'd with wreaths of victory.  
But, in the midst of this bright-shining day,  
I spy a black, suspicious, threat'ning cloud,  
That will encounter with our glorious sun,  
Ere he attain his easeful western bed:  
I mean, my lords, those powers, that the queen

Hath rais'd in Gallia, have arriv'd our coast,  
And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

*Clar.* A little gale will soon disperse that cloud,  
And blow it to the source from whence it came:

Thy very beams will dry those vapours up;  
For every cloud engenders not a storm.

*Glo.* The queen is val'd thirty thousand strong,

And Somerset, with Oxford, fled to her;  
If she have time to breathe, he well assur'd,  
Her faction will be full as strong as our's.

*K. Edw.* We are advr'tis'd by our loving friends,  
That they do hold their course toward Tewksbury;

We having now the best at Barnet field,  
Will thither straight, for willingness ride way:

And, as we march, our strength will be augmented,

In every county as we go along.—  
Strike up the drum; cry—Courage! and away.

[*Exeunt.*

*SCENE IV.—Plains near Tewksbury.*

*March.—Enter Queen MARGARET, Prince EDWARD, SOMERSET, OXFORD, and Soldiers.*

*Q. Mar.* Great lords, wise men ne'er sit and wail their loss,  
But cheerly seek how to redress their harms.  
What though the mast be now blown overboard,

The cable broke, the holding anchor lost,  
And half our sailors swallow'd in the flood,  
Yet lives our pilot still! Is't meet that he should leave the helm, and, like a fearful lad,

With tearful eyes add water to the sea,  
And give more strength to that which bath too much;

Whiles, in his moan, the ship splits on the rock.

Which industry and courage might have sav'd?  
Ah! what a shame, ah! what a fault were this!  
Say, Warwick was our anchor; What of that?  
And Montague our top-mast; What of him?  
Our slaughter'd friends the tackles; What of these?

Why, is not Oxford here another anchor?  
And Somerset another goodly mast;  
The friends of France our shrouds and tacklings?

And, though unskilful, why not Ned and I  
For once allow'd the skilful pilot's charge?  
We will not from the helm, to sit and weep;  
But keep our course, though the rough wind say—no,

From shelves and rocks that threaten us with wreck.

As good to chide the waves, as speak their fair.

And what is Edward, but a ruthless sea?  
What Clarence, but a quicksand of deceit  
And Richard, but a ragged fatal rock?  
All these the enemies to our poor bark.  
Say, you can swim; alas, 'tis but a while:  
Tread on the sand; why, there you quickly sink:

Bestride the rock; the tide will wash you off,  
Or else you furnish, that's a threefold death.

This speak I, lords, to let you understand,  
In case some one of you would fly from us,  
That there's no hop'd-for mercy with the brothers,

More than with ruthless waves, with sands, and rocks.

Why, courage, then! what cannot be avoided,  
'Twere childish weakness to lament, or fear.

*Prince.* Methinks, a woman of this valiant spirit

Should, if a coward heard her speak these  
Infuse his breast with magnanimity,  
And make him, naked, foil a man at arms.

I speak not thus, as doubting any here;

For, did I but suspect a fearful man,  
He should have leave to go away betimes;

Lest, in our need, he might infect another,  
And make him of like spirit to himself.

If any such be here, as God forbid!  
Let him depart, before we need his help.

*Oxf.* Women and children of so high a courage!

And warriors faint! why, 'twere perpetual shame.—

O brave young prince! thy famous grandfather

Doth live again in thee; Long may'st thou live,

To bear his image, and renew his glories!

*Som.* And he, that will not fight for such a hope,

Go home to bed, and, like the owl by day,  
If he arise, be mock'd and wonder'd at.

*Q. Mar.* Thanks, gentle Somerset;—sweet Oxford, thanks.

*Prince.* And take his thanks, that yet hath nothing else.

# Scene V. THIRD PART OF KING HENRY VI.

543

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* Prepare you, lords, for Edward is at hand,  
Ready to fight; therefore be resolute.

*Oxf.* I thought no less: it is his policy,  
To haste thus fast, to find us unprovided.

*Som.* But he's deceiv'd, we are in readiness.

*Q. Mar.* This cheers my heart, to see your forwardness.

*Oxf.* Here pitch our battle, hence we will not budge.

*March. Enter at a distance, King EDWARD, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and Forces.*

*K. Edw.* Brave followers, yonder stands the thorny wood,  
Which, by the heavens' assistance, and your strength,  
Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.

I need not add more fuel to your fire,  
For well I wot, \* ye blaze to burn them out:  
Give signal to the fight, and to it, lords.

*Q. Mar.* Lords, knights, and gentlemen,  
what I should say,

My tears gainsay; † for every word I speak,  
Ye see, I drink the water of mine eyes.

Therefore, no more but this:—Henry, your sovereign,

Is prisoner to the foe; his state usurp'd,  
His realm a slaughter house, his subjects slain,  
His statutes cancell'd, and his treasure spent;  
And yonder is the wolf that makes this spoil.  
You fight in justice: then, in God's name,  
lords,

Be valiant, and give signal to the fight.

*[Exeunt both Armies.]*

*SCENE V.—Another part of the same.*

*Alarums: Excursions: and afterwards a Retreat. Then Enter King EDWARD, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and Forces: with Queen MARGARET, OXFORD, and SOMERSET, Prisoners.*

*K. Edw.* Lo, here a period of tumultuous broils.

Away with Oxford to Hammes' castle† straight:  
For Somerset, off with his guilty head.

Go, bear them hence; I will not hear them speak.

*Oxf.* For my part, I will not trouble thee with words.

*Som.* Nor I, but stoop with patience to my fortune.

*[Exeunt OXFORD and SOMERSET, guarded.]*

*Q. Mar.* So part we sadly in this troublous world,

To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem.

*K. Edw.* Is proclamation made, that, who finds Edward,

Shall have a high reward, and he is life?

*Glo.* It is; and, lo, where youthful Edward comes.

*Enter Soldiers with Prince EDWARD.*

*K. Edw.* Bring forth the gallant, let us hear him speak:

What! can so young a thorn begin to prick?  
Edward, what satisfaction canst thou make,  
For bearing arms, for stirring up my subjects,  
And all the trouble thou hast turn'd me to?

*Prince.* Speak like a subject, proud ambitious York!

Suppose, that I am now my father's mouth;  
Resign thy chair, and, where I stand, kneel thou,

Whilst I propose the self-same words to thee,  
Which, traitor, thou wouldest have me answer to.

*Q. Mar.* Ah! that thy father had been so resolv'd!

*Glo.* That you might still have worn the petticoat,

And ne'er have stol'n the breech from Lancaster.

*Prince.* Let Æsop\* fable in a winter's night;  
His curriish riddles sort not with this place.

*Glo.* By heaven, brat, I'll plague you for that word.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, thou wast born to be a plague to men.

*Glo.* For God's sake, take away this captive scold.

*Prince.* Nay, take away this scolding crook-back rather.

*K. Edw.* Peace, wilful boy, or I will charm† your tongue.

*Clar.* Untutor'd lad, thou art too malapert.

*Prince.* I know my duty, you are all undutiful:

Lascivious Edward, and thou perjur'd George,—  
And thou misshapen Dick, I tell you all,  
I am your better, traitors as ye are;—  
And thou usurp'st my father's right and mine.

*K. Edw.* Take that, the likeness of this railer here.

*Glo.* Sprawl'st thou? take that, to end thy agony.

*Clar.* And there's for twitting me with perjury.

*Q. Mar.* O kill me too!

*Glo.* Marry, and shall.

*K. Edw.* Hold, Richard, hold, for we have done too much.

*Glo.* Why should she live to fill the world with words?†

*K. Edw.* What! doth she swoon? use means for her recovery.

*Glo.* Clarence, excuse me to the king my brother;

I'll hence to London on a serious matter:  
Ere ye come there, be sure to hear some news.

*Clar.* What? what?

*Glo.* The Tower, the Tower!

*Q. Mar.* O Ned, sweet Ned! speak to thy mother, boy!

Canst thou not speak?—O traitors! murderers!—

They that stabb'd Cæsar shed no blood at all,  
Did not offend, nor were not worthy blame,  
If this foul deed were by, to equal it.

He was a man; this, in respect, a child;  
And men ne'er spend their fury on a child. [It?]

What's worse than murderer, that I may name  
No, no, my heart will burst, an if I speak:—

And I will speak, that so my heart may burst.  
Butchers and villains, bloody cannibals!

How sweet a plant have you untimely cropp'd!  
You have no children, butchers! if you had,

The thought of them would have stirr'd up remorse:

But, if you ever chance to have a child,  
Look in his youth to have him so cut off,

As, deathsmen! you have rid this sweet young prince!

*K. Edw.* Away with her; go, bear her hence perforce.

*Q. Mar.* Nay, never bear me hence, despatch me here;

Here sheath thy sword, I'll pardon thee my death:

What! wilt thou not?—then, Clarence, do it thou.

*Clar.* By heaven, I will not do thee so much ease.

*Q. Mar.* Good Clarence, do; sweet Clarence, do thou do it.

*Clar.* Didst thou not hear me swear I would not do it.

*K. Mar.* Ay, but thou usdest to forswear thy-

\* Twas sin before, † but now 'tis charity. [Self;]

What! wilt thou not? where is that devil's butcher,

\* Know † Unsay, deny. ‡ A castle in Picardy.

\* The Prince calls Richard, for his crookedness, Æsop † i. e. I will compel you to be as silent as if you were deprived of speech by enchantment.

‡ Dispute; contention.

§ She alludes to the desertion of Clarence.

Hard favour'd Richard? Richard, where art thou?

Thou art not here: Murder is thy alms-deed; Petitioners for blood thou ne'er put'st back.

*K. Edw.* Away, I say: I charge ye, bear her hence.

*Q. Mar.* So come to you and your's, as to this prince! [*Exit, led out forcibly.*]

*K. Edw.* Where's Richard gone?

*Clar.* To London, all in post; and, as I guess, To make a bloody supper in the Tower.

*K. Edw.* He's sudden, if a thing comes in his head.

Now march we hence: discharge the common sort

With pay and thanks, and let's away to London, And see our gentle queen how well she fares;

By this, I hope, she hath a son for me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—London.—A Room in the Tower.

*King HENRY is discovered sitting with a Book in his Hand, the Lieutenant attending. Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Good day, my lord! What, at your book so hard?

*K. Hen.* Ay, my good lord: My lord, I should say rather—

'Tis sin to flatter, good was little better: Good Gloster and good devil were alike, And both preposterous; therefore, not good lord.

*Glo.* Sirrah, leave us to ourselves: we must confer. [*Exit Lieutenant.*]

*K. Hen.* So flies the reckless\* shepherd from the wolf:

So first the harmless sheep doth yield his fleece, And next his throat unto the butcher's knife.— What scene of death hath Roscius now to act?

*Glo.* Suspicion always haunts the guilty mind;

The thief doth fear each bush an officer.

*K. Hen.* The bird that hath been limed in a bush,

With trembling wings misdoubteth† every bush: And I, the hapless male to one sweet bird, Have now the fatal object in my eye, Where my poor young was hunt'd, was caught, and kill'd.

*Glo.* Why, what a peevish‡ fool was that of Crete,

That taught his son the office of a fowl? And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown'd.

*K. Hen.* I, Dædalus; my poor boy, Icarus Thy father, Minos, that denied our course; The sun that sear'd the wings of my sweet boy, Thy brother Edward; and thyself, the sea, Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life. Ah! I kill me with thy weapon, not with words! My breast can better brook thy dagger's point, Than can my ears that tragic history.— But wherefore dost thou come? 'is't for my life?

*Glo.* Think'st thou, I am an executioner?

*K. Hen.* A persecutor, I am sure thou art; If murdering innocents be executing, Why, then thou art an executioner.

*Glo.* Thy son I kill'd for his presumption.

*K. Hen.* Had'st thou been kill'd, when first thou didst presume,

Thou hadst not liv'd to kill a son of mine. And thus I prophesy,—that many a thousand, Which now mistrust no parcel§ of my fear; And many an old man's sigh, and many a widow's,

And many an orphan's water-standing eye; Men for their sons, wives for their husbands' fate,

And orphans for their parents' timeless death;

Shall rue the hour that ever thou wast born.

The owl shriek'd at thy birth, an evil sign; The night-crow cried, aboding luckless time; Dogs howl'd, and hideous tempests shook down trees;

The raven rook'd\* her on the chimney's top, And chattering pies in dismal discords sung. Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain, And yet brought forth less than a mother's hope;

To wit,—an indigest deformed lump, Not like the fruit of such a goodly tree.

Teeth hadst thou in thy head, when thou wast born,

To signify, thou cam'st to bite the world;

And, if the rest be true which I have heard, Thou cam'st—

*Glo.* I'll hear no more:—Die, prophet, in thy speech; [*Stabs him.*]

For this, amongst the rest, was I ordain'd.

*K. Hen.* Ay, and for much more slaughter after this.

O God! forgive my sins, and pardon thee! [*Dies.*]

*Glo.* What, will the aspiring blood of Lancaster

Sink in the ground? I thought it would have mounted.

See, how my sword weeps for the poor king's death!

O may such purple tears be always shed From those that wish the downfall of our house!—

If any spark of life be yet remaining, Down, down to hell; and say I sent thee thither, [*Stabs him again.*]

I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear.— Indeed, 'tis true, that Henry told me of;

For I have often heard my mother say, I came into the world with my legs forward:

Had I not reason, think ye, to make haste, And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right?

The midwife wonder'd; and the women cried

O Jesus bless us, he is born with teeth!

And so I was; which plainly signified That I should snarl, and bite, and play the dog.

Then since the heavens have shap'd my body so,

Let hell make crook'd my mind to answer it. I have no brother, I am like no brother:

And this word—love, which greybeards call divine,

Be resident in men like one another, And not in me: I am myself alone.—

Clarence beware; thou keep'st me from the light;

But I will sort a pitchy day for thee: For I will buzz abroad such prophecies,

That Edward shall be fearful of his life; And then, to purge his fear, I'll be thy death.

King Henry, and the prince his son, are gone: Clarence, thy turn is next, and then the rest;

Counting myself but bad, till I be best.— I'll throw thy body in another room,

And triumph Henry, in thy day of doom. [*Exit.*]

SCENE VII.—The same.—A Room in the Palace.

*King EDWARD is discovered sitting on his Throne; Queen ELIZABETH with the infant Prince, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and others, near him.*

*K. Edw.* Once more we sit in England's royal throne,

Re-purchas'd with the blood of enemies. What valiant foemen, like to autumn's corn,

Have we mow'd down, in tops of all their pride?

Three dukes of Somerset, threefold renown'd

\* Careless.

† To misdoubt is to suspect danger, to fear.

‡ Childish.

§ No part of what my fears presage.

\* To rook, signified to squat down or lodge on any thing.

† Select.

For hardy and undoubted champions :  
Two Cliffords, as the father and the son,  
And two Northumberland; two braver men  
Ne'er spur'd their coursers at the trumpet's

sound :  
With them the two brave bears, Warwick and  
Montague,

That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion,  
And made the forest tremble when they roar'd.  
Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat,  
And made our footstool of security.—  
Come hither, Bess, and let me kiss my boy :  
Young Ned, for thee, thine uncles, and myself,  
Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night ;  
Went all afoot in summer's scalding heat,  
That thou might'st repossess the crown in peace ;  
And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain.

*Glo.* I'll blast his harvest, if your head were  
laid ;

For yet I am not look'd on in the world.  
This shoulder was ordain'd so thick, to heave ;  
And heave it shall some weight or break my  
back :—

Work thou the way,—and thou shalt execute.  
*[Aside.]*

*K. Edw.* Clarence and Gloster, love my lovely  
queen,

And kiss your princely nephew, brothers both.

*Clar.* The duty that I owe unto your majesty,  
I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, noble Clarence ; worthy  
brother, thanks.

*Glo.* And, that I love the tree from whence  
thou sprang'st,

Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit :—

To say the truth, so Judas kiss'd his

master ;

And cried—all hail ! when as he meant } *Aside.*

—all harm.

*K. Edw.* Now am I sealed as my soul de-  
lights,

Having my country's peace, and brothers'  
loves.

*Clar.* What will your grace have done with  
Margaret ?

Reignier, her father, to the king of France

Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem,

And hither have they sent it for her ransom.

*K. Edw.* Away with her, and waft her hence  
to France.

And now what rests, but that we spend the  
time

With stately triumphs, \* mirthful comic shows,

Such as befit the pleasures of the court ?—

Sound, drums and trumpets !—farewell sour  
annoy !

For here, I hope, begins our lasting joy.

*[Exeunt.]*

\* Public shows.



# LIFE AND DEATH

OF

## KING RICHARD III.

### LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

IN this very popular tragedy, there is another specimen of historical jumble, and poetical license. The second scene commences with the funeral of Henry VI. who is said to have been murdered in May, 1471, whilst the imprisonment of Clarence, which did not take place till 1478, is represented in the first. Thus the real length of time comprised in this drama, (dating from the former event) is fourteen years; as it concludes with the death of Richard, at Bosworth Field, in August, 1485. With respect to Richard's character, though greatly blackened by Lancasterian historians, he was certainly one of the most odious tyrants that ever obtained possession of a throne. Yet it appears from some accounts still preserved in the Exchequer, that King Henry lived twenty-two days after the time assigned for his pretended assassination; that his body lay in state at St. Paul's, and that it was afterwards interred at Chertsey, with much solemnity. Shakspeare has made the usurper deformed in figure, as well as in mind; though popular detestation had probably aggravated the tradititious story of his bodily defects. In this drama, the events appear admirably connected with, and consequential to, each other: the characters and incidents are natural; the sentiment and language free from bombast. But Malone and Dr. Johnson consider it as popular beyond its merits; with "some parts trifling, others shocking, and some improbable;" whilst Stevens maintains, that above all others the tragedy of Richard must command approbation, as it is indefinitely variegated, and comprehends every species of character—"the hero, the lover, the statesman, the buffoon, the hypocrite, and the hardened or repentant sinner." Its present success in representation, is, however, chiefly attributable to the admirable alterations of Colly Cibber, which evince a very extensive and settled knowledge of stage effects, and by which reformations the more valuable parts of the piece, could alone have attained their present effect and consequence. Shakspeare probably formed the play in 1591; though he is not supposed to have been indebted to any of the numerous existing compositions on the same subject.

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING EDWARD THE FOURTH. EDWARD, <i>Prince of Wales, afterwards King Edward V.</i>	} <i>Sons to the King.</i>	SIR THOMAS VAUGHAN.—SIR RICHARD RATCLIFF.
RICHARD, <i>Duke of York.</i>		SIR WILLIAM CATESBY.—SIR JAMES TYREL.
GEORGE, <i>Duke of Clarence.</i>	} <i>Brothers to the King.</i>	SIR JAMES BLOUNT.—SIR WALTER HERBERT
RICHARD, <i>Duke of Gloster, afterwards King Richard III.</i>		SIR ROBERT BRAKENBURY, <i>Lieutenant of the Tower.</i>
A young SON of Clarence.		CHRISTOPHER URSWICK, a Priest.—Another Priest.
HENRY, <i>Earl of Richmond, afterwards King Henry VII.</i>		LORD MAYOR OF LONDON.—SHERIFF OF WILTSHIRE.
CARDINAL BOUCHIER, <i>Archbishop of Canterbury.</i>		ELIZABETH, <i>Queen of King Edward IV.</i>
THOMAS ROTHERHAM, <i>Archbishop of York.</i>		MARGARET, <i>Queen of King Henry VI.</i>
JOHN MORTON, <i>Bishop of Ely.</i>		DUCHESS OF YORK, <i>Mother to King Edward IV., Clarence, and Gloster.</i>
DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.		LADY ANNE, <i>Widow of Edward, Prince of Wales, Son to King Henry VI.; afterwards married to the Duke of Gloster.</i>
DUKE OF NORFOLK: EARL OF SURREY, <i>his Son.</i>		A young DAUGHTER of Clarence.
EARL RIVERS, <i>Brother to King Edward's Queen.</i>		Lords and other Attendants; two Gentlemen, a Pursuivant, Scrivener, Citizens, Murderers, Messengers, Ghosts, Soldiers, &c.
MARQUIS OF DORSET, and LORD GREY, <i>her Sons.</i>		
EARL OF OXFORD.—LORD HASTINGS.—LORD STANLEY, LORD LOVEL.		

SCENE, England.

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—London.—A Street.

Enter GLOSTER.

*Glo.* Now is the winter of our discontent  
Made glorious summer by this sun of York;

And all the clouds, that low'd upon our house,  
In the deep bosom of the ocean buried.  
Now are our brows bound with victorious wreaths;  
Our bruised arms hung up for monuments;  
Our stern alarums chang'd to merry meetings;

Our dreadful marches to delightful measures.\*  
Grim visag'd war hath smooth'd his wrinkled front:

And now,—instead of mounting barbed † steeds,  
To fight the souls of fearful adversaries,—  
He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber,  
To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.  
But I, that am not shap'd for sportive tricks,  
Nor made to court an amorous looking-glass;  
I that am rudely stamp'd, and want love's majesty,

To strut before a wanton ambling nymph;  
I, that am curtail'd of this fair proportion,  
Cheated of feature by dissembling nature,  
Deform'd, unfinish'd, sent before my time  
Into this breathing world, scarce half made up,  
And that so lamely and unfashionable,  
That dogs bark at me, as I halt by them;  
Why I, in this weak piping time of peace,  
Have no delight to pass away the time;  
Unless to spy my shadow in the sun,  
And descant on mine own deformity:  
And therefore,—since I cannot prove a lover,  
To entertain these fair well-spoken days,—  
I am determin'd to prove a villain,  
And hate the idle pleasures of these days.  
Plots have I laid, inductions ‡ dangerous,  
By drunken prophecies, libels, and dreams,  
To set my brother Clarence, and the king,  
In deadly hate the one against the other:  
And, if king Edward be as true and just,  
As I am subtle, false, and treacherous,  
This day should Clarence closely be mew'd up;  
About a prophecy, which says—that G  
Of Edward's heirs the murderers shall be.  
Dive, thoughts, down to my soul! here Clarence comes.

*Enter CLARENCE, guarded, and BRAKENBURY.*

Brother, good day: What means this armed guard,

That waits upon your grace?

*Clar.* His majesty,  
Tendering my person's safety, hath appointed  
This conduct to convey me to the Tower.

*Glo.* Upon what cause?

*Clar.* Because my name is—George.  
*Glo.* Alack, my lord, that fault is none of  
your's;

He should, for that, commit your godfathers:—  
Oh! belike his majesty hath some intent,  
That you shall be new christen'd in the Tower.  
But what's the matter, Clarence? may I know?

*Clar.* Yea, Richard, when I know; for I protest,

As yet I do not: but, as I can learn,  
He hears us after prophecies and dreams;  
And from the cross-row plucks the letter G,  
And says—a wizard told him, that by G  
His issue disinherited should be;  
And, for my name of George begins with G,  
It follows in his thought, that I am he:  
These, as I learn, and such like toys † as these,  
Have mov'd his highness to commit me now.

*Glo.* Why, this it is, when men are rul'd by  
women:—

'Tis not the king, that sends you to the Tower;  
My lady Grey, his wife, Clarence, 'tis she,  
That tempers him to this extremity.  
Was it not she, and that good man of worship,

Anthony Woodville, her brother there,  
That made him send lord Hastings to the  
Tower;

From whence this present day he is deliver'd ‡  
We are not safe, Clarence, we are not safe.

*Clar.* By heaven, I think, there is no man  
secure,  
But the queen's kindred, and night-walking  
heralds

That trudge betwixt the king and mistress  
Shore.

Heard you not, what an humble suppliant

Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery?

*Glo.* Humbly complaining to her deity

Got my lord chamberlain his liberty.

I'll tell you what I think: it is our way,

If we will keep in favour with the king,

To be her men, and wear her livery;

The jealous o'er-worn widow, and herself,\*

Since that our brother dubb'd them gentlewo-

men,

Are mighty gossips in this monarchy.

*Brak.* I beseech your graces both to pardon

me;

His majesty hath straitly given in charge,

That no man shall have private conference,

Of what degree soever, with his brother.

*Glo.* Even so? an please your worship, Bira-

kenbury,

You may partake of any thing we say:

We speak no treason, man:—We say, the king

Is wise, and virtuous; and his noble queen

Well struck in years; fair, and not jealous:

We say, that Shore's wife hath a pretty foot,

A cherry lip,

A bonny eye, a passing pleasing tongue;

And the queen's kindred are made gentlefolks:

How say you, Sir? can you deny all this?

*Brak.* With this, my lord, myself have naught

to do.

*Glo.* Would to do with mistress Shore? I tell

thee, fellow,

He that doth naught with her, excepting one,

Were best to do it secretly, alone.

*Brak.* What one, my lord?

*Glo.* Her husband, knave:—Would'st thou be-

tray me?

*Brak.* I beseech your grace to pardon me,

and, withal,

Forbear your conference with the noble duke.

*Clar.* We know thy charge, Brakenbury, and

will obey.

*Glo.* We are the queen's objects, † and must

obey.

Brother, farewell: I will unto the king;

And whatsoever you will employ me in,

Were it, to call king Edward's widow—sister,

I will perform it to enfranchise you.

Mean time, this deep disgrace in brotherhood,

Touche me deeper than you can imagine.

*Clar.* I know it pleaseth neither of us well.

*Glo.* Well, your imprisonment shall not be

long;

I will deliver you, or else lie for you:

Mean time, have patience.

*Clar.* I must perforce; farewell.

[*Exeunt CLARENCE, BRAKENBURY, and*

*Guard.*

*Glo.* Go, tread the path that thou shalt ne'er

return,

Simple, plain Clarence!—I do love thee so,

That I will shortly send thy soul to heaven,

If heaven will take the present at our hands.

But who comes here? the new deliver'd Hast-

ings?

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Hast.* Good time of day unto my gracious

lord!

*Glo.* As much unto my good lord chamber-

lain!

Well are you welcome to this open air.

How hath your lordship brook'd imprisonment?

*Hast.* With patience, noble lord, as prisoners

must:

But I shall live, my lord, to give them thanks,

That were the cause of my imprisonment.

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt; and so shall Cla-

rence too;

For they, that were your enemies, are his,

And have prevail'd as much on him as you.

\* Duces.

† Armed.

‡ Preparations for mischief.

§ Fancies.

\* The Queen and Shore

† Lowest of subjects.

*Hast.* More pity that the eagle should be mew'd\*.

While kites and buzzards prey at liberty.

*Glo.* What news abroad?

*Hast.* No news so bad abroad, as this at home;—

The king is sickly, weak, and melancholy, And his physicians fear him nightly.

*Glo.* Now, by Saint Paul, this news is bad indeed.

Oh! he hath kept an evil diet long, And over-much consum'd his royal person; 'Tis very grievous to be thought upon.

What, is he in his bed?

*Hast.* He is.

*Glo.* Go you before, and I will follow you.

[*Exit HASTINGS.*]

He cannot live, I hope; and must not die, Till George be pack'd with posthorse up to heaven.

I'll in, to urge his hatred more to Clarence, With lies well steel'd with weighty arguments; And, if I fail not in my deep intent, Clarence hath not another day to live:

Which done, God take king Edward to his mercy,

And leave the world for me to bustle in!

For then I'll marry Warwick's youngest daughter:

What! though I kill'd her husband and her father,

The readiest way to make the wench amends,

Is to become her husband, and her father:

The which will I; not all so much for love,

As for another secret close intent,

By marrying her, which I must reach unto.

But yet I run before my horse to market:

Clarence still breathes: Edward still lives and reigns;

When they are gone, then must I count my gains.

[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE II.—The same.—Another Street.

*Enter the corpse of King HENRY the Sixth, borne in an open coffin, Gentlemen bearing halberts to guard it; and Lady ANNE as mourner.*

*Anne.* Set down, set down your honourable load,

If honour may be shrouded in a bier,

Whilst I a while obsequiously lament

The untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster.—

Poor key-cold figure of a holy king!

Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster!

Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood!

Be it lawful that I invoke thy ghost,

To bear the lamentations of poor Anne,

Wife to thy Edward, to thy slaughter'd son,

Stabb'd by the self-same hand that made these wounds!

Lo, in these widows that let forth thy life,

I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes:—

Oh! cursed be the hand that made these holes!

Cursed the heart, that had the heart to do it!

Cursed the blood, that let this blood from hence!

More direful hap betide that hated wretch,

That makes us wretched by the death of thee,

Than I can wish to adders, spiders, toads,

Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives!

If ever he have child, abortive be it,

Prodigious, and untimely brought to light,

Whose ugly and unnatural aspect

May fright the hopeful mother at the view;

And that be heir to his unhappiness!

If ever he have wife, let her be made

More miserable by the death of him,

Than I am made by my young lord and thee!—

Come, now, toward Chertsey with your holy

load,

Taken from Paul's to be interred there;

And, still as you are weary of the weight,

Rest you, whilst I lament king Henry's

corse.

[*The bearers take up the corpse, and advance.*]

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Stay you that bear the corse, and set it down.

*Anne.* What black magician conjures up this

fiend,

To stop devoted charitable deeds?

*Glo.* Villains, set down the corse; or, by Saint Paul,

I'll make a corse of him that disobey.

1 *Gent.* My lord, stand back, and let the coffin pass.

*Glo.* Unmanner'd dog! stand thou when I command:

Advance thy halbert higher than my breast, Or, by Saint Paul, I'll strike thee to my foot,

And spurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldness.

[*The bearers set down the coffin.*]

*Anne.* What, do you tremble? are you all afraid?

Alas, I blame you not: for you are mortal, And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil.—

Avaunt thou dreadful minister of hell!

Thou hadst but power over his mortal body, His soul thou canst not have; therefore, be gone.

*Glo.* Sweet saint, for charity be not so cruel.

*Anne.* Foul devil, for God's sake, hence, and trouble us not;

For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell,

Fill'd it with cursing cries, and deep ex-

claims.

If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,

Behold this pattern of thy butcheries:

O gentlemen, see, see! dead Henry's wounds

Open their congeal'd mouths, and bleed

afresh!—

Blush, blush, thou lump of foul deformity;

For 'tis thy presence that exhales this blood

From cold and empty veins, where no blood

dwells;

Thy deed, inhuman and unnatural,

Provokes this deluge most unnatural—

O God, which this blood madest, revenge his

death!

O earth, which this blood drink'st, revenge his

death!

Either, heaven, with lightning strike the mur-

derer dead,

Or, earth, gape open wide, and eat him quick;

As thou dost swallow up this good king's

blood,

Which his hell-govern'd arm hath butcher'd!

*Glo.* Lady, you know no rules of charity,

Which renders good for bad, blessings for

curses.

*Anne.* Villain, thou know'st no law of God

nor man:

No beast so fierce, but knows some touch of pity.

*Glo.* But I know none, and therefore am no

beast.

*Anne.* O wonderful, when devils tell the

truth!

*Glo.* More wonderful, when angels are so

angry.—

Vouchsafe, divine perfection of a woman,

Of these supposed evils, to give me leave,

By circumstance, but to acquit myself.

*Anne.* Vouchsafe, diffus'd infection of a man,

For these known evils, but to give me leave,

By circumstance, to curse thy cursed self.

*Glo.* Fairer than tongue can name thee, let

me have!

Some patient leisure to excuse myself.

\* Confined.

† Funeral.

\* It is a tradition (derived probably from the ancient Swedes) that the murdered body bleeds on the touch of the murderer.

*Anne.* Foulter than heart can think thee, thou canst make  
No excuse current, but to hang thyself.  
*Glo.* By such despair, I should accuse myself.  
*Anne.* And, by despairing, shalt thou stand excus'd;  
For doing worthy vengeance on thyself,  
That didst unworthy slaughter upon others.  
*Glo.* Say, that I slew them not?  
*Anne.* Why then, they are not dead:  
But dead they are, and, devilish slave, by thee.  
*Glo.* I did not kill your husband.  
*Anne.* Why, then he is alive.  
*Glo.* Nay, he is dead; and slain by Edward's hand.  
*Anne.* In thy soul's throat thou liest; queen Margaret saw  
Thy murderous falchion smoking in his blood;  
The which thou once didst bend against her breast,  
But that thy brothers beat aside the point.  
*Glo.* I was provoked by her slanderous tongue,  
That laid their guilt upon my guiltless shoulders.  
*Anne.* Thou wast provoked by thy bloody mind,  
That never dreamt on aught but butcheries:  
Didst thou not kill this king?  
*Glo.* I grant ye.  
*Anne.* Dost grant me, hedge-hog? then God grant me too,  
Thou may'st be damned for that wicked deed!  
Oh! he was gentle, mild, and virtuous.  
*Glo.* The fitter for the King of heaven that hath him.  
*Anne.* He is in heaven, where thou shalt never come.  
*Glo.* Let him thank me, that help to send him thither;  
For he was fitter for that place, than earth.  
*Anne.* And thou unfit for any place but hell.  
*Glo.* Yes, one place else, if you will hear me name it.  
*Anne.* Some dungeon.  
*Glo.* Your bedchamber.  
*Anne.* Ill rest beside the chamber where thou liest!  
*Glo.* So will it, madam, till I lie with you.  
*Anne.* I hope so.  
*Glo.* I know so.—But, gentle lady Anne,  
To leave this keen encounter of our wits,  
And fall somewhat into a slower method;  
Is not the cause of the timeless deaths  
Of these Plantagenets, Henry and Edward,  
As blameful as the executioner?  
*Anne.* Thou wast the cause, and most accurs'd effect.  
*Glo.* Your beauty was the cause of that effect;  
Your beauty, which did haunt me in my sleep,  
To undertake the death of all the world,  
So I might live one hour in your sweet bosom.  
*Anne.* If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide,  
These nails should rend that beauty from my cheeks.  
*Glo.* These eyes would not endure that beauty's wreck,  
You should not blemish it, if I stood by:  
As all the world is cheered by the sun,  
So I by that; it is my day, my life.  
*Anne.* Black night o'ershade thy day, and death thy life!  
*Glo.* Curse not thyself, fair creature; thou art both.  
*Anne.* I would I were, to be reveng'd on thee.  
*Glo.* It is a quarrel most unnatural,  
To be reveng'd on him that loveth thee.  
*Anne.* It is a quarrel just and reasonable,

To be reveng'd on him that kill'd my husband.  
*Glo.* He that bereft thee, lady, of thy husband,  
Did it to help thee to a better husband.  
*Anne.* His better doth not breathe upon the earth.  
*Glo.* He lives that loves you better than he could.  
*Anne.* Name him.  
*Glo.* Plantagenet.  
*Anne.* Why, that was he.  
*Glo.* The self-same name, but one of better nature.  
*Anne.* Where is he?  
*Glo.* Here: [*She spits at him.*] Why dost thou spit at me?  
*Anne.* 'Would it were mortal poison, for thy sake!  
*Glo.* Never came poison from so sweet a place.  
*Anne.* Never hung poison on a fouler toad.  
Out of my sight! thou dost infect mine eyes.  
*Glo.* Thine eyes, sweet lady, have infected mine.  
*Anne.* 'Would they were basilisks, to strike thee dead!  
*Glo.* I would they were, that I might die at once;  
For now they kill me with a living death.  
Those eyes of thine from mine have drawn salt tears,  
Sham'd their aspects with store of childish drops;  
These eyes, which never shed remorseful \* tear,—  
Not, when my father York and Edward wept,  
To hear the piteous moan that Rutland made,  
When black-fac'd Clifford shook his sword at him:  
Nor when thy warlike father, like a child,  
Told the sad story of my father's death;  
And twenty times made pause, to sob and weep,  
That all the standers-by had wet their cheeks,  
Like trees bedash'd with rain; in that sad time,  
My manly eyes did scorn an humble tear;  
And what these sorrows could not thence exhale,  
Thy beauty hath, and made them blind with weeping.  
I never su'd to friend nor enemy;  
My tongue could never learn sweet soothing word;  
But now thy beauty is propos'd my foe,  
My proud heart sues, and prompts my tongue to speak.  
[*She looks scornfully at him.*]  
Teach not thy lip such scorn; for it was made  
For kissing, lady, not for such contempt.  
If thy revengful heart cannot forgive,  
Lo! here I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword;  
Which if thou please to hide in this true breast,  
And let the soul forth that adoreth thee,  
I lay it naked to the deadly stroke,  
And humbly beg the death upon my knee.  
[*He lays his breast open; she offers at it with his sword.*]  
Nay, do not pause; for I did kill King Henry;  
But 'twas thy beauty that provoked me.  
Nay, now despatch; 'twas I that stabb'd young Edward;  
[*She again offers at his breast.*]  
But 'twas thy heavenly face that set me on.  
[*She lets fall the sword.*]  
Take up the sword again, or take up me.  
*Anne.* Arise, dissembler: though I wish thy death,  
I will not be thy executioner.

*Glo.* Then bid me kill myself, and I will do it.

*Anne.* I have already.

*Glo.* That was in thy rage :

Speak it again, and, even with the word,  
This hand, which, for thy love, did kill thy love,

Shall for thy love, kill a far truer love :

To both their deaths shalt thou be accessory.

*Anne.* I would I knew thy heart.

*Glo.* 'Tis figur'd in my tongue.

*Anne.* I fear me, both are false.

*Glo.* Then man was never true.

*Anne.* Well, well, put up your sword.

*Glo.* Say then, my peace is made.

*Anne.* That shall you know hereafter.

*Glo.* But shall I live in hope ?

*Anne.* All men, I hope, live so.

*Glo.* Vouchsafe to wear this ring.

*Anne.* To take, is not to give.

*Glo.* Look, how this ring encompasseth thy finger,

Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart ;  
Wear both of them, for both of them are thine.

And if thy poor devoted servant may  
But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,  
Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever.

*Anne.* What is it ?

*Glo.* That it may please you leave these sad designs

To him that hath more cause to be a mourner,  
And presently repair to Crosby-place ; \*  
Where—after I have solemnly interr'd,  
At Chertsey monast'ry, this noble king,  
And wet his grave with my repentant tears,—  
I will with all expedient duty see you :  
For divers unknown reasons, I beseech you,  
Grant me this boon.

*Anne.* With all my heart ; and much it joys me too,

To see you are become so penitent.—  
Tressel and Berkeley go along with me.

*Glo.* Bid me farewell.

*Anne.* 'Tis more than you deserve :  
But since you teach me how to flatter you,  
Imagine I have said farewell already.

[*Exeunt Lady ANNE, TRESSEL, and BERKELEY.*]

*Glo.* Take up the corse, Sirs.

*Kent.* Towards Chertsey, noble lord ?

*Glo.* No, to White-Friars ; there attend my coming.

[*Exeunt the rest, with the corse.*]  
Was ever woman in this humour woo'd ?  
Was ever woman in this humour won ?  
I'll have her, but I will not keep her long.  
What ! I, that kill'd her husband, and his father

To take her in her heart's extremest hate ;  
With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,  
The bleeding witness of her hatred by ;  
With God, her conscience, and these bars

against me,  
And I no friends to back my suit withal,  
But the plain devil and dissembling looks,  
And yet to win her,—all the world to nothing !  
Ha !

Hath she forgot already that brave prince,  
Edward, her lord, whom I some three months since,

Stabb'd in my angry mood at Tewksbury ?  
A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman,  
Fram'd in the prodigality of nature,  
Young, valiant, wise, and, no doubt, right royal,

The spacious world cannot again afford :  
And will she yet abuse her eyes on me,  
That clogg'd the golden prize of this sweet prince,

And made her widow to a woeful bed ?  
On me, whose all not equals Edward's moiety ?

\* In Bishopsgate-street.

On me that halt and am misshapen thus ?  
My dukedom to a beggarly denier,\*  
I do mistake my person all this while :  
Upon my life, she finds, although I cannot,  
Myself to be a marvellous proper man.  
I'll be at charges for a looking-glass ;  
And entertain a score or two of tailors,  
To study fashions to adorn my body :  
Since I am crept in favour with myself,  
I will maintain it with some little cost.  
But, first, I'll turn you fellow in his grave ;  
And then return lamenting to my love.—  
Shine out, fair sun, till I have bought a glass,  
That I may see my shadow as I pass. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.*—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH, Lord RIVERS, and Lord GREY.*

*Riv.* Have patience, madam ; there's no doubt his majesty

Will soon recover his accustom'd health.

*Grey.* In that you brook it ill, it makes him worse :

Therefore, for God's sake, entertain good comfort,

And cheer his grace with quick and merry words.

*Q. Eliz.* If he were dead, what would betide of me ?

*Grey.* No other harm, but loss of such a lord.

*Q. Eliz.* The loss of such a lord includes all harms.

*Grey.* The heavens have bless'd you with a goodly son,

To be your comforter when he is gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah ! he is young ; and his minority

Is put into the trust of Richard Gloster,

A man that loves not me, nor none of you.

*Riv.* Is it concluded, he shall be protector ?

*Q. Eliz.* It is determin'd, not conclude ! yet ;

But so it must be, if the king miscarry.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM and STANLEY.*

*Grey.* Here come the lords of Buckingham and Stanley.

*Buck.* Good time of day unto your royal grace !

*Stan.* God make your majesty joyful as you have been !

*Q. Eliz.* The countess Richmond, good my lord of Stanley,

To your good prayer will scarcely say—amen.

Yet, Stanley, notwithstanding she's your wife,  
And loves not me, be you, good lord, assur'd,  
I hate not you for her proud arrogance.

*Stan.* I do beseech you either not believe  
The envious slanders of her false accusers ;  
Or if she be accus'd on true report,  
Bear with her weakness, which, I think, proceeds

From wayward sickness, and no grounded malice.

*Q. Eliz.* Saw you the king to-day, my lord of Stanley ?

*Stan.* But now, the duke of Buckingham, and I,

Are come from visiting his majesty.

*Q. Eliz.* What likelihood of his amendment, lords ?

*Buck.* Madam, good hope : his grace speaks cheerfully.

*Q. Eliz.* God grant him health ! Did you confer with him ?

*Buck.* Ay, madam : he desires to make atonement

Between the duke of Gloster and your brothers,  
And between them and my lord chamberlain ;  
And sent to warn † them to his presence.

\* A small French coin.

† Summon.

*Q. Eliz.* Would all were well!—But that I will never be;—  
I fear, our happiness is at the height.

*Enter GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and DORSET.*

*Glo.* They do me wrong, and I will not endure it:—

Who are they, that complain unto the king,  
That I, forsooth, am stern, and love them not?  
By holy Paul, they love his grace but lightly,  
That fill his ear with such dissentious rumours.  
Because I cannot flatter, and speak fair,  
Smile in men's faces, smooth, deceive, and cog,  
Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,  
I must be held a raucorous enemy.  
Cannot a plain man live, and think no harm,  
But thus his simple truth must be abus'd  
By silken, sly, insinuating Jacks?

*Grey.* To whom in all this presence speaks your grace?

*Glo.* To thee, that hast nor honesty, nor grace.

When have I injur'd thee? when done thee wrong?

Or thee?—or thee?—or any of your faction?  
A plague upon you all! His royal grace,  
Whom God preserve better than you would wish!

Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing-while,  
But you must trouble him with lewd\* complaints.

*Q. Eliz.* Brother of Gloster, you mistake the matter:

The king, of his own royal disposition,  
And not provok'd by any sutor else;  
Aiming, belike, at your interior hatred,  
That in your outward action shows itself,  
Against my children, brothers, and myself,  
Makes him to send; that thereby he may gather

The ground of your ill-will, and so remove it.

*Glo.* I cannot tell;—the world is grown so bad,

That wrens may prey where eagles dare not perch,

Since every Jack† became a gentleman,  
There's many a gentle person made a Jack.

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, we know your meaning, brother Gloster;

You envy my advancement, and my friends';  
God grant we never may have need of you!

*Glo.* Meantime, God grants that we have need of you:

Our brother is imprisoned by your means,  
Myself disgrac'd and the nobility  
Held in contempt; while great promotions  
Are daily given, to ennoble those  
That scarce, some two days since, were worth a noble.‡

*Q. Eliz.* By Him, that rais'd me to this careful height

From that contented hap which I enjoy'd,  
I never did incense his majesty

Against the duke of Clarence, but have been  
An earnest advocate to plead for him.

My lord, you do me shameful injury,  
Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects.

*Glo.* You may deny that you were not the cause

Of my lord Hastings' late imprisonment.

*Riv.* She may, my lord; for—

*Glo.* She may, lord Rivers?—Why, who knows not so?

She may do more, Sir, than denying that:  
She may help you to many fair preferments;

And then deny her aiding hand therein,  
And lay those honours on your high desert.

What may she not? She may,—ay, marry may she,—

*Riv.* What, marry, may she?

*Glo.* What, marry may she? marry with a king,

A bachelor, a handsome stripling too:  
I wis,\* your grandam had a worse match.

*Q. Eliz.* My lord of Gloster, I have too long borne

Your blunt upbraidings, and your bitter scoffs:

By heaven, I will acquaint his majesty  
Of those gross taunts I often have endur'd.

I had rather be a country servant-maid,  
Than a great queen, with this condition—

To be so baited, scorn'd, and storm'd at:  
Small joy have I in being England's queen.

*Enter Queen MARGARET, behind.*

*Q. Mar.* And lessen'd be that small, God, I beseech thee!

Thy honour, state, and seat, is due to me.

*Glo.* What? Threat you me with telling of the king?

Tell him, and spare not: look, what I have said

I will avouch in presence of the king:  
I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower,

'Tis time to speak, my pains† are quite forgot.  
*Q. Mar.* Out, devil!‡ I remember them too well:

Thou kill'dst my husband Henry in the Tower,  
And Edward, my poor son, at Tewksbury.

*Glo.* Ere you were queen, ay, or your husband king,

I was a pack-horse in his great affairs;  
A weeder-out of his proud adversaries,

A liberal rewarder of his friends;  
To royalize‡ his blood, I spilt my own.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, and much better blood than his, or thine.

*Glo.* In all which time, you, and your husband Grey,

Were factious for the house of Lancaster:—  
And, Rivers, so were you:—Was not your husband

In Margaret's battle at Saint Alban's slain?  
Let me put in your minds, if you forget,

What you have been ere now, and what you are;

Withal, what I have been, and what I am.

*Q. Mar.* A murd'rous villain, and so still thou art.

*Glo.* Poor Clarence did forsake his father Warwick,

Ay, and forswore himself,—Which Jesu pardon!—

*Q. Mar.* Which God revenge!

*Glo.* To fight on Edward's party, for the crown;

And, for his meed,§ poor lord, he is mew'd|| up:

I would to God, my heart were flint like Edward's,

Or Edward's soft and pitiful like mine;  
I am too childish-foolish for this world.

*Q. Mar.* Hie thee to hell for shame, and leave this world,

Thou cacodemon!¶ Where thy kingdom is.

*Riv.* My lord of Gloster, in those busy days,  
Which here you urge, to prove us enemies,

We follow'd then our lord, our lawful king:  
So should we you, if you should be our king.

*Glo.* If I should be?—I had rather be a pedlar;

Far be it from my heart, the thought thereof!

*Q. Eliz.* As little joy, my lord, as you suppose,

You should enjoy, were you this country's king;

As little joy you may suppose in me,  
That I enjoy, being the queen thereof.

*Q. Mar.* A little joy enjoys the queen thereof:

For I am she, and altogether joyless.  
For I am she, and altogether joyless.

Hear me, you wrangling pirates, that fall out

\* Rude, ignorant.  
† A coin rated at 6s. 8d.

\* Think.  
† Labours.  
‡ Make royal.  
§ Reward.  
|| Confined.  
¶ Corrupt devil.

† Let follow.

In sharing that which you have pill'd \* from me :

Which of you trembles not, that looks on me ?  
If not, that, I being queen, you bow like subjects ;

Yet that, by you depos'd, you quake like rebels !

Ah ! gentle villain, do not turn away !

*Glo.* Foul wrinkled witch, what inak'st thou in my sight ?

*Q. Mar.* But repetition of what thou hast marr'd ;

That will I make, before I let thee go.

*Glo.* Wert thou not banished on pain of death ?

*Q. Mar.* I was ; but I do find more pain in banishment,

Than death can yield me here by my abode.

A husband, and a son, thou ow'st to me,—

And thou, a kingdom ;—all of you, allegiance :

This sorrow that I have, by right is your's ;

And all the pleasures you usurp, are mine.

*Glo.* The curse my noble father laid on thee,—

When thou didst crown his warlike brows with paper,

And with thy scorn's drew'st rivers from his eyes ;

And then, to dry them, gav'st the duke a clout,  
Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty Rutland ;—

His curses, then from bitterness of soul  
Denounc'd against thee, are all fall'n upon thee ;

And God, not we, hath plagu'd thy bloody deed.

*Q. Eliz.* So just is God, to right the innocent.

*Hast.* O 'twas the foulest deed to slay that babe,

And the most merciless, that e'er was heard of.

*Riv.* Tyrants themselves wept when it was reported.

*Dors.* No man but prophesied revenge for it.

*Buck.* Northumberland, then present, wept to see it.

*Q. Mar.* What ! were you snarling all, before I came,

Ready to catch each other by the throat,  
And turn you all your hatred now on me ?

Did York's dread curse prevail so much with heaven,

That Henry's death, my lovely Edward's death,  
Their kingdom's loss, my woeful banishment,

Could all but answer for that peevish brat ?  
Can causes pierce the clouds, and enter heaven ?

Why, then give way, dull clouds, to my quick curses !—

Though not by war, by surfeit die your king,  
As our's by murder, to make him a king !

Edward, thy son, that now is prince of Wales,  
For Edward, my son, that was prince of Wales,

Die in his youth by like untimely violence !  
Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen,

Outlive thy glory, like my wretched self !  
Long may'st thou live, to wait thy children's loss ;

And see another, as I see thee now,  
Deck'd in thy rights, as thou art stall'd in mine !

Long die thy happy days before thy death ;  
And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief,

Die neither mother, wife, nor England's queen !—  
Rivers, and Dorset, you were standers by,

And so wast thou, lord Hastings, when my son  
Was stabb'd with bloody daggers ; God, I pray

him,

That none of you may live your natural age,  
But by some unlook'd accident cut off !

*Glo.* Have done thy charm, thou hateful witcher'd hag.

*Q. Mar.* And leave out thee ? stay, dog, for thou shalt hear me.

If heaven have any grievous plague in store,  
Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee,

\* Pillag'd.

O let them keep it, till thy sins be ripe,  
And then hurl down their indignation  
On thee, the tumbler of the poor world's peace !

The worm of conscience still begnaw thy soul !  
Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou liv'st,

And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends !  
No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine,

Unless it be while some tormenting dream  
Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils !

Thou elvish-mark'd, abortive, rooting hog !  
Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity

The slave of nature, and the son of hell !  
Thou slander of thy mother's heavy womb ;

Thou loathed issue of thy father's loins !  
Thou rug of honour ! thou detested—

*Glo.* Margaret.

*Q. Mar.* Richard !

*Glo.* Ha ?

*Q. Mar.* I call thee not.

*Glo.* I cry thee mercy then ; for I did think,  
That thou hadst call'd me all these bitter names.

*Q. Mar.* Why, so I did ; but look'd for no reply.

O let me make the period to my curse.

*Glo.* 'Tis done by me ; and ends in—Margaret.

*Q. Eliz.* Thus have you breath'd your curse  
against yourself.

*Q. Mar.* Poor painted queen, vain flourish of  
my fortune !

Why strew'st thou sugar on that bottled spider,\*  
Whose deadly web ensnareth thee about ?

Fool, fool ! thou whet'st a knife to kill thyself.  
The day will come, that thou shalt wish for me

To help thee curse this poisonous bunch-back'd  
toad.

*Hast.* False-boding woman, end thy frantic  
curse ;

Lest, to thy harm, thou move our patience.

*Q. Mar.* Foul shame upon you ! you have all  
mov'd mine.

*Riv.* Were you well serv'd, you would be  
taught your duty.

*Q. Mar.* To serve me well, you all should do  
me duty.

Teach me to be your queen, and you my subjects ;

O serve me well, and teach yourselves that duty.

*Dor.* Dispute not with her, she is lunatic.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, master marquis, you are ma-  
lapert :

Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce cur-  
rent : †

O that your young nobility could judge,  
What 'twere to lose it, and be miserable !

They that stand high, have many blast to shake  
them ;

And, if they fall, they dash themselves to  
pieces.

*Glo.* Good counsel, marry ;—learn it, learn it,  
marquis.

*Dor.* It touches you, my lord, as much as  
me.

*Glo.* Ay, and much more : But I was born so  
lugh,

Our alery ; buildeth in the cedar's top,  
And dallies with the wind, and scorns the sun.

*Q. Mar.* And turns the sun to shade ;—alas !  
alas !—

Witness my son, now in the shade of death ;  
Whose bright out-shining beams thy cloudy  
wrath

Hath in eternal darkness folded up,  
Your alery buildeth in our alery's nest :—

O God, that see'st it, do not suffer it ;  
As it was won with blood, lost be it so ;

*Buck.* Peace, peace, for shame, if not for  
charity.

*Q. Mar.* Urge neither charity nor shame to  
me ;

\* Alluding to Gloucester's form and venom.

† He was just created marquis of Dorset. ‡ No.

Uncharitably with me have you dealt,  
And shamefully by you my hopes are butcher'd.  
My charity is outrage, life my shame,  
And in my shame still live my sorrow's rage!

*Buck.* Have done, have done.

*Q. Mar.* O princely Buckingham, I kiss thy hand,

In sign of league and amity with thee:  
Now fair befall thee, and thy noble house!  
Thy garments are not spotted with our blood,  
Nor thou within the compass of my curse.

*Buck.* Nor no one here, for curses never pass  
The lips of those that breathe them in the air.

*Q. Mar.* I'll not believe but they ascend the sky,

And there awake God's gentle-sleeping peace.

O Buckingham, beware of yonder dog;  
Look, when he fawns, he bites; and, when he  
bites,

His venom tooth will rankle to the death:  
Have not to do with him, beware of him;  
Sin, death, and hell have set their marks on  
him;

And all their ministers attend on him.

*Glo.* What doth she say, my lord of Bucking-  
ham?

*Buck.* Nothing that I respect, my gracious  
lord.

*Q. Mar.* What, dost thou scorn me for my  
gentle counsel?

And sooth the devil that I warn thee from!  
Oh! but remember this another day,  
When he shall spit thy very heart with sorrow;  
And say, poor Margaret was a prophetess.—  
Live each of you the subjects to his hate,  
And be to yours, and all of you to God's!

[*Exit.*]

*Hast.* My hair doth stand on end to hear her  
curses.

*Riv.* And so doth mine; I muse,\* why she's  
at liberty.

*Glo.* I cannot blame her, by God's holy mo-  
ther;

She hath had too much wrong, and I repent  
My part thereof, that I have done to her.

*Q. Eliz.* I never did her any, to my know-  
ledge.

*Glo.* Yet you have all the vantage † of her  
wrong.

I was too hot to do somebody good,  
That is too cold in thinking of it now.

Marry, as for Clarence, he is well repaid:  
He is flank'd ‡ up to fattening for his pains;—

God pardon them that are the cause thereof!  
*Riv.* A virtuous and a Christian-like conclu-  
sion,

To pray for them that have done scath † to us.

*Glo.* So do I ever, being well advis'd;—  
For had I curs'd now, I had curs'd myself.

[*Aside.*]

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cates.* Madam, his majesty doth call for  
you,—

And for your grace,—and you, my noble lords.

*Q. Eliz.* Catesby, I come:—Lords, will you  
go with me?

*Riv.* Madam, we will attend upon your grace.

[*Exit all but GLOSTER.*]

*Glo.* I do the wrong, and first begin to brawl.  
The secret mischiefs that I set abroad,

I lay unto the grievous charge of others.  
Clarence,—whom I, indeed, have laid in dark-  
ness,—

I do beweepe to many simple gulls;  
Namely, to Stanley, Hastings, Buckingham;

And tell them 'tis the queen and her allies,  
That stir the king against the duke my brother.

Now they believe it; and withal whet me  
To be reveng'd on Rivers, Vaughan, Grey;

But then I sigh, and, with a piece of scripture,  
Tell them that God bids us do good for evil:

And thus I clothe my naked villany  
With old odd ends, stol'n forth of holy writ:  
And seem a saint, when most I play the devil.

*Enter two MURDERERS.*

But soft, here come my executioners.—

How now, my hardy, stout resolved mates?

Are you now going to despatch this thing?

*1 Murd.* We are, my lord; and come to have  
the warrant,

That we may be admitted where he is.

*Glo.* Well thought upon, I have it here about  
me: [*Gives the Warrant.*]

When you have done, repair to Crosby-place.

But, sirs, be sudden in the execution,  
Withal obdurate, do not hear him plead;

For Clarence is well spoken, and, perhaps,  
May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.

*1 Murd.* Tut, tut, my lord, we will not stand  
to prate.

Talkers are no good doers; be assur'd,

We go to use our hands, and not our tongues.

*Glo.* Your eyes drop mill-stones, when fools'  
eyes drop tears:

I like you, lads:—about your business straight;  
Go, go, despatch.

*1 Murd.* We will, my noble lord. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE IV.—The same.—A Room in the  
Tower.*

*Enter CLARENCE and BRAKENBURY.*

*Brak.* Why looks your grace so heavily to-  
day?

*Clar.* Oh! I have pass'd a miserable night,  
So full of fearful dreams, of ugly sights,  
That, as I am a Christian faithful man,  
I would not spend another such a night,  
Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days;  
So full of dismal terror was the time.

*Brak.* What was your dream, my lord? I pray  
you, tell me.

*Clar.* Methought, that I had broken from the  
Tower,

And was embark'd to cross to Burgundy;  
And, in my company, my brother Gloster;

Who from my cabin tempted me to walk  
Upon the hatches; thence we look'd toward

England,  
And cited up a thousand heavy times,

During the wars of York and Lancaster  
That had befall'n us. As we pac'd along

Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,  
Methought, that Gloster stumbled; and, in

falling,  
Struck me, that thought to stay him, over-board,

Into the tumbling billows of the main.  
O Lord! methought, what pain it was to

drown!

What dreadful noise of water in mine ears!  
What sights of ugly death within mine eyes!

Methought, I saw a thousand fearful wrecks;  
A thousand men that fishes gnaw'd upon;

Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,  
Inestimable stones, unvalued jewels,

All scatter'd in the bottom of the sea.  
Some lay in dead men's skulls; and, in those

holes  
Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept

(As 'twere in scorn of eyes,) reflecting gems,  
That woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep,

And mock'd the dead bones that lay scatter'd  
by.

*Brak.* Had you such leisure in the time of  
death,

To gaze upon these secrets of the deep?

*Clar.* Methought, I had; and often did I  
strive

To yield the ghost; but still the envious flood  
Kept in my soul, and would not let it forth

To seek the empty, vast, and wand'ring air;  
But smother'd it within my panting bulk,\*  
Which almost burst to belch it in the sea.

\* Wonder.  
‡ Put in a sty.

† Advantage.  
‡ Harm.

\* Body.



*Brak.* Awak'd you not with this sore agony?  
*Clar.* Oh! no, my dream was lengthen'd after life;

Oh! then began the tempest to my soul!  
 I pass'd, methought the melancholy flood,  
 With that grim ferryman which poets write of,

Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.

The first that there did greet my stranger soul,

Was my great father-in-law, renowned Warwick,

Who cried aloud,—*What scourge for perjury  
 Can this dark monarchy afford false Clarence?*

And so he vanish'd: Then came wand'ring by

A shadow like an angel, with bright hair  
 Dabbled in blood; and he shriek'd out aloud,  
*Clarence is come,—false, fleeting, perjur'd  
 Clarence.*

*That stabb'd me in the field by Tewksbury.*

*Seize on him, furies, take him to your torments!*

With that, methought, a legion of foul fiends  
 Environ'd me, and howled in mine ears  
 Such hideous cries, that, with the very noise,  
 I trembling wak'd, and, for a season after,  
 Could not believe but that I was in hell;  
 Such terrible impression made my dream.

*Brak.* No marvel, lord, though it affrighted you!

I am afraid, methinks to hear you tell it.

*Clar.* O Brakenbury, I have done these things,

That now give evidence against my soul,  
 For Edward's sake; and, see, how he requites me!

O God! if my deep prayers cannot appease thee,

But thou wilt be aven'd on my misdeeds,  
 Yet execute thy wrath on me alone:

O spare my guiltless wife, and my poor children!

I pray thee, gentle keeper, stay by me;  
 My soul is heavy, and I fain would sleep.

*Brak.* I will, my lord; God give your grace good rest!

[*CLARENCE reposes himself on a Chair.*

Sorrow breaks seasons, and reposing hours  
 Makes the night morning, and the noon-tide night.

Princes have but their titles for their glories,  
 An outward honour for an inward toil;  
 And for unfelt imaginations,  
 They often feel a world of restless cares:  
 So that, between their titles, and low name,  
 There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

*Enter the two MURDERERS.*

*1 Murd.* Ho! who's here?

*Brak.* What would'st thou, fellow? and how cam'st thou hither?

*1 Murd.* I would speak with Clarence, and I came hither on my legs.

*Brak.* What, so brief?

*2 Murd.* O Sir, 'tis better to be brief than tedious:—

Let him see our commission; talk no more.

[*A Paper is delivered to BRAKENBURY, who reads it.*

*Brak.* I am, in this, commanded to deliver  
 The noble duke of Clarence to your hands:—  
 I will not reason what is meant thereby,  
 Because I will be guiltless of the meaning.  
 Here are the keys;—there sits the duke asleep:  
 I'll to the king; and signify to him,  
 That thus to you I have resign'd my charge.

*1 Murd.* You may, Sir; 'tis a point of wisdom.

Fare you well.

[*Exit BRAKENBURY.*

*2 Murd.* What, shall we stab him as he sleeps?

*1 Murd.* No; he'll say 'twas done cowardly, when he wakes.

*2 Murd.* When he wakes! why, fool, he shall never wake until the great judgment day.

*1 Murd.* Why, then he'll say we stabb'd him sleeping.

*2 Murd.* The urging of that word, judgment, hath bred a kind of remorse in me.

*1 Murd.* What? art thou afraid?

*2 Murd.* Not to kill him, having a warrant for it; but to be damn'd for killing him, from the which no warrant can defend me.

*1 Murd.* I thought thou had'st been resolute.

*2 Murd.* So I am, to let him live.

*1 Murd.* I'll back to the duke of Gloster, and tell him so.

*2 Murd.* Nay, I prythee stay a little: I hope this holy humour of mine will change; it was wont to hold me but while one would tell twenty.

*1 Murd.* How dost thou feel thyself now?

*2 Murd.* 'Faith some certain dregs of conscience are yet within me.

*1 Murd.* Remember our reward, when the deed's done.

*2 Murd.* Come, he dies; I had forgot the reward.

*1 Murd.* Where's thy conscience now?

*2 Murd.* In the duke of Gloster's purse.

*1 Murd.* So when he opens his purse to give us our reward, thy conscience flies out.

*2 Murd.* 'Tis no matter; let it go; there's few or none will entertain it.

*1 Murd.* What, if it come to thee again?

*2 Murd.* I'll not meddle with it; it is a dangerous thing, it makes a man a coward: a man cannot swear, but it checks him; a man cannot lie with his neighbour's wife, but it detects him: 'Tis a blushing shame-fac'd spirit, that mutines in a man's bosom; it fills one full of obstacles: it made me once restore a purse of gold, that by chance I found; it beggars any man, that keeps it: it is turned out of all towns and cities for a dangerous thing; and every man, that means to live well, endeavours to trust to himself, and live without it.

*1 Murd.* 'Zounds, it is even now at my elbow, persuading me not to kill the duke.

*2 Murd.* Take the devil in thy mind, and believe him not: he would insinuate with thee, but to make thee sigh.

*1 Murd.* I am strong-fram'd, he cannot prevail with me.

*2 Murd.* Spoke like a tall fellow, that respects his reputation. Come, shall we fall to work?

*1 Murd.* Take him over the costard with the hilts of thy sword, and then throw him into the malmsey-butt, in the next room.

*2 Murd.* O excellent device! and make a sop of him.

*1 Murd.* Soft! he wakes.

*2 Murd.* Strike.

*1 Murd.* No, we'll reason with him.

*Clar.* Where art thou, keeper? give me a cup of wine.

*1 Murd.* You shall have wine enough, my lord, anon.

*Clar.* In God's name, what art thou?

*1 Murd.* A man, as you are.

*Clar.* But not, as I am, royal.

*1 Murd.* Nor you, as we are, loyal.

*Clar.* Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble.

*1 Murd.* My voice is now the king's, my looks mine own.

*Clar.* How darkly and how deadly dost thou speak!

Your eyes do menace me: Why look you pale? Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

• Brave.

† Head.

*Both Murd.* To, to, to,——

*Clar.* To murder me?

*Both Murd.* Ay, ay.

*Clar.* You scarcely have the hearts to tell me so,

And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it.

Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

1 *Murd.* Offended us you have not, but the king.

*Clar.* I shall be reconcil'd to him again.

2 *Murd.* Never, my lord; therefore prepare to die.

*Clar.* Are you call'd forth from out a world of men,

To slay the innocent? What is my offence?

Where is the evidence that doth accuse me?

What lawful quest\* have given their verdict up

Unto the frowning judge? or who pronounce'd

The bitter sentence of poor Clarence's death?

Before I be convict by course of law,

To threaten me with death is most unlawful.

I charge you, as you hope for any goodness  
By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous  
sins,

That you depart, and lay no hands on me;

The deed you undertake is damnable.

1 *Murd.* What we will do, we do upon command.

2 *Murd.* And he, that hath commanded, is our king.

*Clar.* Erroneous vassal! the great King of kings

Hath in the table of his law commanded,

That thou shalt do no murder; wilt thou then  
Spurn at his edict, and fulfil a man's?

Take heed; for he holds vengeance in his hand,  
To hurl upon their heads that break his law.

2 *Murd.* And that same vengeance doth he  
hurl on thee,

For false forswearing, and for murder too:

Thou didst receive the sacrament, to fight  
in quarrel† of the house of Lancaster.

1 *Murd.* And, like a traitor to the name of God,

Didst break that vow; and, with thy treacherous  
blade,

Unrip'dst the bowels of thy sovereign's son.

2 *Murd.* Whom thou wast sworn to cherish  
and defend.

1 *Murd.* How canst thou urge God's dreadful  
law to us,

When thou hast broke it in such dear degree?

*Clar.* Alas! for whose sake did I that ill  
deed?

For Edward, for my brother, for his sake:

He sends you not to murder me for this;

For in that sin he is as deep as I.

If God will be avenged for the deed,

O know you that he doth it publicly;

Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm;

He needs no indirect nor lawless course,

To cut off those that have offended him.

1 *Murd.* Who made thee then a bloody minister,

When gallant-springing, brave Plantagenet,

That princely novice,‡ was struck dead by thee?

*Clar.* My brother's love, the devil, and my rage.

1 *Murd.* Thy brother's love, our duty, and thy fault,

Provoke us hither now to slaughter thee.

*Clar.* If you do love my brother, hate not me!

I am his brother, and I love him well.

If you are hir'd for meed,§ go back again;

And I will send you to my brother Gloster;

Who shall reward you better for my life,

Than Edward will for tidings of my death.

2 *Murd.* You are deceiv'd, your brother  
Gloster hates you.

*Clar.* Oh! no; he loves me, and he holds me  
dear:—

Go you to him from me.

*Both Murd.* Ay, so we will.

*Clar.* Tell him, when that our princely father York

Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arm,  
And charg'd us from his soul to love each  
other,

He little thought of this divided friendship:

Bid Gloster think on this and he will weep.

1 *Murd.* Ay, mill-stones; as he lessou'd us  
to weep.

*Clar.* Oh! do not slander him, for he is  
kind.

1 *Murd.* Right, as snow in harvest. Come,  
you deceive yourself;

'Tis he that sends us to destroy you here.

*Clar.* It cannot be; for he bewept my fortune,

And hugg'd me in his arms, and swore, with  
sobs,

That he would labour my delivery.

1 *Murd.* Why so he doth, when he delivers  
you

From this earth's thralldom to the joys of  
heaven.

2 *Murd.* Make peace with God, for you must  
die, my lord.

*Clar.* Hast thou that holy feeling in thy  
soul,

To counsel me to make my peace with God,

And art thou yet to thy own soul so blind,

That thou wilt war with God, by murder'ing  
me?—

Ah! Sirs, consider, he, that sent you on

To do this deed, will hate you for the deed.

2 *Murd.* What shall we do?

*Clar.* Relent, and save your souls.

1 *Murd.* Relent! 'tis cowardly, and unwomanish.

*Clar.* Not to relent, is beastly, savage, devilish.—

Which of you, if you were a prince's son,

Being pent\* from liberty, as I am now,—

If two such murderers as yourselves came to  
you,—

Would not entreat for life?—

My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks;

Oh! if thine eye be not a flatterer,

Come thou on my side, and entreat for me.

As you would beg, were you in my distress.

A begging prince what beggar pities not?

2 *Murd.* Look behind you, my lord.

1 *Murd.* Take that, and that; if all this will  
not do, [Stabs him.]

I'll drown you in the malmsey-butt within.  
[Exit with the body.]

2 *Murd.* A bloody deed, and desperately  
despatch'd!

How fain, like Pilate, would I wash my hands  
Of this most grievous guilty murder done!

Re-enter first MURDERER.

1 *Murd.* How now? what mean'st thou, that  
thou help'st me not?

By heaven, the duke shall know how slack you  
have been.

2 *Murd.* I would he knew, that I had sav'd  
his brother!

Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say;

For I repent me that the duke is slain. [Exit]

1 *Murd.* So do not I; go, coward, as thou  
art.—

Well, I'll go hide the body in some hole.

Till that the duke give order for his burial:

And when I have my meed, I will away;

For this will out, and then I must not stay.  
[Exit.]

\* Inquest, jury.  
‡ Youth.

† On the part.  
‡ Reward.

\* Shut up

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The same.—A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter King EDWARD, (led in sick,) Queen ELIZABETH, DORSET, RIVERS, HASTINGS, BUCKINGHAM, GREY, and others.*

*K. Edw.* Why so:—now have I done a good day's work:—

You peers, continue this united league:  
I every day expect an embassy  
From my Redeemer to redeem me hence;  
And more in peace my soul shall part to heaven,  
Since I have made my friends at peace on earth.

Rivers and Hastings, take each other's hand;  
Dissemble not your hatred, swear your love.

*Riv.* By heaven, my soul is purg'd from  
grudging hate;  
And with my hand I seal my true heart's love.

*Hast.* So thrive I, as I truly swear the like!

*K. Edw.* Take heed, you daily not before  
your king;  
Lest he, that is the supreme King of kings,  
Confound your hidden falsehood, and award  
Either of you to be the other's end.

*Hast.* So prosper I, as I swear perfect love!

*Riv.* And I, as I love Hastings with my heart!

*K. Edw.* Madam, yourself are not exempt in this,—

Nor your son Dorset,—Buckingham, nor you:—  
You have been factious one against the other.  
Wife, love lord Hastings, let him kiss your hand;

And what you do, do it unfeignedly.

*Q. Eliz.* There, Hastings:—I will never more  
remember

Our former hatred, So thrive I and mine!

*K. Edw.* Dorset, embrace him,—Hastings,  
love lord marquis.

*Dor.* This interchange of love, I here protest,  
Upon my part shall be inviolable.

*Hast.* And so swear I.

*[Embraces DORSET.]*  
*K. Edw.* Now, princely Buckingham, seal  
thou this league

With thy embracements to my wife's allies,  
And make me happy in your unity.

*Buck.* Whenever Buckingham doth turn his  
hate

Upon your grace, *[To the QUEEN.]* but with  
all duteous love

Doth cherish you and your's, God punish me  
With hate in those where I expect most love!

When I have most need to employ a friend,

And most assured that he is a friend,

Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile,

Be he unto me! this do I beg of heaven,

When I am cold in love, to you, or your's.

*[Embracing RIVERS, &c.]*  
*K. Edw.* A pleasing cordial, princely Buck-  
ingham,

Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart.

There wanteth now our brother Gloster here,  
To make the blessed period of this peace.

*Buck.* And, in good time, here comes the noble duke.

## Enter GLOSTER.

*Glo.* Good-morrow to my sovereign king and  
queen;

And, princely peers, a happy time of day!

*K. Edw.* Happy, indeed, as we have spent  
the day:—

Brother, we have done deeds of charity;

Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate,

Between these swelling wrong-incensed peers.

*Glo.* A blessed labour, my most sovereign  
liege:—

Among this princely heap, if any here,

By false intelligence, or wrong surmise

Hold me a foe;

If I unwittingly, or in my rage,

Have aught committed that is hardly borne

By any in this presence, I desire

To reconcile me to his friendly peace:

'Tis death to me, to be at enmity;

I hate it, and desire all good men's love.

First, madam, I entreat true peace of you,

Which I will purchase with my duteous ser-  
vice;

Of you, my noble cousin Buckingham,

If ever any gudge were lodg'd between us;

Of you, lord Rivers, and lord Grey, of you;

That all without desert have frown'd on me;

Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen; indeed of  
all.

I do not know that Englishman alive,

With whom my soul is any jot at odds,

More than the infant that is born to-night:

I thank my God for my humility.

*Q. Eliz.* A holy-day shall this be kept here-  
after:—

I would to God, all strifes were well com-  
pounded.—

My sovereign lord, I do beseech your highness

To take our brother Clarence to your grace.

*Glo.* Why, madam, have I offer'd love for  
this,

To be so flouted in this royal presence?

Who knows not, that the gentle duke is dead?

*[They all start.]*  
You do him injury to scorn his corpse.

*K. Edw.* Who knows not he is dead! who  
knows he is?

*Q. Eliz.* All-seeing heaven, what a world is  
this!

*Buck.* Look I so pale, lord Dorset, as the  
rest?

*Dor.* Ay, my good lord: and no man in the  
presence,

But his red colour hath forsok his cheeks.

*K. Edw.* Is Clarence dead? the order was  
revers'd.

*Glo.* But he, poor man, by your first order  
died,

And that a winged Mercury did bear;

Some tardy cripple bore the countermand,

That came too lag to see him buried:—

God grant that some, less noble, and less  
loyal,

Nearer in bloody thoughts, and not in blood,

Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence  
did,

And yet go current from suspicion.

## Enter STANLEY.

*Stan.* A boon my sovereign, for my service  
done!

*K. Edw.* I prythee, peace; my soul is full of  
sorrow.

*Stan.* I will not rise, unless your highness  
hear me.

*K. Edw.* Then say at once, what is it thou  
request'st.

*Stan.* The forfeit, sovereign, of my servant's  
life;

Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman,  
Lately attendant on the duke of Norfolk.

*K. Edw.* Have I a tongue to doom my bro-  
ther's death,

And shall that tongue give pardon to a slave?

My brother kill'd no man, his fault was  
thought,

And yet his punishment was bitter death.

Who sued to me for him? who, in my wrath,  
Kneel'd at my feet, and bade me be advis'd?

Who spoke of brotherhood? who spoke of  
love?

Who told me, how the poor soul did forsake  
The mighty Warwick, and did fight for me?

Who told me, in the field at Tewksbury,  
When Oxford had me down, he rescued me,

And said, *Dear brother, live, and be a king?*  
Who told me, when we both lay in the field,

Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me  
Even in his garments; and did give himself,  
All thin and naked, to the numb-cold night?  
All this from my remembrance brutish wrath  
Sinfully pluck'd, and not a man of you  
Had so much grace to put it in my mind.  
But when your carters, or your waiting-vas-  
sals,

Have done a drunken slaughter, and defac'd  
The precious image of our dear Redeemer,  
You straight are on your knees for pardon,  
pardon;

And I, unjustly too, must grant it you:—  
But for my brother, not a man would speak,  
Nor I (ungracious) speak unto myself  
For him, poor soul.—The proudest of you all  
Have been beholden to him in his life.  
Yet none of you would once plead for his life.  
O God! I fear, thy justice will take hold  
On me, and you, and mine, and your's, for  
this.—

Come, Hastings, help me to my closet. O  
Poor Clarence!

[*Exeunt* KING, QUEEN, HASTINGS, RIVERS,  
DORSET, and GREY.

*Glo.* This is the fruit of rashness!—Mark'd  
you not,  
How that the guilty kindred of the queen  
Look'd pale, when they did hear of Clarence'  
death?

Oh! they did urge it still unto the king:  
God will revenge it. Come, lords; will you  
go,

To comfort Edward with your company?

*Buck.* We wait upon our grace.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The same.*

*Enter the Duchess of YORK, with a SON and  
DAUGHTER of Clarence.*

*Son.* Good grandam, tell us, is our father  
dead?

*Duch.* No, boy.

*Daugh.* Why do you weep so oft? and beat  
your breast?

And cry—*O Clarence, my unhappy son!*

*Sor.* Why do you look on us, and shake your  
head,

And call us—orphans, wretches, cast-aways,  
If that our noble father be alive?

*Duch.* My pretty cousins, you mistake me  
both;

I do lament the sickness of the king,  
As loath to lose him, not your father's death;  
It were lost sorrow, to wail one that's lost.

*Son.* Then, grandam, you conclude that he is  
dead.

The king my uncle is to blame for this:  
God will revenge it; whom I will importune  
With earnest prayers all to that effect.

*Daugh.* And so will I.

*Duch.* Peace, children, peace! the king doth  
love you well:

Incapable \* and shallow innocents,  
You cannot guess who caus'd your father's  
death.

*Son.* Grandam, we can: for my good uncle  
Gloster

Told me, the king, provok'd to't by the queen,  
Devis'd impeachments to imprison him;  
And when my uncle told me so, he wept,  
And pitied me, and kindly kiss'd my cheek;  
Bade me rely on him, as on my father,  
And he would love me dearly as his child.

*Duch.* Ah! that deceit should steal such gen-  
tle shapes,

And with a virtuous visor hide deep vice!  
He is my son, ay, and therein my shame,  
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit.

*Son.* Think you, my uncle did dissemble,  
grandam?

*Duch.* Ay, boy.

*Son.* I cannot think it. Hark! what noise is  
this!

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH distractedly; RIVERS  
and DORSET, following her.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! who shall hinder me to wail  
and weep?

To chide my fortune, and torment myself?

I'll join with black despair against my soul,

And to myself become an enemy.

*Duch.* What means this scene of rude impa-  
tience?

*Q. Eliz.* To make an act of tragic violence:—  
Edward, my lord, thy son, our king, is dead.

Why grow the branches, when the root is gone?  
Why wither not the leaves, that want their  
sap?—

If you will live, lament; if die, be brief,  
That our swift-winged souls may catch the  
king's;

Or, like obedient subjects, follow him  
To his new kingdom of perpetual rest.

*Duch.* Ah! so much interest have I in thy  
sorrow,

As I had title in thy noble husband!

I have bewept a worthy husband's death,

And liv'd by looking on his images:

But now two mirrors of his princely semblance

Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death,

And I for comfort have but one false glass.

That grieves me when I see my shame in him.

Thou art a widow; yet thou art a mother,

And hast the comfort of thy children left thee:

But death hath snatch'd my husband from my  
arms,

And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble  
hands,

Clarence and Edward. Oh! what cause have I,  
(Thine being but a moiety of my grief),

To over-go thy plaints, and drown thy cries!

*Son.* Ah! aunt, you wept not for our father's  
death;

How can we aid you with our kindred tears?

*Daugh.* Our fatherless distress was left un-  
moan'd

Your widow-dolour likewise be unwept!

*Q. Eliz.* Give me no help in lamentation,

I am not barren to bring forth laments;

All springs reduce their currents to mine eyes,

That I, being govern'd by the watery moon,

May send forth plentiful tears to drown the  
world!

Ah! for my husband, for my dear lord Ed-  
ward!

*Chil.* Ah! for our father, for our dear lord  
Clarence!

*Duch.* Alas! for both, both mine, Edward and  
Clarence!

*Q. Eliz.* What stay had I, but Edward? and  
he's gone.

*Chil.* What stay had we, but Clarence? and  
he's gone.

*Duch.* What stays had I, but they? and they  
are gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Was never widow, had so dear a  
loss.

*Chil.* Were never orphans, had so dear a  
loss.

*Duch.* Was never mother had so dear a loss.

Alas! I am the mother of these griefs;

Their woes are parcel'd, \* mine are general.

She for an Edward weeps, and so do I;

I for a Clarence weep, so doth not she:

These babes for Clarence weep, and so do I:

I for an Edward weep, so do not they:—

Alas! you three, on me, threefold distress'd,

Pour all your tears, I am your sorrow's nurse.

And I will pamper it with lamentations.

*Dor.* Comfort, dear mother; God is much  
displeas'd,

That you take with unthankfulness his doing;

In common worldly things, 'tis call'd—ungrateful,  
With dull unwillingness to repay a debt,  
Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent;  
Much more to be thus opposite with heaven,  
For it requires the royal debt it lent you.

*Riv.* Madam, bethink you, like a careful mother,  
Of the young prince your son: send straight for him,  
Let him be crown'd; in him your comfort lives  
Drowns desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave,  
And plant your joys in living Edward's throne.

*Enter GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, RATCLIFF, and others.*

*Glo.* Sister, have comfort: all of us have cause  
To wait the dimming of our shining star;  
But none can cure their harms by walling them.

Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy,  
I did not see your grace:—Humbly on my knee  
I crave your blessing.

*Duch.* God bless thee; and put meekness in thy breast,  
Love, charity, obedience, and true duty!

*Glo.* Amen; and make me die a good old man!

That is the butt-end of a mother's blessing;  
[*Aside.* I marvel, that her grace did leave it out.

*Buck.* You cloudy princes, and heart-sorrowing peers,  
That bear this mutual heavy load of moan,  
Now cheer each other in each other's love:  
Though we have spent our harvest of this king,

We are to reap the harvest of his son.  
The broken rancour of your high-swoln hearts,  
But lately splinted, knit, and join'd together,  
Must gently be preserv'd, cherish'd, and kept:  
Me seemeth good, that with some little train,  
Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be fetch'd

Either to London, to be crown'd our king.

*Riv.* Why with some little train, my lord of Buckingham?

*Buck.* Marry, my lord, lest, by a multitude,  
The new-heal'd wound of malice should break out;

Which would be so much the more dangerous,  
By how much the estate is green, and yet un-govern'd:

Where every horse bears his commanding rein,  
And may direct his course as please himself,  
As well the fear of harm, as harm apparent,  
In my opinion, ought to be prevented.

*Glo.* I hope the king made peace with all of us;

And the compact is firm, and true, in me.

*Riv.* And so in me: and so, I think, in all:  
Yet, since it is but green, it should be put  
To no apparent likelihood of breach,  
Which, haply, by much company might be urg'd:

Therefore I say, with noble Buckingham,  
That it is meet so few should fetch the prince.

*Hast.* And so say I.

*Glo.* Then be it so; and go we to determine  
Who they shall be that straight shall post to Ludlow.

Madam,—and you my mother,—will you go  
To give your censures in this weighty business?

[*Exeunt all but BUCKINGHAM and GLOSTER.*

*Buck.* My lord, whoever journeys to the prince,  
For God's sake, let not us two stay at home:

• Opinion.

For, by the way, I'll sort occasion,  
As index\* to the story we late talk'd of,  
To part the queen's proud kindred from the prince.

*Glo.* My other self, my counsel's consistory,  
My oracle, my prophet!—My dear cousin,  
I, as a child, will go by thy direction.  
Towards Ludlow then, for we'll not stay behind.  
[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III.—The same.—A Street.

*Enter two CITIZENS, meeting.*

1 *Cit.* Good morrow, neighbour: Whither away so fast?

2 *Cit.* I promise you, I scarcely know myself:

Hear you the news abroad?

1 *Cit.* Yes; the king's dead.

2 *Cit.* Ill news, by'r lady; seldom comes the better:

I fear, I fear, 'twill prove a giddy world.

*Enter another CITIZEN.*

3 *Cit.* Neighbours, God speed!

1 *Cit.* Give you good morrow, Sir.

3 *Cit.* Doth the news hold of good king Edward's death?

2 *Cit.* Ay, Sir, it is too true; God help, the while!

3 *Cit.* Then, masters, look to see a troublous world.

1 *Cit.* No, no; by God's good grace, his son shall reign.

3 *Cit.* Woe to that land, that's govern'd by a child!

2 *Cit.* In him there is a hope of government;  
That, in his nonage,† council under him,  
And, in his full and ripen'd years, himself,  
No doubt, shall then, and till then, govern well.

1 *Cit.* So stood the state, when Henry the sixth

Was crown'd in Paris but at nine months old.

3 *Cit.* Stood the state so? no, no, good friends, God wot;

For then this land was famously enrich'd  
With politic grave counsel; then the king  
Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace.

1 *Cit.* Why, so hath this, both by his father and mother.

2 *Cit.* Better it were they all came by his father;

Or, by his father, there were none at all:  
For emulation now, who shall be nearest,  
Will touch us all too near, if God prevent not.

Oh! full of danger is the duke of Gloster;  
And the queen's sons, and brothers, haught and proud:

And were they to be rul'd, and not to rule,  
This sickly land might solace as before.

1 *Cit.* Come, come, we fear the worst; all will be well.

3 *Cit.* When clouds are seen, wise men put on their cloaks;

When great leaves fall, then winter is at hand;  
When the sun sets, who doth not look for night?

Untimely storms make men expect a dearth:  
All may be well; but, if God sort it so,

'Tis more than we deserve, or I expect.

2 *Cit.* Truly, the hearts of men are full of fear:

You cannot reason § almost with a man  
That looks not heavily, and full of dread.

3 *Cit.* Before the days of change, still is it so:

By a divine instinct, men's minds mistrust  
Ensuing danger; as, by proof, we see  
The water swell before a boisterous storm,  
But leave it all to God. Whither away?

• Preparatory.  
† Known.

‡ Minority.  
§ Coarcted.

2 *Cit.* Marry, we were sent for to the justice's.

3 *Cit.* And so was I; I'll bear you company.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same.*—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter the Archbishop of York, the young Duke of York, Queen Elizabeth, and the Duchess of York.*

*Arch.* Last night I heard, they lay at Stony-Stratford;

And at Northampton they do rest to-night:  
To-morrow, or next day, they will be here.

*Duch.* I long with all my heart to see the prince;

I hope, he is much grown since last I saw him.

*Q. Eliz.* But I hear, no; they say, my son of York

Hath almost overtaken him in his growth.

*York.* Ay, mother, but I would not have it so.

*Duch.* Why, my young cousin; it is good to grow.

*York.* Grandam, one night, as we did sit at supper,

My uncle Rivers talk'd how I did grow  
More than my brother; *Ay*, quoth my uncle Gloucester,

*Small herbs have grace, great weeds do grow apace:*

And since, methinks, I would not grow so fast,  
Because sweet flowers are slow, and weeds make haste.

*Duch.* 'Good faith, 'good faith, the saying did not hold

In him that did object the same to thee:

He was the wretched'st thing, when he was young,

So long a growing, and so leisurely,  
That, if his rule were true, he should be gracious.

*Arch.* And so, no doubt, he is, my gracious madam.

*Duch.* I hope, he is; but yet let mothers doubt.

*York.* Now, by my troth, if I had been remember'd,

I could have given my uncle's grace a flout,  
To touch his growth, nearer than he touch'd mine.

*Duch.* How, my young York? I pr'ythee, let me hear it.

*York.* Marry, they say, my uncle grew so fast,

That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old;

'Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.  
Grandam, this would have been a biting jest.

*Duch.* I pr'ythee, pretty York, who told thee this?

*York.* Grandam, his nurse.

*Duch.* His nurse? why, she was dead ere thou wast born.

*York.* If 'twere not she, I cannot tell who told me.

*Q. Eliz.* A parlous boy: Go to, you are too shrewd.

*Arch.* Good madam, be not angry with the child.

*Q. Eliz.* Pitchers have ears.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Arch.* Here comes a messenger:  
What news?

*Mess.* Such news, my lord,  
As grieves me to unfold.

*Q. Eliz.* How doth the prince?

*Mess.* Well, madam, and in health.

*Duch.* What is thy news?

*Mess.* Lord Rivers and lord Grey are sent to Pomfret,

With them Sir Thomas Vaughan, prisoners.

• Perilous, dangerous.

*Duch.* Who hath committed them?

*Mess.* The mighty dukes,  
Gloucester and Buckingham.

*Q. Eliz.* For what offence?

*Mess.* The sum of all I can, I have disclos'd;  
Why, or for what, the nobles were committed,  
Is all unknown to me, my gracious lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! me, I see the ruin of my house!

The tiger now hath seiz'd the gentle hind;  
Insulting tyranny begins to jut

Upon the innocent and awless throne:—  
Welcome, destruction, blood, and massacre!  
I see, as in a map the end of all.

*Duch.* Accursed and unquiet wrangling days

How many of you have mine eyes beheld!

My husband lost his life to get the crown;

And often up and down my sons were tost;

For me to joy, and weep, their gain, and loss:

And being seated, and domestic broils

Clean over-blown, themselves, the conquerors,

Make war upon themselves; brother to brother,

Blood to blood, self 'gainst self:—O preposterous

And frantic courage, end thy damned spleen;  
Or let me die, to look on death no more!

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, my boy, we will to sanctuary,—

Madam, farewell.

*Duch.* Stay, I will go with you.

*Q. Eliz.* You have no cause.

*Arch.* My gracious lady, go, [To the QUEEN.

And thither bear your treasure and your goods.

For my part, I'll resign unto your grace

The seal I keep; And so betide to me,

As well I tender you and all of your's!

Come, I'll conduct you to the sanctuary.  
[*Exeunt.*]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same.*—A Street.

*The trumpets sound. Enter the Prince of WALES, Gloucester, Buckingham, Cardinal Bouchier, and others.*

*Buck.* Welcome, sweet prince, to London, to your chamber.

*Glo.* Welcome, dear cousin, my thoughts' sovereign:

The weary way hath made you melancholy.

*Prince.* No, uncle; but our crosses on the way

Have made it tedious, wearisome, and heavy:

I want more uncles here to welcome me.

*Glo.* Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of your years

Have not yet div'd into the world's deceit:

No more can you distinguish of a man,

Than of his outward show; which, God he knows,

Seldom, or never, jumpeth with the heart.

Those uncles, which you want, were dangerous;

Your grace attended to the sugar'd words,

But look'd not on the poison of their hearts:

God keep you from them, and from such false friends!

*Prince.* God keep me from false friends! but they were none.

*Glo.* My lord, the mayor of London comes to greet you.

*Enter the Lord Mayor, and his Train.*

*May.* God bless your grace with health and happy days!

*Prince.* I thank you, good my lord;—and thank you all.—

[*Exeunt* MAYOR, &c.]

I thought my mother, and my brother York,  
Would long ere this have met us on the way:

Fie, what a slug is Hastings! that he comes not  
To tell us, whether they will come, or no.

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Buck.* And in good time, here comes the sweating lord.

*Prince.* Welcome, my lord: What, will our mother come?

*Hast.* On what occasion, God he knows, not I,

The queen your mother, and your brother York, Have taken sanctuary: The tender prince Would fain have come with me to meet your grace,

But by his mother was perforce withheld.

*Buck.* Fie! what an indirect and peevish course

Is this of her's?—Lord cardinal, will your grace Persuade the queen to send the duke of York Unto his princely brother presently?

If she deny,—lord Hastings, go with him, And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.

*Card.* My lord of Buckingham, if my weak oratory

Can from his mother win the duke of York, Anon expect him here: But if she be obdurate To mild entreaties, God in heaven forbid We should infringe the holy privilege Of blessed sanctuary! not for all this land, Would I be guilty of so deep a sin.

*Buck.* You are too senseless-obstinate, my lord,

Too ceremonious, and traditional; Weigh it but with the grossness of this age, You break not sanctuary in seizing him. The benefit thereof is always granted

To those whose dealings have deserv'd the place, And those who have the wit to claim the place: This prince hath neither claim'd it, nor deserv'd it;

And therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it: Then, taking him from thence, that is not there,

You break no privilege nor charter there. Oft have I heard of sanctuary men; But sanctuary children, ne'er till now.

*Card.* My lord, you shall o'er-rule my mind for once.—

Come on, lord Hastings, will you go with me?

*Hast.* I go, my lord.

*Prince.* Good lords, make all the speedy haste you may.

*[Exeunt CARDINAL and HASTINGS.]*  
Say, uncle Gloster, if our brother come, Where shall we sojourn till our coronation?

*Glo.* Where it seems best unto your royal self.

If I may counsel you, some day, or two, Your highness shall repose you at the Tower: Then where you please, and shall be thought most fit

For your best health and recreation.

*Prince.* I do not like the Tower, of any place:—

Did Julius Cæsar build that place, my lord?

*Glo.* He did, my gracious lord, begin that place;

Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified.

*Prince.* It is upon record? or else reported Successively from age to age he built it?

*Buck.* Upon record, my gracious lord.

*Prince.* But say, my lord, it were not register'd;

Methinks the truth should live from age to age, As 'twere retail'd to all posterity,

Even to the general all-ending day.

*Glo.* So wise so young, they say, do ne'er live long. *[Aside.]*

*Prince.* What say you, uncle?

*Glo.* I say, without characters, some lives long. Thus, like the formal vice, I adulterize two meanings in one word. *[Aside.]*

\* benevolent vice: the buffoon in the old plays.

*Prince.* That Julius Cæsar was a famous man:

With what his valour did enrich his wit, His wit set down to make his valour live: Death makes no conquest of this conqueror; For now he lives in fame, though not in life.— I'll tell you what, my cousin Buckingham.

*Buck.* What, my gracious lord?

*Prince.* An if I live until I be a man, I'll win our ancient right in France again, Or die a soldier, as I liv'd a king.

*Glo.* Short summers lightly have a forward spring. *[Aside.]*

*Enter YORK, HASTINGS, and the CARDINAL.*

*Buck.* Now, in good time, here comes the duke of York.

*Prince.* Richard of York! how fares our loving brother?

*York.* Well, my dread lord; so must I call you now.

*Prince.* Ay, brother; to our grief, as it is yours:

Too late he died, that might have kept that title,

Which by his death hath lost much majesty.

*Glo.* How fares our cousin, noble lord of York?

*York.* I thank you, gentle uncle. O my lord,

You said that idle weeds are fast in growth: The prince my brother hath outgrown me far.

*Glo.* He hath, my lord.

*York.* And therefore is he idle?

*Glo.* O my fair cousin, I must not say so.

*York.* Then is he more beholden to you, than I.

*Glo.* He may command me, as my sovereign: But you have power in me, as in a kinsman.

*York.* I pray you, uncle, then, give me this dagger.

*Glo.* My dagger, little cousin? with all my heart.

*Prince.* A beggar, brother?

*York.* Of my kind uncle, that I know will give;

And, being but a toy, which is no grief to give.

*Glo.* A greater gift than that I'll give my cousin.

*York.* A greater gift! Oh! that's the sword to it?

*Glo.* Ay, gentle cousin, were it light enough.

*York.* O then, I see, you'll part but with light gifts;

In weightier things, you'll say a beggar, nay,

*Glo.* It is too weighty for your grace to wear.

*York.* I weigh it lightly, were it heavier.

*Glo.* What, would you have my weapon, little lord?

*York.* I would, that I might thank you as you call me.

*Glo.* How?

*York.* Little.

*Prince.* My lord of York will still be cross in talk:—

Uncle, your grace knows how to bear with him.

*York.* You mean, to bear me, not to bear with me:—

Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me: Because that I am little, like an ape,

He thinks that you should bear me on your shoulders.

*Buck.* With what a sharp provided wit he reasons!

To mitigate the scorn he gives his uncle, He prettily and aptly taunts himself:

So cunning, and so young, is wonderful.

*Glo.* My gracious lord, will't please you pass along?

Myself, and my good cousin Buckingham, Will to your mother; to entreat of her, To meet you at the Tower, and welcome you.

\* Commonly.

† Late.

*York.* What, will you go unto the Tower, my lord?

*Prince.* My lord protector needs will have it so.

*York.* I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower.

*Glo.* Why, Sir, what should you fear?

*York.* Marry, my uncle Clarence's angry ghost;

My grandam told me, he was murder'd there.

*Prince.* I fear no uncles dead.

*Glo.* Nor none that live, I hope.

*Prince.* An if they live, I hope I need not fear.

But come, my lord, and, with a heavy heart, Thinking on them, go I unto the Tower.

[*Exit* PRINCE, YORK, HASTINGS, CARDINAL, and Attendants.]

*Buck.* Think you, my lord, this little prating York

Was not incensed\* by his subtle mother, To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously?

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt: Oh! 'tis a pailous boy;

Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable; † He's all the mother's, from the top to toe.

*Buck.* Well, let them rest.—

Come hither, gentle Catesby; thou art sworn

As deeply to effect what we intend,

As closely to conceal what we impart:

Thou know'st† our reasons urg'd upon the way;—

What think'st thou? is it not an easy matter

To make William lord Hastings of our mind,

For the instalment of this noble date

In the seat royal of this famous isle?

*Cate.* He for his father's sake so loves the prince,

That he will not be won to aught against him.

*Buck.* What think'st thou then of Stanley? will not he?

*Cate.* He will do all in all as Hastings doth.

*Buck.* Well then, no more but this: Go, gentle Catesby,

And, as it were far off, sound then lord Hastings,

How he doth stand affected to our purpose;

And summon him to-morrow to the Tower,

To sit about the coronation.

If thou dost find him tractable to us,

Encourage him, and tell him all our reasons:

As he be headen, icy, cold, unwilling,

Be thou so too, and so break off the talk,

And give us notice of his inclination:

For we to-morrow hold divided‡ councils,

Wherein thyself shalt highly be employ'd.

*Glo.* Commend me to lord William: tell him, Catesby,

His dangerous knot of adversaries

To-morrow are let blood at Pomfret castle;

And bid my friend, for joy of this good news,

Give mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more.

*Buck.* Good Catesby, go, effect this business soundly.

*Cate.* My good lords both, with all the heed I can.

*Glo.* Shall we hear from you, Catesby, ere we sleep?

*Cate.* You shall, my lord.

*Glo.* At Crosby-place, there shall you find us both. [*Exit* CATESBY.]

*Buck.* Now, my lord, what shall we, if we perceive

Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots?

*Glo.* Chop off his head, man;—somewhat we will do:—

And, look, when I am king, claim thou of me The earldom of Hereford, and all the moveables

Whereof the king my brother was possess'd.

*Buck.* I'll claim that promise at your grace's hand

*Glo.* And look to have it yielded with all kindness.

Come, let us sup betimes; that afterwards We may digest our complots in some form. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—Before Lord Hastings' House.

Enter a MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My lord, my lord,— [*Knocking.*]

*Hast.* [*Within.*] Who knocks?

*Mess.* One from lord Stanley.

*Hast.* [*Within.*] What is't o'clock?

*Mess.* Upon the stroke of four.

Enter HASTINGS.

*Hast.* Cannot thy master sleep these tedious nights?

*Mess.* So it should seem by that I have to say.

First, he commends him to your noble lordship.

*Hast.* And then,—

*Mess.* And then he sends you word, he dreamt

To-night the boar had rased off his helm:

Besides, he says, there are two councils held;

And that may be determin'd at the one,

Which may make you and him to rue at the other.

Therefore he sends to know your lordship's pleasure,—

If presently you will take horse with him,

And with all speed post with him toward the north,

To shun the danger that his soul divines.

*Hast.* Go, fellow, go, return unto thy lord;

Did him not fear the separated councils?

His honour, and myself, are at the one,

And, at the other, is my good friend Catesby;

Where nothing can proceed, that toucheth us,

Whereof I shall not have intelligence.

Tell him, his fears are shallow, wanting in-

stance:—

And for his dreams—I wonder, he's so fond;

To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers:

To fly the boar, before the boar pursues;

Were to incense the boar to follow us,

And make pursuit, where he did mean no chase.

Go, bid thy master rise and come to me;

And we will both together to the Tower,

Where, he shall see, the boar ‡ will use us kindly.

*Mess.* I'll go, my lord, and tell him what you say. [*Exit.*]

Enter CATESBY.

*Cate.* Many good morrows to my noble lord!

*Hast.* Good morrow, Catesby; you are early stirring:

What news, what news, in this our tottering state?

*Cate.* It is a reeling world, indeed, my lord;

And, I believe, will never stand upright,

Till Richard wear the garland of the realm.

*Hast.* How! wear the garland? dost thou mean the crown?

*Cate.* Ay, my good lord.

*Hast.* I'll have this crown of mine cut from my shoulders,

Before I'll see the crown so foul misplac'd.

But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it?

*Cate.* Ay, on my life; and hopes to find you forward

Upon his party, for the gain thereof:

And, thereupon, he sends you this good news,—

That, this same very day, your enemies,

The kindred of the queen, must die at Pomfret.

*Hast.* Indeed, I am no mourner for that news,

Because they have been still my adversaries:

But, that I'll give my voice on Richard's side,

To bar my master's heirs in true descent,

God knows, I will not do it, to the death.

\* Incited. † Intelligent. ‡ Separate

\* Example. † Weak. ‡ I. e. Gloucester, who had a boar for his arms.



*Cate.* God keep your lordship in that gracious mind!

*Hast.* But I shall laugh at this a twelve-month hence.

That they, who brought me in my master's hate, I live to look upon their tragedy.

Well, Catesby, ere a fortnight make me older, I'll send some packing, that yet think not on't.

*Cate.* 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious lord,

When men are unprepar'd, and look not for it.

*Hast.* O monstrous, monstrous! and so falls it out

With Rivers, Vaughan, Grey: and so 'twill do With some men else, who think themselves as safe

As thou and I; who, as thou know'st, are dear To princely Richard and to Buckingham.

*Cate.* The princes both make high account of you,—

For they account his head upon the bridge.

*Hast.* I know, they do; and I have well deserv'd it. [Aside.]

*Enter STANLEY.*

Come on, come on, where is your boar-spear, man?

Fear you the boar, and go so unprovided?

*Stan.* My lord, good-morrow; and good-morrow, Catesby:—

You may jest on, but, by the holy rood,\*

I do not like these several councils, I.

*Hast.* My lord, I hold my life as dear as your's;

And never, in my life, I do protest, Was it more precious to me than 'tis now:

Think you, but that I know our state secure, I would be so triumphant as I am?

*Stan.* The lords at Pomfret, when they rode from London, [sure,

Were jocund, and suppos'd their states were And they, indeed, had no cause to mistrust;

But yet, you see, how soon the day o'er-cast, This sudden stab of rancour I misdoubt;

Pray God, I say, I prove a needless coward! What, shall we toward the Tower? the day is spent.

*Hast.* Come, come, have with you.—Wot† you what, my lord?

To-day, the lords you talk of are beheaded.

*Stan.* They, for their truth, might better wear their heads,

Than some that have accus'd them, wear their hats.

But come, my lord, let's away.

*Enter a PURSUIVANT.*

*Hast.* Go on before, I'll talk with this good fellow. [Exit STAN. and CATESBY.]

How now, sirrah? how goes the world with thee?

*Purs.* The better, that your lordship please to ask.

*Hast.* I tell thee, man, 'tis better with me now,

Than when thou met'st me last where now we meet:

Then I was going prisoner to the Tower, By the suggestion of the queen's allies;

But now I tell thee, (keep it to thyself,) This day those enemies are put to death,

And I in better state than ere I was.

*Purs.* God hold it, to your honour's good content!

*Hast.* Gramercy, fellow: There, drink that for me. [Throwing him his purse.]

*Purs.* I thank your honour. [Exit PURSUIVANT.]

*Enter a PRIEST.*

*Pr.* Well met, my lord; I am glad to see your honour.

\* Cross

† Know.

*Hast.* I thank thee, good Sir John, with all my heart.

I am in your debt for your last exercise; Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*Buck.* What, talking with a priest, lord chamberlain?

Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the priest;

Your honour hath no shriving\* work in hand.

*Hast.* 'Good faith, and when I met this holy man,

The men you talk of came into my mind. What, go you toward the Tower?

*Buck.* I do, my lord; but long I cannot stay there:

I shall return before your lordship thence.

*Hast.* Nay, like enough, for I stay dinner there.

*Buck.* And supper too, although thou know'st it not. [Aside.]

Come, will you go?

*Hast.* I'll wait upon your lordship. [Exit.]

*SCENE III.—Pomfret.—Before the Castle.*

*Enter RATCLIFF, with a guard, conducting RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN, to Execution.*

*Rat.* Come, bring forth the prisoners.

*Riv.* Sir Richard Ratcliff, let me tell thee this,—

To-day, shalt thou behold a subject die, For truth, for duty, and for loyalty.

*Grey.* God keep the prince from all the pack of you?

A knot you are of damned blood-suckers.

*Vaugh.* You live, that shall cry woe for this hereafter.

*Rat.* Despatch; the limit of your lives is out.

*Riv.* O Pomfret, Pomfret! O thou bloody prison,

Fatal and ominous to noble peers! Within the guilty closure of thy walls,

Richard the second here was back'd to death: And, for more slander to thy dismal seat,

We give thee now your guiltless blood to drink.

*Grey.* Now Margaret's curse is fallen upon our heads,

When she exclaim'd on Hastings, you, and I, For standing by when Richard stabb'd her son.

*Riv.* Then curs'd she Hastings, then curs'd she Buckingham,

Then curs'd she Richard:—O remember, God, To hear her prayers for them, as now for us!

And for my sister, and her princely sons, Be satisfied, dear God, with our true bloods,

Which, as thou know'st, unjustly must be spill'd.

*Rat.* Make haste, the hour of death is expiate.†

*Riv.* Come, Grey,—come, Vaughan,—let us here embrace:

Farewell, until we meet again in heaven. [Exit.]

*SCENE IV.—London.—A Room in the Tower.*

*BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, the Bishop of ELY, CATESBY, LOVELL, and others, sitting at a Table; Officers of the Council attending.*

*Hast.* Now, noble peers, the cause why we are met

Is—to determine of the coronation: In God's name, speak, when is the royal day?

*Buck.* Are all things ready for that royal time?

*Stan.* They are; and want but nomination.

*Ely.* To-morrow then I judge a happy day.

\* Confession.

† Expriated, completed.

*Buck.* Who knows the lord protector's mind herein?

Who is most inward \* with the noble duke?

*Ely.* Your grace, we think, should soonest know his mind.

*Buck.* We know each other's faces: for our hearts,

He knows no more of mine, than I of yours;

Nor I, of his, my lord, than you of mine:—

Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love.

*Hast.* I thank his grace, I know he loves me well;

But, for his purpose in the coronation,

I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd

His gracious pleasure any way therein:

But you, my noble lord, may name the time;

And in the duke's behalf I'll give my voice,

Which, I perceive, he'll take in gentle part.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Ely.* In happy time, here comes the duke himself.

*Glo.* My noble lords and cousins, all, good morrow:

I have been long a sleeper; but, I trust, My absence doth neglect no great design, Which by my presence might have been concluded.

*Buck.* Had you not come up on your cue, my lord,

William lord Hastings had pronounc'd your part,—

I mean, your voice,—for crowning of the king.

*Glo.* Than my lord Hastings, no man might be bolder;

His lordship knows me well, and loves me well,—

My lord of Ely, when I was last in Holborn,

I saw good strawberries in your garden there;

I do beseech you send for some of them.

*Ely.* Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart. *[Exit ELY.]*

*Glo.* Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you. *[Takes him aside.]*

Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business,

And finds the testy gentleman so hot, That he will lose his head, ere give consent,

His master's child, as worshipfully he terms it,

Shall lose the royalty of England's throne.

*Luck.* Withdraw yourself awhile, I'll go with you. *[Exit GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.]*

*Stan.* We have not yet set down this day of triumph.

To-morrow, in my judgment, is too sudden;

For I myself am not so well provided,

As else I would be, were the day prolong'd.

*Re-enter Bishop of ELY.*

*Ely.* Where is my lord protector? I have sent for these strawberries.

*Hast.* His grace looks cheerfully and smooth this morning;

There's some conceit; or other likes him well, When he doth bid good morrow with such spirit.

I think there's ne'er a man in Christendom, Can lesser hide his love, or hate, than he;

For by his face straight shall ye know his heart.

*Stan.* What of his heart perceive you in his face,

By any likelihood he show'd to-day?

*Hast.* Marry, that with no man here he is offended;

For, were he, he had shown it in his looks.

*Re-enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.*

*Glo.* I pray you all, tell me what they describe,

That do conspire my death with devilish plots,

Of damned witchcraft: and that have prevail'd Upon my body with their hellish charms?

*Hast.* The tender love I bear your grace, my lord,

Makes me most forward in this noble presence To doom the offenders: Whoso'er they be,

I say, my lord, they have deserved death.

*Glo.* Then be your eyes the witness of their evil:

Look how I am bewitch'd; behold mine arm Is, like a blasted sapling, wither'd up;

And this is Edward's wife, that monstrous witch,

Consorted with that harlot, strumpet Shore, That by their witchcraft thus have marked me.

*Hast.* If they have done this deed, my noble lord,—

*Glo.* If! thou protector of this damn'd strumpet,

Talk'st thou to me of ifs?—Thou art a traitor:—

Off with his head;—now, by Saint Paul, I swear,

I will not dine until I see the same.—

Lovel and Catesby, look that it be done; The rest that love me, rise, and follow me.

*[Exit Council, with GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.]*

*Hast.* Woe, woe, for England! not a whit for me;

For I, too fond, \* might have prevented this: Stanley did dream, the boar did raise his helm;

But I disdain'd it, and did scorn to fly. Three times to-day my foot-cloth horse did stumble,

And startled, when he look'd upon the Tower, As loath to bear me to the slaughter-house.

Oh! now I want the priest that spake to me: I now repent I told the pursuivant,

As too triumphing, how mine enemies, To-day at Pontret bloodily were butcher'd,

And I myself secure in grace and favour. O Margaret, Margaret, now thy heavy curse

Is lighted on poor Hastings' wretched head.

*Cate.* Despatch, my lord, the duke would be at dinner;

Make a short shift, he longs to see your head.

*Hast.* O momentary grace of mortal men, Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!

Who builds his hope in air of your fair looks, Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast;

Ready, with every nod, to tumble down Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

*Lov.* Come, come, despatch; 'tis bootless to exclaim.

*Hast.* O bloody Richard!—miserable England!

I prophesy the fearful'st time to thee, That ever wretched age hath look'd upon.—

Come, lead me to the block, bear him my head;

They smile at me, who shortly shall be dead. *[Exit.]*

*SCENE V.—The same.—The Tower-walls.*

*Enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM, in rusty armour, marvellous ill-jacour'd.*

*Glo.* Come, cousin, canst thou quake, and change thy colour?

Murder thy breath in middle of a word,— And then again begin, and stop again,

As if thou wert distraught, and mad with terror?

*Buck.* Tut, I can counterfeit the deep tragedian;

Speak, and look back, and pry on every side, Tremble and start at wagging of a straw,

Intending deep suspicion; ghastly looks Are at my service, like enforced smiles;

\* Intimate.

† Thought.

\* Weak, foolish.

† Pretending.

And both are ready in their offices,  
At any time, to grace my stratagems.  
But what, is Catesby gone?

*Glo.* He is; and, see, he brings the mayor  
along.

*Enter the LORD MAYOR and CATESBY.*

*Back.* Let me alone to entertain him.—Lord  
mayor,—

*Glo.* Look to the draw-bridge there.

*Back.* Hark, hark! a drum.

*Glo.* Catesby, o'erlook the walls

*Back.* Lord mayor, the reason we have sent  
for you,—

*Glo.* Look back, defend thee, here are ene-  
mies.

*Back.* God and our innocence defend and  
guard us!

*Enter LOVEL and RATCLIFF, with HASTINGS'*  
*head.*

*Glo.* Be patient, they are friends; Ratcliff,  
and Lovel.

*Lov.* Here is the head of that ignoble traitor,  
The dangerous and unsuspected Hastings.

*Glo.* So dear I lov'd the man, that I must  
weep.

I took him for the plainest harmles'st creature,  
That breath'd upon the earth a Christian;  
Made him my book, wherein my soul recorded  
The history of all her secret thoughts:  
So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of  
virtue,

That, his apparent open guilt omitted,  
I mean, his conversation with Shore's wife,—  
He liv'd from all attender of suspect.

*Back.* Well, well, he was the covert'st shelter'd  
traitor

That ever liv'd.—Look you, my lord mayor,  
Would you imagine, or almost believe,  
(Were't not, that by great preservation  
We live to tell it you,) the subtle traitor  
This day had plotted in the council-house,  
To murder me, and my good lord of Gloster?

*May.* What! had he so?

*Glo.* What! think you we are Turks, or in-  
fidels?

Or that we would, against the form of law,  
Proceed thus rashly in the villain's death;  
But that the extreme peril of the case,  
The peace of England, and our persons' safety,  
Enforc'd us to this execution?

*May.* Now, fair befall you! he deserv'd his  
death;

And your good graces both have well proceeded,  
To warn false traitors from the like attempts.  
I never look'd for better at his hands,  
After he once fell in with mistress Shore.

*Back.* Yet had we not determin'd he should  
die,

Until your lordship came to see his end;  
Which now the loving haste of these our friends,  
Somewhat against our meaning, hath prevented:  
Because, my lord, we would have had you  
heard

The traitor speak, and timorously confess  
The manner and the purpose of his treasons;  
That you might well have signified the same  
Unto the citizens, who, haply, may  
Mistake us in him, and wait his death.

*May.* But, my good lord, your grace's word  
shall serve,

As well as I had seen, and heard him speak:  
And do not doubt, right noble princes both,  
But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens  
With all your just proceedings in this case.

*Glo.* And to that end we wish'd your lordship  
here,

To avoid the censures of the carping world.

*Back.* But since you came too late of our in-  
tent,

Yet witness what you hear we did intend:

And so, my good lord mayor, we bid farewell.

[*Exit LORD MAYOR.*]

*Glo.* Go after, after, cousin Buckingham.

The mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all  
post:—

There, at your meetest vantage of the time,  
Infer the bastardy of Edward's children:  
Tell them, how Edward put to death a citi-  
zen,\*

Only for saying he would make his son  
Heir to the crown: meaning, indeed his house,  
Which, by the sign thereof, was termed so.  
Moreover, urge his hateful luxury,  
And bestial appetite in change of lust;  
Which stretch'd unto their servants, daughters,  
wives,

Even where his raging eye, or savage heart

Without control, list'd to make his prey.

Nay, for a need, thus far come near my per-  
son:—

Tell them, when that my mother went with  
child

Of that insatiate Edward, noble York,  
My princely father, then had wars in France;  
And, by just computation of the time,  
Found that the issue was not his beget;

Which well appeared in his lineaments,  
Being nothing like the noble duke my father:  
Yet touch this sparingly, as 'twere far off,  
Because, my lord, you know my mother lives.

*Back.* Doubt not, my lord; I'll play the  
orator,

As if the golden fee, for which I plead,

Were for myself; and so, my lord, adieu.

*Glo.* If you thrive well, bring them to Bay-  
nard's castle;

Where you shall find me well accompanied,  
With reverend fathers, and well-learned bishops.

*Back.* I go, and towards late or four  
o'clock.

Look for the news that the Guild-hall affords.

[*Exit BUCKINGHAM.*]

*Glo.* Go, Lovel, with all speed to doctor  
SHAW,—

Go thou [*To CATE.*] to find Penker:—bid them  
both

Meet me, within this hour, at Baynard's castle.

[*Exit LOVEL and CATESBY.*]

Now will I go, to take some privacy  
To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight;  
And to give notice, that no manner of person  
Have, any time, recourse unto the princes.

[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE VI.—A Street.

*Enter a SCRIVENER.*

*Scriv.* Here is the indictment of the good lord  
Hastings;

Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd,  
That it may be to-day read o'er in Paul's.  
And mark how well the sequel hangs toge-  
ther:—

Eleven hours I have spent to write it over,  
For yesternight by Catesby was it sent me;  
The precedent† was full as long a doing:  
And yet within these five hours Hastings liv'd,  
Untam'd, unexamined, free, at liberty.

Here's a good world the while!—Who is so  
gross,

That cannot see this palpable device?

Yet who so bold, but says—he sees it not?

Bad is the world; and all will come to naught,  
When such bad dealing must be seen in thought.

[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE VII.—The same.—Court of Baynard's Castle.

*Enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM, meeting.*

*Glo.* How now, how now? what say the citi-  
zens?

*Back.* Now by the holy mother of our Lord,  
The citizens are munn, say not a word.

\* One Walker, a substantial citizen and Grocer, at  
the Crown in Cheapside.

† Original draft.

*Glo.* Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's children?

*Buck.* I did; with his contract with Lady Lucy,

And his contract by deputy in France :  
The insatiate greediness of his desires,  
And his enforcement of the city wives ;  
His tyranny for trifles ; his own bastardy,  
As being got, your father then in France ;  
And his resemblance, being not like the duke.  
Withal, I did inter your lineaments,  
Being the right idea of your father,  
Both in your form and nobleness of mind :  
Laid open all your victories in Scotland,  
Your discipline in war, wisdom in peace,  
Your bounty, virtue, fair humility ;  
Indeed, left nothing, fitting for your purpose,  
Untouch'd, or slightly handled, in discourse.  
And, when my oratory grew to an end,  
I bade them, that did love their country's good,  
Cry—*God save Richard, England's royal king !*

*Glo.* And did they so ?

*Buck.* No, so God help me, they spake not a word ;

But, like dumb statues, or breathless stones.  
Starr'd on each other, and look'd deadly pale.  
Which when I saw, I reprehended them ;  
And ask'd the mayor, what meant this wilful silence :

His answer was,—the people were not us'd  
To be spoke to, but by the recorder.  
Then he was us'd to tell my tale again :  
*Thus saith the duke, thus hath the duke inter-fer'd ;*

But nothing spoke in warrant from himself.  
When he had done, some followers of mine own,

At lower end o' the hall, built up their caps,  
And some ten voices cried, *God save king Richard !*

And thus I took the vantage of the few,—  
*Thank's, gentle citizens and friends, quoth I ;*  
*This general applause, and cheerful shout,*  
*Argues your wisdom, and your love to Richard.*

And even here broke off and came away.

*Glo.* What tongueless blocks were they ;  
would they not speak ?

Will not the mayor then, and his brethren, come ?

*Buck.* The mayor is here at hand ; intend \* some fear ;

For not you spoke with, but by mighty suit.  
And look you get a prayer-book in your hand,  
And stand between two churchmen, good my lord ;

For on that ground I'll make a holy descent :  
And be not easily won to our requests ;  
Play the maid's part, still answer nay, and take it.

*Glo.* I go ; And if you plead as well for them,

As I can say nay to thee for myself,  
No doubt we'll bring it to a happy issue.

*Buck.* Go, go, up to the leads ; the lord mayor knocks. [*Exit GLOSTER.*]

*Enter the LORD MAYOR, Aldermen, and Citizens.*

Welcome, my lord ; I dance attendance here ;  
I think, the duke will not be spoke withal.—

*Enter, from the Castle, CATESBY.*

Now, Catesby ! what says your lord to my request ?

*Cate.* He doth entreat your grace, my noble lord,

To visit him to-morrow, or next day :—  
He is within, with two right reverend fathers,  
Divinely bent to meditation ;  
And in no worldly suit would he be mov'd,  
To draw him from his holy exercise.

*Buck.* Return, good Catesby, to the gracious duke.

Tell him, myself, the mayor, and aldermen,  
In deep designs, in matter of great moment,  
No less importing than the general good,  
Are come to have some conference with his grace.

*Cate.* I'll signify so much unto him straight.

*Buck.* Ah ! ha ! my lord, this prince is not an Edward !

He is not lolling on a lewd day-bed, \*  
But on his knees at meditation ;  
Not dallying with a brace of courtizans,  
But meditating with two deep divines ;  
Not sleeping, to engross + his idle body,  
But praying, to enrich his watchful soul :  
Happy were England, would this virtuous prince

Take on himself the sovereignty thereof :  
But, sure, I fear, we shall ne'er win him to it.

*May.* Marry, God defend, his grace should say us nay !

*Buck.* I fear, he will : Here Catesby comes again ;—

*Re-enter CATESBY.*

Now, Catesby, what says his grace ?

*Cate.* He wonders to what end you have assembled

Such troops of citizens to come to him,  
His grace not being us'd thereof before,  
He tears, my lord, you mean no good to him.

*Buck.* Sorry I am, my noble cousin should suspect me, that I mean no good to him :  
By heaven, we come to him in perfect love ;  
And so once more return and tell his grace

When holy and devout religious men  
Are at their beads, 'tis hard to draw them thence ;

So sweet is zealous contemplation.

*Enter GLOSTER, in a Gallery above, between two Bishops. CATESBY returns.*

*May.* See, where his grace stands 'twixt two clergymen !

*Buck.* Two props of virtue for a Christian prince,

To stay him from the fall of vanity :  
And, see, a book of prayer in his hand ;  
True ornaments to know a holy man.  
Famous Plantagenet, most gracious prince,  
Bend favourable ear to our requests ;  
And pardon us the interruption  
Of thy devotion, and right-Christian zeal.

*Glo.* My lord, there needs no such apology ;  
I rather do beseech you pardon me,  
Who, earnest in the service of my God,

Neglect the visitation of my friends,  
But, leaving this, what is your grace's pleasure ?

*Buck.* Even that, I hope, which pleaseth God above,

And all good men of this ungovern'd isle.

*Glo.* I do suspect I have done some offence,  
That seems disgusting in the city's eye ;  
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.

*Buck.* You have, my lord ; Would it might please your grace,

On our entreaties to amend your fault !

*Glo.* Else wherefore breathe I in a Christian land ?

*Buck.* Know, then, it is your fault, that you resign

The supreme seat, the throne majestical,  
The sceptred office of your ancestors,  
Your state of fortune, and your due of birth,  
The lineal glory of your royal house,  
To the corruption of a blemish'd stock :  
Whilst, in the midstness of your sleepy thoughts  
(Which here we waken to our country's good,)  
The noble isle doth want her proper limbs ;  
Her face defac'd with scars of infamy,

Her royal stock graft with ignoble plants,  
And almost shoulder'd \* in the swallowing gulf  
Of dark forgetfulness and deep oblivion.  
Which to recure, † we heartily solicit  
Your gracious self to take on you the charge  
And kingly government of this your land :  
Not as protector, steward, substitute,  
Or lowly factor for another's gain :  
But as successively from blood to blood,  
Your right of birth, your empery, ‡ your own.  
For this, consorted with the citizens,  
Your very worshipful and loving friends,  
And by their vehement instigation,  
In this just suit come I to move your grace.

*Glo.* I cannot tell, if to depart in silence,  
Or bitterly to speak in your reproof,  
Best fitteth my degree, or your condition :  
If not to answer,—you might haply think,  
Tongue-tied ambition, not replying, yielded  
To bear the golden yoke of sovereignty,  
Which fondly you would here impose on me ;  
If to reprove you for this suit of yours,  
So season'd with your faithful love to me,  
Then, on the other side, I check'd my friends.  
Therefore,—to speak, and to avoid the  
first ;

And, then in speaking, not to incur the last,—  
Definitively thus I answer you.  
Your love deserves my thanks ; but my desert  
Unmeritable, shuns your high request.  
First, if all obstacles were cut away,  
And that my path were even to the crown,  
As the ripe revenue and due of birth ;  
Yet so much is my poverty of spirit,  
So mighty and so many my defects,  
That I would rather hide me from my great-  
ness,—

Being a bark to brook no mighty sea,—  
Than in my greatness covet to be hid,  
And in the vapour of my glory smother'd,  
But, God be thank'd, there is no need of me ;  
(And much I need ‡ to help you, if need were ;)   
The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,  
Which, mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,  
Will well become the seat of majesty,  
And make, no doubt, us happy by his reign.  
On him I lay what you would lay on me,  
The right and fortune of his happy stars,—  
Which God defend, that I should wring from  
him !

*Buck.* My lord, this argues conscience in  
your grace ;  
But the respects thereof are nice † and trivial,  
All circumstances well considered.  
You say, that Edward is your brother's son ;  
So say we too, but not by Edward's wife :  
For first he was contract to lady Lucy,  
Your mother lives a witness to his vow :  
And afterwards by substitute betroth'd  
To Bona, sister to the king of France.  
These both put by, a poor petitioner,  
A care-craz'd mother to a many sons,  
A beauty-waning and distressed widow,  
Even in the afternoon of her best days,  
Made prize and purchase of his wanton eye,  
Seduc'd the pitch and height of all his thoughts  
To base declension and loath'd bigamy :  
By her, in his unlawful bed, he got  
This Edward, whom our manners call—the  
prince.

More bitterly could I expostulate,  
Save that, for reverence to some alive,  
I give a sparing limit to my tongue.  
Then, good my lord, take to your royal self  
This proffer'd benefit of dignity :  
If not to bless as and the land withal,  
Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry  
From the corruption of abusing time,  
Unto a lineal true-derived cause.

*May.* Do, good my lord ; your citizens en-  
treat you.

*Buck.* Refuse not, mighty lord, this proffer'd  
love.

*Cate.* Oh ! make them joyful, grant their law-  
ful suit.

*Glo.* Alas, why would you heap those cares  
on me ?

I am unfit for state and majesty :—

I do beseech you, take it not amiss ;

I cannot, nor I will not, yield to you.

*Buck.* If you refuse it,—as in love and  
zeal,

Loath to depose the child, your brother's son ;

As well we know your tenderness of heart,

And gentle, kind, effeminate reinsurance,\*

Which we have noted in you to your kindred,

And equally, indeed, to all estates,—

Yet know, wher' you accept our suit or no,

Your brother's son shall never reign our king ;

But we will plant some other in your throne,

To the disgrace and downfall of your house.

And, in this resolution, here we leave you ;

Come, citizens, we will entreat no more.

[*Exeunt BUCKINGHAM and Citizens.*]

*Cate.* Call them again, sweet prince, accept  
their suit ;

If you deny them, all the land will rue it.

*Glo.* Will you enforce me to a world of  
cares ?

Well, call them again ; I am not made of stone,  
But penetrable to your kind entreaties,

[*Exit CATESBY.*]

Albeit against my conscience and my soul.—

*Re-enter BUCKINGHAM and the rest.*

Cousin of Buckingham, and sage, grave men,

Since you will buckle fortune on my back,

To bear her burden, wher' I will or no,

I must have patience to endure the load :

But if black scandal, or foul-tac'd reproach,

Attend the sequel of your imposition,

Your mere enforcement shall acquaintance me

From all the impure blots and stains thereof ;

For God he knows, and you may partly see,

How far I am from the desire of this.

*May.* God bless your grace ! we see it, and  
will say it.

*Glo.* In saying so, you shall but say the  
truth.

*Buck.* Then I salute you with this royal  
title,—

Long live king Richard, England's worthy king !

*All.* Amen !

*Buck.* To-morrow may it please you to be  
crown'd ?

*Glo.* Even when you please, since you will  
have it so.

*Buck.* To-morrow then we will attend your  
grace ;

And so, most joyfully we take our leave.

*Glo.* Come, let us to our holy work again :—

[*To the Bishops.*]

Farewell, good cousin ;—farewell, gentle friends.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—Before the Tower.

*Enter on one side, Queen ELIZABETH, Duchess  
of YORK, and Marquis of Dorset ; on the  
other, ANNE, Duchess of GLOSTER, leading  
Lady MARGARET PLANTAGENET, CLARENCE's  
young Daughter.*

*Duch.* Who meets us here ?—my niece Plan-  
tagenet

Led in the hand of her kind aunt of Gloster ?

Now, for my life, she's waud'ring to the Tower,

On pure heart's love, to greet the tender  
prince.—

Daughter, well met.

\* Thrust into. † Emphas. ‡ Recover

§ Want ability. | Minute.

\* Pity

*Anne.* God give your graces both  
A happy and a joyful time of day!  
*Q. Eliz.* As much to you, good sister! Whither away?  
*Anne.* No further than the Tower; and, as I guess,  
Upon the like devotion as yourselves,  
To gratulate the gentle princes there.  
*Q. Eliz.* Kind sister, thanks; we'll enter all together:

*Enter BRAKENBURY.*

And, in good time, here the lieutenant comes.—  
Master lieutenant, pray you, by your leave,  
How doth the prince, and my young son of York?

*Brak.* Right well, dear madam: By your patience,  
I may not suffer you to visit them:  
The king hath strictly charg'd the contrary.

*Q. Eliz.* The king! who's that?  
*Brak.* I mean, the lord protector.

*Q. Eliz.* The Lord protect him from that kingly title!  
Hath he set bounds between their love and me?

I am their mother, who shall bar me from them?

*Duch.* I am their father's mother, I will see them.

*Anne.* Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother:

Then bring me to their sights; I'll bear thy blame,  
And take thy office from thee, on thy peril.

*Brak.* No, madam, no, I may not leave it so;

I am bound by oath, and therefore pardon me.  
[*Exit BRAKENBURY.*]

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Let me but meet you, ladies, one hour hence,

And I'll salute your grace of York as mother,  
And reverend looker-on of two fair queens.—

Come, madam, you must straight to Westminster. [To the *Duchess of GLOSTER*.]

There to be crowned Richard's royal queen.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! cut my lace asunder,  
That my pent heart may have some scope to beat,

Or else I swoon with this dead-killing news.

*Anne.* Despiteful tidings! O displeasing news!

*Dor.* Be of good cheer:—Mother, how fares your grace?

*Q. Eliz.* O Dorset, speak not to me, get thee gone,

Death and destruction dog thee at the heels;  
Thy mother's name is ominous to children:

If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas,  
And live with Richmond, from the reach of hell.

Go, bid thee, bid thee, from this slaughter-house,

Lest thou increase the number of the dead;  
And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse,—

Nor mother, wife, nor England's counted queen.

*Stan.* Full of wise care is this your counsel, madam:—

Take all the swift advantage of the hours;  
You shall have letters from me to my son

In your behalf, to meet you on the way:  
Be not ta'en tardy by unwise delay.

*Duch.* O ill-dispersing wind of misery!—  
O my accursed womb, the bed of death,

A cockatrice\* hast thou hatch'd to the world,  
Whose unavoided eye is murderous!

*Stan.* Come, madam, come; I in all haste was sent.

\* A serpent supposed to originate from a cock's egg.

*Anne.* And I with all unwillingness will go.—

Oh! would to God, that the inclusive verge  
Of golden metal,\* that must round my brow,

Were red-hot steel, to sear† me to the brain!  
Anointed let me be with deadly venom;

And die, ere men can say—God save the queen!  
*Q. Eliz.* Go, go, poor soul, I envy not thy glory;

To feed my humour, wish thyself no harm.

*Anne.* No! why?—When he, that is my husband now,

Came to me, as I follow'd Henry's corse;  
When scarce the blood was well wash'd from

his hands,  
Which issu'd from my other angel husband,

And that dead saint which then I weeping follow'd;

Oh! when, I say, I look'd on Richard's face,  
This was my wish,—*Be thou, quoth I, accurs'd,*

*For making me, so young, so old a widow!*  
*And, when thou wed'st, let sorrow haunt thy bed;*

*And be thy wife, (if any be so mad)*  
*More miserable by the life of thee,*

*Than thou hast made me by my dear lord's death!*

Lo, ere I can repeat this curse again,  
Even in so short a space, my woman's heart

Grossly grew captive to his honey words,  
And prov'd the subject of mine own soul's

curse:  
Which ever since hath held mine eyes from

rest;  
For never yet one hour in his bed

Did I enjoy the golden dew of sleep,  
But with his timorous dreams was still awak'd.

Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick;  
And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me.

*Q. Eliz.* Poor heart, adieu; I pity thy complaining.

*Anne.* No more than with my soul I mourn for yours.

*Dor.* Farewell, thou woeful welcomer of glory!

*Anne.* Adieu, poor soul, that tak'st thy leave of it!

*Duch.* Go thou to Richmond, and good fortune guide thee!— [To *DORSET*.]

Go thou to Richard, and good angels tend thee!— [To *ANNE*.]

Go thou to sanctuary, and good thoughts possess thee! [To *Q. ELIZABETH*.]

I to my grave, where peace and rest lie with me.

Eighty odd years of sorrow have I seen,  
And each hour's joy wreck'd with a week of

teen.†  
*Q. Eliz.* Stay yet; look back, with me, unto the Tower.—

Pity, you ancient stones, those tender babes,  
Whom envy hath immur'd within your walls!

Rough cradle for such little pretty ones!  
Rude ragged nurse! old sullen play-fellow

For tender princes, use my babies well!  
So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—A Room of State in the Palace.

*Flourish of Trumpets.* RICHARD as King upon his Throne; BUCKINGHAM, CATSBY a PAGE, and others.

*K. Rich.* Stand all apart.—Cousin of Buckingham,—

*Buck.* My gracious sovereign.

*K. Rich.* Give me thy hand. Thus high, by thy advice,

And thy assistance, is king Richard seated:—

\* The crown. † A regicide was anciently punished by placing a crown of red-hot iron upon his head.

† Sorrow.

But shall we wear these glories for a day?  
Or shall they last, and we rejoice in them?

*Buck.* Still live they, and for ever let them last!

*K. Rich.* Ah! Buckingham, now do I play the touch.

To try if thou be current gold indeed:—

Young Edward lives;—Think now what I would speak.

*Buck.* Say on, my loving lord.

*K. Rich.* Why, Buckingham, I say, I would be king.

*Buck.* Why, so you are, my thrice-renowned liege.

*K. Rich.* Ha! am I king? 'Tis so: but Edward lives.

*Buck.* True, noble prince.

*K. Rich.* O bitter consequence,  
That Edward still should live,—true, noble prince;

Consin, thou wast not wont to be so dull:—  
Shall I be plain? I wish the bastards dead:

And I would have it suddenly perform'd.  
What say'st thou now! speak suddenly, be brief.

*Buck.* Your grace may do your pleasure.

*K. Rich.* Tut, tut, thou art all ice, thy kindness freezes!

Say, have I thy consent that they shall die?

*Buck.* Give me some breath, some little pause, dear lord,

Before I positively speak in this;

I will resolve your grace immediately.

[*Exit BUCKINGHAM.*]

*Cate.* The king is angry; see, he gnaws his lip. [*Aside.*]

*K. Rich.* I will converse with iron-witted fools, [*Descends from his Throne.*]

And unrespective boys: none are for me,  
That look into me with considerate eyes;—  
High-reaching Buckingham grows circum-spect.—

Boy,—

*Page.* My lord.

*K. Rich.* Know'st thou not any, whom corrupting gold

Would tempt unto a close exploit of death?

*Page.* I know a discontented gentleman,  
Whose humble means match not his haughty mind:

Gold were as good as twenty orators,  
And will, no doubt, tempt him to any thing.

*K. Rich.* What is his name?

*Page.* His name, my lord, is Tyrrel.

*K. Rich.* I partly know the man; Go, call him hither, boy.— [*Exit PAGE.*]

The deep-revolving wily Buckingham  
No more shall be the neighbour to my counsels:

Hath he so long held out with me untir'd,  
And stops he now for breath?—well, be it so.—

*Enter STANLEY.*

How now, lord Stanley? what's the news?

*Stan.* Know, my loving lord,

The marquis Dorset, as I hear, is fled

To Richmond, in the parts where he abides.

*K. Rich.* Come hither, Catesby: rumour it abroad,

That Anne, my wife, is very grievous sick;

I will take order for her keeping close.

Inquire me out some mean-born gentleman,  
Whom I will marry straight to Clarence's

daughter:—

The boy is foolish, and I fear not him.—

Look, how thou dream'st!—I say again, give out,

That Anne my queen is sick, and like to die:

About it; for it stands me much upon, I

To stop all hopes, whose growth may damage me.— [*Exit CATESBY.*]

I must be married to my brother's daughter,

Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass:—

Murder her brothers, and then marry her!

Uncertain way of gain! But I am in

So far in blood, that sin will pluck on sin.

Tear-falling pity dwells not in this eye.—

*Re-enter PAGE, with TYRREL.*

Is thy name Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* James Tyrrel, and your most obedient subject.

*K. Rich.* Art thou, indeed?

*Tyr.* Prove me, my gracious lord.

*K. Rich.* Dar'st thou resolve to kill a friend of mine?

*Tyr.* Please you; but I had rather kill two enemies.

*K. Rich.* Why, then thou hast it; two deep enemies,  
Foes to my rest, and my sweet sleep's disturbers,

Are they that I would have thee deal upon:

Tyrrel, I mean those bastards in the Tower.

*Tyr.* Let me have open means to come to them,

And soon I'll rid you from the fear of them.

*K. Rich.* Thou sing'st sweet music. Hark, come hither, Tyrrel;

Go, by this token:—Rise, and lend thine ear:—

There is no more but so:—Say, it is done,  
And I will love thee, and prefer thee for it.

*Tyr.* I will despatch it straight. [*Exit*]

*Re-enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*Buck.* My lord, I have consider'd in my mind

The late demand that you did sound me in.

*K. Rich.* Well, let that rest. Dorset is fled to Richmond.

*Buck.* I hear the news, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, he is your wife's son:—  
Well, look to it.

*Buck.* My lord, I claim the gift, my due by promise,  
For which your honour and your faith is pawn'd;

The earldom of Hereford, and the moveables,  
Which you have promised I shall possess.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, look to your wife; if she convey

Letters to Richmond, you shall answer it.

*Buck.* What says your highness to my just request?

*K. Rich.* I do remember me,—Henry the sixth

Did prophesy that Richmond should be king,

When Richmond was a little peevish boy.

A king!—perhaps—

*Buck.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* How chance, the prophet could not at that time,

Have told me, I being by, that I should kill him!

*Buck.* My lord, your promise for the earldom,—

*K. Rich.* Richmond!—When last I was at Exeter,

The mayor, in courtesy, show'd me the castle,  
And call'd it—Rouge-mont: at which name, I

started;

Because a bard of Ireland told me once,

I should not live long after I saw Richmond.

*Buck.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* Ay, what's o'clock?

*Buck.* I am thus bold

To put your grace in mind of what you promis'd me.

*K. Rich.* Well, but what is't o'clock?

\* Touchstone. † Secret act.  
‡ Canning. § It is of the utmost consequence  
to my designs.

*Buck.* Upon the stroke  
Of ten.

*K. Rich.* Well, let it strike.

*Buck.* Why let it strike?

*K. Rich.* Because that, like a Jack,\* thou  
keep'st the stroke  
Betwixt thy begging and my meditation.  
I am not in the giving vein to-day.

*Buck.* Why, then resolve me whe'r you will  
or no.

*K. Rich.* Thou troublest me; I am not in the  
vein.

[*Exeunt King RICHARD, and Train.*]

*Buck.* And is it thus? repays he my deep  
service  
With such contempt? made I him king for  
this?

O let me think on Hastings; and be gone  
To Brecknock, † while my fearful head is on.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—The same.

*Enter TYRREL.*

*Tyr.* The tyrannous and bloody act is done;  
The most arch deed of piteous massacre,  
That ever yet this land was guilty of.  
Dighton and Forrest, whom I did suborn  
To do this piece of ruthless † butchery,  
Albeit they were flesh'd villains, bloody dogs,  
Melting with tenderness and mild compassion,  
Wept like two children, in their death's sad  
story.

O thus, quoth Dighton, lay the gentle babes,—  
Thus, thus, quoth Forrest, girdling one ano-  
ther

Within their alabaster innocent arms:  
Their lips were four red roses on a stalk,  
Which in their summer beauty, kiss'd each  
other.

A book of prayers on their pillow lay;  
Which once, quoth Forrest, almost chang'd  
my mind;

But oh! the devil—there the villain stopp'd;  
When Dighton thus told on,—we smother'd  
The most replenished sweet work of nature,  
That, from the prime creation, e'er she  
fram'd.—

Hence both are gone; with conscience and re-  
morse,

They could not speak; and so I left them both,  
To bear this tidings to the bloody king.

*Enter King RICHARD.*

And here he comes:—All health, my sovereign  
lord!

*K. Rich.* Kind Tyrrel! am I happy in thy  
news?

*Tyr.* If to have done the thing you gave in  
charge  
Veget your happiness, be happy, then,  
For it is done.

*K. Rich.* But didst thou see them dead?

*Tyr.* I did, my lord.

*K. Rich.* And buried, gentle Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* The chaplain of the tower hath buried  
them;

But where, to say the truth, I do not know.

*K. Rich.* Come to me, Tyrrel, soon, at after  
supper,

When thou shalt tell the process of their death.  
Mean time, but think how I may do thee good,  
And be inheritor of thy desire.  
Farewell, till then.

*Tyr.* I humbly take my leave. [Exit.]

*K. Rich.* The son of Clarence have I penn'd  
up close;  
His daughter meanly have I match'd in mar-  
riage;

The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham's bosom,

And Anne my wife hath bid the world good  
night.

Now, for I know the Bretagne\* Richmond  
aims

At young Elizabeth, my brother's daughter,  
And, by that knot, looks proudly on the crown,  
To her go I, a jolly thriving wooer.

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cate.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* Good news or bad, that thou com'st  
in so bluntly!

*Cate.* Bad news, my lord; Morton † is fled to  
Richmond;  
And Buckingham, back'd with the haughty  
Welshmen,

Is in the field, and still his power increaseth.

*H. Rich.* Ely with Richmond troubles me  
more near,

Than Buckingham and his rash-levied strength.  
Come,—I have learn'd, that fearful com-  
menting

Is leaden servitor to dull delay;

Delay leads impotent and snail-paced beggary:

Then fiery expedition be my wing,

Jove's Mercury, and herald for a king!

Go, muster men: My counsel is my shield;

We must be brief, when traitors brave the field.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—The same—Before the Palace.

*Enter Queen MARGARET.*

*Q. Mar.* So, now prosperity begins to mellow,  
And drop into the rotten mouth of death.

Here in these confines slyly have I lurk'd,

To watch the waning of mine enemies.

A due induction † am I witness to,

And will to France; hoping the consequence

Will prove as bitter, black, and tragical.

Withdraw thee, wretched Margaret! who comes  
here!

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH, and the Duchess  
of YORK.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! my poor princes, ah! my ten-  
der babes,

My unblooming flowers, new-appearing sweets!

If yet your gentle souls fly in the air,

And be not fix'd in doom perpetual,

Hover about me with your any wings,

And hear your mother's lamentation!

*Q. Mar.* Hover about her; say, that right for  
night

Hath dimm'd your infant morn to aged night.

*Duch.* So many miseries have craz'd my  
voice,

That my woe-wearied tongue is still and  
mute,—

Edward Plantagenet, why art thou dead?

*Q. Mar.* Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet,

Edward for Edward pays a dying debt.

*Q. Eliz.* Wilt thou, O God, fly from such  
gentle lambs,

And throw them in the entrails of the wolf?

When didst thou sleep, when such a deed was  
done?

*Q. Mar.* When holy Harry died, and my  
sweet son.

*Duch.* Dead life, blind sight, poor mortal-  
living ghost,

Woe's scene, world's shame, grave's due by life  
usurp'd,

Brief abstract and record of tedious days,

Rest thy unrest on England's lawful earth,

[*Sitting down.*]

Unlawfully made drunk with innocent blood!

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! that thou would'st as soon

afford a grave,

As thou canst yield a melancholy seat;

\* An image like those at St. Dunstan's church in  
Fleet-street.  
† His castle in Wales.  
‡ Merciless.

\* The country in which Richmond had taken re-  
fuge.  
† Bishop of Ely.  
‡ Introduction.



Then would I hide my bones, not rest them here!

Ah, who has any cause to mourn, but we?

[*Sitting down by her.*]

*Q. Mar.* If ancient sorrow be most reverent,  
Give mine the benefit of senility,\*  
And let my griefs frown on the upper hand.  
If sorrow can admit society,

[*Sitting down with them.*]

Tell o'er your woes again by viewing mine:—  
I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him,  
I had a husband, till a Richard kill'd him:  
Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;

Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him.  
*Duch.* I had a Richard too, and thou didst kill him;

I had a Rutland too, then help'st to kill him.

*Q. Mar.* Thou had'st a Clarence too, and Richard kill'd him.

From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept  
A hell-hound, that doth hunt us all to death:  
That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes,  
To worry lambs, and lap their gentle blood;  
That foul defacer of God's handy-work;  
That excellent grand tyrant of the earth,  
That reigns in galled eyes of weeping souls,  
Thy womb let loose, to chase us to our graves.—

O upright, just, and true-disposing God,  
How do I thank thee, that this carnal cur  
Preys on the issue of his mother's body,  
And makes her pen-fellow† with others' mean!

*Duch.* O Harry's wife, triumph not in my woes;

God witness with me, I have wept for thine,

*Q. Mar.* Bear with me, I am hungry for revenge,

And now I cloy me with beholding it.

Thy Edward he is dead, that kill'd my Edward;

Thy other Edward dead, to quit my Edward;  
Young York he is but boot,‡ because both they

Match not the high perfection of my loss.  
Thy Clarence he is dead, that stabb'd my Edward;

And the beholders of this tragic play,  
The adulterate Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan,  
Grey,

Untimely, smother'd in their dusky graves.  
Richard yet lives, hell's black intelligencer;  
Only reserv'd their factor, to buy souls,  
And send them thither: But at hand, at hand,  
Ensues his piteous and unquiet end:  
Earth gapes, hell burns, fiends roar, saints pray,

To have him suddenly convey'd from hence:—  
Cancel his bond of life, dear God, I pray,  
That I may live to say, The dog is dead!

*Q. Eliz.* Oh! thou didst prophesy, the time would come,

That I should wish for thee to help me curse  
That bottled spider, that foul back-back'd toad.

*Q. Mar.* I call'd thee then, vain flourish of my fortune;

I call'd thee then, poor shadow, painted queen;  
The presentation of but what I was,  
The flattering index‡ of a direful pageant,  
One heav'd a high, to be hur'd down below:  
A mother only muck'd with two fair babes;  
A dream of what thou wast; a garish‡ flag,  
To be the aim of every dangerous shot;  
A sign of dignity, a breath, a bubble;  
A queen in jest, only to fill the scene.

Where is thy husband now? Where be thy brothers?

Where be thy two sons? Wherein dost thou joy?

\* Senility.

† Companion.

‡ Thrown in to boot. § Indexes were anciently placed at the beginning of books.

¶ Flaring.

Who sues, and kneels, and says—God save the queen?

Where be the bending peers that flatter'd thee? Where be the thronging troops that follow'd thee?

Decline all this, and see what now thou art.  
For happy wife, a most distressed widow;  
For joyful mother, one that wails the name;  
For one being sued to, one that humbly sues;  
For queen, a very castif crown'd with care;  
For one that scor'd at me, now scor'd of me;  
For one being fear'd of all, now fearing one;  
For one commanding all, obey'd of none.  
Thus bath the course of justice wheel'd about,  
And left thee but a very prey to time;  
Having no more but thought of what thou wert,

To torture thee the more, being what thou art.  
Thou didst usurp my place, and dost thou not  
Usurp the just proportion of my sorrow?  
Now thy proud neck bears half my burden'd yoke;

From which even here I slip my wearied head,  
And leave the burden of it all on thee.  
Farewell, York's wife,—and queen of sad mischance,—

These English woes shall make me smile in France.

*Q. Eliz.* O thou well skill'd in curses, stay a while,  
And teach me how to curse mine enemies.

*Q. Mar.* Forbear to sleep the night, and fast the day;

Compare dead happiness with living woe;  
I think that thy babes were fatter than they were,

And he, that slew them, fonder than he is:  
Bittering thy loss makes the bad-causer woe;  
Revolving this will teach thee how to curse.

*Q. Eliz.* My words are dull, O quicken them with thine!

*Q. Mar.* Thy woes will make them sharp,  
and pierce like mine.

[*Exit Q. MARGARET.*]

*Duch.* Why should calamity be full of words?

*Q. Eliz.* Windy attorneys to their client woes,  
Airy succeders of intestine joys,  
Poor breathing orators of miseries!  
Let them have scope: though what they do impart

Help nothing else, yet do they ease the heart.

*Duch.* If so, then be not tongue-ty'd: go with me,  
And in the breath of bitter words let's smother  
My damned son, that thy two sweet sons smother'd.  
[*Drum within.*]

I hear his drum,—be copious in exclams.

*Enter King RICHARD; and his Train, marching.*

*K. Rich.* Who intercepts me in my expedition?

*Duch.* Oh! she that might have intercepted  
By strangling thee in her accursed womb,  
From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast done.

*Q. Eliz.* Hid'st thou that forehead with a golden crown,  
Where should be branded, if that right were right,  
The slaughter of the prince that ow'd\* that crown,  
And the dire death of my poor sons and brothers?

Tell me thou villain-slave, where are my children?

*Duch.* Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy brother Clarence?

And little Ned Plantagenet, his son?

*Q. Eliz.* Where is the gentle Rivers, Vaughan, Grey?

*Duch.* Where is kind Hastings?

*K. Rich.* A flourish, trumpets!—strike alarm, drums!

Let not the heavens hear these tell-tale women  
Rail on the Lord's anointed: Strike, I say.—

[*Fleurish. Alarums.*]  
Either be patient, and entreat me fair,  
Or with the clamorous report of war  
Thus will I drown your exclamations.

*Duch.* Art thou my son?

*K. Rich.* Ay; I thank God, my father, and yourself.

*Duch.* Then patiently hear my impatience.

*K. Rich.* Madam, I have a touch of your condition,\*

That cannot brook the accent of reproof.

*Duch.* O let me speak.

*K. Rich.* Do, then; but I'll not hear.

*Duch.* I will be mild and gentle in my words.

*K. Rich.* And brief, good mother; for I am in haste.

*Duch.* Art thou so hasty? I have staid for thee,

God knows, in torment and in agony.

*K. Rich.* And came I not at last to comfort you?

*Duch.* No, by the holy rood,† thou know'st it well,

Thou can'st on earth to make the earth my hell.

A grievous burden was thy birth to me:

Tetchy‡ and wayward was thy infancy.

Thy school-days, frightful, desperate, wild, and furious;

Thy prime of manhood, daring, bold, and venturous;

Thy age confirm'd, proud, subtle, sly, and bloody,

More mild, but yet more harmful, kind in baited:

What comfortable hour canst thou name,

That ever grac'd me in thy company?

*K. Rich.* Faith, none, but Humphrey Hour, that call'd you grace

To breakfast once, forth of my company.

If I be so disgracious in your sight,  
Let me march on, and not offend you, madam.—

Strike up the drum.

*Duch.* I pray thee, hear me speak.

*K. Rich.* You speak too bitterly.

*Duch.* Hear me a word;

For I shall never speak to thee again.

*K. Rich.* So.

*Duch.* Either thou wilt die, by God's just ordinance,

Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror;  
Or I with grief and extreme age shall perish,

And never look upon thy face again.  
Therefore, take with thee my most heavy curse;

Which, in the day of battle, thrice thou more,  
Then all the complete armour that thou wear'st!

My prayers on the adverse party fight;  
And there the little souls of Edward's children

Whisper the spirits of thine enemies,  
And promise them success and victory.

Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end;  
Shame serves thy life, and doth thy death attend.

[*Exit.*]  
*Q. Eliz.* Though far more cause, yet much less spirit to curse

Abides in me; I say Amen to her. [*Going.*]

*K. Rich.* Stay, madam, I must speak a word with you.

*Q. Eliz.* I have no more sons of the royal blood,

For thee to murder: for my daughters, Richard,—  
They shall be praying nuns, not weeping queens;

And therefore level not to hit their lives.

*K. Rich.* You have a daughter call'd—Elizabeth,

Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious.

*Q. Eliz.* And must she die for this? O let her live,

And I'll corrupt her manners, stain her beauty;  
Slander myself, as false to Edward's bed;

Throw over her the veil of infamy:  
So she may live unscar'd of bleeding slaughter;

I will confess she was not Edward's daughter.

*K. Rich.* Wrong not her birth, she is of royal blood.

*Q. Eliz.* To save her life, I'll say—she is not so.

*K. Rich.* Her life is safest only in her birth.

*Q. Eliz.* And only in that safety died her brothers.

*K. Rich.* Lo, at their birth good stars were opposite.

*Q. Eliz.* No, to their lives bad friends were contrary.

*K. Rich.* All unavoidable\* is the doom of destiny.

*Q. Eliz.* True, when avoided grace makes destiny:

My babes were destin'd to a fairer death,  
If grace had bless'd thee with a fairer life.

*K. Rich.* You speak, as if that I had slain my cousins.

*Q. Eliz.* Cousins, indeed; and by their uncle cozen'd

Of comfort, kingdom, kindred, freedom, life.  
Whose hands soever lanc'd their tender hearts,

Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction:  
No doubt the murderous knife was dull and blunt,

Till it was whetted on thy stone-hard heart,  
To revel in the entrails of my lambs.

But that still† use of grief makes wild grief tame,

My tongue should to thy ears not name my boys,

Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes;  
And I, in such a desperate bay of death,

Like a poor bark, of sails and tackling reef,  
Rush all to pieces on thy rocky bosom.

*K. Rich.* Madam, so thrive I in my enterprise,

And dangerous success of bloody wars,  
As I intend more good to you and yours,

Then ever you or yours by me were harm'd!

*Q. Eliz.* What good is cover'd with the face of heaven,

To be discover'd that can do me good?

*K. Rich.* The advancement of your children, gentle lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Up to some scaffold, there to lose their heads?

*K. Rich.* No, to the dignity and height of fortune,

The high imperial type of this earth's glory.‡

*Q. Eliz.* Flatter my sorrows with report of it;

Tell me, what state, what dignity, what honour,  
Canst thou demise § to any child of mine?

*K. Rich.* Even all I have; ay, and myself and all,

Will I withal endow a child of thine;  
So in the Lethe of thy angry soul

Thou drown the sad remembrance of those wrongs,

Which, thou supposest, I have done to thee.

*Q. Eliz.* Be brief, lest that the process of thy kindness

Last longer telling than thy kindness' date.

*K. Rich.* Then know, that, from my soul, I love thy daughter.

*Q. Eliz.* My daughter's mother thinks it with her soul.

*K. Rich.* What do you think?

*Q. Eliz.* That thou dost love my daughter, from thy soul:

So, from thy soul's love, didst thou love her brothers;

\* Unavoidable.

† Constant.

‡ A crown.

§ Bequeath

\* Disposition.

† Touchy, fretful.

‡ Crown.

And, from my heart's love, I do thank thee for it.

*K. Rich.* Be not so hasty to confound my meaning :

I mean, that with my soul I love thy daughter, And do intend to make her queen of England.

*Q. Eliz.* Well then, who dost thou mean shall be her king ?

*K. Rich.* Even he, that makes her queen : Who else should be ?

*Q. Eliz.* What, thou ?

*K. Rich.* Even so : What think you of it, madam ?

*Q. Eliz.* How canst thou woo her ?

*K. Rich.* That I would learn of you, As one being best acquainted with her humour.

*Q. Eliz.* And wilt thou learn of me ?

*K. Rich.* Madam, with all my heart.

*Q. Eliz.* Send to her, by the man that slew her brothers,

A pair of bleeding hearts ; thereon engrave, Edward and York them, haply,\* will she weep : Therefore present to her,—as sometime Margaret

Did to thy father, steep'd in Rutland's blood,— A handkerchief ; which, say to her, did drain The purple sap from her sweet brother's body,

And bid her wipe her weeping eyes withal.

If this inducement move her not to love, Send her a letter of thy noble deeds ; Tell her, thou mad'st away her uncle Clarence,

Her uncle Rivers ; ay, and, for her sake, Mad'st quick conveyance with her good aunt Anne.

*K. Rich.* You mock me, madam ; this is not the way To win your daughter.

*Q. Eliz.* There is no other way ; Unless thou could'st put on some other shape, And not be Richard that hath done all this.

*K. Rich.* Say, that I did all this for love of her.

*Q. Eliz.* Nay, then indeed, she cannot choose but have thee, Having bought love with such a bloody spoil.

*K. Rich.* Look, what is done cannot be now amended :

Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes, Which after-hours give leisure to repent.

If I did take the kingdom from your sons, To make amends, I'll give it to your daughter.

If I have kill'd the issue of your womb, To quicken your increase, I will beget Mine issue of your blood upon your daughter.

A grandam's name is little less in love, Than is the doting title of a mother ; They are as children, but one step below, Even of your mettle, of your very blood ; Of all one pain,—save for a night of groans Endur'd of her, for whom you bid like sorrow.

Your children were vexation to your youth, But mine shall be a comfort to your age. The loss you have, is but a son being king, And, by that loss, your daughter is made queen.

I cannot make you what amends I would, Therefore accept such kindness as I can. Dorset, your son, that, with a fearful soul, Leads discontented steps in foreign soil, This fair alliance quickly shall call home To high promotions and great dignity : The king, that calls your beauteous daughter,

His wife, Familiarly shall call thy Dorset—brother ; Again shall you be mother to a king, And all the ruins of distressful times Repair'd with double riches of content.

What! we have many goodly days to see : The liquid drops of tears that you have shed,

Shall come again, transform'd to orient pearl ; Advantaging their loan, with interest Of ten-times-double gain of happiness. Go then, my mother, to thy daughter go ; Make bold her bashful years with your experience ;

Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale ; Put in her tender heart the aspiring flame Of golden sovereignty ; acquaint the princess With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys : And when this arm of mine hath chastised The petty rebel, dull-brain'd Buckingham, Bound with triumphant garlands will I come, And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed ; To whom I will retail my conquest won, And she shall be sole victress, Cæsar's Cæsar.

*Q. Eliz.* What were I best to say ? her father's brother Would be her lord ? Or shall I say, her uncle ? Or, he that slew her brothers, and her uncles ?

Under what title shall I woo for thee, That God, the law, my honour, and her love, Can make seem pleasing to her tender years ?

*K. Rich.* Infer fair England's peace by this alliance.

*Q. Eliz.* Which she shall purchase with still lasting war.

*K. Rich.* Tell her the king, that may command, entreats.

*Q. Eliz.* That at her hands, which the king's King forbids.\*

*K. Rich.* Say, she shall be a high and mighty queen.

*Q. Eliz.* To wail the title, as her mother doth.

*K. Rich.* Say, I will love her everlastingly.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long shall that title, ever, last ?

*K. Rich.* Sweetly in force unto her fair life's end.

*Q. Eliz.* But how long fairly shall her sweet life last ?

*K. Rich.* As long as heaven, and nature lengthens it.

*Q. Eliz.* As long as hell, and Richard, likes of it.

*K. Rich.* Say, I her sovereign, am her subject low.

*Q. Eliz.* But she, your subject, loaths such sovereignty.

*K. Rich.* Be eloquent in my behalf to her.

*Q. Eliz.* An honest tale speeds best, being plainly told.

*K. Rich.* Then, in plain terms, tell her my loving tale.

*Q. Eliz.* Plain, and not honest, is too harsh a style.

*K. Rich.* Your reasons are too shallow and too quick.

*Q. Eliz.* Oh ! no, my reasons are too deep and dead ;—

To deep and dead, poor infants, in their graves.

*K. Rich.* Harp not on that string, madam ; that is past.

*Q. Eliz.* Harp on it still shall I, till heart-strings break.

*K. Rich.* Now by my George, my garter,† and my crown,—

*Q. Eliz.* Profan'd, dishonour'd, and the third usurp'd.

*K. Rich.* I swear.

*Q. Eliz.* By nothing ; for this is no oath. Thy George, profan'd, hath lost his holy honour ;

Thy garter, blemish'd, pawn'd his knightly virtue ;

Thy crown, usurp'd disgrace'd his kingly glory ; If something thou would'st swear to be believ'd,

\* Perhaps.

\* In the Levitical Law, chap. xviii. 11.  
† The surges of the Order of the Garter

Swear then by something that thou hast not

wrong'd.

*K. Rich.* Now by the world,—

*Q. Eliz.* 'Tis full of thy foul wrongs.

*K. Rich.* My father's death,—

*Q. Eliz.* Thy life hath that dishonour'd.

*K. Rich.* Thien, by myself,—

*Q. Eliz.* Thyself is self-misus'd.

*K. Rich.* Why then, by God,—

*Q. Eliz.* God's wrong is most of all.

If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
The unity the king thy brother made  
Had not been broken, nor my brother slain :  
If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
The imperial metal circling now thy head,  
Had grac'd the tender temples of my child ;  
And both the princes had been breathing  
here,  
Which now, two tender bro'-fellows for dust,  
Thy broken faith hath made a prey for worms.  
What canst thou swear by now ?

*K. Rich.* By the time to come.

*Q. Eliz.* That thou hast wrong'd in the time  
o'erpast ;

For I myself have many years to wash  
Hereafter time, for time past wrong'd by thee.  
The children live, whose parents thou hast  
slaughter'd,  
Ungovern'd youth, to wait it in their age :  
The parents live, whose children thou hast  
butcher'd,  
old barren plants, to wait it with their age.  
Swear not by time to come ; for that thou  
hast  
Misus'd ere used, by times ill-us'd o'erpast.

*K. Rich.* As I intend to prosper, and re-  
pent !

So thrive I in my dangerous attempt  
Of hostile arms ! myself myself contound !  
Heaven and fortune, bar me happy hours !  
Day, yield me not thy light ; nor night, thy  
rest !

Be opposite all planets of good luck  
To my proceeding, if with pure heart's love,  
Immaculate devotion, holy thoughts,  
I tender not thy beauteous princely daughter !  
In her consists my happiness, and thine,  
Without her follows to myself and thee,  
Herself, the land, and many a Christian soul,  
Death, desolation, ruin, and decay :  
It cannot be avoided but by this ;  
It ~~will~~ not be avoided but by this.  
Therefore, dear mother, (I must call you so,)  
Be the attorney of my love to her,  
Plead what I will be, not what I have been ;  
Not my deserts, but what I will deserve :  
Urges the necessity and state of times.

And be not peevish \* found in great designs,  
*Q. Eliz.* Shall I be tempted of the devil  
thus ?

*K. Rich.* Ay, if the devil tempt thee to do  
good.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I forget myself, to be myself ?

*K. Rich.* Ay, if your self's remembrance  
wrong yourself.

*Q. Eliz.* But thou didst kill my children.

*K. Rich.* But in your daughter's womb I bury  
them :

Where in that nest of spicery, † they shall  
breed

Selves of themselves, to your recomforture.

*Q. Eliz.* Shall I go win my daughter to thy  
will ?

*K. Rich.* And be a happy mother by the deed.

*Q. Eliz.* I go.—Write to me very shortly,

And you shall understand from me her mind.

*K. Rich.* Bear her my true love's kiss, and  
so farewell.

[*Kissing her.* Exit *Q. ELIZABETH.*  
Relenting fool, and shallow, changing wo-  
man !—

How now ? what news ?

Enter RATCLIFF ; CATESBY following.

*Rat.* Most mighty sovereign, on the western  
coast

Rideth a puissant navy ; to the shore  
Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,  
Unarm'd and unresolv'd to beat them back :  
'Tis thought that Richmond is their admiral ;  
And there they hull, expecting but the aid  
Of Buckingham, to welcome them ashore.

*K. Rich.* Some light-foot friend post to the  
duke of Norfolk :—

Ratcliff, thyself,—or Catesby ; where is he ?

*Cate.* Here, my good lord.

*K. Rich.* Catesby, fly to the duke.

*Cate.* I will, my lord, with all convenient  
haste.

*K. Rich.* Ratcliff, come hither ; Post to Salis-  
bury ;

When thou com'st thither,—Dull, unmindful  
villain,

[*To CATESBY.*

Why stay'st thou here, and go'st not to the  
duke ?

*Cate.* Fust, mighty liege, tell me your high-  
ness' pleasure.

What from your grace I shall deliver to him.

*K. Rich.* O true, good Catesby ;—Bid him  
levy straight

The greatest strength and power he can make,  
And meet me suddenly at Salisbury.

*Cate.* I go.

[*Exit.*

*Rat.* What, may it please you, shall I do at  
Salisbury ?

*K. Rich.* Why, what would'st thou do there  
before I go ?

*Rat.* Your highness told me, I should post  
before.

Enter STANLEY.

*K. Rich.* My mind is chang'd.—Stanley, what  
news with you ?

*Stan.* None good, my liege, to please you  
with the hearing ;

Nor none so bad, but well may be reported,

*K. Rich.* Heyday, a riddle ! neither good  
nor bad !

What need'st thou run so many miles about,  
When thou may'st tell thy tale the nearest  
way ?

Once more what news ?

*Stan.* Richmond is on the seas.

*K. Rich.* There let him sink, and be the seas  
on him !

White-liver'd ruiagate, what doth he there ?

*Stan.* I know not, mighty sovereign, but by  
guess.

*K. Rich.* Well, as you guess ?

*Stan.* Stur'd up by Dorset, Buckingham, and  
Morton,

He makes for England here to claim the  
crown.

*K. Rich.* Is the chair empty ? is the sword  
unsway'd !

Is the king dead ? The empire unpossess'd ?

What heir of York is there alive, but we ?

And who is England's king, but great York's  
heir ?

Then, tell me, what makes he upon the seas ?

*Stan.* Unless for that, my liege, I cannot guess.

*K. Rich.* Unless for that he comes to be your  
liege,

[*comes.*

You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman

Thou wilt revolt, and fly to him, I fear.

*Stan.* No, mighty liege ; therefore distrust me  
not.

*K. Rich.* Where is thy power then, to beat  
him back ?

Where be thy tenants and thy followers ?

Are they not now upon the western shore

Safe conducting the rebels from their ships ?

*Stan.* No, my good lord, my good friends are  
in the north.

*K. Rich.* Cold friends to me : what do they  
in the north

\* Foolish.

† The phoenix's nest.

When they should serve their sovereign in the west?

*Stan.* They have not been commanded, mighty king:

Pleaseth your majesty to give me leave, I'll muster up my friends; and meet your grace, Where and what time your majesty shall please.

*K. Rich.* Ay, ay, thou wouldst be gone to join with Richmond:

I will not trust you, Sir.

*Stan.* Most mighty sovereign, You have no cause to hold my friendship doubtful;

I never was nor never will be false.

*K. Rich.* Well, go, muster men. But, hear you, leave behind

Your son, George Stanley; look your heart be firm,

Or else his head's assurance is but frail.

*Stan.* So deal with him, as I prove true to you. *[Exit STANLEY.]*

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* My gracious sovereign, now in Devonshire,

As I by friends am well advertised, Sir Edward Courtney, and the haughty prelate, Bishop of Exeter, his elder brother, With many more confederates, are in arms.

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

*2 Mess.* In Kent, my liege, the Guildfords are in arms; And every hour more competitors\* Flock to the rebels, and their power grows strong.

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

*3 Mess.* My lord, the army of great Buckingham—

*K. Rich.* Out on ye, owls! nothing but songs of death? *[He strikes him]* There, take thou that, till thou bring better news.

*3 Mess.* The news I have to tell your majesty,

Is,—that by sudden floods and fall of waters, Buckingham's army is dispers'd and scatter'd; And he himself wander'd away alone, No man knows whither.

*K. Rich.* Oh! I cry you mercy: There is my purse to cure that blow of thine. Hath any well-advised friend proclaim'd Reward to him that brings the traitor in?

*3 Mess.* Such proclamation hath been made, my liege.

*Enter another MESSENGER.*

*4 Mess.* Sir Thomas Lovel, and lord marquis Dorset,

'Tis said, my liege, in Yorkshire are in arms. But this good comfort bring I to your highness,—

The Bretagne navy is dispers'd by tempest: Richmond, in Dorsetshire, sent out a boat Unto the shore, to ask those on the banks, If they were his assistants, yea or no; Who answer'd him, they came from Buckingham Upon his party: he, mistrusting them, Hois'd sail, and made his course again for Bretagne.

*K. Rich.* March on, march on, since we are up in arms;

If not to fight with foreign enemies, Yet to beat down these rebels here at home.

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cates.* My liege, the duke of Buckingham is taken, *(mond)* That is the best news; That the earl of Rich- Is with a mighty power† landed at Milford, Is colder news, but yet they must be told.

\* Associates,

† Force.

*K. Rich.* Away towards Salisbury; while we reason here, A royal battle might be won and lost:— Some one take order Buckingham be brought To Salisbury;—the rest march on with me. *[Exeunt.]*

*SCENE V.—A Room in Lord STANLEY'S House.*

*Enter STANLEY and Sir CHRISTOPHER URSWICK.\**

*Stan.* Sir Christopher, tell Richmond this from me:—

That, in the sty of this most bloody boar, My son George Stanley is frank'd† up in hold If I revolt, off goes young George's head; The fear of that withholds my present aid.

But tell me where is princely Richmond now *Chris.* At Pembroke, or at Harford-west in Wales.

*Stan.* What men of name resort to him?

*Chris.* Sir Walter Herbert, a renowned soldier;

Sir Gilbert Talbert, Sir William Stanley; Oxford, redoubted Pembroke, Sir James Blunt, And Rice ap Thomas, with a valiant crew; And many other of great fame and worth: And towards London do they bend their course, If by the way they be not fought withal.

*Stan.* Well hie thee to thy lord; commend me to him;

Tell him, the queen bath heartily consented

He shall espouse Elizabeth her daughter.

These letters will resolve him of my mind.

Farewell. *[Gives papers to Sir CHRISTOPHER.]* *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT V.

*SCENE I.—Salisbury.—An open place.*

*Enter the SHERIFF, and Guard, with BUCKINGHAM, led to execution.*

*Buck.* Will not king Richard let me speak with him?

*Sher.* No, my good lord; therefore be patient.

*Buck.* Hastings, and Edward's children, Rivers, Grey,

Holy king Henry, and thy fair son Edward,

Vaughan, and all that have miscarried

By underhand corrupted foul injustice;

If that your moody discontented souls

Do through the clouds behold this present hour,

Even for revenge mock my destruction!

This is All-Souls' day, fellows, is it not?

*Sher.* It is, my lord.

*Buck.* Why then, All-Souls' day is my body's doomsday.

This is the day, which, in king Edward's time,

I wish'd might fall on me, when I was found

False to his children, or his wife's allies:

This is the day, wherein I wish'd to fall

By the false faith of him whom most I trusted;

This, this All-Souls' day to my fearful soul,

Is the determin'd respite of my wrongs.†

That high All-seer which I dallied with,

Hath turned my feigned prayer on my head,

And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest.

Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men

To turn their own points on their masters' bosoms:

Thus Margaret's curse falls heavy on my neck,—

\* A bachelor in divinity and chaplain to the countess of Richmond

† A sty in which hogs are set apart for fattening.

‡ Injurious practices.

*When he, quoth she, shall split thy heart with sorrow,  
Remember Margaret was a prophetess.—  
Come, Sirs, convey me to the block of shame;  
Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of blame.*

[*Exeunt BUCKINGHAM, &c.*]

SCENE II.—*Plain near Tamworth.*

*Enter, with drum and colours, RICHMOND, OXFORD, Sir JAMES BLUNT, Sir WALTER HERBERT, and others, with forces, marching.*

*Richm.* Fellows in arms, and my most loving friends,  
Bruis'd underneath the yoke of tyranny,  
Thus far into the bowels of the land  
Have we march'd on without impediment;  
And here receive we from our father Stanley  
Lines of fair colour and encouragement.  
The wretched, and usurping boar,  
That spoil'd your summer fields and fruitful vines,  
Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes his trough  
In your embowell'd bosoms, this foul swine  
Lies now even in the centre of this isle,  
Near to the town of Leicester, as we learn:  
From Tamworth thither, is but one day's march.

In God's name, cheerly on, courageous friends,  
To reap the harvest of perpetual peace  
By this one bloody trial of sharp war.

*Quf.* Every man's conscience is a thousand swords,  
To fight against that bloody homicide.

*Herb.* I doubt not, but his friends will turn to us.

*Blunt.* He hath no friends, but who are friends for fear;  
Which, in his dearest need, will fly from him.

*Richm.* All for our vantage. Then, in God's name, march:  
True hope is swift, and flies with swallow's wings,  
Kings it makes gods, and meaner creatures kings.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Bosworth Field.*

*Enter King RICHARD and forces; the Duke of NORFOLK, Earl of SURREY, and others.*

*K. Rich.* Here pitch our tents, even here in Bosworth field.—

My lord of Surrey, why look you so sad?

*Sur.* My heart is ten times lighter than my looks.

*K. Rich.* My lord of Norfolk,—

*Nor.* Here, most gracious liege.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, we must have knocks;  
Hail must we not?

*Nor.* We must both give and take, my loving lord.

*K. Rich.* Up with my tent: Here will I lie to-night;

[*Soldiers begin to set up the king's tent.*  
But where to-morrow?—Well, all's one for that.—

Who hath desir'd the number of the traitors?  
*Nor.* Six or seven thousand is their utmost power.

*K. Rich.* Why, our battalia trebles that account:

Besides, the king's name is a tower of strength,  
Which they upon the adverse faction want.  
Up with the tent.—Come, noble gentlemen,  
Let us survey the vantage of the ground;  
Call for some men of sound direction:  
Let's want no discipline, make no delay;  
For, lords, to-morrow is a busy day.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter, on the other side of the field, RICHMOND, Sir WILLIAM BRANDON, OXFORD, and other Lords. Some of the soldiers pitch RICHMOND's tent.*

*Richm.* The weary sun hath made a golden set,

And, by the bright track of his fiery car,  
Gives token of a goodly day to-morrow.—  
Sir William Brandon, you shall bear my standard.

Give me some ink and paper in my tent;  
I'll draw the form and model of our battle,  
Limit\* each leader to his several charge,  
And part in just proportion our small power.  
My lord of Oxford,—you, Sir William Brandon,—

And you, Sir Walter Herbert, stay with me:  
The earl of Pembroke keeps† his regiment;—  
Good captain Blunt, bear my good night to him,

And by the second hour in the morning  
Desire the earl to see me in my tent:—  
Yet one thing more, good captain, do for me;  
Where is lord Stanley quarter'd, do you know?

*Blunt.* Unless I have mis'taken his colours much,  
(Which well I am assur'd I have not done,)  
His regiment lies half a mile at least  
South from the mighty power of the king.

*Richm.* If without peril it be possible,  
Sweet Blunt, make good some means to speak with him,

And give him from me this most needful note.  
*Blunt.* Upon my life, my lord, I'll undertake it;

And so, God give you quiet rest to-night!

*Richm.* Good night, good captain Blunt.  
Come, gentlemen,  
Let us consult upon to-morrow's business;  
In to my tent, the air is raw and cold.

[*They withdraw into the Tent.*]

*Enter, to his Tent, King RICHARD, NORFOLK, RATCLIFF, and CATESBY.*

*K. Rich.* What is't o'clock?

*Cate.* It's supper time, my lord:  
It's nine o'clock.

*K. Rich.* I will not sup to-night.

Give me some ink and paper.

What, is my beaver easier than it was?

And all my armour laid into my tent?

*Cate.* It is, my liege; and all things are in readiness.

*K. Rich.* Good Norfolk, hie thee to thy charge;

Use careful watch, choose trusty sentinels.

*Nor.* I go, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle Norfolk.

*Nor.* I warrant you, my lord. [Exit.]

*K. Rich.* Ratcliff,—

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* Send out a pursuivant at arms

To Stanley's regiment; bid him bring his power

Before sun-rising, lest his son George fall

Into the bound cave of eternal night.—

Fill me a bowl of wine.—Give me a watch;†—

[*To CATESBY.*]

Saddle white Surrey for the field to-morrow.—

Look that my staves‡ be sound, and not too heavy.

Ratcliff,—

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* Saw'st thou the melancholy lord Northumberland?

*Rat.* Thomas the earl of Surrey, and himself,  
Much about cock-shut§ time, from troop to

troop,  
Went through the army, cheering up the soldiers.

\* Appoint.

† Remains with.

‡ A watch-light. § Wood of the lances. ¶ Twilight.

*K. Rich.* I am satisfied. Give me a bowl of wine :

I have not that alacrity of spirit,  
Nor cheer of mind that I was wont to have.—  
So, set it down.—Is ink and paper ready?

*Rat.* It is, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Bid my guard watch ; leave me.  
About the mid of night, come to my tent  
And help to arm me.—Leave me, I say.

[*KING RICHARD retires into his Tent. Exit RATCLIFF and CATESBY.*]

*RICHMOND's Tent opens, and discovers him, and his officers, &c.*

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Fortune and victory sit on thy helm !

*Richm.* All comfort that the dark night can afford,

Be to thy person, noble father-in-law !

Tell me, how fares our loving mother ?

*Stan.* I, by attorney, \* bless thee from thy mother,

Who prays continually for Richmond's good ;

So much for that.—The silent hours steal on,

And flaky darkness breaks within the east.

In brief, for so the season bids us be,

Prepare thy battle early in the morning ;

And put thy fortune to the arbitrament

Of bloody strokes, and mortal-staining war.

I, as I may, (that which I would, I cannot,)

With best advantage will deceive the time,

And aid thee in this doubtful shock of arms :

But on thy side I may not be too forward,

Lest, being seen, thy brother, tender George,

Be executed in his father's sight :

Farewell ! The leisure and the fearful time

Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love,

And ample interchange of sweet discourse,

Which so long sunder'd friends should dwell

upon ;

God give us leisure for these rites of love !

Once more, adieu :—Be valiant, and speed

well !

*Richm.* Good lords, conduct him to his accom-

ment ;

I'll strive with troubled thoughts, to take a

nap ;

Lest leaden slumber seize me down to-mor-

row,

When I should mount with wings of victory :

Once more good night, kind lords and gentle-

men.

[*Exit LORDS, &c. with STANLEY.*]

O Thou ! whose captain I account myself,

Look on my forces with a gracious eye ;

Put in their hands thy bruising irons of wrath,

That they may crush down with a heavy fall

The usurping helmets of our adversaries ?

Make us thy ministers of chastisement,

That we may praise thee in thy victory !

To Thee I do commend my watchful soul,

Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes ;

Sleeping and waking, O defend me still !

[*Sleeps.*]

*The GHOST of Prince EDWARD, son to HENRY*

*the sixth, rises between the two tents.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-mor-

row ! [To *KING RICHARD.*]

Think, how thou stab'dst me in my prime of

youth

At Tewksbury ; Despair therefore, and die !—

Be cheerful, Richmond ; for the wronged soul's

[To *RICHMOND.*]

Of butcher'd princes fight in thy behalf :

King Henry's issue, Richmond, comforts thee.

*The GHOST of King HENRY the sixth rises.*

*Ghost.* When I was mortal, my anointed

body [To *KING RICHARD.*]

By thee was punched full of deadly holes :

Think on the Tower and me ; Despair, and

die !

Harry the sixth bids thee despair and die.—

Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror !

[To *RICHMOND.*]

Harry, that prophes'd thou should'st be king,

Doth comfort thee in thy sleep : Live and

flourish !

*The GHOST of CLARENCE rises.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-mor-

row ! [To *KING RICHARD.*]

I, that was wash'd to death with fulsome

wine,

Poor Clarence, by thy guile betray'd to death !

To-morrow in the battle think on me,

And fall thy edgeless sword ; Despair and

die !—

Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster,

[To *RICHMOND.*]

The wronged heirs of York do pray for thee ;

Good angels guard thy battle ! Live, and

flourish !

*The GHOSTS of RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN,*

*rise.*

*Riv.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-morrow,

[To *KING RICHARD.*]

Rivers, that died at Pomfret ! Despair, and

die !

*Grey.* Think upon Grey, and let thy soul des-

pair ! [To *KING RICHARD.*]

*Vaugh.* Think upon Vaughan ; and, with guilty

fear,

Let fall thy lance ! Despair, and die !—

[To *KING RICHARD.*]

All. Awake ! and think, our wounds in Rich-

ard's bosom [To *RICHMOND.*]

Will conquer him ;—awake, and win the

day !

*The GHOST of HASTINGS rises.*

*Ghost.* Bloody and guilty, guiltily awake ;

[To *KING RICHARD.*]

And in a bloody battle end thy days !

Think on lord Hastings ; and despair and

die !—

Quiet untroubled soul, awake, awake !

[To *RICHMOND.*]

Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair England's

sake !

*The GHOSTS of the two young PRINCE.*

*rise.*

*Ghosts.* Dream on thy cousins smother'd in

the Tower ;

Let us be lead within thy bosom, Richard,

And weigh thee down to ruin, shame, and

death !

Thy nephews' souls bid thee despair, and die.—

Sleep, Richmond, sleep in peace, and wake

in joy ;

Good angels guard thee from the boar's annoy !

Live, and beget a happy race of kings !

Edward's unhappy sons do bid thee flourish.

*The GHOST of Queen ANNE rises.*

*Ghost.* Richard, thy wife, that wretched

Anne thy wife,

That never slept a quiet hour with thee,

Now fills thy sleep with perturbations ;

To-morrow in the battle think on me,

And fall thy edgeless sword ; Despair, and

die !—

Thou, quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep,

[To *RICHMOND.*]

Dream of success and happy victory ;

Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee.

*The GHOST of BUCKINGHAM rises.*

*Ghost.* The first was I, that help'd thee to

the crown ; [To *KING RICHARD.*]

\* Deputation.

† Welch.

The last was I that felt thy tyranny;  
Oh! in the battle think on Buckingham,  
And die in terror of thy guiltiness!  
Dream on, dream on, of bloody deeds and death;

Fainting, despair; desparing, yield thy breath!—  
I died for hope, ere I could lend thee aid:

[*To RICHMOND.*]

But cheer thy heart, and be thou not dismay'd:  
God and good angels fight on Richmond's side;

And Richard falls in height of all his pride.

[*The GHOSTS vanish. King RICHARD starts out of his dream.*]

*K. Rich.* Give me another horse,—bind up my wounds,—

Have mercy, Jesu!—Soft; I did but dream.—  
O coward conscience, how dost thou afflict me!

The lights burn blue.—It is now dead midnight.

Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh.  
What do I fear? myself? there's none else by:

Richard loves Richard; that is, I, am I.  
's there a murderer here? No?—Yes; I am:  
Ah, fly,—What, from myself? Great reason:  
Why?

Best I revenge, What? Myself on myself?  
I love myself. Wherefore? for any good,  
That I myself have done unto myself?  
O no; alas, I rather hate myself,  
For hateful deeds committed by myself.  
I am a villain; Yet I lie, I am not.  
Fool, of thyself speak well:—Fool, do not flatter.

My conscience hath a thousand several tongues,  
And every tongue brings in a several tale,  
And every tale condemns me for a villain.  
Perjury, perjury, in the highest degree;  
Murder, stern murder, in the dirt'st degree;  
All several sins, all us'd in each degree;  
Throng to the bar, crying all,—Guilt! guilty!  
I shall despair.—There is no creature loves me;

And, if I die, no soul will pity me:—  
Nay, wherefore should they? since that I myself

Find in myself no pity to myself.  
Methought, the souls of all that I had murder'd

Came to my tent, and every one did threat  
To-morrow's vengeance on the head of Richard.

*Enter RATCLIFF.*

*Rat.* My lord,—

*K. Rich.* Who's there?

*Rat.* Ratcliff, my lord; 'tis I. The early village cock

Hath twice done salutation to the morn;  
Your friends are up, and buckle on their armour.

*K. Rich.* O Ratcliff, I have dream'd a fearful dream!

What think'st thou? will our friends prove all true?

*Rat.* No doubt, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Ratcliff, I fear, I fear,—

*Rat.* Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of shadows.

*K. Rich.* By the apostle Paul, shadows to-night

Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard,  
Than can the substance of ten thousand soldiers,

Armed in proof, and led by shallow Richmond.  
It is not yet near day. Come, go with me;  
Under our tents I'll play the eaves-dropper,  
To hear, if any mean to shrink from me.

[*Exit King RICHARD, and RATCLIFF.*]

*RICHMOND wakes. Enter OXFORD and others.*

*Lords.* Good morrow, Richmond.

*Richm.* 'Cry mercy, lords, and watchful gentlemen,  
That you have ta'en a tardy sluggard here.

*Lords.* How have you slept, my lord?  
*Richm.* The sweetest sleep, and fairest-boding dreams,

That ever enter'd in a drowsy head,  
Have I since your departure had, my lords.  
Methought, their souls, whose bodies Richard murder'd,

Came to my tent, and cried—O! victory!  
I promise you, my heart is very jocund  
In the remembrance of so fair a dream.  
How far into the morning is it, lords?

*Lords.* Upon the stroke of four,

*Richm.* Why, then 'tis time to arm, and give direction.—

[*He advances to the troops.*]

More than I have said, loving countrymen,  
The leisure and enforcement of the time  
Forbids to dwell on. Yet remember this,—  
God, and our good cause, fight upon our side;

The prayers of holy saints, and wronged souls,  
Like high-rear'd bulwarks, stand before our faces;

Richard except, those whom we fight against  
Had rather have us win, than him they follow.  
For what is he they follow? truly, gentlemen,

A bloody tyrant, and a homicide;  
One rais'd in blood, and one in blood establish'd;

One that made means to come by what he hath,  
And slaughter'd those that were the means to help him:

A base foul stone, made precious by the foil  
Of England's chair,\* where he is falsely set;  
One that hath ever been God's enemy:

Then, if you fight against God's enemy,  
God will, in justice, wait† you as his soldiers;

If you do sweat to put a tyrant down,  
You sleep in peace, the tyrant being slain;

If you do fight against your country's foes,  
Your country's hat shall pay your pains the hire;

If you do fight in safeguard of your wives,  
Your wives shall welcome home the conquerors;

If you do free your children from the sword,  
Your children's children cut it in your age.

Then in the name of God, and all these rights,  
Advance your standards, draw your willing swords.

For me, the ransom of my bold attempt  
Shall be this cold corpse on the earth's cold face;

But, if I thrive, the gain of my attempt  
The least of you shall share his part thereof.

Sound, drums and trumpets, boldly and cheerfully:  
God and Saint George! Richmond and victory!

[*Exeunt.*]

*Re-enter King RICHARD, RATCLIFF, attendants, and Forces.*

*K. Rich.* What said Northumberland, as touching Richmond?

*Rat.* That he was never trained up in arms.

*K. Rich.* He said the truth: And what said Surrey then?

*Rat.* He said, and said the better for our purpose.

*K. Rich.* He was i'the right; and so, indeed, it is.  
[*Clock strikes.*]

Tell the clock there.—Give me a calendar.—

Who saw the sun to-day?

*Rat.* Not I, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Then he disdains to shine; for, by the book,

\* Throne.

† Requite.

‡ Guard.



He should have brav'd \* the east an hour ago :

A black day will it be to somebody.—

Ratchiff,—

*Rat.* My lord ?

*K. Rich.* The sun will not be seen to-day ;  
The sky doth frown and lour upon our army ;  
I would, these dewy tears were from the ground.

Not shine to-day ! Why, what is that to me,  
More than to Richmond ? for the self-same  
heaven,  
That frowns on me, looks sadly upon him.

*Enter NORFOLK.*

*Nor.* Arm, arm, my lord ; the foe vaunts in  
the field.

*K. Rich.* Come, bustle, bustle ;—Caparison  
my horse ;—

Call up lord Stanley, bid him bring his power :—  
I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain,  
And thus my battle shall be ordered.

My foreward shall be drawn out all in length,  
Consisting equally of horse and foot ;  
Our archers shall be placed in the midst ;  
John duke of Norfolk, Thomas earl of Surrey,  
Shall have the leading of this foot and horse.  
They thus directed, we ourself will follow  
In the main battle ; whose puissance on either  
side

Shall be well winged with our chiefest horse.  
Thus, and Saint George to boot !—What think'st  
thou, Norfolk ?

*Nor.* A good direction, warlike sovereign.—  
This found I on my tent this morning.

*K. Rich.* *Jokey of Norfolk, be not too bold,*  
[*Giving a scroll.* reads.]

*For Dickon † thy master, is bought and  
sold.*

A thing devised by the enemy.—  
Go, gentlemen, every man unto his charge :  
Let not our babbling dreams affright our  
souls ;

Conscience is but a word that cowards use,  
Devis'd at first to keep the strong in awe ;  
Our strong arms be our conscience, awords our  
law.

March on, join bravely, let us to't pell-mell ;  
If not to heaven, then hand in hand to hell.—

What shall I say more than I have infer'd ?  
Remember whom you are to cope withal ;—  
A sort ‡ of vagabonds, rascals, and run-aways,  
A scum of Britagnes, and base lackey pea-  
sants,

Whom their o'er-cloyed country vomits forth  
To desperate ventures and assur'd destruction.  
You sleeping safe, they bring you to unrest ;  
You having lands, and bless'd with beauteous  
wives,

They would restrain the one, disdain the other.  
And who doth lead them, but a paltry fellow,  
Long kept in Bretagne at our mother's cost ?  
A milk-sop, one that never in his life  
Felt so much cold as over shoes in snow ?  
Let's whip these stragglers o'er the seas  
again ;

Lash hence these over-weening rags of France,  
These famish'd beggars, weary of their lives ;  
Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit,  
For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd them-  
selves :

If we be conquer'd, let men conquer us,  
And not these bastard Britagnes ; whom our  
fathers

Have in their own land beaten, bobb'd, and  
thump'd,

And, on record, left them the heirs of shame.  
Shall these enjoy our lands ? lie with our  
wives ?

Murder our daughters ?—Hark, I hear their drum.  
[*Drum afar off.*]

Fight, gentlemen of England ! fight, bold yeo-  
men !

Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head !  
Spur your proud horses hard, and ride in  
blood ;  
Amaze the welkin with your broken staves ! \*

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

What says lord Stanley ? will he bring his  
power ?

*Mess.* My lord, he doth deny to come.

*K. Rich.* Off instantly with his son George's  
head.

*Nor.* My lord, the enemy is pass'd the  
marsh ;  
After the battle let George Stanley die.

*K. Rich.* A thousand hearts are great within  
my bosom :

Advance our standards, set upon our foes ;  
Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint  
George,  
Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons !  
Upon them ! Victory sits on our helms.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another part of the field.*

*Alarum : Excursions. Enter NORFOLK and  
Forces ; to him CATESBY.*

*Cate.* Rescue, my lord of Norfolk, rescue,  
rescue !

The king enacts more wonders than a man,  
Daring an opposite to every danger ;  
His horse is slain, and all on foot he fights,  
Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death :  
Rescue, fair lord, or else the day is lost !

*Alarum. Enter King RICHARD.*

*R. Rich.* A horse ! a horse ! my kingdom for  
a horse !

*Cate.* Withdraw, my lord, I'll help you to a  
horse.

*K. Rich.* Slave, I have set my life upon a  
cast,

And I will stand the hazard of the die :  
I think there be six Richmonds in the field ;  
Five have I slain to-day, instead of him :—  
A horse ! a horse ! my kingdom for a horse ;  
[*Exeunt.*]

*Alarums. Enter King RICHARD and RICH-  
MOND, and exeunt fighting. Retreat, and  
flourish. Then enter RICHMOND, STANLEY,  
bearing the crown, with divers other Lords,  
and Forces.*

*Richm.* God and your arms be prais'd, victo-  
rious friends ;

The day is ours, the bloody dog is dead.

*Stan.* Courageous Richmond, well hast thou  
acquit thee !

Lo, here, this long-usurped royalty,  
From the dead temples of this bloody wretch  
Have I pluck'd off, to grace thy brows withal ;  
Wear it, enjoy it, and make much of it.

*Richm.* Great God of heaven, say, Amen, to  
all :—

But tell me first, is young George Stanley liv-  
ing ?

*Stan.* He is, my lord, and safe in Leicester  
town ;

Whither, if it please you, we may now with-  
draw us.

*Richm.* What men of name are slain on  
either side ?

*Stan.* John duke of Norfolk, Walter lord  
Ferrers,  
Sir Robert Brakenbury, and Sir William Braun-  
don.

*Richm.* Inter their bodies as becomes their  
births.

Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled,  
That in submission will return to us ;

\* Fright the skies with the shivers of your lances.

\* Made it splendid.

† The ancient familiarization of Richard.

‡ Company

And then, as we have ta'en the sacrament,  
We will unite the white rose with the red :—  
Smile heaven upon this fair conjunction,  
That long hath trown'd upon their enmity !—  
What traitor hears me, and says not,—A'men ?  
England hath long been mad, and scarr'd her-  
self ;

The brother blindly shed the brother's blood,  
The father rashly slaughter'd his own son,  
The son, compell'd, born butcher to the sire ;  
All this divided York and Lancaster,  
Divided, in their dire division.—  
Oh ! now let Richmond and Elizabeth,  
The true successors of each royal house,  
By God's fair ordinance conjoin together .

And let their heirs, (God, if thy will be so,)  
Enrich the time to come with smooth-fac'd  
peace,  
With smiling plenty, and fair prosperous  
days !

Abate the edge of traitors, gracious Lord,  
That would reduce these bloody days again,  
And make poor England weep in streams of  
blood !

Let them not live to taste this land's increase,  
That would with treason wound this fair land's  
peace !

Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives again ;  
That she may long live here, God say—Amen.

[*Exeunt.*]

# KING HENRY VIII.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THIS historical play was probably written in the year 1601. It comprises a period of twelve years, commencing in the 12th of Henry's reign, (1521) and terminating with the baptism of Elizabeth, 1533. It has always been an easy medium for the display of pageantry and splendour; consequently a great favourite with the generality of audiences. Its most powerfully drawn characters are the Queen and the Cardinal. The dying moments of the former (Act IV. Sc. 2.) are portrayed with a mingled majesty and pathos, scarcely ever equalled by any other poet (Dr. Johnson numbers it, indeed, amongst "the greatest efforts of tragedy:") and the exquisite soliloquy of the latter, at the time of his degradation, would evince the superiority of Shakspeare's genius, had he never written another line. It is a fine philosophical picture of fallen ambition, brought to reflection by a merited reverse of fortune: the assimilation of human greatness to the vegetation of a fruit tree, with the puerility of venturing upon "a sea of troubles," for burdensome and perishable acquisitions, affords a charming specimen of imaginative colouring and didactic morality. Yet this is one of the parts which, according to the Doctor, "may be easily conceived, and easily written." Perhaps Shakspeare found it otherwise.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING HENRY THE EIGHTH.  
CARDINAL WOLSEY.—CARDINAL CAMPEIUS.  
CAPUCCIUS, *Ambassador from the Emperor, Charles V.*  
CRANMER, *Archbishop of Canterbury.*  
DUKE OF NORFOLK.—DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM.  
DUKE OF SUFFOLK.—EARL OF SURREY.  
LORD CHAMBERLAIN.—LORD CHANCELLOR.  
GARDINER, *Bishop of Winchester.*  
BISHOP OF LINCOLN.—LORD ABERGAVENNY.  
LORD SANDS.  
SIR HENRY GUILDFORD.—SIR THOMAS LOWELL.  
SIR ANTHONY DENNY.—SIR NICHOLAS VAUX.  
SECRETARIES *to Wolsey.*  
CROMWELL, *Servant to Wolsey.*  
GRIFFITH, *Gentleman-Usher to Queen Katharine.*  
THREE OTHER GENTLEMEN.

DOCTOR BUTTS, *Physician to the King*  
GARTER, *King at Arms.*  
SURVEYOR *to the Duke of Buckingham.*  
BRANDON, *and a Sergeant at Arms.*  
DOOR-KEEPER *of the Council-Chamber.*  
PORTER, *and his Man.*  
PAGE *to Gardiner.*—A CRIER.

QUEEN KATHARINE, *Wife to King Henry; afterwards divorced.*  
ANNE BULLEN, *her Maid of Honour; afterwards Queen.*  
AN OLD LADY, *Friend to Anne Bullen.*  
PATIENCE, *Woman to Queen Katharine.*

*Several Lords and Ladies in the Dumb Shows, Women attending upon the Queen, Spirits, which appear to her; Scribes, Officers, Guards, and other Attendants.*

SCENE—chiefly in London and Westminster; once, at Kimbolton.

## PROLOGUE.

I COME no more to make you laugh; things now,  
That bear a weighty and a serious brow,  
Sad, high, and working, full of state and woe,  
Such noble scenes as draw the eye to flow,  
We now present. Those that can pity, here  
May, if they think it well, let fall a tear;  
The subject will deserve it. Such, as give  
Their money out of hope they may believe,  
May here find truth too. Those, that come to see  
Only a show or two, and so agree,  
The play may pass; if they be still, and willing,  
I'll undertake, may see away their shilling  
Richly in two short hours. Only they,  
That come to hear a merry, bawdy play,  
A noise of targets; or to see a fellow  
In a long motley coat, guarded \* with yellow,

\* Laced.

Will be deceiv'd: for, gentle hearers, know,  
To rank our chosen truth with such a show  
As foot and sight is, beside forfeiting  
Our own brains, and the opinion that we  
bring,  
(To make that only true we now intend, \*)  
Will leave us never an understanding friend  
Therefore, for goodness' sake, and as you are  
known  
The first and happiest hearers of the town,  
Be sad, as we would make ye: Think, ye  
see  
The very persons of our noble story,  
As they were living; think, you see them great,  
And follow'd with the general throng; and  
sweat,  
Of thousand friends; then, in a moment see  
How soon this mightiness meets misery!  
And, if you can be merry then, I'll say,  
A man may weep upon his wedding day.

\* Pretend.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—London.—An Ante-chamber in the Palace.

Enter the Duke of Norfolk, at one door; at the other, the Duke of Buckingham, and the Lord ABERGAVENNY.

Buck. Good morrow, and well met. How have you done,

Since last we saw in France?

Nor. I thank your grace:

Healthful; and ever since a flesh admirer  
Or what I saw there.

Buck. An untimely ague

Stay'd me a prisoner in my chamber, when  
Those suns of glory, those two lights of men,\*  
Met in the vale of Arde.

Nor. 'Twixt Guyenes and Arde:

I was then present, saw them salute on horse-  
back; [clung

Beheld them, when they lighted, how they  
In their embracement, as they grew together;  
Which had they, what four throu'd ones could  
have weigh'd

Such a compounded one?

Buck. All the whole time

I was my chamber's prisoner.

Nor. Then you lost

The view of earthly glory: Men might say,  
Till this time, pomp was single; but now mar-  
ried

To one above itself. Each following day  
Became the next day's master, till the last  
Made former wonders it's: To day, the French,  
Ah cluquant, † all in gold, like beathen gods,  
Shone down the English: and, to-morrow,  
they

Made Britain, India: every man that stood  
Shew'd like a mine. Then dwtish pages  
were

As cherubins, all gilt; the madams too,  
Not us'd to toil, did almost sweat to bear  
The pride upon them, that then very labour  
Was to them as a puning: now this mask  
Was cried incomparable, and the ensuing  
night

Made it a fool and beggar. The two kings,  
Equal in lustre, were now best, now worst,  
As presence did present them; him in eye,  
Still him in praise: and, being present both,  
'Twas said, they saw but one; and no discernor  
Durst wag his tongue in censure. ‡ When  
these suns [challeng'd

(For so they phrase them,) by their heralds  
The noble spirits to arms, they did perform  
Beyond thought's compass; that former fabu-  
lous story,

Being now seen possible enough, got credit,  
That Bevis § was believ'd.

Buck. Oh! you go far.

Nor. As I belong to worship, and affect  
In honour honesty, the tract of every thing  
Would by a good discourser lose some life,  
Which action's self was tongue to. All was  
royal;

To the disposing of it nought rebell'd,  
Order gave each thing view; the office did  
Distinctly his full function.

Buck. Who did guide,

I mean, who set the body and the limbs  
Of this great sport together, as you guess?

Nor. One, certes, || that promises no element ¶  
In such a business.

Buck. I pray you, who, my lord?

Nor. All this was order'd by the good dis-  
cretion

Of the right reverend cardinal of York.

\* Henry VIII. and Francis I. king of France.

† Glittering, shining.

‡ In opinion, which was most noble.

§ Sir Bevis, created for his prowess Earl of South-  
ampton by William the Conqueror.

|| Certainly.

¶ Practice.

Buck. The devil speed him! no man's pie is  
free'd

From his ambitious finger. What had he  
To do in these fierce \* vanities? I wonder,  
That such a keech † can with his very bulk  
Take up the rays of the beneficial sun,  
And keep it from the earth.

Nor. Surely, Sir,

There's in him stuff that puts him to these  
ends:

For being not propp'd by aucestry, (whose  
grace

Chalks successors their way,) nor call'd upon  
For high feats done to the crown; neither  
allied

To eminent assistance, but, spider-like,  
Out of his self drawing web, he gives us note,  
The force of his own merit makes his way;  
A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys  
A place next to the king.

Aber. I cannot tell

What heaven hath given him, let some graver  
Pierce into that; but I can see his pride  
Peep through each part of him: Whence has he  
that?

If not from hell, the devil is a niggard;  
Or has given all before, and he begins  
A new hell in himself.

Buck. Why the devil,

Upon this French going-out, took he upon him,  
Without the privy of the king, to appoint  
Who should attend on him? He makes up the  
Or all the gentry for the most part such [due ‡  
Too, whom as great a charge as little honour  
He meant to lay upon: and his own letter, §  
The honourable board of council out,  
Must fetch him in the papers.

Aber. I do know

Kinsmen of mine, three at the least, that have  
By this so sickn'd their estates, that never  
They shall abound as formerly.

Buck. O many

Have broke their backs with laying manors on  
them

For this great journey. What did this vanity  
But minister communication of  
A most poor issue?

Nor. Grievously I think, [values  
The peace between the French and us not  
The cost that did conclude it.

Buck. Every man,

After the hideous storm that follow'd, was  
A thing inspir'd: and, not consulting, broke  
Into a general prophecy,—That this tempest  
Dashing the garment of this peace, aboded  
The sudden breach on't.

Nor. Which is budded out;

For France hath flaw'd the league, and hath at-  
tach'd

Our merchants' goods at Bourdeaux.

Aber. Is it therefore

The ambassador is silenc'd?

Nor. Marry, is't.

Aber. A proper title of a peace; and pur-  
chas'd

At a snappish rate!

Buck. Why all this business

Our reverend cardinal carried. ||

Nor. 'Like it your grace,

The state takes notice of the private difference  
Betwixt you and the cardinal. I advise you,  
(And take it from a heart that wishes towards  
you

Honour and plenteous safety,) that you read  
The cardinal's malice and his potency  
Together: to consider further, that  
What his high hatred would effect, wants not  
A minister in his power: You know his nature,  
That he's revengeful; and I know, his sword  
Hath a sharp edge: it's long, and it may be  
said

\* Proud.

† Lump of fat.

‡ List.

§ Sets down in his letter without consulting the council.

|| Conducted.

It reaches far; and where 'twill not extend,  
Thither he darts it. Bosom up my counsel,  
You'll find it wholesome. Lo, where comes  
that rock,  
That I advise your shunning.

*Enter Cardinal WOLSEY, (the purse borne before him,) certain of the guard, and two SECRETARIES with papers. The Cardinal in his passage fixeth his eye on BUCKINGHAM, and BUCKINGHAM on him, both full of disdain.*

*Wol.* The duke of Buckingham's surveyor?  
ha?

Where's his examination?

*1 Secr.* Here, so please you.

*Wol.* Is he in person ready?

*1 Secr.* Ay, please your grace.

*Wol.* Well, we shall then know more; and  
Buckingham

Shall lessen this big look.

*(Exit WOLSEY, and train.)*

*Buck.* This butcher's cur\* is venom-mouth'd,  
and I

Have not the power to muzzle him; therefore,  
best

Not wake him in his slumber. A beggar's  
look

Out-worths a noble's blood.

*Nor.* What, are you chaf'd?

Ask God for temperance; that's the appliance  
only,

Which your disease requires.

*Buck.* I read in his looks

Matter against me: and his eye revild

Me, as his object: at this instant

He bores me with some trick: He's gone to  
the king;

I'll follow, and out-stare him.

*Nor.* Stay, my lord,

And let you reason with your choler question

What 'tis you go about: To climb steep hills,

Requires slow pace at first: Anger is like

A full-hot horse; who being allow'd his way,

Self-mettle tires him. Not a man in England

Can advise me like you: be to yourself

As you would to your friend.

*Buck.* I'll to the king;

And from a mouth of honour quite cry down

This Ipswich fellow's insolence; or proclaim,

There's difference in no persons.

*Nor.* Be advis'd;

Heat not a furnace for your foe so hot

That it do singe yourself: We may outrun,

By violent swiftness, that which we run at,

And lose by over running. Know you not,

The fire, that mounts the liquor till it run  
o'er,

In seeming to augment it, wastes it? Be ad-  
vis'd;

I say again, there is no English soul

More stronger to direct you than yourself;

If with the sap of reason you would quench,

Or but allay, the fire of passion.

*Buck.* Sir,

I am thankful to you; and I'll go along

By your prescription:—but this top-proud  
fellow,

(Whom from the flow of gall I name not, but

From sincere motions,) by intelligence,

And proofs as clear as founts in Jaly, when

We see each grain of gravel, I do know

To be corrupt and treasonous.

*Nor.* Say not, treasonous.

*Buck.* To the king, I'll say't; and make my  
vouch as strong

As shore of rock. Attend. This holy fox,

Or wolf, or both, (for he is equal ravenous,

As he is subtle; and as prone to mischief,

As able to perform it: his mind and place

Infecting one another, yea, reciprocally,

Only to show his pomp as well in France

As here at home, suggests\* the king our  
master

To this last costly treaty, the interview,  
That swallow'd so much treasure, and like a  
glass

Did break i'the rinsing.

*Nor.* Faith, and so it did.

*Buck.* Pray, give me favour, Sir. This can-  
ning cardinal

The articles o'the combination drew,  
As himself pleas'd; and they were ratified,

As he cried, thus let it be: to as much end,  
As give a crutch to the dead: But our count-  
cardinal

Has done this, and 'tis well; for worthy Wol-  
sey,

Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows,  
(Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy

To the old dam, treason.)—Charles the em-  
peror,

Under pretence to see the queen his aunt,  
(For 'twas, indeed, his colour; but he came

To whisper Wolsey,) here makes visitation:  
His fears were, that the interview betwixt

England and France might through their amity,  
Breed him some prejudice: for from this

league

Prep'd harms that menac'd him: he privily  
Deals with our cardinal; and as I trow,—

Which I do well; for I am sure, the emperor  
Paid ere he promis'd: whereby his suit was

granted,  
Ere it was ask'd;—but when the way was

made,  
And pay'd with gold, the emperor thus de-  
sir'd;—

That he would please to alter the king's course,  
And break the aforesaid peace. Let the king

know,  
(As soon he shall by me,) that thus the car-  
dinal

Does buy and sell his honour as he pleases,  
And for his own advantage.

*Nor.* I am sorry

To hear this of him; and could wish he were  
Something mistaken in't.

*Buck.* No, not a syllable;

I do pronounce him in that very shape,  
He shall appear in proof.

*Enter BRANDON; a SERGEANT at Arms be-  
fore him, and two or three of the guard.*

*Bran.* Your office, sergeant; execute it.

*Serg.* Sir,

My lord the duke of Buckingham, and earl  
Of Hereford, Stafford, and Northampton, I

Arrest thee of high treason, in the name  
Of our most sovereign king.

*Buck.* Lo you, my lord,  
The net has fallen upon me; I shall perish

Under device and practice.†

*Bran.* I am sorry

To see you taken from liberty to look on  
The business present: 'Tis his highness' plea-  
sure

You shall to the Tower.

*Buck.* It will help me nothing,  
To plead mine innocence; for that dies on

me,  
Which makes my whitest part black. The will  
of heaven

Be done in this and all things I obey.—  
O my lord Aberg'any, fare you well.

*Bran.* Nay he must bear you company:—  
The king

Is pleas'd you shall to the Tower, till you  
know

How he determines further.

*Aber.* As the duke said,  
The will of heaven be done, and the king's

pleasure  
By me obey'd.

\* Wolsey was the son of a butcher.  
† Stabs.

\* Excites.  
† Unfair stratagems.

*Bran.* Here is a warrant from  
The king, to attach lord Montacute; and the  
bodies

Of the duke's confessor, John de la Court,  
One Gilbert Peck, his chancellor,—  
Buck. So, so;

These are the limbs of the plot; no more,  
I hope.

*Bran.* A monk o'the Chantry.

*Buck.* O Nicholas Hopkins?

*Bran.* He.

*Buck.* My surveyor is false; the o'er-great  
cardinal

Hath show'd him gold; my life is spann'd \* al-  
ready;

I am the shadow of poor Buckingham;

Whose figure even this instant clouds put on,

By dark'ning my clear sun.—My lord, farewell.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—The Council Chamber.

*Cornets.* Enter KING HENRY, Cardinal WO-  
LSEY, the Lords of the Council, Sir THOMAS  
LOVELL, Officers, and Attendants. The  
KING enters, leaning on the CARDINAL'S  
shoulder.

*K. Hen.* My life itself, and the best heart of  
it,  
Thanks you for this great care: I stood i'the  
level

Of a full-charg'd confederacy, and give thanks  
To you that chok'd it.—Let be call'd before us  
That gentleman of Buckingham's: in person  
I'll hear him in his confessions justify;  
And point by point the treasons of his master  
He shall again relate.

The KING takes his state. † The Lords of the  
Council take their several places. The  
CARDINAL places himself under the KING'S  
feet on his right side.

A noise within, crying, Room for the Queen.  
Enter the QUEEN, ushered by the Dukes of  
NORFOLK and SUFFOLK: she kneels. The  
KING riseth from his state, takes her up,  
kisses and places her by him.

*Q. Kath.* Nay, we must longer kneel; I am a  
sutor.

*K. Hen.* Arise, and take place by us:—Half  
your suit

Never name to us; you have half our power:  
The other moiety, ere you ask is given;  
Repeat your will, and take it.

*Q. Kath.* Thank your majesty.  
That you would love yourself; and, in that love,  
Not unconsider'd leave your honour, nor  
The dignity of your office, is the point  
Of my petition.

*K. Hen.* Lady mine!—proceed.

*K. Kath.* I am solicited, not by a few,  
And those of true condition, that your sub-  
jects

Are in great grievance: there hath been com-  
missions

Sent down among them which have flaw'd the  
heart

Of all their loyalties:—wherein, although,  
My good lord cardinal, they vent reproaches  
Most bitterly on you, as putter-on  
Of these exactions, yet the king our master,  
(Whose honour heaven shield from soil!) even  
he escapes not

Language unmannerly, yea, such which breaks  
The sides of loyalty, and almost appears  
In loud rebellion.

Nor. Not almost appears.

It doth appear; for, upon these taxations,  
The clothiers all, not able to maintain  
The many to them 'longing, have put off  
The spinsters, carders, fullers, weavers, who,

\* Measured.

† Chair.

Unfit for other life, compell'd by hunger  
And lack of other means, in desperate manner,  
Daring the event to the teeth, are all in up-  
roar,  
And danger serves among them.

*K. Hen.* Taxation!

Wherein? and what taxation?—My lord car-  
dinal,

You that are blam'd for it alike with us,

Know you of this taxation?

*Wol.* Please you, Sir,

I know but of a single part, in aught  
Pertains to the state; and front but in that  
file \*

Where others tell steps with me.

*Q. Kath.* No, my lord,

You know no more than others: but you frame  
Things, that are known alike; which are not  
wholesome

To those which would not know them, and yet  
must

Perforce be their acquaintance. These exac-  
tions,

Whereof my sovereign would have note, they  
are

Most pestilent to the hearing; and, to bear  
them,

The back is sacrifice to the load. They say,

They are devis'd by you; or else you suffer

Too hard an exclamation.

*K. Hen.* Still exaction!

The nature of it? In what kind, let's know  
Is this exaction?

*Q. Kath.* I am much too venturous

In tempting of your patience; but am bolden'd  
Under your promis'd pardon. The subject's

grief  
Comes through commissions, which compel  
from each

The sixth part of his substance, to be levied

Without delay; and the pittance for this,  
Is nam'd your wars in France: This makes bold

months:

Tongues spit their duties out, and cold hearts  
freeze

Allegiance in them; their curses now,  
Live where their prayers did; and it's come to

pass,  
That tractable obedience is a slave

To each incensed will. I would, your highness

Would give it quick consideration, for

There is no prinner business.

*K. Hen.* By my life,

This is against our pleasure.

*Wol.* And for me,

I have no farther gone in this, than by  
A single voice; and that not pass'd me, but  
By learned approbation of the judges.

If I am traduc'd by tongues, which neither  
know

My faculties nor person, yet will be

The chronicles of my doing,—let me say,  
'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough

brake †

That virtue must go through. We must not  
stint ‡

Our necessary actions, in the fear

To cope § malicious censures; which ever,  
As ravenous fishes, do a vessel follow

That is new trimm'd; but benefit no further  
Than vainly longing. What we oft do best,

By sick interpreters, once ¶ weak ones, is  
Not our's, or not allow'd; ¶ what worst, as oft,

Hitting a grosser quality, is cried up  
For our best act. If we shall stand still,

In fear our motion will be mock'd or carp'd  
at,

We should take root here where we sit, or  
sit

State statutes only.

\* I am only one among the other counsellors.

† Thicket of thorns.

‡ Encounter.

§ Approved.

¶ Retard.

¶ Sometimes.

*K. Hen.* Things done well,  
And with a care, exempt themselves from fear;  
Things done without example, in their issue  
Are to be fear'd. Have you a precedent  
Of this commission? I believe not any.  
We must not lend our subjects from our laws,  
And stick them in our will. Sixth part of  
each?  
A trembling contribution! Why, we take  
From every tree, lop, bark, and part o'the tim-  
ber;  
And, though we leave it with a root, thus  
hack'd,  
The air will drink the sap. To every county,  
Where this is question'd, send our letters,  
with  
Free pardon to each man that has denied  
The force of this commission: Pray, look to't;  
I put it to your care.

*Wol.* A word with you.

[*To the SECRETARY.*  
Let there be letters writ to every shire,  
Of the king's grace and pardon. The griev'd  
commons  
Hardly conceived of me; let it be nois'd,  
That through our intercession, this revokement  
And pardon comes: I shall anon advise you  
Further in the proceeding.]

[*Exit SECRETARY.*

*Enter SURVEYOR.*

*Q. Kath.* I am sorry that the duke of Buck-  
ingham  
Is run in your displeasure.

*K. Hen.* It grieves many:  
The gentleman is learn'd, and a most rare  
speaker,  
To nature none more bound, his training such,  
That he may furnish and instruct great  
teachers,  
And never seek for aid out \* of himself.  
Yet see,  
When these so noble benefits shall prove  
Not well dispos'd, the mind glowing once  
corrupt,  
They turn to vicious forms, ten times more  
ugly  
Than ever they were fair. \* This man so com-  
plete,  
Who was call'd 'mongst wonders, and when  
we,

Almost with ravish'd list'ning, could not find  
His hour of speech a minute; he, my lady,  
Hath into monstrous habits put the graces  
That once were his, and is become as black  
As if besmear'd in hell. Sit by us; you shall  
hear

(This was his gentleman in trust,) of him  
Things to strike honour sad.—Bid him recount  
The fore-rent practices: wherof  
We cannot feel too little, hear too much.

*Wol.* Stand forth; and with bold spirit relate  
what you,

Most like a careful subject, have collected  
Out of the duke of Buckingham.

*K. Hen.* Speak freely.

*Surv.* First, it was usual with him, every  
day

It would infect his speech, That if the king  
Should without issue die, he'd carry it so  
To make the sceptre his: These very words  
I have heard him utter to his son-in-law,  
Lord Abergavenny; to whom by oath he menac'd  
Revenge upon the cardinal.

*Wol.* Please your highness, note  
This dangerous conception in this point.  
Not friended by his wish, to your high person  
His will is most malignant; and it stretches  
Beyond you, to your friends.

*Q. Kath.* My learn'd lord cardinal,  
Deliver all with charity.

\* Beyond.  
† Conduct, manage.

*K. Hen.* Speak on:  
How grounded he his title to the crown,  
Upon our fall: to this point hast thou heard  
him

At any time speak aught?

*Surv.* He was brought to this  
By a vain prophecy of Nicholas Hopkins.

*K. Hen.* What was that Hopkins?

*Surv.* Sir, a Chartreux friar,  
His confessor; who fed him every minute  
With words of sovereignty.

*K. Hen.* How know'st thou this?

*Surv.* Not long before your highness sped to  
France,

The duke being at the Rose,\* within the pa-  
rish

Saint Lawrence Poultney, did of me demand:

What was the speech amongst the Londoners  
Concerning the French journey: I replied,

Men fear'd the French would prove perfidious,  
To the king's danger. Presently the duke

Said, 'Twas the fear, indeed; and that he  
doubted,

'Twould prove the verity of certain words  
Spoke by a holy man; That oft, says he,

Hath sent to me, wishing me to permit

John de la Cour, my chaplain, a choice hour

To hear from him a matter of some moment,

When after under the confessor's seal

He solemnly had sworn, that what he spak,

My chaplain to no creature, living, but

To me, should utter, with demure confidence

This pausingly could,—Neither the king,

nor his heirs,

(Tell you the duke) shall prosper: bid him

strive

To gain the love of the commonsallly, the duke

Shall govern England.

*Q. Kath.* If I know you well,

You were the duke's surveyor, and lost your

office

On the complaint o'the tenants: Take good

heed,

You charge not in your speech a noble person,

And spoil you nobler: would I say, take heed;

Yes, heartily beseech you.

*K. Hen.* Let him on:—

Go forward.

*Surv.* On my soul, I'll speak but truth.

I told my lord the duke, by the devil's in-  
sious

The monk might be deceiv'd; and that 'twas

dangerous for him,

To nominate o'this so far, until

It tor'd him some design, which, being be-  
heav'd,

It was much like to do: He answer'd, *Tush!*

*It can do me no damage:* adding further,

That, had the king in his last sickness call'd,

The cardinal's and Sir Thomas Lovell's heads

Should have gone off.

*K. Hen.* Ha! what, so rank? Ah, ha!

There's mischief in this man:—Canst thou

say further?

*Surv.* I can, my liege.

*K. Hen.* Proceed.

*Surv.* Being at Greenwich,

After your highness had approv'd the duke

About Sir William Blomer,—

*K. Hen.* I remember,

Of such a time:—Being my servant sworn,

The duke retain'd him his.—But on; What

hence?

*Surv.* If, quoth he, I for this had been

committed,

As to the Tower, I thought,—I would have

play'd

The part my father meant to act upon

The usurper Richard: who, being at Salis-  
bury,

Made suit to come in his presence; which if

granted

\* Now Merchant Taylors' school.

As he made semblance of his duty, would  
Have put his knife into him.

*K. Hen.* A giant traitor!

*Wol.* Now, madam, may his highness live in  
freedom,

And this man out of prison?

*Q. Kath.* God mend all!

*K. Hen.* There's something more would out of  
there; What say'st?

*Surv. Atter—the duke his father,—with the  
knife,—*

He stretch'd him, and, with one hand on his  
dagger,

Another spread on his breast, mounting his eyes,  
He did discharge a horrible oath; whose tenour  
Was,—Were he evil us'd, he would outgo  
His father, by as much as a peevishness  
Does an irresolute purpose.

*K. Hen.* There's his period,  
To sheath his knife in us. He is attach'd;  
Call him to present trial; if he may  
Find mercy in the law, 'tis his; if none,  
Let him not seek't of us: By day and night,  
He's traitor to the height. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter the Lord CHAMBERLAIN, and Lord  
SANDS.

*Cham.* Is it possible, the spells of France  
should juggle

ten into such strange mysteries?

*Sands.* New customs,  
Though they be never so ridiculous,  
May, let them be unmanly, yet are follow'd.

*Cham.* As far as I see, all the good on  
English

have got by the late voyage, is but merely  
a lit\* or two o' the face; but they are shrewd  
ones;

or when they hold them, you would swear  
directly,

both very noses had been counsellors  
o' Pippin, or Clotharius, they keep state so.

*Sands.* They have all new legs and lame  
ones; one would take it,

that never saw them pace before, the spavin,  
a pummelt† and rend among them.

*Cham.* Death! my lord,  
their clothes are ate, such a pagan cut too,

but, sure, they have worn out Christendom.  
How now?

What news, Sir Thomas Lovell?

Enter Sir THOMAS LOVELL.

*Lov.* Faith, my lord,  
heat of none but the new proclamation  
has clapp'd upon the court-gate.

*Cham.* What is't for?

*Lov.* The reformation of our travell'd gal-  
lants,  
that fill the court with quarrels, talk, and  
tailors.

*Cham.* I am glad, 'tis there; now I would  
play our monsters  
to think an English courtier may be wise,  
and never see the Louvre.‡

*Lov.* They must either  
For so run the conditions,) leave these ren-  
nants

of fool and feather, that they got in France,  
With all their honourable points of ignorance,  
pertaining thereto, (as fights, and fireworks;  
abusing better men than they can be,  
but of a foreign wisdom,) renouncing clean  
the faith they have in tennis, and tall stock-  
ings,

short blister'd breeches, and those types of  
travel,

and understand again like honest men;  
or pack to their old playfellows: there I take  
it,

They may, *cum privilegio*,\* wear away  
The lag end of their lewdness, and be laugh'd  
at.

*Sands.* 'Tis time to give them physic, their  
Are grown so catching. *(diseases)*

*Cham.* What a loss our ladies

Will have of these trim vanities!

*Lov.* Ay, marry,

There will be woe indeed, lords; the sly whore-  
sons

Have got a speeding trick to lay down ladies;

A French song, and a fiddle, has no fellow

*Sands.* The devil fiddle them! I am glad  
they're going;

(For, sure, there's no converting of them;) now

An honest country lord, as I am, beaten

A long time out of play, may bring his plain  
song,

And have an hour of hearing; and, by't-lady,

Held current music too.

*Cham.* Well said, lord Sands;

Your colt's tooth is not cast yet.

*Sands.* No, my lord;

Nor shall not, while I have a stump.

*Cham.* Sir Thomas,

Whither were you a-going?

*Lov.* To the cardinal's;

Your lordship is a guest too.

*Cham.* Oh! 'tis true;

This might he makes a snapper, and a great one.

To many lords and ladies; there will be

The beauty of this kingdom, I'll assure you.

*Lov.* That churchman beats a bounteous mind

indred,

A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us:

His dews fall every where.

*Cham.* No doubt, he's noble;

He had a black mouth that said other of him.

*Sands.* He may, my lord, he has whereof that;

in him,

Sparing would show a worse sin than ill doc-

trine:

Men of his way should be most liberal,

They are set here for examples.

*Cham.* True, they are so;

But few now give so great ones. My barge

stays;†

Your lordship shall along:—Come, good Sir

Thomas,

We shall be late else, which I would not be.

For I was spoke to, with Sir Henry Guildford,

This night to be countrollers.

*Sands.* I am your lordship's. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV.—The Presence-Chamber in York-  
Place.

*Hautboys.* A small table under a state for

the CARDINAL, a longer table for the guests.

Enter at one door ANNE BULLEN, and di-  
vers Lords, Ladies, and Gentlemen, as  
guests; at another door, enter Sir HENRY  
GUILDFORD.

*Guild.* Ladies, a general welcome from his

grace

Salutes ye all: This night he dedicates

To fair content and you: none here, he hopes,

In all this noble bevy,‡ has brought with her

One care abroad; he would have all as merry

As first-good, company, good wine, good wel-

come

Can make good people.—O my lord, you are

tardy;

Enter Lord CHAMBERLAIN, Lord SANDS, and

Sir THOMAS LOVELL.

The very thought of this fair company

Clapp'd wings to me.

*Cham.* You are young, Sir Harry Guildford.

\* With authority.

† The speaker is at Bridewell, and the Cardinal's

house was at Whitehall.

‡ Company.

\* Grimace.

† Disease incident to horses.

‡ A palace at Paris.



*Sands.* Sir Thomas Lovell, had the cardinal But half my lay-thoughts in him, some of these Should find a running banquet, ere they rested, I think would better please them : By my life, They are a sweet society of fair ones.

*Lov.* Oh! that your lordship were but now confessor

To one or two of these !

*Sands.* I would I were ;

They should find easy penance.

*Lov.* 'Faith, how easy ?

*Sands.* As easy as a down-bed would afford it.

*Cham.* Sweet ladies, will it please you sit ?

Sir Harry,

Place you that side, I'll take the charge of this :

His grace is ent'ring.—Nay, you must not freeze ;

Two women plac'd together makes cold weather :

My lord Sands, you are one will keep them waking ;

Pray, sit between these ladies.

*Sands.* By my faith,

And thank your lordship.—By your leave, sweet ladies :

[*Sits himself between ANNE BULLEN and another Lady.*]

If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me ;

I had it from my father.

*Anne.* Was he mad, Sir ?

*Sands.* Oh ! very mad, exceeding mad, in love too :

But he would bite none ; just as I do now,

He would kiss you twenty with a breath.

[*Kisses her.*]

*Cham.* Well said, my lord.—

So, now you are fairly seat'd :—Gentlemen,

The penance lies on you, if these fair ladies

Pass away frowning.

*Sands.* For my little cure,

Let me alone.

*Hautboys.*—*Enter Cardinal WOLSEY, attended ; and takes his state.\**

*Wol.* You are welcome, my fair guests ; that

noble lady,

Or gentleman, that is not freely merry,

Is not my friend : This, to confirm my welcome ;

And to you all good health. [*Drinks.*]

*Sands.* Your grace is noble ;—

Let me have such a bowl may hold my thanks,

And save me so much talking.

*Wol.* My lord Sands,

I am beholden to you : cheer your neighbours.—

Ladies, you are not merry ;—Gentlemen,

Whose fault is this ?

*Sands.* The red wine first must rise

In their fair cheeks, my lord ; then we shall

have them.

Talk us to silence.

*Anne.* You are a merry gamester,

My lord Sands.

*Sands.* Yes, if I make my play.†

Here's to your ladyship ; and pledge it, madam,

For 'tis to such a thing.—

*Anne.* You cannot show me.

*Sands.* I told your grace, they would talk anon.

[*Drum and trumpets within : Chambers † discharged.*]

*Wol.* What's that ?

*Cham.* Look out there, some of you.

[*Exit a SERVANT.*]

*Wol.* What warlike voice ?

And to what end is this ?—Nay, ladies, fear not ;

By all the laws of war you are privileg'd.

*Re-enter SERVANT.\**

*Cham.* How how ! what is't ?

*Serv.* A noble troop of strangers ;

For so they seem : they have left their barge,

and landed ;

And hither make, as great ambassadors

From foreign princes.

*Wol.* Good lord chamberlain,

Go, give them welcome, you can speak the

French tongue ;

And pray receive them nobly, and conduct

them

Into our presence, where this heaven of beauty

Shall shine at full upon them :—Some attend

him.—

[*Exit CHAMBERLAIN, attended. All arise, and Tables removed.*]

You have now a broken banquet ; but we'll

mend it.

A good digestion to you all : and, once more,

I shower a welcome on you ;—Welcome all.

*Hautboys.*—*Enter the KING, and twelve others, as Maskers, habited like Shepherds, with sixteen Torch-bearers ; ushered by the Lord CHAMBERLAIN. They pass directly before the Cardinal, and gracefully salute him.*

A noble company ! what are their pleasures ?

*Cham.* Because they speak no English, thus

they pray'd

To tell your grace ;—That, having heard by

name

Of this so noble and so fair assembly

This night to meet here, they could do no

less,

Out of the great respect they bear to beauty,

But leave their flocks ; and, under your fair con-

duct,

Crave leave to view these ladies, and entreat

An hour of revels with them.

*Wol.* Say, lord chamberlain,

They have done my poor house grace ; for which

I pay them

A thousand thanks, and pray them take their

pleasures.

[*Ladies chosen for the dance. The KING chooses ANNE BULLEN.*]

*K. Hen.* The fairest hand I ever touch'd ! O

beauty,

Till now I never knew thee. [*Music. Dance.*]

*Wol.* My lord,—

*Cham.* Your grace ?

*Wol.* Pray, tell them thus much from me :

There should be one amongst them, by his

person,

More worthy this place than myself ; to whom,

If I but knew him, with my love and duty

I would surrender it.

*Cham.* I will, my lord.

[*CHAM. goes to the company and returns.*]

*Wol.* What say they ?

*Cham.* Such a one, they all confess,

There is, indeed ; which they would have your

grace

Find out and he will take it.\*

*Wol.* Let me see then.—

[*Comes from his state.*]

By all your good leaves, gentlemen ;—Here

I'll make

My royal choice.

*K. Hen.* You have found him, cardinal :

[*Unmasking.*]

You hold a fair assembly ; you do well, lord :

You are a churchman, or, I'll tell you, cardinal,

I should judge now unhappily.†

*Wol.* I am glad

Your grace is grown so pleasant.

*K. Hen.* My lord chamberlain,

Pr'ythee, come hither : What fair lady's that ?

*Cham.* An't please your grace, Sir Thomas

Bullen's daughter,

The viscount Rochford, one of her highness'

women.

*K. Hen.* By heaven, she is a dainty one.—

Sweet-heart,

\* Chair. † Choose my game.

\* Small cannon.

\* The chief place.

† Mischievously.

I were unmanly to take you out,  
And not to kiss you.—A health, gentlemen,  
Let it go round.

*Vol.* Sir Thomas Lovell, is the banquet ready  
I the privy chamber?

*Lov.* Yes, my lord.

*Vol.* Your grace,

I fear, with dancing is a little heated.

*K. Hen.* I fear, too much.

*Vol.* There's fresher air, my lord,  
In the next chamber.

*K. Hen.* Lead in your ladies, every one.—

Sweet partner,

I must not yet forsake you:—Let's be merry;

Good my lord cardinal, I have half a dozen  
healths

To drink to these fair ladies, and a measure \*

To lead them once again; and then let's dream

Who's best in favour.—Let the music knock it.  
[*Exeunt, with trumpets.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—A Street.

*Enter two GENTLEMEN, meeting.*

1 *Gent.* Whither away so fast?

2 *Gent.* O God save you!

Even to the hall to hear what shall become  
Of the great duke of Buckingham.

1 *Gent.* I'll save you

That labour, Sir. All's now done, but the ceremony

Of bringing back the prisoner.

2 *Gent.* Were you there?

1 *Gent.* Yes, indeed, was I.

2 *Gent.* Pray, speak, what has happen'd?

1 *Gent.* You may guess quickly what.

2 *Gent.* Is he found guilty?

1 *Gent.* Yes, truly is he, and condemn'd  
upon it.

2 *Gent.* I am sorry for't.

1 *Gent.* So are a number more.

2 *Gent.* But, pray, how pass'd it?

1 *Gent.* I'll tell you in a little. The great  
duke

Came to the bar; where, to his accusations,

He pleaded still, not guilty, and alleg'd

Many sharp reasons to defeat the law.

The king's attorney, on the contrary,

Urg'd on the examinations, proofs, confessions,

Of divers witnesses; which the duke desir'd

To him brought, *viva voce*, to his face:

At which appear'd against him, his surveyor;

Sir Gilbert Peck, his chancellor; and John

Court,

Confessor to him; with that devil-monk,

Hopkins, that made this mischief.

2 *Gent.* That was he,

That fed him with his prophecies?

1 *Gent.* The same.

All these accus'd him strongly; which he fain

Would have flung from him, but, indeed, he  
could not:

And so his peers, upon this evidence,

Have found him guilty of high treason. Much

He spoke, and learnedly, for life: but all

Was either pitied in him, or forgotten.

2 *Gent.* After all this, how did he bear him-  
self?

1 *Gent.* When he was brought again to the

bar,—to hear

His knell wrang out, his judgment,—he was  
stirr'd

With such an agony, he sweat extremely,

And something spoke in choler, ill and hasty:

But he fell to himself again, and, sweetly,

In all the rest show'd a most noble patience.

2 *Gent.* I do not think he fears death.

1 *Gent.* Sure, he does not,

\* Dance.

He never was so womanish; the cause  
He may a little grieve at.

2 *Gent.* Certainly,

The cardinal is the end of this.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis likely.

By all conjectures: First, Kildare's attainder

Then deputy of Ireland; who remov'd,

Earl Surrey was sent thither, and in haste too

Lest he should help his father.

2 *Gent.* That trick of state

Was a deep envious one.

1 *Gent.* At his return,

No doubt he will requite it. This is noted,

And generally; whoever the king favours,

The cardinal instantly will find employment,

And far enough from court too.

2 *Gent.* All the commons

Hate him perniciously, and, o' my conscience,

Wish him ten fathom deep: this duke as much

They love and dote on; call him, bounteous

Buckingham,

The mirror of all courtesy;—

1 *Gent.* Stay there, Sir,

And see the noble ruin'd man you speak of.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM from his arraignment;*

*Tip-staves before him, the axe with the edge*

*towards him; halberds on each side: with*

*him, Sir THOMAS LOVELL, Sir NICHOLAS*

*VAUX, Sir WILLIAM SANDS, and common*

*people.*

2 *Gent.* Let's stand close, and behold him.

*Buck.* All good people,

You that thus far have come to pity me,

Hear what I say, and then go home and lose me.

I have this day receiv'd a traitor's judgment,

And by that name must die: Yet, heaven bear

witness,

And if I have a conscience, let it sink me,

Even as the axe falls, if I be not faithful!

The law I bear no malice for my death,

It has done, upon the premises, but justice:

But those that sought it, I could wish more

Christians:

Be what they will, I heartily forgive them:

Yet let them look they glory not in mischief,

Nor build their evils on the graves of great

men;

For then my guiltless blood must cry against

them.

For further life in this world I ne'er hope,

Nor will I sue, although the king have mercies

More than I dare make faults. You few that

lov'd me,

And dare be bold to weep for Buckingham,

His noble friends, and fellows, whom to leave

Is only bitter to him, only dying,

Go with me, like good angels, to my end;

And, as the long divorce of steel falls on me,

Make of your prayers one sweet sacrifice,

And lift my soul to heaven.—Lead on, o' God's

name.

*Lov.* I do beseech your grace, for charity,

If ever any malice in your heart

Were hid against me, now to forgive me frankly.

*Buck.* Sir Thomas Lovell, I as free forgive

you,

As I would be forgiven: I forgive all:

There cannot be those numberless offences

'Gainst me, I can't take peace with: no black

envy

Shall make \* my grave.—Commend me to his

grace;

And, if he speak of Buckingham, pray, tell him,

You met him half in heaven: my vows and

prayers

Yet are the king's; and, till my soul forsake me,

Shall cry for blessings on him; May he live

Longer than I have time to tell his years!

Ever belov'd, and loving, may his rule be,

And, when old time shall lead him to his

end,

Goodness and he fill up one monument!

\* Close.

*Lov.* To the water side I must conduct your grace;  
Then give my charge up to Sir Nicholas Vaux,  
Who undertakes you to your end.

*Faux.* Prepare there,  
The duke is coming; see the barge be ready;  
And fit it with such furniture, as suits  
The greatness of his person.

*Buck.* Nay, Sir Nicholas,  
Let it alone; my state now will but mock me.  
When I came hither, I was lord high constable,  
And duke of Buckingham; now, poor Edward  
Bohun:

Yet I am richer than my base accusers,  
That never knew what truth meant: I now  
seal it;  
And with that blood will make them one day  
glean for't.

My noble father, Henry of Buckingham,  
Who first rais'd head against usurping Richard,  
Flying for succour to his servant Banister,  
Being distress'd, was by that wretch betray'd,  
And without trial fell: God's peace be with  
him!

Henry the seventh succeeding, truly pitying  
My father's loss, like a most royal prince,  
Restor'd me to my honours, and, out of ruins,  
Made my name once more noble. Now his  
son,

Henry the eighth, life, honour, name, and all  
That made me happy, at one stroke has taken  
For ever from the world. I had my trial,  
And must needs say, a noble one, which makes  
me

A little happier than my wretched father;  
Yet thus far we are one in fortunes.—Both  
Fell by our servants, by those men we lov'd  
most;

A most unnatural and faithless service!  
Heaven has an end in all: yet you that hear me,  
Thus from a dying man receive as certain:  
Where you are liberal of your loves, and counsels,

Be sure, you be not loose; for those you make  
friends,  
And give your hearts to, when they once per-  
ceive

The least rub in your fortunes, fall away  
Like water from ye, never found again  
But where they mean to sink ye. All good  
people,

Pray for me! I must now forsake ye; the last  
hour

Of my long weary life is come upon me.  
I kneel:

And when you would say something that is sad,  
Speak how I tell.—I have done; and God for-  
give me!

[*Exeunt BUCKINGHAM and Train.*  
*1 Gent.* Oh! this is full of pity.—Sir, it calls,  
I fear, too many curses on their heads,  
That were the authors.

*2 Gent.* If the duke be guiltless,  
'Tis full of woe; yet I can give you inkling  
Of an ensuing evil, if it fall,  
Greater than this.

*1 Gent.* Good angels keep it from us!  
Where may it be? You do not doubt my faith,  
Sir?

*2 Gent.* This secret is so weighty, 'twill require  
A strong faith to conceal it.

*1 Gent.* Let me have it;  
I do not talk much.

*2 Gent.* I am confident;  
You shall, Sir: did you not of late days hear  
A buzzing, of a separation  
Between the king and Katharine?

*1 Gent.* Yes, but it held not:  
For when the king once heard it, out of anger  
He sent command to the lord mayor, straight  
To stop the rumour, and allay those tongues  
That durst disperse it.

*2 Gent.* But that slander, Sir,

\* Great fidelity.

Is found a truth now: for it grows again  
Fresher than e'er it was; and held for certain  
The king will venture at it. Either the car-  
dinal,

Or some about him near, have, out of malice  
To the good queen, possess'd him with a scruple  
That will undo her: To confirm this too,  
Cardinal Campeius is arriv'd, and lately;  
As all think, for this business.

*1 Gent.* 'Tis the cardinal;  
And merely to revenge him on the emperor,  
For not bestowing on him, at his asking,  
The archbishoprick of Toledo, this is purpos'd.

*2 Gent.* I think you have hit the mark; But  
is't not cruel,  
That she should feel the smart of this? The  
cardinal

Will have his will, and she must fall.

*1 Gent.* 'Tis woful.  
We are too open here to argue this;  
Let's think in private more. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—An Ante-chamber in the Pa-  
lace.

*Enter the Lord CHAMBERLAIN, reading a Letter.*

*Cham.* My Lord,—The horses your lordship  
sent for, with all the care I had, I saw well  
chosen, ridden, and furnished. They were  
young and handsome, and of the best breed in  
the north. When they were ready to set out  
for London, a man of my lord cardinal's, by  
commission, and main power, took 'em from  
me; with this reason,—His master would be  
served before a subject, if not before the king:  
which stopp'd our mouths, Sir.

I fear he will, indeed; Well, let him have them.  
He will have all, I think.

*Enter the Dukes of NORFOLK and SURREY.*

*Nor.* Well met, my good  
Lord Chamberlain.

*Cham.* Good day to both your graces.

*Suf.* How is the king enjoy'd?

*Cham.* I left him private,  
Full of sad thoughts and troubles.

*Nor.* What's the cause?

*Cham.* It seems, the marriage with his bro-  
ther's wife  
Has crept too near his conscience.

*Suf.* No, his conscience

Has crept too near another lady.

*Nor.* 'Tis so;

This is the cardinal's doing, the king-cardinal:  
That blind priest, like the eldest son of for-  
tune,

Turns what he lists. The king will know him  
one day.

*Suf.* Pray God, he do! he'll never know him-  
self else.

*Nor.* How holily he works in all his busi-  
ness!

And with what zeal! For now he has crack'd  
the league

Between us and the emperor, the queen's great  
nephew,

He dives into the king's soul, and there scat-  
ters

Dangers, doubts, wringing of the conscience,  
Fears, and despairs, and all these for his mar-  
riage:

And, out of all these to restore the king,  
He counsels a divorce: a loss of her  
That like a jewel, has hung twenty years  
About his neck, yet never lost her lustre;  
Of her that loves him with that excellence  
That angels love good men with; even of her  
That, when the greatest stroke of fortune falls,  
Will bless the king: and is not this course  
pious?

*Cham.* Heaven keep me from such counsel!  
'Tis most true,

These news are every where; every tongue speaks them,  
And every true heart weeps for't: All, that dare  
Look into these affairs, see this main end,—  
The French king's sister. Heaven will one day  
open

The king's eyes, that so long have slept upon  
This bold bad man.

*Suf.* And free us from his slavery.

*Nor.* We had need pray,  
And heartily, for our deliverance;  
Or this imperious man will work us all  
From princes into pages: all men's honours  
Lie in one lump before him, to be fashion'd  
Into what pitch he please.

*Suf.* For me, my lords,  
I love him not, nor fear him; there's my creed:  
As I am made without him, so I'll stand,  
If the king please; his curses and his blessings  
Touch me alike, they are breath I not believe  
in.

I knew him, and I know him; so I leave him  
To him that made him proud, the pope.

*Nor.* Let's in;

And, with some other business, put the king  
From these sad thoughts, that work too much  
upon him:—

My lord, you'll bear us company?

*Cam.* Excuse me;

The king hath sent me other-where: besides,  
You'll find a most unfit time to disturb him:  
Health to your lordships.

*Nor.* Thanks, my good lord chamberlain.

[*Exit Lord Chamberlain.*]

NORFOLK opens a folding door. The KING is  
discovered sitting, and reading pensively.

*Suf.* How sad he looks! sure, he is much af-  
flicted.

*K. Hen.* Who is there? ha?

*Nor.* 'Pray God he be not angry.

*K. Hen.* Who's there, I say? How dare you  
thrust yourselves  
into my private meditations?  
Who am I? ha?

*Nor.* A gracious king, that pardons all of-  
fences  
Malice ne'er meant: our breach of duty, this  
way,

Is business of estate; in which, we come  
To know your royal pleasure.

*K. Hen.* You are too bold;

Go to; I'll make ye know your times of busi-  
ness:

Is this an hour for temporal affairs? ha?—

[*Enter WOLSEY and CAMPELUS.*]

Who's there? my good lord cardinal?—O my  
Wolsey,  
The quiet of my wounded conscience,  
Thou art a cure fit for a king.—You're welcome,

Most learned reverend Sir, into our kingdom;  
Use us, and it:—My good lord, have great  
care

I be not found a talker. [*To WOLSEY.*]

*Wol.* Sir, you cannot.

I would your grace would give us but an hour  
Of private conference.

*K. Hen.* We are busy; go.

[*To NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.*]

*Nor.* This priest has no pride in him!

*Suf.* Not to speak of;

I would not he so sick though, † for  
his place:

But this cannot continue.

*Nor.* If it do,

I'll venture one leave at him.

*Suf.* I another.

[*Exeunt NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.*]

*Wol.* Your grace has given a precedent of  
wisdom

\* High or low.

† So sick as he is proud.

Above all princes, in committing freely  
Your scruple to the voice of Christendom:  
Who can be angry now? what envy reach you?  
The Spaniard, tid'd by blood and favour to her,  
Must now confess, if they have any goodness,  
The trial just and noble. All the clerks,  
I mean, the learned ones, in Christian kingdoms,  
Have their free voices; Rome, the nurse of  
judgment,

Invited by your noble self, hath sent  
One general tongue unto us, this good man,  
This just and learned priest, cardinal Cam-  
pelus;

Whom, once more, I present unto your high-  
ness.

*K. Hen.* And, once more, in mine arm: I bid  
him welcome,

And thank the holy conclave for their loves;  
They have sent me such a man I would have  
wish'd for.

*Cam.* Your grace must needs deserve all  
stranger's loves,

You are so noble: To your highness' hand  
I tender my commission; by whose virtue,  
(The count of Rome commanding,) you, my lord  
Cardinal of York, are join'd with me their ser-  
vant,

In the impartial judging of this business.

*K. Hen.* Two equal men. The queen shall be  
acquainted

Forthwith, for what you come:—Where's Gar-  
diner?

*Wol.* I know your majesty has always lov'd  
him

So dear in heart, not to deny her that  
A woman of less place might ask by law,  
Scholars, allow'd freely to argue for her.

*K. Hen.* Ay, and the best, she shall have;  
and my favour

To him that does best; God forbid else. Car-  
dinal,

Pr'ythee, call Gardiner to me, my new secretary;  
I like him a fit fellow. [*Exit WOLSEY.*]

[*Re-enter WOLSEY, with GARDINER.*]

*Wol.* Give me your hand; much joy and  
favour to you;  
You are the king's now.

*Gard.* But to be commanded  
For ever by your grace, whose hand has rais'd  
me. [*Aside.*]

*K. Hen.* Come hither, Gardiner.

*Cam.* My lord of York, was not one doctor  
Pace

In this man's place before him?

*Wol.* Yes, he was.

*Cam.* Was he not held a learned man?

*Wol.* Yes, surely.

*Cam.* Believe me, there's an ill opinion spread  
then

Even of yourself, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How? of me!

*Cam.* They will not stick to say, you envied  
him;

And, fearing he would rise, he was so virtuous,  
Kept him a foreign man \* still; which so griev'd  
him,

That he ran mad, and died.

*Wol.* Heaven's peace be with him!

That's Christian care enough: for living mur-  
murers,

There's places of rebuke. He was a fool;  
For he would needs be virtuous: That good  
fellow,

If I command him, follows my appointment;

I will have none so near else. Learn this,  
brother,

We live not to be grip'd by meaner persons.

*K. Hen.* Deliver this with modesty to the  
queen. [*Exit GARDINER.*]

The most convenient place that I can think of  
For such receipt of learning, is Black-Friars;

\* Out of the king's presence.

There ye shall meet about this weighty business :—

My Wolsey, see it furnish'd.—O my lord,  
Would it not grieve an able man, to leave  
So sweet a bedfellow? But, conscience, con-  
science,—

O! 'tis a tender place, and I must leave her.  
[Exit.

SCENE III.—An Ante-chamber in the  
QUEEN'S Apartments.

Enter ANNE BULLEN, and an old LADY.

Anne. Not for that neither ;—Here's the pang  
that pinches :

His highness having liv'd so long with her :  
and she

So good a lady, that no tongue could ever  
Pronounce dishonour of her,—by my life,  
She never knew harm-doing :—O now, after  
So many courses of the sun enthro'ed,  
Still growing in a majesty and pomp,—the  
which

To leave is a thousand-fold more bitter, than  
'Tis sweet at first to acquire,—after this pro-  
cess,

To give her the avant ! \* it is a pity  
Would move a monster.

Old L. Hearts of most hard temper  
Melt and lament for her.

Anne. O God's will ! much better,  
She ne'er had known pomp : though it be tem-  
poral,

Yet, if that quarrel,† fortune, do divorce  
It from the bearer, 'tis a sufferance, panging  
As soul and body's severing.

Old L. Alas, poor lady !  
She's a stranger now again. ‡

Anne. So much the more  
Must pity drop upon her. Verily,  
I swear, 'tis better to be lowly born,  
And range with humble livers in content,  
Than to be perk'd up in a glistening grief,  
And wear a golden sorrow.

Old L. Our content  
Is our best having. §

Anne. By my troth, and maidenhead,  
I would not be a queen.

Old L. Beshrew me, I would,  
And venture maidenhead for't ; and so would  
you,

For all this spice of your hypocrisy :  
You, that have so fair parts of woman on you,  
Have too a woman's heart ; which ever yet  
Affected eminence, wealth, sovereignty !  
Which, to say sooth, ¶ are blessings ; and which  
gifts

(Saving your mincing) the capacity  
Of your soft cheveril ¶ conscience would re-  
ceive,

If you might please to stretch it.

Anne. Nay, good troth,—

Old L. Yes, troth, and troth,—You would not  
be a queen ?

Anne. No, not for all the riches under hea-  
ven.

Old L. 'Tis strange ; a three-pence bow'd \*\*  
would hire me,

Old as I am, to queen it ; But, I pray you,  
What think you of a duchess ? have you limbs  
To bear that load of title ?

Anne. No, in truth.

Old L. Then you are weakly made : Pluck off  
a little ;

I would not be a young count in your way,  
For more than blushing comes to : if your back  
Cannot vouchsafe this burden, 'tis too weak  
Ever to get a boy.

Anne. How you do talk !

I swear again, ¶ would not be a queen  
For all the world.

Old L. In faith, for little England  
You'd venture an emballing : I myself  
Would for Carnarvonshire, although there 'long'd  
No more to the crown but that. Lo, who comes  
here ?

Enter the Lord Chamberlain.

Cham. Good morrow, ladies. What wer't worth  
to know

The secret of your conference ?

Anne. My good lord,  
Not your demand ; it values not your asking  
Our mistress' sorrows we were pitying.

Cham. It was a gentle business, and becom-  
ing

The action of good women : there is hope,  
All will be well.

Anne. Now I pray God, amen !

Cham. You bear a gentle mind, and heavenly  
blessings

Follow such creatures. That you may, fair lady,  
Perceive I speak sincerely, and high note's  
Ta'en of your many virtues, the king's majesty  
Commends his good opinion to you, and  
Does purpose honour to you no less flowing  
Than marchioness of Pembroke ; to which title  
A thousand pound a year, annual support,  
Out of his grace he adds.

Anne. I do not know,  
What kind of my obedience I should tender ;  
More than my all is nothing : nor my prayers  
Are not words duly hallow'd, nor my wishes  
More worth than empty vanities ; yet prayers, and  
wishes,

Are all I can return. 'Beseech your lordship,  
Vouchsafe to speak my thanks and my obedi-  
ence,

As from a blushing handmaid, to his highness,  
Whose health, and royalty, I pray for.

Cham. Lady,  
I shall not fail to approve the fair conceit, \*  
The king have of you.—I have perus'd her well ;  
[Aside.

Beauty and honour in her are so mingled,  
That they have caught the king : and who knows  
yet,

But from this lady may proceed a gem,  
To lighten all this isle ?—I'll to the king,

And say, I spoke with you.

Anne. My honour'd lord.

[Exit Lord Chamberlain

Old L. Why, this it is ; see, see !  
I have been begging sixteen years in court,  
(Am yet a courtier beggarly, nor could  
Come pat betwix too early and too late,  
For any suit of pounds : and you, (O fate !)  
A very fresh-fish here, (fie, fie upon  
This compell'd fortune !) have your mouth fill'd  
up,

Before you open it.

Anne. This is strange to me.

Old L. How tastes it ? is it bitter ? forty-  
pence, no.

There was a lady once, ('tis an old story,)  
That would not be a queen, that would she  
not, [It ?

For all the mud in Egypt :—Have you heard  
Anne. Come, you are pleasant.

Old L. With your theme, I could  
O'er mount the lark. The marchioness of Pem-  
broke !

A thousand pounds a year ! for pure respect ;  
No other obligation : By my life,  
That promises more thousands : Honour's train  
Is longer than his foreskirt. By this time,  
I know your back will bear a duchess ;—Say,  
Are you not stronger than you were ?

Anne. Good lady,  
Make yourself mirth with your particular fancy,  
And leave me out on't. 'Would I had no  
being,

If this salute my blood a jot ; it faints me,  
To think what follows.

\* A sentence of ejection.  
† No longer an Englishwoman.  
‡ Truth, ¶ Kid-skin.

¶ Quarreller.  
‡ Possession.  
\*\* Crooked.

\* Opinion.

The queen is comfortless, and we forgetful  
In our long absence : Pray, do not deliver  
What here you have heard, to her.

*Old. L.* What do you think me? [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—A Hall in Black-friars.

*Trumpets, sennet,\* and cornets. Enter two VERGERS, with short silver wands; next them, two SCRIBES, in the habits of doctors; after them, the Archbishop of CANTERBURY alone; after him, the Bishops of LINCOLN, ELY, ROCHESTER, and SAINT ASAPH; next them, with some small distance, follows a Gentleman bearing the purse, with the great seal, and a cardinal's hat; then two Priests, bearing each a silver cross; then a Gentleman-Usher bare-headed, accompanied with a Sergeant at Arms, bearing a silver mace; then two Gentlemen, bearing two great silver pillars;† after them, side by side, the two Cardinals WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS; two noblemen with the sword and mace. Then enter the KING and QUEEN, and their Trains. The King takes place under the cloth of state; the two Cardinals sit under him as judges. The Queen takes place at some distance from the King. The Bishops place themselves on each side the court, in manner of a consistory; between them, the Scribes. The Lords sit next the Bishops. The Crier and the rest of the Attendants stand in convenient order about the stage.*

*Wol.* Whilst our commission from Rome is read

Let silence be commanded.

*K. Hen.* What's the need?

It hath already publicly been read,  
And on all sides the authority allow'd;  
You may then spare that time.

*Wol.* Be't so:—Proceed.

*Scribe.* Say, Henry king of England, come into the court.

*Crier.* Henry king of England, &c.

*K. Hen.* Here.

*Scribe.* Say, Katharine queen of England, come into court.

*Crier.* Katharine queen of England, &c.

[*THE QUEEN makes no answer, rises out of her chair, goes about the court, comes to the KING, and kneels at his feet; then speaks.*]

*Q. Kath.* Sir, I desire you, do me right and justice;

And to bestow your pity on me: for  
I am a most poor woman, and a stranger,  
Born out of your dominions; having here  
No judge indifferent, nor no more assurance  
Of equal friendship and proceeding. Alas,

Sir,

In what have I offended you? what cause  
Hath my behaviour given to your displeasure,  
That thus you should proceed to put me off,  
And take your good grace from me? Heaven witness,

I have been to you a true and humble wife,  
At all times to your will conformable:  
Ever in fear to kindle your dislike.

Yea, subject to your countenance; glad, or sorry,

As I saw it inclin'd. When was the hour,  
I ever contradicted your desire,  
Or made it not mine too? Or which of your friends

Have I not strove to love although I knew  
He were mine enemy? what friend of mine  
That had to him deriv'd your anger, did I  
Continue in my liking? nay, gave notice  
He was from thence discharged? Sir, call to mind

That I have been your wife in this obedience,

Upward of twenty years, and have been bless'd  
With many children by you: If, in the course  
And process of this time, you can report,  
And prove it too, against mine honour aught,  
My bond to wedlock, or my love and duty,  
Against your sacred person, in God's name,  
Turn me away; and let the foul'st contempt  
Shut door upon me, and so give me up  
To the shaipest kind of justice. Please you,

Sir,

The king, your father, was reputed for  
A prince most prudent, of an excellent  
And unmatched wit and judgment: Ferdinand,

My father, king of Spain, was reckon'd one  
The wisest prince, that there had reign'd by many

A year before: It is not to be question'd  
That they had gather'd a wise council to them  
Of every realm, that did debate this business,  
Who deem'd our marriage lawful: Wherefore  
I humbly

Beseech you, Sir, to spare me till I may  
Be by my friends in Spain advis'd; whose counsel

I will implore; if not; i'the name of God,  
Your pleasure be fulfill'd!

*Wol.* You have here, lady, [*men*]  
(And of your choice,) these reverend fathers;  
Of singular integrity and learning,  
Yea, the elect of the land, who are assembled  
To plead your cause: It shall be therefore  
bootless,\*

That longer you desire the court; as well  
For your own quiet, as to rectify  
What is unsettled in the king.

*Cam.* His grace [*dam*,

Hath spoken well and justly; Therefore, ma-  
it's fit this royal session do proceed;  
And that without delay, their arguments  
Be now produc'd, and heard.

*Q. Kath.* Lord cardinal,—

To you I speak.

*Wol.* Your pleasure, madam

*Q. Kath.* Sir,

I am about to weep; but, thinking that  
We are a queen, (or long have dream'd so,)  
certain,

The daughter of a king, my drops of tears  
I'll turn to sparks of fire.

*Wol.* Be patient yet.

*Q. Kath.* I will, when you are humble; nay,  
before,

Or God will punish me. I do believe,  
Induc'd by potent circumstances, that  
You are mine enemy; and make my challenge:  
You shall not be my judge; for it is you  
Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and me,—

Which God's dew quench!—Therefore, I say  
again,

I utterly abhor, yea, from my soul,  
Refuse you for my judge; whom, yet once  
more,

I hold my most malicious foe, and think not  
At all a friend to truth.

*Wol.* I do profess

You speak not like yourself; who ever yet  
Have stood to charity, and display'd the effects  
Of disposition gentle, and of wisdom  
O'erturning woman's power. Madam, you do  
me wrong;

I have no spleen against you; nor injustice  
For you, or any: how far I have proceeded,  
Or how far further shall, is warrant'd  
By a commission from the consistory.  
Yea, the whole consistory of Rome. You  
charge me,

That I have blown this coal: I do deny it:  
The king is present; if it be known to him,  
That I gainsay† my deed, how may he wound,  
And worthily, my falsehood? yea, as much

† Flourish on cornets.

\* Ensigns of dignity carried before cardinals.

\* Useless.

† Deny.

As you have done my truth. But if he know  
That I am free of your report, he knows,  
I am not of your wrong. Therefore in him  
It lies to cure me: and the cure is to  
Remove these thoughts from you: The which  
before

His highness shall speak in, I do beseech  
You, gracious madam, to unthink your speaking,  
And to say so no more.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, my lord,  
I am a simple woman much too weak  
To oppose your cunning. You are meek, and  
humble-mouth'd;

You sign your place and calling, in full seem-  
ing,\*

With meekness and humility: but your heart  
Is cramm'd with arrogancy, spleen, and pride.  
You have, by fortune and his highness' fa-  
vours,

Gone slightly o'er low steps; and now are  
mounted

Where powers are your retainers and your  
words,

Domestics to you, serve your will as't please  
Yourself pronounce their office. I must tell  
you,

You tender more your person's honour, than  
Your high profession spiritual: that again  
I do refuse you for my judge: and here,  
Before you all, appeal unto the pope.  
To bring my whole cause fore his holiness,  
And to be judg'd by him.

[*She curtsies to the KING, and offers to depart.*]

*Cam.* The queen is obstinate,  
Stubborn to justice, apt to accuse it, and  
Disdainful to be try'd by it; 'tis not well.  
She's going away.

*K. Hen.* Call her again.

*Crier.* Katharine queen of England, come  
into the court.

*Grif.* Madam, you are call'd back.

*Q. Kath.* What need you note it? pray you,  
keep your way:

When you are call'd, return.—Now the Lord  
help,

They vex me past my patience!—pray you,  
pass on:

I will not tarry: no, nor ever more  
Upon this business, my appearance make  
In any of their courts.

[*Exeunt QUEEN, GRIFFITH, and her other Attendants.*]

*K. Hen.* Go thy ways, Kate:  
That man 't'wix the world, who shall report he has  
a better wife, let him in thought be trusted,  
For speaking false in that: Thou art, alone,  
(If thy rare qualities, sweet gentleness,  
Thy meekness saint-like, wife-like govern-  
ment,—

Obeying in commanding, and thy parts  
Sovereign and pious else, could speak thee  
out,†)

The queen of earthly queens:—She is noble  
And, like her true nobility, she has  
Carried herself towards me.

*Hot.* Most gracious Sir,  
In humblest manner I require your highness,  
That it shall please you to declare, in hearing  
On all these ears, (for where I am robb'd and  
bound,

There must I be unloos'd; although not there  
At once; and fully satisfied,) whether ever I  
Did broach this business to your highness; or  
Laid any scruple in your way, which might  
Induce you to the question on't? or ever  
Have to you,—but with thanks to God for such  
A royal lady,—spake one the least word,  
might

Be to the prejudice of her present state,  
Or touch of her good person?

*K. Hen.* My lord cardinal,

I do excuse you; yea, upon mine honour,  
I free you from't. You are not to be taught  
That you have many enemies, that know not  
Why they are so, but, like to village curs,  
Bark when their fellows do: by some of these  
The queen is put in anger. You are excus'd:  
But will you be more justified? you ever  
Have wish'd the sleeping of this business;  
never

Desir'd it to be stirr'd; but oft have hinder'd;  
oft

The passages\* made toward it:—on my ho-  
nour,

I speak my good lord cardinal to this point,  
And thus far clear him. Now, what mov'd  
me to't,—

I will be bold with time, and your attention:—  
Then mark the inducement. Thus it came;—  
give heed to't!—

My conscience first receiv'd a tenderness,  
Scruple, and prick, on certain speeches utter'd  
By the Bishop of Bayonne, then French am-  
bassador:

Who had been hither sent on the debating  
A marriage 'twixt the duke of Orleans and  
Our daughter Mary: P' the progress of this  
business,

Ere a determinate resolution, he  
(I mean, the Bishop) did require a respite;  
Wherein he might the king his lord advise  
Whether our daughter were legitimate,  
Respecting this our marriage with the dowager,  
Sometimes our brother's wife. This respite  
shook

The bosom of my conscience, enter'd me,  
Yea, with a splitting power, and made to trem-  
ble [was,

The region of my breast; which forc'd such  
That many maz'd considerations did thence,  
And press'd in with this caution. First, me-  
thought,

I stood not in the smile of heaven; who had  
Commanded nature, that my lady's womb,  
If not conceiv'd a male child by me should  
Do no more offices of life to't, than  
The grave does to the dead: for her male issue  
Or died where they were made, or shortly after  
This world had air'd them: hence I took a  
thought,

This was a judgment on me; that my kingdom,  
Well worthy the best heir o'the world, should  
not

Be gladdened in't by me: then follows, that  
I weigh'd the danger which my realms stood in  
By this my issue's fail; and that gave to me  
Many a groaning throe. Thus hulling† in  
The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer  
Toward this remedy, wherupon we are  
Now present here together; that's to say,  
I meant to rectify my conscience, which  
I then did feel full sick, and yet not well,  
By all the reverend fathers of the land,  
And doctors learn'd.—First, I began in private  
With you, my lord of Lincoln; you remember;  
How under my oppression I did reek,‡  
When I first mov'd you

*Lin.* Very well, my liege.

*K. Hen.* I have spoke long; be pleas'd your-  
self to say

How far you satisfied me.

*Lin.* So please your highness,  
The question did at first so stagger me,—  
Bearing a state of mighty moment in't,  
And consequence of dread,—that I committed  
The daring'st counsel which I had, to doubt;  
And did entreat your highness to this course,  
Which you are running here.

*K. Hen.* I then mov'd you,  
My lord of Canterbury; and got your leave  
To make this present summons:—Unsolicited  
I left no reverend person in this court;  
But by particular consent proceeded,

\* Appearance.

† Speak out thy merits.

‡ Immediately satisfied.

\* Closed or fastened.

† Floating without guidance. ‡ Waste, or wear away

Under your hands and seals. Therefore, go on;  
 For no dislike I'll the world against the person  
 Of the good queen, but the sharp thorny points  
 Of my alleged reasons, drive this forward:  
 Prove but our marriage lawful, by my life,  
 And kingly dignity, we are contented  
 To wear our mortal state to come with her,  
 Katharine our queen, before the primest creature  
 That's paragon'd \* o' the world.  
*Cam.* So please your highness,  
 The queen being absent, 'tis a needful fitness  
 That we adjourn this court till further day:  
 Meanwhile must be an earnest motion  
 Made to the queen, to call back her appeal  
 She intends unto his holiness.

[*They rise to depart.*]

*K. Hen.* I may perceive, [*Aside.*]  
 These cardinals trifle with me: I abhor  
 This dilatory sloth and tricks of Rome.  
 My learn'd and well-beloved servant, Cranmer,  
 Prythee return† with thy approach, I know,  
 My comfort comes along. Break up the court:  
 I say, set on.

[*Exeunt in manner as they entered.*]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—Palace at Bridewell.

## A Room in the Queen's Apartment.

THE QUEEN, and some of her Women, at work.

*Q. Kath.* Take thy lute, wench: my soul  
 grows sad with troubles;  
 Sing, and disperse them, if thou canst: leave  
 working.

## SONG.

*Orpheus with his lute made trees,  
 And the mountain-tops that freeze,  
 Bow themselves, when he did sing;  
 To his music, plants and flowers  
 Ever sprung; as sun and showers  
 There had been a lasting spring.*

*Every thing that heard him play,  
 Even the billows of the sea,  
 Hung their heads, and then lay by.  
 In sweet music is such art;  
 Killing care and grief of heart,  
 Fall asleep, or, hearing, die.*

Enter a GENTLEMAN.

*Q. Kath.* How now?

*Gent.* An't please your grace, the two great  
 cardinals

Wait in the presence. †

*Q. Kath.* Would they speak with me?

*Gent.* They will'd me say so, madam.

*Q. Kath.* Pray their graces

To come near. [*Exit GENT.*] What can be  
 their business

With me a poor weak woman, fallen from  
 favour?

I do not like their coming, now I think on't.  
 They should be good men; their affairs‡ as  
 righteous:

But all hoods make not monks.

Enter WOLSEY and CAMPUIS.

*Wol.* Peace to your highness!

*Q. Kath.* Your graces find me here part of  
 a housewife;

I would be all, against the worst may happen.

\* Without compare.

† An apostrophe to the absent bishop.

‡ Presence chamber.

§ Professions.

What are your pleasures with me, reverend  
 lords?

*Wol.* May it please you, noble madam, to  
 withdraw

Into your private chamber, we shall give you  
 The full cause of our coming.

*Q. Kath.* Speak it here;

There's nothing I have done yet, o' my con-  
 science,

Deserves a corner: 'Would, all other women  
 Could speak this with as free a soul as I do!

My lords, I care not, (so much I am happy  
 Above a number,) if my actions

Were tried by every tongue, every eye saw  
 them,

Envy and base opinion set against them,

I know my life so even: If your business

Seek me out, and that way I am wife in,

Out with it boldly; Truth loves open dealing.

*Wol.* *Tanta est erga te mentis integritas,  
 regine serenissima,*—

*Q. Kath.* O good my lord, no Latin;

I am not such a truant since my coming.—

As not to know the language I have liv'd in:

A strange tongue makes my cause more  
 strange, suspicious;

Play, speak in English; here are some will  
 thank you,

If you speak truth, for their poor mistress'  
 sake;

Believe me, she has had much wrong: Lord  
 cardinal,

The willing'st sin, I ever yet committed,  
 May be absolv'd in English.

*Wol.* Noble lady,

I am sorry my integrity should breed

(And service to his majesty and you,)—

So deep suspicion, where all faith was meant.

We come not by the way of accusation,

To taint that honour every good tongue blesses;

Nor to betray you any way to sorrow;

You have too much, good lady; but to know

How you stand minded in the weighty differ-  
 ence

Between the king and you; and to deliver,

Like free and honest men, our just opinions,

And comforts to your cause.

*Cam.* Most honour'd madam,

My lord of York,—out of his noble nature,

Zeal and obedience he still bore your grace;

Forgetting, like a good man, your late cen-  
 sure

Both of his truth and him, (which was too  
 far,)—

Offers as I do, in a sign of peace,

His service and his counsel.

*Q. Kath.* To betray me.

[*Aside.*]

My lords, I thank you for both your good wills,  
 Ye speak like honest men, (pray God ye  
 prove so!)

But how to make you suddenly an answer,  
 In such a point of weight, so near mine hon-  
 our,

(More near my life, I fear,) with my weak wit,

And to such men of gravity and learning,

In truth, I know not. I was set at work

Among my maids; full little, God knows,  
 looking

Either for such men, or such business.

For her sake that I have been, (for I feel

The last fit of my greatness,) good your graces,

Let me have time, and counsel for my cause;

Alas! I am a woman, friendless, hopeless.

*Wol.* Madam, you wrong the king's love with  
 these fears;

Your hopes and friends are infinite.

*Q. Kath.* In England,

But little for my profit: Can you think, lords,

That any Englishman dare give me counsel?

Or be a known friend, 'gainst his highness'

pleasure,

(Though he be grown so desperate to be hon-  
 est,)

And live a subject? Nay, forsooth, my friends,



They must weigh \* out my afflictions,  
They that my trust must grow to, live not  
here;

They are, as all my other comforts, far hence,  
In mine own country, lords.

*Cam.* I would your grace

Would leave your griefs, and take my counsel.

*Q. Kath.* How, Sir?

*Cam.* Put your main cause into the king's  
protection;

He's loving, and most gracious; 'twill be  
much

Both for your honour better, and your cause;

For, if the trial of the law o'ertake you,

You'll part away disgrac'd.

*Vol.* He tells you rightly.

*Q. Kath.* Ye tell me what ye wish for both,  
my ruin;

Is this your Christian counsel? set upon ye!

Heaven is above all yet; there sits a judge,

That no king can corrupt.

*Cam.* Your rage mistakes us.

*Q. Kath.* The more shame for ye; holy men  
I thought ye,

Upon my soul, two reverend cardinal virtues:

But cardinal sins, and hollow hearts, I fear  
ye:

Mend them for shame, my lords. Is this your  
comfort?

The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady?

A woman lost among ye, laugh'd at, scorn'd?

I will not wish ye half my miseries,

I have more charity: But say, I warn'd ye;

Take heed, for heaven's sake, take heed, lest  
at once

The burden of my sorrows fall upon ye.

*Vol.* Madam, this is a mere distraction;

You turn the good we offer into envy.

*Q. Kath.* Ye turn me into nothing: Wee  
upon ye,

And all such false professors! Would ye have  
me

(If you have any justice, any pity;

If ye be any thing but churchmen's habits,)

Put my sick cause into his hands that hates  
me?

Alas! he has banish'd me his bed already;

His love, too long ago: I am old, my lords,

And all the fellowship I hold now with him

Is only my obedience. What can happen

To me above this wretchedness? all your  
studies

Make me a curse like this.

*Cam.* Your fears are worse.

*Q. Kath.* Have I liv'd thus long—(let me  
speak myself,

Since virtue finds no friends,)—a wife, a true  
one?

A woman (I dare say, without vain-glory)

Never yet branded with suspicion?

Have I with all my full affections

Still met the king? lov'd him next heaven?  
obey'd him?

Been, out of foudness, superstitious to him?†

Almost forgot my prayers to content him?

And am I thus rewarded? 'tis not well, lords.

Bring me a constant woman to her husband,  
One that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his plea-

sure;

And to that woman, when she has done most,

Yet will I add an honour,—a great patience.

*Vol.* Madam, you wander from the good we  
aim at.

*Q. Kath.* My lord, I dare not make myself  
so guilty,

To give up willingly that noble title

Your master wed me to: nothing but death

Shall e'er divorce my dignities.

*Vol.* Pray hear me.

*Q. Kath.* 'Would I had never trod this Eng-  
lish earth.

Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it?

Ye have angels' faces, but heaven knows your  
hearts.

What will become of me now, wretched lady?

I am the most unhappy woman living.—

Alas! poor wenches, where are now your for-  
tunes? [To her Women.

Shipwreck'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,

No friends, no hope: no hundred weep for  
me,

Almost no grave allow'd me:—Like the lily,  
That once was mistress of the field, and flou-

rish'd,

I'll hang my head, and perish.

*Vol.* If your grace

Could but be brought to know, our ends are  
honest,

You'd feel more comfort: why should we, good  
lady,

Upon what cause, wrong you? Alas! our places,

The way of our profession is against it;

We are to cure such sorrows, not to sow them,

For goodness' sake, consider what you do;

How you may hurt yourself, ay, utterly

Grow from the king's acquaintance, by this  
carriage.

The hearts of princes kiss obedience,

So much they love it; but to stubborn spirits

They swell, and grow as terrible as storms.

I know you have a gentle, noble temper,

A soul as even as a calm; Pray, think us

Those we profess, peace-makers, friends, and  
servants.

*Cam.* Madam, you'll find it so. You wrong  
your virtues

With these weak women's fears. A noble  
spirit,

As your's was put into you, ever casts

Such doubts, as false coin, from it. The king  
loves you:

Beware, you lose it not: For us, if you please

To trust us in your business, we are ready

To use our utmost studies in your service.

*Q. Kath.* Do what ye will, my lords; and  
pray, forgive me,

If I have us'd \* myself unmannerly;

You know I am a woman, lacking wit

To make a seemly answer to such persons.

Pray, do my service to his majesty:

He has my heart yet; and shall have my  
prayers,

While I shall have my life. Come, reverend  
fathers,

Bestow your counsels on me: she now begs,

That little thought, when she set footing here,

She should have bought her dignities so dear.  
[Exeunt

#### SCENE II.—Ante-chamber to the King's Apartment.

Enter the Duke of NORFOLK, the Duke of  
SUFFOLK, the Earl of SURREY, and the  
Lord CHAMBERLAIN.

*Nor.* If you will now unite in your com-  
plaints,

And force † them with a constancy, the car-  
dinal

Cannot stand under them: if you omit

The offer of this time, I cannot promise,

But that you shall sustain more new disgraces.

With these you bear already.

*Sur.* I am joyful

To meet the least occasion, that may give me

Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke,

To be reveng'd on him.

*Suf.* Which of the peers

Have uncontemn'd gone by him, or at least

Strangely neglected? when did he regard

The stamp of nobleness in any person,

Out of himself?

*Cham.* My lords, you speak your pleasures:

\* Outweigh.  
† Served him with superstitious attention.

\* Behaved.

† Enforced.

What he deserves of you and me, I know ;  
What we can do to him, (though now the time  
Gives way to us,) much fear. If you cannot  
Bar his access to the king, never attempt  
Any thing on him ; for he hath a witchcraft  
Over the king in his tongue.

*Nor.* Oh ! fear him not ;  
His spell in that is out : the king hath found  
Matter against him, that for ever mars  
The honey of his language. No, he's settled,  
Not to come off, in his displeasure.

*Sur.* Sir,  
I should be glad to hear such news as this  
Once every hour.

*Nor.* Believe it, this is true.  
In the divorce, his contrary proceedings  
Are all unfolded ; wherein he appears,  
As I could wish mine enemy.

*Sur.* How came

His practices to light ?

*Suf.* Most strangely.

*Sur.* Oh ! how, how ?

*Suf.* The cardinal's letter to the pope mis-  
carried,

And came to the eye o'the king : wherein was  
read,

How that the cardinal did entreat his holiness  
To stay the judgment o'the divorce : for if  
It did take place, I do, quoth he, perceive  
*My king is tangled in affection to  
A creature of the queen's, lady Anne Bullen.*

*Sur.* Has the king this ?

*Suf.* Believe it.

*Sur.* Will this work ?

*Cham.* The king in this perceives him, how  
he coasts,

And hedges his own way. But in this point  
All his tricks founder, and he brings his  
physic

After his patient's death ; the king already  
Hath married the fair lady.

*Sur.* 'Would he had !

*Suf.* May you be happy in your wish, my  
lord !

For, I profess, you have it.

*Sur.* Now all my joy

Trace \* the conjunction !

*Suf.* My amen to't !

*Nor.* All men's.

*Suf.* There's order given for her corona-  
tion :

Marry, this is yet but young, † and may be  
left

To some ears unrecounted.—But, my lords,  
She is a gallant creature, and complete  
In mind and feature : I persuade me, from her  
Will fall some blessing to this land, which  
shall

In it be memoriz'd. ‡

*Sur.* But, will the king  
Digest this letter of the cardinal's ?  
The Lord forbid !

*Nor.* Marry, amen !

*Suf.* No, no ;

There be more wasps that buzz about his nose,  
Will make this sting the sooner. Cardinal  
Campeius

Is stolen away to Rome ; hath ta'en no leave ;  
Has left the cause o'the king unhanded ; and  
Is posted, as the agent of our cardinal,  
To second all his plot. I do assure you  
The king cry'd, ha ! at this.

*Cham.* Now, God incense him,  
And let him cry ha, louder !

*Nor.* But, my lord,

When returns Cranmer ?

*Suf.* He is return'd, in his opinions ; which  
Have satisfied the king for his divorce,  
Together with all famous colleges  
Almost in Christendom : shortly, I believe,  
His second marriage shall be publish'd, and

Her coronation. Katharine no more  
Shall be call'd, queen ; but princess dowager,  
And widow to prince Arthur.

*Nor.* This same Cranmer's  
A worthy fellow, and hath ta'en much pain  
In the king's business.

*Suf.* He has ; and we shall see him,  
For it, an archbishop.

*Nor.* So I hear.

*Suf.* 'Tis so.

The cardinal—

*Enter WOLSEY and CROMWELL.*

*Nor.* Observe, observe, he's moody.

*Wol.* The packet, Cromwell, gave it you the  
king ?

*Crom.* To his own hand, in his bed-cham-  
ber.

*Wol.* Look'd he o'the inside of the paper ?

*Crom.* Presently,  
He did unseal them ; and the first he view'd,  
He did it with a serious mind ; a heed  
Was in his countenance : You, he bade  
Attend him here this morning.

*Wol.* Is he ready

To come abroad ?

*Crom.* I think by this he is.

*Wol.* Leave me a while.—

[*Exit CROMWELL.*]

It shall be to the duchess of Alençon,  
The French king's sister : he shall marry her.—  
Anne Bullen ! No ; I'll no Anne Bullens for  
him :

There is more in it than fair visage.—Bullen !  
No, we'll no Bullens.—Speedily I wish  
To hear from Rome.—The marchioness of  
Pembroke !

*Nor.* He's discontented.

*Suf.* May be, he hears the king  
Does what his anger to him.

*Sur.* Sharp enough,

Lord, for thy justice !

*Wol.* The late queen's gentlewoman ; a  
knight's daughter,  
To be her mistress' mistress ! the queen's  
queen !—

This candle burns not clear : 'tis I must  
snuff it ;

Then, out it goes.—What though I know her  
virtuous,

And well-deserving ? yet I know her for

A spleeny Lutheran ; and not wholesome to

Our cause, that she should be i' the bosom of  
Our hard-ru'd king. Again, there is sprung  
up

A heretic, an arch one, Cranmer ; one

Hath crawl'd into the favour of the king,

And is his oracle.

*Nor.* He is vex'd at something.

*Suf.* I would 'twere something that would fret  
the string,

The master-cord of his heart !

*Enter the KING, reading a Schedule ; \* and  
LOVELL.*

*Suf.* The king, the king.

*K. Hen.* What piles of wealth hath he accu-  
mulated

To his own portion ! and what expence by the  
hour

Seems to flow from him ! How, i'the name of  
thrill,

Does he rake this together !—Now, my lords ;  
Saw you the cardinal ?

*Nor.* My lord, we have

Stood here observing him : Some strange com-  
motion

Is in his brain : he bites his lip, and starts ;

Stops on a sudden, looks upon the ground,

Then lays his finger on his temple ; straight,

Springs out into fast gait ; † then stops again,

Strikes his breast hard ; and anon, he casts

\* Follow.

† Made memorable.

‡ New.

\* An inventory.

† Stops.

His eye against the moon : in most strange postures

We have seen him set himself.

*K. Hen.* It may well be ;  
There is a mutiny in his mind. This morning  
Papers of state he sent me to peruse,  
As I requir'd ; And, wot<sup>e</sup> you, what I found  
There ; on my conscience, but unwittingly ?  
Forsooth, an inventory, thus importing,—  
The several parcels of his plate, his treasure,  
Rich stuffs, and ornaments of household ; which  
I find at such proud rate, that it out-speaks  
Possession of a subject.

*Nor.* It's heaven's will ;  
Some spirit put this paper in the packet,  
To bless your eye withal.

*K. Hen.* If we did think  
His contemplation were above the earth,  
And fix'd on spiritual object, he should still  
Dwell in his musings ; but I am afraid,  
His thoughts are below the moon, not worth  
His serious considering.

[*He takes his seat, and whispers* LOVELL,  
*who goes to* WOLSEY.

*Wol.* Heaven forgive me !  
Ever God bless your highness !

*K. Hen.* Good my lord,  
You are full of heavenly stuff, and bear the inventory

Of your best graces in your mind ; the which  
You were now running o'er ; you have scarce time

To steal from spiritual leisure a brief span,  
To keep your earthly audit : sure, in that  
I deem you an ill husband ; and am glad  
To have you therein my companion.

*Wol.* Sir,  
For holy offices I have a time ; a time  
To think upon the part of business, which  
I bear i'the state ; and nature does require  
Her times of preservation, which, perforce,  
I, her frail son, amongst my brethren mortal,  
Must give my tendance to.

*K. Hen.* You have said well.

*Wol.* And ever may your highness yoke together,  
As I will lend you cause, my doing well  
With my well saying !

*K. Hen.* 'Tis well said again ;  
And 'tis a kind of good deed, to say well :  
And yet words are no deeds. My father lov'd you :

He said he did ; and with his deed did crown  
His word upon you. Since I had my office,  
I have kept you next my heart ; have not alone  
Employ'd you where high profits might come home,

But par'd my present havings, to bestow  
My bounties upon you.

*Wol.* What should this mean ?

*Sur.* The Lord increase this business !

*K. Hen.* Have I not made you  
The prime man of the state ? I pray you, tell me

If what I now pronounce you have found true :  
And, if you may confess it, say withal,  
If you are bound to us, or no. What say you ?

*Wol.* My sovereign, I confess your royal graces,  
Shower'd on me daily, have been more, than could

My studied purposes requite ; which went  
Beyond all man's endeavours :—my endeavours  
Have ever come too short of my desires,  
Yet, shi'd with my abilities : Mine own ends  
Have been mine so, that evermore they pointed  
To the good of your most sacred person, and  
The profit of the state. For your great graces  
Heap'd upon me, poor undeserver, I  
Can nothing render but allegiant thanks ;  
My prayers to heaven for you ; my loyalty,  
Which ever has, and ever shall be growing,  
Till death, that winter, kill it.

• Know.

*K. Hen.* Fairly answer'd ;

A loyal and obedient subject is  
Therein illustrated : The honour of it  
Does pay the act of it ; as, i'the contrary,  
The foulness is the punishment. I presume,  
That, as my hand has open'd bounty to you,  
My heart dropp'd love, my power rain'd honour,  
more

On you, than any ; so your hand and heart,  
Your brain, and every function of your power,  
Should, notwithstanding that your bond of duty,  
As 'twere in love's particular, be more  
To me, your friend, than any.

*Wol.* I do profess,  
That for your highness' good I ever labour'd  
More than mine own ; that am, have, and will be.  
Though all the world should crack their duty  
to you,

And throw it from their soul : though perils did  
Abound, as thick as thought could make them,  
and  
Appear in forms more horrid ; yet my duty,  
As doth a rock against the chiding flood,  
Should the approach of this wild river break,  
And stand unshaken your's.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis nobly spoken :  
Take notice, lords, he has a loyal breast,  
For you have seen him open't.—Read o'er this ;

[*Giving him papers.*

And, after, this : and then to breakfast, with  
What appetite you have.

[*Exit KING, frowning upon Cardinal*  
*WOLSEY : the Nobles throng after*  
*him, smiling and whispering.*

*Wol.* What should this mean ?  
What sudden anger's this ? how have I reap'd it ?  
He parted frowning from me, as if ruin  
Leap'd from his eyes : So looks the chafed lion

Upon the daring huntsman that has gall'd him ;  
Then makes him nothing. I must read this  
paper :

I fear the story of his anger.—'Tis so ;  
This paper has undone me :—'Tis the account  
Of all that world of wealth I have drawn together

For mine own ends ; indeed, to gain the pope-  
dom,

And fee my friends in Rome. O negligence,  
Fit for a fool to fall by ! What cross devil  
Made me put this main secret in the packet  
I sent the king ? Is there no way to cure this ?  
No new device to beat this from his brains ?  
I know, 'twill stir him strongly ; Yet I know  
A way, if it take right, in spite of fortune,  
Will bring me off again. What's this—*To the Pope ?*

The letter, as I live, with all the business  
I writ to his holiness. Nay then, farewell !  
I have touch'd the highest point of all my greatness ;

And, from that full meridian of my glory,  
I haste now to my setting : I shall fall  
Like a bright exhalation in the evening,  
And no man see me more.

*Re-enter the Dukes of NORFOLK, and SUR-  
FOLK, the Earl of SURREY, and the Lord*  
*CHAMBERLAIN.*

*Nor.* Hear the king's pleasure, cardinal : who  
commands you  
To render up the great seal presently  
Into our hands ; and to confine yourself  
To Asher-house,\* my lord of Winchester's,  
Till you hear further from his highness.

*Wol.* Stay,  
Where's your commission, lords ? words cannot  
carry  
Authority so weighty.

*Sur.* Who dare cross them ?  
Bearing the king's will from his mouth expressly ?  
*Wol.* Till I find more than will, or words,  
to do it,

• Esher in Surrey.

(I mean, your malice,) know, officious lords,  
I dare, and must deny it. Now I feel  
Of what coarse metal ye are moulded,—envy.  
How eagerly ye follow my disgraces,  
As if it fed ye! and how sleek and wanton  
Ye appear in every thing may bring my ruin!  
Follow your envious courses, men of malice;  
You have Christian warrant for them, and, no  
doubt,

In time will find their fit rewards. That seal,  
You ask with such a violence, the king,  
(Mine and your master,) with his own hand  
gave me;

Bade me enjoy it, with the place and honours,  
During my life; and, to confirm his goodness,  
Tied it by letters patents: Now, who'll take it?

*Sur.* The king, that gave it.

*Wol.* It must be himself then.

*Sur.* Thou art a proud traitor, priest.

*Wol.* Proud lord, thou liest;  
Within these forty hours Surrey darst better  
Have burnt that tongue, than said so.

*Sur.* Thy ambition,  
Thou scarlet sin, robb'd this bewailing land  
Of noble Buckingham, my father-in-law:  
The heads of all thy brother cardinals,  
(With thee, and all thy best parts bound to-  
gether.)

Weigh'd not a hair of his. Plague of your po-  
you sent me deputy for Ireland; [He]y!  
Far from his succour, from the king, from all  
That might have mercy on the fault thou gav'st  
him;

Whilst your great goodness, out of holy pity,  
Absolv'd him with an axe.

*Wol.* This, and all else

This talking lord can lay upon my credit,  
I answer is most false. The duke by law  
Found his deserts: how innocent I was  
From any private malice in his end,  
His noble jury and foul cause can witness.  
If I lov'd many words, lord, I should tell you,  
You have as little honesty as honour;  
That I, in the way of loyalty and truth  
Toward the king, my ever royal master,  
Dare mate \* a sounder man than Surrey can be,  
And all that love his follies.

*Sur.* By my soul,  
Your long coat, priest, protects you; thou  
should'st feel

My sword i' the life-blood of thee else.—My lords,  
Can ye endure to hear this arrogance?  
And from this fellow? If we live thus tamely,  
To be thus jaded † by a piece of scarlet,  
Farewell nobility; let his grace go forward,  
And dare us with his cap, like larks. ‡

*Wol.* All goodness  
Is poison to thy stomach.

*Sur.* Yes, that goodness  
Of gleaning all the land's wealth into one,  
Into your own hands, cardinal, by extortion;  
The goodness of your intercepted packets,  
You writ to the pope, against the king: your  
goodness,

Since you provoke me, shall be most notorious.—  
My lord of Norfolk,—as you are truly noble,  
As you respect the common good, the state  
Of our despis'd nobility, our issues,  
Who, if he live, will scarce be gentlemen,—  
Produce the grand sum of his sins, the articles  
Collected from his life:—I'll startle you  
Worse than the scaring bell, when the brown  
wench

Lay kissing in your arms, lord cardinal.

*Wol.* How much, methinks, I could despise  
this man,

But that I am bound in charity against it!

*Nor.* Those articles, my lord, are in the  
king's hand:

But, thus much, they are foul ones.

*Wol.* So much fairer,

And spotless, shall mine innocence arise,  
When the king knows my truth.

*Sur.* This cannot save you:

I thank my memory, I yet remember  
Some of these articles; and out they shall.  
Now, if you can blush, and cry guilty, cardinal,  
You'll show a little honesty.

*Wol.* Speak on, Sir:

I dare your worst objections: if I blush,  
It is to see a nobleman want manners.

*Sur.* I'd rather want those, than my head.  
Have at you.

First, that, without the king's assent, or know-  
ledge,

You wrought to be a legate; by which power  
You main'd the jurisdiction of all bishops.

*Nor.* Then, that, in all you writ to Rome, or  
else

To foreign princes, *Ego et Rex meus*  
Was still inscrib'd; in which you brought the  
To be your servant. [King]

*Sur.* Then, that, without the knowledge  
Either of king or council, when you went  
Ambassador to the emperor, you made bold  
To carry into Flanders the great seal.

*Sur.* Item, you sent a large commission  
To Gregory de Cassalis, to conclude,  
Without the king's will, or the state's allowance,  
A league between his highness and Ferrara.

*Sur.* That, out of mere ambition, you have  
caus'd

Your holy hat to be stamp'd on the king's coin.

*Sur.* Then, that you have sent innumerable  
substance,  
(By what means got, I leave to your own con-  
science.)

To furnish Rome, and to prepare the ways  
You have for dignities; to the mere \* undoing  
Of all the kingdom. Many more there are;  
Which, since they are of you, and odious,  
I will not taint my mouth with.

*Cham.* O my lord,

Press not a falling man too far: 'tis virtue:  
His faults lie open to the laws; let them,  
Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to see  
him

So little of his great self.

*Sur.* I forgive him.

*Sur.* Lord cardinal, the king's further pleasure  
is,—

Because all those things, you have done of late  
By your power legateue † within this kingdom,  
Fall into the compass of a *premunire*, ‡—  
That therefore such a writ be sued against you:  
To forfeit all your goods, lands, tenements,  
Chattels, and whatsoever, and to be  
Out of the king's protection:—This is my  
charge.

*Nor.* And so we'll leave you to your medita-  
tions

How to live better. For your stubborn answer,  
About the giving back the great seal to us,  
The king shall know it, and, no doubt, shall  
thank you.

So fare you well, my little good lord cardinal,

[*Exeunt all but Wolsey.*]

*Wol.* So farewell to the little good you bear  
me.

Farewell, a long farewell, to all my greatness!  
This is the state of man; To day he puts forth  
The tender leaves of hope; to-morrow blossoms,  
And bears his blushing honours thick upon  
him:

The third day, comes a frost, a killing frost;  
And when he thinks, good easy man, full surely  
His greatness is a ripening, nips his root,  
And then he falls, as I do. I have ventur'd,  
Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders,  
This many summers in a sea of glory;  
But far beyond my depth: my high-blown pride  
At length broke under me; and now has left  
me,

\* Equal.

† Ridden.

‡ A cardinal's hat is scarlet, and the method of darning  
larks is by small mirrors on scarlet cloth

\* Absolute

† As the Pope's legate.

‡ A writ incurring a penalty.

Weary, and old with service, to the mercy  
Of a rude stream that must for ever hide me.  
Vain pomp and glory of this world, I hate ye;  
I feel my heart new open'd: Oh! how wretched  
Is that poor man, that hangs on princes' fa-  
vours!  
There is, betwixt that smile we would aspire to,  
That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin,  
More pangs and fears than wars or women have;  
And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer,  
Never to hope again.—

*Enter CROMWELL, amazedly.*

Why, how now, Cromwell?

*Crom.* I have no power to speak, Sir.

*Wol.* What, amaz'd

At my misfortunes? can thy spirit wonder,  
A great man should decline? Nay, an you  
weep,

I am fallen indeed.

*Crom.* How does your grace?

*Wol.* Why, well;

Never so truly happy, my good Cromwell.

I know myself now; and I feel within me

A peace above all earthly dignities,

A still and quiet conscience. The king has  
cur'd me,

humbly thank his grace; and from these  
shoulders,

These ruin'd pillars, out of pity, taken

A load would sink a navy, to much honour:

O 'tis a burden, Cromwell, 'tis a burden,

Too heavy for a man that hopes for heaven.

*Crom.* I am glad, your grace has made that  
right use of it.

*Wol.* I hope I have: I am able now, me-  
thinks,

(Out of a fortitude of soul I feel,)

To endure more miseries, and greater far,

Than my weak-hearted enemies dare offer.

What news abroad?

*Crom.* The heaviest, and the worst,

Is your displeasure with the king.

*Wol.* God bless him!

*Crom.* The next is, that Sir Thomas More is  
chosen

Lord chancellor in your place.

*Wol.* That's somewhat sudden:

But he's a learned man. May he continue  
Long in his highness' favour, and do justice

For truth's sake, and his conscience; that his  
bones,

When he has run his course, and sleeps in  
blessings,

May have a tomb of orphans' tears \* wept on!  
What more? [em]

*Crom.* That Cranmer is return'd with wel-  
come,

Install'd lord archbishop of Canterbury.

*Wol.* That's news indeed.

*Crom.* Last, that the lady Anne,  
Whom the king hath in secrecy long married,  
This day was view'd in open, as his queen,  
Going to chapel; and the voice is now  
Only about her coronation.

*Wol.* There was the weight that pull'd me  
down. O Cromwell,

The king has gone beyond me, all my glories

In that one woman I have lost for ever:

No sun shall ever usher forth mine honours,

Or gild again the noble troops that waited

Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me, Crom-  
well;

I am a poor fallen man, unworthy now

To be thy lord and master: Seek the king;

That sun, I pray, may never set! I have told  
him

What, and how true thou art: he will advance  
thee;

Some little memory of me will stir him,

(I know his noble nature,) not to let

Thy hopeful service perish too: Good Crom-  
well,

Neglect him not; make use \* now, and provide  
For thine own future safety.

*Crom.* O my lord,

Must I then leave you? Must I needs forego

So good, so noble, and so true a master?

Bear witness, all that have not hearts of iron,

With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his  
lord.—

The king shall have my service; but my prayers  
For ever and for ever shall be yours.

*Wol.* Cromwell, I did not think to shed a  
tear

In all my miseries; but thou hast forc'd me

Out of thy honest truth to play the woman.

Let's dry our eyes: and thus far hear me, Crom-  
well;

And, (when I am forgotten, as I shall be:

And sleep in dull cold marble, where no men-  
tion

Of me more must be heard of,) say, I taught  
thee,

Say, Wolsey, (that once trod the ways of glory,  
And sounded all the depths and shoals of hon-  
our,)

Found thee a way out of his wreck, to rise in:

A sure and safe one, though thy master

miss'd it.

Mark but my fall, and that that ruin'd me.

Cromwell, I charge thee, fling away ambition;

By that sin fell the angels, how can man then,

The image of his Maker, hope to win by't?

Love thyself last: cherish those hearts that hate

thee;

Corruption wins not more than honesty,

Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace,

To silence envious tongues. Be just, and fear  
not: [thy's,

Let all the ends, thou aim'st at, be thy coun-  
ty God's, and truth's; then it thou fall'st, O

Cromwell,

Thou fall'st a blessed martyr. Serve the king;

And,—Pr'ythee, lead me in:

There take an inventory of all I have,

To the last penny: 'tis the king's: my robe,

And my integrity to heaven, as all

I dare now call mine own. O Cromwell, Crom-  
well,

Had I but serv'd my God with half the zeal

I serv'd my king, he would not in mine age

Have left me naked to mine enemies. †

*Crom.* Good Sir, have patience.

*Wol.* So I have. Farewell

The hopes of court! my hopes in heaven do  
dwell. [Exit.

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—A Street in Westminster.

*Enter two GENTLEMEN, meeting.*

1 *Gent.* You are well met once again.

2 *Gent.* And so are you.

1 *Gent.* You come to take your stand here  
and behold

The Lady Anne pass from her coronation?

2 *Gent.* 'Tis all my business. At our last en-  
counter,

The duke of Buckingham came from his trial.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis very true: but that time offer'd  
sorrow;

This general joy.

2 *Gent.* 'Tis well: the citizens,

Am sure, have shown at full their royal minds;  
As, let them have their rights, they are ever for-  
ward

In celebration of this day with shows,

Pageants, and sights of honour.

1 *Gent.* Never greater.

Nor, I'll assure you, better taken, Sir.

\* Interest.

\* The chancellor is the guardian of orphans.

† This sentence was really uttered by Wolsey.

2 *Gent.* May I be bold to ask what that contains,  
That paper in your hand ?  
1 *Gent.* Yes ; 'tis the list  
Of those, that claim their offices this day,  
By custom of the coronation.  
The duke of Suffolk is the first, and claims  
To be high steward ; next the duke of Norfolk,  
He to be earl marshal ; you may read the rest.  
2 *Gent.* I thank you, Sir ; had I not known  
those customs,  
I should have been behiden to your paper.  
But, I beseech you, what's become of Katharine,  
The princess dowager ! how goes her business ?  
1 *Gent.* That I can tell you too. The archbishop  
Of Canterbury, accompanied with other  
Learned and reverend fathers of his order,  
Held a late court at Dunstable, six miles off  
From Ampthill, where the princess lay ; to  
which  
She oft was cited by them, but appear'd not ;  
And, to be short, for not appearance, and  
The king's late scruple, by the main assent  
Of all these learned men she was divorc'd,  
And the late marriage \* made of none effect :  
Since which, she was remov'd to Kimbolton,  
Where she remains now sick.  
2 *Gent.* Alas, good lady !— [*Trumpets.*]  
The trumpets sound : stand close, the queen is  
coming.

## THE ORDER OF THE PROCESSION.

- A lively flourish of Trumpets ; then enter*
1. Two Judges.
  2. The Lord Chancellor, with the purse and mace before him.
  3. Choristers singing. [*Music.*]
  4. Mayor of London bearing the mace. Then Garter, in his coat of arms, and on his head, a gilt copper crown.
  5. Marquis Dorset, bearing a sceptre of gold, on his head a demi-coronet of gold. With him the earl of Surrey, bearing the rod of silver with the dove, crowned with an earl's coronet. Collars of SS.
  6. Duke of Suffolk, in his robe of estate, his coronet on his head, bearing a long white wand, as high-steward. With him, the duke of Norfolk, with the rod of marshalship, a coronet on his head. Collars of SS.
  7. A canopy borne by four of the cinque-ports ; under it, the Queen in her robe ; in her hair richly adorned with pearls, crowned. On each side of her, the bishops of London, and Winchester.
  8. The old duchess of Norfolk, in a coronal of gold, wrought with flowers, bearing the Queen's train.
  9. Certain Ladies or Countesses, with plain circlets of gold without flowers.

2 *Gent.* A royal train, believe me.—These I know :—  
Who's that, that bears the sceptre ?  
1 *Gent.* Marquis Dorset :  
And that the earl of Surrey, with the rod.  
2 *Gent.* A bold brave gentleman : And that should be  
The duke of Suffolk.  
1 *Gent.* 'Tis the same ; high-steward.  
2 *Gent.* And that my lord of Norfolk ?  
1 *Gent.* Yes.  
2 *Gent.* Heaven bless thee !

[*Looking on the Queen.*]

Thou hast the sweetest face I ever look'd on.—  
Sir, as I have a soul, she is an angel ;  
Our king has all the ladies in his arms,

\* The marriage lately considered as valid.

And more, and richer, when he strains that lady :

1 cannot blame his conscience.  
1 *Gent.* They, that bear  
The cloth of honour over her, are four barons  
Of the Cinque-ports.  
2 *Gent.* Those men are happy ; and so are all,  
are near her.  
I take it, she that carries up the train,  
Is that old noble lady, duchess of Norfolk.  
1 *Gent.* It is ; and all the rest are countesses.  
2 *Gent.* Their coronets say so. These are  
stars indeed ;  
And, sometimes, falling ones.  
1 *Gent.* No more of that.  
[*Exit Procession, with a great flourish of trumpets.*]

## Enter a third GENTLEMAN.

God save you, Sir ! Where have you been broiling ?  
2 *Gent.* Among the crowd i'the abbey ; where  
a finger  
Could not be wedg'd in more ; and I am stifled  
With the mere rankness of their joy.  
2 *Gent.* You saw  
The ceremony ?  
3 *Gent.* That I did.  
1 *Gent.* How was it ?  
3 *Gent.* Well worth the seeing.  
2 *Gent.* Good Sir, speak it to us.  
3 *Gent.* As well as I am able. The rich  
stream  
Of lords, and ladies, having brought the queen  
To a prepar'd place in the choir, fell off  
A distance from her ; while her grace sat down  
To rest a while, some half an hour, or so,  
In a rich chair of state, opposing freely  
The beauty of her person to the people.  
Believe me, Sir, she is the goodliest woman  
That ever lay by man : which when the people  
Had the full view of, such a noise arose  
As the shrouds make at sea in a stiff tempest,  
As loud, and to as many tunes : hats, cloaks,  
(Doublets, I think,) flew up : and had their  
faces  
Been loose, this day they had been lost. Such  
joy  
I never saw before. Great-hellied women  
That had not half a week to go, like rams  
In the old time of war, would shake the press,  
And make them reel before them. No man  
living  
Could say, *This is my wife*, there ; all were  
woven  
So strangely in one piece.  
2 *Gent.* But, 'pray, what follow'd ?  
2 *Gent.* At length her grace rose, and with  
modest paces  
Came to the altar ; where she kneel'd, and,  
saint-like,  
Cast her fair eyes to heaven, and pray'd devoutly.  
Then rose again, and bow'd her to the people :  
When by the archbishop of Canterbury  
She had all the royal makings of a queen ;  
As holy oil, Edward Confessor's crown,  
The rod, and bird of peace, and all such emblems  
Laid nobly on her ; which perform'd, the choir,  
With all the choicest music of the kingdom,  
Together sung *Te Deum*. So she par'd,  
And with the same full state pac'd back again  
To York-place, where the feast is held.  
1 *Gent.* Sir, you  
Must no more call it York-place, that is past :  
For, since the cardinal fell, that title's lost ;  
'Tis now the king's, and call'd—Whitehall.  
3 *Gent.* I knew it ;  
But 'tis so lately alter'd, that the old name  
is fresh about me.  
2 *Gent.* What two reverend bishops  
Were those that went on each side of the  
queen ?

3 *Gent.* Stokesly and Gardiner; the one, of Winchester,  
(Newly prefer'd from the king's secretary,) The other, London.

2 *Gent.* He of Winchester  
Is held no great good lover of the archbishop's,  
The virtuous Cranmer.

3 *Gent.* All the land knows that:  
However, yet there's no great breach; when it comes,  
Cranmer will find a friend will not shrink from him.

2 *Gent.* Who may that be, I pray you?

3 *Gent.* Thomas Cromwell;  
A man in much esteem with the king, and truly  
A worthy friend.—The king  
Has made him master o'the jewel house,  
And one, already, of the privy-council.

2 *Gent.* He will deserve more.

3 *Gent.* Yes, without all doubt.  
Come, gentlemen, ye shall go my way, which  
Is to the court, and there ye shall be my guests;  
Something I can command. As I walk thither,  
I'll tell ye more.

*Both.* You may command us, Sir. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II.—Kimbolton.

*Enter KATHARINE, Dowager, sick; led between GRIFFITH and PATIENCE.*

*Grif.* How does your grace?

*Kath.* O Griffith, sick to death:  
My legs, like loaden branches, bow to the earth,  
Willing to leave their burden: Reach a chair;—  
So,—now, methinks, I feel a little ease.  
Didst thou not tell me, Griffith, as thou led'st  
me,

That the great child of honour, cardinal Wolsey,  
Was dead?

*Grif.* Yes, madam; but, I think, your grace,  
Out of the pain you suffer'd, gave no ear to't.

*Kath.* Pr'ythee, good Griffith, tell me how he died:

If well, he stepp'd before me, happily \*  
For my example.

*Grif.* Well, the voice goes, madam:  
For after the stout earl Northumberland  
Arrested him at York, and brought him forward  
(As a man sorely tainted,) to his answer,  
He fell sick suddenly, and grew so ill,  
He could not sit his mule.

*Kath.* Alas! poor man!

*Grif.* At last, with easy roads,† he came to  
Leicester,

Lodg'd in the abbey; where the reverend abbot,  
With all his convent, honourably receiv'd him;  
To whom he gave these words,—*O father abbot,*  
*An old man, broken with the storms of state,*  
*Is come to lay his weary bones among ye;*  
*Give him a little earth for charity!*

So went to bed: where eagerly his sickness  
Pursued him still; and, three nights after this,  
About the hour of eight, (which he himself  
Foretold should be his last,) full of repentance!  
Continual meditations, tears, and sorrows,  
He gave his honours to the world again,  
His blessed part to heaven, and slept in peace.

*Kath.* So may be rest; his faults lie gently  
On him!

Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak  
him,

And yet with charity,—He was a man  
Of an unbounded stomach,† ever ranking  
Himself with princes; one, that by suggestion  
Tied all the kingdom: simony was fair play;  
His own opinion was his law: †the presence ‡  
He would say untruths; and be ever double,  
Both in his words and meaning: He was never,  
But where he meant to ruin, pitiful:  
His promises were, as he then was, mighty;  
But his performance, as he is now, nothing.

Of his own body he was ill,\* and gave  
The clergy ill example.

*Grif.* Noble madam,  
Men's evil manners live in brass; their virtues  
We write in water. May it please your highness  
To hear me speak his good now?

*Kath.* Yes, good Griffith;

I were malicious else.

*Grif.* This cardinal,  
Though from an humble stock, undoubtedly  
Was fashion'd to † much honour. From his  
cradle,

He was a scholar, and a ripe, and good one;  
Exceeding wise, fair spoken, and persuading:  
Lofty, and sour, to them that lov'd him not;  
But, to those men that sought him, sweet as  
summer.

And though he were unsatisfied in getting,  
(Which was a sin,) yet in bestowing, madam,  
He was most princely: Ever witness for him  
Those twins of learning, that he rais'd in you,  
Ipswich and Oxford! one; of which fell with  
him,

Unwilling to outlive the good that did it;  
The other, though unfinish'd, yet so famous,  
So excellent in art, and still so rising,  
That Christendom shall ever speak his virtue.  
His overthrow heap'd happiness upon him;  
For then, and not till then, he felt himself,  
And found the blessedness of being little:  
And, to add greater honours to his age  
Than man could give him, he died, fearing  
God.

*Kath.* After my death I wish no other herald,  
No other speaker of my living actions,  
To keep mine honour from corruption,  
But such an honest chronicler as Griffith.  
Whom I most hated living, thou hast made me,  
With thy religious truth, and modesty,  
Now in his ashes honour: Peace be with  
him!

Patience, be near me still; and set me lower:  
I have not long to trouble thee.—Good Griffith,  
Cause the musicians play me that sad note  
I nam'd my knell, whilst I sit meditating  
On that celestial harmony I go to.

### Sad and solemn music.

*Grif.* She is asleep: Good wench, let's sit  
down quiet,  
For fear we wake her;—Softly, gentle Patience.

*The Vision.* *Enter, solemnly tripping one after another, six Personages, clad in white robes, wearing on their heads garlands of bays, and golden vizards on their faces; branches of bays, or palm, in their hands. They first congee unto her, then dance; and, at certain changes, the first two hold a spare garland over her head; at which, the other four make reverend court'sies; then the two that held the garland, deliver the same to the other next two, who observe the same order in their changes, and holding the garland over her head: which done, they deliver the same garland to the last two, who likewise observe the same order; at which, (as it were by inspiration,) she makes in her sleep signs of rejoicing, and holdeth up her hands to heaven: and so in their dancing they vanish, carrying the garland with them. The music continues.*

*Kath.* Spirits of peace, where are ye? Are ye all gone?

And leave me here in wretchedness behind ye?

*Grif.* Madam, we are here.

*Kath.* It is not you I call for.  
Saw ye none enter, since I slept?

*Grif.* None, madam.

\* Haply.

† By short stages.  
‡ Of the king.

‡ Pride.

\* Set a lewd example in his own person.  
† Formed for.  
‡ Ipswich.

*Kath.* No? Saw you not, even now, a blessed troop

Invite me to a banquet; whose bright faces  
Cast thousand beams upon me, like the sun?  
They promis'd me eternal happiness;  
And brought me garlands, Griffith, which I feel  
I am not worthy yet to wear: I shall,  
Assuredly.

*Grif.* I am most joyful, madam, such good  
Possess your fancy. [dreams]

*Kath.* Bid the music leave,  
They are harsh and heavy to me.

[Music ceases.]

*Pat.* Do you note,  
How much her grace is alter'd on the sudden?  
How long her face is drawn? How pale she  
looks,

And of an earthy cold? Mark you her eyes?

*Grif.* She is going, wench; pray, pray.

*Pat.* Heaven comfort her!

Enter a MESSENGER.

*Mess.* An't like your grace,—

*Kath.* You are a sancy fellow:  
Deserve we no more reverence?

*Grif.* You are to blame,  
Knowing, she will not lose her wonted great-  
ness,

To use so rude behaviour: go to, kneel.

*Mess.* I humbly do entreat your highness' pardon;

My haste made me unmannerly: There is stay-  
ing

A gentleman, sent from the king to see you.

*Kath.* Admit him entrance, Griffith: But this  
fellow

Let me ne'er see again.

[Exit GRIFFITH and MESSENGER.]

Re-enter GRIFFITH, with CAPUCIUS.

If my sight fail not,  
You should be lord ambassador from the em-  
peror,

My royal nephew, and your name Capucius.  
*Cap.* Madam, the same, your servant.

*Kath.* O my lord,  
The times, and titles, now are alter'd strangely  
With me, since first you knew me. But, I pray  
you,

What is your pleasure with me?

*Cap.* Noble lady,  
First, mine own service to your grace; the  
next,

The king's request that I would visit you;  
Who grieves much for your weakness, and by  
sends you his princely commendations. [me  
And heartily entreats you take good comfort.]

*Kath.* O my good lord, that comfort comes  
too late;

'Tis like a pardon after execution:

That gentle physic, given in time, had cur'd me;  
But now I am past all comforts here, but  
prayers.

How does his highness?

*Cap.* Madam, in good health.

*Kath.* So may be ever do! and ever flourish,  
When I shall dwell with worms, and my poor  
name

Banish'd the kingdom!—Patience, is that letter,  
I caus'd you write, yet sent away?

*Pat.* No, madam. [Giving it to KATHARINE.]

*Kath.* Sir, I most humbly pray you to deliver  
This to my lord the king.

*Cap.* Most willing, madam.

*Kath.* In which I have commended to his  
goodness

The model\* of our chaste loves, his young  
daughter:—

The dew of heaven fall thick in blessings on  
her!—

Beseeking him, to give her virtuous breeding;  
[She is young, and of a noble modest nature;

I hope, she will deserve well;) and a little  
To love her for her mother's sake, that lov'd  
him,

Heaven knows how dearly. My next poor  
petition

Is, that his noble grace would have some pity  
Upon my wretched women, that so long,

Have follow'd both my fortunes faithfully:  
Of which there is not one, I dare avow

[And now I should not lie,] but will deserve,  
For virtue, and true beauty of the soul,

For honesty, and decent carriage,  
A right good husband, let him be a noble;

And, sure, those men are happy that shall have  
them.

The last is, for my men:—they are the poorest,  
But poverty could never draw them from me,—

That they may have their wages duly paid  
them,

And something over to remember me by;  
If Heaven had pleas'd to have given me longer

life,  
And able means, we had not parted thus.

These are the whole contents:—And, good my  
lord,

By that you love the dearest in this world,  
As you wish Christian peace to souls departed,

Stand these poor people's friend, and urge the  
king

To do me this last right.

*Cap.* By heaven, I will;

Or let me lose the fashion of a man!  
*Kath.* I thank you, honest lord. Remember

In all humility unto his highness: [me  
Say, his long trouble now is passing

Out of this world: tell him, in death I bless'd  
him,

For so I will.—Mine eyes grow dim.—Farewell,  
My lord.—Griffith, farewell.—Nay, Patience,

You must not leave me yet. I must to bed;  
Call in more women.—When I am dead, good

wench,  
Let me be us'd with honour; strew me over

With maiden flowers, that all the world may  
know

I was a chaste wife to my grave:—embalm me,  
Then lay me forth: although unqueen'd, yet

like  
A queen, and daughter to a king, inter me.

I can no more.—  
[Exit leading KATHARINE.]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—A Gallery in the Palace.

Enter GARDINER Bishop of Winchester, a  
PAGE with a torch before him, met by Sir  
THOMAS LOVELL.

*Gar.* It's one o'clock, boy, is't not?

*Boy.* It hath struck.

*Gar.* These should be hours for necessities,  
Not for delights; times to repair our nature

With comforting repose, and not for us  
To waste these times. Good hour of night,

Sir Thomas!

Whither so late?

*Lov.* Came you from the king, my lord?

*Gar.* I did, Sir Thomas; and left him at  
primero†

With the duke of Suffolk.

*Lov.* I must to him too,  
Before he go to bed. I'll take my leave.

*Gar.* Not yet, Sir Thomas Lovell. What's  
the matter?

It seems you are in haste: an if there be  
No great offence belongs to't, give your friend

Some touch of your late business: Affairs, that  
walk

\* Image,

† Afterwards Q. Mary.

\* Even if he should be.  
† A game at cards.



(As, they say, spirits do,) at midnight, have  
in them a wilder nature, than the business  
That seeks despatch by day.

*Lov.* My lord, I love you;  
And durst commend a secret to your ear  
Much weightier than this work. The queen's  
in labour,

They say, in great extremity; and fear'd,  
She'll with the labour end.

*Gar.* The fruit she goes with,  
I pray for heartily; that it may find  
Good time, and live: but for the stock, Sir  
Thomas,

I wish it grubb'd up now.

*Lov.* Methinks, I could  
Cry the amen; and yet my conscience says  
She's a good creature, and, sweet lady, does  
Deserve our better wishes.

*Gar.* But, Sir, Sir,—  
Hear me, Sir Thomas: You are a gentleman  
Of mine own way; I know you wise, religious;  
And, let me tell you, it will ne'er be well,—  
'Twill not, Sir Thomas Lovell, take't of me,  
Till Cranmer, Cromwell, her two hands, and  
she,  
Sleep in their graves.

*Lov.* Now, Sir, you speak of two  
The most remark'd i'the kingdom. As for  
Cromwell,—

Beside that of the jewel-house, he's made master  
O'the rolls, and the king's secretary: further,  
Sir,

Stands in the gap and trade of more prefer-  
ments,

With which the time will load him: The arch-  
bishop  
Is the king's hand, and tongue; And who dare  
speak  
One syllable against him?

*Gar.* Yes, yes, Sir Thomas,  
There are that dare; and I myself have ven-  
tur'd

To speak my mind of him: and, indeed, this  
day,

Sir, (I may tell it you,) I think I have  
Incens'd \* the lords o'the council, that he is  
(For so I know he is, they know he is,)

A most arch heretic, a pestilence  
That does infect the land: with which they  
moved,

Have broken † with the king; who hath so far  
Given ear to our complaint, (of his great grace  
And princely care; foreseeing those fell mis-  
chiefs

Our reasons laid before him,) he hath com-  
manded,

To-morrow morning to the council-board  
He be convented. ‡ He's a rank weed, Sir  
Thomas,

And we must root him out. From your affairs  
I hinder you too long: good night, Sir Thomas.

*Lov.* Many good nights, my lord; I rest  
your servant.

[*Exeunt GARDINER and PAGE.*]

As *LOVELL* is going out, enter the KING, and  
the Duke of *SUFFOLK*.

*K. Hen.* Charles, I will play no more to-  
night;

My mind's not on't, you are too hard for me.

*Suf.* Sir, I did never win of you before.

*K. Hen.* But little, Charles;

Nor shall not, when my fancy's on my play.—  
Now, Lovell, from the queen what is the  
news?

*Lov.* I could not personally deliver to her  
What you commanded me, but by her woman  
I sent your message; who return'd her thanks  
In the greatest humbleness, and desir'd your  
highness

Most heartily to pray for her.

\* Set on. † Told their minds.  
‡ Summoned.

*K. Hen.* What say'st thou? ha!

To pray for her? what, is she crying out?

*Lov.* So said her woman; and that her suffer-  
ance made

Almost each pang a death.

*K. Hen.* Alas, good lady!

*Suf.* God safely quit her of her burden, and  
With gentle travail, to the gladd'ning of  
Your highness with an heir!

*K. Hen.* 'Tis midnight, Charles,  
Pr'ythee, to bed; and in thy prayers remember  
The estate of my poor queen. Leave me alone;  
For I must think of that, which company  
Will not be friendly to.

*Suf.* I wish your highness  
A quiet night, and my good mistress will  
Remember in my prayers.

*K. Hen.* Charles, good night.—  
[*Exit SUFFOLK.*]

Enter Sir ANTHONY DENNY.

Well, Sir, what follows?

*Den.* Sir, I have brought my lord the arch-  
bishop,

As you commanded me.

*K. Hen.* Ha! Canterbury?

*Den.* Ay, my good lord.

*K. Hen.* 'His true: Where is he, Denny?

*Den.* He attends your highness' pleasure.

*K. Hen.* Bring him to us. [*Exit DENNY.*]

*Lov.* This is about that which the bishop  
spake;

I am happily come hither. [*Aside.*]

Re-enter DENNY, with CRANMER.

*K. Hen.* Avoid the gallery.

[*LOVELL seems to stay.*]

Ha!—I have said.—Begone.

What! [*Exeunt LOVELL and DENNY.*]

*Cran.* I am fearful:—Wherefore know'st he  
thus?

'Tis his aspect of terror. All's not well.

*K. Hen.* How now, my lord? You do desire  
to know

Wherefore I sent for you.

*Cran.* It is my duty,

To attend your highness' pleasure.

*K. Hen.* 'Pray you, arise,

My good and gracious lord of Canterbury.

Come, you and I must walk a turn together;

I have news to tell you: Come, come, give me  
your hand,

Ah! my good lord, I grieve at what I speak,

And am right sorry to repeat what follows:

I have, and most unwillingly, of late

Heard many grievous, I do say, my lord,

Grievous complaints of you; which, being con-  
sider'd,

Have mov'd us, and our council, that you shall

This morning come before us; where, I know,

You cannot with such freedom purge yourself,

But that, till further trial, in those charges

Which will require your answer, you must take

Your patience to you, and be well contented

To make your house our Tower: You a brother  
of us,

It fits we thus proceed, or else no witness

Would come against you.

*Cran.* I humbly thank your highness:

And am right glad to catch this good occasion

Most thoroughly to be winnow'd, where my chaff

And corn shall fly asunder: for, I know,

There's none stands under more calumnious  
tongues,

Than I myself, poor man.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, good Canterbury;

Thy truth, and thy integrity, is rooted

In us, thy friend: Give me thy hand, stand up;

Pr'ythee, let's walk. Now, by my holy-dame,

What manner of man are you? My lord, I  
look'd

You would have given me your petition, that

I should have ta'en some pains to bring together

\* One of the council.

Yourself and your accusers; and to have heard you

Without indurance, further.

*Cran.* Most dread liege,  
The good I stand on is, my truth and honesty;  
If they shall fail, I, with mine enemies,  
Will triumph o'er my person; which I weigh  
not,

Being of those virtues vacant. I fear nothing  
What can be said against me.

*K. Hen.* Know you not how  
Your state stands i'the world, with the whole  
world?

Your enemies  
Are many, and not small: their practices  
Must bear the same proportion; and not ever  
The justice and the truth o'the question carries  
The due o'the verdict with it: At what ease  
Might corrupt minds procure knaves as corrupt  
To swear against you? I such things have been  
done.

You are potentially oppos'd; and with a malice  
Of as great size. Ween you of better luck,  
I mean, in perjur'd witness, than your master,  
Whose minister you are, whilst here he liv'd  
Upon this naughty earth? Go to, go to;  
You take a precipice for no leap of danger,  
And woo your own destruction.

*Cran.* God and your majesty  
Protect mine innocence, or I fall into  
The trap is laid for me!

*K. Hen.* Be of good cheer;  
They shall no more prevail, than we give way  
to.

Keep comfort to you; and this morning see  
You do appear before them; if they shall  
chance,

In charging you with matters, to commit you,  
The best persuasions to the contrary  
Fail not to use, and with what vehemency  
The occasion shall instruct you: if entreaties  
Will render you no remedy, this ring  
Deliver them, and your appeal to us  
There make before them.—Look, the good man  
weeps.

He's honest, on mine honour. God's blest  
mother!

I swear, he is true-hearted; and a soul  
None better in my kingdom.—Get you gone,  
And do as I have bid you.—[*Exit CRANMER.*]  
He has strangled  
his language in his tears.

*Enter an old LADY.*

*Gent.* [Within.] Come back; What mean  
you?

*Lady.* I'll not come back: the tidings that I  
bring  
Will make my boldness manners.—Now, good  
angels

Fly o'er thy royal head, and shade thy person  
Under their blessed wings!

*K. Hen.* Now, by thy looks  
I guess thy message. Is the queen deliver'd?  
Say, ay; and of a boy.

*Lady.* Ay, ay, my liege;  
And of a lovely boy: The God of heaven  
Both now and ever bless her!—'tis a girl,  
Promises boys hereafter. Sir, your queen  
Desires your visitation, and to be  
Acquainted with this stranger; 'tis as like you,  
As cherry is to cherry.

*K. Hen.* Lovell,—

*Enter LOVELL.*

*Lov.* Sir.

*K. Hen.* Give her a hundred marks. I'll to  
the queen. [Exit KING.]

*Lady.* A hundred marks! By this light, I'll  
have more.

An ordinary groom is for such payment.  
I will have more, or scold it out of him.

\* Value.

† Think.

‡ Always.

Said I for this, the girl is like to him?  
I will have more, or else unsay't; and now  
While it is hot I'll put it to the issue.

[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE II.—Lobby before the Council-  
Chamber.*

*Enter CRANMER; SERVANTS, DOOR-KEEPER,  
&c. attending.*

*Cran.* I hope I am not too late; and yet the  
gentleman,  
That was sent to me from the council, pray'd  
me

To make great haste. All fast? what means  
this?—Hoa!

Who waits there?—Sure, you know me?

*D. Keep.* Yes, my lord;

But yet I cannot help you.

*Cran.* Why?

*D. Keep.* Your grace must wait, till you be  
call'd for.

*Enter Doctor BUTTS.*

*Cran.* So.  
*Butts.* This is a piece of malice. I am glad,  
I came this way so happily: The king  
Shall understand it presently. [Exit BUTTS.]

*Cran.* [Aside.] 'Tis Butts,  
The king's physician; As he past along,  
How earnestly he cast his eyes upon me!  
Pray heaven, he sound not my disgrace! For  
certain,

This is of purpose laid by some that hate me,  
(God turn their hearts! I never sought their  
malice.)

To quench mine honour: they would shame to  
make me

Wait else at door; a fellow counsellor,  
Among boys, grooms, and lackeys. But their  
pleasures

Must be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience.

*Enter at a window above, the KING and  
BUTTS.*

*Butts.* I'll show your grace the strangest  
sight,—

*K. Hen.* What's that, Butts?

*Butts.* I think, your highness saw this many  
a day.

*K. Hen.* Body o'me, where is it?

*Butts.* There, my lord:

The high promotion of his grace of Canter-  
bury;

Who holds his state at door, 'mongst pursuiv-  
ants,  
Pages, and footboys.

*K. Hen.* Hal! 'Tis he, indeed:

Is this the honour they do one another?

'Tis well, there's one above them yet. I had  
thought

They had parted so much honesty among them,  
(At least, good manners,) as not thus to suffer  
A man of his place, and so near our favour,  
To dance attendance on their lordships' plea-  
sures,

And at the door too, like a post with packets.

By holy Mary, Butts, there's knavery:

Let them alone, and draw the curtain close!

We shall hear more anon.— [Exit.]

THE COUNCIL-CHAMBER.

*Enter the Lord CHANCELLOR, the Duke of  
SUFFOLK, Earl of SURREY, Lord CHAM-  
BERLAIN, GARDINER, and CROMWELL.  
The Chancellor places himself at the upper  
end of the table on the left hand; a seat  
being left void above him, as for the Arch-  
bishop of CANTERBURY. The rest seat  
themselves in order on each side. CROM-  
WELL at the lower end, as secretary.*

*Chan.* Speak to the business, master secretary:  
Why are we met in council?

*Crom.* Please your honour,  
The chief cause concerns his grace of Canterbury.

*Gar.* Has he had knowledge of it?

*Crom.* Yes.

*Nor.* Who waits there?

*D. Keep.* Without, my noble lords?

*Gar.* Yes.

*D. Keep.* My lord archbishop;  
And has done half an hour, to know your pleasures.

*Chan.* Let him come in.

*D. Keep.* Your grace may enter now.

[*CRANMER approaches the Council-table.*]

*Chan.* My good lord archbishop, I am very sorry

To sit here at this present, and behold  
That chair stand empty: But we all are men,  
In our own natures frail: and capable  
Of our flesh, few are angels: out of which

frailty,  
And want of wisdom, you, that best should

teach us,  
Have misdeem'd yourself, and not a little,  
Toward the king first, then his laws, in filling  
The whole realm by your teaching, and your

chaplains,  
(For so we are inform'd,) with new opinions,  
Divers, and dangerous: which are heresies,  
And, not reform'd, may prove pernicious.

*Gar.* Which reformation must be sudden too,  
My noble lords: for those, that tame wild

horses,  
Pace them not in their hands to make them

gentle;  
But stop their mouths with stubborn bits, and

spur them,  
Till they obey the manage. If we suffer  
(Out of our easiness, and childish pity  
To one man's honour) this contagious sick-

ness,  
Farewell, all physic: And what follows then?  
Commutations, upstarts, with a general taint  
Of the whole state: as, of late days, our neigh-

bours,  
The upper Germany, can dearly witness,  
Yet freshly pitted in our memories.

*Cran.* My good lords, hitherto, in all the

progress  
Both of my life and office, I have labour'd,  
And with no little study, that my teaching,  
And the strong course of my authority,  
Might go one way, and safely; and the end  
Was ever, to do well: nor is there living  
(I speak it with a single heart, & my lords,)  
A man, that more detests, more stirs against,  
Both in his private conscience, and his place,  
Defacers of a public peace, than I do.

'Pray heaven, the king may never find a heart  
With less allegiance in it! Men that make  
Envy and crooked malice nourishment,  
Dare bite the best. I do beseech your lord-

ships,  
That in this case of justice, my accusers,  
Be what they will, may stand forth face to face,  
And freely urge against me.

*Suf.* Nay, my lord,  
That cannot be; you are a counsellor,  
And by that virtue, no man dare accuse you.

*Gar.* My lord, because we have business of  
more moment,  
We will be short with you. 'Tis his highness'

pleasure,  
And our consent, for better trial of you,  
From hence you be committed to the Tower;  
Where, being but a private man again,  
You shall know many dare accuse you boldly,  
More than, I fear, you are provided for.

*Cran.* Ah! my good lord of Winchester, I  
thank you,  
You are always my good friend; if your will

pass,

I shall both find your lordship judge and juror,  
You are so merciful: I see your end,  
'Tis my undoing: Love, and meekness, lord,  
Become a churchman better than ambition;  
Win straying souls with modesty again,  
Cast none away. That I shall clear myself,  
Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience,  
I make as little doubt, as you do conscience,  
In doing daily wrongs. I could say more,  
But reverence to your calling makes me modest.

*Gar.* My lord, my lord, you are a sectary,  
That's the plain truth; your painted gloss discovers,  
To men that understand you, words and weakness.

*Crom.* My lord of Winchester, you are a little,  
By your good favour, too sharp; men so noble,  
However faulty, yet should find respect  
For what they have been: 'tis a cruelty,  
To load a falling man.

*Gar.* Good master secretary,  
I cry your honour mercy; you may, worst  
Of all this table, say so.

*Crom.* Why, my lord?

*Gar.* Do not I know you for a favourer  
Of this new sect? ye are not sound.

*Crom.* Not sound?

*Gar.* Not sound, I say.

*Crom.* 'Would you were half so honest!  
Men's prayers then would seek you, not their

fears.

*Gar.* I shall remember this bold language.

*Crom.* Do.

Remember your bold life too.

*Chan.* This is too much;

Forbear, for shame, my lords.

*Gar.* I have done.

*Crom.* And I.

*Chan.* Then thus for you, my lord,—It stands

agreed,  
I take it, by all voices, that forthwith  
You be convey'd to the Tower a prisoner;  
There to remain, till the king's further pleasure  
Be known unto us: Are you all agreed, lords?

*All.* We are.

*Cran.* Is there no other way of mercy,

But I must needs to the Tower, my lords?

*Gar.* What other  
Would you expect? You are strangely trouble-

some!

Let some o'the guard be ready there.

*Enter GUARD.*

*Cran.* For me?

Must I go like a traitor thither?

*Gar.* Receive him,

And see him safe i'the Tower.

*Cran.* Stay, good my lords,  
I have a little yet to say. Look there, my

lords;  
By virtue of that ring, I take my cause  
Out of the gripes of cruel men, and give it  
To a most noble judge, the king my master.

*Chan.* This is the king's ring.

*Suf.* 'Tis no counterfeit.

*Suf.* 'Tis the right ring, by heaven: I told  
ye all,

When we first put this dangerous stone a roll-

ing,

'Twould fall upon ourselves.

*Nor.* Do you think, my lords,

The king will suffer but the little finger

Of this man to be vex'd?

*Chan.* 'Tis now too certain:

How much more is his life in value with him?

'Would I were fairly out on't!

*Crom.* My mind gave me

In seeking tales and informations

Against this man, (whose honesty the devil

And his disciples only envy at.)

Ye blew the fire that burns ye: Now have at

ye.

*Enter KING, frowning on them; takes his seat.*

*Gar.* Dread sovereign, how much are we bound to heaven  
In daily thanks, that gave us such a prince;  
Not only good and wise, but most religious:  
One that, in all obedience, makes the church  
The chief aim of his honour; and, to  
strengthen  
That holy duty, out of dear respect,  
His royal self in judgment comes to hear  
The cause betwixt her and this great offender.

*K. Hen.* You were ever good at sudden commendations,  
Bishop of Winchester. But know, I come not  
To hear such flattery now, and in my presence:

They are too thin and base to hide offences.  
To me you cannot reach, you play the spaniel,  
And think with wagging of your tongue to win me;

But, whatsoever thou tak'st me for, I am sure,  
Thou hast a cruel nature and a bloody.—  
Good man, [*To CHAMBER.*] sit down. Now let  
me see the proudest

He, that dares most, but wag his finger at  
thee:

By all that's holy, he had better starve,  
Than but once think his place becomes thee  
not.

*Sur.* May it please your grace,—

*K. Hen.* No, Sir, it does not please me.  
I thought I had had men of some understand-  
ing

And wisdom of my council; but I find none.  
Was it discretion, lords, to let this man,  
This good man, (few of you deserve that title,)  
This honest man, wait like a lowly footboy  
At chamber door? and one as great as you  
are?

Why, what a shame was this? Did my com-  
mission

Bid ye so forget yourselves? I gave ye  
Power as he was a counsellor to try him,  
Not as a groom; There's some of ye, I see,  
More out of malice than integrity,  
Would try him to the utmost, had ye mean;  
Which ye shall never have while I live.

*Chan.* Thus far,

My most dread sovereign, may it like your grace  
To let my tongue excuse all. What was pur-  
pos'd

Concerning his imprisonment, was rather  
(If there be faith in men,) meant for his trial,  
And fair purgation to the world, than malice;  
I am sure, in me.

*K. Hen.* Well, well, my lords, respect him;  
Take him, and use him well, he's worthy of  
it.

I will say thus much for him, If a prince  
May be beholden to a subject, I  
Am, for his love and service, so to him.  
Make me no more ado, but all embrace him;  
Be friends, for shame, my lords.—My lord of  
Canterbury,

I have a suit which you must not deny me;  
This is, a fair young maid that yet wants bap-  
tism,

You must be godfather, and answer for her.

*Cræn.* The greatest monarch now alive may  
glory

In such an honour; how may I deserve it,  
That am a poor and humble subject to you?

*K. Hen.* Come, come, my lord, you'd spare  
your spoons; \* you shall have  
Two noble partners with you; the old duchess  
of Norfolk,

And lady marquiss Dorset; Will these please  
you?

Once more, my lord of Winchester, I charge  
you,

Embrace, and love this man.

\* It was an ancient custom for sponsors to present spoons to their god-children.

*Gar.* With a true heart,  
And brother love, I do it.

*Cræn.* And let heaven

Witness, how dear I hold this confirmation.

*K. Hen.* Good man, those joyful tears show  
thy true heart.

The common voice, I see, is verified

Of thee, which says thus, *Do my lord of Can-  
terbury*

*A shrewd turn, and he is your friend for  
ever.*—

Come, lords, we trifle time away; I long

To have this young one made a Christian.

As I have made ye one, lords, one remain;

So I grow stronger, you more honour gain.

[*Eccunt.*]

### SCENE III.—The Palace Yard.

Noise and tumult within. *Enter PORTER  
and his MAN.*

*Port.* You'll leave your noise anon, ye ras-  
cals: Do you take the court for Paris-garden? \*  
ye rude slaves, leave your gaping. †

[*Within.*] Good master porter, I belong to  
the larder.

*Port.* Belong to the gallows, and be hanged,  
you rogue: Is this a place to loar in?—Fetch  
me a dozen crab-tree staves, and strong ones;  
these are but switches to them.—I'll scratch  
your heads: You must be seeing christenings!  
Do you look for ale and cakes here, you rude  
rascals?

*Man.* Pray, Sir, be patient; 'tis as much  
impossible

(Unless we sweep them from the door with  
cannons,)

To scatter them, as 'tis to make them sleep  
On May-day morning; which will never be:  
We may as well push against Paul's, as stir  
them.

*Port.* How got they in, and be hang'd!

*Man.* Alas, I know not; How gets the tide in?  
As much as one sound cudgel of four fust  
(You see the poor remainder) could distribute,  
I made no spare, Sir.

*Port.* You did nothing, Sir.

*Man.* I am not Samson, nor Sir Guy, nor  
Colbrand, ‡ to mow them down before me:  
but if I spared any, that had a head to hit,  
either young or old, he or she, cuckold or  
cuckold-maker, let me never hope to see a  
chine again; and that I would not for a cow,  
God save her.

[*Within.*] Do you hear, master Porter?

*Port.* I shall be with you presently, good  
master puppy.—Keep the door close, Sirrah.

*Man.* What would you have me do?

*Port.* What should you do, but knock them  
down by the dozens? Is this Moorfields to mus-  
ter in? or have we some strange Indian with  
the great tool come to court, the women so  
besiege us? Bless me, what a fry of forni-  
cation is at door! On my Christian conscience,  
this one christening will beget a thousand;  
here will be father, godfather, and all to-  
gether.

*Man.* The spoons will be the bigger, Sir.  
There is a fellow somewhat near the door, he  
should be a brazier by his face, for o'my  
conscience, twenty of the dog-days now reign in  
his nose; all that stand about him, are under the  
line, they need no other penance: That fire-  
drake did I hit three times on the head, and  
three times was his nose discharged against  
me; he stands there like a mortar-piece, to  
blow us. There was a haberdasher's wife of  
small wit near him, that rail'd upon me till  
her pink porringer fell off her head, for  
kindling such a combustion in the state. I

\* The bear garden on the Bank-side.

† Roaring.

‡ Guy of Warwick, vanquished Colbrand the Danish  
giant.

§ Pink'd cup.

miss'd the meteor\* once, and hit that woman, who cried out, *clubs!* when I might see from far some forty truncheoners draw to her succour, which were the hope of the Strand, where she was quartered. They fell on; I made good my place; at length they came to the broom-staff with me, I defied them still; when suddenly a file of boys behind them, loose shot, delivered such a shower of pebbles, that I was fain to draw mine honour in, and let them win the work: The devil is amongst them, I think, surely.

*Port.* These are the youths that thunder at a play-house, and fight for batten apples; that no audience, but the Tribulation of Tower-hill, or the lumps of Limehouse, their dear brothers, are able to endure. I have some of them in *Limbo Putrum*,† and there they are like to dance these three days; besides the running banquet of two beades,‡ that is to come.

*Enter the Lord CHAMBERLAIN.*

*Cham.* Mercy o'me, what a multitude are here!  
They grow still too, from all parts they are coming,  
As if we kept a fair here! Where are these porters,  
These lazy knaves?—Ye have made a fine band, fellows.  
There's a trim rabble let in: Are all these Your faithful friends o'the suburbs? We shall have  
Great store of room, no doubt, left for the ladies,  
When they pass back from the christening.

*Port.* An't please your honour  
We are but men; and what so many may do,  
Not being torn a pieces, we have done:  
An army cannot rule them.

*Cham.* As I live,  
If the king blame me for't, I'll lay ye all  
By the heels, and suddenly; and on your heads  
Clap round fines, for neglect: You are lazy knaves;  
And here ye be baiting of bumbards, & when  
Ye should do service. Hark, the trumpets sound;

They are come already from the christening:  
Go, break among the press, and find a way out  
To let the troop pass fairly; or I'll find  
A Marshalsea shall hold you play these two months.

*Port.* Make way there for the princess.

*Mun.* You great fellow, stand close up, or I'll make your head ache.

*Port.* You i'the camblet, get up o'the rail;  
I'll pick ¶ you o'er the pales else. *[Exit.*

#### SCENE IV.—The Palace. ¶

*Enter Trumpets, sounding: then two Aldermen, Lord Mayor, GARTER, CRANMER, Duke of NORFOLK, with his Marshal's Staff, Duke of SUFFOLK, two Noblemen bearing great standing-bowls for the christening gyts; then four Noblemen bearing a canopy, under which the Duchess of NORFOLK, godmother, bearing the child richly habited in a mantle, &c. Train borne by a Lady; then follows the Marchioness of DORSET, the other godmother, and Ladies. The Troop pass once about the stage, and GARTER speaks.*

*Gart.* Heaven from thy endless goodness,  
send prosperous life, long, and ever happy, to  
the high and mighty princess of England,  
Elizabeth! \*\*

\* The brazier. † Place of confinement.

‡ A desert of whipping.

¶ Black leather vessels to hold beer.

¶ Pitch. ¶ At Greenwich.

\*\* These are the actual words used at Elizabeth's christening.

*Flourish. Enter KING, and Train.*

*Cran.* *[Kneeling.]* And to your royal grace,  
and the good queen,

My noble partners and myself thus pray:—  
All comfort, joy, in this most gracious lady,  
Heaven ever laid up to make parents happy,  
May hourly fall upon ye!

*K. Hen.* Thank you, good lord archbishop.  
What is her name?

*Cran.* Elizabeth.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, lord.—

*[The KING kisses the child.]*

With this kiss take my blessing: God protect  
thee!

Into whose hands I give thy life.

*Cran.* Amen.

*K. Hen.* My noble gossips, ye have been too  
prodigal:

I thank ye heartily; so shall this lady,  
When she has so much English.

*Cran.* Let me speak, Sir,  
For heaven now bids me; and the words I  
utter

Let none think flattery, for they'll find them  
truth.

This royal infant, (heaven still move about  
her!)

Though in her cradle, yet now promises  
Upon this land a thousand thousand blessings,  
Which time shall bring to ripeness: She shall  
be

(But few now living can behold that goodness.)  
A pattern to all princes living with her,  
And all that shall succeed: Sheba was never

More covetous of wisdom, and fair virtue,  
Than this pure soul shall be: all princely

graces,  
That mould up such a mighty piece as this is,  
With all the virtues that attend the good,

Shall still be doubled on her: truth shall nurse  
her,

Holy and heavenly thoughts still counsel  
her:

She shall be lov'd and fear'd: Her own shall  
bless her:

Her foes shake like a field of beaten corn,  
And hang their heads with sorrow: Good

grows with her:  
In her days, every man shall eat in safety  
Under his own vine, what he plants; and sing

The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours:  
God shall be truly known; and those about her  
From her shall read the perfect ways of hon-

our,  
And by those claim their greatness, not by  
blood.

*[Nor \* shall this peace sleep with her: But as  
when*

The bird of wonder dies, the maiden phoenix,  
Her ashes new create another heir,  
As great in admiration as herself;

So shall she leave her blessedness to one,  
(When heaven shall call her from this cloud of  
darkness.)

Who, from the sacred ashes of her honour,  
Shall star-like rise, as great in fame as she  
was,

And so stand fix'd: Peace, plenty, love, truth,  
terror,

That ere the servants to this chosen infant,  
Shall then be big, and like a vine grow to him;

Wherever the bright sun of heaven shall shine,  
His honour and the greatness of his name

Shall be, and make new nations: He shall  
flourish,

And, like a mountain cedar, reach his branches  
To all the plains about him:—Our children's  
children

Shall see this, and bless heaven.

*K. Hen.* Thou speakest wonders. *[Land.*

*Cran.* She shall be, to the happiness of Eng-

\* These lines to the interruption by the king seem to have been inserted at a subsequent period.

An aged princess ; many days shall see her,\*  
And yet no day without a deed to crown it.  
'Would I had known no more ! but she must die,

She must, the saints must have her ; yet a virgin,

A most unpotted lily shall she pass  
To the ground, and all the world shall mourn her.

*K. Hen.* O lord archbishop, —  
Thou hast made me now a man ; never, before  
This happy child, did I get any thing :  
This oracle of comfort has so pleas'd me,  
That, when I am in heaven, I shall desire  
To see what this child does, and praise my Maker. —

I thank ye all, — To you, my good lord mayor,  
And your good brethren, I am much beholden ;  
I have receiv'd much honour by your presence,  
And ye shall find me thankful. Lead the way,  
lords ; —

Ye must all see the queen, and she must thank ye,

\* As this play was probably written in the time of Queen Elizabeth, it is easily determined where Cranmer's eulogium terminated.

She will be sick else. This day, no man think  
He has business at his house ; for all shall stay,  
This little one shall make it holiday. [*Exeunt.*]

## EPILOGUE.\*

'Tis ten to one, this play can never please  
All that are here : Some come to take their ease,

And sleep an act or two ; but those, we fear,  
We have frighted with our trumpets ; so, 'tis clear

They'll say, 'tis naught : others, to hear the city

Abus'd extremely, and to cry, — *that's witty !*  
Which we have not done neither ; that, I fear,  
All the expected good we are like to hear

For this play at this time, is only in  
The merciful construction of good women ;  
For such a one we show'd them : If they smile,

And say, 'twill do, I know, within a while  
All the best men are our's ; for 'tis ill hap,  
If they hold, when their ladies bid them clap.

\* It is supposed that the epilogue and prologue to this play were both written by Ben Jonson.

# A MIDSUMMER NIGHT'S DREAM.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE title of this play was probably suggested (like *Twelfth Night*, and *The Winter's Tale*.) by the time at which it was first performed; viz. at Midsummer i.e. thus it would be announced as "A Dream for the Entertainment of a Midsummer Night." No other ground can be assigned for the name which our author has given to it; since the action is distinctly pointed out as occurring on the night preceding May-day. The piece was written in 1592; and, according to Stevens, might have been suggested by the Knight's Tale in Chaucer, or, as Capell supposes, Shakspeare may have taken the idea of his fairies from Drayton's fantastical poem, called *Nymphidia*, or, *The Court of Fairy*. Mason, however, denies that our poet made use of the materials which Shakspeare had rendered so popular; and asserts (in opposition to Johnson) that there is no analogy or resemblance between the faeries of the one, and the fairies of the other. The same critics are also at issue upon the general merits of this singular play. Johnson declares that "all the parts, in their various modes, are well written." Malone, that the principal personages are insignificant—the fable meagre and uninteresting. Hippolyta, the Amazon, is undistinguished from any other female; and the solitudes of Hermia and Demetrius, of Lysander and Helena, are childish and frivolous. Theseus, the companion of Hercules, is not engaged in any adventure worthy his rank and reputation: "he goes out a Maying; meets the lovers in perplexity, and makes no effort to promote their happiness; but when supernatural events have reconciled them, he joins their company, and concludes the entertainment by uttering some miserable puns, at an interlude represented by clowns." These faults are, however, almost wholly redeemed, by the glowing fervour, and varied imagination, which Shakspeare has displayed in the poetry; by the rich characteristic humour (free from the taint of grossness) which enlivens the blunt-witted devices of his theatrical tailors and cobblers; and by the admirable satire which he has passed on those self-conceited actors, who (not unlike some modern "stars") would monopolize the favours of the public, trample upon every competitor, and "bear the palm alone." Bottom was perhaps the leading tragedian of some rival house, and on that account is honoured with an ass's head.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

THESEUS, *Duke of Athens.*  
EGEUS, *Father to Hermia.*  
LYSANDER, } *in love with Hermia.*  
DEMETRIUS, }  
PHILOSTRATE, *Master of the Revels to Theseus.*  
QUINCE, *the Carpenter.*  
SNUG, *the Joiner.*  
BOTTOM, *the Weaver.*  
FLUTE, *the Bellows-mender.*  
SNOUT, *the Tinker.*  
STARVELING, *the Tailor.*  
  
HIPPOLYTA, *Queen of the Amazons, betrothed to Theseus.*  
HERMIA, *Daughter to Egeus, in love with Lysander.*

HELENA, *in love with Demetrius*  
OBERON, *King of the Fairies.*  
TITANIA, *Queen of the Fairies.*  
PUCK, *or Robin-goodfellow, a Fairy.*  
PEASEBLOSSOM,  
COBWEB,  
MOTH,  
MUSTARDSEED,  
PYRAMUS,  
THISBE,  
WALL,  
MOONSHINE,  
LION,  
} *Fairies.*  
} *Characters in the Interlude performed by the Clowns*  
  
*Other Fairies attending their King and Queen.*  
  
*Attendants on Theseus and Hippolyta.*

SCENE—Athens, and a Wood not far from it.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Athens.—A Room in the Palace of THESEUS.

Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, PHILOSTRATE, and Attendants.

*The.* Now, fair Hippolyta, our nuptial hour Draws on apace; four happy days bring in Another moon: but, oh! methinks, how slow This old moon wanes! she lingers my desires,

Like to a step-dame, or a dowager,  
Long withering out a young man's revenue.  
*Hip.* Four days will quickly steep themselves in nights;  
Four nights will quickly dream away the time;  
And then the moon, like to a silver bow New bent in heaven, shall behold the night Of our solemnities.  
*The.* Go, Philostrate,  
Stir up the Athenian youth to merriments;  
Awake the pert and nimble spirit of mirth;

Turn melancholy forth to funerals,  
The pale companion is not for our pomp.

[Exit PHILOSTRATE.]

Hippolyta, I woo'd thee with my sword,  
And won thy love, doing thee injuries;  
But I will wed thee in another key,  
With pomp, with triumph,\* and with revel-  
ling.

Enter EGGEUS, HERMIA, LYSANDER, and  
DEMETRIUS.

Ege. Happy be Theseus, our renowned duke!

The. Thanks, good Egeus: What's the news  
with thee?

Ege. Full of vexation come I, with complaint  
Against my child, my daughter Hermia.—  
Stand forth, Demetrius;—My noble lord,  
This man hath my consent to marry her:—  
Stand forth, Lysander;—and, my gracious  
duke,

This hath bewitch'd the bosom of my child:  
Thou, thou, Lysander, thou hast given her  
rhymes,

And interchang'd love-tokens with my child:  
Thou hast by moon-light at her window sung,  
With feigning voice, verses of feigning love:  
And stol'n the impression of her fantasy  
With bracelets of thy hair, rings, gawds,† con-  
ceits,

Knacks, trifles, nosegays, sweetmeats; messen-  
gers  
Of strong prevailment in unhardened youth:  
With cunning hast thou slich'd my daughter's  
heart;

Turn'd her obedience, which is due to me,  
To stubborn harshness:—And, my gracious  
duke,

Be it so she will not here before your grace  
Consent to marry with Demetrius,  
I beg the ancient privilege of Athens;  
As she is mine, I may dispose of her:  
Which shall be either to this gentleman,  
Or to her death; according to our law,  
Immediately provided in that case.

The. What say you, Hermia? be advis'd, fair  
maid:

To you your father should be as a god;  
One that compos'd your beauties; yea, and  
one

To whom you are but as a form in wax,  
By him imprinted, and within his power  
To leave the figure, or disfigure it.  
Demetrius is a worthy gentleman.

Her. So is Lysander.

The. In himself he is:  
But, in this kind, wanting your father's voice,  
The other must be held the worthier.

Her. I would, my father look'd but with my  
eyes.

The. Rather your eyes must with his judg-  
ment look.

Her. I do entreat your grace to pardon me.  
I know not by what power I am made bold;  
Nor how it may concern my modesty,  
In such a presence here, to plead my thoughts:  
But I beseech your grace that I may know  
The worst that may befall me in this case,  
If I refuse to wed Demetrius.

The. Either to die the death, or to abjure  
For ever the society of men.  
Therefore, fair Hermia, question your desires,  
Know of your youth, examine well your blood,  
Whether, if you yield not to your father's  
choice,

You can endure the livery of a nun;  
For aye† to be in shady cloister mew'd,  
To live a barren sister all your life,  
Chanting faint hymns to the cold fruitless  
moon.

Thrice blessed they, that master so their  
blood,  
To undergo such maiden pilgrimage:

But earthlier happy is the rose distill'd,  
Than that, which, withering on the virgin  
thorn,  
Grows, lives, and dies, in single blessed-  
ness.

Her. So will I grow, so live, so die, my  
lord,

Ere I will yield my virgin patent up  
Unto his lordship, whose unwish'd yoke  
My soul consents not to give sovereignty.

The. Take time to pause: and by the next  
new moon,

(The sealing-day betwixt my love and me,  
For everlasting bond of fellowship,)

Upon that day either prepare to die,  
For disobedience to your father's will;

Or else, to wed Demetrius, as he would:  
Or on Diana's altar to protest,  
For aye, austerity and single life.

Dem. Relent, sweet Hermia;—And, Lysan-  
der, yield

Thy crazed title to my certain right.

Lys. You have her father's love, Deme-  
trius;

Let me have Hermia's: do you marry him.

Ege. Scornful Lysander! true, he hath my  
love;

And what is mine my love shall render him;  
And she is mine; and all my right of her  
I do estate unto Demetrius.

Lys. I am, my lord, as well deriv'd as he,  
As well possess'd; my love is more than his;

My fortunes every way as fairly rank'd,  
If not with vantage, as Demetrius';

And, which is more than all these boasts cau-  
se,

I am belov'd of beauteous Hermia:  
Why should not I then prosecute my right?

Demetrius, I'll avouch it to his head,  
Made love to Nedar's daughter, Helena,

And won her soul; and she, sweet lady, dotes,  
Devoutly dotes, dotes in idolatry,

Upon this spotted\* and inconstant man.

The. I must confess, that I have heard so  
much,

And with Demetrius thought to have spoke  
thereof;

But, being over-full of self-affairs,  
My mind did lose it.—But, Demetrius, come;

And come, Egeus; you shall go with me,  
I have some private schooling for you both.—

For you, fair Hermia, look you arm yourself  
To fit your fancies to your father's will;

Or else the law of Athens yield you up  
(Which by no means we may extenuate,)

To death, or to a vow of single life.—  
Come, my Hippolyta; What cheer, my love?—

Demetrius, and Egeus, go along:  
I must employ you in some business  
Against our nuptial; and confer with you  
Of something nearly that concerns yourselves.

Ege. With duty and desire we follow you.

[Exeunt THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, EGGEUS, DEMETRIUS, and  
LYSANDER.]

Lys. How now, my love? Why is your cheek  
so pale?

Her. How chance the roses there do fade so fast?

Her. Belike for want of rain; which I could  
well

Beteem them† from the tempest of mine eyes.

Lys. Ah! me, for aught that ever I could  
read,

Could ever hear by tale or history,  
The course of true love never did run smooth:

But, either it was different in blood;  
Her. O cross! too high to be enthrall'd to  
low!

Lys. Or else misgraffed, in respect of years

Her. O spite! too old to be engag'd to  
young!

Lys. Or else it stood upon the choice of  
friends:

Her. O hell! to choose love by another's eye?

† Baubles.

\* Shows

‡ Even.

• Wicked.

† Give, bestow.



*Lys.* Or, if there were a sympathy in choice,  
War, death, or sickness did lay siege to it;  
Making it momentary as a sound,  
Swift as a shadow, short as any dream;  
Brief as the lightning in the collied<sup>\*</sup> night,  
That in a spleen, unfolds both heaven and earth,

And ere a man hath power to say,—Behold!  
The jaws of darkness do devour it up:  
So quick bright things come to confusion.

*Her.* If then true lovers have been ever cross'd,

It stands as an edict in destiny:  
Then let us teach our trial patience,  
Because it is a customary cross;  
As due to love, as thoughts, and dreams, and wishes,  
And tears, poor fancy's<sup>†</sup> followers.

*Lys.* A good persuasion: therefore, hear me, Hermia.

I have a widow aunt, a dowager  
Of great revenue, and she hath no child:  
From Athens is her house remote seven leagues;

And she respects me as her only son.  
There, gentle Hermia, may I marry thee;  
And to that place the sharp Athenian law  
Cannot pursue us: If thou lov'st me then,  
Steal forth thy father's house to-morrow night;  
And in the wood, a league without the town,  
Where I did meet thee once with Helena,  
To do observance to a morn of May,  
There will I stay for thee.

*Her.* My good Lysander!

I swear to thee, by Cupid's strongest bow;  
By his best arrow with the golden head;  
By the simplicity of Venus' doves;  
By that which knitteth souls, and prospers loves;

And by that fire which burn'd the Carthage queen,

When the false Trojan under sail was seen;  
By all the vows that ever men have broke,  
In number more than ever woman spoke;—  
In that same place thou hast appointed me,  
To-morrow truly will I meet with thee.

*Lys.* Keep promise, love: Look, here comes Helena.

*Enter HELENA.*

*Her.* God speed fair Helena! Whither away?

*Hel.* Call you me fair? that fair again unsay.

Demetrius loves your fair: O happy fair!  
Your eyes are lodestars; and your tongue's sweet air

More tuneable than lark to shepherd's ear,  
When wheat is green, when hawthorn buds appear.

Sickness is catching; Oh! were favour<sup>‡</sup> so!  
Your's would I catch, fair Hermia, ere I go;  
My ear should catch your voice, my eye your eye,

My tongue should catch your tongue's sweet melody.

Were the world mine, Demetrius being hated,  
The rest I'll give to be to you translated.  
O teach me how you look; and with what art  
You sway the motion of Demetrius' heart.

*Her.* I frown upon him, yet he loves me still.

*Hel.* Oh! that your frowns would teach my smiles such skill!

*Her.* I give him curses, yet he gives me love.

*Hel.* Oh! that my prayers could such affection move!

*Her.* The more I hate, the more he follows me.

*Hel.* The more I love, the more he hateth me.

*Her.* His folly, Helena, is no fault of mine.

*Hel.* None, but your beauty; Would that fault were mine!

*Her.* Take comfort; he no more shall see my face;

Lysander and myself will fly this place.—

Before the time I did Lysander see,

Seem'd Athens as a paradise to me:

O then, what graces in my love do dwell,

That he hath turn'd a heaven into hell!

*Lys.* Helena, to you our minds we will unfold:

To-morrow night when Phœbe doth behold

Her silver visage in the wat'ry glass,

Decking with liquid pearl the bladed grass,

(A time that lovers' flights doth still conceal),

Through Athens' gates have we devis'd to steal.

*Her.* And in the wood, where often you and I

Upon faint primrose-beds were wont to lie,

Emptying our bosoms of their counsel sweet:

There my Lysander and myself shall meet:

And thence, from Athens turn away our eyes,

To seek new friends and stranger companions.

Farewell, sweet playfellow; pray thou for us,

And good luck grant thee thy Demetrius!

Keep word, Lysander: we must starve our sight

From lovers' food, till morrow deep midnight.

*Lys.* I will, my Hermia.—Helena, adieu!

As you on him, Demetrius, dote on you!

*[Exit LYSANDER.]*

*Hel.* How happy some, o'er other some can be!

Through Athens I am thought as fair as she.

But what of that? Demetrius thinks not so;

He will not know what all but he do know.

And as he errs, doting on Hermia's eyes,

So I, admiring of his qualities.

Things base and vile, holding no quantity,

Love can transpoose to form and dignity.

Love looks not with the eyes, but with the mind;

And therefore is winged Cupid painted blind:

Nor hath love's mind of any judgment taste;

Wings, and no eyes, figure unheedy haste:

And therefore is love said to be a child,

Because in choice he is so oft beguild.

As waggish boys in game<sup>§</sup> themselves forswear,

So the boy love is perjur'd every where:

For ere Demetrius look'd on Hermia's eyne,<sup>†</sup>

He hail'd down oaths, that he was only mine;

And when this hail some heat from Hermia felt,

So he dissolv'd, and showers of oaths did melt.

I will go tell him of fair Hermia's flight:

Then to the wood will he, to-morrow night,

Pursue her; and for this intelligence

If I have thanks, it is a dear expense:

But herein mean I to enrich my pain.

To have his sight thither, and back again.

*[Exit.]*

*SCENE II.—The same.—A Room in a Cottage.*

*Enter SNUG, BOTTOM, FLUTE, SNOUT, QUINCE, and STARVELING.*

*Quin.* Is all our company here?

*Bot.* You were best to call them generally, man by man, according to the scrip.

*Quin.* Here is the scroll of every man's name, which is thought fit, through all Athens, so play in our interlude before the duke and duchess, on his wedding-day at night.

*Bot.* First, good Peter Quince, say what the play treats on; then read the names of the actors; and so grow to a point.

*Quin.* Marry, our play is—The most lament-

\* Black.  
‡ Faint stars.

† Loves.  
§ Countenance.

\* Sport

† Eyes.

able comedy, and most cruel death of Pyramus and Thisby.

*Bot.* A very good piece of work, I assure you, and a merry.—Now, good Peter Quince, call forth your actors by the scroll: Masters, spread yourselves.

*Quin.* Answer as I call you.—Nick Bottom, the weaver.

*Bot.* Ready: Name what part I am for, and proceed.

*Quin.* You, Nick Bottom are set down for Pyramus.

*Bot.* What is Pyramus? a lover, or a tyrant?

*Quin.* A lover, that kills himself most gallantly for love.

*Bot.* That will ask some tears in the true performing of it: If I do it, let the audience look to their eyes: I will move storms, I will condole in some measure. To the rest:—Yet my chief humour is for a tyrant: I could play Hercules rarely, or a part to tear a cat in, to make all split.

"The raging rocks,  
"With shivering shocks,  
"Shall break the locks  
"Of prison-gates:  
"And Phibbus' car  
"Shall shine from far,  
"And make and mar  
"The foolish fates."

This was lofty!—Now, name the rest of the players.—This is Hercules' vein, a tyrant's vein; a lover is more condoling.

*Quin.* Francia Flute, the bellows-mender.

*Flu.* Here, Peter Quince.

*Quin.* You must take Thisby on you.

*Flu.* What is Thisby? a wandering knight?

*Quin.* It is the lady that Pyramus must love.

*Flu.* Nay, faith let me not play a woman; I have a beard coming.

*Quin.* That's all one; you shall play it in a mask, and you may speak as small as you will.

*Bot.* An I may hide my face, let me play Thisby too: I'll speak in a monstrous little voice;—*Thisbe, Thisbe,—Ah! Pyramus, my lover dear; thy Thisby dear! and lady dear!*

*Quin.* No, no; you must play Pyramus, and, Flute, you Thisby.

*Bot.* Well, proceed.

*Quin.* Robin Starveling, the tailor.

*Star.* Here, Peter Quince.

*Quin.* Robin Starveling, you must play Thisby's mother.—Tom Snout, the tinker.

*Snout.* Here, Peter Quince.

*Quin.* You, Pyramus' father; myself, Thisby's father;—Snug, the joiner, you, the lion's part:—and, I hope, here is a play fitted.

*Snug.* Have you the lion's part written? pray you, if it be, give it me, for I am slow of study.

*Quin.* You may do it extempore, for it is nothing but roaring.

*Bot.* Let me play the lion too: I will roar, that I will do any man's heart good to hear me; I will roar, that I will make the duke say, *Let him roar again, Let him roar again.*

*Quin.* An you should do it too terribly, you would fright the duchess and the ladies, that they would shriek: and that were enough to hang us all.

*All.* That would hang us every mother's son.

*Bot.* I grant you, friends, if that you should fright the ladies out of their wits, they would have no more discretion but to hang us: but I will aggravate my voice so, that I will roar you as gently as any sucking dove; I will roar you an 'twere any nightingale.

*Quin.* You can play no part but Pyramus: for Pyramus is a sweet-faced man; a proper man, as one shall see in a summer's day; a most lovely, gentleman-like man; therefore you must needs play Pyramus.

• As if.

*Bot.* Well, I will undertake it. What beard were I best to play it in?

*Quin.* Why, what you will.

*Bot.* I will discharge it in either your straw-coloured beard, your orange-tawny beard, your purple-in-grain beard, or your French-crown-colour beard, your perfect yellow.

*Quin.* Some of your French crowns have no hair at all, and then you will play bare-faced.—But, masters, here are your parts: and I am to entreat you, request you, and desire you, to con them by to-morrow night; and meet me in the palace wood, a mile without the town, by moon-light; there will we rehearse: for if we meet in the city, we shall be dog'd with company, and our devices known. In the mean time I will draw a bill of properties,\* such as our play wants. I pray you, fail me not.

*Bot.* We will meet; and there we may rehearse more obscenely, and courageously. Take pains; be perfect; adieu.

*Quin.* At the duke's oak we meet.

*Bot.* Enough; Hold, or cut bow-strings.†

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—A Wood near Athens.

*Enter a FAIRY at one door, and PUCK at another.*

*Puck.* How now, spirit! whither wander you?

*Fai.* Over hill, over dale,

Thorough bush, thorough brier,

Over park, over pale,

Thorough flood, thorough fire,

I do wander every where,

Swifter than the moon's sphere;

And I serve the fairy queen,

To dew her orbs upon the green:

The cowslips tall her pensioners be,

In their gold coats spots you see;

Those be rubies, fairy favours,

In those freckles live their savours:

I must go seek some dew-drops here,

And hang a pearl in every cowslip's ear.

Farewell, thou lo'st of spirits, I'll be gone;

Our queen and all our elves come here anon.

*Puck.* The king doth keep his revels here to-night;

Take heed, the queen come not within his sight,

For Oberon is passing fell and wrath,

Because that she, as her attendant, hath

A lovely boy, stol'n from an Indian king;

She never had so sweet a changeling:

And jealous Oberon would have the child

Knight of his train, to trace the forests wild;

But she, perforce, withholds the loved boy,

Crowns him with flowers, and makes him all

her joy;

And now they never meet in grove, or green,

By fountain clear, or spangled star-light seen,‡

But they do square;§ that all their elves, for

fear,

Creep into acorn cups, and hide them there.

*Fai.* Either I mistake your shape and making quite,

Or else you are that shrewd and knavish sprite,

Call'd Robin Good-fellow: are you not he,

That fright the maidens of the villagery;

Skim milk; and sometimes labour in the quern,\*\*

And bootless make the breathless housewife

churn;

And sometime make the drink to bear no

barm;††

Mislead night-wanderers, laughing at their

Those that Hobgoblin call you, and sweet Puck

You do their work, and they shall have go-

luck:

Are not you he?

\* Articles required in performing a play.

† At all event. ‡ Circles. § A term of contempt.

|| Shaming. ¶ Quarrel. \*\* Mill. †† Yeast.

*Puck.* Thou speak'st aright ;  
I am that merry wanderer of the night.  
I jest to Oberon, and make him smile,  
When I a fat and bean-fed horse beguile,  
Neighing in likeness of a filly foal :  
And sometimes lurk I in a gossip's bowl,  
In very likeness of a roasted crab ; \*  
And, when she drinks, against her lips I bob,  
And on her wither'd dew-lap pour the ale.  
The wisest aunt, telling the saddest tale,  
Sometime for three-foot stool mistaketh me ;  
Then slip I from her bum, down topples she,  
And tailor cries, and falls into a cough ;  
And then the whole quire hold their hips, and  
loffe ;  
And waxen in their mirth, and neeze, and swear  
A merrier hour was never wasted there.—  
But room, Fairy here comes Oberon.  
*Fai.* And here my mistress :—'Would that  
he were gone !

## SCENE II.

*Enter OBERON, at one door, with his train,  
and TITANIA, at another, with her's.*

*Obe.* Ill met by moon-light, proud Titania.

*Tita.* What, jealous Oberon ? Fairy, skip  
hence ;

I have forsworn his bed and company.

*Obe.* Tarry, rash wanton : Am not I thy lord ?

*Tita.* Then I must be thy lady : But I know  
When thou hast stol'n away from fairy land,  
And in the shape of Corin sat all day,  
Playing on pipes of corn, and versing love  
To amorous Philida. Why art thou here,  
Come from the farthest steep of India ?  
But that, forsooth, the bouncing Amazon,  
Your buskin'd mistress, and your warrior love,  
To Theseus must be wedded : and you come  
To give their bed joy and prosperity.

*Obe.* How canst thou thus, for shame, Tita-  
nia,  
Glance at my credit with Hyppolyta,  
Knowing I know thy love to Theseus ?  
Didst thou not lead him through the glimmer-  
ing night

From Perigenia, whom he ravish'd ?  
And make him with fair Egle break his faith,  
With Antiope, and Antiope ?

*Tita.* These are the forgeries of jealousy :  
And never, since the middle summer's spring,  
Met we on hill, in dale, forest, or mead,  
By paved fountain or by rusby brook,  
Or on the beached margin of the sea,  
To dance our ringlets to the whistling wind,  
But with thy brawls thou hast disturb'd our  
sport.

Therefore the winds piping to us in vain,  
As in revenge, have suck'd up from the sea  
Contagious fogs ; which falling in the land,  
Have every pelting river made so proud,  
That they have overborne their continents : ‡  
The ox hath therefore stretch'd his yoke in vain,  
The ploughman lost his sweat ; and the green  
corn

Hath rotted, ere his youth attain'd a beard :  
The fold stands empty in the drowned field,  
And crows are fatted with the murrain flock ;  
The nine men's morris § is fill'd up with mud ;  
And the quaint mazes in the wanton green,  
For lack of tread are undistinguishable :  
The human mortals want their winter here ;  
No night is now with hymn or carol blest :—  
Therefore the moon, the governess of floods,  
Pale in her anger, washes all the air,  
That rheumatic diseases do abound :  
And thorough this distemperature, we see  
The seasons alter : hoary-headed frosts  
Fall in the fresh lap of the crimson rose ;  
And on old Hymen's chin, and icy crown,  
An odorous chaplet of sweet summer buds

\* Wild apple. † Petty.  
‡ Banks which contain them.  
§ A game played by boys.

Is, as in mockery, set : The spring, the summer,  
The chiding \* autumn, angry winter change  
Their wonted liveries ; and the 'mazed world,  
By their increase, † now knows not which is  
which :

And this same progeny of evils comes  
From our debate, from our dissension ;  
We are their parents and original.

*Obe.* Do you amend it then ; it lies in you :  
Why should Titania cross her Oberon ?  
I do but beg a little changeling boy,  
To be my henchman. ‡

*Tita.* Set your heart at rest,  
The fairy land buys not the child of me.  
His mother was a votaress of my order :  
And, in the spiced Indian air, by night,  
Full often hath she gossip'd by my side ;  
And sat with me on Neptune's yellow sands,  
Marking the embarked traders on the flood ;  
When we have laugh'd to see the sails conceive,  
And grow big-bellied, with the wanton wind :  
Which she, with pretty and with swimming  
gait,  
(Following her womb, then rich with my young  
squire,)

Would imitate ; and sail upon the land,  
To fetch me trifles, and return again,  
As from a voyage, rich with merchandise.  
But she, being mortal, of that boy did die ;  
And, for her sake, I do rear up her boy :  
And for her sake, I will not part with him.

*Obe.* How long within this wood intend you  
stay ?

*Tita.* Perchance, till after Theseus' wedding-  
day.

If you will patiently dance in our round,  
And see our moon-light revels, go with us ;  
If not, shun me, and I will spare your haunts.

*Obe.* Give me that boy, and I will go with  
thee.

*Tita.* Not for thy kingdom.—Fairies, away :  
We shall chide down-right, if I longer stay.

*(Exeunt TITANIA, and her train.)*

*Obe.* Well, go thy way : thou shalt not from  
this grove,  
Till I torment thee for this injury.—  
My gentle Puck, come hither : Thou remember'st  
Since once I sat upon a promontory,  
And heard a mermaid, on a dolphin's back,  
Uttering such dulcet and harmonious breath,  
That the rude sea grew civil at her song ;  
And certain stars shot madly from their spheres,  
To hear the sea-maid's music.

*Puck.* I remember.

*Obe.* That very time I saw, (but thou could'st  
not,)

Flying between the cold moon and the earth,  
Cupid all arm'd : a certain aim he took  
At a fair vestal, throned by the west ;  
And loos'd his love-shaft smartly from his bow  
As it should pierce a hundred thousand hearts :  
But I might see young Cupid's fiery shaft  
Quench'd in the chaste beams of the wat'ry  
moon ;

And the imperial votaress passed on,  
In maiden meditation, fancy-free. §  
Yet mark'd I where the bolt of Cupid fell :  
It fell upon a little western flower.—  
Before, milk-white ; now purple with love's  
wound,—

And maidens call it, love-in-idleness.  
Fetch me that flower ; the herb I show'd thee  
once :

The juice of it on sleeping eye-lids laid,  
Will make or man or woman madly dote  
Upon the next live creature that it sees.  
Fetch me this herb : and be thou here again,  
Ere the leviathan can swim a league.

*Puck.* I'll put a girdle round about the earth  
In forty minutes. *[Exit Puck,]*

*Obe.* Having once this juice,

\* Autumn producing flowers unseasonably.  
† Produce. ‡ Page. § Exempt from love.

I'll watch Titania when she is asleep,  
And drop the liquor of it in her eyes :  
The next thing then she waking looks upon,  
(Be it on lion, bear, or wolf, or bull,  
On meddling monkey, or on busy ape,)  
She shall pursue it with the soul of love.  
And ere I take this charm off from her sight,  
(As I can take it, with another herb,)  
I'll make her render up her page to me.  
But who comes here ? I am invisible ;  
And I will over-hear their conference.

*Enter DEMETRIUS, HELENA following him.*

*Dem.* I love thee not, therefore pursue me not.

Where is Lysander, and fair Hermia ?  
The one I'll slay, the other slayeth me.  
Thou told'st me, they were stol'n into this wood,

And here am I, and wood \* within this wood,  
Because I cannot meet with Hermia.  
Hence, get thee gone, and follow me no more.

*Hel.* You draw me, you hard-hearted adamant ;

But yet you draw not iron, for my heart  
Is true as steel : Leave you your power to draw,

And I shall have no power to follow you.

*Dem.* Do I entice you ? Do I speak you fair ?  
Or, rather, do I not in plainest truth  
Tell you—I do not, nor I cannot love you ?

*Hel.* And even for that do I love you the more,

I am your spaniel ; and, Demetrius,  
The more you beat me, I will fawn on you :  
Use me but as your spaniel, spurn me, strike me,

Neglect me, lose me ; only give me leave,  
Unworthy as I am, to follow you.

What worse place can I beg in your love,  
(And yet a place of high respect with me,)  
Than to be used as you use your dog ?

*Dem.* Tempt not too much the hatred of my spirit ;

For I am sick, when I do look on thee.

*Hel.* And I am sick, when I look not on you.

*Dem.* You do impeach † your modesty too much,

To leave the city, and commit yourself  
Into the hands of one that loves you not ;  
To trust the opportunity of night,  
And the ill counsel of a desert place,  
With the rich worth of your virginity.

*Hel.* Your virtue is my privilege for that.

It is not night, when I do see your face,  
Therefore I think I am not in the night ;  
Nor doth this wood lack worlds of company ;  
For you, in my respect, are all the world :

Then how can it be said, I am alone,  
When all the world is here to look on me ?

*Dem.* I'll run from thee, and hide me in the brakes,

And leave thee to the mercy of wild beasts.

*Hel.* The wildest hath not such a heart as you.

Run when you will the story shall be chang'd ;  
Apollo flies, and Daphne holds the chase ;  
The dove pursues the griffin ; the mild hind  
Maketh speed to catch the tiger : Rootless speed !  
When cowardice pursues, and valour flies.

*Dem.* I will not stay thy questions ; let me go :

Or, if thou follow me, do not believe  
But I shall do thee mischief in the wood.

*Hel.* Ay, in the temple, in the town, the field,

You do me mischief. Fie, Demetrius !

Your wrongs do set a scandal on my sex :  
We cannot fight for love, as men may do ;  
We should be woo'd, and were not made to woo.

\* Mad, raving.  
† Bring in question.

I'll follow thee, and make a heaven of hell,  
To die upon \* the hand I love so well.

*Obe.* Fare thee well, nymph : ere he do leave  
this grove,  
Thou shalt fly him, and he shall seek thy love.—

*Re-enter PUCK.*

Hast thou the flower there ? Welcome, waderer.

*Puck.* Ay, there it is.

*Obe.* I pray thee, give it me.

I know a bank whereon the wild thyme blows,  
Where ox-lips † and the nodding violet grows ;  
Quite over-canopied with lush ‡ woodbine,  
With sweet musk-roses, and with eglantine :  
There sleeps Titania, some time of the night,  
Lull'd in these flowers with dances and delight ;

And there the snake throws her enamell'd skin,  
Weed wide enough to wrap a fairy in :  
And with the juice of this I'll streak her eyes,  
And make her full of hateful fantasies.

Take thou some of it, and seek through this grove :

A sweet Athenian lady is in love  
With a disdainful youth : anoint his eyes ;  
But do it, when the next thing he espies,  
May be the lady : Thou shalt know the man  
By the Athenian garments he hath on.  
Effect it with some care ; that he may prove  
More fond on her, than she upon her love :  
And look thou meet me ere the first cock crow.

*Puck.* Fear not, my lord, your servant shall do so. *(Exeunt.)*

### SCENE III.

*Another part of the Wood.*

*Enter TITANIA, with her train.*

*Tita.* Come, now a roundel, § and a fairy song ;

Then, for the third part of a minute, hence ;  
Some, war with rear-mice || for their leathern wings,  
To make my small elves coats ; and some, keep  
The clamorous owl, that nightly hoots, and wonders

At our quaint spirits : ¶ Sing me now asleep ;  
Then to your offices, and let me rest.

#### SONG.

1 *Fai.* You spotted snakes, with double tongue,  
Thorn hedge-hogs, be not seen ;  
*Newts, \*\* and blind-worms, †† do no wrong ;*

*Come not near our fairy queen :*

#### CHORUS.

*Philomel, with melody,  
Sing in our sweet lullaby ;  
Lulla, lulla, lullaby ; lulla, lulla, lullaby :*

*Never harm, nor spell nor charm,  
Come our lovely lady nigh :  
So, good night, with lullaby.*

#### II.

2 *Fai.* Weaving spiders, come not here,  
Hence, you long-legg'd spinners  
hence :

*Beetles black, approach not near ;  
Worm, nor snail, do no offence.*

#### CHORUS.

*Philomel, with melody, &c.*

1 *Fai.* Hence, away ; now all is well :  
One, aloof, stand sentinel.

*Exeunt Fairies.—TITANIA sleeps.*

\* By. † The greater cowslip. ‡ Vigorous.  
§ A kind of dance. ¶ Bats. ¶ Sports.  
\*\* Efts. †† slow-worms.

Enter OBERON.

Obe. What thou seest, when thou dost wake,  
[Squeezes the power on TITANIA'S eye-lids.]  
Do it for thy true love take;  
Love, and languish for his sake;  
Be it ounce,\* or cat, or bear,  
Pard, or boar with bristled hair,  
In thy eye that shall appear  
When thou wak'st, it is thy dear; }  
Wake, when some vile thing is near. }

[Exit.

Enter LYSANDER and HERMIA.

Lys. Fair love, you salut with wandering in  
the wood;  
And to speak troth, I have forgot our way;  
We'll rest us, Hermia, if you think it good,  
And tarry for the comfort of the day.  
Her. Be it so, Lysander: find you out a  
bed,  
For I upon this bank will rest my head.

Lys. One turf shall serve as pillow for us  
both;

One heart, one bed, two bosoms, and one troth.  
Her. Nay, good Lysander; for my sake, my  
dear,

Lie further off yet, do not lie so near.

Lys. O take the sense, sweet, of my inno-  
cence;

Love take the meaning, in love's conference.

I mean, that my heart unto your's is knit;  
So that but one heart we can make of it:  
Two bosoms interchaung'd with an oath;  
So then, two bosoms, and a single troth.  
Then, by your side no bed-room me deny;  
For, lying so, Hermia, I do not lie.

Her. Lysander riddles very prettily:—  
Now much besheiw my manners and my  
pride,

If Hermia meant to say, Lysander lied.  
But, gentle friend, for love and courtesy  
Lie further off; in human modesty  
Such separation, as, may well be said,  
Becomes a virtuous bachelor and a maid:  
So far be distant; and good night, sweet friend:  
Thy love ne'er alter, till thy sweet life end!

Lys. Amen, amen, to that fair prayer, say I;  
And then end life, when I end loyalty!  
Here is my bed: Sleep give thee all his rest!

Her. With all that wish the wisher's eyes be  
press'd!

[They sleep.

Enter PUCK.

Puck. Through the forest have I gone,  
But Athenian found I none,  
On whose eyes I might approve  
This flower's force in stirring love.  
Night and silence! who is here?  
Weeds of Athens be doth wear:  
This is he, my master said,  
Desol'd the Athenian maid:  
And here the maiden, sleeping sound,  
On the dank and dirty ground.  
Picty soul! she durst not lie  
Near this lack-love, kill-courtesy.  
Churl, upon thy eyes I throw  
All the power this charm doth owe:  
When thou wak'st, let love forbid  
Sleep his seat on thy eye-lid.  
So awake, when I am gone;  
For I must now to Oberon.

[Exit.

Enter DEMETRIUS and HELENA, running.

Hel. Stay, though thou kill me, sweet Demo-  
trius.

Dem. I charge thee, hence, and do not haunt  
me thus.

Hel. O wilt thou darkness? leave me? do  
not so.

Dem. Stay, on thy peril; I alone will go.  
[Exit DEMETRIUS.

Hel. Oh! I am out of breath in this fond  
chase!

The more my prayer, the lesser is my grace.  
Happy is Hermia, wheresoe'er she lies;  
For she hath blessed and attractive eyes.  
How came her eyes so bright? Not with salt  
tears:

If so, my eyes are oftener wash'd than her's.

No, no, I am as ugly as a bear;

For beasts that meet me, run away for fear:

Therefore, no marvel, though Demetrius

Do, as a monster, fly my presence thus.

What wicked and dissembling glass of mine

Made me compare with Hermia's spheny eye?—

But who is here?—Lysander! on the ground!

Dead? or asleep? I see no blood, no wound:—

Lysander, if you live, good Sir, awake.

Lys. And run through fire I will, for thy sweet  
sake.

[Waking.

Transparent Helena! Nature here shows art,  
That through thy bosom makes me see thy  
heart.

Where is Demetrius? Oh! how fit a word  
Is that vile name, to perish on my sword!

Hel. Do not say so, Lysander; say not so:  
What though he love your Hermia? Loid, what  
though?

Yet Hermia still loves you: then be content.

Lys. Content with Hermia? No: I do re-  
pent

The tedious minutes I with her have spent.

Not Hermia, but Helena I love:

Who will not change a raven for a dove?

The will of man is by his reason sway'd;

And reason says you are the worthier maid.

Things growing are not ripe until their sea-  
son:

So I, being young, till now ripe not to reason;

And touching now the point of human skill,

Reason becomes the marshal to my will,

And leads me to your eyes; where I o'erlook;

Love's stories written in love's richest book.

Hel. Wherefore was I to this keen mockery  
born?

When, at your hands, did I deserve this scorn?

Is't not enough, is't not enough, young man,

That I did never, no, nor never can,

Deserve a sweet look from Demetrius' eye,

But you must flout my insufficiency?

Good troth, you do me wrong, good sooth, you  
do.

In such disdainful manner me to woo.

But fare you well: perforce I must confess,

I thought you lord of more true gentleness.

Oh! that a lady, of one man refus'd,

Should, of another, therefore be abus'd!

[Exit.

Lys. She sees not Hermia:—Hermia, sleep  
thou there;

And never may'st thou come Lysander near!

For, as a surfeit of the sweetest things

The deepest loathing to the stomach brings;

Or, as the heresies, that pierce do leave,

Are hated most of those they did deceive;

So thou, my surfeit, and my heresy,

Of all be hated; but the most of me!

And all my powers, address your love and  
might,

To honour Helen, and to be her knight!

[Exit.

Her. [starting.] Help me, Lysander, help me,  
do thy best,

To pluck this crawling serpent from my breast!

Ah! me, for pity!—what a dream was here?

Lysander, look, how I do quake with fear:

Methought a serpent eat my heart away,

And you sat smiling at his cruel prey:—

Lysander! what, remov'd? Lysander! lord!

What, out of hearing? gone? no sound, no  
word?

Alack, where are you? speak, an if you hear;

Speak, of all loves;—I swoon almost with  
fear.

\* By all that is dear.

\* The small tiger.  
† Possess. ‡ in the dark

No!—then I well perceive you are not nigh:  
Either death, or you, I'll find immediately.

[Exit.]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same.—The Queen of Fairies lying asleep.*

Enter QUINCE, SNUG, BOTTOM, FLUTE, SNOUT, and STARVELING.

Bot. Are we all met?

Quin. Pat, pat; and here's a marvellous convenient place for our rehearsal: This green plot shall be our stage, this hawthorn brake our tyring-house; and we will do it in action, as we will do it before the duke.

Bot. Peter Quince,—

Quin. What say'st thou, bully Bottom?

Bot. There are things in this comedy of *Pyramus and Thisby*, that will never please. First, Pyramus must draw his sword to kill himself; which the ladies cannot abide. How answer you that?

Snout. By'rakin, \* a parlous fear.

Star. I believe, we must leave the killing out, when all is done.

Bot. Not a whit: I have a device to make all well. Write me a prologue: and let the prologue seem to say, we will do no harm with our swords; and that Pyramus is not killed indeed: and, for the more better assurance, tell them, that I Pyramus am not Pyramus, but Bottom the weaver: This will put them out of fear.

Quin. Well, we will have such a prologue; and it shall be written in eight and six.—

Bot. No, make it two more; let it be written in eight and eight.

Snout. Will not the ladies be afeard of the lion?

Star. I fear it, I promise you.

Bot. Masters, you ought to consider with yourselves: to bring in, God shield us! a lion among ladies, is a most dreadful thing; for there is not a more fearful \* wild-fowl than your lion, living; and we ought to look to it.

Snout. Therefore, another prologue must tell, he is not a lion.

Bot. Nay, you must name his name, and half his face must be seen through the lion's neck; and he himself must speak through, saying thus, or to the same defect,—Ladies, or fair ladies, I would wish you, or, I would request you, or, I would entreat you, not to fear, not to tremble: my life for your's. If you think I come hither as a lion, it were pity of my life: No, I am no such thing; I am a man as other men are:—and there, indeed, let him name his name; and tell them plainly, he is Snug the joiner.

Quin. Well, it shall be so. But there is two hard things: that is, to bring the moon-light into a chamber: for you know, Pyramus and Thisby meet by moon-light.

Snug. Doth the moon shine, that night we play our play?

Bot. A calendar, a calendar! look in the almanack; find out moon-shine, find out moon-shine.

Quin. Yes, it doth shine that night.

Bot. Why, then you may leave a casement of the great chamber window, where we play, open; and the moon may shine in at the casement.

Quin. Ay; or else one must come in with a bush of thorns and a lantern, and say, he comes to disfigure, or to present, the person of moon-shine. Then, there is another thing: we must have a wall in the great chamber; for

Pyramus and Thisby, says the story, did talk through the chinks of a wall.

Snug. You never can bring in a wall. What say you, Bottom?

Bot. Some man or other must present wall: and let him have some plaster, or some lome, or some rough-cast about him, to signify wall; or let him hold his fingers thus, and through that cranyn shall Pyramus and Thisby whisper.

Quin. If that may be, then all is well. Come, sit down, every mother's son, and rehearse your parts. Pyramus, you begin: when you have spoken your speech, enter into that brake \* and so every one according to his cue.

Enter PUCK behind.

Puck. What hempen home-spuns have we swaggering here,

So near the cradle of the fairy queen?

What, a play toward? I'll be an auditor;

An actor too, perhaps, if I see cause.

Quin. Speak, Pyramus:—Thisby, stand forth.

Pyr. Thisby, the flowers of odious savours sweet,—

Quin. Odours, odours.

Pyr. —odours savours sweet:

So doth thy breath, my dearest Thisby, dear.—

But, hark, a voice! stay thou but here a while.

And by and by I will to thee appear.

[Exit.]  
Puck. A stranger Pyramus than e'er play'd here!

[Aside.—Exit.]  
This. Must I speak now?

Quin. Ay, marry, must you: for you must understand, he goes but to see a noise that he heard, and is to come again.

This. Most radiant Pyramus, most lily-white of hue,

Of colour like the red rose on triumphant brier,

Most brisky juvenal,† and eke most lovely Jew,

As true as truest horse, that yet would never tire,

I'll meet thee, Pyramus, at Ninny's tomb.

Quin. Ninnus' tomb man: Why you must not speak that yet; that you answer do Pyramus: you speak all your part at once, cues‡ and all.—Pyramus enter; your cue is past; it is, never tire.

Re-enter PUCK, and BOTTOM with an ass's head.

This. O—As true as truest horse, that yet would never tire.

Pyr. If I were fair, Thisby, I were only thine:—

Quin. O monstrous! O strange! we are haunted.

Pray, masters! fly, masters! help!

[Exit Clowns.]

Puck. I'll follow you, I'll lead you about a round,

Through bog, through bush, through brake, through brier;

Sometime a horse I'll be, sometimes a hound,

A hog, a headless bear, sometime a fire;

And neigh, and bark, and grunt, and roar, and burn,

Like horse, hound, hog, bear, fire, at every turn.

[Exit.]  
Bot. Why do they run away? this is a knavery of them, to make me afeard. §

Re-enter SNOUT.

Snout. O Bottom, thou art changed! what do I see on thee?

Bot. What do you see? you see an ass's head of your own; Do you?

\* Thicker.

† Young man.

‡ The last word of the preceding speech, which serves as a hint to him who is to speak next.

§ A'fraid.

\* By our ladykin.

† Dangerous

‡ Terrible.

Re-enter QUINCE.

Quin. Bless thee, Bottom! bless thee! thou art translated. [Exit.]

Bot. I see their knavery: this is to make an ass of me; to fright me, if they could. But I will not stir from this place, do what they can: I will walk up and down here, and I will sing, that they shall hear I am not afraid. [Sings.]

*The ouzel-cock, so black of hue,  
With orange-lawney bill,  
The thrush with his note so true,  
The wren with little quill;*

Tita. What angel wakes me from my flowery bed? [Waking.]

Bot. *The finch, the sparrow, and the lark,  
The plain-song cuckoo\* gray,  
Whose note full many a man doth mark,  
And dares not answer, nay;—*

for, indeed, who would set his wit to so foolish a bird? who would give a bird the lie, though he cry, cuckoo, never so?

Tita. I pray thee, gentle mortal, sing again: Mine ear is much enamour'd of thy note, So is mine eye enthralled to thy shape; And thy fair virtue's force perforce doth move me,

On the first view, to say, to swear, I love thee.

Bot. Methinks, mistress, you should have little reason for that: And yet, to say the truth, reason and love keep little company together now-a-days: The more the pity, that some honest neighbours will not make them friends. Nay, I can glean† upon occasion.

Tita. Thou art as wise as thou art beautiful.

Bot. Not so, neither: but if I had wit enough to get out of this wood, I have enough to serve mine own turn.

Tita. Out of this wood do not desire to go; Thou shalt remain here, whether thou wilt or no. I am a spirit, of no common rate; The summer still doth tend upon my state, And I do love thee: therefore, go with me; I'll give thee fairies to attend on thee; And they shall fetch thee jewels from the deep: And sing, while thou on pressed flowers dost sleep:

And I will purge thy mortal grossness so, That thou shalt like an airy spirit go.— Peas-blossom! Cobweb! Moth! and Mustard-seed!

Enter four FAIRIES.

1 Fai. Ready.

2 Fai. And I.

3 Fai. And I.

4 Fai. Where shall we go?

Tita. Be kind and courteous to this gentleman;

Hop in his walks, and gambol in his eyes; Feed him with apricocks and dewberries,† With purple grapes, green figs, and mulberries; The honey bags steal from the humble-bees, And, for night tapers, crop their waxen thighs, And light them at the fiery glow-worm's eyes, To have my love to bed, and to arise; And pluck the wings from painted butterflies, To fan the moon-beams from his sleeping eyes: Nod to him, elves, and do him courtesies.

1 Fai. Hail, mortal!

2 Fai. Hail!

3 Fai. Hail!

4 Fai. Hail!

Bot. I cry your worship's mercy, heartily.— I beseech, your worship's name.

Cob. Cobweb.

Bot. I shall desire you of more acquaintance good master Cobweb: If I cut my finger, I shall make bold with you.—Your name, honest gentleman?

Peas. Peas-blossom.

Bot. I pray you, commend me to mistress Squash, your mother, and to master Peascod, your father. Good master Peas-blossom, I shall desire you of more acquaintance too.—Your name I beseech you, Sir?

Mus. Mustard-seed.

Bot. Good master Mustard-seed, I know your patience well: that same cowardly, giant-like ox-beef hath devoured many a gentleman of your house: I promise you, your kindred hath made my eyes water ere now. I desire you more acquaintance, good master Mustard-seed.

Tita. Come, wait upon him; lead him to my bower.

The moon, methinks, looks with a watery eye; And when she weeps, weeps every little flower, Lamenting some enforced chastity.

Tie up my love's tongue, bring him silently. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—Another part of the Wood.

Enter OBERON.

Obe. I wonder, if Titania be awak'd; Then, what it was that next came in her eye, Which she must dote on in extremity.

Enter PUCK.

Here comes my messenger.—How now, mad spirit?

What night-rule now about this haunted grove?

Puck. My mistress with a monster is in love. Near to her close and consecrated bower, While she was in her dull and sleeping hour, A crew of patches\* rude mechanicals, That work for bread upon Athenian stalls, Were met together to rehearse a play, Intended for great Theseus' nuptial day. The shallowest thick-skinned of that barren sort,† Who Pyramus presented, in their sport Forsook his scene, and enter'd in a brake: When I did him at this advantage take, An ass' now!‡ I fixed on his head; And, his Thisbe must be answered, And forth my mimick § comes; When they him spy,

As wild geese that the creeping fowler eye, Or russet-pated cloughs, many in sort, Rising and cawing at the gun's report, Sever themselves, and madly sweep the sky; So, at his sight, away his fellows fly: And, at our stamp, here o'er and o'er one falls; He murder cries, and help from Athens calls. Their sense, thus weak, lost with their fears

thus strong, Made senseless things begin to do them wrong: For briars and thorns at their apparel †-atch: Some, sleeves; some, hats: from yielders all things catch.

I led them on in this distracted fear, And left sweet Pyramus translated there: When in that moment (so it came to pass), Titania wak'd, and straightway lov'd an ass.

Obe. This falls out better than I could devise. But hast thou yet latch'd || the Athenian's eyes With the love-juice, as I did bid thee do?

Puck. I took him sleeping,—that is finish'd too,—

And the Athenian woman by his side; That when he wak'd, of force she must be ey'd.

Enter DEMETRIUS AND HERMIA.

Obe. Stand close; this is the same Athenian Puck. This is the woman, but not this the man.

Dem. O why rebuke you him that loves you so?

Lay breath so bitter on your bitter foe.

\* The cuckoo with his uniform notes. † Joke.  
‡ Gooseberries.

† Simple fellows. ‡ Herd.  
§ Infected. § Actor.

*Her.* Now I but chide, but I should use thee worse;  
For thou, I fear, hast given me cause to curse.

If thou hast slain Lysander in his sleep,  
Being o'er shoes in blood, plunge in the deep,  
And kill me too.

The sun was not so true unto the day,  
As he to me: Would he have stol'n away  
From sleeping Hermia? I'll believe as soon,  
This whole earth may be bor'd; and that the moon

May through the centre creep, and so dis-  
please

Her brother's noon-tide with the Antipodes.  
It cannot be, but thou hast murder'd him;  
So should a murderer look; so dead, so grim.

*Dem.* So should the murder'd look; and so should I,  
Pierc'd through the heart with your stern cruelty:

Yet you the murderer, look as bright, as clear,  
As yonder Venus in her glimmering sphere.

*Her.* What's this to my Lysander? where is he?

Ah! good Demetrius, wilt thou give him me?

*Dem.* I had rather give his carcass to my hounds.

*Her.* Out, dog! out, curl! thou driv'st me past the bounds  
Of maiden's patience. Hast thou slain him then?

Henceforth be never number'd among men!  
Oh! once tell true, tell true, even for my sake;

Durst thou have look'd upon him, being awake,  
And hast thou kill'd him sleeping? O brave touch!

Could not a worm, an adder, do so much?  
An adder did it; for with doubler tongue  
Than thine, thou serpent, never adder stung.

*Dem.* You spend your passion on a mispris'd mood:

I am not guilty of Lysander's blood;  
Nor is he dead, for aught that I can tell.

*Her.* I pray thee, tell me then that he is well.

*Dem.* And if I could, what should I get therefore?

*Her.* A privilege, never to see me more.—  
And from thy nated presence part I so:

See me no more, whether he be dead or no. *[Exit.]*

*Dem.* There is no following her in this fierce vein:

Here, therefore, for a while I will remain.  
So sorrow's heaviness doth heavier grow  
For debt that bankrupt sleep doth sorrow owe;

Which now, in some slight measure it will pay,  
If for his tender here I make some stay. *[Lies down.]*

*Obe.* What hast thou done? thou hast mis-  
taken quite,

And laid the love-juice on some true-love's sight:

Of thy misprison must perforce ensue  
Some true-love turn'd, and not a false turn'd true.

*Puck.* Then fate o'er-rules; that one man holding troth,

A million fall, confounding oath on oath.

*Obe.* About the wood go swifter than the wind,

And Helena of Athens look thou find:  
All fancy-sick! she is, and pale of cheer;  
With sighs of love, that cost the fresh blood dear:

By some illusion see thou bring her here;  
I'll charm his eyes, against she do appear.

*Puck.* I go, I go; look, how I go;  
Swifter than arrow from the Tartar's bow. *[Exit.]*

*Obe.* Flower of this purple die,  
Hit with Cupid's archery,  
Sink in apple of his eye!  
When his love he doth espy,  
Let her shine as gloriously  
As the Venus of the sky,—  
When thou wak'st, if she be by,  
Beg of her for remedy.

*Re-enter PUCK.*

*Puck.* Captain of our fairy band,  
Helena is here at hand;  
And the youth, mistook by me,  
Pleading for a lover's fee;  
Shall we their fond pageant see?  
Lord, what fools these mortals be!

*Obe.* Stand aside: the noise they make,  
Will cause Demetrius to awake.

*Puck.* Then will two at once, woo one:  
That must needs be sport alone;  
And those things do best please me,  
That befall preposterously.

*Enter LYSANDER and HELENA.*

*Lys.* Why should you think, that I should woo in scorn?

Scorn and derision never come in tears:  
Look, when I vow, I weep; and vows so born,

In their nativity all truth appears.  
How can these things in me seem scorn to you,

Bearing the badge of faith, to prove them true!

*Hel.* You do advance your cunning more and more.

When truth kills truth, O devilish holy fray!

These vows are Hermia's; will you give her o'er?

Weigh oath with oath, and you will nothing weigh:

Your vows, to her and me, put in two scales,  
Will even weigh; and both as light as tales.

*Lys.* I had no judgment, when to her I swore.

*Hel.* Nor none, in my mind, now you give her o'er.

*Lys.* Demetrius loves her, and he loves not you.

*Dem.* *[Awaking.]* O Helen, goddess, nymph, perfect, divine!

To what, my love, shall I compare thine eye?

Crystal is muddy. Oh! how ripe in show  
Thy lips, those kissing cherries, tempting grow!

That pure congealed white, high Taurus' snow,  
Fann'd with an eastern wind, turns to a crow,

When thou hold'st up thy hand: O let me kiss

This princess of pure white, this seal of bliss!

*Hel.* O spite! O hell! I see you all are bent

To set against me, for your merriment.  
If you were civil, and knew courtesy,

You would not do me thus much injury  
Can you not hate me, as I know you do?

But you must join in souls, to mock me too?  
If you were men, as men you are in show,

You would not use a gentle lady so;  
To vow, and swear, and superpraise my parts,

When, I am sure, you hate me with your hearts.

You both are rivals, and love Hermia;  
And now both rivals, to mock Helena:

A trim exploit, a manly enterprise,  
To conjure tears up in a poor maid's eyes

With your derision! none, of noble sort,†

\* Exploit.  
† Love sick.

† Mistaken.  
‡ Countenance.

\* Heartily.

† Degree.



Would so offend a virgin; and extort  
A poor soul's patience, all to make you sport.

*Lys.* You are unkind, Demetrius; be not so;

For you love *Hermia*; this, you know, I know:  
And here, with all good will, with all my heart,

In *Hermia's* love I yield you up my part;  
And your's of *Helena* to me bequeath,  
Whom I do love, and will do to my death.

*Hel.* Never did mockers waste more idle breath.

*Dem.* *Lysander*, keep thy *Hermia*; I will none:

If e'er I lov'd her, all that love is gone.  
My heart with her but, as guest-wise, so-journ'd;

And now to *Helena* is home return'd,  
There to remain.

*Lys.* *Helena*, it is not so.

*Dem.* Disparage not the faith thou dost not know,

Lest, to thy peril, thou aby it dear.\*  
Look where thy love comes; yonder is thy dear.

*Enter HERMIA.*

*Her.* Dark night, that from the eye his function takes,

The ear more quick of apprehension makes;  
Wherein it doth impair the seeing sense,  
It pays the hearing double recompense:—  
Thou art not by mine eye, *Lysander*, found;  
Mine ear, I thank it, brought me to thy sound.

But why unkindly didst thou leave me so?

*Lys.* Why should he stay, whom love doth press to go?

*Her.* What love could press *Lysander* from my side?

*Lys.* *Lysander's* love, that would not let him bide,

Fair *Helena*; who more engilds the night  
Than all you fiery ones; and eyes of light.

Why seek'st thou me? could not this make thee know,  
The hate I bare thee made me leave thee so?

*Her.* You speak not as you think; it cannot be.

*Hel.* Lo, she is one of this confederacy!

Now I perceive they have conjain'd, all three,  
To fashion this false sport in spite of me.

Injurious *Hermia*! most ungrateful maid!  
Have you conspir'd, have you with these contriv'd

To bait me with this foul derision?  
Is all the counsel that we two have shar'd,

The sisters' vows, the hours that we have spent,

When we have chid the hasty-footed time  
For parting us,—Oh! and is all forgot?

All school-days' friendship, childhood, innocence?

We, *Hermia*, like two artificial gods,  
Have with our needles created both one flower,

Both on one sampler, sitting on one cushion,  
Both warbling of one song, both in one key;

As if our hands, our sides, voices, and minds,  
Had been incorporate. So we grew together,

Like to a double cherry, seeming parted,  
But yet a union in partition;

Two lovely berries moulden'd on one stem:  
So, with two seeming bodies, but one heart;

Two of the first, like coats in heraldry,  
Due but to one, and crown'd with one crest.

And will you rent our ancient love asunder  
To join with men in scorning your poor friend?

It is not friendly, 'tis not maidenly:  
Our sex, as well as I, may chide you for it

Though I alone do feel the injury.

\* Pay dearly for it.

‡ Ingenious.

† Careless.

‡ Needless.

*Her.* I am amazed at your passionate words;  
I scorn you not; it seems that you scorn me.

*Hel.* Have you not set *Lysander* as in scorn,

To follow me, and praise my eyes and face?  
And made you other love, *Demetrius*,

(Who even but now did spurn me with his foot.)

To call me goddess, nymph, divine, and rare,  
Precious, celestial? Wherefore speaks he this

To her he hates! and wherefore doth *Lysander*  
Deny your love, so rich within his soul,

And tender me, forsooth, affection;  
But by your setting on, by your consent?

What though I be not so in grace as you,  
So hung upon with love, so fortunate?

But miserable most, to love unlov'd?  
This you should pity, rather than despise.

*Her.* I understand not what you mean by this.

*Hel.* Ay, do, persevere, counterfeit sad looks,

Make mows upon me, when I turn my back;  
Wink at each other; hold the sweet jest up:

This sport well carried, shall be chronicled.  
If you have any pity, grace, or manners,

You would not make me such an argument.  
But, fare ye well: 'tis partly mine own fault;

Which death, or absence, soon shall remedy.  
*Lys.* Stay, gentle *Helena*; hear my excuse;

My love, my life, my soul, fair *Helena*!

*Hel.* O excellent!

*Her.* Sweet, do not scorn her so.

*Dem.* If she cannot entreat, I can compel.

*Lys.* Thou shalt compel no more than she entreat;

Thy threats have no more strength, than her weak prayers.—

*Helena*, I love thee: by my life, I do;  
I swear by that which I will lose for thee,

To prove him false, that says I love thee not.

*Dem.* I say, I love thee more than he can do.

*Lys.* If thou say so, withdraw, and prove it too.

*Dem.* Quick, come,—

*Her.* *Lysander*, whereto tends all this?

*Lys.* Away, you Ethiop!

*Dem.* No, no, Sir—he will seem to break loose; take on, as you would follow:

But yet come not: You are a tame man, go!

*Lys.* Hang off thou cat, thou bur: vile thing, let loose;

Or I will shake thee from me, like a serpent.

*Her.* Why are you grown so rude? what change is this,

Sweet love?

*Lys.* Thy love I out, tawny Tartar, out!  
Out, loathed medicine! hated potion, hence!

*Her.* Do you not jest?

*Hel.* Yes, 'sooth; and so do you.

*Lys.* *Demetrius*, I will keep my word with thee.

*Dem.* I would, I had your bond; for I perceive,

A weak bond holds you; I'll not trust your word.

*Lys.* What should I hurt her, strike her, kill her dead?

Although I hate her, I'll not harm her so.

*Her.* What, can you do me greater harm than hate?

Hate me! wherefore? O me! what news, my love?

Am not I *Hermia*? Are not you *Lysander*?  
I am as fair now, as I was crewbait.

Since night, you lov'd me; yet, since night you left me:

Why, then you left me,—O the gods forbid!—  
In earnest shall I say!

*Lys.* Ah, by my life!

And never did desire to see thee more.

• Why fears.

Scene II.

A MIDSUMMER NIGHT'S DREAM.

619

Therefore, be out of hope, of question, doubt,  
Be certain, nothing truer; 'tis no jest,  
That I do hate thee, and love Helena.

*Her.* O me! you juggler! you canker-blossom!

You thief of love: what, have you come by night

And stol'n my love's heart from him?

*Hel.* Fine, i'faith!

Have you no modesty, no maiden shame,  
No touch of bashfulness? What, will you tear  
Impatient answers from my gentle tongue?  
Fie, fie! you counterfeit, you puppet you!

*Her.* Puppet! why so! Ay, that way goes the game.

Now I perceive that she hath made compare  
Between our staturs, she hath urg'd her height;  
And with her personage, her tall personage,  
Her height forth, she hath prevail'd with him.—

And are you grown so high in his esteem,  
Because I am so dwarfish and so low?  
How low am I, thou painted maypole? speak;  
How low am I? I am not yet so low,  
But that my nails can reach unto thine eyes.

*Her.* I pray you, though you mock me, gentlemen,

Let her not hurt me: I was never curst; †  
I have no gift at all in shrewishness;  
I am a right maid for my cowardice;  
Let her not strike me: You, perhaps, may think,  
Because she's something lower than myself,  
That I can match her.

*Her.* Lower! hark, again.

*Hel.* Good Hermia, do not be so bitter with me.

I evermore did love you, Hermia,  
Did ever keep your counsels, never wrong'd you;  
Save, that, in love unto Demetrius,  
I told him of your stealth unto this wood:  
He follow'd you; for love I follow'd him.  
But he hath chid me hence; and threaten'd me

To strike me, spurn me, nay, to kill me too:  
And now, so you will let me quiet go  
To Athens will I bear my folly back,  
And follow you no further: Let me go:  
You see how simple and how fond I am.

*Her.* Why, get you gone: Who is't that hinders you?

*Hel.* A foolish heart that I leave here behind?

*Her.* What, with Lysander?

*Hel.* With Demetrius.

*Lys.* Be not afraid; she shall not harm thee, Helena.

*Dem.* No, Sir; she shall not, though you take her part.

*Hel.* Oh! when she's angry, she is keen and shrewd:

She was a vixen, when she went to school;  
And, though she be but little, she is fierce.

*Her.* Little again? nothing but low and little?—

Why will you suffer her to flout me thus?  
Let me come to her.

*Lys.* Get you gone, you dwarf;  
You minimus, of hind'ring knot-grass made;  
You bead, you acorn.

*Dem.* You are too officious  
In her behalf that scorns your services.  
Let her alone; speak not of Helena;  
Take not her part: for if thou dost intend  
Never so little shew of love to her,  
Thou shalt abate it.

*Lys.* Now she holds me not;  
Now follow, if thou dar'st, to try whose right,  
Or thine or mine, is most in Helena.

*Dem.* Follow? nay, I'll go with thee, cheek by jole. *[Exeunt Lys. and Dem.]*

\* A worm that preys on buds of flowers.  
† Shrewish or mischievous. ‡ Foolish.  
§ Anciently knot-grass was believed to prevent the growth of children. ¶ Pretend.

*Her.* You, mistress, all this coil is 'long of you:

Nay, go not back.

*Hel.* I will not trust you, I;  
Nor longer stay in your curst company.  
Your hands, than mine, are quicker for a fray;  
My legs are longer though, to run away.

*Her.* I am amaz'd, and know not what to say. *[Exit.]*

*Obe.* This is thy negligence: still thou mistak'st,

Or else commit'st thy knaveries wilfully.

*Puck.* Believe me, king of shadows, I mistook.

Did not you tell me, I should know the man

By the Athenian garments he had on?

And so far blameless proves my enterprise,

That I have 'mounted an Athenian's eyes:

And so far am I glad it so did sort,

As this their jangling I esteem a sport.

*Obe.* Thou seest, these lovers seek a place to fight:

Hie therefore, Robin, overcast the night;

The starry welkin cover thou anon

With drooping fog, as black as Acheron;

And lead these testy rivals so astray,

As one come not within another's way.

Like to Lysander sometime frame thy tongue,

Then stir Demetrius up with bitter wrong;

And sometime rail thou like Demetrius;

And from each other look thou lead them thus,

I'll o'er their brows death-counterfeits sleep

With leaden legs and batt' wings doth creep:

Then crush this herb into Lysander's eye;

Whose liquor hath this virtuous property, †

To take from thence all error, with his might,

And make his eye-balls roll with wonted sight.

When they next wake, all this drowsion

Shall seem a dream, and fruitless vision:

And back to Athens shall the lovers wend, ‡

With league, whose date till death shall never end.

Whiles I in this affair do thee employ,

I'll to my queen, and beg her Indian boy;

And then I will her charmed eye release

From monster's view, and all things shall be peace.

*Puck.* My fairy lord, this must be done with haste;

For night's swift dragons cut the clouds full fast,

And yonder shines Aurora's harbinger;

At whose approach, ghosts, wandering here and there,

Troop home to church-yards: damned spirits all,

That in cross-ways and floods have burial,

Already to their wormy beds are gone;

For fear lest day should look their shames upon,

They wilfully themselves exile from light,

And must for aye consort with black-brow'd night.

*Obe.* But we are spirits of another sort:

I with the Morning's Love † have oft made sport;

And, like a forester, the groves may tread,

Even till the eastern gate, all fiery red,

Opening on Neptune with fair blessed beams,

Turns into yellow gold his salt-green streams.

But, notwithstanding, haste; make no delay:

We may effect this business yet ere day. *[Exit OBE.]*

*Puck.* Up and down, up and down;

I will lead them up and down;

I am fear'd in field and town;

Goblin, lead them up and down.

Here comes one.

*Enter LYSANDER.*

*Lys.* Where art thou, proud Demetrius? speak thou now.

\* Happen. † Medicinal efficacy. ‡ Go.

§ Cephalus, the paramour of Aurora.

**Puck.** Here, villain; drawn and ready. Where art thou?  
**Lys.** I will be with thee straight.  
**Puck.** Follow me then To plainer ground.

[Exit Lys. as following the voice.]

Enter DEMETRIUS.

**Dem.** Lysander! speak again.  
 Thou runaway, thou coward, art thou fled?  
**Speak.** In some bush? Where dost thou hide thy head?

**Puck.** Thou coward, art thou bragging to the stars,  
 Telling the bushes that thou look'st for wars,  
 And wilt not come? Come, recreant; come, thou child;  
 I'll whip thee with a rod: He is defil'd,  
 That draws a sword on thee.

**Dem.** Yea; art thou there?

**Puck.** Follow my voice; we'll try no manhood here. [Exit.

Re-enter LYSANDER.

**Lys.** He goes before me, and still dares me on;  
 When I come where he calls, then he is gone.  
 The villain is much lighter heel'd than I:  
 I follow'd fast, but faster he did fly;  
 That fallen am I in dark uneven way,  
 And here will rest me. Come, thou gentle day!  
 [Lies down.]  
 For if but once thou show me thy gray light,  
 I'll find Demetrius, and revenge this spite. [Sleeps.]

Re-enter PUCK and DEMETRIUS.

**Puck.** Ho, ho! ho, ho! Coward, why com'st thou not?

**Dem.** Abide me, if thou dar'st: for well I wot,  
 Thou runn'st before me, shifting every place;  
 And dar'st not stand, nor look me in the face.  
 Where art thou?

**Puck.** Come hither; I am here.

**Dem.** Nay, then thou mock'st me. Thou shalt buy this dear,  
 If ever I thy face by day-light see:  
 Now, go thy way. Faintness constraineth me  
 To measure out my length on this cold bed.—  
 By day's approach look to be visited.  
 [Lies down and sleeps.]

Enter HELENA.

**Hel.** O weary night, O long and tedious night,  
 Abate thy hours: shine comforts, from the east;

That I may back to Athens, by day-light,  
 From these that my poor company detest:—  
 And, sleep, that sometimes shuts up sorrow's  
 eye,  
 Steal me awhile from mine own company.

[Sleeps.]

**Puck.** Yet but three? Come one more:  
 Two of both kinds makes up four.  
 Here she comes, curst and sad:—  
 Cupid is a knavish lad,  
 Thus to make poor females mad.

Enter HERMIA.

**Her.** Never so weary, never so in woe:  
 Bedabbled with the dew, and torn with  
 briars,  
 I can no further crawl, no further go;  
 My legs can keep no pace with my desires.  
 Here will I rest me, till the break of day.  
 Heavens shield Lysander, if they mean a fray!  
 [Lies down.]

**Puck.** On the ground  
 Sleep sound:  
 I'll apply  
 To your eye,  
 Gentle lover remedy.

[Squeezing the juice on  
 LYSANDER'S eye.]

When thou wak'st,

Thou tak'st

True delight

In the sight

Of thy former lady's eye:

And the country proverb known,

That every man should take his own,

In your waking shall be shown:

Jack shall have Jill;

Naught shall go ill;

The man shall have his mare again, and all shall be well.

[Exit PUCK.—DEM. HEL. &c. sleep.]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—The same.

Enter TITANIA and BOTTOM, FAIRIES, attending; OBERON behind unseen.

**Tita.** Come, sit thee down upon this flowery bed,

While I thy amiable cheeks do coy,  
 And stick musk-roses in thy sleek smooth head,  
 And kiss thy fair large ears, my gentle joy.

**Bot.** Where's Peas-blossom?

**Peas.** Ready.

**Bot.** Scratch my head, Peas-blossom.—Where's monsieur Cobweb?

**Cob.** Ready.

**Bot.** Monsieur Cobweb; good monsieur, get your weapons in your hand, and kill me a red-hipped humble-bee on the top of a thistle; and, good monsieur, bring me the honey-bag. Do not fret yourself too much in the action, monsieur; and, good monsieur, have a care the honey-bag break not: I would be loath to have you overflown with a honey-bag, signior.—Where's monsieur Mustard-seed?

**Must.** Ready.

**Bot.** Give me your neif,† monsieur Mustard-seed. Pray you, leave your courtesies, good monsieur.

**Must.** What's your will?

**Bot.** Nothing, good monsieur, but to help cavalero Cobweb to scratch. I must to the barber's, monsieur; for, methinks, I am marvellous hairy about the face: and I am such a tender ass, if my hair do but tickle me, I must scratch.

**Tita.** What, wilt thou hear some music, my sweet love?

**Bot.** I have a reasonable good ear in music: let us have the lutes and the bones.

**Tita.** Or, say, sweet love, what thou desir'st to eat.

**Bot.** Truly a peck of provender; I could munch your good dry oats. Methinks, I have a great desire to a bottle of hay: good hay, sweet hay, hath no fellow.

**Tita.** I have a venturous fairy that shall seek the squirrel's hoard, and fetch thee new nuts.

**Bot.** I had rather have a handful, or two, of dried peas. But, I pray you, let none of your people stir me; I have an exposition of sleep come upon me.

**Tita.** Sleep thou and I will wind thee in my arms.

Fairies, be gone, and be all ways away.  
 So doth the woodbine, the sweet honeysuckle  
 Gently entwine,—the female ivy so  
 Enrings the barksy fingers of the elm  
 O how I love thee! how I dote on thee!

[They sleep.]

OBERON advances. Enter PUCK.

**Obe.** Welcome, good Robin. Sec'st thou this sweet sight?

Her dotage now I do begin to pity.

For meeting her of late behind the wood,  
 Seeking sweet savours for this hateful fool,

• Stroke.

† Fist.



Our purpos'd hunting shall he set aside.—  
Away, with us, to Athens: Three and three,  
We'll hold a feast in great solemnity.—  
Come, Hippolyta.

*[Exeunt THE. HIP. EGE. and train.*  
Dem. These things seem small, and undistinguishable,

Like far-off mountains turned into clouds.

Her. Methinks, I see these things with parted eye,

When every thing seems double.

Hel. So methinks:

And I have found Demetrius like a jewel,  
Mine own, and not mine own.

Dem. It seems to me,

That yet we sleep, we dream.—Do not you think,

The duke was here, and bid us follow him?

Her. Yea; and my father.

Hel. And Hippolyta.

Lys. And he did bid us follow to the temple.

Dem. Why then, we are awake: let's follow him;

And, by the way, let us recount our dreams.

*[Exeunt.]*

*As they go out, BOTTOM awakes.*

Bot. When my cue comes, call me, and I will answer:—my text is, *Most fair Pyramus*.—Hey, ho!—Peter Quince! Flute, the bellows-mend'r! Snout, the tinker! Starveling! God's my life! stolen hence, and left me asleep! I have had a most rare vision. I have had a dream,—Past the wit of man to say what dream it was: Man is but an ass, if he go about to expound this dream. Methought I was—there is no man can tell what. Methought I was, and methought I had,—But man is but a patched fool, if he will offer to say what methought I had. The eye of man hath not heard, the ear of man hath not seen; man's hand is not able to taste, his tongue to conceive, nor his heart to report, what my dream was. I will get Peter Quince to write a ballad of this dream: It shall be called *Bottom's Dream*, because it hath no bottom; and I will sing it in the latter end of a play, before the duke; Peradventure to make it the more gracious, I shall sing it at her death. *[Exit.]*

SCENE II.—Athens.—A Room in QUINCE'S House.

*Enter QUINCE, FLUTE, SNOOT, and STARVELING.*

Quin. Have you sent to Bottom's house? is he come home yet?

Star. He cannot be heard of. Out of doubt, he is transported.

Flu. If he come not, then the play is marred; it goes not forward, doth it?

Quin. It is not possible: you have not a man in all Athens, able to discharge Pyramus, but he.

Flu. No; he hath simply the best wit of any handicraft man in Athens.

Quin. Yea, and the best person too: and he is a very paramour, for a sweet voice.

Flu. You must say, paragon: a paramour is, God bless us, a thing of nought.

*Enter SNUG.*

Snu. Masters, the duke is coming from the temple, and there is two or three lords and ladies more married: if our sport had gone forward, we had all been made men.

Flu. O sweet Bottom! Thus hath he lost sixpence a-day during his life; he could not have 'scaped sixpence a-day: an the duke had not given him sixpence a-day for playing Pyramus, I'll be hanged; he would have deserved it: sixpence a-day, in Pyramus, or nothing.

*Enter BOTTOM.*

Bot. Where are these lads? where are these hearts?

Quin. Bottom! O most courageous day! O most happy hour!

Bot. Masters, I am to discourse wonders; but ask me not what; for, if I tell you, I am no true Athenian. I will tell you every thing, right as it fell out.

Quin. Let us hear, sweet Bottom.

Bot. Not a word of me. All that I will tell you, is, that the duke hath dined: Get your apparel together; good strings to your beards, new ribbons to your pumps; meet presently at the palace; every man look o'er his part; for, the short and the long is, our play is preferred. In any case, let Thisby have clean linen; and let not him, that plays the lion, pare his nails, for they shall bring out of the lion's claws. And, most dear actors, eat no onions, nor garlic, for we are to utter sweet breath; and I do not doubt, but to hear them say, it is a sweet comedy. No more words: away; go, away. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—The same.—A Room in the Apartment of THESEUS.

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, PHILOSTRATE, Lords, and Attendants.*

Hip. 'Tis strange, my Theseus, that these lovers speak of.

The. More strange than true. I never may believe

These antique fables, nor these fairy toys. Lovers and madmen, have such seething brains, Such shaping fantasies, that apprehend More than cool reason comprehends. The lunatic, the lover, and the poet, Are of imagination all compact: \*

One sees more devils than vast hell can hold; That is, the madman: the lover, all as frantic, Sees Helen's beauty in a brow of Egypt: The poet's eye, in a fine frenzy rolling, Doth glance from heaven to earth, from earth to heaven;

And, as imagination bodiless forth The forms of things unknown, the poet's pen Turns them to shapes, and gives to airy nothing

A local habitation and a name. Such tricks hath strong imagination; That, if it would but apprehend some joy, It comprehends some bringer of that joy; Or, in the night, imagining some fear, How easy is a bush suppos'd a bear!

Hip. But all the story of the night told over, And all their minds transfigur'd so together, More witnesseth than fancy's images. And grows to something of great constancy; † But, howsoever, strange, and admirable.

*Enter LYSANDER, DEMETRIUS, HERMIA, and HELENA.*

The. Here come the lovers, full of joy and mirth.— Joy gentle friends! joy, and fresh days of love, Accompany your hearts!

Lys. More than to us

Wait on your royal walks, your board, your bed!

The. Come now; what masks, what dances shall we have,

To wear away this long age of three hours,

Between our after supper and bed time?

Where is our usual manager of mirth?

What revels are in hand? Is there no play,

\* Are made of mere imagination.

† Stability.

To ease the anguish of a torturing hour?  
Call Philostrate.

*Philost.* Here, mighty Theseus.

*The.* Say, what abridgment\* have you for this evening?

What mask? what music? How shall we beguile?

The lazy time, if not with some delight?

*Philost.* There is a brief,† how many sports are ripe;

Make choice of which your highness will see first.

*The.* [Reads.] *The battle with the Centaurs, to be sung,*

*By an Athenian eunuch to the harp,*  
We'll none of that: that have I told my love,  
In glory of my kinsman Hercules.

*The riot of the tipsy Bacchantals,*  
Tearing the Thracian singer in their rage.

That is an old device; and it was play'd

When I from Thebes came last a conqueror.

*The thrice three Muses mourning for the death*

*Of learning, late deceas'd in beggary.*

That is some satire, keen, and critical,

Not sooting with a nuptial ceremony.

*A tedious brief scene of young Pyramus,*

*And his love Thisbe; very tragical mirth.*

Merry and tragical? Tedious and brief?

That is, not ice, and wonderous strange snow.

How shall we find the concord of this discord?

*Philost.* A play there is, my lord, some ten

words long;

Which is as brief as I have known a play;

But by ten words, my lord, it is too long;

Which makes it tedious: for in all the play

There is not one word apt, one player fitted.

And tragical, my noble lord, it is;

For Pyramus therein doth kill himself.

Which, when I saw rehears'd, I must confess,

Made mine eyes water; but more merry tears

The passion of loud laughter never shed.

*The.* What are they, that do play it?

*Philost.* Hard-handed men, that work in Athens here,

Which never labour'd in their minds till now;  
And now have toil'd their unbreath'd ‡ memories

With this same play, against your nuptial.

*The.* And we will hear it.

*Philost.* No, my noble lord,  
It is not for you: I have heard it over,  
And it is nothing, nothing in the world;  
Unless you can find sport in their intents,  
Extremely stretch'd and coach'd with cruel pain,  
To do you service.

*The.* I will hear that play;

For never any thing can be amiss,

When simpleness and duty tender it.

Go, bring them in:—and take your places,

ladies. [Exit PHILOSTRATE.]

*Hip.* I love not to see wretchedness o'er-  
charg'd,

And duty in his service perishing.

*The.* Why, gentle sweet, you shall see no such thing.

*Hip.* He says, they can do nothing in this head.

*The.* The kinder we, to give them thanks for nothing.

Our sport shall be, to take what they mistake:  
And what poor duty cannot do,

No noble respect takes it in might, not merit.  
Where I have come, great clerics have purposed

To greet me with premeditated welcomes;  
Where I have seen them shiver and look pale,

Make periods in the midst of sentences,  
Throttle their practis'd accent in their fears,

And, in conclusion, dumbly have broke off,  
Not paying me a welcome: Trust me, sweet,

Out of this silence, yet, I pick'd a welcome;  
And in the modesty of fearful duty

I read as much, as from the rattling tongue  
Of saucy and audacious eloquence.

Love, therefore, and tongue-ued simplicity,  
In least, speak most, to my capacity.

Enter PHILOSTRATE.

*Philost.* So please your grace the prologue is address'd.\*

*The.* Let him approach.

[Flourish of Trumpets.]

Enter PROLOGUE.

*Pro.* If we offend, it is with our good will,

That you should think, we come not to offend,

But with good will. To show our simple skill,

That is the true beginning of our end.

Consider then, we come but in despite,  
We do not come as minding to content you,

Our true intent is. All for your delight,  
We are not here. That you should here

repent you,  
The actors are at hand; and, by their show,

You shall know all, that you are like to know.

*The.* This fellow doth not stand upon points.

*Lys.* He hath rid his prologue, like a rough colt,  
he knows not the stop. A good moral, my lord:

It is not enough to speak, but to speak true.

*Hip.* Indeed he hath played on this prologue,  
like a child on a recorder; † a sound, but not in government.

*The.* His speech was like a tangled chain;  
nothing impaired, but all disordered. Who is next?

Enter PYRAMUS and THISBE, WALL, MOONSHINE, and LION, as in dumb show.

*Pro.* "Gentles, perchance, you wonder at this show;

"But wonder on, till truth make all things plain.

"This man is Pyramus, if you would know;  
"This beauteous lady Thisbe is, certain.

"This man, with lime and rough-cast, doth present

"Wall, that vile wall which did these lovers sunder;

"And through wall's chink, poor souls they are content

"To whisper; at the which let no man wonder.

"This man, with lantern, dog, and bush of thorn,

"Presenteth moonshine: for, if you will know,

"By moonshine did these lovers think no scorn

"To meet at Ninus' tomb, there, there to woo.

"This grisly beast, which by name lion hight, ‡

"The trusty Thisbe, coming first by night,

"Did scare away, or rather did affright:—

"And, as she fled, her mantle she did fall;

"Which lion vile with bloody mouth did stain:

"Anon comes Pyramus, sweet youth, and tall,

"And finds his trusty Thisbe's mantle slain:

"Whereat with blade, with bloody blameful blade,

"He bravely broach'd his boiling bloody breast:

"And, Thisbe lying in mulberry shade

"His dagger drew, and died. For all the rest,

"Let lion, moonshine, wall, and lovers twain,  
"At large discourse, while here they do remain."

[Exeunt PROLOGUE, THISBE, LION, and MOONSHINE.]

\* Short account.

† Pastime.

‡ Unmercised.

\* Ready.

† A musical instrument.

‡ Called.

*The.* I wonder, if the lion be to speak.

*Dem.* No wonder, my lord : One lion may, when many asses do.

*Wall.* In this same interlude, it doth befall,

"That I, one Snout by name, present a wall :

"And such a wall, as I would have you think,

"That had in it a cranny'd hole, or chink,

"Through which the lovers, Pyramus and Thisby,

"Did whisper often very secretly.

"This loam, this rough-cast, and this stone doth show,

"That I am that same wall ; the truth is so :

"And this the cranny is, right and sinister,

"Through which the fearful lovers are to whisper."

*The.* Would you desire lime and hair to speak better ?

*Dem.* It is the wittiest partition that ever I heard discourse, my lord.

*The.* Pyramus draws near the wall : silence !

*Enter PYRAMUS.*

*Pyr.* "O grim-look'd night ! O night with hue so black !

"O night, which ever art, when day is not !

"O night, O night, alack, alack, alack,

"I fear my Thisby's promise is forgot !—

"And thou, O wall, O sweet, O lovely wall,

"That stand'st between her father's ground and mine ;

"Thou wall, O wall, O sweet and lovely wall,

"Show me thy chink, to blink through with mine eye."

[*WALL holds up his fingers.*

"Thanks, courteous wall : Jove shield thee well for this !

"But what see I ? No Thisby do I see.

"O wicked wall, through whom I see no bliss ;

"Curst be thy stones for thus deceiving me !"

*The.* The wall, methinks, being sensible should curse again.

*Pyr.* No, in truth, Sir, he should not. Deceiving me, is Thisby's cue : she is to enter now, and I am to spy her through the wall. You shall see, it will fall pat as I told you :—Yonder she comes.

*Enter THISBE.*

*This.* "O wall, full often hast thou heard my moans,

"For parting my fair Pyramus and me :

"My cherry lips have often kiss'd thy stones ;

"Thy stones with lime and hair knit up in thee."

*Pyr.* "I see a voice : now will I to the chink,

"To spy an I can hear my Thisby's face.

"Thisby !"

*This.* "My love ! thou art my love, I think."

*Pyr.* "Think what thou wilt, I am thy lover's grace ;

"And like Limander am I trusty still."

*This.* "And I like Helen, till the fates me kill."

*Pyr.* "Not Shafalus to Procrus was so true."

*This.* "As Shafalus to Procrus, I to you."

*Pyr.* "O kiss me through the hole of this vile wall."

*This.* "I kiss the wall's hole, not your lips at all."

*Pyr.* "Wilt thou at Ninny's tomb meet me straightway ?"

*This.* "Tide life, tide death, I come without delay."

*Wall.* "Thus have I, wall, my part discharged so ;

"And, being done, thus wall away doth go."

[*Exit WALL, PYRAMUS, and THISBE.*

*The.* Now is the mural door between the two neighbours.

*Dem.* No remedy, my lord, when walls are so wilful to hear without warning.

*Hip.* This is the silliest stuff that ever I heard.

*The.* The best in this kind are but shadows ; and the worst are no worse, if imagination amend them.

*Hip.* It must be your imagination then, and not their's.

*The.* If we imagine no worse of them, than they of themselves, they may pass for excellent men. Here come two noble beasts in, a moon and a lion.

*Enter LION and MOONSHINE.*

*Lion.* "You, ladies, you, whose gentle hearts do fear

"The smallest monstrous mouse that creeps on floor,

"May now, perchance, both quake and tremble here,

"When lion rough in wildest rage doth roar.

"Then know, that I, one Snug the joluer, am

"A lion fell, or else no lion's dam :

"For if I should as lion come in strife

"Into this place, 'twere pity on my life."

*The.* A very gentle beast and of a good conscience.

*Dem.* The very best at a beast, my lord, that e'er I saw.

*Lys.* This lion is a very fox for his valour.

*The.* True ; and a goose for his discretion.

*Dem.* Not so, my lord : for his valour cannot carry his discretion ; and the fox carries the goose.

*The.* His discretion, I am sure, cannot carry his valour ; for the goose carries not the fox.

It is well : leave it to his discretion, and let us listen to the moon.

*Moon.* "This lantern doth the horned moon present :"

*Dem.* He should have worn the horns on his head.

*The.* He is no crescent, and his horns are invisible within the circumference.

*Moon.* "This lantern doth the horned moon present ;

"Myself the man i'the moon do seem to be."

*The.* This is the greatest error of all the rest : the man should be put into the lantern : How is it else the man i'the moon ?

*Dem.* He dares not come there for the candle : for, you see, it is already in snuff."

*Hip.* I am weary of this moon : Would, he would change !

*The.* It appears, by his small light of discretion, that he is in the wane : but yet, in courtesy, in all reason, we must stay the time.

*Lys.* Proceed, moon.

*Moon.* All that I have to say, is, to tell you, that the lantern is the moon ; I, the man in the moon ; this thorn-bush, my thorn-bush ; and this dog, my dog.

*Dem.* Why, all these should be in the lantern ; for they are in the moon. But, silence ; here comes Thisbe.

*Enter THISBE.*

*This.* "This is old Ninny's tomb : Where is my love ?"

*Lion.* "Oh—"

[*The LION roars.—THISBE runs off.*

*Dem.* Well roared, lion.

*The.* Well run, Thisbe.

*Hip.* Well shone, moon.—Truly, the moon shines with a good grace.

*The.* Well moused, lion.

[*The LION tears THISBE'S mantle, and exit.*

*Dem.* And so comes Pyramus.

*Lys.* And then the moon vanishes.

*Enter PYRAMUS.*

*Pyr.* "Sweet moon, I thank thee for thy sunny beams ;

• In anger ; a quibble.

"I thank thee, moon, for shining now so bright :  
 "For, by thy gracious, golden, glittering streams,  
 "I trust to taste of truest Thisby's sight.  
 "But stay ;—O spite !  
 "But mark ;—Poor knight,  
 "What dreadful dole is here ?  
 "Eyes, do you see ?  
 "How can it be ?  
 "O dainty duck ! O dear !  
 "Thy mantle good,  
 "What, stain'd with blood ?  
 "Approach, ye furies fell !  
 "O fates ! come, come ;  
 "Cut thread and thum ; \*  
 "Quail, crush, conclude, and quell !"  
*The.* This passion, and the death of a dear friend, would go near to make a man look sad.  
*Hip.* Beshrew my heart, but I pity the man.

*Pyr.* "O, wherefore, nature, didst thou lions frame ?  
 "Since lion vile hath here deflour'd my dear :  
 "Which is—no, no—which was the fairest dame,  
 "That lov'd, that lov'd, that lik'd, that look'd with cheer ;  
 "Come, tears, confound ;  
 "Out, sword, and wound  
 "The pap of Pyramus :  
 "Ay, that left pap,  
 "Where heart doth hop :  
 "Thus die I, thus, thus, thus.  
 "Now am I dead,  
 "Now am I fled ;  
 "My soul is in the sky :  
 "Tongue, lose thy light !  
 "Moon, take thy flight !  
 "Now die, die, die, die, die.

[*Dies.*—*Exit* MOONSHINE.]

*Dem.* No die, but an ace, for him ; for he is but one.

*Lys.* Less than an ace, man ; for he is dead ; he is nothing.

*The.* With the help of a surgeon, he might yet recover, and prove an ass.

*Hip.* How chance moonshine is gone, before Thisbe comes back and finds her lover ?

*The.* She will find him by star-light.—Here she comes ; and her passion ends the play.

*Enter* THISBE.

*Hip.* Methinks, she should not use a long one, for such a Pyramus : I hope, she will be brief.

*Dem.* A mote will turn the balance, which Pyramus, which Thisbe, is the better.

*Lys.* She hath spied him already with those sweet eyes.

*Dem.* And thus she moans, *videlicet*.—

*This.* "Asleep, my love !

"What, dead, my dove ?

"O Pyramus, arise,

"Speak, speak. Quite dumb !

"Dead, dead ? A tomb

"Must cover thy sweet eyes.

"These lily brows,

"This cherry nose,

"These yellow cowslip cheeks,

"Are gone, are gone !

"Lovers, make moan !

"His eyes were green as leeks.

"O sisters three,

"Come, come, to me,

"With hands as pale as milk ;

"Lay them in gore.

"Since you have shore

"With shears his thread of silk.

"Tongue, not a word :—

"Come, trusty sword ;

"Come, blade, my breast imbue :

"And farewell, friends ;—

"Thus Thisby ends ;

"Adieu, adieu, adieu."

[*Dies.*

*The.* Moonshine, and lion are left to bury the dead.

*Dem.* Ay, and wail too.

*Bot.* No, I assure you ; the wall is down that parted their fathers. Will it please you to see the epilogue, or to hear a Bergomask dance between two of our company ?

*The.* No epilogue, I pray you ; for your play needs no excuse. Never excuse ; for when the players are all dead, there need none to be blamed. Marry, if he that writ it, had play'd Pyramus, and hanged himself in Thisbe's garter, it would have been a fine tragedy : and so it is, truly ; and very notably discharged. But come, your Bergomask : let your epilogue alone.

[*Here a dance of Clowns.*

The iron tongue of midnight hath told twelve :—  
 Lovers, to bed ; 'tis almost fairy time.

I fear we shall out-sleep the coming morn,  
 As much as we this night have overwatch'd.  
 This palpable-gross play hath well beguil'd  
 The heavy gait \* of night.—Sweet friends, to bed.—

A fortnight hold we this solemnity,  
 In nightly revels, and new jollity.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.—*Enter* PUCK.

*Puck.* Now the hungry lion roars,  
 And the wolf behowls the moon ;  
 Whilst the heavy ploughman snores  
 All with weary task fordone. †  
 Now the wasted brands do glow,  
 Whilst the scritch-owl, scritch'ing loud,  
 Puts the wretch, that lies in woe,  
 In remembrance of a shroud.  
 Now it is the time of night,  
 That the graves, all gaping wide,  
 Every one lets forth his sprite,  
 In the church-way paths to glide :  
 And we fairies, that do run  
 By the triple Hecat's team,  
 From the presence of the sun,  
 Following darkness like a dream,  
 Now are frolic ; not a mouse  
 Shall disturb this hallow'd house :  
 I am sent, with broom, before,  
 To sweep the dust behind the door.

*Enter* OBERON and TITANIA, with their Train.

*Obe.* Through this house give glimmering light,

By the dead and drowsy fire :  
 Every elf, and fairy sprite,  
 Hop as light as bird from brier ;  
 And this ditty, after me,  
 Sing and dance it trippingly.

*Tita.* First, rehearse this song by rote ;  
 To each word a warbling note,  
 Hand in hand, with fairy grace,  
 Will we sing, and bless this place.

## SONG, and DANCE.

*Obe.* Now, until the break of day,  
 Through this house each fairy stray.  
 To the best bride-bed will we,  
 Which by us shall blessed be ;  
 And the issue, there create,  
 Ever shall be fortunate.  
 So shall all the couples three  
 Ever true in loving be ;  
 And the blots of nature's hand  
 Shall not in their issue stand ;

\* Coarse yarn.

† Destroy ‡ Countenance.

\* Progress.

† Overcome 23



Never mole, hare-lip, nor scar,  
Nor mark prodigious, \* such as are  
Despised in nativity,  
Shall upon their children be.—  
With this field-dew consecrate,  
Every fairy take his gait ; †  
And each several chamber bless,  
Through this palace with sweet peace :  
E'er shall it in safety rest,  
And the owner of it blest.

Trip away ;  
Make no stay ,  
Meet me all by break of day.  
[*Exeunt OBERON, TITANIA, and  
Train.*]

\* Pertentious.

† Way.

*Puck.* If we shadows have offended,  
Think but this, (and all is mended,) *(Exit.)*  
That you have but slumber'd here,  
While these visions did appear.  
And this weak and idle theme,  
No more yielding but a dream,  
Gentles, do not reprehend ;  
If you pardon, we will mend.  
And, as I'm an honest Puck,  
If we have unearned luck  
Now to 'scape the serpent's tongue,  
We will make amends ere long ;  
Else the Puck a liar call.  
So, good night unto you all.  
Give me your hands, if we be friends,  
And Robin shall restore amends, *(Exit.)*

# THE TEMPEST.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE supernatural agency which forms so leading a feature in this fanciful play, is built (according to Mr. Warton) on the peculiar tenets of the Rosicrucian philosophy; the name of Ariel being derived from the Talmudistic mysteries with which the more learned Jews connected that science. It was one of Shakespeare's latest productions, and probably founded on some Italian novel. Warburton considers it "one of the noblest efforts of his sublime and amazing imagination;" a negative species of praise, since the pleasure which it creates arises from a boundless diversity of invention, from a continued succession of supernatural occurrences, devoid of application and destitute of moral, because the end is obtained by means beyond the ordinary compass of belief. In representation it is greatly dependent on the scenery and mechanism. The language, however, is throughout most forcible, and much of the sentiment chaste and magnificent. Caliban is an original creation; whimsical, monstrous, and impressive; but that men, saved as it were by miracle from death, should immediately plot the destruction of their companions, to obtain dominions which there was no probability of their ever re-visiting, is a suggestion at variance with nature, and inconsistent with the spirit of the piece. Johnson says of *The Tempest*—"In a single drama are here exhibited princes, courtiers, and sailors, all speaking in their real characters. There is the agency of airy spirits, and of an earthly goblin. The operations of magic, the tumults of a storm, the adventures of a desert island, the native effusion of untaught affection, the punishment of guilt, and the final happiness of the pair for whom our passions and reason are equally interested."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ALONSO, *King of Naples.*

SEBASTIAN, *his Brother.*

PROSPERO, *the rightful Duke of Milan.*

ANTONIO, *his Brother, the usurping Duke of Milan.*

FERDINAND, *Son to the King of Naples.*

GONZALO, *an honest old Counsellor of Naples.*

ADRIAN, } *Lords.*

FRANCISCO, }

CALIBAN, *a savage and deformed Slave.*

TRINCULO, *a Jester.*

STEPHANO, *a drunken Butler.*

*Master of a Ship, Boatswain, and Mariners.*

MIRANDA, *Daughter to Prospero.*

ARIEL, *an Atry Spirit.*

IRIS,

CERES,

JUNO,

NYMPHS,

REAPERS,

} *Spirits.*

*Other Spirits attending on PROSPERO.*

SCENE—The Sea with a ship : afterwards an uninhabited Island.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—On a Ship at Sea.

*A Storm, with Thunder and Lightning.*

*Enter a SHIP-MASTER and a BOATSWAIN.*

*Master.* Boatswain,—

*Boats.* Here, master : what cheer ?

*Master.* Good : Speak to the mariners : fall to't yarely,\* or we run ourselves aground : bestir, bestir. *[Exit.*

*Enter MARINERS.*

*Boats.* Heigh, my hearts ; cheerly, cheerly, my hearts ; yare, yare : Take in the top-sail ; Tend to the master's whistle.—Blow, till thou burst thy wind, if room enough !

*Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, FERDINAND, GONZALO, and others.*

*Alon.* Good boatswain, have care. Where's the master ? Play the men. †

\* Readily.

† Act like men.

*Boats.* I pray now, keep below.

*Ant.* Where is the master, boatswain ?

*Boats.* Do you not hear him ? You mar o'r labour ! keep your cabin ; you do assist the storm.

*Gon.* Nay, good, be patient.

*Boats.* When the sea is. Hence ! What care these roarers for the name of king ? To cabin : silence : trouble us not.

*Gon.* Good ; yet remember whom thou hast aboard.

*Boats.* None that I more love than myself. You are a counsellor ; if you can command these elements to silence, and work the peace of the present, we will not hand a rope more : use your authority. If you cannot, give thanks you have lived so long, and make yourself ready in your cabin for the mischance of the hour, if it so hap,—Cheerly, good hearts.—Out of our way, I say. *[Exit.*

*Gon.* I have great comfort from this fellow : methinks, he hath no drowning mark upon him ; his complexion is perfect gallows. Stand fast,

good fate, to his hanging! make the rope of his destiny our cable, for our own doth little advantage! If he be not born to be hanged, our case is miserable.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Re-enter BOATSWAIN.*

*Boats.* Down with the top-mast; yare; lower; lower; haul her to try with main course. [*A cry within.*] A plague upon this howling! they are louder than the weather, or our office.—

*Re-enter SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, and GONZALO.*

Yet again! what do you here? Shall we give o'er, and drown? Have you a mind to sink?

*Seb.* A pox o' your throat! you bawling, blasphemous, uncharitable dog!

*Boats.* Work you, then.

*Ant.* Hang, cur, hang! you whoreson, insolent noise-maker, we are less afraid to be drowned than thou art.

*Gon.* I'll warrant him from drowning; though the ship were no stronger than a nut-shell, and as leaky as an unstaunched <sup>o</sup> wench.

*Boats.* Lay her a-hold, a-hold; set her two courses; off to sea again, lay her off.

*Enter MARINERS, wet.*

*Nar.* All lost! to prayers, to prayers! all lost!

[*Exeunt.*]

*Boats.* What, must our mouths be cold?

*Gon.* The king and prince at prayers! let us assist them.

For our case is as theirs.

*Seb.* I am out of patience.

*Ant.* We are merely t'cheated of our lives by drunkards.—

This wide-chapped rascal;—'Would, thou might'st lie drowning,  
The washing of ten tides!

*Gon.* He'll be hanged yet;  
Though every drop of water swear against it,  
And gape at wid'st to glut him.

[*A confused noise within.*]

Mercy on us. We split, we split! Farewell, my wife and children!—Farewell, brother!—We split, we split, we split.—

*Ant.* Let's all sink with the king.

[*Exit.*]

*Seb.* Let's take leave of him.

[*Exit.*]

*Gon.* Now would I give a thousand furlongs of sea, for an acre of barren ground; long heath, brown furze, any thing: The walls above be done! but I would fain die a dry death.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*The Island: before the Cell of PROSPERO.*

*Enter PROSPERO and MIRANDA.*

*Mira.* If by your art, my dearest father, you have

Put the wild waters in this roar, allay them:  
Thy sky, it seems, would pour down stinking pitch,

But that the sea, mounting to the welkin's cheek,

Dashes the fire out. Oh! I have suffer'd  
With those that I saw suffer! a brave vessel,  
Who had no doubt some noble creatures in

her,  
Dash'd all to pieces, Oh! the cry did knock  
Against my very heart! Poor souls! they

perish'd.  
Had I been any god of power, I would  
Have sank the sea within the earth, or e'er  
It should the good ship so have swallow'd,

and  
The freighting souls within her.

*Pro.* Be collected;

No more amazement: tell your piteous heart,  
There's no harm done.

*Mira.* O woe the day!

*Pro.* No harm.

I have done nothing but in care of thee,  
(Of thee, my dear one! thee, my daughter!)  
who

Art ignorant of what thou art, nought know-  
ing

Of whence I am; nor that I am more better  
Than Prospero, master of a full poor cell,  
And the no greater father.

*Mira.* More to know

Did never meddle with my thoughts.

*Pro.* 'Tis time

I should inform thee further. Lend thy hand,  
And pluck my magic garment from me.—So;  
[*Lays down his mantle.*]

Lie there my art.—Wipe thou thine eyes; have  
comfort.

The direful spectacle of the wreck, which  
touch'd

The very virtue of compassion in thee  
I have with such provision in mine art  
So safely order'd, that there is no soul—

No, not so much perdition as an hair,  
Betid to any creature in the vessel,  
Which thou heard'st cry, which thou saw'st

sink. Sit down;

For thou must now know farther.

*Mira.* You have often  
Begun to tell me what I am; but stopp'd

And left me to a bootless inquisition;  
Concluding, *Stay, not yet.*—

*Pro.* The hour's now come;  
The very minute bids thee ope thine ear;  
Obey, and be attentive. Can'st thou remem-

ber  
A time before we came unto this cell?

I do not think thou can'st; for then thou wast  
not

Out \* three years old.

*Mira.* Certainly, Sir, I can.

*Pro.* By what? by any other house, or per-  
son?

Of any thing the image tell me, that  
Hath kept with thy remembrance.

*Mira.* 'Tis far off:  
And rather like a dream than an assurance  
That my remembrance warrants: Had I not

Four or five women once, that tended me?

*Pro.* Thou had'st, and more, Miranda: But  
how is it,

That this lives in thy mind? What seest thou  
else

In the dark backward and abysm † of time?  
If thou remember'st aught, ere thou cam'st  
here

How thou cam'st here thou may'st.

*Mira.* But that I do not.

*Pro.* Twelve years since, Miranda, twelve  
years since,

Thy father was the duke of Milan, and  
A prince of power.

*Mira.* Sir, are not you my father?

*Pro.* Thy mother was a piece of virtue, and  
She said—thou wast my daughter; and thy  
father

Was duke of Milan; and his only heir  
A princess; no worse issued.

*Mira.* O the heavens!

What foul play had we, that we came from  
thence?

Or blessed was't we did?

*Pro.* Both, both, my girl:  
By foul play, as thou say'st, were we heav'd  
thence;

But blessedly help hither.  
*Mira.* O my heart bleeds  
To think o' the teen ‡ that I have turn'd you  
to,

\* Absolutely.      † Incontinent.

‡ Before

† Abyss.      \* Quite.

‡ Sorrow.

Scene II.

THE TEMPEST.

629

Which is from my remembrance! Please you further.

*Pro.* My brother, and thy uncle, call'd Antonio,

I pray thee mark me,—that a brother should Be so perfidious!—he whom, next thyself, Of all the world I lov'd, and to him put The manage of my state; as, at that time, Through all the signories it was the first, And Prospero the prime duke; being so reputed

In dignity, and, for the liberal arts, Without a parallel; those being all my study, The government I cast upon my brother, And to my state grew stranger, being transported,

And wrapt in secret studies. Thy false uncle— Dost thou attend me?

*Mira.* Sir, most heedfully.

*Pro.* Being once perfected how to grant suits, How to deny them; whom to advance, and whom

To trash\* for over-topping: new created The creatures that were mine; I say, or chang'd them,

Or else new-form'd them: having both the key

Of officer and office, set all hearts To what tune pleased his ear; that now he was The ivy, which had hid my princely trunk, And suck'd my verdure out on't.—Thou attend'st not:

I pray thee, mark me.

*Mira.* O good Sir, I do.

*Pro.* I thus neglecting worldly ends, all dedicate

To closeness, and the bettering of my mind With that, which, but by being so retir'd, O'erpriz'd all popular rate, in my false brother

Awak'd an evil nature: and my trust, Like a good parent, did beget of him A falsehood, in its contrary as great As my trust was which had, indeed, no limit, A confidence sans bound. He being thus lorded,

Not only with what my revenue yielded, But what my power might else exact,—like one,

Who, having, unto truth, by telling of it, Made such a sinner of his memory, To credit his own lie,—he did believe He was the duke; out of the substitution, And executing the outward face of royalty, With all prerogative,—Hence his ambition Growing,—Dost hear?

*Mira.* Your tale, Sir, would cure deafness.

*Pro.* To have no screen between this part he play'd

And him he play'd it for, needs he will be Absolute Milan: Me, poor man!—my library Was dukedom large enough; of temporal royalties

He thinks me now incapable: confederates (So dry† he was for sway) with the king of Naples,

To give him annual tribute, do him homage; Subject his coronet to his crown, and bend The dukedom, yet unbow'd, (alas, poor Milan!) To most ignoble stooping.

*Mira.* O the heavens!

*Pro.* Mark his condition, and the event; then tell me,

If this might be a brother.

*Mira.* I should sin

To think but nobly of my grandmother; Good wombs have borne bad sons.

*Pro.* Now the condition.

This king of Naples, being an enemy To me inveterate, hearkens my brother's suit; Which was, that he in lieu o' the premises,—

Of homage, and I know not how much tribute,—

Should presently extirpate me and mine Out of the dukedom; and confer fair Milan, With all the honours, on my brother: Whereon, A treacherous army levied, one midnight Fated to the purpose, did Antonio open The gates of Milan; and, in the dead of darkness,

The ministers for the purpose hurried thence Me and thy crying self.

*Mira.* Alack, for pity!

I, not rememb'ring how I cried out then, Will cry it o'er again; it is a hint,\* That wrings mine eyes.

*Pro.* Hear a little further, And then I'll bring thee to the present business

Which now's upon us; without the which, this story

Were most impertinent.

*Mira.* Wherefore did they not

That hour destroy us?

*Pro.* Well demanded, wench;

My tale provokes that question. Dear, they durst not;

(So dear the love my people bore me) nor set

A mark so bloody on the business; but

With colours fairer painted their foul ends.

In few, they hurried us aboard a bark;

Bore us some leagues to sea; where they prepared

A rotten carcass of a boat, not rigg'd,

Nor tackle, sail, nor mast; the very rats

Instinctively had quit it: there they hoist us,

To cry to the sea that roar'd to us; to sigh

To the winds, whose pity sighing back again,

Did us but loving wrong.

*Mira.* Alack! what trouble

Was I then to you!

*Pro.* Oh! a cherubim

Thou wast, that did preserve me! Thou didst smile,

Infused with a fortitude from heaven,

When I have deck'd† the sea with drops full salt;

Under my burden groan'd; which raised in me

An undergoing stomach,‡ to bear up

Against what should ensue.

*Mira.* How came we ashore?

*Pro.* By Providence divine.

Some food we had, and some fresh water, that

A noble Neapolitan Gonzalo,

Out of his charity, (who being then appointed

Master of this design,) did give us; with

Rich garments, linens, stuffs, and necessities,

Which since have steaded much; so of his gentleness,

Knowing I lov'd my books, he furnish'd me,

From my own library, with volumes that

I prize above my dukedom.

*Mira.* 'Would I might

But ever see that man!

*Pro.* Now I arise:—

Sit still, and hear the last of our sea sorrow.

Here in this island we arriv'd; and here

Have I, thy schoolmaster, made thee more profit

Than other princes can, that have more time

For vainer hours, and tutors not so careful.

*Mira.* Heavens thank you for't! And now, I

pray you, Sir,

(For still 'tis beating in my mind,) your reason

For raising this sea-storm?

*Pro.* Know thus far forth.—

By accident most strange, bountiful fortune,

(Now my dear lady) hath mine enemies

Brought to this shore: and by my prescience

I find my zenith doth depend upon

A most auspicious star; whose influence

If now I court not, but omit, my fortunes

\* Without.

\* Cut away.

‡ Thirsty

† Sprinkled.

\* Suggestion.

† Stubborn resolution.

Will ever after droop.—Here cease more questions:  
 Thou art inclin'd to sleep; 'tis a good dullness,  
 And give it way;—I know thou canst not choose.—  
 Come away, servant, come: I am ready now;  
 Approach, my Ariel; come.

*Enter ARIEL.*

*Ari.* All hail, great master! grave sir, hail! I come  
 To answer thy best pleasure; be't to fly,  
 To swim, to dive into the fire, to ride  
 On the curl'd clouds; to thy strong bidding task

*Ariel*, and all his quality.

*Pro.* Hast thou, spirit,  
 Perform'd to point\* the tempest that I bade thee?

*Ari.* To every article.  
 I boarded the king's ship; now on the beach,  
 Now in the waist, the deck in every cabin,  
 I flam'd amazement: Sometimes I'd divide,  
 And burn in many places; on the top-mast,  
 The yards, and bowsprit, would I flame distinctly,  
 Then meet, and join: Jove's lightnings, the  
 O' the dreadful thunder-claps, more momentary

And sight-out-running were not: The fire and  
 Of sulphurous roaring, the most mighty Neptune

Seem'd to besiege, and make his bold waves  
 tremble,  
 Yea, his dread trident shake.

*Pro.* My brave spirit!  
 Who was so firm, so constant, that this coil†  
 Would not infect his reason?

*Ari.* Not a soul  
 But felt a fever of the mad, and play'd  
 Some tricks of desperation: All, but mariners,  
 Plung'd in the foaming brine, and quit the vessel.  
 Then all a fire with me: the king's son, Ferdinand,  
 With hair up-starting (then like reeds, not hair,) was  
 The first man that leap'd: cried, *Hell is empty,*

*And all the devils are here.*

*Pro.* Why, that's my spirit!

But was not this high shore?

*Ari.* Close by, my master.

*Pro.* But are they, Ariel, safe?

*Ari.* Not a hair perish'd;

On their sustaining garments not a blemish,  
 But fresher than before; and, as thou bad'st me,

In troops I have dispers'd them 'bout the isle:  
 The king's son have I landed by himself;  
 Whom I left cooling of the air with sighs,  
 In an odd angle of the isle, and sitting,  
 His arms in this sad knot.

*Pro.* Of the king's ship,  
 The mariners, say, how thou hast dispos'd,  
 And all the rest o' the fleet?

*Ari.* Safely in harbour  
 Is the king's ship; in the deep nook, where  
 once

Thou call'd'st me up at midnight, to fetch dew  
 From the still vex'd Bermoothes; there she's  
 hid:

Whom with charm join'd to their suffer'd  
 labours

I have left asleep: and for the rest o' the fleet,  
 Which I dispers'd, they all have met again;  
 And are upon the Mediterranean fote‡

Bound sadly home for Naples;  
 Supposing that they saw the king's ship  
 wreck'd,

And his great person perish.

*Pro.* Ariel, thy charge  
 Exactly is perform'd; but there's more work:  
 What is the time o' the day?

*Ari.* Past the mid season.

*Pro.* At least two glasses: the time 'twixt six  
 and now,

Must by us both be spent most precious.

*Ari.* Is there more toil? Since thou dost  
 give me pains,

Let me remember thee what thou hast promis'd,

Which is not yet perform'd me.

*Pro.* How now? moody?

What is't thou canst demand?

*Ari.* My liberty.

*Pro.* Before the time be out? no more.

*Ari.* I pray thee

Remember, I have done thee worthy service;

Told thee no lies, made no mistakings, serv'd

Without or grudge or grumblings: thou did'st  
 promise

To bate me a full year,

*Pro.* Dost thou forget

From what a torment I did free thee?

*Ari.* No.

*Pro.* Thou dost! and think'st

It much, to tread the ooze of the salt deep;

To run upon the sharp wind of the north;

To do me business in the veins o' the earth,

When it is bak'd with frost.

*Ari.* I do not, Sir.

*Pro.* Thou liest, malignant thing! Hast thou  
 forgot

The foul witch Sycorax, who, with age, and  
 envy,

Was grown into a hoop? hast thou forgot her?

*Ari.* No, Sir.

*Pro.* Thou hast: where was she born? speak;  
 tell me.

*Ari.* Sir, in Argier.\*

*Pro.* Oh! was she so? I must,  
 Once in a month, recount what thou hast  
 been,

Which thou forget'st. This damn'd witch, Sy-  
 corax,

For mischiefs manifold, and sorceries terrible

To enter human hearing, from Argier,  
 Thou-know'st, was banish'd; for one thing she  
 did,

They would not take her life: Is not this true?

*Ari.* Ay, Sir.

*Pro.* This blue-ey'd hag was hither brought  
 with child,

And here was left by the sailors. Thou, my  
 slave,

As thou report'st thyself, wast then her sci-  
 vant,

And, for thou wast a spirit too delicate  
 To act her earthy and abhor'd commands,

Refusing her grand hests,†, she did confine  
 thee,

By help of her most potent ministers,

And in her most unamiable rage,

Into a cloven pine; within which rift

Imprison'd, thou didst painfully remain

A dozen years; within which space she died,

And left thee there; where thou did'st vent thy  
 groans,

As fast as mill-wheels strike: then was this  
 island,

(Save for the son that she did litter here,  
 A freckled whelp, hag-born) not honour'd with  
 A human shape.

*Ari.* Yes; Caliban her son.

*Pro.* Dull thing, I say so; he, that Caliban,

Whom now I keep in service. Thou best  
 know'st

What torment I did find thee in: thy groans

Did make wolves howl, and penetrate the  
 breasts

Of ever-angry bears; it was a torment

To lay upon the damnd, which Sycorax

Could not again undo; it was mine art,

\* The minutest article,  
 ‡ Bermoothes.

† Bustle, tumult.  
 § Wave.

\* Algiers.

† Commands.

When I arriv'd, and heard thee, that made gape  
The pine, and let thee out.

*Ari.* I thank thee, master.

*Pro.* If thou more murmur st, I will read an oak,

And peg thee in his knotty entrails, till  
Thou hast howl'd away twelve winters.

*Ari.* Pardon, master :

I will be correspondent to command,  
And do my spiriting gently.

*Pro.* Do so ; and after two days  
I will discharge thee.

*Ari.* That's my noble master !

What shall I do ? say what ? what shall I do.

*Pro.* Go make thyself like to a nymph o' the sea :

Be subject to no sight but mine ; invisible  
To every eye-ball else. Go, take this shape,  
And hither come in't : hence, with diligence.

[*Exit ARIEL.*]

Awake, dear heart, awake ! thou hast slept well ;  
Awake !

*Mira.* The strangeness of your story put  
Heaviness in me.

*Pro.* Shake it off : come on ;  
We'll visit Caliban, my slave, who never  
Yields us kind answer.

*Mira.* 'Tis a villain, Sir,  
I do not love to look on.

*Pro.* But, as 'tis,

We cannot miss \* him : he does light our fire,  
Fetch in our wood ; and serves in offices,  
That profit us. What, ho ! slave, Caliban !  
Thou earth, thou ! speak.

*Cal.* [*Within.*] There's wood enough within.

*Pro.* Come forth, I say ; there's other business  
for thee :  
Come forth, thou tortoise ! when ?

*Re-enter ARIEL, like a Water-Nymph.*

Fine apparition ! My quaint Ariel,  
Hark in thine ear.

*Ari.* My lord, it shall be done. [*Exit.*]

*Pro.* Thou poisonous slave, got by the devil  
himself

Upon thy wicked dam, come forth !

*Enter CALIBAN.*

*Cal.* As wicked dew as e'er my mother  
brush'd

With raven's feather from unwholesome fen,  
Drop on you both ! a south-west blow on ye,  
And blister you all o'er !

*Pro.* For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt have  
cramps,  
Side-stitches that shall pen thy breath up ; ur-  
chins †

Shall, for that vast of night that they may  
work,

All exercise on thee : thou shalt be pinch'd  
As thick as honey-combs, each pinch more  
stinging

Than bees that made them.

*Cal.* I must eat my dinner.  
This island's mine, by Sycorax my mother,  
Which thou tak'st from me. When thou camest  
first,

'Thou strok'd'st me, and mad'st much of me ;  
would'st give me

Water with berries in't and teach me how  
To name the bigger light, and how the less  
That burn by day and night : and then I lov'd  
thee,

And show'd thee all the qualities o' the isle,  
The fresh springs, brine pits, barren place, and  
fertile ;

Curs'd be I that did so !—All the charms  
Of Sycorax, toads, beetles, bats, light on you !  
For I am all the subjects that you have,  
Which first was mine own king : and here you  
sty me

In this hard rock, whiles you do keep from me  
The rest of the island.

\* Do without.

† Fairies.

*Pro.* Thou most lying slave,  
Whom stripes may move, not kindness : I have  
us'd thee,  
Filth as thou art, with human care ; and lodg'd  
thee

In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate  
The honour of my child.

*Cal.* O ho, O ho !—would it had been done !  
Thou didst prevent me ; I had peopled else  
This isle with Calibans.

*Pro.* Abhorred slave ;  
Which any print of goodness will not take,  
Being capable of all ill ! I pitied thee,  
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee  
each hour

One thing or other : when thou didst not, sa-  
vage,  
Know thine own meaning, but would'st gabble  
like

A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes  
With words that made them known : But thy  
vile race,

Though thou didst learn, had that in't which  
good natures

Could not abide to be with ; therefore wast thou  
Deservedly confin'd into this rock,  
Who had'st deserv'd more than a prison.

*Cal.* You taught me language ; and my profit  
on't

Is, I know how to curse : the red plague rid \*  
you,

For learning me your language !

*Pro.* Hag-seed, hence !

Fetch us in fuel ; and be quick, thou wert best,  
To answer other business. Shrug'st thou, mal-  
lice ?

If thou neglect'st, or dost unwillingly  
What I command, I'll rack thee with old  
cramps ;

Fill all thy bones with aches ; make thee roar,  
That beasts shall tremble at thy din.

*Cal.* No, 'pray thee !—

I must obey : his art is of such power, [*Aside.*]  
It would control my dam's god, Setebos, †  
And make a vassal of him.

*Pro.* So, slave ; hence ! [*Exit Caliban.*]

*Re-enter ARIEL invisible, playing and sing-  
ing ; FERDINAND following him.*

#### ARIEL'S Song.

Come unto these yellow sands,  
And then take hands :  
Court'sied when you have, and kiss'd,  
(The wild waves whist)  
Foot it feathly here and there ;  
And, sweet sprites, the burden bear.  
Hark, hark !

*Bur.* Bowgh, wowgh. [*dispersedly.*]

The watch-dogs bark :

*Bur.* Bowgh, wowgh. [*dispersedly.*]

Hark, hark ! I hear

The strain of strutting chanticleer,  
Cry, Cock-a-doodle doo.

*Fer.* Where should this music be ? 't the air,  
or the earth ?

It sounds no more :—and sure, it waits upon  
Some god of the island. Sitting on a bank,  
Weeping again the king my father's wreck,  
This music crept by me upon the waters ;  
Allaying both their fury, and my passion,  
With its sweet air : thence I have follow'd it,  
Or it hath drawn me rather :—But 'tis gone.  
No, it begins again.

#### ARIEL sings.

Full fathom five thy father lies ;  
Of his bones are coral made ;  
Those are pearls, that were his eyes :  
Nothing of him that doth fade,

\* Destroy. † Setebos was supreme god  
of the Paagonians ; see Magellan's voyage.

*But doth suffer a sea-change  
Into something rich and strange.  
Sea-nymphs hourly ring his knell:  
Hark! now I hear them,—ding-dong, bell.  
[Burden, ding-dong.]*

*Fer.* The ditty does remember my drown'd father :—  
This is no mortal business, nor no sound  
That the earth owes; \*—I hear it now above me.

*Pro.* The fringed curtains of thine eye advance  
And say what thou seest yond'.

*Mira.* What is't? a spirit?  
Lord, how it looks about! Believe me, Sir,  
It carries a brave form :—But 'tis a spirit.

*Pro.* No, wench; it eats and sleeps, and hath such senses  
As we have, such: This gallant which thou seest,  
Was in the wreck; and but he's something stain'd  
With grief, that's beauty's canker, thou might'st call him

A goodly person: he hath lost his fellows,  
And strays about to find them.

*Mira.* I might call him  
A thing divine; for nothing natural  
I ever saw so noble.

*Pro.* It goes on, *[Aside.]*  
As my soul prompts it :—Spirit, fine spirit! I'll free thee  
Within two days for this.

*Fer.* Most sure, the goddess  
On whom these airs attend!—Vouchsafe, my prayer

May know, if you remain upon this island;  
And that you will some good instruction give,  
How I may bear me here: My prime request,  
Which I do last pronounce, is, O you wonder!  
If you be maid, or no?

*Mira.* No, wonder, Sir;  
But, certainly, a maid.

*Fer.* My language! heavens!—  
I am the best of them that speak this speech,  
Were I but where 'tis spoken.

*Pro.* How! the best?  
What wert thou, if the king of Naples heard thee?

*Fer.* A single thing, as I am now, that wonders

To hear thee speak of Naples: He does hear me;  
And, that he does, I weep: myself am Naples;  
Who with mine eyes, ne'er since at ebb, beheld  
The king, my father, wreck'd.

*Mira.* Alack, for mercy!

*Fer.* Yes, faith, and all his lords; the duke  
of Milan,  
And his brave son, being twain.

*Pro.* The duke of Milan,  
And his more braver daughter, could control thee

If now 'twere fit to do't :—At the first sight. *[Aside.]*

They have chang'd eyes :—Delicate Ariel,  
I'll set thee free for this!—A word, good Sir;  
I fear you have done yourself some wrong: a word.

*Mira.* Why speaks my father so ungently? This  
Is the third man that e'er I saw; the first  
That e'er I sigh'd for: pity move my father  
To be inclin'd my way!

*Fer.* O if a virgin,  
And your affection not gone forth, I'll make you  
The queen of Naples.

*Pro.* Soft, Sir; one word more.—  
They are both in either's powers; but this swift  
business  
I must uneasy make, lest too light winning

Make the prize light.—One word more; I  
charge thee,  
That thou attend me: thou dost here usurp

\* Ours.

† Confute.

The name thou ow'st not; and hast put thyself  
Upon this island, as a spy, to win it  
From me, the lord on't.

*Fer.* No, as I am a man.

*Mira.* There's nothing ill can dwell in such a  
temple:

If the ill spirit have so fair an house,  
Good things will strive to dwell with't.

*Pro.* Follow me.— *[To FERD.]*  
Speak not you for him; he's a traitor.—Come.  
I'll manacle thy neck and feet together:  
Sea-water shalt thou drink, thy food shall be  
The fresh-brook muscles, wither'd roots, and  
husks,

Wherein the acorn cradled: Follow.

*Fer.* No.

I will resist such entertainment, till  
Mine enemy has more power. *[He draws.]*

*Mira.* O dear father,  
Make not too rash a trial of him, for  
He's gentle, and not fearful.\*

*Pro.* What, I say,  
My foot my tutor!—Put thy sword up, traitor;  
Who mak'st a show, but dar'st not strike, thy  
conscience  
Is so possess'd with guilt: come from thy  
ward: †

For I can here disarm thee with a stick,  
And make thy weapon drop.

*Mira.* Beseech you, father!

*Pro.* Hence; hang not on my garments.

*Mira.* Sir, have pity;

I'll be his surety.

*Pro.* Silence: one word more  
Shall make me chide thee if not hate thee. What!  
An advocate for an impostor? hush!

Thou think'st there are no more such shapes  
as he,  
Having seen but him and Caliban: Foolish  
wench!

To the most of men this is a Caliban,  
And they to him are angels.

*Mira.* My affections  
Are then most humble; I have no ambition  
To see a goodlier man.

*Pro.* Come on; obey; *[To FERD.]*  
Thy nerves are in their infancy again,  
And have no vigour in them.

*Fer.* So they are:

My spirits, as in a dream, are all bound up.  
My father's loss, the weakness which I feel,  
The wreck of all my friends, or this man's  
threats,

To whom I am subdued, are but light to me,  
Might I but through my prison once a-day  
Behold this maid: all corners else o'the earth  
Let liberty make use of space; enough  
Have I in such a prison.

*Pro.* It works :—Come on.—

Thou hast done well, fine Ariel!—Follow me.—

*[To FERD. and MIRA.]*  
Hark, what thou else shalt do me. *[To ARIEL.]*

*Mira.* Be of comfort;  
My father's of a better nature, Sir,  
Than he appears by speech; this is unwonted,  
Which now came from him.

*Pro.* Thou shalt be as free  
As mountain winds: but then exactly do  
All points of my command.

*Ari.* To the syllable.

*Pro.* Come, follow: speak not for him. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—Another Part of the Island.

*Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GONZALO, ADRIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.*

*Gon.* 'Beseech you, Sir, be merry; you have  
cause.

\* Frightful.

† Guard

(So have we all) of joy : for our escape  
Is much beyond our loss : Our hint of woe  
Is common ; every day, some sailor's wife,  
The masters of some merchant, and the mer-  
chant,

Have just our theme of woe : but for the mi-  
racle,

I mean our preservation, few in millions  
Can speak like us : then wisely, good Sir, weigh  
Our sorrow with our comfort.

*Alon.* Pr'ythee, peace.

*Seb.* He receives comfort like cold porridge.

*Ant.* The visitor will not give him o'er so.

*Seb.* Look, he's winding up the watch of his  
wit ; by and by it will strike.

*Gon.* Sir,—

*Seb.* One :— Tell.

*Gon.* When every grief is entertained, that's  
offer'd,

Comes to the entertainer—

*Seb.* A dollar.

*Gon.* Dolour comes to him, indeed ; you have  
spoken truer than you purposed.

*Seb.* You have taken it wiselier than I meant  
you should.

*Gon.* Therefore, my Lord,—

*Ant.* Fie, what a spendthrift is he of his  
tongue !

*Alon.* I pr'ythee, spare.

*Gon.* Well, I have done : But yet—

*Seb.* He will be talking.

*Ant.* Which of them, he, or Adrian, for a  
good wager, first begins to crow !

*Seb.* The old cock.

*Ant.* The cockrel.

*Seb.* Done : The wager ?

*Ant.* A laughter.

*Seb.* A match.

*Adr.* Though this island seem to be desert,—

*Seb.* Ha, ha, ha !

*Ant.* So, you've paid.

*Adr.* Uninhabitable, and almost inaccessible,—

*Seb.* Yet,

*Adr.* Yet—

*Ant.* He could not miss it.

*Adr.* It must needs be of subtle, tender, and  
delicate temperance.\*

*Ant.* Temperance was a delicate wench.

*Seb.* Ay, and a subtle ; as he most learnedly  
delivered.

*Adr.* The air breathes upon us here most  
sweetly.

*Seb.* As if it had lungs, and rotten ones.

*Ant.* Or, as 'twere perfumed by a fen.

*Gon.* Here is every thing advantageous to life.

*Ant.* True ; save means to live.

*Seb.* Of that, there's none or little.

*Gon.* How lush† and lusty the grass looks ?  
how green ?

*Ant.* The ground, indeed, is tawny.

*Seb.* With an eye‡ of green in't.

*Ant.* He misses not much.

*Seb.* No ; he doth but mistake the truth to-  
tally.

*Gon.* But the rarity of it is (which is indeed  
almost beyond credit)—

*Seb.* As many vouch'd rarities are.

*Gon.* That our garments, being, as they were,  
drenched in the sea, hold, notwithstanding, their  
freshness and glosses ; being rather new dyed,  
than stain'd with salt water.

*Ant.* If but one of his pockets could speak,  
would it not say, he lies ?

*Seb.* Ay, or very falsely pocket up his report.

*Gon.* Methinks, our garments are now as fresh  
as when we put them on first in Afric, at the  
marriage of the king's fair daughter Claribel  
to the king of Tunis

*Seb.* 'Twas a sweet marriage, and we prosper  
well in our return.

*Adr.* Tunis was never graced before with such  
a paragon to their queen.

*Gon.* Not since widow Dido's time.

*Ant.* Widow ? a pox o' that ! How came that  
widow in ? Widow Dido !

*Seb.* What if he had said, widower Æneas too ?  
good lord, how you take it !

*Adr.* Widow Dido, said you ? you make me  
study of that : she was of Carthage, not of  
Tunis.

*Gon.* This Tunis, Sir, was Carthage.

*Adr.* Carthage ?

*Gon.* I assure you, Carthage.

*Ant.* His word is more than the miraculous  
harp.

*Seb.* He hath raised the wall, and houses too.

*Ant.* What impossible matter will he make  
easy next ?

*Seb.* I think he will carry this island home in  
his pocket, and give it his son for an apple.

*Ant.* And, sowing the kernels of it in the sea,  
bring forth more islands.

*Gon.* Ay ?

*Ant.* Why, in good time.

*Gon.* Sir, we were talking that our garments  
seem now as fresh, as when we were at Tunis,  
at the marriage of your daughter, who is now  
queen.

*Ant.* And the rarest that e'er came there.

*Seb.* 'Bate, I beseech you, widow Dido.

*Ant.* O widow Dido ; ay, widow Dido.

*Gon.* Is not, Sir, my doublet as fresh as the  
first day I wore it ? I mean, in a sort.\*

*Ant.* That sort was well fish'd for.

*Gon.* When I wore it at your daughter's mar-  
riage ?

*Alon.* You cram these words into mine ears,  
against

The stomach of my sense : 'Would I had never  
Marr'd my daughter there ! for, coming thence,  
My son is lost ; and, in my rate, she too,  
Who is so far from Italy remov'd,  
I ne'er again shall see her. O thou mine heir  
Of Naples and of Milan, what strange fish  
Hath made his meal on thee !

*Fran.* Sir, he may live ;

I saw him beat the surges under him,  
And ride upon their backs ; he trod the water,  
Whose enmity he flung aside, and breasted  
The surge most swollen that met him : his bold  
head

'Bove the contentious waves he kept, and oar'd  
Himself with his good arms in lusty stroke  
To the shore, that o'er his wave-worn basis  
bow'd,

As stooping to relieve him : I not doubt,  
He came alive to land.

*Alon.* No, no, he's gone.

*Seb.* Sir, you may thank yourself for this  
great loss ;

That would not bless our Europe with your  
daughter,

But rather lose her to an African ;  
Where she, at least, is banish'd from your eye,  
Who hath cause to wet the grief on't.

*Alon.* Pr'ythee, peace.

*Seb.* You were kneel'd to, and importun'd  
otherwise

By all of us ; and the fair soul herself  
Weigh'd, between loathness and obedience, at  
Which end o' the beam she'd bow. We have  
lost your son,

I fear, for ever : Milan and Naples have  
More widows in them of this business' making,  
Than we bring men to comfort them : the fault's  
Your own.

*Alon.* So is the dearest of the loss.

*Gon.* My lord Sebastian,  
The truth you speak doth lack some gentleness,  
And time to speak it in : you rub the sore,  
When you should bring the plaster.

*Seb.* Very well.

*Ant.* And most chirurgically.

*Gon.* It is foul weather in us all, good Sir,  
When you are cloudy.

\* Temperature. † Shade of colour. ‡ Rank.

\* Degree or quality.



*Seb.* Foul weather ?

*Ant.* Very foul.

*Gon.* Had I a plantation of this isle, my lord,—

*Ant.* He'd sow it with nettle-seed.

*Seb.* Or docks, or mallows.

*Gon.* And were the king of it, What would I do ?

*Seb.* 'Scape being drunk, for want of wine.

*Gon.* I'the commonwealth I would by contraries

Execute all things : for no kind of traffic  
Would I admit ; no name of magistrate ;  
Letters should not be known ; no use of service,  
Of riches or of poverty ; no contracts,  
Successions ; bound of land, tillth, vineyard,  
none ;

No use of metal, corn, or wine, or oil ;  
No occupation ; all men idle, all ;  
And women too ; but innocent and pure :  
No sovereignty :—

*Seb.* And yet he would be king on't.—

*Ant.* The latter end of his commonwealth forgets the beginning.

*Gon.* All things in common nature should produce

Without sweat or endeavour : treason, felony,  
Sword, pike, knife, gun, or need of any engine,\*  
Would I not have ; but nature should bring forth,

Of its own kind, all foison,† all abundance,  
To feed my innocent people.

*Seb.* No marrying 'mong his subjects ?

*Ant.* None, man ; all idle ; whores, and knaves.

*Gon.* I would with such perfection govern, Sir,  
To excel the golden age.

*Seb.* 'Save his majesty !

*Ant.* Long live Gonzalo !

*Gon.* And, do you mark me, Sir ?—

*Alon.* Pr'ythee, no more : thou dost talk no-thing to me.

*Gon.* I do well believe your highness ; and did it to minister occasion to these gentlemen, who are of such sensible and nimble lungs, that they always use to laugh at nothing.

*Ant.* 'Twas you we laughed at.

*Gon.* Who, in this kind of merry fooling, am nothing to you ; so you may continue, and laugh at nothing still.

*Ant.* What a blow was there given !

*Seb.* An it had not fallen flat-long.

*Gon.* You are gentlemen of brave mettle ; you would lift the moon out of her sphere, if she would continue in it five weeks without changing.

*Enter ARIEL invisible, playing solemn music.*

*Seb.* We would so, and then go a bat-fowling.

*Ant.* Nay, good my lord, be not angry.

*Gon.* No, I warrant you ; I will not adventure my discretion so weakly. Will you laugh me asleep, for I am very heavy ?

*Ant.* Go sleep, and hear us.

[*All sleep but Alon. Seb. and Ant.*]

*Alon.* What, all so soon asleep ! I wish mine eyes

Would, with themselves, shut up my thoughts : I find

They are inclin'd to do so.

*Seb.* Please you, Sir,

Do not omit the heavy offer of it : It seldom visits sorrow ; when it doth, it is a comforter.

*Ant.* We two, my lord,

Will guard your person, while you take your rest,

And watch your safety.

*Alon.* Thank you : Wondrous heavy.

[*Alonso sleeps. [Exit Ariel.*]

*Seb.* What a strange drowsiness possesses them !

*Ant.* It is the quality o'the climate.

*Seb.* Why

Doth it not then our eyelids sink ? I find not Myself dispos'd to sleep.

*Ant.* Nor I : my spirits are nimble.

They fell together all, as by consent ;

They dropp'd as by a thunder-stroke. What might,

Worthy Sebastian ?—Oh ! what might ?—No more :—

And yet, methinks, I see it in thy face, What thou should'st be : the occasion speaks

thee ; and My strong imagination sees a crown

Dropping upon thy head.

*Seb.* What, art thou waking ?

*Ant.* Do you not hear me speak ?

*Seb.* I do ; and, surely,

It is a sleepy language ; and thou speak'st

Out of thy sleep : What is it thou didst say ?

This is a strange repose, to be asleep

With eyes wide open ; standing, speaking, moving, And yet so fast asleep.

*Ant.* Noble Sebastian,

Thou let'st thy fortune sleep—die rather ; wink'st

Whiles thou art waking.

*Seb.* Thou dost snore distinctly ;

There's meaning in thy snores.

*Ant.* I am more serious than my custom : you must be so too, if need me ; which to do, Treble's thee o'er.

*Seb.* Well ; I am standing wake.

*Ant.* I'll teach you how to flow.

*Seb.* Do so : to ebb,

Hereditary sloth instructs me.

*Ant.* Oh !

If you but knew, how you the purpose cherish,

Whiles thus you mock it ! how, in stripping it,

You more invest it ! Ebbing men, indeed,

Most often do so near the bottom run,

By their own fear, or sloth.

*Seb.* Pr'ythee, say on :

The setting of thine eye, and cheek, proclaim

A matter from thee : and a birth, indeed,

Which throes thee much to yield.

*Ant.* Thus, Sir :

Although this lord of weak remembrance, this

(Who shall be of as little memory,

When he is earth'd) hath here almost persuaded

(For he's a spirit of persuasion only.)

The king, his son's alive ; 'tis an impossible

That he's undrown'd, as he that sleeps here, swims.

*Seb.* I have no hope

That he's undrown'd.

*Ant.* O out of that no hope,

What great hope have you ! no hope, that way, is

Another way so high an hope, that even

Ambition cannot pierce a wink beyond,

But doubts discovery there. Will you grant,

with me,

That Ferdinand is drown'd ?

*Seb.* He's gone.

*Ant.* Then, tell me,

Who's the next heir of Naples ?

*Seb.* Claribel.

*Ant.* She that is queen of Tunis ; she that dwells

Ten leagues beyond man's life ; she that from

Naples

Can have no note, unless the sun were post,

(The man ! the moon's too slow.) till new-born

chins

Be rough and razorable : she, from whom

We were all sea-swallow'd, though some cast

again ;

And, by that, destin'd to perform an act,

Whereof what's past is prologue ; what to come,

In yours and my discharge.

*Seb.* What stuff is this ?—How say you ?

'Tis true my brother's daughter's queen of

Tunis ;

So is she heir of Naples ; 'twixt which regions

There is some space.

*Ant.* A space whose every cubit

Seems to cry out, *How shall that Claribel*

\* The rack.

† Plenty.

*Measure us back to Naples!*—Keep in Tunis,  
And let Sebastian wake!—Say, this were death  
That now hath seiz'd them; why, they were no  
worse

Than now they are: There be, that can rule  
Naples,

As well as he that sleeps; lords, that can prate

As amply and unnecessarily,

As this Gonzalo; I myself could make

A enough \* of as deep chat. Oh! that you bore

The mind that I do! what a sleep were this

For your advancement! Do you understand me?

*Seb.* Methinks, I do.

*Ant.* And how does your content

Tender your own good fortune?

*Seb.* I remember,

You did supplant your brother Prospero.

*Ant.* True:

And, look, how well my garments sit upon me;

Much feater than before: My brother's servants

Were then my fellows, now they are my men.

*Seb.* But, for your conscience—

*Ant.* Ay, Sir; where lies that? If it were a

kybe,

'Twould put me to my slipper; but I feel not

This deity in my bosom: twenty consciences,

That stand 'twixt me and Milan, candied be

they,

And melt, ere they molest! Here lies your brother,

No better than the earth he lies upon,

If he were that which now he's like; whom I,

With this obedient steel, three inches of it,

Can lay to bed for ever: whiles you, doing thus,

To the perpetual wink for aye+ might put

This ancient morsel, this sir Prudence, who

Should not upbraid our course. For all the rest,

They'll take suggestion, † as a cat laps milk;

They'll tell the clock to any business that

We say befits the hour.

*Seb.* Thy case, dear friend,

Shall be my precedent; as thou got'st Milan,

I'll come by Naples. Draw thy sword: one

stroke

Shall free thee from the tribute which thou

pay'st;

And I the king shall love thee.

*Ant.* Draw together:

And when I rear my hand, do you the like,

To fall it on Gonzalo.

*Seb.* Oh! but one word.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Musie.* Re-enter ARIEL, invisible.

*Ari.* My master through his art foresees the

danger

That these, his friends, are in; and sends me

forth,

(For else his project dies,) to keep them living.

[*Sings in GONZALO'S ear.*]

*While you here do snoring lie,*

*Open-ey'd conspiracy*

*Is time doth take:*

*If of life you keep a care,*

*Shake off slumber, and beware:*

*Awake! awake!*

*Ant.* Then let us both be sudden.

*Gon.* Now, good angels, preserve the king;

[*They awake.*]

*Alon.* Why, how now, ho! awake! Why are

you dawn?

Wherefore this ghastly looking?

*Gon.* What's the matter?

*Seb.* Whiles we stood here securing your repose,

Even now, we heard a hollow burst of bellowing

Like bull's, or rather lions; did it not wake you?

It struck mine ear most terribly.

*Alon.* I heard nothing.

*Ant.* Oh! 'twas a din to fright a monster's

\* A bird of the jack-daw kind.  
‡ Any hint.

† Ever.

To make an earthquake! sure it was the roar  
Of a whole herd of lions.

*Alon.* Heard you this, Gonzalo?

*Gon.* Upon mine honour, Sir, I heard a humming,

And that a strange one too, which did awake

me: [open'd,

I shak'd you, Sir, and cried; as mine eyes

I saw their weapons drawn:—there was a

noise,

That's verity: 'Best stand upon our guard;

Or that we quit this place: let's draw our weapons.

*Alon.* Lead off this ground; and let's make

further search

For my poor son.

*Gon.* Heavens keep him from these beasts!

For he is, sure, 't the island.

*Alon.* Lead away.

*Ari.* Prospero my lord shall know what I have

done:

So, king, go safely on to seek thy son. [*Aside.*

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—Another part of the island.

*Enter CALIBAN, with a burden of wood.*

*A noise of thunder heard.*

*Cal.* All the infections that the sun sucks up

From bogs, fens, flats, on Prosper fall, and

make him

By inch-meal a disease! His spirits hear me,

And yet I needs must curse. But they'll nor

punch,

Fright me with urchin shows, pitch me 't the

mire,

Nor lead me, like a fire-brand, in the dark

Out of my way, unless he bid them; but

For every trifles are they set upon me:

Sometime like apes, that mow\* and chatter at

me,

And after, bite me; then like hedge-hogs, which

Lie tumbling in my bare-foot way, and mount

Their prickles at my foot-fall; sometime aw I

All wound with adders, who, with cloven

tongues,

Do hiss me into madness:—Lo! now! lo!

*Enter TRINCULO.*

Here comes a spirit of his; and to torment me,

For bringing wood in slowly: I'll fall flat;

Perchance, he will not mind me.

*Trin.* Here's neither bush nor shrub, to bear

off any weather at all, and another storm brewing;

I hear it sing 't the wind: yond' same

black cloud, yond' huge one, looks like a foul

bumbard† that would shed his liquor. If it

should thunder, as it did before, I know not

where to hide my head: yond' same cloud can-

not choose but fall by painfuls.—What have

we here? a man or a fish? Dead or alive? A

fish: he smells like a fish; a very ancient and

fish-like smell; a kind of not of the newest

Poor-John. A strange fish! Were I in England

now (as once I was), and had but this fish

painted, not a holiday-fool there but would give

a piece of silver: there would this monster

make a man; any strange beast there makes a

man: when they will not give a doit to relieve

a lame beggar, they will lay out ten to see a

dead Indian. Legg'd like a man! and his fins

like arms! Warm, o' my troth! I do now let

loose my opinion, hold it no longer; this is no

fish but an islander, that hath lately suffered by

a thunderbolt. [*Thunder.*] Alas! the storm is

come again: my best way is to creep under his

gaberdine; ‡ there is no other shelter hereabout:

Misery acquaints a man with strange bed-fellows.

I will here shroud, till the dregs of the storm be

past.

\* Make mouths.

† A black-jack of leather, to hold beer.

‡ A coarse frock still worn in Sussex.

Enter STEPHANO, singing; a bottle in his hand.

*Ste. I shall no more to sea, to sea,  
Here shall I die ashore;—*

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's funeral:

Well, here's my comfort. [Drinks.

*The master, the swabber, the boatswain, and I,*

*The gunner, and his mate,  
Lcv'd Mall, Meg, and Marian, and Margery,  
But none of us car'd for Kate:*

*For she had a tongue with a tang,  
Would cry to a sailor, Go, hang:*

*She lov'd not the savour of tar nor of pitch,  
Yet a tailor might scratch her where-e'er she  
did itch:*

*Then to sea, boys, and let her go hang.*

This is a scurvy tune too: But here's my comfort. [Drinks.

*Cal. Do not torment me: Ho!*

*Ste. What's the matter? Have we devils here? Do you put tricks upon us with savages, and men of Inde? Ha! I have not scap'd drowning, to be afraid now of your four legs; for it hath been said, As proper a man as ever went on four legs, cannot make him give ground: and it shall be said so again, whilst Stephano breathes at nostrils.*

*Cal. The spirit torments me: Ho!*

*Ste. This is some monster of the isle, with four legs; who hath got, as I take it, an ague: Where the devil should he learn our language? I will give him some relief, if it be but for that: If I can recover him, and keep him tame, and get to Naples with him, he's a present for any emperor that ever trode on neat's leather.*

*Cal. Do not torment me, pr'ythee; I'll bring my wood home faster.*

*Ste. He's in his fit now; and does not talk after the wisest. He shall taste of my bottle: if he have never drunk wine afore, it will go near to remove his fit: if I can recover him, and keep him tame, I will not take too much for him: he shall pay for him that hath him, and that soundly.*

*Cal. Thou dost me yet but little hurt; thou wilt*

*Anon, I know it by thy trembling: Now Prosper works upon thee.*

*Ste. Come on your ways; open your mouth; here is that which will give language to you, cat; open your mouth: this will shake your shaking, I can tell you, and that soundly: you cannot tell who's your friend: open your chaps again.*

*Trin. I should know that voice: It should be—But he is drowned; and these are devils: Oh! defend me!*

*Ste. Four legs, and two voices! a most delicate monster! His forward voice now is to speak well of his friend; his backward voice is to utter foul speeches, and to detract. If all the wine in my bottle will recover him, I will help his ague: Come,—Amen! I will pour some in thy other mouth.*

*Trin. Stephano,—*

*Ste. Doth thy other mouth call me? Mercy! mercy! This is a devil, and no monster: I will leave him; I have no long spoon.*

*Trin. Stephano!—if thou beest Stephano, touch me, and speak to me; for I am Trinculo;—be not afraid,—thy good friend Trinculo.*

*Ste. If thou beest Trinculo, come forth; I'll pull thee by the lesser legs: if any be Trinculo's legs, these are they. Thou art very Trinculo, indeed: How can'st thou to be the siege of this moon-calf? Can he vent Trinculos?*

*Trin. I took him to be kill'd with a thunder-stroke:—But art thou not drown'd, Stephano? I*

hope now, thou art not drown'd. Is the storm over-blown? I hid me under the dead moon-calf's gaberdine, for fear of the storm: And art thou living, Stephano? O Stephano, two Neapolitans 'scap'd!

*Ste. Pr'ythee, do not turn me about; my stomach is not constant.*

*Cal. These be fine things, an if they be not sprites.*

That's a brave god, and bears celestial liquor: I will kneel to him.

*Ste. How did'st thou 'scape? How can'st thou hither? swear by this bottle, how thou can'st hither. I escap'd upon a butt of sack, which the sailors heaved overboard, by this bottle I which I made of the bark of a tree, with mine own hands, since I was cast a-shore.*

*Cal. I'll swear, upon that bottle, to be thy True subject; for the liquor is not earthly.*

*Ste. Here; swear then how thou escap'd'st.*

*Trin. Swam a-shore, man, like a duck; I can swim like a duck, I'll be sworn.*

*Ste. Here, kiss the book: Though thou can'st swim like a duck, thou art made like a goose.*

*Trin. O Stephano, hast any more of this?*

*Ste. The whole butt, man; my cellar is in a rock by the sea-side, where my wine is hid.*

*How now, moon-calf? how does thine ague?*

*Cal. Hast thou not dropped from heaven?*

*Ste. Out o' the moon, I do assure thee: I was the man in the moon, when time was.*

*Cal. I have seen thee in her, and I do adore thee;*

My mistress showed me thee, thy dog, and bush.

*Ste. Come, swear to that; kiss the book: I will furnish it anon with new contents: swear.*

*Trin. By this good light, this is a very shallow monster:—I afraid of him!—a very weak monster:—The man o' the moon!—a most poor ridiculous monster:—Well drawn, monster, in good sooth.*

*Cal. I'll show thee every fertile inch o' the island;*

And kiss thy foot: I pr'ythee, be my god.

*Trin. By this light, a most perfidious and drunken monster; when his god's asleep, he'll rob his bottle.*

*Cal. I'll kiss thy foot: I'll swear myself thy subject.*

*Ste. Come on then; down, and swear.*

*Trin. I shall laugh myself to death at this puppy-headed monster! A most scurvy monster; I could find in my heart to bear him.—*

*Ste. Come, kiss.*

*Trin.—but that the poor monster's in drink: An abominable monster!*

*Cal. I'll show thee the best springs; I'll pluck thee berries;*

I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough.

A plague upon the tyrant that I serve!

I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee,

Thou wond'rous man.

*Trin. A most ridiculous monster; to make a wonder of a poor drunkard.*

*Cal. I pr'ythee, let me bring thee where crabs grow;*

And I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts;

Show thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how to snare the nimble marmozet; I'll bring thee

To clust'ring fiberds, and sometimes I'll get thee

Young sea-mells\* from the rock: Wilt thou go with me?

*Ste. I pr'ythee now, lead the way, without any more talking.—Trinculo, the king and all our company else being drowned, we will inhabit here.—Here; bear my bottle. Fellow Trinculo, we'll fill him by and by again.*

*Cal. Farewell master; Jarewell, Jarewell.*  
[Sings drunkenly.]

\* India.

† Stool

\* Sea-gulls.

*Trin.* A howling monster; a drunken monster.

*Cal.* No more dams I'll make for fish;  
Nor jetch in firing  
At requiring,  
Nor scrape trenchering, nor wash dish.

'Ban, 'Ban, 'Ca—Caliban  
Has a new master—Get a new man.

Freedom, hey-day! hey-day, freedom! freedom,  
hey-day, freedom!

*Ste.* O brave monster, lead the way.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—Before PROSPERO's Cell.

*Enter FERDINAND, bearing a log.*

*Fer.* There be some spots are painful; but  
their labour

Delight in them sets off: some kinds of baseness  
Are nobly undergone; and most poor matters  
Point to rich ends. This my mean task would  
be

As heavy to me, as 'tis odious; but  
The mistress, which I serve, quickens what's  
dead,

And makes my labours pleasures: Oh! she is  
Ten times more gentle than her father's crab-  
bed;

And he's composed of harshness. I must re-  
move

Some thousands of these logs, and pile them up,  
Upon a sore injunction: My sweet mistress  
Weeps when she sees me work; and says, such  
baseness

Had ne'er like executor. I forget:  
But these sweet thoughts do even refresh my  
labours;

Most busy-less, when I do it.

*Enter MIRANDA; and PROSPERO at a distance.*

*Mira.* Alas, now I pray you,  
Work not so hard: I would the lightning had  
Burnt up these logs, that you are enjoin'd to  
pile!

Pray, set it down, and rest you: when this  
burns,

'Twill weep for having wearied you: My father  
Is hurt at study; pray now, rest yourself;  
He's safe for these three hours.

*Fer.* O most dear mistress,  
The sun will set, before I shall discharge  
What I must strive to do.

*Mira.* If you'll sit down,  
I'll bear your logs the while: Pray, give me  
that;

I'll carry it to the pile.

*Fer.* No, precious creature:

I had rather crack my sinews, break my back,  
Than you should such dishonour undergo,  
While I sit lazy by.

*Mira.* It would become me  
As well as it does you: and I should do it  
With much more ease; for my good will is to it,  
And your's against.

*Pro.* Poor worm! thou art infected;

This visitation shows it.

*Mira.* You look wearily.

*Fer.* No, noble mistress; 'tis fresh morning  
with me,

When you are by at night. I do beseech you,  
(Chiefly, that I might set it in my prayers,)  
What is your name?

*Mira.* Miranda:—O my father,  
I have broke your best \* to say so!

*Fer.* Admir'd Miranda!

Indeed, the top of admiration; worth

What's dearest to the world! Full many a lady  
I have ey'd with best regard; and many a time  
The harmony of their tongues hath into bondage  
Brought my too diligent ear: for several virtues  
Have I lik'd several women; never any  
With so full soul, but some defect in her  
Did quarrel with the noblest grace she ow'd,\*  
And put it to the foil: But you, O you,  
So perfect, and so peerless, are created  
Of every creature's best.

*Mira.* I do not know

One of my sex: no woman's face remember,  
Save, from my glass, mine own; nor have I seen  
More that I may call men, than you, good  
friend,

And my dear father: how features are abroad,  
I am skill-less of; but, by my modesty,  
(The jewel in my dower,) I would not wish  
Any companion in the world but you;  
Nor can imagination form a shape,  
Besides yourself, to like of: but I prattle  
Something too wildly, and my father's precepts  
Therein forget.

*Fer.* I am, in my condition,  
A prince, Miranda; I do think, a king;  
(I would, not so!) and would no more endure  
This wooden slavery, than I would suffer  
The flesh-fly blow my mouth.—Hear my soul  
speak:—

The very instant that I saw you, did  
My heart fly to your service; there resides,  
To make me slave to it; and, for your sake,  
Am I this patient log-man.

*Mira.* Do you love me?

*Fer.* O heaven, O earth, bear witness to this  
soud,

And crown what I profess with kind event,  
If I speak true; if hollowly, invent  
What best is boded me, to mischief! I,  
Beyond all limit of what else 't' the world,  
Do love, prize, honour you.

*Mira.* I am a fool,  
To weep at what I am glad of.

*Pro.* Fair encounter  
Of two most rare affections! Heavens rain grace  
On that which breeds between them!

*Fer.* Wherefore weep you?

*Mira.* At mine unworthiness, that dare not  
offer

What I desire to give; and much less take,  
What I shall die to want: But this is trifling;  
And all the more it seeks to hide itself,  
The bigger bulk it shows. Hence, bashful  
cunning!

And prompt me, plain and holy innocence!  
I am your wife, if you will marry me;  
If not, I'll die your maid: to be your fellow  
You may deny me; but I'll be your servant,  
Whether you will or no.

*Fer.* My mistress, dearest,  
And I thus humble ever.

*Mira.* My husband then?

*Fer.* Ay, with a heart as willing  
As bondage e'er of freedom: here's my hand.

*Mira.* And mine, with my heart in't: And  
now farewell,  
Till half an hour hence.

*Fer.* A thousand! thousand!

[*Exeunt FER. and MIR.*]

*Pro.* So glad of this as they, I cannot be,  
Who are surpris'd with all; but my rejoicing  
At nothing can be more. I'll to my book;  
For yet, ere supper time, must I perform  
Much business appertaining. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II.—Another part of the Island.

*Enter STEPHANO and TRINCULO; CALIBAN  
following with a bottle.*

*Ste.* Tell not me:—when the butt is out, we  
will drink water; not a drop before: therefore  
bear up, and board 'em: Servant-monster, drink  
to me.

*Trin.* Servant-monster! the folly of this island! They say, there's but five upon this isle: we are three of them; if the other two be brained like us, the state totters.

*Ste.* Drunk, servant-monster, when I hid thee; thy eyes are almost set in thy head.

*Trin.* Where should they be set else? he were a brave monster indeed, if they were set in his tail.

*Ste.* My man-monster hath drowned his tongue in sack: for my part, the sea cannot drown me: I swam, ere I could recover the shore, five-and-thirty leagues, off and on, by this light.—Thou shalt be my lieutenant, monster, or my standard.

*Trin.* Your lieutenant, if you list; he's no standard.

*Ste.* We'll not run, monsieur monster.

*Trin.* Nor go neither: but you'll lie, like dogs; and yet say nothing neither.

*Ste.* Moon-calf, speak once in thy life, if thou beest a good moon-calf.

*Cal.* How does thy honour? Let me lick thy shoe:

I'll not serve him, he is not valiant.

*Trin.* Thou liest, most ignorant monster; I am in case to juggle a constable: Why, thou deboshed\* fish thou, was there ever man a coward, that hath drunk so much sack as I to-day? Wilt thou tell a monstrous lie, being but half a fish, and half a monster?

*Cal.* Lo, how he mocks me! wilt thou let him, my lord?

*Trin.* Lord, quoth he!—that a monster should be such a natural!

*Cal.* Lo, lo, again! bite him to death, I pry-thee.

*Ste.* Trinculo, keep a good tongue in your head; if you prove a mutineer, the next tree—The poor monster's my subject, and he shall not suffer indignity.

*Cal.* I shall my noble lord. Wilt thou be pleas'd

To hearken once again the suit I made thee?

*Ste.* Marry will I: kneel, and repeat it; I will stand, and so shall Trinculo.

*Enter ARIEL, invisible.*

*Cal.* As I told thee  
Before, I am subject to a tyrant;  
A sorcerer, that by his cunning hath  
Cheated me of this island.

*Ari.* Thou liest.

*Cal.* Thou liest, thou jesting monkey, thou; I would, my valiant master would destroy thee: I do not lie.

*Ste.* Trinculo, if you trouble him any more in his tale, by this hand, I will supplant some of thy teeth.

*Trin.* Why, I said nothing.

*Ste.* Mum then, and no more.—[*To Caliban.*] Proceed.

*Cal.* I say, by sorcery he got this isle; From me he got it. If thy greatness will Revenge it on him—for, I know, thou dar'st; But this thing dare not.

*Ste.* That's most certain.

*Cal.* Thou shalt be lord of it, and I'll serve thee.

*Ste.* How now shall this be compassed? Canst thou bring me to the party?

*Cal.* Yea, yea, my lord; I'll yield him thee asleep.

Where thou may'st knock a nail into his head.

*Ari.* Thou liest, thou canst not.

*Cal.* What a pied ninny's this?† Thou scurvy patch!—

do beseech thy greatness, give him blows, And take his bottle from him: when that's gone, He shall drink nought but brine; for I'll not show him

Where the quick freshes‡ are.

*Ste.* Trinculo, run into no further danger; interrupt the monster one word farther, and, by this hand, I'll turn my mercy out of doors, and make a stock-dish of thee.

*Trin.* Why, what did I? I did nothing; I'll go further off.

*Ste.* Didst thou not say, he lied?

*Ari.* Thou liest.

*Ste.* Do I so? take thou that. [*Strikes him.*] As you like this, give me the lie another time.

*Trin.* I did not give the lie:—Out o' your wits, and hearing too?—A pox o' your bottle! this can sack, and drinking do.—A murrain on your monster, and the devil take your fingers.

*Cal.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Ste.* Now, forward with your tale. Pr'ythee stand further off.

*Cal.* Beat him enough: after a little time, I'll beat him too.

*Ste.* Stand further.—Come, proceed.

*Cal.* Why, as I told thee, 'tis a custom with him

I' the afternoon to sleep: there thou may'st brain him,

Having first seiz'd his books; or with a log

Butter his skull, or paunch him with a stake,

Or cut his wezand\* with thy knife: Remember,

First to possess his books; for without them

He's but a sot, as I am, nor hath not

One spirit to command: They all do hate him,

As rootedly as I: Burn but his books;

He has brave utensils, (for so he calls them,) Which, when he has a house, he'll deck withal.

And that most deeply to consider, is

The beauty of his daughter; he himself

Calls her a non-pareil: I ne'er saw woman,

But only Sycorax my dam, and she:

But she as far surpasseth Sycorax,

As greatness does least.

*Ste.* Is it so brave a lass?

*Cal.* Ay, lord; she will become thy bed, I warrant,

And bring thee forth brave brood.

*Ste.* Monster, I will kill this man: his daughter and I will be king and queen; (save our graces!) and Trinculo and myself shall be viceroys:—Dost thou like the plot, Trinculo?

*Trin.* Excellent.

*Ste.* Give me thy hand; I am sorry I beat thee: but, while thou livest, keep a good tongue in thy head.

*Cal.* Within this half hour will he be asleep; Wilt thou destroy him then?

*Ste.* Ay, on mine honour.

*Trin.* This will I tell my master.

*Cal.* Thou mak'st me merry: I am full of pleasure;

Let us be jocund: Will you troll the catch

You taught me but while-ere?

*Ste.* At thy request, monster, I will do reason, any reason: Come on, Trinculo, let us sing.

[*Sings.*

*Flout'em, and skout'em; and skout'em  
and flout'em;*

*Thought is free.*

*Cal.* That's not the tune.

[*ARIEL plays the tune on a tabor and pipe.*

*Ste.* What is this same?

*Trin.* This is the tune of our catch, played by the picture of No-body.

*Ste.* If thou beest a man, show thyself in thy likeness: if thou beest a devil, take't as thou list.

*Trin.* O forgive me my sins!

*Ste.* He that dies, pays all debts: I defy thee.—Mercy upon us!

*Cal.* Art thou afraid?

*Ste.* No, monster, not I.

*Cal.* Be not afraid; the isle is full of noises, Sounds, and sweet airs, that give delight, and hurt not.

Sometimes a thousand twangling instruments

\* Debauched.

† Alluding to Trinculo's party-coloured dress.

‡ Springs.

\* Throat.

Will hum about mine ears; and sometimes voices,

That, if I then had wak'd after long sleep, Will make me sleep again: and then, in dreaming,

The clouds, methought, would open, and show riches

Ready to drop upon me; that, when I wak'd, I cried to dream again.

*Ste.* This will prove a brave kingdom to me, where I shall have my music for nothing.

*Cal.* When Prospero is destroyed.

*Ste.* That shall be by and by: I remember the story.

*Trin.* The sound is going away: let's follow it, and after, do our work.

*Ste.* Lead, monster; we'll follow.—I would, I could see this taborer: he lays it on.

*Trin.* Wilt come? I'll follow, Stephano.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Another part of the Island.

Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GONZALO, ADRIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.

*Gon.* By'r lakin,\* I can go no further, Sir: My old bones ache: here's a maze trod, indeed, Through forth-rights, and meanders! by your patience,

I needs must rest me.

*Alon.* Old lord, I cannot blame thee, Who art myself attach'd with weariness, To the dulling of my spirits: sit down, and rest. Even here I will put off my hope, and keep it No longer for my flatterer: he is drown'd, Whom thus we stray to find; and the sea mocks Our frustrate search on land: Well, let him go.

*Ant.* I am right glad that he is so out of hope.

[*Aside to SEBASTIAN.*]

Do not, for one repulse, forego the purpose That you resolv'd to effect.

*Seb.* The next advantage Will we take thoroughly.

*Ant.* Let it be to-night; For, now they are oppress'd with travel, they Will not, nor cannot, use such vigilance, As when they are fresh.

*Seb.* I say, to-night; no more.

Solemn and strange music; and PROSPERO above, invisible. Enter several strange Shapes, inuring in a banquet; they dance about it with gentle actions of salutation; and, inviting the king, &c. to eat, they depart.

*Alon.* What harmony is this? my good friends, hark!

*Gon.* Marvellous sweet music!

*Alon.* Give us kind keepers, heavens! What were these?

*Seb.* A living drollery: † Now I will believe That there are unicorns; ‡ that, in Arabia There is one tree, the phoenix' throne; one phoenix

At this hour reigning there.

*Ant.* I'll believe both; And what does else want credit, come to me, And I'll be sworn 'tis true: Travellers ne'er did lie,

Though fools at home condemn them.

*Gon.* If in Naples I should report this now, would they believe me?

If I should say I saw such islanders, (For, certes, † these are people of the island,) Who, though they are of monstrous shape, yet,

note, Their manners are more gentle-kind, than of Our human generation you shall find

Many, nay, almost any. *Pro.* Honest lord, [present, Thou hast said well; for some of you there Are worse than devils. [*Aside.*]

\* Our lady.

† Show.

‡ Certainly.

*Alon.* I cannot too much muse,\*

Such shapes, such gesture, and such sound, expressing (Although they want the use of tongue,) a kind Of excellent dumb discourse.

*Pro.* Praise in departing.

[*Aside.*]

*Fran.* They vanish'd strangely.

*Seb.* No matter, since

They have left their viands behind; for we have stomachs.

Will't please you taste of what is here?

*Alon.* Not I.

*Gon.* Faith, Sir, you need not fear; When we were boys,

Who would believe that there were mountaineers Dew-lapp'd like bulls, whose throats had hanging at them

Wallets of flesh? or that there were such men, Whose heads stood in their breasts? † which now we find,

Each putter-out on five for one, will bring us Good warrant of.

*Glon.* I will stand to, and feed, Although my last: no matter, since I feel The best is past:—Brother, my lord the duke, Stand too, and do as we.

Thunder and Lightning. Enter ARIEL like a harpy; claps his wings upon the table, and, with a quaint device, the banquet vanishes.

*Ari.* You are three men of sin, whom destiny (That hath to instrument this lower world, And what is in't,) the never-surfeited sea Hath caused to belch up; and on this island Where man doth not inhabit; you 'mongst men Being most unfit to live. I have made you mad;

[*Seeing ALON. SEB. &c. draw their swords.* And even with such like valour, men bang and drown

Their proper selves. You fools! I and my fellows

Are ministers of fate; the elements

Of whom your swords are temper'd, may as well

Wound the loud winds, or with bemock'd-at stabs

Kill the still closing waters, as diminish One dowle+ that's in my plume, my fellow-ministers

Are like invulnerable: if you could hurt, Your swords are now too massy for your strengths,

And will not be uplifted: But, remember, (For that's my business to you,) that you three From Milan did supplant good Prospero, Exposed unto the sea, which hath requit it, Him, and his innocent child: for which foul deed

The powers, delaying, not forgetting, have Incens'd the seas and shores, yea all the creatures,

Against your peace: Thee, of thy son, Alonso, They have bereft; and do pronounce by me, Lingering perdition (worse than any death Can be at once,) shall step by step attend You and your ways; whose wrath to guard you from

(Which here in this most desolate isle, else falls Upon your heads,) is nothing but heart's sorrow,

And a clear § life ensuing

He vanishes in thunder: then to soft music, enter the shapes again, and dance with mops and moves, and carry out the table.

*Pro.* [*Aside.*] Bravely the figure of this harpy hast thou

Perform'd, my Ariel; a grace it had, devouring: Of my instruction hast thou nothing † bated,

In what thou hast to say: so, with good life,

Wonder. † "The blemmyi have no heads, but mouth and eyes in their breast." Fluy b. 6. ch. 8.

‡ Down.

§ Pure, blameless.

And observation strange, my meaner ministers  
Then several kinds have done; my high charms  
work,

And these, mine enemies, are all knit up  
In their distractions: they now are in my power;  
And in these fits I leave them, whilst I visit  
Young Ferdinand, whom they suppose is  
drown'd.)

And his and my loved darling.

[Exit PROSPERO from above.

Gon. I'the name of something holy, Sir, why  
stand you

In this strange stare?

Aton. O it is monstrous! monstrous!  
Methought, the billows spoke, and told me of it;  
The winds did sing it to me; and the thunders,  
That deep and dreadful organ-pipe, pronounc'd  
The name of Prosper; it did pass my trespass.  
Therefore my son i' the ooze is bedded; and  
I'll seek him deeper than e'er plummet

sounded,

And with him there lie mudded. [Exit.

Syb. But one fend at a time,

I'll fight their legions o'er.

Ant. I'll be thy second.

[Exeunt SYB. and ANT.

Gon. All three of them are desperate; their  
great guilt,

Like poison given to work a great time after,

Now 'gins to bite the spirits:—I do beseech you

That are of suppler joints, follow them swiftly,

And hinder them from what this ecstasy \*

May now provoke them to.

Adr. Follow, I pray you. [Exeunt.

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—Before PROSPERO's cell.

Enter PROSPERO, FERDINAND, and MIRANDA.

Pro. If I have too austere punish'd you,

Your compensation makes amends; for I

Have given you here a thread of mine own life,

Or that for which I live; whom once again

I tender to thy hand: all thy vexations

Were but my trials of thy love, and thou

Hast strangely stood the test: here, afore Heaven,

I ratify this my rich gift. O Ferdinand,

Do not smile at me, that I boast her off,

For thou shalt find she will outstrip all praise,

And make it halt behind her.

Fer. I do believe it,

Against an oracle.

Pro. Then, as my gift, and thine own acqui-

sition

Worthily purchas'd, take my daughter: But

If thou dost break her virgin knot before

All sanctimonious ceremonies may

With full and holy rite be minister'd,

No sweet aspersion shall the heavens let fall

To make this contract grow: but barren hate,

Sour-ey'd disdain, and discord, shall bestrew

The union of your bed with weeds so loathly,

That you shall hate it both: therefore, take

heed,

As Hymen's lamps shall light you.

Fer. As I hope

For quiet days, fair issue, and long life,

With such love as 'tis now; the murkiest den,

The most oppurtune place, the strongest sug-

gestion

Our worse Genius can, shall never melt

Mine honour into lust; to take away

'the edge of that day's celebration,

When I shall think, or Phœbus' steeds are

founder'd,

Or night kept chain'd below.

Pro. Fairly spoke:

Sit then, and talk with her, she is thine own.—

What, Ariel; my industrious servant Ariel!

Enter ARIEL.

Ari. What would my potent master? here I  
am.

Pro. Thou and thy meaner fellows your last  
service

Did worthily perform; and I must use you  
In such another trick: go, bring the rabble,  
O'er whom I give thee power, hither, to this  
place:

Incite them to quick motion; for I must  
Bestow upon the eyes of this young couple  
Some vanity of mine art; it is my promise,  
And they expect it from me.

Ari. Presently?

Pro. Ay, with a twink.

Ari. Before you can say, *come*, and *go*,

And breathe twice; and cry, *so*, *so*;

Each one, tripping on his toe,

Will be here with mop and mow:

Do you love me, master? no.

Pro. Dearly, my delicate Ariel: Do not ap-

Till thou dost hear me call. [proach,

Ari. Well I conceive. [Exit

Pro. Look, thou be true; do not give dal-

liance [straw

Too much the rein; the strongest oaths are

To the fire i' the blood: be more abstemious,

Or else, good night, your vow!

Fer. I warrant you, Sir;

The white-cold virgin snow upon my heart

Abates the ardour of my liver.

Pro. Well.—

Now come, my Ariel; bring a corollary,\*

Rather than want a spirit; appear, and perty.—

No tongue; all eyes; be silent. [Soft music.

A masque. Enter IRIS.

Iris. Ceres, most bounteous lady, thy rich leas

Of wheat, rye, barley, vetches, oats, and peas;

Thy turfy mountains, where live nibbling sheep,

And flat meads thatch'd with sower, them to

keep;

Thy banks with peonied and lillied brims,

Which spungy April at thy best† betrim's,

To make cold nymphs chaste crowns; and thy

broom gloves,

Whose shadow the dismissed bachelor loves,

Being lass-lorn; thy pole-clipt vineyard;

And thy sea-marge, sterile, and rocky-hard.

Where thou thyself dost air: The queen o' the

sky,

Whose watery arch, and messenger, am I,

Bids thee leave these: and with her sovereign

grace,

Here on this grass-plot, in this very place,

To come and sport, her peacocks thy ammin†

Approach, rich Ceres, her to entertain.

Enter CERES.

Cer. Hail, many-colour'd messenger, that

Dost disobey the wife of Jupiter; [ne'er

Who, with thy saffron wings, upon my flowers

Diffusest honey-drops, retrefreshing showers:

And with each end of thy blue bow dost crown

My bosky‡ acres, and my nushubb'd down,

Rich scarf to my proud earth: Why hath thy

queen [green†

Summon'd me hither, to this short-grass'd

Iris. A contact of true love to celebrate;

And some donation freely to estate

On the bless'd lovers.

Cer. Tell me, heavenly bow,

If Venus, or her son, as thou dost know,

Do now attend the queen? since they did plot

The means, that dusky Dis§ my daughter got,

Her and her blind boy's scandal'd company

I have forsworn.

Iris. Of her society

Be not afraid: I met her deity

Cutting the clouds towards Paphos; and her son

Dove-drawn with her: here thought they to

have done

\* Allusion on mind.

† Sprinkling.

• Surplus. † Command. ‡ Woody. § Pluto.

Some wanton charm upon this man and maid,  
Whose vows are, that no bed-right shall be  
paid,  
Till Hymen's torch be lighted : but in vain ;  
Mar's hot minion is return'd again ;  
Her waspish-headed son has broke his arrows,  
Swears he will shoot no more, but play with  
sparrows,  
And be a boy right out.  
*Cer.* Highest queen of state,  
Great Juno comes ; I know her by her gait.

*Enter JUNO.*

*Juno.* How does my bounteous sister ? Go  
with me,  
To bless this twain, that they may prosperous  
be,  
And honour'd in their issue.

*SONG.*

*Juno.* Honour, riches, marriage-blessing,  
Long continuance, and increasing,  
Hourly joys be still upon you !  
*Juno sings her blessings on you.*

*Cer.* Earth's increase, and foison \* plenty ;  
Barns, and garners never empty ;  
Vines, with clust'ring bunches grow-  
ing ;

*Plants, with goodly burden bowing ;  
Spring come to you, at the farthest,  
In the very end of harvest !  
Scarcity, and want, shall shun you ;  
Ceres' blessing so is on you.*

*Fer.* This is a most majestic vision, and  
Harmonious charming ! May I be bold  
to think these spirits ?

*Pro.* Spirits, which by mine art  
I have from their conflux call'd to enact  
My present fancies.

*Fer.* Let me live here ever ;  
So rare a wonder'd father and a wife,  
Make this place Paradise.

*[Juno and Ceres whisper, and send Iris  
on employment.]*

*Pro.* Sweet now, Silence :

*Juno* and *Ceres* whisper seriously ;  
There's something else to do : hush, and be  
mute,  
Or else our spell is marr'd.

*Iris.* You nymphs, call'd Naiads, of the wand-  
ring brooks,  
With your sedg'd crowns, and ever harmless  
looks,  
Leave your crisp chanuells, and on this green  
land

Answer your summons ; *Juno* does command :  
Come, temperate nymphs, and help to cele-  
brate

A contract of true love ; be not too late.

*Enter certain Nymphs.*

You sun-burn'd sicklemen, of August weary,  
Come hither from the furrow, and be merry ;  
Make holy-day : your rye-straw hats put on,  
And these fresh nymphs encounter every one  
In country footing.

*Enter certain Reapers, properly habited : they  
join with the Nymphs in a graceful dance ;  
towards the end whereof PROSPERO starts  
suddenly, and speaks ; after which, to a  
strange, hollow, and confused noise, they  
heavily vanish.*

*Pro.* *[Aside.]* I had forgot that foul conspi-  
racy

Of the beast Caliban, and his confederates,  
Against my life ; the minute of their plot  
Is almost come.—*[To the spirits.]* Well done ;  
avoid ;—no more.

*Fer.* This is most strange : your father's in  
some passion  
That works him strangely.

*Mira.* Never till this day,  
Saw I him touch'd with anger so distemper'd.

*Pro.* You do look, my son, in a mov'd sort,  
As if you were dismay'd : be cheerful, Sir ;  
Our revels now are ended : these our actors,  
As I foretold you, were all spirits, and  
Are melted into air, into thin air ;  
And, like the baseless fabric of this vision,  
The cloud-capp'd towers, the gorgeous palaces,  
The solemn temples, the great globe itself,  
Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve ;  
And, like this insubstantial pageant faded,\*  
Leave not a rack† behind : We are such stuff  
As dreams are made of, and our little life  
Is rounded with a sleep.—Sir, I am vex'd ;  
Bear with my weakness ; my old brain is tron-  
bled.

Be not disturb'd with my infirmity :  
If you be pleas'd, retire into my cell,  
And there repose ; a turn or two I'll walk,  
To still my beating mind.

*Fer.* *Mira.* We wish you peace. *[Exeunt.]*

*Pro.* Come with a thought :—I thank you :—  
*Ariel, come.*

*Enter ARIEL.*

*Ari.* Thy thoughts I cleave to ; What's thy  
pleasure ?

*Pro.* Spirit,

We must prepare to meet with Caliban.

*Ari.* Ay, my commander : when I presented  
*Ceres,*

I thought to have told thee of it ; but I fear'd,  
Lest I might anger thee.

*Pro.* Say again, where didst thou leave these  
varlets ?

*Ari.* I told you, Sir, they were red-hot with  
drinking ;

So full of valour, that they smote the air  
For breathing in their faces ; beat the ground,  
For kissing of their feet : yet always beuding  
Towards their project ; Then I beat my tabor,  
At which, like unback'd colts, they prick'd  
their ears,

Advanc'd their eye-lids, lifted up their noses,  
As they smelt music ; so I charm'd their ears,  
That, calf-like, they my lowing follow'd,  
through

Tooth'd briars, sharp furzes, pricking goss,  
and thorns,  
Which enter'd their frail shins : at last I left  
them

I' the filthy mantled pool beyond your cell,  
There dancing up to the chins, that the foul lake  
O'er-stunk their feet.

*Pro.* This was well done, my bird :

Thy shape invisible retain thou still :  
The trumpany in my house, go, bring it hither,  
For stale‡ to catch these thieves.

*Ari.* I go, I go.

*[Exit.]*

*Pro.* A devil, a born devil, on whose nature  
Nurture‡ can never stick ; on whom my pains,  
Humanely taken, all, all lost, quite lost ;  
And as, with age, his body uglier grows,  
So his mind cankers : I will plague them all.

*Re-enter ARIEL, laden with glistening appar-  
rel, &c.*

Even to roaring :—Come, hang them on this  
line.

*PROSPERO and ARIEL remain invisible.  
Enter CALIBAN, STEPHANO, and TRINCULO ;  
all wet.*

*Cal.* Pray you, tread softly, that the blind  
mole may not

Hear a foot fall : we now are near his cell.

*Ste.* Monster, your fairy, which, you say, is  
a harmless fairy, has done little better than  
played the Jack|| with us.

\* Vanished.

† Rack is the thin and subtil mist which may be  
seen encircling the tops of mountains immediately after  
sun-rise.

‡ Batt.

§ Education.

|| Jack with a lantern.

\* Abundance.

† Able to produce such wonders.



*Trin.* Monster, I do smell all horse-piss; at which my nose is in great indignation.

*Ste.* So is mine. Do you hear, monster? If I should take a displeasure against you; look you—

*Trin.* Thou wert but a lost monster.

*Cal.* Good my lord, give me thy favour still: Be patient, for the prize I'll bring thee to Shall hood-wink this mischance: therefore, speak softly.

All's bush'd as midnight yet.

*Trin.* Ay, but to lose our bottles in the pool,—

*Ste.* There is not only disgrace and dishonour in that, monster, but an infinite loss.

*Trin.* That's more to me than my wetting: yet this is your harmless fairy, monster.

*Ste.* I will fetch off my bottle, though I be o'er ears for my labour.

*Cal.* Pr'ythee, my king, be quiet: Seest thou here,

This is the mouth of the cell: no noise, and enter:

Do that good mischief, which may make this island

Thine own for ever, and I, thy Caliban,

For aye, thy foot-licker.

*Ste.* Give me thy hand: I do begin to have bloody thoughts.

*Trin.* O king Stephano! O peer! O worthy Stephano! look, what a wardrobe here is for thee!

*Cal.* Let it alone, thou fool; it is but trash.

*Trin.* O ho, monster; we know what belongs to a frippery: \*—O king Stephano!

*Ste.* Put off that gown, Trinculo; by this hand, I'll have that gown.

*Trin.* Thy grace shall have it.

*Cal.* The dropsy drown this fool! what do you mean,

To doat thus on such luggage? Let's along, And do the murder first: if he awake, From toe to crown he'll fill our skins with pinches;

Make us strange stuff.

*Ste.* Be you quiet, monster.—Mistress line, is not this my jerkin? Now is the jerkin under the line: now, jerkin, you are like to lose your hair, and prove a bald jerkin.

*Trin.* Do, do; We steal by line and level, and't like your grace.

*Ste.* I thank thee for that jest: here's a garment for't: wit shall not go unrewarded, while I am king of this country: *Steal by line and level*, is an excellent pass of pate; there's another garment for't.

*Trin.* Monster, come, put some lime† upon your fingers, and away with the rest.

*Cal.* I will have none out: we shall lose our time,

And all be turn'd to barnacles, or to apes With foreheads villanous low.

*Ste.* Monster, lay to your fingers; help to bear this away, where my hogshead of wine is, or I'll turn you out of my kingdom: go to, carry this.

*Trin.* And this.

*Ste.* Ay, and this.

A noise of hunters heard. Enter divers Spirits, in shape of hounds, and hunt them about: PROSPERO and ARIEL, setting them on.

*Pro.* Hey, Mountain, hey!

*Ari.* Silver! there it goes, Silver!

*Pro.* Fury, fury! there Tyrant, there! hark, hark!

[CAL. STE. and TRIN. are driven out.]

Go, charge my goblins, that they grind their joints

With dry convulsions, shorten up their sinews With aged cramps; and more pinch-spotted make them

Than pard, ‡ or cat o' mountain.

*Ari.* Hark, they roar.

*Pro.* Let them be hunted soundly: At this hour

Lie at my mercy all mine enemies: Shortly shall all my labours end, and thou Shalt have the air at freedom: for a little, Follow, and do me service.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—Before the Cell of PROSPERO.

Enter PROSPERO in his magic robes, and ARIEL.

*Pro.* Now does my project gather to a head: My charms crack not; my spirits obey; and time

Goes upright with his carriage. How's the day? *Ari.* On the sixth hour; at which time, my lord,

You said our work should cease.

*Pro.* I did say so, When first I rais'd the tempest. Say, my spirit,

How fares the king and his?

*Ari.* Confin'd together In the same fashion as you gave in charge; Just as you left them, Sir; all prisoners In the lime-grove which weather-fends \* your cell;

They cannot budge, till you release. The king, His brother, and your's, abide all three distracted;

And the remainder mourning over them, Blim-full of sorrow, and dismay: but chiefly Him you term'd, Sir, *The good old lord, Gonzalo*;

His tears run down his beard, like winter's drops From eaves† of reeds: your charm so strongly works them,

That if you now behold them, your affections Would become tender.

*Pro.* Dost thou think so, spirit?

*Ari.* Mine, would, Sir, were I human.

*Pro.* And mine shall.

Hast thou, which art but air, a touch, a feeling Of their afflictions? and shall not myself, One of their kind, that relish all as sharply, Passion as they, be kindlier mov'd than thou art?

Though with their high wrongs I am struck to the quick,

Yet, with my nobler reason, 'gainst my fury

Do I take part: the rarer action is In virtue than in vengeance: they being penitent,

The sole drift of my purpose doth extend

Not a frown further: Go, release them, Ariel;

My charms I'll break, their senses I'll restore, And they shall be themselves.

*Ari.* I'll fetch them, Sir.

[Exit.

*Pro.* Ye elves of hills, brooks, standing lakes, and groves;

And ye, that on the sands with printless foot Do chase the ebbing Neptune, and do fly him, When he comes back: you demi-puppets, that By moonshine do the green-sour ringlets make, Whereof the ewe not bites; and you, whose pastime

Is to make midnight-mushrooms; that rejoice To hear the solemn curfew; by whose aid (Weak masters though you be,) I have be-dimmd†

The noon-tide sun, call'd forth the mutinous winds,

And 'twixt the green sea and the azur'd vault Set roaring war: to the dread rattling thunder Have I given fire, and rifted Jove's stout oak With his own bolt: the strong-bas'd promontory

\* A shop for the sale of old clothes.  
‡ Leopard.

† Bird-lime.

\* Defends from bad weather.

† Thatch.

Have I made shake : and by the spurs pluck'd  
up  
The pine, and cedar : graves, at my command,  
Have waked their sleepers ; oped, and let them  
forth

By my so potent art : But this rough magic  
I here abjure : and, when I have requir'd  
Some heavenly music, (which even now I do,)  
To work mine end upon their senses, that  
This airy charm is for, I'll break my staff,  
Bury it certain fathoms in the earth,  
And deeper than did ever plummet sound,  
I'll drown my book. [Solemn music.]

*Re-enter ARIEL : after him, ALONZO, with a  
frantic gesture, attended by GONZALO ;  
SEBASTIAN and ANTONIO in like manner,  
attended by ADRIAN and FRANCISCO : They  
all enter the circle which PROSPERO had  
made, and there stand charmed ; which  
PROSPERO observing, speaks.*

A solemn air, and the best comforter  
To an unsettled fancy, cure thy brains,  
Now useless, boil'd within thy skull ! There  
stand,

For you are spell-stopp'd.—  
Holy Gonzalo, honourable man,  
Mine eyes, even sociable to the show of thine,  
Fall fellowly drops.—the charm dissolves  
apace ;

And as the morning steals upon the night,  
Melting the darkness, so their rising senses  
Begin to chase the ignorant fumes that mantle  
Then clearer reason.—O my good Gonzalo,  
My true preserver, and a loyal sir  
To him thou follow'st ; I will pay thy graces  
Home, both in word and deed.—Most cruelly  
Durst thou, Alonso, use me, and my daughter :  
Thy brother was a furtherer in the act.—  
Thou'rt pinch'd for't now, Sebastian.—Flesh and  
blood,

You brother mine, that entertain'd ambition,  
Expell'd remorse \* and nature ; who, with Se-  
bastian,  
(Whose inward pinches therefore are most  
strong,)

Would here have kill'd your king ; I do forgive  
thee,  
Unnatural though thou art !—Their under-  
standing

Begins to swell ; and the approaching tide  
Will shortly fill the reasonable shores,  
That now lie foul and muddy. Not one of them,  
That yet looks on me, or would know me :—  
Ariel,

Fetch me the hat and rapier in my cell ;

[Exit ARIEL.  
I will dis-case me and myself present,  
As I was sometime Milan :—quickly, spirit ;  
Thou shalt ere long be free.

ARIEL *re-enters, singing, and helps to attire  
PROSPERO.*

*Ari. Where the bee sucks, there suck I :  
In a cowslip's bell I lie :  
There I couch when owls do cry.  
On the bat's back I do fly,  
After summer merrily ;  
Merrily, merrily, shall I live now,  
Under the blossom that hangs on the bough.*

Pro. Why, that's my dainty Ariel : I shall  
miss thee ;

But yet thou shalt have freedom : so, so, so.—  
To the king's ship, invisible as thou art :  
There shalt thou find the mariners asleep  
Under the hatches ; the master, and the boat-  
swain,

Being awake, enforce them to this place ;  
And presently, I'll pay thee.

Ari. I drink the air before me, and return  
Or e'er your pulse twice beat. [Exit ARIEL.]

\* Pity, or tenderness of heart.

Gon. All torment, trouble, wonder, and  
amazement

Inhabits here : Some heavenly power guide us  
Out of this fearful country !

Pro. Behold, Sir king !

The wronged duke of Milan, Prospero :  
For more assurance that a living prince  
Does now speak to thee, I embrace thy body ;  
And to thee, and thy company, I bid  
A hearty welcome.

Alon. Whe'r \* thou beest he, or no,  
Or some enchanted trifle to abuse me,  
As late I have been, I not know : thy pulse  
Beats, as of flesh and blood ; and since I saw  
thee,

Th' affliction of my mind amends, with which,  
I fear a madness held me : This must crave  
(And if this be at all,) a most strange story.  
Thy dukedom I resign ; and do entreat  
Thou pardon me my wrongs :—But how should  
Prospero

Be living, and be here ?

Pro. First, noble friend,  
Let me embrace thine age ; whose honour cannot  
Be measur'd, or confin'd.

Gon. Whether this be,

Or be not, I'll not swear.

Pro. You do yet taste  
Some subtilties o'the isle, that will not let you  
Believe things certain :—Welcome, my friends  
all :—

But you, my brace of lords, were I so minded,  
[Aside to SEB. and ANT.  
I here could pluck his highness' brow upon you,  
And justify you traitors ; at this time  
I'll tell no tales.

Seb. The devil speaks in him. [Aside.]

Pro. No :—

For you, most wicked Sir, whom to call brother  
Would even infect my mouth, I do forgive  
Thy rankst fault ; all of them ; and require  
My dukedom of thee, which, perforce, I know,  
Thou must restore.

Alon. If thou beest Prospero,  
Give us particulars of thy preservation :  
How thou hast met us here, who three hours  
since

Were wreck'd upon this shore : where I have  
lost,

How sharp the point of this remembrance is !  
My dear son Ferdinand.

Pro. I am woe't for't, sir.

Alon. Irreparable is the loss : and Patience  
Says, it is past her cure.

Pro. I rather think,  
You have not sought her help : of whose soft  
grace,

For the like loss, I have her sovereign aid,  
And rest myself content.

Alon. You the like loss ?

Pro. As great to me, as late ; and, portable †  
To make the dear loss, have I means much  
weaker

Than you may call to comfort you ; for I  
Have lost my daughter.

Alon. A daughter ?

O heavens ! that they were living both in Naples.  
The king and queen there ! that they were, I  
wish

Myself were mudded in that oozy bed  
Where my son lies. When did you lose your  
daughter ?

Pro. In this last tempest. I perceive, these  
lords

At this encounter do so much admire,  
That they devour their reason ; and scarce think  
Their eyes do offices of truth, their words  
Are natural breath : but howsoever you have  
Been justified from your senses, know for certain,  
That I am Prospero, and that very duke  
Which was thrust forth of Milan ; who most  
strangely

\* Whether.

† Sorry.

‡ Bearable.

Upon this shore, where you were wreck'd, was landed,

To be the lord on't. No more yet of this ;  
For 'tis a chronicle of day by day,  
Not a relation for a breakfast, nor  
Benefiting this first meeting. Welcome, Sir ;  
This cell's my court : here have I few attend-  
ants,

And subjects none abroad : pray you, look in.  
My dukedom since you have given me again,  
I will requite you with as good a thing :  
At least, bring forth a wonder, to content ye,  
As much as me my dukedom.

*The entrance of the cell opens, and discov-  
ers FERDINAND and MIRANDA playing at  
chess.*

*Mira.* Sweet lord, you play me false.

*Fer.* No, my dearest love,  
I would not for the world.

*Mira.* Yes, for a score of kingdoms you should  
wrangle,

And I would call it fair play.

*Alon.* If this prove  
A vision of the island, one dear son  
Shall I twice lose.

*Seb.* A most high miracle !

*Fer.* Tho' the seas threaten, they are merci-  
ful :

I have curs'd them without cause.

[*Ferd. kneels to ALON.*]

*Alon.* Now all the blessings  
Of a glad father compass thee about !  
Arise, and say how thou cam'st here.

*Mira.* O wonder !

How many goodly creatures are there here !  
How beauteous mankind is ! O brave new  
world,

That has such people in't !

*Pro.* 'Tis new to thee.

*Alon.* What is this maid, with whom thou  
wast at play ?

Your eld'st acquaintance cannot be three hours :  
Is she the goddess that hath sever'd us,  
And brought us thus together ?

*Fer.* Sir, she's mortal :

But, by immortal Providence, she's mine ;  
I chose her, when I could not ask my father .  
For his advice ; nor thought I had one : she  
Is daughter to this famous duke of Milan,  
Of whom so often I have heard renown,  
But never saw before ; of whom I have  
Received a second life, and second father  
This lady makes him to me.

*Alon.* I am her's :

But oh ! how oddly will it sound, that I  
Must ask my child forgiveness !

*Pro.* There, Sir, stop :

Let us not burden our remembrances  
With a heaviness that's gone.

*Gon.* I have my wept,

Or should have spoken ere this. Look down, you  
gods,

And on this couple drop a blessed crown ;  
For it is you, that have chalk'd forth the way  
Which brought us hither !

*Alon.* I say, Amen, Gonzalo !

*Gon.* Was Milan thrust from Milan, that his  
issue

Should become kings of Naples ? Oh ! rejoice  
Beyond a common joy ; and set it down  
With gold on lasting pillars : In one voyage  
Did Claribel her husband find at Tunis ;  
And Ferdinand, her brother, found a wife,  
Where he himself was lost ; Prospero his duke-  
dom,

In a poor isle ; and all of us, ourselves,  
When no man was his own . \*

*Alon.* Give me your hands :

[*To FER. and MIR.*]

Let grief and sorrow still embrace his heart,  
That doth not wish you joy !

*Gon.* Be't so ! Amen !

\* In his senses.

*Re-enter ARIEL, with the MASTER and BOAT-  
SWAIN amazedly following.*

O look, Sir, look, Sir ; here are more of us !

I prophesied, if a gallows were on land,  
This fellow could not drown :—Now, blas-  
phemy,

That swear'st grace o'erboard, not an oath on  
shore ?

Hast thou no mouth by land ? What is the  
news ?

*Boats.* The best news is, that we have safely  
found

Our king and company : the next our ship,—  
Which, but three glasses since, we gave on  
split,—

Is tight and yare,\* and bravely rigged, as when  
We first put out to sea.

*Ari.* Sir, all this service  
Have I done since I went. [Aside.]

*Pro.* My trickay ! spirit ! [Aside.]

*Alon.* These are not natural events ; they  
strengthen,

From strange to stranger :—Say, how came you  
hither ?

*Boats.* If I did think, Sir, I were well awake,  
I'd strive to tell you. We were dead of sleep.

And, (how, we know not,) all clapp'd under  
hatches,

Where, but even now, with strange and several  
noises

Of roaring, shrieking, howling, jingling chains.

And more diversity of sounds, all horrible,  
We were awak'd ; straightway, at liberty :

Where we, in all her trim, freshly beheld  
Our royal, good, and gallant ship ; our master

Cap'ring to eye her : On a trice, so please you,  
Even in a dream, were we divided from them,  
And were brought mooping hither.

*Ari.* Was't well done ? [Aside.]

*Pro.* Bravely, my diligence. Thou shalt be  
free. [Aside.]

*Alon.* This is as strange a maze as e'er man  
trod :

And there is in this business more than nature  
Was ever conduct ; of : some oracle

Must rectify our knowledge.

*Pro.* Sir, my liege,  
Do not infect your mind with beating on  
The strangeness of this business ; at pick'd  
leisure,

Which shall be shortly, single I'll resolve you  
(Which to you shall seem probable,) of every  
These happen'd accidents : till when, be cheer-  
ful,

And think of each thing well.—Come hither,  
spirit ; [Aside.]

Set Caliban and his companions free :

Untie the spell. [*Exit ARIEL.*] How fares my  
gracious Sir ?

There are yet missing of your company  
Some few odd lads, that you remember not.

*Re-enter ARIEL, driving in CALIBAN, STE-  
PHANO, and TRINCULO, in their stolen ap-  
parel.*

*Ste.* Every man shift for all the rest, and let  
no man take care for himself : for all is but for-  
tune :—Coragio, bully-monster, Coragio !

*Trin.* If these be true spirits which I wear in  
my head, here's a goodly sight.

*Cal.* O Setebos, there be brave spirits, in-  
deed !

How fine my master is ! I am afraid  
He will chastise me.

*Seb.* Ha, ha ;  
What things are these, my lord Antonio

Will money buy them ?

*Ant.* Very like ; one of them  
Is a plain fish, and, no doubt, marketable.

*Pro.* Mark but the badges of these men, my  
lords,

\* Ready.

† Clever, adroit.

‡ Conductor.

Then say, if they be true:—This misshapen knave,  
His mother was a witch; and one so strong  
That could control the moon, make flows and ebbs,

And deal in her command, without her power:  
These three have robb'd me; and this demi-devil  
(For he's a bastard one,) had plotted with them  
To take my life; two of these fellows you  
Must know, and own; this thing of darkness I  
Acknowledge mine.

*Cal.* I shall be pinch'd to death.

*Alon.* Is not this Stephano, my drunken butler!

*Sch.* He is drunk now: Where had he wine?

*Alon.* And Trinculo is reeling ripe? Where should they

Find this grand liquor that hath gild'd them?—  
How cam'st thou in this pickle?

*Trin.* I have been in such a pickle, since I  
saw you last, that, I fear me, will never out of  
my bones: I shall not fear fly-blowing.

*Sch.* Why, how now, Stephano?

*Ste.* O touch me not; I am not Stephano,  
but a cramp.

*Pro.* You'd be king of the isle, sirrah?

*Ste.* I should have been a sore one then.

*Alon.* This is as strange a thing as e'er I  
look'd on. [*Pointing to CALIBAN.*]

*Pro.* He is as disproportion'd in his manners,

As in shape:—Go, sirrah, to my cell;

Take with you your companions; as you look  
To have my pardon, trim it handsomely.

*Cal.* Ay, that I will; and I'll be wise here-  
after,

And seek for grace: What a thrice-double ass

Was I, to take this drunkard for a god,

And worship this dull fool?

*Pro.* Go to; away!

*Alon.* Hence, and bestow your luggage where  
you found it.

*Sch.* Or stole it, rather.

[*Exeunt CAL. STE. and TRIN.*]

*Pro.* Sir, I invite your highness, and your  
train,

To my poor cell: where you shall take your rest

• *Honest.*

For this one night; which (part of it,) I'll waste  
With such discourse, as, I not doubt, shall make if  
Go quick away: the story of my life,  
And the particular accidents, gone by,  
Since I came to this isle: And in the morn,  
I'll bring you to your ship, and so to Naples,  
Where I have hope to see the nuptial  
Of these our dear-belov'd solemniz'd;  
And thence retire me to my Milan, where  
Every third thought shall be my grave.

*Alon.* I long

To hear the story of your life, which must  
Take the ear strangely.

*Pro.* I'll deliver all;

And promise you calm seas, auspicious gales,

And sail so expeditious, that shall catch

Your royal fleet far off.—My Ariel;—chick,—

That is thy charge; then to the elements

Be free, and fare thou well!—[*Aside.*] Please  
you, draw near. [*Exeunt.*]

## EPILOGUE.

## SPOKEN BY PROSPERO.

Now my charms are all o'erthrown,

And what strength I have's mine own:

Which is most faint: now, 'tis true,

I must be here confin'd by you,

Or sent to Naples: Let me not,

Since I have my dukedom got,

And pardon'd the deceiver, dwell

In this bare island, by your spell;

But release me from my bands,

With the help of your good hands.\*

Gentle breath of yours my sails

Must fill, or else my project fails.

Which was to please: Now I want

Spirits to enforce, art to enchant;

And my ending is despair,

Unless I be reliev'd by prayer:

Which pierces so that it assaults

Mercy itself, and frees all faults.

As you from crimes would pardon'd be,

Let your indulgence set me free.

• Applause: noise was supposed to dissolve a spell

# THE TWELFTH NIGHT:

## OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

### LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE lighter scenes of this entertaining comedy are entirely the production of Shakespeare; and for its more serious portions he was probably indebted to the *Histoires Tragiques* of Belleforest, who had them from Bandello. Malone quotes the "Fifth Egiog of Barnaby Googe," published with other poems of his in 1563, and now an exceedingly rare book, to show that Shakespeare might have borrowed from it the circumstances of the Duke sending his page to plead his cause with the lady, and of the lady's falling in love with the page. "This play (says Dr. Johnson,) is in the graver part elegant and easy, and in some of the lighter scenes exquisitely humorous." Its progress is full of spirit, and the entanglement of characters and circumstances is pleasingly unravelled in the final catastrophe. The self-sufficiency of Malvolio is charmingly depicted, and very laughably punished; whilst the excesses of Sir Toby Belch are almost excused by his smattering of wit, and his unequalled good-humour. The sudden attachment of Viola is much more improbable than the obstinate repugnance of Olivia: but the romantic nature of her love, "feeding in concealment on her damask cheek," gives an interest to her situation, whilst a victim to the tender passion, which the undisguised declarations of the other, though placed in the same predicament, must generally fail in producing.

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ORSINO, *Duke of Illyria.*

SEBASTIAN, *a Young Gentleman, Brother to Viola.*

ANTONIO, *a Sea-captain, Friend to Sebastian.*

*A Sea-captain, Friend to Viola.*

VALENTINE, } *Gentlemen attending on the Duke.*

CURIO,

SIR TOBY BELCH, *Uncle of Olivia.*

SIR ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.

MALVOLIO, *Steward to Olivia.*

FABIAN, } *Servants to Olivia.*

CLOWN, }

OLIVIA, *a rich Countess.*

VIOLA, *in love with the Duke.*

MARIA, *Olivia's Woman.*

*Lords, Priests, Sailors, Officers, Musicians, and other Attendants.*

SCENE—A City in Illyria; and the Sea-coast near it.

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—An Apartment in the Duke's Palace.

*Enter DUKE, CURIO, LORDS; Musicians attending.*

*Duke.* If music be the food of love, play on;  
Give me excess of it; that, suff'ring,  
The appetite may sicken, and so die.—  
That strain again;—it had a dying fall:  
Oh! it came o'er my ear like the sweet south,  
That breathes upon a bank of violets,  
Stealing, and giving odour.—Enough; no more;  
'Tis not so sweet now, as it was before.  
O spirit of love, how quick and fresh art thou!  
That notwithstanding thy capacity  
Receiveth as the sea, nought enters there,  
Of what validity \* and pitch soever,  
But falls into abatement and low price,

\* Value.

Even in a minute! So full of shapes is fancy,  
That it alone is high-fantastical. \*

*Cur.* Will you go hunt, my lord?

*Duke.* What, Curio?

*Cur.* The hart.

*Duke.* Why, so I do, the noblest that I have:  
Oh! when mine eyes did see Olivia first,  
Methought she purg'd the air of pestilence;  
That instant was I turn'd into a hart;  
And my desires, like fell and cruel hounds,  
E'er since pursue me.—How now? what news  
from her?

*Enter VALENTINE.*

*Val.* So please my lord, I might not be admitted,  
But from her handmaid do return this answer:  
The element itself, till seven years heat, †  
Shall not behold her face at ample view;  
But, like a cloistress, she will veiled walk,

\* Fantastical to the height.

† Heated.

And water once a day her chamber round  
With eye-offending brine : all this, to season  
A brother's dead love, which she would keep  
fresh,  
And lasting, in her sad remembrance.

*Duke.* O she, that hath a heart of that fine  
frame,

To pay this debt of love but to a brother,  
How will she love, when the rich golden shaft  
Hath kill'd the flock of all affection's else  
That live in her ! when liver, brain, and heart,  
These sovereign thrones, are all supplied, and  
fill'd,

(Her sweet perfections,) with one self king !—  
Away before me to sweet beds of flowers ;  
Love-thoughts lie rich, when canopied with  
bowers. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—The Sea Coast.

*Enter VIOLA, CAPTAIN, and Sailors.*

*Vio.* What country, friends, is this ?

*Cap.* Illyria, lady.

*Vio.* And what should I do in Illyria ?

My brother he is in Elysium.

Perchance, he is not drown'd :—What think you,  
sailors ?

*Cap.* It is perchance, that you yourself were  
saved.

*Vio.* O my poor brother ! and so, perchance,  
may he be.

*Cap.* True, madam : and, to comfort you with  
chance,

Assure yourself, after our ship did split,  
When you, and that poor number saved with  
you,

Hung on our driving boat, I saw your brother,  
Most provident in peril, bind himself  
(Courage and hope both teaching him the prac-  
tice)

To a strong mast, that lived upon the sea ;  
Where, like Ariou on the dolphin's back,  
I saw him hold acquaintance with the waves,  
So long as I could see.

*Vio.* For saying so, there's gold :  
Mine own escape unfoldeth to my hope,  
Whereto thy speech serves for authority,  
The like of him. Know'st thou this country ?

*Cap.* Ay, Madam, well ; for I was bred and  
born,

Not three hours' travel from this very place.

*Vio.* Who governs here ?

*Cap.* A noble duke, in nature,  
As in his name.

*Vio.* What is his name ?

*Cap.* Orsino.

*Vio.* Orsino ! I have heard my father name  
him :

He was a bachelor then.

*Cap.* And so is now,  
Or was so very late : for but a month  
Ago I went from hence ; and then 'twas fresh  
In mummer ; (as, you know, what great ones do,  
The less with prattle of,) that he did seek  
The love of fair Olivia.

*Vio.* What's she ?

*Cap.* A virtuous maid the daughter of a count  
That died some twelvemonth since ; then leaving  
her

In the protection of his son, her brother,  
Who shortly also died : for whose dear love  
They say, she hath abjur'd the company  
And sight of men.

*Vio.* O that I served that lady :  
And might not be delivered to the world,  
Till I had made mine own occasion mellow,  
What my estate is.

*Cap.* That were hard to compass ;  
Because she will admit no kind of suit,  
No, not the duke's.

*Vio.* There is a fair behaviour in thee, cap-  
tain ;

And though that nature with a beauteous wall  
Doth oft close in pollution, yet of thee  
I will believe, thou hast a mind that suits

With this thy fair and outward character.  
I pray thee, and I'll pay thee boundenously,  
Conceal me what I am ; and be my aid  
For such disguise as, haply, shall become  
The form of my intent. I'll serve this duke ;  
Thou shalt present me as an eunuch to him,  
It may be worth thy pains, for I can sing,  
And speak to him in many sorts of music,  
That will allow \* me very worth his service.  
What else may hap, to time I will commit ;  
Only shape thou thy silence to my wit.

*Cap.* Be you his eunuch, and your mute I'll  
be ;

When my tongue bla's, then let mine eyes not  
see !

*Vio.* I thank thee : Lead me on.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III.—A Room in OLIVIA'S House.

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH, and MARIA.*

*Sir To.* What a plague means my niece, to  
take the death of her brother thus ! I am sure  
care's an enemy to life.

*Mar.* By troth, Sir Toby, you must come in  
earlier o' nights ; your cousin, my lady, takes  
great exceptions to your ill hours.

*Sir To.* Why, let her except before excepted.

*Mar.* Ay, but you must confine yourself with-  
in the modest limits of order.

*Sir To.* Confinue ? I'll confine myself no finer  
than I am : these clothes are good enough to  
drink in, and so be these boots too ; an they be  
not, let them hang themselves in their own  
straps.

*Mar.* That quaffing and drinking will undo  
you : I heard my lady talk of it yesterday ; and  
of a foolish knight that you brought in one night  
here, to be her wooer.

*Sir To.* Who ? Sir Andrew Ague-cheek ?

*Mar.* Ay, he.

*Sir To.* He's as tall † a man as any's in  
Illyria.

*Mar.* What's that to the purpose ?

*Sir To.* Why, he has three thousand ducats  
a year.

*Mar.* Aye, but he'll have but a year in all these  
ducats ; he's a very fool, and a prodigal.

*Sir To.* Fye, that you'll say so ! he plays o'  
the viol-de-gambo, and speaks three or four lan-  
guages word for word without book, and hath all  
the good gifts of nature.

*Mar.* He hath, indeed,—almost natura ! : for,  
besides that he's a fool, he's a great quarreller ;  
and, but that he hath the gift of a coward to allay  
the gust he hath in quarrelling, 'tis thought  
among the prudent, he would quickly have the  
gift of a grave.

*Sir To.* By this hand, they are scoundrels  
and substractors that say so of him. Who are  
they ?

*Mar.* They that add moreover, he's drunk  
nightly in your company.

*Sir To.* With drinking healths to my niece ;  
I'll drink to her, as long as there is a passage in  
my throat, and drink in Illyria : He's a coward  
and a coysail, ‡ that will not drink to my niece,  
till his brains turn o' the toe like a parsh-top. §  
What, wench ! Castiliano vulgo ; for here comes  
Sir Andrew Ague-face.

*Enter Sir ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.*

*Sir And.* Sir Toby Belch ! how now, Sir Toby  
Belch ?

*Sir To.* Sweet Sir Andrew !

*Sir And.* Bless you, fair shrew.

*Mar.* And you too, Sir.

*Sir To.* Accost, Sir Andrew, accost.

*Sir And.* What's that ?

*Sir To.* My niece's chamber-maid.

\* Approve. † Stout.

‡ A bastard hawk, or a coward cock.

§ It was customary in every village to keep a large toad  
for the peasants to whip in cold weather.

*Sir And.* Good mistress Accost, I desire better acquaintance.

*Mar.* My name is Mary, Sir.

*Sir And.* Good mistress Mary Accost,—

*Sir To.* You mistake, knight: accost, is, front her, board her, woo her, assail her.

*Sir And.* By my truth, I would not undertake her in this company. Is that the meaning of accost?

*Mar.* Fare you well, gentlemen.

*Sir To.* An thou let part so, Sir Andrew, 'would you might'st never draw sword again.

*Sir And.* An you part so, mistress, I would I might never draw sword again. Fair lady, do you think you have fools in hand?

*Mar.* Sir, I have not you by the hand.

*Sir And.* Marry, but you shall have; and here's my hand.

*Mar.* Now, Sir, thought is free: I pray you, bring your hand to the buttery-bar, and let it drink.

*Sir And.* Wherefore sweet heart? what's your metaphor?

*Mar.* It's dry, Sir?

*Sir And.* Why, I think so; I am not such an ass, but I can keep my hand dry. But what's your jest?

*Mar.* A dry jest, Sir.

*Sir And.* Are you full of them?

*Mar.* Ay, Sir; I have them at my fingers' ends; marry, now I let go your hand, I am barren. *[Exit MARIA.]*

*Sir To.* O knight, thou lack'st a cup of canary: When did I see thee so put down?

*Sir And.* Never in your life, I think; unless you see canary put me down: Methinks, sometimes I have no more wit than a Christian, or an ordinary man has: but I am a great eater of beef, and I believe that does harm to my wit.

*Sir To.* No question.

*Sir And.* An I thought that, I'd forswear it. I'll ride home to-morrow, Sir Toby.

*Sir To.* *Pourquoy*, my dear knight?

*Sir And.* What is *pourquoy*? do or not do? I would I had bestowed that time in the tongue, that I have in fencing, dancing, and bear-baiting: Oh! had I but followed the arts!

*Sir To.* Then had'st thou had an excellent head of hair!

*Sir And.* Why, would that have mended my hair?

*Sir To.* Past question; for thou seest it will not curl by nature.

*Sir And.* But it becomes me well enough, doesn't it?

*Sir To.* Excellent; it hangs like flax on a distaff; and I hope to see a housewife take thee between her legs and spin it off.

*Sir And.* 'Faith, I'll home to-morrow, Sir Toby: your niece will not be seen; or, if she be, it's four to one she'll none of me: the count himself, here hard by, woos her.

*Sir To.* She'll none o' the count; she'll not match above her degree, neither in estate, years, nor wit; I have heard her swear it. Tut, there's life in't, man.

*Sir And.* I'll stay a month longer. I am a fellow o' the strangest mind i' the world; I delight in masques and revels sometimes altogether.

*Sir To.* Art thou good at these kick-shaws, knight?

*Sir And.* As any man in Illyria, whatsoever he be, under the degree of my betters; and yet I will not compare with an old man.

*Sir To.* What is thy excellence in a galliard, knight?

*Sir And.* 'Faith, I can cut a caper.

*Sir To.* And I can cut the mutton to't.

*Sir And.* And, I think, I have the back-trick, simply as strong as any man in Illyria.

*Sir To.* Wherefore are these things hid? wherefore have these gifts a curtain before them? are they like to take dust, like mistress Mall's

picture? \* why dost thou not go to church in a galliard, and come home in a coranto? My very walk should be a jig; I would not so much as make water, but in a sink-a-pace. † What dost thou mean? is it a world to hide virtues in? I did think by the excellent constitution of thy leg, it was formed under the star of a galliard.

*Sir And.* Ay, 'tis strong, and it does indifferently well in a flame-coloured stock. Shall we set about some revels?

*Sir To.* What shall we do else? were we not born under Taurus?

*Sir And.* Taurus? that's sides and heart.

*Sir To.* No, Sir; it is legs and thighs. Let me see thee caper: ha! higher; ha, ha!—excellent! *[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE IV.—A Room in the DUKE'S Palace.

*Enter VALENTINE and VIOLA, in man's attire.*

*Val.* If the duke continue these favours towards you, Cesario, you are like to be much advanced; he hath known you but three days, and already you are no stranger.

*Viola.* You either fear his humour, or my negligence, that you call in question the continuance of his love: Is he inconstant, Sir, in his favours?

*Val.* No, believe me.

*Enter DUKE, CURIO, and Attendants.*

*Viola.* I thank you. Here comes the count.

*Duke.* Who saw Cesario, ho?

*Viola.* On your attendance, my lord; here.

*Duke.* Stand you awhile aloof.—Cesario, Thou know'st no less but all; I have unclasped to thee the book even of my secret soul: Therefore, good youth, address thy gait ‡ unto her;

Be not denied access, stand at her doors, And tell them, there thy fixed foot shall grow, Till thou have audience.

*Viola.* Sure, my noble lord, If she be so abandon'd to her sorrow As it is spoke, she never will admit me.

*Duke.* Be clamorous, and leap all civil bounds, Rather than make unprofitable return.

*Viola.* Say, I do speak with her, my lord; What then?

*Duke.* Oh! then unfold the passion of my love, Surprise her with discourse of my dear faith: It shall become thee well to act my woes; She will attend it better in thy youth, Than in a nuncio of more grave aspect.

*Viola.* I think not so, my lord.

*Duke.* Dear lad, believe it; For they shall yet belie thy happy years That say, thou art a man: Diana's lip Is not more smooth and rubious; thy small pipe Is as the maiden's organ, shrill and sound, And all is semblative a woman's part.

I know thy constellation is right apt For this affair:—Some four or five attend him; All, if you will; for I myself am best, When least in company:—Prosper well in this, And thou shalt live as freely as thy lord, To call his fortunes thine.

*Viola.* I'll do my best, To woo your lady: yet, *[Aside.]* a fearful strife! Whoe'er I woo, myself would be his wife.

*[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE V.—A Room in OLIVIA'S House.

*Enter MARIA and CLOWN.*

*Mar.* Nay, either tell me where thou hast been, or I will not open my lips, so wide as a

\* Alluding to the infamous Mary Frith, commonly called Mall Cut-Purse. See *Grainger's Biog. Hist.*  
† Sink-a-pace, the name of a dance. ‡ Go thy way. § Full of impediment.

bristle may enter, in way of thy excuse: my lady will hang thee for thy absence.

*Clo.* Let her hang me: he that is well hanged in this world, needs to fear no colours.

*Mar.* Make that good.

*Clo.* He shall see none to fear.

*Mar.* A good lenten\* answer: I can tell thee where that saying was born, of, I fear no colours.

*Clo.* Where, good mistress Mary?

*Mar.* In the wars; and that may you be bold to say in your foolery.

*Clo.* Well, God give them wisdom, that have it; and those that are fools, let them use their talents.

*Mar.* Yet you will be hanged, for being so long absent: or, to be turned away; is not that as good as hanging to you?

*Clo.* Many a good hanging prevents a bad marriage; and, for turning away, let summer bear it out.

*Mar.* You are resolute then?

*Clo.* Not so, neither; but I am resolved on two points.

*Mar.* That, if one break; the other will hold; or, it both break, your gaskins fall.

*Clo.* Apt, in good faith; very apt! Well, go thy way; if Sir Toby would leave drinking, thou wert as witty a piece of Eve's flesh, as any in Illyria.

*Mar.* Peace, you rogue, no more of that; here comes my lady: make your excuse wisely, you were best. *[Exit.]*

#### Enter OLIVIA and MALVOLIO.

*Clo.* Wit, and't be thy will, put me into good fooling! Those wits that think they have thee, do very oft prove fools; and I, that am sure I lack thee, may pass for a wise man: For what says Quinapalus? Better a witty fool, than a foolish wit.—God bless thee, lady!

*Ol.* Take the fool away.

*Clo.* Do you not hear, fellows? Take away the lady.

*Ol.* Go to, you're a dry fool; I'll no more of you: besides, you grow dishonest.

*Clo.* Two faults, madonna,† that drink and good counsel will amend: for give the dry fool drink, then is the fool not dry; bid the dishonest man mend himself; if he cannot, let the botcher mend him: Any thing that's mended, is but patched: virtue, that transgresses, is but patched with sin; and sin, that amends, is but patched with virtue: If that this simple syllogism will serve, so; if it will not, what remedy? As there is no true cuckold but calamity, so beauty's a flower:—the lady bade thee take away the fool; therefore, I say again, take her away.

*Ol.* Sir, I bade them take away you.

*Clo.* Misprison in the highest degree!—Lady, *Cuculus non facit monachum*; that's as much as to say, I wear not motly in my brain. Good madonna, give me leave to prove you a fool.

*Ol.* Can you do it?

*Clo.* Dexterously, good madonna.

*Ol.* Make your proof.

*Clo.* I must catechize you for it, madonna; Good my mouse of virtue, answer me.

*Ol.* Well, Sir, for want of other idleness, I'll abide your proof.

*Clo.* Good madonna, why mourn'st thou?

*Ol.* Good fool, for my brother's death.

*Clo.* I think, his soul is in hell, madonna.

*Ol.* I know his soul is in heaven, fool.

*Clo.* The more fool you, madonna, to mourn for your brother's soul being in heaven.—Take away the fool, gentlemen.

*Ol.* What think you of this fool, Malvolio? doth he not mend?

*Mal.* Yes: and shall do, till the pangs of

death shake him: Infirmary, that decays the wise, doth ever make the better fool.

*Clo.* God send you, Sir, a speedy infirmity, for the better increasing your folly! Sir Toby will be sworn, that I am no fox; but he will not pass his word for two pence that you are no fool.

*Ol.* How say you to that, Malvolio?

*Mal.* I marvel your ladyship takes delight in such a barren rascal; I saw him put down the other day with an ordinary fool, that has no more brain than a stone. Look you now, he's out of his guard already; unless you laugh and minister occasion to him, he is gagged. I protest, I take these wise men, that crow so at these set kind of fools, no better than the fools' zanies.\*

*Ol.* O you are sick of self-love, Malvolio, and taste with a distempered appetite. To be generous, guiltless, and of free disposition, is to take those things for bird-bolts,† that you deem cannon-bullets: There is no slander in an allowed fool, though he do nothing but rail; nor no railing in a known discreet man, though he do nothing but reprove.

*Clo.* Now Mercury endue thee with leasing,‡ for thou speakest well of fools.

#### Re-enter MARIA.

*Mar.* Madam, there is at the gate a young gentleman, much desires to speak with you.

*Ol.* From the count Orsino, is it?

*Mar.* I know not, madam; 'tis a fair young man, and well attended.

*Ol.* Who of my people hold him in delay?

*Mar.* Sir Toby, madam, your kinsman.

*Ol.* Fetch him off, I pray you; he speaks nothing but madman: Fye on him! *[Exit MARIA.]* Go you, Malvolio; if it be a suit from the count, I am sick, or not at home, what you will, to dismiss it. *[Exit MALVOLIO.]* Now you see, Sir, how your fooling grows old, and people dislike it.

*Clo.* Thou hast spoke for us, madonna, as if thy eldest son should be a fool: whose skull Jove cram with brains, for here he comes, one of thy kin, has a most weak *pia mater*.‡

#### Enter Sir TOBY BALCH.

*Ol.* By mine honour, half drunk.—What is he at the gate, cousin?

*Sir To.* A gentleman.

*Ol.* A gentleman? What gentleman?

*Sir To.* 'Tis a gentleman here—A plague o' these pickle herrings!—How now, son?

*Clo.* Good Sir Toby,—

*Ol.* Cousin, cousin, how have you come so early by this lethargy?

*Sir To.* Lechery! I defy lechery: There's one at the gate.

*Ol.* Ay, marry; what is he?

*Sir To.* Let him be the devil, an he will, I care not: give me faith, say I. Well, it's all one. *[Exit.]*

*Ol.* What's a drunken man like, fool?

*Clo.* Like a drown'd man, a fool, and a madman: one draught above heat makes him a fool; the second mads him; and a third drowns him.

*Ol.* Go thou and seek the coroner, and let him sit o' my coz; for he's in the third degree of drink, he's drown'd: go look after him.

*Clo.* He is but mad, yet madonna; and the fool shall look to the madman. *[Exit CLOWN.]*

#### Re-enter MALVOLIO.

*Mal.* Madam, yond' young fellow swears he will speak with you. I told him you were sick; he takes on him to understand so much, and therefore comes to speak with you: I told him

\* Short and spare.

† Points were hooks which fastened the hose or breeches.

‡ Italian, mistress, dame.

\* Fools' baubles.

† Short arrows.

‡ The cover of the brain.



you were asleep; he seems to have a fore-knowledge of that too, and therefore comes to speak with you. What is to be said to him, lady? he's fortified against any denial.

*Oli.* Tell him he shall not speak with me.

*Mal.* He has been told so; and he says, he'll stand at your door like a sheriff's post, and be the supporter of a bench, but he'll speak with you.

*Oli.* What kind of man is he?

*Mal.* Why, of man kind.

*Oli.* What manner of man?

*Mal.* Of very ill manner; he'll speak with you, will you or no.

*Oli.* Of what personage and years is he?

*Mal.* Not yet old enough for a man, nor young enough for a boy; as a squash is before 'tis a pease-cod, or a coddling when 'tis almost an apple: 'tis with him e'en standing water, between boy and man. He is very well-favoured, and he speaks very shrewishly; one would think, his mother's milk were scarce out of him.

*Oli.* Let him approach: Call in my gentlewoman.

*Mal.* Gentlewoman, my lady calls. *[Exit.]*

*Re-enter MARIA.*

*Oli.* Give me my veil: come, throw it o'er my face;  
We'll once more hear Orsino's embassy.

*Enter VIOLA.*

*Vio.* The honourable lady of the house, which is she?

*Oli.* Speak to me, I shall answer for her. Your will?

*Vio.* Most radiant, exquisite, and unmatchable beauty,—I pray you, tell me, if this be the lady of the house, for I never saw her: I would be loath to cast away my speech; for, besides that it is excellently well penn'd, I have taken great pains to con it. Good beauties, let me sustain no scorn; I am very comely,\* even to the least sinister usage.

*Oli.* Whence came you, Sir?

*Vio.* I can say little more than I have studied, and that question's out of my part. Good gentle one, give me modest assurance, if you be the lady of the house, that I may proceed in my speech.

*Oli.* Are you a comedian?

*Vio.* No, my profound heart: and yet, by the very fangs of malice, I swear, I am not that I play. Are you the lady of the house?

*Oli.* If I do not usurp myself, I am.

*Vio.* Most certain, if you are she, you do usurp yourself; for what is your's to bestow, is not your's to reserve. But this is from my commission: I will on with my speech in your praise, and then show you the heart of my message.

*Oli.* Come to what is important in't: I forgive you the praise.

*Vio.* Alas, I took great pains to study it, and 'tis poetical.

*Oli.* It is the more likely to be feigned; I pray you, keep it in. I heard, you were saucy at my gates; and allowed your approach, rather to wonder at you than to hear you. If you be not mad, be gone; if you have reason, be brief: 'tis not that time of moon with me, to make one in so skipping a dialogue.

*Mar.* Will you hold still, Sir? here lies your way.

*Vio.* No, good swabber: I am to hull here a little longer.—Some mollification for your giant,† sweet lady.

*Oli.* Tell me your mind.

*Vio.* I am a messenger.

*Oli.* Sure, you have some hideous matter to

deliver, when the courtesy of it is so fearful. Speak your office.

*Vio.* It alone concerns your ear. I bring no overture of war, no taxation of homage; I hold the olive in my hand: my words are as full of peace as matter.

*Oli.* Yet you began rudely. What are you? what would you?

*Vio.* The rudeness, that hath appear'd in me, have I learn'd from my entertainment. What I am, and what I would, are as secret as maiden-head: to your ears, divinity; to any other's, profanation.

*Oli.* Give us the place alone: we will hear this divinity. *[Exit MARIA.]* Now, Sir, what is your text?

*Vio.* Most sweet lady,—

*Oli.* A comfortable doctrine, and much may be said of it. Where lies your text?

*Vio.* In Orsino's bosom.

*Oli.* In his bosom? In what chapter of his bosom?

*Vio.* To answer by the method, in the first of his heart.

*Oli.* Oh! I have read it; it is heresy. Have you no more to say?

*Vio.* Good madam, let me see your face.

*Oli.* Have you any commission from your lord to negotiate with my face? you are now out of your text; but we will draw the curtain, and show you the picture. Look you, Sir, such a one as I was this present: \* Is't not well done? *[Unveiling.]*

*Vio.* Excellently done, if God did all.

*Oli.* 'Tis in grain, Sir; 'twill endure wind and weather.

*Vio.* 'Tis beauty truly blent,† whose red and white

Nature's own sweet and cunning hand laid on: Lady, you are the cruel'st she alive, if you will lead these graces to the grave, And leave the world no copy.

*Oli.* O Sir, I will not be so hard-hearted; I will give out divers schedules of my beauty: It shall be inventoried; and every particle, and utensil, labelled to my will: as, *acm*, two lips indifferent red; *stem*, two grey eyes, with lids to them; *stem*, one neck, one chin, and so forth. Were you sent hither to 'praise me?

*Vio.* I see you what you are: you are too proud;

But, if you were the devil, you are fair. My lord and master loves you; Oh! such love could be but recompens'd though you were crown'd

The nonpareil of beauty!

*Oli.* How does he love me?

*Vio.* With adorations, with fertile tears, With groans that thunder love, with sighs of fire.

*Oli.* Your lord does know my mind, I cannot love him:

Yet I suppose him virtuous, know him noble, Of great estate, of fresh and stainless youth; In voices well divulg'd,‡ free, learn'd, and valiant,

And, in dimension, and the shape of nature, A gracious person: but yet I cannot love him; He might have took his answer long ago.

*Vio.* If I did love you in my master's flame, With such a suffering, such a deadly life, In your denial I would find no sense, I would not understand it.

*Oli.* Why, what would you?

*Vio.* Make me a willow cabin at your gate, And call upon my soul within the house; Write loyal cantons§ of contemned love, And sing them loud even in the dead of night; Holla your name to the reverberate¶ hills, And make the babbling gossip of the air Cry out, Olivia! Oh! you should not rest

\* Accountable.

† It appears from several parts of this play that the original actress of Maria was very short.

‡ Presents.

§ Blended, mixed together

¶ Well spoken of by the world.

§ Cantos, verses.

¶ Echoing.

Between the elements of air and earth,  
But you should pity me.

*Oli.* You might do much: What is your parentage?

*Vio.* Above my fortunes, yet my state is well:  
I am a gentleman.

*Oli.* Get you to your lord;  
I cannot love him: let him send no more;  
Unless, perchance, you come to me again.  
To tell me how he takes it. Fare you well:  
I thank you for your pains: spend this for me.

*Vio.* I am no fee'd post,\* lady; keep your purse;  
My master, not myself, lacks recompense.  
Love make his heart of flint, that you shall love;  
And let your fervour, like my master's, be  
Plac'd in contempt! Farewell, fair cruelty. *[Exit.]*

*Oli.* What is your parentage?  
Above my fortune, yet my state is well:  
I am a gentleman.—I'll be sworn thou art;  
Thy tongue, thy face, thy limbs, actions, and spirit,  
Do give thee five-fold blazon:†—Not too fast:—  
soft I soft!  
Unless the master were the man.—How now?  
Even so quickly may one catch the plague?  
Methinks, I feel this youth's perfections,  
With an invisible and subtle stealth,  
To creep in at mine eyes. Well, let it be.—  
What, ho, Malvolio!—

*Re-enter MALVOLIO.*

*Mal.* Here, madam, at your service.  
*Oli.* Run after that same peevish messenger,  
The county's‡ man: he left this ring behind him,  
Would I, or not; tell him, I'll none of it.  
Desire him not to flatter with his lord,  
Nor hold him up with hopes; I am not for him:  
If that the youth will come this way to-morrow,  
I'll give him reasons for't. Hie thee, Malvolio.  
*Mal.* Madam, I will. *[Exit.]*  
*Oli.* I do I know not what; and fear to find  
Mine eye too great a flatterer for my mind.  
Fate, show thy force: Ourselves we do not  
owe;§  
What is decreed, must be; and be this so! *[Exit.]*

ACT II.

SCENE I.—The Sea-coast.

*Enter ANTONIO and SEBASTIAN.*

*Ant.* Will you stay no longer? nor will you not that I go with you?

*Seb.* By your patience, no: my stars shine darkly over me; the malignancy of my fate might, perhaps, distemper your's; therefore I shall crave of you your leave, that I may bear my evils alone: it were a bad recompense for your love to lay any of them on you.

*Ant.* Let me yet know of you, whither you are bound.

*Seb.* No, 'sooth, Sir; my determinate voyage is mere extravagancy. But I perceive in you so excellent a touch of modesty, that you will not extort from me what I am willing to keep in; therefore it charges me in manners the rather to express myself. You must know of me then, Antonio, my name is Sebastian, which I called Rodorigo; My father was that Sebastian, of Messina, whom I know you have heard of: he left behind him, myself and a sister, both born in an hour. If the heavens had been pleased,

'would we had so ended! but, you, Sir, altered that, for, some hour before you took me from the breach of the sea, was my sister drowned.

*Ant.* Alas, the day!

*Seb.* A lady, Sir, though it was said she much resembled me, was yet of many accounted beautiful: but, though I could not, with such estimable wonder, overfar believe that, yet thus far I will boldly publish her, she bore a mind that envy could not but call fair: she is drowned already, Sir, with salt water, though I seem to drown her remembrance again with more.

*Ant.* Pardon me Sir, your bad entertainment.

*Seb.* O good Antonio, forgive me your trouble.

*Ant.* If you will not murder me for my love, let me be your servant.

*Seb.* If you will not undo what you have done, that is, kill him whom you have recovered, desire it not. Fare ye well at once: my bosom is full of kindness; and I am yet so near the manners of my mother, that upon the least occasion more, mine eyes will tell tales of me. I am bound to the count Orsino's court: farewell. *[Exit.]*

*Ant.* The gentleness of all the gods go with thee!

I have many enemies in Orsino's court,  
Else would I very shortly see thee there:  
But come what may, I do adore thee so,  
That danger shall seem sport, and I will go. *[Exit.]*

SCENE II.—A Street.

*Enter VIOLA; MALVOLIO following.*

*Mal.* Were not you even now with the countess Olivia?

*Vio.* Even now, Sir; on a moderate pace I have since arrived but hither.

*Mal.* She returns this ring to you, Sir; you might have saved me my pains, to have taken it away yourself. She adds moreover, that you should put your lord into a desperate assurance she will none of him: And one thing more; that you be never so hardy to come again in his affairs, unless it be to report your lord's taking of this. Receive it so.

*Vio.* She took the ring of me; I'll none of it.  
*Mal.* Come, Sir, you peevishly shew it to her; and her will is, it should be so returned: if it be worth stooping for, there it lies in your eye; if not, be it his that finds it. *[Exit.]*

*Vio.* I left no ring with her: What means this lady?

Fortune forbid, my outside have not charm'd her!

She made good view of me; indeed, so much, That, sure, methought, her eyes had lost her tongue,

For she did speak in starts distractedly. She loves me, sure; the cunning of her passion invites me in this churlish messenger.

None of my lord's ring! why, he sent her none. I am the man:—If it be so, (as 'tis.)

Poor lady, she were better love a dream. Disguise, I see thou art a wickedness,

Wherein the pregnant\* enemy does much. How easy is it, for the proper-false†

In women's waven hearts to set their forms!

Alas! our frailty is the cause not we;  
For, such as we are made of, such we be.

How will this fadge!‡ My master loves her dearly;

And I, poor monster, fond as much on him;  
And she, mistaken, seems to dote on me:

What will become of this! As I am man,  
My state is desperate for my master's love;

As I am woman, now alas the day!  
What thriftless sighs shall poor Olivia breathe?

O time, thou must untangle this, not I;  
It is too hard a knot for me to untie. *[Exit.]*

\* Messenger.  
‡ Count.

† Proclamation of gentility.  
‡ Own, possess

‡ Reveal.

\* Dextrous, ready hand.  
† Fair deceiver.

‡ Sult.

SCENE III.—A Room in OLIVIA'S House.

Enter Sir TOBY BELCH, and Sir ANDREW AGUR-CHREEK.

Sir To. Approach, Sir Andrew: not to be a-bed after midnight, is to be up betimes; and *disulculo surgere*, thou know'st,—

Sir And. Nay, by my troth, I know not: but I know, to be up late, is to be up late.

Sir To. A false conclusion; I hate it as an unfilled can: To be up after midnight, and to go to bed then, is early; so that, to go to bed after midnight, is to go to bed betimes. Do not our lives consist of the four elements?

Sir And. 'Faith, so they say; but, I think, it rather consists of eating and drinking.

Sir To. Thou art a scholar; let us therefore eat and drink.—Marian, I say!—a stoop of wine!

Enter CLOWN.

Sir And. Here comes the fool, i' faith.

Clo. How now, my hearts? Did you never see the picture of we three?

Sir To. Welcome, ass. Now let's have a catch.

Sir And. By my troth, the fool has an excellent breast.† I had rather than forty shillings I had such a leg; and so sweet a breath to sing, as the fool has. In sooth, thou wast in very gracious fooling last night, when thou spokest of Picrogramitus, of the Vapians passing the equinoctial of Quebus; 'twas very good, i' faith. I sent thee sixpence for thy leman; Hadst it?

Clo. I did impeticoes thy gratility; § for Malvolio's nose is no whippstock: My lady has a white hand, and the Myrmidons are no bottle-ale houses.

Sir And. Excellent! Why, this is the best fooling, when all is done. Now, a song.

Sir To. Come on; there is sixpence for you: let's have a song.

Sir And. There's a testril of me too: if one laught give a—

Clo. Would you have a love-song, or a song of good life?

Sir To. A love-song, a love-song.

Sir And. Ay, ay; I care not for good life.

SOME.

Clo. O mistress mine, where are you roaming?  
O stay and hear; your true love's coming,

That can sing both high and low:  
Trip no further, pretty sweeting;  
Journeys end in lovers' meeting,  
Every wise man's son doth know.

Sir And. Excellent good, i' faith!

Sir To. Good, good.

Clo. What is love? 'tis not hereafter;  
Present mirth hath present laughter;  
What's to come, is still unsure:  
In delay there lies no plenty;  
Then come kiss me sweet-and-twenty,  
Youth's a stuff will not endure.

Sir And. A mellifluous voice, as I am true knight.

Sir To. A contagious breath.

Sir And. Very sweet and contagious, i' faith.

Sir To. To hear by the nose, it is dulcet in contagion. But shall we make the welkin dance? Indeed? Shall we rouse the night-owl in a catch, that will draw three souls ¶ out of one weaver? shall we do that?

Sir And. An you love me, let's do't: I am dog at a catch.

\* Loggerheads be.

† Voice.

‡ Mistress. § I did impeticoes thy gratility.

¶ Drink till the sky turns round.

¶ The peripatetic philosophy gave to each man three souls: the vegetative or plastic, the animal, and the rational.

Clo. By'r lady, Sir, and some dogs will catch well.

Sir And. Most certain: let our catch be, *Thou knave*.

Clo. Hold thy peace, thou knave, knight! I shall be constrain'd in't to call thee knave, knight.

Sir And. 'Tis not the first time I have constrain'd one to call me knave. Begin, fool; it begins, *Hold thy peace*.

Clo. I shall never begin, if I hold my peace.

Sir And. Good, i' faith! Come, begin.

[They sing a catch.]

Enter MARIA.

Mar. What a caterwauling do you keep here! If my lady have not called up her steward, Malvolio, and bid him turn you out of doors, never trust me.

Sir To. My lady's a Cataian,\* we are politicians: Malvolio's a Peg-a-Ramsey,† and *Three merry men we be*. Am not I consanguineous? am I not of her blood? Tilly-valley, i' lady! *There dwell a man in Babylon, lady, lady!*

[Singing.]

Clo. Beshrew me, the knight's in admirable fooling.

Sir And. Ay, he does well enough, if he be disposed, and so do I too; he does it with a better grace, but I do it more natural.

Sir To. O the twelfth day of December.—

[Singing.]

Mar. For the love of God, peace.

Enter MALVOLIO.

Mal. My masters, are you mad? or what are you? Have you no wit, manners, nor honesty, but to gabble like tinkers at this time of night? Do ye make an alehouse of my lady's house, that ye squeak out your coziers' catches without any mitigation or remorse of voice? Is there no respect of place, persons, nor time, in you?

Sir To. We did keep time, Sir, in our catches. Sneek up!

Mal. Sir Toby, I must be round with you. My lady bade me tell you, that, though she harbours you as her kinsman, she's nothing allied to your disorders. If you can separate yourself and your misdemeanors, you are welcome to the house; if not, an it would please you to take leave of her, she is very willing to bid you farewell.

Sir To. Farewell, dear heart, since I must needs be gone.

Mar. Nay, good Sir Toby.

Clo. His eyes do show his days are almost done.

Mal. Is't even so?

Sir To. But I will never die.

Clo. Sir Toby, there you lie.

Mal. This is much credit to you.

Sir To. Shall I bid him go? [Singing.]

Clo. What an if you do?

Sir To. Shall I bid him go, and spare not?

Clo. O no, no, no, no, you dare not.

Sir To. Out o'time? Sir, ye lie.—Art any more than a steward? Dost thou think, because thou art virtuous, there shall be no more cakes and ale?

Clo. Yes, by Saint Anne; and ginger shall be hot i' the mouth too.

Sir To. Thou'rt i' the right.—Go, Sir, rub your chain ¶ with crumbs:—A stoop of wine, Maria!

Mal. Mistress Mary, if you prized my lady's favour at any thing more than contempt, you would not give means for this uncivil rule; \*\* she shall know of it, by this hand.

Mar. Go shake your ears.

Sir And. 'Twere as good a deed as to drink

\* Romaner.

† Name of an old song.

‡ Equivalent to *filly filly, shilly shally*.

§ Coblers. ¶ Hang yourself.

¶ Stewards anciently wore a chain.

\*\* Method of life.

when a man's a hungry, to challenge him to the field; and then to break promise with him, and make a fool of him.

*Sir To.* Do't, knight; I'll write thee a challenge; or I'll deliver thy indignation to him by word of mouth.

*Mar.* Sweet Sir Toby, be patient for to night; since the youth of the count's was to-day with my lady, she is much out of quiet. For monsieur Malvolio, let me alone with him; if I do not gull him into a nay-word,\* and make him a common recreation, do not think I have wit enough to lie straight in my bed: I know, I can do it.

*Sir To.* Possess us, † possess us; tell us something of him.

*Mar.* Marry, Sir, sometimes he is a kind of Puritan.

*Sir And.* Oh! if I thought that, I'd beat him like a dog.

*Sir To.* What, for being a Puritan? thy exquisite reason, dear knight?

*Sir And.* I have no exquisite reason for't, but I have reason good enough.

*Mar.* The devil a Puritan that he is, or any thing constantly but a time pleaser; an affectioned ‡ ass, that cons state without book, and utters it by great swarths: § the best persuaded of himself, so crammed as he thinks with excellences, that it is his ground of faith, that all, that look on him, love him; and on that vice in him will my revenge find notable cause to work.

*Sir To.* What wilt thou do?

*Mar.* I will drop in his way some obscure epistles of love; wherein, by the colour of his beard, the shape of his leg, the manner of his gait, the expreasure of his eye, forehead, and complexion, he shall find himself most feelingly personated: I can write very like my lady your niece; on a forgotten matter we can hardly make distinction of our hands.

*Sir To.* Excellent! I smell a device.

*Sir And.* I have't in my nose too.

*Sir To.* He shall think, by the letters that thou wilt drop, that they come from my niece, and that she is in love with him.

*Mar.* My purpose is, indeed, a horse of that colour.

*Sir And.* And your horse now would make him an ass.

*Mar.* Ass, I doubt not.

*Sir And.* Oh! I'twill be admirable.

*Mar.* Sport royal, I warrant you: I know, my physic will work with him. I will plant you two, and let the fool make a third, where he shall find the letter; observe his construction of it. For this night, to bed, and dream on the event. Farewell. [Exit.]

*Sir To.* Good night, Penthesilea. ||

*Sir And.* Before me, she's a good wench.

*Sir To.* She's a beagle, true-bred, and one that adores me; What o' that?

*Sir And.* I was adored once too.

*Sir To.* Let's to bed, knight.—Thou hadst need send for more money.

*Sir And.* If I cannot recover your niece, I am a foul way out.

*Sir To.* Send for money, knight; if thou hast her not i' the end, call me Cut. ¶

*Sir And.* If I do not, never trust me, take it how you will.

*Sir To.* Come, come; I'll go burn some sack, 'tis too late to go to bed now: come, knight; come, knight. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—A Room in the Duke's Palace.

Enter DUKE, VIOLA, CURIO, and others.

*Duke.* Give me some music:—Now, good morrow, friends:—

Now, good Cesario, but that piece of song, That old and antique song we heard last night; Methought, it did relieve my passion much; More than light airs and recollected terms, Of these most brisk and giddy-paced times:— Come, but one verse.

*Cur.* He is not here, so please your lordship, that should sing it.

*Duke.* Who was it?

*Cur.* Feste, the jester, my lord; a fool, that the lady Olivia's father took much delight in: he is about the house.

*Duke.* Seek him out, and play the tune he while. [Exit CURIO.—Music.]

Come hither, boy; if ever thou shalt love, In the sweet pangs of it, remember me:

For, such as I am, all true lovers are; Unstaid and skittish in all motions else, Save in the constant image of the creature That is belov'd.—How dost thou like this tune?

*Viola.* It gives a very echo to the seat Where Love is thron'd.

*Duke.* Thou dost speak masterly: My life upon't, young though thou art, thine eye Hath stay'd upon some favour\* that it loves; Hath it not, boy?

*Viola.* A little, by your favour.

*Duke.* What kind of woman is't?

*Viola.* Of your complexion.

*Duke.* She is not worth thee then. What years, i'faith?

*Viola.* About your years, my lord.

*Duke.* Too old, by heaven; Let still the woman take

An elder than herself; so wears she to him, So sways she level in her husband's heart.

For, boy, however we do praise ourselves, Our fancies are more giddy and unfirm, More longing, wavering, sooner lost and worn, Than women's are.

*Viola.* I think it well, my lord.

*Duke.* Then let thy love be younger than thyself,

Or thy affection cannot hold the bent: For women are as roses; whose fair flower, Being once display'd, doth fall that very hour.

*Viola.* And so they are: alas, that they are so; To die, even when they to perfection grow!

Re-enter CURIO, and CLOWN.

*Duke.* O fellow, come, the song we had last night:—

Mark it, Cesario; it is old and plain: The spinsters and the knitters in the sun, And the free maids, that weave their thread with bones, †

Do use to chaunt it; it is silly sooth; ‡ And dallies with the innocence of love, Like the old age. §

*Clo.* Are you ready, Sir?

*Duke.* Ay; pr'ythee, sing. [Music.]

SONG.

*Clo.* Come away, come away, death,  
And in sad cypress let me be laid,  
Fly away, fly away, breath;

I am slain by a fair cruel maid.  
My shroud of white, stuck all with yew,  
O prepare it;

My part of death no one so true  
Did share it.

Not a flower, not a flower sweet,  
On my black coffin let there be strown;  
Not a friend, not a friend greet  
My poor corpse, where my bones shall be  
thrown:

A thousand thousand sighs to save,  
Lay me, O where  
Sad true lover ne'er find my grave,  
To weep there.

*Duke.* There's for thy pains.

\* Bye-word. † Inform us. ‡ Affected.  
§ The row of grass left by a mower.  
¶ Amazon. ¶ Horse.

\* Countenance. † Lace makers.  
‡ Simple truth. § Times of simplicity.

*Clo.* No pains, Sir; I take pleasure in singing, S.r.

*Duke.* I'll pay thy pleasure then.

*Clo.* Truly, Sir, and pleasure will be paid, one time or another.

*Duke.* Give me now leave to leave thee.

*Clo.* Now, the melancholy god protect thee; and the tailor make thy doublet of changeable taffata, for thy mind is a very opal. "—I would have men of such constancy put to sea, that their business might be every thing, and their intent every where; for that's it, that always makes a good voyage of nothing.—Farewell.

[*Exit CLOWN.*]

*Duke.* Let all the rest give place.—

[*Enter CURIO and Attendants.*]

Once more, Cesario,

Get thee to yon' same sovereign cruelty:

Tell her my love, more noble than the world,

Prizes not quantity of dirty lands;

The parts that fortune hath bestow'd upon her,

Tell her, I hold as giddily as fortune;

But 'tis that miracle, and queen of gems,

That nature pranks† her in, attracts my soul.

*Vio.* But, if she cannot love you, Sir?

*Duke.* I cannot be so answer'd.

*Vio.* 'Sooth, but you must.

Say, that some lady, as, perhaps, there is,

Hath for your love as great a pang of heart

As you have for Olivia: you cannot love her;

You tell her so; Must she not then be answer'd?

*Duke.* There is no woman's sides,

Can bide the beating of so strong a passion

As love doth give my heart: no woman's heart

So big, to hold so much; they lack retention.

Alas! their love may be call'd appetite,—

No motion of the liver, but the palate;

That suffer surfeit, cloyment, and revolt;

But mine is all as hungry as the sea,

And can digest as much: make no compare

Between that love a woman can bear me,

And that I owe Olivia.

*Vio.* Ay, but I know,—

*Duke.* What dost thou know?

*Vio.* Too well what love women to men may owe:

In faith, they are as true of heart as we.

My father had a daughter lov'd a man.

As it might be, perhaps, were I a woman,

I should your lordship.

*Duke.* And what's her history?

*Vio.* A blank, my lord: She never told her love,

But let concealment, like a worm i'th' bud,

Feed on her damask cheek: she pin'd in thought,

And, with a green and yellow melancholy,

She sat like Patience on a monument,

Smiling at grief. Was not this love, indeed?

We men may say more, swear more: but, indeed,

Our shows are more than will; for still we prove

Much in our vows, but little in our love.

*Duke.* But died thy sister of her love, my boy?

*Vio.* I am all the daughters of my father's house, [Not:—

And all the brothers too;—and yet I know

Sir, shall I to this lady?

*Duke.* Ay, that's the theme.

To her in haste; give her this jewel; say,  
My love can give no place, bide no deny.†

[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE V.—OLIVIA'S Garden.

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH, Sir ANDREW AGUE-CREEK, and FABIAN.*

*Sir To.* Come thy ways, Signior Fabian.

*Fab.* Nay, I'll come; if I lose a scruple of this sport, let me be boiled to death with melancholy.

*Sir To.* Would'st thou not be glad to have the niggardly rascally sheep-biter come by some notable shame?

*Fab.* I would exult, man: you know, he brought me out of favour with my lady, about a bear-baiting here.

*Sir To.* To anger him, we'll have the bear again; and we will fool him black and blue:—Shall we not, Sir Andrew?

*Sir And.* An we do not, it is pity of our lives.

*Enter MARIA.*

*Sir To.* Here comes the little villain:—How now, my nettle of India?

*Mar.* Get ye all three into the box-tree; Malvolio's coming down this walk; he has been yonder i'the sun, practising behaviour to his own shadow this half hour: observe him, for the love of mockery; for I know this letter will make a contemplative idiot of him. Close, in the name of jesting! [*The men hide themselves.*] Lie thou there; [*Throws down a letter.*] for here comes the treat that must be caught with tucking.

[*Exit MARIA.*]

*Enter MALVOLIO.*

*Mal.* 'Tis but fortune; all is fortune. Maria once told me, she did affect me: and I have heard herself come thus near, that, should she fancy, it should be one of my complexion. Besides, she uses me with a more exalted respect than any one else that follows her. What should I think on't?

*Sir To.* Here's an over-weening rogue!  
*Fab.* O peace! Contemplation makes a rare turkey-cock of him; how he jets† under his advanced plumes!

*Sir And.* 'Slight, I could so beat the rogue:—

*Sir To.* Peace, I say.

*Mal.* To be Count Malvolio;—

*Sir To.* Ah! rogue!

*Sir And.* Pistol him, pistol him.

*Sir To.* Peace, peace!

*Mal.* There is example for't; the lady of the strachy married the yeoman of the wardrobe.

*Sir And.* Fie on him, Jezebel!

*Fab.* O peace! now he's deeply in; look, how imagination blows† him.

*Mal.* Having been three months married to her, sitting in my state,§—

*Sir To.* Oh! for a stone-bow, to hit him in the eye.

*Mal.* Calling my officers about me, in my branched velvet gown: having come from a day-bed,|| where I left Olivia sleeping:

*Sir To.* Fire and brimstone!

*Fab.* O peace, peace!

*Mal.* And then to have the humour of state: and after a demure travel of regard,—telling them, I know my place, as I would they should do theirs,—to ask for my kinsman Toby:

*Sir To.* Bolts and shackles!

*Fab.* O peace, peace, peace! now, now.

*Mal.* Seven of my people, with an obedient start, make out for him: I frown the while; and, perchance, wind up my watch, or play with some rich jewel. Toby approaches; court'sies there to me:

*Sir To.* Shall this fellow live?

*Fab.* Though our silence be drawn from us with ears, yet peace.

*Mal.* I extend my hand to him thus, quenching my familiar smile with an austere regard of control:

*Sir To.* And does not Toby take you a blow o'the lips then?

*Mal.* Saying, Cousin Toby, my fortunes having cast me on your niece, give me this prerogative of speech:—

*Sir To.* What, what?

*Mal.* You must amend your drunkenness.

*Sir To.* Out, scab!

\* A precious stone of all colours.  
† Denial.

† Ducks.

\* Love.  
† Puffs him up.

† Couch.

† Scruts.  
† State chair.

*Fab.* Nay, patience, or we break the sinews of our plot.

*Mal.* Besides, you waste the treasure of your time with a foolish knight;

*Sir And.* That's me, I warrant you.

*Mal.* One Sir Andrew:

*Sir And.* I knew, 'twas I; for many do call me fool.

*Mal.* What employment have we here?

[Taking up the letter.

*Fab.* Now is the woodcock near the gin.

*Sir To.* O peace! and the spirit of humours intimate reading aloud to him!

*Mal.* By my life, that is my lady's hand: these be her very C's, her U's, and her T's; and thus makes she her great P's. It is, in contempt of question, her hand.

*Sir And.* Her C's, her U's, and her T's: Why, that?

*Mal.* [Reads.] To the unknown beloved, this, and my good wishes: her very phrases!—By your leave, wax.—Soft!—and the impressure her Lucrece, with which she uses to seal: 'tis my lady: To whom should this be?

*Fab.* This wins him, liver and all.

*Mal.* [Reads.] Jove knows, I love:

But who?

Lips do not move,

No man must know.

No man must know.—What follows? the numbers altered!—No man must know:—If this should be thee, Malvolio?

*Sir To.* Marry, hang thee, brock!

*Mal.* I may command where I adore:

But silence, like a Lucrece knife,

With bloodless stroke my heart doth gore:

M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.

*Fab.* A fustian riddle!

*Sir To.* Excellent wench, say I.

*Mal.* M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.—Nay, but first, let me see,—let me see,—let me see.

*Fab.* What a dish of poison has she dressed him!

*Sir To.* And with what wing the stannyl checks! at it!

*Mal.* I may command where I adore. Why, she may command me: I serve her, she is my lady. Why, this is evident to any formal capacity. There is no obstruction in this;—And the end,—What should that alphabetical position portend? If I could make that resemble something in me,—Softly!—M, O, A, I.—

*Sir To.* O ay! make up that:—he is now at a cold scent.

*Fab.* Sowter § will cry upon't, for all this, though it be as rank as a fox.

*Mal.* M,—Malvolio;—M,—why, that begins my name.

*Fab.* Did not I say, he would work it out? the cur is excellent at faults.

*Mal.* M.—But then there is no consonancy in the sequel: that suffers under probation: A should follow, but O does.

*Fab.* And O shall end, I hope.

*Sir To.* Ay, or I'll cudgel him, and make him cry O.

*Mal.* And then I comes behind;

*Fab.* Ay, an you had any eye behind you, you might see more detraction at your heels, than fortunes before you.

*Mal.* M, O, A, I;—This simulation is not as the former:—and yet, to crush this a little, it would bow to me, for every one of these letters are in my name. Soft; here follows prose.—If this fall into thy hand, revolve. In my stars I am above thee; but be not afraid of greatness: Some are born great, some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrust upon them. Thy fates open their hands; let thy blood and spirit embrace them. And, to enure thyself to what thou art like to be, cast

thy humble slough,\* and appear fresh. Be opposite with a kinsman, surly with servants: let thy tongue tang arguments of state; put thyself into the trick of singularity: She thus advises thee, that sighs for thee. Remember who commended thy yellow stockings; and wished to see thee ever cross-gartered: I say, remember. Go to; thou art made, if thou desirest to be so; if not, let me see thee a steward still, the fellow of servants, and not worthy to touch fortune's fingers. Farewell. She that would alter services with thee. The fortunate-unhappy.

Day-light and champion† discovers not more: this is open. I will be proud, I will read politic authors, I will baffle Sir Toby, I will wash off gross acquaintance, I will be point-device,‡ the very man. I do not now fool myself, to let imagination jade me; for every reason excites to this, that my lady loves me. She did commend my yellow stockings of late, she did praise my leg being cross-gartered; and in this she manifests herself to my love, and, with a kind of injunction, drives me to these habits of her liking. I thank my stars, I am happy. I will be strange, stout, in yellow stockings, and cross-gartered, even with the swiftness of putting on. Jove and my stars be praised!—Here is yet a postscript. Thou canst not choose but know who I am. If thou entertainest my love, let it appear in thy smiling; thy smiles become thee well: therefore in my presence still smile, dear my sweet, I pray thee. Jove, I thank thee.—I will smile; I will do every thing that thou wilt have me. [Exit.

*Fab.* I will not give my part of this sport for a pension of thousands to be paid from the Sophy.

*Sir To.* I could marry this wench for this device.

*Sir And.* So could I too.

*Sir To.* And ask no other dowry with her, but such another jest.

Enter MARIA.

*Sir And.* Nor I neither.

*Fab.* Here comes my noble gull-catcher.

*Sir To.* Wilt thou set thy foot o' my neck?

*Sir And.* Or o' mine either?

*Sir To.* Shall I play my freedom at tray-trip,§ and become thy bond-slave?

*Sir And.* I'faith, or I either.

*Sir To.* Why, thou hast put him in such a dream, that, when the image of it leaves him, he must run mad.

*Mar.* Nay, but say true; does it work upon him?

*Sir To.* Like aqua-vitæ with a midwife.

*Mar.* If you will then see the fruits of the sport, mark his first approach before my lady: he will come to her in yellow stockings, and 'tis a colour she abhors; and cross-gartered, a fashion she detests; and he will smile upon her, which will now be so unsuitable to her disposition, being addicted to a melancholy as she is, that it cannot but turn him into a notable contempt: if you will see it, follow me.

*Sir To.* To the gates of Tartar, thou most excellent devil of wit!

*Sir And.* I'll make one too.

[Exeunt.

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—OLIVIA'S Garden.

Enter VIOLA and CLOWN with a tabor.

*Vio.* Save thee, friend, and thy music: Dost thou live by thy tabor?

*Clo.* No, Sir, I live by the church.

\* Hawk. § Badger. † Flies at it.  
‡ Name of a pound.

\* Skin of a snake. † Utmost exactness.  
‡ A boy's diversion three and trip. § Dwells.

*Vio.* Art thou a churchman?

*Clo.* No such matter, Sir; I do live by the church: for I do live at my house, and my house doth stand by the church.

*Vio.* So thou may'st say, the king lies \* by a beggar, if a beggar dwell near him: or, the church stands by the tabor, if thy tabor stand by the church.

*Clo.* You have said, Sir.—To see this age!—A sentence is but a cheveril † glove to a good wit; How quickly the wrong side may be turned outward!

*Vio.* Nay, that's certain; they, that dally nicely with words may quickly make them wanton.

*Clo.* I would therefore, my sister had had no name, Sir.

*Vio.* Why, man?

*Clo.* Why, Sir, her name's a word; and to dally with that word, might make my sister wanton: But, indeed, words are very rascals, since bonds disgraced them.

*Vio.* Thy reason, man?

*Clo.* Troth, Sir, I can yield you none without words: and words are grown so false, I am loath to prove reason with them.

*Vio.* I warrant thou art a merry fellow, and carest for nothing.

*Clo.* Not so, Sir, I do care for something: but in my conscience, Sir, I do not care for you: if that be to care for nothing, Sir, I would it would make you invisible.

*Vio.* Art not thou the lady Olivia's fool?

*Clo.* No, indeed, Sir; the lady Olivia has no folly: she will keep no fool, Sir, till she be married; and fools are as like husbands, as pilchards are to herrings, the husband's the bigger; I am, indeed, not her fool, but her corrupter of words.

*Vio.* I saw thee late at the count Orsino's.

*Clo.* Foolery, Sir, does walk about the orb, like the sun; it shines every where. I would be sorry, Sir, but the fool should be as oft with your master, as with my mistress: I think, I saw your wisdom there.

*Vio.* Nay, an thou pass upon me. I'll no more with thee. Hold, there's expences for thee.

*Clo.* Now Jove, in his next commodity of hair, send thee a beard!

*Vio.* By my troth, I'll tell thee I am almost sick for one; though I would not have it grow on my chin. Is thy lady within?

*Clo.* Would not a pair of these have bred, Sir?

*Vio.* Yes, being kept together, and put to use.

*Clo.* I would play lord Pandarus ‡ of Phrygia, Sir, to bring a Cressida to this Troilus.

*Vio.* I understand you, Sir; 'tis well begg'd.

*Clo.* The matter, I hope, is not great, Sir, begging but a beggar: Cressida was a beggar. My lady is within, Sir. I will construe to them whence you come; who you are, and what you would, are out of my welkin: I might say, element: but the word is over-worn. [Exit.]

*Vio.* This fellow's wise enough to play the fool;

And, to do that well, craves a kind of wit: He must observe their mood on whom he jests, The quality of persons, and the time; And, like the haggard, § check at every feather That comes before his eye. This is a practice, As full of labour as a wise man's art: For folly, that he wisely shows, is fit; But wise-men, folly-fallen, quite taint their wit.

Enter Sir TOBY BELCH and Sir ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.

*Sir To.* Save you, gentleman.

*Vio.* And you, Sir.

*Sir And.* Dieu vous garde, monsieur.

*Vio.* Et vous aussi; votre serviteur.

*Sir And.* I hope, Sir, you are; and I am yours.

*Sir To.* Will you encounter the house? my niece is desirous you should enter, if your trade be to her.

*Vio.* I am bound to your niece, Sir: I mean she is the list \* of my voyage.

*Sir To.* Taste your legs, Sir, put them to motion.

*Vio.* My legs do better understand me, Sir, than I understand what you mean by bidding me taste my legs.

*Sir To.* I mean, to go, Sir, to enter.

*Vio.* I will answer you with gait and entrance: But we are prevented.

Enter OLIVIA and MARIA,

Most excellent accomplished lady, the heavens rain odours on you!

*Sir And.* That youth's a rare courtier! Rain odours! well.

*Vio.* My matter hath no voice, lady, but to your own most pregnant † and vouchsafed ear.

*Sir And.* Odours, pregnant, and touch-safed:—I'll get 'em all three ready.

*Oli.* Let the garden door be shut, and leave me to my hearing.

[Exit Sir TOBY, Sir ANDREW, and MARIA.]

Give me your hand, Sir.

*Vio.* My duty, madam, and most humble service.

*Oli.* What is your name?

*Vio.* Cesario is your servant's name, fair princess.

*Oli.* My servant, Sir! 'Twas never merry world,

Since lowly feigning was call'd compliment:

You are servant to the count Orsino, youth.

*Vio.* And he is yours, and his must needs be yours

Your servant's servant is your servant, madam.

*Oli.* For him, I think not on him: for his thoughts,

'Would they were blanks, rather than fill'd with me!

*Vio.* Madam, I come to wet your gentle thoughts

On his behalf:—

*Oli.* Oh! by your leave, I pray you;

I bade you never speak again of him:

But, would you undertake another suit,

I had rather hear you to solicit that,

Than music from the spheres.

*Vio.* Dear lady,—

*Oli.* Give me leave, I beseech you: I did send,

After the last enchantment you did here,

A ring in chase of you; so did I abuse

Myself, my servant, and, I fear me, you:

Under your hard construction must I sit,

To force that on you, in a shameful cunning,

Which you knew none of yours: What might

you think?

Have you not set mine honour at the stake,

And baited it with all the unmuzzled thoughts

That tyrannous heart can think? To one of

your receiving?

Enough is shown; a cyprus, not a bosom,

Hides my poor heart: So let me hear you

speak.

*Vio.* I pity you.

*Oli.* That's a degree to love.

*Vio.* No, not a guise; § for 'tis a vulgar proof,

That very oft we pity enemies.

*Oli.* Why, then, methinks, 'tis time to smile again:

O world, how apt the poor are to be proud! If one should be a prey, how much the better

\* Dwells. † Kid. ‡ See the play of *Troilus*  
and *Cressida*. § A hawk not well trained.

\* Bound, limit. † Ready.  
‡ Ready apprehension. § Step.

To fall before the lion, than the wolf?

*(Clock strikes.)*  
The clock upbraids me with the waste of time.—  
Be not afraid, good youth, I will not have you:  
And yet, when wit and youth is come to harvest,

Your wife is like to reap a proper man:  
There lies your way, due west.

*Vio.* Then westward-hoe:  
Grace, and good disposition 'tend your ladyship!

You'll nothing, madam, to my lord by me?  
*Oli.* Stay:

I prythee, tell me, what 'thou think'st of me.  
*Vio.* That you do think, you are not what you are.

*Oli.* If I think so, I think the same of you.  
*Vio.* Then think you right; I am not what I am.

*Oli.* I would, you were as I would have you be!

*Vio.* Would it be better, madam, than I am, I wish it might; for now I am your fool.

*Oli.* Oh! what a deal of scorn looks beautiful

In the contempt and anger of his lip!

A murderous guilt shows not itself more soon  
Than love that would seem hid: love's night is noon.

Cesario, by the roses of the spring,  
By maidhood, honour, truth, and every thing,  
I love thee so, that maugre\* all thy pride,  
Nor wit, nor reason, can my passion hide.  
Do not extort thy reasons from this clause,  
For, that I woo, thou therefore hast no cause:  
But rather, reason thus with reason fetter:  
Love sought is good, but given unsought, is better.

*Vio.* By innocence I swear, and by my youth,  
I have one heart, one bosom, and one truth,  
And that no woman has; nor never none  
Shall mistress be of it, save I alone.  
And so adieu, good madam; never more  
Will I my master's tears to you deplore.

*Oli.* Yet come again; for thou, perhaps,  
May'st move

That heart, which now abhors, to like his love.  
*[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE II.—A Room in OLIVIA'S House.

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH, Sir ANDREW AGUR  
CHEEK and FABIAN.*

*Sir And.* No faith, I'll not stay a jot longer.  
*Sir To.* Toby reason, dear venom, give thy reason.

*Fab.* You must needs yield your reason, Sir Andrew.

*Sir And.* Marry, I saw your niece do more favours to the count's serving man, than ever she bestowed upon me; I saw't i'the orchard.

*Sir To.* Did she see thee the while old boy? tell me that.

*Sir And.* As plain as I see you now.

*Fab.* This was a great argument of love in her toward you.

*Sir And.* 'Slight! I will you make an ass of me?

*Fab.* I will prove it legitimate, Sir, upon the oaths of judgment and reason.

*Sir To.* And they have been grand jury-men, since before Noah was a sailor.

*Fab.* She did show favour to the youth in your sight, only to exasperate you, to awake your dourmose valour, to put fire in your heart, and brimstone in your liver: You should then have accosted her; and with some excellent jest, fire-new from the mint, you should have banged the youth into dumbness. This was looked for at your hand, and this was balked: the double gilt of this opportunity you let time wash off, and you are now sailed into the north of my lady's opinion; where you will hang like

an icicle on a Dutchman's beard, unless you do redeem it by some laudable attempt, either of valour or policy.

*Sir And.* And't be any way, it must be with valour; for policy I hate: I had as lief be a Brownist,\* as a politician.

*Sir To.* Why then, build me thy fortunes upon the basis of valour. Challenge me the count's youth to fight with him; hurt him in eleven places; my niece shall take note of it: and assure thyself, there is no love-broker in the world can more prevail in man's commendation with woman, than report of valour.

*Fab.* There is no way but this, Sir Andrew.

*Sir And.* Will either of you bear me a challenge to him?

*Sir To.* Go, write it in a martial hand; be curst† and brief; it is no matter how witty, so it be eloquent, and full of invention: taunt him with the licence of ink: if thou 'thou'st him some thrice, it shall not be amiss; and as many lies as will lie in thy sheet of paper, although the sheet were big enough for the bed of Ware‡ in England, set'em down; go, about it. Let there be gall enough in thy ink; though thou write with a goose pen, no matter: About it.

*Sir And.* Where shall I find you?

*Sir To.* We'll call thee at the *cubiculo*: § Go.  
*[Exit Sir ANDREW.]*

*Fab.* This is a dear mannikin to you, Sir Toby.

*Sir To.* I have been dear to him, lad; some two thousand strong, or so.

*Fab.* We shall have a rare letter from him: but you'll not deliver it.

*Sir To.* Never trust me then; and by all means stir on the youth to an answer. I think oxen and wainropes|| cannot hale them together. For Andrew, if he were opened, and you find so much blood in his liver as will clog the foot of a flea, I'll eat the rest of the anatomy.

*Fab.* And his opposite, the youth, bears in his visage no great piessage of cruelty.

*Enter MARIA.*

*Sir To.* Look, where the youngest wren of nine comes.

*Mar.* If you desire the spleen, and will laugh yourselves into stitches, follow me: yon' gull Malvolio is turned heathen, a very renegade; for there is no Christian, that means to be saved by believing rightly, can ever believe such impossible passages of grossness. He's in yellow stockings.

*Sir To.* And cross-gartered?

*Mar.* Most villainously; like a pedant that keeps a school i'the church — I have dogged him, like his murderer: He does obey every point of the letter that I dropped to betray him. He does smile his face into more lins, than are in the new map, with the augmentation of the Indies: you have not seen such a thing as 'tis; I can hardly forbear hurling things at him. I know my lady will strike him; if she do, he'll smile, and take't for a great favour.

*Sir To.* Come, bring us, bring us where he is.  
*[Exeunt]*

#### SCENE III.—A Street.

*Enter ANTONIO and SEBASTIAN.*

*Seb.* I would not, by my will, have troubled you; But, since you make your pleasure of your pains, I will no further chide you.

*Ant.* I could not stay behind you; my desire,

More sharp than filed steel, did spur me forth;  
And not all love to see you, (though so much),  
As might have drawn one to a longer voyage.

\* From Mr. Robert Browne, a famous separatist in Queen Elizabeth's reign. † Crabbed.

‡ In Hertfordshire, which held forty persons.

§ Chamber.

|| Waggon ropes.

\* In spite of



But jealousy what might befall your travel,  
Being skillless in these parts: which to a stranger,  
Unguided, and unfriended, often prove  
Rough and un hospitable: My willing love,  
The rather by these arguments of fear,  
Set forth in your pursuit.

*Seb.* My kind Antonio,  
I can no other answer make, but, thanks,  
And thanks, and ever thanks: Often good turns  
Are shuffled off with such uncurrent pay:  
But, were my worth,\* as is my conscience, firm,  
You should find better dealing. What's to do?  
Shall we go see the reliques of this town?

*Ant.* To-morrow, Sir; best, first, go see your lodging.

*Seb.* I am not weary, and 'tis long to night;  
I pray you, let us satisfy our eyes  
With the memorials, and the things of fame,  
That do renown this city.

*Ant.* Would, you'd pardon me;  
I do not without danger walk these streets:  
Once, in a sea-fight, 'gainst the count his gall-  
I did some service; of such note, indeed, lies,  
That, were I ta'en here, it would scarce be answer'd.

*Seb.* Belike, you slew great number of his people.

*Ant.* The offence is not of such a bloody nature;  
Albeit the quality of the time, and quarrel,  
Might well have given us bloody argument.  
It might have since been answer'd in repaying  
What we took from them; which, for traffic's sake,

Most of our city did: only myself stood out:  
For which, if I be lapsed† in this place,  
I shall pay dear.

*Seb.* Do not then walk too open.

*Ant.* It doth not nt me. Hold, Sir, here's my purse;  
In the south suburbs, at the Elephant,  
Is best to lodge: I will bespeak our diet,  
Whiles you beguile the time, and feed your knowledge,  
With viewing of the town; there shall you have me.

*Seb.* Why I your purse?

*Ant.* Haply, your eyes shall light upon some toy  
You have desire to purchase; and your store,  
I think, is not for idle markets, Sir. [for  
*Seb.* I'll be your purse-bearer, and leave you  
An hour.

*Ant.* To the Elephant.—

*Seb.* I do remember.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV.—OLIVIA'S Garden.

*Enter OLIVIA and MARIA.*

*Oli.* I have sent after him: He says, he'll come;  
How shall I feast him? what bestow on him?  
For youth is bought more oft, than begg'd, or borrow'd.

I speak too loud.—  
Where is Malvolio?—he is sad, and civil,†  
And suits well for a servant with my fortunes;—

Where is Malvolio?

*Mar.* He's coming, madam;  
But in strange manner. He is sure possess'd.

*Oli.* Why, what's the matter? does he rave?  
*Mar.* No, madam,  
He does nothing but smile: your ladyship  
Were best have guard about you, if he come;  
For, sure, the man is tainted in his wits.

*Oli.* Go call him hither.—I'm as mad as he,  
If sad and merry madness equal be.—

*Enter MALVOLIO.*

How now, Malvolio?

*Mal.* Sweet lady, ho, ho, [Smiles fantastically,

\* Wealth.

† Caught.

‡ Grave and demure.

*Oli.* Smil'st thou?

I sent for thee upon a sad\* occasion.

*Mal.* Sad, lady? I could be sad: This does make some obstruction in the blood, this cross-gartering; but what of that, if it please the eye of one, is it with me as the very true sonnet is: *Please one, and please all.*

*Oli.* Why, how dost thou, man? what is the matter with thee?

*Mal.* Not black in my mind, though yellow in my legs: It did come to his hands, and commands shall be executed. I think, we do know the sweet Roman hand.

*Oli.* Wilt thou go to bed, Malvolio?

*Mal.* To bed? ay, sweet-heart; and I'll come to thee.

*Oli.* God comfort thee! Why dost thou smile so, and kiss thy hand so oft?

*Mar.* How do you, Malvolio?

*Mal.* At your request? Yes; Nightingales answer daws.

*Mar.* Why appear you with this ridiculous boldness before my lady?

*Mar.* Be not afraid of greatness:—'Twas well writ.

*Oli.* What meanest thou by that, Malvolio?

*Mal.* Some are born great,—

*Oli.* Ha?

*Mal.* Some achieve greatness,

*Oli.* What say'st thou?

*Mal.* And some have greatness thrust upon them.

*Oli.* Heaven restore thee!

*Mal.* Remember, who commended thy yellow stockings;—

*Oli.* Thy yellow stockings?

*Mal.* And wished to see thee cross-garter'd.

*Oli.* Cross-garter'd?

*Mal.* Go to: thou art made, if thou desire'st to be so;—

*Oli.* Am I made?

*Mal.* If not, let me see thee a servant still.

*Oli.* Why, this is very midsummer madness.†

*Enter Servant.*

*Ser.* Madam, the young gentleman of the count Orsino's is return'd; I could hardly entreat him back: he attends your ladyship's pleasure.

*Oli.* I'll come to him. [*Exit Servant.*] Good Maria, let this fellow be looked to. Where's my cousin Toby? Let some of my people have a special care of him; I would not have him miscarry for the half of my dowry.

[*Exeunt OLIVIA and MARIA.*]

*Mal.* Oh! ho! do you come near me now? no worse man than Sir Toby to look to me! This concurs directly with the letter: she sends him on purpose, that I may appear stubborn to him; for she incites me to that in the letter. *Hast thy humble slough,* says she; *be opposite with a kinsman, surly with servants,—let thy tongue tang with arguments of state,—put thyself into the trick of singularity;*—and, consequently, sets down the manner how; as, a sad face, a reverend carriage, a slow tongue, in the habit of some Sir, of note, and so forth. I have lim'd her;† but it is Jove's doing, and Jove make me thankful! And when she went away now, *Let this fellow be looked to; Fellow!*‡ not Malvolio, nor after my degree, but fellow. Why, every thing adheres together: that no dram of a scruple, no scruple of a scruple, no obstacle, no incredulous, or unsafe circumstance,—What can be said? Nothing, that can be, can come between me and the full prospect of my hopes. Well, Jove, not I, is the doer of this, and he is to be thanked.

*Re-enter MARIA, with Sir TOBY BELCH, and FABIAN.*

*Sir To.* Which way is he, in the name of

\* Grave.

† Had weather madness.

‡ Caught her as a bird with birdlime.

§ Companion.

sanctity? and all the devils in hell be drawn in little, and Legion himself possessed him, yet I'll speak to him.

*Fab.* Here he is, here he is:—How is't with you, Sir? how is't with you, man?

*Mal.* Go off; I discard you; let me enjoy my private; go off.

*Mar.* Lo, how hollow the fiend speaks within him! did not I tell you?—Sir Toby, my lady prays you to have a care of him.

*Mal.* Ah! ha! does she so?

*Sir To.* Go to, go to; peace, peace, we must deal gently with him; let me alone. How do you, Malvolio? how is't with you? What, man! defy the devil: consider, he's an enemy to mankind.

*Mal.* Do you know what you say?

*Mar.* La you, an you speak ill of the devil, how he takes it at heart! Pray God, he be not bewitched!

*Fab.* Carry his water to the wise woman.

*Mar.* Marry, and it shall be done to-morrow morning, if I live. My lady would not lose him for more than I'll bay.

*Mal.* How now, mistress?

*Mar.* O lord!

*Sir To.* Prythee, hold thy peace; this is not the way: Do you not see you move him? let me alone with him.

*Fab.* No way but gentleness; gently, gently: the fiend is rough, and will not be roughly used.

*Sir To.* Why, how now, my bawcock? how dost thou, chuck?

*Mal.* Sir?

*Sir To.* Ay, Biddy, come with me. What, man! 'tis not for gravity to play at cherry-pit; with Satan: Hang him, foul collier!

*Mar.* Get him to say his prayers; good Sir Toby, get him to pray.

*Mal.* My prayers, minx?

*Mar.* No, I warrant you, he will not hear of godliness.

*Mal.* Go, hang yourselves all! you are idle shallow things: I am not of your element; you shall know more hereafter. *[Exit.]*

*Sir To.* Is't possible?

*Fab.* If this were play'd upon a stage now, I could condemn it as an improbable fiction.

*Sir To.* His very genius hath taken the infection of the device, man.

*Mar.* Nay, pursue him now; lest the device take air and taint.

*Fab.* Why we shall make him mad, indeed.

*Mar.* The house will be the quieter.

*Sir To.* Come, we'll have him in a dark room, and band. My niece is already in the belief that he is mad; we may carry it thus, for our pleasure and his penance, till our very pastime, tired out of breath, prompt us to have mercy on him: at which time, we will bring the device to the bar, and crown thee for a finder of madmen. But see, but see.

*Enter Sir ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.*

*Fab.* More matter for a May-morning.

*Sir And.* Here's the challenge, read it; I warrant there's vinegar and pepper in't.

*Fab.* Is't so saucy?

*Sir And.* Ay, is it, I warrant him: do but read.

*Sir To.* Give me. *[Reads.]* Youth, whatsoever thou art, thou art but a scurvy fellow.

*Fab.* Good, and valiant.

*Sir To.* Wonder not, nor admire not in thy mind, why I do call thee so, for I will show thee no reason for't.

*Fab.* A good note: that keeps you from the blow of the law.

*Sir To.* Thou comest to the lady Olivia, and in my sight she uses thee kindly: but thou liest in thy throat, that is not the matter I challenge thee for.

• Jolly cock, bray and cog. • † A play among boys.

‡ Colliers were accounted great cheats.

*Fab.* Very brief, and exceeding good senseless.

*Sir To.* I will way-lay thee going home; where if it be thy chance to kill me,—

*Fab.* Good.

*Sir To.* Thou killest me like a rogue and a villain.

*Fab.* Still you keep o'the windy side of the law: Good.

*Sir To.* Fare thee well; And God have mercy upon one of our souls! He may have mercy upon mine; but my hope is better, and so look to thyself. Thy friend, as thou usest him, and thy sworn enemy.

*ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.*

*Sir To.* If this letter move him not, his legs cannot: I'll give't him.

*Mar.* You may have very fit occasion for't: he is now in some commerce with my lady, and will by and by depart.

*Sir To.* Go, Sir Andrew; scout me for him at the corner of the orchard, like a bum-bailliff: so soon as ever thou seest him, draw; and, as thou drawest, swear horrible; for it comes to pass oft, that a terrible oath, with a swaggering accent sharply twanged off, gives manhood more approbation than ever 'proof itself would have earn'd him. Away.

*Sir And.* Nay, let me alone for swearing.

*[Exit.]*

*Sir To.* Now will not I deliver his letter: for the behaviour of the young gentleman gives him out to be of good capacity and breeding; his employment between his lord and my niece confirms no less; therefore this letter, being so excellently ignorant, will breed no terror in the youth, he will find it comes from a clodpole. But, Sir, I will deliver his challenge by word of mouth; set upon Ague-cheek a notable report of valour; and drive the gentleman, (as, I know, his youth will aptly receive it,) into a most hideous opinion of his rage, skill, fury, and impetuosity. This will so fright them both, that they will kill one another by the look, like cockatrices.

*Enter OLIVIA and VIOLA.*

*Fab.* Here he comes with your niece: give them way, till he take leave, and presently after him.

*To.* I will meditate the while upon some horrid message for a challenge.

*[Exeunt Sir TOBY, FABIAN, and MARIA.]*  
*Oli.* I have said too much unto a heart of stone,

And laid mine honour too uncharly\* out;  
There's something in me that reproves my fault,  
But such a headstrong potent fault it is,  
That it but mocks reproof.

*Clo.* With the same 'baviour that your passion bears,  
Go on my master's griefs.

*Oli.* Here, wear this jewel for me, 'tis my picture;

Refuse it not, it hath no tongue to vex you:

And, I beseech you, come again to-morrow.

What shall you ask of me, that I'll deny;

That honour, sav'd, may upon asking give?

*Vio.* Nothing but this, your true love for my master.

*Oli.* How with mine honour may I give him Which I have given to you?

*Vio.* I will acquit you.

*Oli.* Well, come again to-morrow: Fare thee well:

A fiend, like thee, might bear my soul to hell.

*[Exit.]*

*Re-enter Sir TOBY BELCH, and FABIAN.*

*Sir To.* Gentleman, God save thee.

*Vio.* And you, Sir.

*Sir To.* That defence thou hast, betake thee to't: of what nature the wrongs are thou hast

• Uncautiously.

done him, I know not; but thy interceptor, full of despatch, bloody as the hunter, attends thee at the orchard end: dismount thy tuck,\* be yare† in thy preparation, for thy assailant is quick, skilful, and deadly.

*Vio.* You mistake, Sir; I am sure no man hath any quarrel to me; my remembrance is very free and clear from any image of offence done to any man.

*Sir To.* You'll find it otherwise, I assure you: therefore, if you hold your life at any price, betake you to your guard; for your opposite hath in him what youth, strength, skill, and wrath, can furnish man withal.

*Vio.* I pray you, Sir, what is he?

*Sir To.* He is knight, dubbed with unhacked rapier, and on carpet consideration; but he is a devil in private brawl: souls and bodies hath he divorced three; and his incensement at this moment is so implacable, that satisfaction can be none but by pangs of death and sepulchre: hoh, nob, is his word; give't, or take't.

*Vio.* I will return again into the house, and desire some conduct of the lady. I am no fighter. I have heard of some kind of men, that put quarrels purposely on others, to taste their valour: belike, this is a man of that quirk.‡

*Sir To.* Sir, no; his indignation derives itself out of a very competent injury; therefore, get you on, and give him his desire. Back you shall not to the house, unless you undertake that with me, which with as much safety you might answer him: therefore, on, or strip your sword stark naked: for meddle you must, that's certain, or forswear to wear iron about you.

*Vio.* This is as uncivil, as strange. I beseech you, do me this courteous office, as to know of the knight what my offence to him is; it is something of my negligence, nothing of my purpose.

*Sir To.* I will do so. Signior Fabian, stay you by this gentleman till my return.

[Exit Sir TOBY.]

*Vio.* Pray you, Sir, do you know of this matter?

*Fab.* I know, the knight is incensed against you, even to a mortal arbitrement; § but nothing of the circumstance more.

*Vio.* I beseech you, what manner of man is he?

*Fab.* Nothing of that wonderful promise, to read him by his form, as you are like to find him in the proof of his valour. He is, indeed, Sir, the most skilful, bloody, and fatal opposite|| that you could possibly have found in any part of Illyria: Will you walk towards him? I will make your peace with him, if I can.

*Vio.* I shall be much bound to you for't: I am one, that would rather go with sir priest, than sir knight: I care not who knows so much of my mettle.

[Exeunt.]

Re-enter Sir TOBY, with Sir ANDREW.

*Sir To.* Why, man, he's a very devil; I have not seen such a virago. I had a pass with him, rapier, scabbard, and all, and he gives me the stuck-in, ¶ with such a mortal motion, that it is inevitable; and on the answer, he pays you \*\* as surely as your feet hit the ground they step on: They say, he has been fencer to the Sophy.

*Sir And.* Pox on't, I'll not meddle with him.

*Sir To.* Ay, but he will not now be pacified: Fabian can scarce hold him yonder.

*Sir And.* Plague on't; an I thought he had been valiant, and so cunning in fence, I'd have seen him damned ere I'd have challenged him. Let him let the matter slip, and I'll give him my horse, grey Capilet.

*Sir To.* I'll make the motion: Stand here,

make a good show on't; this shall end without the perdition of souls: Marry, I'll ride your horse as well as I ride you.

[Aside.]

Re-enter FABIAN and VIOLA.

I have his horse [To FAB.] to take up the quarrel; I have persuaded him the youth's a devil.

*Fab.* He is as horribly conceited \* of him; and pants, and looks pale, as if a bear were at heels.

*Sir To.* There's no remedy, Sir; he will fight with you for his oath's sake: marry, he hath better bethought him of his quarrel, and he finds that now scarce to be worth talking of: therefore draw, for the supportance of his vow; he protests, he will not hurt you.

*Vio.* Pray God defend me! A little thing would make me tell them how much I lack of a man.

[Aside.]

*Fab.* Give ground, if you see him furious.

*Sir To.* Come, Sir Andrew, there's no remedy; the gentleman will, for his honour's sake, have one bout with you: he cannot by the duello avoid it: but he has promised me, as he is a gentleman and a soldier, he will not hurt you. Come on; to't.

*Sir And.* Pray God, he keep his oath!

[Draus.]

Enter ANTONIO.

*Vio.* I do assure you, 'tis against my will.

[Draus.]

*Ant.* Put up your sword;—If this young gentleman

Have done offence, I take the fault on me;

If you offend him, I for him defy you.

[Drawing.]

*Sir To.* You, Sir? why, what are you?

*Ant.* One, Sir, that for his love dares yet do more

Than you have heard him brag to you he will.

*Sir To.* Nay, if you be an undertaker, I am for you.

[Draus.]

Enter two OFFICERS.

*Fab.* O good Sir Toby, hold; here come the officers.

*Sir To.* I'll be with you anon. [To ANTONIO.]

*Vio.* Pray, Sir, put up your sword, if you please.

[To Sir ANDREW.]

*Sir And.* Marry, will I, Sir;—and, for that I promised you, I'll be as good as my word: He will bear you easily, and reins well.

1 Off. This is the man; do thy office.

2 Off. Antonio, I arrest thee at the suit Of count Orsino.

*Ant.* You do mistake me, Sir.

1 Off. No, Sir, no jot: I know your favour well,

Though now you have no sea-cap on your head.—Take him away; he knows, I know him well.

*Ant.* I must obey.—This comes with seeking you;

But there's no remedy; I shall answer it.

What will you do? Now my necessity ¶

Makes me to ask you for my purse: It grieves

Much more, for what I cannot do for you,

Than what befalls myself. You stand amaz'd

But be of comfort.

2 Off. Come, Sir, away.

*Ant.* I must entreat of you some of that money.

*Vio.* What money, Sir?

For the fair kindness you have show'd me here,

And, part, being prompted by your present

trouble,

Out of my lean and low ability

I'll lend you something: my having is not

much;

I'll make division of my present with you:

Hold, there is half my coffer.

*Ant.* Will you deny me now?

Is't possible, that my deserts to you

\* Rapier. † Ready. ‡ Sort.  
§ Decision. ¶ Adversary.  
|| Decision, an Italian term in fencing  
\*\* Does for you.

\* Horrid conception.

† Laws of duel.

Can lack persuasion? Do not tempt my misery,  
Lest that it make me so unsound a man,  
As to upbraid you with those kindnesses  
That I have done for you.

*Vio.* I know of none:

Nor know I you by voice, or any feature:  
I hate ingratitude more in a man,  
Than lying, vainness, babbling, drunkenness,  
Or any talent of vice, whose strong corruption  
Inhabits our frail blood.

*Ant.* O heavens themselves!

*2 Off.* Come, Sir, I pray you, go.

*Ant.* Let me speak a little. This youth that  
you see here,

I snatch'd one half out of the jaws of death;  
Reliev'd him with such sanctity of love,—  
And to his image, which, methought, did promise

Most venerable worth, did I devotion.

*1 Off.* What's that to us? The time goes by;  
away.

*Ant.* But oh! how vile an idol proves this  
god!—

Thou hast, Sebastian, done good feature shame.—  
In nature there's no blemish but the mind;  
None can be call'd deform'd, but the unkind:  
Virtue is beauty; but the beautiful-evil  
Are empty trunks, o'erflourish'd\* by the devil.

*1 Off.* The man grows mad; away with him.  
Come, come, Sir.

*Ant.* Lead me on.

[*Exeunt OFFICERS, with ANTONIO.*]

*Vio.* Methinks, his words do from such passion  
fly,

That he believes himself; so do not I.  
Prove true, imagination, O prove true,  
That I, dear brother, be now ta'en for you!

*Sir To.* Come hither, knight; come hither,  
Fabian; we'll whisper o'er a couplet or two of  
most sage saws.

*Vio.* He nam'd Sebastian; I my brother  
know

Yet living in my glass; † even such, and so,  
In favour was my brother; and he went  
Still in this fashion, colour, ornament,  
For him I imitate: Oh! if it prove,  
Tempests are kind, and salt waves fresh in love!

[*Exit.*]

*Sir To.* A very dishonest paltry boy, and  
more a coward than a hare; his dishonesty ap-  
pears, in leaving his friend here in necessity,  
and denying him; and for his cowardship, ask  
Fabian.

*Fab.* A coward, a most devout coward, reli-  
gious in it.

*Sir And.* 'Slid, I'll after him again, and beat  
him.

*Sir To.* Do, cuff him soundly, but never draw  
thy sword.

*Sir And.* An I do not,—

[*Exit.*]

*Fab.* Come, let's see the event.

*Sir To.* I dare lay any money, 'twill be no-  
thing yet.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—The Street before OLIVIA'S  
House.

*Enter SEBASTIAN and CLOWN.*

*Clo.* Will you make me believe, that I am  
not sent for you?

*Seb.* Go to, go to, thou art a foolish fellow;  
Let me be clear of thee.

*Clo.* Well held out, I'faith! No, I do not  
know you? no, I am not sent to you by my lady,  
to bid you come speak with her; nor your name  
is not master Cesario: nor this is not my nose  
neither.—Nothing, that is so, is so.

\* Ornamented.

† In the reflection of my own figure.

*Seb.* I prythee, vent\* thy folly somewhere  
Thou know'st not me.

*Clo.* Vent my folly! He has heard that word  
of some great man, and now applies it to a fool.  
Vent my folly! I am afraid this great lubber,  
the world, will prove a cockney.—I prythee  
now, ungrud thy straungeness, and tell me what I  
shall vent to my lady; Shall I vent to her, that  
thou art coming?

*Seb.* I prythee, foolish Greek, † depart from  
me;

There's money for thee; if you tarry longer,  
I shall give worse payment.

*Clo.* By my troth, thou hast an open hand:—  
These wise men, that give fools money, get  
themselves a good report after fourteen years'  
purchase.

*Enter Sir ANDREW, Sir TOBY, and FABIAN.*

*Sir And.* Now, Sir; have I met you again?  
there's for you. [Striking SEBASTIAN.]

*Seb.* Why, there's for thee, and there, and  
there:

Are all the people mad?

[Beating Sir ANDREW.]

*Sir To.* Hold, Sir, or I'll throw your dagger  
o'er the house.

*Clo.* This will I tell my lady straight; I would  
not be in some of your coats for two pence.

[*Exit CLOWN.*]

*Sir To.* Come on, Sir; hold.

[*Holding SEBASTIAN.*]

*Sir And.* Nay, let him alone, I'll go another  
way to work with him; I'll have an action of  
battery against him, if there be any law in  
Illyria: though I struck him first, yet it's no  
matter for that.

*Seb.* Let go thy hand.

*Sir To.* Come, Sir, I will not let you go.  
Come, my young soldier, put up your iron: you  
are well fleshed; come on.

*Seb.* I will be free from thee. What would'st  
thou now?

If thou dar'st tempt me further, draw thy sword.

[*Draws.*]

*Sir To.* What, what? Nay then I must have an  
ounce or two of this malapert blood from you.

[*Draws.*]

*Enter OLIVIA.*

*Oli.* Hold, Toby; on thy life, I charge thee,  
hold.

*Sir To.* Madam?

*Oli.* Will it be ever thus? Ungracious wretch,  
Fit for the mountains, and the barbarous caves,  
Where manners ne'er were preach'd! out of my  
sight!

Be not offended, dear Cesario:—

Rudesby, ‡ be gone!—I prythee, gentle friend,

[*Exeunt Sir TOBY, Sir ANDREW, and  
FABIAN.*]

Let thy fair wisdom, not thy passion, sway  
In this uncivil and unjust extent §  
Against thy peace. Go with me to my house;  
And hear thou there how many fruitless pranks  
This ruffian hath botch'd up, ¶ that thou thereby  
May'st smile at this: thou shalt not choose but  
go;

Do not deny: Beswew ¶ his soul for me,  
He started one poor heart of mine in thee.

*Seb.* What relish is in this? how runs the  
stream?

Or I am mad, or else this is a dream:—

Let fauce still my sense in Lethe steep:

If it be thus to dream, still let me sleep!

*Oli.* Nay, come, I prythee; ¶ Would thou'dst  
be rul'd by me!

*Seb.* Madam, I will.

*Oli.* Oh! say so, and so be!

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Let out.

† A term for bawd or pander; a brothel was called Co-  
rnith: its frequenters, Cornithians.

‡ Rude fellow.

¶ Violence.

‡ Made up.

¶ Ill betide.

## SCENE II.—A Room in OLIVIA'S House.

Enter MARIA and CLOWN.

*Mar.* Nay, I pry'thee, put on this gown, and this beard; make him believe, thou art Sir Topas the curate; do it quickly: I'll call Sir Toby the whilst. [Exit MARIA.]

*Clo.* Well, I'll put it on, and I will dissemble\* myself in't; and I would I were the first that ever dissembled in such a gown. I am not fat enough to become the function well; nor lean enough to be thought a good student; but to be said, an honest man and a good housekeeper, goes as fairly, as to say, a careful man, and a great scholar. The competitors† enter.

Enter Sir TOBY BELCH and MARIA.

*Sir To.* Jove bless thee, master parson.

*Clo.* *Bonus dixit*, Sir Toby: for as the old hermit of Prague, that never saw pen and ink, very wittily said to a niece of king Gorboduc, *That, that is, is so* I, being master parson, am master parson; For what is that, but that I and is, but is?

*Sir To.* To him, Sir Topas.

*Clo.* What, ho, I say,—Peace in this prison!

*Sir To.* The knave counterfeitis well; a good knave.

*Mal.* [In an inner chamber.] Who calls there?

*Clo.* Sir Topas, the curate, who comes to visit Malvollio the lunatic.

*Mal.* Sir Topas, Sir Topas, good Sir Topas, go to my lady.

*Clo.* Out, hyperbolical fiend! how vexest thou this man? talkest thou nothing but of ladies?

*Sir To.* Well said, master parson.

*Mal.* Sir Topas, never was man thus wronged: good Sir Topas, do not think I am mad; they have laid me here in hideous darkness.

*Clo.* Fie, thou dishonest Sathan! I call thee by the most modest terms; for I am one of those gentle ones, that will use the devil himself with courtesy: Say'st thou, that house is dark?

*Mal.* As hell, Sir Topas.

*Clo.* Why, it hath bay-windows† transparent as barricadoes, and the clear stones towards the south-north are as lustrous as ebony; and yet complainest thou of obstruction?

*Mal.* I am not mad, Sir Topas; I say to you, the house is dark.

*Clo.* Madman, thou errest: I say there is no darkness, but ignorance! in which thou art more puzzled, than the Egyptians in their fog.

*Mal.* I say this house is as dark as ignorance, though ignorance were as dark as hell; and I say there was never man thus abused: I am no more mad than you are; make the trial of it in any constant question.‡

*Clo.* What is the opinion of Pythagoras, concerning wild-fowl?

*Mal.* That the soul of our grandam might haply inhabit a bird.

*Clo.* What thinkest thou of his opinion?

*Mal.* I think nobly of the soul, and no way approve his opinion.

*Clo.* Fare thee well: Remain thou still in darkness: thou shalt hold the opinion of Pythagoras, ere I will allow of thy wits; and fear to kill a woodcock, lest thou dispossess the soul of thy grandam. Fare thee well.

*Mal.* Sir Topas, Sir Topas,—

*Sir To.* My most exquisite Sir Topas!

*Clo.* Nay, I am for all waters.‡

*Mar.* Thou might'st have done this without thy beard, and gown; he sees thee not.

*Sir To.* To him in thine own voice, and bring me word how thou findest him: I would, we were well rid of this knavery. If he may be conveniently delivered, I would he were; for I

am now so far in offence with my niece, that I cannot pursue with any safety this sport to the upshot. Come by and by to my chamber.

[Exit Sir TOBY and MARIA.]

*Clo.* Hey Robin, jolly Robin,

Tell me how thy lady does.

[Singing.]

*Mal.* Fool,—

*Clo.* My lady is unkind, perdy.

*Mal.* Fool,—

*Clo.* Alas, why is she so?

*Mal.* Fool, I say:—

*Clo.* She loves another—Who calls, ha?

*Mal.* Good fool, as ever thou wilt deserve well at my hand, help me to a candle, and pen, ink, and paper; as I am a gentleman, I will live to be thankful to thee for't.

*Clo.* Master Malvollio!

*Mal.* Ay, good fool.

*Clo.* Alas, Sir, how fell you besides your five wits?\*

*Mal.* Fool, there was never man so notoriously abused: I am as well in my wits, fool, as thou art.

*Clo.* But as well? then you are mad, indeed, if you be no better in your wits than a fool.

*Mal.* They have here perjur'd me,† keep me in darkness, send ministers to me, asses, and do all they can to face me out of my wits.

*Clo.* Advise you what you say, the minister is here.—Malvollio, Malvollio, thy wits the heavens restore! endeavor thyself to sleep, and leave thy vain bibble babble.

*Mal.* Sir Topas,—

*Clo.* Maintain no words with him, good fellow.—Who, I, Sir? not I, Sir. God bless you, good Sir Topas.—Marry, amen.—I will, Sir, I will.

*Mal.* Fool, fool, fool, I say,—

*Clo.* Alas, Sir, be patient. What say you Sir? I am shent‡ for speaking to you.

*Mal.* Good fool, help me to some light, and some paper; I tell thee, I am as well in my wits, as any man in Illyria.

*Clo.* Well-a-day,—that you were, Sir!

*Mal.* By this hand, I am: Good fool, some ink, paper, and light, and convey what I will set down to my lady; it shall advantage thee more than ever the bearing of letter did.

*Clo.* I will help you to't. But tell me true, are you not mad indeed? or do you but counterfeit?

*Mal.* Believe me, I am not; I tell thee true.

*Clo.* Nay, I'll ne'er believe a madman, till I see his brains. I will fetch you light, and paper, and ink.

*Mal.* Fool, I'll requite it in the highest degree: I pry'thee, begone.

*Clo.* I am gone, Sir,  
And anon, Sir,  
I'll be with you again.

In a trice;

Like to the old vice,‡

Your need to sustain;

Who with dagger of lath,

In his rage and his wrath,

Cries, ah, ha! to the devil:

Like a mad lad,

Fare thy nails, dad,

Adieu, Goodman devil.

[Exit.]

## SCENE III.—OLIVIA'S Garden.

Enter SEBASTIAN.

*Seb.* This is the air; that is the glorious sun; This pearl she gave me, I do feel't, and set't: And though 'tis wonder that enrups me thus, Yet 'tis not madness. Where's Antonio then?

\* Senses.

† Taken possession of.

‡ Scolded, reprimanded.

\* Dialogue.

† Confederates.

‡ Bow windows.

§ Regular conversation

|| Any other gem, as a Topas.

§ A buffoon character in the old plays, and father of the modern harlequin.

I could not find him at the Elephant :  
Yet there he was ; and there I found this  
credit.\*

That he did range the town to seek me out.  
His counsel now might do me golden service :  
For though my soul disputes well with my  
sense,

That this may be some error, but no madness,  
Yet doth this accident and flood of fortune  
So far exceed all instance, all discourse,†  
That I am ready to distrust mine eyes,  
And wrangle with my reason, that persuades me  
To any other trust,‡ but that I am mad,  
Or else the lady's mad ; yet, if 'twere so,  
She could not sway her house, command her  
followers,§

Take, and give back, affairs, and their despatch,  
With such a smooth, discreet, and stable bear-  
ing,

As, I perceive, she does : there's something in't,  
That is deceivable. But here comes the lady.

Enter OLIVIA and a PRIEST.

Ol. Blame not this haste of mine if you mean  
well,

Now go with me, and with this holy man,  
Into the chantry ¶ by : there, before him,  
And underneath that consecrated roof,  
Flight me the full assurance of your faith ;  
That my most jealous and too doubtful soul  
May live at peace : He shall conceal it,  
Whiles ¶ you are willing it shall come to note ;  
What time we will our celebration keep  
According to my birth.—What do you say ?

Seb. I'll follow this good man, and go with  
you ;

And, having sworn truth, ever will be true.

Ol. Then lead the way, good father ;—And  
heavens so shine,  
That they may fairly note this act of mine !

[Exit.

### ACT V.

#### SCENE I.—A Street before OLIVIA's House.

Enter CLOWN and FABIAN.

Fab. Now, as thou lovest me, let me see his  
letter.

Clo. Good master Fabian, grant me another  
request.

Fab. Any thing.

Clo. Do not desire to see this letter.

Fab. That is, to give a dog, and, in recom-  
pense, desire my dog again.

Enter DUKE, VIOLA, and Attendants.

Duke. Belong you to the lady Olivia, friends ?

Clo. Ay, Sir ; we are some of her trappings.

Duke. I know thee well : How dost thou, my  
good fellow ?

Clo. Truly, Sir, the better for my foes, and the  
worse for my friends.

Duke. Just the contrary ; the better for thy  
friends.

Clo. No, Sir, the worse.

Duke. How can that be ?

Clo. Marry, Sir, they praise me, and make an  
ass of me ; now my foes tell me plainly I am an  
ass : so that by my foes, Sir, I profit in the know-  
ledge of myself ; and by my friends I am abused :  
so that, conclusions to be as kisses, if your four  
negatives make your two affirmatives, why, then  
the worse for my friends, and the better for my  
foes.

Duke. Why, this is excellent.

Clo. By my troth, Sir, no ; though it please  
you to be one of my friends.

Duke. Thou shalt not be the worse for me ;  
there's gold.

Clo. But that it would be double-dealing, Sir,  
I would you could make it another.

Duke. Oh ! you give me ill counsel.

Clo. Put your grace in your pocket, Sir, for this  
once, and let your flesh and blood obey it.

Duke. Well, I will be so much a sinner to be  
a double-dealer ; there's another.

Clo. *Primo, secundo, tertio*, is a good play ;  
and the old saying is, the third pays for all : the  
*triplex*, Sir, is a good tripping measure ; or the  
bells of St. Bennet, Sir, may put you in mind ;  
One, two, three.

Duke. You can fool no more money out of  
me at this throw : if you will let your lady  
know, I am here to speak with her, and bring  
her along with you, it may awake my bounty  
further.

Clo. Marry, Sir, lullaby to your bounty, till  
I come again. I go, Sir ; but I would not have  
you to think, that my desire of having is the sin  
of covetousness : but, as you say, Sir, let your  
bounty take a nap, I will awake it anon.

[Exit CLOWN.

Enter ANTONIO and OFFICERS.

Vio. Here comes the man, Sir, that did res-  
cue me.

Duke. That face of his I do remember well ;  
Yet when I saw it last, it was besmear'd  
As black as Vulcan, in the smoke of war :  
A bawling vessel was he captain of,  
For shallow draught, and bulk, unprizable ;  
With which such scathful \* grapple did he make  
With the most noble bottom of our fleet,  
That very envy, and the tongue of loss,  
Cried fame and honour on him.—What's the  
matter ?

1 Off. Orsino, this is that Antonio,  
That took the Phoenix, and her freight,† from  
Candy ;

And this is he, that did the Tiger board,  
When your young nephew Titus lost his leg :  
Here in the streets, desperate of shame and  
state,

In private brabble did we apprehend him.

Vio. He did me kindness, Sir : drew on my  
side ;

But in conclusion, put strange speech upon  
me,

I know not what 'twas, but distraction.

Duke. Notable pirate ! thou salt-water thief !  
What foolish boldness brought thee to their  
mercies,

Whom thou in terms so bloody and so dear,  
Hast made thine enemies ?

Ant. Orsino, noble Sir,

Be pleas'd that I shake off these names you  
give me ;

Antonio never yet was thief or pirate,  
Though I confess, on base and ground enough,  
Orsino's enemy. A witchcraft drew me hither :  
That most ungrateful boy there, by your side,  
From the rude sea's curag'd and foamy mouth  
Did I redeem ; a wreck past hope he was :

His life I gave him, and did thereto add  
My love, without retention, or restraint  
All his in dedication : for his sake,  
Did I expose myself, pure for his love,  
Into the danger of this adverse town ;  
Drew to defend him, when he was beset ;  
Where being apprehended, his false cunning,  
(Not meaning to partake with me in danger,)  
Taught him to face me out of his acquaintance,  
And grew a twenty-years-removed thing,  
While one would wink ; denied me mine own  
purse,

Which I had recommended to his use  
Not half an hour before.

Vio. How can this be ?

Duke. When came he to this town ?

† Reason.      \* Account.  
‡ Belief.      § Servants.  
¶ Little chapel.      ¶ Until.

\* Mischivous.      † Freight.

*Ani.* To-day, my lord; and for three months before,  
(No interim, not a minute's vacancy.)  
Both day and night did we keep company.

*Enter OLIVIA and Attendants.*

*Duke.* Here comes the countess: now heaven walks on earth.—  
But for thee, fellow, fellow, thy words are madness:  
Three months this youth hath tended upon me;  
But more of that anon.—Take him aside.

*Oli.* What would my lord, but that he may not have,  
Wherein Olivia may seem serviceable?—  
*Cesario*, you do not keep promise with me.

*Vio.* Madam?

*Duke.* Gracious Olivia,—

*Oli.* What do you say, *Cesario*?—Good my lord,—

*Vio.* My lord would speak, my duty hushes me.

*Oli.* If it be aught to the old tune, my lord,  
It is as fat\* and fulsome to mine ear,  
As howling after music.

*Duke.* Still so cruel?

*Oli.* Still so constant, lord.

*Duke.* What! to perverseness? you uncivil lady,

To whose ingrate and un auspicious altars  
My soul the faithfull'st offerings hath breath'd out,

That e'er devotion tender'd! What shall I do?  
*Oli.* Even what it please my lord, that shall become him.

*Duke.* Why should I not, had I the heart to do it,

Like to the Egyptian thief, at point of death, †  
Kill what I love; a savage jealousy,  
That sometime savours nobly?—But hear me this:

Since you to non-regardance cast my faith,  
And that I partly know the instrument  
That screws me from my true place in your favour,

Live you, the marble-breasted tyrant, still;  
But this your minion, whom I know, you love,  
And whom, by heaven, I swear, I tender dearly,

Him will I tear out of that cruel eye,  
Where he sits crown'd in his master's spite.—  
Come boy with me: my thoughts are ripe in mischief;

I'll sacrifice the lamb that I do love,  
To spite a raven's heart within a dove.

[*Going.*]

*Vio.* And I, most jocund, apt, and willingly,  
To do you rest, a thousand deaths would die.

[*Following.*]

*Oli.* Where goes *Cesario*?

*Vio.* After him I love,

More than I love these eyes, more than my life.

More, by all mores, than e'er I shall love wife;  
If I do feign, you witnesses above,  
Punish my life, for tainting of my love!

*Oli.* Ah me, detested! how am I beguil'd!

*Vio.* Who does beguile you? who does do you wrong?

*Oli.* Hast thou forgot thyself? Is it so long!—  
Call forth the holy father.

[*Exit an Attendant.*]

*Duke.* Come away. [To *Viola*.]

*Oli.* Whither my lord?—*Cesario*, husband, stay.

*Duke.* Husband?

*Oli.* Ay, husband; Can he that deny?

*Duke.* Her husband, sirrah?

*Vio.* No, my lord, not I.

\* Dull, gross.

† *Thyamis*, a native of Memphis. It was customary with these barbarians, when in imminent danger, to kill those whose company they wished in the other world.

*Oli.* Alas, it is the baseness of thy fear,  
That makes thee strangle thy propriety: \*  
Fear not, *Cesario*, take thy fortunes up;  
Be that thou know'st thou art, and then thou art  
As great as that thou fear'st,—O welcome father!

*Re-enter Attendant and PRIEST.*

Father, I charge thee, by thy reverence,  
Here to unfold (though lately we intended  
To keep in darkness, what occasion now  
Reveals before 'tis ripe,) what thou dost know,  
Hath newly past between this youth and me.

*Priest.* A contract of eternal bond of love,  
Confirm'd by mutual joinder of your hands,  
Attested by the holy close of lips,  
Strengthen'd by interchangement of your rings;  
And all the ceremony of this compact  
Seal'd in my function, by my testimony:  
Since when, my watch hath told me, toward my grave,

I have travell'd but two hours.

*Duke.* O thou dissembling cub! what wilt thou be,

When time hath sow'd a grizzle on thy case? †  
Or will not else thy craft so quickly grow,  
That thine own trip shall be thine overthrow?  
Farewell, and take her; but direct thy feet,  
Where thou and I henceforth may never meet.

*Vio.* My lord, I do protest,—

*Oli.* Oh! do not swear;  
Hold little faith, though thou hast too much fear.

*Enter Sir ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK, with his head broke.*

*Sir And.* For the love of God, a surgeon;  
send one presently to Sir Toby.

*Oli.* What's the matter?

*Sir And.* He has broke my head across, and has given Sir Toby a bloody coxcomb too: for the love of God, your help: I had rather than forty pounds, I were at home.

*Oli.* Who has done this, Sir Andrew?

*Sir And.* The count's gentleman, one *Cesario*: we took him for a coward, but he's the very devil incarnadine.

*Duke.* My gentleman, *Cesario*!

*Sir And.* Od's lifelings here he is:—You broke my head for nothing; and that that I did, I was set on to do't by Sir Toby.

*Vio.* Why do you speak to me? I never hurt you: You drew your sword upon me, without cause; But I bespake you fair, and hurt you not.

*Sir And.* If a bloody coxcomb be a hurt, you have hurt me; I think, you set nothing by a bloody coxcomb.

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH, drunk, led by the CLOWN.*

Here comes Sir Toby halting, you shall hear more: but if he had not been in drink, he would have tickled you othergates ‡ than he did.

*Duke.* How now, gentlemen? how is't with you?

*Sir To.* That's all one; he has hurt me, and there's the end on't.—Sot, did'st see Dick surgeon, sot?

*Clo.* O he's drunk, Sir Toby, an hour ago; his eyes were set at eight i'the morning.

*Sir To.* Then he's a rogue. After a passy-measure, or a pavin, § I bate a drunken rogue.

*Oli.* Away with him: Who hath made this havoc with them?

*Sir And.* I'll help you, Sir Toby, because we'll be dress'd together.

*Sir To.* Will you help an ass-head, and a

\* Disown thy property.

† Skin.

‡ Othertways.

§ The *passemeze* was a favourite air and dance in Elizabeth's time.

coxcomb, and a knave? a thin-faced knave, a gull?

*Oli.* Get him to bed, and let his hurt be look'd to.

[*Exeunt CLOWN, Sir TOBY, and Sir ANDREW.*]

*Enter SEBASTIAN.*

*Seb.* I am sorry, madam, I have hurt your kinsman;

But had it been the brother of my blood, I must have done no less, with wit and safety. You throw a strange regard upon me, and by that I do perceive it hath offended you; Pardon me, sweet one, even for the vows We made each other but so late ago.

*Duke.* One face, one voice, one habit, and two persons;

A natural perspective, that is, and is not.

*Seb.* Antonio, O my dear Antonio! How have the hours rack'd and tortur'd me, Since I have lost thee.

*Ant.* Sebastian are you?

*Seb.* Fear'st thou that, Antonio?

*Ant.* How have you made division of yourself?

An apple, cleft in two, is not more twin Than these two creatures. Which is Sebastian?

*Oli.* Most wonderful!

*Seb.* Do I stand there? I never had a brother:

Nor can there be that deity in my nature, Of here and every where. I had a sister, Whom the blind waves and surges have devour'd:—

Of charity,\* what kin are you to me?

[*To VIOLA.*]

What countryman? what name? what parentage?

*Vio.* Of Messaline: Sebastian was my father; Such a Sebastian was my brother too, So went he suited to his watery tomb: If spirits can assume both form and suit You come to fright us.

*Seb.* A spirit I am, indeed; But am in that dimension grossly clad, Which from the womb I did participate. Were you a woman, as the rest goes even, I should my tears let fall upon your cheek, And say,—Thrice welcome, drowned Viola!

*Vio.* My father had a mole upon his brow.

*Seb.* And so had mine.

*Vio.* And died that day when Viola from her birth

Had number'd thirteen years.

*Seb.* O that record is lively in my soul He finished, indeed, his mortal act, That day that made my sister thirteen years.

*Vio.* If nothing lets† to make us happy both, But this my masculine usurp'd attire, Do not embrace me, till each circumstance Of place, time, fortune, do cohere and jump, That I am Viola: which to confirm, I'll bring you to a captain in this town, Where lie my maiden weeds; by whose gentle help

I was preserv'd, to serve this noble count: All the occurrence of my fortune since Hath been between this lady, and this lord.

*Seb.* So comes it, lady, you have been mistook: [*To OLIVIA.*]

But nature to her bias drew in that. You would have been contracted to a maid; Nor are you therein, by my life deceiv'd, You are betroth'd both to a maid and man.

*Duke.* Be not amaz'd; right noble is his blood.—

If this be so, as yet the glass seems true, I shall have share in this most happy wreck: Boy, thou hast said to me a thousand times,

[*To VIOLA.*]

Thou never should'st love woman like to me.

*Vio.* And all those sayings will I over swear;

And all those swearings keep as true in soul, As doth that orb'd continent the fire That severs day from night.

*Duke.* Give me thy hand;

And let me see thee in thy woman's weeds.

*Vio.* The captain, that did bring me first on shore,

Hath my maid's garments; he, upon some action,

Is now in durance; at Malvollo's suit,

A gentleman and follower of my lady's.

*Oli.* He shall enlarge him:—Fetch Malvollo hither:—

And yet, alas, now I remember me, They say, poor gentleman, he's much distract.

*Re-enter CLOWN, with a letter.*

A most extracting frenzy of mine own From my remembrance clearly banish'd his.— How does he, sirrah?

*Clo.* Truly, madam, he holds Belzebub at the stove's end, as well as a man in his case may do: he has here writ a letter to you, I should have given it you to-day morning; but as a madman's epistles are no gospels, so it skills not much, when they are delivered.

*Oli.* Open it, and read it.

*Clo.* Look then to be well edited, when the fool delivers the madman:—*By the lord, madam.*—

*Oli.* How now! art thou mad!

*Clo.* No, madam, I do but read madness: an your ladyship will have it as it ought to be, you must allow *vox*.

*Oli.* Pr'ythee, read i'thy right wits.

*Clo.* So I do, madonna; but to read his right wits, is to read thus: therefore perpend, † my princess, and give ear.

*Oli.* Read it, you sirrah.

[*To FABIAN.*]

*Fab.* [Reads.] *By the Lord, madam, you wrong me, and the world shall know it: though you have put me into darkness, and given your drunken cousin rule over me, yet have I the benefit of my senses as well as your ladyship. I have your own letter that induced me to the semblance I put on; with the which I doubt not but to do myself much right, or you much shame. Think of me as you please. I leave my duty a little unthought of, and speak out of my injury.*

*The madly-us'd MALVOLIO.*

*Oli.* Did he write this?

*Clo.* Ay, madam.

*Duke.* This savours not much of distraction.

*Oli.* See him deliver'd, Fabian; bring him hither.

[*Exit FABIAN.*]

My lord, so please you, these things further thought on,

To think me as well a sister as a wife, One day shall crown the alliance out, so please you,

Here at my house, and at my proper cost.

*Duke.* Madam, I am most apt to embrace your offer.—

Your master quits you: [*To VIOLA.*] and, for your service done him,

So much against the mettle ‡ of your sex, So far beneath your soft and tender breeding, And since you call'd me master for so long, Here is my hand; you shall from this time be Your master's mistress.

*Oli.* A sister? you are she.

*Re-enter FABIAN, with MALVOLIO.*

*Duke.* Is this the madman?

*Oli.* Ay, my lord, this same:

How now, Malvolio?

*Mal.* Madam, you have done me wrong, Notorious wrong.

\* Out of charity tell me.

† Hinders.

\* Voice.  
constitution.

† Attend.

‡ Frame and



*Oli.* Have I, Malvolio? no.

*Mal.* Lady you have. Pray you, peruse that letter;

You must not now deny it is your hand,  
Write from it if you can, in hand, or phrase;  
Or say, 'tis not your seal, nor your invention:  
You can say none of this: Well grant it then,  
And tell me in the modesty of honour,  
Why you have given me such clear lights of favour:

Bade me come smiling, and cross-garter'd to you,

To put on yellow stockings, and to frown  
Upon Sir Toby, and the lighter<sup>\*</sup> people:  
And, acting this in an obedient hope,  
Why have you suffered me to be imprison'd,  
Kept in a dark house, visited by the priest,  
And made the most notorious geck,† and gull,  
That e'er invention play'd on? tell me why.

*Oli.* Alas! Malvolio, this is not my writing,  
Though I confess, much like the character;  
But, out of question, 'tis Maria's hand.  
And now I do bethink me, it was she  
First told me thou wast mad; then cam'st in smiling,

And in such forms which here were presuppos'd  
Upon thee in the letter. Pr'ythee, be content:  
This practice hath most shrewdly pass'd upon thee;

But, when we know the grounds and authors  
of it,  
Thou shalt be both the plaintiff and the judge  
Of thine own cause.

*Fab.* Good madam, hear me speak;  
And let no quarrel, nor no brawl to come,  
Taint the condition of this present hour.  
Which I have wonder'd at. In hope it shall not,  
Most freely I confess, myself and Toby  
Set this device against Malvolio here,  
Upon some stubborn and uncourteous parts  
We had conceiv'd against him: Maria writ  
The letter, at Sir Toby's great importune;<sup>‡</sup>  
In recompense whereof, he hath married her.  
How with a sportful malice it was follow'd,  
May rather pluck on laughter than revenge;  
If that the injuries be justly weigh'd,  
That have on both sides past.

*Oli.* Alas, poor fool! how have they baffled § thee!

*Clo.* Why, some are born great, some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrown upon them. I was one, Sir, in this interlude; one Sir Topas, Sir; but that's all one:—By the Lord, fool, I am not mad;—But do you remember? Madam, why laugh you at such a barren rascal? on you smile not, he's gagg'd: And thus the whirligig of time brings in his revenges.

*Mal.* I'll be revenged on the whole pack of you.

*Oli.* He hath been most notoriously abus'd.

*Duke.* Pursue him, and entreat him to a peace:—

He hath not told us of the captain yet;  
When that is known, and golden time convents,\*  
A solemn combination shall be made  
Of our dear souls—Mean time, sweet sister,  
We will not part from hence.—Cesario, come;  
For so you shall be while you are a man;  
But, when in other habits you are seen,  
Orsino's mistress, and his fancy's queen.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SONG.

*Clo.* When that I was and a little tiny boy,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
A foolish thing was but a toy,  
For the rain it raineth every day.

But when I came to man's estate,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
'Gainst knave and thief men shut their gate,  
For the rain it raineth every day.

But when I came, alas! to love,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
By swaggering could I never thrive,  
For the rain it raineth every day.

But when I came unto my bed,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
With those pots still had drunken head,  
For the rain it raineth every day.

A great while ago the world began,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain;  
But that's all one, our play is done,  
And we'll strive to please you every day.

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Inferior. † Fool. ‡ Importunacy. § Cheated

\* SHIP SERVICE.

# ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE fable of this play, (written in 1598,) is taken from a novel of which Boccaccio is the original author; but it is more than probable that our poet read it in a book called *The Palace of Pleasure*; a collection of novels translated from different authors, by one William Painter, 1566, 4to. Shakspeare has only borrowed from the novel a few leading circumstances in the graver parts of the drama: the comic characters are entirely of his own formation: one of them, Parolles, a boaster and a coward, is the sheet-anchor of the piece. The plot is not sufficiently probable. Some of the scenes are forcibly written, whilst others are impoverished and uninteresting. The moral of the play may be correctly ascertained from Dr. Johnson's estimate of the character of Bertram: "I cannot reconcile my heart to Bertram; a man noble without generosity, and young without truth; who marries Helena as a coward, and leaves her as a profligate: when she is dead, by his unkindness, sneaks home to a second marriage, is accused by a woman whom he has wronged, defends himself by falsehood, and is dismissed to happiness."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING OF FRANCE.  
DUKE OF FLORENCE.  
BERTRAM, Count of Rousillon.  
LAFU, an old Lord.

PAROLLES, a follower of Bertram.  
*Several young French Lords, that serve with Bertram in the Florentine war.*

STEWARDS, } Servants to the Countess of Rousillon.  
A PAGE.

COUNTESS OF ROUSILLON, Mother to Bertram.  
HELENA, a Gentlewoman protected by the Countess.

An Old Widow of Florence.

DIANA, Daughter to the Widow.

VIOLENTA, } Neighbours and Friends to the  
MARIANA, } Widow.

Lords, attending on the King; Officers, Soldiers, &c. French and Florentine.

SCENE—Partly in France, and partly in Tuscany.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Rousillon.—A Room in the Countess' Palace.

Enter BERTRAM, the COUNTESS OF ROUSILLON, HELENA, and LAFEU, in mourning.

Count. In delivering my son from me, I bury a second husband.

Ber. And I, in going, madam, weep o'er my father's death anew: but I must attend his majesty's command, to whom I am now in ward,\* evermore in subjection.

Laf. You shall find of the king a husband, madam;—you, Sir, a father: He that so generally is at all times good, must of necessity hold his virtue to you; whose worthiness would stir it up where it wanted, rather than lack it where there is such abundance.

Count. What hope is there of his majesty's amendment?

Laf. He hath abandoned his physicians, madam; under whose practices he hath persecuted time with hope; and finds no other advantage in the process but only the losing of hope by time.

Count. This young gentleman had a father, (Oh! that had 't how sad a passage 'tis!) whose

\* The heirs of great fortunes were always the king's wards.

† The countess recollects her own loss of a husband, and observes how heavily *had* passes through her mind.

skill was almost as great as his honesty; had it stretched so far, it would have made nature immortal, and death should have play for lack of work. 'Would, for the king's sake, he were living! I think, it would be the death of the king's disease.

Laf. How called you the man you speak of, madam?

Count. He was famous, Sir, in his profession, and it was his great right to be so: Gerard de Narbon.

Laf. He was excellent, indeed, madam; the king very lately spoke of him admiringly, and mourningly: he was skilful enough to have lived still, if knowledge could be set up against mortality.

Ber. What is it, my good lord, the king languishes of?

Laf. A fistula, my lord.

Ber. I heard not of it before.

Laf. I would, it were not notorious.—Was this gentleman the daughter of Gerard de Narbon?

Count. His sole child, my lord: and bequeathed to my overlooking. I have those hopes of her good, that her education promises: her dispositions she inherits, which makes fair gifts fairer: for where an unclean mind carries virtuous qualities,\* there commendations go with pity, they are virtues and traitors too; in

\* Qualities of good breeding and erudition.

her they are the better for their simpleness ; \* she derives her honesty, and achieves her goodness.

*Laf.* Your commendations, madam, get from her tears.

*Count.* 'Tis the best brine a maiden can season her praise in. The remembrance of her father never approaches her heart, but the tyranny of her sorrows takes all livelihood † from her cheek. No more of this, Helena, go to, no more ; lest it be rather thought you affect a sorrow, than to have.

*Hel.* I do affect a sorrow, indeed, but I have it too.

*Laf.* Moderate lamentation is the right of the dead, excessive grief the enemy to the living.

*Count.* If the living be enemy to the grief, the excess makes it soon mortal.

*Ber.* Madam, I desire your holy wishes.

*Laf.* How understand we that ?

*Count.* Be thou bless'd, Bertram ! and succeed thy father

In manners, as in shape ! thy blood and virtue, Contend for empire in thee ; and thy goodness Share with thy birthright ; Love all, trust a few, Do wrong to none : be able for thine enemy Rather in power, than use ; and keep thy friend Under thy own life's key : be check'd for silence, But never tax'd for speech. What heaven more will,

That thee may furnish, ‡ and my prayers pluck down,

Fall on thy head ! Farewell.—My lord, 'Tis an unseason'd courtier ; good my lord, Advise him.

*Laf.* He cannot want the best That shall attend his love.

*Count.* Heaven bless him !—Farewell, Bertram. [*Exit* COUNTESS.]

*Ber.* The best wishes, that can be forged in your thoughts, [To HELENA] be servants to you ! Be comfortable to my mother, your mistress, and make much of her.

*Laf.* Farewell, pretty lady : You must hold the credit of your father.

[*Exeunt* BERTRAM and LAFEU.]

*Hel.* Oh ! were that all !—I think not on my father ;

And these great tears grace his remembrance more

Than those I shed for him. What was he like ? I have forgot him : my imagination Carries no favour in it, but Bertram's. I am undone ; there is no living, none, If Bertram be away. It were all one, That I should love a bright particular star And think to wed it, he is so above me : In his bright radiance and collateral light Must I be comforted, not in his sphere. The ambition in my love thus plagues itself : The hind, that would be mated by the lion, Must die for love. 'Twas pretty, though a plague,

To see him every hour ; to sit and draw His arched brows, his hawking eye, his curls, In our heart's table ; ¶ heart, too capable Of every hue and trick ¶ of his sweet favour : \*\* But now he's gone, and my idolatrous fancy Must sanctify his relics. Who comes here ?

#### Enter PAROLLES.

One that goes with him : I love him for his sake ; And yet I know him a notorious liar, Think him a great way fool, solely a coward ; Yet these fix'd evils sit to fit in him,

\* Her excellencies are the better because they are artless.

† All appearance of life.

‡ I.e. That may help thee with more and better qualifications.

¶ I.e. May you be mistress of your wishes, and have power to bring them to effect.

¶ Helena considers her heart as the tablet on which his resemblance was portrayed.

¶ Peculiarity of features.

\*\* Countenance.

That they take place, when virtue's steely bones Look bleak in the cold wind : wuhal, full oft we see

Cold wisdom waiting on superfluous folly.

*Par.* Save you, fair queen.

*Hel.* And you, monarch.

*Par.* No.

*Hel.* And no.

*Par.* Are you meditating on virginity ?

*Hel.* Ay. You have some stain of soldier in you ; let me ask you a question : Man is enemy to virginity ; how may we barricado it against him ?

*Par.* Keep him out.

*Hel.* But he assails ; and our virginity, though valiant in the defence, yet is weak : unfold to us some warlike resistance.

*Par.* There is none ; man, sitting down before you, will undermine you, and blow you up. *Hel.* Bless our poor virginity from underminers and blowers up !—Is there no military policy, how virgins might blow up men ?

*Par.* Virginity, being blown down, man will quicklier be blown up : marry, in blowing him down again, with the breach yourselves made, you lose your city. It is not politic in the commonwealth of nature, to preserve virginity. Loss of virginity is rational increase ; and there was never virgin got, till virginity was first lost. That, you were made of, is metal to make virgins. Virginity, by being once lost, may be ten times found : by being ever kept, it is ever lost : 'tis too cold a companion ; away with it.

*Hel.* I will stand for't a little, though therefore I die a virgin.

*Par.* There's little can be said in't ; 'tis against the rule of nature. To speak on the part of virginity, is to accuse your mothers ; which is most infallible disobedience. He, that hangs himself, is a virgin : virginity murders itself ; and should be buried in highways, out of all sanctified limit, as a desperate offends against nature. Virginity breeds mites, much like a cheese ; consumes itself to the very paring, and so dies with feeding his own stomach. Besides, virginity is peevish, proud, idle, made of self-love, which is the most inhibited sin in the canon. Keep it not ; you cannot choose but lose by't : Out with't ; within ten years it will make itself ten, which is a goodly increase ; and the principal itself not much the worse : Away with't.

*Hel.* How might one do, Sir, to lose it to her own liking ?

\* *Par.* Let me see : Marry, ill, to like him that ne'er it likes. 'Tis a commodity will lose the gloss with lying ; the longer kept, the less worth : off with't, while 'tis vendible ; answer the time of request. Virginity, like an old courtier, wears her cap out of fashion ; richly suited, but unsuitable : just like the brooch and tooth-pick, which wear not now : Your date \* is better in your pie and your porridge, than in your cheek : And your virginity, your old virginity, is like one of our French withered pears ; it looks ill, it eats dryly ; marry, 'tis a withered pear ; it was formerly better ; marry, yet, 'tis a withered pear : Will you any thing with it ?

*Hel.* Not my virginity yet.

There shall your master have a thousand loves, A mother, and a mistress, and a friend, A phoenix, captain, and an enemy, A guide, a goddess, and a sovereign, A counsellor, a traitress, and a dear ; His humble ambition, proud humility, His jarring concord, and his discord dulcet, His faith, his sweet disaster ; with a world Of pretty, fond, adoptions christendoms, That blinking Cupid gossips. Now shall he— I know not what he shall :—God send him well !—

The court's a learning-place ;—and he is one— *Par.* What one, i' faith ?

\* A quibble on date, which means age, and candied fruit.

*Hel.* That I wish well.—'Tis pity—

*Par.* What's pity?

*Hel.* That wishing well had not a body in't, Which might be felt: that we, the poorer born, Whose baser stars do shut us up in wibes, Might with effects of them follow our friends, And show what we alone must think; \* which Returns us thanks. [never

*Enter a PAGE.*

*Page.* Monsieur Parolles, my lord calls for you.

[*Exit PAGE.*]

*Par.* Little Helen, farewell: if I can remember thee, I will think of thee at court.

*Hel.* Monsieur Parolles, you were born under a charitable star.

*Par.* Under Mars, I.

*Hel.* I especially think, under Mars.

*Par.* Why under Mars?

*Hel.* The wars have so kept you under, that you must needs be born under Mars.

*Par.* When he was predominant.

*Hel.* When he was retrograde, I think, rather.

*Par.* Why think you so?

*Hel.* You go so much backward, when you fight.

*Par.* That's for advantage.

*Hel.* So is running away, when fear proposes the safety: But the composition, that your valour and fear makes in you, is a virtue of a good wing, and I like the wear well.

*Par.* I am so full of businesses, I cannot answer thee acutely: I will return perfect courtier; in the which, my instruction shall serve to naturalize thee, so thou wilt be capable of a courtier's counsel, and understand what advice shall thrust upon thee; else thou diest in thine unthankfulness, and thine ignorance makes thee away: farewell. When thou hast leisure, say thy prayers; when thou hast none, remember thy friends: get thee a good husband, and use him as he uses thee: so farewell. [*Exit.*]

*Hel.* Our remedies oft in ourselves do lie, Which we ascribe to heaven: the fated sky Gives us free scope; only, doth backward pull Our slow designs, when we ourselves are dull. What power is it, which mounts my love so high;

That makes me see, and cannot feed mine eye? The mightiest space in fortune native brings To join like likes, and kiss like native things. † Impossible be strange attempts, to those That weigh their pains in sense; and do suppose

What hath been cannot be: Who ever strove To show her merit, that did miss her love? The king's disease—my project may deceive me. But my intents are fix'd, and will not leave me. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—Paris.—A Room in the King's Palace.

*Flourish of Cornets. Enter the KING OF FRANCE, with letters; LORDS and others attending.*

*King.* The Florentines and Senoys § are by the ears; Have fought with equal fortune, and continue A braving war.

*1 Lord.* So 'tis reported, Sir.

*King.* Nay, 'tis most credible; we here receive it

A certainty, vouch'd from our cousin Austria, With caution, that the Florentine will move us For speedy aid; wherein our dearest friend Prejudicates the business, and would seem To have us make denial.

\* I.e. And show by realities what we now must only think.

† I.e. Thou wilt comprehend it.

‡ Things formed by nature for each other.

§ The citizens of the small republic of which Siena is the capital.

*1 Lord.* His love and wisdom, Approv'd so to your majesty, may plead For amplest credence.

*King.* He hath aim'd our answer, And Florence is denied before he comes: Yet, for our gentlemen, that mean to see The Tuscan service, freely have they leave To stand on either part.

*2 Lord.* It may well serve

A nursery to our gentry, who are sick For breathing and exploit.

*King.* What's he comes here?

*Enter BERTRAM, LAFEU, and PAROLLES.*

*1 Lord.* It is the count Roussillon, my good Young Bertram. [*Lord,*

*King.* Youth, thou bear'st thy father's face; Frank nature, rather curious than in haste, Hath well compos'd thee. Thy father's moral parts

May'st thou inherit too! Welcome to Paris.

*Ber.* My thanks and duty are your majesty's.

*King.* I would I had that corporal soundness now,

As when thy father, and myself, in friendship First tried our soldiership! He did look far

Into the service of the time, and was Discipled of the bravest: he lasted long;

But on us both did haggish age steal on, And wore us out of act. It much repairs \* me

To talk of your good father: In his youth He had the wit, which I can well observe

To-day in our young lords; but they may jest, Till their own scorn return to them unnoted,

Ere they can hide their levity in honour. So like a courtier, contempt not bitterness

Were in his pride or sharpness; if they were, His equal had awak'd them; and his honour,

Clock to itself, knew the true minute when Exception bid him speak, and, at this time,

His tongue obey'd his hand: who were below He used as creatures of another place; [him

And bow'd his eminent top to their low ranks, Making them proud of his humility,

In their poor praise he humbled: Such a man Might be a copy to these younger times;

Which, follow'd well, would demonstrate them But goes backward. [now

*Ber.* His good remembrance, Sir, Lies richer in your thoughts, than on his tomb;

So in approval lives not his epitaph, As in your royal speech.

*King.* 'Would, I were with him! He would always say,

(Methinks, I hear him now; his plausible words He scatter'd not in ears, but grafted them,

To grow there, and to bear.)—*Let me not live,*— Thus his good melancholy oft began,

On the catastrophe and heel of pastime, When it was out,—*Let me not live,* quoth he,

After my flame lacks oil, to be the snuff Of younger spirits, whose apprehensive senses

All but new things disdain; whose judgments are

Mere fathers of their garments; § whose constancies

Expire before their fashions:—This he wish'd, I, after him, do after him wish too,

Since I nor wax nor honey can bring home, I quickly were dissolved from my live,

To give some labourers room.

*2 Lord.* You are lov'd, Sir;

They, that least end it you, shall lack you first.

*King.* I fill a place, I know't.—How long is't, count,

Since the physician at your father's died? He was much fam'd.

*Ber.* Some six months since, my lord.

*King.* If he were living, I would try him yet;—

\* To repair here signifies to renovate.

† His is put for its.

‡ Approbation.

§ Who have no other use of their faculties than to invent new modes of dress.

Lend me an arm; the rest have worn me out  
With several applications:—nature and sickness  
Debate it at their leisure. Welcome, count;  
My son's no dearer.

*Ber.* Thank your majesty. [*Exeunt. Flourish.*]

SCENE III.—Roussillon.—A Room in the  
Countess's Palace.

*Enter* COUNTESS, STEWARD, and CLOWN.\*

*Count.* I will now hear: what say you of this  
gentlewoman?

*Stew.* Madam, the care I have had to even  
your content, + I wish might be found in the  
calendar of my past endeavours; for then we  
wound our modesty, and make foul the clearness  
of our deservings, when of ourselves we publish  
them.

*Count.* What does this knave here! Get you  
gone, sirrah: The complaints I have heard of  
you, I do not all believe; 'tis my slowness, that  
I do not: for, I know, you lack not folly to  
commit them, and have ability enough to make  
such knaveries yours.

*Clo.* 'Tis not unknown to you, madam, I am  
a poor fellow.

*Count.* Well, Sir.

*Clo.* No, madam, 'tis not so well, that I am  
poor; though many of the rich are dammed:  
But, if I may have your ladyship's good will to  
go to the world, † Isbel the woman and I will  
do as we may.

*Count.* Wilt thou needs be a beggar?

*Clo.* I do beg your good-will in this case.

*Count.* In what case?

*Clo.* In Isbel's case and mine own. Service  
is no heritage: and I think I shall never have  
the blessing of God, till I have issue of my body;  
for, they say, bearns ‡ are blessings.

*Count.* Tell me thy reason why thou wilt marry.

*Clo.* My poor body, madam, requires it; I am  
driven on by the flesh; and he must needs go,  
that the devil drives.

*Count.* Is this all your worship's reason?

*Clo.* Faith, madam, I have other holy rea-  
sons, such as they are.

*Count.* May the world know them?

*Clo.* I have been, madam, a wicked creature,  
as you and all flesh and blood are; and indeed,  
I do marry that I may repent.

*Count.* Thy marriage, sooner than thy wicked-  
ness.

*Clo.* I am out of friends, madam; and I hope  
to have friends for my wife's sake.

*Count.* Such friends are thine enemies, knave.

*Clo.* You are shallow, madam; e'en great  
friends; for the knaves come to do that for me,  
which I am a-weary of. He, that ears † my  
land, spares my team, and gives me leave to inn  
the crop: if I be his cuckold, he's my drudge:  
He, that comforts my wife, is the cherisher of  
my flesh and blood, he that cherishes my flesh  
and blood, loves my flesh and blood; he, that  
loves my flesh and blood, is my friend: ergo, ¶  
he that kisses my wife, is my friend. If men  
could be contented to be what they are, there  
were no fear in marriage; for young Charbon  
the puritan, and old Poyssam the papist, how-  
e'er their hearts are severed in religion, their  
heads are both one, they may joll horns to-  
gether, like any deer † the herd.

*Count.* Wilt thou ever be a foul-mouthed and  
calumnious knave?

*Clo.* A prophet I, madam; and I speak the  
truth the next way: \*\*

*For I the ballad will repeat,  
Which men full true shall find;  
Your marriage comes by destiny,  
Your cuckoo sings by kind.*

\* Licensed jesters were formerly maintained by every  
great family to keep up merriment in the house.

† To act up to your desires.

‡ Children.

§ Ploughs.

¶ Therefore

\*\* The nearest way.

*Count.* Get you gone, Sir; I'll talk with you  
more anon.

*Stew.* May it please you, madam, that he bid  
Helen come to you; of her I am to speak.

*Count.* Sirrah, tell my gentlewoman I would  
speak with her; Helen I mean.

*Clo.* Was this fair face the cause, quoth  
she,

[Singing.]

*Why the Grecians sacked Troy?*

*Fond done,\* done fond.*

*Was this king Priam's joy?*

*With that she sighed as she stood,*

*With that she sighed as she stood,*

*And gave this sentence then;*

*Among nine bad if one be good,*

*Among nine bad, if one be good,*

*There's yet one good in ten.*

*Count.* What, one good in ten? you corrup-  
the song, sirrah.

*Clo.* One good woman in ten, madam; which  
is a purifying of the song: 'Would God would  
serve the world so all the year I we'd find no  
fault with the tythe-woman, if I were the par-  
son: One in ten, quoth a'! an we might have  
a good woman born but every blazing star, or  
at an earthquake, 'twould mend the lottery well;  
a man may draw his heart out, ere he pluck  
one.

*Count.* You'll be gone, Sir knave, and do as I  
command you?

*Clo.* That man should be at woman's com-  
mand, and yet, no hurt done!—Though honesty  
be no pain, yet it will do no hurt: it will  
wear the surplice of humility over the black  
gown of a big heart. I am going, forsooth: the  
business is for Helen to come hither.

[*Exit CLOWN.*]

*Count.* Well, now.

*Stew.* I know, madam, you love your gentle  
woman entirely.

*Count.* Faith, I do: her father bequeath-  
her to me: and she herself, without other ad-  
vantage, may lawfully make title to as much  
love as she finds: there is more owing her, than  
is paid; and more shall be paid her, than she  
demands.

*Stew.* Madam, I was very late more near her  
than, I think, she wined me: alone she was  
and did communicate to herself, her own word  
to her own ears: she thought, I dare vow for  
her, they touched not any stranger's sense. Her  
matter was, she loved your son; Fortune, she  
said, was no goddess, that had put such  
diffidence betwixt their two estates; Love, no  
god, that would not extend his might, only  
where qualities were level; Diana, no queen  
of virgins that would suffer her poor knight to  
be surprised, without rescue, in the first assault,  
or ransom afterward: This she delivered in the  
most bitter touch of sorrow, that e'en I heard  
virgin exclaim in: which I held my duty,  
speedily to acquaint you withal; since, † in  
the loss that may happen, it concerns you some-  
thing to know it.

*Count.* You have discharged this honestly;  
keep it to yourself: many likelihoods informed  
me of this before, which hung so tottering in  
the balance, that I could neither believe, nor  
misdoubt: Pray you leave me: stall this in  
your bosom, and I thank you for your honest  
care: I will speak with you further anon.

[*Exit STEWARD.*]

*Enter HELENA.*

*Count.* Even so it was with me, when I was  
young.

If we are nature's, these are our's; this  
thorn

Doth to our rose of youth rightly belong;

Our blood to us, this to our blood is born;

\* Foolishly does.

† Since.

It is the show and seal of nature's truth,  
Where love's strong passion is impress'd in  
your youth:

By our remembrances of days foregone,  
Such were our faults;—or then we thought  
them none.

Her eye is sick out; I observe her now.

*Hel.* What is your pleasure, madam?

*Count.* You know, Helen,

I am a mother to you.

*Hel.* Mine honourable mistress.

*Count.* Nay, a mother;

Why not a mother? When I said a mother,  
Methought you saw a serpent: What's a mo-  
ther,

That you start at it? I say, I am your mother;  
And put you in the catalogue of those  
That were enwomb'd mine: 'Tis often seen,  
Adoption stives with nature; and choice breeds  
A native slip to us from foreign seeds!  
You ne'er oppress'd me with a mother's groans,  
Yet I express to you a mother's care:—  
God's mercy, maiden! does it curd thy blood,  
To say, I am thy mother? What's the matter,  
That this distemper'd messenger of wet,  
The many-colour'd Iris, rounds thine eye?  
Why?—that you are my daughter?

*Hel.* That I am not.

*Count.* I say, I am your mother.

*Hel.* Pardon, madam;

The count Roussillon cannot be my brother.  
I am from humble, he from honour'd name;  
No note upon my parents, his all noble:  
My master, my dear lord he is; and I  
His servant live, and will his vassal die:  
He must not be my brother.

*Count.* Not I your mother?

*Hel.* You are my mother, madam; 'Would  
you were  
(So that my lord, your son, were not my  
brother.)  
Indeed, my mother!—or were you both our  
mothers,

I care no more for,\* than I do for heaven,  
So I were not his sister: Can't no other,  
But, I your daughter, he must be my brother?

*Count.* Yes, Helen, you might be my daughter-  
in-law;  
Could shield, you mean it not! daughter, and  
mother,

So stive† upon your pulse: What, pale again?  
My fear hath catch'd your fondness: Now I see  
The mystery of your loneliness, and find  
Your salt tears' head.‡ Now to all sense 'tis  
cross,

You love my son; invention is ashamed,  
To suit the proclamation of thy passion,  
To say thou dost not: therefore tell me true;  
But tell me then, 'tis so:—for, look, thy cheeks  
Confess it, one to the other; and thine eyes  
See it so grossly shown in thy behaviours,  
That in their kind§ they speak it: only sin  
And hellish obstinacy tie thy tongue,  
That truth should be suspected: Speak, is't so?  
If it be so, you have wound a goodly clue,  
If it be not, forswear't: howe'er, I charge thee,  
As heaven shall work in me for thine avail,  
To tell me truly.

*Hel.* Good madam, pardon me!

*Count.* Do you love my son?

*Hel.* Your pardon, noble mistress!

*Count.* Love you my son?

*Hel.* Do not you love him, madam?

*Count.* Go not about; my love hath in't a  
bond,  
Whereof the world takes note: come, come, dis-  
close

The state of your affection; for your passions  
Have to the full approach'd.

*Hel.* Then, I confess,  
Here on my knee, before high heaven and you,  
That before you, and next unto high heaven,  
I love your son:—

My friends were poor, but honest; so's my  
love:

Be not offended; for it hurts not him,  
That he is lov'd of me: I follow him not  
By any token of presumptuous suit;  
Nor would I have him, till I do deserve him;  
Yet never know how that desert should be.  
I know I love in vain, strive against hope;  
Yet, in this captious and intemperate sieve,  
I still pour in the waters of my love,  
And lack not to lose still: thus Indian-lace,  
Religious in mine error, I adore,  
The sun, that looks upon his worshipper  
But knows of him no more. My dearest ma-  
dam,

Let not your hate encounter with my love,  
For loving where you do: but, if yourself,  
Whose aged honour cites a virtuous youth,\*  
Did ever, in so true a flame of liking,  
With chastely, and love dearly, that your Dian  
Was both herself and love;† oh! then give  
pity

To her, whose state is such, that cannot choose  
But lend and give, where she is sure to lose:  
That seeks not to find that her search implies,  
But, middle-like, lives sweetly where she dies.

*Count.* Had you not lately an intent, speak  
truly,

To go to Paris?

*Hel.* Madam, I had.

*Count.* Wherefore? tell true.

*Hel.* I will tell truth: by grace itself, a  
swear.

You know my father left me some practi-  
tions

Of rare and prov'd effects, such as his reading,  
And manifest experience, had collected  
For general sovereignty; and that he wold me  
In fullest reservation to bestow them,  
As notes, whose faculties inclusive were,  
More than they were in note:‡ amongst the  
rest,

There is a remedy, approv'd, set down,  
To cure the desperate languishes, whereof  
The king is render'd lost.

*Count.* This was your motive

For Paris, was it? speak.

*Hel.* My lord, your son made me to think on  
this;

Else Paris, and the medicine, and the king,  
Had, from the conversation of my thoughts,  
Naturally, been absent then.

*Count.* But think you, Helen,  
If you should tender your supposed aid,  
He would receive it? He and his physicians  
Are of a mind; he, that they cannot help him,  
They, that they cannot help: How shall they  
credit

A poor uncarn'd virgin, when the schools,  
Embowell'd of their doctrine,§ have left off  
The danger to itself?

*Hel.* Their's something hints,  
More than my father's skill, which was the  
greatest

Of his profession, that his good receipt  
Shall, for my legacy, be sanctified  
By the luckiest stars in heaven: and, would  
your honour

But give me leave to try success, I'd venture  
The well-lost life of mine on his grace's cure,  
By such a day and hour.

*Count.* Dost thou believe it?

*Hel.* Ay, madam, knowingly.

*Count.* Why, Helen, thou shalt have my leave  
and love,

\* I.e. I care as much for: I wish it equally.

† Content.

‡ The source, the cause of your grief.

§ According to their nature.

\* I.e. Whose respectable conduct in age proves  
that you were no less virtuous when young.

† I.e. Venus. ‡ Receipts in which greater  
virtues were enclosed than appeared.

§ Exhausted of their skill.

Means and attendants, and my loving greetings  
To those of mine own court : I'll stay at home,  
And pray God's blessing unto thy attempt :  
Be gone to-morrow ; and be sure of this,  
What I can help thee to, thou shalt not miss.

[*Exeunt.*]

# ACT II.

SCENE I.—Paris.—A Room in the King's Palace.

*Flourish.* Enter KING, with young LORDS, taking leave for the Florentine war ; BERTRAM, PAROLLES, and Attendants.

KING. Farewell, young lord, these warlike principles

Do not throw from you :—And you, my lord, farewell ;—

Share the advice betwixt you ; if both gain all,  
The gift doth stretch itself as 'tis receiv'd,  
And is enough for both.

1 LORD. It is our hope, Sir,  
After well-enter'd soldiers, to return  
And find your grace in health.

KING. No, no, it cannot be ; and yet my heart

Will not confess he owes the malady  
That doth my life besiege. Farewell, young lords ;

Whether I live or die, be you the sons  
Of worthy Frenchman : let higher Italy  
(Those 'bated, that inherit but the fall  
Of the last monarchy,\*) see, that you come  
Not to woo honour, but to wed it ; when  
The bravest quantant† shrinks, find what you seek,

That fame may cry you loud : I say, farewell.

2 LORD. Health, at your bidding, serve your majesty !

KING. Those girls of Italy, take heed of them ;

They say, our French lack language to deny,  
If they demand : beware of being captives,  
Before you serve.†

Both. Our hearts receive your warnings.

KING. Farewell.—Come hither to me.

[*The King retires to a couch.*]

1 LORD. O my sweet lord, that you will stay behind us !

PAR. 'Tis not his fault : the spark—

2 LORD. Oh ! 'tis brave wars !

PAR. Most admirable : I have seen those wars.

BER. I am commanded here, and kept a coil § with ;

Too young, and the next year, and 'tis too early.

PAR. An thy mind stand to it, boy, steal away bravely.

BER. I shall stay here the forehorse to a smock,

Creaking my shoes on the plain masonry,  
Till honour be bought up, and no sword worn,  
But one to dance with ! || By heaven, I'll steal away.

1 LORD. There's honour in the theft.

PAR. Commit it, count.

2 LORD. I am your accessory ; and so farewell.

BER. I grow to you, and our parting is a tortured body.

1 LORD. Farewell, captain.

2 LORD. Sweet monsieur Parolles !

PAR. Noble heroes, my sword and your's are

kin. Good sparks and lustrous, a word, good metals :—You shall find in the regiment of the Spinn, one captain Spurio, with his cicatrice, an emblem of war, here on his sinister cheek : it was this very sword entrenched it : say to him, I live ; and observe his reports for me.

2 LORD. We shall, noble captain.

PAR. Mars dote on you for his novices !

[*Exeunt LORDS.*] What will you do ?

BER. Stay ; the king— [ *Seeing him rise.* ]

PAR. Use a more spacious ceremony to the noble lords ; you have restrained yourself within the list of too cold an adieu : be more expressive to them ; for they wear themselves in the cap of the time,\* there, do muster true gait,† eat, speak, and move under the influence of the most received star ; and though the devil lead the measure,§ such are to be followed : after them, and take a more dilated farewell.

BER. And I will do so.

PAR. Worthy fellows ; and like to prove most sinewy swordmen.

[*Exeunt BERTRAM and PAROLLES.*]

Enter LAFEU.

LAF. Pardon, my lord, [*Kneeling.*] for me and for my tidings.

KING. I'll see thee to stand up.

LAF. Then here's a man  
Stands, that has brought his pardon. I would, you

Had kneel'd, my lord, to ask me mercy ; and  
That at my bidding, you could so stand up.

KING. I would I had ; so I had broke thy pate,

And ask'd thee mercy for't.

LAF. Goodfaith, across : §

But my good lord, 'tis thus ; Will you be cur'd  
Of your infirmity ?

KING. No.

LAF. Oh ! will you eat

No grapes, my royal fox ? yes, but you will,  
My noble grapes, as if my royal fox  
Could reach them : I have seen a medicine, ||  
That's able to breathe life into a stone ;  
Quicken a rock, and make you dance canary, ¶  
With sprightly fire and motion ; whose simple touch

Is powerful to araise king Pepin, nay,  
To give great Charlemaun a pen in his hand,  
And write to her a love-line.

KING. What her is this ?

LAF. Why, doctor she : My lord, there's one arriv'd,

If you will see her, now, by my faith and honour,

If seriously I may convey my thoughts  
In this my light deliverance, I have spoke

With one, that, in her sex, her years, profession,\*\*

Wisdom, and constancy, hath amazed me more  
Than I dare blame my weakness : Will you see her

(For that is her demand,) and know her business ?

That done, laugh well at me.

KING. Now, good Lafeu,  
Bring in the admiration : that we with thee  
May spend our wonder too, or take off thine,  
By wond'ring how thou took'st it.

LAF. Nay, I'll fit you,

And not be all day neither. [*Exit LAFEU.*]

KING. Thus he his special nothing ever prologues.

'Re-enter LAFEU with HELENA.

LAF. Nay, come your ways.

\* I.e. Those excepted who possess modern Italy, the remains of the Roman empire.

† Seeker, inquirer.

‡ Be not captives before you are soldiers.

§ With a noise, bustle.

|| In Shakespeare's time it was usual for gentlemen to dance with swords on.

\* They are the foremost in the fashion.

† Have the true military step.

‡ The dance

§ Unskilfully ; a phrase taken from the exercise at a quintaine.

|| A female physician

\*\* A kind of dance.

By profession is meant her declaration of the object of her coming.

*King.* This haste hath wings indeed.

*Laf.* Nay, come your ways;

This is his majesty, say your mind to him :  
A traitor you do look like ; but such traitors  
His majesty seldom fears : I am Cresid's uncle,\*  
That dare leave two together ; fare you well.

[*Exit.*]

*King.* Now, fair one, does your business follow us ?

*Hel.* Ay, my good lord. Gerard de Narbon was

My father ; in what he did profess, well found. †  
*King.* I knew him.

*Hel.* The rather will I spare my praises towards him ;

Knowing him, is enough. On his bed of death  
Many receipts he gave me ; chiefly one,  
Which, as the dearest issue of his practice,  
And of his old experience the only darning,  
He bad me store up, as a triple eye, ‡  
Saler than mine own two, more dear ; I have so :

And, hearing your high majesty is touch'd  
With that malignant cause wherein the honour  
Of my dear father's gift stands chief in power,  
I come to tender it, and my appliance,  
With all bound humbleness.

*King.* We thank you, maiden ;  
But may not be so credulous of cure,  
When our most learned doctors leave us ; and  
The congregated college have concluded  
That labouring art can never ransom nature  
From her maddable estate,—I say we must not  
So stain our judgment, or corrupt our hope,  
To prostitute our past-cure malady  
To empirics ; or to discover so

Our great self and our credit, to esteem  
A senseless help, when help past sense we deem.

*Hel.* My duty then shall pay me for my pains :

I will no more enforce mine office on you ;  
Humbly entreating from your royal thoughts  
A modest one, to bear me back again.

*King.* I cannot give thee less, to be call'd grateful :

Thou thought'st to help me ; and such thanks I give,

As one near death to those that wish him live ;  
But, what at full I know, thou know'st no part ;  
I knowing all my peril, thou no art.

*Hel.* What I can do, can do no hurt to try,  
Since you set up your rest 'gainst remedy :  
He that of greatest works is finisher,  
Giv'st do so them by the weakest minister :

So holy writ in babes hath judgment shown,  
When judges have been babes. § Great floods  
have flown

from simple sources ; || and great seas have  
dried,

When miracles have by the greatest been de-  
m'd. ¶

Off expectation fails, and most oft there  
Where mo'st it promises ; and oft it hits,  
Where hope is coldest, and despair most sits.

*King.* I must not hear thee ; fare thee well,  
kind maid ;

Thy pains, not us'd, must by thyself be paid ;  
Prothers, not took, reap thanks for their re-  
ward.

*Hel.* Inspired merit so by breath is barr'd :  
It is not so with him that all things knows,  
As 'tis with us that square our guess by shows :  
But most it is presumption in us, when  
The help of heaven we count the act of men.  
Dear Sir, to my endeavours give consent ;  
Of heaven, not me, make an experiment.  
I am not an impostor, that proclaim

\* I am like Pandarus.

† Of acknowledged excellence. ‡ A third eye.

§ An allusion to Daniel judging the two elders.

¶ I. e. When Moses smote the rock in flreth.

|| This must refer to the children of Israel passing the Red sea, when miracles had been denied by Pharaoh.

Myself against the level of mine aim ; \*

But know I think, and think I know most sure,  
My heart is not past power, nor you past cure.

*King.* Art thou so confident ? Within what space

Hop'st thou my cure ?

*Hel.* The greatest grace lending grace,  
Ere twice the horses of the sun shall bring  
Their fiery torcher his diurnal ring ;  
Ere twice in morn and occidental damp  
Moist Hesperus † hath quench'd his sleepy lamp ;  
Or four and twenty times the pilot's glass  
Hath told the thievish minutes how they pass ;  
What is infirm from your sound parts shall fly,  
Health shall live free, and sickness freely die.

*King.* Upon thy certainty and confidence,  
What dar'st thou venture ?

*Hel.* Tax of impudence,—

A strumpet's boldness, a divalged shame,—  
Traduc'd by odious ballads my maiden's name  
Sear'd otherwise ; no worse of worst extended,  
With vilest torture let my life be ended.

*King.* Methinks, in thee some blessed spirit  
doth speak ;

His powerful sound, within an organ weak :

And what impossibility would slay

In common sense, sense saves another way.

Thy life is dear : for all, that life can rate

Worth name of life, in thee hath estimate ; ‡

Youth, beauty, wisdom, courage, virtue, all

That happiness and prime § can happy call :

Thou this to hazard, needs must intimate

Skill infinite, or monstrous desperate.

Sweet practitioner, thy physic I will try ;

That ministers thine own death, if I die.

*Hel.* If I break time, or flinch in property

Of what I spoke, unpitied let me die ;

And well deserv'd : Not helping, death's my fee ;

But, if I help, what do you promise me ?

*King.* Make thy demand.

*Hel.* But will you make it even ?

*King.* Ay, by my sceptre, and my hopes of heaven.

*Hel.* Then shalt thou give me, with thy kingly hand,

What husband in thy power, I will command :

Exempted be from me the arrogance

To choose from forth the royal blood of France ;

My low and humble name to propagate

With any branch or image of thy state :

But such a one, thy vassal, whom I know

Is free for me to ask, thee to bestow.

*King.* He is my hand ; the premises ob-  
serv'd,

Thy will by my performance shall be serv'd ;

So make the choice of thy own time ; for I,

Thy resolv'd patient, on thee still rely.

More should I question thee, and more I must :

Though more, to know, could not be more to

trust ;

From whence thou cam'st, how tended on,—

But rest

Unquestion'd welcome, and undoubted blest.—

Give me some help here, ho !—If thou proceed

As high as word, my deed shall match thy deed.

[*Flourish. Exit.*]

## SCENE II.—Rousillon.—A Room in the Countess' Palace.

### Enter COUNTESS AND CLOWN.

*Count.* Come on, Sir ; I shall now put you to the height of your breeding.

*Clo.* I will show myself highly fed, and lowly taught ; I know my business is but to the court.

*Count.* To the court ! why, what place make you special, when you put off that with such contempt ? But to the court !

\* I. e. Pretend to greater things than befits the me-  
diocrity of my condition.

† The evening star.

‡ I. e. May be counted among the gifts enjoyed by  
three.

§ The spring or morning of life.



*Clo.* Truly, madam, if God have lent a man any manners, he may easily put it off at court: he that cannot make a leg, put off's cap, kiss his hand, and say nothing, has neither leg, hands, lip, nor cap; and, indeed, such a fellow, to say precisely, were not for the court: but, for me, I have an answer will serve all men.

*Count.* Marry, that's a bountiful answer, that fits all questions.

*Clo.* It is like a barber's chair, that fits all buttocks; the pin-buttock, the quatch-buttock, the brawn-buttock, or any buttock.

*Count.* Will your answer serve fit to all questions?

*Clo.* As fit as ten groats is for the hand of an attorney, as your French crown for your taffata punk, as Tib's rush for Tom's forefinger, as a pancake for Shrove-Tuesday, a morris for May-day, as the nail to his hole, the cuckold to his horn, as a scolding quean to a wrangling knave, as the nun's lip to the friar's mouth; nay, as the pudding to his skin.

*Count.* Have you, I say, an answer of such fitness for all questions?

*Clo.* From below your duke, to beneath your constable, it will fit any question.

*Count.* It must be an answer of most monstrous size, that must fit all demands.

*Clo.* But a trifle neither, in good faith, if the learned should speak truth of it: here it is, and all that belongs to't: Ask me, if I am a courtier; it shall do you no harm to learn.

*Count.* To be young again, if we could: I will be a fool in question, hoping to be the wiser by your answer. I pray you, Sir, are you a courtier?

*Clo.* O Lord, Sir,—There's a simple putting off;—more, more, a hundred of them.

*Count.* Sir, I am a poor friend of your's, that loves you.

*Clo.* O Lord, Sir,—Thick, thick, spare not me.

*Count.* I think, Sir, you can eat none of this homely meat.

*Clo.* O Lord, Sir,—Nay, put me to't, I warrant you.

*Count.* You were lately whipped, Sir, as I think.

*Clo.* O Lord, Sir,—Spare not me.

*Count.* Do you cry, *O Lord, Sir*, at your whipping, and spare not me? Indeed, your *O Lord, Sir*, is very sequent \* to your whipping; you would answer very well to a whipping, if you were but bound to't.

*Clo.* I ne'er had worse luck in my life, in my —*O Lord, Sir*: I see, things may serve long, but not serve ever.

*Count.* I play the noble housewife with the time, to entertain it so merrily with a fool.

*Clo.* O Lord, Sir,—Why, there't serves well again.

*Count.* An end, Sir, to your business: Give Helen this,

And urge her to a present answer back: Commend her to my kinsmen and my son; This is not much.

*Clo.* Not much commendation to them.

*Count.* Not much employment for you: You understand me?

*Clo.* Most fruitfully; I am there before my legs.

*Count.* Haste you again.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE III.—Paris.—A Room in the King's Palace.

Enter BERTRAM, LAFEU, and PAROLLES.

*Laf.* They say, miracles are past; and we have our philosophical persons, to make modern† and familiar things, supernatural and causeless. Hence is it, that we make trifles of

terrors; ensconcing ourselves into seeming knowledge, when we should submit ourselves to an unknown fear.\*

*Par.* Why, 'tis the rarest argument of wonder, that hath shot out in our latter times.

*Ber.* And so 'tis.

*Laf.* To be relinquished of the artists,—

*Par.* So I say; both of Galen and Paracelsus.

*Laf.* Of all the learned and authentic fellows,—

*Par.* Right, so I say

*Laf.* That gave him out incurable,—

*Par.* Why, there 'tis; so say I too.

*Laf.* Not to be helped,—

*Par.* Right: as 'twere a man assured of 20—

*Laf.* Uncertain life, and sure death.

*Par.* Just, you say well; so would I have said.

*Laf.* I may truly say, it is a novelty to the world.

*Par.* It is, indeed: if you will have it in showing, you shall read it in,—What do you call there?—

*Laf.* A showing of a heavenly effect in an earthly actor.

*Par.* That's it I would have said; the very same.

*Laf.* Why, your dolphin† is not lustier: 'fore me I speak in respect—

*Par.* Nay 'tis strange, 'tis very strange, that is the brief and the tedious of it; and he is of a most facinorous‡ spirit, that will not acknowledge it to be the—

*Laf.* Very haud of heaven.

*Par.* Ay, so I say.

*Laf.* In a most weak—

*Par.* And debile minister, great power, great transcendence: which should, indeed, give us a further use to be made, than alone the recovery of the king, as to be—

*Laf.* Generally thankful.

Enter KING, HELENA, and Attendants.

*Par.* I would have said it; you say well: Here comes the king.

*Laf.* Lustic,§ as the Dutchman says: I'll like a maid the better, whilst I have a tooth in my head: Why, he's able to lead her a coranto.

*Par.* *Mort du Vinsagre!* Is not this Helen?

*Laf.* 'Fore God, I think so.

*King.* Go, call before me all the lords in court.—[*Exit an Attendant.*]

Sit, my preserver, by thy patient's side!

And with this healthful hand, whose banish'd sense

Thou hast repeal'd, a second time receive

The confirmation of my promis'd gut,

Which but attends thy naming.

Enter several LORDS.

Fair maid, send forth thine eye: this youthful parcel

Of noble bachelors stand at thy bestowing,

O'er whom both sovereign power and father's voice||

I have to use: thy frank election make;

Thou hast power to choose, and they none to forsake.

*Hel.* To each of you one fair and virtuous mistress

Fall, when love please!—marry, to each, but one!¶

*Laf.* I'd give bay Curtal,\*\* and his furniture,

My mouth no more were broken than these boys',

And writ as little beard.

*King.* Peruse them well: Not one of those, but had a noble father.

*Hel.* Gentlemen,

\* Fear means here the object of fear.

† The dolphin.

‡ Wicked.

§ Lustic is the Dutch word for lusty, cheerful.

|| They were wards as well as subjects.

¶ Except one, meaning Bertram.

\*\* A docked horse.

\* Properly follows.

† Ordinary.

Heaven hath, through me, restor'd the king to health.

All. We understand it, and thank heaven for you.

Hel. I am a simple maid; and therein wealthiest,

That, I protest, I simply am a maid:—

Please it your majesty, I have done already:

The blushes in my cheeks thus whisper me,

*We blush, that thou should'st choose; but,*

*be refus'd,*

*Let the white death sit on thy cheek for ever:*

*We'll ne'er come there again.*

King. Make choice; and see,

Who shuns thy love, shuns all his love in me.

Hel. Now, Dian, from thy altar do I fly;

And to imperial Love, that god most high,

Do my sighs stream.—Sir, will you hear my suit?

1 Lord. And grant it.

Hel. Thanks, Sir; all the rest is mute.\*

Laf. I had rather be in this choice, than throw ames-ace + for my life.

Hel. The honour, Sir, that flames in your fair eyes,

Before I speak, too threateningly replies:

Love make your fortunes twenty times above

Her that so wishes, and her humble love!

2 Lord. No better, if you please.

Hel. My wish receive,

Which great love giant! and so I take my leave.

Laf. Do all they deny her? An they were sons of mine, I'd have them whipped: or I would send them to the Turk, to make eunuchs of.

Hel. Be not afraid [To a Lord] that I your hand should take;

I'll never do you wrong for your own sake:

Blessing upon your vows! and in your bed

Find fairer fortune, if you ever wed!

Laf. These boys are boys of ice, they'll none have her: sure, they are bastards to the English; the French ne'er got them.

Hel. You are too young, too happy, and too good,

To make yourself a son out of my blood.

3 Lord. Fair one, I think not so.

Laf. There's one grape yet,—I am sure, thy father drank wine.—But if thou be'st not an ass, I am a youth of fourteen; I have known thee already.

Hel. I dare not say, I take you; [To BERTRAM] but I give

Me, and my service, ever whilst I live,

Into your guiding power.—This is the man.

King. Why then, young Bertram, take her, she's thy wife.

Ber. My wife, my liege? I shall beseech your highness,

In such a business give me leave to use The help of mine own eyes.

King. I know'st thou not, Bertram,

What she has done for me?

Ber. Yes, my good lord;

But never hope to know why I should marry her.

King. Thou know'st, she has rais'd me from my sickly bed.

Ber. But follows it, my lord, to bring me down

Must answer for your raising? I know her well;

She had her breeding at my father's charge:

A poor physician's daughter my wife!—Disdain Rather corrupt me ever!

King. 'Tis only title † thou disdain'st in her,

I can build up. Strange is it, that our bloods,

Of colour, weight, and heat, pour'd all together,

Would quite confound distinction, yet stand off In differences so mighty: If she be

All that is virtuous, (save what thou dislike'st  
A poor physician's daughter,) thou dislike'st  
Of virtue for the name: but do not so:  
From lowest place when virtuous things pre-  
ceed,

The place is dignified by the doer's deed:  
Where great additions \* swell, and virtue none,  
It is a drop-sold honour: good alone  
Is good, without a name: vileness is so: †  
The property by what it is should go,  
Not by the title. She is young, wise, fair;  
In these to nature she's immediate heir;  
And these breed honour: that is honour's

scorn,  
Which challenges itself as honour's born,  
And is not like the sire: Honour best thrive,  
When rather from our acts we them derive  
Than our fore-goers: the mere world's a slave  
Debauch'd on every tomb: on every grave,  
A lying trophy, and as oft is dumb,  
Where dust, and damnd oblivion, is the tomb  
Of honour'd bones indeed. What should be  
said?

If thou canst like this creature as a maid,  
I can create the rest: virtue, and she,  
Is her own dower; honour and wealth, from  
me.

Ber. I cannot love her, nor will strive to do't.

King. Thou wrong'st thyself, if thou should'st strive to choose.

Hel. That you are well restor'd, my lord, I am glad;

Let the rest go.

King. My honour's at the stake; which to de-  
feat,

I must produce my power: Here take her hand,  
Proud scornful boy, unworthy this good gift;

That dost in vile misprison shackle up  
My love and her desert; that canst not dream,

W<sup>e</sup>, poisoning us in her defective scale,  
Shall weigh thee to the beam: that wilt not  
know,

It is in us to plant thine honour, where  
We please to have it grow: Check thy con-  
tempt:

Obeys our will, which travails in thy good:  
Believe not thy disdain, but presently

Do thine own fortunes that obedient right,  
Which both thy duty owes, and our power  
claims;

Or I will throw thee from my care for ever,  
Into the staggers, and the careless lapse

Of youth and ignorance; both my revenge and  
hate,

Loosing upon thee in the name of justice,  
Without all terms of pity: Speak; thine an-  
swer.

Ber. Pardon, my gracious lord; for I sub-  
mit

My fancy to your eyes: When I consider,  
What great creation, and what dote of honour,

Flies where you bid it, I find, that she, which  
late

Was in my nobler thoughts most base, is now  
The praised of the king; who, so ennobled,  
Is, as 'twere, born so.

King. Take her by the hand,  
And tell her, she is thine, to whom I promise

A counterpoize; if not to thy estate,  
A balance more replete.

Ber. I take her hand.

King. Good fortune, and the favour of the  
king.

Smile upon this contract; whose ceremony  
Shall seem expedient on the now-born brief,

And be perform'd to-night: the solemn feast  
Shall more attend upon the coming space,

Expecting absent friends. As thou lov'st her,  
Thy love's to me religious; else, does err.

[Exit KING, BERTRAM, HELENA,  
LORDS, and Attendants.]

\* I.e. I have no more to say to you.

† The lowest chance of the dice.

‡ I.e. The want of title.

\* Titles.

† Good is good independent of any worldly distinction, and so is vileness vile.

*Laf.* Do you hear, monsieur? a word with you.

*Par.* Your pleasure, Sir?

*Laf.* Your lord and master did well to make his recantation.

*Par.* Recantation?—My lord? my master?

*Laf.* Ay; Is it not a language, I speak?

*Par.* A most harsh one; and not to be understood without bloody succeeding. My master?

*Laf.* Are you companion to the count Roussillon?

*Par.* To any count; to all counts; to what is man.

*Laf.* To what is count's man; count's master is of another style.

*Par.* You are too old, Sir; let it satisfy you, you are too old.

*Laf.* I must tell thee, sirrah, I write man; to which title age cannot bring thee.

*Par.* What I dare too well do, I dare not do.

*Laf.* I did think thee, for two ordinaries,\* to be a pretty wise fellow; thou didst make tolerable vent of thy travel: It might pass; yet the scarfs, and the bannerets, about thee, did manfully dissuade me from believing thee a vessel of too great a burden. I have now found thee; when I lose thee again, I care not; yet art thou good for nothing but taking up; and that thou art scarce worth.

*Par.* Hadst thou not the privilege of antiquity upon thee,—

*Laf.* Do not plunge thyself too far in anger, lest thou hasten thy trial; which if—Lord have mercy on thee for a hen! So, my good window of lattice, fare thee well; thy casement I need not open, for I look through thee. Give me thy hand.

*Par.* My lord, you give me most egregious indignity.

*Laf.* Ay, with all my heart; and thou art worthy of it.

*Par.* I have not, my lord, deserved it.

*Laf.* Yes, good faith, every dram of it; and I will not bate thee a scruple.

*Par.* Well, I shall be wiser.

*Laf.* 'E'en as soon as thou canst, for thou hast to pull at a smack o'the contrary. If ever thou be'st bound in thy scarf, and beaten, thou shalt find what it is to be proud of thy bondage. I have a desire to hold my acquaintance with thee, or rather my knowledge; that I may say, in the default,† he is a man I know.

*Par.* My lord, you do me most insupportable vexation.

*Laf.* I would it were hell-pains for thy sake, and my poor doing eternal: for doing I am past; as I will by thee, in what motion age will give me leave. [Exit.]

*Par.* Well, thou hast a son shall take this disgrace off me; scurvy, old, filthy, scurvy lord!—Well, I must be patient; there is no fettering of authority. I'll beat him, by my life, if I can meet him with any convenience, an he were double and double a lord. I'll have no more pity of his age, than I would have of—I'll beat him, an if I could but meet him again.

#### Re-enter LAFEU.

*Laf.* Sirrah, your lord and master's married, there's news for you; you have a new mistress.

*Par.* I most unfeignedly beseech your lordship to make some reservation of your wrongs: He is my good lord; whom I serve above, is my master.

*Laf.* Who? God?

*Par.* Ay, Sir.

*Laf.* The devil it is, that's thy master. Why dost thou garter up thy arms o' this fashion? dost make hose of thy sleeves? do other servants so? Thou wert best set thy lower part where thy nose stands. By mine honour, if I were but two hours younger, I'd beat thee:

methinks, thou art a general offence, and every man should beat thee. I think thou wast created for men to breathe\* themselves upon thee.

*Par.* This is hard and undeserved measure, my lord.

*Laf.* Go to, Sir; you were beaten in Italy for picking a kernel out of a pomegranate; you are a vagabond, and no true traveller: you are more saucy with lords, and honourable personages, than the heraldry of your birth and virtue gives you commission. You are not worth another word, else I'd call you knave. I leave you. [Exit.]

#### Enter BERTRAM.

*Par.* Good, very good; it is so then.—Good, very good; let it be concealed a while.

*Ber.* Undone, and forfeited to cares for ever?

*Par.* What is the matter, sweet heart?

*Ber.* Although before the solemn priest I have sworn

I will not bed her.

*Par.* What? what, sweet heart?

*Ber.* O my Paoles, they have married me:—I'll to the Tuscan wars, and never bed her.

*Par.* France is a dog-hole, and it no more means

The tread of a man's foot: to the wars!

*Ber.* There's letters from my mother; what the import is,

I know not yet.

*Par.* Ay, that would be known; To the wars my boy, to the wars!

He wears his honour in a box unseen, That hugs his kiddy-wicksy† here at home: Spending his manly marrow in her arms, Which should sustain the bound and high career Of Mars' fiery steed: To other regions! France is a stable; we that dwell in't, jades; Therefore, to the war!

*Ber.* It shall be so; I'll send her to my house,

Acquaint my mother with my hate to her, And wherefore I am fled; write to the king That which I durst not speak: His present gift

Shall furnish me to those Italian fields, Where noble fellows strike: War is no stuff To the dark house,‡ and the detested wife.

*Par.* Will this capriccio hold in thee, art sure?

*Ber.* Go with me to my chamber, and advise me.

I'll send her straight away: To-morrow

I'll to the wars, she to her single sorrow.

*Par.* Why, these balls bound; there's noise in it.—'Tis hard;

A young man, married, is a man that's married: Therefore away, and leave her bravely; go: The king has done you wrong; but, hush! 'tis so. [Exit.]

#### SCENE IV.—The same.—A Room in the same.

#### Enter HELENA and CLOWN.

*Hel.* My mother greets me kindly: Is she well?

*Clo.* She is not well; but yet she has her health: she's very merry; but yet she is not well: but thanks be given, she's very well, and wants nothing i'the world; but yet she is not well.

*Hel.* If she be very well, what does she ail, that she's not very well?

*Clo.* Truly, she's very well, indeed, but for two things.

*Hel.* What two things?

*Clo.* One, that she's not in heaven, whither God send her quickly! the other, that she's in earth, from whence, God send her quickly!

\* I.e. While I ate twice with thee at dinner.  
† At a need.

\* Exercise. † A cant term for a wife.  
‡ The house made gloomy by discontent.

Enter PAROLLES.

Par. Bless you, my fortunate lady !  
Hel. I hope, Sir, I have your good will to have mine own good fortunes.

Par. You had my prayers to lead them on : and to keep them on, have them still.—O my knave ! How does my old lady ?

Clo. So that you had her wrinkles, and I her money, I would she did as you say.

Par. Why, I say nothing.

Clo. Marry, you are the wiser man ; for many a man's tongue shakes out his master's undoing : To say nothing, to do nothing, to know nothing, and to have nothing, is to be a great part of your title ; which is within a very little of nothing.

Par. Away, thou'rt a knave.

Clo. You should have said, Sir, before a knave thou art a knave ; that is, before me thou art a knave : this had been truth, Sir.

Par. Go to, thou art a witty fool, I have found thee.

Clo. Did you find me in yourself, Sir ? or were you taught to find me ? The search, Sir, was profitable ; and much fool may you find in you, even to the world's pleasure, and the increase of laughter.

Par. A good knave, i'faith, and well fed.—Madam, my lord will go away to-night ; A very serious business calls on him. The great prerogative and right of love, Which, as your due, time claims, he does acknowledge ;

But puts it off by a compell'd restraint ; Whose want, and whose delay, is strewn with sweets,

Which they distil now in the curbed time, To make the coming hour o'erflow with joy, And pleasure drown the brim.

Hel. What's his will else ?

Par. That you will take your instant leave o' the king,

And make this haste as your own good proceeding,

Strengthen'd with what apology you think May make it probable need.\*

Hel. What more commands he ?

Par. That, having this obtain'd, you presently Attend his further pleasure.

Hel. In every thing I wait upon his will.

Par. I shall report it so.

Hel. I pray you.—Come, sirrah. [Exit.]

SCENE V.—Another Room in the same.

Enter LAFEU and BERTRAM.

Laf. But, I hope, your lordship thinks not him a soldier.

Ber. Yes, my lord, and of very valiant appearance.

Laf. You have it from his own deliverance.

Ber. And by other warranted testimony.

Laf. Then my dial goes not true ; I took this lark for a bunting.†

Ber. I do assure you, my lord, he is very great in knowledge, and accordingly valiant.

Laf. I have then sinned against his experience, and transgressed against his valour ; and my state that way is dangerous, since I cannot yet find in my heart to repent. Here he comes ; I pray you, make us friends, I will pursue the amity.

Enter PAROLLES.

Par. These things shall be done, Sir.

[To BERTRAM.]

Laf. Pray you, Sir, who's his tailor ?

Par. Sir ?

Laf. Oh ! I know him well : Ay, Sir ; he, Sir, is a good workman, a very good tailor.

\* A specious appearance of necessity.

† The bunting nearly resembles the sky-lark ; but has little or no song, which gives estimation to the sky lark.

Ber. Is she gone to the king ?

[Aside to PAROLLES.]

Par. She is.

Ber. Will she away to-night ?

Par. As you'll have her.

Ber. I have writ my letters, casketed my treasure,

Given order for our horses ; and to-night, When I should take possession of the bride,—And, ere I do begin,—

Laf. A good traveller is something at the latter end of a dinner ; but one that lies thirds, and uses a known truth to pass a thousand nothings with, should be once heard, and thrice beaten.—God save you, captain.

Ber. Is there any unkindness between my lord and you, monsieur ?

Par. I know not how I have deserved to run into my lord's displeasure.

Laf. You have made shift to run into't, boots and spurs and all, like him that leaped into the custard ; and out of it you'll run again, rather than suffer question for your residence.

Ber. It may be, you have mistaken him, my lord.

Laf. And shall do so ever, though I took him at his prayers. Fare you well, my lord : and believe this of me, There can be no kernel in this light nut ; the soul of this man is his clothes : trust him not in matter of heavy consequence ; I have kept of them tame, and know their natures.—Farewell, monsieur ; I have spoken better of you, than you have or will deserve at my hand ; but we must do good against evil. [Exit.]

Par. An idle lord, I swear.

Ber. I think so.

Par. Why, do you not know him ?

Ber. Yes, I do know him well ; and common speech

Gives him a worthy pass. Here comes my clog.

Enter HELENA.

Hel. I have, Sir, as I was commanded from you,

Spoke with the king, and have procured his leave

For present parting ; only, he desires Some private speech with you.

Ber. I shall obey his will.

You must not marvel, Helen, at my course, Which holds not colour with the time, nor does

The ministration and required office

On my particular : prepar'd I was not

For such a business ; therefore am I found

So much unsettled : This drives me to entreat you,

That presently you take your way for home ;

And rather muse,\* than ask, why I entreat you :

For my respects are better than they seem ;

And my appointments have in them a need,

Greater than shows itself, at the first view,

To you that know them not. This to my mother : [Giving a letter.]

'Till be two days ere I shall see you ; so

I leave you to your wisdom.

Hel. Sir, I can nothing say,

But that I am your most obedient servant.

Ber. Come, come, no more of that.

Hel. And ever shall

With true observance seek to eke out that, Wherein towards me my homely stars have fail'd

To equal my great fortune.

Ber. Let that go ;

My haste is very great : Farewell ; hie home.

Hel. Pray, Sir, your pardon.

Ber. Well, what would you say ?

Hel. I am not worthy of the wealth I owe ; † Nor dare I say, 'tis mine ; and yet it is ;

\* Wonder.

† Possess.

But, like a timorous thief, most fain would steal

What law does vouch mine own.

*Ber.* What would you have?

*Hel.* Something; and scarce so much:—nothing indeed.—

I would not tell you what I would: my lord—  
faith, yes;—

Strangers and foes do sunder and not kiss.

*Bel.* I pray you, stay not, but in haste to horse.

*Hel.* I shall not break your bidding, good my lord.

*Ber.* Where are my other men, monsieur?—  
Farewell. *[Exit HELENA.]*

Go thou toward home; where I will never come,  
Whilst I can shake my sword, or hear the drum:—

Away, and for our flight.

*Par.* Bravely, coragio!

*[Exeunt.]*

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—Florence.—A Room in the DUKE'S Palace.

*Flourish.* Enter the DUKE OF FLORENCE, attended; two French LORDS, and others.

*Duke.* So, that, from point to point, now have you heard

The fundamental reasons of this war;  
Whose great decision hath much blood let forth,

And more thrusts after.

1 *Lord.* Holy seems the quarrel

Upon your grace's part; black and fearful  
On the opposer.

*Duke.* Therefore we marvel much, our cousin France

Would, in so just a business, shut his bosom  
Against our borrowing prayers.

2 *Lord.* Good my lord,

The reasons of our state cannot yield,\*  
But like a common and an outward man,†  
That the great figure of a council frames  
By self-unable motion: therefore dare not  
Say what I think of it; since I have found  
Myself in my uncertain grounds to fail  
As often as I guess'd.

*Duke.* Be it his pleasure.

2 *Lord.* But I am sure, the younger of our  
nature,‡  
That suiteth on their ease, will, day by day,  
Come here for physic.

*Duke.* Welcome shall they be;  
And all the honours, that can fly from us,  
Shall on them settle. You know your places  
well;

When better fall, for your avails they fell:  
To-morrow to the field.

*[Flourish. Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—Rousillon.—A Room in the COUNTESS'S Palace.

Enter COUNTESS and CLOWN.

*Count.* It hath happened all as I would have  
had it, save, that he comes not along with her.

*Clo.* By my troth, I take my young lord to be  
a very melancholy man.

*Count.* By what observance, I pray you?

*Clo.* Why, he will look upon his boot, and  
sing; mend the ruff,§ and sing; ask questions,  
and sing; pick his teeth, and sing: I know a  
man that had this trick of melancholy, sold a  
goodly manor for a song.

*Count.* Let me see what he writes, and when  
he means to come.

*[Opening a letter.]*

\* I. e. I cannot inform you of the reasons.

† One not in the secret of affairs.

‡ As we say at present, our young fellows.

§ The folding at the top of the boot.

*Clo.* I have no mind to Isabel, since I was at  
court: our old ling and our Isbels o'the country  
are nothing like your old ling and your Isbels,  
o'the court: the brains of my Cupid's knocked  
out; and I begin to love, as an old man loves  
money, with no stomach.

*Count.* What have we here?

*Clo.* E'en that you have there.

*[Exit]*

*Count.* *[Reads.]* I have sent you a daughter-in-law: she hath recoined the king, and  
undone me. I have wedded her, not bedded  
her; and sworn to make the not eternal.  
You shall hear I am run away; know it,  
before the report come. If there be breadth  
enough in the world, I will hold a long distance.  
My duty to you.

Your unfortunate son,

BERTRAM.

This is not well, rash and unbridled boy,  
To fly the favours of so good a king;  
To pluck his indignation on thy head,  
By the misprizing of a maid too virtuous  
For the contempt of empire.

Re-enter CLOWN.

*Clo.* O madam, yonder is heavy news within,  
between two soldiers and my young lady.

*Count.* What is the matter?

*Clo.* Nay, there is some comfort in the news,  
some comfort; your son will not be killed so  
soon as I thought he would.

*Count.* Why should he be killed?

*Clo.* So say I, madam, if he run away, as I  
hear he does: the danger is in standing to't;  
that's the loss of men, though it be the getting  
of children. Here they come, will tell you  
more: for my part, I only hear, your son was  
run away. *[Exit CLOWN.]*

Enter HELENA and two GENTLEMEN.

1 *Gen.* Save you, good madam.

*Hel.* Madam, my lord is gone, for ever  
gone.

2 *Gen.* Do not say so.

*Count.* Think upon patience.—'Pray you,  
gentlemen,—

I have felt so many quirks of joy and grief,  
That the first face of neither, on the start,  
Can woman\* me unto't:—Where is my son, I  
pray you?

2 *Gen.* Madam, he's gone to serve the duke of  
Florence:

We met him thitherward; from thence we  
came,

And, after some despatch in hand at court,  
Thither we bend again.

*Hel.* Look on his letter, madam; here's my  
passport

*[Reads.]* When thou canst get the ring upon  
my finger,† which never shall come off  
and show me a child begotten of thy body  
that I am father to, then call me husband.  
but in such a then I write a never.

This is a dreadful sentence.

*Count.* Brought you this letter, gentlemen?

1 *Gen.* Ay, madam;

And, for the contents' sake, are sorry for our  
pains.

*Count.* I pry'thee, lady, have a better cheer;  
if thou engrosses't all the griefs are thine,‡

Thou rob'st me of a moiety: He was my  
son;

But I do wash his name out of my blood,  
And thou art all my child.—Towards Florence  
is he?

2 *Gen.* Ay, madam.

*Count.* And to be a soldier?

2 *Gen.* Such is his noble purpose: and, be-  
lieve't,

\* I. e. Affect me suddenly and deeply, as our sex are  
usually affected.

† I. e. When you can get the ring which is on my finger  
into your possession.

‡ If thou keepst all thy sorrows to thyself.

The duke will lay upon him all the honour  
That good convenience claims.

Count. Return you thither?

1 Gen. Ay, madam, with the swiftest wing of speed.

Hcl. [Reads.] Till I have no wife, I have nothing in France.

'Tis bitter.

Count. Find you that there?

Hcl. Ay, madam.

1 Gen. 'Tis but the boldness of his hand, haply, which

His heart was not consenting to

Count. Nothing in France, until he have no wife!

There's nothing here, that is too good for him, But only she; and she deserves a lord, That twenty such rude boys might tend upon, And call her hourly, mistress. Who was with him?

1 Gen. A servant only, and a gentleman Which I have some time known.

Count. Parolles, wasn't not?

1 Gen. Ay, my good lady, he.

Count. A very tainted fellow, and full of wickedness.

My son corrupts a well-derived nature With his inducement.

1 Gen. Indeed, good lady, The fellow has a deal of that, too much, Which holds him much to have.

Count. You are welcome, gentlemen, I will entreat you, when you see my son, to tell him, that his sword can never win The honour that he loses: more I'll entreat you

Written to bear along.

2 Gen. We serve you, madam,

In that and all your worthiest affairs.

Count. Not so, but as we change our courtesies.\* Will you draw near?

[Enter COUNTESS and GENTLEMEN.]

Hcl. Till I have no wife, I have nothing in France.

Nothing in France, until he has no wife!

Thou shalt have none, Rousillon, none in France,

Then hast thou all again. Poor lord! is't I That chase thee from thy country, and expose Those tender limbs of thine to the event Of the noise-sparring war? and is it I That drive thee from the sportive court, where thou

Wast shot at with fair eyes, to be the mark Of snaky muskets? O you leaden messengers, That ride upon the violent speed of fire, Fly with false aim; move the still-piercing air, That sings with piercing, do not touch my lord!

Whoever shoots at him, I set him there; Whoever charges on his forward breast, I am the catiff, that do hold him to it; And, though I kill him not, I am the cause His death was so affected: better 'twere, I met the ravin lion when he roar'd With sharp constraint of hunger; better 'twere That all the miseries, which nature owes, Were mine at once: No, come thou home,

Rousillon,

Whence honour but of danger wins a scar, As oft it loses all; I will be gone: My being here it is, that keeps thee hence: Shall I stay here to do't? no, no, although The air of paradise did fan the house, And angels offic'd all: I will be gone; That pitiful rumour may report my flight, To console thee ear. Come, night; end, day!

For, with the dark, poor thief, I'll steal away.

[Exit.]

\* In reply to the gentlemen's declaration that they are her servants, the countess answers—no otherwise than as she returns the same offers of civility.  
† Ravenous

SCENE III.—Florence.—Before the DUKE'S Palace.

Flourish. Enter the DUKE OF FLORENCE, BERTRAM, LORDS, Officers, Soldiers, and others.

Duke. The general of our horse thou art; and we, Great in our hope, lay our best love and credence, Upon thy promising fortune.

Ber. Sir, it is A charge too heavy for my strength; but yet We'll strive to bear it for your worthy sake To the extreme edge of hazard.

Duke. Then go thou forth; And fortune play upon thy prosperous helm, As thy auspicious mistress!

Ber. This very day, Great Mars, I put myself into thy file: Make me but like my thoughts; and I shall prove

A lover of thy drum, hater of love. [Exeunt]

SCENE IV.—Rousillon.—A Room in the COUNTESS' Palace.

Enter COUNTESS and STEWARD.

Count. Alas! and would you take the letter of her?

Might you not know, she would do as she has done, By sending me a letter? Read it again.

Steu. I am Saint Jaques' pilgrim, thither gone;

Ambitious love hath so in me offended, That bare-foot plod I the cold ground upon, With sainted vow my faults to have amended.

Write, write, that, from the bloody course of war,

My dearest master, your dear son may lie; Bless him at home in peace, whilst I from far,

His name with zealous fervour sanctify: His taken labours bid him me forgive:

I, his despicable Juno,\* sent him forth From courtly friends, with camping foes to live,

Where death and danger dog the heels of worth:

'Tis too good and fair for death and me; Whom I myself embrace, to set him free.

Count. Ah! what sharp stings are in her mildest words!—

Rinaldo, you did never lack advice; so much, As letting her pass so; had I spoke with her, I could have well diverted her intents, Which thus she hath prevented.

Steu. Pardon me, madam: if I had given you this at over-night, She might have been o'erta'en; and yet she writes,

Pursuit would be in vain.

Count. What angel shall Bless this unworthy husband? he cannot thrive, Unless her prayers, whom Heaven delights to hear,

And loves to grant, relieve him from the wrath Of greatest justice.—Write, write, Rinaldo,

To this unworthy husband of his wife; Let every word weigh heavy of her worth,

That he does weigh too light: my greatest grief,

Though little he do feel it, set down sharply. Despatch the most convenient messenger:—

When haply, he shall hear that she is gone, He will return; and hope I may, that she,

Hearing so much, will speed her foot again, Led hither by pure love: which of them both

Is dearest to me, I have no skill in sense

\* Alluding to the story of Heracles.

† Discretion or thought.

‡ Weigh here means to value or esteem.

To make distinction:—Provide this messenger:—

My heart is heavy, and mine age is weak;  
Grief would have tears, and sorrow bids me speak. *[Exit]*

SCENE V.—Without the walls of Florence.

*A tucket afar off. Enter an old WIDOW of Florence, DIANA, VIOLENTA, MARIANA, and other Citizens.*

*Wid.* Nay, come; for if they do approach the city, we shall lose all the sight.

*Dia.* They say, the French count has done most honourable service.

*Wid.* It is reported that he has taken their greatest commander; and that with his own hand he slew the duke's brother. We have lost our labour; they are gone a contrary way: hark! you may know by their trumpets.

*Mar.* Come, let's return again, and suffice ourselves with the report of it. Well, Diana, take heed of this French earl: the honour of a maid is her name; and no legacy is so rich as honesty.

*Wid.* I have told my neighbour, how you have been solicited by a gentleman his companion.

*Mar.* I know that knave; hang him! one Parolles: a filthy officer he is in those suggestions\* for the young earl.—Beware of them, Diana; their promises, enticements, oaths, tokens, and all these engines of lust, are not the things they go under:† many a maid hath been seduced by them; and the misery is, example, that so terrible shows in the wreck of maidenhood, cannot for all that dissuade succession, but that they are lured with the twigs that threaten them. I hope I need not to advise you further; but I hope your own grace will keep you where you are, though there were no further danger known, but the modesty which is so lost.

*Dia.* You shall not need to fear me.

*Enter HELENA, in the dress of a Pilgrim.*

*Wid.* I hope so.—Look, here comes a pilgrim: I know she will lie at my house: thither they send one another: I'll question her.—God save you, pilgrim! whither are you bound?

*Hel.* To Saint Jacques le grand.

Where do the palmers lodge, I do beseech you?

*Wid.* At the saint Francis here, beside the port.

*Hel.* Is this the way?

*Wid.* Ay, inarry, is it.—Hark you!

*[A march afar off.]* They come this way:—If you will tarry, holy pilgrim,

But till the troops come by, I will conduct you where you shall be lodg'd; The rather, for, I think, I know your hostess As ample as myself.

*Hel.* Is it yourself?

*Wid.* If you shall please so, pilgrim.

*Hel.* I thank you, and will stay upon your leisure.

*Wid.* You came, I think from France?

*Hel.* I did so.

*Wid.* Here you shall see a countryman of yours,

That has done worthy service.

*Hel.* His name, I pray you.

*Dia.* The count Roussillon: Know you such a one?

*Hel.* But by the ear that bears most nobly of him:

His face I know not.

*Dia.* Whatsoever he is, He's bravely taken here. He stole from France, As 'tis reported, for the king had married him Against his liking: Think you it is so?

*Hel.* Ay, surely, mere the truth;† I know his lady.

*Dia.* There is a gentleman, that serves the count,

Reports but coarsely of her.

*Hel.* What's his name?

*Dia.* Monsieur Parolles

*Hel.* Oh! I believe with him, In argument of praise, or to the worth Of the great count himself, she is too mean To have her name repeated; all her deserving is a reserved honesty, and that I have not heard examin'd.

*Dia.* Alas, poor lady! 'Tis a hard bondage, to become the wife Of a detesting lord.

*Wid.* A right good creature: whosoever she is,

Her heart weighs sadly: this young maid might do her

A shrewd turn if she pleas'd.

*Hel.* How do you mean?

May be, the amorous count solicits her In the unlawful purpose.

*Wid.* He does, indeed; And brokes; with all that can in such a suit Corrupt the tender honour of a maid: But she is arm'd for him, and keeps her guard In honestest defence.

*Enter with drum and colours, a party of the Florentine army, BERTRAM, and PAROLLES.*

*Mar.* The gods forbid else!

*Wid.* So, now they come:—

That is Antonio, the duke's eldest son,

That, Escalus.

*Hel.* Which is the Frenchman?

*Dia.* He;

That with the plume: 'tis a most gallant fellow;

I would, he lov'd his wife: if he were honest

er, He were much goodlier: Is't not a handsome gentleman?

*Hel.* I like him well.

*Dia.* 'Tis pity, he is not honest: Yond's that

same knave,

Tat leads him to these places; were I his lady,

I'd poison that vile rascal.

*Hel.* Which is he?

*Dia.* That Jack-an-apes with scarfs: Why is he melancholy?

*Hel.* Perchance he's hurt i'the battle.

*Par.* Lose our drum! well.

*Mar.* He's shrewdly vexed at something:

Look, he has spied us.

*Wid.* Marry, hang you!

*Mar.* And your courtesy, for a ring-carrier! *[Exit BERTRAM, PAROLLES, Officers and Soldiers.]*

*Wid.* The troop is past: Come, pilgrim, I

will bring you

Where you shall host: of enjoin'd penitents

There's four or five, to great Saint Jacques bound,

Already at my house.

*Hel.* I humbly thank you:

Please it this matron, and this gentle maid, To eat with us to-night, the charge, and thank-

ing,

Shall be for me; and, to requite you further,

I will bestow some precepts on this virgin,

Worthy the note.

*Both.* We'll take your offer kindly. *[Exit.]*

\* Temptations.

† They are not the things for which their names would make them pass.

‡ Pilgrims: so called from a staff or bough of palm they were wont to carry.

\* Because.

† The exact, the entire truth.  
‡ Desires with good reason.

SCENE VI.—Camp before Florence.

Enter BERTRAM, and the two French Lords.

1 Lord. Nay, good my lord, put him to't; let him have his way.

2 Lord. If your lordship find him not a bludge,\* hold me no more in your respect.

1 Lord. On my life, my lord, a bubble.

Ber. Do you think I am so far deceiv'd in him?

1 Lord. Believe it, my lord, in mine own direct knowledge, without any malice, but to speak of him as my kinsman, he's a most notable coward, an infinite and endless liar, an hourly promise breaker, the owner of no one good quality worthy your lordship's entertainment.

2 Lord. It were fit you knew him; lest, relying too far in his virtue, which he hath not, he might at some great and trusty business, in a man danger, fail you.

Ber. I would, I knew in what particular action to try him.

2 Lord. None better than to let him fetch off his drum, which you hear him so confidently undertake to do.

1 Lord. I, with a troop of Florentines, will suddenly surprise him; such I will have, whom I am sure, he knows not from the enemy: we will bind and hood-wink him so, that he shall suppose no other but that he is carried into the league† of the adversaries, when we bring him to our tents: Be but your lordship present at his execution, if he do not, for the promise of his life, and in the highest compulsion of base fear, offer to betray you, and deliver all the intelligence in his power against you, and that with the divine forfeit of his soul upon oath, never trust my judgment in any thing.

2 Lord. Oh! for the love of laughter, let him fetch his drum, he says he has a stratagem for't when your lordship sees the bottom of his success n't, and to what metal this counterfeit lump of ore will be melted, if you give him not John Drum's entertainment, your inching cannot be removed. Here he comes.

Enter PAROLLES.

1 Lord. Oh! for the love of laughter, hinder not the humour of his design; let him fetch off his drum in any hand.

Ber. How now, monsieur? this drum sticks sorely in your disposition.

2 Lord. A pox on't, let it go; 'tis but a drum.

Par. But a drum! Is't but a drum? A drum so lost!—There was an excellent command: to charge in with our horse upon our own wings, and to rend our own soldiers.

2 Lord. That was not to be blamed in the command of the service; it was a disaster of war that Cæsar himself could not have prevented, if he had been there to command.

Ber. Well, we cannot greatly condemn our success: some dishonour we had in the loss of that drum; but it is not to be recovered.

Par. It might have been recovered.

Ber. It might, but it is not now.

Par. It is to be recovered: but the merit of service is seldom attributed to the true and exact performer, I would have that drum or another, or his jacket.‡

Ber. Why, if you have a stomach to't, monsieur, if you think your mystery in stratagem can bring this instrument of honour again into his native quarter, be magnanimous in the enterprise, and go on; I will grace the attempt for a worthy exploit; if you speed well in it, the duke shall both speak of it, and extend to

you what further becomes his greatness, even to the utmost syllable of your worthiness.

Par. By the hand of a soldier, I will undertake it.

Ber. But you must not now slumber in it.

Par. I'll about it this evening; and I will presently pen down my dilemma,\* encourage myself in my certainty, put myself into my mortal preparation, and by midnight, look to hear further from me.

Ber. May I be hold to acquaint his grace, you are gone about it?

Par. I know not what the success may be, my lord; but the attempt I vow.

Ber. I know thou art valiant; and, to the possibility of thy soldiiership, will subscribe for thee. Farewell.

Par. I have not many words.

[Exit.]

1 Lord. No more than a fish loves water.—Is not this a strange fellow, my lord? that so confidently seems to undertake this business, which he knows is not to be done; damns himself to do, and dares better be damned than to do't.

2 Lord. You do not know him, my lord, as we do: certain it is, that he will steal himself into a man's favour, and, for a week, escape a great deal of discoveries; but when you find him out, you have him ever after.

Ber. Why, do you think, he will make no deed at all of this, that so seriously he does address himself unto?

1 Lord. None in the world; but return with an invention, and clap upon you two or three probable lies: but we have almost embossed him;† you shall see his fall to-night; for indeed, he is not for your lordship's respect.

2 Lord. We'll make you some sport with the fox, ere we case him.‡ He was first smoked by the old lord Lafen: when his disguise and he is part, tell me what a sprat you shall find him: which you shall see this very night.

1 Lord. I must go look my twigs; he shall be caught.

Ber. Your brother, he shall go along with me.

1 Lord. As't please your lordship: I'll leave you.

[Exit.]

Ber. Now will I lead you to the house, and show you

The lass I spoke of

2 Lord. But, you say, she's honest.

Ber. That's all the fault: I spoke with her but once, And found her wondrous cold; but I sent to her,

By this same cockcomb that we have i'the wind, Tokens and letters which she did re-send;

And this is all I have done; She's a fair creature;

Will you go see her?

2 Lord. With all my heart, my lord.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE VII.—Florence.—A Room in the Widow's House.

Enter HELENA and WIDOW.

Hel. If you misdoubt me that I am not she, I know not how I shall assure you further, But I shall lose the grounds I work upon.‡

Wid. Though my estate be fallen, I was well born,

Nothing acquainted with these businesses;

And would not put my reputation now

In any staining act.

Hel. Nor would I wish you.

First give me trust, the count he is my husband;

\* A paltry fellow, a coward.

† The camp.

‡ I would recover the lost drum or another, or die in the attempt.

\* I will pen down my plans and the probable obstructions.

† Hunted him down.

‡ Before we strip him naked.

§ I.e. By discovering herself to the count.



And, what to your sworn counsel I have spoken,  
Is so, from word to word; and then you cannot,  
By the good aid that I of you shall borrow,  
Err in bestowing it.

*Wid.* I should believe you:

For you have show'd me that which well approves  
You are great in fortune.

*Hel.* Take this purse of gold,  
And let me buy your friendly help thus far,  
Which I will over-pay, and pay again,  
When I have found it. The count he woos your  
daughter,

Lays down his wanton siege before her beauty,  
Resolves to carry her; let her, in fine, consent,  
As we'll direct her how 'tis best to bear it,  
Now his important blood will nought deny  
That she'll demand: A ring the county wears,  
That downward hath succeeded in his house,  
From son to son, some four or five descents  
Since the first father wore it; this ring he holds  
In most rich choice; yet, in his idle fire,  
To buy his will, it would not seem too dear,  
Howe'er repented after.

*Wid.* Now I see

The bottom of your purpose.

*Hel.* You see it lawful then: It is no more,  
But that your daughter, ere she seems as won,  
Desires this ring; appoints him an encounter;  
In fine, delivers me to fill the time,  
Herself most chaste absent: after this,  
To marry her, I'll add three thousand crowns  
To what is past already.

*Wid.* I have yielded:

Instruct my daughter how she shall persevere.  
That time and place, with this deceit so lawful,  
May prove coherent. Every night he comes,  
With musicks of all sorts, and songs compos'd  
To her unworthiness: It nothing stands us,  
To chide him from our eaves; for he persists,  
As if his life lay on't.

*Hel.* Why then, to-night  
Let us assay our plot; which, if it speed,  
Is wicked meaning in a lawful deed,  
And lawful meaning in a lawful act;  
Where both not sin, and yet a sinful fact:  
But let's about it. *(Exit Count.)*

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—Without the Florentine Camp.

*Enter first LORD, with five or six Soldiers in ambush.*

*1 Lord.* He can come no other way but by  
this hedge' corner: When you sally upon him,  
speak what terrible language you will; though  
you understand it not yourselves, no matter: for  
we must not seem to understand him; unless  
some one among us, whom we must produce for  
an interpreter.

*1 Sold.* Good captain, let me be the inter-  
preter.

*1 Lord.* Art not acquainted with him? knows  
he not thy voice?

*1 Sold.* No, Sir, I warrant you.

*1 Lord.* But what husky-woolsy hast thou to  
speak to us again?

*1 Sold.* Even such as you speak to me.

*1 Lord.* You must think us some band  
of strangers to the adversary's entertainment. § Now  
we had a smuck of all neighbouring languages;  
therefore we must every one be a man of his  
own fancy, not to know what we speak one to  
another; so we seem to know, is to know  
straight our purpose: enough's language, gab-  
ble enough, and good enough. As for you, inter-  
preter, you must seem very politic. But cough,

ho! here he comes; to beguile two hours in a  
sleep, and then to return and swear the lies he  
forgets.

##### Enter PAROLLES.

*Par.* Ten o'clock: within these three hours  
'twill be time enough to go home. What shall  
I say I have done? It must be a very plausible  
invention that carries it: They begin to smoke  
me; and disgraces have of late knocked too often  
at my door. I find, my tongue is too fool-hardy;  
but my heart hath the fear of Mars before it, and  
of his creatures, not daring the reports of my  
tongue.

*1 Lord.* This is the first truth that e'er thine  
own tongue was guilty of. *(Aside.)*

*Par.* What the devil should move me to un-  
dertake the recovery of this drum; being not  
ignorant of the impossibility, and knowing I had  
no such purpose? I must give myself some hurts,  
and say, I got them in exploit: Yet slight ones  
will not carry it: They will say, Came you off  
with so little? and great ones I dare not give.  
Wherefore? what's the instance? Tongue, I  
must put you into a butter-woman's mouth, and  
buy another of Bajazet's mule, if you prattle me  
into these perils.

*1 Lord.* Is it possible, he should know what  
he is, and be that he is? *(Aside.)*

*Par.* I would the cutting of my garments would  
serve the turn; or the breaking of my Spanish  
sword.

*1 Lord.* We cannot afford you so. *(Aside.)*

*Par.* Or the baring of my beard; and to say,  
it was in stratagem.

*1 Lord.* 'Twould not do. *(Aside.)*

*Par.* Or to drown my clothes, and say I was  
stripped.

*1 Lord.* Hardly serve. *(Aside.)*

*Par.* Though I swore I leaped from the win-  
dow of the citadel—

*1 Lord.* How deep? *(Aside.)*

*Par.* Thirty fathom.

*1 Lord.* Three great oaths would scarce make  
that be believed. *(Aside.)*

*Par.* I would I had any drum of the enemy's;  
I would swear I recovered it.

*1 Lord.* You shall hear one anon. *(Aside.)*

*Par.* A drum now of the enemy's!

*(Alarum within.)*

*1 Lord.* Throca motousus, cargo, cargo,  
carga.

*All.* Cargo, cargo, zillianda par corbo,  
carga.

*Par.* Oh! ransom, ransom!—Do not hide mine  
eyes. *(They seize him and blindfold him.)*

*1 Sold.* Boskos thromuldo boskos.

*Par.* I know you are the Muskos' regiment.  
And I shall lose my life for want of language:  
Is there be here German, or Dane, low Dutch,  
Italian, or French, let him speak to me,  
I will discover that which shall undo  
The Florentine.

*1 Sold.* Boskos zaurado!—  
I understand thee, and can speak thy tongue:—

*Acrclybonto!*—Sir,  
Betake thee to thy faith, for seventeen poniards  
Are at thy bosom.

*Par.* Oh!

*1 Sold.* O pray, pray, pray,—  
*Manka rucania dulche.*

*1 Lord.* Oscorbi dulchos volitoria.

*1 Sold.* The general is content to spare thee  
yet;

And, hood-wink'd as thou art, wilt lead thee on  
To gather from thee: haply thou may'st inform  
Something to save thy life.

*Par.* Oh! let me live,  
And all the secrets of our camp I'll show,  
Their force, their purposes: nay, I'll speak that  
Which you will wonder at.

*1 Sold.* But wilt thou faithfully?

*Par.* If I do not, damn me.

\* The prison.

\* Imperceptive. † I.e. Count.  
‡ From under our windows.  
§ I.e. foreign troops in the enemy's pay.  
|| A bird like a jack-daw.

1 *Sold.* *Acordo Unta.*—  
Come on, thou art granted space.

[*Exit, with PAROLLES guarded.*]

1 *Lord.* Go, tell the count Roussillon, and my brother,  
We have caught the woodcock, and will keep him muffled,  
Till we do hear from them.

2 *Sold.* Captain, I will.

1 *Lord.* He will betray us all unto ourselves;—  
Inform 'em that.

2 *Sold.* So I will, Sir.

1 *Lord.* Till then, I'll keep him dark, and safely lock'd. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*Florence.—A Room in the Widow's House.*

*Enter BERTRAM and DIANA.*

*Ber.* They told me, that your name was Fonthell.

*Dia.* No, my good lord, Diana.

*Ber.* Titled goddess;

And worth it, with addition! But, fair soul,  
In your fine frame hath love no quality?  
If the quick eye of youth light not your mind,  
You are no maiden, but a monument:  
When you are dead, you should be such a one  
As you are now, for you are cold and stern;  
And now you should be as your mother was,  
When your sweet self was got.

*Dia.* She then was honest.

*Ber.* So should you be.

*Dia.* No:

My mother did but duty; such, my lord,  
As you owe to your wife.

*Ber.* No more of that!

I pr'ythee, do not strive against my vows: \*  
I was compelled to her; but I love thee  
By love's own sweet constraint, and will for ever

Do thee all rights of service.

*Dia.* Ay, so you serve us,  
Till we serve you: but when you have our roses,

You barely leave our thorns to prick ourselves,  
And mock us with our bareness.

*Ber.* How have I sworn?

*Dia.* 'Tis not the many oaths that make the truth;

But the plain single vow, that is vow'd true,  
What is not holy, that we swear not by,  
But take the Highest to witness: † Then, pray you, tell me,

If I should swear by Jove's great attributes,  
I lov'd you dearly, would you believe my oath,  
When I did love you ill? this has no holding,  
To swear by him whom I protest to love,  
That I will work against him: Therefore, your oaths

Are words, and poor conditions; but unseal'd;

At least, in my opinion.

*Ber.* Change it, change it;  
Be not so holy cruel: love is holy;  
And my integrity ne'er knew the crafts,  
That you do charge men with: Stand no more off,

But give thyself unto my sick desires,  
Who then recover: say, thou art mine, and ever  
My love, as it begins, shall so persevere.

*Dia.* I see, that men make hopes, in such affairs,

That we'll forsake ourselves. Give me that ring.

*Ber.* I'll lend it thee, my dear, but have no power

To give it from me.

*Dia.* Will you not, my lord?

*Ber.* It is an honour 'longing to our house,

\* I e. Against his determined resolution never to cohabit with Helen.

† The scene is: we never swear by what is not holy, but take to witness the Highest, the Divinity.

Bequeathed down from many ancestors:  
Which were the greatest obloquy i'the world  
In me to lose.

*Dia.* Mine honour's such a ring:  
My chastity's the jewel of our house,  
Bequeathed down from many ancestors;  
Which were the greatest obloquy i'the world  
In me to lose: Thus your own proper wisdom  
Brings in the champion honour on my part,  
Against your vain assault.

*Ber.* Here, take my ring:

My house, mine honour, yea, my life be thine,  
And I'll be bid by thee.

*Dia.* When midnight comes, knock at my chamber window;

I'll order take, my mother shall not hear,  
Now will I charge you in the band of truth,  
When you have conquer'd my yet maiden bed,  
Remain there but an hour, nor speak to me:  
My reasons are most strong; and you shall know

When back again this ring shall be deliver'd:

And on your finger, in the night, I'll put  
Another ring; that, what in time proceeds,  
May token to the future our past deeds.  
Adieu till then: then, fail not: You have won  
A wife of me, though there my hope be done.

*Ber.* A heaven on earth I have won, by wooing thee. [*Exit.*]

*Dia.* For which live long to thank both heaven and me!

You may so in the end.—

My mother told me just how he would woo,  
As it she sat in his heart; she says, all men  
Have the like oaths: he had sworn to marry me,  
When his wife's dead, therefore I'll lie with him,

When I am buried. Since Frenchmen are so braud,\*

Marry that will, I'll live and die a maid:

Only, in this disguise, I think't no sin  
To cozen him, that would unjustly win.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*The Florentine Camp.*

*Enter the two French Lords, and two or three Soldiers.*

1 *Lord.* You have not given him his mother's letter?

2 *Lord.* I have delivered it an hour since:  
there is something in't that stings his nature:  
for, on the reading it, he changed almost into another man.

1 *Lord.* He has much worthy blame laid upon him,  
for shaking off so good a wife, and so sweet a lady.

2 *Lord.* Especially he hath incurred the everlasting displeasure of the king, who had entrusted his bounty to sing happiness to him.  
I will tell you a thing, but you shall let it dwell darkly with you.

1 *Lord.* When you have spoken it, 'tis dead, and I am the grave of it.

2 *Lord.* He hath perverted a young gentleman here in Florence, of a most chaste renown; and this night he fleshes his will in the spoil of her honour: he hath given her his monumental ring, and thinks himself made in the unchaste composition.

1 *Lord.* Now, God delay our rebellion; as we are ourselves, what things are we!

2 *Lord.* Merely our own traitors. And as in the common course of all treasons, we still see them reveal themselves, till they attain to their abhorred ends; so he, that in this action contrives against his own nobility, in his proper stream o'erflows himself. †

1 *Lord.* Is it not meant damnable † in us, to be trumpeters of our unlawful intents? We shall not then have his company to-night?

\* Crafty, deceitful.

† I e. Betrays his own secrets in his own tale.

‡ Here, as elsewhere, used adverbially.

2 Lord. Not till after midnight; for he is detested to his hour.

1 Lord. That approaches apace: I would gladly have him see his company\* anatomised; that he might take a measure of his own judgments, wherein so curiously he had set this counterfeit.

2 Lord. We will not meddle with him till he come; for his presence must be the whip of the other.

1 Lord. In the mean time, what hear you of these ways?

2 Lord. I hear, there is an overture of peace.

1 Lord. Nay, I assure you, a peace concluded.

2 Lord. What will count Rousillon do then? will he travel higher, or return again into France?

1 Lord. I perceive, by this demand, you are not altogether of his council.

2 Lord. Let it be forbid, Sir! so should I be a great deal of his act.

1 Lord. Sir, his wife, some two months since, fled from his house; her pretence is a pilgrimage to Saint Jacques le grand; which holy undertaking, with most austere sanctimony, she accomplished: and, there residing, the tenderness of her nature became as a prey to her grief: in fine, made a groan of her last breath, and now she sings in heaven.

2 Lord. How is this justified?

1 Lord. The stronger part of it by her own letters; which makes her story true, even to the point of her death. her death itself, which could not be her office to say, is come, was faithfully confirmed by the rector of the place.

2 Lord. Hath the count all this intelligence?

1 Lord. Ay, and the particular confirmations, point from point, to the full arming of the verity.

2 Lord. I am heartily sorry, that he'll be glad of this.

1 Lord. How mightily, sometimes, we make us comforts of our losses!

2 Lord. And how mightily, some other times, we drown our gain in tears! The great dignity, that his valour hath here acquired for him, shall at home be encountered with a shame as ample.

1 Lord. The web of our life is of a mingled yarn, good and ill together: our virtues would be proud, if our faults whipped them not; and our crimes would despair, if they were not cherish'd by our virtues.—

#### Enter a SERVANT.

How now? Where's your master?

Serv. He met the duke in the street, Sir, of whom he hath taken a solemn leave; his lordship will next morning for France. The duke hath offered him letters of commendations to the king.

2 Lord. They shall be no more than needful there, if they were more than they can commend.

#### Enter BERTRAM.

1 Lord. They cannot be too sweet for the king's tartness. Here's his lordship now. How now, my lord, is't not after midnight?

Ber. I have to-night despatched sixteen businesses, a month's length a-piece, by an abstract of success: I have cong'd with the duke, done my adieu with his nearest; buried a wife, mourned for her; writ to my lady mother, I am returning; entertained my convoy; and, between these main parcels of despatch, effected many niter needs; the last was the greatest, but that I have not ended yet.

2 Lord. That the business be of any difficulty, and this morning your departure hence, it requires haste of your lordship.

Ber. I mean the business is not ended, as fearing to hear of it hereafter; But shall we have this dialogue between the fool and the soldier?—Come, bring forth this counterfeit modulate; \* he has deceiv'd me, like a double-meaning prophetess.

2 Lord. Bring him forth: [Exit count SOLDIERS] he has sat in the stocks all night, poor gallant knave.

Ber. No matter; his heels have deserved it, in usurping his spurs† so long. How does he carry himself?

1 Lord. I have told your lordship already: the stocks carry him. But, to answer you as you would be understood; he weeps, like a wench that had shed her milk: he hath confessed himself to Morgan, whom he supposes to be a friar from the time of his remembrance, to this very instant disaster of his setting i'th' stocks: And what think you he hath confessed?

Ber. Nothing of me, has he?

2 Lord. His confession is taken, and it shall be read to his face: if your lordship be not, as, I believe you are, you must have the patience to bear it.

#### Re-enter SOLDIERS, with PAROLLES.

Ber. A plague upon him! muffled! he can say nothing of me; bush! hush!

1 Lord. Hoodman comes!—*Porto tartarossa*,

1 Sold. He calls for the tortures: What will you say without 'em?

Par. I will confess what I know without constraint; if ye pinch me like a pasty, I can say no more.

1 Sold. *Esvero chimurca*.

2 Lord. *Bobanbindo chicurmuero*.

1 Sold. You are a merciful general.—Our general bids you answer to what I shall ask you out of a note.

Par. And truly, as I hope to live.

1 Sold. *First demand of him how many horse the duke is strong*. What say you to that?

Par. Five or six thousand; but very weak and unserviceable. The troops are all scattered, and the commanders very poor rogues, upon my reputation and credit, and as I hope to live.

1 Sold. Shall I set down your answer so?

Par. Do: I'll take the sacrament on't, how and which way you will.

Ber. All's one to him. What a past-saving slave is this!

1 Lord. You are deceived, my lord; this is monsieur Parolles, the gallant militarist, (that was his own phrase,) that had the whole heroic; of war in the knot of his scarf, and the practice in the chape of his dagger.

2 Lord. I will never trust a man again, for keeping his sword clean; nor believe he can have every thing in him, by wearing his apparel neatly.

1 Sold. Well, that's set down.

Par. Five or six thousand horse, I said,—I will say true,—or thereabouts, set down,—for I'll speak truth.

1 Lord. He's very near the truth in this.

Ber. But I can hum no thanks for't, in the nature he delivers it.

Par. Poor rogues, I pray you, say.

1 Sold. Well, that's set down.

Par. I humbly thank you, Sir: a truth's a truth, the rogues are marvellous poor.

1 Sold. *Demand of him, of what strength they are a-foot*. What say you to that?

Par. By my troth, Sir, if I were to live this present hour, I will tell true. Let me see: Spurio a hundred and fifty, Sebastian so many, Corambus so many, Jaques so many; Guiltian,

\* Model.

† An allusion to the degradation of a knight by hacking off his spurs.

‡ Theory.

§ The point of the scabbard

\* For compunction.

Cosmo, Lodowick, and Gratii, two hundred fifty each : mine own company, Chitopher, Vamond, Benti, two hundred and fifty each : so that the muster-file, rotten and sound, upon my life, amounts not to fifteen thousand poll ; half of which dare not shake the snow from off their cassocks, \* lest they shake themselves to pieces.

*Ber.* What shall be done to him ?

*1 Lord.* Nothing, out let him have thanks. Demand of him my conditions, † and what credit I have with the duke.

*1 Sold.* Well, that's set down. *You shall demand of him, whether one captain Dumain be at the camp, a Frenchman ; what his reputation is with the duke, what his valour, honesty, and expertness in wars ; or whether he thinks, it were not possible, with well-negliging sums of gold, to corrupt him to a revolt ? What say you to this ? What do you know of it ?*

*Par.* I beseech you, let me answer to the particular of the interrogatories ; ‡ Demand them singly.

*1 Sold.* Do you know this captain Dumain ?

*Par.* I know him : he was a butcher's pensive in Paris, from whence he was whipped for getting the sheriff's fool § with child ; a dumb innocent, ¶ that could not say him, nay.

[*Dumain lifts up his hand in anger.*]

*Ber.* Nay, by your leave, hold your hands : though I know, his brains are forfeit to the next tile that falls.

*1 Sold.* Well, is this captain in the duke of Florence's camp ?

*Par.* Upon my knowledge, he is, and lousy.

*1 Lord.* Nay, look not so upon me ; we shall hear of your lordship anon.

*1 Sold.* What is his reputation with the duke ?

*Par.* The duke knows him for no other but a poor officer of mine, and writ to me thus other day, to turn him out of the band : I think I have his letter in my pocket.

*1 Sold.* Marry, we'll search.

*Par.* In good sadness, I do not know ; either it is there, or it is upon a file, with the duke's other letters, in my tent.

*1 Sold.* Here 'tis ; here's a paper ? Shall I read it to you ?

*Par.* I do not know, if it be it, or no.

*Ber.* Our interpreter does it well.

*1 Lord.* Excellently.

*1 Sold.* Dian. *The count's a fool, and full of gold.*—

*Par.* That is not the duke's letter, Sir ; that is an advertisement to a proper maid in Florence, one Diana, to take heed of the allurements of one count Rousillon, a foolish idle boy, but, for all that very ruthless : I pray you, Sir, put it up again.

*1 Sold.* Nay, I'll read it first, by your favour.

*Par.* My meaning in't, I protest, was very honest : in the behalf of the maid : for I knew the young count to be a dangerous and lascivious boy ; who is a whale to virginity, and devours up all the fry it finds.

*Ber.* Damnable, both sides rogues !

*1 Sold.* *When he sweats oaths, bid him drop gold, and take it ;*

*After he scores, he never pays the score : Half won, is match well made, match, and well make it ; ¶*

*He never pays after debts, take it before ; And say, a soldier, Dian, told thee this, Men are to mell with, boys are not to kiss : For count of this, the count's a fool, I know it.*

*Who pays before, but not when he does owe it,*

*Thine, as he would to thee in thine ear,*  
PAROLLES.

*Ber.* He shall be whipped through the army, with this rhyme in his forehead.

*2 Lord.* This is your devoted friend, Sir, the manifold lineist, and the amputent soidier.

*Ber.* I could endure any thing before but a cat, and now he's a cat to me.

*1 Sold.* I perceive, Sir, by the general's looks, we shall be fain to hang you.

*Par.* My life, Sir, in any case ; not that I am afraid to die ; but that, my offences being many, I would repent out the remainder of nature : let me live, Sir, in a dungeon, in the stocks, or any where, so I may live.

*1 Sold.* We'll see what may be done, so you confess freely ; therefore once more to this captain Dumain : You have answered to his reputation with the duke, and to his valour : What is his honesty ?

*Par.* He will steal, Sir, an egg out of a cloister, \* for rapes and ravishments he parallels Nessus, † He professes not keeping of oaths ; in breaking them, he is stronger than Hercules. He will lie, Sir, with such volubility, that you would think truth were a fool : drunkenness is his best virtue ; for he will be swine-drunk ; and in his sleep he does little harm, save to his bed-clothes about him ; but they know his conditions, and lay him in straw. I have but little more to say, Sir, of his honesty : he has every thing that an honest man should not have, what an honest man should have he has nothing.

*1 Lord.* I begin to love him for this.

*Ber.* For this description of thine honesty ? A pox upon him for he, he is more and more a cat.

*1 Sold.* What say you to his expertness in war ?

*Par.* Faith, Sir, he has led the drum before the English tragedians,—to be he him, I will not,—and more of his soldiership I know not ; except, in that country, he had the honour to be the officer at a place there call'd Milt-and, to instruct for the doubling of files : I would do the man what honour I can, but of this I am not certain.

*1 Lord.* He hath out-villain'd villainy so far that the rarity redeems him.

*Ber.* A pox on him ! he's a cat still.

*1 Sold.* His qualities being at this poor price, I need not ask you, if gold will corrupt him to revolt.

*Par.* Sir, for a quart d'ecu ‡ he will sell the fee-simple of his salvation, the inheritance of it ; and cut the entail from all remainders, and a perpetual succession for it perpetually.

*1 Sold.* What's his brother, the other captain Dumain ?

*2 Lord.* Why does he ask him of me ?

*1 Sold.* What's he ?

*Par.* E'en a crow of the same nest ; not altogether so great as the first in goodness, but greater a great deal in evil. He excels his brother for a coward, yet his brother is reputed one of the best that is : In a retreat he out-runs any lackey ; marry, in coming on he has the cramp.

*1 Sold.* If your life be saved, will you undertake to betray the Florentine ?

*Par.* Ay, and the captain of his horse, count Rousillon.

*1 Sold.* I'll whisper with the general, and know his pleasure.

*Par.* I'll no more drumming : a plague of all drums ! Only to seem to deceive well, and to beguile the supposition § of that lascivious young boy the count, have I run into this danger. Yet, who would have suspected an ambush where I was taken ? [Aside.]

*1 Sold.* There is no remedy, Sir, but you must die : the general says, you, that have so traitorously discovered the secrets of your army,

\* Cassock then signified a horseman's loose coat.  
† Disposition and character.  
‡ An idiot under the care of the sheriff.  
§ A natural fool.  
¶ I.e. A match well made is half won, make your match, therefore, but make it well.

I.e. He will steal any thing however trifling, from any place however holy.  
† The Centaur killed by Hercules.  
‡ The fourth part of the smaller French crown.  
§ To deceive the opinion.

and made such pestiferous reports of men very nobly held, can serve the world for no honest use; therefore you must die. Come, headsman, off with his head.

*Par.* O Lord, Sir; let me live, or let me see my death!

1 *Sold.* That shall you, and take your leave of all your friends. *[Unmuffling him.]*

So look about you; Know you any here?

*Ber.* Good morrow, noble captain.

2 *Lord.* God bless you, captain Parolles.

1 *Lord.* God save you, noble captain.

2 *Lord.* Captain, what greeting will you to my lord Lafew? I am for France.

1 *Lord.* Good captain, will you give me a copy of the sonnet you writ to Diana in behalf of the count Rousillon? An I were not a very coward, I'd compel it of you; but fare you well. *[Exit BERTRAM, LORDS, &c.]*

1 *Sold.* You are undone, captain: all but your scarf, that has a knot on't yet.

*Par.* Who cannot be crush'd with a plot?

1 *Sold.* If you could find out a country where but women were that had received so much shame, you might begin an impudent nation. Fare you well, Sir; I am for France too; we shall speak of you there. *[Exit.]*

*Par.* Yet am I thankful: if my heart were great,

'Twould burst at this: Captain, I'll be no more; But I will eat and drink, and sleep as soft As captain shall: simply the thing I am Shall make me live. Who knows himself a braggart,

Let him fear this; for it will come to pass,

That every braggart shall be found an ass

Rust, sword! cool, blushes! and, Parolles, live Safest in shame! being fool'd, by foolery thrive!

There's place, and means, for every man alive.

I'll after them. *[Exit.]*

*SCENE IV.—Florence.—A Room in the Widow's House.*

*Enter HELENA, WIDOW, and DIANA.*

*Hel.* That you may well perceive I have not wrong'd you,

One of the greatest in the Christian world Shall be my surety; 'fore whose throne, 'tis needful,

Lie I can perfect mine intents, to kneel:

'Twas was, I did him a desired office,

Dear almost as his life; which gratitude Through flinty Tartar's bosom would peep forth

And answer, thanks: I duly am inform'd,

His grace is at Marseilles; to which place

We have convenient convoy. You must know, I am supposed dead: the army breaking,

My husband hies him home, where, heaven aiding,

And by the leave of my good lord the king,

We'll be, before our welcome.

*Wid.* Gentle madam,

You never had a servant, to whose trust

Your business was more welcome.

*Hel.* Nor you, mistress,

Ever a friend, whose thoughts more truly labour

To recompense your love; 'doubt not, but heaven

Hath brought me up to be your daughter's dower,

As it hath ta'ed her to be my motive\*

And helper to a husband. But O strange men! That can such sweet use make of what they hate,

When saucy<sup>†</sup> trusting of the cozen'd thoughts Defines the prickly night! so lust doth play

With what it loaths, for that which is away: But more of this hereafter:—You, Diana, Under my poor instructions yet must suffer Something in my behalf.

*Dia.* Let death and honesty\*

Go with your impositions,† I am your's, Upon your will to suffer.

*Hel.* Yet, I pray you,—

But with the word, the time will bring on summer,

When briars shall have leaves as well as thorn, And be as sweet as sharp. We must away;

Our waggon is prepar'd, and time revives us:

*All's well that ends well:* still the due's; the crown;

Whate'er the course, the end is the renew.

*[Exit.]*

*SCENE V.—Rousillon.—A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

*Enter COUNTESS, LAFEU, and CLOWN.*

*Laf.* No, no, no, your son was mistook with a snipt-taffata fellow there; whose villainous satron's would have made all the unbak'd and doughy youth of a nation in his colour. Your daughter-in-law had been alive at this hour, and your son here at home, more advanced by the king, than by that red-tailed humble-bee I speak of.

*Count.* I would I had not known him! it was the death of the most virtuous gentlewoman, that ever nature had praise for creating: it sh<sup>d</sup> had partaken of my flesh, and cost me the dearest groans of a mother, I could not have owed her a more rooted love.

*Laf.* 'Twas a good lady, 'twas a good lady: we may pick a thousand salads, ere we light on such another herb.

*Clo.* Indeed, Sir, she was the sweet-margoram of the salad, or, rather the herb of grace.

*Laf.* They are not salad-herbs, you knave, they are nose-herbs.

*Clo.* I am no great Nebuchadnezzar, Sir, I have not much skill in grass.

*Laf.* Whether dost thou profess thyself; a knave, or a fool?

*Clo.* A fool, Sir, at a woman's service, and a knave at a man's.

*Laf.* Your distinction?

*Clo.* I would cozen the man of his wife, and do his service.

*Laf.* So you were a knave at his service, indeed.

*Clo.* And I would give his wife my banb<sup>l</sup>, Sir, to do her service.

*Laf.* I will subscribe for thee; thou art both knave and fool.

*Clo.* At your service.

*Laf.* No, no, no.

*Clo.* Why, Sir, if I cannot serve you, I can serve as great a prince as you are.

*Laf.* Who's that? a Frenchman?

*Clo.* Faith, Sir, he has an English name, but his phynomy is more hotter in France, than there.

*Laf.* What prince is there?

*Clo.* The black prince, Sir; *alias*, the prince of darkness; *alias*, the devil.

*Laf.* Hold thee, there's my purse: I give thee not this to suggest<sup>‡</sup> thee from thy master thou talkest of; serve him still.

*Clo.* I am a woodland fellow, Sir, that always loved a great fire; and the master I speak of, ever keeps a good fire. But, sure, he is the prince of the world, let his nobility remain in his court. I am for the house with the narrow gate, which I take to be too little for pomp to enter; some, that humble themselves, may; but the many will be too chill and tender;

\* I.e. An honest death.

† Laid.

‡ There was a fashion of using yellow starch for birds and rabbits, to which I allude.

§ I.e. Rue.

+ Commande.

¶ Seduce.

\* For money

† Lav-vious

and they'll be for the flowery way, that leads to the broad gate, and the great fire.

*Laf.* Go thy ways, I begin to be a-weary of thee; and I tell thee so before, because I would not fall out with thee. Go thy ways; let my horses be well looked to, without any tricks.

*Cl.* If I put any tricks upon em, Sir, they shall be jades' tricks; which are their own right by the law of nature. *[Exit.]*

*Laf.* A shrewd knave, and an unhappy.\*

*Count.* So he is. My lord, that's gone, made himself much sport out of him: by this authority he remains here, which he thinks is a patent for his suaveness; and, indeed, he has no pace, but runs where he will.

*Laf.* I like him well; 'tis not amiss: and I was about to tell you, since I heard of the good lady's death, and that my lord your son was upon his return home, I moved the king my master, to speak in the behalf of my daughter; which, in the minority of them both, his majesty, out of a self-gracious remembrance, did first promise: his highness hath promised me to do it; and, to stop up the displeasure he hath conceived against your son, there is no fitter matter. How does your ladyship like it?

*Count.* With very much content, my lord, and I wish it happily effected.

*Laf.* His highness comes post from Marseilles, of as able body as when he numbered thirty; he will be here to-morrow, or I am deceived by him that in such intelligence hath seldom failed.

*Count.* It rejoices me, that I hope I shall see him ere I die. I have letters, that my son will be here to-morrow: I shall beseech your lordship, to remain with me till they meet together.

*Laf.* Madam, I was thinking with what manners I might satisfy be admitted.

*Count.* You need but plead your honourable privilege.

*Laf.* Lady, of that I have made a bold charter, but, I thank my God, it holds yet.

#### Re-enter CLOWN.

*Cl.* O madam, vander's my lord your son with a patch of velvet on's face: whether there be a scar under it, or no, the velvet knows; but 'tis a goodly patch of velvet: his left cheek is a cheek of two pile and a half, but his right cheek is coin bare.

*Laf.* A scar nobly got, or a noble scar, is a good story of honour; so, belike, is that.

*Cl.* But it is your carbonadoed† face.

*Laf.* Let us go see your son, I pray you; I long to talk with the young noble soldier.

*Cl.* Faith, there's a dozen of 'em, with delicate fine hats, and most counteous feathers, which bow the head, and nod at every man. *[Exit.]*

#### ACT V.

##### SCENE I.—Marseilles.—A Street.

*Enter HELENA, WIDOW, AND DIANA, with two Attendants.*

*Hel.* But this exceeding posting, day and night,

Must wear your spirits low: we cannot help it; But, since you have made the days and nights as one,

To wear your gentle limbs in my affairs, Be bold, you do so grow in my requital, As nothing can unloose you. In happy time;—

*Enter a gentle ASTRINGER.‡*

This man may help me to his majesty's ear, He would spend his power.—God save you, Sir.

\* Mischievously unhappy, waggish.

† Scathed like a piece of meat for the grithron.

‡ A gentleman fawner.

*Gent.* And you.

*Hel.* Sir, I have seen you in the court of France.

*Gent.* I have been sometimes there.

*Hel.* I do presume, Sir, that you are not fallen

From the reports that goes upon your goodness; And therefore goaded with most sharp occasions,

Which lay nice manners by, I put you to The use of your own virtues, for the which I shall continue thankful.

*Gent.* What's your will?

*Hel.* That it will please you

To give this poor petition to the king; And aid me with that store of power you have, To come into his presence.

*Gent.* The king's not here.

*Hel.* Not here, Sir?

*Gent.* Not, indeed: He hence remov'd last night, and with more haste

Than is his use.

*Hel.* Lord, how we lose our pains!

*Hel.* All's well that ends well; yet; Though time seems so adverse, and means unfit.—

I do beseech you, whither is he gone?

*Gent.* Many, as I take it, to Rousillon;

Whither I am going.

*Hel.* I do beseech you, Sir,

Since you are like to see the king before me, Commend the paper to his gracious hand; Which, I presume, shall render you no blame. But rather make you thank your pains for it. I will come after you, with what good speed Our means will make us means.

*Gent.* This I'll do for you.

*Hel.* And you shall find yourself to be well thank'd,

What'er falls more.—We must to horse again;— Go, go, provide. *[Exit.]*

##### SCENE II.—Rousillon.—The inner Court of the Countess's Palace.

#### Enter CLOWN AND PAROLLES.

*Par.* Good monsieur Lavatch, give my lord Latens this letter. I have ere now, Sir, been better known to you, when I have held familiarity with mesher clothes; but I am now, Sir, muddled in fortune's meat, and smell somewhat strong of her strong displeasure.

*Cl.* Truly, fortune's displeasure is but slutsh, if it smell so strong as thou speakest of: I will henceforth eat no fish of fortune's butttering. Pr'ythee, allow the wind.

*Par.* Nay, you need not stop your nose, Sir; I spake by a metaphor.

*Cl.* Indeed, Sir, if your metaphor stink, I will stop my nose, or against any man's metaphor. Pr'ythee, get thee further.

*Par.* Play you, Sir, deliver me this paper.

*Cl.* Foh, pr'ythee, stand away: A paper from fortune's close-stool to give to a nobleman! Look, here he comes himself.

#### Enter LAFEU.

Here is a pur of fortune's, Sir, or of fortune's cat, (but not a muss-cat,) that has fallen into the unclean fishpond of her displeasure, and, as he says, is muddled withal: Pray you, Sir, use the carp as you may; for he looks like a pool, decayed, ingenious, foolish, rascally knave. I do pity his distress in my smiles of comfort, and leave him to your lordship.

*[Exit CLOWN.]*

*Par.* My lord, I am a man whom fortune hath cruelly scratched.

*Laf.* And what would you have me to do? 'tis too late to pare her nails now. Wherein have you played the knave with fortune, that she should scratch you, who of herself is a good lady, and would not have knaves thrive long under her? There's a *quart d'œcu* for you: Let

the justices make you and fortune friends; I am for other business.

*Par.* I beseech your honour, to hear me one single word.

*Laf.* You beg a single penny more: come, you shall ha't: save your word.\*

*Par.* My name, my good lord, is Parolles.

*Laf.* You beg more than one word then.—Cov' my passion! give me your hand:—How does your drum?

*Par.* O my good lord, you were the first that found me.

*Laf.* Was I, in sooth? and I was the first that lost thee.

*Par.* It lies in you, my lord, to bring me in some grace, for you did bring me out.

*Laf.* Out upon thee, knave! dost thou put upon me at once both the office of God and the devil? one brings thee in grace, and the other brings thee out. [Trumpets sound.] The king's coming, I know by his trumpets.—Sirrah, inquire further after me; I had talk of you last night: though you are a fool and a knave, you shall eat; go to, follow.

*Par.* I praise God for you. [Exit.

SCENE III.—The same.—A Room in the COUNTESS'S Palace.

Flourish. Enter KING, COUNTESS, LAFEU, LORDS, GENTLEMEN, Guards, &c.

*King.* We lost a jewel of her; and our esteem†

Was made much poorer by it: but your son, As mad in folly, lack'd the sense to know Her estimation house:‡

*Count.* 'Tis past, my liege: And I beseech your majesty to make it Natural rebellion, done i'th' blaze of youth; When oil and fire, too strong for reason's force, O'erbears it, and burns on.

*King.* My honour'd lady, I have forgiven and forgotten all; Though my revenges were high bent upon him, And watch'd the time to shoot.

*Laf.* This I must say,—The young lord Did to his majesty, his mother, and his lady, Offence of mighty note; but to himself The greatest wrong of all: he lost a wife, Whose beauty did astonish the survey Of richest eyes; § whose words all ears took captive;

Whose dear perfection, hearts that scorn'd to serve,

Humbly call'd mistress.

*King.* Praising what is lost, Makes the remembrance dear.—Well, call him hither:—

We are reconcil'd, and the first view shall kill All repetition: ||—Let him not ask our pardon; The nature of his great offence is dead, And deeper than oblivion do we bury The incensing relics of it: let him approach, A stranger, no offender; and inform him, So 'tis our will he should.

*Gent.* I shall, my liege. [Exit GENTLEMAN.]

*King.* What says he to your daughter? have you spoke?

*Laf.* All that he is bath reference to your highness.

*King.* Then shall we have a match. I have letters sent me, That set him high in fame.

Enter BERTHAM.

*Laf.* He looks well on't.

*King.* I am not a day of season, ¶

\* You need not ask;—here it is.

† Reckoning or estimate.

‡ Completely, in its full extent.

§ As you like it.—to have "seen much, and to have nothing," is to have rich eyes and poor hands.

|| The first interview shall put an end to all recollection of the past.

¶ I.e. Of uninterrupted rain.

For thou may'st see a sun-shine and a hail In me at once: But to the brightest beams Distracted clouds give way; so stand thou forth, The time is fair again.

*Ber.* My high-repeated blames,\* Dear sovereign pardon to me.

*King.* All is whole;

Not one word more of the consumed time.

Let's take the instant by the forward top;

For we are old, and on our quick'st decrees

The maudible and noiseless foot of time

Steals ere we can effect them: You remember

The daughter of this lord?

*Ber.* Admiringly, my liege: at first

I stuck my choice upon her, ere my heart

Durst make too bold a herald of my tongue:

Where the impression of mine eye infixing,

Contempt his scornful perspective did lend me,

Which warp'd the line of every other favour;

Scorn'd a fair colour, or express'd it stol'n;

Extended or contracted all proportions,

To a most hideous object: Thence it came,

That she, whom all men prais'd, and whom

myself,

Since I have lost, have lov'd, was in mine eye

The dust that did offend it.

*King.* Well excus'd:

That thou didst love her, strikes some scores

away

From the great compt: But love, that comes

too late,

Like a remorseful pardon slowly carried,

To the great sender turns a sour offence,

Crying, That's good that's gone: our rash

faults

Make trivial price of serious things we have,

Not knowing them, until we know their grave.

Of our displeasures to ourselves unjust,

Destroy our friends, and after weep their dust:

Our own love waking cries to see what's done,

While shameful hate sleeps out the afternoon.

Be this sweet Helen's knell, and now forget

her.

Send forth your amorous token for fair Maudlin:

The main consents are bad; and here we'll stay

To see our widower's second marriage-day.

*Count.* Which better than the mist, O dear

heaven, bless!

Or, ere they meet, in me, O nature, cease!

*Laf.* Come on, my son, in whom my house's

name

Must be digested, give a favour from you,

To sparkle in the spirits of my daughter,

That she may quickly come.—By my old beard,

And every hair that's on't, Helen, that's dead,

Was a sweet creature; such a ring as this,

The last that e'er I took her leave at court,

I saw upon her finger.

*Ber.* Her's it was not.

*King.* Now, pray you, let me see it; for mine

eye,

While I was speaking, oft was fasten'd to't.—

This ring was mine, and, when I gave it Helen

I bade her, if her fortunes ever stood

Necessitated to help, that by this token

I would relieve her: Had you that craft, to

reave her

Of what should stead her most?

*Ber.* My gracious sovereign,

Howe'er it pleases you to take it so,

The ring was never her's.

*Count.* Son, on my life,

I have seen her wear it; and she reckon'd it

At her life's rate.

*Laf.* I am sure, I saw her wear it.

*Ber.* You are deceiv'd, my lord, she never

saw it:

In Florence was it from a casement thrown me,

Wrapp'd in a paper, which contain'd the name

Of her that threw it: noble she was, and

thought

I stood engag'd:† but when I had subscrib'd

\* Faults repented of to the utmost.

† In the sense of unengag'd.

To mine own fortune, and inform'd her fully,  
I could not answer in that course of honour  
As she had made the overture, she ceas'd,  
In heavy satisfaction, and would never  
Receive the ring again.

*King.* Plutus himself,  
That knows the tinct and multiplying medi-  
cine \*

Hath not in nature's mystery more science,  
Than I have in this ring: 'twas mine, 'twas  
Helen's,

Whoever gave it you; Then, if you know  
That you are well acquainted with yourself, †  
Confess 'twas her's, and by what rough enforce-  
ment

You got it from her: she call'd the saints to  
surety

That she would never put it from her finger,  
Unless she gave it to yourself in bed,  
(Where you have never come,) or sent it us  
Upon her great disaster.

*Ber.* She never saw it.

*King.* Thou speak'st it falsely, as I love mine  
honour;

And mak'st conjectural fears to come into me,  
Which I would fain shut out: If it should  
prove

That thou art so inhuman, 'twill not prove  
so;—

And yet I know not:—thou dost hate her  
deadly,

And she is dead; which nothing, but to close  
Her eyes myself, could win me to believe,  
More than to see this ring.—Take him away.

[*Guards seize BERTRAM.*]

My fore-past proofs, howe'er the matter fall,  
Shall tax my fears of little vanity,  
Having vainly fear'd too little.—Away with  
him;—

We'll sit this matter further.

*Ber.* If you shall prove  
This ring was ever her's, you shall as easy  
Prove that I husbanded her bed in Florence,  
As to yet she never was.

[*Exit BERTRAM, guarded.*]

*Enter a GENTLEMAN.*

*King.* I am wrapp'd in dismal thinkings.

*Genl.* Gracious sovereign,  
Whether I have been to blame, or no, I know  
not;

Here's a petition from a Florentine,  
Who hath, for four or five removes, ‡ come shou-  
to tender it himself. I undertook it,  
Vanquish'd thereto by the fair grace and speech  
Of the poor suppliant, who by this, I know,  
Is here attending; her business looks in her  
With an importing visage; and she told me,  
In a sweet verbal brief, it did concern  
Your highness with herself.

*King.* [*Reads.*] Upon his many protestations  
to marry me, when his wife was dead, I  
blush to say it, he won me. Now is the count  
Roasillon a widower; his vows are forfeited  
to me, and my honour's paid to him. He  
stole from Florence, taking no leave, and I  
follow him to his country for justice: Grant  
it me, O King; in you it best lies: otherwise  
a seducer flourishes, and a poor maid is  
undone.

DIANA CAPULET.

*Laf.* I will buy me a son-in-law in a fair, and  
tell him; § for this, I'll none of him.

*King.* The heavens have thought well on thee,  
Lafan,

To bring forth this discovery.—Seek these sui-  
tors:—

Go, speedily, and bring again the count.

[*Exit GENTLEMAN, and some attend-  
ants.*]

I am afraid, the life of Helen, lady,  
Was foully snatch'd.

\* The philosopher's stone.

† I.e. That have the proper consciousness of your  
own actions.

‡ Post-stages.

§ Pay toll for him.

*Count.* Now, justice on the doers!

*Enter BERTRAM, guarded.*

*King.* I wonder, Sir, since wives are monsters  
to you,  
And that you fly them as you swear them lord-  
ship,

Yet you desire to marry.—What woman's that?

*Re-enter GENTLEMAN, with WIDOW, and  
DIANA.*

*Dia.* I am, my lord, a wretched Florentine,  
Derived from the ancient Capulet;  
My suit, as I do understand, you know,  
And therefore know how far I may be pitied.

*Wid.* I am her mother, Sir, whose age and  
honour

Both suffer under this complaint we bring,  
And both shall cease \* without your remedy.

*King.* Come hither, count; Do you know  
these women?

*Ber.* My lord, I neither can nor will deny  
But that I know them: Do they charge me  
further?

*Dia.* Why do you look so strange upon your  
wife?

*Ber.* She's none of mine, my lord.

*Dia.* If you shall marry,  
You give away this hand, and that is mine;  
You give away heaven's vows, and those are  
mine;

You give away myself, which is known mine;  
For I by vow am so embodied your's,

That she, which marries you, must marry me,  
Either both or none.

*Laf.* Your reputation [*To BERTRAM.*] comes  
too short for my daughter, you are no husband  
to her.

*Ber.* My lord, this is a fond and desperate  
creature,

Whom sometime I have laugh'd with: let your  
highness

Lay a more noble thought upon mine honour,  
Than for to think that I would sink it here.

*King.* Sir, for my thoughts, you have them ill  
to friend,

Fill your deeds gaul them: Fairer prove your  
honour,

Than in my thought it lies!

*Dia.* Good my lord,  
Ask him upon his oath, if he does think  
He had not my virginity.

*King.* What say'st thou to her?

*Ber.* She's impudent, my lord;

And was a common gamesier to the camp. †

*Dia.* He does me wrong, my lord; if I were  
so,

He might have bought me at a common price.

Do not believe him: Oh! behold this ring,

Whose high respect, and rich validity, ‡

Did lack a parallel; yet, for all that,

He gave it to a commoner o'the camp,

If I be one.

*Count.* He blushes, and 'tis it:

Of six preceding ancestors, that gem  
Content'd by testament to the sequent issue,  
Hath it been ow'd and worn. This is his wife;  
That ring's a thousand proofs.

*King.* Methought, you said,

You saw one here in court could witness it.

*Dia.* I did, my lord, but loath am to pro-  
duce

So bad an instrument! his name's Parolles.

*Laf.* I saw the man to-day, if man he be.

*King.* Find him, and bring him hither.

*Ber.* What of him?

He's quoted § for a most perfidious slave,  
With all the spots o'the world tax'd and de-  
bosh'd; ||

Whose nature sickens, but to speak a truth:

Am I or that, or this, for what he'll utter,

That will speak any thing?

\* Decease, die.

† Gamesier when applied to

a female, then meant a common woman.

‡ Value.

§ Noted.

|| Debauched.



*King.* She bath that ring of your's.

*Ber.* I think, she has: certain it is, I lik'd her,

And boarded her i'the wanton way of youth:  
She knew her distance, and did angle for me,  
Madding my eageruess with her restraint,  
As all impediments in fancy's \* course  
Are motives of more fancy; and, in fine,  
Her insuit coming with her modern grace, †  
Subdued me to her rate: she got the ring;  
And I had that, which any inferior might  
At market-price have bought.

*Dia.* I must be patient;

You, that turn'd off a first so noble wife,  
May justly diet me. ‡ I pray you yet,  
(Since you lack virtue, I will lose a husband,)  
Send for your ring, I will return it home,  
And give me mine again.

*Ber.* I have it not.

*King.* What ring was your's, I pray you?

*Dia.* Sir, much like

The same upon your finger

*King.* Know you this ring? this ring was his  
of late.

*Dia.* And this was it I gave him, being a-bed.

*King.* The story then goes false, you threw it  
him

Out of a casement.

*Dia.* I have spoke the truth.

*Enter PAROLLES.*

*Ber.* My lord, I do confess, the ring was  
her's.

*King.* You boggle shrewdly, every feather  
starts you.—

Is this the man you speak of?

*Dia.* Ay, my lord.

*King.* Tell me, sirrah, but tell me true, I  
charge you,

Not fearing the displeasure of your master,  
(Which, on your just proceeding, I'll keep off,)  
By him, and by this woman here, what know  
you?

*Par.* So please your majesty, my master hath  
been an honourable gentleman; tricks he hath  
had in him, which gentlemen have.

*King.* Come, come, to the purpose: Did he  
love this woman?

*Par.* Faith, Sir, he did love her; But how?

*King.* How, I pray you?

*Par.* He did love her, Sir, as a gentleman  
loves a woman.

*King.* How is that?

*Par.* He loved her, Sir, and loved her not.

*King.* As thou art a knave, and no knave:—  
What an equivocal companion is this!

*Par.* I am a poor man, and at your majesty's  
command.

*Laf.* He's a good drum, my lord, but a naughty  
orator.

*Dia.* Do you know, he promised me mar-  
riage?

*Par.* Faith, I know more than I'll speak.

*King.* But wilt thou not speak all thou  
know'st?

*Par.* Yes, so please your majesty: I did go  
between them, as I said; but more than that,  
he loved her,—for, indeed, he was mad for her,  
and talked of Satan, and of limbo, and of furies,  
and I know not what: yet I was in that credit  
with them at that time, and I knew of their  
going to bed; and of other motions, as promi-  
sing her marriage, and things that would derive  
me all will to speak of, therefore I will not speak  
what I know.

*King.* Thou hast spoken all already, unless  
thou canst say they are married: But thou art  
too fine in thy evidence: therefore stand aside.—  
This ring, you say, was your's?

*Dia.* Ay, my good lord.

*King.* Where did you buy it; or who gave it  
you?

*Dia.* It was not given me, nor I did not  
buy it.

*King.* Who lent it you?

*Dia.* It was not lent me neither.

*King.* Where did you find it then?

*Dia.* I found it not.

*King.* If it were your's by none of all these  
ways,

How could you give it him?

*Dia.* I never gave it him.

*Laf.* This woman's an easy glove, my lord;  
she goes off and on at pleasure.

*King.* This ring was mine, I gave it his first  
wife.

*Dia.* It might be your's, or her's, for aught I  
know.

*King.* Take her away, I do not like her now;  
To prison with her: and away with him.—  
Unless thou tell'st me where thou had'st this  
ring,

Thou diest within this hour.

*Dia.* I'll never tell you.

*King.* Take her away.

*Dia.* I'll put in bail, my liege.

*King.* I think thee now some common custo-  
mer.\*

*Dia.* By Jove, if ever I knew man, 'twas  
you.

*King.* Wherefore hast thou accus'd him all  
this while?

*Dia.* Because he's guilty, and he is not  
guilty;

He knows I am no maid, and he'll swear to't:  
I'll swear I am a maid, and he knows not.

Great king, I am no strumpet, by my life;  
I am either maid, or else this old man's wife.

*[Pointing to LAF.]*

*King.* She does abuse our ears; to prison  
with her.

*Dia.* Good mother, fetch my bail—Stay,  
royal Sir; *[Exit Widow.]*

The jeweller, that owes a ring, is sent for,  
And he shall surety me. But for this lord,  
Who hath abus'd me, as he knows himself,  
Though yet he never harm'd me, here I quit  
him:

He knows himself, my bed he hath defil'd;  
And at that time he got his wife with child:  
Dead though she be, she feels her young one  
kick;

So there's my riddle, One, that's dead, is quick:  
And now behold the meaning.

*Re-enter WIDOW, with HELENA.*

*King.* Is there no exorcist?  
Beguiles the truer office of mine eyes?

Is't real, that I see?

*Hel.* So, my good lord;

'Tis but the shadow of a wife you see,  
The name and not the thing.

*Ber.* Both, both; O pardon!

*Hel.* O my good lord, when I was like this  
maid,

I found you wond'rous kind. There is your  
ring,

And, look you, here's your letter; This it says,  
When from my finger you can get this  
ring,

And are by me with child, &c.—This is done:  
Will you be mine, now you are doubly won?

*Ber.* If she, my liege, can make me know  
this clearly,

I'll love her dearly, ever, ever dearly.

*Hel.* If it appear not plain, and prove un-  
true,

Deadly divorce step between me and you!—

O my dear mother, do I see you living?

*Laf.* Mine eyes small onions, I shall weep  
anon:—Good Tom Drum, *[To PAROLLES.]* lend  
me a handkerchief: So, I thank thee: wait on

\* Love.

† Her solicitation concerning with her appearance of  
being common.

‡ May justly make me fast.

§ Too artful.

¶ Fellow.

† Ours.

\* Common woman.

‡ Enchanted.

me home, I'll make sport with thee: Let thy courtesies alone, they are scurvy ones.

*King.* Let us from point to point this story know,

To make the even truth in pleasure flow:—

If thou be'st yet a fresh uncropped flower,

Choose thou thy husband, and I'll pay thy

dower;

For I can guess, that, by thy honest aid,  
Thou kept'st a wife her-self, thyself a maid:—

Of that, and all the progress, more and less,

Resolvedly more leisure shall express:

All let seems well; and, if it end so meet,

The bitter past, more welcome is the sweet.

[*Flourish.*]

*Advancing.*

*The king's a beggar, now the play is done:*

*All is well ended, if this suit be won,*

*That you express content; which we will*

*pay,*

*With strife to please you, day exceeding*

*day:*

*Ours be your patience then, and yours our*

*parts;*

*Your gentle hands lend us, and take our*

*hearts.*

[*Exeunt*]

\* *I.e.* Hear us without interruption, and take our parts, support and defend us.

# THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE opinions of commentators are divided upon this play. Hamner supposes that some particular speeches are Shakspeare's. Upton, that he had no hand in its production; Theobald considers it one of his worst pieces. Pope decides that the style is more natural and unaffected than our poet's usually was. and Johnson declares that both in the serious and ludicrous scenes, the language and sentiments are Shakspeare's; and that few of his plays have more lines or passages, which, singly considered, are eminently beautiful. One thing, however, appears certain---that this drama was one of his earliest efforts; that it was not very favourably received, and that, being seldom exhibited, it escaped the corruptions and interpolations, to which his more popular performances were subjected. The incidents of the play have not been assigned to any definite source; though it is not improbable that *The Arcadia*, and the common romances so much in vogue at that period, might have suggested some of them. Dr. Johnson says, that it evinces "a strange mixture of knowledge and ignorance, of care and negligence;" and that "the versification is often excellent---the allusions, learned and just."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE OF MILAN, *Father to Silvia.*  
VALENTINE, } *Gentlemen of Verona.*  
PROTEUS, }  
ANTONIO, *Father to Proteus.*  
THURIO, *a foolish rival to Valentine.*  
EGLAMOUR, *Agent for Silvia in her escape.*  
SLED, *a clownish Servant to her.*  
LAUNCE, *Servant to Proteus.*  
PANTHINO, *Servant to Antonio.*

HOT, *where Julia lodges in Milan.*  
OUTLAWS.

JULIA, *a Lady of Verona, beloved by Proteus.*  
SILVIA, *the Duke's Daughter, beloved by Valentine.*

LUCETTA, *Waiting-woman to Julia.*

*Servants, Musicians.*

SCENE---sometimes in Verona, sometimes in Milan, and on the Frontiers of Mantua.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—An open place in Verona.

*Enter VALENTINE and PROTEUS.*

*Val.* Cease to persuade, my loving Proteus;  
Home-keeping youth have ever homely wits:  
Wert not, affection obdains thy tender days  
To the sweet glances of thy honour'd love,  
I rather would entreat thy company,  
To see the wonders of the world abroad,  
Than living dully sluggardiz'd at home,  
Wear out thy youth with shapeless idleness.  
But, since thou lov'st, love still, and thrive  
therein,

Even as I would, when I to love begin.

*Pro.* Wilt thou be gone? Sweet Valentine,  
adieu!

Think on thy Proteus, when thou, haply, seest  
Some rare note-worthy object in thy travel:  
Wish me partaker in thy happiness,  
When thou dost meet good hap; and, in thy  
danger.

If ever danger do environ thee,  
Commend thy grievance to my holy prayers,  
For I will be thy beadsman, Valentine.

*Val.* And on a love-book pray for my success.

*Pro.* Upon some book I love, I'll pray for thee.

*Val.* That's on some shallow story of deep love,

How young Leander cross'd the Hellespont.

*Pro.* That's a deep story of a deeper love,  
For he was more than over shoes in love.

*Val.* 'Tis true; for you are over boots in love;

And yet you never swam the Hellespont.

*Pro.* Over the boots? nay, give me not the boots.

*Val.* No, I'll not, for it boots thee not.

*Pro.* What?

*Val.* To be

In love, where scorn is bought with groans; coy looks,

With heart-sore sighs; one fading moment's mirth,  
With twenty watchful, weary, tedious nights;  
If haply won, perhaps, a hapless gain;  
If lost, why then a grievous labour won;  
However, but a folly bought with wit,  
Or else a wit by folly vanquished.

*Pro.* So, by your circumstance, you call me fool.

*Val.* So, by your circumstance, I fear, you'll prove.

*Pro.* 'Tis love you cavil at; I am not Love.

*Val.* Love is your master, for he masters you; And he that is so yoked by a fool, Methinks should not be chromed for wise.

*Pro.* Yet writers say, As in the sweetest bud The eating canker dwells, so eating love Inhabits in the finest wits of all.

*Val.* Yet writers say, As the most forward bud

Is eaten by the canker ere it blow,  
Even so by love the young and tender wit Is turn'd to folly, blasting in the bud,  
Losing his verdure even in the prime,  
And all the fair effects of future hopes.  
But wherefore waste I time to counsel thee,  
That art a votary to fond desire?  
Once more adieu: my father at the road  
Expects my coming, there to see me shipp'd.

*Pro.* And thither will I bring thee, Valentine.

*Val.* Sweet Proteus, no; now let us take our leave.

Of Milan, let us hear from thee by letters,  
At thy success in love, and what news else Betideth here in absence of thy friend:  
And I likewise will visit thee with mine.

*Pro.* All happiness beclance to thee in Milan!

*Val.* As much to you at home! and so fare well. [Exit VALENTINE.]

*Pro.* He after honour hunts, I after love: He leaves his friends, to dignify them more; I leave myself, my friends, and all for love. Thou, Julia, thou hast metamorphos'd me; Made me neglect my studies, lose my time, War with good counsel, set the world at naught!

Made wit with musing weak, heart sick with thought.

Enter SPEED.

*Speed.* Sir Proteus, save you; Saw you my master?

*Pro.* But now he parted hence, to embark for Milan.

*Speed.* Twenty to one then, he is shipp'd already;

And I have play'd the sheep in losing him.

*Pro.* Indeed a sheep doth very often stray, An if the shepherd be a while away.

*Speed.* You conclude that my master is a shepherd then, and I a sheep?

*Pro.* I do.

*Speed.* Why then my horns are his horns, whether I wake or sleep.

*Pro.* A silly answer, and fitting well a sheep.

*Speed.* This proves me still a sheep.

*Pro.* True; and thy master a shepherd.

*Speed.* Nay, that I can deny by a circumstance.

*Pro.* It shall go hard, but I'll prove it by another.

*Speed.* The shepherd seeks the sheep, and not the sheep the shepherd; but I seek my master, and my master seeks not me; therefore, I am no sheep.

*Pro.* The sheep for fodder follow the shepherd, the shepherd for food follows not the sheep; thou for wages followest thy master, thy master for wages follows not thee: therefore, thou art a sheep.

*Speed.* Such another proof will make me cry baa.

*Pro.* But dost thou hear? gav'st thou my letter to Julia?

*Speed.* Ay, Sir: I, a lost mutton, gave your letter to her; a laced mutton;\* and she, a laced mutton, gave me, a lost mutton, nothing for my labour.

*Pro.* Here's too small a pasture for such a store of muttons.

*Speed.* If the ground be overcharged, you were best stick her.

*Pro.* Nay, in that you are astray; 'twere best pound you.

*Speed.* Nay, Sir, less than a pound shall serve me for carrying your letter.

*Pro.* You mistake; I mean the pound, a pin-fold.

*Speed.* From a pound to a pin? fold it over and over,

'Tis threefold too little for carrying a letter to your lover.

*Pro.* But what said she? did she nod?

[SPEED nods.]

*Speed.* I.

*Pro.* Nod, I? why, that's noddy.†

*Speed.* You mistook, Sir; I say she did nod; and you ask me, if she did nod, and I say, I.

*Pro.* And that set together, is—noddy.

*Speed.* Now you have taken the pains to set it together, take it for your pains.

*Pro.* No, no, you shall have it for bearing the letter.

*Speed.* Well, I perceive, I must be tam to bear with you.

*Pro.* Why, Sir, how do you bear with me?

*Speed.* Marry, Sir, the letter very orderly; having nothing but the word, noddy for my pains.

*Pro.* Beshrew me, but you have a quick wit.

*Speed.* And yet it cannot overtake your slow purse.

*Pro.* Come, come, open the matter in brief; What said she?

*Speed.* Open your purse, that the money and the matter may be both at once deliver'd.

*Pro.* Well, Sir, here is for your pains: What said she?

*Speed.* Truly, Sir, I think you'll hardly win her.

*Pro.* Why? Could'st thou perceive so much from her?

*Speed.* Sir, I could perceive nothing at all from her; no, not so much as a ducat for delivering your letter: And being so hard to me that brought your mind, I fear, she'll prove as hard to you in telling her mind. Give her no token but stones; for she's as hard as steel.

*Pro.* What, said she nothing?

*Speed.* No, not so much as—take this for thy pains. To testify your bounty, I thank you, you have testern'd‡ me; in requital whereof, henceforth carry your letters yourself: and so, Sir, I'll commend you to my master.

*Pro.* Go, go, be gone, to save your ship from wreck:

Which cannot perish, having thee aboard, Being destined to a drier death on shore:— I must go send some better messenger; I fear, my Julia would not deign my lines, Receiving them from such a worthless post.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The same. Garden of JULIA'S house.

Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.

*Jul.* But say, Lucetta, now we are alone, Would'st thou then counsel me to fall in love?

*Luc.* Ay, madam; so you stumble not unheedfully.

\* A term for a girl of pleasure; Mutton-lane, in Clerkenwell, is so called from being frequented by such persons. † A game at cards. ‡ Given me a sixpence.

*Jul.* Of all the fair resort of gentlemen,  
That every day with parle\* encounter me,  
In thy opinion, which is worthiest love?

*Luc.* Please you, repeat their names, I'll  
show my mind

According to my shallow simple skill.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the fair Sir Eglamour?

*Luc.* As of a knight well-spoken, neat and  
fine;

But, were I you, he never should be mine.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the rich Mercutio?  
*Luc.* Well of his wealth; but of himself, so  
so.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the gentle Proteus?

*Luc.* Lord, lord! to see what folly reigns in  
us!

*Jul.* How now! what means this passion at  
his name?

*Luc.* Pardon, dear madam; 'tis a passing  
shame,

That I, unworthy body as I am,  
Should censure† thus on lovely gentlemen.

*Jul.* Why not on Proteus, as of all the rest?

*Luc.* Then thus,—of many good I think him  
best.

*Jul.* Your reason?

*Luc.* I have no other but a woman's reason;  
I think him so, because I think him so.

*Jul.* And would'st thou have me cast my love  
on him?

*Luc.* Ay, if you thought your love not cast  
away.

*Jul.* Why, he of all the rest hath never mov'd  
me.

*Luc.* Yet he of all the rest, I think, best loves  
ye.

*Jul.* His little speaking shows his love but  
small.

*Luc.* Fire, that is closest kept, burns most  
of all.

*Jul.* They do not love, that do not show their  
love.

*Luc.* Oh! they love least, that let men know  
their love.

*Jul.* I would I knew his mind.

*Luc.* Peruse this paper, madam.

*Jul.* To Julia,—say, from whom?

*Luc.* That the contents will show.

*Jul.* Say, say; who gave it thee?

*Luc.* Sir Valentine's page; and sent, I think,  
from Proteus:

He would have given it you, but I, being in the  
way,

Did in your name receive it; pardon the fault,  
I pray.

*Jul.* Now, by my modesty, a goodly broker!;  
Dare you presume to harbour wanton lines?

To whisper and conspire against my youth?

Now, trust me, 'tis an office of great worth,

And you an officer fit for the place.

There, take the paper, see it be return'd;

Or else return no more into my sight.

*Luc.* To plead for love deserves more fee  
than hate.

*Jul.* Will you be gone?

*Luc.* That you may ruminate. [Exit.]

*Jul.* And yet I would I had o'erlook'd the  
letter.

It were a shame to call her back again,

And pray her to a fault for which I chide her.

What fool is she, that knows I am a maid,

And would not force the letter to my view?

Since maids, in modesty, say, No, to that

Which they would have the profferer construe,

Ay.

Fie, fie! how wayward is this foolish love,

That, like a testy babe, will scratch the nurse,

And presently, all humbled, kiss the rod!

How churlishly I chide Lucetta hence,

When willingly I would have had her here!

How angrily I taught my brow to frown,

When inward joy enforc'd my heart to smile!  
My penance is, to call Lucetta back,  
And ask remission for my folly past:—  
What ho! Lucetta!

# Re-enter LUCETTA.

*Luc.* What would your ladyship?

*Jul.* Is it near dinner-time?

*Luc.* I would it were;

That you might kill your stomach\* on your  
meat,

And not upon your maid.

*Jul.* What is't you took up

So gingerly?

*Luc.* Nothing.

*Jul.* Why did'st thou stoop then?

*Luc.* To take a paper up that I let fall.

*Jul.* And is that paper nothing?

*Luc.* Nothing concerning me.

*Jul.* Then let it lie for those that it concerns.

*Luc.* Madam, it will not lie where it con-  
cerns,

Unless it have a false interpreter.

*Jul.* Some love of your's hath writ to you in  
rhyme.

*Luc.* That I might sing it, madam, to a  
tune:

Give me a note: your ladyship can set.

*Jul.* As little by such toys as may be pos-  
sible:

Best sing it to the tune of *Light o' love*.

*Luc.* It is too heavy for so light a tune.

*Jul.* Heavy? belike it hath some burden  
then.

*Luc.* Ay; and melodious were it, would you  
sing it.

*Jul.* And why not you?

*Luc.* I cannot reach so high.

*Jul.* Let's see your song:—How now, mi-  
nion?

*Luc.* Keep tune there still, so you will sing  
it out;

And yet methinks, I do not like this tune.

*Jul.* You do not?

*Luc.* No, madam; it is too sharp.

*Jul.* You, minion, are too saucy.

*Luc.* Nay, now you are too flat,

And mar the concord with too harsh a dis-  
cant:

There wanteth but a mean† to fill your song.

*Jul.* The mean is drown'd with your unruly  
base.

*Luc.* Indeed, I bid the base‡ for Proteus.

*Jul.* This babble shall not henceforth trouble  
me.

Here is a coil§ with protestation!—

[Tears the letter.

Go, get you gone; and let the papers lie:

You would be fingering them, to anger me.

*Luc.* She makes it strange; but she would be  
best pleas'd

To be so anger'd with another letter. [Exit.]

*Jul.* Nay, would I were so anger'd with the  
same!

O hateful hands, to tear such loving words!

Injurious wasps! to feed on such sweet honey

And kill the bees, that yield it, with your  
stings!

I'll kiss each several paper for amends.

And here is writ—*kind Julia*!—unkind Julia!

As in revenge of thy ingratitude,

I throw thy name against the braising stones

Trampling contemptuously on thy disdain,

Look, here is writ—*love-wounded Proteus*!—

Poor wounded name! my bosom, as a bed,

Shall lodge thee, till thy wound be thoroughly  
heal'd;

And thus I search it with a sovereign kiss.

But twice, or thrice, was Proteus written  
down!

\* Passion or obstinacy.

† The tenor in music.

‡ A challenge.

§ Bustle, stir.

\* Talk † Passionate ‡ A matchmaker.

Be calm, good wind, blow not a word away,  
Till I have found each letter in the letter.  
Except mine own name; that some whirlwind  
bear  
Unto a ragged, fearful, hanging rock,  
And throw it thence into the raging sea!  
Lo, here in one line is his name twice writ,—  
*Poor forlorn Proteus, passionate Proteus,*  
*To the sweet Julia*;—that I'll tear away;  
And yet I will not, with \* so prettily  
He couples it to his complaining names;  
Thus will I fold them one upon another;  
Now kiss, embrace, contend, do what you will.

Re-enter LUCETTA.

*Luc.* Madam, dinner's ready, and your father stays.

*Jul.* Well, let us go.

*Luc.* What, shall these papers lie like tell-tales here?

*Jul.* If you respect them, best to take them up.

*Luc.* Nay, I was taken up for laying them down:

Yet here they shall not lie, for catching cold.

*Jul.* I see, you have a month's mind to them.

*Luc.* Ay, madam, you may say what sights you see;

I see things too, although you judge I wink.

*Jul.* Come, come, wilt please you go? [Exit.

SCENE III.—The same.—A Room in ANTONIO'S House.

Enter ANTONIO AND PANTHINO.

*Ant.* Tell me, Panthino, what sad talk was that,  
Wherewith my brother held you in the cloister?

*Pan.* 'Twas of his nephew Proteus, your son.

*Ant.* Why, what of him?

*Pan.* He wonder'd, that your lordship would suffer him to spend his youth at home: While other men, of slender reputation, Put forth their sons to seek preferment out: Some, to the wars, to try their fortune there; Some to discover islands far away; Some to the studious universities. For any, or for all these exercises, He said, that Proteus, your son, was meet; And did request me, to importune you, To let him spend his time no more at home, Which would be great impeachment† to his age,

In having known no travel in his youth.

*Ant.* Nor need'st thou much importune me to that

Wherewith this month I have been hammering. I have consider'd well his loss of time; And how he cannot be a perfect man, Not being try'd and tutor'd in the world: Experience is by industry achiev'd. And perfected by the swift course of time: Then, tell me, whether were I best to send him?

*Pan.* I think your lordship is not ignorant, How his companion, youthful Valentine, Attends the emperor in his royal court.

*Ant.* I know it well.

*Pan.* 'Twere good, I think, your lordship sent him thither: There shall be practise tilts and tournaments, Hear sweet discourse, converse with noblemen; And be in eye of every exercise, Worthy his youth and nobleness of birth.

*Ant.* I like thy counsel; well hast thou advis'd;

And, that thou may'st perceive how well I like it,  
The execution of it shall make known;

\* Since.

† Repro ch.

Even with the speediest execution I will despatch him to the emperor's court.

*Pant.* To-morrow, may it please you, Don Alphonso,

With other gentlemen of good esteem, Are journeying to salute the emperor, And to commend their service to his will.

*Ant.* Good company; with them shall Proteus go:

And, in good time,—now will we break with him.\*

Enter PROTEUS.

*Pro.* Sweet love! sweet lines! sweet life! Here is her hand, the agent of her heart; Here is her oath for love, her honour's pawn: Oh! that our fathers would applaud our loves To seal our happiness with their consents! O heavenly Julia!

*Ant.* How now! what letter are you reading there?

*Pro.* May't please your lordship, 'tis a word or two

Of commendation sent from Valentine, Deliver'd by a friend that came from him.

*Ant.* Lend me the letter; let me see what news.

*Pro.* There is no news, my lord; but that he writes

How happily he lives, how well belov'd, And daily graced by the emperor;

Wishing me with him, partner of his fortune.

*Ant.* And how stand you affected to his wish?

*Pro.* As one relying on your lordship's will, And not depending on his friendly wish.

*Ant.* My will is something sorted with his wish:

Muse† not that I thus suddenly proceed; For what I will, I will, and there an end.

I am resolv'd, that thou shalt spend some time With Valentine in the emperor's court:

What maintenance he from his friends receives, Like exhibition; thou shalt have from me.

To-morrow be in readiness to go: Excuse it not, for I'm peremptory.

*Pro.* My lord, I cannot be so soon provided; Please you, deliberate a day or two.

*Ant.* Look what thou want'st, shall be sent after thee:

No more of stay; to-morrow thou must go—Come on, Panthino; you shall be employ'd To hasten on his expedition.

[Exit ANT. and PAN.]

*Pro.* Thus have I smother'd the fire, for fear of burning;

And drench'd me in the sea, where I am drown'd:

I fear'd to show my father Julia's letter, Lest he should take exceptions to my love;

And with the vantage of mine own excuse Hath he excepted most against my love.

Oh! how this spring of love resembleth The uncertain glory of an April day;

Which now shows all the beauty of the sun, And by and by a cloud takes all away!

Re-enter PANTHINO.

*Pan.* Sir Proteus, your father calls for you; He is in haste, therefore, I pray you, go.

*Pro.* Why, this it is! my heart accords thereto;

And yet a thousand times it answers, no. [Exit.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Milan. An Apartment in the DUKE'S Palace.

\* Enter VALENTINE AND SPEED.

*Speed.* Sir, your glove.

\* Break the matter to him. † Wonder.  
‡ Allowance.

*Val.* Not mine; my gloves are on.

*Speed.* Why then this may be your's, for this is but one.

*Val.* Ha! let me see: ay, give it me, it's mine:—

Sweet ornament that decks a thing divine!

Ah! Silvia! Silvia!

*Speed.* Madam Silvia! madam Silvia!

*Val.* How now, Sirrah?

*Speed.* She is not within hearing, Sir.

*Val.* Why, Sir, who bade you call her?

*Speed.* Your worship, Sir; or else I mistook.

*Val.* Well, you'll still be too forward.

*Speed.* And yet I was last chidden for being too slow.

*Val.* Go to, Sir; tell me, do you know madam Silvia?

*Speed.* She that your worship loves?

*Val.* Why how know you that I am in love?

*Speed.* Marry, by these special marks: First, you have learned, like Sir Proteus, to wreath your arms like a male-content: to relish a love-song, like a robin-red-breast; to walk alone like one that had the pestilence; to sigh, like a school boy that had lost his A, B, C; to weep, like a young wench that had buried her grandam; to fast, like one that takes diet; \* to watch, like one that fears robbing; to speak pulling like a beggar at Hallowmas.† You were wont, when you laugh'd, to crow like a cock; when you walked, to walk like one of the lions; when you fasted, it was presently after dinner; when you looked sadly, it was for want of money: and now you are metamorphosed with a mistress, that, when I look on you, I can hardly think you my master.

*Val.* Are all these things perceiv'd in me?

*Speed.* They are all perceiv'd without you.

*Val.* Without me? They cannot.

*Speed.* Without you I say, that's certain, for, without you were so simple, none else would: but you are so without these follies, that these follies are within you, and shine through you like the water in an urnial; that not an eye, that sees you, but is a physician to comment on your malady.

*Val.* But, tell me, dost thou know my lady Silvia?

*Speed.* She, that you gaze on so, as she sits at supper?

*Val.* Hast thou observ'd that? even she I mean.

*Speed.* Why, Sir, I know her not.

*Val.* Dost thou know her by my gazing on her, and yet know'st her not?

*Speed.* Is she not hard favoured Sir?

*Val.* Not so fair, boy, as well favoured.

*Speed.* Sir, I know that well enough.

*Val.* What dost thou know?

*Speed.* That she is not so fair, as (of you) well favoured.

*Val.* I mean, that her beauty is exquisite, but her favour infinite.

*Speed.* That's because the one is painted, and the other out of all count.

*Val.* How painted? and how out of count?

*Speed.* Marry, Sir, so painted, to make her fair that no man counts of her beauty.

*Val.* How esteem'st thou me? I account of her beauty.

*Speed.* You never saw her since she was deformed.

*Val.* How long hath she been deformed?

*Speed.* Ever since you loved her;

*Val.* I have loved her ever since I saw her; and still I see her beautiful.

*Speed.* If you love her, you cannot see her.

*Val.* Why?

*Speed.* Because love is blind. O that you had mine eyes; or your own hand the lights they were wont to have, when you chid at Sir Proteus for going ungartered!

*Val.* What should I see then?

*Speed.* Your own present folly, and her passing deformity: for he, being in love, could not see to garter his hose; and you, being in love, cannot see to put on your hose.

*Val.* Belike, boy, then you are in love; for last morning you could not see to wipe my shoes.

*Speed.* True, Sir; I was in love with my bed: I thank you, you swung\* me for my love, which makes me the bolder to chide you for yours.

*Val.* In conclusion I stand affected to her.

*Speed.* I would you were set: so, your affection would cease.

*Val.* Last night she enjoined me to write some lines to one she loves.

*Speed.* And have you?

*Val.* I have.

*Speed.* Are they not lamely writ?

*Val.* No, boy, but as well I can do them:—Peace, here she comes.

Enter SILVIA.

*Speed.* O excellent motion!† O exceeding puppet! now will he interpret to her.

*Val.* Madam and mistress, a thousand good-morrows.

*Speed.* O 'give you good even! Here's a million of manners. [Aside.]

*Sil.* Sir Valentine and servant, to you two thousand.

*Speed.* He should give her interest; and she gives it him.

*Val.* As you enjoin'd me, I have writ your letter,

Unto the secret nameless friend of your's;

Which I was much unwilling to proceed in,

But for my duty to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I thank you, gentle servant: 'tis very clerkly done. [Off;]

*Val.* Now trust me, madam, it came hardly for, being ignorant to whom it goes, I writ at random, very doubtfully.

*Sil.* Perchance you think too much of so much pains!

*Val.* No, madam; so it stead you, I will write, Please you command, a thousand times as much:

And yet,—

*Sil.* A pretty period! Well, I guess the sequel; And yet I will not name it:—and yet I care not;—

And yet take this again;—and yet I thank you; Meaning henceforth to trouble you no more.

*Speed.* And yet you will; and yet another yet. [Aside.]

*Val.* What means your ladyship? do you not like it?

*Sil.* Yes, yes; the lines are very quaintly writ: But since unwillingly, take them again!

Nay take them.

*Val.* Madam, they are for you.

*Sil.* Ay, ay; you writ them, Sir, at my request:

But I will none of them, they are for you:

I would have had them writ more movingly.

*Val.* Please you I'll write your ladyship another.

*Sil.* And when it's writ, for my sake read it over:

And, if it please you, so: if not, why, so.

*Val.* If it please me, madam I what then?

*Sil.* Why, if it please you, take it for your labour;

And so good-morrow, servant. [Exit SILVIA]

*Speed.* O jest unseen, inscrutable, invisible. As a nose on a man's face, or a weathercock on a steeple!

My master sues to her; and she hath taught her suitor,

He being her pupil, to become her tutor.

\* Under a regissem.

† Allhallowmas.

• Whipped. † A puppet-show. § Like a scholar.

O excellent device! was there ever heard a better?

That my master, being scribe, to himself should write the letter?

*Val.* How now, Sir? what are you reasoning with yourself?

*Speed.* Nay, I was rhyming: 'tis you that have the reason.

*Val.* To do what?

*Speed.* To be a spokesman from madam Silvia.

*Val.* To whom?

*Speed.* To yourself; why, she wooes you by a figure.

*Val.* What figure?

*Speed.* By a letter, I should say.

*Val.* Why, she hath not writ to me?

*Speed.* What need she, when she hath made you write to yourself? Why, do you not perceive the jest?

*Val.* No, believe me.

*Speed.* No believing you indeed, Sir; But did you perceive her earnest?

*Val.* She gave me none, except an angry word.

*Speed.* Why, she hath given you a letter.

*Val.* That's the letter I writ to her friend.

*Speed.* And that letter hath she deliver'd, and there an end.\*

*Val.* I would, it were no worse.

*Speed.* I'll warrant you, 'tis as well:

For often you have writ to her,† and she, in modesty,

Or else for want of idle time, could not again reply,

Or fearing else some messenger, that might her mind discover,

Herself hath taught her love himself to write unto her lover.—

All this I speak in print; for in print I found it.—

Why muse you, Sir? 'tis dinner time.

*Val.* I have dined.

*Speed.* Ay, but hearken, Sir: though the camelion Love can feed on the air, I am one that am nourished by my victuals, and would fain have meat: Oh! he not like your mistress, be moved, be moved. [Exit.

SCENE II.—Verona.—A Room in JULIA'S House.

Enter PROTEUS and JULIA.

*Pro.* Have patience, gentle Julia.

*Jul.* I must, where is no remedy.

*Pro.* When possibly I can, I will return.

*Jul.* If you turn not, you will return the sooner:

Keep this remembrance for thy Julia's sake.

[Giving a ring.  
*Pro.* Why then we'll make exchange; here, take you this.

*Jul.* And seal the bargain with a holy kiss.

*Pro.* Here is my hand for my true constancy; And when that hour o'er-slips me in the day, Wherein I sigh not, Julia, for thy sake, The next ensuing hour some foul mischance Torment me for my love's forgetfulness! My father stays my coming; answer not; The tide is now: nay not the tide of tears; That tide will stay me longer than I should; [Exit JULIA.

Julia, farewell.—What! gone without a word? Ay, so true love should do: it cannot speak; For truth hath better deeds, than words, to grace it.

Enter PANTHINO.

*Pan.* Sir Proteus, you are staid for.

*Pro.* Go; I come, I come:—

Alas! this parting strikes poor lovers dumb.

[Exit.

\* There's the conclusion.

SCENE III.—The same.—A Street.

Enter LAUNCE, leading a dog.

*Laun.* Nay, 'twill be this hour ere I have done weeping; all the kind\* of the Launces have this very fault: I have received my proportion, like the prodigious son, and am going with Sir Proteus to the Imperial's court. I think, Crab my dog to be the sourest-natur'd dog that lives: my mother weeping, my father wailing, my sister crying, our maid howling, our cat wringing her hands, and all our house in a great perplexity, yet did not this cruel-hearted cur shed one tear: he is a stone, a very pebble stone, and has no more pity in him than a dog; a Jew would have wept to have seen our parting; why, my grandam having no eyes, look you, wept herself blind at my parting. Nay, I'll show you the manner of it: This shoe is my father;—no, this left shoe is my father:—no, no, this left shoe is my mother;—nay, that cannot be so neither;—yes, it is so; it is so; it hath the worse sole; This shoe, with the hole in it, is my mother, and this my father; A vengeance on't! there 'tis: now, Sir, this staff is my sister; for, look you, she is as white as a dily, and as small as a wand: this hat is Nan, our maid; I am the dog;—no, the dog is himself, and I am the dog.—Oh! the dog is me, and I am myself: ay, so, so. Now come I to my father; Father, your blessing; now should not the shoe speak a word for weeping; now should I kiss my father; well, he weeps on;—now come I to my mother, (Oh! that she could speak now!) like a wood† woman:—well, I kiss her;—why there 'tis; here's my mother's breath up and down: now come I to my sister; mark the moan she makes: now the dog all this while sheds not a tear, nor speaks a word; but see how I lay the dust with my tears.

Enter PANTHINO.

*Pan.* Launce, away, away, aboard; thy master is shipped, and thou art to post after with oars. What's the matter? why weepst thou, man? Away, ass; you will lose the tide, if you tarry any longer.

*Laun.* It is no matter if the tied were lost; for it is the unkindest tied that ever any man tied.

*Pan.* What's the unkindest tide?

*Laun.* Why, he that's tied here; Crab, my dog.

*Pan.* Tut, man, I mean thou'lt lose the flood; and, in losing the flood, lose thy voyage; and, in losing thy voyage, lose thy master; and, in losing thy master, lose thy service; and in losing thy service,—Why dost thou stop my mouth?

*Laun.* For fear thou should'st lose thy tongue.

*Pan.* Where should I lose my tongue?

*Laun.* In thy tale.

*Pan.* In thy tail?

*Laun.* Lose the tide, and the voyage, and the master, and the service? The tide!—Why, man, if the river were dry, I am able to fill it with my tears; if the wind were down, I could drive the boat with my sighs.

*Pan.* Come, come away, man; I was sent to call thee.

*Laun.* Sir, call me what thou darest.

*Pan.* Wilt thou go?

*Laun.* Well, I will go.

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—Milan.—An Apartment in the DUKE'S Palace.

Enter VALENTINE, SILVIA, THURIO, and SPEED.

*Sil.* Servant—

*Val.* Mistress?

*Speed.* Master, Sir Thurio frowns on you.

*Val.* Ay, boy, it's for love.

*Speed.* Not of you.

\* Kindred.

† Crazy, distracted.



*Fal.* Of my mistress then.

*Speed.* 'Twere good, you knocked him.

*Sil.* Servant, you are sad.\*

*Fal.* Indeed, madam, I seem so.

*Thu.* Seem you that you are not?

*Fal.* Haply,† I do.

*Thu.* So do counterfeit.

*Fal.* So do you.

*Thu.* What seem I, that I am not?

*Fal.* Wise.

*Thu.* What instance of the contrary?

*Fal.* Your folly.

*Thu.* And how quote? you my folly?

*Fal.* I quote it in your jerkin.

*Thu.* My jerkin is a doublet.

*Fal.* Well, then, I'll double your folly.

*Thu.* How?

*Sil.* What, angry, Sir Thurio? do you change colour?

*Fal.* Give him leave, madam: he is a kind of camelion.

*Thu.* That hath more mind to feed on your blood than live in your air.

*Fal.* You have said, Sir.

*Thu.* Ay, Sir, and done too, for this time.

*Fal.* I know it well, Sir; you always end ere you begin.

*Sil.* A fine volley of words, gentlemen, and quickly shot off.

*Fal.* 'Tis indeed, madam; we thank the giver.

*Sil.* Who is that, servant?

*Fal.* Yourself, sweet lady; for you gave the fire: Sir Thurio borrows his wit from your ladyship's looks, and spends what he borrows, kindly in your company.

*Thu.* Sir, if you spend word for word with me, I shall make your wit bankrupt.

*Fal.* I know it well, Sir; you have an exchequer of words, and, I think, no other treasure to give your followers, for it appears by their bare liveties, that they live by your bare words.

*Sil.* No more, gentlemen, no more; here comes my father.

*Enter Duke.*

*Duke.* Now, daughter Silvia, you are hard best.

Sir Valentine, your father's in good health: What say you to a letter from your friends?

Of much good news?

*Fal.* My lord, I will be thankful

To any happy messenger from thence.

*Duke.* Know you Don Antonio, your countryman?

*Fal.* Ay, my good lord, I know the gentleman To be of worth, and worthy estimation, And not without desert so well repunit.

*Duke.* Hath he not a son?

*Fal.* Ay, my good lord; a son, that well deserves

The honour and regard of such a father.

*Duke.* You know him well?

*Fal.* I knew him as myself; for from our infancy

We have convers'd, and spent our hours together:

And though myself have been an idle truant, Omitting the sweet benefit of time,

To clothe mine age with angel-like perfection;

Yet hath Sir Proteus, for that's his name,

Made use and fair advantage of his days:

His years but young, but his experience old;

His head unmellow'd, but his judgment ripe;

And, in a word, (for far behind his worth

Come all the praises that I now bestow,) He is complete in feature, and in mind,

With all good grace to grace a gentleman.

*Duke.* Beshrew me, Sir, but, if he make this good,

He is as worthy for an empress' love,

As meet to be an emperor's counsellor.

\* Serious.  
† Obscure.

† Perhaps,  
‡ Ill betide.

Well, Sir; this gentleman is come to me, With commendation from great potentates; And here he means to spend his time a while: I think, 'tis no unwelcome news to you.

*Fal.* Should I have wish'd a thing, it had been he.

*Duke.* Welcome him then according to his worth;

Silvia, I speak to you; and you, Sir Thurio:— For Valentine, I need not 'cite' him to it: I'll send him hither to you presently.

[*Exit Duke.*]

*Fal.* This is the gentleman, I told your ladyship,

Had come along with me, but that his mistress Did hold his eyes lock'd in her crystal looks.

*Sil.* Belike, that now she hath enfranchis'd them

Upon some other pawn for fealty.

*Fal.* Nay, sure, I think, she holds them prisoners still.

*Sil.* Nay, then he should be blind; and, being blind,

How could he see his way to seek out you?

*Fal.* Why, lady, love hath twenty pair of eyes.

*Thu.* They say, that love hath not an eye at all.

*Fal.* To see such lovers, Thurio, as yourself; Upon a homely object love can wink.

*Enter Proteus.*

*Sil.* Have done, have done; here comes the gentleman.

*Fal.* Welcome, dear Proteus!—Mistress, I beseech you,

Confirm his welcome with some special favour.

*Sil.* His worth is warrant for his welcome hither,

If this be he you oft have wish'd to hear from.

*Fal.* Mistress, it is: sweet lady, entertain him.

To be my fellow-servant to your ladyship.

*Sil.* Too low a mistress for so high a servant.

*Pro.* Not so, sweet lady; but too mean a servant

To have a look of such a worthy mistress.

*Fal.* Leave off discourse of disability:— Sweet lady, entertain him for your servant.

*Pro.* My duty will I boast off, nothing else.

*Sil.* And duty never yet did want his need:— Servant, you are welcome to a worthless mistress.

*Pro.* I'll die on him that says so, but yourself.

*Sil.* That you are welcome!

*Pro.* No; that you are worthless.

*Enter Servant.*

*Scr.* Madam, my lord your father would speak with you.

*Sil.* I'll wait upon his pleasure. [*Exit Sir.*]

Come, Sir Thurio, Go with me:—Once more, new servant, welcome:

I'll leave you to confer of home affairs; When you have done, we look to hear from you.

*Pro.* We'll both attend upon your ladyship.

[*Exeunt SILVIA, THURIO, and SPEED.*]

*Fal.* Now, tell me, how do all from whence you came?

*Pro.* Your friends are well, and have them much commended.

*Fal.* And how do your's?

*Pro.* I left them all in health.

*Fal.* How does your lady? and how thrives your love?

*Pro.* My tales of love were wont to weary you;

I know, you joy not in a love-discourse.

*Fal.* Ay, Proteus, but that life is alter'd now: I have done penance for contemning love; Whose high imperious thoughts have punish'd me

\* Incite.

# Scene IV. THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

699

With bitter fasts, with penitential groans,  
With nightly tears, and daily heart-sore sighs;  
For, in revenge of my contempt of love,  
Love hath chas'd sleep from my enthralled eyes,  
And made them watchers of mine own heart's sorrow.

O gentle Proteus, love's a mighty lord;  
And hath so humbled me, as, I confess,  
There is no woe to his correction,  
Nor, to his service, no such joy on earth!  
Now, no discourse, except it be of love;  
Now can I break my fast, dine, sup, and sleep,  
Upon the very naked name of love.

*Pro.* Enough; I read your fortune in your eye:

Was this the idol that you worship so?

*Val.* Even she; and is she not a heavenly saint?

*Pro.* No, but she is an earthly paragon.

*Val.* Call her divine.

*Pro.* I will not flatter her.

*Val.* Oh! flatter me; for love delights in praises.

*Pro.* When I was sick, you gave me bitter pills;

And I must minister the like to you.

*Val.* Then speak the truth by her; if not divine,

Yet let her be a principality,  
Sovereign to all the creatures on the earth.

*Pro.* Except my mistress.

*Val.* Sweet, except not any;

Except thou wilt except against my love.

*Pro.* Have I not reason to prefer mine own?

*Val.* And I will help thee to prefer her too:

She shall be dignified with this high honour,—  
To bear my lady's train; lest the base earth  
Should from her vesture chance to steal a kiss,  
And, of so great a favour growing proud,  
Disdain to root the summer-swelling flower,  
And make rough winter everlastingly.

*Pro.* Why, Valentine, what blaggardism is this?

*Val.* Pardon me, Proteus: all I can, is nothing  
To her, whose worth makes other worthies nothing;  
She is alone.

*Pro.* Then let her alone.

*Val.* Not for the world: why man, she is mine own;

And I as rich in having such a jewel,  
As twenty seas, if all their sand were pearl,  
The water nectar, and the rocks pure gold.  
Forgive me, that I do not dream on thee,  
Because thou seest me dote upon my love.

My foolish rival, that her father likes,  
Only for his possessions are so huge,  
Is gone with her along; and I must after,  
For love, thou know'st, is full of jealousy.

*Pro.* But she loves you?

*Val.* Ay, and we are betroth'd;

Nay, more, our marriage hour,  
With all the cunning manner of our flight,  
Determin'd of: how I must climb her window;  
The ladder made of cords; and all the means  
Plotted, and 'greed on, for my happiness.  
Good Proteus, go with me to my chamber,  
In these affairs to aid me with thy counsel.

*Pro.* Go on before; I shall enquire you forth:

I must unto the road, to disembark  
Some necessities that I needs must use;  
And then I'll presently attend you.

*Val.* Will you make haste?

*Pro.* I will.—

[Exit VAL.]

Even as one heat another heat expels,  
Or as one nail by strength drives out another,  
So the remembrance of my former love  
Is by a newer object quite forgotten.  
Is it mine eye, or Valentine's praise,  
Her true perfection, or my false transgression,  
That makes me, reasonless, to reason thus?  
She's fair; and so is Julia, that I love;—  
That I did love, for now my love is thaw'd;

Which, like a waken image 'gainst a fire,  
Bears no impression of the thing it was.

Methinks, my zeal to Valentine is cold;  
And that I love him not, as I was wont:

Oh! but I love his lady too, too much;

And that's the reason I love him so little.

How shall I dote on her with more advice,

That thus without advice begin to love her?

'Tis but her picture I have yet beheld,

And that hath dazzled my reason's light;

But when I look on her perfections,

There is no reason but I shall be blind.

If I can check my erring love, I will;

If not, to compass her I'll use my skill;

[Exit.]

## SCENE V.—The same.—A Street.

Enter SPEED and LAUNCE.

*Speed.* Launce! by mine honesty, welcome to Milan.

*Laun.* Forswear not thyself, sweet youth; for I am not welcome. I reckon this always—that a man is never undone, till he be hanged; nor never welcome to a place, till some certain shot be paid, and the hostess say, welcome.

*Speed.* Come on, you mad-cap, I'll to the ale-house with you presently: where, for one shot of fivepence, thou shalt have five thousand welcomes. But, sirrah, how did thy master part with madam Julia?

*Laun.* Marry, after they closed in earnest, they parted very fairly in jest.

*Speed.* But shall she marry him?

*Laun.* No.

*Speed.* How then? Shall he marry her?

*Laun.* No, neither.

*Speed.* What, are they broken?

*Laun.* No, they are both as whole as a fish.

*Speed.* Why then, how stands the matter with them?

*Laun.* Marry, thus; when it stands well with him, it stands well with her.

*Speed.* What an ass art thou? I understand thee not.

*Laun.* What a block art thou, that thou canst not? My staff understands me.

*Speed.* What thou say'st?

*Laun.* Ay, and what I do too: look thee, I'll but lean, and my staff understands me.

*Speed.* It stands under thee, indeed.

*Laun.* Why, stand under and understand is all one.

*Speed.* But tell me true, will't be a match?

*Laun.* Ask my dog: if he say, ay, it will; if he say, no, it will: if he shake his tail, and say nothing, it will.

*Speed.* The conclusion is then, that it will.

*Laun.* Thou shalt never get such a secret from me, but by a parable.

*Speed.* 'Tis well that I get it so. But, Launce, how say'st thou, that thy master is become a notable lover?

*Laun.* I never knew him otherwise.

*Speed.* Than how?

*Laun.* A notable lubber, as thou reportest him to be.

*Speed.* Why, thou whoreson ass, thou mistakest me.

*Laun.* Why, fool, I meant not thee; I meant thy master.

*Speed.* I tell thee, my master is become a hot lover.

*Laun.* Whv, I tell thee, I care not though he burn himself in love. If thou wilt go with me to the ale-house, so; if not, thou art an he-brew, a Jew, and not worth the name of a Christian.

*Speed.* Why?

*Laun.* Because thou hast not so much charity in thee, as to go to the ale with a Christian: wilt thou go?

*Speed.* At thy service.

[Exit.]

• On further knowledge

SCENE VI.—*The same.—An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter PROTEUS.*

*Pro.* To leave my Julia, shall I be forsworn;  
To love fair Silvia, shall I be forsworn;  
To wrong my friend, I shall be much forsworn;  
And even that power, which gave me first my

oath,  
Provokes me to this threefold perjury.  
Love bade me swear, and love bids me for-  
swear:

O sweet-suggesting love, if thou hast sinu'd,  
Teach me, thy tempted subject, to excuse it.  
At first I did adore a twinkling star,  
But now I worship a celestial sun.  
Unheeded vows may heedfully be broken;  
And he wants wit, that wants resolved will  
To learn his wit to exchange the bad for bet-  
ter.—

Fie, fie, unreverend tongue! to call her bad,  
Whose sovereignty so oft thou hast preferr'd  
With twenty thousand soul-confirming oaths.  
I cannot leave to love, and yet I do;  
But there I leave to love, where I should love.  
Julia I lose, and Valentine I lose:

If I keep them, I needs must lose myself;  
If I lose them, thus find I by their loss,  
For Valentine, myself; for Julia, Silvia.  
I to myself am dearer than a friend;  
For love is still more precious than itself:  
And Silvia, witness heaven, that made her fair!  
Shows Julia but a swarthy Ethiopie.  
I will forget that Julia is alive,  
Remembring that my love to her is dead;  
And Valentine I'll hold an enemy,  
Aiming at Silvia as a sweeter friend.  
I cannot now prove constant to myself,  
Without some treachery used to Valentine:—  
This night, he meaneth with a corded ladder  
To climb celestial Silvia's chamber-window;  
Myself in counsel, his competitor: \*  
Now presently I'll give her father notice,  
Of their disguising, and pretended flight:  
Who, all enrag'd, will banish Valentine;  
For Thurio, he intends, shall wed his daughter:  
But, Valentine being gone, I'll quickly cross,  
By some sly trick, blunt Thurio's dull proceed-  
ing.

Love, lend me wings to make my purpose swift,  
As thou hast lent me wit to plot this drift!

[*Exit.*]

SCENE VII.—*Verona.—A Room in JULIA'S House.*

*Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.*

*Jul.* Counsel, Lucetta; gentle girl, assist me!

And, even in kind love, I do conjure thee,—  
Who art the table wherein all my thoughts,  
Are visibly character'd and engrav'd,—  
To lesson me! and tell me some good mean,  
How, with my honour, I may undertake  
A journey to my loving Proteus.

*Luc.* Alas! the way is wearisome and long.

*Jul.* A true-devoted pilgrim is not weary  
To measure kingdoms with his feeble steps;  
Much less shall she, that hath love's wings to  
fly;

And when the flight is made to one so dear,  
Of such divine perfection, as Sir Proteus.

*Luc.* Better forbear, till Proteus make re-  
turn.

*Jul.* Oh! know'st thou not, his looks are my  
soul's food?

Pity the dearth that I have pined in,  
By longing for that food so long a time.  
Didst thou but know the inly touch of love,  
Thou would'st as soon go kindle fire with snow,  
As seek to quench the fire of love with words.

*Luc.* I do not seek to quench your love's hot  
fire;

\* Cessafedema.

† Intended.

But qualify the fire's extreme rage,  
Lest it should burn above the bounds of reason.  
*Jul.* The more thou dam'st \* it up, the more it  
burns;

The current, that with gentle murmur glides,  
Thou know'st, being stopp'd, impatiently doth  
rage;

But, when his fair course is not hindered,  
He makes sweet music with the enamel'd stones  
Giving a gentle kiss to every sedge  
He overtaketh in his pilgrimage;

And so by many winding nooks he strays,  
With willing sport, to the wild ocean.  
Then let me go, and hinder not my course:  
I'll be as patient as a gentle stream,  
And make a pastime of each weary step,  
Till the last step have brought me to my love;  
And there I'll rest, as, after much turmoil, †  
A blessed soul doth in Elysium.

*Luc.* But in what habit will you go along?

*Jul.* Not like a woman; for I would prevent  
The loose encounters of lascivious men:  
Gentle Lucetta, fit me with such weeds  
As may besem some well-reputed page.

*Luc.* Why then your ladyship must cut your  
hair.

*Jul.* No, girl; I'll knit it up in silken strings,  
With twenty odd-conceited true-love knots:  
To be fantastic may become a youth  
Of greater time than I shall show to be.

*Luc.* What fashion, madam, shall I make your  
breeches?

*Jul.* That fits as well, as—"tell me, good my  
lord,

"What compass will you wear your faith-  
gale?"

Why, even that fashion thou best lik'st, Lucetta.

*Luc.* You must needs have them with a cod-  
piece, madam.

*Jul.* Out, out, Lucetta! that will be ill-fa-  
vour'd.

*Luc.* A round hose, madam, now's not worth  
a pin,

Unless you have a cod-piece to stick pins on.

*Jul.* Lucetta, as thou lov'st me, let me have  
What thou think'st meet, and is most mannerly:  
But tell me, wench, how will the world repute  
me,

For undertaking so unstaid a journey?

I fear me, it will make me scandaliz'd.

*Luc.* If you think so, then stay at home, and  
go not.

*Jul.* Nay, that I will not.

*Luc.* Then never dream on infamy, but go.  
If Proteus like your journey, when you come,  
No matter who's displeas'd, when you are  
gone:

I fear me, he will scarce be pleas'd withal.

*Jul.* That is the least, Lucetta, of my fear:  
A thousand oaths, an ocean of his tears,  
And instances as infinite of love,  
Warrant me welcome to my Proteus.

*Luc.* All these are servants to deceitful men.

*Jul.* Base men, that use them to so base  
effect!

But truer stars did govern Proteus' birth:  
His words are bonds, his oaths are oracles;  
His love sincere, his thoughts immaculate;  
His tears, pure messengers sent from his heart;  
His heart as far from fraud, as heaven from  
earth.

*Luc.* Pray heaven, he prove so, when you  
come to him!

*Jul.* Now, as thou lov'st me, do him not that  
wrong,

To bear a hard opinion of his truth:  
Only deserve my love, by loving him;  
And presently go with me to my chamber,  
To take a note of what I stand in need of,  
To furnish me upon my longing journey.  
All that is mine I leave at thy dispose,  
My goods, my lands, my reputation;

\* Closest.

† Longed for.

† Trouble.

Only, in lieu thereof, despatch me hence :  
Come, answer not, but to it presently ;  
I am impatient of my tarriance.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—*Milan.*—*An Ante-room in the Duke's palace.*

*Enter DUKE, THURIO, and PROTEUS.*

*Duke.* Sir Thurio, give us leave, I pray, awhile :

We have some secrets to confer about.—

[*Exit THURIO.*]

Now, tell me, Proteus, what's your will with me ?

*Pro.* My gracious lord, that which I would discover,

The law of friendship bids me to conceal ;  
But, when I call to mind your gracious favours  
Done to me, undeserving as I am,  
My duty pricks me on to utter that  
Which else no worldly good should draw from me.

Know, worthy prince, Sir Valentine, my friend,  
This night intends to steal away your daughter ;  
Myself am one made privy to the plot.  
I know, you have determin'd to bestow her  
On Thurio, whom your gentle daughter hates ;  
And should she thus be stolen away from you,  
It would be much vexation to your age.  
Thus, for my duty's sake, I rather chose  
To cross my friend in his intended drift,  
Than, by concealing it, heap on your head  
A pack of sorrows, which would press you  
down,  
Being unprepared, to your timeless grave.

*Duke.* Proteus, I thank thee for thine honest care ;

Which to requite, command me while I live.  
This love of theirs I myself have often seen,  
Haply, when they have judg'd me fast asleep ;  
And oftentimes have purpos'd to forbid  
Sir Valentine her company and my court ;  
But, fearing lest my jealous aim might err,  
And so, unworthily, disgrace the man,  
(A rashness that I ever yet have shunn'd,)  
I gave him gentle looks ; thereby to find  
That which thyself hast now disclos'd to me.  
And, that thou may'st perceive my fear of this,  
Knowing that tender youth is soon suggested, †  
I mightily lodge her in an upper tower,  
The key whereof myself have ever kept ;  
And thence she cannot be convey'd away.

*Pro.* Know, noble lord, they have devis'd a mean

How he her chamber-window will ascend,  
And with a corded ladder fetch her down ;  
For which the youthful lover now is gone,  
And this way comes he with it presently ;  
Where, if it please you, you may intercept him.  
But, good my lord, do it so cunningly,  
That my discovery be not aimed † at ;  
For love of you, not hate unto my friend,  
Hath made me publisher of this pretence. §

*Duke.* Upon mine honour, he shall never know

That I had any light from thee of this.

*Pro.* Adieu, my lord ; Sir Valentine is coming. [*Exit.*]

*Enter VALENTINE.*

*Duke.* Sir Valentine, whither away so fast ?

*Val.* Please it your grace there is a messenger  
That stays to bear my letters to my friends,  
And I am going to deliver them.

*Duke.* Be they of much import ?

*Val.* The tenor of them doth but signify  
My health, and happy being at your court.

*Duke.* Nay, then no matter ; stay with me a while ;

I am to break with thee of some affairs,  
That touch me near, wherein thou must be secret.

'Tis not unknown to thee, that I have sought  
To match my friend, Sir Thurio, to my daughter.

*Val.* I know it well, my lord ; and, sure, the match

Were rich and honourable ; besides, the gentleman

Is full of virtue, bounty, worth, and qualities  
Beseeming such a wife as your fair daughter :  
Cannot your grace win her to fancy him ?

*Duke.* No, trust me : she is peevish, sullen, froward,

Proud, disobedient, stubborn, lacking duty ;  
Neither regarding that she is my child,  
Nor fearing me as if I were her father :  
And, may I say to thee, this pride of hers,  
Upon advice, hath drawn my love from her ;  
And, where I thought the remnant of mine age

Should have been cherish'd by her child-like duty,

I now am full resolved to take a wife,  
And turn her out to who will take her : in :  
Then let her beauty be her wedding-dower ;  
For me and my possessions she esteems not.

*Val.* What would your grace have me to do in this ?

*Duke.* There is a lady, Sir, in Milan here,  
Whom I affect ; but she is nice, and coy,  
And nought esteems my aged eloquence ;  
Now, therefore, would I have thee to my tutor,  
(For long ago I have forgot to court ;  
Besides, the fashion of the time is chang'd ;  
How, and which way, I may bestow myself,  
To be regarded in her sun-bright eye.

*Val.* With her with gifts, if she respect not words ;

Dumb jewels often, in their silent kind,  
More than quick words, do move a woman's mind.

*Duke.* But she did scorn a present that I sent her.

*Val.* A woman sometimes scorns what best contents her :

Send her another ; never give her o'er ;  
For sworn at first makes after-love the more.

If she do frown, 'tis not in hate of you,  
But rather to beget more love in you :  
If she do chide, 'tis not have you gone ;  
For why, the fools are mad, if left alone.

Take no repulse, whatever she doth say ;  
For, *get you gone*, she doth not mean, *away* ;

Flatter, and, praise, commend, extol their graces ;

Though he'er so black, say, they have angels' faces.

That man that hath a tongue, I say, is no man,

If with his tongue he cannot win a woman.

*Duke.* But she, I mean, is promis'd by her friends

Unto a youthful gentleman of worth ;  
And kept severely from resort of men,  
That no man hath access by day to her.

*Val.* Why then I would resort to her by night.

*Duke.* Ay, but the doors be lock'd, and keys kept safe,

That no man hath recourse to her by night.

*Val.* What lets, \* but one may enter at her window ?

*Duke.* Her chamber is aloft, far from the ground ;

And built so shelving that one cannot climb it  
Without apparent hazard of his life.

*Val.* Why then, a ladder, quaintly made of cords,

To cast up with a pair of anchoring books,

† Tempted.

\* Guess.  
‡ Guessed.

§ Design.

\* Hinders.

Would serve to scale another Hero's tower,  
So hold Leander would adventure it.

*Duke.* Now, as thou art a gentleman of blood,  
Advise me where I may have such a ladder.

*Val.* When would you use it? pray, Sir, tell me that.

*Duke.* This very night; for love is like a child,  
That longs for every thing that he can come by.

*Val.* By seven o'clock I'll get you such a ladder.

*Duke.* But, hark thee; I will go to her alone;  
How shall I best convey the ladder thither?

*Val.* It will be light, my lord, that you may bear it

Under a cloak, that is of any length.

*Duke.* A cloak as long as thine will serve the turn?

*Val.* Ay, my good lord.

*Duke.* Then let me see thy cloak:

I'll get me one of such another length.

*Val.* Why, any cloak will serve the turn, my lord.

*Duke.* How shall I fashion me to wear a cloak?

I pray thee, let me feel thy cloak upon me.—

What letter is this same? What's here!—*To Silvia?*

And here an engine fit for my proceeding!

I'll be so bold to break the seal for once.

[*Reads.*]

*My thoughts do harbour with my Silvia nightly;*

*And since they are to me, that send them flying:*

*Oh! could their master come and go as lightly,*

*Himself would lodge, where senseless they are lying.*

*My herald thoughts in thy pure bosom rest them;*

*While I, their kins, that thither them importune,*

*Do curse the grace that with such grace hath bless'd them,*

*Because myself do want my servants' fortune:*

*I curse myself, for they are sent by me,*

*That they should harbour where their lord should be.*

What's here?

*Silvia, this night I will enfranchise thee:*

'Tis so; and here's the ladder for the purpose:—

Why, Phaeton, (for thou art Merops' son)

Wilt thou aspire to guide the heavenly car,

And with thy daring folly burn the world?

Wilt thou reach stars, because they shine on thee?

Go, base intruder! overweening slave!

Bestow thy fawning smiles on equal mates;

And think, my patience, more than thy desert,

Is privilege for thy departure hence:

Thank me for this, more than for all the favours,

Which, all too much, I have bestow'd on thee.

But if thou linger in my territories,

Longer than swiftest expedition

Will give thee time to leave our royal court,

By heaven, my wrath shall far exceed the love

I ever bore my daughter, or thyself.

Be gone, I will not hear thy vain excuse,

But as thou lov'st thy life, make speed from hence.

[*Exit Duke.*]

*Val.* And why not death, rather than living torment?

To die, is to be banish'd from myself;

And Silvia is myself: banish'd from her,

Is self from self; a deadly banishment!

What light is light, if Silvia be not seen;

What joy is joy, if Silvia be not by?

Unless it be to think that she is by,

And feed upon the shadow of perfection.

Except I be by Silvia in the night,

There is no music in the nightingale;

Unless I look on Silvia in the day,

There is no day for me to look upon:

She is my essence; and I leave to be,  
If I be not by her fair influence  
Foster'd, illumin'd, cherish'd, kept alive.  
I fly not death, to fly his deadly doom;  
Tarry I here, I but attend on death;  
But, fly I hence, I fly away from life.

*Enter PROTRUS and LAUNCE.*

*Pro.* Run, boy, run, run, and seek him out.

*Laun.* So-ho! so-ho!

*Pro.* What seest thou?

*Laun.* Him we go to find: there's not a hair on's head, but 'tis a Valentine.

*Pro.* Valentine?

*Val.* No.

*Pro.* Who then? his spirit?

*Val.* Neither.

*Pro.* What then?

*Val.* Nothing.

*Laun.* Can nothing speak? master, shall I strike?

*Pro.* Whom would'st thou strike?

*Laun.* Nothing.

*Pro.* Villain, forbear.

*Laun.* Why, Sir, I'll strike nothing: I pray you,—

*Pro.* Sirrah, I say, forbear: Friend Valentine, a word.

*Val.* My ears are stopp'd, and cannot hear good news,

So much of bad already hath possess'd them.

*Pro.* Then in dumb silence will I bury mine,  
For they are harsh, untunable, and bad.

*Val.* Is Silvia dead?

*Pro.* No, Valentine.

*Val.* No Valentine, indeed, for sacred Silvia!—

Hath she forsworn me?

*Pro.* No, Valentine.

*Val.* No Valentine, if Silvia have forsworn me!—

What is your news?

*Laun.* Sir, there's a proclamation that you are vanish'd.

*Pro.* That thou art banished, Oh! that's the news;

From hence, from Silvia, and from me thy friend.

*Val.* Oh! I have fed upon this woe already,

And now excess of it will make me sullen.

Doth Silvia know that I am banished?

*Pro.* Ay, ay; and she hath offer'd to the doom,

(Which, unrevolv'd, stands in effectual force.)

A sea of melting pearl, which some call tears:

Those at her father's churlish feet she tender'd;

With them, upon her knees, her humble suit;

Wringing her hands, whose whiteness so became them,

As if but now they waxed pale for woe:

But neither bended knees, pure hands held up,  
Sad sighs, deep groans, nor silver-shedding

tears,

Could penetrate her uncompassionate sire;

But Valentine, if he be taken, must die.

Besides, her intercession chaf'd him so,

When she for this repeal was suppliant,

That to close prison he commanded her,

With many bitter threats of 'biding there.

*Val.* No more; unless the next word that thou speak'st,

Have some malignant power upon my life:

If so, I pray thee, breathe it in mine ear,

As ending anthem of my endless dolour.\*

*Pro.* Cease to lament for that thou canst not help,

And study help for that which thou lament'st.

Time is the nurse and breeder of all good.

Here if thou stay, thou can'st not see thy love;

Besides thy staying will abridge thy life.

Hope is a lover's staff; walk hence with that,

And manage it against despairing thoughts;

Thy letters may be here, though thou art hence;

Which, being writ to me, shall be deliver'd  
Even in the milk-white bosom of thy love.  
The time now serves not to expostulate:  
Come, I'll convey thee through the city gate;  
And, ere I part with thee, confer at large  
Of all that may concern thy love affairs:  
As thou lov'st Silvia, though not for thyself,  
Regard thy danger, and along with me.

*Val.* I pray thee, Launce, an if thou seest my  
boy,  
Bid him make haste, and meet me at the north-  
gate.

*Pro.* Go, sirrah, find him out. Come, Valen-  
tine.

*Val.* O my dear Silvia! hapless Valentine!

[*Exit* VALENTINE and PROTEUS.]

*Laun.* I am but a fool, look you: and yet I  
have the wit to think, my master is a kind of  
a knave: but that's all one, if he be but one  
knave. He lives not now, that knows me to  
be in love: yet I am in love; but a team of horse  
shall not pluck that from me: nor who 'tis I  
love, and yet 'tis a woman: but that woman, I  
will not tell myself; and yet 'tis a milk-maid:  
yet 'tis not a maid, for she hath had gossip:  
yet 'tis a maid, for she is her master's maid,  
and serves for wages. She hath more qualities  
than a water-spaniel,—which is much in a bare  
Christian. Here is a cat-log [*Putting out a pa-  
per*] of her conditions. Inprimis, *She can  
fetch and carry.* Why, a horse can do no  
more; nay, a horse cannot fetch, but only carry;  
therefore, is she better than a jade. Item, *She  
can milk,* look you, a sweet virtue in a maid  
with clean hands.

*Enter* SPEED.

*Speed.* How now, signior Launce? what news  
with your mastership?

*Laun.* With my master's ship? why it is at  
sea.

*Speed.* Well, your old vice still; mistake the  
word: What news then in your paper?

*Laun.* The blackest news that ever thou  
heard'st.

*Speed.* Why, man, how black?

*Laun.* Why as black as ink.

*Speed.* Let me read them.

*Laun.* Tie on thee, jolt-head; thou can'st not  
read.

*Speed.* Thou liest, I can.

*Laun.* I will try thee: Tell me this: Who  
begot thee?

*Speed.* Marry, the son of my grandfather.

*Laun.* O illiterate loutier! it was the son of  
thy grandmother: this proves, that thou canst  
not read.

*Speed.* Come, fool, come; try me in thy pa-  
per.

*Laun.* There; and saint Nicholas \* be thy  
speed!

*Speed.* Inprimis, *She can milk.*

*Laun.* Ay, that she can.

*Speed.* Item, *She brews good ale.*

*Laun.* And therefore comes the proverb,—  
Blessings of your heart, you brew good ale.

*Speed.* Item, *She can sew.*

*Laun.* That's as much as to say, Can she so?

*Speed.* Item, *She can knit.*

*Laun.* What need a man care for a stock with  
a wench, when she can knit him a stock.

*Speed.* Item, *She can wash and scour.*

*Laun.* A special virtue; for then she need  
not be wash'd and scoured.

*Speed.* Item, *She can spin.*

*Laun.* Then may I set the world on wheels,  
when she can spin for her living.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath many nameless vir-  
tues.*

*Laun.* That's as much as to say, bastard vir-  
tues; that, indeed, know not their fathers, and  
therefore have no names.

*Speed.* Here follow her vices.

*Laun.* Close at the heels of her virtues.

*Speed.* Item, *She is not to be kiss'd fast-  
ing, in respect of her breath.*

*Laun.* Well that fault may be mended with  
a breakfast: Read on.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath a sweet mouth.*

*Laun.* That makes amends for her sour breath.

*Speed.* Item, *She doth talk in her sleep.*

*Laun.* It's no matter for that, so she sleep not  
in her talk.

*Speed.* Item, *She is slow in words.*

*Laun.* O villain, that set this down among  
her vices! To be slow in words, is a woman's  
only virtue: I pray thee, out with't; and place  
it for her chief virtue.

*Speed.* Item, *She is proud.*

*Laun.* Out with that too; it was Eve's legacy,  
and cannot be ta'en from her.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath no teeth.*

*Laun.* I care not for that neither, because I  
love crusts.

*Speed.* Item, *She is curst.*

*Laun.* Well; the best is, she hath no teeth to  
bite.

*Speed.* Item, *She will often praise her li-  
quor.*

*Laun.* If her liquor be good, she shall: if she  
will not, I will; for good things should be  
praised.

*Speed.* Item, *She is too liberal.\**

*Laun.* Of her tongue she cannot; for that's  
writ down she is slow of: of her purse she shall  
not; for that I'll keep shut: now, of another  
thing she may; and that I cannot help. Well,  
proceed.

*Speed.* Item, *she hath more hair than wit,  
and more faults than hairs, and more wealth  
than faults.*

*Laun.* Stop there; I'll have her: she was  
mine, and not mine, twice or thrice in that last  
article: Rehearse that once more.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath more hair than wit,—*

*Laun.* More hair than wit,—it may be: I'll  
prove it: The cover of the salt hides the salt,  
and therefore it is more than the salt; the hair  
that covers the wit, is more than the wit; for  
the greater hides the less. What's next?

*Speed.* And more faults than hairs,—

*Laun.* That's monstrous: Oh! that that were  
out!

*Speed.* And more wealth than faults.

*Laun.* Why, that word makes the faults gra-  
cious: + Well, I'll have her: and if it be a  
match, as nothing is impossible,—

*Speed.* What then?

*Laun.* Why, then I will tell thee,—that thy  
master stays for thee at the north-gate.

*Speed.* For me?

*Laun.* For thee? ay; who art thou? he hath  
staid for a better man than thee.

*Speed.* And must I go to him?

*Laun.* Thou must run to him; for thou hast  
staid so long, that going will scarce serve the  
turn.

*Speed.* Why didst not tell me sooner; 'pox of  
your love-letters!

[*Exit.*]

*Laun.* Now will he be swinged for reading  
my letter: An unmanly slave, that will  
thrust himself into secrets!—I'll after, to re-  
joice in the boy's correction.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—The same.—A Room in the  
Duke's Palace.

*Enter* DUKE and THURIO; PROTEUS behind.

*Duke.* Sir Thurio, fear not, but that she will  
love you,

Now Valentine is banish'd from her sight.

*Thu.* Since his exile she hath despis'd me  
most,

Forsworn my company, and rail'd at me,  
That I am desperate of obtaining her.

\* St. Nicholas preside over young scholars.

\* Licentious in language.

† Graceful.

**Duke.** This weak impress of love is as a figure  
Trenched\* in ice; which with an hour's heat  
Dissolves to water, and doth lose his form.  
A little time will melt her frozen thoughts,  
And worthless Valentine shall be forgot.—  
How now, Sir Proteus? Is your countryman,  
According to our proclamation, gone?  
**Pro.** Gone, my good lord.  
**Duke.** My daughter takes his going grievously.  
**Pro.** A little time, my lord, will kill that grief.

**Duke.** So I believe: but Thurio thinks not so.—  
Proteus, the good conceit I hold of thee,  
(For thou hast shown some sign of good desert,) Makes me the better to confer with thee.

**Pro.** Longer than I prove loyal to your grace, Let me not live to look upon your grace.

**Duke.** Thou know'st, how willingly I would effect

The match between Sir Thurio and my daughter.  
**Pro.** I do, my lord.

**Duke.** And also, I think, thou art not ignorant How she opposes her against my will.

**Pro.** She did, my lord, when Valentine was here.

**Duke.** Ay, and perversely she persévers so. What might we do, to make the girl forget The love of Valentine, and love Sir Thurio?

**Pro.** The best way is to slander Valentine With falsehood, cowardice, and poor descent: Three things that women highly hold in hate.

**Duke.** Ay, but she'll think, that it is spoke in hate.

**Pro.** Ay, if his enemy deliver it: Therefore it must, with circumstance, be spoken By one, whom she esteemeth as his friend.

**Duke.** Then you must undertake to slander him.

**Pro.** And that, my lord, I shall be loath to do: 'Tis an ill office for a gentleman; Especially, against his very friend.

**Duke.** Where your good word cannot advantage him,

Your slander never can endamage him; Therefore the office is indifferent, Being entreated to it by your friend.

**Pro.** You have prevail'd, my lord: if I can do it,

By aught that I can speak in his dispraise, She shall not long continue love to him. But say, this weed her love from Valentine, It follows not that she will love Sir Thurio.

**Thu.** Therefore as you unwind her love from him,

Lest it should ravel, and be good to none, You must provide to bottom it on me: Which must be done, by praising me as much As you in worth dispraise Sir Valentine.

**Duke.** And, Proteus, we dare trust you in this kind;

Because we know, on Valentine's report, You are already love's firm votary, And cannot soon revolt and change your mind. Upon this warrant shall you have access, Where you with Silvia may confer at large; For she is lumpish, heavy, melancholy, And for your friend's sake, will be glad of you;

Where you may temper her, by your persuasion,

To hate young Valentine, and love my friend.

**Pro.** As much as I can do, I will effect: But you, Sir Thurio, are not sharp enough; You must lay lime,† to tangle her desires, By waulful sonnets, whose composed rhymes Should be full fraught with serviceable vows.

**Duke.** Ay, much the force of heaven-bred poetry.

**Pro.** Say, that upon the altar of her beauty You sacrifice your tears, your sighs, your heart: \*

Write till your ink be dry, and with your tears Moist it again; and frame some feeling line, That may discover such integrity:—

For Orpheus' lute was strung with poets' sinews;

Whose golden touch could soften steel and stones,

Make tigers tame, and huge Leviathans Forsake unsounded deeps to dance on sands.

After your dire-lamenting elegies, Visit by night your lady's chamber-window

With some sweet concert; to their instruments Tune a deploring dump;‡ the night's dead silence

Will well become such sweet complaining grievance.

This, or else nothing, will inherit her.

**Duke.** This discipline shows thou hast been in love.

**Thu.** And thy advice this night I'll put in practice:

Therefore, sweet Proteus, my direction-giver, Let us into the city presently

To sort‡ some gentlemen well skill'd in music: I have a sonnet, that will serve the turn,

To give the onset to thy good advice.

**Duke.** About it, gentlemen.

**Pro.** We'll wait upon your grace till after supper:

And afterward determine our proceedings.

**Duke.** Even now about it; I will pardon you. [Exit.]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—A Forest, near Mantua.

Enter certain OUTLAWS.

1 Out. Fellows, stand fast; I see a passenger.

2 Out. If there be ten, shrink not, but down with 'em.

Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.

3 Out. Stand, Sir, and throw us that you have about you;

If not, we'll make you sir, and ride you.

SPEED. Sir, we are undone; these are the villains

That all the travellers do fear so much.

Val. My friends,—

1 Out. That's not so, Sir; we are your enemies.

2 Out. Peace; we'll hear him.

3 Out. Ay, by my beard, will we; For he's a proper‡ man.

Val. Then know, that I have little wealth to A man I am, cross'd with adversity: [lose;

My riches are these poor habiliments, Of which if you should here disfigure me,

You take the sum and substance that I have.

2 Out. Whither travel you?

Val. To Verona.

1 Out. Whence came you?

Val. From Milan.

3 Out. Have you long sojourned there?

Val. Some sixteen months; and longer might have staid,

If crooked fortune had not thwarted me.

1 Out. What, were you banish'd thence?

Val. I was.

2 Out. For what offence?

Val. For that which now torments me to rehearse:

I kill'd a man, whose death I much repent; But yet I slew him manfully in fight,

Without false vantage, or base treachery.

1 Out. Why ne'er repent it, if it were done so:

But where you banish'd for so small a fault?

Val. I was, and held me glad of such a doom.

\* Cat.

† Birdlime.

‡ Mourning elegy. † Choose out. ‡ Well-looking.

Scene II. THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA. 705

1 *Out.* Have you the tongues? \*  
*Val.* My youthful travel therein made me  
 Or else I often had been miserable. (happy;  
 3 *Out.* By the bare scalp of Robin Hood's fat

frar,  
 This fellow were a king for our wild faction.

1 *Out.* We'll have him: Sirs, a word.

*Speed.* Master, be one of them;  
 It is an honourable kind of thievery.

*Val.* Peace, villain!

2 *Out.* Tell us this: Have you any thing to  
 take to?

*Val.* Nothing but my fortune.

3 *Out.* Know then, that some of us are gen-  
 tlemen,

Such as the fury of ungonvorn'd youth,  
 Thrust from the company of awful men:

Myself was from Verona banished

For practising to steal away a lady,

An heir, and near allied unto the duke.

2 *Out.* And I from Mantua, for a gentleman,

Whom, in my mood, † I stabb'd unto the heart.

1 *Out.* And I, for such like petty crimes as  
 these.

But to the purpose,—(for we cite our faults,  
 That they may hold excus'd our lawless lives,)

And, partly, seeing you are beautified

With goodly shape; and by your own report

A linguist; and a man of such perfection,

As we do in our quality much want;—

2 *Out.* Indeed, because you are a banish'd man,  
 Therefore, above the rest, we parley to you:

Are you content to be our general?

To make a virtue of necessity,

And live, as we do, in this wilderness?

3 *Out.* What say'st thou? wilt thou be of our  
 consort?

Say ay, and be the captain of us all:

We'll do thee homage, and be rul'd by thee;

Love thee as our commander, and our king.

1 *Out.* But if thou scorn our courtesies, thou  
 diest.

2 *Out.* Thou shalt not live to brag what we  
 have offer'd.

*Val.* I take your offer, and will live with you;  
 Provided that you do no outrages

On silly women, or poor passengers.

3 *Out.* No, we detest such vile base practices.  
 Come, go with us, we'll bring thee to our

crews,

And show thee all the treasure we have got;

Which, with ourselves, all rest at thy dispose.  
 [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—Milan.—Court of the Palace.

Enter PROTEUS.

*Pro.* Already have I been false to Valentine,

And now I must be as unjust to Thurio.

Under the colour of commending him,

I have access my own love to prefer;

But Silvia's too fair, too true, too holy,

To be corrupted with my worthless gifts.

When I protest true loyalty to her,

She twits me with my falsehood to my friend;

When to her beauty I commend my vows,

She bids me think, how I have been forsworn

In breaking faith with Julia whom I lov'd:

And, notwithstanding all her sudden quips, §

The least whereof would quell a lover's hope,

Yet, spaniel-like, the more she spurns my love,

The more it grows and fawneth on her still.

But here comes Thurio: now must we to her

window,

And give some evening music to her ear.

Enter THURIO, and Musicians.

*Thu.* How now, Sir Proteus? are you crept  
 before us?

*Pro.* Ay, gentle Thurio; for you know, that  
 love

Will creep in service where it cannot go.

\* Language.  
 † Anger.

‡ Lawful.  
 § Passionate reproaches.

*Thu.* Ay, but I hope, Sir, that you love not  
 here.

*Pro.* Sir, but I do; or else I would be hence.

*Thu.* Whom? Silvia?

*Pro.* Ay, Silvia,—for your sake.

*Thu.* I thank you for your own. Now, gen-  
 tlemen,

Let's tune and do it lustily a while.

Enter HOST, at a distance; and JULIA in  
 boy's clothes.

*Host.* Now, my young guest! methinks you're  
 allycholy: I pray you, why is it?

*Jul.* Marry, mine host, because I cannot be  
 merry.

*Host.* Come, we'll have you merry: I'll bring  
 you where you will hear music, and see the gen-  
 tleman that you ask'd for.

*Jul.* But shall I hear him speak?

*Host.* Ay, that you shall.

*Jul.* That will be music. [Music plays.]

*Host.* Hark! hark!

*Jul.* Is he among these?

*Host.* Ay: but peace! let's hear 'em.

SONG.

Who is Silvia? What is she,

That all our swains commend her?

Holy, fair, and wise is she;

The heavens such grace did lend her

That she might admired be.

Is she kind as she is fair?

For beauty lives with kindness:

Love doth to her eyes repair,

To help him of his blindness;

And, being help'd, inhabits there.

Then to Silvia let us sing,

That Silvia is excelling;

She excels each mortal thing,

Upon the dull earth dwelling:

To her let us garlands bring.

*Host.* How now? are you sadder than you  
 were before?

How do you, man? the music likes you not.

*Jul.* You mistake; the musician likes me  
 not.

*Host.* Why, my pretty youth?

*Jul.* He plays false, father.

*Host.* How? out of tune on the strings?

*Jul.* Not so; but yet so false that he gives  
 my very heart-strings.

*Host.* You have a quick ear.

*Jul.* Ay, I would I were deaf! it makes me  
 have a slow heart.

*Host.* I perceive, you delight not in music.

*Jul.* Not a whit, when it jars so.

*Host.* Hark, what fine change is in the  
 music!

*Jul.* Ay, that change is the spite.

*Host.* You would have them always play but  
 one thing?

*Jul.* I would always have one play but one  
 thing. But, host, doth this Sir Proteus, that we  
 talk on, often resort unto this gentlewoman?

*Host.* I tell you what Launce, his man, told  
 me, he loved her out of all nick.\*

*Jul.* Where is Launce?

*Host.* Gone to seek his dog; which, to-mor-  
 row, by his master's command, he must carry  
 for a present to his lady.

*Jul.* Peace! stand aside! the company parts.

*Pro.* Sir Thurio, fear not you! I will so  
 plead,

That you shall say, my cunning drift excels.

*Thu.* Where meet we?

*Pro.* At saint Gregory's well.

*Thu.* Farewell,

[Exeunt THURIO and Musicians.]

SILVIA appears above, at her window.

*Pro.* Madam, good even to your ladyship.

\* Beyond all reckoning.



*Sil.* I thank you for your music, gentlemen : Who is that that spake ?

*Pro.* One, lady, if you knew his pure heart's truth,

You'd quickly learn to know him by his voice.

*Sil.* Sir Proteus, as I take it.

*Pro.* Sir Proteus, gentle lady, and your servant.

*Sil.* What is your will ?

*Pro.* That I may compass your's.

*Sil.* You have your wish ; my will is even this,—

That presently you hie you home to bed.

Thou subtle, perjur'd, false, disloyal man !

Think'st thou, I am so shallow, so conceited,

To be seduced by thy flattery,

That hast deceiv'd so many with thy vows ?

Return, return, and make thy love amends.

For me,—by this pale queen of night I swear,

I am so far from granting thy request,

That I despise thee for thy wrongful suit ;

And by and by intend to chide myself,

Even for this time I spend in talking to thee.

*Pro.* I grant, sweet love, that I did love a lady ;

But she is dead.

*Jul.* 'Twere false if I should speak it ;

For, I am sure, she is not buried. [*Aside.*]

*Sil.* Say, that she be ; yet Valentine, thy friend,

Survives ; to whom, thyself art witness,

I am betroth'd : And art thou not ashamed

To wrong him with thy importunity ?

*Pro.* I likewise hear, that Valentine is dead.

*Sil.* And so, suppose, am I ; for in his grave

Assure thyself, my love is buried.

*Pro.* Sweet lady, let me rake it from the earth.

*Sil.* Go to thy lady's grave, and call her's thence :

Or, at the least, in her's sepulchre thine.

*Jul.* He heard not that. [*Aside.*]

*Pro.* Madam, if your heart be so obdurate,

Vouchsafe me yet your picture for my love,

The picture that is hanging in your chamber ;

To that I'll speak, to that I'll sigh and weep :

For, since the substance of your perfect self

Is else devoted, I am but a shadow ;

And to your shadow I will make true love.

*Jul.* If 'twere a substance, you would, sure,

deceive it, And make it but a shadow, as I am. [*Aside.*]

*Sil.* I am very loath to be your idol, Sir ;

But, since your falsehood shall become you well

To worship shadows, and adore false shapes,

Send to me in the morning, and I'll send it :

And so good rest.

*Pro.* As wretches have o'er-night,

That wait for execution in the morn.

[*Exeunt PROTEUS ; and SILVIA from above.*]

*Jul.* Host, will you go ?

*Host.* By my hallidom, \* I was fast asleep.

*Jul.* Pray you, where lies Sir Proteus ?

*Host.* Marry, at my house : Trust me, I

think, 'tis almost day.

*Jul.* Not so ; but it hath been the longest

night

That e'er I watch'd, and the most heaviest.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.—The same.

#### Enter EGLAMOUR.

*Egl.* This is the hour that madam Silvia  
Entreated me to call, and know her mind ;  
There's some great matter she'd employ me in.—  
Madam, madam !

SILVIA appears above, at her window.

*Sil.* Who calls ?

\* Holy dame, blessed lady.

*Egl.* Your servant, and your friend ;  
One that attends your ladyship's command.

*Sil.* Sir Eglamour, a thousand times good-morrow.

*Egl.* As many, worthy lady, to yourself.

According to your ladyship's impose, \*

I am thus early come, to know what service

It is your pleasure to command me in.

*Sil.* O Eglamour, thou art a gentleman,

(Think not I flatter, for, I swear, I do not,)—

Valiant, wise, remorseful, † well accomplish'd

Thou art not ignorant, what dear good will

I bear unto the banish'd Valentine ;

Nor how my father would enforce me marry

Vain Thurio, who my very soul abhor'd.

Thyself hast lov'd ; and I have heard thee say,

No grief did ever come so near thy heart,

As when thy lady and thy true love di'd,

Upon whose grave thou vow'd'st pure chastity.

Sir Eglamour, I would to Valentine,

To Mantua, where I hear he makes abode ;

And, for the ways are dangerous to pass,

I do desire thy worthy company,

Upon whose faith and honour I repose.

Urged not my father's anger, Eglamour,

But think upon my grief, a lady's grief ;

And on the justice of my flying hence,

To keep me from a most unholly match,

Which heaven and fortune still reward with

plagues.

I do desire thee, even from a heart

As full of sorrows as the sea of sands,

To bear me company, and go with me :

If not, to hide what I have said to thee,

That I may venture to depart alone.

*Egl.* Madam, I pity much your grievances ;

Which since I know they virtuously are plac'd,

I give consent to go along with you ;

Recking ; as little what betideth me,

As much I wish all good beforneth you.

When will you go ?

*Sil.* This evening coming.

*Egl.* Where shall I meet you ?

*Sil.* At friar Patrick's cell,

Where I intend holy confession.

*Egl.* I will not fail your ladyship :

Good morrow, gentle lady.

*Sil.* Good-morrow, kind Sir Eglamour.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV.—The same.

#### Enter LAUNCE, with his dog.

*Laun.* When a man's servant shall play the cur with him, look you, it goes hard : one that I brought up of a puppy : one that I saved from drowning, when three or four of his blind brothers and sisters went to it ! I have taught him—even as one would say precisely, thus I would teach a dog. I was sent to deliver him, as a present to mistress Silvia from my master ; and I came no sooner into the dining chamber, but he steps me to her trencher, and steals her capon's leg. Oh ! 'tis a foul thing, when a cur cannot keep himself in all companies ! I would have, as one should say, one that takes upon him to be a dog indeed, to be, as it were, a dog at all things. If I had not had more wit than he, to take a fault upon me that he did, I think verily he had been hanged for't : sure as I live, he had suffered for't : you shall judge. He thrusts me himself into the company of three or four gentleman-like dogs, under the duke's table ; he had not been there (bless the mark) a pissing while ; but all the chamber smelt him. *Out with the dog,* says one ; *What cur is that ?* says another ; *Whip him out,* says the third ; *Hang him up,* says the duke. I, having been acquainted with the smell before, knew it was Crab ; and goes me to the fellow that whips the dogs : *Friend,* quoth I, *you mean to whip the dog ?* Ay, marry, do I, quoth he. *You do him the more wrong,* quoth I ; *'twas I did*

\* Injunction.

† Pitiful.

‡ Caring.

§ Restrain.

# Scene IV. THE TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

707

*the thing you wot of.* He makes me no more ado, and whips me out of the chamber. How many masters would do this for their servant? Nay, I'll be sworn, I have sat in the stocks for puddings he hath stolen, otherwise he had been executed: I have stood on the pillory for geese he hath killed, otherwise he had suffered for't; thou think'st not of this now!—Nay, I remember the trick you served me, when I took my leave of madam Silvia; did not I bid thee still mark me, and do as I do? When didst thou see me heave up my leg, and make water against a gentleman's fartingale? didst thou ever see me do such a trick?

*Enter PROTEUS and JULIA.*

*Pro.* Sebastian is thy name? I like thee well,  
And will employ thee in some service presently.  
*Jul.* In what you please;—I will do what I can.

*Pro.* I hope thou wilt.—How now, you whorson peasant? [*To LAUNCE.*]  
Where have you been these two days loitering?  
*Laun.* Marry, Sir, I carried mistress Silvia the dog you bade me.

*Pro.* And what says she to my little jewel?  
*Laun.* Marry, she says, your dog was a cur; and tells you, currish thanks is good enough for such a present.

*Pro.* But she received my dog?  
*Laun.* No, indeed, she did not: here have I brought him back again.

*Pro.* What, didst thou offer her this from me?

*Laun.* Ay, Sir; the other squirrel was stolen from me by the hangman's boys in the market place: and then I offered her mine own; who is a dog as big as ten of your's, and therefore the gift the greater.

*Pro.* Go, get thee hence, and find my dog. Or we'll return again into my sight. [*again.*]  
Away, I say: Stay'st thou to vex me here?  
A slave, that, still an end,\* turns me to shame.

[*Exit LAUNCE.*]

Sebastian, I have entertained thee,  
Partly, that I have need of such a youth,  
That can with some discretion do my business,  
For 'tis no trusting to yon foolish lowt;  
But, chiefly, for thy face and thy behaviour:  
Which (if my augury deceive me not)  
Witness good bringing up, fortune, and truth:  
Therefore know thou, for this I entertain thee.  
Go presently, and take this ring with thee,  
Deliver it to madam Silvia:  
She loved me well, deliver'd it to me.

*Jul.* It seems, you loved her not, to leave her token:

She's dead, belike.

*Pro.* Not so; I think she lives.

*Jul.* Alas!

*Pro.* Why dost thou cry, alas?

*Jul.* I cannot choose but pity her.

*Pro.* Wherefore should'st thou pity her?

*Jul.* Because, methinks, that she loved you as well

As you do love your lady Silvia:  
She dreams on him, that has forgot her love;  
You dote on her, that cares not for your love.  
'Tis pity, love should be so contrary;  
And thinking on it makes me cry, alas!

*Pro.* Well, give her that ring, and therewithal

This letter;—that's her chamber.—Tell my lady,

I claim the promise for her heavenly picture.  
Your message done, bid home unto my chamber,  
Where thou shalt find me sad and solitary.

[*Exit PROTEUS.*]

*Jul.* How many women would do such a message?

Alas, poor Proteus! thou hast entertain'd

\* In the end.

A fox, to be shepherd of thy lambs;  
Alas, poor fool! why do I pity him  
That with his very heart despiseth me?  
Because he loves her, he despiseth me;  
Because I love him, I must pity him.  
This ring I gave him, when he parted from me,

To bind him to remember my good will:  
And now am I (unhappy messenger)  
To plead for that, which I would not obtain;  
To carry that which I would have refus'd  
To praise his faith, which I would have disprais'd.

I am my master's true confirmed love;  
But cannot be true servant to my master,  
Unless I prove false traitor to myself,  
Yet I will woo for him: but yet so coldly,  
As heaven, it knows, I would not have him speed.

*Enter SILVIA, attended.*

Gentlewoman, good day! I pray you, be my mean

To bring me where to speak with madam Silvia.

*Sil.* What would you with her, if that I be she?

*Jul.* If you be she, I do entreat your patience

To hear me speak the message I am sent on.

*Sil.* From whom?

*Jul.* From my master, Sir Proteus, madam.

*Sil.* O!—he sends you for a picture!

*Jul.* Ay, madam.

*Sil.* Ursula, bring my picture there.

[*Picture brought.*]

Go, give your master this: tell him from me,  
One Julia, that his changing thoughts forget,  
Would better sit his chamber than this shadow.

*Jul.* Madam, please you peruse this letter.—

Pardon me, madam; I have unadvis'd

Deliver'd you a paper that I should not;

This is the letter to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I pray thee let me look on that again.

*Jul.* It may not be; good madam, pardon me.

*Sil.* There hold.

I will not look upon your master's lines:  
I know, they are stuff'd with protestations,  
And full of new-found oaths; which he will break

As easily as I do tear his paper.

*Jul.* Madam, he sends your ladyship this ring.

*Sil.* The more shame for him that he sends it me;

For, I have heard him say a thousand times,

His Julia gave it him at his departure:

Though his false finger hath profan'd the ring

Mine shall not do his Julia so much wrong.

*Jul.* She thanks you.

*Sil.* What say'st thou?

*Jul.* I thank you, madam, that you tender her:

Poor gentlewoman! my master wrongs her much.

*Sil.* Dost thou know her?

*Jul.* Almost as well as I do know myself:

To think upon her woes, I do protest,  
That I have wept a hundred several times.

*Sil.* Belike, she thinks that Proteus hath forsok her.

*Jul.* I think she doth, and that's her cause of sorrow.

*Sil.* Is she not passing fair?

*Jul.* She hath been fairer, madam, than she is:

When she did think my master lov'd her well,  
She, in my judgment, was as fair as you;  
But since she did neglect her looking-glass,  
And threw her sun-expelling mask away,  
The air hath starv'd the roses in her cheeks  
And pinch'd the lily-tincture of her face,  
That now she is become as black as I.

*Sil.* How tall was she?

*Jul.* About my stature: for, at Pentecost,\*  
When all our pageants of delight were play'd,  
Our youth got me to play the woman's part,  
And I was trimm'd in madam Julia's gown;  
Which served me as fit, by all men's judgment,  
As if the garment had been made for me;  
Therefore, I know she is about my height.  
And, at that time, I made her weep a-good,†  
For I did play a lamentable part:  
Madam, 'twas Ariadne, passioning  
For Theseus' perjury, and unjust flight;  
Which I so lively acted with my tears,  
That my poor mistress, moved there withal,  
Wept bitterly; and would I might be dead,  
If I in thought felt not her very sorrow!

*Sil.* She is beholden to thee, gentle youth!—  
Alas, poor lady! desolate and left!—  
I weep myself, to think upon thy words.  
Here, youth, there is my purse; I give thee this  
For thy sweet mistress' sake, because thou lov'st  
her.

*Farewell.* [Exit SILVIA.  
*Jul.* And she shall thank you for't, if e'er you  
know her.—

A virtuous gentlewoman, mild, and beautiful.  
I hope my master's suit will be but cold,  
Since she respects my mistress' love so much.  
Alas, how love can trifle with itself!  
Here is her picture: Let me see; I think,  
If I had such a ture,‡ this face of mine  
Were full as lovely as is this of hers:  
And yet the painter flatter'd her a little,  
Unless I flatter with myself too much.  
Her hair is auburn, mine is perfect yellow:  
If that be all the difference in his love,  
I'll get me such a colour'd periwig.  
Her eyes are grey as glass; and so are mine:  
Ay, but her forehead's low, and mine's as high.  
What should it be, that he respects in her,  
But I can make respective§ in myself,  
If this fond love were not a blinded god?  
Come, shadow, come, and take this shadow up,  
For 'tis thy rival. O thou senseless form,  
Thou shalt be worshipp'd, kiss'd, lov'd, and  
ador'd;

And, were there sense in his idolatry,  
My substance should be statue in thy stead.  
I'll use thee kindly for thy mistress' sake,  
That us'd me so; or else by Jove I vow,  
I should have scratch'd out your unseeing eyes,  
To make my master out of love with thee.

[Exit.

### ACT V.

#### SCENE I.—The same.—An Abbey.

Enter EGLAMOUR.

*Egl.* The sun begins to glid the western sky;  
And now, it is about the very hour  
That Silvia, at Patrick's cell, should meet me.  
She will not fail; for lovers break not hours,  
Unless it be to come before their time;  
So much they spur their expedition.

Enter SILVIA.

*See, where she comes: Lady, a happy evening!*  
*Sil.* Amen, amen! go on, good Eglamour!  
Out at the postern by the abbey wall;  
I fear I am attended by some spies.

*Egl.* Fear not: the forest is not three leagues  
If we recover that, we are sure enough. [off;  
[Exeunt.

#### SCENE II.—The same.—An Apartment in the Duke's palace.

Enter THURIO, PROTEUS, and JULIA.

*Thu.* Sir Proteus, what says Silvia to my suit?  
*Pro.* O Sir, I find her milder than she was;  
And yet she takes exceptions at your person.  
*Thu.* What, that my leg is too long?

*Pro.* No; that it is too little.

*Thu.* I'll wear a boot, to make it somewhat  
rounder.

*Pro.* But love will not be spurr'd to what it  
loaths.

*Thu.* What says she to my face?

*Pro.* She says, it is a fair one.

*Thu.* Nay, then the wanton lies; my face is  
black.

*Pro.* But pearls are fair; and the old saying is,  
Black men are pearls in beauteous ladies' eyes.

*Jul.* 'Tis true; such pearls as put out ladies'  
eyes;

For I had rather wink than look on them.

*Thu.* How likes she my discourse? [Aside.

*Pro.* Ill, when you talk of war.

*Thu.* But well, when I discourse of love and  
peace.

*Thu.* But better, indeed, when you hold your  
peace. [Aside.

*Thu.* What says she to my valour?

*Pro.* O Sir, she makes no doubt of that.

*Jul.* She needs not, when she knows it cow-  
ardice. [Aside.

*Thu.* What says she to my birth?

*Pro.* That you are well deriv'd.

*Jul.* True; from a gentleman to a fool.

*Thu.* Considers she my possessions? [Aside.

*Pro.* Oh! ay; and pities them.

*Thu.* Wherefore?

*Jul.* That such an ass should owe\* them.

[Aside.

*Pro.* That they are out by lease.

*Jul.* Here comes the duke.

Enter DUKE.

*Duke.* How now, Sir Proteus? how now,  
Thurio?

Which of you saw Sir Eglamour of late?

*Thu.* Not I.

*Pro.* Not I.

*Duke.* Saw you my daughter?

*Pro.* Neither.

*Duke.* Why, then she's fled unto that peasant  
And Eglamour is in her company. [Valentine;

'Tis true; for friar Laurence met them both,  
As he in penance wander'd through the forest:

Him he knew well, and guess'd that it was she;  
But, being mask'd, he was not sure of it:

Besides, she did intend confession [not;

At Patrick's cell this even; and there she was  
These likelihoods confirm her flight from hence.

Therefore, I pray you, stand not to discourse,  
But mount you presently; and meet with me

Upon the rising of the mountain foot [fled;

That leads towards Mantua, whither they are  
Despatch, sweet gentlemen, and follow me. [Exit.

*Thu.* Why, this it is to be a peevish† girl.  
That flies her fortune when it follows her:

I'll after; more to be reveng'd on Eglamour,  
Than for the love of reckless§ Silvia. [Exit.

*Pro.* And I will follow more for Silvia's love,  
Than hate of Eglamour that goes with her. [Exit.

*Jul.* And I will follow more to cross that love,  
Than hate for Silvia, that is gone for love. [Exit.

#### SCENE III.—Frontiers of Mantua.—The Forest.

Enter SILVIA and OUTLAWS.

*Out.* Come, come,  
Be patient, we must bring you to our captain.

*Sil.* A thousand more mischances than this  
one

Have learn'd me how to brook this patiently.

2 *Out.* Come, bring her away.

1 *Out.* Where is the gentleman that was with  
her?

\* Whitsuntide.  
‡ Head-dress.

† In good earnest.  
‡ Respectable.

\* Own. † Foolish. ‡ Careless

3 Out. Being nimble footed, he hath outrun  
us,  
But Moses, and Valerius, follow him.  
Go thou with her to the west end of the wood,  
There is our captain: we'll follow him that's  
led;  
The thicket is beset, he cannot 'scape.  
1 Out. Come, I must bring you to our cap-  
tain's cave:  
Fear not; he bears an honourable mind,  
And will not use a woman lawlessly.  
Sil. O Valentine, this I endure for thee!

[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—Another part of the Forest.

Enter VALENTINE.

Val. How use doth breed a habit in a man!  
This shadowy desert, unfrequented woods,  
I better brook than flourishing peopled towns:  
Here can I sit alone unseen of any,  
And, to the nightingale's complaining notes,  
Tune my distresses, and record\* my woes.  
O thou, that dost inhabit in my breast,  
Leave not the mansion so long tenantless;  
Lest, growing ruinous, the building fall,  
And leave no memory of what it was!  
Repair me with thy presence, Silvia;  
Thou gentle nymph, cherish thy forlorn swain!—  
What halloo, and what stir, is this to-day?  
These are my mates, that make their wills their  
law,  
Have some unhappy passenger in chase:  
They love me well; yet I have much to do,  
To keep them from uncivil outrages.  
Withdraw thee, Valentine; who's this comes  
here?

[Steps aside.]

Enter PROTEUS, SILVIA, and JULIA.

Pro. Madam, this service I have done for you,  
(Though you respect not aught your servant  
doth.)  
To hazard life, and rescue you from him  
That would have forc'd your honour and your  
love.  
Vouchsafe me, for my meed,† but one fair look;  
A smaller boon than this I cannot beg,  
And less than this, I am sure, you cannot give.  
Val. How like a dream is this I see and  
hear!  
Love, lend me patience to forbear awhile.

[Aside.]

Sil. O miserable, unhappy that I am!

Pro. Unhappy were you, madam, ere I came;  
But, by my coming, I have made you happy.

Sil. By thy approach thou mak'st me most un-  
happy.

Jul. And me, when he approacheth to your  
presence.

[Aside.]

Sil. Had I been seized by a hungry lion,  
I would have been a breakfast to the beast,  
Rather than have false Proteus rescue me.  
O heaven be judge, how I love Valentine,  
Whose life's as tender to me as my soul;  
And full as much (for more there cannot be,)  
I do detest false perjur'd Proteus:  
Therefore be gone, solicit me no more.

Pro. What dangerous action, stood it next to  
death,

Would I not undergo for one calm look?  
Oh! 'tis the curse in love, and still approv'd.†  
When women cannot love where they're lov'd.

Sil. When Proteus cannot love where he's be-  
lov'd.

Read over Julia's heart, thy first best love,  
For whose dear sake thou did'st then rend thy  
faith

Into a thousand oaths; and all those oaths  
Descended into perjury, to love me.  
Thou hast no faith left now, unless thou hadst  
two,

\* Sing

† Felt, experienced.

† Reward.

And that's far worse than none; better have  
none  
Than plural faith, which is too much by one:  
Thou counterfeist to thy true friend!

Pro. In love,  
Who respects friend!

Sil. All men but Proteus.

Pro. Nay, if the gentle spirit of moving words  
Can no way change you to a milder form,  
I'll woo you like a soldier, at arms' end;  
And love you 'gainst the nature of love, force  
you.

Sil. O heaven!

Pro. I'll force thee yield to my desire.

Val. Ruffian let go, that rude uncivil touch;  
Thou friend of an ill fashion!

Pro. Valentine!

Val. Thou common friend, that's without faith  
or love.

(For such is a friend now,) treacherous man!

Thou hast beguill'd my hopes; nought but mine  
eye

Could have persuaded me: Now I dare not  
say

I have one friend alive; thou would'st disprove  
Who should be trusted now, when one's right  
hand

Is perjur'd to the bosom? Proteus,  
I am sorry I must never trust thee more,  
But count the world a stranger for thy sake.

The private wound is deepest: O time, most  
curst!

'Mongst all foes, that a friend should be the  
worst!

Pro. My shame and guilt confounds me.—

Forgive me, Valentine: if hearty sorrow

Be a sufficient ransom for offence,

I tender it here; I do as truly suffer,

As e'er I did commit.

Val. Then I am paid;

And once again I do receive thee honest:—

Who by repentance is not satisfied,  
Is nor of heaven, nor earth; for these are  
pleas'd;

By penitence the Eternal's wrath's pleas'd:—  
And, that my love may appear plain and free,  
All that was mine in Silvia, I give thee.

Jul. O me, unhappy!

[Faints.]

Pro. Look to the boy.

Val. Why boy! why wag! how now? what is  
the matter?

Look up; speak.

Jul. O good Sir, my master charg'd me

To deliver a ring to madam Silvia:

Which, out of my neglect was never done.

Pro. Where is that ring, boy?

Jul. Here 'tis: this is it. [Gives a ring]

Pro. How! let me see:

Why this is the ring I gave to Julia.

Jul. O cry your mercy, Sir, I have mistook;

This is the ring you sent to Silvia.

[Shows another ring.]

Pro. But, how cam'st thou by this ring? at  
my depart,

I gave this unto Julia.

Jul. And Julia herself did give it me;

And Julia herself hath brought it hither.

Pro. How! Julia!

Jul. Behold her that gave aim\* to all thy  
oaths,

And entertain'd them deeply in her heart:

How oft hast thou with perjury cleft the root?†

O Proteus, let this habit make thee blush!

Be thou asham'd, that I have took upon me

Such an immodest raiment; if shame live

In a disguise of love:

It is the lesser blot, modesty finds,

Women to change their shapes, than men their  
minds.

Pro. Thau men their minds? 'tis true: O

heaven! were man

But constant, he were perfect: that one error

\* Direction.

† An allusion to cleaving the pin in archery.

Fills him with faults ; makes him run through  
all sins ;

Inconstancy falls off, ere it begins :

What is in Silvia's face, but I may spy  
More fresh in Julia's with a constant eye ?

*Val.* Come, come, a hand from either :

Let me be blest to make this happy close !

'Twere pity two such friends should be long foes.

*Pro.* Bear witness, heaven, I have my wish  
for ever.

*Jul.* And I have mine.

*Enter OUTLAWS, with DUKE and THURIO.*

*Out.* A prize, a prize, a prize !

*Val.* Forbear, I say ; it is my lord the duke.  
Your grace is welcome to a man disgrac'd,  
Banish'd Valentine !

*Duke.* Sir Valentine !

*Thu.* Yonder is Silvia ; and Silvius's mine.

*Val.* Thurio give back, or else embrace thy  
death ;

Come not within the measure \* of my wrath ;

Do not name Silvia thine ; if once again,  
Milan shall not behold thee. Here she stands,

Take but possession of her with a touch ;

I dare thee but to breathe upon my love.—

*Thu.* Sir Valentine, I care not for her, I ;

I hold him but a fool, that will endanger

His body for a girl that loves him not ;

I claim her not, and therefore she is thine.

*Duke.* The more degenerate and base art thou,

To make such means † for her as thou hast done,

And leave her on such slight conditions.—

Now, by the honour of my ancestry,

I do applaud thy spirit, Valentine,

And think thee worthy of an empress's love.

Know then, I here forget all former griefs,

\* Length of my sword.

† Interest.

Cancel all grudge, repeal thee home again.—

Plead a new sate in thy unrivall'd merit,

To which I thus subscribe,—Sir Valentine,

Thou art a gentleman, and well deriv'd ;

Take thou thy Silvia, for thou hast deserv'd her.

*Val.* I thank your grace ; the gift hath made

me happy

I now beseech you, for your daughter's sake,

To grant one boon that I shall ask of you.

*Duke.* I grant it, for thine own, whate'er it be.

*Val.* These banish'd men, that I have kept

withal,

Are men endued with worthy qualities :

Forgive them what they have committed here,

And let them be recall'd from their exile :

They are reformed, civil, full of good,

And fit for great employment, worthy lord.

*Duke.* Thou hast prevail'd : I pardon them,

and thee ;

Dispose of them, as thou know'st their deserts.

Come, let us go ; we will include\* all jars

With triumphs, † mirth, and rare solemnity.

*Val.* And, as we walk along, I dare be bold

With our discourse to make your grace to smile :

What think you of this page, my lord ?

*Duke.* I think the boy hath grace in him, he

blushes.

*Val.* I warrant you, my lord, more grace than

boy.

*Duke.* What mean you by that saying ?

*Val.* Please you, I'll tell you as we pass along,

That you will wonder what hath fortun'd.—

Come, Proteus ; 'tis your penance, but to hear

The story of your loves discovered :

That done, our day of marriage shall be your's ;

One feast, one house, one mutual happiness.

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Conclude.

† Mask, reveals

# LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

SHAKSPEARE'S first draught of this trifling play, (which all the editors have concurred in censuring, and some have rejected as unworthy of its author) was written in or before 1594, and some additions were probably made to it between that year and 1597, when it was exhibited before Queen Elizabeth. Like the Taming of the Shrew, it was undoubtedly one of his earliest essays to dramatic writing; as the frequent rhymes, the imperfect versification, the artless and desultory dialogue, and the irregularity of the composition, sufficiently prove. The fable does not seem to be a work entirely of invention; and perhaps owes its birth to some novel which has yet to be discovered. The character of Armado bears some resemblance to Don Quixotte, but the play is older than the work of Cervantes; of Holofernes, another singular character, there are some traces in a masque of Sir Philip Sidney, presented before Queen Elizabeth at Wansted. Dr. Johnson says, that in this play "there are many passages mean, childish, and vulgar; and some which ought not to have been exhibited, as we are told they were, to a maiden Queen. But there are scattered through the whole many sparks of genius, nor is there any play that has more evident marks of the hand of Shakspeare."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

FERDINAND, *King of Navarre.*

BIRON, } *Lords, attending on the*  
LONGAVILLE, } *King.*  
DUMAİN, }

BOYEL, } *Lorâs, attending on the Princess*  
MERCADI, } *of France.*

DON ADRIANDE DE ARVADO, *a fantastical*  
*Spaniard.*

SIR NATHANIEL, *a Curate.*

HOLOFERNES, *a Schoolmaster.*

DULL, *a Constable*

COSTARD, *a Clown.*

MOTH, *Page to Armado.*  
A Forcster.

PRINCESS OF FRANCE.

ROSALINE, } *Ladies, attending on the*  
MARIA, } *Princess.*  
KATHARINE, }  
JAQUENETTA, *a Country Wench.*

*Officers, and others, Attendants on the King*  
*and Princess.*

SCENE—Navarre.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Navarre.—*A Park, with a Palace*  
*in it.*

*Enter the KING, BIRON, LONGAVILLE, and*  
*DUMAİN.*

*King.* Let fame, that all hunt after in their  
lives,

Live register'd upon our brazen tombs,  
And then grace us in the disgrace of death;  
When, spite of cormorant devouring time,  
The endeavour of this present breath may buy  
That honour, which shall bate his scythe's keen  
edge,

And make us heirs of all eternity.  
Therefore, brave conquerors!—for so you are,  
That war against your own affections,  
And the huge army of the world's desires,—  
Our late edict shall strongly stand in force:  
Navarre shall be the wonder of the world;  
Our court shall be a little Academe,  
Still and contemplative in living art.

You three, Biron, Dumain, and Longaville,  
Have sworn for three years' term to live with  
me,

My fellow-scholars, and to keep those statutes  
That are recorded in this schedule here:

Your oaths are past, and now subscribe your  
names;

That his own hand may strike his honour down,  
That violates the smallest branch hereof:

If you are arm'd to do, as sworn to do,  
Subscribe to your deep oath, and keep it too.

*Long.* I am resolv'd: 'tis but a three years'  
fast;

The mind shall banquet, though the body pine:  
Fat paunches have lean pates; and dainty bits  
Make rich the ribs, but bank'ront quite the  
wits.

*Dum.* My loving lord, Dumain is mortified;  
The grosser manner of these world's delights  
He throws upon the gross world's baser slaves:  
To love, to wealth, to pomp, I pine and die;  
With all these living in philosophy.

*Biron.* I can but say their protestation over,  
So much, dear liege, I have already sworn,  
That is, To live and study here three years,  
But there are other strict observances:

As, not to see a woman in that term;  
Which, I hope well, is not enrolled there:  
And, one day in a week to touch no food;  
And but one meal on every day beside;

The which, I hope, is not enrolled there:  
And then, to sleep but three hours in the night,  
And not be seen to wink of all the day;

(When I was wont to think no harm all night,  
And make a dark night too of half the day ;)  
Which, I hope well, is not enrolled there :  
O these are barren tasks, too hard to keep :  
Not to see ladies, study, fast, nor sleep.

*King.* Your oath is pass'd to pass away from these.

*Biron.* Let me say no, my liege, an if you please ;

I only swore, to study with your grace,  
And stay here in your court for three years' space.

*Long.* You swore to that, Biron, and to the rest.

*Biron.* By ea and nay, Sir, then I swore in jest.

What is the end of study ? let me know.

*King.* Why, that to know, which else we should not know.

*Biron.* Things hid and barr'd, you mean, from common sense ?

*King.* Ay, that is study's god-like recompense.

*Biron.* Come on then, I will swear to study so to know the thing I am forbid to know :

As thus—To study where I well may dine,  
When I to feast expressly am forbid ;

Or, study where to meet some mistress fine,  
When mistresses from common sense are hid :

Or, having sworn too hard-a-keeping oath,  
Study to break it, and not break my troth.

If study's gain be thus, and this be so,  
Study knows that, which yet it doth not know : }

Swear me to this, and I will ne'er say, no.

*King.* These be the stops that hinder study quite,

And train our intellects to vain delight.

*Biron.* Why, all delights are vain ; but that most vain,

Which, with pain purchas'd, doth inherit pain :  
As, painfully to pore upon a book,

To seek the light of truth ; while truth the while

Doth falsely \* blind the eyesight of his look :  
Light, seeking light, doth light of light be-  
guile :

So, ere you find where light in darkness lies,  
Your light grows dark by losing of your eyes.

Study me how to please the eye indeed,  
By fixing it upon a fairer eye ;

Who dazzling so, that eye shall be his heed,  
And give him light that was it blinded by.

Study is like the heaven's glorious sun,  
That will not be deep-search'd with saury

looks ;

Small have continual plodders ever won,  
Save base authority from others' books.

These earthly godfathers of heaven's lights,  
That give a name to every fixed star,

Have no more profit of their shining nights,  
Than those that walk, and wot not what they

are.

Too much to know, is, to know nought, but  
fame ;

And every godfather can give a name.

*King.* How well he's read, to reason against reading !

*Dum.* Proceeded well, to stop all good proceeding !

*Long.* He weeds the corn, and still lets grow the weeding.

*Biron.* The spring is near when green geese are a breeding.

*Dum.* How follows that ?

*Biron.* Fit in his place and time.

*Dum.* In reason nothing.

*Biron.* Something then in rhyme.

*Long.* Biron is like an envious sneaping † frost,  
That bites the first-born infants of the spring.

*Biron.* Well, say I am ; why should proud summer boast,  
Before the birds have any cause to sing ?

Why should I joy in an abortive birth ?

At Christmas I no more desire a rose  
Than wish a snow in May's new fangled }  
shows ; \*

Rut like of each thing, that in season grows.  
So you, to study now it is too late,

Climb o'er the house to unlock the little gate.

*King.* Well, sit you out : go home, Biron ;  
adieu !

*Biron.* No, my good lord ; I have sworn to stay with you :

And, though I have for barbarism spoke more,  
Than for that angel knowledge you can say,

Yet confident I'll keep what I have sworn,  
And bide the penance of each three years' day.

Give me the paper, let me read the same ;  
And to the strictest decrees I'll write my

name.

*King.* How well this yielding rescues thee }  
from shame !

*Biron.* [Reads.] Item, That no woman shall come within a mile of my court.—

And hath this been proclaim'd ?

*Long.* Four days ago.

*Biron.* Let's see the penalty.

[Reads.]—On pain of losing her tongue.—

Who devis'd this ?

*Long.* Marry, that did I.

*Biron.* Sweet lord, and why ?

*Long.* To fright them hence with that dread

penalty.

*Biron.* A dangerous law against gentility.

[Reads.] Item, If any man be seen to talk with a woman within the term of three years,

he shall endure such public shame as the rest of the court can possibly devise.—

This article, my liege, yourself must break ;

For well you know, here comes in embassy  
The French king's daughter, with yourself to

speak,—

A maid of grace, and complete majesty.—

About surrender-up of Aquitain

To her decrepit, sick, and bed-ridden father ;

Therefore this article is made in vain,

Or vainly comes the admired princess hither.

*King.* What say you, lords ? why, this was quite forgot.

*Biron.* So study evermore is overshot ;

While it doth study to have what it would,

It doth forget to do the thing it should :

And when it hath the thing it hunteth most,

'Tis won, as towns with fire ; so won, so lost.

*King.* We must of force, dispense with this decree ;

She must lie † here on mere necessity.

*Biron.* Necessity will make us all forsworn

Three thousand times within this three

years' space :

For every man with his affects is born ;

Not by might master'd, but by special

grace :

If I break faith, this word shall speak for me,

I am forsworn on mere necessity.—

So to the laws at large I write my name :

[Subscribes]

And he, that breaks them in the least degree,

Stands in attainder of eternal shame :

Suggestions ‡ are to others, as to me ;

But, I believe, although I seem so loath,

I am the last that will last keep his oath.

But is there no quick † recreation granted ?

*King.* Ay, that there is : our court, you know,

is haunted

With a refined traveller of Spain ;

A man in all the world's new fashion planted,

That hath a mint of phrases in his brain :

One, whom the music of his own vain tongue

Doth ravish, like enchanting harmony ;

A man of compliments, whom right and wrong

Have chose as unripe of their mutiny :

This child of fancy, that Armado hight, ‡

For interim to our studies, shall relate,

\* Dishonestly, treacherously.  
† Nipping.

\* Mar-games. † Reside. ‡ Temptations.  
‡ Lives, sprightly † Called.

In high-born words, the worth of many a knight  
From tawny Spain, lost in the world's debate.

How you delight, my lords, I know not, I;  
But, I protest, I love to hear him lie,  
And I will use him for my minstrelsy.

*Biron.* Armado is a most illustrious wight,  
A man of fire-new words, fashion's own knight.  
*Long.* Costard the swain, and he, shall be our  
And, so to study, three years is but short. [sport;

*Enter DULL, with a letter, and COSTARD.*

*Dull.* Which is the duke's own person?

*Biron.* This, fellow; What would'st?

*Dull.* I myself reprehend his own person,  
for I am his grace's tharborough: \* But I would  
see his own person in flesh and blood.

*Biron.* This is he.

*Dull.* Signior Arme—Arme—commends you.  
There's villany abroad; this letter will tell  
you more.

*Cost.* Sir, the contempts thereof are as touch-  
ing me.

*King.* A letter from the magnificent Armado.

*Biron.* How low soever the matter, I hope  
in God for high words.

*Long.* A high hope for a low having: God  
grant us patience!

*Biron.* To hear? or forbear hearing?

*Long.* To hear meekly, Sir, and to laugh ino-  
derately; or to forbear both.

*Biron.* Well, Sir, be it as the style shall give  
us cause to climb to the merriness.

*Cost.* The matter is to me, Sir, as concerning  
Jaquenetta. The manner of it is, I was taken  
with the manner.†

*Biron.* In what manner?

*Cost.* In manner and form following, Sir; all  
those three: I was seen with her in the manor  
house, sitting with her upon the form, and taken  
following her into the park; which, put to-  
gether, is, in manner and form following. Now,  
Sir, for the manner,—it is the manner of a man  
to speak to a woman; for the form,—in some  
form.

*Biron.* For the following, Sir:

*Cost.* As it shall follow in my correction; And  
God defend the right!

*King.* Will you hear this letter with attention?

*Biron.* As we would hear an oracle.

*Cost.* Such is the simplicity of man to hearken  
after the flesh.

*King.* [Reads.] *Great deputy, the welkin's  
ruler, rent, and sole dominator of Navarre,  
my soul's earth's God, and body's fostering  
patron,—*

*Cost.* Not a word of Costard yet.

*King.* So it is,—

*Cost.* It may be so: but if he say it is so, he  
is, in telling true, but so, so.

*King.* Peace.

*Cost.* —be to me, and every man that dares  
not fight!

*King.* No words.

*Cost.* —of other men's secrets, I beseech you.

*King.* So it is, besieged with sable-coloured  
melancholy, I did commend the black-oppressing  
humour to the most wholesome physic of  
thy health-giving air; and, as I am a gentle-  
man, betook myself to walk. The time when?  
About the sixth hour; when beasts most  
graze, birds best peck, and men sit down to  
that nourishment which is called supper.  
So much for the time when: Now for the  
ground which; which, I mean, I walked  
upon: it is cycled thy park. Then for  
the place where; where, I mean, I did  
encounter that obscene and most preposterous  
event, that draggeth from my snow white pen-  
the ebony-coloured ink, which here thou view-  
est, beholdest, surveyest, or seest: But, to the  
place where,—It standeth north-north-east  
and by east from the west corner of thy

curious-knotted garden: There did I see  
that low spirited swain, that base minnow of  
thy mirth.

*Cost.* Me

*King.* —that unletter'd small knowing soul,

*Cost.* Me.

*King.* —that shallow vassal.

*Cost.* Still me.

*King.* —which, as I remember, hight, Cos-  
tard.

*Cost.* O me!

*King.* —sorted and consorted, contrary to  
thy established proclaimed edict and contin-  
ent canon, with—with,—O with—but with  
this I passion to say wherewith.

*Cost.* With a wench.

*King.* —with a child of our grandmother  
Eve, a female; or, for thy more sweet under-  
standing, a woman. Him I (as my ever-  
steemed duty pricks me on) have sent to thee,  
to receive the need of punishment, by thy  
sweet grace's officer, Antony Dull; a man of  
good repute, carriage, bearing, and estimation.

*Dull.* Me, an't shall please you; I am Antony  
Dull.

*King.* For Jaquenetta, (so is the weaker  
vessel called, which I apprehend with the  
aforesaid swain.) I keep her as a vessel of  
thy law's fury: and shall at the least of thy  
sweet notice bring her to trial. Thine, in all  
compliments of devoted and heart-burning  
heat of duty.

DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO.

*Biron.* This is not so well as I looked for,  
but the best that ever I heard.

*King.* Ay, the best for the worst. But, sirrah  
what say you to this?

*Cost.* Sir, I confess the wench.

*King.* Did you hear the proclamation?

*Cost.* I do confess much of the hearing it,  
but little of the marking of it.

*King.* It was proclaimed a year's imprison-  
ment, to be taken with a wench.

*Cost.* I was taken with none, Sir, I was taken  
with a damosel.

*King.* Well it was proclaimed damosel.

*Cost.* This was no damosel neither, Sir; she  
was a virgin.

*King.* It is so varied too; for it was pro-  
claimed, virgin.

*Cost.* If it were, I deny her virginity; I was  
taken with a maid.

*King.* This maid will not serve your turn, Sir

*Cost.* This maid will serve my turn, Sir.

*King.* Sir, I will pronounce your sentence;  
You shall fast a week with bran and water.

*Cost.* I had rather pray a month with mutton  
and porridge.

*King.* And Don Armado shall be your keeper.  
—My lord Biron see him deliver'd o'er.—

And go we, lords, to put in practice that  
Which each to other hath so strongly  
sworn.—

[*Exit* KING, LONGAVILLE, and DUMAIN.

*Biron.* I'll lay my head to any good man's  
hat, [scorn.]

These oaths and laws will prove an idle  
sirrah, come on.

*Cost.* I suffer for the truth, Sir: for true it is,  
I was taken with Jaquenetta, and Jaquenetta  
is a true girl; and therefore, Welcome the sour  
cup of prosperity! Affliction may one day smile  
again, and till then, Sit thee down, sorrow!  
[*Exit* COST.

SCENE II.—Another part of the same.—AR-  
MADO'S HOUSE.

*Enter ARMADO and MOTH.*

*Arm.* Boy what sign is it, when a man of  
great spirit grows melancholy?

*Moth.* A great sign, Sir, that he will look sad.  
*Arm.* Why, sadness is one and the self-same  
thing, dear innp.

*Moth.* No, no; O lord, Sir, no.

J. a. Third-Borough, a peace-officer. † In the fact-



*Arm.* How can'st thou part sadness and melancholy, my tender juvenal? \*

*Moth.* By a familiar demonstration of the working, my tough senior.

*Arm.* Why tough senior? why tough senior?

*Moth.* Why tender juvenal? why tender juvenal?

*Arm.* I spoke it, tender juvenal, as a congruent epitheton, appertaining to thy young days, which we may nominate tender.

*Moth.* And I, tough senior, as an appertinent title to your old time, which we may name tough.

*Arm.* Pretty, and apt.

*Moth.* How mean you, Sir? I pretty, and my saying apt? or I apt, and my saying pretty?

*Arm.* Thou pretty, because little.

*Moth.* Little pretty, because little: Wherefore apt?

*Arm.* And therefore apt, because quick.

*Moth.* Speak you this in my praise, master?

*Arm.* In thy condign praise.

*Moth.* I will praise an eel with the same praise.

*Arm.* What? that an eel is ingenious?

*Moth.* That an eel is quick.

*Arm.* I do say, thou art quick in answers: Thou heatest my blood.

*Moth.* I am answer'd, Sir,

*Arm.* I love not to be crossed.

*Moth.* He speaks the mere contrary, crosses \* love not him. [Aside.]

*Arm.* I have promised to study three years with the duke.

*Moth.* You may do it in an hour, Sir.

*Arm.* Impossible.

*Moth.* How many is one thrice told?

*Arm.* I am ill at reckoning, it fitteth the spirit of a tapster.

*Moth.* You are a gentleman, and a gamester, Sir.

*Arm.* I confess both; they are both the varnish of a complete man.

*Moth.* Then, I am sure, you know how much the gross sum of dence-ace amounts to.

*Arm.* It doth amount to one more than two.

*Moth.* Which the base vulgar do call, three.

*Arm.* True.

*Moth.* Why, Sir, is this such a piece of study? Now here is three studied, ere you'll thrice wink: and how easy it is to put years to the word three, and study three years in two words, the dancing horse will tell you.

*Arm.* A most fine figure!

*Moth.* To prove you a cipher. [Aside.]

*Arm.* I will hereupon confess, I am in love: and, as it is base for a soldier to love, so am I in love with a base wench. If drawing my sword against the humour of affection would deliver me from the reprobate thought of it, I would take desire prisoner, and ransom him to any French courtier for a new devised courtesy. I think scorn to sigh; methinks, I should out-swear Cupid. Comfort me, boy: What great men have been in love?

*Moth.* Hercules, master.

*Arm.* Most sweet Hercules!—More authority, dear boy, name more; and, sweet my child, let them be men of good repute and carriage.

*Moth.* Samson, master: he was a man of good carriage, great carriage; for he carried the town-gates on his back, like a porter: and he was in love.

*Arm.* O well-knit Samson! strong-jointed Samson! I do excel thee in my rapier, as much as thou didst me in carrying gates. I am in love too.—Who was Samson's love, my dear Moth?—*Moth.* A woman, master.

*Arm.* Of what complexion?

*Moth.* Of all the four, or the three, or the two; or one of the four.

*Arm.* Tell me precisely of what complexion?

*Moth.* Of the sea-water green, Sir.

*Arm.* Is that one of the four complexions?

*Moth.* As I have read, Sir; and the best of them too.

*Arm.* Green, indeed, is the colour of lovers: but to have a love of that colour, methinks, Samson had small reason for it. He, surely, affected her for her wit.

*Moth.* It was so, Sir; for she had a green wit.

*Arm.* My love is most immaculate white and red.

*Moth.* Most maculate thoughts, master, are masked under such colours.

*Arm.* Define, define, well-educated infant.

*Moth.* My father's wit, and my mother's tongue, assist me!

*Arm.* Sweet invocation of a child; most pretty and pathetic!

*Moth.* If she be made of white and red,

Her faults will ne'er be known:

For blushing cheeks by faults are bred,

And fears by pale-white shewn:

Then, if she fear, or be to blame,

By this you shall not know;

For still her cheeks possess the same,

Which native she doth owe. \*

A dangerous rhyme, master, against the reason of white and red.

*Arm.* Is there not a ballad, boy, of the King and the Beggar?

*Moth.* The world was very guilty of such a ballad some three ages since: but, I think, now 'tis not to be found; or, if it were, it would neither serve for the writing, nor the tune.

*Arm.* I will have the subject newly writ o'er, that I may example my digression† by some mighty precedent. Boy, I do love that country girl, that I took in the park with the rational hind Costard; she deserves well.

*Moth.* To be whipped; and yet a better love than my master. [Aside.]

*Arm.* Sing, boy, my spirit grows heavy in love.

*Moth.* And that's great marvel, loving a light wench.

*Arm.* I say, sing.

*Moth.* Forbear till this company be past.

Enter DULL, COSTARD, and JAQUENETTA.

*Dull.* Sir, the duke's pleasure is, that you keep Costard safe; and you must let him take no delight, nor no penance; but a' must fast three days a week: for this damsel, I must keep her at the park; she is allowed for the day-woman. Fare you well.

*Arm.* I do betray myself with blushing.—Maid.

*Jaqu. Man.*

*Arm.* I will visit thee at the lodge.

*Jaqu.* That's hereby.

*Arm.* I know where it is situate.

*Jaqu.* Lord, how wise you are!

*Arm.* I will tell thee wonders.

*Jaqu.* With that face?

*Arm.* I love thee.

*Jaqu.* So I heard you say.

*Arm.* And so farewell.

*Jaqu.* Fair weather after you!

*Dull.* Come, Jaquenetta, away.

[Exeunt DULL and JAQUENETTA.]  
*Arm.* Villain, thou shalt fast for thy offences, ere thou be pardoned.

*Cost.* Well, Sir, I hope, when I do it, I shall do it on a full stomach.

*Arm.* Thou shalt be heavily punished.

*Cost.* I am more bound to you, than your fellows, for they are but lightly rewarded.

*Arm.* Take away this villain; shut him up.

*Moth.* Come, you transgressing slave; away.

*Cost.* Let me not be peat up, Sir; I will fast being loose.

*Moth.* No, Sir; that were fast and loose: thou shalt to prison.

\* Young man.

† The name of a coin once current.

\* Of which she is naturally possessed.

† Transgression.

‡ Dairy-woman.

*Cost.* Well, if ever I do see the merry days of desolation that I have seen, some shall see—

*Moth* What shall some see?

*Cost.* Nay, nothing, master Moth, but what they look upon. It is not for prisoners to be too silent in their words: and therefore, I will say nothing: I thank God, I have as little patience as another man; and, therefore, I can be quiet.

[*Exeunt* *MOTH* and *COSTARD*.]

*Arm.* I do affect \* the very ground, which is base, where her shoe, which is baser, guided by her foot, which is basest, doth tread. I shall be forsworn, (which is a great argument of falsehood,) if I love: And how can that be true love, which is falsely attempted? Love is a familiar: love is a devil: there is no evil angel but love. Yet Samson was so tempted: and he had an excellent strength: yet was Solomon so seduced: and he had a very good wit. Cupid's butt-shaft† is too hard for Hercules' club, and therefore too much odds for a Spaniard's rapier. The first and second cause will not serve my turn; the passado he respects not, the duello he regards not: his disgrace is to be called boy; but his glory is, to subdue men. Adieu, valour! rust, rapier! be still, drum! for your manager is in love; yea, he loveth. Assist me some extemporal god of rhyme, for, I am sure, I shall turn sonneteer. Devise wit; write pen; for I am for whole volumes in folio. [*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*Another part of the same.—A Pavilion and Tents at a distance.*

*Enter* the PRINCESS OF FRANCE, ROSALINE, MARIA, KATHARINE, BOYET, Lords and other Attendants.

*Boyet.* Now, madam, summon up your dearest spirits:

Consider who the king your father sends;  
To whom he sends; and what's his embassy:  
Yourself held precious in the world's esteem;  
To parley with the sole inheritor  
Of all perfections that a man may owe,  
Matchless Navarre; the plea of no less weight  
Thau Aquitain; a dowry for a queen.  
Be now as prodigal of all dear grace,  
As nature was in making graces dear,  
When she did starve the general world beside,  
And prodigally gave them all to you.

*Prin.* Good lord Boyet, my beauty, though but mean,

Needs not the painted flourish of your praise;  
Beauty is bought by judgment of the eye,  
Not utter'd by base sale of chapmen's tongues:  
I am less proud to hear you tell my worth,  
Than you unch willing to be counted wise  
In spending your wit in the praise of mine.  
But now to task the tasker,—Good Boyet,  
You are not ignorant, all-telling fame  
Doth noise abroad, Navarre hath made a vow,  
Till painful study shall out-wear three years,  
No woman may approach his silent court:  
Therefore to us seemeth it a needful course,  
Before we enter his forbidden gates,  
To know his pleasure; and in that behalf,  
Bold of your worthiness, we single you  
As our best-moving fair solicitor:  
Tell him, the daughter of the king of France  
On serious business, craving quick despatch,  
Imports personal conference with his grace.  
Haste, signify so much; while we attend,  
Like humbly-visag'd suitors, his high will.

*Boyet.* Proud of employment, willingly I go. [*Exit.*]

*Prin.* All pride is willing pride, and your's is so.—

Who are the votaries, my loving lords,  
That are vow-fellows with this virtuous duke?

*1 Lord.* Longaville is one.

*Prin.* Know you the man?

*Mar.* I know him, madam; at a marriage feast,

Between lord Perigot and theauteous heir  
Of Jaques Falconbridge solemnized,  
In Normandy saw I this Longaville:  
A man of sovereign parts he is esteem'd;  
Well fitted in the arts, glorious in arms.

Nothing becomes him ill, that he would well.  
The only soil of his fair virtue's gloss,  
(If virtue's gloss will stain with any soil,)  
Is a sharp wit match'd with too blunt a will;  
Whose edge hath power to cut, whose will still wills

It should none spare that come within his power.

*Prin.* Some merry mocking lord, belike; is't so?

*Mar.* They say so most, that most his humours know.

*Prin.* Such short-liv'd wits do wither as they grow.

Who are the rest?

*Kath.* The young Dumain, a well-accomplish'd youth,

Of all that virtue love for virtue lov'd:  
Most power to do most harm, least knowing ill;

For he hath wit to make an ill shape good,  
And shape to win grace though he had no wit.  
I saw him at the duke Alençon's once;  
And much too little of that good I saw,  
Is my report, to his great worthiness.

*Ros.* Another of these students at that time,  
Was there with him; if I have heard a truth,  
Biron they call him; but a merrier man,  
Within the limit of becoming mirth,

I never spent an hour's talk withal:  
His eye begets occasion for his wit;  
For every object that the eye doth catch,  
The other turns to a mirth-moving jest;

Which his fair tongue (conceit's expositor,)  
Delivers in such apt and gracious words,  
That aged ears play truant at his tales,  
And younger hearings are quite ravished;

So sweet and voluble is his discourse.

*Prin.* God bless my ladies! are they all in love;

That every one her own hath garnished  
With such bedecking ornaments of praise?

*Mar.* Here comes Boyet.

*Re-enter* *BOYET*.

*Prin.* Now, what admittance, lord?

*Boyet.* Navarre had notice of your fair approach;

And he, and his competitors \* in oath,  
Were all address'd† to meet you, gentle lady,  
Before I came. Marry, thus much I have learnt,

He rather means to lodge you in the field,  
(Like one that comes here to besiege his court,)  
Than seek a dispensation for his oath,  
To let you enter his unpeopled house.  
Here comes Navarre. [*The Ladies mask.*]

*Enter* *KING, LONGAVILLE, DUMAIN, BIRON, and Attendants.*

*King.* Fair princess, welcome to the court of Navarre.

*Prin.* Fair, I give you back again; and, welcome I have not yet: the roof of this court is too high to be your's; and welcome to the wild fields too base to be mine.

*King.* You shall be welcome, madam, to my court.

\* Love.

† Arrow to shoot at butts with

‡ Best.

\* Confederates.

† Prepared.

*Prin.* I will be welcome then ; conduct me thither.

*King.* Hear me, dear lady ; I have sworn an oath.

*Prin.* Our Lady help my lord ! he'll be forsworn.

*King.* Not for the world, fair madam, by my will.

*Prin.* Why, will shall break it : will, and nothing else.

*King.* Your ladyship is ignorant what it is.

*Prin.* Were my lord so, his ignorance were wise,

Where \* now his knowledge must prove ignorance.

I hear, your grace hath sworn out house-keeping :

'Tis deadly sin to keep that oath, my lord,

And sin to break it :

But pardon me, I am too sudden-bold ;

To teach a teacher ill beseemeth me.

Vouchsafe to read the purpose of my coming,

And suddenly resolve me in my suit.

[Gives a paper.]

*King.* Madam, I will, if suddenly I may.

*Prin.* You will the sooner, that I were away ;

For you'll prove perjurd, if you make me stay.

*Eiron.* Did not I dance with you in Brabant once ?

*Ros.* Did not I dance with you in Brabant once ?

*Biron.* I know, you did.

*Ros.* How needless was it then

To ask the question !

*Biron.* You must not be so quick.

*Ros.* 'Tis 'long of you that spur me with such questions.

*Biron.* Your wit's too hot, it speeds too fast, 'twill tire.

*Ros.* Not till it leave the rider in the mire.

*Biron.* What time o' day ?

*Ros.* The hour that fools should ask.

*Biron.* Now fair befall your mask !

*Ros.* Fair fall the face it covers !

*Biron.* And send you many lovers !

*Ros.* Amen, so you be none.

*Biron.* Nay, then will I be gone.

*King.* Madam, your father here doth intimate The payment of a hundred thousand crowns ; Being but the one half of an entire sum, Disbursed by my father in his wars. But say, that he, or we, (as neither have,) Receiv'd that sum ; yet there remains unpaid A hundred thousand more ; in surety of the which,

One part of Aquitain is bound to us, Although not valued to the money's worth.

If then the king your father will restore

But that one half which is unsatisfied,

We will give up our right in Aquitain,

And hold fair friendship with his majesty.

But that, it seems, he little purposeth,

For here be doth demand to have repaid

An hundred thousand crowns ; and not demands,

On payment of a hundred thousand crowns,

To have his title live in Aquitain ;

Which we much rather had depart withal,

And have the money by our father lent,

Than Aquitain so gelded as it is.

Dear prince, were not his requests so far

From reason's yielding, your fair self should make

A yielding, 'gainst some reason, in my breast,

And go well satisfied to France again.

*Prin.* You do the king my father too much

wrong,

And wrong the reputation of your name,

In so unseemingly to confess receipt

Of that which hath so faithfully been paid.

*King.* I do protest, I never heard of it ;

And, if you prove it, I'll repay it back, Or yield up Aquitain.

*Prin.* We arrest your word :

Boyet, you can produce aquitainers,

For such a sum, from special officers

Of Charles his father.

*King.* Satisfy me so.

*Boyet.* So please your grace, the packet is not come,

Where that and other specialties are bound :

To-morrow you shall have a sight of them.

*King.* It shall suffice me ; at which interview,

All liberal reason I will yield unto.

Mean time receive such welcome at my hand,

As honour, without breach of honour, may

Make tender of to thy true worthiness :

You may not come, fair princess, in my gates ;

But here without you shall be so receiv'd,

As you shall deem yourself lodg'd in my heart,

Though so denied fair harbour in my house.

Your own good thoughts excuse me, and farewell :

To-morrow shall we visit you again.

*Prin.* Sweet health and fair desires consort your grace !

*King.* Thy own wish wish I thee in every place !

[Exeunt KING and his Train.]

*Biron.* Lady, I will commend you to my own

heart.

*Ros.* 'Pray you, do my commendations ; I

would be glad to see it.

*Biron.* I would, you heard it groan.

*Ros.* Is the fool sick ?

*Biron.* Sick at heart.

*Ros.* Alack, let it bleed.

*Biron.* Would that do it good ?

*Ros.* My physic says, I.

*Biron.* Will you prick't with your eye ?

*Ros.* No point, † with my knife.

*Biron.* Now, God save thy lie !

*Ros.* And your's from long living !

*Biron.* I cannot stay thanksgiving.

[Retiring.]

*Dum.* Sir, I pray you, a word : What lady is

that same ?

*Boyet.* The heir of Alençon, Rosaline her

name.

*Dum.* A gallant lady ! Monsieur, fare you

well. [Exit.]

*Long.* I beseech you a word ; What is she in

the white ?

*Boyet.* A woman sometimes, as you saw her

in the light.

*Long.* Perchance, light in the light : I desire

her name.

*Boyet.* She hath but one for herself ; to de-

sire that were a shame.

*Long.* Pray you, Sir, whose daughter ?

*Boyet.* Her mother's I have heard.

*Long.* God's blessing on your beard !

*Boyet.* Good Sir, be not offended :

She is an heir of Falconbridge.

*Long.* Nay, my choler is ended.

She is a most sweet lady.

*Boyet.* Not unlike, Sir ; that may be.

[Exit LONGAVILLE.]

*Biron.* What's her name, in the cap ?

*Boyet.* Katharine, by good hap.

*Biron.* Is she wedded, or no ?

*Boyet.* To her will, Sir, or so ?

*Biron.* You are welcome, Sir ; adieu !

*Boyet.* Farewell to me, Sir, and welcome to

you. [Exit BIRON.—Ladies unmask.]

*Mar.* That last is Biron, the merry mad-cap

lord ;

Not a word with him but a jest.

*Boyet.* And every jest but a word.

*Prin.* It was well done of you to take him at

his word.

*Boyet.* I was as willing to grapple, as he was

to board.

\* Whereas.

† Part.

\* Aye, yes.

† A French particle of negation.

*Mar.* Two hot sheeps, marry!

*Boyet.* And wherefore not ships?

No sheep, sweet lamb, unless we feed on your lips.

*Mar.* You sheep, and I pasture; Shall that finish the jest?

*Boyet.* So you grant pasture for me.

[Offering to kiss her.]

*Mar.* Not so, gentle beast;

My lips are no common, though several \* they be.

*Boyet.* Belonging to whom?

*Mar.* To my fortunes and me.

*Prin.* Good wits will be jangling: but, gentles, agree:

The civil war of wits were much better used  
On Navarre and his book-men; for here 'tis abused.

*Boyet.* If my observation, (which very seldom lies,)

By the heart's still rhetoric, disclosed with eyes,  
Deceive me not now, Navarre is infected.

*Prin.* With what?

*Boyet.* With that which we lovers entitle, affected.

*Prin.* Your reason?

*Boyet.* Why, all his behaviours did make their retire

To the court of his eye, peeping thorough desire:

His heart, like an agate, with your print impressed,

Proud with his form, in his eye pride expressed,  
His tongue, all impatient to speak and not see,

Did stumble with haste in his eye-sight to be;  
All senses to that sense did make their repair,

To feel only looking on farrest of fair:  
Methought, all his senses were lock'd in his eye,

As jewels in crystal for some prince to buy;  
Who, tending their own worth, from where they were glass'd,

Did point you to buy them, along as you pass'd.  
His face's own margin did quote such amazes,

That all eyes saw his eyes enchanted with gazes:  
I'll give you Aquitain, and all that is his,

An you give him for my sake but one loving kiss.

*Prin.* Come, to our pavilion: Boyet is dispos'd—

*Boyet.* But to speak that in words, which his eye hath disclos'd:

I only have made a mouth of his eye,  
By adding a tongue which I know will not lie.

*Ros.* Thou art an old love-unonger, and speak'st skilfully.

*Mar.* He is Cupid's grandfather, and learns news of him.

*Ros.* Then was Venus like her mother; for her father is but grim.

*Boyet.* Do you hear, my mad wenches?

*Mar.* No.

*Boyet.* What then, do you see?

*Ros.* Ay, our way to be gone.

*Boyet.* You are too hard for me. [Exeunt.]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—Another part of the same.

Enter ARMADO and MOTU.

*Arm.* Warble, child; make passionate my sense of hearing.

*Moth.* Concolinel— [Singing.]

*Arm.* Sweet air!—Go, tenderness of years; take this key, give enlargement to the swain, bring him festinately † hither; I must employ him in a letter to my love.

*Moth.* Master will you win your love with a French brawl? ‡

\* A quibble—several signified uninclosed lands.

† Hastily.

‡ A kind of dance.

*Arm.* How mean'st thou? brawling in French?

*Moth.* No, my complete master; but to jig off a tune at the tongue's end, canary \* to it with your feet, humour it with turning up your eyelids; sigh a note, and sing a note; sometime through the throat, as if you swallow'd love with singing love; sometime through the nose, as if you snuff'd up love by smelling love; with your hat penthouse-like, o'er the shop of your eyes; with your arms crossed on your thin belly-doublet, like a rabbit on a spit; or your hands in your pocket, like a man after the old painting; and keep not too long in one tune, but a snip and away: These are complements, these are humours; these betray nice wenches—that would be betrayed without these; and make them men of note, (do you note, men?) that most are affected to these.

*Arm.* How hast thou purchased this experience?

*Moth.* By my penny of observation.

*Arm.* But O,—but O,—

*Moth.* —the hobby-horse is forgot.

*Arm.* Callest thou my love, hobby-horse?

*Moth.* No, master; the hobby-horse is but a colt, and your love, perhaps, a hackney. But have you forgot your love?

*Arm.* Almost I had.

*Moth.* Negligent student! learn her by heart.

*Arm.* By heart, and in heart, boy.

*Moth.* And out of heart, master: all those three I will prove.

*Arm.* What wilt thou prove?

*Moth.* A man, if I live; and this, by, in, and without, upon the instant: By heart you love her, because your heart cannot come by her; in heart you love her, because your heart is in love with her; and out of heart you love her, being out of heart that you cannot enjoy her.

*Arm.* I am all these three.

*Moth.* And three times as much more, and yet nothing at all.

*Arm.* Fetch hither the swain; he must carry me a letter.

*Moth.* A message well sympathized; a horse to be ambassador for an ass!

*Arm.* Ha, ha! what sayest thou?

*Moth.* Marry, Sir, you must send the ass upon the horse, for he is very slow gaited: But I go.

*Arm.* The way is but short; away.

*Moth.* As swift as lead, Sir.

*Arm.* Thy meaning, pretty ingenious? Is not lead a metal heavy, dull, and slow?

*Moth.* Minime, honest master; or rather, master, no.

*Arm.* I say, lead is slow.

*Moth.* You are too swift, † Sir, to say so.

Is that lead slow which is fir'd from a gun?

*Arm.* Sweet smoke of rhetoric!

He reputes me a cannon; and the bullet, that's he:—

I shoot thee at the swain.

*Moth.* Thump them, and I flee. [Exit.]

*Arm.* A most acute juvenal; voluble and free of grace!

By thy favour, sweet welkin, I must sigh in thy face:

Most rude melancholy, valour gives thee place.  
My herald is return'd.

Re-enter MOTH and COSTARD.

*Moth.* A wonder, master; here's a Costard ‡ broken in a shin.

*Arm.* Some enigma, some riddle: come,—thy *Penvoy*; †—begin.

*Cost.* No enigma, no riddle, no *Penvoy*: no salve in the mail, Sir: O, Sir, plantain, a plantain; no *Penvoy*, no *Penvoy*, no salve, Sir, but a plantain!

\* Canary was the name of a sprightly dance.

† Quick, ready.

‡ An old French term for concluding verses, which served either to convey the moral, or to address the poem to some person.

*Arm.* By virtue, thou enforcest laughter: thy silly thought, my spleen; the heaving of my lungs provokes me to ridiculous smiling: O pardon me, my stars! Doth the inconsiderate take salve for *Penvoy*, and the word, *Penvoy*, for a salve?

*Moth.* Do the wise think them other? is not *Penvoy* a salve?

*Arm.* No, page: it is an epilogue or discourse, to make plain  
Some obscure precedence that hath tofore been said.

I will example it:

The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee,  
Were still at odds, being but three.

*There's the moral: Now the Penvoy.*

*Moth.* I will add the *Penvoy*: Say the moral again.

*Arm.* The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee,  
Were still at odds, being but three:

*Moth.* Until the goose came out of door,  
And stay'd the odds by adding four.

Now will I begin your moral, and do you follow with my *Penvoy*.

The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee,  
Were still at odds, being but three;

*Arm.* Until the goose came out of door,  
Staying the odds by adding four.

*Moth.* A good *Penvoy*, ending in the goose;  
Would you desire more?

*Cost.* The boy hath sold him a bargain, a goose, that's flat:—  
Sir, your pennyworth is good, an your goose be fat.

To sell a bargain well, is as cunning as fast and loose:

Let me see a fat *Penvoy*; ay, that's a fat goose.

*Arm.* Come hither, come hither: How did this argument begin?

*Moth.* By saying that a *Costard* was broken in a shin.

Then call'd you for the *Penvoy*.

*Cost.* True and I for a plume: Thus came your argument in;

Then the boy's fat *Penvoy*, the goose that you bought;

And he ended the market.

*Arm.* But tell me; how was there a *Costard* broken in a shin?

*Moth.* I will tell you sensibly.

*Cost.* Thou hast no feeling of it, *Moth*; I will speak that *Penvoy*:

I, *Costard*, running out, that was safely within,  
Fell over the threshold, and broke my shin.

*Arm.* We will talk no more of this matter.

*Cost.* Till there be more matter in the shin.

*Arm.* Sirrah *Costard*, I will enfranchise thee.

*Cost.* Oh! marry me to one *Frances*!—I smell some *Penvoy*, some goose, in this.

*Arm.* By my sweet soul, I mean, setting thee at liberty, enfranchising thy person! thou wert immured, restrained, captivated, bound.

*Cost.* True, true; and now you will be my purgation, and let me loose.

*Arm.* I give thee thy liberty, set thee from durance; and, in lieu thereof, impose on thee nothing but this: Bear this significant to the country maid *Jaquenetta*: there is remuneration; [*Giving him money.*] for the best ward of mine honour, is, rewarding my dependants. *Moth.* follow. [*Exit.*]

*Moth.* Like the sequel, I.—Signior *Costard*, adieu.

*Cost.* My sweet ounce of man's flesh! my icony \* Jew!— [*Exit Moth.*]

Now will I look to his remuneration. Remuneration! Oh! that's the Latin word for three farthings: three farthings—remuneration.—What's the price of this inkle? a penny!—No, I'll give you a remuneration: why, it carries it.—Remuneration!—why, it is a fairer name than French crown. I will never buy and sell out of this word.

\* Delightful.

Enter *BIRON*.

*Biron.* O my good knave *Costard*! exceedingly well met.

*Cost.* Pray you, Sir, how much carnation ribbon may a man buy for a remuneration?

*Biron.* What is a remuneration?

*Cost.* Marry, Sir, halfpenny farthing.

*Biron.* Oh! why then, three-farthings-worth of silk.

*Cost.* I thank your worship: God be with you!

*Citron.* O stay, slave; I must employ thee: As thou wilt win my favour, good my knave, Do one thing for me that I shall entreat.

*Cost.* When would you have it done, Sir?

*Biron.* Oh! this afternoon.

*Cost.* Well, I will do it, Sir: Fare you well

*Biron.* Oh! thou knowest not what it is.

*Cost.* I shall know, Sir, when I have done it.

*Biron.* Why, villain, thou must know first.

*Cost.* I will come to your worship to-morrow morning.

*Biron.* It must be done this afternoon. Hark slave, it is but this:—

The princess comes to hunt here in the park, And in her train there is a gentle lady;

When tongues speak sweetly, thou thy name her name,

And *Rosaline* they call her: ask for her; And to her white hand see thou do commend

This seal'd-up counsel. There's thy guerdon; \* go. [*Gives him money.*]

*Cost.* Guerdon,—O sweet guerdon! better than remuneration; clevenpence farthing better. Most sweet guerdon!—I will do it, Sir, in print \* —Guerdon—remuneration. [*Exit.*]

*Biron.* O!—And I, forsooth, in love! I, that have been love's whip;

A very beadle to a humorous sigh;

A critic; nay, a night-watch constable:

A domineering pedant o'er the boy,

Than whom no mortal so magnificent!

This wimpled, winning, purblind, wayward boy,

This senior-junior, giant-dwarf, Dan Cupid;

Regent of love-rhymes, lord of folded arms,

The anointed sovereign of sighs and groans,

Liege of all loiterers and malcontents,

Dread prince of plaquettes, king of codpieces,

Sole imperator, and great general

Of trotting paritors,—"O my little heart!—

And I to be a corporal of his field,

And wear his colours like a tumbler's hoop!

What? I! I love! I sue! I seek a wife!

A woman, that is like a German clock,

Still a repairing; ever out of frame;

And never going right, being a watch,

But being watch'd, that it may still go right?

Nay, to be perjur'd, which is worst of all;

And, among three, to love the worst of all;

A whitely wanton with a velvet brow,

With two pitch balls stuck in her face for eyes;

Ay, and by heaven, one that will do the deed,

Though *Argus* were her eunuch and her guard:

And I to sigh for her! to watch for her!

To pray for her! Go to; it is a plague

That Cupid will impose for my neglect

Of his almighty dreadful little might. [groan;

Well, I will love, write, sigh, pray, sue, and

Some men must love my lady, and some Joan. [*Exit.*]

#### ACT IV.

##### SCENE I.—Another part of the same.

Enter the PRINCESS, ROSALINE, MARIA, KATHARINE, BOYET, Lords, Attendants, and a Forester.

*Prin.* Was that the king, that spur'd his horse so hard  
Against the steep uprising of the hill?

\* Reward. † With the utmost exactness.

‡ Hooded, veiled. § Peacocks.

¶ The officers of the spiritual courts who serve citations.

*Boyet.* I know not; but, I think, it was not he.

*Prin.* Who'er he was, he show'd a mounting mind.

Well, lords, to-day we shall have our despatch; On Saturday we will return to France.—

Then, forester, my friend, where is the bush, That we must stand and play the murderer in?

*For.* Here by, upon the edge of yonder coppice;

A stand, when you may make the fairest shoot.

*Prin.* I thank my beauty, I am fair that shoot, And thereupon thou speak'st, the fairest shoot.

*For.* Pardon me, madam, for I meant not so.

*Prin.* What, what I first praise me, and again say, no?

O short-liv'd pride! Not fair? alack for we!

*For.* Yes, madam, fair.

*Prin.* Nay, never paint me now;

Where fair is not, praise cannot mend the brow.

Here, good my glass, take this for telling true;

Fair payment for foul words is more than due. *[Giving him money.]*

*For.* Nothing but fair is that which you inherit.

*Prin.* See, see, my beauty will be sav'd by merit.

O heresy in fair, fit for these days!

A giving hand, though foul, shall have fair praise.—

But come, the bow:—Now mercy goes to kill,

And shooting well is then accounted ill.

Thus will I save my credit in the shoot:

Not wounding, pity would not let me do't;

If wounding, then it was to show my skill.

That more for praise, than purpose, meant to kill.

And, out of question, so it is sometimes;

Glory grows guilty of detested crimes;

When, for fame's sake, for praise, an outward part,

We bend to that the working of the heart:

As I, for praise alone, now seek to spill

The poor deer's blood, that my heart means not ill.

*Boyet.* Do not curst wives hold that self-sovereignty

Only for praise's sake, when they strive to be

Lords o'er their lords?

*Prin.* Only for praise: and praise we may afford

To any lady that subdues a lord.

*Enter COSTARD.*

*Prin.* Here comes a member of the commonwealth.

*Cost.* God dig-you-den \* all! Pray you, which is the head lady?

*Prin.* Thou shalt know her, fellow, by the test that have no heads.

*Cost.* Which is the greatest lady, the highest?

*Prin.* The thickest, and the tallest.

*Cost.* The thickest, and the tallest! it is so; truth is truth.

An your waist, mistress, were as slender as my wit,

One of these maids' girdles for your waist should be fit.

Are not you the chief woman? you are the thickest here.

*Prin.* What's your will, Sir? What's your will?

*Cost.* I have a letter from monsieur Biron, to one lady Rosaline.

*Prin.* Oh! thy letter, thy letter; he's a good friend of mine;

Stand aside, good bearer.—*Boyet*, you can carve; Break up this capon.†

*Boyet.* I am bound to serve.—

This letter is mistook, it importeth none here; It is writ to Jaquenetta.

\* God give you good even.  
† Open this letter.

*Prin.* We will read it, I swear:

Break the neck of the wax, and every one give

*Boyet.* *[Reads.]* By heaven that thou art

fair, is most infallible; true that thou art

beauteous; truth itself, that thou art lovely;

More fairer than fair, beautiful than beauteous;

truer than truth itself, have commiseration

on thy heroic! usual! The magnanimous

and most illustrious \* King Copibetua set

eye upon the pernicious and indubitate beggar

Zenelophon; and he it was that might rightly

say, *veni, vidi, vici*; which to anatomize in

the vulgar, *(O base and obscure vulgar!)*

videlicet, he came, saw, and overcame: he

came, one; saw, two; overcame, three. Who

came? the king; Why did he come? to see,

Why did he see? to overcome: To whom came

he? to the beggar; What saw he? the beggar;

Who overcame he? the beggar: The conclusion

is victory, On whose side? the king's:

the captive is enrich'd; On whose side? the

beggar's; The catastrophe is a nuptial; On

whose side? the king's?—no, on both in one,

or one in both. I am the king; for so stands

the comparison: thou the beggar; for so

witnesseth thy loutiness. Shall I command

thy love? I may: Shall I enforce thy love?

I could: Shall I entreat thy love? I will.

What shalt thou exchange for rags? robes;

For tittles, titles; For thyself, me. Thus,

expecting thy reply, I profane my lips on

thy foot, my eyes on thy picture, and my

heart on thy every part.

*Thine, in the dearest design of industry,*

DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO.

Thus dost thou hear the Nemean lion roar

'Gainst thee, thou lamb, that standest as his

prey;

Submissive fall his princely feet before,

And he from forage will incline to play:

But if thou strive, poor soul, what art thou then?

Food for his rage, repasture for his den.

*Prin.* What plume of feathers, is he, that indited this letter?

What vane! what weather-cock? did you ever hear better?

*Boyet.* I am much deceived, but I remember the style,

*Prin.* Else your memory is bad, going o'er it elsewhere.†

*Boyet.* This Armado is a Spaniard, that keeps here in court;

A phantasm, a Monarcho, and one that makes sport

To the prince, and his book-mates.

*Prin.* Thou, fellow, a word:

Who gave thee this letter?

*Cost.* I told you; my lord.

*Prin.* To whom shouldst thou give it?

*Cost.* From my lord to my lady.

*Prin.* From which lord, to which lady?

*Cost.* From my lord Biron, a good master of mine,

To a lady of France, that he call'd Rosaline.

*Prin.* Thou hast mistaken his letter. Come, lords, away.

Here, sweet, put up this; 'twill be thine another day. *[Exit PRINCESS and TRAIN.]*

*Boyet.* Who is the suitor? who is the suitor?

*Ros.* Shall I teach you to know?

*Boyet.* Ay, my continent of beauty.

*Ros.* Why, she that bears the bow.

Finely put off!

*Boyet.* My lady goes to kill horns; but, if thou marry,

Hang me by the neck, if horns that year miscarry.

Finely put on!

*Ros.* Well then, I am the shooter.

*Boyet.* And who is your deer?

*Ros.* If we choose by the horns, yourself come near.

Finely put on, indeed!—

\* Illustrious.

† Just now.

*Mar.* You still wrangle with her, Boyet, and she strikes at the brow.

*Boyet.* But she herself is hit lower: Have I hit her now?

*Ros.* Shall I come upon thee with an old saying, that was a man when king Pepin of France was a little boy, as touching the hit it?

*Biron.* So I may answer thee with one as old, that was a woman when queen Guinever\* of Britain was a little wench, as touching the hit it.

*Ros.* Thou canst not hit it, hit it, hit it, [Singing.

*Thou canst not hit it, my good man.*

*Boyet.* An I cannot, cannot, cannot, An I cannot, another can.

[*Exeunt Ros. and Kath.*]

*Cost.* By my troth, most pleasant! how both did hit it!

*Mar.* A mark marvellous well shot; for they both did hit it.

*Boyet.* A mark! O, mark but that mark; A mark, says my lady! Let the mark have a prick in't, to mete at, if it may be.

*Mar.* Wide o' the bow hand! I'faith your hand is out.

*Cost.* Indeed, a' must shoot nearer, or he'll ne'er hit the clout.

*Boyet.* An if my hand be out, then, belike your hand is in.

*Cost.* Then will she get the upshot by cleaving the pin.

*Mar.* Come, come, you talk greasily, your lips grow foul.

*Cost.* She's too hard for you at pricks, Sir; challenge her to bowl.

*Boyet.* I fear too much rubbing; Good night, my good owl.

[*Exeunt BOYET and MARIA.*]

*Cost.* By my soul, a swain! a most simple clown!

Lord, lord! how the ladies and I have put him down!

O' my troth, most sweet jests! most incony vulgar wit!

When it comes so smoothly off, so obscenely, as it were, so fit.

Arinatho o'the one side,—Oh! a most dainty man!

To see him walk before a lady, and to bear her fan!

To see him kiss his hand; and how most sweetly a' will swear!—

And his page o' t' other side, that handful of wit! Ah! heavens, it is a most pathological hit!

Sola, sola! [Shouting within.

[*Exit COSTARD, running.*]

#### SCENE II.—The same.

*Enter HOLOFERNES, Sir NATHANIEL, and DULL.*

*Nath.* Very reverent sport, truly; and done in the testimony of a good conscience.

*Hol.* The deer was, as you know, in sanguis,—blood; ripe as a pomegranate,† who now hangeth like a jewel in the ear of *calo*,—the sky, the welkin, the heaven; and anon falleth like a crab, on the face of *terra*,—the soil, the land, the earth.

*Nath.* Truly, master Holofernes, ‡ the epithets are sweetly varied, like a scholar at the least: But, Sir, I assure ye, it was a buck of the first head.

*Hol.* Sir Nathaniel, *haud credo*.

*Dull.* 'Twas not a *haud credo*, 'twas a pricket.

*Hol.* Most barbarous intimation! yet a kind of insinuation, as it were, *in via*, in way, of ex-

plication; *facere*, as it were, replication, or rather ostentare, to show, as it were, his inclination—after his undressed, unpolished, uneducated, unpruned, untrained, or rather unlettered, or, ratherest, unconfirmed fashion,—to insert again my *haud credo* for a deer.

*Dull.* I said, the deer was not a *haud credo*; 'twas a pricket.

*Hol.* Twice sod simplicity, *bis coctus*!—O thou monster ignorance, how deformed dost thou look!

*Nath.* Sir, he hath never fed of the dainties that are bred in a book; he hath not eat paper, as it were; he hath not drunk ink: his intellect is not replenished; he is only an animal, only sensible in the duller parts;

And such barren plants are set before us, that we thankful should be

(Which we of taste and feeling are) for those parts that do fructify in us more than he

For as it would ill become me to be vain, indiscreet, or a fool,

So, were there a patch\* set on learning, to see him in a school:

But, *omne bene*, say I; being of an old father's mind,

*Many can brook the weather, that love not the wind.*

*Dull.* You two are book-men: Can you tell by your wit,

What was a month old at Cain's birth, that's not five weeks old as yet?

*Hol.* Dictynna, good man Dull; Dictynna, good man Dull.

*Dull.* What is Dictynna?

*Nath.* A title to Phæbe, to Luna, to the moon.

*Hol.* The moon was a month old, when Adam was no more;

And raught† not to five weeks, when he came to fivescore.

The allusion holds in the exchange.

*Dull.* 'Tis true indeed; the collusion holds in the exchange.

*Hol.* God comfort thy capacity! I say, the allusion holds in the exchange.

*Dull.* And I say the pollution holds in the exchange; for the moon is never but a month old; and I say beside, that 'twas a pricket that the princess kill'd.

*Hol.* Sir Nathaniel, will you hear an extemporal epitaph on the death of the deer? and, to humour the ignorant, I have call'd the deer the princess kill'd, a pricket.

*Nath.* *Perge*, good master Holofernes, *perge*; so it shall please you to abrogate scurrility.

*Hol.* I will something affect the letter; for it argues facility.

*The praiseful princess pierc'd and prick'd a pretty pleasing pricket;*

*Some say, a sore; but not a sore, till now made sore with shooting.*

*The dogs did yell; put I to sore, then sorc'd jumps from thicket;*

*Or pricket, sore, or else sorc'd; the people fall a hooting.*

*If sore be sore, then I to sore makes fifty sores; O sore I!*

*Of one sore I an hundred make, by adding but one more I.*

*Nath.* A rare talent!

*Dull.* If a talent be a claw, look how he claws him with a talent.

*Hol.* This is a gift that I have, simple, simple; a foolish extravagant spirit, full of forms, figures, shapes, objects, ideas, apprehensions, notions, revolutions: these are begot in the ventricle of memory, nourished in the womb of *pia mater*;

and deliver'd upon the mellowing of occasion: But the gift is good in those in whom it is acute, and I am thankful for it.

*Nath.* Sir, I praise the Lord for you; and so may my parishioners, for their sons are well

\* King Arthur's queen; not over famous for fidelity to her husband.

† A species of apple.

‡ One John Florio, a pedantic teacher of Italian.

\* A low fellow.

† Reached.

tutor'd by you, and their daughters profit very greatly under you: you are a good member of the commonwealth.

*Hol. Mcherle*, if their sons be ingenious, they shall want no instruction: if their daughters be capable, I will put it to them: But, *vir sapit qui pauca loquitur*: a soul feminine saluteth us.

*Enter JAQUENETTA and COSTARD.*

*Jaq.* God give you good morrow, master person.

*Hol.* Master person,—*quasi* pers-on. And if one should be pierced, which is the one?

*Cost.* Marry, master schoolmaster, he that is likeliest to a hogshead.

*Hol.* Of piercing a hogshead! a good lustre of conceit in a turf of earth; fire enough for a flint, pearl enough for a swine: 'tis pretty; it is well.

*Jaq.* Good master parson, be so good as read me this letter; it was given me by Costard, and sent me from Don Armatho: I beseech you, read it.

*Hol.* *Fauste, precor gelida quando pecus omne sub umbra*

*Ruminal*,—and so forth. Ah! good old Mantuan! I may speak of thee as the traveller doth of Venice:—

—*Vinegia, Vinegia,*

*Chi non te vede, ei non te pregia.*

Old Mantuan! old Mantuan! Who understandeth thee not, loves thee not. *Ut, re, sol, la, mi, fa*.—Under pardon, Sir, what are the contents? or, rather, as Horace says in his—What, my soul, verses?

*Nath.* Ay, Sir, and very learned.

*Hol.* Let me hear a staff, a stanza, a verse; *fige, domine.*

*Nath.* It love make me forsworn, how shall I swear to love?

Ah! never faith could hold, if not to beauty vow'd!

Though to myself forsworn, to thee I'll faithful prove;

Those thoughts to me were oaks, to thee like osters bowed.

Study his bus leaves, and makes his book thine eyes,

Where all those pleasures live, that art would comprehend:

If knowledge be the mark, to know thee shall suffice;

Well learned is that tongue, that well can thee commend:

All ignorant that soul, that sees thee without wonder;

(Which is to me some praise, that I thy parts admire:)

Thy eye Jove's lightning bears, thy voice his dreadful thunder,

Which, not to anger bent, is music, and sweet fire.

Celestial, as thou art, oh pardon, love, this wrong,

That sings heaven's praise with such an earthly tongue!

*Hol.* You find not the apostrophes, and so miss the accent. let me supervise the canzonet. Here are only numbers rattled; but, for the elegance, facility, and golden cadence of poesy, *caret*. Ovidius Naso was the man: and why, indeed, Naso; but for smelling out the odiferous flowers of fancy, the jerks of invention? *Imitari*. is nothing: so doth the hound his master, the ape his keeper, the tired horse\* his rider. But, damosella virgin, was this directed to you?

*Jaq.* Ay, Sir, from one Monsieur Biron, one of the strange queen's lords.

*Hol.* I will overglance the superscript. To the snow-white hand of the most beautiful Lady Rosalinc. I will look again on the intellect

\* Horse adorned with ribands

of the letter, for the nomination of the party writing to the person written unto:

*Your Ladyship's in all desired employment*, BIRON. Sir Nathaniel, this Biron is one of the votaries with the king; and here he hath framed a letter to a sequent of the stranger queen's, which, accidentally, or by the way of progression, hath miscarried.—Trip and go, my sweet; deliver this paper into the royal hand of the king; it may concern much: Stay not thy compliment; I forgive thy duty; adieu.

*Jaq.* Good Costard go with me.—Sir, God save your life!

*Cost.* Have with thee, my girl.

[*Exeunt COST. and JAQ.*]

*Nath.* Sir, you have done this in the fear of God, very religiously; and, as a certain father saith—

*Hol.* Sir, tell not me of the father, I do fear colourable colours. But, to return to the verses: Did they please you, Sir Nathaniel?

*Nath.* Marvellous well for the pen.

*Hol.* I do dine to-day at the father's of a certain pupil of mine; where if, before repast, it shall please you to gratify the table with a grace, I will, on my privilege I have with the parents of the foresaid child or pupil, undertake your *ben venuto*; where I will prove those verses to be very unlearned, neither savouring of poetry, wit, nor invention: I beseech your society.

*Nath.* And thank you too: for society, (saith the text,) is the happiness of life.

*Hol.* And, certes,\* the text most infallibly concludes it.—Sir, [To DULL.] I do invite you too; you shall not say me, nay: *pauca verba*. Away; the gentlemen are at their game, and we will to our recreation. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III—Another part of the same.

*Enter BIRON, with a paper.*

*Biron.* The king he is hunting the deer; I am coursing myself: they have pitch'd a toil; I am toiling in a pitch; pitch that defiles; defile! a foul word. Well, Set thee down, sorrow! for so, they say, the fool said, and so say I, and I the fool. Well proved, wit! By the lord, this love is as mad as Ajax: it kills sheep; it kills me, I a sheep: Well proved again on my side! I will not love: if I do, hang me; if faith I will not. Oh! but her eye,—by this light, but for her eye, I would not love her; yes, for her two eyes. Well, I do nothing in the world but lie, and lie in my throat. By heaven, I do love: and it hath taught me to rhyme, and to be melancholy; and here is part of my rhyme, and here my melancholy. Well, she hath one o' my sonnets already; the clown bore it, the fool sent it, and the lady hath it: sweet clown, sweeter fool, sweetest lady! By the world, I would not care a pin if the other three were in: Here comes one with a paper; God give him grace to groan! [*Gets up into a tree.*]

*Enter the KING, with a paper.*

*King.* Ah! me.

*Biron.* [*Aside.*] Shot, by heaven!—Proceed, sweet Cupid; thou hast thump'd him with thy bird-bolt under the left pap:—I'faith secrets.—

*King.* [*Reads.*] So sweet a kiss the golden sun gives not

To those fresh morning drops upon the rose, As thy eye-beams, when their fresh rays have smote

The night of dew that on my cheeks down flows:

Nor shines the silver moon one half so bright Through the transparent bosom of the deep, As doth thy face through tears of mine give light:

Thou shin'st in every tear that I do weep:

\* In truth.



*No drop but as a coach doth carry thee,  
So ridest thou triumphing in my woe;  
Do but behold the tears that swell in me,  
And they thy glory through thy grief will  
show;  
But do not love thyself; then thou wilt keep  
My tears for glasses, and still make me  
weep.  
O queen of queens, how far dost thou excel!  
No thought can think, nor tongue of mortal  
tell.—  
How shall she know my griefs? I'll drop the  
paper;  
Sweet leaves, shade folly. Who is he comes  
here?* [Steps aside.]

*Enter LONGAVILLE, with a paper.*

What Longaville! and reading! listen, ear.  
*Biron.* Now, in thy likeness, one more fool  
appear! [Aside.]  
*Long.* Ah! me, I am forsworn.  
*Biron.* Why, he comes in like a perjur'd  
wearing papers. [Aside.]  
*King.* In love, I hope; Sweet fellowship in  
shame! [Aside.]  
*Biron.* One drunkard loves another of the  
name. [Aside.]  
*Long.* Am I the first that have been perjur'd  
so!  
*Biron.* [Aside.] I could put thee in comfort;  
not by two, that I know:  
Thou mak'st the triumph, the corner-cap of  
society,  
The shape of love's Tyburn that hangs up sim-  
plicity.  
*Long.* I fear, these stubborn lines lack power  
to move:  
O sweet Maria, empress of my love!  
These numbers will I tear, and write in prose.  
*Biron.* [Aside.] Oh! rhymes are guards on  
wanton Cupid's hose:  
Disfigure not his shop.  
*Long.* This name shall go,—

[He reads the sonnet.  
Did not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye  
'Gainst whom the world cannot hold argu-  
ment,  
Persuade my heart to this false perjury?  
Vows, for thee broke, deserve not punish-  
ment.

A woman I forswore; but I will prove,  
Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee:  
My vow was earthly, thou a heavenly love;  
Thy grace being gain'd, cures all disgrace  
in me.

Vows are but breath, and breath a vapour is:  
Then thou, fair sun, which on my earth  
dost shine,

Exhaust'st this vapour vow: in thee it is:

If broken then, it is no fault of mine;

If by me broke, what fool is not so wise,

To love an oath to win a paradise?

*Biron.* [Aside.] This is the liver vein, which  
makes flesh a deity;  
A green goose, a goddess: pure, pure idolatry.  
God amend us, God amend! we are much out  
of the way.

*Enter DUMAIN, with a paper.*

*Long.* By whom shall I send this?—Company!  
stay. [Stepping aside.]

*Biron.* [Aside.] All hid, all hid, an old in-  
fant play:

Like a demi-god here, sit I in the sky,  
And wretched fools' secrets heedfully o'er-eye.  
More sark, to the mill! O heavens! I have my  
wish;

Dumain transform'd: four woodcocks in a  
dish!

*Dum.* O most divine Kate!

*Biron.* O most profane cowcomb! [Aside.]  
*Dum.* By heaven, the wonder of a mortal  
eye!

*Biron.* By earth, she is but corporal; there  
you lie. [Aside.]

*Dum.* Her amber hairs for foul have amber  
coted.\*

*Biron.* An amber-colour'd raven was well  
noted. [Aside.]

*Dum.* As upright as the cedar.

*Biron.* Stoop, I say;

Her shoulder is with child. [Aside.]

*Dum.* As fair as day.

*Biron.* Ay, some days; but then no sun must  
shine. [Aside.]

*Dum.* O that I had my wish!

*Long.* And I had mine! [Aside.]

*King.* And I mine too, good Lord!

*Biron.* Amen, so I had mine: Is not that a  
good word?

*Dum.* I would forget her; but a fever she  
Reigns in my blood, and will remember'd be.

*Biron.* A fever in your blood, why, then in-  
cision

Would let her out in saucers; Sweet mis-  
piss-ion!

*Dum.* Once more I'll read the ode that I have  
writ.

*Biron.* Once more I'll mark how love can  
vary wit. [Aside.]

*Dum.* On a day, (alack the day!)

Love, whose month it is our May,

Spied a blossom, passing fair,

Playing in the wanton air—

Through the velvet leaves the wind,

All unseen, 'gan passage find;

That the lover, sick to death,

Wish'd himself the heaven's breath.

Air, quoth he, thy cheeks may blow

Air, would I might triumph so!

But alack, my hand is sworn,

Ne'er to pluck thee from thy thorn

Thou, alack, for youth unmet;

Youth so apt to pluck a sweet.

Do not call it sin in me,

That I am forsworn for thee:

Thou for whom even Jove would swear,

Just but an Ethiopian were;

And deny himself for Jove,

Turning mortal for thy love.

This will I send; and something else more  
plain,

That shall express my true love's fasting pain.

Oh! would the King, Biron, and Longaville,

Were lovers too! Ill, to example ill,

Would from my forehead wipe a perjur'd note.

For none offend, where all alike do dote.

*Long.* Dumain, [Advancing.] thy love is far

from charity,

That in love's grief desir'st society:

You may look pale, but I should blush I know,

To be o'erheard, and taken napping so.

*King.* Come, Sir, [Advancing.] you blush

as his your case is such;

You chide at him, offending twice as much.

You do not love Maria; Longaville

Did never sonnet for her sake compile;

Nor never lay his wreathed arms athwart

His loving bosom, to keep down his heart.

I have been closely shrouded in this bush,

And mark'd you both, and for you both did

blush.

I heard your guilty rhymes, observ'd your

fashion;

Saw sighs reek from you, noted well your pas-  
sion:

Ah! me, says one: O Jove! the other cries;

One, her hairs were gold, crystal the other's

eyes:

\* Outstripped, surpassed.

You would for paradise break faith and troth ;

[To LONG.]

And Jove, for your love, would infringe an oath.

[To DUMAIN.]

What will Birón say, when that he shall hear

A faith infrin'd, which such a zeal did swear ?

How will he scorn ? how will he spend his wit ?

How will he triumph, leap, and laugh at it ?

For all the wealth that ever I did see,

I would not have him know so much by me.

Birón. Now step I forth to whip hypocrisy.—

Ah ! good my liege, I pray thee pardon me :

[Descends from the tree.]

Good heart, what race hast thou, thus to reprove

These worms for loving, that art most in love ?

Your eyes do make no coaches ; in your tears,

There is no certain princess that appears :

You'll not be perjur'd, 'tis a hateful thing :

Fish, none but minstrels, like of sonnetting.

But are you not ashamed ? nay, are you not,

Al! three of you, to be thus much o'ershot ?

You found his mote ; the king your mote did see ;

But I a beam do find in each of three.

Oh ! what a scene of foolery I have seen,

Of sighs, of groans, of sorrow, and of tears ! \*

O me, with what strict patience have I sat,

To see a king transformed to a goat !

To see great Hercules whipping a egg,

And profound Solomon to tune a jig,

And Nestor play at push-pin with the boys,

And critic Timon laugh at idle toys !

Where lies thy grief, O tell me, good Dumain ?

And, gentle Longaville, where lies thy pain ?

And where my liege's ? all about the breast :—

A candle, ho !

King. Too butter is thy jest.

Are we betray'd thus to thy over-view ?

Birón. Not you by me, but I betray'd to you,

I, that am honest ; I, that hold it sin

To break the vow I am engaged in ;

I am betray'd, by keeping company

With moon-like men, of strange inconstancy.

When shall you see me write a thing in rhyme ?

Or groan for Joan ? or spend a minute's time

In punning ? me ? When shall you hear that I

Will praise a hand, a foot, a face, an eye,

A gait, a state, a brow, a breast, a waist,

A leg, a limb ?—

King. Soft ; Whither away so fast ?

A true man, or a thief, that gallops so ?

Birón. I post from love ; good lover, let me go.

Enter JAQUENETTA and COSTARD.

Jaqu. God bless the king !

King. What present hast thou there ?

Cost. Some certain treason.

King. What makes treason here ?

Cost. Nay, it makes nothing, sir.

King. If it mar nothing neither,

'Tis the treason, and you, go in peace away together.

Jaqu. I beseech your grace, let this letter be read ;

Our parson misdoubts it ; 'twas reason, he said.

King. Birón, read it over.

[Giving him the letter.]

Where hadst thou it ?

Jaqu. Of Costard.

King. Where hadst thou it ?

Cost. Of Dun Adramadio, Dun Adramadio.

King. How now ! what is in you ? why dost thou tear it ?

Birón. A toy, my liege, a toy ; your grace needs not fear it.

Long. It did move him to passion, and therefore let's hear it.

Dum. It is Birón's writing, and here is his name. [Picks up the pieces]

\* Grief. † In revenging myself.

Birón. Ah, you whorson loggerhead, [To

COSTARD.] you were born to do me shame.—

Guilty, my lord, guilty ; I confess, I confess.

King. What ?

Birón. That you three fools lack'd me fool to make up the mess :

He, he, and you, my liege, and I,

Are pick-purses in love, and we deserve to die.

O dismiss this audience, and I shall tell you more.

Dum. Now the number is even.

Birón. True, true ; we are four ;—

Will these turtles be gone ?

King. Hence, Sirs ; away.

Cost. Walk aside the true folk, and let the traitors stay.

[Exeunt COST. and JAQ.]

Birón. Sweet lords, sweet lovers, O let us embrace !

As true we are, as flesh and blood can be :

The sea will ebb and flow, heaven show his face ;

Young blood will not obey an old decree :

We cannot cross the cause why we were born ;

Therefore, of all hands must we be forsworn.

King. What, did these reut lines show some

love of thee ?

Birón. Did they, quoth you ? Who sees the

heavenly Rosaline,

That, like a rude and savage man of Inde,

At the first opening of the gorgeous east,

Bows not his vassal head ; and, stricken blind,

Kisses the base ground with obedient breast ?

What peremptory eagle-sighted eye

Dares look upon the heaven of her brow,

That is not blinded by her majesty ?

King. What zeal, what fury hath inspir'd thee now ?

My love, her mistress, is a gracious moon :

She, an attending star, scarce seen a light.

Birón. My eyes are then no eyes, nor I Birón :

Oh ! but for my love, day would turn to night !

Of all complexions the cull'd sovereignty

Do meet, as at a fair, in her fair cheek ;

Where several worthies make one dignity ;

Where nothing wants, that want itself doth seek

Lend me the flourish of all gentle tongues,—

Fie, painted rhetoric ! oh ! she needs it not :

To things of sale a seller's praise belongs ;

She passes praise ; then praise too short doth blot,

A wither'd hermit, five-score winters worn,

Might shake off fifty, looking in her eye :

Beauty doth varnish age, as if new-born,

And gives the crutch the cradle's infancy.

Oh ! 'tis the sun, that maketh all things shine !

King. By heaven, thy love is black as ebony.

Birón. Is ebony like her ? O wood divine !

A wife of such wood were felicity.

Oh ! who can give an oath ? where is a book ?

That I may swear, beauty doth beauty lack,

If that she learn not of her eye to look :

No face is fair, that is not full so black.

King. O paradox ! Black is the badge of hell,

The hue of dungeons, and the scowl of night ;

And beauty's crest becomes the heavens well.

Birón. Devils soonest tempt, resembling spirits

of lights.

Oh ! if in black my lady's brows be deck'd

It mourns, that painting, and usurping hair,

Should ravish doters with a false aspect ;

And therefore is she born to make black

fair

Her favour turns the fashion of the days ;

For native blood is counted painting now ;

And therefore red, that would avoid dispraise

Paints itself black, to imitate her brow.

Dum. To look like her, are chimney-sweepers

black.

Long. And since her time, are colliers counted

bright.

King. And Ethiops of their sweet complexion

crack.

*Dum.* Dark needs no candles now, for dark is light.

*Biron.* Your mistresses dare never come in rain,

For fear their colours should be wash'd away.

*King.* 'Twere good, yours did; for, Sir, to tell you plain,

I'll find a fairer face not wash'd to-day.

*Biron.* I'll prove her fair, or talk till dooms-day here.

*King.* No devil will fright thee then so much as she.

*Dum.* I never knew man hold vile stuff so dear.

*Long.* Look, here's thy love: my foot and her face see.

*Biron.* Oh! if the streets were paved with thine eyes,

Her feet were much too dainty for such tread!

*Dum.* O vile! then as she goes, what upward lies

The street should see as she walk'd over head.

*King.* But what of this? Are we not all in love?

*Biron.* Oh! nothing so sure; and thereby all forsworn.

*King.* Then leave this chat; and, good Biron now prove

Our loving lawful, and our faith not torn.

*Dum.* Ay, marry, there;—some flattery for this evil.

*Long.* Oh! some authority how to proceed; Some tricks, some quilllets,\* how to cheat the devil.

*Dum.* Some salve for perjury.

*Biron.* Oh! 'tis more than need?—Have at you then, affection's men at arms:

Consider, what you first did swear unto;—

To fast,—to study,—and to see no woman;—

That treason 'gainst the kingly state of youth.

Say, can you fast? your stomachs are too young;

And abstinence engenders maladies.

And where that you have vow'd to study, lords,

In that each of you hath forsworn his book:

Can you still dream, and pore, and thereon look?

For when would you, my lord, or you, or you,

Have found the ground of study's excellence,

Without the beauty of a woman's face?

From women's eyes this doctrine I derive:

They are the ground, the books, the academes,

From whence doth spring the true Promethean fire.

Why, universal plodding prisons up

The nimble spirits in the arteries;

As motion, and long during action, tires

The sinewy vigour of the traveller.

Now, for not looking on a woman's face,

You have in that forsworn the use of eyes;

And study too, the cause of your vow:

For where is any author in the world,

Teaches such beauty as a woman's eye?

Learning is but an adjunct to myself,

And where we are, our learning likewise is.

Then, when ourselves we see in ladies' eyes,

Do we not likewise see our learning there?

Oh! we have made a vow to study, lords;

And in that vow we have forsworn our books;

For when would you, my liege, or you, or you,

In leaden contemplation, have found out

Such fiery numbers, as the prompting eyes

Of beauteous tutors have enrich'd you with?

Other slow arts entirely keep the brain;

And therefore finding barren practisings,

Scarce show a harvest of their heavy toil;

But love, first learned in a lady's eye,

Lives not alone immur'd in the brain;

But with the motion of all elements,

Courses as swift as thought in every power;

And gives to every power a double power,  
Above their functions and their offices.  
It adds a precious seeing to the eye;  
A lover's eyes will gaze an eagle blind;  
A lover's ear will hear the lowest sound;  
When the suspicious head of thrift is stopp'd;  
Love's feeling is more soft and sensible,  
Than are the tender horns of cockled snails;  
Love's tongue proves dainty Bacchus gross in taste:

For valour, is not love a Hercules,  
Still climbing trees in the Hesperides?  
Subtle as sphinx; as sweet and musical,  
As bright Apollo's lute, strung with his hair;  
And, when love speaks, the voice of all the gods

Makes heaven drowsy with the harmony.  
Never durst poet touch a pen to write,  
Until his ink were temper'd with love's sighs;  
Oh! then his lines would ravish savage ears,  
And plant in tyrants mild humility.

From women's eyes this doctrine I derive;  
They sparkle still the right Promethean fire;  
They are the books, the arts, the academes,  
That show, contain, and nourish all the world.  
Else, none at all in aught proves excellent:  
Then fools you were these women to forswear;  
Or, keeping what is sworn, you will prove  
fools.

For wisdom's sake, a word that all men love;  
Or for love's sake, a word that loves all men;  
Or for men's sake; the authors of these women;

Or women's sake, by whom we men are men;  
Let us once lose our oaths, to find ourselves,  
Or else we lose ourselves to keep our oaths:  
It is religion to be thus forsworn.

For charity itself tithes the law;  
And who can sever love from charity?

*King.* Saint Cupid, then! and, soldiers, to the field!

*Biron.* Advance your standards, and upon them loids;

Pell-mell, down with them! but be first advis'd,

In conflict that you get the sun of them.

*Long.* Now to plain-dealing; lay these gloves by:

Shall we resolve to woo these girls of France?

*King.* And win them too; therefore let us devise

Some entertainment for them in their tents.

*Biron.* First, from the park let us conduct them thither;

Then, homeward, every man attach the hand

Of his fair mistress: in the afternoon

We will with some strange pastime solace them,

Such as the shortness of the time can shape;

For revels, dances, masks, and merry hours,

Fore-run fair Love, strewn her way with flowers.

*King.* Away, away! no time shall be omitted,

That will be true, and may by us be fitted.

*Biron.* Allons!—Sow'd cockle reap'd!

no corn;

And justice always whirls in equal measure:

Light wenches may prove plagues to men forsworn;

If so, our copper buys no better treasure.

[Exit.

\* Law-chicane.

\* Discourses.

† Affection.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—Another part of the same.

Enter HOLOFERNES, Sir NATHANIEL, and DULL.

*Hol.* Satis quod sufficit.

*Nath.* I praise God for you, Sir: your reasons\* at dinner have been sharp and sententious; pleasant without scurrility, witty without affection,†

audacious without impudency, learned without opinion, and strange without heresy.\* I did converse this *quondam* day with a companion of the king's, who is intitled, nominated, or called, Don Adriano de Armado.

*Hol.* *Noxi hominem tamquam te*: His humour is lofty, his discourse peremptory, his tongue filed, his eye ambitious, his gait unajestical, and his general behaviour vain, ridiculous, and thra-sonical.† He is too picked,‡ too spruce, too affected, too odd, as it were, too perigrinate as I may call it.

*Nath.* A most singular and choice epithet.

[*Takes out his table-book.*]

*Hol.* He draweth out the thread of his verbosity finer than the staple of his argument. I abhor such fanatical phantasms, such unsociable and point-devise § companions; such rackers of orthography, as to speak, doubt, fine, when he should say, doubt; det, when he should pronounce, debt; d, e, b, t; not d, e, t: he clepeth a calf, cauf; ball, huf; neighbour, *vocatur*, nebour, neigh, abbreviated, ne: This is abhominable, (which he would call abominable,) it insinuateth me of insane; *Ne intelligis domine?* to make frantic, lunatic.

*Nath.* *Laus deo, bone intelligo.*

*Hol.* Bone — bone, for bone: *Priscian* a little scratch'd; 'twill serve.

Enter ARMADO, MOTH, and COSTARD.

*Nath.* *Videsne quis venit?*

*Hol.* *Video, et gaudeo.*

*Arm.* Chirra! [To *MOth.*]

*Hol.* *Quare Chirra, not sirrah?*

*Arm.* Men of peace, well encounter'd.

*Hol.* Most military Sir, salutation.

*Moth.* They have been at a great feast of languages, and stolen the scraps.

[To *COSTARD aside.*]

*Cost.* Oh! they have lived long in the almshouse of words! I marvel, thy master hath not eaten thee for a word; for thou art not so long by the head as *honorificabilitudinitatibus*: thou art easier swallowed than a flap-dragon. ||

*Moth.* Peace: the peal begins.

*Arm.* Monsieur, [To *Hol.*] are you not letter'd?

*Moth.* Yes, yes; he teaches boys the horn-book: —

What is a, b, spelt backward with a horn on his head?

*Hol.* Ba, *pueritia*, with a horn added.

*Moth.* Ba, most silly sheep, with a horn: — You hear his learning.

*Hol.* *Quis, quis*, thou consonant?

*Moth.* The third of the five vowels, if you repeat them; or the fifth, if I.

*Hol.* I will repeat them, a, e, i. —

*Moth.* The sheep: the other two concludes it; o, u.

*Arm.* Now, by the salt wave of the Mediterranean, a sweet touch, ¶ a quick venew \*\* of wit: snap, snap, quick and home; it rejoiceth my intellect: true wit.

*Moth.* Offer'd by a child to an old man; which is wit-odd.

*Hol.* What is the figure? what is the figure?

*Moth.* Horns.

*Hol.* Thou disputest like an infant: go, whip thy pig.

*Moth.* Lend me your horn to make one, and I will whip about your infamy *circum circa*: A gig of a cuckold's horn!

*Cost.* An I had but one penny in the world, thou shouldst have it to buy gingerbread: hold, there is the very remuneration I had of thy master, thou half-penny purse of wit, thou pignonegg of discretion. Oh! an the heavens were so

pleased, that thou wert but my bastard! what a joyful father wouldst thou make me! Go to; thou hast it *ad dunghill*, at the fingers' ends, as they say.

*Hol.* Oh! I smell false Latin; dunghill for *unguem*.

*Arm.* Arts-man, *præambula*; we will be singled from the barbarous. Do you not educate youth at the charge-house \* on the top of the mountain?

*Hol.* Or, *mons*, the hill.

*Arm.* At your sweet pleasure, for the mountain.

*Hol.* I do, sans question.

*Arm.* Sir, it is the king's most sweet pleasure and affection, to congratulate the princess at her pavilion, in the posteriors of this day; which the rude multitude call the afternoon.

*Hol.* The posterior of the day, most generous Sir, is liable, congruent, and measurable for the afternoon: the word is well cull'd, chose; sweet and apt, I do assure you, Sir, I do assure.

*Arm.* Sir, the king is a noble gentleman; and my familiar, I do assure you, very good friend: — For what is inward † between us, let it pass: — I do beseech thee, remember thy courtesy; — I beseech thee, apparel thy head; — and among other importunate and most serious designs, — and of great import indeed, too; — but let that pass: — for I must tell thee, it will please his grace (by the world) sometime to lean upon his poor shoulder; and with his royal finger, thus, dally with my excitement, ‡ with my mustachio: but sweet heart, let that pass. By the world, I recount no fable; some certain special honours it pleaseth his greatness to impart to Armado, a soldier, a man of travel, that hath seen the world: but let that pass. — The very all of all is, — but, sweet heart, I do implore secrecy, — that the king would have me present the princess, sweet chuck, § with some delightful ostentation, or show, or pageant, or antic, or fire-work. Now, understanding that the curate and your sweet self, are good at such eruptions, and sudden breaking out of mirth, as it were, I have acquainted you withal, to the end to crave your assistance.

*Hol.* Sir, you shall present before her the nine worthies. — Sir Nathaniel, as concerning some entertainment of time, some show in the posterior of this day, to be rendered by our assistance, — the king's command, and this most gallant, illustrate, and learned gentleman, — before the princess; I say, none so fit as to present the nine worthies.

*Nath.* Where will you find men worthy enough to present them?

*Hol.* Joshua, yourself; myself, or this gallant gentleman, Judas Maccabæus; this swain, because of his great limb or joint, shall pass Pompey the great; the page, Hercules.

*Arm.* Pardon, Sir, error: he is not quantity enough for that worthy's thumb: he is not so big as the end of his club.

*Hol.* Shall I have audience? he shall present Hercules in minority: his *enter* and *exit* shall be strangling a snake; and I will have an apology for that purpose.

*Moth.* An excellent device! so, if any of the audience has, you may cry: *well done Hercules!* now thou *crushest the snake!* that is the way to make an offence gracious; though few have the grace to do it.

*Arm.* For the rest of the worthies? —

*Hol.* I will play three myself.

*Moth.* Thrice-worthy gentleman!

*Arm.* Shall I tell you a thing?

*Hol.* We attend.

*Arm.* We will have, if this fadge || not an antic. I beseech you, follow.

\* This is a finished picture of colloquial excellence.

† Boastful. ‡ Over-dressed.

§ Fincial exactness.

¶ A small inflammable substance, swallowed in a glass of wine. ¶ A hit.

\*\* *L.e.* a quick bout at wit

\* Free school.

‡ Beard.

§ Suit.

† Confidential.

‡ Chick.

*Hol. Via,\** Goodman Dull! thou hast spoken no word all this while.

*Dull.* Nor understood none neither, Sir.

*Hol. Alions!* we will employ thee.

*Dull.* I'll make one in a dance, or so; or I will play on the tabor to the worthies, and let them dance the hay.

*Hol.* Most dull, honest Dull, to our sport, away. *[Exit.*

SCENE II.—Another part of the same.—Before the PRINCESS' Pavilion.

Enter the PRINCESS, KATHARINE, ROSALINE, and MARIA.

*Prin.* Sweet hearts, we shall be rich ere we depart,

If fairings come thus plentifully in :

A lady wait'd about with diamonds!—

Look you, what I have from the loving king.

*Ros.* Madam, came nothing else along with that?

*Prin.* Nothing but this? yes, as much love in rhyme,

As would be cram'm'd up in a sheet of paper,

Writ on both sides the leaf, margent and all :

That he was fain to seal on Cupid's name.

*Ros.* That was the way to make his god-head wax;†

For he hath been five thousand years a boy.

*Kath.* Ay, and a shrewd unhappy gallows too.

*Ros.* You'll ne'er be friends with him; he kill'd your sister.

*Kath.* He made her melancholy, sad, and heavy;

And so she died : had she been light, like you,

Of such a merry, mumble, stirring spirit,

She might have been a grandam ere she died :

And so may you : for a light heart lives long.

*Ros.* What's your dark meaning, mouse;‡ of this light word?

*Kath.* A light condition in a beauty dark.

*Ros.* We need more light to find your meaning out.

*Kath.* You'll mar the light, by taking it in snuff;§

Therefore, I'll darkly end the argument.

*Ros.* Look, what you do, you do it still r'the dark.

*Kath.* So do not you; for you are a light wench.

*Ros.* Indeed, I weigh not you; and therefore light.

*Kath.* You weigh me not—Oh! that's you care not for me.

*Ros.* Great reason; for, Past cure is still past care.

*Prin.* Well bandied both; a set of wit well play'd.

But Rosaline, you have a favour too :

Who sent it? and what is it?

*Ros.* I would, you knew :

An if my face were but as fair as yours,

My favour were as great; he witness this.

Nay, I have verses too, I thank Brion :

The numbers true; and, were the numbring too,

I were the fairest goddess on the ground :

I am compar'd to twenty thousand fairs.

Oh! he hath drawn my picture in his letter!

*Prin.* Any thing like?

*Ros.* Much, in the letters; nothing in the praise.

*Prin.* B-auteous as ink; a good conclusion.

*Kath.* Fair as a text B in a copy-book.

*Ros.* 'Ware pencils! How! let me not die your debtor,

My red dominical, my golden letter :

Oh! that your face were not so full of O's!

*Kath.* A pox of that just; and beshrew all shrows!

*Prin.* But what was sent to you from fair Dumain?

*Kath.* Madam, this glove.

*Prin.* Did he not send you twain?

*Kath.* Yes, madam; and moreover,

Some thousand verses of a faithful lover :

A huge translation of hypocrisy.

Vilely compil'd, profound simplicity.

*Mar.* This, and these pearls, to me sent Longaville;

The letter is too long by half a mile.

*Prin.* I think no less : Dost thou not wish in heart,

The chain were longer, and the letter short?

*Mar.* Ay, or I would these hands might never part.

*Prin.* We are wise girls, to mock our lovers so.

*Ros.* They are worse fools to purchase mocking so.

That same Brion I'll torture ere I go.

Oh! that I knew he were but in by the week!

How I would make him fawn, and beg, and seek;

And wait the season, and observe the times,

And spend his prodigal wits in bootless rhymes :

And shape his service wholly to my behests ;

And make him proud to make me proud that jests!

So portent-like would I o'erstay his state,

That he should be my fool, and I his tale.

*Prin.* None are so surely caught, when they are catch'd,

As wit turn'd fool. folly, in wisdom hatch'd,

Hath wisdom's warrant, and the help of school,

And wit's own grace to grace a learned fool.

*Ros.* The blood of youth burns not with so excess,

As gravity's revolt to wantonness.

*Mar.* Fully in fools bears not so strong a note,

As foolery in the wise, when wit doth dote ;

Since all the power thereof it doth apply,

To prove, by wit, worth in simplicity.

Enter Boyet.

*Prin.* Here comes Boyet, and mirth is in his face.

*Boyet.* Oh! I am stabb'd with laughter! Where's her grace?

*Prin.* Thy news, Boyet?

*Boyet.* Prepare, madam, prepare!

Arm, wenches, arm! encounters mounted are

Against your peace : Love doth approach disguis'd.

Armed in arguments, you'll be surpris'd :

Muster your wits ; stand in your own defence

Or hide your heads like cowards, and fly hence.

*Prin.* Saint Dennis to saint Cupid! What are they,

That charge their breath against us? say, scout, say.

*Boyet.* Under the cool shade of a sycamore,

I thought to close mine eyes some half an hour :

When, lo! to interrupt my purpos'd rest,

Toward that shade I might behold address'd

The king and his companions : warily

I stole into a neighbour thicket by,

And overheard what you shall overhear ;

That, by and by, disguis'd they will be here.

Their herald is a pretty knavish page,

That well by heart hath cou'd his embassy :

Action, and accent, did they teach him there ;

Thus must thou speak, and thus thy body bear :

And ever and anon they made a doubt,

Presence majestical would put him out :

For, quoth the king, an angel shalt thou see ;

Yet fear not thou, but speak audaciously.

The boy replied, An angel is not evil ;

I should have fear'd her, had she been a devil.

\* Courage

† Grow.

‡ Formerly a term of endearment.

§ In anger.

With that all laugh'd and clapp'd him on the shoulder,

Making the bold way by their praises bolder.

One rubb'd his elbow, thus ; and fier'd and swore,  
A better speech was never spoke before :

Another, with his finger and his thumb,  
Cried, *'Tis 't we will do't, come what will come :*

The third he caper'd, and cried, *All goes well :*  
The fourth turn'd on the toe, and down he fell.

With that, they all did tumble on the ground,  
With such a zealous laughter so profound,

That in this spleen ridiculous appears,  
To check their folly, passion's solemn tears.

*Prin.* But what, but what, come they to visit us ?

*Boyet.* They do, they do : and are apparel'd thus,—

Like Moscovites, or Russians : as I guess,  
Their purpose is, to parle, to court, and dance :

And every one his love-feat will advance

Unto his several mistress ; which they'll know

By favours several, which they did bestow.

*Prin.* And will they so ? the gallants shall be task'd.—

For ladies, we will every one be mask'd ;

And not a man of them shall have the grace

Despite of suit, to see a lady's face.—

Holla, Rosaline, this favour thou shalt wear ;

And then the king will court thee for his dear ;

Holla, take thou this, my sweet, and give me

thine ;

So shall Birón take me for Rosaline.—

And change you favours too ; so shall your loves

Woo contrary, deceiv'd by these removes.

*Ros.* Come on then ; wear the favours most

in sight.

*Kath.* But, in this changing, what is your intent ?

*Prin.* The effect of my intent is, to cross

their's :

They do it but in mocking merriment ;

And mock for mock is only my intent.

Then several counsels their unbosom shall

To loves mistook ; and so be mock'd withal,

'Upon the next occasion that we meet,

With visages display'd, to talk, and greet.

*Ros.* But shall we dance, if they desire us to't ?

*Prin.* No ; to the death, we will not move a

foot :

Nor to their penn'd speech render we no grace ;

But, while 'tis spoke, each turn away her face.

*Boyet.* Why, that contempt will kill the

speaker's heart.

And quite divorce his memory from his part.

*Prin.* Therefore I do it ; and I make no doubt,

The rest will ne'er come in, if he be out.

There's no such sport, as sport by sport o'er-

thrown ;

To make their's our's, and our's none but our

own :

So shall we stay, mocking intended game ;

And they, well mock'd, depart away with shame.

[*Trumpet's sound within.*]

*Boyet.* The trumpet sounds ; be mask'd, the

maskers come. [*The ladies mask.*]

*Enter the KING, BIRON, LONGAVILLE, and*

*DUMAIN, in Russian habits, and masked ;*

*MOTH, Musicians, and Attendants.*

*Moth.* All hail, the richest beauties on the

earth !

*Boyet.* Beauties no richer than rich taffata.

*Moth.* A holy parcel of the fairest dames,

[*The ladies turn their backs to him.*]

*That ever turn'd their backs—to mortal*

*views !*

*Biron.* Their eyes, villain, their eyes.

*Moth.* That ever turn'd their eyes to mor-

*tal views ! Out—*

*Boyet.* True ; out, indeed.

*Moth.* Out of your favours, heavenly spi-

*rits, vouchsafe*

*Not to behold—*

*Biron.* Once to behold, rogue.

*Moth.* Once to behold your sun-beamed eyes,  
—with your sun-beamed eyes—

*Boyet.* They will not answer to that epithet ;  
You were best call it, daughter-beamed eyes.

*Moth.* They do not mark me, and that brings  
me out.

*Biron.* Is this your perfectness ? be gone, you  
rogue.

*Ros.* What would these strangers ? know their  
minds, Boyet :

If they do speak our language, 'tis our will  
That some plain man recount their purposes :

Know what they would.

*Boyet.* What would you with the princess ?

*Biron.* Nothing but peace, and gentle visting-  
tion.

*Ros.* What would they, say they ?

*Boyet.* Nothing but peace and gentle vistingion.

*Ros.* Why, that they have ; and bid them so  
be gone.

*Boyet.* She says, you have it, and you may be  
gone.

*King.* Say to her, we have measur'd many miles,  
To tread a measure with her on this grass.

*Boyet.* They say, that they have measur'd many  
a mile,

To tread a measure with you on this grass,

*Ros.* It is not so : ask them, how many  
inches

is in one mile : if they have measur'd many,

The measure then of one is easily told.

*Boyet.* If, to come hither you have measur'd

miles,

And many miles ; the princess bids you tell,

How many inches do fill up one mile.

*Biron.* Tell her, we measure them by weary

steps.

*Boyet.* She hears herself.

*Ros.* How many weary steps,

Of many weary miles you have o'ergone,

Are number'd in the travel of one mile ?

*Biron.* We number nothing that we spend for

you ;

Our duty is so rich, so infinite,

That we may do it still without accomp't.

Vouchsafe to show the sunshine of your face,

That we, like savages, may worship it.

*Ros.* My face is but a moon, and clouded too.

*King.* Blessed are clouds, to do as such

clouds do !

Vouchsafe, bright moon, and these thy stars to

shine

(Those clouds remov'd,) upon our wayry eyne.

*Ros.* O vain petitioner ! beg a greater matter ;

Thou now request'st but moonshine in the

water.

*King.* Then, in our measure, do but vouch-

safe one change :

Thou bid'st me beg ; this begging is not strange.

*Ros.* Play, music, then : nay you must do it

soon. [*Music plays.*]

Not yet ;—no dance :—thus change I like the

moon.

*King.* Will you not dance ? How come you

thus estrang'd ?

*Ros.* You took the moon at full ; but now

she's chang'd.

*King.* Yet still she is the moon, and I the man

The music plays ; vouchsafe some motion to it.

*Ros.* Our ears vouchsafe it.

*King.* But your legs should do it.

*Ros.* Since you are strangers and come here

by chance,

We'll not be nice : take hands ;—we will not

dance.

*King.* Why take we hands then ?

*Ros.* Only to part friends :—

Court'sy, sweet hearts ; and so the measure

ends

*King.* More measure of this measure ; be not

nice.

*Ros.* We can afford no more at such a price.

*King.* Prize you yourselves ; What buys your

company ?

*Ros.* Your absence only.

*King.* That can never be.

*Ros.* Then cannot we be bought : and so adieu ;  
Twice to your visor, and half once to you !

*King.* If you deny to dance, let's hold more chat.

*Ros.* In private then.

*King.* I am best pleas'd with that.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Biron.* Honey handed mistress, one sweet word with thee.

*Prin.* Honey, and milk, and sugar : there is three.

*Biron.* Nay then, two treys, (and if you grow so nice,)

Metheglin, wort, and malmsey :—Well run, dice !

There's half a dozen sweets.

*Prin.* Seventh sweet, adieu !

Since you can cog, \* I'll play no more with you.

*Biron.* One word in secret.

*Prin.* Let it not be sweet.

*Biron.* Thou griev'st my gall.

*Prin.* Gall ? bitter.

*Biron.* Therefore meet.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Dum.* Will you vouchsafe with me to change a word ?

*Mar.* Name it.

*Dum.* Fair lady,—

*Mar.* Say you so ? Fair lord,—

Take that for your fair lady.

*Dum.* Please it you,

As much in private, and I'll bid adieu.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Kath.* What was your visor made without a tongue ?

*Long.* I know the reason, lady, why you ask.

*Kath.* Oh ! for your reason ! quickly, Sir ; I long.

*Long.* You have a double tongue within your mask,

And would afford my speechless visor half.

*Kath.* Vea, quoth the Dutchman ;—Is not vear a calf ?

*Long.* A calf, fair lady ?

*Kath.* No, a fair lord calf.

*Long.* Let's part the word.

*Kath.* No, I'll not be your half :

Take all, and wean it ; it may prove an ox.

*Long.* Look, how you butt yourself in these sharp mocks !

Will you give horns, chaste lady ? do not so.

*Kath.* Then die a calf, before your horns do grow.

*Long.* One word in private with you, ere I die.

*Kath.* Bleat softly then, the butcher hears you cry.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Boyet.* The tongues of mocking wenches are as keen

As is the razor's edge invisible,

Cutting a smaller hair than may be seen ;

Above the sense of sense : no sensible Seemeth their conference ; their conceits have wings,

Fleeter than arrows, bullets, wind, thought, swifter things.

*Ros.* Not one word more, my maids ; break off, break off.

*Biron.* By heaven, all dry-beaten with pure scoff.

*King.* Farewell, mad wenches ; you have simple wits.

[*Exeunt KING, LORDS, MOTH, MUSIC and Attendants.*]

*Prin.* Twenty adieus, my frozen Muscovites.—Are these the breed of wits so wonder'd at ?

*Boyet.* Tapers they are, with your sweet breaths puff'd out.

*Ros.* Well-liking wits they have ; gross, gross, fat, fat.

*Prin.* O poverty in wit, kingly-poor stout !

Will they not, think you, hang themselves to-night ?

Or ever, but in visors, show their faces ?

This pert Biron was out of countenance quite.

*Ros.* Oh ! they were all in lamentable cases !

The king was weeping-ripe for a good word.

*Prin.* Biron did swear himself out of all suit.

*Mar.* Dumain was at my service, and his sword :

No point \* quoth I ; and my servant straight was mute.

*Kath.* Lord Longaville said, I came o'er his heart ;

And trow you, what he call'd me ?

*Prin.* Qualm, perhaps.

*Kath.* Yes, in good faith.

*Prin.* Go, sickness as thou art !

*Ros.* Well, better wits have worn plain statute-caps. †

But will you hear ? the king is my love sworn.

*Prin.* And quick Biron hath plighted faith to me

*Kath.* And Longaville was for my service born.

*Mar.* Dumain is mine, as sure as bark on tree.

*Boyet.* Madam, and pretty mistresses, give ear : Immediately they will again be here

In their own shapes ; for it can never be,

They will digest this harsh indignity.

*Prin.* Will they return ?

*Boyet.* They will, they will, God knows ;

And leap for joy, though they are lame with blows :

Therefore change favours ; ‡ and when they repair,

Blow like sweet roses in the summer air.

*Prin.* How blow ? how blow ? speak to be understood.

*Boyet.* Fair ladies mask'd, are roses in their bud :

Dismask'd, their damask sweet complexion shown,

Are angels veiling clouds, or roses blown.

*Prin.* Avaunt, perplexity ! What shall we do,

If they return in their own shapes to woo ?

*Ros.* Good madam, if by me you'll be advised,

Let's mock them still, as well known, as disguis'd :

Let us complain to them what fools were here,

Disguis'd like Muscovites, in shapeless gear ;

And wonder, what they were ; and to what end

Their shallow shows, and prologue vilely penn'd,

And their tough carriage so ridiculous,

Should be presented at our tent to us.

*Boyet.* Ladies, withdraw ; the gallants are at hand.

*Prin.* Whip to our tents, as roes run over land.

[*Exeunt PRIN. ROS. KATH. and MARIA.*]

*Enter the KING, BIRON, LONGAVILLE, and DUMAIN, in their proper habits.*

*King.* Fair Sir, God save you ! Where is the princess ?

*Boyet.* Gone to her tent, Please it your majesty,

Command me any service to her thither ?

*King.* That she vouchsafe me audience for one word.

*Boyet.* I will ; and so will she ; I know, my lord. [*Exit.*]

*Biron.* This fellow pecks up wit, as pigeons pease ;

And utters it again when God doth please :

He is wit's pedlar ; and retails his wares

At wakes, and wassels, || meetings, markets, fairs,

And we that sell by gross, the Lord doth know

Have not the grace to grace it with such show.

\* A quibble on the French adverb of negation.

† Better wits may be found among citizens.

‡ Features, countenances. § Uncouth.

|| Rustic merry-meetings.

\* Falstaff dice, he.

This gallant pins the wenches on his sleeve ;  
Had he been Adam, he had tempted Eve ;  
He can carve too, and hiss : Why, this is he,  
That, kiss'd away his hand in courtesy :  
This is the ape of form, monsieur the nice,  
That when he plays at tables, chides the dice  
In honourable terms ; nay, he can sing  
A mean \* most meanly ; and, in ushering,  
Mend him who can : the ladies call him, sweet ;  
The stairs, as he treads on them, kiss his feet :  
This is the flower that smiles on every one,  
To show his teeth as white as whales' bone : †  
And consciences, that will not die in debt,  
Pay him the due of honey-tongued Boyet.

*King.* A blister on his sweet tongue, with my heart,  
That put Armado's page out of his part !

*Enter the PRINCESS, ushered by BOYET : ROSALINE, MARIA, KATHARINE, and Attendants.*

*Biron.* See where it comes !—Behaviour,  
what wert thou,  
Till this man show'd thee ? and what art thou now ?

*King.* All hail, sweet madam, and fair time of day !

*King.* Fair, in all hail, is foul, as I conceive.

*King.* Construe my speeches better, if you may.

*Prin.* Then wish me better, I will give you leave.

*King.* We came to visit you ; and purpose now

To lead you to our court : vouchsafe it then.

*Prin.* This field shall hold me : and so hold your vow ;

Nor God, nor I, delight in perjur'd men.

*King.* Rebuke me not for that which you provoke ;

The virtue of your eye must break my oath.

*Prin.* You nick-name virtue ; vice you should have spoke ;

For virtue's office never breaks men's troth. Now, by my maiden honour, yet as pure

As the unsullied lily, I protest,

A world of torments though I should endure,  
I would not yield to be your house's guest :

So much I hate a breaking-cause to be  
Of heavenly oaths, vow'd with integrity.

*King.* O you have liv'd in desolation here,  
Unseen, unvisited, much to our shame.

*Prin.* Not so, my lord ; it is not so, I swear :  
We have had pastimes here, and pleasant game ;

A mess of Russians left us but of late.

*King.* How, madam ? Russians ?

*Prin.* Ay, in truth, my lord ;

Trim gallants, full of courtship, and of state.

*Ros.* Madam, speak true :—It is not so, my lord :

My lady, (to the manner of the days, †)  
In courtesy, gives undeserving praise.

We four, indeed, confronted here with four  
In Russian habit ; here they stay'd an hour,

And talk'd apace ; and in that hour, my lord,  
They did not bless us with one happy word,

I dare not call them fools ; but this I think,  
When they are thirsty, fools would fain have drink.

*Biron.* This jest is dry to me—Fair, gentle sweet,

Your wit makes wise things foolish : when we greet

With eyes best seeing heaven's fiery eye,  
By light we lose light : Your capacity

Is of that nature, that to your huge store  
Wise things seem foolish, and rich things but

poor.

*Ros.* This proves you wise and rich ; for in my eye,—

*Biron.* I am a fool, and full of poverty.

*Ros.* But that you take what doth to you belong—

It were a fault to snatch words from my tongue.

*Biron.* Oh ! I am your's, and all that I possess.

*Ros.* All the fool mine ?

*Biron.* I cannot give you less.

*Ros.* Which of the visors was it, that you wore ?

*Biron.* Where ? when ? what visor ? why demand you this ?

*Ros.* There, then, that visor ; that superfluous case,

That hid the worse, and show'd the better face.

*King.* We are descried : they mock us now downright.

*Dum.* Let us confess, and turn it to a jest.

*Prin.* Amaz'd, my lord ? why looks your highness sad ?

*Ros.* Help, hold his brows ! he'll swoon !

Why look you pale ?—

Sea-sick, I think, coming from Muscovy.

*Biron.* Thus pour the stars down plagues for perjury.

Can any face of brass hold longer out ?—

Here stand I, lady ; dart thy skill at me ;

Bruse me with scorn, confound me with a fount :

Thrust thy sharp wit quite through my ignorance ;

Cut me to pieces with thy keen conceit ;

And I will wish thee never more to dance,

Nor never more in Russian habit wait.

Oh ! never will I trust to speeches penn'd,

Nor to the motion of a school-boy's tongue ;

Nor never come in visor to my friend ; \*

Nor woo in rhyme, like a blind harper's song :

Taffata phrases, silken terms precise,

Three-pil'd hyperboles, spice affectation,

Figures pedantical ; these summer-flies

Have blown me full of maggot ostentation :

I do forswear them : and I here protest,

By this white glove, (how white the hand,

God knows !)

Henceforth my wooing mind shall be express'd

In russet yeas, and honest kersey noes :

And, to begin, wench,—so God help me, la !—

My love to thee is sound, sans crack or flaw,

*Ros.* Sans sams, I pray you.

*Biron.* Yet I have a trick

Of the old rage :—bear with me, I am sick ;

I'll leave it by degrees. Soft, let us see ;—

Write, *Lord have mercy on us*, on those three ;

They are infected, in their hearts it lies ;

They have the plague, and caught it of your eyes :

These lords are visited ; you are not free,

For the Lord's tokens on you do I see.

*Prin.* No, they are free, that gave these tokens to us.

*Biron.* Our states are forfeit, seek not to undo us.

*Ros.* It is not so ; For how can this be true,

That you stand forfeit, being those that sue ?

*Biron.* Peace ; for I will not have to do with you.

*Ros.* Nor shall not, if I do as I intend.

*Biron.* Speak for yourselves, my wit is at an end.

*King.* Teach us, sweet madam, for our rude transgression

Some fair excuse.

*Prin.* The fairest is confession.

Were you not here, but even now disigns't ?

*King.* Madam, I was.

*Prin.* And were you well advis'd ?

*King.* I was, fair madam.

*Prin.* When you then were here,

What did you whisper in your lady's ear ?

*King.* That more than all the world I did respect her.

\* The tenor in music. † The tooth of the horse-whale.  
‡ After the fashion of the times.

\* Mistress



*Prin.* When she shall challenge this, you will reject her.

*King.* Upon mine honour, no.

*Prin.* Peace, peace, forbear :  
Your oath once broke, you force \* not to forswear.

*King.* Despise me, when I break this oath of mine.

*Prin.* I will ; and therefore keep it :—Rosaline,

What did the Russian whisper in your ear ?

*Ros.* Madam, he swore, that he did hold me dear

As precious eye-sight ; and did value me  
Above this world : adding thereto, moreover,  
That he would wed me, or else die my lover.

*Prin.* God give thee joy of him ! the noble lord

Most honourably doth uphold his word.

*King.* What mean you, madam ? by my life, my troth,

I never swore this lady such an oath.

*Ros.* By heaven, you did ; and to confirm it plain,

You gave me this : but take it, Sir, again.

*King.* My faith, and this, the princess I did give ;

I knew her by this jewel on her sleeve.

*Prin.* Pardon me, Sir, this jewel did she wear ;

And lord Biron, I thank him, is my dear :—

What ; will you have me, or your pearl again ?

*Biron.* Neither of either ; I remit both twain.  
I see the trick out !—Here was a consent, †  
(Knowing aforehand of our merriment.)

To dash it like a Christmas comedy :  
Some carry-tale, some please-man, some slight zany, —

Some numble-news, some trencher-knight, some Dick,—

That smiles his cheek in years ; and knows the trick

To make my lady laugh, when she's dispos'd,—  
Told our intents before : which once disclos'd,  
The ladies did change favours ; and then we,  
Following the signs, wou'd not the sign of she.  
Now, to our perjury to add more terror,  
We are again forsworn ; in will, and error.  
Much upon this it is :—And might not you,

[To BOYET.

Foretell our sport, to make us this untrue ?

Do not you know my lady's foot by the squire, §

And laugh upon the apple of her eye ?

And stand between her back, Sir, and the fire,

Holding a trencher, jesting merrily ?

You put our page out : Go, you are allow'd ;

Die when you will, a smock shall be your shroud.

You leer upon me, do you ? there's an eye,

Wounds like a leaden sword.

*Boyet.* Full merrily

Hath this brave manage, this career, been run.

*Biron.* Lo, he is tilting straight ! Peace ; I have done.

*Enter COSTARD.*

Welcome, pure wit ! thou partest a fair fray.

*Cost.* O Lord, Sir, they would know,  
Whether the three worthies shall come in, or no.

*Biron.* What, are there but three ?

*Cost.* No, Sir ; but it is a rare hue,

For every one pursueth three.

*Biron.* And three times thrice is nine.

*Cost.* Not so, Sir ; under correction, Sir ; I hope, it is not so :

You cannot beg us, Sir, I can assure you, Sir ;  
we know what we know :—

I hope, Sir, three times thrice, Sir,—

*Biron.* Is not nine.

*Cost.* Under correction, Sir, we know where-  
untill it doth amount.

\* Make no difficulty.

† Bulworn.

‡ Conspiracy.

§ Ruse.

*Biron.* By Jove, I always took three threes for mine.

*Cost.* O Lord, Sir, it were pity you should get  
your living by reckoning, Sir.

*Biron.* How much is it ?

*Cost.* O Lord, Sir, the parties themselves, the  
actors, Sir, will show whereuntil it doth amount ;  
for my own part, I am, as they say, but to per-  
fect one man,—e'en one poor man ; Pomponion  
the great, Sir.

*Biron.* Art thou one of the worthies ?

*Cost.* It pleased them, to think me worthy of  
Pomponion the great ; for mine own part, I know  
not the degree of the worthy ; but I am to stand  
for him.

*Biron.* Go, bid them prepare.

*Cost.* We will turn it finely off, Sir ; we will  
take some care. [Exit COSTARD.]

*King.* Biron, they will shame us, let them not  
approach.

*Biron.* We are shame-proof, my lord ; and  
'tis some policy

To have one show worse than the king's and his  
company.

*King.* I say they shall not come.

*Prin.* Nay, my good lord, let me o'er-ride  
you now ;

That sport best pleases, that doth least know  
how :

Where z'al strives to content, and the contents  
Die in the zeal of them which it presents,—

Their form confounded makes most form in  
mirth ;

When great things labouring perish in their  
birth.

*Biron.* A right description of our sport, my  
lord.

*Enter ARMADO.*

*Arm.* Anointed, I implore so much expense of  
thy royal sweet breath, as will utter a brace of  
words.

[ARMADO converses with the KING, and  
delivers him a paper.]

*Prin.* Doth this man serve God ?

*Biron.* Why ask you ?

*Prin.* He speaks not like a man of God's  
making.

*Arm.* That's all one, my fair, sweet, honey  
monarch ; for, I protest, the schoolmaster is ex-  
ceeding fantastical ; too, too vain ; too, too vain  
But we will put it, as they say, to fortune's wheel  
guerra. I wish you the peace of mind, most  
royal complement ! [Exit ARMADO.]

*King.* Here is like to be a good presence of  
worthies : He presents Hector of Troy ; the  
swain, Pompey the great ; the parish curate,  
Alexander ; Armado's page, Hercules, the pe-  
dant, Judas Maccabæus.

And if these four worthies in their first show  
thrive,

These four will change habits, and present the  
other five.

*Biron.* There is five in the first show.

*King.* You are deceiv'd 'tis not so.

*Biron.* The pedant, the braggart, the hedge-  
priest, the fool, and the boy :—

Abate a throw at novum ; \* and the whole world  
again,

Cannot prick † out five such, take each one in  
his vein.

*King.* The ship is under sail, and here she  
comes again.

[Seats brought for the KING, PRIN-  
CESS, &c.]

*Pagant of the nine Worthies.*

*Enter COSTARD arm'd for Pompey.*

*Cost.* I Pompey am,—

*Boyet.* You lie, you are not he.

*Cost.* I Pompey am,—

*Boyet.* With libbard's head on knee

\* A game with dice.

† Pick out.

*Biron.* Well said, old mocker; I must needs be friends with thee.

*Cost.* *I Pompey am, Pompey surnam'd the big,—*

*Dum.* The great.

*Cost.* It is great, Sir;—*Pompey surnam'd the great;*

*That oft in field with targe and shield, did make my foe to sweat:*

*And, travelling along this coast, I here am come by chance;*

*And lay my arms before the legs of this sweet lass of France.*

If you ladyship would say, *Thanks, Pompey*, I had done.

*Prin.* Great thanks, great Pompey.

*Cost.* 'Tis not so much worth; but, I hope, I was perfect: I made a little fault in, *great.*

*Biron.* My hat to a halfpenny, Pompey proves the best worthy.

*Enter NATHANIEL arm'd, for Alexander.*

*Nath.* *When in the world I liv'd, I was the world's commander.*

*By east, west, north, and south, I spread my conquering might:* [*ander.*

*My 'scutcheon plain declares, that I am Alis-*  
*Boyet.* Your nose says, no, you are not; for it stands too tight

*Biron.* Your nose smells, no, in this, most tender-smelling knight.

*Prin.* The conqueror is dismay'd; Proceed, good Alexander.

*Nath.* *When in the world I liv'd, I was the world's commander:—*

*Boyet.* Most true, 'tis right; you were so, Alisander.

*Biron.* Pompey the great.

*Cost.* Your servant, and Costard.

*Biron.* Take away the conqueror, take away Alisander.

*Cost.* O Sir, [To *NATH.*] you have overthrown Alisander the conqueror! You will be scraped out of the painted cloth for this: your lion, that holds his poll-ax sitting on a close-stool, will be given to Ajax: he will be the ninth worthy. A conqueror, and afeard to speak! run away for shame, Alisander. [*NATH. retires.*] There, an't shall please you; a foolish mild man; an honest man, look you, and soon dash'd! He is a marvellous good neighbour, insooth; and a very good bowler: but, for Alisander, alas, you see, now 'tis;—a little o'erparted:—But there are worthies a coming will speak their mind in some other sort.

*Prin.* Stand aside, good Pompey.

*Enter HOLOFERNES arm'd, for Judas, and MOTH arm'd, for Hercules.*

*Hol.* Great Hercules is presented by this *emp,*

*Whose club kill'd Cerberus, that three-headed canus!*

*And, when he was a babe, a child, a shrimp, Thus did he strangle serpents in his manus:*

*Quoniam, he seemeth in minority;*

*Ergo, I come with this apology:—*

Keep some state in thy exit, and vanish.

[*Exit MOTH.*

*Hol.* Judas I am,—

*Dum.* A Judas!

*Hol.* Not Iscariot, Sir.

*Judas I am, cypre'd Machabæus.*

*Dum.* Judas Machabæus clipt, is plain Judas.

*Biron.* A kissing traitor:—How art thou prov'd Judas?

*Hol.* Judas I am,—

*Dum.* The more shame for you, Judas.

*Hol.* What mean you, Sir?

*Boyet.* To make Judas hang himself.

*Hol.* Begin, Sir; you are my elder.

*Biron.* Well follow'd: Judas was hang'd on an elder.

*Hol.* I will not be put out of countenance.

*Biron.* Because thou hast no face.

*Hol.* What is this?

*Boyet.* A cittern head.

*Dum.* The head of a bodkin.

*Biron.* A death's face in a ring.

*Long.* The face of an old Roman coin, scarce seen.

*Boyet.* The pummel of Cæsar's faulchion,

*Dum.* The carv'd-bone face on a flask.\*

*Biron.* St. George's half-cheek in a brooch.†

*Dum.* Ay, and in a brooch of lead.

*Biron.* Ay, and worn in the cap of a tooth-drawer:

And now, forward; for we have put thee in countenance.

*Hol.* You have put me out of countenance.

*Biron.* False; we have given thee faces.

*Hol.* But you have out-fac'd them all.

*Biron.* An thou wert a lion, we would do so.

*Boyet.* Therefore, as he is, an ass, let him go. And so adieu, sweet Jude! nay, why dost thou stay?

*Dum.* For the latter end of his name.

*Biron.* For the ass to the Jude; give it him;—

Jud-as, away.

*Hol.* This is not generous, not gentle, not humble.

*Boyet.* A light for Monsieur Judas; it grows dark, he may stumble.

*Prin.* Alas, poor Machabæus, how ha'th he been baited!

*Enter ARMADO arm'd, for Hector.*

*Biron.* Hide thy head, Achilles; here comes Hector in arms.

*Dum.* Though my mocks come home by me, I will now be merry.

*King.* Hector was but a Trojan in respect of this.

*Boyet.* But is this Hector?

*Dum.* I think, Hector was not so clean-timber'd.

*Long.* His leg is too big for Hector.

*Dum.* More calf, certain.

*Boyet.* No; he is best indur'd in the small.

*Biron.* This cannot be Hector.

*Dum.* He's a god or a painter: for he makes faces.

*Arm.* *The armipotent Mars, of lances the almighty,*

*Gave Hector a gift,—*

*Dum.* A gilt nutmeg.

*Biron.* A lemon.

*Long.* Stuck with cloves.

*Dum.* No, cloven.

*Arm.* Peace.

*The armipotent Mars, of lances the almighty,*

*Gave Hector a gift, the heir of Ilion;*

*A man so breath'd, that certain he would fight, yea,*

*From morn till night, out of his pavilion.*

*I am that flower,—*

*Dum.* That mint.

*Long.* That columbine.

*Arm.* Sweet lord Longaville, rein thy tongue.

*Long.* I must rather give it the rein; for it runs against Hector.

*Dum.* Ay, and Hector's a greyhound.

*Arm.* The sweet wai-man is dead and rotten; sweet chucks, beat not the bones of the buried: when he breath'd, he was a man—But I will forward with my device: Sweet royalty, [to the PRINCESS.] bestow on me the sense of hearing.

[*BIRON whispers COSTARD.*

*Prin.* Speak, brave Hector; we are much delighted.

*Arm.* I do adore thy sweet grace's slipper.

*Boyet.* Loves her by the foot.

*Dum.* He may not by the yard.

*Arm.* This Hector jar surmounted Hannibal,—

\* A soldier's powder-horn.

† An ornamental buckle for fastening bands, &c.  
‡ Lance-men.

*Cost.* The party is gone, fellow Hector, she is gone; she is two months on her way.

*Arm.* What incestuous thou?

*Cost.* Faith, unless you play the honest Trojan, the poor wench is cast away: she's quick; the child brags in her belly already; 'tis yours.

*Arm.* Dost thou infamously me among potentates? thou shalt die.

*Cost.* Then shall Hector be whipp'd, for Jaquenetta that is quick by him; and hang'd, for Pompey that is dead by him.

*Dum.* Most rare Pompey!

*Boyet.* Renowned Pompey!

*Biron.* Greater than great, great, great, great Pompey, Pompey the huge!

*Dum.* Hector trembles.

*Biron.* Pompey is mov'd:—More Ates,\* more Ates; stir them on! stir them on!

*Dum.* Hector will challenge him.

*Biron.* Ay, if he have no more man's blood in's belly than will sup a flea.

*Arm.* By the north pole, I do challenge thee.

*Cost.* I will not fight with a pole, like a northern man; I'll slash; I'll do it by the sword.—I pray you let me borrow my arms again.

*Dum.* Room for the incensed worthies.

*Cost.* I'll do it in my shirt.

*Dum.* Most resolute Pompey!

*Moth.* Master, let me take you a button-hole lower. Do you not see, Pompey is uncasing for the combat? What mean you? you will lose your reputation.

*Arm.* Gentlemen, and soldiers, pardon me; I will not combat in my shirt.

*Dum.* You may not deny it; Pompey hath made the challenge.

*Arm.* Sweet bloods, I both may and will.

*Biron.* What reason have you for't?

*Arm.* The naked truth of it is, I have no shirt; I go woolward ‡ for penance.

*Boyet.* True, and it was enjoin'd him in Rome for want of linen: since when, I'll be sworn, he wore none, but a dish-cloth of Jaquenetta's; and that 'a wears next his heart, for a favour.

*Enter MERCADE.*

*Mer.* God save you, madam!

*Prin.* Welcome, Mercade;

But that thou interrupt'st our merriment.

*Mer.* I am sorry, madam; for the news I bring, is heavy in my tongue. The king your father—

*Prin.* Dead, for my life.

*Mer.* Even so; my tale is told.

*Biron.* Worthies, away; the scene begins to cloud.

*Arm.* For mine own part, I breathe free breath: I have seen the day of wrong through the little hole of discretion, and I will right myself like a soldier. *Exeunt Worthies.*

*King.* How fares your majesty?

*Prin.* Boyet, prepare; I will away to-night.

*King.* Madam, not so; I do beseech you, stay.

*Prin.* Prepare, I say.—I thank you, gracious lords,

For all your fair endeavours; and entreat, Out of a new-sad soul, that you vouchsafe In your rich wisdom, to excuse, or hide, The liberal † opposition of our spirits: If over-boldly we have borne ourselves In the converse of breath, your gentleness Was guilty of it.—Farewell, worthy lord! A heavy heart bears not an humble tongue: Excuse me so, coming so short of thanks, for my great suit so easily obtain'd.

*King.* The extreme parts of time extremely form

All causes to the purpose of his speed; And often, at his very loose, decides That which long process could not arbitrate: And though the mourning brow of progeny

Forbid the smiling courtesy of love, The holy suit which fain it would convince; Yet, since love's argument was first on foot, Let not the cloud of sorrow justify it From what it purpos'd; since, to wail friends is not by much so wholesome, profitable, [lost, As to rejoice at friends but newly found.

*Prin.* I understand you not; my griefs are double.

*Biron.* Honest plain words best pierce the ear of grief;—

And by these badges understand the king. For your fair sakes have we neglected time,

Play'd foul play with our oaths; your beauties, ladies, Hath much deform'd us, fashioning our humours

Even to the opposed end of our intents: And what in us hath seem'd ridiculous,—

As love is full of unbending strains: All wanton as a child, skipping, and vain:

Form'd by the eye, and, therefore, like the eye, Full of strange shapes, of habits, and of forms,

Varying in subjects as the eye doth roll To every varied object in his glance:

Which party-coated presence of loose love Put on by us,—if, in your heavenly eyes,

Have misbecom'd our oaths and gravities, Those heavenly eyes, that look into these faults,

Suggested \* us to make. Therefore, ladies, Our love being your's, the error that love makes

Is likewise your's: we to ourselves prove false, By being once false for ever to be true

To those that make us both,—fair ladies, you: And even that falsehood, in itself a sin

Thus purifies itself, and turns to grace.

*Prin.* We have receiv'd your letters, full of love;

Your favours, the ambassadors of love; And, in our maiden council, rated them

At courtship, pleasant jest, and countess, As bombast, and as lining to the time:

But more devout than this, in our respects, Have we not been; and therefore met you

loves In their own fashion, like a merriment.

*Dum.* Our letters, madam, show'd much more than jest.

*Long.* So did our looks.

*Ros.* We did not quote ‡ them so.

*King.* Now, at the latest minute of the hour

Grant us your loves.

*Prin.* A time methinks, too short To make a world-without-end bargain in:

No, no, my lord, your grace is perjur'd much Full of dear guiltiness: and, therefore, this,—

If for my love (as there is no such cause) You will do aught, this shall you do for me:

Your oath I will not trust; but go with speed To some forlorn and naked hermitage,

Remote from all the pleasures of the world; There stay, until the twelve celestial signs

Have brought about their annual reckoning: If this austere Insolent life

Change not your offer made in heat of blood: If frosts, and fasts, hard lodging, and thin

weeds, † Nip not the gaudy blossoms of our love,

But that it bear this trial, and last love;

Then, at the expiration of the year, Come challenge, challenge me by these deserts,

And, by this virgin palm, now kissing thine, I will be thine; and, till that instant, shut

My woeful self up in a mourning house; Raining the tears of lamentation,

For the remembrance of my father's death. If this thou do deny, let our hands part;

Neither intitled in the other's heart.

*King.* If this, or more than this, I would deny To flatter up these powers of mine with rest,

The sudden hand of death clow up mine eye!

Hence ever then my heart, as in thy breast.

*Biron.* And what to me, my love? and what to me?

† A clown. \* Ate was the goddess of discord  
‡ Clothed in wool, without linen.  
† Free to excess.

\* Tempted. ‡ Clothing. † Regard.

*Ros.* You must be purged too, your sins are rank :  
You are afflicted with faults and perjury ;  
Therefore if you my favour mean to get,  
A twelvemonth shall you spend, and never rest,  
But seek the weary beds of people sick.

*Dum.* But to what to me, my love ? but what to me ?

*Kath.* A wife !—A beard, fair health, and honesty ;  
With three-fold love I wish you all these three.  
*Dum.* O shall I say, I thank you, gentle wife ?  
*Kath.* Not so, my lord ;—a twelvemonth and a day

I'll mark no words that smooth-fac'd wooers say :

Come when the king doth to my lady come,  
Then, if I have much love, I'll give you some.

*Dum.* I'll serve thee true and faithfully till then.

*Kath.* Yet swear not, lest you be forsworn again.

*Long.* What says Maria ?

*Mar.* At the twelvemonth's end,

I'll change my black gown for a faithful friend.

*Long.* I'll stay with patience ; but the time is long.

*Mar.* The liker you ; few taller are so young.

*Biron.* Studies my lady ? mistress, look on me,  
Behold the window of my heart, mine eye.  
What humble suit attends thy answer there ;  
Impose some service on me for thy love.

*Ros.* O! have I heard of you, my lord Biron,  
Before I saw you : and the world's large tongue  
Proclaims you for a man replete with mocks ;  
Full of comparisons and wounding flouts,  
Which you on all estates will execute,  
That lie within the mercy of your wit :  
To weed this wormwood from your fruitful brain ;

And, therewithal, to win me, if you please,  
(Without the which I am not to be won,)—  
You shall this twelvemonth term from day to day

Visit the speechless sick, and still converse  
With groaning wretches ; and your task shall be,

With all the fierce \* endeavour of your wit,  
To enforce the pained impotent to smile.

*Biron.* To move wild laughter in the throat of death ?

It cannot be ; it is impossible :

Mirth cannot move a soul in agony.

*Ros.* Why, that's the way to choke a glibbing spirit,

Whose influence is begot of that loose grace,  
Which shallow laughing hearers give to fools :

A jest's prosperity lies in the ear  
Of him that hears it, never in the tongue  
Of him that makes it : then, if sickly ears,

Dead'd with the clamour of their own dear + groans,

Will hear your idle scorns, continue then,  
And I will have you, and that fault withal ;  
But, if they will not, throw away that spirit,  
And I shall find you empty of that fault,  
Right joyful of your reformation.

*Biron.* A twelvemonth ? well, befall what will befall,

I'll jest a twelvemonth in an hospital.

*Prin.* Ay, sweet my lord : and so I take my leave. [To the KING.]

*King.* No, madam : we will bring you on your way.

*Biron.* Our wooing doth not end like an old play ;

Jack hath not Jill : these ladies' courtesy  
Might well have made our sport a comedy.

*King.* Come, Sir, it wants a twelvemonth and a day,  
And then 'twill end.

*Biron.* That's too long for a play.

Enter ARMADO.

*Arm.* Sweet majesty, vouchsafe me,—

*Prin.* Was not that Hector ?

*Dum.* The worthy knight of Troy.

*Arm.* I will kiss thy royal finger, and take leave : I am a votary ; I have vow'd to Jaquenetta to hold the plough for her sweet love three years. But most esteemed greatness, will you hear the dialogue that the two learned men have compiled, in praise of the owl and the cuckoo ? it should have follow'd in the end of our show.

*King.* Call them forth quickly, we will do so.

*Arm.* Holla ! approach.

Enter HOLOFERNES, NATHANIEL, MOTH,  
COSTARD, and others.

This side is hyems, winter ; this Ver, the spring ; the one maintained by the owl, the other by the cuckoo. Ver, begin.

SONG.

Spring. *When daisies pied, and violets blue,  
And lady-smocks all silver white,  
And cuckoo-buds of yellow hue,  
Do paint the meadows with delight,  
The cuckoo then, on every tree,  
Mocks married men, for thus sings he,  
Cuckoo,  
Cuckoo, cuckoo,—O word of fear,  
Unpleasing to a married ear !*

II.

*When shepherds pipe on oaten straws,  
And merry larks are ploughmen's clocks,  
When turtles tread and rooks and daws,  
And maidens bleach their summer smocks,  
The cuckoo then, on every tree,  
Mocks married men for thus sings he,  
Cuckoo ;  
Cuckoo, cuckoo,—O word of fear,  
Unpleasing to a married ear !*

III.

Winter. *When icicles hang by the wall,  
And Dick the shepherd blows his nail,  
And Tom bears logs into the hall,  
And milk comes frozen home in pail,  
When blood is nipp'd, and ways be foul,  
Then nightly sings the staring owl,  
To-who ;  
To-whit, to-who, a merry note,  
While greasy Joan doth keel \* the pot.*

IV.

*When all aloud the wind doth blow,  
And coughing draws the parson's saw,  
And birds sit brooding in the snow,  
And Marian's nose looks red and raw,  
When roasted crabs hiss in the bowl,  
Then nightly sings the staring owl,  
To-who ;*

*To-whit, to-who, a merry note,  
While greasy Joan doth keel the pot.*

*Arm.* The words of Mercury are harsh after the songs of Apollo. You, that way ; we, this way. *Exeunt.*

\* Vehement.

+ Immediate.

\* Cool.

† Wild apples.

# COMEDY OF ERRORS.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE *Menœchmi* of Plautus (translated by an anonymous author in 1595,) furnished Shakspeare with the principal incidents of this play. It is one of his earliest productions. Stevens thinks that the piece is not entirely of his writing. The singularity of the plot gives occasion to many amusing perplexities; but they are repeated till they become wearisome, and varied till they become unintelligible. Were it possible to procure in the representation, two Dromios, or two Antipholus's, of whom one should be exactly the counterpart of the other, no powers of perception or of memory, would enable an audience to carry their recollection of each individual beyond the termination of a second act. The very facility of invention with which the resembling individuals are made to puzzle and to thwart each other, would so confound the senses of a spectator, that he would soon be as much bewildered as the parties themselves: whereas the zest of the entertainment depends upon his being able accurately to retain the personal identity of each; without which, he may be involved in the intricacy, but cannot enjoy the humour, occasioned by similarity of person, and contrariety of purpose. Mr. Stevens has justly observed, that this comedy "exhibits more intricacy of plot than distinction of character, and that attention is not actively engaged, since every one can tell how the denouement will be effected."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

SOLINUS, Duke of Ephesus.		A MERCHANT, Friend to Antipholus of Syracuse.
ÆGEON, a Merchant of Syracuse.		PINCH, a Schoolmaster, and a Conjurer.
ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus,	} Twin Brothers and sons to Ægeon and Emilia, but unknown to each other.	EMILIA, Wife to Ægeon, an Abbess at Ephesus.
ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse,		ADRIANA, Wife to Antipholus of Ephesus.
		LUCIANA, her Sister.
DROMIO of Ephesus,	} Twin Brothers and Attendants on the two Antipholus's.	LUCE, her Servant.
DROMIO of Syracuse,		A COLETRIZAN.
BALTHAZAR, a Merchant.		Jailer, Officers, and other Attendants.
ANGELO, a Goldsmith.		

SCENE—Ephesus.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—A Hall in the Duke's Palace

Enter DUKE, ÆGEON, Jailer, Officer, and other Attendants.

Æge. Proceed, Solinus, to procure my fall, And, by the doom of death, end woes and all.

Duke. Merchant of Syracuse, plead no more; I am not partial, to infringe our laws: The enmity and discord, which of late Sprung from the rancorous outrage of your duke To merchants, our well-dealing countrymen,— Who wanting gilders\* to redeem their lives, Have sealed his rigorous statutes with their bloods,—

Excludes all pity from our threat'ning looks. For, since the mortal and intestine jars 'Twixt thy seditious countrymen and us, It hath in solemn synods been decreed, Both by the Syracusans and ourselves, To admit no traffic to our adverse towns:

Nay, more, If any, born at Ephesus, be seen At any Syracusan marts\* and fairs, Again, if any Syracusan born, Come to the bay of Ephesus, he dies, His goods confiscate to the duke's dispose; Unless a thousand marks be levied, To quit the penalty, and to ransom him. Thy substance, valued at the highest rate, Cannot amount unto a hundred marks; Therefore, by law thou art condemn'd to die.

Æge. Yet this my comfort; when your words are done,

My woes end likewise with the evening sun.

Duke. Well, Syracusan, say in brief, the cause

Why thou departedst from thy native home; And for what cause thou com'st to Ephesus.

Æge. A heavier task could not have been impos'd,

Than I to speak my griefs unspeakable: Yet, that the world may witness, that my end

\* Name of a coin.

\* Markets.

Was wrought by nature, \* not by vile offence,  
I'll utter what my sorrow gives me leave.  
In Syracuse was I born; and wed  
Unto a woman, happy but for me,  
And by me too, had not our hap been bad.  
With her I liv'd in joy; our wealth increas'd,  
By prosperous voyages I often made  
To Epidamnium, till my factor's death;  
And he (great care of goods at random left)  
Drew me from kind endearments of my spouse:  
From whom my absence was not six months old,  
Before herself (almost at fainting, under  
The pleasing pain-linent that women bear,)  
Had made provision for her following me,  
And soon, and safe, arrived where I was,  
There she had not been long, but she became  
A joyful mother of two goodly sons;  
And, which was strange, the one so like the other,

As could not be distinguish'd but by names.  
That very hour, and in the self-same inn,  
A poor man woman was delivered  
Of such a burden, male twins, both alike.  
Those, for their parents were exceeding poor,  
I bought, and brought up to attend my sons.  
My wife, not meanly proud of two such boys,  
Made daily motions for our home return:  
Unwilling I agreed; alas, too soon.

We came aboard:  
A league from Epidamnium had we sail'd,  
Before the always-wind-obeying deep  
Gave any tragic instance of our harm:  
But longer did we not retain much hope;  
For what obscured light the heavens did grant  
Did but convey unto our fearful minds  
A doubtful warrant of immediate death;  
Which, though myself would gladly have embrac'd,

Yet the incessant weepings of my wife,  
Weeping before for what she saw must come,  
And piteous plannings of the pretty babes,  
That moun'd for fashion, ignorant what to fear,  
For'd me to seek delays for them and me.  
And this it was,—for other means was none.—  
The sailors sought for safety by our boat,  
And left the ship, then sinking-tipt, to us:  
My wife, more careful for the latter-born,  
Had fasten'd him unto a small spare mast,  
Such as sea-faring men provide for storms;  
To him one of the other twins was bound,  
Who (I had been like heedful of the other,  
The children thus dispos'd, my wife and I,  
Fisch our eyes on whom our care was fix'd,  
Fasten'd ourselves at either end the mast;  
And floating straight, obedient to the stream,  
Were carried towards Corinth, as we thought.  
At length the sun, gazing upon the earth,  
Dispers'd those vapours that offended us;  
And, by the benefit of his wish'd light,  
The sea was'd calm, and we discovered  
Two ships from far making amain to us,  
Of Corinth that, of Epidaurus this:  
But ere they came,—O let me say no more!  
Gather the sequel by what went before.

*Duke.* Nay, forward, old man, do not break off so;

For we may pity, though not pardon thee.  
*Ege.* Oh! had the gods done so, I had not now  
Worthily term'd them merciless to us!  
For, ere the ships could meet by twice five leagues,

We were encounter'd by a mighty rock;  
Which being violently borne upon,  
Our hapful ship was plitt'd in the midst,  
So that in this unjust divorce of us,  
Fortune had left to both of us alike  
What to delight in, what to sorrow for.  
Her part, poor soul! seeming as burdened  
With lesser weight, but not with lesser woe,  
Was carried with more speed before the wind;  
And in our sight they three were taken up  
By fishermen of Corinth, as we thought.

At length, another ship had seiz'd on us;  
And, knowing whom it was then hap to save,  
Gave helpful welcome to their shipwreck'd  
guests;

And would have reft \* the fishers of their prey,  
Had not their bark been very slow of sail,  
And therefore homeward did they bend their course.—

Thus have you heard me sever'd from my bliss;  
That by misfortunes was my life prolong'd  
To tell sad stories of my own mishaps.

*Duke.* And, for the sake of them thou sorrowest for,

Do me the favour to dilate at full  
What hath befall'n of them, and thee, till now.

*Ege.* My youngest boy, and yet my eldest care,

At eighteen years became inquisitive  
After his brother; and importun'd me,  
That his attendant, (for his case was like,  
Reft of his brother, but retain'd his name,)  
Might bear him company in the quest of him:  
Whom whilst I labour'd of a love to see,  
I hazarded the loss of whom I lov'd.  
Five summers have I spent in furthest Greece,  
Roaming clean through the bounds of Asia,  
And coasting homeward, came to Ephesus;  
Hopeless to find, yet loath to leave unsought,  
Or that, or any place that harbours men.  
But here must end the story of my life;  
And happy were I in my timely death.  
Could all my travels warrant me they live.

*Duke.* hapless *Egeon*, whom the fates have mark'd

To bear the extremity of dire mishap!  
Now, trust me, were it not against our laws,  
Against my crown, my oath, my dignity,  
Which princes, would they, may not disdain,  
My soul should sue as advocate for thee,  
But, though thou art adjudg'd to the death,  
And passed sentence may not be recall'd,  
But to our honour's great disparagement,  
Yet will I favour thee in what I can:  
Therefore, merchant, I'll limit thee this day,  
To seek this help by beneficial help:  
Try all the friends thou hast in Ephesus;  
Beg thou, or borrow, to make up the sum,  
And live; if not, then thou art doom'd to die:—  
Jailer, take him to thy custody.

*Jail.* I will, my lord.  
*Ege.* Hopeless, and helpless, doth *Egeon* wend,

But to procrastinate his lifeless end. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—A public Place.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS and DROMIO of Syracuse, and a MERCHANT.*

*Mer.* Therefore, give out you are of Epidamnium,

Lest that your goods too soon be confiscate.  
This very day, a Syracusan merchant  
Is apprehended for arrival here;  
And, not being able to buy out his life,  
According to the statute of the town,  
Dies ere the weary sun set in the west.  
There is your money that I had to keep.

*Ant. S.* Go bear it to the Centaur, † where we host,

And stay there, Dromio, till I come to thee.  
Within this hour it will be dinner-time;  
Till that, I'll view the manners of the town,  
Peruse the traders, gaze upon the buildings,  
And then return, and sleep within mine inn;  
For with lone travel I am stiff and weary.  
Get thee away.

*Dro. S.* Many a man would take you at your word,

And go indeed, having so good a mean.

[*Exit Dro. S.*]

\* Deprived.

† Clear, completely.

‡ The sign of their hotel.

\* Natural affection.

*Ant. E.* A trusty villain, \* Sir, that very oft,  
When I am dull with care and melancholy,  
Lightens my humour with his merry jests.  
What, will you walk with me about the town,  
And then, go to my inn, and dine with me?

*Mer.* I am invited, Sir, to certain merchants,  
Of whom I hope to make much benefit;  
I crave your pardon. Soon, at five o'clock,  
Please you, I'll meet with you upon the mart,†  
And afterwards consort you till bed-time;  
My present business calls me from you now.

*Ant. S.* Farewell till then: I will go lose  
myself,  
And wander up and down, to view the city.

*Mer.* Sir, I commend you to your own con-  
tent. [Exit MERCHANT.]

*Ant. S.* He that commends me to mine own  
content,

Commends me to the thing I cannot get.  
I to the world am like a drop of water,  
That in the ocean seeks another drop;  
Who, falling there to find his fellow forth,  
Unseen, inquisitive, confounds himself:  
So I, to find a mother and a brother,  
In quest of them, unhappy, lose myself.

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus.*

Here comes the almanack of my true date,—  
What now? How chance, thou art return'd so  
soon?

*Dro. E.* Return'd so soon! rather approach'd  
too late:

The capon burns, the pig falls from the spit:  
The clock hath strucken twelve upon the bell,  
My mistress made it one upon my cheek:  
She is so hot, because the meat is cold:  
The meat is cold, because you come not home;  
You come not home, because you have no  
stomach;

You have no stomach, having broke your fast;  
But we, that know what 'tis to fast and pray,  
Are penitent for your default to-day.

*Ant. S.* Stop in your wind, Sir; tell me this, I  
pray; [you?] where have you left the money that I gave

*Dro. E.* Oh!—a pence, that I had o'Wednes-  
day last,

To pay the saddler for my mistress' crupper;—  
The saddler had it, Sir, I kept it not.

*Ant. S.* I am not in a sportive humour now:  
Tell me, and dally not, where is the money?  
We being strangers here, how dar'st thou trust  
So great a charge from thine own custody?

*Dro. E.* I pray you, jest, Sir, as you sit at  
dinner:

I from my mistress come to you in post;  
If I return, I shall be post indeed;

For she will score your fault upon my pate.  
Methinks your maw, like mine, should be your  
clock,

And strike you home without a messenger.

*Ant. S.* Come, Dromio, come, these jests  
are out of season;

Reserve them till a merrier hour than this:  
Where is the gold I gave in charge to thee?

*Dro. E.* To me, Sir? why you gave no gold  
to me.

*Ant. S.* Come on, sir knave, have done your  
foolishness,

And tell me, how thou hast dispos'd thy charge.

*Dro. E.* My charge was but to fetch you from  
the mart

Home to your house, the Phoenix, Sir, to din-  
ner;

My mistress, and her sister, stay for you.

*Ant. S.* Now, as I am a Christian, answer  
me,

In what safe place you have bestow'd my mo-  
ney;

Or, I will break that merry scone of your's,  
That stands on tricks when I am indispos'd:  
Where is the thousand marks thou had'st of  
me?

\* L. c. Servant.

† Exchange, market-place

*Dro. E.* I have some marks of your's upon  
my pate,

Some of my mistress' marks upon my shoulders:  
But not a thousand marks between you both.—

If I should pay your worship those again,  
Perchance, you will not bear them patiently.

*Ant. S.* Thy mistress' marks! what mistress',  
slave, hast thou?

*Dro. E.* Your worship's wife, my mistress at  
the Phoenix;

She that doth fast, till you come home to din-  
ner,

And prays, that you will hie you home to  
dinner.

*Ant. S.* What, wilt thou flout me thus unto  
my face,

Being forbid? There, take you that, sir knave.

*Dro. E.* What mean you, Sir? for God's sake  
hold your hands;

Nay, an you will not, Sir, I'll take my heels.

[Exit DROMIO, E.]  
*Ant. S.* Upon my life, by some device or  
other,

The villain is o'er-raught of all my money.  
They say, this town is full of cozenage;

As nimble jugglers, that deceive the eye,  
Dark-working sorcerers, that change the mind,

Soul-killing witches, that deform the body;  
Disguised cheaters, prating mountebanks,

And many such like liberties of sin:  
If it prove so, I will be gone the sooner.

I'll to the Centaur, to go seek this slave,  
I greatly fear, my money is not safe. [Exit.]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—A public Place.

*Enter ADRIANA, and LUCIANA.*

*Adr.* Neither my husband, nor the slave re-  
turn'd,

That in such haste I sent to seek his master!  
Sure Luciana, it is two o'clock.

*Luc.* Perhaps some merchant hath invited  
him,

And from the mart he's somewhere gone to  
dinner,

Good sister, let us dine, and never fret:

A man is master of his liberty:

Time is their master; and, when they see time,  
They'll go, or come: If so, be patient, sister.

*Adr.* Why should their liberty than ours be  
more?

*Luc.* Because their business still lies out  
o'door.

*Adr.* Look, when I serve him so, he takes it  
ill.

*Luc.* Oh! know he is the bridle of your  
will.

*Adr.* There's none but asses, will be bridled  
so.

*Luc.* Why, headstrong liberty is lash'd with  
woe.

There's nothing, situate under heaven's eye,  
But hath its bound, in earth, in sea, in sky:

The beasts, the fishes, and the winged fowls,  
Are their males' subject, and at their controls:

Men, more divine, and masters of all these,  
Lords of the wide world, and wild wat'ry seas,

Indued with intellectual sense and souls,  
Of more pre-eminence than fish and fowls,

Are masters to their females, and their lords:  
Then let your will attend on their accords.

*Adr.* This servitude makes you to keep un-  
wed.

*Luc.* Not this, but troubles of the marriage  
bed.

*Adr.* But, were you wedded, you would bea  
some away.

*Luc.* Ere I learn love, I'll practise to obey.

*Adr.* How if your husband start some other  
where?

*Luc.* Till he come home again, I would forbear.

*Adr.* Patience unmov'd, no marvel though she pause;

They can be meek, that have no other cause.

A wretched soul, oppress'd with adversity,  
We bid be quiet, when we hear it cry;  
But were we burthen'd with like weight of

pain,  
As much, or more, we should ourselves complain:

So thou, that hast no unkind mate to grieve thee,

With urging helpless patience would'st relieve me:

But, if thou live to see like right bereft,  
This fool-begg'd patience in thee will be left.

*Luc.* Well, I will marry one day, but to try;—  
Hence comes your man, now is your husband nigh.

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus.*

*Adr.* Say, is your tardy master now at hand?  
*Dro. E.* Nay, he is at two hands with me, and that my two ears can witness.

*Adr.* Say, didst thou speak with him? know'st thou his mind?

*Dro. E.* Ay, ay, he told his mind upon mine ear:

Beshrew his hand, I scarce could understand it.

*Luc.* Spake he so doubtfully, thou couldst not feel his meaning?

*Dro. E.* Nay, he struck so plainly, I could too well feel his blows; and withal so doubtfully, that I could scarce understand them.\*

*Adr.* But say, I pray thee, is he coming home? It seems, he hath great care to please his wife.

*Dro. E.* Why, mistress, sure my master is horn-mad.

*Adr.* Horn-mad, thou villain?

*Dro. E.* I mean not cuckold-mad; but, sure, he's stark mad:

When I desir'd him to come home to dinner,  
He ask'd me for a thousand marks in gold:

'Tis dinner time, quoth I, *My gold*, quoth he:

Your mat doth burn, quoth I; *My gold*, quoth he:

Will you come home? quoth I; *My gold*, quoth he:

Where is the thousand marks I gave thee, villain?

The pig, quoth I, is burn'd; *My gold*, quoth he:

My mistress, Sir, quoth I; Hang up thy mistress:

I know not thy mistress; out on thy mistress!

*Luc.* Quoth who?

*Dro. E.* Quoth my master:

I know, quoth he, no house, no wife, no mistress;—

So that my errand, due unto my tongue,  
I thank him, I bear home upon my shoulders;

For, in conclusion, he did beat me there.

*Adr.* Go back again, thou slave, and fetch him home.

*Dro. E.* Go back again, and be new beaten home?

For God's sake, send some other messenger.

*Adr.* Back, slave, or I will break thy pate across.

*Dro. E.* And he will bless that cross with other beating:

Between you I shall have a holy head.

*Adr.* Hence, prating peasant; fetch thy master home.

*Dro. E.* Am I so round with you, as you with me,

That like a football do you spurn me thus? You spurn me hence, and he will spurn me

hither:

\* L. e. Source stand under them.

If I last in this service, you must case me in leather.

*Luc.* Fie, how impatience lowereth in your face.

*Adr.* His company must do his motions grace,

Whilst I at home starve for a merry look.

Hath homely age the alluring beauty took  
From my poor cheek? then he hath wasted it:

Are my discourses dull? barren my wit?  
If voluble and sharp discourse be marr'd,

Unkindness blunts it, more than marble hard.

Do their gay vestments his affection bate?  
That's not my fault, he's master of my state:

What ruins are in me, that can be found  
By him not ruin'd? then is he the ground

Of my defeitures: \* My decayed fair  
A sunny look of his would soon repair:

But, too unruly deer, he breaks the pale,  
And feeds from home; poor I am but his stake.†

*Luc.* Self-arming jealousy!—flee, beat it hence.

*Adr.* Unfeeling fools can with such wrongs dispense.

I know his eye doth homage elsewhere;  
Or else, what lets it but he would be here?

Sister, you know, he promis'd me a chain;—  
Would that alone alone he would detain,

So he would keep fair quarter with his bed!  
I see the jewel, best enamelled,

Will lose his beauty; and though gold †birds  
still,

That others touch, yet often touching will  
Wear gold: and so no man, that hath a name,

But falsehood and corruption doth it shame.  
Since that my beauty cannot please his eye,

I'll weep what's left away, and weeping die.

*Luc.* How many fond fools serve mad jealousy! ‡

SCENE II.—The same.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* The gold I gave to Dromio is laid up  
Safe at the Centaur; and the heedful slave

Is wander'd forth, in care to seek me out.  
By computation, and mine host's report,

I could not speak with Dromio, since at first  
I send him from the mart: See here he comes.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

How now, Sir? is your merry humour alter'd?  
As you love strokes, so jest with me again.

You know no Centaur? you receiv'd no gold?  
Your mistress sent to have me home to dinner?

My house was at the Phoenix? Wast thou mad,  
That thus so madly thou didst answer me?

*Dro. S.* What answer, Sir, when spake I such a word?

*Ant. S.* Even now, even here, not half an hour since.

*Dro. S.* I did not see you since you sent me hence.

Home to the Centaur, with the gold you gave me.

*Ant. S.* Villain, thou didst deny the gold's receipt;

And told'st me of a mistress, and a dinner;  
For which, I hope, thou felt'st I was displeas'd.

*Dro. S.* I am glad to see you in this merry vein:

What means this jest? I pray you, master, tell me.

*Ant. S.* Yea, dost thou jeer, and flout me in the teeth?

Think'st thou, I jest? Hold, take thou that, and that.

[Beating him.]  
*Dro. S.* Hold, Sir, for God's sake: now your jest is earnest:

Upon what bargain do you give it me?

*Ant. S.* Because that I familiarly sometimes  
Do use you for my fool, and chat with you,

\* Alteration of features.

† Fair, for fairness.

‡ Hinders.      § Stalking horse.



Your sauciness will jest upon my love,  
And make a common of my serious hours.\*  
When the sun shines, let foolish gnats make sport,

But creep in crannies, when he hides his beams.  
If you will jest with me know my aspect,†  
And fashion your demeanour to my looks,  
Or I will beat this method in your scone.

*Dro. S.* Sconce, call you it? so you would leave battering, I had rather have it a head: an you use these blows long, I must get a sconce for my head, and insonce‡ it too; or else I shall seek my wit in my shoulders. But, I pray, Sir, why am I beaten?

*Ant. S.* Dost thou not know?

*Dro. S.* Nothing, Sir; but that I am beaten.

*Ant. S.* Shall I tell you why?

*Dro. S.* Ay, Sir, and wherefore; for, they say, every why hath a wherefore.

*Ant. S.* Why, first,—for flouting me; and then, wherefore,—

For urging it the second time to me.

*Dro. S.* Was there ever any man thus beaten out of season?

When, in the why, and the wherefore, is neither rhyme nor reason!—

Well, Sir, I thank you.

*Ant. S.* Thank me, Sir, for what?

*Dro. S.* Marry, Sir, for this something that you gave me for nothing.

*Ant. S.* I'll make you amends next, to give you nothing for something. But say, Sir, is it dinner-time?

*Dro. S.* No, Sir; I think the meat wants that I have.

*Ant. S.* In good time, Sir, what's that?

*Dro. S.* Basting.

*Ant. S.* Well, Sir, then 'twill be dry.

*Dro. S.* If it be, Sir, I pray you eat none of it.

*Ant. S.* Your reason?

*Dro. S.* Lest it make you choleric, and purchase me another dry basting.

*Ant. S.* Well, Sir, learn to jest in good time; There's a time for all things.

*Dro. S.* I durst have denied that, before you were so choleric.

*Ant. S.* By what rule, Sir?

*Dro. S.* Marry, Sir, by a rule as plain as the plain bald pate of father Time himself.

*Ant. S.* Let's hear it.

*Dro. S.* There's no time for a man to recover his hair, that grows bald by nature.

*Ant. S.* May he not do it by fine and recovery?

*Dro. S.* Yes, to pay a fine for a peruke, and recover the lost hair of another man.

*Ant. S.* Why is time such a niggard of hair, being, as it is, so plentiful an excrement?

*Dro. S.* Because it is a blessing that he bestows on beasts; and what he hath scantied men in hair, he hath given them in wit.

*Ant. S.* Why, but there's many a man hath more hair than wit.

*Dro. S.* Not a man of those, but he hath the wit to lose his hair.

*Ant. S.* Why, thou didst conclude hairy men plain dealers without wit.

*Dro. S.* The plainer dealer, the sooner lost: Yet he loseth it in a kind of jollity.

*Ant. S.* For what reason?

*Dro. S.* For two; and sound ones too.

*Ant. S.* Nay, not sound, I pray you.

*Dro. S.* Sure ones then.

*Ant. S.* Nay, not sure, in a thing falsing.

*Dro. S.* Certain ones then.

*Ant. S.* Name them.

*Dro. S.* The one, to save the money that he spends in tiring; the other, that at dinner they should not drop in his porridge.

*Ant. S.* You would all this time have proved, there is no time for all things.

\* *I.e.* Intrude on them when you please.

† Study my countenance.

‡ A sconce was a fortification.

*Dro. S.* Marry, and did, Sir; namely, no time to recover hair lost by nature.

*Ant. S.* But your reason was not substantial, why there is no time to recover.

*Dro. S.* Thus I mend it: Time himself is bald, and therefore to the world's end, will have bald followers.

*Ant. S.* I knew, 'twould be a bald conclusion:

But soft! who wafts \* us yonder?

Enter ADRIANA and LUCIANA.

*Adr.* Ay, ay, Antipholus, look strange, and frown;

Some other mistress hath thy sweet aspects,  
I am not Adriana, nor thy wife.

The time was once, when thou unurg'd would'st vow

That never words were music to thine ear,

That never object pleasing in thine eye,

That never touch well-welcome to thy hand,

That never meat sweet-savour'd in thy taste,

Unless I spake, look'd, touch'd, or car'd to thee.

How comes it now, my husband, oh! how comes it,

That thou art then estranged from thyself?

Thyself I call it, being strange to me,

That undividable, incorporate,

Am better than thy dear self's better part.

Ah! do not tear away thyself from me,

For know, my love, as easy may'st thou fall

A drop of water in the breaking gulph,

And take unmingled thence that drop again,

Without addition or diminishing,

As take from me thyself, and not me too.

How dearly would it touch thee to the quick,

Should'st thou but hear I were licentious?

And that this body, consecrate to thee,

By ruffian lust should be contaminate?

Would'st thou not spit at me, and spurn at me,

And hurl the name of husband in my face?

And tear the stain'd skin off my harlot brow,

And from my false hand cut the wedding ring?

And break it with a deep-divorcing vow?

I know thou canst; and therefore, see, thou do it.

I am possess'd with an adulterate blot;

My blood is mingled with the crime of lust:

For, if we two be one, and thou play false,

I do digest the poison of thy flesh,

Being strumpeted by thy contagion.

Keep then far league and truce with thy true bed;

I live dis-stain'd, thou undishonoured.

*Ant. S.* Plead you to me, fair dame? I know you not:

In Ephesus I am but two hours old,

As strange unto your town, as to your talk;

Who, every word by all my wit being scan'd,

Want wit in all one word to understand.

*Luc.* Fie, brother! how the world is chang'd!

with you:

When were you wont to use my sister thus?

She sent for you by Dromio home to dinner.

*Ant. S.* By Dromio?

*Dro. S.* By me?

*Adr.* By thee: and this thou didst return from him,—

That he did buffet thee, and, in his blows

Denied my house for his, me for his wife.

*Ant. S.* Did you converse, Sir, with this gentlewoman?

What is the course and drift of your compact?

*Dro. S.* I, Sir? I never saw her till this time.

*Ant. S.* Villain, thou liest; for even her very words

Didst thou deliver to me on the mart.

*Dro. S.* I never spake with her in all my life.

*Ant. S.* How can she thus then call us by our names,

Unless it be by inspiration!

*Adr.* How ill agrees it with your gravity,

To counterfeit thus grossly with your slave,  
Abetting him to thwart me in my mood?  
Be it my wrong, you are from me exempt,  
But wrong not that wrong with a more con-  
tempt.

Come, I will fasten on this sleeve of thine:  
Thou art an elm, my husband, I a vine;  
Whose weakness, married to my stronger state,  
Makes me with thy strength to communicate:  
It ought possess thee from me, it is dross,  
Usurping ivy, brier, or idle \* moss;  
Who all for want of pruning, with intrusion  
Infect thy sap, and live on thy confusion.

*Ant. S.* To me she speaks; she moves me for  
her theme:

What, was I married to her in my dream?  
Or sleep I now, and think I hear all this?  
What error drives our eyes and ears amiss?  
Until I know this sure uncertainty,  
I'll entertain the offer'd fallacy.

*Luc.* Dromio, go bid the servants spread for  
dinner.

*Dro. S.* Oh! for my beads! I cross me for a  
sinner.

This is the fary land;—O spite of spites!—  
We talk with goblins, owls, and elvish sprites;  
If we obey them not, this will ensue,  
They'll suck our breath, or pinch us black and  
blue.

*Luc.* Why prat'st thou to thyself, and an-  
swer'st not?

Dromio, thou drone, thou snail, thou slug, thou  
rot!

*Dro. S.* I am transformed, master, am not I?  
*Ant. S.* I think thou art, in mind, and so  
am I.

*Dro. S.* Nay, master, both in mind and in my  
shape.

*Ant. S.* Thou hast thine own form.

*Dro. S.* No, I am an ape.

*Luc.* If thou art chang'd to aught, 'tis to an  
ass.

*Dro. S.* 'Tis true; she rides me, and I long  
for grass.

'Tis so, I am an ass; else it could never be,  
But I should know her as well as she knows  
me.

*Adr.* Come, come, no longer will I be a fool,  
To put the finger in the eye and weep,  
Whilst man and master, laugh my woes to  
scorn.—

Come, Sir, to dinner. Dromio, keep the gate:—  
Husband, I'll dine above with you to-day,  
And strive to you of a thousand idle pranks:  
Sirrah, if any ask you for your master,  
Say, he dines forth, and let no creature enter.—  
Come, sister:—Dromio, play the porter well.

*Ant. S.* Am I in earth, in heaven, or in hell?  
Sleeping or waking? mad, or well-advis'd?  
Known unto these, and to myself disguis'd!  
I'll say as they say, and perséver so.  
And in this mist at all adventures go.

*Dro. S.* Master, shall I be porter at the gate?  
*Adr.* Ay; and let none enter, lest I break  
your pate.

*Luc.* Come, come, Antipholus, we dine too  
late. [Exeunt.]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—The same.

Enter ANTIPHOLUS OF EPHESUS, DROMIO OF  
Ephesus, ANGELO, and BALTHAZAR.

*Ant. E.* Good signior Angelo, you must ex-  
cuse us all;

My wife is shrewish, when I keep not hours:  
Say, that I linger'd with you at your shop  
To see the making of her carcanet,  
And that to-morrow you will bring it home.

But here's a villain, that would face me down  
He met me on the mart; and that I beat him.  
And charg'd him with a thousand marks in  
gold;

And that I did deny my wife and house:—  
Thou drunkard, thou, what didst thou mean by  
this?

*Dro. E.* Say what you will, Sir, but I know  
what I know:

That you beat me at the mart, I have your hand  
to show:

If the skin were parchment, and the blows you  
gave were ink,

Your own handwriting would tell you what I  
think.

*Ant. E.* I think, thou art an ass.

*Dro. E.* Marry, so it doth appear.

By the wrongs I suffer, and the blows I bear.  
I should kick, being kick'd; and, being at that  
pass,

You would keep from my heels, and beware of  
an ass.

*Ant. E.* You are sad, signior Balthazar: 'Pray  
God, our cheer

May answer my good will, and your good wel-  
come here.

*Bal.* I hold your dainties cheap, Sir, and your  
welcome dear.

*Ant. E.* O signior Balthazar, either at flesh  
or fish,

A table full of welcome makes scarce one dainty  
dish.

*Bal.* Good meat, Sir, is common; that every  
churl affords.

*Ant. E.* And welcome more common; for  
that's nothing but words.

*Bal.* Small cheer, and great welcome, makes  
a merry feast.

*Ant. E.* Ay, to a niggardly host, and more  
sparing guest;

But though my cates \* be mean, take them in  
good part;

Better cheer may you have, but not with better  
heart.

But, soft; my door is lock'd; Go bid them let  
us in.

*Dro. E.* Mand, Bridget, Marian, Cicely,  
Gillian, Jen!

*Dro. S.* [Within.] Mome, + malt-horse, capon,  
coxcomb, idiot, patch! ‡

Either get thee from the door, or sit down at  
the hatch:

Dost thou conjure for wenches, that thou call'st  
for such store,

When one is one too many? Go, get thee from  
the door.

*Dro. E.* What patch is made our porter? My  
master stays in the street.

*Dro. S.* Let him walk from whence he came,  
lest he catch cold on's feet.

*Ant. E.* Who talks within there? ho, open  
the door.

*Dro. S.* Right, Sir, I'll tell you when, and  
you'll tell me wherefore.

*Ant. E.* Wherefore? for my dinner; I have  
not din'd to-day.

*Dro. S.* Nor to-day here you must not; come  
again, when you may.

*Ant. E.* What art thou, that keep'st me out  
from the house I owe? §

*Dro. S.* The porter for this time, Sir, and my  
name is Dromio.

*Dro. E.* O villain, thou hast stolen both  
mine office and my name;

The one ne'er got me credit, the other mickle  
blame.

If thou had'st been Dromio to-day in my place,  
Thou would'st have chang'd thy face for a  
name, or thy name for an ass.

*Luc.* [Within.] What a coil ¶ is there? Dro-  
mio, who are those at the gate?

\* Unfertile. † Absolve.  
‡ A necklace strung with pearls.

\* Dishes of meat. § I own, an owner of.  
‡ Fool. ¶ Bustle, tumult.

*Dro. E.* Let my master in, Luce.  
*Luce.* Faith no; he comes too late :  
 And so tell your master.

*Dro. E.* O Lord, I must laugh :—  
 Have at you with a proverb.—Shall I set in my staff?

*Luce.* Have at you with another : that's,—  
 When I can you tell?

*Dro. S.* If thy name be call'd Luce, Luce, thou hast answer'd him well.

*Ant. E.* Do you hear, you minion? you'll let us in, I hope?

*Luce.* I thought to have ask'd you.

*Dro. S.* And you said, no.

*Dro. E.* So, come, help; well struck; there was blow for blow.

*Ant. E.* Thou baggage, let me in.

*Luce.* Can you tell for whose sake?

*Dro. E.* Master, knock the door hard.

*Luce.* Let him knock till it ake.

*Ant. E.* You'll cry for this, minion, if I beat the door down.

*Luce.* What needs all that, and a pair of stocks in the town?

*Adr. [Within.]* Who is that at the door, that keeps all this noise?

*Dro. S.* By my troth, your town is troubled with unruly boys.

*Ant. E.* Are you there, wife? you might have come before.

*Adr.* Your wife, Sir knave! go, get you from the door.

*Dro. E.* If you went in pain, master, this knave would go sore.

*Ang.* Here is neither cheer, Sir, nor welcome, we would fain have either.

*Eal.* In debating which was best, we shall part\* with neither.

*Dro. E.* They stand at the door, master; bid them welcome hither.

*Ant. E.* There is something in the wind, that we cannot get in.

*Dro. E.* You would say so, master, if your garments were thin.

Your cake here is warm within; you stand here in the cold :

It would make a man mad as a buck, to be so bought and sold.†

*Ant. E.* Go, fetch me something, I'll break ope the gate.

*Dro. S.* Break any breaking here, and I'll break your knave's pate.

*Dro. E.* A man may break a word with you, Sir; and words are but wind;

Ay, and break it in your face, so he break it not behind.

*Dro. S.* It seems, thou wantest breaking; Out upon thee, hound!

*Dro. E.* Here's too much, out upon thee! I pray thee, let me in.

*Dro. S.* Ay, when fowls have no feathers, and fish have no fin.

*Ant. E.* Well, I'll break in; Go borrow me a crow.

*Dro. E.* A crow without a feather; master, mean you so?

For a fish without a fin, there's a fowl without a feather :

If a crow help us in, sirrah, we'll pluck a crow together.

*Ant. E.* Go, get thee gone, fetch me an iron crow.

*Bal.* Have patience, Sir; oh! let in not be so;

Herein you war against your reputation, And draw within the compass of suspect

The unviolated honour of your wife. Once this,—Your long experience of her wisdom,

Her sober virtue, years, and modesty Plead on her part some cause to you unknown;

And doubt not, Sir, but she will well excuse

\* Have part.

† A proverbial phrase.

Why at this time the doors are made\* against you.

Be rul'd by me; depart in patience,

And let us to the Tiger all to dinner :

And, about evening, come yourself alone,

To know the reason of this strange restraint.

If by strong hand you offer to break in,

Now in the stirring passage of the day,

A vulgar comment will be made on it;

And that supposed by the common rout

Against your yet ungalled estimation,

That may with foul intrusion enter in,

And dwell upon your grave when you are dead :

For slander lives upon succession;

For ever hous'd, where it once gets possession.

*Ant. E.* You have prevail'd; I will depart in quiet.

And, in despite of mirth, mean to be merry.

I know a wench of excellent discourse,—

Pretty and witty; wild, and yet, too gentle :—

There will we dine : this woman that I mean,

My wife (but, I protest, without desert,) Hath oftentimes upbraided me withal;

To her will we to dinner.—Get you home,

And fetch the chain; by this,† I know, 'tis made :

Bring it, I pray you, to the Porcupine;

For there's the house; that chain will I bestow

(Be it for nothing but to spite my wife,) Upon mine hostess there : good Sir, make haste :

Since mine own doors refuse to entertain me,

I'll knock elsewhere, to see if they'll admit me.

*Ang.* I'll meet you at that place, some hour hence.

*Ant. E.* Do so; This jest shall cost me some expense.

#### SCENE II.—The same.

*Enter* LUCIANA, and ANTIPHOLUS of SYDNEY.

*Luc.* And may it be that you have quite forgot

A husband's office? shall, Antipholus, hate, Even in the spring of love, thy love-springs; rot?

Shall love, in building, grow so rinate? If you did wed my sister for her wealth,

Then, for her wealth's sake, use her with more kindness :

Or, if you like elsewhere, do it by stealth ; Muffle your false love with some show of blindness :

Let not my sister read it in your eye ; Be not thy tongue thy own shame's orator ;

Look sweet, speak fair, become disloyalty ; Apparel vice like virtue's harbinger :

Bear a fair presence, though your heart be tainted ;

Teach sin the carriage of a holy saint ; Be secret-false : What need she be acquainted ?

What simple thief brags of his own attainment ? 'Tis double wrong, to truant with your bed ;

And let her read it in thy looks at board : Shame hath a bastard fame, well managed ;

All deeds are doubled with an evil word. Alas ! poor women ! make us but believe,

Being compact of credit, § that you love us ; Though others have the arm, show us the sleeve ;

We in your motion turn, and you may move us.

Then, gentle brother, get you in again ; Comfort my sister, cheer her, call her wife :

'Tis holy sport, to be a little vain, || When the sweet breath of flattery conquers strife.

\* I.e. Made fast.

† By this time.

‡ Love-springs are young plants or shoots of love

§ I.e. Being made altogether of credulity.

|| Vain, is light of tongue.

*Ant. S.* Sweet mistress, (what your name is I cleave, I know not,  
Nor by what wonder you do hit on mine,) Less, in your knowledge, and your grace, you show not,  
Than our earth's wonder; more than earth divine.  
Teach me, dear creature, how to think and speak;  
Lay open to my earthly gross conceit, Smother'd in errors, feeble, shallow, weak,  
The folded meaning of your word's deceit. Against my soul's pure truth why labour you,  
To make it wander in an unknown field?  
Are you a god? would you create me new?  
Transform me then, and to your power I'll yield.

But if that I am I, then well I know,  
Your weeping sister is no wife of mine,  
Nor to her bed no homage do I owe;  
Far more, far more, to you do I decline.  
O train me not, sweet mermaid,\* with thy note,

To drown me in thy sister's flood of tears;  
Sing, siren, for thyself, and I will dote:  
Spread o'er the silver waves thy golden hairs,

And as a bed I'll take thee, and there lie;  
And in that glorious supposition, think  
He gains by death, that hath such means to die:—

Let love, being light, be drowned if she sink!  
*Luc.* What, are you mad, that you do reason so?

*Ant. S.* Not mad, but mated; † how, I do not know.

*Luc.* It is a fault that springeth from your eye.

*Ant. S.* For gazing on your beams, fair sun, being by.

*Luc.* Gaze where you should, and that will clear your sight.

*Ant. S.* As good to wink, sweet love, as look on night.

*Luc.* Why call you me love? call my sister so?

*Ant. S.* Thy sister's sister.

*Luc.* That's my sister.

*Ant. S.* No;

It is thyself, mine own self's better part;  
Mine eye's clear eye, my dear heart's dearer heart;

My food, my fortune, and my sweet hope's aim,  
My sole earth's heaven, and my heaven's claim.

*Luc.* All this my sister is, or else should be.

*Ant. S.* Call thyself sister, sweet, for I am thee:

Therewith I love, and with thee lead my life;  
Thou hast no husband yet, nor I no wife:  
Give me thy hand.

*Luc.* O soft, Sir, hold you still;  
I'll fetch my sister, to get her good will.

[Exit *Luc.*]

*Enter, from the house of ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* Why, how now, Dromio? where run'st thou so fast?

*Dro. S.* Do you know me, Sir? am I Dromio? am I your man? am I myself?

*Ant. S.* Thou art Dromio, thou art my man, thou art thyself.

*Dro. S.* I am an ass, I am a woman's man, and besides myself.

*Ant. S.* What woman's man? and how besides thyself?

*Dro. S.* Marry, Sir, besides myself, I am due to a woman; one that claims me, one that haunts me, one that will have me.

*Ant. S.* What claim lays she to thee?

*Dro. S.* Marry, Sir, such claim as you would lay to your horse; and she would have me as a beast; not that I being a beast, she would have

me; but that she, being a very beastly creature, lays claim to me.

*Ant. S.* What is she?

*Dro. S.* A very reverend body; ay, such a one as a man may not speak of, without he say, sir-reverence: I have but lean luck in the match, and yet is she a wondrous fat marriage!

*Ant. S.* How dost thou mean, a fat marriage?

*Dro. S.* Marry, Sir, she's the kitchen-wench, and all grease: and I know not what use to put her to, but to make a lamp of her, and run from her by her own light. I warrant, her rags, and the tallow in them, will burn a Poland winter: if she lives till doomsday, she'll burn a week longer than the whole world.

*Ant. S.* What complexion is she of?

*Dro. S.* Swart,\* like my shoe, but her face nothing like so clean kept; For why? she sweats, a man may go over shoes in the grime of it.

*Ant. S.* That's a fault that water will mend.

*Dro. S.* No, Sir, 'tis in grain; Noah's flood could not do it.

*Ant. S.* What's her name?

*Dro. S.* Nell, Sir;—but her name and three quarters, that is, an eil and three quarters, will not measure her from hip to hip.

*Ant. S.* Then she bears some breadth?

*Dro. S.* No longer from head to foot, than from hip to hip: She is spherical, like a globe; I could find out countries in her.

*Ant. S.* In what part of her body stands Ireland?

*Dro. S.* Marry, Sir, in her buttocks; I found it out by the bogs.

*Ant. S.* Where Scotland?

*Dro. S.* I found it by the barrenness: hard, in the palm of the hand.

*Ant. S.* Where France?

*Dro. S.* In her forehead; arm'd and reverted, making war against her hair.

*Ant. S.* Where England?

*Dro. S.* I look'd for the chalky cliffs, but I could find no whiteness in them: but I guess, it stood in her chin, by the salt rheum that ran between France and it.

*Ant. S.* Where Spain?

*Dro. S.* Faith, I saw it not; but I felt it, hot in her breath.

*Ant. S.* Where America, the Indies?

*Dro. S.* O Sir, upon her nose, all o'er embellish'd with rubies, carbuncles, sapphires, declining their rich aspect to the hot breath of Spain; who sent whole armadas of carracks † to be ballast to her nose.

*Ant. S.* Where stood Belgia, the Netherlands?

*Dro. S.* O Sir, I did not look so low. To conclude, this drudge, or diviner, laid claim to me; called me Dromio; swore I was assur'd; to her; told me what privy marks I had about me, as the mark on my shoulder, the mole in my neck, the great wart on my left arm, that I, amazed, ran from her as a witch: and I think if my breast had not been made of faith, and my heart of steel, she had transform'd me to a curtail-dog, and made me turn t' the wheel. §

*Ant. S.* Go, hie thee presently, post to the road;

And if the wind blow any way from shore, I will not harbour in this town to-night. If any bark put forth, come to the mart, Where I will walk, till thou return to me. If every one know us, and we know none, 'Tis time I think, to trudge, pack, and be gone.

*Dro. S.* As from bear a man would run for life.

So fly I from her that would be my wife.

[Exit.

*Ant. S.* There's none but witches do inhabit here;

\* Mermaid for siren

† I.e. Confounded.

\* Swarthy.  
‡ Affluenced.

† Large ships.  
§ A turn-spit.

And therefore 'tis high time that I were hence.  
She, that doth call me husband, even my soul  
Doth for a wife abhor : but her fair sister,  
Possess'd with such a gentle sovereign grace,  
Of such enchanting presence and discourse,  
Hath almost made me traitor to myself :  
But, lest myself be guilty to self-wrong,  
I'll stop mine ears against the mermaid's song.

*Enter ANGELO.*

*Ang.* Master Antipholus ?

*Ant. S.* Ay, that's my name.

*Ang.* I know it well, Sir : Lo, here is the chain :

I thought to have ta'en you at the Porcupine :  
The chain unfinish'd made me stay thus long.

*Ant. S.* What is your will, that I should do with this ?

*Ang.* What please yourself, Sir ; I have made it for you.

*Ant. S.* Made it for me, Sir ! I bespoke it not.

*Ang.* Not once, nor twice, but twenty times you have ;

Go home with it, and please your wife withal ;  
And soon at supper-time I'll visit you,  
And then receive my money for the chain.

*Ant. S.* I pray you, Sir, receive the money now  
For fear you ne'er see chain nor money, more.

*Ang.* You are a merry man, Sir ; fare you well. [*Exit.*]

*Ant. S.* What I should think of this, I cannot tell ;

But this I think, there's no man is so vain,  
That would refuse so fair an offer'd chain,  
I see, a man here needs not live by shifts,  
When in the streets he meets such golden gifts.  
I'll to the mart, and there for Dromio stay :  
If any ship put out, then straight away.

[*Exit.*]

#### ACT IV.

#### SCENE I.—*The same.*

*Enter a MERCHANT, ANGELO, and an OFFICER.*

*Mer.* You know, since pentecost the sum is due,  
And since I have not much importun'd you ;  
Nor now I had not, but that I am bound  
To Persia, and want guilders \* for my voyage :  
Therefore make present satisfaction,  
Or, I'll attach you by this officer.

*Ang.* Even just the sum, that I do owe to you,  
Is growing † to me by Antipholus ;  
And, in the instant that I met with you  
He had of me a chain ; at five o'clock,  
I shall receive the money for the same :  
Pleaseth you walk with me down to his house,  
I will discharge my bond, and thank you too.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, and DROMIO of Ephesus.*

*Off.* That labour may you save ; see where he comes.

*Ant. E.* While I go to the goldsmith's house, go thou

And buy a rope's end ; that will I bestow

Among my wife and her confederates,

For locking me out of my doors by day.—

But soft, I see the goldsmith :—get thee gone ;

Buy thou a rope, and bring it home to me.

*Dro. E.* I buy a thousand pound a year ! I buy a rope ! [*Exit DROMIO.*]

*Ant. E.* A man is well help up, that trusts to you ;

I promised your presence, and the chain ;

But neither chain, nor goldsmith came to me :  
Belike, you thought our love would last too

long,  
If it were chain'd together ; and therefore came not.

*Ang.* Saving your merry humour, here's the note,

How much your chain weighs to the utmost carat ;

The fineness of the gold, and chargeful fashion ;

Which doth amount to three old ducats more

That I stand debted to this gentleman ;

I pray you, see him presently discharged,

For he is bound to sea, and stays but for it.

*Ant. E.* I am not furnish'd with the present money :

Besides, I have some business in the town :

Good signior take the stranger to my house,

And with you take the chain, and bid my wife

Disburse the sum on the receipt thereof,

Perchance, I will \* be there as soon as you.

*Ang.* Then you will bring the chain to her yourself ?

*Ant. E.* No ; bear it with you, lest I come not time enough.

*Ang.* Well, Sir, I will : Have you the chain about you ?

*Ant. E.* An if I have not, Sir, I hope you have ;

Or else you may return without your money.

*Ang.* Nay, come, I pray you, Sir, give me the chain ;

Both wind and tide stays for this gentleman,  
And I, to blame, have held him here too long.

*Ant. E.* Good lord, you use this dalliance, to excuse

Your breach of promise to the Porcupine.

I should have chid you for not bringing it,

But, like a shrew, you must begin to brawl.

*Mer.* The hour steals on ; I pray you, Sir, despatch.

*Ang.* You hear how he importunes me ; the chain—

*Ant. E.* Why, give it to my wife, and fetch your money.

*Ang.* Come, come, you know, I gave it you even now ;

Either send the chain, or send me by some token.

*Ant. E.* Fie ! now you run this humour out of breath :

Come, where's the chain ? I pray you let me see it.

*Mer.* My business cannot brook this dalliance ;

Good Sir, say, where you'll answer me, or no.

If not, I'll leave him to the officer.

*Ant. E.* I answer you ! What should I answer you ?

*Ang.* The money, that you owe me for the chain.

*Ant. E.* I owe you none, till I receive the chain.

*Ang.* You know I gave it you half an hour since.

*Ant. E.* You gave me none, you wrong me much to say so.

*Ang.* You wrong me more, Sir, in denying it. Consider, how it stands upon my credit.

*Mer.* Well, officer, arrest him at my suit.

*Off.* I do ; and charge you in the duke's name to obey me.

*Ang.* This touches me in reputation :—

Either consent to pay this sum for me,

Or I attach you by this officer.

*Ant. E.* Consent to pay thee that I never had ? Arrest me, foolish fellow, if thou dar'st.

*Ang.* Here is thy fee ; arrest him, officer ;

I would not spare my brother in this case, if he should scorn me so apparently.

*Off.* I do arrest you, Sir ; you hear the suit.

*Ant. E.* I do obey thee, till I give thee bail :—

\* A coin.

† Accruing.

\* I shall.

But, sirrah, you shall buy this sport as dear  
As all the metal in your shop will answer.

*Aug.* Sir, Sir, I shall have law in Ephesus.  
To your notorious shame, I doubt it not.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Master, there is a bark of Epidamn-  
num.  
That stays but till her owner comes aboard,  
And then, Sir, bears away: our freightage,\*  
Sir,  
I have convey'd aboard; and I have bought  
The oil, the bal-anum, and aqua-vitæ.  
The ship is in her trim! the merry wind  
Blows fair from land; they stay for nought at all,  
But for their owner, master, and yourself.

*Ant. E.* How now! a madman! why thou  
peevish & sheep,  
What ship of Epidamnium stays for me?

*Dro. S.* A ship you sent me to, to hire wa-  
fage.†

*Ant. E.* Thou drunken slave, I sent thee for  
a rope;  
And told thee to what purpose and what end.

*Dro. S.* You sent me, Sir, for a rope's end  
as soon:

You sent me to the bay, Sir, for a bark.

*Ant. E.* I will debate this matter at more  
leisure,

And teach your ears to listen with more heed.  
To Adriana, villain, hie thee straight;  
Give her this key, and tell her, in the desk  
That's cover'd o'er with Turkish tapestry.  
There is a purse of ducats: let her send it;  
Tell her, I am arrested in the street,  
And that shall bail me: hie thee, slave; be  
gone.

On, officer, to prison till it come.

[*Exit MERCHANT, ANGELO, OFFICER,  
and ANT. E.*]

*Dro. S.* To Adriana! that is where he din'd,  
Where Dowsabel did claim me for her hus-  
band:

She is too big, I hope, for me to compass.

Thither I must, although against my will,

For servants must their master's minds fulfil.  
[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*The same.*

*Enter ADRIANA and LUCIANA.*

*Adr.* Ah! Luciana, did he tempt thee so?  
Might'st thou perceive austere in his eye  
That he did plead in earnest, yea or no?  
Look'd he or red, or pale; or sad, or merrily?  
What observation mad'st thou in this case,  
Of his heart's meteors tilting in his face?‡

*Luc.* First he denied you had in him no  
right.

*Adr.* He meant, he did me none: the more  
my spite.

*Luc.* Then swore he, that he was a stranger  
here.

*Adr.* And true he, swore, though yet forsworn  
he were.

*Luc.* Then pleaded I for you.

*Adr.* And what said he?

*Luc.* That love I begg'd for you, he begg'd  
of me.

*Adr.* With what persuasion did he tempt thy  
love?

*Luc.* With words that in an honest suit might  
move.

First, he did praise my beauty; then, my speech.

*Adr.* Didst speak him fair?

*Luc.* Have patience, I beseech.

*Adr.* I cannot, nor I will not, hold me still;  
My tongue, though not my heart, shall have  
his will.

He is deformed, crooked, old, and sere,||

I'll fac'd, worse-bodied, shapeless every where;  
Vicious, ungente, foolish, blunt, unkind;  
Stigmatical in making,\* worse in mind.

*Luc.* Who would be jealous then of such a  
one?

No evil lost is wail'd when it is gone.

*Adr.* Ah! but I think him better than I say.  
And yet would herein others' eyes were  
worse:

Far from her nest the lapwing cries away;†  
My heart prays for him, though my tongue  
do curse.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Here, go; the desk, the purse; sweet  
now, make haste.

*Luc.* How hast thou lost thy breath?

*Dro. S.* By running fast.

*Adr.* Where is thy master, Dromio? is he  
well?

*Dro. S.* No, he's in tartar limbo, worse than  
hell:

A devil in an everlasting garment‡ hath him  
One, whose hard heart is button'd up with  
steel;

A fiend, a fairy, pitiless and rough;

A wolf, nay, worse, a fellow all in buff;

A back-friend, a shoulder-clapper, one that  
countermands

The passages of alleys, creeks, and narrow  
lands;

A hound that runs counter, and yet draws dis-  
foot well;

One that, before the judgment, carries poor  
souls to hell.‡

*Adr.* Why, man, what is the matter?

*Dro. S.* I do not know the matter? he is  
'rested on the case.

*Adr.* What, is he arrested? tell me, at whose  
suit.

*Dro. S.* I know not at whose suit he is ar-  
rested, well;

But he is in a suit of buff, which 'rested him,  
that can I tell:

Will you send him, mistress, redemption, the  
money in the desk?

*Adr.* Go fetch it, sister.—This I wonder at,  
[*Exit LUCIANA.*]

That he unknown to me, should be in debt:

Tell me, was he arrested on a band?¶

*Dro. S.* Not on a band, but on a stronger  
thing;

A chain, a chain; do you not hear it ring?

*Adr.* What, the chain?

*Dro. S.* No, no, the bell: 'tis time, that I  
were gone.

It was two ere I left him, and now the clock  
strikes one.

*Adr.* The hours come back! that did I never  
hear.

*Dro. S.* O yes, if any hour meet a sergeant,  
a 'turns back for very fear.

*Adr.* As if time were in debt! how fondly  
dost thou reason?

*Dro. S.* Time is a very bankrupt, and owes  
more than he's worth to season.

Nay, he's a thief too: have you not heard men  
say,

That time comes stealing on by night and  
day?

If he be in debt, and theft, and a sergeant in  
the way,

Hath he not reason to turn back an hour in a  
day.

*Enter LUCIANA.*

*Adr.* Go, Dromio; there's the money, bear  
it straight;

And bring thy master home immediately.—

\* Marked by nature with deformity.

† Who crieth most where her nest is not.

‡ The officers in those days were clad in buff, which

is also a cant expression for a man's skin.

§ Hell was the cant term for prison.

¶ I. e. Bond.

\* Freight, cargo. † Silly. ‡ Carriage.  
§ An allusion to the redness of the northern lights,  
likened to the appearance of urines.

‡ Dry, withered.

Come, sister: I am press'd down with conceit;

Conceit, my comfort, and my injury.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.*

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* There's not a man I meet, but doth salute me

As if I were their well-acquainted friend;  
And every one doth call me by my name.  
Some tender money to me, some invite me;  
Some other give me thanks for kindnesses;  
Some offer me commodities to buy:  
Even now a tailor call'd me in his shop,  
And show'd me silks that he had bought for me,  
And, therewithal, took measure of my body.  
Sure, these are but imaginary wiles,  
And Lapland sorcerers inhabit here.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Master, here's the gold you sent me for: What have you got the picture of old Adam new apparelled?

*Ant. S.* What gold is this? what Adam dost thou mean?

*Dro. S.* Not that Adam, that kept the paradise, but that Adam, that keeps the prison: he that goes in the calf's skin that was killed for the prodigal; he that came behind you, Sir, like an evil angel, and bid you forsake your liberty.

*Ant. S.* I understand thee not.

*Dro. S.* No? I pray, 'tis a plain case: he that went like a base-viol, in a case of leather; the man, Sir, that, when gentlemen are tired, gives them a fob, and 'rests them; he, Sir, that takes pity on decayed men, and gives them suits of durance; he that sets up his rest to do more exploits with his mace, than a morris-pike.

*Ant. S.* What! thou mean'st an officer?

*Dro. S.* Ay, Sir, the serjeant of the band; he, that brings any man to answer it, that breaks his band: one that thinks a man always going to bed, and says, *God give you good rest.*

*Ant. S.* Well, Sir, there rest in your foolery. Is there any ship puts forth to-night? may we be gone?

*Dro. S.* Why, Sir, I brought you word an hour since, that the bark Expedition put forth to-night! and then were you hindered by the serjeant, to tarry for the boy, Delay: Here are the angels that you sent for, to deliver you.

*Ant. S.* The fellow is distract, and so am I; And here we wander in illusions: Some blessed power deliver us from hence!

*Enter a COURTEZAN.*

*Cour.* Well met, well met, master Antipholus,  
I see, Sir, you have found the goldsmith now; Is that the chain you promis'd me to-day?

*Ant. S.* Satan, avoid! I charge thee tempt me not!

*Dro. S.* Master, is this mistress Satan?

*Ant. S.* It is the devil.

*Dro. S.* Nay, she is worse, she is the devil's dam; and here she comes in the habit of a light wench; and thereof comes, that the wenches say, *God damn me*, that's as much as to say, *God make me a light wench*. It is written they appear to men like angels of light: light is an effect of fire, and fire will burn; ergo, light wenches will burn; Come not near her.

*Cour.* Your man and you are marvellous merry, Sir.

Will you go with me? We'll mend our dinner  
*Dro. S.* Master, if you do expect spoon-meat, or bespeak a long spoon.

*Ant. S.* Why, Dromio?

*Dro. S.* Marry, he must have a long spoon, that must eat with the devil.

*Ant. S.* Avoid then, fiend! why tell'st thou me of supping?

Thou art, as you are all, a sorceress:

I conjure thee to leave me, and be gone.

*Cour.* Give me the ring of mine you had at dinner,

Or, for my diamond, the chain you promis'd; And I'll be gone, Sir, and not trouble you.

*Dro. S.* Some devils ask but the paring of one's nail,

A rush, a hair, a drop of blood, a pin, A nut, a cherry stone: but she, more covetous, Would have a chain.

Master, be wise; and if you give it her, The devil will shake her chain, and fright us with it.

*Cour.* I pray you, Sir, the ring, or else the chain;

I hope, you do not mean to cheat me so.

*Ant. S.* Avaunt, thou witch! Come Dromio, let us go.

*Dro. S.* Fly pride, says the peacock: Mistress, that you know.

[*Exeunt ANT. and DRO.*]

*Cour.* Now, out of doubt, Antipolus is mad, Else would he never so demean himself:

A ring he hath of mine worth forty ducats,

And for the same he promis'd me a chain!

Both one, and other, he denies me now. The reason that I gather he is mad,

(Besides this present instance of his rage,)

Is a mad tale, he told, to-day at dinner, Of his own doors being shut against his entrance.

Belike, his wife, acquainted with his fit,

On purpose shut the doors against his way

My way his now, to his home to his house,

And tell his wife, that, being lunatic,

He rush'd into my house, and took perforce

My ring away: This course I fittest choose;

For forty ducats is too much to lose. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same.*

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, and an OFFICER.*

*Ant. E.* Fear me not, man, I will not break away;

I'll give thee, ere I leave thee, so much money To warrant thee, as I am 'rested for.

My wife is in a wayward mood to-day:

And will not lightly trust the messenger,

That I should be attached in Ephesus;

I tell you, 'twill sound harshly in her ears.—

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus with a rope's end.*

Here comes my man; I think, he brings the money.

How now, Sir? have you that I sent you for?

*Dro. E.* Here's that, I warrant you, will pay them all.\*

*Ant. E.* But where's the money?

*Dro. E.* Why, Sir, I gave the money for the rope. [rope?]

*Ant. E.* Five hundred ducats, villain for a

*Dro. E.* I'll serve you, Sir, five hundred at the rate.

*Ant. E.* To what end did I bid thee hire thee home?

*Dro. E.* To a rope's end, Sir: and to that end am I return'd.

*Ant. E.* And to that end, Sir; I will welcome you. [*Beating him.*]

*Off.* Good Sir, be patient.

*Dro. E.* Nay, 'tis for me to be patient; I am in adversity.

*Off.* Good now, hold thy tongue.

*Dro. E.* Nay, rather persuade him to hold his hands.

*Ant. E.* Thou whoreson, senseless villain!

\* Fanciful conception.

\* Correct them all.

*Dro. E.* I would I were senseless, Sir, that I might not feel your blows.

*Ant. E.* Thou art sensible in nothing but blows, and so is an ass.

*Dro. E.* I am an ass, indeed; you may prove it by my long ears. I have serv'd him from the hour of nativity to this instant, and have nothing at his hands for my service, but blows: when I am cold, he beats me with beating; when I am warm, he cools me with beating; I am waked with it, when I sleep; raised with it, when I sit; driven out of doors with it, when I go from home; welcomed home with it, when I return: nay, I bear it on my shoulders, as a beggar wont her brat; and, I think, when he hath lamed me, I shall beg with it from door to door.

*Enter ADRIANA, LUCIANA, and the COURTEZAN, with PINCH, and others.*

*Ant. E.* Come, go along; my wife is coming yonder,

*Dro. E.* Mistress, *re-vice fiam*, respect your end; or rather the prophecy, like the parrot, *Beaware the rope's end*.

*Ant. E.* Wilt thou still talk? [*Beats him.*]

*Cour.* How say you now? is not your husband mad?

*Adr.* His incivility confirms no less.—Good doctor Pinch, you are a conjurer; Establish him in his true sense again, And I will please you what you will demand.

*Luc.* Alas, how fiery and how sharp he looks!

*Cour.* Mark, how he trembles in his ecstasy!

*Pinch.* Give me your hand, and let me feel your pulse.

*Ant. E.* There is my hand, and let it feel your ear.

*Pinch.* I charge thee, Satan, hous'd within this man,

To yield possession to my holy prayers, And to thy state of darkness hie thee straight; I conjure thee by all the saints in heaven.

*Ant. E.* Peace, doting wizard, peace, I am not mad.

*Adr.* Oh! that thou wert not, poor distressed soul!

*Ant. E.* You minion you, are these your customers?

Did this companion \* with a saffron face Revel and feast it at my house to day, Whilst upon me the guilty doors were shut, And I denied to enter in my house?

*Adr.* O husband, God doth know, you din'd at home, Where 'would you had remain'd until this time, Free from these slanders, and this open shame!

*Ant. E.* I din'd at home! Thou villain, what say'st thou?

*Dro. E.* Sir, sooth to say, you did not dine at home.

*Ant. E.* Were not my doors lock'd up, and I shut out?

*Dro. E.* Perdy,† your doors were lock'd, and you shut out.

*Ant. E.* And did not she herself revile me there?

*Dro. E.* Sans fable,‡ she herself revild you there.

*Ant. E.* Did not her kitchen maid rail, taunt, and scorn me?

*Dro. E.* Certes,§ she did: the kitchen-vestal scorn'd you.

*Ant. E.* And did not I in rage depart from thence?

*Dro. E.* In verity you did;—my bones bear witness,

That since have felt the vigour of his rage.

*Adr.* Is't good to soothe him in these contraries?

*Pinch.* It is no shame; the fellow finds his vein,

And, yielding to him, humours well his frenzy.

*Ant. E.* Thou bast suborn'd the goldsmith to arrest me.

*Adr.* Alas! I sent you money to redeem you. By Dromio here, who came in haste for it.

*Dro. E.* Money by me? heart and good-will you might,

But surely, master, not a rag of money.

*Ant. E.* Went'st not thou to her for a purse of ducats?

*Adr.* He came to me, and I deliver'd it.

*Luc.* And I am witness with her, that she did.

*Dro. E.* God and the rope-maker, bear me witness,

That I was sent for nothing but a rope!

*Pinch.* Mistress, both man and master is possess'd:

I know it by their pale and deadly looks: They must be bound, and laid in some dark room.

*Ant. E.* Say, wherefore didst thou lock me forth to-day,

And why dost thou deny the bag of gold?

*Luc.* I did not, gentle husband, lock thee forth.

*Dro. E.* And, gentle master, I receiv'd no gold; But I confess, Sir, that we were lock'd out.

*Adr.* Dissembling villain, thou speak'st false in both.

*Ant. E.* Dissembling harlot, thou art false in all:

And art confederate with a damned pack To make a loathsome abject scorn of me:

But with these nails I'll pluck out these false eyes,

That would behold in me this shameful sport.

[*PINCH and his assistants bind ANT. and DROMIO.*]

*Adr.* O bind him, bind him, let him not come near me.

*Pinch.* More company;—the fiend is strong within him.

*Luc.* Ah! me, poor man, how pale and wan he looks!

*Ant. E.* What, will you murder me? Thou ja'ler, thou,

I am thy prisoner; wilt thou suffer them To make a rescue?

*Offi.* Masters, let him go; He is my prisoner, and you shall not have him.

*Pinch.* Go, bind this man, for he is frantic too.

*Adr.* What wilt thou do, thou peevish officer?

Hast thou delight to see a wretched man Do outrage and displeasure to himself?

*Offi.* He is my prisoner; if I let him go, The debt he owes, will be requir'd of me.

*Adr.* I will discharge thee, ere I go from thee:

Bear me forthwith unto his creditor, And, knowing how the debt grows, I will pay it.

Good master doctor, see him safe convey'd Home to my house.—O most unhappy day!

*Ant. E.* O most unhappy† strumpet!

*Dro. E.* Master, I am here enter'd in bond for you.

*Ant. E.* Out on thee, villain! wherefore dost thou mad me?

*Dro. E.* Will you be bound for nothing? be mad,

Good master; cry, the devil.—

*Luc.* God help, poor souls, how idly do they talk!

*Adr.* Go bear him hence.—Sister, go you with me.—

[*Exeunt PINCH and Assistants with ANT. and DRO.*]

Say now, whose suit is he arrested at?

\* Fellow.

† A corruption of the French oath—*par Dieu*.

‡ Without a fable

§ Certainly.

\* Foolish.

† Unhappy for unlucky, i.e. mischievous



*Offi.* One Angelo a goldsmith; Do you know him?

*Adr.* I know the man: What is the sum he owes?

*Offi.* Two hundred ducats.

*Adr.* Say, how grows it due?

*Offi.* Due for a chain your husband had of him.

*Adr.* He did bespeak a chain for me, but had it not.

*Cour.* When, as your husband, all in rage, to-day

Came to my house, and took away my ring,  
(The ring I saw upon his finger now,)

Straight after, did I meet him with a chain.

*Adr.* It may be so, but I did never see it:—  
Come, jailer, bring me where the goldsmith is,  
I long to know the truth hereof at large.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse, with his rapier drawn, and DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Luc.* God, for thy mercy! they are loose again.

*Adr.* And come with naked swords; let's call more help,

To have them bound again.

*Offi.* Away, they'll kill us.

[*Exeunt OFFICER, ADR. and LUC.*  
*Ant. E.* I see these witches are afraid of swords.

*Dro. S.* She, that would be your wife, now ran from you.

*Ant. S.* Come to the Centaur; fetch our stuff\* from thence:

I long that we were safe and sound aboard.

*Dro. S.* Faith, stay here this night, they will surely do us no harm; you saw, they speak us fair, give us gold: methinks they are such a gentle nation, that but for the mountain of mad flesh that claims marriage of me, I could find in my heart to stay here still, and turn witch.

*Ant. S.* I will not stay to-night for all the town;

Therefore away, to get our stuff aboard.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—The same.

*Enter MERCHANT and ANGELO.*

*Ang.* I am sorry, Sir, that I have hinder'd you;

But I protest, he had the chain of me,  
Though most dishonestly he doth deny it.

*Mer.* How is the man esteem'd here in the city?

*Ang.* Of very reverend reputation, Sir,  
Of credit infinite, highly belov'd,  
Second to none that lives here in the city;  
His word might bear my wealth at any time.

*Mer.* Speak softly: yonder, as I think, he walks.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS and DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Ang.* 'Tis so; and that self chain about his neck,

Which he forswore, most monstrously to have.  
Good Sir, draw near to me, I'll speak to him.

Signior Antipholus, I wonder much  
That you would put me to this shame and trouble;

And not without some scandal to yourself,  
With circumstance, and oaths, so to deny  
This chain, which now you wear so openly:  
Besides the charge, the shame, imprisonment,  
You have done wrong to this my honest friend;  
Who, but for staying on our controversy,

Had hoisted sail, and put to sea to-day:

This chain you had of me, can you deny it?

*Ant. S.* I think, I had; I never did deny it

*Mer.* Yes, that you did, Sir, and forswore it too.

*Ant. S.* Who heard me to deny it, or forswear it?

*Mer.* These ears of mine, thou knowest, did hear thee:

Tie on thee, wretch! 'tis pity that thou livest

To walk where any honest men resort.

*Ant. S.* Thou art a villain, to impeach me thus:

I'll prove mine honour, and mine honesty

Against thee presently, if thou dar'st stand.

*Mer.* I dare, and do defy thee for a villain.

[*They draw.*

*Enter ADRIANA, LUCIANA, COURTIZAN, and others.*

*Adr.* Hold, hurt him not, for God's sake; he is mad:—

Some get within him,\* take his sword away:

Bind Dromio too, and bear them to my house.

*Dro. S.* Run, master, run; for God's sake, take a house.

This is some priory;—In, or we are spoil'd.

[*Exeunt ANTIPH. and DROMIO to the Priory.*

*Enter the ABBESS.*

*Abb.* Be quiet, people; Wherefore throng you hither?

*Adr.* To fetch my poor distracted husband hence:

Let us come in, that we may bind him fast,

And bear him home for his recovery.

*Ang.* I knew, he was not in his perfect wits.

*Mer.* I am sorry now, that I did draw on him.

*Abb.* How long hath this possession held the man?

*Adr.* This week he hath been heavy, sorn, and sad,

And much, much different from the man he was;

But till, this afternoon, his passion

Ne'er brake into extremity of rage.

*Abb.* Hath he not lost much wealth by wreck at sea?

Buried some dear friend? Hath not else his eye

Stray'd his affection in unlawful love?

A sin, prevailing much in youthful men,

Who give their eyes the liberty of gazing.

Which of these sorrows is he subject to?

*Adr.* To none of these, except it be the last;

Namely, some love, that drew him oft from home.

*Abb.* You should for that have reprehended him.

*Adr.* Why, so I did.

*Abb.* Ay, but not rough enough.

*Adr.* As roughly, as my modesty would let me.

*Abb.* Haply, in private.

*Adr.* And in assemblies too.

*Abb.* Ay, but not enough.

*Adr.* It was the copy† of our conference:

In bed, he slept not for my urging it;

At board, he fed not for my urging it;

Alone, it was the subject of my theme;

In company, I often glanced it;

Still did I tell him it was vile and bad.

*Abb.* And thereof came it, that the man was mad:

The venom clamours of a jealous woman

Poison more deadly than a mad dog's tooth.

It seems his sleeps were hinder'd by thy railing;

And thereof comes it that his head is light.

Thou say'st his meat was sauc'd with thy upbraidings:

\* I. e. Close, grapple with him.

† I. e. Go into a house.

‡ The theme.

\* Baggage.

Unquiet meals make ill digestions,  
Thereof the raging fire of fever bred;  
And what's a fever but a fit of madness?  
Thou say'st, his sports were hinder'd by thy  
brawls:

Sweet recreation barr'd, what doth ensue,  
But moody and dull melancholy,  
'Kinsman to grim and comfortless despair,')  
And, at her heels, a huge infectious troop  
Of pale distemperatures, and foes to life?  
In food, in sport, and life-preserving rest  
To be disturb'd, would mad or man, or beast;  
The consequence is then, thy jealous fits  
Have scared thy husband from the use of wits.

*Luc.* She never reprehended him but mildly,  
When he demean'd himself rough, rude, and  
wildly,—

Why hear you these rebukes, and answer not?

*Adr.* She did betray me to my own reproof.—  
Good people, enter, and lay hold on him.

*Abb.* No, not a creature enters in my house.

*Adr.* Then, let your servants bring my husband forth.

*Abb.* Neither; he took this place for sanctuary,

And it shall privilege him from your hands,  
Till I have brought him to his wits again,  
Or lose my labour in assaving it.

*Adr.* I will attend my husband, be his nurse,  
Diet his sickness, for it is my office,  
And will have no attorney but myself;  
And therefore let me have him home with me.

*Abb.* Be patient; for I will not let him stir,  
Till I have us'd the approved means I have,  
With wholesome syrups, drugs, and holy  
prayers,

To make of him a formal man again: \*  
It is a branch and parcel of mine oath,  
A charitable duty of my order:

Therefore depart, and leave him here with me.

*Adr.* I will not hence, and leave my husband  
here;

And ill it doth beseeem your holiness,  
To separate the husband and the wife.

*Abb.* Be quiet, and depart, thou shalt not  
have him. [Exit ABBESS.]

*Luc.* Complain unco the duke of this indignity.

*Adr.* Come, go; I will fall prostrate at his  
feet,

And never rise until my tears and prayers  
Have won his grace to come in person hither,  
And take perforce my husband from the Abbey.

*Mer.* By this, I think, the dial points at five:  
Anon, I am sure the duke himself in person  
Comes this way to the melancholy vale;  
The place of death and sorry execution,  
Behind the ditches of the abbey here.

*Ang.* Upon what cause?

*Mer.* To see a reverend Syracusan merchant,  
Who put unluckily into this bay  
Against the laws and statutes of this town,  
Behanged publicly for his offence.

*Ang.* See, where they come; we will behold  
his death.

*Luc.* Kneel to the duke, before he pass the  
abbey.

Enter DUKE attended; AEGEON bare-headed;  
with the Headsman and other Officers.

*Duke.* Yet once again proclaim it publicly,  
If any friend will pay the sum for him,  
He shall not die, so much we tender him.

*Adr.* Justice, most sacred duke, against the  
Abbess!

*Duke.* She is a virtuous and a reverend lady;  
It cannot be, that she hath done thee wrong.

*Adr.* May it please your grace, Antipholus,  
my husband,—

Whom I made lord of me and all I had,  
At your important letters,—this ill day

A most outrageous fit of madness took him;  
That desperately he hurried through the street  
(With him his bondman, all as mad as he,)  
Doing displeasure to the citizens

By rushing in their houses, bearing thence  
Rings, jewels, any things his rage did like.  
Once did I get him bound, and sent him home  
Whilst to take order \* for the wrongs I went,  
That here and there his fury had committed.

Anon, I wot † not by what strong escape,  
He broke from those that had the guard of  
him;

And, with his mad attendant and himself,  
Each one with ireful passion, with drawn  
swords,

Met us again, and, madly bent on us,  
Chas'd us away; till raising of more aid,  
We came again to bind them: then they fled  
Into this abbey, whither we pursued them;

And here the abbess shuts the gates on us,  
And will not suffer us to fetch him out,  
Nor send him forth, that we may bear him  
hence.

Therefore, most gracious duke, with thy command,  
Let him be brought forth, and borne hence for  
help.

*Duke.* Long since, thy husband serv'd me in  
my wars;

And I to thee engag'd a prince's word,  
When thou didst make him master of thy bed,  
To do him all the grace and good I could.—  
Go, some of you, knock at the abbey-gate,  
And bid the lady abbess come to me;  
I will determine this, before I stir.

Enter a SERVANT.

*Serv.* O mistress, mistress, shift and save  
yourself!

My master and his man are both broke loose,  
Beaten the maids a-row, ‡ and bound the doctor,  
Whose beard they have sing'd off with brands  
of fire;

And ever as it blazed they threw on him  
Great pails of puddled mire to quench the hair:  
My master preaches patience to him, while  
His man with scissars nicks him § like a fool:  
And, sure, unless you send some present help,  
Between them they will kill the conjurer.

*Adr.* Peace, fool, thy master and his man  
are here;

And that is false thou dost report to us.

*Serv.* Mistress, upon my life, I tell you true;  
I have not breath'd almost, since I did see it.  
He cries for you, and vows if he can take you,  
To scorch your face, and to disfigure you:

[Cry within.

Hark, hark, I hear him, mistress; fly, be gone.

*Duke.* Come, stand by me, fear nothing:  
Guard with halberds.

*Adr.* Ah! me, it is my husband! Witness  
you,

That he is borne about invisible;  
Even now we hous'd him in the abbey here;  
And now he's there, past thought of human reason.

Enter ANTIPHOLUS and DROMIO of Ephesus.

*Ant.* E. Justice, most gracious duke, oh!  
grant me justice!

Even for the service that long since I did thee,  
When I bestrid thee in the wars, and took  
Deep scars to save thy life; even for the blood  
That then I lost for thee, now grant me justice.

*Aege.* Unless the fear of death doth make me  
dote,

I see my son Antipholus, and Dromio.

*Ant.* E. Justice, sweet prince, against that  
woman there.

She whom thou gav'st to me to be my wife;

\* L.e. To bring him back to his senses. † Part. ‡ Sad.  
§ Importunate.

\* I.e. To make measures. † Know  
‡ I.e. Successively, one after another.  
§ I.e. Cuts his hair close.

That hath abused and dishonour'd me,  
Even in the strength and height of injury !  
Beyond imagination is the wrong,  
That she this day hath shameless thrown on me.  
*Duke.* Discover how, and thou shalt find me  
just.

*Ant. E.* This day, great duke, she shut the  
doors upon me,  
While she with harlots\* feasted in my house.

*Duke.* A grievous fault: Say, woman, didst  
thou so?

*Adr.* No, my good lord;—myself, he, and my  
sister,

To-day did dine together: So befal my soul,  
As this is false, he burdens me withal!

*Luc.* Ne'er may I look on day, nor sleep on  
night,

But she tells to your highness simple truth!

*Ang.* O perjurd woman! They are both for-  
sworn.

In this the madman justly chargeth them.

*Ant. E.* My liege, I am advised what I say;  
Neither disturb'd with the effect of wine,  
Nor heady-rash, provok'd with raging ire,  
Albeit, my wrongs might make me wiser mad.  
This woman lock'd me out this day from dinner:  
That goldsmith there, were he not pack'd with  
here.

Could witness it, for he was with me then;  
Who parted with me to go fetch a chain,  
Promising to bring it to the Porcupine,  
Where Balthazar and I did dine together.  
Our dinner done, and he not coming thither,  
I went to seek him: in the street I met him;  
And in his company, that gentleman,  
There did this perjurd goldsmith swear me  
down,

That I this day of him receiv'd the chain.  
Which, God he knows, I saw not: for the  
which,

He did arrest me with an officer.  
I did obey; and sent my pleasant home  
For certain ducats: he with none return'd.  
Then fairly I bespoke the officer,  
To go in person with me to my house.  
By the way we met,  
My wife, her sister, and a rabble more  
Of vile confederates; along with them  
They brought one Pinch; a hungry lean-fac'd  
villain,

A mere anatomy, a mountebank,  
A thread-bare juggler, and a fortune-teller;  
A needy, hollow-ey'd, sharp-looking wretch,  
A living dead man: this pernicious slave,  
Forsooth, took on him as a conjurer;  
And, gazing in mine eyes, feeling my pulse,  
And with no face, as 'twere, outfacing me,  
Cries out, I was possess'd: then altogether  
They fell upon me, bound me, bore me thence;  
And in a dark and dankish vault at home  
There left me and my man, both bound to-  
gether;

Till gnawing with my teeth my bonds in sunder,  
I gain'd my freedom, and immediately  
Ran hither to your grace; whom I beseech  
To give me ample satisfaction  
For these deep shames and great indignities.

*Ang.* My lord, in truth, thus far I witness with  
him;

That he dined not at home, but was lock'd out.  
*Duke.* But had he such a chain of thee, or  
no?

*Ang.* He had, my lord: and when he ran in  
here,

These people saw the chain about his neck.

*Mer.* Besides, I will be sworn, these ears of  
mine

Heard you confess you had the chain of him,  
After you first foreswore it on the mart,  
And, thereupon, I drew my sword on you;  
And then you fled into this abbey here,  
From whence, I think you are come by miracle.

\* Harlot was a term of reproach applied to cheats  
among men as well as to wantons among women.

*Ant. E.* I never came within these abbey  
walls.

Nor ever didst thou draw thy sword on me:

I never saw the chain, so help me heaven!

And this is false, you burden me withal.

*Duke.* Why, what an intricate impeach is  
this!

I think you all have drank of Circe's cup.

If here you hous'd him, here he would have  
been; [ly:—

If he were mad, he would not plead so cold-  
You say, he dined at home: the goldsmith here  
Denies that saying:—Sirrah, what say you?

*Dro. F.* Sir, he dined with her there, at the  
Porcupine.

*Cour.* He did; and from my finger snatch'd  
that ring.

*Ant. E.* 'Tis true, my leige, this ring I had of  
her.

*Duke.* Saw'st thou him enter at the abbey  
here?

*Cour.* As sure, my leige, as I do see your  
grace.

*Duke.* Why, this is strange:—Go call the  
Abbess hither;

I think you are all mated,\* or stark mad.

[Exit an Attendant.

*Ege.* Most mighty duke, vouchsafe me speak  
a word;

Haply I see a friend will save my life,

And pay the sum that may deliver me.

*Duke.* Speak freely, Syracusan, what thou  
wilt.

*Ege.* Is not your name, Sir, call'd Antipho-  
lus?

And is not that your bondman Dromio?

*Dro. E.* Within this hour I was his bondman,  
Sir,

But he, I thank him, gnaw'd in two my cords:  
Now am I Dromio, and his man, unbound.

*Ege.* I am sure you both of you remember  
me.

*Dro. E.* Ourselves we do remember, Sir, by  
you;

For lately we were bound as you are now.

You are not Pinch's patient, are you, Sir?

*Ege.* Why look you strange on me; you know  
me well.

*Ant. E.* I never saw you in my life, till  
now.

*Ege.* Oh! grief hath chang'd me, since you  
saw me last;

And careful hours, with Time's deformed hand,  
Have written strange defeatures† in my face;

But tell me yet, dost thou not know my voice?

*Ant. E.* Neither.

*Ege.* Dromio, nor thou?

*Dro. E.* No, trust me, Sir, not I.

*Ege.* I am sure, thou dost.

*Dro. E.* Ay, Sir; but I am sure, I do not;  
and whatsoever a man denies, you are now bound  
to believe him.

*Ege.* Not know my voice; O time's extremity!  
Hast thou so crack'd and splitt'd my poor  
tongue,

In seven short years, that here my only son  
Knows not my feeble key of untun'd cares?

Though now this grained‡ face of mine be hid  
In sap-consuming winter's drizzled snow,

And all the conduits of my blood froze up;  
Yet hath my night of life some memory,

My wasting lamp some fading glimmer left,  
My dull deaf ears a little use to hear:

All these old witnesses (I cannot err.)  
Tell me, art thou my son Antipholus.

*Ant. E.* I never say my father in my life.

*Ege.* But seven years since, in Syracuse,  
boy,

Thou know'st, we parted: but perhaps, my son,  
Thou sham'st to acknowledge me in misery.

*Ant. E.* The duke, and all that know me in  
the city,

\* Confounded. † Alteration of features.  
‡ Furrowed, lined.

Can witness with me that it is not so ;  
I ne'er saw Syracusa in my life.

*Duke.* I tell thee, Syracusan, twenty years  
Have I been patron to Antipholus,  
During which time he ne'er saw Syracusa :  
I see thy age and dangers make thee dote.

*Enter the ABBESS, with ANTIPHOLUS Syracusan, and DROMIO Syracusan.*

*Abb.* Most mighty duke, behold a man much wrong'd.  
[*All gather to see him.*]

*Adr.* I see two husbands, or mine eyes deceive me.

*Duke.* One of these men is Genius to the other ;

And so of these : Which is the natural man,  
And which the spirit ? Who deciphers them ?

*Dro. S. I, Sir, am Dromio ; command him away.*

*Dro. E. I, Sir, am Dromio ; pray let me stay.*  
*Ant. S. Ægeon, art thou not ? or else his ghost ?*

*Dro. S. O my old master ! who hath bound him here ?*

*Abb.* Whoever bound him, I will loose his bonds,

And gain a husband by his liberty :—  
Speak, old Ægeon, if thou be'st the man  
That had'st a wife once call'd Æmilia,  
That bore thee at a burden two fair sons :  
Oh ! if thou be'st the same Ægeon, speak,  
And speak unto the same Æmilia !

*Æge.* If I dream not, thou art Æmilia ;  
If thou art she, tell me, where is that son  
That floated with thee on the fatal raft ?

*Abb.* By men of Epidamnium, he, and I,  
And the twin Dromio, all were taken up ;  
But, by and by, rude fishermen of Corinth  
By force took Dromio and my son from them,  
And me they left with those of Epidamnium :  
What then became of them, I cannot tell ;  
I, to this torture that you see me in.

*Duke.* Why here begins his morning story right ; \*

These two Antipholuses, these two so like,  
And these two Dromios, one in semblance,—  
Besides her musing of her wreck at sea, —  
These are the parents to these children,  
Which accidentally are met together.

Antipholus, thou cam'st from Corinth first.

*Ant. S. No, Sir, not I ; I came from Syracuse.*

*Duke.* Stay, stand apart ; I know not which is which.

*Ant. E.* I came from Corinth, my most gracious lord.

*Dro. E.* And I with him.

*Ant. E.* Brought to this town with that most famous warrior

Duke Menaphon, your most renowned uncle.

*Adr.* Which of you two did dine with me to-day ?

*Ant. S. I, gentle mistress.*

*Adr.* And are you not my husband ?

*Ant. E.* No, I say nay to that.

*Ant. S.* And so do I, yet did she call me so ;  
And this fair gentlewoman, her sister here,  
Did call me brother :—What I told you then,  
I hope I shall have leisure to make good,  
If this be not a dream I see and hear.

\* The morning story is what Ægeon tells the Duke in the first scene of this play.

*Ang.* That is the chain, Sir, which you had of me.

*Ant. S.* I think it be, Sir, I deny it not.

*Ant. E.* And you, Sir, for this chain arrested me.

*Ang.* I think I did, Sir ; I deny it not.

*Adr.* I sent you money, Sir, to be your bail,  
By Dromio ; but I think he brought it not.

*Dro. E.* No, none by me.

*Ant. S.* This purse of ducats I receiv'd from you,

And Dromio my man did bring them me :

I see, we still did meet each other's man,

And I was ta'en for him, and he for me,

And thereupon these Errors are arose.

*Ant. S.* These ducats pawn I for my father here.

*Duke.* It shall not need, thy father hath his life.

*Cour.* Sir, I must have that diamond from you.

*Ant. E.* There, take it ; and much thanks for my good cheer,

*Abb.* Renowned duke, vouchsafe to take the pains

To go with us into the abbey here,  
And hear at large discoursed all our fortunes :—

And all that are assembled in this place,  
That by this sympathized one day's error  
Have suffer'd wrong, go, keep us company,  
And we shall make full satisfaction.—

Twenty-five years have I but gone in travail

Of you, my sons ; not, till this present hour

My heavy burdens are delivered :—

The duke, my husband, and my children both,

And you the calendars of their nativity,

Go to a gossip's feast, and go with me :

After so long grief, such nativity !

*Duke.* With all my heart, I'll gossip at this feast.

[*Exit* DUKE, ABBESS, ÆGEON, COURIL-  
LAN, MERCHANT, ANGELO, and Atten-  
dants.]

*Dro. S.* Master, shall I fetch your stuff from shipboard ?

*Ant. E.* Dromio, what stuff of mine hast thou embark'd ?

*Dro. S.* Your goods, that lay at host, Sir, in the Centaur.

*Ant. S.* He speaks to me ; I am your master Dromio :

Come, go with us : we'll look to that anon :  
Embrace thy brother there, rejoice with him.

[*Exit* ANTIPHOLUS S. and E. *Adr.*  
and *Luc.*]

*Dro. S.* There is a fat friend at your master's house,

That kitchen'd me for you to-day at dinner ;  
She now shall be my sister, not my wife.

*Dro. E.* Methinks, you are my glass, and not my brother :

I see by you, I am a sweet-fac'd youth.

Will you walk in to see their gossiping ?

*Dro. S.* Not I, Sir ; you are my elder.

*Dro. E.* That's a question : how shall we try it ?

*Dro. S.* We will draw cuts for the senior : till then, lead thou first.

*Dro. E.* Nay, then thus : [*thet* ;

We came into the world, like brother and bro-  
ther now let's go hand in hand, not one be-  
fore another. [*Exit* S.]

# AS YOU LIKE IT.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

MALONE ascertains the date of this play by the following singular coincidence of an allusion made by Rosalind with a circumstance recorded by Stowe. "I will weep for nothing, (says Rosalind) like *Diana in the Fountain*." In 1598, at the east side of the cross in Cheapside, was set up (says the latter in his survey of London,) "a curious wrought tabernacle of grey marble, and, in the same, an alabaster image of *Diana*, and water, conveyed from the Thames, prilling from her naked breast." A trifling novel or pastoral romance, by Dr Thomas Lodge, called *Euphues's Golden Legacy*, is the foundation of *As you Like it*. In addition to the fable, which is pretty exactly followed, the outlines of certain principal personages may be traced in the novel, but the characters of Jaques, Touchstone, and Audrey, originated entirely with the poet. Few plays contain so much instructive sentiment, poignant satire, luxuriant fancy, and amusing incident, as this: it is altogether "wild and pleasing." The philosophic reader will be no less diverted by the sententious shrewdness of Touchstone, than instructed by the elegant and amiable lessons of the moralizing Jaques.—Shakspeare is said to have played the part of Adam in *As you like it*.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE, <i>living in exile.</i>	SIR OLIVER MARTEXT, <i>a Vicar.</i>
FREDERICK, <i>Brother to the Duke, and Usurper of his Dominions.</i>	CORIN, } <i>Shepherds.</i>
AMIENS, } <i>Lords attending upon the Duke in his banishment.</i>	SYLVIVS, }
LE BEAU, <i>a Courtier attending upon Frederick.</i>	WILLIAM, <i>a country Fellow in love with Audrey.</i>
CHARLES, <i>his Wrestler.</i>	<i>A Person representing Hymen.</i>
OLIVER, } <i>Sons of Sir Rowland de Bois.</i>	ROSALIND, <i>Daughter to the banished Duke.</i>
JAQUES, }	CELIA, <i>Daughter to Frederick.</i>
ORLANDO, }	PHIBE, <i>a Shepherdess.</i>
ADAM, } <i>Servants to Oliver.</i>	AUDREY, <i>a country Wench.</i>
JENNIS, }	<i>Lords belonging to the two Dukes; Pages, Forciers, and other Attendants.</i>
TOUCHSTONE, <i>a Clown.</i>	

The SCENE lies, first, near Oliver's House; afterwards, partly in the Usurper's Court, and partly in the Forest of Arden.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—An Orchard, near OLIVER'S House.

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM.*

*Orl.* As I remember, Adam, it was upon this fashion bequeathed me: By will, but a poor thousand crowns: and, as thou say'st, charged my brother, on his blessing, to breed me well: and there begins my sadness. My brother Jaques he keeps at school, and report speaks goldenly of his profit: for my part, he keeps me rustically at home, or, to speak more properly, stays me here at home unkept: For call you that keeping for a gentleman of my birth, that differs not from the stalling of an ox? His horses are bred better; for, besides that they are fair with their feeding, they are taught their manage, and to that end riders dearly bired: but I, his brother, gain nothing under him but growth; for the which his animals on his dunghills are as much bound to him as I. Besides this nothing that he so plentifully gives me, the something that nature gave me his countenance

seems to take from me: he lets me feed with his hinds, bars me the place of a brother, and, as much as in him lies, mimes my gentility with my education. That is it, Adam, that grieves me; and the spirit of my father, which I think is within me, begins to mutiny against this servitude: I will no longer endure it, though yet I know no wise remedy how to avoid it.

*Enter OLIVER.*

*Adam.* Yonder comes my master, your brother.

*Orl.* Go apart, Adam, and thou shalt hear how he will shake me up.

*Ol.* Now, Sir! what make you here? \*

*Orl.* Nothing: I am not taught to make any thing.

*Ol.* What mar you then, Sir?

*Orl.* Marry, Sir, I am helping you to mar that which God made, a poor unworthy brother of your's, with idleness.

*Ol.* Marry, Sir, be better employed, and be naught awhile.

\* What do you here.

*Orl.* Shall I keep your hogs, and eat husks with them? What prodigal portion have I spent, that I should come to such penury?

*Ol.* Know you where you are, Sir?

*Orl.* O Sir, very well: here in your orchard.

*Ol.* Know you before whom, Sir?

*Orl.* Ay, better than he I am before knows me. I know, you are my eldest brother; and, in the gentle condition of blood, you should so know me: The courtesy of nations allows you my better, in that you are the first-born; but the same tradition takes not away my blood, were there twenty brothers betwixt us: I have as much of my father in me, as you; albeit, I confess, your coming before me is nearer to his reverence.

*Ol.* What, boy!

*Orl.* Come, come, elder brother, you are too young in this.

*Ol.* Wilt thou lay hands on me, villain?

*Orl.* I am no villain: \* I am the youngest son of Sir Rowland de Bois; he was my father; and he is thrice a villain, that says, such a father beget villains: Wert thou not my brother, I would not take this hand from thy throat, till this other had pulled out thy tongue for saying so: thou hast rail'd on thyself.

*Adam.* Sweet masters be patient; for your father's remembrance, be at accord.

*Ol.* Let me go, I say.

*Orl.* I will not, till I please: you shall hear me. My father charged you in his will to give me good education: you have trained me like a peasant, obscuring and hiding from me all gentleman-like qualities: the spirit of my father grows strong in me, and I will no longer endure it: therefore allow me such exercises as may become a gentleman, or give me the poor allottery my father left me by testament; with that I will go on my fortunes.

*Ol.* And what wilt thou do? beg, when that is spent? Well, Sir, get you in: I will not long be troubled with you: you shall have some part of your will: I pray you, leave me.

*Orl.* I will no further offend you than becomes me for my good.

*Ol.* Get you with him, you old dog.

*Adam.* Is old dog my reward? Most true, I have lost my teeth in your service.—God be with my old master! he would not have spoke such a word. [*Exit ORLANDO and ADAM.*]

*Ol.* Is it even so? begin you to grow upon me? I will physic your rankness, and yet give no thousand crowns neither. Holla, Dennis!

*Enter DENNIS.*

*Den.* Calls your worship?

*Ol.* Was not Charles, the Duke's wrestler, here to speak with me?

*Den.* So please you, he is here at the door, and incontinently access to you.

*Ol.* Call him in. [*Exit DENNIS.*—] 'Twill be a good way; and to-morrow the wrestling is.

*Enter CHARLES.*

*Cha.* Good morrow to your worship.

*Ol.* Good monsieur Charles!—what's the new news at the new court?

*Cha.* There's no news at the court, Sir, but the old news: that is, the old duke is banished by his younger brother the new duke; and three or four loving lords have put themselves into voluntary exile with him, whose lands and revenues enrich the new duke; therefore he gives them good leave to wander.

*Ol.* Can you tell if Rosalind, the duke's daughter, be banished with her father.

*Cha.* Oh! no; for the duke's daughter, her cousin, so loves her,—being ever from their cradles bred together,—that she would have followed her exile, or have died to stay behind

her. She is at the court, and no less beloved of her uncle than his own daughter; and never two ladies loved as they do.

*Ol.* Where will the old duke live?

*Cha.* They say, he is already in the forest of Arden, \* and a many merry men with him; and there they live like the old Robin Hood of England: they say, many young gentlemen flock to him every day; and fleet time like careless, as they did in the golden world.

*Ol.* What, you wrestle to-morrow before the new duke?

*Cha.* Marry, do I, Sir; and I came to acquaint you with a matter. I am given, Sir, secretly to understand, that your younger brother Orlando, hath a disposition to come in disguise'd against me to try a fall: To-morrow, Sir, I wrestle for my credit; and he that escapes me without some broken limb, shall acquit him well. Your brother is but young and tender; and, for your love, I would be loath to foil him, as I must for my own honour, if he come in: therefore, out of my love to you, I came hither to acquaint you withal; that either you might stay him from his intendment, or brook such disgrace well as he shall run into; in that it is a thing of his own search, and altogether against my will.

*Ol.* Charles, I thank thee for thy love to me, which thou shalt find I will most kindly requite. I had myself notice of my brother's purpose herein, and have by underhand means laboured to dissuade him from it; but he is resolute. I'll tell thee, Charles,—it is the stubbornest young fellow of France; full of ambition, an envious emulator of every man's good parts, a secret and villanous contriver against me his natural brother; therefore use thy discretion; I had as lief thou didst break his neck as his finger: And thou wert best look to't! for if thou dost him any slight disgrace, or if he do not mightily grace himself on thee, he will practise against thee by poison, entrap thee by some treacherous device, and never leave thee till he hath ta'en thy life by some indirect means or other: for, I assure thee, and almost with tears I speak it, there is not one so young and so villanous this day living. I speak but brotherly of him; but should I anatomize him to thee as he is, I must blush and weep, and thou must look pale and wonder.

*Cha.* I am heartily glad I came hither to you: If he come to-morrow, I'll give him his payment: If ever he go alone again, I'll never wrestle for prize more: And so, God keep your worship!

[*Exit.*]

*Ol.* Farewell, good Charles.—Now will I stir this gamester: † I hope, I shall see an end of him; for my soul, yet I know not why, hates nothing more than he. Yet he's gentle; never schooled, and yet learned; full of noble device: of all sorts ‡ enchantingly beloved; and, indeed, so much in the heart of the world, and especially of my own people, who best know him, that I am altogether misprised: but it shall not be so long; this wrestler shall clear all: nothing remains, but that I kindle the boy thither, which now I'll go about. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II.—A Lawn before the Duke's Palace.

*Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

*Cel.* I pray thee, Rosalind, sweet my coz, be merry.

*Ros.* Dear Celia, I show more mirth than I am mistress of; and would you yet I were merrier! Unless you could teach me to forget a banished father, you must not learn me how to remember any extraordinary pleasure.

*Cel.* Herein, I see, thou lovest me not with the full weight that I love thee: if my uncle,

\* Vain is used in a double sense: by Oliver for a worthless fellow, and by Orlando for a man of base extraction.

\* Ardenne, a large forest in French Flanders.  
† Frolicsome fellow. ‡ Of all ranks.

thy banish'd father, had banish'd thy uncle, the duke my father, so thou hadst been still with me, I could have taught my love to take thy father for mine; so would'st thou, if the truth of thy love to me were so righteously tempered as mine is to thee.

*Ros.* Well, I will forget the condition of my estate, to rejoice in your's.

*Cel.* You know my father hath no child but I, nor none is like to have; and, truly, when he dies, thou shalt be his heir: for what he hath taken away from thy father perforce, I will render thee again in affection: by mine honour, I will; and when I break that oath, let me turn monster; therefore, my sweet Rose, my dear Rose, be merry.

*Ros.* From henceforth I will, coz, and devise sports: let me see; What think you of falling in love?

*Cel.* Marry, I pr'ythee, do, to make sport withal: but love no man in good earnest: nor no further in sport neither, than with safety of a pure blush thou may'st in honour come off again.

*Ros.* What shall be our sport then?

*Cel.* Shall we sit and mock the good housewife, Fortune, from her wheel, that her gifts may henceforth be bestowed equally.

*Ros.* I would, we could do so; for her benefits are mightily misplaced: and the bountiful blind woman doth most mistake in her gifts to women.

*Cel.* 'Tis true; for those that she makes fair, she scarce makes honest; and those that she makes honest, she makes very ill-favour'dly.

*Ros.* Nay, now thou goest from fortune's office to nature's: fortune reigns in gifts of the world, not in the lineaments of nature.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE.*

*Cel.* No? When nature hath made a fair creature, may she not by fortune fall into the fire?—Though nature hath given us wit to flout at fortune, hath not fortune sent in this fool to cut off the argument?

*Ros.* Indeed, there is fortune too hard for nature; when fortune makes nature's natural the cutter off of nature's wit.

*Cel.* Peradventure, this is not fortune's work neither, but nature's; who perceiving our natural wits too dull to reason of such goddesses, hath sent this natural for our whetstone: for always the dulness of a fool is the whetstone of his wits.—How now, wit? whither wander you?

*Touch.* Mistress, you must come away to your father.

*Cel.* Were you made the messenger?

*Touch.* No, by mine honour; but I was bid to come for you.

*Ros.* Where learned you that oath, fool?

*Touch.* Of a certain knight, that swore by his honour they were good pancakes, and swore by his honour the mustard was naught: now, I'll stand it, it the pancakes were naught, and the mustard was good; and yet was not the knight forsworn.

*Cel.* How prove you that, in the great heap of your knowledge?

*Ros.* Ay, marry; now unmuzzle your wisdom.

*Touch.* Stand you both forth now: stroke your chins, and swear by your beards that I am a knave.

*Cel.* By our beards, if we had them, thou art.

*Touch.* By my knavery if I had it, then I were: but if you swear by that that is not, you are not forsworn: no more was the knight, swearing by his honour, for he never had any: or if he had, he had sworn it away, before ever he saw those pancakes or that mustard.

*Cel.* Pr'ythee, who'st thou mean'st?

*Touch.* One that old Frederick, your father, loves.

*Cel.* My father's love is enough to honour him. Enough! speak no more of him: you'll be whipp'd for taxation,\* one of these days.

*Touch.* The more pity, that fools may not speak wisely, what wise men do foolishly.

*Cel.* By my truth, thou say'st true: for since the little wit that fools have was silenced, the little foolery that wise men have makes a great show. Here comes Monsieur Le Beau.

*Enter LE BEAU.*

*Ros.* With his mouth full of news.

*Cel.* Which he will put on us, as pigeons feed their young.

*Ros.* Then shall we be news-cramm'd.

*Cel.* All the better; we shall be the more marketable. *Bon jour*, Monsieur Le Beau: What's the news?

*Le Beau.* Fair princess, you have lost much good sport.

*Cel.* Sport? of what colour?

*Le Beau.* What colour, madam? how shall I answer you?

*Ros.* As wit and fortune will.

*Touch.* Or the destinies decree.

*Cel.* Well said; that was laid on with a trowel.

*Touch.* Nay, if I keep not my rank,—

*Ros.* Thou lovest thy old smell.

*Le Beau.* You amaze me, ladies; I would have told you of good wrestling, which you have lost the sight of.

*Ros.* Yet tell us the manner of the wrestling.

*Le Beau.* I will tell you the beginning, and if it please your ladyships, you may see the end: for the best is yet to do; and here, where you are, they are coming to perform it.

*Cel.* Well,—the beginning, that is dead and buried.

*Le Beau.* There comes an old man, and his three sons,—

*Cel.* I could match this beginning with an old tale.

*Le Beau.* Three proper young men, of excellent growth and presence;—

*Ros.* With bills on their necks,—*Be it known unto all men by these presents.*

*Le Beau.* The eldest of the three wrestled with Charles, the duke's wrestler; which Charles in a moment threw him, and broke three of his ribs, that there is little hope of life in him; so he served the second, and so the third: Yonder they lie; the poor old man, their father, making such pitiful dole over them, that all the beholders take his part with weeping.

*Ros.* Alas!

*Touch.* But what is the sport, monsieur, that the ladies have lost?

*Le Beau.* Why, this that you speak of.

*Touch.* Thus men may grow wiser every day! It is the first time that ever I heard, breaking of ribs was sport for ladies.

*Cel.* Or I, I promise thee.

*Ros.* But is there any else longs to see this broken music in his sides? is there yet another dotes upon rib-breaking?—Shall we see this wrestling, cousin?

*Le Beau.* You must, if you stay here; for here is the place appointed for the wrestling, and they are ready to perform it.

*Cel.* Yonder, sure, they are coming: Let us now stay and see it.

*Flourish. Enter DUKE FREDERICK, Lords, ORLANDO, CHARLES, and Attendants.*

*Duke F.* Come on; since the youth will not be entreated, his own peril on his forwardness.

*Ros.* Is yonder the man?

*Le Beau.* Even he, madam.

*Cel.* Alas! he is too young: yet he looks successfully.

\* Satire.  
or confuse.

† Amaze here means to perplex.

*Duke F.* How now, daughter, and cousin?  
are you crept hither to see the wrestling?

*Ros.* Ay, my liege; so please you give us leave.

*Duke F.* You will take little delight in it, I can tell you, there is such odds in the men: In pity of the challenger's youth, I would fain dissuade him, but he will not be entreated: Speak to him, ladies; see if you can move him.

*Cel.* Call him hither, good Monsieur Le Beau.

*Duke F.* Do so: I'll not be by.

[*Duke goes apart.*]

*Le Beau.* Monsieur the challenger, the princesses call for you.

*Orl.* I attend them, with all respect and duty.

*Ros.* Young man, have you challenged Charles the wrestler?

*Orl.* No, fair princess; he is the general challenger: I come but in, as others do, to try with him the strength of my youth.

*Cel.* Young gentleman, your spirits are too bold for your years: You have seen cruel proof of this man's strength: if you saw yourself with your eyes, or knew yourself with your judgment, the fear of your adventure would counsel you to a more equal enterprise. We pray you, for your own sake, to embrace your own safety, and give over this attempt.

*Ros.* Do, young Sir; your reputation shall not therefore be misprized: we will make it our suit to the duke, that the wrestling might not go forward.

*Orl.* I beseech you, punish me not with your hard thoughts; wherein I confess me much guilty, to deny so fair and excellent ladies any thing. But let your fair eyes, and gentle wishes, go with me to my trial: wherein if I be foiled, there is but one shamed that was never gracious: it killed, but one dead, that is willing to be so: I shall do my friends no wrong, for I have none to lament me; the world no injury, for in it I have nothing; only in the world I fill up a place, which may be better supplied when I have made it empty.

*Ros.* The little strength that I have, I would it were with you.

*Cel.* And mine, to eke out her's.

*Ros.* Fare you well. Pray heaven, I be deceived in you!

*Cel.* Your heart's desires be with you.

*Cha.* Come, where is this young gallant, that is so desirous to lie with his mother earth?

*Orl.* Ready, Sir; but his will hath in it a more modest working.

*Duke F.* You shall try but one fall.

*Cha.* No, I warrant your grace; you shall not entreat him to a second, that have so mightily persuaded him from a first.

*Orl.* You mean to mock me after; you should not have mocked me before: but come your ways.

*Ros.* Now, Hercules be thy speed, young man!

*Cel.* I would I were invisible, to catch the strong fellow by the leg.

[*CHARLES and ORLANDO wrestle.*]

*Ros.* O excellent young man!

*Cel.* If I had a thunderbolt in mine eye, I can tell who should down.

[*CHARLES is thrown. Shout.*]

*Duke F.* No more, no more.

*Orl.* Yes, I beseech your grace; I am not yet well breathed.

*Duke F.* How dost thou, Charles?

*Le Beau.* He cannot speak, my lord.

*Duke F.* Bear him away. [*CHARLES is borne out.*] What is thy name, young man?

*Orl.* Orlando, my liege; the youngest son of Sir Rowland de Bois.

*Duke F.* I would, thou hadst been son to some man else.

The world esteem'd thy father honourable,

But I did find him still mine enemy:

Thou should'st have better pleas'd me with this deed,

Hadst thou descended from another house.

But fare thee well; thou art a gallant youth;

I would thou hadst told me of another father.

[*Exeunt DUKE, FRED. Train, and LE BEAU.*]

*Cel.* Were I my father, coz, would I do this?

*Orl.* I am more proud to be Sir Rowland's son,

His youngest son;—and would not change that calling.

To be adopted heir to Frederick.

*Ros.* My father loved Sir Rowland as his soul,

And all the world was of my father's mind:

Had I before known this young man his son,

I should have given him tears unto entreaties,

Ere he should thus have ventur'd.

*Cel.* Gentle cousin,

Let us go thank him, and encourage him:

My father's rough and envious disposition

Sticks me at heart.—Sir, you have well deserv'd:

If you do keep your promises in love,

But justly, as you have exceeded promise,

Your mistress shall be happy.

*Ros.* Gentleman,

[*Giving him a chain from her neck.*]

Wear this for me; one out of suits with fortune;

That could give more, but that her hand lacks means.—

Shall we go, coz?

*Cel.* Ay;—fare you well, fair gentleman.

*Orl.* Can I not say, I thank you? My better parts

Are all thrown down; and that which here

stands up,

Is but a quintain, a mere lifeless block.

*Ros.* He calls us back: My pride fell with my fortunes:

I'll ask him what he would:—Did you call, Sir?

Sir, you have wrestled well, and overthrown

More than your enemies.

*Cel.* Will you go, coz?

*Ros.* Have with you:—Fare you well.

[*Exeunt ROSALIND and CELIA.*]

*Orl.* What passion hangs these weights upon my tongue?

I cannot speak to her, yet she urg'd conference.

*Re-enter LE BEAU.*

O poor Orlando! thou art overthrown;

Or Charles, or something weaker, masters thee.

*Le Beau.* Good Sir, I do in friendship counsel you

To leave this place: Albeit, you have deserv'd

High commendation, true applause, and love;

Yet such is now the duke's condition,

That he misconstrues all that you have done.

The duke is humorous; what he is, indeed,

More suits you to conceive, than me to speak of.

*Orl.* I thank you, Sir; and, pray you, tell me this;

Which of the two was daughter of the duke

That here was at the wrestling?

*Le Beau.* Neither his daughter, if we judge

by manners;

But yet, indeed, the shorter is his daughter:

The other is daughter to the banish'd duke,

And here detain'd by her usurping uncle,

To keep his daughter company; whose loves

Are dearer than the natural bond of sisters.

But I can tell you, that of late this duke

Hath ta'en displeasure 'gainst his gentle niece

Grounded upon no other argument,

\* Appellation.

† Turned out of her service

‡ The object to dart at in martial exercises.

§ Disposition.



But that the people praise her for her virtues,

And pity her for her good father's sake;  
And, on my life, his malice 'gainst the lady  
Will suddenly break forth.—Sir, fare you well;  
Hereafter, in a better world than this,  
I shall desire more love and knowledge of you.

*Orl.* I rest much bounden to you: fare you well!  
*[Exit LE BEAU.]*

Thus must I from the smoke unto the smother;  
From tyrant duke, unto a tyrant brother:—  
But heavenly Rosalind!

*SCENE III.—A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter CELIA and ROSALIND.*

*Cel.* Why, cousin; why, Rosalind;—Cupid have mercy!—Not a word!

*Ros.* Not one to throw at a dog.

*Cel.* No, thy words are too precious to be cast away upon curs, throw some of them at me; come, lame me with reasons.

*Ros.* Then there were two cousins laid up; when the one should be lamed with reasons, and the other mad without any.

*Cel.* But is all this for my father?

*Ros.* No, some of it for my child's father: Oh! how full of briars is this working-day world!

*Cel.* They are but burs, cousin, thrown upon thee in holiday foolery; if we walk not in the trodden paths, our very petticoats will catch them.

*Ros.* I could shake them off my coat; these burs are in my heart.

*Cel.* Hem them away.

*Ros.* I would try; if I could cry hem, and have him.

*Cel.* Come, come, wrestle with thy affections.

*Ros.* Oh! they take the part of a better wrestler than myself.

*Cel.* Oh! a good wish upon you! you will try in time, in despite of a fall.—But, turning these jests out of service, let us talk in good earnest: is it possible, on such a sudden, you should fall into so strong a liking with old Sir Rowland's youngest son?

*Ros.* The duke my father loved his father dearly.

*Cel.* Doth it therefore ensue, that you should love his son dearly? By this kind of chase, I should hate him, for my father hated his father dearly; \* yet I hate not Orlando.

*Ros.* No 'faith, hate him not, for my sake.

*Cel.* Why should I not? doth he not deserve well?

*Ros.* Let me love him for that; and do you love him, because I do: Look, here comes the duke.

*Cel.* With his eyes full of anger.

*Enter Duke FREDERICK, with Lords.*

*Duke F.* Mistress despatch you with your safest haste.

And get you from our court.

*Ros.* Me, uncle?

*Duke F.* You cousin;

Within these ten days if that thou be'st found  
So near our public court as twenty miles,  
Thou diest for it.

*Ros.* I do beseech your grace,

Let me the knowledge of my fault bear with me:

If with myself I hold intelligence,  
Or have acquaintance with mine own desires;  
If that I do not dream, or be not frantic,  
(As I do trust I am not,) then, dear uncle,  
Never, so much as in a thought unborn,  
Did I offend your highness.

*Duke F.* Thus do all traitors;

If their purgation did consist in words,  
They are as innocent as grace itself:—  
Let it suffice thee, that I trust thee not.

\* Inevitably.

*Ros.* Yet your mistrust cannot make me a traitor:

Tell me, whereon the likelihood depends.

*Duke F.* Thou art thy father's daughter, there's enough.

*Ros.* So was I, when your highness took his dukedom;

So was I, when your highness banish'd him:

Treason is not inherited, my lord;

O! if we did derive it from our friends,

What's that to me? my father was no traitor:

Then, good my liege, mistake me not so much,  
To think my poverty is treacherous.

*Cel.* Dear sovereign, hear me speak.

*Duke F.* Ay, Celia; we stay'd her for your sake,

Else had she with her father rang'd along.

*Cel.* I did not then entreat to have her stay,

It was your pleasure, and your own remorse; \*

I was too young that time to value her,

But now I know her: if she be a traitor,

Why so am I; we still have slept together,

Rose at an instant, learn'd, play'd, eat together;

And wheresoe'er we went, like Juno's swans,

Still he went coupled, and inseparable.

*Duke F.* She is too subtle for thee; and her smoothness,

Her very silence, and her patience,

Speak to the people, and they pity her.

Thou art a fool: she robs thee of thy name;

And thou wilt show more bright, and seem more virtuous,

When she is gone: then open not thy lips;

Firm and irrevocable is my doom

Which I have pass'd upon her; she is banish'd.

*Cel.* Pronounce that sentence then on me, my liege;

I cannot live out of her company.

*Duke F.* You are a fool:—You, niece, provide yourself;

If you out-stay the time, upon mine honour,  
And in the greatness of my word, you die.

*[Exeunt Duke FREDERICK and Lords.]*

*Cel.* O my poor Rosalind! whither wilt thou go;

Wilt thou change fathers? I will give thee mine.

I charge thee, be not thou more griev'd than I am.

*Ros.* I have more cause.

*Cel.* Thou hast not, cousin;

Pry'three, be cheerful: know'st thou not, the duke

Hath banish'd me his daughter?

*Ros.* That he hath not.

*Cel.* No! hath not? Rosalind lacks then the love

Which teacheth thee that thou and I am one:

Shall we be sunder'd? shall we part, sweet girl?

No; let my father seek another heir.

Therefore devise with me, how we may fly,

Whither to go, and what to bear with us:

And do not seek to take your change upon you

To bear your griefs yourself, and leave me out;

For, by this heaven, now at our sorrows' pale,

Say what thou canst, I'll go along with thee.

*Ros.* Why, whither shall we go?

*Cel.* To seek my uncle.

*Ros.* Alas! what danger will it be to us,

Maids as we are, to travel forth so far?

Beauty provoketh thieves sooner than gold.

*Cel.* I'll put myself in poor and mean attire,

And with a kind of umber † smutch my face:

The like do you; so shall we pass along,

And never stir assailants.

*Ros.* Were it not better,

Because that I am more than common tall,

That I did suit me all points like a man?

A gallant curtle-ax ‡ upon my thigh,

A boar-spear in my hand; and (in my heart

Lie there what hidden woman's fear there will,

We'll have a swashing & a martial outside;

\* Compassion.

† A yellow-coloured earth, from Umbria, in Italy.

‡ Cutlass. § Swaggering.

As many other mannish cowards have,  
That do outface it with their semblances.

*Cel.* What shall I call thee, when thou art a man?

*Ros.* I'll have no worse a name than Jove's own page,

And therefore look you call me, Ganymede.  
But what will you be call'd?

*Cel.* Something that hath a reference to my state;

No longer Celia, but Aliena.

*Ros.* But, cousin, what if we assay'd to steal  
The clownish fool out of your father's court?

Would he not be a comfort to our travel?

*Cel.* He'll go along o'er the wide world with me;

Leave me alone to woo him: Let's away,  
And get our jewels and our wealth together;

Devise the fittest time, and safest way

To hide us from pursuit that will be made

After my flight: Now go we in content,

To liberty, and not to banishment. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—The Forest of Arden.

*Enter DUKE senior, AMIENS, and other LORDS, in the dress of Foresters.*

*Duke S.* Now, my co-mates, and brothers in exile,

Hath not old custom made this life more sweet  
Than that of painted pomp? Are not these woods

More free from peril than the envious court?

Here feel we but the penalty of Adam,

The seasons' difference; as, the icy fang,

And churlish chiding of the winter's wind;

Which when it bites and blows upon my body,

Even till I shrink with cold, I smile, and say,—

This is no flattery: these are counsellors

That feelingly persuade me what I am.

Sweet are the uses of adversity;

Which, like the toad, ugly and venomous,

Wears yet a precious jewel in his head;

And this our life, exempt from public haunt,

Finds tongues in trees, books in the running

brooks,

Sermons in stones, and good in every thing.

*Ami.* I would not change it: Happy is your

grace,

That can translate the stubbornness of fortune

Into so quiet and so sweet a style.

*Duke S.* Come, shall we go and kill us veni-

son?

And yet it irks me, the poor dappled fools,—

Beating native burghers of this desert city,—

Should, in their own confines, with forked

heads \*

Have their round haunches gor'd.

*1 Lord.* Indeed, my lord,

The melancholy Jaques grieves at that;

And, in that kind, swears you do more usurp

Than doth your brother that hath banish'd you.

To-day, my lord of Amiens and myself

Did steal behind him, as he lay alone

Under an oak, whose antique root peeps out

Upon the brook that brawls along this wood:

To the which place a poor sequester'd stag,

That from the hunter's aim had ta'en a hurt,

Did come to languish; and, indeed, my lord,

The wretched animal heav'd forth such groans,

That their discharge did stretch his leathern

coat

Almost to bursting; and the big round tears

Cours'd one another down his innocent nose

In piteous chase: and thus the hairy fool,

More marked of the melancholy Jaques,

Stood on the extremest verge of the swift

brook,

Augmenting it with tears.

\* Barbed arrows.

*Duke S.* But what said Jaques?

Did he not moralize this spectacle?

*1 Lord.* Oh! yes, into a thousand similes.

First, for his weeping in the needless stream;

*Poor deer,* quoth he, *thou mak'st a testa-*

*ment*

*As worldlings do, giving thy sum of more*

*To that which had too much:* Then, being

alone,

Left and abandon'd of his velvet friends;

*'Tis right,* quoth he; *this misery doth part*

*The flux of company:* Anon, a careless herd,

Full of the pasture, jumps along by him,

And never stays to greet him; *Ay,* quoth

Jaques,

*Sweep on, you fat and greasy citizens;*

*'Tis just the fashion: Wherefore do you*

*look*

*Upon that poor and broken bankrupt there?*

Thus most invectively he pierceth through

The body of the country, city, court,

Yea, and of this our life: swearing, that we

Are mere usurpers, tyrants, and what's worse.

To fright the animals, and to kill them up,

In their assign'd and native dwelling place.

*Duke S.* And did you leave him in this con-

templation?

*2 Lord.* We did, my lord, weeping and com-

menting

Upon the sobbing deer.

*Duke S.* Show me the place;

I love to cope \* him in these sullen fits,

For then he's full of matter.

*2 Lord.* I'll bring you to him straight.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter Duke FREDERICK, LORDS, and Attendants.*

*Duke F.* Can it be possible that no man saw them?

It cannot be: some villains of my court

Are of consent and sufferance in this.

*1 Lord.* I cannot hear of any that did see her.

The ladies, her attendants of her chamber,

Saw her a-bed; and, in the morning early,

They found the bed untreasur'd of their mis-

tress.

*2 Lord.* My lord, the roynish + clown, at whom

so oft

Your grace was wont to laugh, is also missing.

Hesperia, the princess' gentlewoman,

Confesses, that she secretly overheard

Your daughter and her cousin much commend

The parts and graces of the wrestler

That did but lately foil the sinewy Charles;

And she believes, wherever they are gone,

That youth is surely in their company.

*Duke F.* Send to his brother; fetch that gal-

lant hither;

If he be absent, bring his brother to me,

I'll make him find him: do this suddenly;

And let not search and inquisition quail;

To bring again these foolish runaways.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III.—Before OLIVER'S House.

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM, meeting.*

*Orl.* Who's there?

*Adam.* What! my young master!—O my gen-

tle master,

O my sweet master, O you memory's

Of old Sir Rowland! why, what make you here?

Why are you virtuous? Why do people love

you?

And wherefore are you gentle, strong, and va-

liant?

Why would you be so fond || to overcome

The bony prize of the humorous duke?

\* Encounter.

+ Sink into dejection.

|| Inconsiderate.

† Scoury.

§ Memory.

Your praise is come too swiftly home before  
you.

Know you not, master, to some kind of men  
Then graces serve them but as enemies? I  
No more do your's; your virtues, gentle mas-  
ter,

Are sanctified and holy traitors to you.  
Oh! what a world is this, when what is comely  
Envenoms him that bears it?

*Orl.* Why, what's the matter?

*Adam.* O unhappy youth,

Come not within these doors; within this roof  
The enemy of all your graces lives:  
Your brother—(no, no brother; yet the son—  
Yet not the son;—I will not call him son—  
Of him I was about to call his father,)—  
Hath heard your praises; and this night he  
means

To burn the lodging where you use to lie,  
And you within it: if he fail of that,  
He will have other means to cut you off:  
I overheard him, and his practices.  
This is no place,\* this house is but a butchery;  
Abhor it, fear it, do not enter it.

*Orl.* Why, whither, Adam, wouldst thou have  
me go?

*Adam.* No matter whither, so you come not  
here.

*Orl.* What, wouldst thou have me go and  
beg my food?

*Orl.* With a base and boisterous sword, en-  
force

A thievish living on the common road?  
This I must do, or know not what to do:

Yet this I will not do, do how I can;  
I rather will subject me to the malice  
Of a diverted blood,† and bloody brother.

*Adam.* But do not so; I have five hundred  
crowns,

The thrifty hire I sav'd under your father,  
Which I did store, to be my foster-nurse,  
Whence service should in my old limbs lie  
lame,

And unregarded age in corners thrown;  
Take that: and he that doth the ravens feed,  
Yea, providently caters for the sparrow,  
Be comfort to my age! Here is the gold;

All this I give you: Let me be your servant:  
Though I look old, yet I am strong and lusty;  
For in my youth I never did apply  
Hot and rebellious liquors in my blood;

Nor did not with unbashful forehead woo  
The means of weakness and debility;

Therefore my age is as a lusty winter,  
Frosty, but kindly: let me go with you;

I'll do the service of a younger man  
In all your business and necessities.

*Orl.* O good old man; how well in thee ap-  
pears

The constant service of the antique world,  
When service sweat for duty, not for need!

Thou art not for the fashion of these times,  
Where none will sweat, but for promotion;

And having that, do elude their service up  
Even with the having: it is not so with thee.

But, poor old man, thou prun'st a rotten  
tree,

That cannot so much as a blossom yield,  
In lieu of all thy pains and husbandry:

But come thy ways, we'll go along together:  
And ere we have thy youthful wages spent,  
We'll fight upon some settled low content.

*Adam.* Master, go on; and I will follow  
thee,

To the last gasp, with truth and loyalty.—

From seventeen years till now almost four-  
score

Here lived I, but now live here no more.

At seventeen years many their fortunes seek;

But at fourscore, it is too late a week:

Yet fortune cannot recompense me better,  
Than to die well, and not my master's debtor.

{*Exeunt.*}

#### SCENE IV.—The forest of Arden.

*Enter ROSALIND in Boy's clothes; CELIA  
dressed like a Shepherdess, and TOUCH-  
STONE.*

*Ros.* O Jupiter! how weary are my spirits!

*Touch.* I care not for my spirits, if my legs  
were not weary.

*Ros.* I could find in my heart to disgrace my  
man's apparel, and to cry like a woman; but I  
must comfort the weaker vessel, as doubtless  
hose ought to show itself courageous to petti-  
coat: therefore, courage, good Alena.

*Cel.* I pray you, bear with me; I can go no  
further.

*Touch.* For my part, I had rather bear with  
you, than bear you: yet I should bear no cross,\*  
if I did bear you; for, I think, you have no  
money in your purse.

*Ros.* Well, this is the forest of Arden.

*Touch.* Ay, now am I in Arden: the more  
fool I; when I was at home, I was in a better  
place; but travellers must be content.

*Ros.* Ay, be so, good Touchstone.—Look you,  
who comes here; a young man, and an old, in  
solemn talk.

*Enter CORIN and SILVIUS.*

*Cor.* That is the way to make her scorn you  
still.

*Sil.* O Corin, that thou knew'st how I do  
love her!

*Cor.* I partly guess; for I have lov'd ere now.

*Sil.* No, Corin, being old, thou canst not  
guess;

Though in thy youth thou wast as true a lover  
As ever sigh'd upon a midnight pillow:

But if thy love were ever like to mine,  
(As sure I think did never man love so,)

How many actions most ridiculous

Hast thou been drawn to by thy fantasy?

*Cor.* Into a thousand that I have forgotten.

*Sil.* Oh! thou didst then ne'er love so heartily:  
If thou remember'st not the slightest folly  
That ever love did make thee run into,

Thou hast not lov'd:

Or if thou hast not sat as I do now,  
Wearing thy hearer in thy mistress' praise,

Thou hast not lov'd:

Or if thou hast not broke from company,  
Abruptly, as my passion now makes me,

Thou hast not lov'd: O Phebe, Phebe, Phebe!  
[*Exit SILVIUS.*]

*Ros.* Alas! poor shepherd I searching of thy  
wound,

I have by hard adventure found mine own.

*Touch.* And I mine: I remember, when I  
was in love, I broke my sword upon a stone,

and bid him take that for coming aught† to  
Jane Smile: and I remember the kissing of her  
ballet,‡ and the cow's dugs that her pretty  
chopp'd hands had milk'd: and I remember the  
wooing of a peascod instead of her; from whom  
I took two cods, and, giving her them again,  
said with weeping tears, *Wear these for my  
sake.* We, that are true lovers, run into strange  
capers; but as all is mortal in nature, so is all  
nature in love mortal in folly.

*Ros.* Thou speak'st wiser, than thou art 'ware  
of.

*Touch.* Nay, I shall ne'er be 'ware of mine  
own wit, till I break my shins against it.

*Ros.* Jove! Jove! this shepherd's passion is  
much upon my fashion.

*Touch.* And mine; but it grows something  
stale with me.

*Cel.* I pray you, one of you question yond'  
man,

If he for gold will give us any food;

I faint almost to death.

*Touch.* Holla; yqu, clown!

\* Worden, residence.

† Blood turned from its natural course.

\* A piece of money stamped with a cross.

† In the night.

‡ The instrument with which washers beat clothes.

*Ros.* Peace, fool; he's not thy kinsman.

*Cor.* Who calls?

*Touch.* Your betters, Sir.

*Cor.* Else are they very wretched.

*Ros.* Peace, I say;—

Good even to you, friend.

*Cor.* And to you, gentle Sir, and to you all.

*Ros.* I prythee, shepherd, if that love, or gold, Can in this desert place buy entertainment, Bring us where we may rest ourselves, and feed: Here's a young maid with travel much oppress'd,

And fain for succour.

*Cor.* Fair Sir, I pity her,

And wish, for her sake, more than for mine own,

My fortunes were more able to relieve her:

But I am shepherd to another man,

And do not shear the fleeces that I graze;

My master is of choleric disposition,

And little reck's to find the way to heaven

By doing deeds of hospitality:

Besides, his cote, his flocks, and bounds of feed,

Are now on sale, and at our sheepcote now,

By reason of his absence, there is nothing

That you will feed on: but what is, come see,

And in my voice, most welcome shall you be.

*Ros.* What is he that shall buy his flock and

pasture?

*Cor.* That young swain that you saw here but

erewhile,

That little cares for buying any thing.

*Ros.* I pray thee, if it stand with honesty,

Buy thou the cottage, pasture, and the flock,

And thou shalt have to pay for it of us.

*Cel.* And we will mend thy wages: I like

this place,

And willingly could waste my time in it.

*Cor.* Assuredly, the thing is to be sold:

Go with me; if you like, upon report,

The soil, the profit, and this kind of life,

I will your very faithful feeder be,

And buy it with your gold right suddenly. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE V.—The same.

Enter AMIENS, JAKUES, and others.

#### SONG.

*Ami.* Under the greenwood tree,  
Who loves to lie with me,  
And tune his merry note  
Unto the sweet bird's throat,  
Come hither, come hither, come hither;  
Here shall he see  
No enemy,  
But winter and rough weather.

*Jaq.* More, more, I prythee, more.

*Ami.* It will make you melancholy, monsieur Jaques.

*Jaq.* I thank it. More, I prythee, more. I can suck melancholy out of a song, as a weasel sucks eggs: More, I prythee, more.

*Ami.* My voice is ragged, † I know, I cannot please you.

*Jaq.* I do not desire you to please me, I do desire you to sing: Come, more; another stanza; Call you them stanzas?

*Ami.* What you will, monsieur Jaques.

*Jaq.* Nay, I care not for their names; they owe me nothing: Will you sing?

*Ami.* More at your request, than to please myself.

*Jaq.* Well then, if ever I thank any man, I'll thank you: but that they call compliment, is like the encounter of two dog-apes: and when a man thanks me heartily, methinks, I have given him a penny, and he renders me the beggarly thanks. Come, sing; and you that will not hold your tongues.

\* Cares.

† Ragged and rugged had formerly the same meaning.

*Ami.* Well, I'll end the song.—Sirs, cover the while; the duke will drink under this tree:—he hath been all this day to look you.

*Jaq.* And I have been all this day to avoid him. He is too disputable\* for my company: I think of as many matters as he; but I give heaven thanks, and make no boast of them. Come, warble, come.

#### SONG.

Who doth ambition shun, [All together here.  
And loves to live i'the sun,  
Seeking the food he eats,  
And pleas'd with what he gets,  
Come hither, come hither, come hither;  
Here shall he see  
No enemy,  
But winter and rough weather.

*Jaq.* I'll give you a verse to this note, that I made yesterday in despite of my invention.

*Ami.* And I'll sing it.

*Jaq.* Thus it goes:

If it do come to pass,  
That any man turn ass,  
Leaving his wealth and ease,  
A stubborn will to please,  
Ducdame, ducdame, ducdame; †  
Here shall he see,  
Gross fools as he,  
An if he will come to Ami.

*Ami.* What's that ducdame?

*Jaq.* 'Tis a Greek invocation, to call fools in to a circle. I'll go sleep if I can; if I cannot, I'll rail against all the first-born of Egypt.

*Ami.* And I'll go seek the duke; his banquet is prepar'd. [*Exeunt severally.*]

#### SCENE VI.—The same.

Enter ORLANDO and ADAM.

*Adam.* Dear master, I can go no further: oh! I die for food! Here lie I down, and measure out my grave. Farewell, kind master.

*Orl.* Why, how now, Adam! no greater cheer in thee? Live a little; comfort a little; cheer thyself a little: if this uncouth forest yield any thing savage, I will either be food for it, or bring it for food to thee. Thy conceit is nearer death than thy powers. For my sake, be comfortable; hold death awhile at the arm's end: I'll here be with thee presently; and if I bring thee not something to eat, I'll give thee leave to die: but if thou diest before I come, thou art a mocker of my labour. Well said! thou look'st cheerily: and I'll be with thee quickly.—Yet thou liest in the bleak air: Come, I will bear thee to some shelter; and thou shalt not die for lack of a dinner, if there live any thing in this desert. Cheerly, good Adam! [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE VII.—The same.

A table set out.—Enter DUKES senior, AMIENS, LORDS, and others.

*Duke S.* I think he be transform'd into a beast;

For I can no where find him like a man.

1 Lord. My lord, he is but even now gone hence;

Here was he merry, hearing of a song.

*Duke S.* If he compact of jays, † grow musical,

We shall have shortly discord in the spheres:—Go, seek him; tell him, I would speak with him.

Enter JAKUES.

1 Lord. He saves my labour by his own approach.

*Duke S.* Why, how now, monsieur! what a life is this,

\* Disputatious.

† A word coined for the nonce.

‡ Made up of discords.

That your poor friends must woo your company!

What! you look merrily.

*Jaq.* A fool, a fool!—I met a fool i'the forest,

A motley fool;—a miserable world!—

As I do live by food, I met a fool;  
Who laid him down and bask'd him in the sun,  
And rail'd on lady Fortune in good terms,  
In good set terms,—and yet a motley fool.

*Good-morrow fool,* quoth I: *No, Sir,* quoth he,  
*Call me not fool, till heaven hath sent me fortune:*

And then he drew a dial from his poke,  
And looking on it with lack-lustre eye,  
Says, very wisely, *It is ten o'clock:*  
*Thus may we see,* quoth he, *how the world wags:*

*'Tis but an hour ago, since it was nine;  
And after an hour more, 'twill be eleven;  
And so, from hour to hour, we ripe and ripe,  
And then, from hour to hour we rot, and rot,  
And thereby hangs a tale.* When I did hear

The motley fool thus moral on the time,  
My lungs began to crow like chanticleer,  
That fools should be so deep-contemplative;  
And I did laugh, sans intermission,  
An hour by his dial.—O noble fool!  
A worthy fool! Motley's the only wear.\*

*Duke S.* What fool is this?

*Jaq.* O worthy fool!—One that hath been a courtier;

And says, if ladies be but young and fair,  
They have the gift to know it: and in his brain,—

Which is as dry as the remainder biscuit  
After a voyage,—he hath strange places cramm'd  
With observation, the which he vents  
In mangled forms:—Oh! that I were a fool!  
I am ambitious for a motley coat.

*Duke S.* Thou shalt have one.

*Jaq.* It is my only suit;

Provided that you weed your better judgments  
Of all opinion that grows rank in them,  
That I am wise. I must have liberty  
Withal, as large a charter as the wind,  
To blow on whom I please; for so fools have:  
And they that are most galled with my folly,  
They must most laugh: And, why, Sir, must they so?

The *why* is plain as way to parish church:  
He, that a fool doth very wisely hit,  
Doth very foolishly, although he smart,  
Not to seem senseless of the bob: if not,  
The wise man's folly is anatomiz'd  
Even by the squand'ring glances of the fool.  
Invest me in my motley; give me leave  
To speak my mind, and I will through and through

Cleanse the foul body of the infected world,  
If they will patiently receive my medicine.

*Duke S.* Fit on thee! I can tell what thou would'st do.

*Jaq.* What for a counter, would I do, but good?

*Duke S.* Must mischievous foul sin, in chiding sin:

For thou thyself hast been a libertine,  
As sensual as the brutish sting itself;  
And all the embossed sores, and headed evils,  
That thou with license of free foot hast caught,  
Wouldst thou discharge into the general world.

*Jaq.* Why, who cries out on pride,  
That can therein tax any private party?

Doth it not flow as hugely as the sea,  
Till that the very very meams do ebb?

What woman in the city do I name,  
When that I say, The city-woman bears

The cost of prices on unworthy shoulders?  
Who can come in, and say, that I mean her,

When such a one as she, such is her neighbour?

\* The fool was anciently dressed in a party-coloured coat.

Or what is he of basest function,  
That says, his bravery\* is not on my cost,  
(Thinking that I mean him,) but therein suits  
His folly to the mettle of my speech?

There then; How, what then? Let me see wherein

My tongue hath wrong'd him: if it do him right  
Then he hath wrong'd himself; if he be free,  
Why then, my taxing like a wild goose flies,  
Unclaim'd of any man.—But who comes here?

*Enter ORLANDO, with his sword drawn.*

*Orl.* Forbear, and eat no more.

*Jaq.* Why, I have eat none yet.

*Orl.* Nor shalt not, till necessity be serv'd.

*Jaq.* Of what kind should this cock come of?

*Duke S.* Art thou thus bolden'd, man, by thy distress;

Or else a rude despiser of good manners,

That in civility thou seem'st so empty?

*Orl.* You touch'd my vein at first; the thorny point

Of bare distress hath ta'en from me the show  
Of smooth civility: yet am I inland bred,<sup>†</sup>  
And know some nurture:† But forbear, I say;  
He dies, that touches any of this fruit,  
Till I and my affairs are answered.

*Jaq.* An you will not be answered with reason,  
I must die.

*Duke S.* What would you have? Your gentleness shall force,

More than your force move us to gentleness.

*Orl.* I almost die for food, and let me have it.

*Duke S.* Sit down and feed, and welcome to our table.

*Orl.* Speak you so gently? Pardon me, I pray you:

I thought that all things had been savage here:  
And therefore put I on the countenance  
Of stern commandment: But whate'er you are,  
That in this desert inaccessible,  
Under the shade of melancholy boughs,  
Lose and neglect the creeping hours of time—  
If ever you have look'd on better days;  
If ever where bells have knoll'd to church;  
If ever sat at any good man's feast;  
If ever from your eye-hide wip'd a tear,  
And know what 'tis to pity, and be pitied;  
Let gentleness my strong enforcement be:  
In the which hope, I blush, and hide my sword.

*Duke S.* True is it that we have seen better days;

And have with holy bell been knoll'd to church;  
And sat at good men's feasts; and wip'd our eyes  
Of drops that sacred pity hath engender'd:  
And therefore sit you down in gentleness,  
And take upon command what help we have,  
That to your wanting may be minister'd.

*Orl.* Then, but forbear your food a little while,

Whiles, like a doe, I go to find my fawn,  
And give it food. There is an old poor man,

Who after me hath many a weary step  
Limp'd in pure love; till he be first suffic'd,—

Oppress'd with two great evils, age and hunger,—

I will not touch a bit.

*Duke S.* Go find him out,

And we will nothing waste till you return.

*Orl.* I thank ye: and be bless'd for your good comfort! [Exit.]

*Duke S.* Thou seest, we are not all alone unhappy:

This wide and universal theatre

Presents more woeful pageants than the scene  
Wherein we play in.

*Jaq.* All the world's a stage,  
And all the men and women merely players:

They have their exits, and their entrances;  
And one man in his time plays many parts,  
His acts being seven ages. At first, the infant,

\* Flattery

† Well brought up. ‡ Good manners

Mewling and puking in the nurse's arms;  
And then, the whining school-boy, with his  
satchel,  
And shining morning face, creeping like snail  
Unwillingly to school: And then, the lover;  
Sighing like furnace, with a woeful ballad  
Made to his mistress' eye-brow: Then, a sol-  
dier;  
Full of strange oaths, and bearded like the  
pard,  
Jealous in honour, sudden\* and quick in  
quarrel,  
Seeking the bubble reputation  
Even in the cannon's mouth: And then, the  
justice;  
In fair round belly, with good capon lin'd,  
With eyes severe, and beard of formal cut,  
Full of wise saws and modern† instances,  
And so he plays his part: The sixth age shifts  
Into the lean and slipper'd pantaloon;  
With spectacles on nose, and pouch on side;  
His youthful hose, well sav'd, a world too wide  
For his shrunk shank; and his big manly voice,  
Turning again toward childish treble, pipes  
And whistles in his sound: Last scene of all,  
That ends this strange eventful history,  
Is second childishness, and mere oblivion;  
Sans teeth, sans eyes, sans taste, sans every  
thing.

*Re-enter ORLANDO, with ADAM.*

*Duke S.* Welcome: Set down your venerable  
burden,  
And let him feed.

*Orl.* I thank you most for him.

*Adam.* So had you need;

I scarce can speak to thank you for myself.

*Duke S.* Welcome, fall to: I will not trouble  
you

As yet, to question you about your fortunes:—  
Give us some music; and, good cousin, sing.

AMIEUS sings.

SONG.

I.

*Blow, blow, thou winter wind,  
Thou art not so unkind  
As man's ingratitude;  
Thy tooth is not so keen,  
Because thou art not seen,  
Although thy breath be rude.  
Heigh ho! sing, heigh ho! unto the green  
holly:  
Most friendship is feigning, most loving mere  
jolly:  
Then heigh, ho, the holly!  
This life is most jolly.*

II.

*Freeze, freeze, thou bitter sky,  
That dost not bite so nigh  
As benefits forgot:  
Though thou the waters warp,  
Thy sting is not so sharp  
As friend remember'd‡ not.  
Heigh, ho! sing, heigh, ho! &c.*

*Duke S.* If that you were the good Sir Row-  
land's son,—  
As you have whisper'd faithfully, you were;  
And as mine eye doth his effigies witness  
Most truly him'd and living in your face,—  
Be truly welcome hither: I am the duke,  
That lov'd your father: The residue of your  
fortune,  
Go to my cave and tell me.—Good old man,  
Thou art right welcome as thy master is:  
Support him by the arm.—Give me your hand,  
And let me all your fortunes understand.

[*Exeunt.*]

ACT III.

SCENE I.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter Duke FREDERICK, OLIVER, Lords, and  
Attendants.*

*Duke F.* Not see him since? Sir, Sir, that  
cannot be:

But were I not the better part made mercy,  
I should not seek an absent argument  
Of my revenge, thou present: But look to it;  
Find out thy brother, wheresoe'er he is,  
Seek him with candle; bring him dead or living  
Within this twelvemonth, or turn thou no more  
To seek a living in our territory,  
Thy lands, and all things that thou dost call  
thine,

Worth seizure, do we seize into our hands;  
Till thou canst quit thee by thy brother's mouth,  
Of what we think against thee.

*Ol.* Oh! that your highness knew my heart  
I never lov'd my brother in my life. [in this!]

*Duke F.* More villain thou.—Well, push him  
out of doors:

And let my officers of such a nature  
Make an extent\* upon his house and lands:  
Do this expediently,† and turn him going.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—The Forest.

*Enter ORLANDO, with a paper.*

*Orl.* Hang thee, my verse, in witness of my  
love;

And, thou, thrice-crowned queen of night,  
survey

With thy chaste eye, from thy pale sphere above,  
Thy huntress' name, that my whole life doth  
sway.

O Rosalind! these trees shall be my books,  
And in these barks my thoughts I'll character;  
That every eye, which in this forest looks,  
Shall see thy virtue witness'd every where.  
Run, run, Orlando; carve, on every tree,  
The fair, the chaste, and unexpressive‡ she.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter CORIN and TOUCHSTONE.*

*Cor.* And how like you this shepherd's life,  
master Touchstone?

*Touch.* Truly shepherd, in respect of itself,  
it is a good life; but in respect that it is a  
shepherd's life, it is naught. In respect that it  
is solitary, I like it very well; but in respect  
that it is private, it is a very vile life. Now in  
respect it is in the fields, it pleaseth me well;  
but in respect it is not in the court, it is tedious.  
As it is a spare life, look you, it fits my humour  
well; but as there is no more plenty in it, it  
goes much against my stomach. Hast any philo-  
sophy in thee, shepherd?

*Cor.* No more, but that I know, the more  
one sickens, the worse at ease he is; and that  
he that wants money, means, and content, is  
without three good friends:—That the property  
of rain is to wet, and fire to burn: That good  
pasture makes fat sheep: and that a great cause  
of the night, is lack of the sun: That he, that  
hath learned no wit by nature nor art, may  
complain of good breeding, or comes of a very  
dull kindred.

*Touch.* Such a one is a natural philosopher.  
Wast ever in court, shepherd?

*Cor.* No, truly.

*Touch.* Then thou art damnd.

*Cor.* Nay, I hope,—

*Touch.* Truly, thou art damnd; like an ill-  
roasted egg, all on one side.

*Cor.* For not being at court? Your reason.

*Touch.* Why, if thou never wast at court, thou  
never saw'st good manners; if thou never saw'st  
good manners, then thy manners must be—

\* Violent. † Remembering.

\* Seize by legal process. † Expeditiously. ‡ Unexpressable.

wicked; and wickedness is sin, and sin is damnation: Thou art in a perilous state, shepherd.

*Cor.* Not a whit, Touchstone: those, that are good manners at the court, are as ridiculous in the country, as the behaviour of the country is most mockable at the court. You told me, you salute not at the court, but you kiss your hands; that courtesy would be uncleanly, if courtiers were shepherds.

*Touch.* Instance, briefly; come, instance.

*Cor.* Why, we are still handling our ewes; and their fells, you know, are greasy.

*Touch.* Why, do not your courtier's hands sweat? and is not the grease of a smitten as wholesome as the sweat of a man? Shallow, shallow: a better instance, I say; come.

*Cor.* Besides, our hands are hard.

*Touch.* Your lips will feel them the sooner. Shallow, again: A more sounder instance, come.

*Cor.* And they are often tar'd over with the surgery of our sheep: And would you have us kiss tar? The courtier's hands are perfumed with civet.

*Touch.* Most shallow man! Thou worms-meat, in respect of a good piece of flesh: Indeed—Learn of the wise, and prepend: Civet is of a baser birth than tar: the very uncleanly flux of a cat. Mend the instance, shepherd.

*Cor.* You have too courtly a wit for me; I'll rest.

*Touch.* Wilt thou rest damn'd? God help thee, shallow man! God make incision in thee! thou art raw.\*

*Cor.* Sir, I am a true labourer; I earn that I eat, get that I wear; owe no man hate, envy no man's happiness; glad of other men's good, content with my harm: and the greatest of my pride is, to see my ewes graze, and my lambs suck.

*Touch.* That's another simple sin in you; to bring the ewes and the rams together, and to offer to get your living by the copulation of cattle: to be bawd to a bell-wether; and to betray a she-lamb of a twelvemonth to a crooked-pated, old cuckoldly ram, out of all reasonable match. If thou be'st not damn'd for this, the devil himself will have no shepherds; I cannot see else how thou should'st 'scape.

*Cor.* Here comes young master Ganymede, my new mistress's brother.

*Enter ROSALIND, reading a paper.*

*Ros.* From the east to western Ind,  
No jewel is like Rosalind.  
Her worth, being mounted on the wind,  
Through all the world bears Rosalind.  
All the pictures, fairest lin'd,†  
Are but black to Rosalind.  
Let no face be kept in mind,  
But the fair of Rosalind.

*Touch.* I'll rhyme you so, eight years together; dinners, and suppers, and sleeping hours excepted: it is the right butter-woman's rank to market.

*Ros.* Out, fool!

*Touch.* For a taste:—

*If a hart do lack a hind,  
Let him seek out Rosalind.  
If the cat will after kind,  
So, be sure, will Rosalind.  
Winter-garments must be lin'd,  
So must slender Rosalind.  
They that reap, must sheaf and bind;  
Then to cart with Rosalind.  
Sweetest nut hath sourest rind,  
Such a nut is Rosalind.  
He that sweetest rose will find,  
Must find love's prick, and Rosalind.*

This is the very false gallop of verses; Why do you infect yourself with them?

*Ros.* Peace, you dull fool; I found them on a tree.

*Touch.* Truly the tree yields bad fruit.

*Ros.* I'll graft it with you, and then I shall graft it with a medlar; Then it will be the earliest fruit in the country: for you'll be rotten, e'er you be half ripe, and that's the right virtue of the medlar.

*Touch.* You have said; but whether wisely or no, let the forest judge.

*Enter CELIA, reading a paper.*

*Ros.* Peace!

Here comes my sister reading; stand aside.

*Cel.* Why should this desert silent be?

For it is unpeopled? No;

Tongues I'll hang on every tree,

That shall civil sayings show,

Some, how brief the life of man

Runs his erring pilgrimage;

That the stretching of a span

Buckles in his sum of age.

Some, of violated vows

'Twixt the souls of friend and friend,

But upon the fairest boughs,

Or at every sentence end

Will I Rosalinda write;

Teaching all that read, to know

The quintessence of every sprite

Heaven would in little show.

Therefore heaven nature charg'd

That one body should be fill'd

With all graces wide enlarg'd:

Nature presently distill'd

Helen's cheek, but not her heart;

Cleopatra's majesty;

Atalanta's better part;

Sad Lucretia's modesty.

Thus Rosalind of many parts

By heavenly synod was devis'd;

Of many faces, eyes, and hearts,

To have the touches of dearest priz'd.

Heaven would that she these gifts

should have,

And I to live and die her slave.

*Ros.* O most gentle Jupiter!—what tedious homily of love have you wearied your parishioners withal, and never cried, *Hate patience, good people!*

*Cel.* How now! back friends:—Shepherd, go off a little:—go with him, sirrah.

*Touch.* Come, shepherd, let us make an honourable retreat; though not with bag and baggage, yet with scrip and scrippage.

[*Exeunt CORIN and TOUCHSTONE.*]

*Cel.* Didst thou hear these verses?

*Ros.* O yes, I heard them all, and more too; for some of them had in them more feet than the verses would bear.

*Cel.* That's no matter; the feet might bear the verses.

*Ros.* Ay, but the feet were lame, and could not bear themselves without the verse, and therefore stood lamely in the verse.

*Cel.* But didst thou hear, without wondering, how thy name should be hang'd and carved upon these trees?

*Ros.* I was seven of the nine days out of the wonder, before you came; for look here what I found on a palm-tree: I was never so berhym'd since Pythagoras' time, that I was an Irish rat, which I can hardly remember.

*Cel.* Trow you, who hath done this?

*Ros.* Is it a man?

*Cel.* And a chain that you once wore, about his neck: Change you colour?

*Ros.* I pr'ythee, who?

*Cel.* O lord, lord! It is a hard matter for friends to meet; but mountains may be removed with earthquakes, and so encounter. \*

\* Unexperienced. † Delineated. ‡ Complexion.

\* Grave.

† Features.

*Ros.* Nay, but who is it?

*Cel.* Is it possible?

*Ros.* Nay, I pray thee now, with most petitionary vehemence, tell me who it is.

*Cel.* O wonderful, wonderful, and most wonderful wonderful, and yet again wonderful, and after that out of all whooping!

*Ros.* Good my complexion! dost thou think, though I am caparison'd like a man, I have a doublet and hose in my disposition? One inch of delay more is a South-sea off discovery. I prythee, tell me, who is it? quickly, and speak apace: I would thou couldst stammer, that thou might'st pour this conceal'd man out of thy mouth, as wine comes out of narrow-mouth'd bottle; either too much at once, or none at all. I prythee take the cork out of thy mouth, that I may drink thy tidings.

*Cel.* So you may put a man in your belly.

*Ros.* Is he of God's making? what manner of man? Is his head worth a hat, or his chin worth a beard?

*Cel.* Nay, he hath but a little beard.

*Ros.* Why, God will send more, if the man will be thankful: let me stay the growth of his beard, if thou delay me not the knowledge of his chin.

*Cel.* It is young Orlando; that tripped up the wrestler's heels, and your heart, both in an instant.

*Ros.* Nay, but the devil take mocking; speak sad brow, and true maid.

*Cel.* I'faith, coz, 'tis he.

*Ros.* Orlando?

*Cel.* Orlando.

*Ros.* Alas the day! what shall I do with my doublet and hose?—What did he, when thou saw'st him? What said he? How look'd he? Wherein went he? what makes he here? Did he ask for me? Where remains he? How parted he with thee? and when thou shalt see him again? Answer me in one word.

*Cel.* You must borrow me Garagantua's § mouth first: 'tis a word too great for any mouth of this age's size: To say, ay, and no, to these particulars, is more than to answer in a catechism.

*Ros.* But doth he know that I am in this forest, and in man's apparel? Looks he as freshly as he did the day he wrestled?

*Cel.* It is as easy to count atomies, ¶ as to resolve the propositions of a lover:—but take a taste of my finding him, and relish it with a good observance. I found him under a tree, like a dropp'd acorn.

*Ros.* It may well be called Jove's tree, when it drops forth such fruit.

*Cel.* Give me audience, good madam.

*Ros.* Proceed.

*Cel.* There lay he, stretched along, like a wounded knight.

*Ros.* Though it be pity to see such a sight, it well becomes the ground.

*Cel.* Cry, holla! to thy tongue, I prythee; it curvets very unseasonably. He was furnished like a hunter.

*Ros.* O ominous! he comes to kill my heart.

*Cel.* I would sing my song without a burden: thou bring'st me out of tune.

*Ros.* Do you not know I am a woman? when I think, I must speak. Sweet, say on.

*Enter ORLANDO and JAQUES.*

*Cel.* You bring me out:—Soft! comes he not here?

*Ros.* 'Tis he; sink by, and note him.

[CELIA and ROSALIND retire.]

*Jaq.* I thank you for your company; but, good faith, I had as lief have been myself alone.

*Orl.* And so had I; but yet, for fashion, sake I thank you too for your society.

\* Out of all measure.

† Sprak seriously and honestly. ‡ How was he dress'd?

§ The giant of Rabelais. ¶ Notes.

*Jaq.* God be with you; let's meet as little as we can.

*Orl.* I do desire we may be better strangers.

*Jaq.* I pray you, mar no more trees with writing love-sonnets on their barks.

*Orl.* I pray you, mar no more of my verses with reading them ill-favourably.

*Jaq.* Rosalind is your love's name?

*Orl.* Yes, just.

*Jaq.* I do not like her name.

*Orl.* There was no thought of pleasing you, when she was christened.

*Jaq.* What stature is she of?

*Orl.* Just as high as my heart.

*Jaq.* You are full of pretty answers: Have you not been acquainted with goldsmiths' wives, and conned them out of rings?

*Orl.* Not so; but I answer you right painted cloth,\* from whence you have studied your questions.

*Jaq.* You have a nimble wit; I think it was made of Atalanta's heels. Will you sit down with me? and we two will rail against our mistress the world, and our misery.

*Orl.* I will chide no breather in the world, but myself; against whom I know most faults.

*Jaq.* The worst fault you have, is to be in love.

*Orl.* 'Tis a fault I will not change for your best virtue. I am weary of you.

*Jaq.* By my toth, I was seeking for a fool, when I found you.

*Orl.* He is drowned in the brook; look but in and you shall see him.

*Jaq.* There shall I see mine own figure.

*Orl.* Which I take to be either a fool, or a cipher.

*Jaq.* I'll tarry no longer with you: farewell good signior love.

*Orl.* I am glad of your departure; adieu, good monsieur melancholy.

[Exit JAQUES.—CELIA and ROSALIND come forward.]

*Ros.* I will speak to him like a saucy lacquey, and under that habit play the knave with him.

—Do you hear, forester?

*Orl.* Very well; what would you?

*Ros.* I pray you, what is't a clock?

*Orl.* You should ask me, what time o'clock; there's no clock in the forest.

*Ros.* Then there is no true lover in the forest; else sighing every minute, and groaning every hour, would detect the lazy foot of time, as well as a clock.

*Orl.* And why not the swift foot of time? had not that been as proper?

*Ros.* By no means. So: Time travels in divers paces with divers persons: I'll tell you who time ambles withal, who time trots withal, who time gallops withal, and who he stands still withal.

*Orl.* I prythee, who doth he trot withal?

*Ros.* Marry, he trots hard with a young maid, between the contract of her marriage, and the day it is solemnized: if the interim be but a se'night, time's pace is so hard that it seems the length of seven years.

*Orl.* Who ambles time withal?

*Ros.* With a priest that lacks Latin, and a rich man that hath not the gout: for the one sleeps easily, because he cannot study; and the other lives merrily, because he feels no pain: the one lacking the burden of lean and wasteful learning; the other knowing no burden of heavy tedious penury: These time ambles withal.

*Orl.* Who doth he gallop withal?

*Ros.* With a thief to the gallows: for though he go as softly as foot can fall, he thinks himself too soon there.

*Orl.* Who stays it still withal?

*Ros.* With lawyers in the vacation: for they

\* An allusion to the moral sentences of old tapestry hangings.



sleep between term and term, and then they perceive not how time moves.

*Orl.* Where dwell you, pretty youth?

*Ros.* With this shepherdess, my sister; here in the skirts of the forest, like fringe upon a petticoat.

*Orl.* Are you native of this place?

*Ros.* As the covey, that you see dwell where she is kindled.

*Orl.* Your accent is something finer than you could purchase in so removed a dwelling.

*Ros.* I have been told so of many; but, indeed, an old religious uncle of mine taught me to speak, who was in his youth an inland man; one that knew courtship too well, for there he fell in love. And I thank God, I am not a woman, to be touched with so many giddy offences as he hath generally taxed their whole sex withal.

*Orl.* Can you remember any of the principal evils, that he laid to the charge of women?

*Ros.* There were none principal; they were all like one another, as halpence are: every one fault seeming monstrous, till his fellow fault came to match it.

*Orl.* I prythee, recount some of them.

*Ros.* No; I will not cast away my physic, but on those that are sick. There is a man haunts the forest, that abuses our young plants with carving Rosalind on their barks; haugs odes upon hawthorns, and elegies on brambles; all, forsooth, deifying the name of Rosalind: if I could meet that fancy-monger, I would give him some good counsel, for he seems to have the quotidian of love upon him.

*Orl.* I am he that is so love-shaken; I pray you, tell me your remedy.

*Ros.* There is none of my uncle's marks upon you: he taught me how to know a man in love; in which cage of rushes, I am sure, you are not prisoner.

*Orl.* What were his marks?

*Ros.* A lean cheek; which you have not: a blue eye, and sunken; which you have not: an unquestionable spirit; which you have not: a beard neglected; which you have not:—but I pardon you for that; for, simply, your having a beard is a younger brother's revenue:—Then your hose should be ungartered, your bonnet unbanded, your sleeve unbuttoned, your shoe untied, and every thing about you demonstrating a careless desolation. But you are no such man; you are rather point-device in your accoutrements; as loving yourself, than seeming the lover of any other.

*Orl.* Fair youth, I would I could make thee believe I love.

*Ros.* Me believe it? you may as soon make her that you love believe it; which, I warrant, she is apter to do, than to confess she does: that is one of the points in the which women still give the lie to their consciences. But, in good sooth, are you he that hangs the verses on the trees, wherein Rosalind is so admired?

*Orl.* I swear to thee, youth, by the white hand of Rosalind, I am that he, that unfortunate he.

*Ros.* But are you so much in love as your rhymes speak?

*Orl.* Neither rhyme nor reason can express how much.

*Ros.* Love is merely a madness; and I tell you, deserves as well a dark house and a whip, as madmen do: and the reason why they are not so punished and cured, is, that the lunacy is so ordinary, that the whippers are in love too: Yet I profess curing it by counsel.

*Orl.* Did you ever cure any so?

*Ros.* Yes, one; and in this manner. He was to imagine me his love, his mistress; and I set him every day to woo me: At which

time would I, being but a moonish youth, grieve, be effeminate, changeable, longing, and liking; proud, fantastical, apish, shallow, inconstant, full of tears, full of smiles; for every passion something, and for no passion truly any thing, as boys and women are for the most part cattle of this colour: would now like him, now loath him; then entertain him, then forswear him; now weep for him, then spit at him; that I drove my sutor from his mad humour of love, to a living humour of madness; which was, to forswear the full stream of the world, and to live in a nook merely monastic: And thus I cured him; and this way will I take upon me to wash your liver as clean as a sound sheep's heart, that there shall not be one spot of love in't.

*Orl.* I would not be cured, youth.

*Ros.* I would cure you, if you would but call me Rosalind, and come every day to my cote, and woo me.

*Orl.* Now, by the faith of my love, I will; tell me where it is.

*Ros.* Go with me to it, and I'll show it you: and by the way, you shall tell me where in the forest you live: Will you go?

*Orl.* With all my heart, good youth.

*Ros.* Nay, you must call me Rosalind:—Come, sister, will you go? [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III.

Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY; JAQUES at a distance, observing them.

*Touch.* Come, apace, good Audrey; I will fetch up your goats, Audrey: And how, Audrey, I am I the man yet? Doth my simple feature content you?

*Aud.* Your features! Lord warrant us! what features?

*Touch.* I am am here with thee and thy goats, as the most capricious poet, honest Ovid, was among the Goths.

*Jaq.* O knowledge ill-inhabited! worse than Jove in a thatch'd house! [Aside.]

*Touch.* When a man's verses cannot be understood, nor a man's good wit seconded with the forward child, understanding, it strikes a man more dead than a great reckoning in a little room:—Truly, I would the gods had made thee poetical.

*Aud.* I do not know what poetical is: Is it honest in deed and word? Is it a true thing?

*Touch.* No, truly; for the truest poetry is the most feigning; and lovers are given to poetry; and what they swear in poetry, may be said, as lovers, they do feign.

*Aud.* Do you wish then, that the gods had made me poetical?

*Touch.* I do, truly; for thou swear'st to me, thou art honest; now, if thou wert a poet, I might have some hope thou didst feign.

*Aud.* Would you not have me honest?

*Touch.* No, truly, unless thou wert hard-favour'd: for honesty coupled to beauty, is to have honey a sauce to sugar.

*Jaq.* A material fool! § [Aside.]

*Aud.* Well, I am not fair; and therefore I pray the gods make me honest!

*Touch.* Truly, and to cast away honesty upon a foul slut, were to put good meat into an unclean dish.

*Aud.* I am not a slut, though I thank the gods I am foul: ||

*Touch.* Well, praised be the gods for thy foulness! slutfulness may come hereafter. But be it as it may be, I will marry thee: and to that end, I have been with Sir Oliver Martext, the vicar of the next village; who hath promised to meet me in this place of the forest, and to couple us.

*Jaq.* I would fain see this meeting. [Aside.]

\* Sequestered

† Civilized.

‡ A spirit adverse to conversation.

§ Entice.

|| Over-exact.

\* Variable.

† Lascivious.

‡ Ill-lodged.

§ A fool with matter in him

|| Homely.

*Aud.* Well, the gods give us joy!

*Touch.* Amen. A man may, if he were of a fearful heart, stagger in this attempt; for here we have no temple but the wood, no assembly but horn-beasts. But what though? Courage! As horns are odious, they are necessary. It is said,—Many a man knows no end of his goods: right: many a man has good horns, and knows no end of them. Well, that is the dowry of his wife, 'tis none of his own getting. Horns? Even so:—Poor men alone;—No, no; the noblest deer hath them as huge as the rascal.\* Is the single man therefore blessed? No: as a wall'd town is more worthy than a village, so is the forehead of a married man, more honourable than the bare brow of a bachelor: and by how much defence † is better than no skill, by so much is a horn more precious than to want.

*Enter Sir OLIVER MARTEXT.*

Here comes Sir Oliver:—Sir Oliver Martext, you are well met: Will you despatch us here under this tree, or shall we go with you to your chapel?

*Sir Oli.* Is there none here to give the woman?

*Touch.* I will not take her on gift of any man.

*Sir Oli.* Truly, she must be given, or the marriage is not lawful.

*Jaq.* [Discovering himself.] Proceed, proceed; I'll give her.

*Touch.* Good even, good master *What ye call't*. How do you, Sir? You are very well met; God'll you; for your last company: I am very glad to see you:—Even a toy in hand here, Sir:—Nay; pray, be cover'd.

*Jaq.* Will you be married, motley?

*Touch.* As the ox hath his bow, ‡ Sir, the horse his curb, and the falcon her bells, so man hath his desires; and as pigeons bill, so wedlock would be nibbling.

*Jaq.* And will you, being a man of your breeding, he married under a bush, like a beggar? Get you to church, and have a good priest that can tell you what marriage is: this fellow will but join you together as they join wainscot; then one of you will prove a shrunk pannel, and, like green timber, warp, warp.

*Touch.* I am not in the mind but I were better to be married of him than of another: for he is not like to marry me well; and not being well married, it will be a good excuse for me hereafter to leave my wife. [Aside.]

*Jaq.* Go thou with me, and let me counsel thee.

*Touch.* Come, sweet Audrey: We must be married, or we must live in bawdry. Farewell, good master Oliver!

Not—O sweet Oliver,

O brave Oliver,

Leave me not behi' thee;

But—Wind away,

Begone, I say,

I will not to wedding wi' thee.

[*Exit* JAQ. *TOUCH.* and *AUDREY.*]

*Sir Oli.* 'Tis no matter: ne'er a fantastical knave of them all shall flout me out of my calling. [*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—The same.—Before a Cottage.

*Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

*Ros.* Never talk to me, I will weep.

*Cel.* Do, I pr'y thee; but yet have the grace to consider, that tears do not become a man.

*Ros.* But have I not cause to weep?

*Cel.* As good cause as one would desire; therefore weep.

*Ros.* His very hair is of the dissembling colour.

\* Lean deer are called rascal deer

† The art of fencing.

‡ Yoke.

§ God reward you.

*Cel.* Something browner than Judas': marry his kisses are Judas' own children.

*Ros.* I'faith, his hair is of a good colour.

*Cel.* An excellent colour: your chesnut was ever the only colour.

*Ros.* And his kissing is as full of sanctity as the touch of holy bread.

*Cel.* He hath brought a pair of cast lips of Diana: a nun of winter's sisterhood kisses not more religiously: the very ice of chastity is in them.

*Ros.* But why did he swear he would come this morning, and comes not?

*Cel.* Nay certainly, there is no truth in him.

*Ros.* Do you think so?

*Cel.* Yes: I think he is not a pick-purse, nor a horse-stealer; but for his verity in love, I do think him as concave as a cover'd goblet, or a worm-eaten nut.

*Ros.* Not true in love?

*Cel.* Yes, when he is in; but, I think, he is not in.

*Ros.* You have heard him swear downright he was.

*Cel.* Was is not is: besides, the oath of a lover is no stranger than the word of a tapster; they are both the confirmers of false reckonings: He attends here in the forest on the duke your father.

*Ros.* I met the duke yesterday, and had much question\* with him: He asked me, of what parentage I was: I told him, of as good as he; so he laugh'd, and let me go. But what talk we of fathers, when there is such a man as Orlando?

*Cel.* Oh! that's a brave man! he writes brave verses, speaks brave words, swears brave oaths, and breaks them bravely, quite traverse, athwart the heart of his lover; † as a puny tilter that spurs his horse but on one side, breaks his staff like a noble goose; but all's brave, that youth mounts and folly guides:—Who comes here?

*Enter CORIN.*

*Cor.* Mistress, and master, you have oft inquired

After the shepherd ‡ that complain'd of love; Who you saw sitting by me on the turf, Praising the proud disdainful shepherdess That was his mistress.

*Cel.* Well, and what of him?

*Cor.* If you will see a pageant truly play'd, Between the pale complexion of true love And the red glow of scorn and proud disdain, Go hence a little, and I shall conduct you, If you will mark it.

*Ros.* Oh! come, let us remove;

The sight of lovers feedeth those in love:—

Bring us unto this sight, and you shall say

I'll prove a busy actor in their play. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—Another part of the Forest.

*Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE.*

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe, do not scorn me; do not, Phebe:

Say, that you love me not; but say not so In bitterness: The common executioner, Whose heart the accustom'd sight of death makes hard,

Falls not the axe upon the humbled neck, But first begs pardon: Will you sterner be Than he that dies and lives by bloody drops?

*Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and CORIN, at a distance.*

*Phc.* I would not be thy executioner; I fly thee, for I would not injure thee. Thou tell'st me, there is murder in mine eye. 'Tis pretty, sure, and very probable,

\* Conversation.

† Mistress.

That eyes,—that are the fraill'st and softest things,  
Who shut their coward gates on atomies,—  
Should be call'd tyrants, butchers, murderers!  
Now I do frown on thee with all my heart;  
And, if mine eyes can wound, now let them kill thee;

Now counterfeit to swoon; why now fall down;  
Or, if thou canst not, oh! for shame, for shame,

Lie not, to say mine eyes are murderers.  
Now show the wound mine eye hath made in thee:

Scratch thee but with a pin, and there remains  
Some scar of it; lean but upon a rush  
The cicatrice and capable impressure  
Thy palm some moment keeps: but now mine eyes,

Which I have darted at thee, hurt thee not;  
Nor, I am sure, there is no force in eyes  
That can do hurt.

*Sil.* O dear Phebe,  
If ever, (as that ever may be near,)  
You meet in some fresh cheek the power of  
fancy,

Then shall you know the wounds invisible  
That love's keen arrows make.

*Phe.* But, till that time,  
Come not thou near me: and, when that time comes,

Afflict me with thy mocks, pity me not;  
As, till that time, I shall not pity thee.

*Ros.* And why, I pray you? [*Advancing.*] Who  
might be your mother,  
That you insult, exult, and all at once,  
Over the wretched! What though you have  
more beauty,

(As, by my faith, I see no more in you  
Than without candle may go dark to bed,)  
Must you be therefore proud and pitiless?  
Why, what means this? Why do you look on me?

I see no more in you, than in the ordinary  
Of nature's sale-work:—Od's my little life!  
I think she means to tangle my eyes too:—  
No, 'faith, proud mistress, hope not after it;  
'Tis not your inky brows, your black-silk hair,  
Your huckle-eye-balls, nor your cheek of cream,  
That can entame my spirit to your worship.—  
You foolish shepherd, wherefore do you follow  
her,

Like foggy south, puffing with wind and rain?  
You are a thousand times a properer man,  
Than she a woman: 'Tis such fools as you,  
That make the world full of ill-favour'd children:

'Tis not her glass, but you, that flatters her;  
And out of you she sees herself more proper,  
Than any of her lineaments can show her.—

But, mistress, know yourself; down on your  
knees,

And thank heaven, fasting, for a good man's  
love:

For I must tell you friendly in your ear,—  
Sell when you can; you are not for all markets:  
Cry the man mercy: love him; take his  
offer;

Foul is most foul, being foul to be a scoffer.  
So take her to thee, shepherd:—fare you well.

*Phe.* Sweet youth, I pray you chide a year  
together;

I had rather hear you chide, than this man woo.

*Ros.* He's fallen in love with her foulness, and  
she'll fall in love with my anger: If it be so, as  
fast as she answers thee with frowning looks, I'll  
saunce her with bitter words.—Why look you so  
upon me?

*Phe.* For no ill will I bear you.

*Ros.* I pray you, do not fall in love with  
me,

For I am faler than vows made in wine:  
Besides, I like you not: If you will know my  
house,

'Tis at the tuft of olives, here hard by:—  
Will you go, sister?—Shepherd, ply her hard:—  
Come, sister:—Shepherdess, look on him better,  
And be not proud: though all the world could  
see,  
None could be so abus'd in sight as he.

Come, to our flock.

[*Exeunt ROSALIND, CELIA, and CORIN.*]

*Phe.* Dead shepherd! now I find they saw of  
might;

*Who ever lov'd, that lov'd not at first sight?*

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe,—

*Phe.* Ha! what say'st thou, Silvius?

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe, pity me.

*Phe.* Why, I am sorry for thee, gentle Sil-  
vius.

*Sil.* Wherever sorrow is, relief would be;

If you do sorrow at my grief in love,  
By giving love, your sorrow and my grief  
Were both extermin'd.

*Phe.* Thou hast my love; Is not that neigh-  
bourly?

*Sil.* I would have you.

*Phe.* Why, that were covetousness.

Silvius, the time was, that I hated thee;  
And yet it is not, that I bear thee love:  
But since that thou canst talk of love so well,

Thy company, which erst was irksome to me,  
I will endure; and I'll employ thee too:  
But do not look for further recompense,  
Than thine own gladness that thou art em-  
ploy'd.

*Sil.* So holy, and so perfect is my love,  
And I in such a poverty of grace,  
That I shall think it a most plentiful crop  
To glean the broken ears after the man  
That the main harvest reaps; loose now and  
then

A scatter'd smile, and that I'll live upon.

*Phe.* Know'st thou the youth that spoke to me  
ere while?

*Sil.* Not very well, but I have met him oft;  
And he hath bought the cottage, and the  
bounds,

That the old carlot \* once was master of.

*Phe.* Think not I love him, though I ask for  
him;

'Tis but a peevish boy:—yet he talks well;—

But what care I for words? yet words do well,

When he that speaks them pleases those that  
hear

It is a pretty youth:—not very pretty:—

But, sure, he's proud; and yet his pride be-  
comes him:

He'll make a proper man: The best thing in  
him

Is his complexion; and faster than his tongue

Did make offence, his eye did heal it up.

He is not tall; yet for his years he's tall:

His leg is but so so; and yet 'tis well:

There was a pretty redness in his lip;

A little ripier and more lusty red

Than that mix'd in his cheek; 'twas just the  
difference

Betwixt the constant red, and mingled damask.

There be some women, Silvius, had they mark'd  
him

In parcels as I did, would have gone near

To fall in love with him: but, for my part,

I love him not, nor hate him not; and yet

I have more cause to hate him than to love  
him:

For what had he to do to chide at me?

He said, mine eyes were black, and my hair

black;

And, now I am remember'd, scorn'd at me:

I marvel, why I answer'd not again:

But that's all one; omittance is no quittance.

I'll write to him a very taunting letter,

And thou shalt bear it: Wilt thou, Silvius?

*Sil.* Phebe, with all my heart.

*Phe.* I'll write it straight;

The matter's in my head, and in my heart:  
I will be bitter with him, and passing short:  
Go with me, Silvius.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*The same.*

*Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and JAKES.*

*Jaq.* I prythee, pretty youth, let me be better acquainted with thee.

*Ros.* They say, you are a melancholy fellow.

*Jaq.* I am so; I do love it better than laughing.

*Ros.* Those, that are in extremity of either are abominable fellows; and betray themselves to every modern censure, worse than drunkards.

*Jaq.* Why, 'tis good to be sad and say nothing.

*Ros.* Why then, 'tis good to be a poet.

*Jaq.* I have neither the scholar's melancholy, which is emulation; nor the musician's, which is fantastical; nor the courtier's, which is proud; nor the soldier's, which is ambitious; nor the lawyer's, which is politic; nor the lady's, which is nice; nor the lover's, which is all these: but it is a melancholy of mine own, compounded of many simples, extracted from many objects: and, indeed, the sundry contemplation of my travels, in which my often rumination wraps me, is a most humorous sadness.

*Ros.* A traveller! By my faith, you have great reason to be sad: I fear, you have sold your own lands, to see other men's; then, to have seen much, and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands.

*Jaq.* Yes, I have gained my experience.

*Enter ORLANDO.*

*Ros.* And your experience makes you sad: I had rather have a fool to make me merry, than experience to make me sad; and to travel for it too.

*Orl.* Good day, and happiness, dear Rosalind!

*Jaq.* Nay then, God be wi' you, an you talk in blank verse. [*Exit.*]

*Ros.* Farewell, monsieur traveller: Look, you hiss, and wear strange suits; disable all the benefits of your own country; be out of love with your nativity, and almost chide God for making you that countenance you are; or I will scarce think you have swam in a gondola.—Why, how now, Orlando! where have you been all this while? You a lover?—An you serve me such another trick, never come in my sight more.

*Orl.* My fair Rosalind, I come within an hour of my promise.

*Ros.* Break an hour's promise in love? He that will divide a minute into a thousand parts, and break but a part of the thousandth part of a minute in the affairs of love, it may be said of him, that Cupid hath clapped him o' the shoulder, but I warrant him heart-whole.

*Orl.* Pardou me, dear Rosalind.

*Ros.* Nay, an you be so tardy, come no more in my sight; I had as lief be wooed of a snail.

*Orl.* Of a snail?

*Ros.* Ay, of a snail: for though he comes slowly, he carries his house on his head; a better jointure, I think, than you can make a woman: Besides, he brings his destiny with him.

*Orl.* What's that?

*Ros.* Why, horns; which such as you are fain to be beholden to your wives for: but he comes

armed in his fortune, and prevents the slander of his wife.

*Orl.* Virtue is no horn-maker; and my Rosalind is virtuous.

*Ros.* And I am your Rosalind.

*Cel.* It pleases him to call you so; but he hath a Rosalind of a better leer<sup>a</sup> than you.

*Ros.* Come, woo me; for now I am in a holiday humour, and like enough to consent: What would you say to me now, an I were your very very Rosalind?

*Orl.* I would kiss, before I spoke.

*Ros.* Nay, you were better speak first; and when you were gravelled for lack of matter, you might take occasion to kiss. Very good orators, when they are out, they will spit; and for lovers, lacking (God warn us!) matter, the cleanliest shift is to kiss.

*Orl.* How if the kiss be denied?

*Ros.* Then she puts you to entreaty, and there begins new matter.

*Orl.* Who could be out, being before his beloved mistress?

*Ros.* Marry, that should you, if I were your mistress; or I should think my honesty ranker than my wit.

*Orl.* What, of my suit?

*Ros.* Not out of your apparel, and yet out of your suit. Am not I your Rosalind?

*Orl.* I take some joy to say you are, because I would be talking of her.

*Ros.* Well, in her person, I say—I will not have you.

*Orl.* Then, in mine own person, I die.

*Ros.* No, faith, die by attorney. The poor world is almost six thousand years old, and in all this time there was not any man died in his own person, *videlicet*, in a love-cause. Troilus had his brains dashed out with a Grecian club; yet he did what he could to die before; and he is one of the patterns of love. Leander, he would have lived many a fair year, though Hero had turned nun, if it had not been for a hot midsummer night: for, good youth, he went but forth to wash him in the Hellespont, and, being taken with the cramp, was drowned; and the foolish chroniclers of that age found it was—Hero of Sestos. But these are all lies; men have died from time to time, and worms have eaten them, but not for love.

*Orl.* I would not have my right Rosalind of this mind; for, I protest, her frown might kill me.

*Ros.* By this hand, it will not kill a fly: But come, now I will be your Rosalind in a more coming-on disposition; and ask me what you will, I will grant it.

*Orl.* Then love me, Rosalind.

*Ros.* Yes, faith will I, Fridays and Saturdays, and all.

*Orl.* And wilt thou have me?

*Ros.* Ay, and twenty such.

*Orl.* What say'st thou?

*Ros.* Are you not good?

*Orl.* I hope so.

*Ros.* Why then, can one desire too much of a good thing?—Come, sister, you shall be the priest, and marry us.—Give me your hand, Orlando:—What do you say, sister?

*Orl.* Pray thee, marry us.

*Cel.* I cannot say the words.

*Ros.* You must begin,—*Will you Orlando,*—

*Cel.* Go to:—Will you, Orlando, have to wife this Rosalind?

*Orl.* I will.

*Ros.* Ay, but when?

*Orl.* Why now; as fast as she can marry us.

*Ros.* Then you must say,—*I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.*

*Orl.* I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.

*Ros.* I might ask you for your commission; but,—I do take thee, Orlando, for my husband:

\* Trifling.

† Undervalues.

\* Complexion.

There a girl goes before the priest; and, certainly, a woman's thought runs before her actions.

*Orl.* So do all thoughts; they are winged.

*Ros.* Now tell me, how long you would have her, after you have possessed her.

*Orl.* For ever, and a day.

*Ros.* Say a day, without the ever: No, no, Orlando; men are April when they woo, December when they wed: maids are May when they are maids, but the sky changes when they are wives. I will be more jealous of thee than a Barbary cock-pigeon over his hen; more clamorous than a parrot against rain; more new-fangled than an ape; more giddy in my desires than a monkey: I will weep for nothing, like Diana in the fountain, and I will do that when you are disposed to be merry; I will laugh like a hyacinth, and that when thou art inclined to sleep.

*Orl.* But will my Rosalind do so?

*Ros.* By my life, she will do as I do.

*Orl.* Oh! but she is wise.

*Ros.* Or else she could not have the wit to do this: the wisest, the waywarder: Make the doors\* upon a woman's wit, and it will out at the casement; shut that, and 'twill out at the key-hole: stop that, 'twill fly with the smoke out at the chimney.

*Orl.* A man that had a wife with such a wit, he might say,—Wit, whither wilt?

*Ros.* Nay, you might keep that check for it, till you met your wife's wit going to your neighbour's bed.

*Orl.* And what wit could wit have to excuse that?

*Ros.* Marry, to say,—she came to seek you there. You shall never take her without her answer, unless you take her without her tongue. Oh! that woman that cannot make her fault her husband's occasion, let her never nurse her child herself, for she will breed it like a fool.

*Orl.* For these two hours, Rosalind, I will leave thee.

*Ros.* Alas! dear love, I cannot lack thee two hours.

*Orl.* I must attend the duke at dinner; by two o'clock\* I will be with thee again.

*Ros.* Ay, go your ways, go your ways;—I knew what you would prove; my friends told me as much, and I thought no less:—that flattering tongue of your's won me: 'tis but one cast away, and so,—come, death.—Two o'clock is your hour?

*Orl.* Ay, sweet Rosalind.

*Ros.* By my troth, and in good earnest, and so God mend me, and by all pretty oaths that are not dangerous, if you break one jot of your promise, or come one minute behind your hour, I will think you the most pathological break-promise, and the most hollow lover, and the most unworthy of her you call Rosalind, that may be chosen out of the gross band of the unfaithful: therefore beware my censure, and keep your promise.

*Orl.* With no less religion, than if thou wert indeed my Rosalind: So adieu,

*Ros.* Well time is the old justice that examines all such offenders, and let time try: Adieu!

[Exit ORLANDO.]

*Cel.* You have simply misused our sex in your love-prate: we must have your doublet and hose plucked over your head, and show the world what the bird hath done to her own nest.

*Ros.* O coz, coz, coz, my pretty little coz, that thou didst know how many fathom deep I am in love! But it cannot be sounded; my affection hath an unknown bottom, like the bay of Portugal.

*Cel.* Or rather bottomless; that as fast as you pour affection in, it runs out.

*Ros.* No, that same wicked bastard of Venus that was begot of thought,\* conceived of spleen, and born of madness; that blind rascally boy, that abuses every one's eyes, because his own are out, let him be judge, how deep I am in love:—I'll tell thee, Aliena, I cannot be out of the sight of Orlando: I'll go find a shadow, and sigh till he come.

*Cel.* And I'll sleep.

[Exit Ros.]

SCENE II.—Another part of the Forest.†

Enter JACQUES and LORDS, in the habit of Foresters.

*Jaq.* Which is he that killed the deer?

1 *Lord.* Sir, it was I.

*Jaq.* Let's present him to the duke, like a Roman conqueror; and it would do well to set the deer's horns upon his head, for a branch of victory:—Have you no song, forester, for this purpose.

2 *Lord.* Yes, Sir.

*Jaq.* Sing it; 'tis no matter how it be in tune, so it make noise enough.

SONG.

1. *What shall he have, that kill'd the deer*

2. *His leather skin, and horns to wear,*

1. *Then sing him home:*

*Take thou no scorn to wear the* The rest shall bear this burden.

*It was a crest ere thou wast born:*

1. *Thy father's father wore it:*

2. *And thy father bore it:*

*All.* *The horn, the horn, the lusty horn,  
Is not a thing to laugh to scorn.*

[Exit Ros.]

SCENE III.—The forest.

Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.

*Ros.* How say you now? Is it not past two o'clock† and here much Orlando!

*Cel.* I warrant you, with pure love, and troubled brain, he hath ta'en his bow and arrows, and is gone forth—to sleep: Look, who comes here.

Enter SILVIUS.

*Sil.* My errand is to you, fair youth;—My gentle Phebe bid me give you this:

[Giving a letter.]

I know not the contents; but, as I guess,

By the stern brow, and waspish action

Which she did use as she was writing of it,

It bears an angry tenor: pardon me,

I am but as a guiltless messenger.

*Ros.* Patience herself would startle at this letter,

And play the swaggerer: bear this, bear all:

She says, I am not fair; that I lack manners;

She calls me proud; and, that she could not love me

Were man as rare as phoenix; O'd's my will!

Her love is not the hare that I hunt:

Why writes she so to me?—Well, shepherd, well,

This is a letter of your own device.

*Sil.* No, I protest, I know not the contents;

Phebe did write it.

*Ros.* Come, come, you are a fool,

And turn'd into the extremity of love.

I saw her hand: she has a leathern hand,

A freestone-colour'd hand; I verily did think

That her old gloves were on, but 'twas her hands;

She has a huswife's hand: but that's no matter! I say, she never did invent this letter;

This is a man's invention, and his hand.

*Sil.* Sure, it is her's.

*Ros.* Why, 'tis a boisterous and cruel style;

\* Melancholy

† This noisy scene is introduced merely to fill up an interval which is to represent two hours.

\* Bar the doors.

A style for challengers; why, she dedes me,  
Like Turk to Christian: woman's gentle brain  
Could not drop forth such giant-rude invention,  
Such Ethiop words, blacker in their effect  
Than in their countenance:—Will you hear the  
letter?

*Sil.* So please you, for I never heard it yet;  
Yet heard too much of Phebe's cruelty.

*Ros.* She Phebes me: Mark how the tyrant  
writes.

*Art thou god to shepherd turn'd, [Reads.  
That a maiden's heart hath burn'd!—*

Can a woman rail thus?

*Sil.* Call you this railing?

*Ros.* Why, thy godhead laid apart,  
Warr'st thou with a woman's heart?

Did you ever hear such railing?—

*Whiles the eye of man did woo me,  
That could do too vengeance\* to me.—*

Meaning me a beast.—

*If the scorn of your bright cyme †  
Hate you'r to raise such love in mine,  
Alack, in me what strange effect  
Would they work in mild aspect?  
Whiles you chid me, I do love;  
How then might your prayers move?  
He, that brings this love to thee,  
Little knows this love in me:  
And by him seal up thy mind;  
If hether that thy youth and kind;  
Will the faithful offer take  
Of me, and all that I can make;  
Or else by him my love deny,  
And then I'll study how to die.*

*Sil.* Call you this chiding?

*Cel.* Alas! poor shepherd!

*Ros.* Do not pity him? no he deserves no  
pity.—Will thou love such a woman?—What,  
to make thee an instrument, and play false strains  
upon thee! not to be endured!—Well, go your  
way to her, (for I see, love hath made thee a  
tame snake,) and say this to her:—That if she  
love me, I charge her to love thee: if she will  
not, I will never have her, unless thou entreat  
for her.—If you be a true lover, hence, and not  
a word; for here comes more company.

[Exit SILVIUS.

Enter OLIVER.

*Ol.* Good-morrow, fair one: Pray you, if  
you know

Where, in the purlieus ‡ of this forest, stands  
A sheep cote, fence'd about with olive-trees?

*Cel.* West of this place, down in the neighbour  
bottom,

The rank of osiers by the murmuring stream,  
Left on your right hand, brings you to the  
place:

But at this hour the house doth keep itself,  
There's none within.

*Ol.* If that an eye may profit by a tongue,  
Then I should know you by description;  
Such garments, and such years: The boy is  
fair,

Of female favour, and bestows himself  
Like a ripe sister: but the woman low,  
And browner than her brother. Are not  
you

The owner of the house I did enquire for?

*Cel.* It is no boast, being ask'd, to say, we  
are.

*Ol.* Orlando doth commend him to you  
both;

And to that youth, he calls his Rosalind,  
He sends this bloody napkin: † Are you he?

*Ros.* I am: What must we understand by  
this?

*Ol.* Some of my shame; if you will know of  
me

What man I am, and how, and why, and where  
This handkerchief was stain'd.

*Cel.* I pray you, tell it.

*Ol.* When last the young Orlando parted from  
you,

He left a promise to return again

Within an hour; and, pacing through the  
forest,

Chewing the food of sweet and bitter fancy,  
Lo, what befel! he threw his eye aside,

And, mark, what object did present itself!

Under an oak, whose boughs were moss'd with  
age,

And high top bald with dry antiquity,  
A wretched ragged man, o'ergrown with hair,

Lay sleeping on his back: about his neck  
A green and gilded snake had wreath'd itself,

Who with her head, numble in threats, ap-  
proach'd

The opening of his mouth; but suddenly

Seeing Orlando, it unlink'd itself,

And with indentèd glides did slip away

Into a bush: under which bush's shade

A honess, with udders all drawn dry,

Lay couching, head on ground, with cat-like

watch,

When that the sleeping man should stir; for 'tis

The royal disposition of that beast,

To prey on nothing that doth seem as dead:

This seen, Orlando did approach the man,

And found it was his brother, his elder brother.

*Cel.* Oh! I have heard him speak of that same

brother;

And he did render\* him the most unnatural

that liv'd 'mongst men.

*Ol.* And well he might so do,

For well I know he was unnatural.

*Ros.* But, to Orlando;—Did he leave him

there,

Food to the suck'd and hungry honess?

*Ol.* Twice did he turn his back, and pur-  
pos'd so:

But kindness, nobler ever than revenge,

And nature, stronger than his just occasion,

Made him give battle to the honess,

Who quickly fell before him: in which batt-  
ling †

From miserable slumber I awak'd.

*Cel.* Are you his brother?

*Ros.* Was it you he rescu'd?

*Cel.* Was't you that did so oft contrive to kill  
him?

*Ol.* 'Twas I; but 'tis not I: I do not shame

To tell you what I was, since my conversion

So sweetly tastes, being the thing I am.

*Ros.* But, for the bloody napkin?—

*Ol.* By, and by.

When from the first to last, betwixt us two,

Tears our recountments had most kindly bath'd,

As, how I came into that desert place;—

In brief, he led me to the gentle duke,

Who gave me fresh array and entertainment,

Committing me unto my brother's love;

Who led me instantly into his cave,

There stripp'd himself, and here upon his arm

The honess had torn some flesh away,

Which all this while had bled; and now he

fainted,

And cry'd, in fainting, upon Rosalind.

Brief, I recover'd him; bound up his wound;

And, after some small space, being strong at

heart,

He sent me hither, stranger as I am

To tell this story, that you might excuse

His broken promise, and to give this napkin,

Dy'd in blood, unto the shepherd youth

That he in sport doth call his Rosalind.

*Cel.* Why, how now, Gaiumede? ‡ sweet Gai-  
umede? [ROSALIND faints

*Ol.* Many will swoon when they do look on  
blood.

\* Mischief.  
‡ Nature.

† Eyes.  
‡ Environs of a forest  
‡ Handkerchief.

\* Describes.

† Scuffle

*Cel.* There is more in it:—Cousin—Gany-  
mede.

*Oli.* Look, he recovers.

*Ros.* I would I were at home.

*Cel.* We'll lead you thither:

I pray you, will you take him by the arm?

*Oli.* Be of good cheer, youth:—You a man?—  
You lack a man's heart.

*Ros.* I do so, I confess it. Ah! Sir, a body  
would think this was well counterfeited: I pray  
you, tell your brother how well I counterfeited.  
—Heigh ho!—

*Oli.* This was not counterfeited; there is too  
great testimony in your complexion, that it was  
a passion of earnest.

*Ros.* Counterfeit, I assure you.

*Oli.* Well then, take a good heart, and coun-  
terfeit to be a man.

*Ros.* So I do: but, i'faith I should have been  
a woman by right.

*Cel.* Come, you look paler and paler; pray  
you, draw homewards:—Good Sir, go with us.

*Oli.* That will I, for I must bear answer  
back

How you excuse my brother, Rosalind.

*Ros.* I shall devise something: But I pray  
you, commend my counterfeiting to him:—Will  
you go? *[Exeunt.]*

#### ACT V.

##### SCENE I.—The same.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.*

*Touch.* We shall find a time, Audrey; pa-  
tience, gentle Audrey.

*Aud.* 'Faith, the priest was good enough, for  
all the old gentleman's saying.

*Touch.* A most wicked Sir Oliver, Audrey, a  
most vile Martext. But, Audrey, there is a  
youth here in the forest lays claim to you.

*Aud.* Ay, I know who 'tis, he that hath no  
interest in me in the world: here comes the  
man you mean.

*Enter WILLIAM.*

*Touch.* It is meat and drink to me to see a  
clown: By my troth we that have good wits,  
have much to answer for; we shall be flouting;  
we cannot hold.

*Will.* Good even, Audrey.

*Aud.* God ye good even, William.

*Will.* And good even to you, Sir.

*Touch.* Good even, gentle friend: Cover thy  
head, cover thy head; nay, pr'ythee, be covered.  
How old are you, friend?

*Will.* Five and twenty, Sir.

*Touch.* A ripe age: Is thy name, William?

*Will.* William, Sir.

*Touch.* A fair name: Wast born i'the forest  
here?

*Will.* Ay, Sir, I thank God.

*Touch.* Thank God;—a good answer: Art  
rich?

*Will.* 'Faith, Sir, so, so.

*Touch.* So, so, is good, very good, very ex-  
cellent good:—and yet it is not; it is but so so,  
Art thou wise?

*Will.* Ay, Sir, I have a pretty wit.

*Touch.* Why, thou say'st well. I do now re-  
member a saying: *The fool doth think he is  
wise, but the wise man knows himself to be  
a fool.* The heathen philosopher, when he had  
a desire to eat a grape, would open his lips  
when he put it into his mouth; meaning thereby,  
that grapes were made to eat, and lips to open.  
You do love this maid?

*Will.* I do, Sir.

*Touch.* Give me your hand: Art thou learned?

*Will.* No, Sir.

*Touch.* Then learn this of me; To have, is to

have: For it is a figure in rhetoric, that drips,  
being poured out of a cup into a glass, by filling  
the one doth empty the other: For all your writ-  
ters do consent, that *ipse* is he; now you are  
not *ipse*, for I am he.

*Will.* Which he, Sir?

*Touch.* He, Sir, that must marry this woman:  
Therefore, you clown, abandon,—which is in the  
vulgar, leave,—the society,—which in the boorish  
is, company,—of this female,—which in the com-  
mon is, woman,—which together is, abandon  
the society of this female, or, clown, thou  
perishest; or, to thy better understanding, diest;  
to wit, I kill thee, make thee away, translate  
thy life into death, thy liberty into bondage: I  
will deal in poison with thee, or in bastinado,  
or in steel; I will bandy with thee in faction; I  
will o'er-run thee with policy; I will kill thee a  
hundred and fifty ways; therefore tremble and  
depart.

*Aud.* Do, good William.

*Will.* God rest you merry, Sir. *[Exit.]*

*Enter CORIN.*

*Cor.* Our master and mistress seek you; come  
away, away.

*Touch.* Trip, Audrey, trip, Audrey;—I attend,  
I attend. *[Exeunt.]*

##### SCENE II.—The same.

*Enter ORLANDO and OLIVER.*

*Ori.* Is't possible, that on so little acquaintance  
you should like her? that, but seeing, you should  
love her? and, loving, woo? and, wooing, she  
should grant? and will you persevere to enjoy  
her?

*Oli.* Neither call the giddiness of it in ques-  
tion, the poverty of her, the small acquaintance,  
my sudden wooing, nor her sudden consenting;  
but say with me, I love Aliena; say with her,  
that she loves me; consent with both, that we  
may enjoy each other: it shall be to your good,  
for my father's house, and all the revenue that  
was old Sir Rowland's will I estate upon you,  
and here live and die a shepherd.

*Enter ROSALIND.*

*Ori.* You have my consent. Let your wed-  
ding be to-morrow: thither will I invite the  
duke, and all his contented followers: Go you,  
and prepare Aliena; for, look you, here comes  
my Rosalind.

*Ros.* God save you, brother.

*Oli.* And you, fair sister.

*Ros.* O my dear Orlando, how it grieves me  
to see thee wear thy heart in a scarf.

*Ori.* It is my arm.

*Ros.* I thought thy heart had been wounded  
with the claws of a lion.

*Ori.* Wounded it is, but with the eyes of a  
lady.

*Ros.* Did young brother tell you how I coun-  
terfeited to swoon, when he showed me your  
handkerchief?

*Ori.* Ay, and greater wonders than that.

*Ros.* Oh! I know where you are:—Nay, 'tis  
true: there was never any thing so sudden,  
but the fight of two rams, and Cæsar's tra-  
sonical brag of—*I came, saw, and overcame*:  
For your brother and my sister no sooner met,  
but they looked; no sooner looked, but they  
loved; no sooner loved, but they sighed; no  
sooner sighed, but they asked one another the  
reason: no sooner knew the reason, but they  
sought the remedy: and in these degrees have  
they made a pair of stairs to marriage, which  
they will climb incontinent, or else be inconti-  
nent before marriage: they are in the very wrath  
of love, and they will together; clubs cannot  
part them.

*Orl.* They shall be married to-morrow; and I will bid the duke to the nuptial. But, oh! how bitter a thing it is to look into happiness through another man's eyes! By so much the more shall I to-morrow be at the height of heart-heaviness, by how much I shall think my brother happy, in having what he wishes for.

*Ros.* Why then, to-morrow I cannot serve your turn for Rosalind?

*Orl.* I can live no longer by thinking.

*Ros.* I will weary you no longer then with idle talking. Know of me then, (for now I speak to some purpose,) that I know you are a gentleman of good conceit: I speak not this, that you should hear a good opinion of my knowledge, inasmuch, I say, I know you are; neither do I labour for a greater esteem than may in some little measure draw a belief from you, to do yourself good, and not to grace me. Believe then, if you please, that I can do strange things: I have, since I was three years old, conversed with a magician, most profound in this art, and yet not dauntable. If you do love Rosalind so near the heart as your gesture cries it out, when your brother marries Aliena, shall you marry her: I know into what straits of fortune she is driven; and it is not impossible to me, if it appear not inconvenient to you, to set her before your eyes to-morrow, human as she is, and without any danger.

*Orl.* Sprakest thou in sober meanings?

*Ros.* By my life, I do; which I tender dearly, though I say I am a magician: Therefore, put you in your best array, bid\* your friends: for if will be married to-morrow, you shall; and to Rosalind, if you will.

*Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE.*

Look here comes a lover of mine, and a lover of her's.

*Phe.* Youth, you have done me much ungentleness,

To show the letter that I writ to you.

*Ros.* I care not, if I have: it is my study, To seem despitiful and ungentle to you: You are there follow'd by a faithful shepherd; Look upon him, love him; he worships you.

*Phe.* Good shepherd, tell this youth what 'tis to love.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of sighs and tears;— And so am I for Phebe.

*Phe.* And I for Ganymede.

*Orl.* And I for Rosalind.

*Ros.* And I for no woman.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of faith and service;—

And so am I for Phebe.

*Phe.* And I for Ganymede.

*Orl.* And I for Rosalind.

*Ros.* And I for no woman.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of fantasy. All made of passion, and all made of wishes; All adoration, duty, and observance, All humbleness, all patience, and impatience, All purity, all trial, all observance;— And so am I for Phebe.

*Phe.* And so am I for Ganymede.

*Orl.* And so am I for Rosalind.

*Ros.* And so am I for no woman.

*Phe.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you?

*Sil.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you?

*Orl.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you?

*Ros.* Who do you speak to, why blame you me to love you?

*Orl.* To her that is not here, nor doth not hear.

*Ros.* Pray you, no more of this; 'tis like the howling of Irish wolves against the moon.—I will help you, [To SILVIUS] if I can:—I would

\* Invite.

love you, [To PHEBE] If I could.—To-morrow meet me all together.—I will marry you, [To PHEBE] if ever I marry woman, and I'll be married to-morrow:—I will satisfy you, [To ORLANDO] if ever I satisfied man, and you shall be married to-morrow:—I will content you, [To SILVIUS] if what pleases you contents you, and you shall be married to-morrow.—As you, [To ORLANDO] love Rosalind, meet; as you, [To SILVIUS] love Phebe, meet; And as I love no woman, I'll meet.—So fare you well; I have left you commands.

*Sil.* I'll not fail if I live.

*Phe.* Nor I.

*Orl.* Nor I.

[Exit.

### SCENE III.—The same

*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.*

*Touch.* To-morrow is the joyful day, Audrey; to-morrow will we be married.

*Aud.* I do desire it with all my heart: and I hope it is no dishonest desire, to desire to be a woman of the world.\* Here comes two of the banished duke's pages.

*Enter two PAGES.*

*1 Page.* Well met, honest gentleman.

*Touch.* By my troth, well met: Come, sit, sit, and a song.

*2 Page.* We are for you: sit i'th' middle.

*1 Page.* Shall we clap into't roundly, without hawking, or spitting, or saying we are hoarse; which are the only prologues to a bad voice?

*2 Page.* I'faith, I'faith; and both in a tune, like two gipsies on a horse.

SONG.

I.

*It was a lover, and his las,  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino  
That o'er the green corn-field did pass  
In the spring time, the only pretty rank  
time,  
When birds do sing, hey ding a ding, ding;  
Sweet lovers love the spring.*

II.

*Between the acres of the rye,  
With a hey, and ho, and a hey nonino  
These pretty country folks would lie,  
In spring time, &c.*

III.

*This carol they began that hour,  
With a hey, and ho, and a hey nonino  
How that a life was but a flower  
In spring time, &c.*

IV.

*And therefore take the present time.  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino;  
For love is crowned with the prime  
In spring time, &c.*

*Touch.* Truly, young gentlemen, though there was no greater matter in the ditty, yet the note was very untunable.

*1 Page.* You are deceived, Sir; we kept time, we lost not our time.

*Touch.* By my troth, yes; I count it but time lost to hear such a foolish song. God be with you; and God mend your voices! Come, Audrey. [Exit.

### SCENE IV.—Another part of the Forest.

*Enter DUKE, senior, AMIENS, JAQUES, ORLANDO, OLIVER, and CELIA.*

*Duke S.* Dost thou believe, Orlando, that the boy Can do all this that he hath promised?

\* A married woman



*Orl.* I sometimes do believe, and sometimes do not ;

As those that fear they hope, and know they fear.

*Enter ROSALIND, SILVIUS, and PHEBE.*

*Ros.* Patience once more, whiles our compact is ungd :—

You say, if I bring in your Rosalind,

[*To the DUKE.*]

You will bestow her on Orlando here ?

*Duke S.* That would I, had I kingdoms to give with her.

*Ros.* And you say, you will have her, when I bring her ?

[*To ORLANDO.*]

*Orl.* That would I, were I of all kingdoms king.

*Ros.* You say, you'll marry me, if I be willing ?

[*To PHEBE.*]

*Phe.* That will I, should I die the hour after.

*Ros.* But, if you do refuse to marry me.

You'll give yourself to this most faithful shepherd ?

*Phe.* So is the bargain.

*Ros.* You say, that you'll have Phebe, if she will ?

[*To SILVIUS.*]

*Sil.* Though to have her and death were both one thing.

*Ros.* I have promised to make all this matter even.

Keep you your word, O duke, to give your daughter :—

You your's, Orlando, to receive his daughter :—

Keep your word, Phebe, that you'll marry me ;

Or else, refusing me, to wed this shepherd :—

Keep your word, Silviu, that you'll marry her,

If she refuse me :—and from hence I go.

To make these doubts all even.

[*Exeunt ROSALIND and CELIA.*]

*Duke S.* I do remember in this shepherd-boy some lively touches of my daughter's favour.

*Orl.* My lord, the first time that I ever saw him,

Methought he was a brother to your daughter :

But, my good lord, this boy is forest-born !

And hath been tutor'd in the rudiments

Of many desperate studies by his uncle,

Whom he reports to be a great magician,

Obscured in the circle of this forest.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.*

*Jaq.* There is, sure, another flood toward, and these couples are coming to the ark ! Here comes a pair of very strange beasts, which in all tongues are called fools.

*Touch.* Salutation and greeting to you all !

*Jaq.* Good my lord, bid him welcome : This is the motley-minded gentleman, that I have so often met in the forest : he hath been a courtier, he swears.

*Touch.* If any man doubt that, let him put me to my purgation. I have trod a measure ; \*

I have flattered a lady : I have been politic with my friend, smooth with my enemy ; I have undone three tailors ; I have had four quarrels, and like to have fought one.

*Jaq.* And how was that ta'en up ?

*Touch.* 'Faith, we met, and found the quarrel was upon the seventh cause.

*Jaq.* How seventh cause ?—Good my lord, like this fellow.

*Duke S.* I like him very well.

*Touch.* God'ld you, Sir ; I desire you of the like. I press in here, Sir, amongst the rest of the country copulatives, to swear, and to forswear ; according as marriage binds, and blood breaks :—A poor virgin, Sir, an ill favoured thing, Sir, but mine own ; a poor humour of mine, to take that that no man else will : Rich honestly dwells like a miser, Sir, in a poor-house as your pearl, in your foul oyster.

*Duke S.* By my faith, he is very swift and sententious.

\* A stately solemn dance.

*Touch.* According to the fool's bolt, Sir, and such dulcet diseases.

*Jaq.* But for the seventh cause ; how did you find the quarrel on the seventh cause ?

*Touch.* Upon a lie seven times removed ;—

Bear your body more seeming, \* Audrey :—as thus, Sir. I did dislike the cut of a certain courtier's beard ; he sent me word, if I said his

beard was not cut well, he was in the mind it was : This is called the *Retort courtuous*. If I

sent him word again, it was not well cut, he would send me word, he cut it to please him-

self : This is called the *Quip modest*. If again,

it was not well cut, he disabled my judgment : This is called the *Reply churlish*. If again,

it was not well cut, he would answer, I spake not true : This is called the *Reproof valiant*. If again,

it was not well cut, he would say, I lie : This is called the *Countercheck quarrelsome* ;

and so to the *Lie circumstantial*, and the *Lie direct*.

*Jaq.* And how oft did you say, his beard was not well cut ?

*Touch.* I durst go no further than the *Lie circumstantial*, nor he durst not give me the

*Lie direct* ; and so we measured swords, and parted.

*Jaq.* Can you nominate in order now the degrees of the lie ?

*Touch.* O Sir, we quarrel in print, by the book ; \*

as you have books for good manners : I will name you the degrees. The first, the *Retort courtuous* ; the second, the *Quip modest* ;

the third, the *Reply churlish* ; the fourth, the *Reproof valiant* ; the fifth, the *Countercheck quarrelsome* ; the sixth, the *Lie with circum-*

stance ; the seventh, the *Lie direct*. All these you may avoid, but the lie direct, and you may avoid that too, with an *If*. I knew when seven

justices could not take up a quarrel, but when the parties were met themselves, one of them thought but of an *If*, as *If you said so, then I said so*, and they shook hands, and swore brothers.

Your *If* is the only peacemaker ; much virtue in *If*.

*Jaq.* Is not this a rare fellow, my lord ? he's as good at any thing, and yet a fool.

*Duke S.* He uses his folly like a stalking-horse, and under the presentation of that, he shoots his wit.

*Enter HYMEN, leading ROSALIND in woman's clothes, and CELIA.*

Still Music.

*Hym.* Then is there mirth in heaven,  
When earthly things made even

Atone together.

Good duke, receive thy daughter,  
Hymen from heaven brought her,

Yea, brought her hither ;

That thou might'st join her hand with his,

Whose heart within her bosom is.

*Ros.* To you I give myself, for I am your's.

[*To DUKE S.*]

To you I give myself, for I am your's.

[*To ORLANDO.*]

*Duke S.* If there be truth in sight, you are my daughter.

*Orl.* If there be truth in sight, you are my Rosalind.

*Phe.* If sight and shape be true,

Why then,—my love, adieu !

*Ros.* I'll have no father, if you be not he :—

[*To DUKE S.*]

I'll have no husband, if you be not he :—

[*To ORLANDO.*]

Nor ne'er wed woman, if you be not she.

[*To PHEBE.*]

\* Seemly.

† A ridiculous treatise "Of Honour and Honourable Quarrels," by Vincentio Saviolo, 1594. Shakespeare satirizes the mode of duelling then prevalent, very cuttingly in this scene.

*Hym.* Peace ho ! I bar confusion,  
 'Tis I must make conclusion  
 Of these most strange events :  
 Here's eight that must take hands,  
 To join in Hymen's bands,  
 It trill holds true contents.\*

You and you no cross shall part

[*To ORLANDO and ROSALIND.*  
 You and you are heart in heart :

[*To OLIVER and CELIA.*  
 You [*To PHEBE*] to his love must accord,  
 Or have a woman to your lord :—

You and you are sure together,

[*To TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.*  
 As the winter to foul weather,  
 Whiles a wedlock-hymn we sing,  
 Feed yourselves with questioning ;  
 That reason wonder may diminish,  
 How thus we met, and these things finish.

## SONG.

*Wedding is great Juno's crown ;  
 O blessed bond of board and bed !  
 'Tis Hymen peoples every town ;  
 High wedlock then be honoured :  
 Honour, high honour and renown,  
 To Hymen, god of every town !*

*Duke. S.* O my dear niece, welcome thou art  
 to me ;

Even daughter, welcome in no less degree.

*Phc.* I will not eat my word, now thou art  
 mine ;

Thy faith my fancy to thee doth combine.†  
 [*To SILVIUS.*

*Enter JACQUES DE BOIS.*

*Jaq. de B.* Let me have audience for a word  
 or two :

I am the second son of old Sir Rowland,  
 That bring these tidings to this fair assembly :—  
*Duke Frederick*, hearing how that every day  
 Men of great worth resorted to this forest,  
 Address'd a mighty power I which were on foot,  
 In his own conduct, purposely to take  
 His brother here, and put him to the sword :  
 And to the skirts of this wild wood he came ;  
 Where, meeting with an old religious man,  
 After some question with him, was converted  
 Both from his enterprise, and from the world :  
 His crown bequeathing to his banish'd brother  
 And all their lands restor'd to them again  
 That were with him exil'd : This to be true,  
 I do engage my life.

*Duke. S.* Welcome, young man ;  
 Thou offer'st fairly to thy brothers' wedding :  
 The one his lands withheld ; and to the other,  
 A land itself at large, a potent dukedom  
 First, in this forest, let us do those ends  
 That here were well begun, and well begot :  
 And after, every of this happy number,  
 That have endur'd shrewd days and nights  
 with us,  
 Shall share the good of our returned fortune,

According to the measure of their states,  
 Meantime, forget this new-fall'n dignity,  
 And fall into our rustic revelry :—  
 Play, music,—and you brides and bride-  
 grooms all,  
 With measure heap'd in joy to the measures  
 fall.

*Jaq. Sir*, by your patience ; If I heard you  
 rightly,

The duke hath put on a religious life,  
 And thrown into neglect the pompous court ?

*Jaq. de B.* He hath.

*Jaq.* To him will I ; out of these convertites  
 There is much matter to be heard and learn'd.—  
 You to your former honour I bequeath ;

[*To DUKE S.*  
 Your patience, and your virtue well deserves  
 it :—

You [*To ORLANDO*] to a love, that your true  
 faith doth merit :—

You [*To OLIVER*] to your land, and love, and  
 great allies :—

You [*To SILVIUS*] to a long and well deserved  
 bed :—

And you [*To TOUCHSTONE*] to wrangling ; for  
 thy loving voyage  
 Is but for two months victual'd :—So to your  
 pleasures ;

I am for other than for dancing measures.

*Duke S.* Stay, Jacques, stay.

*Jaq.* To see no pastime, I :—what you would  
 have

I'll stay to know at your abandon'd cave.

[*Exit*

*Duke. S.* Proceed, proceed : we will begin  
 these rites,  
 And we do trust they'll end in true delights.

[*A dance.*

## EPILOGUE.

*Ros.* It is not the fashion to see the lady the  
 epilogue : but it is no more unhandsome, than  
 to see the lord the prologue. If it be true, that  
*good wine needs no bush*, 'tis true, that a good  
 play needs no epilogue : Yet to good wine they  
 do use good bushes ; and good plays prove the  
 better by the help of good epilogues. What a  
 case am I in then, that am neither a good  
 epilogue, nor cannot insinuate with you in the  
 behalf of a good play ! I am not furnished \*  
 like a beggar, therefore to beg will not become  
 me : my way is, to conjure you ; and I'll begin  
 with the women. I charge you, O women, for  
 the love you bear to men, to like as much of  
 this play as please them : and so I charge you,  
 O men, for the love you bear to women, (as I  
 perceive by your sniggering, none of you hate  
 them,) that between you and the women, the  
 play may please. If I were a woman, I would  
 kiss as many of you as had beards that pleased  
 me, complexions that liked me, and breaths  
 that I defied not ; and, I am sure, as many as  
 have good beards, or good faces, or sweet  
 breaths, will, for my kind offer, when I make  
 curt'sy, bid me farewell.

[*Exeunt.*

\* Unless truth fails of veracity.

† Bird

\* Dressed.

† That I liked.

# MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

IN the fifth book of *Orlando Furioso*, and in B. II. c. iv. of Spenser's *Fairie Queene*, a story partly similar to the fable of this drama may be found; but a novel in the *Histoires Tragiques* of Belleforest (taken from Bandello) approaches nearest to the design, and probably suggested the idea, of *Much ado about Nothing*. The plot is pleasingly intricate; the characters novel and striking; the dialogue exceedingly vivacious, and well supported to the end. Beatrice and Benedick are two of the most sprightly and amusing characters that Shakspeare ever drew. Wit, humour, nobility, and courage, are combined in the latter, though his sallies are not always restrained by reverence or discretion: and if the levity of the former is somewhat opposed to the becoming reserve and delicacy of the female character, it shows to more advantage the steadiness of her friendship, and the amiable decision of her character, when urging her lover to challenge his most intimate friend, and as the best claim upon her affection, to risk his life in vindicating the purity of her injured companion.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DON PEDRO, *Prince of Arragon.*

DON JOHN, *his bastard Brother.*

CLAUDIO, *a young Lord of Florence, favourite to Don Pedro.*

BENEDICK, *a young Lord of Padua, favourite likewise of Don Pedro.*

LEONATO, *Governor of Messina.*

ANTONIO, *his Brother.*

BALTHAZAR, *Servant to Don Pedro.*

BORACHIO, } *Followers of Don John.*

CONRADE, }

DOGBERRY, } *Two foolish Officers.*

VERGES, }

A SEXTON.

A FRIAR.

A BOY.

HERO, *Daughter to Leonato.*

BEATRICE, *Niece to Leonato.*

MARGARET, } *Gentlewomen attending on Hero.*

URSULA, }

*Messengers, Watch, and Attendants.*

SCENE, *Messina.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—*Before LEONATO's House.*

*Enter LEONATO, HERO, BEATRICE, and others, with a MESSENGER.*

*Leon.* I learn in this letter, that Don Pedro of Arragon comes this night to Messina.

*Mess.* He is very near by this; he was not three leagues off when I left him.

*Leon.* How many gentlemen have you lost in this action?

*Mess.* But few of any sort,\* and none of name.

*Leon.* A victory is twice itself, when the achiever brings home full numbers. I find here, that Don Pedro hath bestowed much honour on a young Florentine, called Claudio.

*Mess.* Much deserved on his part, and equally remembered by Don Pedro: He hath borne himself beyond the promise of his age; doing, in the figure of a lamb, the feats of a lion: he hath, indeed, better bettered expectation, than you must expect of me to tell you how.

*Leon.* He hath an uncle here in Messina will be very much glad of it.

*Mess.* I have already delivered him letters, and there appears much joy in him; even so much, that joy could not show itself modest enough, without a badge of bitterness.

*Leon.* Did he break out into tears?

*Mess.* In great measure.\*

*Leon.* A kind overflow of kindness: There are no faces truer than those that are so washed.

How much better is it to weep at joy, than to joy at weeping?

*Beat.* I pray you, is signior Montanto returned from the wars, or no?

*Mess.* I know none of that name, lady; there was none such in the army of any sort.

*Leon.* What is he that you ask for, niece?

*Hero.* My cousin means signior Benedick of Padua.

*Mess.* Oh! he is returned; and as pleasant as ever he was.

*Beat.* He set up his bills here in Messina, and challenged Cupid at the flight:† and my uncle's fool, reading the challenge, subscribed

\* Kind

\* Abundance

† At long lengths.

for Cupid, and challenged him at the bird-bolt.—I pray you, how many hath he killed and eaten in these wars? But how many hath he killed? for indeed, I promised to eat all of his killing.

*Leon.* Faith, niece, you tax signior Benedick too much; but he'll be meet \* with you, I doubt it not.

*Mess.* He hath done good service, lady, in these wars.

*Beat.* You had niusty victual, and he hath help to eat it: he is a very valiant trencherman, he hath an excellent stomach.

*Mess.* And a good soldier too, lady.

*Beat.* And a good soldier to a lady;—But what is he to a lord?

*Mess.* A lord to a lord, a man to a man; stuffed with all honourable virtues.

*Beat.* It is so, indeed; he is no less than a stuffed man:† but for the stuffing,—Well, we are all mortal.

*Leon.* You must not, Sir, mistake my niece: there is a kind of merry war betwixt signior Benedick and her: they never meet, but there is a skirmish of wit between them.

*Beat.* Alas, he gets nothing by that. In our last conflict, four of his five wits went halting off, and now is the whole man governed with one: so that if he have wit enough to keep himself warm, let him bear it for a difference between himself and his horse: for it is all the wealth that he hath left, to be known a reasonable creature.—Who is his companion now? He hath every month a new sworn brother.

*Mess.* Is it possible?

*Beat.* Very easily possible: he wears his faith but of the fashion of his hat, it ever changes with the next block.

*Mess.* I see, lady, the gentleman is not in your books.

*Beat.* No: an he were, I would burn my study. But, I pray you, who is his companion? Is there no young squarer‡ now, that will make a voyage with him to the devil.

*Mess.* He is most in the company of the right noble Claudio.

*Beat.* O Lord! he will hang upon him like a disease: he is sooner caught than the penitence, and the taker runs presently mad. God help the noble Claudio! if he have caught the Benedick, it will cost him a thousand pound ere he be cured.

*Mess.* I will hold friends with you, lady.

*Beat.* Do, good friend.

*Leon.* You will never run mad, niece.

*Beat.* No, not till a hot January.

*Mess.* Don Pedro is approached

*Enter Don PEDRO, attended by BALTHAZAR and others, Don JOHN, CLAUDIO, and BENEDICK.*

*D. Pedro.* Good signior Leonato, you are come to meet your trouble: the fashion of the world is to avoid cost, and you encounter it.

*Leon.* Never came trouble to my house in the likeness of your grace: for trouble being gone, comfort should remain; but, when you depart from me, sorrow abides, and happiness takes his leave.

*D. Pedro.* You embrace your charge || too willingly.—I think, this is your daughter.

*Leon.* Her mother hath many times told me so.

*Bene.* Were you in doubt, Sir, that you asked her?

*Leon.* Signior Benedick, no; for then were you a child.

*D. Pedro.* You have it full, Benedick: we may guess by this what you are, being a man. Truly, the lady fathers herself:—Be happy, lady! for you are like an honourable father.

*Bene.* If signior Leonato be her father, she would not have his head on her shoulders, for all Messina, as like him as she is.

*Beat.* I wonder, that you will still be talking, signior Benedick; nobody marks you.

*Bene.* What, my dear lady Disdain! are you yet living?

*Beat.* Is it possible, disdain should die, while she hath such meet food to feed it, as signior Benedick? Courtesy itself must convert to disdain, if you come in her presence.

*Bene.* Then is courtesy a turn-coat:—But it is certain, I am loved of all ladies, only you excepted: and I would I could find in my heart that I had not a hard heart; for, truly, I love none.

*Beat.* A dear happiness to women; they would else have been troubled with a pernicious suitor. I thank God, and my cold blood, I am of your humour for that; I had rather hear my dog bark at a crow, than a man swear he loves me.

*Bene.* God keep your ladyship still in that mind! so some gentleman or other shall 'scape a predestinate scratched face.

*Beat.* Scratching could not make it worse, an 'twere such a face as your's were.

*Bene.* Well, you are a rare parrot-teacher.

*Beat.* A bird of my tongue, is better than a beast of your's.

*Bene.* I would my horse had the speed of your tongue; and so good a continuer: But keep your way o' God's name; I have done.

*Beat.* You always end with a jade's trick; I know you of old.

*D. Pedro.* This is the sum of all: Leonato,—signior Claudio, and signior Benedick,—my dear friend Leonato, hath invited you all. I tell him, we shall stay here at least a month; and he heartily prays, some occasion may detain us longer: I dare swear he is no hypocrite, but prays from his heart.

*Leon.* If you swear, my lord, you shall not be forsworn.—Let me bid you welcome, my lord: being reconciled to the prince your brother, I owe you all duty.

*D. John.* I thank you: I am not of many words, but I thank you.

*Leon.* Please it your grace lead on?

*D. Pedro.* Your hand, Leonato; we will go together.

*[Exeunt all but BENEDICK and CLAUDIO.]*

*Claud.* Benedick, didst thou note the daughter of signior Leonato?

*Bene.* I noted her not; but I looked on her. | *Claud.* Is she not a modest young lady?

*Bene.* Do you question me, as an honest man should do, for my simple true judgment; or would you have me speak after my custom, as being a professed tyrant to their sex?

*Claud.* No, I pray thee, speak in sober judgment.

*Bene.* Why, I'll faith, methinks she is too low for a high praise, too brown for a fair praise, and too little for a great praise: only this commendation I can afford her: that were she other than she is, she were unhandsome; and being no other but as she is, I do not like her.

*Claud.* Thon thinkest, I am in sport; I pray thee, tell me truly how thou likest her.

*Bene.* Would you buy her, that you inquire after her.

*Claud.* Can the world buy such a jewel?

*Bene.* Yea, and a case to put it into. But speak you this with a sad brow? or do you play the flouting Jack: to tell us Cupid is a good hare-finder, and Vulcan a rare carpenter? Come, in what key shall a man take you, to go in the song?

*Claud.* In mine eye, she is the sweetest lady that ever I looked on.

*Bene.* I can see yet without spectacles, and I see no such matter: there's her cousin, an she were not possessed with a fury, exceeds her as much in beauty as the first of May doth the

\* Even.

† Would for a hat.

‡ A cuckold.

§ Quarrelsome fellow

last of December. But I hope, you have no intent to turn husband; have you?

*Claud.* I would scarce trust myself, though I had sworn the contrary, if Hero would be my wife.

*Bene.* Is it come to this, I'faith? Hath not the world one man, but he will wear his cap with suspicion? Shall I never see a bachelor of three-score again? Go to, I'faith; an thou wilt needs thrust thy neck into a yoke, wear the print of it, and sigh away Sundays. Look, Don Pedro is returned to seek you.

*Re-enter Don PEDRO.*

*D. Pedro.* What secret hath held you here, that you followed not to Leonato's?

*Bene.* I would your grace would constrain me to tell.

*D. Pedro.* I charge thee on thy allegiance.

*Bene.* You hear, count Claudio: I can be secret as a dumb man, I would have you think so; but on my allegiance,—mark you this, on my allegiance:—He is in love. With who?—now that is your grace's part.—Mark, how short his answer is:—With Hero, Leonato's short daughter.

*Claud.* If this were so, so were it uttered.

*Bene.* Like the old tale, my lord: it is not so, nor 'twas not so; but, indeed, God forbid it should be so.

*Claud.* If my passion change not shortly, God forbid it should be otherwise.

*D. Pedro.* Amen, if you love her; for the lady is very well worthy.

*Claud.* You speak this to fetch me in, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* By my troth, I speak my thought.

*Claud.* And, in faith, my lord, I spoke mine.

*Bene.* And, by my two faiths and troths, my lord, I spoke mine.

*Claud.* That I love her, I feel.

*D. Pedro.* That she is worthy, I know.

*Bene.* That I neither feel how she should be loved, nor know how she should be worthy, is the opinion that fire cannot melt out of me; I will die in it at the stake.

*D. Pedro.* Thou wast ever an obstinate heretic in the despite of beauty.

*Claud.* And never could maintain his part, but in the force of his will.

*Bene.* That a woman conceived me, I thank her; that she brought me up, I likewise give her most humble thanks: but that I will have a reacher\* winded in my forehead, or hang my bugle† in an invisible baldrick,‡ all women shall pardon me. Because I will not do them the wrong to mistrust any, I will do myself the right to trust none; and the fine is, (for the which I may go the finer,) I will live a bachelor.

*D. Pedro.* I shall see thee, ere I die, look pale with love.

*Bene.* With anger, with sickness, or with hunger, my lord; not with love: prove, that ever I lose more blood with love, than I will get again with drinking, pick out mine eyes with a ballad-maker's pen, and hang me up at the door of a brothel-house, for the sign of blind Cupid.

*D. Pedro.* Well, if ever thou dost fall from this faith, thou wilt prove a notable argument.

*Bene.* If I do, hang me in a bottle like a cat, and shoot at me; and he that hits me, let him be clapped on the shoulder, and called Adam. §

*D. Pedro.* Well, as time shall try:

*In time the savage bull doth bear the yoke.*

*Bene.* The savage bull may; but if ever the sensible Benedick bear it, pluck off the bull's horns, and set them in my forehead: and let me be vilely painted; and in such great letters as they write, *Here is good horse to hire*, let them signify under my sign,—*Here you may see Benedick the married man.*

*Claud.* If this should ever happen, thou would'st be horn-mad.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, if Cupid have not spent all his quiver in Venice, thou wilt quake for this shortly.

*Bene.* I look for an earthquake too then.

*D. Pedro.* Well, you will temporize with the hours. In the mean time, good signior Benedick, repair to Leonato's; commend me to him, and tell him, I will not fail him at supper; for, indeed, he hath made great preparation.

*Bene.* I have almost matter enough in me for such an embassy; and so I commit you—

*Claud.* To the tuition of God: From my house, (if I had it,)—

*D. Pedro.* The sixth of July: Your loving friend, Benedick.

*Bene.* Nay, mock not, mock not: The body of your discourse is sometimes guarded\* with fragments, and the guards are but slightly basted on neither: ere you flout old ends any further, examine your conscience; and so I leave you.

*[Exit BENEDICK.]*

*Claud.* My liege, your highness now may do me good.

*D. Pedro.* My love is thine to teach; teach it but how,

And thou shalt see how apt it is to learn

Any hard lesson that may do thee good.

*Claud.* Hath Leonato any son, my lord?

*D. Pedro.* No child but Hero, she's his only heir:

Dost thou affect her, Claudio?

*Claud.* O my lord, When you went onward on this ended action, I look'd upon her with a soldier's eye, That lik'd, but had a rougher task in hand Than to drive liking to the name of love: But now I am return'd, and that war-thoughts Have left their places vacant, in their rooms Come thronging soft and delicate desires, All prompting me how fair young Hero is, Saying, I lik'd her ere I went to wars.

*D. Pedro.* Thou wilt be like a lover presently And ture the hearer with a book of words:

If thou dost love fair Hero, cherish it; And I will break with her, and with her father, And thou shalt have her: Was't not to this end That thou began'st to twist so fine a story?

*Claud.* How sweetly do you minister to love, That know love's grief by his complexion! But lest my liking might too sudden seem, I would have sav'd it with a longer treatise.

*D. Pedro.* What need the bridge much broader than the flood?

The fairest grant is the necessity:

Look, what will serve, is fit: 'tis once,† thou lov'st;

And I will fit thee with the remedy.

I know, we shall have revelling to-night; I will assume thy part in some disguise, And tell fair Hero I am Claudio; And in her bosom I'll unclasp my heart, And take her hearing prisoner with the force And strong encounter of my amorous tale: Then, after, to her father will I break; And, the conclusion is, she shall be thine: In practice let us put it presently. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—A Room in LEONATO'S House.

*Enter LEONATO and ANTONIO.*

*Leon.* How now, brother? Where is my cousin, your son? Hath he provided this music?

*Ant.* He is very busy about it. But, brother I can tell you strange news that you yet dreamed not of.

*Leon.* Are they good?

*Ant.* As the event stamps them; but they have a good cover, they show well outward. The prince and count Claudio, walking in a thick-planch'd‡ alley in my orchard, were thus much

\* The tune sounded to call off the dogs.

† Hunting-horn. ‡ Girdle.

§ The name of a famous scotch.

† Once for all.

\* Trimmed.

‡ Thickly-interwoven

overheard by a man of mine : The prince discovered to Claudio, that he loved my niece your daughter, and meant to acknowledge it this night in a dance ; and, if he found her accordant, he meant to take the present time by the top, and instantly break with you of it.

*Leon.* Tell the fellow any wit, that told you this ?

*Ant.* A good sharp fellow : I will send for him, and question him yourself.

*Leon.* No, no ; we will hold it as a dream, fill it appears itself :—but I will acquaint my daughter withal, that she may be the better prepared for an answer, if peradventure this be true. Go you, and tell her of it. [*Several persons cross the stage.*] Cousins, you know what you have to do.—Oh ! I cry you mercy, friend ; you go with me, and I will use your skill : Good cousins have a care this busy time. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Another Room in LEONATO'S House.

*Enter Don JOHN and CONRADE.*

*Con.* What the goujere, \* my lord ! why are you thus out of measure sad ?

*D. John.* There is no measure in the occasion that breeds it, therefore the sadness is without limit.

*Con.* You should hear reason.

*D. John.* And when I have heard it, what blessing bringeth it ?

*Con.* If not a present remedy, yet a patient sufferance.

*D. John.* I wonder, that thou, being (as thou say'st thou art) born under Saturn, goest about to apply a moral medicine to a mortifying mischief. I cannot hide what I am : I must be sad when I have cause, and smile at no man's jests ; eat when I have stomach, and wait for no man's leisure, sleep when I am drowsy, and tend to no man's business ; laugh when I am merry, and clasp no man in his humour.

*Con.* Yea, but you must not make the full show of this, till you may do it without contrivement. You have of late stood out against your brother, and he hath ta'en you newly into his grace ; where it is impossible you should take true root, but by the fair weather that you make yourself : it is needful that you frame the season for your own harvest.

*D. John.* I had rather be a canker † in a hedge, than a rose in his grace ; and it better fits my blood to be disdained of all than to fashion a carriage to rob love from any : in this, though I cannot be said to be a flattering honest man, it must not be denied that I am a plain dealing villain. I am trusted with a muzzle, and enfranchised with a clog ; therefore I have decreed not to sing in my cage : If I had my mouth, I would bite ; if I had my liberty, I would do my liking : in the mean time, let me be that I am, and seek not to alter me.

*Con.* Can you make no use of your discontent ?

*D. John.* I make all use of it, for I use it only. Who comes here ? What news Borachio ?

*Enter BORACHIO.*

*Bora.* I came yonder from a great supper ; the prince, your brother, is royally entertained by Leonato ; and I can give you intelligence of an intended marriage.

*D. John.* Will it serve for any model to build mischief on ? What is he for a fool, that betroths himself to unquietness ?

*Bora.* Marry, it is your brother's right hand.

*D. John.* Who ? the most exquisite Claudio ?

*Bora.* Even he.

*D. John.* A proper squire ! And who, and who ? which way locks he ?

*Bora.* Marry, on Hero, the daughter and heir of Leonato.

*D. John.* A very forward March chick ! How came you to this ?

*Bora.* Being entertained for a perfumer, as I was smoking a musty room, comes me the prince and Claudio, hand in hand, in sad \* conference : I whipt me behind the arras ; and there heard it agreed upon, that the prince should woo Hero for himself, and having obtained her, give her to count Claudio.

*D. John.* Come, come, let us thither ; this may prove food to my displeasure : that young start-up hath all the glory of my overthrow ; if I can cross him any way, I bless myself every way : You are both sure, and will assist me ?

*Con.* To the death, my lord.

*D. John.* Let us to the great supper ; their cheer is the greater that I am subdued : 'Would the cook were of my mind !—Shall we go prove what's to be done ?

*Bora.* We'll wait upon your lordship. [*Exeunt.*]

ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Hall in LEONATO'S House.

*Enter LEONATO, ANTONIO, HERO, BEATRICE, and others.*

*Leon.* Was not count John here at supper ?

*Ant.* I saw him not.

*Beat.* How tartly that gentleman looks ! I never can see him, but I am heart-burned an hour after.

*Hero.* He is of a very melancholy disposition.

*Beat.* He were an excellent man, that were made just in the mid-way between him and Benedick : the one is too like an image, and says nothing ; and the other, too like my lady's eldest son, evermore tattling.

*Leon.* Then half signior Benedick's tongue in count John's mouth, and half count John's melancholy in signior Benedick's face,—

*Beat.* With a good leg, and a good foot, uncle, and money enough in his purse, such a man would win any woman in the world,—if he could get her good will.

*Leon.* By my troth, niece, thou wilt never get thee a husband, if thou be so shrewd of thy tongue.

*Ant.* In faith she is too curst.

*Beat.* Two curst is more than curst : I shall lessen God's sending that way : for it is said, God sends a curst cow short horns ; but to a cow too curst he sends none.

*Leon.* So, by being too curst, God will send you no horns.

*Beat.* Just, if he send me no husband ; for the which blessing, I am at him upon my knees every morning and evening : Lord ! I could not endure a husband with a beard on his face ; I had rather lie in the woollen.

*Leon.* You may light upon a husband, that hath no beard.

*Beat.* What should I do with him ? dress him in my apparel, and make him my waiting gentlewoman ? He that hath a beard, is more than a youth ; and he that hath no beard is less than a man : and he that is more than a youth, is not for me ; and he that is less than a man, I am not for him. Therefore I will even take sixpence in earnest of the bear-herd, and lead his apes into hell !

*Leon.* Well then, go you into hell ?

*Beat.* No ; but to the gate ; and there will the devil meet me, like an old cuckold, with horns on his head, and say, *Get you to heaven ; Beatrice, get you to heaven ; here's no place for you maids :* so deliver I up my apes, and away to Saint Peter for the heavens ; he shows me

\* The venereal disease.

† Flatter.

‡ Dog-rose.

\* Serious.

where the bachelors sit, and there live we as merry as the day is long.

*Ant.* Well, niece, [*To Hero*] I trust you will be ruled by your father.

*Beat.* Yes, faith; it is my cousin's duty to make courtesy, and say, *Father, as it please you*—but yet for all that, cousin, let him be a handsome fellow, or else make another courtesy, and say, *Father, as it please me*.

*Leon.* Well, niece, I hope to see you one day fitted with a husband.

*Beat.* Not till God make men of some other metal than earth. Would it not grieve a woman to be over-mastered with a piece of valiant dust? to make an account of her life to a clod of wayward marl? No, uncle; I'll none: Adam's sons are my brethren; and truly, I hold it a sin to match in my kindred.

*Leon.* Daughter, remember, what I told you: if the prince do solicit you in that kind, you know your answer.

*Beat.* The fault will be in the music, cousin, if you be not wood'd in good time: if the prince be too important,\* tell him there is measure in every thing, and so dance out the answer. For hear me, Hero; Wooing, wedding, and repenting, is as a Scotch jig, a measure, and a cinquepace: the first suit is hot and hasty, like a Scotch jig, and full as fantastical; the wedding, mannerly-modest, as a measure full of state and ancientry; and then comes repentance, and, with his bad legs, falls into the cinquepace faster and faster till he sink into his grave.

*Leon.* Cousin, you apprehend passing shrewdly.

*Beat.* I have a good eye, uncle; I can see a church by day-light.

*Leon.* The revellers are entering; brother, make good room.

*Enter Don PEDRO, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, BALTHAZAR; Don JOHN, BORACHIO, MARGARET, URSULA, and others masked.*

*D. Pedro.* Lady, will you walk about with your friend?†

*Hero.* So you walk softly, and look sweetly, and say nothing, I am your's for the walk; and, especially, when I walk away.

*D. Pedro.* With me in your company?

*Hero.* I may say so, when I please.

*D. Pedro.* And when please you to say so?

*Hero.* When I like your favour; for God defend, the lute should be like the case!

*D. Pedro.* My visor is Philemon's roof: within the house is Jove.

*Hero.* Why, then your visor should be thatch'd.

*D. Pedro.* Speak low, if you speak love.

[*Takes her aside.*]

*Bene.* Well, I would you did like me.

*Marg.* So would not I, for your own sake; for I have many ill qualities.

*Bene.* Which is one?

*Marg.* I say my prayers aloud.

*Bene.* I love you the better; the hearers may cry, Amen.

*Marg.* God match me with a good dancer!

*Balth.* Amen.

*Marg.* And God keep him out of my sight, when the dance is done!—Answer, clerk.

*Balth.* No more words: the clerk is answered.

*Urs.* I know you well enough; you are signior Antonio.

*Ant.* At a word, I am not.

*Urs.* I know you by the wagging of your head.

*Ant.* To tell you true, I counterfeit him.

*Urs.* You could never do him so ill-well, unless you were the very man: Here's his dry hand up and down; you are he, you are he.

*Ant.* At a word, I am not.

*Urs.* Come, come; do you think I do not

know you by your excellent wit? Can virtue hide itself? Go to, munn, you are he: graces will appear, and there's an end.

*Beat.* Will you not tell me who told you so?

*Bene.* No, you shall pardon me.

*Beat.* Nor will you not tell me who you are?

*Bene.* Not now.

*Beat.* That I was disdainful,—and that I had my good wit out of the *Hundred merry Tales*;—Well, this was signior Benedick that said so.

*Bene.* What's he?

*Beat.* I am sure, you know him well enough.

*Bene.* Not I, believe me.

*Beat.* Did he never make you laugh?

*Bene.* I pray you, what is he?

*Beat.* Why, he is the prince's jester: a very dull fool; only his gift is in devising impossible\* scanders; none but libertines delight in him; and the commendation is not in his wit, but in his villany; for he both pleases men, and angers them, and then they laugh at him, and beat him; I am sure, he is in the fleet; I would he had boarded† me.

*Bene.* When I know the gentleman, I'll tell him what you say.

*Beat.* Do, do; he'll but break a comparison or two on me; which, peradventure, not marked, or not laughed at, strikes him into melaucholy; and then there's a partridge' wing saved, for the fool will eat no supper that night. [*Music within.*] We must follow the leaders.

*Bene.* In every good thing.

*Beat.* Nay, if they lead to any ill, I will leave them at the next turning.

[*Dance. Then exeunt all but Don JOHN, BORACHIO, and CLAUDIO.*]

*D. John.* Sure, my brother is amorous on Hero, and hath withdrawn her father to break with him about it: The ladies follow her, and but one visor remains.

*Bora.* And that is Claudio: I know him by his bearing.‡

*D. John.* Are you not signior Benedick?

*Claud.* You know me well; I am he.

*D. John.* Signior, you are very near my brother in his love: he is enamour'd on Hero; I pray you, dissuade him from her, she is no equal for his birth: you may do the part of an honest man in it.

*Claud.* How know you he loves her?

*D. John.* I heard him swear his affection.

*Bora.* So did I too; and he swore he would marry her to night.

*D. John.* Come, let us to the banquet.

[*Exeunt Don JOHN and BORACHIO.*]

*Claud.* Thus answer I in name of Benedick, But hear these ill news with the ears of Claudio.—

'Tis certain so;—the prince wooes for himself. Friendship is constant in all other things, Save in the office and affairs of love: Therefore, all hearts in love use their own tongues; Let every eye negotiate for itself, And trust no agent: for beauty is a witch, Against whose charms faith melteth into blood. § This is an accident of hourly proof, Which I mistrusted not: Farewell, therefore, Hero!

*Re-enter BENEDICK.*

*Bene.* Count Claudio?

*Claud.* Yea, the same.

*Bene.* Come, will you go with me?

*Claud.* Whither?

*Bene.* Even to the next willow, about your own business, count. What fashion will you wear the garland of; About your neck, like an usurer's chain? or under your arm like a lieutenant's scarf? You must wear it one way, for the prince hath got your Hero.

\* Impertinence.

† Lover.

‡ Forbid.

† Accosted.

\* Incredible  
‡ Carrying down  
§ Passion.

*Cloud.* I wish him joy of her.

*Bene.* Why, that's spoken like an honest drover; so they sell bullocks. But did you think, the prince would have served you thus?

*Cloud.* I pray you, leave me.

*Bene.* Ho! now you strike like the blind man; 'twas the boy that stole your meat, and you'll beat the post.

*Cloud.* If it will not be, I'll leave you.

[Exit.

*Bene.* Alas, poor hurt fowl! Now will he creep into sedges.—But, that my lady Beatrice should know me, and not know me! The prince's fool!—Ha! it may be, I go under that title, because I am merry.—Yea; but so; I am apt to do myself wrong: I am not so reputed: it is the base, the bitter disposition of Beatrice, that puts the world into her person, and so gives me out. Well, I'll be revenged as I may.

Re-enter DON PEDRO, HERO, and LEONATO.

*D. Pedro.* Now, signior, where's the count? Did you see him?

*Bene.* Tioh, my lord, I have played the part of lady Fame. I found him here as melancholy as a lodge in a warren; I told him, and, I think, told I him true, that your grace had got the good will of this young lady; and I offered him my company to a willow tree, either to make him a garland, as being forsaken, or to bind him up a rod, as being worthy to be whipped.

*D. Pedro.* To be whipped! What's his fault? *Bene.* The flat transgression of a school-boy; who, being overjoy'd with finding a bird's nest, shows it his companion, and he steals it.

*D. Pedro.* Will thou make a trust a transgression? The transgression is in the stealer.

*Bene.* Yet it had not been amiss, the rod had been made, and the garland too; for the garland he might have worn himself; and the rod he might have bestowed on you, who, as I take it, have stol'n his bird's nest.

*D. Pedro.* I will but teach them to sing, and restore them to the owner.

*Bene.* If their singing answer your saying, by my faith, you say honestly.

*D. Pedro.* The lady Beatrice hath a quarrel to you; the gentleman, that danced with her, told her, that she is much wronged by you.

*Bene.* Oh! she misused me past the endurance of a block; an oak, but with one green leaf on it, would have answered her; my very visor began to assume life, and scold with her: She told me, not thinking I had been myself, that I was the prince's jester; that I was duller than a great thaw; huddling jest upon jest, with such impossible conveyance, upon me, that I stood like a man at a mark, with a whole army shooting at me: She speaks poniards, and every word stabs: if her breath were as terrible as her terminations, there were no living near her, she would infect to the north star. I would not marry her, though she were endowed with all that Adam had left him before he transgressed: she would have made Hercules have turned spit: yea, and have cleft his club to make the fire too. Come, talk not of her; you shall find her the infernal Atë in good apparel. I would to God, some scholar would conjure her; for, certainly, while she is here, a man may live as quiet in hell, as in a sanctuary; and people sin upon purpose, because they would go thither; so, indeed, all disquiet, horror, and perturbation follow her.

Re-enter CLAUDIO and BEATRICE.

*D. Pedro.* Look, here she comes.

*Bene.* Will your grace command me any service to the world's end? I will go on the slightest errand now to the Antipodes, that you can devise to send me on; I will fetch you a tooth-picker

now from the farthest inch of Asia; bring you the length of Prester John's foot, fetch you a hair off the great Cham's beard; do you any embassy to the Pignones, rather than hold three words' conference with this harpy: You have no employment for me?

*D. Pedro.* None, but to desire your good company.

*Bene.* O God, Sir, here's a dish I love not; I cannot endure my lady tongue.

*D. Pedro.* Come, lady, come; you have lost the heart of signior Benedick.

*Beat.* Indeed, my lord, he lent it me a while; and I give him use\* for it, a double heart for his single one: marry, once before, he won it of me with false dice, therefore your grace may well say, I have lost it.

*D. Pedro.* You have put him down, lady, you have put him down.

*Beat.* So I would not he should do me, my lord, lest I should prove the mother of fools. I have brought count Claudio, whom you sent me to seek.

*D. Pedro.* Why, how now, count? wherefore are you sad?

*Cloud.* Not sad, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* How then? Sick?

*Cloud.* Neither my lord.

*Beat.* The count is neither sad, nor sick, nor merry, nor well: but civil, count; civil as an orange, and something of that jealous complexion.

*D. Pedro.* I'faith, lady, I thank your blazon to be true; though, I'll be sworn, if he be so, his conceit is false. Here, Claudio, I have wooed in thy name, and fair Hero is won; I have broke with her father, and his good will obtained: name the day of marriage, and God give you joy!

*Leon.* Count, take of me my daughter, and with her my fortunes: his grace hath made the match, and all grace say Amen to it.

*Beat.* Speak, count, 'tis your cue.†

*Cloud.* Silence is the perfectest herald of joy: I were but little happy, if I could say how much.—Lady, as you are mine, I am yours: I give away myself for you, and date upon the exchange.

*Beat.* Speak, cousin: or if you cannot, stop his mouth with a kiss, and let him not speak, neither.

*D. Pedro.* In faith, lady, you have a merry heart.

*Beat.* Yes, my lord; I thank it, poor fool, it keeps on the windy side of care:—My cousin tells him in his ear, that he is in her heart.

*Cloud.* And so she doth, cousin.

*Beat.* Good lord, for alliance!—Thus goes every one to the world but I, and I am sunburned: I may sit in a corner, and cry, heigh ho! for a husband.

*D. Pedro.* Lady Beatrice, I will get you one.

*Beat.* I would rather have one of your father's getting: Hath your grace ne'er a brother like you? Your father got excellent husbands, if a maid could come by them.

*D. Pedro.* Will you have me, lady?

*Beat.* No, my lord, unless I might have another for working days; your grace is too costly to wear every day:—But, I beseech your grace, pardon me: I was born to speak all mirth, and no matter.

*D. Pedro.* Your silence most offends me, and to be merry best becomes you; for out of question, you were born in a merry hour.

*Beat.* No, sure, my lord, my mother cry'd; but then there was a star danced, and under that was I born.—Cousins, God give you joy.

*Leon.* Niece, will you look to those things I told you of?

*Beat.* I cry you mercy, uncle.—By your grace's pardon. [Exit BEATRICE.]

\* Incredible.

† The Goddess of Discord.

\* Interest.

† Turn: a phrase among the players.



*D. Pedro.* By my troth, a pleasant-spirited lady.

*Leon.* There's little of the melancholy element in her, my lord: she is never sad, but when she sleeps: and not ever sad then; for I have heard my daughter say, she hath often dreamed of unhappiness, and waked herself with laughing.

*D. Pedro.* She cannot endure to hear tell of a husband.

*Leon.* Oh! by no means; she mocks all her wooers out of suit.

*D. Pedro.* She were an excellent wife for Benedick.

*Leon.* O Lord, my lord, if they were but a week married, they would talk themselves unad.

*D. Pedro.* Count Claudio, when mean you to go to church?

*Claud.* To-morrow my lord: Time goes on crutches, till love have all his rites.

*Leon.* Not till Monday, my dear son, which is hence a just seven-night; and a time too brief too, to have all things answer my mind.

*D. Pedro.* Come, you shake the head at so long a breathing; but I warrant thee, Claudio, the time shall not go dully by us; I will in the interim, undertake one of Hercules' labours; which is, to bring signior Benedick, and the lady Beatrice into a mountain of affection, the one with the other. I would fain have it a match; and I doubt not but to fashion it, if you three will but minister such assistance as I shall give you direction.

*Leon.* My lord, I am for you, though it cost me ten nights' watchings.

*Claud.* And I, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* And you too, gentle Hero?

*Hero.* I am for my modest office, my lord, to help my cousin to a good husband.

*D. Pedro.* And Benedick is not the unhopefullest husband that I know: thus far can I praise him; he is of a noble strain,\* of approved valour, and confirmed honesty. I will teach you how to humour your cousin, that she shall fall in love with Benedick:—and I, with your two helps, will so practise on Benedick, that, in despite of his quick wit and his queasy stomach, he shall fall in love with Beatrice. If we can do this, Cupid is no longer an archer; his glory shall be ours, for we are the only love-gods. Go in with me, and I will tell you my drift.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Another Room in LEONATO'S House.

*Enter DON JOHN and BORACHIO.*

*D. John.* It is so; the count Claudio shall marry the daughter of Leonato.

*Bora.* Yea, my lord; but I can cross it.

*D. John.* Any bar, any cross, any impediment will be medicinable to me: I am sick in displeasure to him; and whatsoever comes athwart his affection, ranges evenly with mine. How canst thou cross this marriage?

*Bora.* Not honestly, my lord; but so covertly that no dishonesty shall appear in me.

*D. John.* Show me briefly how.

*Bora.* I think I told your lordship, a year since how much I am in the favour of Margaret, the waiting-gentlewoman to Hero.

*D. John.* I remember.

*Bora.* I can, at any unseasonable instant of the night, appoint her to look out at her lady's chamber-window.

*D. John.* What life is in that, to be the death of this marriage?

*Bora.* The poison of that lies in you to temper. Go you to the prince your brother; spare not to tell him, that he hath wronged his honour in marrying the renowned Claudio (whose estimation do you mightily hold up) to a contaminated state, such a one as Hero.

*D. John.* What proof shall I make of that?

*Bora.* Proof enough to misuse the prince, to vex Claudio, to undo Hero, and kill Leonato: Look you for any other issue?

*D. John.* Only to despite them, I will endeavour any thing.

*Bora.* Go then, find me a meet hour to draw Don Pedro and the count Claudio, alone: tell them, that you know that Hero loves me; intend\* a kind of zeal both to the prince and Claudio, as—in love of your brother's honour who hath made this match; and his friend's reputation, who is thus like to be cozened with the semblance of a maid,—that you have discovered thus. They will scarcely believe this without trial: offer them instances; which shall bear no less likelihood, than to see me at her chamber-window; hear me call Margaret, Hero; hear Margaret term me Borachio; and bring them to see this, the very night before the intended wedding: for, in the mean time, I will so fashion the matter, that Hero shall be absent; and there shall appear such seeming truth of Hero's disloyalty, that jealousy shall be call'd assurance, and all the preparation overthrow.

*D. John.* Grow this to what adverse issue it can, I will put it in practice: Be cunning in the working this, and thy fee is a thousand ducats.

*Bora.* Be you constant in the accusation, and my cunning shall not shame me.

*D. John.* I will presently go learn their day of marriage. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—LEONATO'S Garden.

*Enter BENEDICK and a Boy.*

*Bene.* Boy.—

*Boy.* Signior.

*Bene.* In my chamber-window lies a book; bring it hither to me in the orchard.

*Boy.* I am here already, Sir.

*Bene.* I know that;—but I would have thee hence, and here again. [*Exit Boy.*—] I do much wonder, that one man, seeing how much another man is a fool when he dedicates his behaviours to love, will, after he hath laughed at such shallow follies in others, become the argument of his own scorn, by falling in love: And such a man is Claudio. I have known, when there was no music with him but the drum and fife; and now he would rather hear the tabor and the pipe: I have known, when he would have walked ten miles afoot, to see a good armour; and now will he lie ten nights awake, carving the fashion of a new doublet. He was wont to speak plain, and to the purpose, like an honest man, and a soldier; and now is he turn'd orthographer; his words are a very fantastical banquet, just so many strange dishes. May I be so converted, and see with these eyes? I cannot tell; I think not: I will not be sworn, but love may transform me to an oyster; but I'll take my oath on it, till he have made an oyster of me, he shall never make me such a fool. One woman is fair, yet I am well: another is wise; yet I am well: another virtuous; yet I am well; but till all graces be in one woman, one woman shall not come in my grace. Rich she shall be, that's certain; wise, or I'll none; virtuous, or I'll never cheapen her; fair, or I'll never look on her; mild, or come not near me; noble, or not I for an angel; of good discourse, an excellent musician, and her hair shall be of what colour it please God. Ha! the prince and monsieur Love! I will hide me in the arbour. [*Withdraws.*]

*Enter DON PEDRO, LEONATO, and CLAUDIO.*

*D. Pedro.* Come, shall we hear this music?

\* Lineage.

† Fastidious.

\* Pretend.

*Claud.* Yea, my good lord;—How still the evening is,  
As hush'd on purpose to grace harmony!

*D. Pedro.* See you where Benedick hath hid himself?

*Claud.* O very well, my lord: the music ended,  
We'll fit the kid-fox \* with a penny-worth.

*Enter BALTHAZAR, with music.*

*D. Pedro.* Come, Balthazar, we'll hear that song again.

*Balth.* O good my lord, 'tis not so bad a voice,

To slander music any more than once.

*D. Pedro.* It is the witness still of excellency,  
To put a strange face on his own perfection:—  
I pray thee, sing, and let me woo no more.

*Balth.* Because you talk of wooing, I will sing:

Since many a wooer doth commence his suit  
To her he thinks not worthy; yet he wooes;  
Yet will he swear, he loves.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, pray thee, come:  
Or, if thou wilt hold longer argument,  
Do it in notes.

*Balth.* Note this before my notes,  
There's not a note of mine that's worth the noting.

*D. Pedro.* Why these are very crotchets that he speaks  
Note, notes, forsooth, and nothing! [*Music.*]

*Bene.* Now, *Divine air!* now is his soul ravished!—Is it not strange, that sheep's guts should hale souls out of men's bodies!—Well, a horn for my money, when all's done.

*BALTHAZAR sings.*

*Balth.* *Sigh no more, ladies, sigh no more,  
Men were deceivers ever;  
One foot in sea, and one on shore;  
To one thing constant never:  
Then sigh not so,  
But let them go,  
And be you blith and bonny;  
Converting all your sounds of woe  
Into, Hey nonny, nonny.  
Sing no more ditties, sing no mo' \*  
(Of dumps so dull and heavy;  
The fraud of men was ever so,  
Since summer first was leavy.  
Then sigh not so, &c.*

*D. Pedro.* By my troth, a good song.

*Balth.* And an ill singer, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Ha! no; no, faith; thou singest well enough for a shift.

*Bene.* [*Aside.*] An he had been a dog, that should have howled thus, they would have hang'd him: and, I pray God, his bad voice bode no mischief! I had as lief have heard the night-raven, come what plague could have come after it.

*D. Pedro.* Yea, marry; [*To CLAUDIO.*]—Dost thou hear, Balthazar! I pray thee, get us some excellent music; for to-morrow night we would have it at the lady Hero's chamber-window.

*Balth.* The best I can, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Do so: farewell. [*Exit BALTHAZAR and music.*] Come hither, Leonato: What was it you told me of to-day? that your niece Beatrice was in love with signior Benedick?

*Claud.* O ay:—Stalk on, stalk on; the fowl sits. [*Aside to PEDRO.*] I did never think that lady would have loved any man.

*Leon.* No, nor I neither; but most wonderful that she should so dote on signior Benedick, whom she hath in all outward behaviours seem'd ever to abhor.

*Bene.* Is't possible? Sits the wind in that corner? [*Aside.*]

*Leon.* By my troth, my lord, I cannot tell

what to think of it; but that she loves him with an enraged affection,—it is past the infinite of thought. \*

*D. Pedro.* May be, she doth but counterfeit.

*Claud.* Faith, like enough.

*Leon.* O God! counterfeit! There never was counterfeit of passion came so near the life of passion, as she discovers it.

*D. Pedro.* Why, what effects of passion shows she?

*Claud.* Bait the hook well; this fish will bite.

*Leon.* What effects, my lord! She will sit you,—  
You heard my daughter tell you how.

*Claud.* She did, indeed.

*D. Pedro.* How, how, I pray you? You amaze me: I would have thought her spirit had been invincible against all assaults of affection.

*Leon.* I would have sworn it had, my lord; especially against Benedick.

*Bene.* [*Aside.*] I should think this a gull, but that the white-bearded fellow speaks it: knavery cannot, sure, hide itself in such reverence.

*Claud.* He hath ta'en the infection: hold it up.

*D. Pedro.* Hath she made her affection known to Benedick?

*Leon.* No; and swears she never will; that's her torment.

*Claud.* 'Tis true, indeed; so your daughter says: *Shall I*, says she, *that have so oft encountered him with scorn, write to him that I love him?*

*Leon.* This says she now when she is beginning to write to him: for she'll be up twenty times a night: and there will she sit in her smock, till she have writ a sheet of paper:—my daughter tells us all.

*Claud.* Now you talk of a sheet of paper, I remember a pretty jest your daughter told us of.

*Leon.* O!—When she had writ it, and was reading it over, she found Benedick and Beatrice between the sheet?—

*Claud.* That.

*Leon.* Oh! she tore the letter into a thousand half-pence; railed at herself, that she should be so immodest to write to one that she knew would flout her: *I measure him*, says she, *by my own spirit*; for *I should flout him*, if he writ to me: yea, though I love him, I should.

*Claud.* Then down upon her knees she falls, weeps, sobs, beats her heart, tears her hair, prays, curses;—*O sweet Benedick! God give me patience!*

*Leon.* She doth indeed; my daughter says so: and the ecstasy † hath so much overborne her, that my daughter is sometime afraid that she will do a desperate outrage to herself; It is very true.

*D. Pedro.* It were good that Benedick knew of it by some other, if she will not discover it.

*Claud.* To what end? He would but make a sport of it, and torment the poor lady worse.

*D. Pedro.* An she should, it were an aim to hang him: She's an excellent sweet lady; and, out of all suspicion, she is virtuous.

*Claud.* And she is exceeding wise.

*D. Pedro.* In every thing, but in loving Benedick.

*Leon.* O my lord, wisdom and blood combating in so tender a body, we have ten proofs to one, that blood hath the victory. I am sorry for her, as I have just cause, being her uncle and her guardian.

*D. Pedro.* I would, she had bestowed this dottage on me; I would have daff'd ‡ all other respects, and made her half myself: I pray you, tell Benedick of it, and hear what he will say.

*Leon.* Were it good, think you?

*Claud.* Hero, thinks surely, she will die; for

\* Heav'd the power of thought to conceive.  
† Alienation of mind.  
‡ Thrown off.

\* Young or cub-fox.

† Louger.

she says, she will die if he love her not, and she will die ere she makes her love known; and she will die if he woo her, rather than she will 'bate one breath of her accustomed crossnesses.

*D. Pedro.* She doth well if she should make tender of her love, 'tis very possible he'll scorn it, for the man as you know all, hath a contemptible \* spirit.

*Claud.* He is a very proper † man.

*D. Pedro.* He hath, indeed, a good outward happiness.

*Claud.* 'Fore God, and in my mind, very wise.

*D. Pedro.* He doth, indeed, show some sparks that are like wit.

*Leon.* And I take him to be valiant.

*D. Pedro.* As Hector, I assure you: and in the managing of quarrels you may say he is wise; for either he avoids them with great discretion, or undertakes them with a most Christian-like fear.

*Leon.* If he do fear God, he must necessarily keep peace; if he break the peace, he ought to enter into a quarrel with fear and trembling.

*D. Pedro.* And so will he do; for the man doth fear God, howsoever it seems not in him, by some large jests he will make. Well, I am sorry for your niece: Shall we go see Benedick, and tell him of her love?

*Claud.* Never tell him, my lord; let her wear it out with good counsel.

*Leon.* Nay, that's impossible; she may wear her heart out first.

*D. Pedro.* Well, we'll hear further of it by your daughter; let it cool the while. I love Benedick well; and I could wish he would modestly examine himself, to see how much he is unworthy so good a lady.

*Leon.* My lord, will you walk? dinner is ready.

*Claud.* If he do not dote on her upon this, I will never trust my expectation. [Aside.]

*D. Pedro.* Let there be the same net spread for her: and that must your daughter and her gentiewoman carry. The sport will be, when they hold one opinion of another's dotage, and no such matter; that's the scene that I would see, which will be merely a dumb show. Let us send her to call him in to dinner. [Aside.]

[*Exeunt DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, and LEONATO.*]

*BENEDICK advances from the arbour.*

*Bene.* This can be no trick: The conference was sadly borne.†—They have the truth of this from *Hero*. They seem to pity the lady; it seems, her affections have their full bent. Love me? why, it must be requited. I hear how I am censured: they say, I will bear myself proudly, if I perceive the love come from her; they say too, that she will rather die than give any sign of affection.—I did never think to marry:—I must not seem proud:—Happy are they that hear their detractions, and can put them to mending. They say the lady is fair; 'tis a truth, I can bear them witness: and virtuous:—'tis so, I cannot reprove it; and wise, but for loving me:—By my troth, it is no addition to her wit;—nor no great argument of her folly, for I will be horribly in love with her.—I may chance have some odd quirks and remnants of wit broken on me, because I have railed so long against marriage:—But doth not the appetite alter? A man loves the meat in his youth, that he cannot endure in his age; shall quips, and sentences, and these paper bullets of the brain, awe a man from the career of his humour? No: The world must be peopled. When I said, I would die a bachelor, I did not think I should live till I were married.—Here comes Beatrice: By this day, she's

a fair lady: I do spy some marks of love in her.

*Enter BEATRICE.*

*Beat.* Against my will, I am sent to bid you come in to dinner.

*Bene.* Fair Beatrice, I thank you for your pains.

*Beat.* I took no more pains for those thanks than you take pains to thank me; if it had been painful, I would not have come.

*Bene.* You take pleasure in the message.

*Beat.* Yea, just so much as you may take upon a knife's point, and choke a daw withal:—You have no stomach, signior; fare you well. [Exit.]

*Bene.* Ha! Against my will I am sent to bid you come to dinner—there's a double meaning in that. I took no more pains for those thanks, than you took pains to thank me—that's as much as to say, Any pains that I take for you is as easy as thanks:—If I no not take pity of her, I am a villain; if I do not love her, I am a Jew: I will go get her picture. [Exit.]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—Leonato's Garden.

*Enter HERO, MARGARET, and URSULA.*

*Hero.* Good Margaret, run thee into the parlour;

There shalt thou find my cousin Beatrice Proposing \* with the Prince and Claudio: Whisper her ear, and tell her I and Ursula Walk in the orchard, and our whole discourse is all of her; say, that thou overheard'st us; And bid her steal into the pleached bower, Where honey suckles ripen'd by the sun, Forbid the sun to enter;—like favourites, Beat proud by princes, that advance their pride

Against that power that bred it:—there will she bide her,

To listen our purpose: This is thy office, Bear thee well in it, and leave us alone.

*Marg.* I'll make her come, I warrant you, presently. [Exit.]

*Hero.* Now, Ursula, when Beatrice doth As we do trace this alley up and down, [come, Our talk must only be of Benedick: When I do name him, let it be thy part To praise him more than ever man did merit My talk to thee must be how Benedick Is sick in love with Beatrice: Of this matter Is little Cupid's cratty arrow made, That only wounds by hearsay. Now begin;

*Enter BEATRICE, behind.*

For look where Beatrice, like a lapwing, runs Close by the ground, to hear our conference.

*Urs.* The pleasant'st angling is to see the fish Cut with her golden oars the silver stream, And greedily devour the treacherous bait; So angle we for Beatrice; who even now Is couched in the woodbine coverture: Fear you not my part of the dialogue.

*Hero.* Then go we near her, that her ear lose nothing

Of the false sweet bait that we lay for it.— [They advance to the bower.]

No, truly, Ursula, she is too disdainful; I know, her spirits are as coy and wild As baggards of the rock.†

*Urs.* But are you sure, That Benedick loves Beatrice so entirely? lord.

*Hero.* So says the prince, and my new-trothed *Urs.* And did they bid you tell her of it, madam?

*Hero.* They did entreat me to acquaint her of it.

\* Contemptuous.

† Handsome.

‡ Seriously carried on.

\* Discouraging.

† A species of hawk.

But I persuaded them, if they lov'd Benedick,  
To wish him wrestle with affection,  
And never to let Beatrice know of it.

*Urs.* Why did you so? Doth not the gentleman

Deserve as full, as fortunate a bed,  
As ever Beatrice shall couch upon?

*Hero.* O God of love! I know, he doth deserve

As much as may be yielded to a man:  
But nature never fram'd a woman's heart  
Of prouder stuff than that of Beatrice:  
Disdain and scorn ride sparkling in her eyes,  
Misprising\* what they look on; and her wit  
Values itself so highly, that to her  
All matter else seems weak: she cannot love,  
Nor take no shape nor project of affection,  
She is so self-endear'd.

*Urs.* Sure, I think so;  
And therefore, certainly, it were not good  
She knew his love, lest she make sport at it.

*Hero.* Why, you speak truth: I never yet saw man,

How wise, how noble, young, how rarely feather'd,

But she would spell him backward: if fair faced,  
She'd swear, the gentleman should be her sister;  
If black, why, nature, drawing of an antic,  
Made a foul blot; if tall, a lance ill-headed;  
If low, an agate very vilely cut;  
If speaking, why, a vane blown with all winds;  
If silent, why a block moved with none.  
So turns she every man the wrong side out;  
And never gives to truth and virtue, that  
Which simpleness and merit purchaseth.

*Urs.* Sure, sure, such carping is not commendable.

*Hero.* No: not to be so odd, and from all fashions,

As Beatrice is, cannot be commendable:  
But who dare tell her so? If I should speak,  
She'd mock me into air; Oh! she would laugh me

Out of myself, press me to death with wit.  
Therefore let Benedick, like cover'd fire,  
Consume away in sighs, waste inwardly:  
It were a better death than die with mocks;  
Which is as bad as die with tickling.

*Urs.* Yet tell her of it; hear what she will say.

*Hero.* No; rather I will go to Benedick,  
And counsel him to fight against his passion:  
And, truly, I'll devise some honest slanders  
To stain my cousin with: One doth not know,  
How much an ill word may empoison liking.

*Urs.* Oh! do not do your cousin such a wrong.

She cannot be so much without true judgment,  
(Having so swift† and excellent a wit,  
As she is priz'd to have,) as to refuse  
So rare a gentleman as signior Benedick.

*Hero.* He is the only man of Italy,  
Always excepted my dear Claudio.

*Urs.* I pray you be not angry with me, madam,

Speaking my fancy; signior Benedick,  
For shape, for bearing, argument,† and valour,  
Goes foremost in report through Italy.

*Hero.* Indeed he hath an excellent good name.

*Urs.* His excellence did earn it, ere he had it.—

When are you married, madam?

*Hero.* Why, every day;—to-morrow: Come go in;

I'll show thee some attires; and have thy counsel,  
Which is the best to furnish me to-morrow.

*Urs.* She's him'd‡ I warrant you; we have caught her, madam,

*Hero.* If it prove so, then loving goes by haps:  
Some Cupid kills with arrows, some with traps.

[*Exeunt HERO and URSULA.*]

BEATRICE advances.

*Beat.* What fire is in mine ears? Can this be true?

Stand I condemn'd for pride and scorn so much?

Contempt, farewell! and maiden pride, adieu!

No glory lives behind the back of such.

And, Benedick, love on, I will requite thee;

Taming my wild heart to thy loving hand;

If thou dost love, my kindness shall incite thee

To bind our loves up in a holy band:

For others say, thou dost deserve; and I

Believe it better than reportingly. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—A room in LEONATO'S House.

Enter DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, and LEONATO.

*D. Pedro.* I do but stay till your marriage be consummate, and then I go towards Aithagon.

*Claud.* I'll bring you thither, my lord, if you'll vouchsafe me.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, that would be as great a soil in the new gloss of your marriage, as to show a child his new coat, and forbid him to wear it. I will only be bold with Benedick for his company; for, from the crown of his head to the sole of his foot, he is all mirth; he hath twice or thrice cut Cupid's bow-string, and the little hangman dare not shoot at him; he hath a heart as sound as a bell, and his tongue is the clapper; for what his heart thinks, his tongue speaks.

*Bene.* Gallants, I am not as I have been.

*Leon.* So say I; methinks, you are sadden.

*Claud.* I hope, he be in love.

*D. Pedro.* Hang him, truant; there's no true drop of blood in him, to be truly touch'd with love: if he be sad, he wants money.

*Bene.* I have the tooth-ach.

*D. Pedro.* Draw it.

*Bene.* Hang it!

*Claud.* You must hang it first, and draw it afterwards.

*D. Pedro.* What? sigh for the tooth-ach?

*Leon.* Where is but a humour, or a worm?

*Bene.* Well, every one can master a grief, but he that has it.

*Claud.* Yet say I, he is in love.

*D. Pedro.* There is no appearance of fancy in him, unless it be a fancy that he hath to strange disguises; as, to be a Dutchman to-day; a Frenchman to-morrow; or in the shape of two countries at once, as a German from the waist downward, all slops; \* and a Spaniard from the hip upward, no doubt: Unless he have a fancy to this foolery, as it appears he hath, he is no fool for fancy, as you would have it appear he is.

*Claud.* If he be not in love with some woman, there is no believing old signs: he brushes his bat o' mornings; What should that bode?

*D. Pedro.* Hath any man seen him at the barber's?

*Claud.* No, but the barber's man hath been seen with him; and the old ornament of his cheek hath already stuffed tennis-balls.

*Leon.* Indeed, he looks younger than he did, by the loss of a beard.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, he rubs himself with civet: Can you smell him out by that?

*Claud.* That's as much as to say, The sweet youth's in love.

*D. Pedro.* The greatest note of it is his melancholy.

*Claud.* And when was he wont to wash his face?

*D. Pedro.* Yea, or to paint himself? for the which, I hear what they say of him.

*Claud.* Nay, but his jesting spirit; which is now crept into a lutestrung, and now governed by stops.

† Ready. \* Undervaluing. ‡ Conversation.  
§ Enamored with birdlime.

\* Large loose breeches

*D. Pedro.* Indeed, that tells a heavy tale for him: Conclude, conclude, he is in love.

*Claud.* Nay, but I know who loves him.

*D. Pedro.* That would I know too; I warrant, one that knows him not.

*Claud.* Yes, and his ill conditions; and, in despite of all, dies for him.

*D. Pedro.* She shall be buried with her face upwards.

*Bene.* Yet is this no charm for the tooth-ach.—Old Signior, walk aside with me: I have studied eight or nine wise words to speak to you, which these hobby-horses must not hear,

[*Exeunt* BENEDICK and LEONATO.]

*D. Pedro.* For my life, to break with him about Beatrice.

*Claud.* 'Tis even so: Hero and Margaret have by this played their parts with Beatrice; and then the two bears will not bite one another, when they meet.

[*Enter* DON JOHN.]

*D. John.* My lord and brother, God save you.

*D. Pedro.* Good den, brother.

*D. John.* If your leisure served, I would speak with you.

*D. Pedro.* In private?

*D. John.* If it please you:—yet count Claudio may hear; for what I would speak of, concerns him.

*D. Pedro.* What's the matter?

*D. John.* Means your lordship to be married to-morrow?

[*To* CLAUDIO.]

*D. Pedro.* You know, he does.

*D. John.* I know not that, when he knows what I know.

*Claud.* If there be any impediment, I pray you, discover it.

*D. John.* You may think, I love you not; let that appear hereafter, and aim better at me by that I now will manifest: For my brother, I think, he holds you well; and in dearthness of heart hath help to effect your ensuing marriage: surely suit ill spent, and labour ill bestowed!

*D. Pedro.* Why, what's the matter?

*D. John.* I came hither to tell you; and, circumstances shortened, (for she hath been too long a talking of,) the lady is disloyal.

*Claud.* Who? Hero?

*D. John.* Even she; Leonato's Hero, your Hero, every man's Hero.

*Claud.* Disloyal?

*D. John.* The word is too good to paint out her wickedness; I could say, she were worse; think you of a worse title, and I will fit her to it. Wonder not till further warrant: go but with me to-night, you shall see her chamber-window entered, even the night before her wedding-day: if you love her then, to-morrow wed her; but it would better fit your honour to change your mind.

*Claud.* May this be so?

*D. Pedro.* I will not think it.

*D. John.* If you dare not trust that you see, confess not that you know: if you will follow me, I will show you enough; and when you have seen more, and heard more, proceed accordingly.

*Claud.* If I see any thing to night why I should not marry her to-morrow; in the congregation, where I should wed, there will I shame her.

*D. Pedro.* And, as I wooed for thee to obtain her, I will join with thee to disgrace her.

*D. John.* I will disparage her no farther, till you are my witnesses: bear it coldly but, till midnight, and let the issue show itself.

*D. Pedro.* O day untowardly turned!

*Claud.* O mischief strangely thwarting!

*D. John.* O plague right well prevented! So will you say, when you have seen the sequel.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—A Street.

*Enter* DOGBERRY and VERGELS, with the WATCH.

*Dogb.* Are you good men and true?

*Verg.* Yea, or else it were pity but they should suffer salvation, body and soul.

*Dogb.* Nay, that were a punishment too good for them, if they should have any allegiance in them, being chosen for the prince's watch.

*Verg.* Well, give them their charge, neighbour Dogberry.

*Dogb.* First, who think you the most desartless man to be constable?

*1 Watch.* Hugh Outcake, Sir, or George Seacoal; for they can write and read.

*Dogb.* Come hither, neighbour Seacoal. God hath blessed you with a good name: to be a well favoured man is the gift of fortune, but to write and read comes by nature.

*2 Watch.* Both which, master constable,—

*Dogb.* You have; I knew it would be your answer. Well, for your favour, Sir, whiv, give God thanks, and make no boast of it: and for your writing and reading, let that appear when there is no need of such vanity. Your are thought here to be the most senseless and fit man for the constable of the watch; therefore bear you the lantern: This is your charge; You shall comprehend all vagrom men: you are to bid any man stand, in the prince's name.

*2 Watch.* How if he will not stand?

*Dogb.* Why then, take no note of him, but let him go; and presently call the rest of the watch together, and thank God you are rid of a knave.

*Verg.* If he will not stand when he is bidden, he is none of the prince's subjects.

*Dogb.* True, and they are to meddle with none but the prince's subjects:—You shall also make no noise in the streets; for, for the watch to babble and talk, is most tolerable and not to be endured.

*2 Watch.* We will rather sleep than talk; we know what belongs to a watch.

*Dogb.* Why, you speak like an ancient and most quiet watchman; for I cannot see how sleeping should offend: only, have a care that your bills \* be not stolen:—Well, you are to call at all the ale-houses, and bid those that are drunk get them to bed.

*2 Watch.* How if they will not?

*Dogb.* Why then, let them alone till they are sober; if they make you not then the better answer, you may say, they are not the men you took them for.

*2 Watch.* Well, Sir.

*Dogb.* If you meet a thief, you may suspect him, by virtue of your office, to be no true man; and, for such kind of men, the less you meddle or make with them, why, the more is for your honesty.

*2 Watch.* If we know him to be a thief, shall we not lay hands on him?

*Dogb.* Truly, by your office you may; but I think, they that touch pitch will be defiled: the most peaceable way for you, if you take a thief, is, to let him show himself what he is, and steal out of your company.

*Verg.* You have been always called a merciful man, partner.

*Dogb.* Truly, I would not hang a dog by my will; much more a man who hath any honesty in him.

*Verg.* If you hear a child cry in the night, you must call to the nurse, and bid her still it.

*2 Watch.* How if the nurse be asleep, and will not hear us.

*Dogb.* Why then, depart in peace, and let the child wake her with crying: for the ewe that will not hear her lamb when it baes, will never answer a calf when it bleats.

*Verg.* 'Tis very true.

\* Weapons of the watchmen

*Debb.* This is the end of the charge. You, constable, are to present the prince's own person; if you meet the prince in the night, you may stay him.

*Ferg.* Nay by'r lady, that, I think, he cannot.

*Dogh.* Five shillings to one on't, with any man that knows the statutes, he may stay him: marry, not without the prince be willing: for, indeed, the watch ought to offend no man; and it is an offence to stay a man against his will.

*Ferg.* By'r lady, I think, it be so.

*Dogh.* Ha, ha, ha! Well, masters, good night: an there be any matter of weight chances, call name: keep your fellows' counsels and your own, and good night.—Come, neighbour.

*2 Watch.* Well, masters, we hear our charge: let us go sit here upon the church-bench till two, and then all to bed.

*Dogh.* One word more, honest neighbours: I pray you, watch about signior Leonato's door; for the wedding being there to-morrow, there is a great coil to-night: Adieu, be vigilant, I beseech you.

[*Exeunt DOGBERRY and VERGES.*]

*Enter BORACHIO and CONRADE.*

*Bora.* What! Conrade,—

*Watch.* Peace, stir not.

*Bora.* Conrade, I say!

*Con.* Here, man, I am at thy elbow.

*Bora.* Mass, and my elbow itched; I thought, there would a scab follow.

*Con.* I will owe thee an answer for that; and now forward with thy tale.

*Bora.* Stand thee close then under this pent-house, for it drizzles rain; and I will, like a true drunkard, utter all to thee.

*Watch.* [*Aside.*] Some treason, masters; yet stand close.

*Bora.* Therefore know, I have earned of Don John a thousand ducats.

*Con.* Is it possible that any villany should be so dear?

*Bora.* Thou should'st rather ask, if it were possible any villany should be so rich; for when rich villains have need of poor ones, poor ones may make what price they will.

*Con.* I wonder at it.

*Bora.* That shows thou art unconformed: \* Thou knowest, that the fashion of a doublet, or a hat, or a cloak, is nothing to a man.

*Con.* Yes, it is apparel.

*Bora.* I mean, the fashion.

*Con.* Yes, the fashion is the fashion.

*Bora.* Tush! I may as well say, the fool's the fool. But see'st thou not what a deformed thief this fashion is?

*Watch.* I know that Deformed; he has been a vile thief this seven year; he goes up and down like a gentleman: I remember his name.

*Dora.* Didst thou not hear somebody?

*Con.* No; 'twas the vane on the house.

*Bora.* Seest thou not, I say, what a deformed thief this fashion is? how giddily he turns about all the hot bloods, between fourteen and five and thirty? sometimes fashioning them like Pharaoh's soldiers in the reechy † painting; sometime, like god bel's priests in the old church window; sometime, like the shaven Hercules in the smirched ‡ worm-eaten tapestry, where the cod-piece seems as massy as his club?

*Con.* All this I see; and see that the fashion wears out more apparel than the man: But art not thou thyself giddy with the fashion too, that thou hast shifted out of thy tale into telling me of the fashion?

*Bora.* Not so, neither: but know, that I have to-night wooed Margaret, the lady Hero's gentlewoman, by the name of Hero: she leans me out at her mistress's chamber window, bids me a thousand times good night,—I tell this

tale vilely:—I should first tell thee, how the prince, Claudio, and my master, planted, and placed, and possessed by my master Don John saw afar off in the orchard this amiable encounter.

*Con.* And thought they, Margaret was Hero?

*Bora.* Two of them did, the prince and Claudio; but the devil my master knew she was Margaret; and partly by his oaths, which first possessed them, partly by the dark night, which did deceive them, but chiefly by my villany, which did confirm any slander that Don John had made, away went Claudio enraged; swore he would meet her as he was appointed, next morning at the temple, and there, before the whole congregation, shame her with what he saw over-night, and send her home again without a husband.

*1 Watch.* We charge you in the prince's name, stand.

*2 Watch.* Call up the right master constable: We have here recovered the most dangerous piece of lechery that ever was known in the commonwealth.

*1 Watch.* And one Deformed is one of them; I know him, he wears a lock.

*Con.* Masters, masters.

*2 Watch.* You'll be made bring Deformed forth, I warrant you.

*Con.* Masters,—

*1 Watch.* Never speak; we charge you, let us obey you to go with us.

*Bora.* We are like to prove a goodly commodity, being taken up of these men's bills.

*Con.* A commodity in question, I warrant you. Come, we'll obey you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—A Room in LEONATO'S House.

*Enter HERO, MARGARET, and URSULA.*

*Hero.* Good Ursula, wake my cousin Beatrice, and desire her to rise.

*Urs.* I will, my lady.

*Hero.* And bid her come hither.

*Urs.* Well. [*Exit URSULA.*]

*Marg.* Troth, I think, your other robato \* were better.

*Hero.* No, pray thee, good Meg, I'll wear this.

*Marg.* By my troth, it's not so good; and I warrant, your cousin will say so.

*Hero.* My cousin's a fool, and thou art another; I'll wear none but this.

*Marg.* I like the new tire † within excellently, if the hair were a thought browner; and your gown's a most rare fashion, I'faith. I saw the duchess of Milan's gown, that they praise so.

*Hero.* Oh! that exceeds, they say.

*Marg.* By my troth, it's but a night-gown in respect of your's: Cloth of gold, and cuts, and laced with silver; set with pearls, down sleeves, side sleeves, ‡ and skirts round, underborne with a blueish tinsel: but for a fine, quaint, graceful, and excellent fashion, your's is worth ten on't.

*Hero.* God give me joy to wear it, for my heart is exceeding heavy!

*Marg.* 'Twill be heavier soon, by the weight of a man.

*Hero.* Fie upon thee! art not ashamed?

*Marg.* Of what, lady? of speaking honourably? Is not marriage honourable in a beggar? Is not your lord honourable without marriage? I think, you would have me say, saving your reverence,—a husband: an bad thinking do not wrest true speaking, I'll offend nobody: Is there any harm in—the heavier for a husband? None, I think, an it be the right husband, and the right wife; otherwise 'tis light, and not heavy: Ask thy lady Beatrice else, here she comes.

\* Unpractised in the ways of the world.

† Smoked.

‡ Soiled.

\* A kind of ruff.

† Head-dress

‡ Long-sleeves.

Enter BEATRICE.

*Hero.* Good morrow, coz.

*Beat.* Good morrow, sweet Hero.

*Hero.* Why, how now! do you speak in the sick tune?

*Beat.* I am out of all other tune, methinks.

*Marg.* Clap us into—*Light o' love*, that goes without burden; do you sing it, and I'll dance it.

*Beat.* Yea, *Light o' love*, with your heels!—then if your husband have stables enough, you'll see he shall lack no barns.

*Marg.* O illegitimate construction! I scorn that with my heels.

*Beat.* 'Tis almost five o'clock, cousin; 'tis time you were ready. By my troth, I am exceeding ill:—hey ho!

*Marg.* For a hawk, a horse, or a husband?

*Beat.* For the letter that begins them all, H.\*

*Marg.* Well, an you be not turned Turk, no more sailing by the star.

*Beat.* What means the fool, trow?

*Marg.* Nothing I; but God send every one their heart's desire!

*Hero.* These gloves the count sent me, they are an excellent perfume.

*Beat.* I am stuffed, cousin, I cannot smell.

*Marg.* A maid, and stuffed! there's goodly catching of cold.

*Beat.* O God help me! God help me! how long have you profess'd apprehension?

*Marg.* Ever since you left it: doth not my wit become me rarely?

*Beat.* It is not seen enough, you should wear it in your cap.—By my troth, I am sick.

*Marg.* Get you some of this distilled Carduus Benedictus, and lay it to your heart; it is the only thing for a qualm.

*Hero.* There thou prick'st her with a thistle.

*Beat.* Benedictus! why Benedictus? you have some moral† in this Benedictus.

*Marg.* Moral? no, by my troth, I have no moral meaning; I meant, plain holy-thistle. You may think, perchance, that I think you are in love: nay, by'r lady, I am not such a fool to think what I list; nor I list not to think what I can; nor, indeed, I cannot think, if I would think my heart out of thinking, that you are in love, or that you will be in love, or that you can be in love: yet Benedict was such another, and now is he become a man: he swore he would never marry; and yet now, in despite of his heart, he eats his meat without grudging: and how you may be converted, I know not, but methinks, you look with your eyes as other women do.

*Beat.* What pace is this that thy tongue keeps?

*Marg.* Not a false gallop.

Re-enter URSULA.

*Urs.* Madam, withdraw; the prince, the count, signior Benedict, Don John, and all the gallants of the town, are come to fetch you to church.

*Hero.* Help to dress me, good coz, good Meg, good Ursula. [Exeunt.]

SCENE V.—Another Room in LEONATO'S House.

Enter LEONATO, with DOGBERRY and VERGES.

*Leon.* What would you with me, honest neighbour?

*Dogb.* Marry, Sir, I would have some confidence with you, that deceives you nearly.

*Leon.* Brief, I pray you; for you see, 'tis a busy time with me.

*Dogb.* Marry, this it is, Sir.

*Verg.* Yes, in truth it is, Sir.

*Leon.* What is it, my good friends?

*Dogb.* Goodman Verges, Sir, speaks a little off

the matter: an old man, Sir, and his wits are not so blunt, as, God help, I would desire they were; but, in faith, honest, as the skin between his blows.

*Verg.* Yes, I thank God, I am as honest as any man living, that is an old man, and no honestest but I.

*Dogb.* Comparisons are odorous: *palabras*, neighbour Verges.

*Leon.* Neighbours, you are tedious.

*Dogb.* It pleases your worship to say so, but we are the poor duke's officers: but, truly, for mine own part, if I were as tedious as a king, I could find in my heart to bestow it all of your worship.

*Leon.* All thy tediousness on me! ha!

*Dogb.* Yea, and 'twere a thousand times more than 'tis; for I hear as good exclamation on your worship, as of any man in the city; and though I be but a poor man, I am glad to hear it.

*Verg.* And so am I.

*Leon.* I would fain know what you have to say.

*Verg.* Marry, Sir, our watch to-night, excepting your worship's presence, have taken a couple of as arrant knaves as any in Messina.

*Dogb.* A good old man, Sir; he will be talking; as they say, When the age is in, the wit is out: God help us! it is a world to see! \*—Well said, I'faith, neighbour Verges—well, God's a good man; an two in a ride of a horse, one must ride behind:—An honest soul, I'faith, Sir; by my troth he is, as ever broke bread: but, God is to be worshipp'd: All men are not alike; alas, good neighbour!

*Leon.* Indeed, neighbour, he comes too short of you.

*Dogb.* Gifts that God gives.

*Leon.* I must leave you.

*Dogb.* One word, Sir: our watch, Sir, have, indeed, comprehended two auspicious persons, and we would have them this morning examined before your worship.

*Leon.* Take their examination yourself, and bring it me; I am now in great haste, as it may appear unto you.

*Dogb.* It shall be sufficiency.

*Leon.* Drink some wine ere you go: fare you well.

Enter a MESSENGER.

*Mess.* My lord, they stay for you to give your daughter to her husband.

*Leon.* I will wait upon them; I am ready.

[Exeunt LEONATO and MESSENGER.]

*Dogb.* Go, good partner, go, get you to Francis Seacal, bid him bring his pen and inkhorn to the gaol; we are now to examination these men.

*Verg.* And we must do it wisely.

*Dogb.* We will spare for no wit, I warrant you; here's that [Touching his forehead.] shall drive some of them to a non com: only get the learned writer to set down our excommunication, and meet me at the gaol. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—The inside of a Church.

Enter DON PEDRO, DON JOHN, LEONATO, FRIAR, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, HERO, and BEATRICE, &c.

*Leon.* Come, friar Francis, be brief; only to the plain form of marriage, and you shall receive their particular duties afterwards.

*Friar.* You come hither, my lord, to marry this lady?

*Claud.* No.

\* I. e. For an oche or pain.

† Hidden meaning.

\* It is worth seeing.

*Leon.* To be married to her, friar; you come to marry her.

*Friar.* Lady, you come hither to be married to this count?

*Hero.* I do.

*Friar.* If either of you know any inward impediment why you should not be conjoined, I charge you, on your souls, to utter it.

*Claud.* Know you any, Hero?

*Hero.* None, my lord.

*Friar.* Know you any, count?

*Leon.* I dare make his answer, none.

*Claud.* Oh! what men dare do! what men may do! what men daily do! not knowing what they do!

*Bene.* How now! Interjections? Why, then some be of laughing, as ha! ha! he!

*Claud.* Stand thee by, friar;—Father, by your leave!

• Will you with free and unconstrained soul

Give me this maid your daughter?

*Leon.* As freely, son, as God did give her me.

*Claud.* And what have I to give you back, whose worth May counterpoise this rich and precious gift.

*D. Pedro.* Nothing, unless you render her again.

*Claud.* Sweet prince, you learn me noble thankfulness.—

There, Leonato, take her back again;

Give not this rotten orange to your friend;

She's but the sign and semblance of her honour:—

Behold, how like a maid she blushes here:

Oh! what authority and show of truth

Can cunning sin cover itself withal!

Comes not that blood, as modest evidence,

To witness simple virtue? Would you not swear,

All you that see her, that she were a maid,

By these exterior shows? But she is none:

She knows the heat of a luxurious<sup>\*</sup> bed:

Her blush is guiltiness, not modesty.

*Leon.* What do you mean, my lord?

*Claud.* Not to be married,

Not knit my soul to an approved wanton.

*Leon.* Dear my lord, if you, in your own proof Have vanquish'd the resistance of her youth,

And made defeat of her virginity,—

*Claud.* I know what you would say; if I have known her,

You'll say, she did embrace me as a husband,

And so extenuate the<sup>†</sup> forehead sin:

No, Leonato,

I never tempted her with word too large; †

But, as a brother to his sister, show'd

Bashful sincerity, and comely love.

*Hero.* And seem'd I ever otherwise to you?

*Claud.* Out on thy seeming! I will write against it:

You seem to me as Dian in her orb;

As chaste as is the bud ere it be blown;

But you are more intemperate in your blood

Than Venus, or those pamper'd animals

That rage in savage sensuality.

*Hero.* Is my lord well that he doth speak so wide †?

*Leon.* Sweet prince, why speak not you?

*D. Pedro.* What should I speak?

I stand dishonour'd, that have gone about

To link my dear friend to a common stale.

*Leon.* Are these things spoken? or do I but dream?

*D. John.* Sir, they are spoken, and these things are true.

*Bene.* This looks not like a nuptial.

*Hero.* True, O God!

*Claud.* Leonato, stand I here?

Is this the prince? Is this the prince's brother? Is this face Hero's? Are our eyes our own?

*Leon.* All this is so; but what of this, my lord?

*Claud.* Let me but move one question to your daughter;

And, by that fairly and kindly power

That you have in her, bid her answer truly.

*Leon.* I charge thee do so, as thou art my child.

*Hero.* O God defend me! how am I beset!—What kind of catechizing call you this?

*Claud.* To make you answer truly to your name.

*Hero.* Is it not Hero? Who can blot that name

With any just reproach?

*Claud.* Marry, that can Hero;

Hero itself can blot out Hero's virtue.

What man was he talk'd with you yesternight

Out at your window, betwixt twelve and one?

Now, if you are a maid, answer to this.

*Hero.* I talk'd with no man at that hour, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Why, then are you no maiden.—Leonato,

I am sorry you must hear; Upon mine honour,

Myself, my brother and this griev'd count,

Did see her, hear her, at that hour last night,

Talk with a ruffian at her chamber-window;

Who bath, indeed, most like a liberal<sup>\*</sup> villain,

Confess'd the vile encounters they have had

A thousand times in secret.

*D. John.* Fie, fie! they are

Not to be nam'd, my lord, not to be spoke of;

There is not chastity enough in language,

Without offence, to utter them: Thus, pretty

lady,

I am sorry for thy much misgovernment.

*Claud.* O Hero! what a Hero hadst thou been,

If half thy outward graces had been placed

About thy thoughts, and counsels of thy heart!

But, fare thee well, most foul, most fair! fare-

well,

Thou pure impiety, and impious purity!

For thee, I'll lock up all the gates of love,

And on my eye-lids shall conjecture hang,

To turn all beauty into thoughts of harm,

And never shall it more be gracious. †

*Leon.* Hath no man's dagger here a point for me? [*HERO SINGS.*]

*Beat.* Why, how now, cousin? wherefore sink you down?

*D. John.* Come, let us go: these things come thus to light,

Smother her spirits up. [*Exeunt DON PEDRO, DON JOHN, and CLAUDIO.*]

*Bene.* How doth the lady?

*Beat.* Dead, I think;—help, uncle;—

Hero! why, Hero!—Uncle!—Signior Bene-

dict!—Friar!

*Leon.* O fate, take not away thy heavy hand!

Death is the fairest cover for her shame,

That may be wish'd for.

*Beat.* How now, cousin Hero?

*Friar.* Have comfort, lady?

*Leon.* Dost thou look up?

*Friar.* Yea; Wherefore should she not?

*Leon.* Wherefore? Why, doth not every earthly thing

Cry shame upon her? Could she here deny

The story that is printed in her blood?—

Do not live, Hero; do not ope thine eyes:

For did I think thou would'st not quickly die,

Thought I thy spirits were stronger than thy

shames,

Myself would, on the rearward of reproaches,

Strike at thy life. Grief'd I, I had but one?

Child I for that at frugal nature's frame? †

O one too much by thee! Why had I one?

Why ever wast thou lovely in my eyes?

\* Lascivious.

† Licentious.

‡ Remote from the business in hand.

\* Too free of tongue.

† Attractive.

‡ Disposition of things.



Why had I not, with charitable hand,  
Took up a beggar's issue at my gates;  
Who smuched \* thus, and mired with infamy,  
I might have said, *No part of it is mine,*  
*This shame derives itself from unknown*  
*joins?*

But mine, and mine I lov'd, and mine I prais'd,  
And mine that I was proud on; mine so much,  
That I myself was by myself mine,  
Valuing of her: whv, she—Oh! she is fallen  
Into a pit of ink! that the wide sea  
Hath drops too few to wash her clean again;  
And salt too little, which may season give  
To her foul tainted flesh!

*Bene.* Sir, Sir, be patient;  
For my part, I am so attir'd in wonder,  
I know not what to say.

*Beat.* Oh! on my soul, my cousin is balled!

*Bene.* Lady, were you her bedfellow last night?

*Beat.* No, truly, not; although, until last night,  
I have this twelvemonth been her bedfellow.

*Leon.* Confirm'd, confirm'd! Oh! that is stronger made,

Which was before barr'd up with ribs of iron!  
Would the two princes lie? and Claudio lie?  
Who lov'd her so, that, speaking of her foulness,

Wash'd it with tears? Hence from her; let her die.

*Friar.* Hear me a little;  
For I have only been silent so long,  
And given way unto this course of fortune,  
By noting of the lady: I have mark'd  
A thousand blushing apparitions start  
Into her face; a thousand innocent shames  
In angel whiteness bear away those blushes;  
And in her eye there hath appear'd a fire,  
To burn the errors that these princes hold  
Against her maiden truth:—Call me a fool;  
Trust not my reading, nor my observations,  
Which with experiment! seal doth warrant  
The tenour of my book; trust not my age,  
My reverence, calling, nor divinity,  
If this sweet lady lie not guiltless here  
Under some biting error.

*Leon.* Friar, it cannot be:  
Thou seest, that all the grace that she hath left,

Is, that she will not add to her damnation  
A sin of perjury; she not denies it:  
Why seek'st thou then to cover with excuse  
That which appears in proper nakedness?

*Friar.* Lady, what man is he you are accus'd of?

*Hero.* They know, that do accuse me; I know  
If I know more of any man alive, [none:  
Than that which maiden modesty doth warrant  
Let all my sins lack mercy!—O my father,  
Prove you that any man with me convers'd  
At hours unmeet, or that I yesternight  
Maintain'd the change of words with any creature,

Refuse me, hate me, torture me to death.

*Friar.* There is some strange misprison † in the princes.

*Bene.* Two of them have the very bent of honour;

And if their wisdoms be misled in this,  
The practice of it lives in John the bastard,  
Whose spirits toil in frame of villainies.

*Leon.* I know not; if they speak but truth of

these ~~honest~~ shall tear her; if they wrong her honour,

The proudest of them shall well hear of it.  
Time hath not yet so dried this blood of mine,  
Nor age so eat up my invention,  
Nor fortune made such havoc of my means,  
Nor my bad life left me so much of friends,  
That they shall find, awak'd in such a kind,  
Both strength of limb, and policy of mind,

\* Sullied.

† Misconception.

Ability in means, and choice of friends,  
To quit me of them thoroughly.

*Friar.* Pause a while,  
And let my counsel sway you in this case.  
Your daughter here the princes left for dead:  
Let her awhile be secretly kept in,  
And publish it, that she is dead indeed:  
Maintain a mourning ostentation;  
And on your family's old monument  
Hang mournful epitaphs, and do all rites  
That appertain unto a burial.

*Leon.* What shall become of this? What will this do?

*Friar.* Marry, this, well carried, shall on her behalf

Change slander to remorse; that is some good:  
But not for that, dream I on this strange course,  
But on this travail look for greater birth.

She dying, as it must be so maintain'd,  
Upon the instant that she was accus'd,  
Shall be lamented, pitied, and excus'd,  
Of every hearer: For it so falls out,  
That what we have we prize not to the worth,  
Whiles \* we enjoy it; but being lack'd and lost,  
Why, then we rack † the value; then we find  
The virtue, that possession would not show us  
Whiles it was ours:—So will it fare with Claudio:

When he shall hear she died upon ‡ his words,  
The idea of her life shall sweetly creep  
Into his study of imagination;

And every lovely organ of her life  
Shall come apparell'd in more precious habit,  
More moving, delicate, and full of life,  
Into the eye and prospect of his soul,  
Than when she liv'd indeed:—then shall he

mourn,  
(If ever love had interest in his liver,)  
And wish he had not so accus'd her;  
No, though he thought his accusation true.  
Let this be so, and doubt not but success  
Will fashion the event in better shape  
Than I can lay it down in likelihood.  
But if all aim but this be levell'd false,  
The supposition of the lady's death  
Will quench the wonder of her infamy:  
And, if it sort not well, you may conceal her,  
(As best befits her wounded reputation,)  
In some reclusive and religious life,  
Out of all eyes, tongues, minds, and injuries.

*Bene.* Signior Leonato, let the friar advise you:  
And though, you know, my inwardness § and love

Is very much unto the prince and Claudio,  
Yet, by mine honour, I will deal in this  
As secretly and justly, as your soul  
Should with your body.

*Leon.* Being that I flow in grief,

The smallest twine may lead me.

*Friar.* 'Tis well consented: presently away;  
For to strange sores strangely they strain  
the cure.—

Come, lady, die to live: this wedding day,  
Perhaps, is but prolong'd: have patience,  
and endure.

[*Exeunt FRIAR, HERO, and LEONATO.*  
*Bene.* Lady Beatrice, have you wept all this while?

*Beat.* Yea, and I will weep a while longer.

*Bene.* I will not desire that.

*Beat.* You have no reason, I do it freely.

*Bene.* Surely, I do believe your fair cousin is wrong'd.

*Beat.* Ah! how much might the man deserve  
of me, that would right her!

*Bene.* Is there any way to show such friend-ship?

*Beat.* A very even way, but no such friend.

*Bene.* May a man do it?

*Beat.* It is a man's office, but not your's.

*Bene.* I do love nothing in the world so well  
as you; is not that strange? ¶

\* While.

† By.

§ Intimacy.

‡ Over-rate

*Beat.* As strange as the thing I know not : it were as possible for me to say, I loved nothing so well as you : but believe me not ; and yet I lie not ; I confess nothing, nor I deny nothing :—I am sorry for my cousin.

*Bene.* By my sword, Beatrice, thou lovest me.

*Beat.* Do not swear by it, and eat it.

*Bene.* I will swear by it, that you love me ; and I will make him eat it, that says, I love not you.

*Beat.* Will you not eat your word ?

*Bene.* With no sauce that can be devised to it : I protest, I love thee.

*Beat.* Why then, God forgive me !

*Bene.* What offence, sweet Beatrice ?

*Beat.* You have staid me in a happy hour ; I was about to protest, I loved you.

*Bene.* And do it with all thy heart.

*Beat.* I love you with so much of my heart, that none is left to protest.

*Bene.* Come, bid me do any thing for thee.

*Beat.* Kill Claudio.

*Bene.* Ha ! not for the wide world.

*Beat.* You kill me to deny it : Farewell.

*Bene.* Tarry, sweet Beatrice.

*Beat.* I am gone, though I am here :—There is no love in you :—Nay, I pray you, let me go.

*Bene.* Beatrice,—

*Beat.* In faith, I will go.

*Bene.* We'll be friends first.

*Beat.* You dare easier be friends with me, than fight with mine enemy.

*Bene.* Is Claudio thine enemy ?

*Beat.* Is he not approved in the height a villain, that hath slandered, scorned, dishonoured my kinswoman ?—Oh ! that I were a man !—What I bear her in hand \* until they come to take hands ; and then with public accusation, uncovered slander, unmitigated rancour,—O God, that I were a man ! I would eat his heart in the market place.

*Bene.* Hear me, Beatrice ;—

*Beat.* Talk with a man out at a window !—a proper saying !

*Bene.* Nay but, Beatrice ;—

*Beat.* Sweet Hero !—she is wronged, she is slandered, she is undone.

*Bene.* Beat—

*Beat.* Princes, and countesses !† Surely, a princely testimony, a goodly count-confect ;‡ a sweet gallant surely ! O that I were a man for his sake ! or that I had any friend would be a man for my sake ! But manhood is melted into courtesies, § valour into compliment, and men are only turned into tongue, and trim ones too : he is now as valiant as Hercules, that only tells a lie, and swears it :—I cannot be a man with wishing, therefore I will die a woman with grieving.

*Bene.* Tarry, good Beatrice : By this hand, I love thee.

*Beat.* Use it for my love some other way than swearing by it.

*Bene.* Think you in your soul the count Claudio hath wronged Hero ?

*Beat.* Yea, as sure as I have a thought, or a soul.

*Bene.* Enough, I am engaged, I will challenge him ; I will kiss your hand, and so leave you : By this hand, Claudio shall render me a dear account : As you hear of me, so think of me. Go, comfort your cousin : I must say, she is dead ; and so, farewell. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.—A Prison.

Enter DOGBERRY, VERGES, and SEXTON, in gowns ; and the WATCH, with CONRADE and BORACHIO.

*Dogb.* Is our whole dissembly appeared ?

*Verg.* Oh ! a stool and a cushion for the sexton !

*Sexton.* Which be the malefactors ?

*Dogb.* Marry, that am I and my partner.

*Verg.* Nay, that's certain ; we have the exhibition to examine.

*Sexton.* But which are the offenders that are to be examined ? let them come before master constable.

*Dogb.* Yea, marry, let them come before me.—What is your name, friend ?

*Bora.* Borachio.

*Dogb.* Pray write down—Borachio.—Yours, sirrah ?

*Con.* I am a gentleman, Sir, and my name is Conrade.

*Dogb.* Write down—master gentleman Conrade.—Masters, do you serve God ?

*Con.* Bora. Yea, Sir, we hope.

*Dogb.* Write down—that they hope they serve God :—and write God first ; for God defend but God should go before such villains !—Masters, it is proved already that you are little better than false knaves ; and it will go near to be thought so shortly. How answer you for yourselves ?

*Con.* Marry, Sir, we say we are none.

*Dogb.* A marvellous witty fellow, I assure you ; but I will go about with him.—Come you hither, sirrah ; a word in your ear, Sir ; I say to you, it is thought you are false knaves.

*Bora.* Sir, I say to you, we are none.

*Dogb.* Well, stand aside.—Fore God, they are both in a tale : Have you writ down—that they are none ?

*Sexton.* Master constable, you go not the way to examine ; you must call forth the watch that are their accusers.

*Dogb.* Yea, marry, that's the effest way :—Let the watch come forth :—Masters, I charge you, in the prince's name, accuse these men.

1 Watch. This man said, Sir, that Don John, the prince's brother, was a villain.

*Dogb.* Write down—prince John a villain :—Why this is flat perjury, to call a prince's brother—villain.

*Bora.* Master constable,—

*Dogb.* Pray thee, fellow, peace ; I do not like thy look, I promise thee.

*Sexton.* What heard you him say else ?

2 Watch. Marry, that he had received a thousand ducats of Don John, for accusing the lady Hero wrongfully.

*Dogb.* Flat burglary, as ever was committed.

*Verg.* Yea, by the mass, that it is.

*Sexton.* What else, fellow ?

1 Watch. And that count Claudio did mean, upon his words, to disgrace Hero before the whole assembly, and not marry her.

*Dogb.* O villain ! thou wilt be condemned into everlasting redemption for this.

*Sexton.* What else ?

2 Watch. This is all.

*Sexton.* And this is more, masters, than you can deny. Prince John is this morning secretly stolen away ; Hero was in this manner accused, in this very manner refused, and upon the grief of this, suddenly died.—Master constable, let these men be bound, and brought to Leonato's ; I will go before, and show him their examination. [Exit.]

*Dogb.* Come, let them be opinioned.

*Verg.* Let them be in band.\*

*Con.* Off, coxcomb !

*Dogb.* God's my life ! where's the sexton ? let him write down—the prince's officer, coxcomb.—Come, bind them :—Thou naughty varlet !

*Con.* Away ! you are an ass, you are an ass.

*Dogb.* Dost thou not suspect my place ? Dost thou not suspect my years ?—O that he were here to write me down—an ass !—but, masters, remember, that I am an ass ; though it be not written down, yet forget not that I am an ass :—No, thou villain, thou art full of piety,

\* Delude her with hopes.

† Noblemen.

‡ A nobleman made out of sugar.

§ Ceremony.

\* Bond.

as shall be proved upon thee by good witness. I am a wise fellow; and, which is more, an officer; and, which is more, a householder; and, which is more, as pretty a piece of flesh as any is in Messina; and one, that knows the law, go to; and a rich fellow enough, go to; and a fellow that hath had losses; and one that hath two gowns, and every thing bandsome about him:—Bring him away. O that I had been writ down—  
—an ass.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT V.

#### SCENE I.—Before LEONATO'S House.

*Enter LEONATO and ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* If you go on thus, you will kill yourself; And 'tis not wisdom, thus to second grief Against yourself.

*Leon.* I pray thee, cease thy counsel, Which falls into mine ears as profitless As water in a sieve: give not me counsel; Nor let no comforter delight mine ear, But such a one whose wrongs do suit with mine. Bring me a father, that so lov'd his child, Whose joy of her is overwhelm'd like mine, And bid him speak of patience;

Measure his woe the length and breadth of mine, And let it answer every strain for strain; As thus for thus, and such a grief for such, In every lineament, branch, shape, and form: If such a one will smile, and stroke his beard; Cry—sorrow, wag I and hem, when he should groan;

Patch grief with proverbs; make misfortune drunk With candle-wasters; bring him yet to me, And I of him will gather patience.

But there is no such man: For, brother, men Can counsel, and speak comfort to that grief Which they themselves not feel; but, tasting it, Their counsel turns to passion, which before Would give preceptual medicine to rage, Fetter strong madness in a silken thread, Charm ach with air, and agony with words; No, no, 'tis all men's office to speak patience To those that wring under the load of sorrow; But no man's virtue, nor sufficiency, To be so moral, when he shall endure The like himself: therefore give me no counsel. My griefs cry louder than advertisement.\*

*Ant.* Therein do men from children nothing differ.

*Leon.* I pray thee, peace: I will be flesh and blood;

For there was never yet philosopher, That could endure the tooth-ach patiently; However they have writ the style of gods, And made a plish at chance and sufferance.

*Ant.* Yet bend not all the harm upon yourself; Make those, that do offend you, suffer too.

*Leon.* There thou speak'st reason: nay, I will do so:

My soul doth tell me, Hero is belied, And that shall Claudio know, so shall the prince, And all of them, that thus dishonour her.

*Enter DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO.*

*Ant.* Here comes the prince, and Claudio, hastily.

*D. Pedro.* Good den, good den.

*Claud.* Good day to both of you.

*Leon.* Hear you, my lords,—

*D. Pedro.* We have some haste, Leonato.

*Leon.* Some haste, my lord!—well, fare you well, my lord:—

Are you so hasty now?—well, all is one.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, do not quarrel with us, good old man.

\* Admonition.

*Ant.* If he could right himself with quarrelling Some of us would be low.

*Claud.* Who wrongs him?

*Leon.* Marry,

Thou, thou dost wrong me; thou dissembler, thou:—

Nay, never lay thy hand upon thy sword, I fear thee not.

*Claud.* Marry, beshrew my hand,

If it should give you age such cause of fear:

In faith, my hand meant nothing to my sword.

*Leon.* Tush, tush, man, never fear and jest at me:

I speak not like a dotard, nor a fool;

As, under privilege of age, to brag [do,

What I have done being young, or what would

Were I not old: Know, Claudio, to thy head,

Thou hast so wrong'd mine innocent child and

That I am forc'd to lay my reverence by; [me,

And, with grey hairs, and bruise of many days,

Do challenge thee to trial of a man.

I say, thou hast belied mine innocent child;

Thy slander hath gone through and through her

And she lies buried with her ancestors: [heart,

Oh I in a tomb where never scandal slept,

Save this of her's fram'd by thy villany.

*Claud.* My villany!

*Leon.* Thine, Claudio; thine I say.

*D. Pedro.* You say not right, old man.

*Leon.* My lord, my lord,

I'll prove it on his body, if he dare?

Despite his nice fence, and his active practice,\*

His May of youth, and bloom of lustyhood.

*Claud.* Away, I will not have to do with you.

*Leon.* Canst thou so daff me? Thou hast

kill'd my child;

If thou kill'st me, boy, thou shalt kill a man.

*Ant.* He shall kill two of us, and men indeed:

But that's no matter; let him kill one first:—

Win me and wear me,—let him answer me,—

Come, follow me, boy; come, boy, follow me;

Sir boy, I'll whip you from your foaming fence;

Nay, as I am a gentleman, I will.

*Leon.* Brother,—

*Ant.* Content yourself: God knows, I lov'd

my niece;

And she is dead, slander'd to death by villains;

That dare as well answer a man, indeed,

As I dare take a serpent by the tongue:

Boys, apes, braggards, Jacks, milkspouts!—

*Leon.* Brother Antony,—

*Ant.* Hold you content: What, man! I know

them, yea,

And what they weigh, even to the utmost

scruple:

Scambling, out-facing, fashion-mong'ring boys,

That lie, and cog, and flout, deprave, and

slander

Go antickly, and show outward hideousness,

And speak off half a dozen dangerous words,

How they might hurt their enemies if they durst,

And this is all.

*Leon.* But, brother Antony,—

*Ant.* Come, 'tis no matter;

Do not you meddle, let me deal in this.

*D. Pedro.* Gentlemen both, we will not wake

your patience.

My heart is sorry for your daughter's death:

But, on my honour, she was charg'd with no-

thing

But what was true, and very full of proof.

*Leon.* My lord, my lord,—

*D. Pedro.* I will not hear you.

*Leon.* No!

Brother, away:—I will be heard;—

*Ant.* And shall,

Or some of us will smart for it.

[*Exeunt LEONATO and ANTONIO.*]

*Enter BENEDECK.*

*D. Pedro.* Sec, sec; here comes the man we

went to seek.

*Claud.* Now, signior! what news!

\* Skill in fencing.

† Thrusting.

*Bene.* Good day, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Welcome, signior: You are almost come to part almost a fray.

*Claud.* We had like to have had our two noses snapp'd off with two old men without teeth.

*D. Pedro.* Leonato and his brother: What think'st thou? Had we fought, I doubt, we should have been too young for them.

*Bene.* In a false quarrel there is no true valour. I came to seek you both.

*Claud.* We have been up and down to seek thee; for we are high-proof melancholy, and would fain have it beaten away: Wilt thou use thy wit?

*Bene.* It is in my scabbard; Shall I draw it?

*D. Pedro.* Dost thou wear thy wit by thy side?

*Claud.* Never any did so, though very many have been beside their wit.—I will bid thee draw, as we do the minstrels; draw, to pleasure us.

*D. Pedro.* As I am an honest man, he looks pale:—Art thou sick, or angry?

*Claud.* What! courage, man! What though care killed a cat, thou hast mettle enough in thee to kill care.

*Bene.* Sir, I shall meet your wit in the career, an you charge it against me:—I pray you, choose another subject.

*Claud.* Nay, then give him another staff; this last was broke cross.

*D. Pedro.* By this light he changes more and more; I think, he be angry indeed.

*Claud.* It he be, he knows how to turn his girdle.\*

*Bene.* Shall I speak a word in your ear?

*Claud.* God bless me from a challenge!

*Bene.* You are a villain:—I just not:—I will make it good how you dare, with what you dare, and when you dare:—Do me right, or I will protest your cowardice. You have killed a sweet lady, and her death shall fall heavy on you: Let me hear from you.

*Claud.* Well, I will meet you, so I may have good cheer.

*D. Pedro.* What, a feast? a feast?

*Claud.* I laugh, I thank him; he hath bid me to a calf's head and a capon; the which if I do not carve most curiously, say, my knife's naught.—Shall I not had a woodcock too?

*Bene.* Sir, your wit ambles well; it goes easily.

*D. Pedro.* I'll tell thee how Beatrice praised thy wit the other day: I said, thou hadst a fine wit, *True*, says she, *a fine little one*: No, said I, *a great wit*; *Right*, says she, *a great gross one*: Nay, said I, *a good wit*; *Just*, said she, *it hurts nobody*: Nay, said I, *the gentleman is wise*; *Certain*, said she, *a wise gentleman*: Nay, said I, *he hath the tongues*: *That I believe*, said she, *for he swore a thing to me on Monday night, which he forswore on Tuesday morning; there's a double tongue*; *there's two tongues*. Thus did she, an hour together, transshape thy particular virtues; yet at last she concluded with a sigh, thou wast the properest man in Italy.

*Claud.* For the which she wept heartily, and said, she cared not.

*D. Pedro.* Yea, that she did; but yet, for all that, an if she did not hate him deadly, she would love him dearly: the old man's daughter told us all.

*Claud.* All, all; and moreover, *God saw him when he was hid in the garden*.

*D. Pedro.* But when shall we set the savage bull's horns on the sensible Benedick's head?

*Claud.* Yea, and text underneath, *Here dwells Benedick the married man*!

*Bene.* Fare you well, boy; you know my mind; I will leave you now to your gossip-like humour; you break jests as braggarts do their blades, which, God be thanked, hurt not.—My

lord, for your many courtesies I thank you: I must discontinue your company; your brother, the bastard, is fled from Messina: you have, among you, killed a sweet and innocent lady: For my lord Lack-beard, there, he and I shall meet; and till then, peace be with him.

[Exit BENEDICK.]

*D. Pedro.* He is in earnest.

*Claud.* In most profound earnest; and, I'll warrant you, for the love of Beatrice.

*D. Pedro.* And hath challenged thee?

*Claud.* Most sincerely.

*D. Pedro.* What a pretty thing man is, when he goes in his doublet and hose, and leaves off his wit!

Enter DOGBERRY, VERGES, and the WATCH, with CONRADE and BORACHIO.

*Claud.* He is then a giant to an ape; but then is an ape a doctor to such a man.

*D. Pedro.* But, soft you, let be; pluck up, my heart, and be sad! Did he not say my brother was fled?

*Dogb.* Come, you, Sir; if justice cannot tame you, she shall ne'er weigh more reasons in her balance: nay, an you be a cursing hypocrite once, you must be looked to.

*D. Pedro.* How now, two of my brother's men bound! Borachio, one!

*Claud.* Hearken after their offence, my lord!

*D. Pedro.* Officers, what offence have these men done?

*Dogb.* Marry, Sir, they have committed false report; moreover, they have spoken untruths: secondarily, they are slanders; sixth and lastly, they have belied a lady; thirdly, they have verified unjust things: and, to conclude, they are lying knaves.

*D. Pedro.* First, I ask thee what they have done; thirdly, I ask thee what's their offence; sixth and lastly, why they are committed; and, to conclude, what you lay to their charge.

*Claud.* Rightly reasoned, and in his own division; and, by my troth, there's one meaning well suited.

*D. Pedro.* Whom have you offended, masters, that you are thus bound to your answer? This learned constable is too cunning to be understood: What's your offence?

*Bora.* Sweet prince, let me go no further to mine answer; do you hear me, and let this count kill me. I have deceived even your very eyes: what your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light; who, in the night, over-heard me confessing to this man, how Don John your brother incensed me to slander the lady Hero: how you were brought into the orchard, and saw me court Margaret in Hero's garment; how you disgraced her, when you should marry her: my villany they have upon record; which I had rather seal with my death, than repeat over to my shame: the lady is dead upon mine and my master's false accusation; and, briefly, I desire nothing but the reward of a villain.

*D. Pedro.* Run not this speech like iron through your blood?

*Claud.* I have drunk poison, whiles he utter'd it.

*D. Pedro.* But did my brother set thee on to this?

*Bora.* Yea, and paid me richly for the practice of it.

*D. Pedro.* He is compos'd and fram'd of And fled he is upon his villany. [Treachery:—

*Claud.* Sweet Hero! now thy image doth appear

In the rare semblance that I lov'd it first.

*Dogb.* Come, bring away the plaintiffs; by this time our Sexton hath reformed signior Leonato of the matter: And masters, do not forget to specify, when time and place shall serve, that I am an ass.

\* To give a challenge.

† Invited.

• Serious.

† Incited.

*Ferr.* Here, here comes master signior Leonato, and the Sexton too.

*Re-enter LEONATO and ANTONIO, with the Sexton.*

*Leon.* Which is the villain? Let me see his eyes;

That when I note another man like him, I may avoid him: Which of these is he?

*Bora.* If you would know your wronger look on me.

*Leon.* Art thou the slave, that with thy breath hast kill'd

Mine innocent child?

*Bora.* Yea, even I alone.

*Leon.* No, not so, villain; thou bel'st thyself;

Here stand a pair of honourable men, A third is fled, that had a hand in it:—

I thank you, princes, for my daughter's death; Record it with your high and worthy deeds; 'Twas bravely done, if you bethink you of it.

*Claud.* I know not how to pray your patience, Yet I must speak: Choose your revenge yourself;

Impose \* me to what penance your invention Can lay upon my sin: yet sinu'd I not, But in mistaking.

*D. Pedro.* By my soul, nor I; And yet, to satisfy this good old man, I would bend under any heavy weight That he'll enjoin me to.

*Leon.* I cannot bid you bid my daughter live, That were impossible; but, I pray you both, Possess† the people in Messina here How innocent she died; and, if your love Can labour aught in sad invention, Hang her an epitaph upon her tomb, And sing it to her bones; sing it to-night:— To-morrow morning come you to my house; And since you could not be my son-in-law, Be yet my nephew: my brother hath a daughter,

Almost the copy of my child that's dead, And she alone is heir to both of us; Give her the right you should have given her cousin, And so dies my revenge.

*Claud.* O noble Sir, Your over-kindness doth wring tears from me! I do embrace your offer; and dispose For henceforth of poor Claudio.

*Leon.* To-morrow then I will expect your coming;

To-night I take my leave.—This naughty man Shall face to face be brought to Margaret, Who, I believe, was pack'd;† in all this wrong, Hir'd to it by your brother.

*Bora.* No, by my soul, she was not; Nor knew not what she did, when she spoke to me;

But always hath been just and virtuous, In any thing that I do know by her.

*Dogb.* Moreover, Sir, (which, indeed, is not under white and black,) this plaintiff here, the offender, did call me ass: I beseech you, let it be remembered in his punishment. And also, the watch heard them talk of one Deformed: they say, he wears a key in his ear, and a lock hanging by it; and borrows money in God's name; the which he hath used so long, and never paid, that now men grow hard-hearted, and will lend nothing for God's sake: Pray you, examine him upon that point.

*Leon.* I thank thee for thy care and honest pains.

*Dogb.* Your worship speaks like a most thankful and reverend youth: and I praise God for you.

*Leon.* There's for thy pains.

*Dogb.* God save the foundation!

*Leon.* Go, I discharge thee of thy prisoner, and I thank thee.

*Dogb.* I leave an arrant knave with your worship; which, I beseech your worship, to correct yourself, for the example of others, God keep your worship: I wish your worship well; God restore you to health: I humbly give you leave to depart; and if a merry meeting may be wished, God prohibit it.—Come, neighbour.

[*Exeunt DOGBERRY, VENCES, and WATCH.* *Leon.* Until to-morrow morning, lords, farewell.

*Ant.* Farewell, my lords; we look for you to-morrow.

*D. Pedro.* We will not fail.

*Claud.* To-night I'll mourn with Hero.

[*Exeunt DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO.* *Leon.* Bring you these fellows on; we'll talk with Margaret,

How her acquaintance grew with this lewd \* fellow.

#### SCENE II.—LEONATO'S Garden.

*Enter BENEDICK and MARGARET, meeting.*

*Bene.* Pray thee, sweet mistress Margaret, deserve well at my hands, by helping me to the speech of Beatrice.

*Marg.* Will you then write me a sonnet in praise of my beauty?

*Bene.* In so high a style, Margaret, that no man living shall come over it: for, in most comely truth, thou deservest it.

*Marg.* To have no man come over me? why, shall I always keep below stairs?

*Bene.* Thy wit is as quick as the greyhound's mouth, it catches.

*Marg.* And your's as blunt as the fence's foils, which hit, but hurt not.

*Bene.* A most manly wit, Margaret, it will not hurt a woman; and so, I play thee, call Beatrice: I give thee the bucklers.

*Marg.* Give us the swords, we have bucklers of our own.

*Bene.* If you use them, Margaret, you must put in the pikes with a vice; and they are dangerous weapons for maids.

*Marg.* Well, I will call Beatrice to you, who, I think, hath legs.

[*Exit MARGARET.* *Bene.* And therefore will come.

*The god of love,* [Singing.  
*That sits above,*

*And knows me, and knows me,*  
*How pitiful I deserve,—*

I mean in singing; but in loving,—Leander the good swimmer, Troilus the first employer of pandars, and a whole book full of these quondam carpet-mongers, whose names yet run smoothly in the even road of a blank verse, why, they were never so truly turned over and over as my poor self, in love: Marry, I cannot show it in rhyme; I have tried; I can find out no rhyme to *lady but baby*, an innocent rhyme; for *scorn, horn*, a hard rhyme; for *school, fool*, a babbling rhyme; very omnious endings: No, I was not born under a rhyming planet, nor I cannot woo in festival terms.†

#### ENTER BEATRICE.

Sweet Beatrice, would'st thou come when I called thee?

*Beat.* Yea, signior, and depart when you bid me.

*Bene.* Oh! stay but till then!

*Beat.* Then, is spoken; sure you well now:—and yet, ere I go, let me go with that I came for, which is, with knowing what hath passed between you and Claudio.

*Bene.* Only foul words; and thereupon I will kiss thee.

*Beat.* Foul words is but foul wind, and foul wind is but foul breath, and foul breath is noisome; therefore I will depart unbidden.

† Acquaint. \* Command.

† Combined.

\* Ignorant.

† Hollow phrases.

*Bene.* Thou hast frighted the word out of his right sense, so forcible is thy wit : But, I must tell thee plainly, Claudio underdoes \* my challenge ; and either I must shortly hear from him, or I will subscribe him a coward. And I, pray thee now, tell me, for which of my bad parts didst thou first fall in love with me ?

*Beat.* For them all together ; which maintained so politic a state of evil, that they will not admit any good part to intermingle with them. But for which of my good parts did you first suffer love for me ?

*Bene.* *Suffer love ;* a good epithet ! I do suffer love, indeed, for I love thee against my will.

*Beat.* In spite of your heart, I think ; alas ! poor heart ! If you spite it for my sake, I will spite it for yours ; for I will never love that which my friend hates.

*Bene.* Thou and I are too wise to woo peaceably.

*Beat.* It appears not in this confession : there's not one wise man among twenty that will praise himself.

*Bene.* An old, an old instance, Beatrice, that lived in the time of good neighbours : if a man do not erect in this age his own tomb ere he dies, he shall live no longer in monument, than the bell rings, and the widow weeps.

*Beat.* And how long is that, think you ?

*Bene.* Question ?—Why, an hour in clamour, and a quarter in rheum : Therefore it is most expedient for the wise, (if Don Worm his conscience, find no impediment to the contrary, to be the trumpet of his own virtues, as I am to myself : So much for praising myself, (who, I myself will bear witness, is praise-worthy,) and now tell me, How doth your cousin ?

*Beat.* Very ill.

*Bene.* And how do you ?

*Beat.* Very ill too.

*Bene.* Serve God, love me, and mend : then will I leave you too, for here comes one in haste.

*Enter URSULA.*

*Urs.* Madam, you must come to your uncle ; yonder's old coil : at home : it is proved, my lady Hero hath been falsely accused, the prince and Claudio mightily abused ; and Don John is the author of all, who is fled and gone : will you come presently ?

*Beat.* Will you go hear this news, signior ?

*Bene.* I will live in thy heart, die in thy lap, and be buried in thy eyes ; and, moreover, I will go with thee to thy uncle's. [*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE III.—The inside of a Church.*

*Enter Don PEDRO, CLAUDIO, and ATTENDANTS, with Music and Tapers.*

*Claud.* Is this the monument of Leonato ?  
*Atten.* It is, my lord.

*Claud.* [*Reads from a scroll.*]

*Done to death by slanderous tongues*

*Was the Hero that here lies :*

*Death, the guerdon<sup>†</sup> of her wrongs*

*Gives her fame which never dies :*

*So the life, that died with shame,*

*Lives in death with glorious fame.*

*Hang thou there upon the tomb,*

[*Affixing it.*]

*Praising her when I am dumb.—*

Now, music, sound, and sing your solemn hymn

SONG.

*Pardon, goddess of the night,*  
*Those that slew thy virgin knight ;*

*For the which, with songs of woe,*

*Round about her tomb they go.*

*Midnight, assist our moan,*

*Help us to sigh and groan,*

*Heavily, heavily :*

\* Is subject to.

† Stir.

‡ Reward.

*Graves, yawn, and yield your dead,*  
*Till death be uttered,*  
*Heavily, heavily.*

*Claud.* Now, unto thy bones good night !  
Yearly will I do this rite.

*D. Pedro.* Good morrow, masters ; put your torches out ;

The wolves have prey'd ; and look, the gentle day,

Before the wheels of Phœbus, round about

Dapples the drowsy east with spots of gray :  
Thanks to you all, and leave us ; fare you well.

*Claud.* Good morrow, masters ; each his several way.

*D. Pedro.* Come, let us hence, and put on other weeds ;

And then to Leonato's we will go.

*Claud.* And Hymen, now with lackier issue speeds,

Than this, for whom we render'd up this woe !  
[*Exeunt.*]

*SCENE IV.—A Room in LEONATO'S House.*

*Enter LEONATO, ANTONIO, BENEDICK, BEATRICE, URSULA, FRIAR, and HERO.*

*Friar.* Did I not tell you she was innocent ?

*Leon.* So are the prince and Claudio, who accus'd her,

Upon the error that you heard debated :  
But Margaret was in some fault for this ;  
Although against her will, as it appears  
In the true course of all the question.

*Ant.* Well, I am glad that all things sort so well.

*Bene.* And so am I, being else by faith an

forc'd

To call young Claudio to a reckoning for it.

*Leon.* Well, daughter, and you gentlewoman all,

Withdraw into a chamber by yourselves ;  
And, when I send for you, come hither mask'd :

The prince and Claudio promis'd by this hour  
To visit me :—You know your office, brother ;  
You must be father to your brother's daughter,  
And give her to young Claudio.

[*Exeunt Ladies.*]

*Ant.* Which I will do with confirm'd countenance.

*Bene.* Friar, I must entreat your pains, I think.

*Friar.* To do what, signior ?

*Bene.* To bind me, or undo me, one of them.—

Signior Leonato, truth it is, good signior,  
Your niece regards me with an eye of favour.

*Leon.* That eye my daughter lent her ; 'Tis most true.

*Bene.* And I do with an eye of love requite her.

*Leon.* The sight whereof, I think you had from me,

From Claudio and the prince ; But what's your will ?

*Bene.* Your answer, Sir, is enigmatical :  
But for my will, my will is, your good will  
May stand with our's, this day to be conjoin'd  
In the estate of honourable marriage :—

In which, good friar, I shall desire your help.

*Leon.* My heart is with your liking.

*Friar.* And my help.  
Here comes the prince, and Claudio.

*Enter Don PEDRO and CLAUDIO, with Attendants.*

*D. Pedro.* Good morrow to this fair assembly.

*Leon.* Good-morrow, prince ; good-morrow, Claudio ;

We here attend you ; are you yet determin'd  
To-day to marry with my brother's daughter ?

*Claud.* I'll hold my mind, were she an Ethiopian.

*Leon.* Call her forth, brother, here's the friar ready.

*D. Pedro.* Good morrow, Benedick: Why, what's the matter,

That you have such a February face,  
So full of frost, of storm and cloudiness?

*Claud.* I think, he thinks upon the savage  
bull:—

Tush, fear not, man, we'll tip thy horns with  
And all Europa shall rejoice at thee: [gold,

As once Europa did at lusty Jove,  
When he would play the noble beast in love.

*Bene.* Bull Jove, Sir, had an amiable low;  
And some such strange bull leap'd your father's  
And got a calf in that same noble feat, [cow,  
Much like to you, for you have just his bleat.

*Re-enter ANTONIO, with the Ladies masked.*

*Claud.* For this I owe you: here comes other  
reckonings.

Which is the lady I must seize upon?

*Ant.* This same is she, and I do give you her.

*Claud.* Why, then she's mine: Sweet, let me  
see your face.

*Leon.* No, that you shall not, till you take her  
Before this Friar and swear to marry her. [hand

*Claud.* Give me your hand before this holy  
I am your husband, if you like of me. [friar;

*Hero.* And when I liv'd, I was your other  
wife: [Unmasking.

And when you loved, you were my other husband.

*Claud.* Another Hero?

*Hero.* Nothing certainer:

One Hero died defil'd; but I do live,

And, surely as I live, I am a maid.

*D. Pedro.* The former Hero! Hero that is  
dead!

*Leon.* She died, my lord, but whiles her slan-  
der lived.

*Friar.* All this amazement can I qualify;  
When, after that the holy rites are ended,  
I'll tell you largely of fair Hero's death:  
Mean time, let wonder seem familiar,  
And to the chapel let us presently.

*Bene.* Soft and fair, friar,—Which is Beatrice?

*Beat.* I answer to that name; [Unmasking.]  
What is your will?

*Bene.* Do not you love me?

*Beat.* No, no more than reason.

*Bene.* Why, then your uncle, and the prince,  
and Claudio,

Have been deceived; for they did swear you did.

*Beat.* Do not you love me?

*Bene.* No, no more than reason.

*Beat.* Why, then my cousin, Margaret, and  
Ursula.

Are much deceiv'd; for they did swear you did.

*Bene.* They swore that you were almost sick  
for me.

*Beat.* They swore that you were well-nigh  
dead for me.

*Bene.* 'Tis no such matter:—Then, you do not  
love me?

*Beat.* No, truly, but in friendly recompense.

*Leon.* Come, cousin, I am sure you love the  
gentleman.

*Claud.* And I'll be sworn upon't, that he loves  
For here's a paper, written in his hand, [her;  
A halting sonnet of his own pure brain,  
Fashion'd to Beatrice.

*Hero.* And here's another,  
Writ in my cousin's hand, stolen from her pocket,  
Containing her affection unto Benedick.

*Bene.* A miracle! here's our own hands against  
our hearts!—Come, I will have thee; but by this  
light, I take thee for pity.

*Beat.* I would not deny you; but, by this good  
day, I yield upon great persuasion; and, partly,  
to save your life, for I was told you were in a  
consumption.

*Bene.* Peace, I will stop your mouth.—

[Kissing her.  
*D. Pedro.* How dost thou, Benedick the mar-  
ried man?

*Bene.* I'll tell thee what, prince; a college of  
wit-crackers cannot flout me out of my humour:  
Dost thou think, I care for a satire, or an epi-  
gram? No: if a man will be beaten with brains,  
he shall wear nothing handsome about him: In  
brief, since I do propose to marry, I will think  
nothing to any purpose that the world can say  
against it; and therefore never flout at me for  
what I have said against it; for man is a giddy  
thing, and this is my conclusion.—For thy part,  
Claudio, I did think to have beaten thee: but in  
that \* thou art like to be my kinsman, live un-  
bruised, and love my cousin.

*Claud.* I had well hoped, thou wouldst have  
denied Beatrice, that I might have codgelled thee  
out of thy single life, to make thee a double  
dealer; which out of question, thou wilt be, if  
my cousin do not look exceeding narrowly to thee.

*Bene.* Come, come, we are friends;—let's have  
a dance ere we are married, that we may lighten  
our own hearts, and our wives' heels.

*Leon.* We'll have dancing afterwards.

*Bene.* First, o' my word! therefore, play,  
music.—

Prince, thou art sad; get thee a wife, get thee a  
wife: there is no staff more reverend than one  
tipped with horn.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Mess.* My lord, your brother John is ta'en in  
flight,

And brought with armed men back to Messina.

*Bene.* Think not on him till to-morrow, I'll  
devise thee brave punishments for him.—Strike  
up, pipers.

[Dance.  
[Exeunt.

\* REVEREND.

# THE MERCHANT OF VENICE.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

SHAKSPEARE was supposed to have taken the two plots of this admirable play from an Italian novel, and from a collection of old stories, printed by Wynkin de Worde, under the title of *Genia Romanorum*; but as a play comprehending the incidents of both had been exhibited long before he commenced writing for the stage, he probably chose the latter as a model for his own production. It matters not, however, from what source a dramatic author derives his plot, so that he plan it well, and make good use of it afterward; and Johnson says, that in this play "the union of two actions in one event is eminently happy;" excellently even Dryden's skilful conjunction of the two plots in his *Spanish Friar*, yet the interest of the action can scarcely be said to continue beyond the disgrace of Shylock, in the fourth act; since expectation is so strongly fixed upon "justice and the bond," that it ceases to exist after they are satisfied. In the defeat of cunning, and in the triumph of humanity, the most powerful feelings of our nature are successively appealed to: thus anticipation is keenly alive, so long as Antonio's fate is dark and undecided. But with the development of that, the charm is at an end. The power of excitement expires with the object upon which the feelings were centered, and as the lesser passions are susceptible of little delight, when the greater have been subjected to any unusual stimulant, the common-place trifles of the concluding act are rather endured with patience, than received with gratification. The character of Shylock is no less original, than it is finely finished: "the language, allusions, and ideas (says Henly) are so appropriate to a Jew, that Shylock might be exhibited for an exemplar of that peculiar people," nor are the other personages unpleasantly drawn or inadequately supported. Of detached passages, Portia's description of the qualities and excellence of mercy, may be selected as one of the noblest attributes with which Genius has ever exalted the excellence of any particular virtue.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE OF VENICE.  
PRINCE OF MOROCCO, } *Suitors to Portia.*  
PRINCE OF ARRAGON, }  
ANTONIO, *the Merchant of Venice.*  
BASSANIO, *his Friend.*  
SALARINO, }  
SALARINO, } *Friends to Antonio and Bassanio.*  
GRATIANO, }  
LORENZO, *in love with Jessica.*  
SHYLOCK, *a Jew.*  
TUBAL, *a Jew, his Friend.*  
LAUNCELOT GOBBO, *a Clown, Servant to Shylock.*

OLD GOBBO, *Father to Launcelot.*  
SALERIO, *a Messenger from Venice.*  
LEONARDO, *Servant to Bassanio.*  
BALTHAZAR, } *Servants to Portia.*  
STEPHANO, }

PORTIA, *a rich Heiress:*  
NERISSA, *her waiting-maid.*  
JESSICA, *Daughter to Shylock.*

*Magnificoes of Venice, Officers of the Court of Justice, Jailers, Servants, and other Attendants.*

SCENE—partly at Venice, and partly at Belmont, the Seat of Portia, on the Continent.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—Venice.—A Street.

*Enter ANTONIO, SALARINO, and SALANIO.*

*Ant.* In sooth, I know not why I am so sad;  
It wearies me; you say, it wearies you;  
But how I caught it, found it, or came by it,  
What stuff 'tis made of, whereof it is born,  
I am to learn;  
And such a want-wit sadness makes of me,  
That I have much ado to know myself.

*Salar.* Your mind is tossing on the ocean:  
There, where your argosies\* with portly sail,

\* Ships of large burthen, probably galleons.

Like signiors and rich burghers of the flood,  
Or, as it were the pageants of the sea,  
Do overpeer the petty traffickers,  
That curt'ey to their reverence,  
As they fly by them with their woven wings.

*Salar.* Believe me, Sir, had I such venture  
forth,

The better part of my affections would  
Be with my hopes abroad. I should be still  
Plucking the grass, to know where sits the  
wind;

Peering in maps, for ports, and piers, and roads;  
And every object, that might make me tear  
Misfortune to my ventures out of doubt  
Would make me sad.

*Salar.* My wind cooling my broth,



Would blow me to an ague when I thought  
What harm a wind too great might do at sea.  
I should not see the sandy hour-glass run,  
But I should think of shallows and of rats;  
And see rich wealthy Andrew dock'd in sand,  
Vailing her high-top lower than her ribs,  
To kiss her burial. Should I go to church,  
And see the holy edifice of stoa,  
And not bethink me straight of dangerous rocks;  
Which touching but my gentle vessel's side,  
Would scatter all her spices on the stream;  
Enrobe the roaring waters with my silks;  
And, in a word, but even now worth this,  
And now worth nothing? Shall I have the thought

To think on this; and shall I lack the thought,  
That such a thing, bechanc'd, would make me  
sad?

But, tell not me: I know, Antonio  
Is sad to think upon his merchandise.

*Ant.* Believe me, no: I thank my fortune for  
My ventures are not in one bottom trusted, [It,  
Nor to one place; nor is my whole estate  
Upon the fortune of this present year:  
Therefore, my merchandise makes me not sad.

*Salan.* Why then you are in love.

*Ant.* Fie, fie!

*Salan.* Not in love neither? Then let's say you  
are sad,

Because you are not merry: and, 'twere as easy  
For you to laugh, and leap, and say, you are  
merry, [Janus,

Because you are not sad. Now, by two-headed  
Nature hath fram'd strange fellows in her time:  
Some that will evermore peep through their  
eyes,

And laugh, like parrots, at a bagpiper;  
And other of such vinegar aspect,  
That they'll not show their teeth in way of  
smile.

Though Nestor swear the jest be laughable.

*Enter BASSANIO, LORENZO, and GRATIANO.*

*Salan.* Here comes Bassanio, your most noble  
kinsman,

Gratiano, and Lorenzo: Fare you well;  
We leave you now with better company.

*Salan.* I would have staid till I had made you  
merry,

If worthier friends had not prevented me.

*Ant.* Your worth is very dear in my regard.

I take it, your own business calls on you,  
And you embrace the occasion to depart.

*Salan.* Good morrow, my good lords.

*Bass.* Good signiors both, when shall we laugh?  
Say, when?

You grow exceeding strange: Must it be so?

*Salan.* We'll make our pleasures to attend on  
yours.

[*Re-enter SALARINO and SALANIO.*

*Lor.* My lord Bassanio, since you have found  
Antonio,

We two will leave you: but at dinner time,  
I pray you, have in mind where we must meet.

*Bass.* I will not fail you.

*Gra.* You look not well, signior Antonio;

You have too much respect upon the world:

They lose it, that do buy it with much care.

Believe me, you are marvellously chang'd.

*Ant.* I hold the world but as the world, Gra-  
tiano,

A stage, where every man must play a part,  
And mine a sad one.

*Gra.* Let me play the Fool:

With mirth and laughter let old wrinkles come;

And let my liver rather heat with wine,

Than my heart cool with mortifying groans.

Why should a man, whose blood is warm within,

Sit like his grandsire cut in alabaster?

Sleep when he wakes? and creep into the jaun-  
dice

By being peevish? I tell thee what, Antonio,—

I love thee, and it is my love that speaks;—

There are a sort of men, whose visages

Do cream and mantle, like a standing pond;

And do a wilful stillness\* entertain,  
With purpose to be dress'd in an opinion  
Of wisdom, gravity, profound conceit;  
As who should say, *I am Sir Oracle,*  
And, when I *ope my lips, let no dog bark!*  
O my Antonio, I do know of these,  
That therefore only are reputed wise,  
For saying nothing; who, I am very sure,  
If they should speak, would almost damn those  
ears, [fools.

Which, hearing them, would call their brothers  
I'll tell thee more of this another time:  
But ~~do~~ not, with this melancholy bait,  
For this fool's gudgeon, this opinion.—  
Come, good Lorenzo:—Fare ye well, a while;  
I'll end my exhortation after dinner.†

*Lor.* Well, we will leave you then till dinner-  
time:

I must be one of these same dumb wise men,  
For Gratiano never lets me speak.

*Gra.* Well, keep me company but two years  
more,

Thou shalt not know the sound of thine own  
tongue.

*Ant.* Farewell: I'll grow a talker for this  
geat.

*Gra.* Thanks, I'faith; for silence only is com-  
mendable [ble.

In a neat's tongue dried, and a maid not vendi-  
[*Re-enter GRATIANO and LORENZO.*

*Ant.* Is that any thing now?

*Bass.* Gratiano speaks an infinite deal of no-  
thing, more than any man in all Venice: His  
reasons are as two grains of wheat hid in two  
bushels of chaff; you shall seek all day ere you  
find them; and when you have them they are  
not worth the search.

*Ant.* Well; tell me now, what lady is this  
same

To whom you swore a secret pilgrimage

That you to-day promis'd to tell me of?

*Bass.* 'Tis not unknown to you, Antonio,  
How much I have debased mine estate,  
By something showing a more swelling port  
Than my faint means would grant continuance:

Nor do I now make moan to be abridg'd  
From such a noble rate; but my chief care

Is, to come fairly off from the great debt,

Wherein my time, something too prodigal,

Hath left me gaged: To you, Antonio,

I owe the most, in money, and in love;

And from your love I have a warranty

To unburden all my plots and purposes,

How to get clear of all the debts I owe.

*Ant.* I pray you, good Bassanio, let me know  
it;

And, if it stand, as you yourself still do,

Within the eye of honour, be assur'd,

My purse, my person, my extremest means,

Lie all unlock'd to your occasions.

*Bass.* In my school days, when I had lost one  
shaft,

I shot his fellow of the self-same flight

The self-same way, with more advised watch,

To find the other forth; and by advent'ring  
both,

I oft found both: I urg'd this childhood proof,

Because what follows is pure innocence

I owe you much; and, like a wilful youth,

That which I owe is lost: but if you please

To shoot another arrow that self way

Which you did shoot the first, I do not doubt

As I will watch the aim, or to find both,

Or bring your latter hazard back again,

And thankfully rest debtor for the first.

*Ant.* You know me well; and herein spend  
but time,

To wind about my love with circumstance;

And, out of doubt, you do me now more wrong,

In making question of my uttermost,

\* Obstinate silence.

† This is an allusion to the puritan preachers; who  
being generally long and tedious, were obliged to post-  
pone that part of their sermon called the exhortation,  
till after dinner.

Than if you had made waste of all I have :  
Then do but say to me what I should do,  
That in your knowledge may by me be done,  
And I am press'd \* unto it : therefore, speak,

*Bass.* In Belmont is a lady richly left,  
And she is fair, and fairer than that word,  
Of wondrous virtues : sometimes from her eyes  
I did receive fair speechless messages :  
Her name is Portia ; nothing undervalued  
To Cato's daughter, Brutus' Portia.  
Nor is the wide world ignorant of her worth :  
For the four winds blow in from every coast  
Renowned suitors : and her sunny locks  
Hang on her temples like a golden fleece ;  
Which makes her seat of Belmont, Colchus' stand,

And many Jasons come in quest of her.  
O my Antonio, had I but the means  
To hold a rival place with one of them,  
I have a mind presages me such thrift,  
That I should questionless be fortunate.

*Ant.* Thou know'st, that all my fortunes are  
at sea ;

Nor have I money, nor commodity  
To raise a present sum : therefore go forth,  
Try what my credit can in Venice do ;  
That shall be rack'd even to the uttermost,  
To furnish thee to Belmont, to fair Portia.  
Go, presently inquire, and so will I,  
Where money is ; and I no question make,  
To have it of my trust, or for my sake.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Belmont.—A Room in PORTIA'S House.

Enter PORTIA and NERISSA.

*Por.* By my troth, Nerissa, my little body is  
a-weary of this great world.

*Ner.* You would be, sweet madam, if your  
miseries were in the same abundance as your  
good fortunes are : And yet for aught I see,  
they are as sick, that surfeit with too much, as  
they that starve with nothing : It is no mean  
happiness therefore, to be settled in the mean ;  
superfluity comes sooner by white hairs, but  
competency lives longer.

*Por.* Good sentences, and well pronounced.

*Ner.* They would be better, if well followed.

*Por.* It is to do were as easy as to know what  
were good to do, chapels had been churches,  
and poor men's cottages princes' palaces. It  
is a good divine that follows his own instructions :  
I can easilier teach twenty what were good  
to be done, than be one of the twenty to follow  
mine own teaching. The brain may devise laws  
for the blood, but a hot temper leaps over a  
cold decree : such a hare is madness the youth,  
to skip o'er the meshes of good counsel the  
cripple. But this reasoning is not in the fashion  
to choose me a husband :—O me, the word  
chooses ! I may neither choose whom I would,  
nor refuse whom I dislike ; so is the will of a  
living daughter curb'd by the will of a dead father :—Is it not hard, Nerissa, that I cannot  
choose one, nor refuse none ?

*Ner.* Your father was ever virtuous ; and  
holy men, at their death, have good inspira-  
tions, therefore the lottery that he hath de-  
vised in these three chests, of gold, silver, and  
lead, (whereof who chooses his meaning,  
chooses you,) will, no doubt, never be chosen  
by any rightly, but one who you shall rightly  
love. But what warmth is there in your affec-  
tion towards any of these princely suitors that  
are already come ?

*Por.* I pray thee overname them ; and as  
thou namest them, I will describe them : and,  
according to my description, level at my affec-  
tion.

*Ner.* First, there is the Neapolitan prince.

*Por.* Ay, that's a colt ; indeed, for he doth

nothing but talk of his horse ; and he makes it  
a great appropriation to his good parts, that he  
can shoe him himself ; I am much afraid, my  
lady his mother played false with a smith.

*Ner.* Then, is there the county \* Palatine.

*Por.* He doth nothing but frown ; as who  
should say, *An if you will not have me, choose :*  
he hears merry tales, and smiles not : I fear he  
will prove the weeping philosopher when he  
grows old, being so full of unmanly sadness  
in his youth. I had rather be married to a  
death's head with a bone in his mouth, than  
to either of these. God defend me from these  
two.

*Ner.* How say you by the French lord, Mon-  
sieur Le Bon ?

*Por.* God made him, and therefore let him  
pass for a man. In truth, I know it is a sin to  
be a mocker ; But, he ! why, he hath a horse  
better than the Neapolitan's ; a better had habit  
of frowning than the count Palatine : he is every  
man in no man : if a throstle sing, he falls  
straight a-capering : he will fence with his own  
shadow ; if I should marry him, I should marry  
twenty husbands : If he would despise me, I  
would forgive him ; for if he love me to mad-  
ness, I shall never requite him.

*Ner.* What say you then to Faulconbridge,  
the young baron of England ?

*Por.* You know, I say nothing to him ; for he  
understands not me, nor I him : he hath neither  
Latin, French, nor Italian ; and you will come  
into the court and swear, that I have a poor  
penny-worth in the English. He is a proper  
man's picture ; But, alas ! who can converse  
with a dumb show ? How oddly he is suited !  
I think, he bought his doublet in Italy, his round  
hose in France, his bonnet in Germany, and his  
behaviour every where.

*Ner.* What think you of the Scottish lord, his  
neighbour ?

*Por.* That he hath a neighbourly charity in  
him ; for he borrowed a box of the ear of the  
Englishman, and swore he would pay him again,  
when he was able ; I think the Frenchman  
became his surety, and sealed under for an-  
other.

*Ner.* How like you the young German, the  
duke of Saxony's nephew ?

*Por.* Very vilely in the morning, when he is  
sober ; and most vilely in the afternoon, when  
he is drunk : when he is best, he is little wiser  
than a man ; and when he is worst, he is little  
better than a beast ; an the worst fall that ever  
fell, I hope I shall make shift to go without him.

*Ner.* If he should offer to choose, and choose  
the right casket, you should refuse to perform  
your father's will, if you should refuse to accept  
him.

*Por.* Therefore, for fear of the worst, I pray  
thee set a deep glass of Rhenish wine on the  
contrary casket : for, if the devil be within, and  
that temptation without, I know he will choose  
it. I will do any thing, Nerissa, ere I will be  
married to a sponge.

*Ner.* You need not fear, lady, the having any  
of these lords ; they have acquainted me with  
their determination : which is, indeed, to return  
to their home, and to trouble you with no more  
suit ; unless you may be won by some other  
suit than your father's imposition, depending on  
the caskets.

*Por.* If I live to be as old as Sibylla I will  
die as chaste as Diana, unless I be obtained by  
the manner of my father's will : I am glad this  
parcel of wooers are so reasonable ; for there is  
not one among them but I date on his very  
absence, and I pray God grant them a fair de-  
parture.

*Ner.* Do you not remember, lady, in your  
father's time, a Venetian, a scholar, and a sol-

\* Ready.

† Formerly.

‡ A heady, gay youngster.

\* Count.

† I. e. If the worst happen that ever, &c.

dier, that came hither in company of the marquis of Montferrat?

*Por.* Yes, yes, it was Bassanio; as I think so was he called.

*Ner.* True, madam; he, of all the men that ever my foolish eyes looked upon, was the best deserving a fair lady.

*Por.* I remember him well; and I remember him worthy of thy praise.—How now! what news?

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Serv.* The four strangers, seek for you, madam, to take their leave: and there is a fore-runner come from a fifth, the prince of Morocco; who brings word the prince, his master, will be here to-night.

*Por.* If I could bid the fifth welcome with as good a heart as I can bid the other four farewell, I should be glad of his approach: if he have the condition\* of a saint, and the complexion of a devil, I had rather he should shrive me, than wive me. Come, Nerissa.—Sirrah, go before.—While we shut the gate upon one wooer, another knocks at the door. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—Venice.—A public Place.

*Enter BASSANIO and SHYLOCK.*

*Shy.* Three thousand ducats,—well.

*Bass.* Ay, Sir, for three months.

*Shy.* For three months,—well.

*Bass.* For the which, as I told you, Antonio shall be bound.

*Shy.* Antonio shall become bound,—well.

*Bass.* May you stead me? Will you pleasure me? Shall I know your answer?

*Shy.* Three thousand ducats, for three months, and Antonio bound.

*Bass.* Your answer to that.

*Shy.* Antonio is a good man.

*Bass.* Have you heard any imputation to the contrary?

*Shy.* Ho, no, no, no, no;—my meaning, in saying he is a good man, is to have you understand me, that he is sufficient: yet his means are in supposition; he hath an argosy bound to Tripolis, another to the Indies; I understand moreover upon the Rialto, he hath a third at Mexico, a fourth for England,—and other ventures he hath, squander'd abroad: But ships are but boards, sailors but men: there he land-rats and water-rats, water-thieves, and land thieves; I mean, pirates; and then, there is the peril of waters, winds, and rocks: The man is, notwithstanding, sufficient;—three thousand ducats:—I think, I may take his bond.

*Bass.* Be assured you may.

*Shy.* I will be assured I may; and, that I may be assured, I will bethink me: May I speak with Antonio?

*Bass.* If it please you to dine with us.

*Shy.* Yes, to smell pork; to eat of the habitation which your prophet, the Nazarite, conjured the devil into; I will buy with you, sell with you, talk with you, walk with you, and so following; but I will not eat with you, drink with you, nor pray with you. What news on the Rialto?—Who is he comes here?

*Enter ANTONIO.*

*Bass.* This is signior Antonio,

*Shy.* [*Aside.*] How like a fawning publican he looks!

I hate him, for he is a Christian:

But more, for that, in low simplicity,  
He lends out money gratis, and brings down  
The rate of usance here, with us in Venice.  
If I can catch him once upon the hip,  
I will feed fat the ancient grudge I bear him.  
He hates our sacred nation: and he rails,

Even there where merchants most do congregate,

On me, my bargains, and my well-won thrift,  
Which he calls interest: Cursed be my tribe,  
If I forgive him!

*Bass.* Shylock, do you hear?

*Shy.* I am debating of my present store;  
And, by the near guess of my memory,  
I cannot instantly raise up the gross  
Of full three thousand ducats: What of that?  
Tubal, a wealthy Hebrew of my tribe,  
Will furnish me; But soft; how many months  
Do you desire?—Rest you fair, good signior;

Your worship was the last man in our mouths.  
[*To ANTONIO.*]

*Ant.* Shylock, albeit, I neither lend nor borrow,

By taking nor by giving of excess,  
Yet, to supply the ripe wants\* of my friend,  
I'll break a custom:—Is he yet possess'd,†  
How much you would?

*Shy.* Ay, ay, three thousand ducats.

*Ant.* And for three months.

*Shy.* I had forgot,—three months, you told me so.

Well then, your bond; and, let me see,—But hear you;

Methought, you said, you neither lend, nor  
Upon advantage. [*borrow,*]

*Ant.* I do never use it.

*Shy.* When Jacob graz'd his uncle Laban's sheep,

This Jacob from our holy Abraham was  
(As his wise mother wrought in his behalf,)  
The third possessor; ay, he was the third.

*Ant.* And what of him? did he take interest?

*Shy.* No, not take interest; not, as you would say,

Directly interest: mark what Jacob did.  
When Laban and himself were compromise'd,  
That all the earnings which were streak'd and  
pied,

Should fall as Jacob's hire; the ewes, being rank,  
In the end of autumn turned to the rams;  
And when the work of generation was  
Between these woolly breeders in the act,  
The skilful shepherd peel'd me certain wands,  
And, in the doing of the deed of kind,‡  
He stuck them up before the fulsome ewes;  
Who, then conceiving, did in coming time  
Fall party-colour'd lambs, and those were  
Jacob's.

This was a way to thrive, and he was blest;  
And thrift is blessing, if men steal it not.

*Ant.* This was a venture, Sir, that Jacob serv'd for;

A thing not in his power to bring to pass,  
But sway'd and fashion'd by the hand of heaven,  
Was this inserted to make interest good?  
Or is your gold and silver, ewes and rams?

*Shy.* I cannot tell; I make it breed as fast:—

But note me, signior.

*Ant.* Mark you this, Bassanio,  
The devil can cite scripture for his purpose.

An evil soul producing holy witness,  
Is like a villain with a smiling cheek;

A goodly apple rotten at the heart:  
O! what a goodly outside falsehood hath!

*Shy.* Three thousand ducats,—'tis a good round sum.

Three months from twelve, then let me see the rate.

*Ant.* Well, Shylock, shall we be beholden to you.

*Shy.* Signior Antonio, many a time, and oft,  
In the Rialto you have rated me

About my monies and my usances: §

Still have I borne it with a patient shrug;

For sufferance is the badge of all our tribe:

You call me misbeliever, cut-throat dog,

And spit upon my Jewish gaberdine,

And all for use of that which is mine own.

\* Temper, qualities.  
are all appropriate.

† Shylock's allusions

\* Wants which admit no longer delay.

† Informed.

‡ Interest.

§ Nature.

Well then, it now appears, you need my help :  
Go to then : you come to me, and you say,  
*Shylock, we would have monies* : You say so ;  
You, that did void your rheum upon my beard,  
And foot me, as you spur a stranger cur  
Over your threshold ; monies is your suit.  
What should I say to you ? Should I not say,  
*Hath a dog money ? is it possible,*  
*A cur can lend three thousand ducats ?* or,  
Shall I bend low, and in a bondman's key,  
With 'bated breath, and whispering humbleness,

Say this,—  
*Fair Sir, you spit on me on Wednesday last :*

*You spurn'd me such a day ; another time  
You call'd me—dog ; and for these courtesies  
I'll lend you thus much monies.*

*Ant.* I am as like to call thee so again,  
To spit on thee again, to spurn thee too.  
If thou wilt lend this money, lend it not  
As to thy friends ; (for when did friendship

take)  
A breed for barren metal of his friend ?  
But lend it rather to thine enemy ;  
Who, if he break, thou may'st with better face  
Exact the penalty.

*Shy.* Why, look you, how you storm !  
I would be friends with you, and have your  
love,  
Forget the shames that you have stain'd me  
with,

Supply your present wants, and take no doil  
Of usance for my monies, and you'll not hear  
me :

This is kind I offer.

*Ant.* This were kindness.

*Shy.* This kindness will I show :—  
Go with me to a notary, seal me there  
Your single bond ; and, in a merry sport,  
If you repay me not on such a day,  
In such a place, such sum or sums as are  
Express'd in the condition, let the forfeit  
Be nominated for an equal pound  
Of your fair flesh, to be cut off and taken  
In what part of your body pleaseth me.

*Ant.* Content, in faith ; I'll seal to such a  
bond,

And say there is much kindness in the Jew.

*Bass.* You shall not seal to such a bond for  
me,

I'll rather dwell in my necessity.

*Ant.* Why, fear not, man ; I will not forfeit it ;  
Within these two months, that's a month before  
This bond expires, I do expect return  
Of thrice three times the value of this bond.

*Shy.* O father Abraham, what these Christians  
are ;

Whose own hard dealings teaches them suspect  
The thoughts of others ! Pray you, tell me this ;  
If he should break his day, what should I gain  
By the exaction of the forfeiture ?

A pound of man's flesh, taken from a man,  
Is not so estimable, profitable neither,  
As flesh of muttons, beefs, or goats. I say,  
To buy his favour, I extend this friendship ;  
If he will take it, so ; if not, adieu ;  
And, for my love, I pray you, wrong me not.

*Ant.* Yes, Shylock, I will seal unto this  
bond.

*Shy.* Then meet me forthwith at the notary's ;  
Give him direction for this merry bond ;  
And I will go and purse the ducats straight ;  
See to my house, left in the fearful guard  
Of an unthrifty knave ; and presently  
I will be with you. [Exit.]

*Ant.* Hie thee, gentle Jew.  
This Hebrew will turn Christian ; he grows  
kind.

*Bass.* I like not fair terms, and a villain's  
mind.

*Ant.* Come on : in this there can be no dis-  
may,  
My ships come home a month before the day.

[Exit.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—Belmont.—A Room in PORTIA'S  
House.

*Flourish of Cornets. Enter the PRINCE OF  
MOROCCO and his Train ; PORTIA, NERISSA,  
and other of her Attendants.*

*Mor.* Mislike me not for my complexion,  
The shadow'd livery of the burnish'd sun,  
To whom I am a neighbour, and near bred.  
Bring me the fairest creature northward born,  
Where Phœbus' fire scarce thaws the icicles,  
And let us make incision \* for your love,  
To prove whose blood is redder, his, or mine.  
I tell thee, lady, this aspect of mine  
Hath fear'd the valiant ; by my love, I swear  
The best-regarded virgins of our clime  
Have lov'd it too : I would not change this hue,  
Except to steal your thoughts, my gentle queen.

*Por.* In terms of choice I am not solely led  
By nice direction of a maiden's eyes :  
Besides the lottery of my destiny  
Bars me the right of voluntary choosing :  
But, if my father had not scanted me,  
And hedg'd me by his wit, to yield myself  
His wife, who wins me by that means I told you,  
Yourself, renowned prince, then stood as fair,  
As any comer I have look'd on yet,  
For my affection.

*Mor.* Even for that I thank you :  
Therefore, I pray you, lead me to the caskets,  
To try my fortune. By this scimitar,—  
That slew the Sophy, and a Persian prince,  
That won three fields of Sultan Solymán,—  
I would out-stare the sternest eyes that look,  
Out-brave the heart most daring on the earth,  
Pluck the young suckling cubs from the she  
bear,

Yea, mock the lion when he roars for prey,  
To try thee, lady : But, alas the while !  
If Hercules and Lichas play at dice  
Which is the better man, the greater throw  
May turn by fortune from the weaker hand :  
So is Alcides beaten by his page ;  
And so may I, blind fortune leading me,  
Miss that which one unworthier may attain,  
And die with grieving.

*Por.* You must take your chance ;  
And either not attempt to choose at all,  
Or swear, before you choose, if you choose  
wrong,

Never to speak to lady afterward  
In way of marriage : therefore be advis'd.

*Mor.* Nor will not ; come, bring me unto my  
chance.

*Por.* First, forward to the temple ; after dinner  
Your hazard shall be made.

*Mor.* Good fortune then ! [Cornets.]  
To make me bless'd, or curs'd 'st among men.

[Exit.]

## SCENE II.—Venice.—A Street.

## Enter LAUNCELOT GOBBO.

*Laun.* Certainly my conscience will serve me  
to run from this Jew, my master : The fiend is  
at mine elbow : and tempts me, saying to me,  
*Gobbo, Launcelot Gobbo, good Launcelot, or  
good Gobbo, or good Launcelot Gobbo, use  
your legs, take the start, run away* : My con-  
science says,—no ; take heed, honest Launcelot ;  
take heed, honest Gobbo ; or, as aforesaid,  
honest Launcelot Gobbo ; do not run ; scorn  
running with thy heels : Well, the most coura-  
geous fiend bids me pack ; *vial* ! says the fiend ;  
*away* ! says the fiend, for the heavens ; rouse  
up a brave mind, says the fiend, and run.  
Well, my conscience, hancing about the neck of  
my heart, says very wisely to me,—*my honest  
friend Launcelot, being an honest man's son,*  
—or rather an honest woman's son ;—for, indeed,  
my father did something smack, something grow

\* Red blood is a traditional sign of love-affection.

to, he had a kind of taste; well, my conscience says, *Launcelot, budge not; budge*, says the fiend; *budge not*, says my conscience: Conscience, says I, you counsel well; fiend, says I, you counsel well: to be ruled by my conscience, I should stay with the Jew my master, who, (God bless the mark!) is a kind of devil; and to run away from the Jew, I should be ruled by the fiend, who, saving your reverence, is the devil himself; Certainly, the Jew is the very devil incarnate; and, in my conscience, my conscience is but a kind of hard conscience, to offer to counsel me to stay with the Jew: The fiend gives the more friendly counsel: I will run, fiend; my heels are at your commandment, I will run.

*Enter old Gobbo, with a Basket.*

*Gob.* Master, young man, you, I pray you; which is the way to master Jew's?

*Laun.* [*Aside.*] O heavens, this is my true begotten father! who, being more than sand-blind, high-gravel blind, knows me not;—I will try conclusions\* with him.

*Gob.* Master young gentleman, I pray you, which is the way to master Jew's?

*Laun.* Turn up on your right hand, at the next turning, but at the next turning of all, on your left; marry, at the very next turning, turn of no hand, but turn down indirectly to the Jew's house.

*Gob.* By God's souties, 'twill be a hard way to hit. Can you tell me whether one Launcelot, that dwells with him, dwell with him, or no?

*Laun.* Talk you of young master Launcelot?—Mark me now; [*aside.*] now will I raise the waters:—Talk you of young master Launcelot?

*Gob.* No master, Sir, but a poor man's son; his father, though I say it, is an honest exceeding poor man, and, God be thanked, well to live.

*Laun.* Well, let his father be what he will, we talk of young master Launcelot.

*Gob.* Your worship's friend, and Launcelot, Sir.

*Laun.* But I pray you *ergo*, old man, *ergo*, I beseech you; Talk you of young master Launcelot?

*Gob.* Of Launcelot, an't please your master-ship.

*Laun.* *Ergo*, master Launcelot; talk not of master Launcelot, father; for the young gentleman (according to fates and destinies, and such odd saying, the sisters three, and such branches of learning,) is, indeed, deceased; or, as you would say, in plain terms, gone to heaven.

*Gob.* Marry, God forbid! the boy was the very staff of my age, my very prop.

*Laun.* Do I look like a cudgel, or a hovel-post, a staff, or a prop?—Do you know me, father?

*Gob.* Alack the day, I know you not, young gentleman: but, I pray you, tell me, is my boy, (God rest his soul!) alive, or dead?

*Laun.* Do you not know me, father?

*Gob.* Alack, Sir, I am sand-blind, I know you not.

*Laun.* Nay, indeed, if you had your eyes, you might fail of the knowing me: it is a wise father, that knows his own child. Well, old man, I will tell you news of your son: Give me your blessing: truth will come to light; murder cannot be hid long, a man's son may; but, in the end, truth will out.

*Gob.* Pray you, Sir, stand up; I am sure, you are not Launcelot, my boy.

*Laun.* Pray you, let's have no more fooling about it, but give me your blessing; I am Launcelot, your boy that was, your son that is, your child that shall be.

*Gob.* I cannot think, you are my son.

*Laun.* I know not what I shall think of that:

but I am Launcelot, the Jew's man; and, I am sure, Margery, your wife, is my mother.

*Gob.* Her name is Maigery, indeed: I'll be sworn, if thou be Launcelot, thou art mine own flesh and blood. Lord worship'd! might he be? what a beard hast thou got! thou hast got more hair on thy chin, than Dobbin my thill-horse\* has on his tail.

*Laun.* It should seem then, that Dobbin's tail grows backward; I am sure he had more hair on his tail, than I have on my face, when I last saw him.

*Gob.* Lord, how art thou changed! How dost thou and thy master agree? I have brought him a present; How 'gree you now?

*Laun.* Well, well; but, for mine own part, a I have set up my rest to run away, so I will not rest till I have run some ground: my master's a very Jew: Give him a present! give him a halter: I am furnish'd in his service; you may tell every finger I have with my ribs. Father, I am glad you are come: give me your present to one master Bassanio, who, indeed, gives rare new liveries: if I serve not him, I will run as far as God has any ground.—O rare fortune! here comes the man;—to him, father; for I am a Jew if I serve the Jew any longer.

*Enter BASSANIO, with LEONARDO, and other Followers.*

*Bass.* You may do so:—but let it be so hasted, that supper be ready at the farthest by five of the clock: See these letters deliver'd; put the liveries to making; and desire Gratiano to come anon to my lodging. [*Exit a Servant.*]

*Laun.* To him, father.

*Gob.* God bless your worship!

*Bass.* Gramercy; would'st thou aught with me?

*Gob.* Here's my son, Sir, a poor boy,——

*Laun.* Not a poor boy, Sir, but the rich Jew's man; that would, Sir, as my father shall specify,——

*Gob.* He hath a great infection, Sir, as one would say, to serve——

*Laun.* Indeed, the short and the long is, I serve the Jew, and I have a desire, as my father shall specify——

*Gob.* His master and he, (saving your worship's reverence,) are scarce catechism-cousins:

*Laun.* To be brief, the very truth is, that the Jew, having done me wrong, doth cause me, as my father, being I hope an old man, shall testify unto you,——

*Gob.* I have here a dish of doves, that I would bestow upon your worship; and my suit is,——

*Laun.* In very brief, the suit is impertinent to myself, as your worship shall know by this honest old man; and, though I say it, though old man, yet, poor man, my father.

*Bass.* One speak for both:—What would you?

*Laun.* Serve you, Sir.

*Gob.* This is the very defect of the matter, Sir.

*Bass.* I know thee well, thou hast obtain'd thy suit:

Shylock, thy master, spoke with me this day, And hath prefer'd thee, if it be preferment, To leave a rich Jew's service, to become The follower of so poor a gentleman.

*Laun.* The old proverb is very well parted between my master Shylock and you, Sir; you have the grace of God, Sir, and he hath enough.

*Bass.* Thou speak'st it well: Go, father, with thy son:—

Take leave of thy old master, and inquire My lodging out:—Give him a livery

[*To his Followers.*]

More guarded than his fellows: See it done.

*Laun.* Father, in:—I cannot get a service, no;—I have ne'er a tongue in my head.—Well; [*Looking on his palm.*] if any man in Italy have

a fairer table,\* which doth offer to swear upon a book.—I shall have good fortune; Go to, here's a simple line of life! here's a small trifle of wives: Alas! fifteen wives is nothing; eleven widows, and nine maids, is a simple coming-in for one man: and then, to 'scape drowning thence; and to be in peril of my life with the edge of a feather-bed;—here are simple 'scapes! Well, it fortune be a woman, she's a good wench for this gear.—Father, come; I'll take my leave of the Jew in the twinkling of an eye.

[*Exit LAUNCELOT and old GOSSO.*]

*Bass.* I pray thee, good *Leonardo*, think on this:  
These things being bought, and orderly bestowed,

Return in haste, for I do feast to-night  
My best-esteem'd acquaintance; his thee, go.

*Leon.* My best endeavours shall be done herein.

*Enter GRATIANO.*

*Gra.* Where is your master?

*Leon.* Yonder, Sir, he walks.

[*Exit LEONARDO.*]

*Gra.* Signior Bassanio,—

*Bass.* Gratiano!

*Gra.* I have a suit to you.

*Bass.* You have obtain'd it.

*Gra.* You must not deny me; I must go with you to Belmont.

*Bass.* Why, then you must;—But hear thee, Gratiano;

Thou art too wild, too rude, and bold of voice;—  
Paits, that become thee happily enough,  
And in such eyes as our's appear not faults;  
But where thou art not known, why, there they show

Something too liberal:†—pray thee, take pains  
To allay with some cold drops of modesty  
Thy skipping spirit; lest, through thy wild behaviour,

I be misconstrued in the place I go to,  
And lose my hopes.

*Gra.* Signior Bassanio, hear me:

If I do not put on a sober habit,  
Talk with respect, and swear but now and then,  
Wear prayer-books in my pocket, look demurely;

Nay more, while grace is saying, hood mine eyes

Thus with my hat, and sigh, and say, amen;  
Use all the observance of civility,  
Like one well studied in a sad ostent‡  
To please his grandam, never trust me more.

*Bass.* Well, we shall see your bearing.‡

*Gra.* Nay, but I bar to-night; you shall not gage me

By what we do to-night.

*Bass.* No, that were pity:

I would entreat you rather to put on  
Your holdest suit of mirth, for we have friends  
That purpose merriment: But fare you well,  
I have some business.

*Gra.* And I must to Lorenzo, and the rest;  
But we will visit you at supper-time. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—The same.—A Room in SHYLOCK'S House.

*Enter JESSICA and LAUNCELOT.*

*Jes.* I am sorry thou wilt leave my father so;  
Our house is hell, and thou, a merry devil,  
Didst rob it of some taste of tediousness:  
But fare thee well; there is a ducat for thee.  
And, Launcelot, soon at supper shalt thou see  
Lorenzo, who is thy new master's guest:  
Give him this letter; do it secretly,  
And so farewell; I would not have my father  
See me talk with thee.

\* The chromatic term for the lines of the hand.

† Too gross.

‡ Show of staid or serious demeanour.

§ Deportment

*Laun.* Adieu!—tears exhibit my tongue.—  
Most beautiful pagan, most sweet Jew! If a  
Christian do not play the knave, and get thee,  
I am much deceived: But, adieu! these foolish  
drops do somewhat dim my manly spirit;  
adieu! [*Exit.*]

*Jes.* Farewell, good Launcelot.—  
Alack, what heinous sin it is in me,  
To be ashamed to be my father's child!  
But though I am a daughter to his blood,  
I am not to his manners: O Lorenzo,  
If thou keep promise, I shall end this strife;  
Become a Christian, and thy loving wife.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—The same.—A street.

*Enter GRATIANO, LORENZO, SALARINO, and SALANIO.*

*Lor.* Nav, we will shink away in supper-time;  
Disguise us at my lodging, and return  
All in an hour.

*Gra.* We have not made good preparation.

*Salar.* We have not spoke us yet of torch-bearers.

*Salan.* 'Tis vile, unless it may be quaintly order'd.

And better, in my mind, not undertook.

*Lor.* 'Tis now but four a'clock; we have two hours

To furnish us:—

*Enter LAUNCELOT, with a letter.*

Friend Launcelot, what's the news?

*Laun.* An it shall please you to break up this,  
it shall seem to signify.

*Lor.* I know the hand: in faith, 'tis a fair hand;

And whiter than the paper it writ on,  
Is the fair hand that writ.

*Gra.* Love-news, in faith.

*Laun.* By your leave, Sir.

*Lor.* Whither goest thou?

*Laun.* Marry, Sir, to bid my old master the  
Jew to sup to-night with my new master the  
Christian.

*Lor.* Hold here, take this:—tell gentle Jessica,

I will not fail her;—speak it privately; go.—  
Gentlemen, [*Exit LAUNCELOT.*]

Will you prepare you for this masque to-night?  
I am provided of a torch-bearer.

*Salar.* Ay, marry, I'll be gone about it straight.

*Salan.* And so will I.

*Lor.* Meet me, and Gratiano,  
At Gratiano's lodging some hour hence.

*Salar.* 'Tis good we do so.

[*Exit SALAR, and SALAN.*]

*Gra.* Was not that letter from fair Jessica?

*Lor.* I must needs tell thee all: she hath directed,

How I shall take her from her father's house;

What gold and jewels she is furnish'd with;

What page's suit she hath in readiness;

If e'er the Jew her father come to heaven,

It will be for his gentle daughter's sake;

And never dare unfortune cross her foot,

Unless she do it under this excuse,—

That she is issue to a faithless Jew.

Come, go with me; peruse this, as thou goest:

Fair Jessica shall be my torch-bearer.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—The same.—Before SHYLOCK'S House.

*Enter SHYLOCK and LAUNCELOT.*

*Shy.* Well thou shalt see, thy eyes shall be thy judge,

The difference of old Shylock and Bassanio:—

What, Jessica!—thou shalt not gormandize;

As thou hast done with me;—What, Jessica!

And sleep and snore, and read apparel out;—

Why, Jessica, I say!

*Laun.* Why, Jessica!

*Shy.* Who bids thee call? I do not bid thee call.

*Laun.* Your worship was wont to tell me, I could do nothing without bidding.

*Enter JESSICA.*

*Jes.* Call you? what is your will?

*Shy.* I am bid<sup>\*</sup> forth to supper, Jessica; There are my keys:—But wherefore should I go?

I am not bid for love; they flatter me: But yet I'll go in hate, to feed upon The prodigal Christian.—Jessica, my girl, Look to my house:—I am right loath to go; There is some ill a brewing towards my rest, For I did dream of money-bags to night.

*Laun.* I beseech you, Sir, go; my young master doth expect your reproach.

*Shy.* So do I his.

*Laun.* And they have conspired together,—I will not say, you shall see a masque; but if you do, then it was not for nothing that my nose fell a bleeding on Black-Monday last, † at six o'clock i'the morning, falling out that year on Ash-Wednesday was four year in the afternoon.

*Shy.* What! are there masques? Hear you me, Jessica:

Look up my doors; and when you hear the drum,

And the vile squeaking of the wry-neck'd fife, Clamber not you up to the casements then, Nor thrust your head into the public street, To gaze on Christian fools with varnished faces: But stop my house's ears, I mean my casements;

Let not the sound of shallow foppery enter My sober house.—By Jacob's staff, I swear, I have no mind of feasting forth to-night: But I will go.—Go you before me, sirrah; Say, I will come.

*Laun.* I will go before, Sir.—

Mistress, look out at window, for all this;

There will come a Christian by,

Will be worth a Jewess' eye. [*Exit LAUN.*]

*Shy.* What says that fool of Hagar's offspring, ha?

*Jes.* His words were, Farewell, mistress; nothing else,

*Shy.* The patch is kind enough; but a huge feeder.

Suail-slow in profit, and he sleeps by day More than the wild cat; drones live not with me; Therefore I part with him; and part with him To one that I would have him help to waste His borrow'd purse.—Well, Jessica, go in; Perhaps, I will return immediately;

Do as I bid you,

Shut doors after you: Fast bind, fast find;

A proverb never stale in thrifty mind. [*Exit*]

*Jes.* Farewell: and if my fortune be not cross'd,

I have a father, a daughter, lost. [*Exit.*]

SCENE VI.—The same.

*Enter GRATIANO and SALARINO, masked.*

*Gra.* This is the pent-house, under which Lorenzo

Desir'd us to make stand.

*Salar.* His hour is almost past.

*Gra.* And it is marvel he out-dwells his hour, For lovers ever run before the clock.

*Salar.* Oh! ten times faster Venus' pigeons fly To seal love's bonds new made, than they are wont,

To keep oblig'd faith unforfeited!

*Gra.* That ever holds: Who rises from a feast,

With that keen appetite that he sits down? Where is the horse that doth untread again His tedious measures with the unbated fire That he did pace them first? All things that are, Are with more spirit chased than enjoy'd. How like a younker, or a prodigal, The scarfed<sup>\*</sup> bark puts from her native bay, Hugg'd and embraced by the strumpet wind! How like the prodigal doth she return; With over-weather'd ribs, and ragged sails, Lean, rent, and beggar'd by the strumpet wind!

*Enter LORENZO.*

*Salar.* Here comes Lorenzo;—more of this hereafter.

*Lor.* Sweet friends, your patience for my long abode;

Not I, but my affairs, have made you wait; When you shall please to play the thieves for wives,

I'll watch as long for you then.—Approach; Here dwells my father Jew: Ho! who's within.

*Enter JESSICA above, in boy's clothes.*

*Jes.* Who are you? Tell me, for more certainty,

Albeit I'll swear that I do know your tongue.

*Lor.* Lorenzo, and thy love.

*Jes.* Lorenzo, certain; and my love, indeed; For who love I so much? And now who knows, But you, Lorenzo, whether I am your's?

*Lor.* Heaven, and thy thoughts, are witness that thou art.

*Jes.* Here, catch this casket; it is worth the pains.

I am glad 'tis night, you do not look on me,

For I am much ashamed of my exchange;

But love is blind, and lovers cannot see

The pretty follies that themselves commit;

For if they could, Cupid himself would blush

To see me thus transformed to a boy.

*Lor.* Descend, for you must be my torch-bearer.

*Jes.* What, must I hold a candle to my shames?

They in themselves, good sooth, are too too light.

Why, 'tis an office of discovery, love;

And I should be obscur'd.

*Lor.* So are you, sweet,

Even in the lovely garnish of a boy.

But come at once:

For the close night doth play the run-away,

And we are staid for at Bassanio's feast.

*Jes.* I will make fast the doors, and gild my self

With some more ducats, and be with you straight.

[*Exit from above.*]

*Gra.* Now, by my hood, a Gentle, and no Jew.

*Lor.* Beshrew me, but I love her heartily:

For she is wise, if I can judge of her;

And fair she is, if that mine eyes be true;

And true she is, as she hath proved herself;

And therefore, like herself, wise, fair, and true;

Shall she be placed in my constant soul.

*Enter JESSICA, below.*

What, art thou come?—On, gentlemen, away;

Our masking mates by this time for us stay.

[*Exit with JESSICA and SALARINO.*]

*Enter ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* Who's there?

*Gra.* Signior Antonio?

*Ant.* Fie, fie, Gratiano! where are all the rest?

'Tis nine o'clock; our friends all stay for you:—

No masque to-night; the wind is come about,

Bassanio presently will go aboard:

I have sent twenty out to seek for you.

<sup>\*</sup> Larded.

† Easter Monday: an allusion from Edward III. losing a battle part of his army (then besieging Paris) by cold—the day was very dark and misty.

<sup>\*</sup> Decorated with flags.

*Gra.* I am glad on't; I desire no more delight,  
Than to be under sail, and gone to-night.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII.—*Eclmont.*—A Room in PORTIA'S House.

*Flourish of Cornets.* Enter PORTIA with the PRINCE OF MOROCCO, and both their Trains.

*Por.* Go, draw aside the curtains, and discover The several caskets to this noble prince:  
Now make your choice.

*Mor.* The first, of gold, who this inscription bears;—

*Who chooseth me, shall gain what many men desire.*

The second, silver, which this promise carries;—

• *Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he deserves.*

This third, dull lead, with warning all as blunt;—

*Who chooseth me, must give and hazard all he hath.*

How shall I know if I do choose the right?

*Por.* The one of them contains my picture, prince;

If you choose that, then I am your's withal.

*Mor.* Some god direct my judgment? Let me see,

I will survey the inscriptions back again;

What says this leaden casket?

*Who chooseth me, must give and hazard all he hath.*

Must give—for what? for lead? hazard for lead?

This casket threatens: Men, that hazard all,  
Do it in hope of fair advantages;

A golden mind stoops not to shows of dross;  
I'll then not give, nor hazard, aught for lead.

What says the silver, with her virgin hue?

*Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he deserves.*

As much as he deserves? Pause there, Morocco,  
And weigh thy value with an even hand:

If thou be'st rated by thy estimation,  
Thou dost deserve enough; and yet enough

May not extend so far as to the lady:

And yet to be afraid of my deserving,

Were but a weak disabling of myself.

As much as I deserve!—Why, that's the lady:

I do in birth deserve her, and in fortunes,

In glaces, and in qualities of breeding;

But more than these, in love I do deserve.

What if I stay'd no further, but chose here?—

Let's see once more this saying grav'd in gold:

*Who chooseth me, shall gain what many men desire.*

Why, that's the lady; all the world desires her:

From the four corners of the earth they come,

To kiss this shrine, this mortal breathing saint.

The Hyrcanian deserts, and the vasty wilds

Of wide Arabia, are as through-fares now,

For princes to come view fair Portia:

The watery kingdom, whose ambitious head

Spits in the face of heaven, is no bar

To stop the foreign spirits; but they come,

As o'er a brook, to see fair Portia.

One of these three contains her heavenly picture.

Is't like, that lead contains her? 'Twere damnation,

To think so base a thought; it were too gross

To rib \* her cerecloth in the obscure grave.

Or shall I think, in silver she's immur'd,

Being ten times undervalued to try'd gold?

O sinful thought! Never so rich a gem

Was set in worse than gold. They have in England

A coin, that bears the figure of an angel

Stamped in gold; but that's insculp'd † upon;

But here an angel in a golden bed

\* Encoined.

† Engraven.

Lies all within.—Deliver me the key;  
Here do I choose, and thrive I as I may'  
*Por.* There, take it, prince, and if my form lie there,  
Then I am your's.

[*He unlocks the golden casket.*]

*Mor.* O hell! what have we here?  
A carrion death, within whose empty eye  
There is a written scroll? I'll read the writing.

*All that glisters is not gold,  
Often have you heard that told:  
Many a man his life hath sold,  
But my outside to behold:  
Gilded tombs do worms infold.  
Had you been as wise as bold,  
Young in limbs, in judgment old,  
Your answer had not been insober'd:  
Fare you well; your suit is cold.  
Cold, indeed; and labour lost;  
Then, farewell, heat; and welcome, frost.  
Portia, adieu! I have too griev'd a heart  
To take a tedious leave; thus losers part.*

[*Exit.*]

*Por.* A gentle riddance:—Draw the curtains, go;—

Let all of his complexion choose me so.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VIII.—*Venice.*—A Street.

Enter SALARINO and SALANIO.

*Salar.* Why, man, I saw Bassanio under sail;  
With him is Gratiano gone along;

And in their ship, I am sure, Lorenzo is not.

*Salan.* The villain Jew with outcries rais'd  
the duke;

Who went with him to search Bassanio's ship.

*Salar.* He came too late, the ship was under  
sail;

But there the duke was given to understand,  
That in a gondola were seen together

Lorenzo and his amorous Jessica:

Besides, Antonio certified the duke,

They were not with Bassanio in his ship.

*Salan.* I never heard a passion so confus'd,

So strange, outrageous, and so variable,

As the dog Jew did utter in the streets:

*My daughter!—O my ducats!—O my daughter!*

*Fled with a Christian!—O my Christian ducats!*

*Justice! the law! my ducats, and my daughter!*

*A sealed bag, two sealed bags of ducats, [ter]*

*Of double ducats, stol'n from me by my daughter!*

*And jewels; two stones, two rich and precious stones,*

*Stol'n by my daughter!—Justice! find the*

*She hath the stones upon her, and the ducats!*

*Salar.* Why, all the boys in Venice follow

him, [ducats.

Crying,—his stones, his daughter, and his

*Salan.* Let good Antonio look he keep his

Or he shall pay for this. [day,

*Salar.* Marry, well remember'd:

I reason'd \* with a Frenchman yesterday;

Who told me,—in the narrow seas, that part

The French and English, there miscarried

A vessel of our country richly fraught:

I thought upon Antonio, when he told me;

And wish'd in silence, that it were not his.

*Salan.* You were best to tell Antonio what

you hear;

Yet do not suddenly, for it may grieve him.

*Salar.* A kinder gentleman treads not the

I saw Bassanio and Antonio part: [earth.

Bassanio told him, he would make some speed

Of his return; he answer'd—*Do not so,*

*Slubber not † business for my sake, Bassanio,*

*But stay the very riping of the time;*

*And for the Jew's bond, which he hath of me,*

*Let it not enter in your mind of love!*

*Be merry; and employ your chiefest thoughts*

\* Conversed.

† To slubber, is to do a thing carelessly.



*To courtship, and such fair ostents of love  
As shall conveniently become you there :  
And even there, his eye being big with tears,  
Turning his face, he put his hand behind him,  
And with affection wondrous sensible,  
He wrung Bassanio's hand, and so they parted.*

*Solan.* I think, he only loves the world for  
I pray thee, let us go and find him out, [him.  
And quicken his embraced heaviness \*  
With some delight or other.

*Salar.* Do we so. [Exeunt.  
**SCENE IX.—Belmont.—A Room in PORTIA'S  
House.**

*Enter NERISSA, with a Servant.*

*Ner.* Quick, quick, I pray thee, draw the  
curtain straight ;  
The prince of Arragon hath ta'en his oath,  
And comes to his election presently.

*Flourish of Cornets. Enter the PRINCE OF  
ARRAGON, PORTIA, and their Trains.*

*Por.* Behold, there stand the caskets, noble  
prince :

If you choose that wherein I am contain'd,  
Straight shall our nuptial rites be solemniz'd ;  
But if you fail, without more speech, my lord,  
You must be gone from hence immediately.

*Ar.* I am enjoin'd by oath to observe three  
First, to untold to any one [things :  
Which casket 'twas I chose, next, if I fail  
Of the right casket, never in my life  
To woo a maid in way of marriage ; lastly,  
If I do fail in fortune of your choice,  
Immediately to leave you and be gone.

*Por.* To these injunctions every one doth  
swear,

That comes to hazard for my worthless self.

*Ar.* And so have I address'd† me : Fortune  
now [lead.  
To my heart's hope !—Gold, silver, and base  
*Who chooseth me, must give and hazard all  
he hath :*

You shall look fairer, ere I give, or hazard.  
What says the golden cheat ? ha ! let me see :  
*Who chooseth me, shall gain what many men  
desire.* [meant

What many men desire. That many may be  
By the fool multitude, that choose by show,  
Not learning more than the fond eye doth teach ;  
Which prides not to the anterior, but, like the  
martlet,

Builds in the weather on the outward wall.

Even in the force† and road of casualty,  
I will not choose what many men desire,  
Because I will not jump with common spirits,  
And rank me with the barbarous multitudes.  
Why, then to thee, thou silver treasure-house ;  
Tell me once more what title thou dost bear ;  
*Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he  
deserves ;*

And well said too : For who shall go about  
To cozen fortune, and be honourable  
Without the stamp of merit ? Let none presume  
To wear an undeserved dignity.

Oh ! that estates, degrees, and offices,  
Were not deriv'd corruptly ; and that clear  
honour

Were purchas'd by the merit of the wearer !  
How many then, should cover that stand bare ?  
How many be commanded, that command ?  
How much low peasantry would then be glean'd  
From the true seed of honour ? and how much  
honour

Pick'd from the chaff and ruin of the times,  
To be new varnish'd ? Well, but to my choice :  
*Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he  
deserves.*

I will—some desert :—Give me a key for this,  
And instantly unlock my fortunes here.

*Por.* Too long a pause for that which you  
find there.

*Ar.* What's here ? the portrait of a blinking  
idiot,

Presenting me a schedule ? I will read it.

How much unlike art thou to Portia !

How much unlike my hopes and my desert  
ings !

*Who chooseth me, shall have as much as he  
deserves.*

Did I deserve no more than a fool's head ?

Is that my prize ? are my deserts no better ?

*Por.* To offend, and judge, are distinct offices,  
And of opposed natures.

*Ar.* What is here ?

*The fire seven times tried this ;*

*Seven times tried that judgment is,*

*That did never choose amiss ;*

*Some there be, that shadow's kiss ;*

*Such have but a shadow's bliss :*

*There be fools alive, I trust,*

*Silver'd o'er, and so nas this.*

*Take what wife you will to bed,*

*I will ever be your head :*

*So begone, Sir, you are sped.*

*Still more fool I shall appear*

*By the time I linger here :*

*With one fool's head I came to woo,*

*But I go away with two —*

*Sweet, adieu ! I'll keep my oath,*

*Patiently to bear my wroth.*

[Exeunt ARRAGON, and TRAIN.

*Por.* Thus hath the candle sing'd the wroth.

O these deliberate fools ! when they do choose,

They have the wisdom by their wit to lose.

*Ner.* The ancient saying is no heresy, —

Hanging and wiving goes by destiny.

*Por.* Come, draw the curtain, Nerissa.

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Serv.* Where is my lady ?

*Por.* Here : what would my lord ?

*Serv.* Madam, there is alighted at your gate

A young Venetian, one that comes before

To signify the approaching of his lord.

From whom he bringeth sensible regrets ;†

To wit, besides commendals, and courteous

breath,

Gifts of rich value ; Yet I have not seen

So likely an ambassador of love :

A day in April never came so sweet

To show how costly summer was at hand,

As this fore-spurrer comes before his lord.

*Por.* No more, I pray thee, I am half afraid,

Thou wilt say anon, he is some kin to thee,

Thou spend'st such high-day wit in prating

him.—

Come, come, Nerissa : for I long to see

Quick Cupid's post, that comes so mannishly.

*Ner.* Bassanio, lord love, if thy will it be !

[Exeunt.

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—Venice.—A Street.

*Enter SALANIO and SALARINO.*

*Salan.* Now, what news on the Rialto ?

*Salar.* Why, yet it lives there uncheck'd,

that Antonio hath a ship of rich lading wreck'd

on the narrow seas ; the Goodwins, I think they

call the place ; a very dangerous flat, and fatal,

where the carcasses of many a tall ship lie

buried, as they say, if my gossip report be an

honest woman of her word.

*Salan.* I would she were as lying a gossip in

that, as ever knapp'd ginsler, or made her

neighbours believe she wept for the death of a

third husband : But it is true, without any

slips of prolixity, or crossing the plain highway

of talk,—that the good Antonio, the honest

Antonio,—O that I had a title good enough

to keep his name company !—

\* The heartiness he is fond of.

† Propriety.

‡ Power

§ Agree with

\* Know.

† Salutations

*Salar.* Come, the full stop.

*Salar.* Ha,—what say'st thou?—Why the end is, he hath lost a ship.

*Salar.* I would it might prove the end of his losses!

*Salar.* Let me say amen betimes, lest the devil cross my prayer; for here he comes in the likeness of a Jew.—

*Enter SHYLOCK.*

How now, Shylock? what news among the merchants?

*Shy.* You knew, none so well, none so well as you, of my daughter's flight.

*Salar.* That's certain; I, for my part, knew the tailor that made the wings she flew withal.

*Salar.* And Shylock, for his own part, knew the bird was fledg'd; and then it is the complexion of them all to leave the dam.

*Shy.* She is damn'd for it.

*Salar.* That's certain, if the devil may be her judge.

*Shy.* My own flesh and blood to rebel.

*Salar.* Out upon it, old carrion! rebels it at these years?

*Shy.* I say my daughter is my flesh and blood.

*Salar.* There is more difference between thy flesh and her's, than between jet and ivory; more between your bloods, than there is between red wine and rhenish:—But tell us, do you hear whether Antonio have had any loss at sea or no?

*Shy.* There I have another bad match: a bankrupt, a prodigal, who dare scarce show his head on the Rialto;—a beggar, that used to come so smug upon the mart;—let him look to his bond: he was wont to call me usurer;—let him look to his bond: he was wont to lend money for a Christian courtesy;—let him look to his bond.

*Salar.* Why, I am sure, if he forfeit, thou wilt not take his flesh. What's that good for?

*Shy.* To bait fish withal: it will feed nothing else, it will feed my revenge. He hath disgrac'd me, and humbled me of half a million, laugh'd at my losses, mock'd at my gains, scorn'd my nation, thwarted my bargains, cooled my friends, heated mine enemies; and what's his reason? I am a Jew: Hath not a Jew eyes? hath not a Jew hands, organs, dimensions, senses, affections, passions? fed with the same food, hurt with the same weapons, subject to the same diseases, healed by the same means, warmed and cooled by the same winter and summer as a Christian is? if you prick us, do we not bleed? if you tickle us, do we not laugh? if you poison us, do we not die? and if you wrong us, shall we not revenge? if we are like you in the rest, we will resemble you in that. If a Jew wrong a Christian, what is his humility? revenge: If a Christian wrong a Jew, what should his suffrance be by Christian example? why, revenge. The villainy you teach me, I will execute, and it shall go hard, but I will better the instruction.

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Serr.* Gentlemen, my master Antonio is at his house, and desires to speak with you both.

*Salar.* We have been up and down to seek him.

*Enter TUBAL.*

*Salar.* Here comes another of the tribe; a third cannot be matched, unless the devil himself turn Jew.

[*Exit SALAR, SALAR, and SERVANT.*]

*Shy.* How now, Tubal, what news from Genoa? hast thou found my daughter?

*Tub.* I often came where I did hear of her, but cannot find her.

*Shy.* Why there, there, there, there! a diamond gone, cost me two thousand ducats in Frankfort! The curse never fell upon our nation till now; I never felt it till now:—two

thousand ducats in that; and other precious, precious jewels.—I would my daughter were dead at my foot, and the jewels in her ear! 'would she were hears'd at my foot, and the ducats in her coffin!—No news of them!—Why, so:—and I know not what's spent in the search: Why, thou loss upon loss! the thief gone with so much, and so much to find the thief; and no satisfaction, no revenge; nor no ill-luck stirring, but what lights o' my shoulders; no sighs, but o' my breathing; no tears, but o' my shedding.

*Tub.* Yes, other men have ill luck too; Antonio, as I heard in Genoa,—

*Shy.* What, what, what? ill luck, ill luck?

*Tub.*—hath an argosy cast away, coming from Tripolis.

*Shy.* I thank God, I thank God:—Is it true? is it true?

*Tub.* I spoke with some of the sailors that escaped the wreck.

*Shy.* I thank thee, good Tubal;—Good news, good news: ha! ha!—Where? in Genoa?

*Tub.* Your daughter spent in Genoa, as I heard, one night, fourscore ducats.

*Shy.* Thou sick'st a dagger in me:—I shall never see my gold again! Fourscore ducats at a sitting! fourscore ducats!

*Tub.* There came divers of Antonio's creditors in my company to Venice, that swear he cannot choose but break.

*Shy.* I am very glad of it: I'll plague him; I'll torture him; I am glad of it.

*Tub.* One of them showed me a ring, that he had of your daughter for a monkey.

*Shy.* Out upon her! Thou torturest me, Tubal: it was my torquise; \* I had it of Leah, when I was a bachelor: I would not have given it for a wilderness of monies.

*Tub.* But Antonio is certainly undone.

*Shy.* Nay that's true, that's very true: Go, Tubal, fee me an officer, bespeak him a fortnight before, I will have the heart of him, if he forfeit for were he out of Venice, I can make what merchandise I will: Go, go, Tubal, and meet me at our synagogue; go, good Tubal; at our synagogue, Tubal. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II.—Belmont.—A Room in PORTIA'S House.

*Enter BASSANIO, PORTIA, GRATIANO, NERISSA, and Attendants. The caskets are set out.*

*Por.* I pray you, tarry; pause a day or two, Before you hazard; for, in choosing wrong, I lose your company; therefore, forbear a while. There's something tells me, (but it is not love,) I would not lose you; and you know yourself, Hate counsels not in such a quality: But lest you should not understand me well, (And yet a maiden hath no tongue but thought,) I would detain you here some month or two, Before you venture for me. I could teach you, How to choose right, but then I am forsworn; So will I never be: so may you miss me; But if you do, you'll make me wish a sin, That I had been forsworn. Bestrew your eyes, They have o'erlook'd me, and divided me: One half of me is yours, the other half your's, —

Mine own, I would say, but if mine, then your's,

And so all your's: Oh! these naughty times Put bars between the owners and their rights; And so, though your's, not your's.—Prove it so, Let fortune go to hell for it,—not I.

I speak too long; but 'tis to pierce \* the time: To eke it, and to draw it out in length, To stay you from election.

*Bass.* Let me choose;

For as I am, I live upon the rack.

*Por.* Upon the rack, Bassanio? then confess What treason there is mingled with your love.

*Bass.* None, but that ugly treason of mistrust, Which makes me fear the enjoying of my love : There may as well be amity and life

'Tween snow and fire, as treason and my love.

*Por.* Ay, but I fear, you speak upon the rack, Where men enforced do speak any thing.

*Bass.* Promise me life, and I'll confess the truth.

*Por.* Well then, confess, and live.

*Bass.* Confess and love,

Had been the very sum of my confession :

O happy torment, when my torturer

Doth teach me answers for deliverance !

But let me to my torture and the caskets.

*Por.* Away then : I am lock'd in one of them ;

If you do love me, you will find me out.—

Nerissa, and the rest, stand all aloof.—

Let music sound, while he doth make his choice ;

Then, if he lose, he makes a swanlike end,

Fading in music : that the comparison

May stand more proper, my eye shall be the

stream,

And wat'ry death-bed for him : He may win ;

And what is music then ? then music is

Even as the nourish when true subjects bow

To a new-crowned monarch : such it is,

As are those dulcet sounds in break of day,

That creep into the dreaming bridegroom's ear,

And summon him to marriage. Now he goes,

With no less presence, \* but with much more

love,

Than young Alcides, when he did redeem

The virgin tribute paid by howling Troy

To the sea-monster ; I stand for sacrifice,

The rest aloof are the Dardanians wives, \*

With bleared visages, come forth to view

The issue of the exploit. Go, Hercules !

Live thou, I live :—With much much more dis-

may

I view the light, that thou that mak'st the fray.

*Music, whilst BASSANIO comments on the caskets to himself.*

## SONG.

1. Tell me, where is fancy + bred,  
Or in the heart, or in the head ?  
How begot, how nourished ?

*Reply.* 2. It is engender'd in the eyes,  
With gazing fed, and fancy dies  
In the cradle where it lies :

Let us all ring fancy's knell :  
I'll begin it,—Ding, dong, bell.

*All.* Ding, dong, bell.

*Bass.*—So may the outward shows be least themselves ;

The world is still deceiv'd with ornament.

In law, what plea so tainted and corrupt,

But, being season'd with a gracious voice,

Obscures the show of evil ? In religion,

What damned error, but some sober brow

Will bless it, and approve it with a text,

Hiding the grossness with fair ornament ?

'There is no vice so simple, but assumes

Some mark of virtue on his outward parts.

How many cowards, whose hearts are all as

false

As stairs of sand, wear yet upon their chins

The beards of Hercules and frowning Mars,

Who, inward search'd, have livers white as

milk ?

And these assume but valour's excrement,

To render them redoubted. Look on beauty,

And you shall see 'tis purchas'd by the weight ;

Which therein works a miracle in nature,

Making them lightest that wear most of it :

So are those crisped, § snaky golden locks,

Which make such wanton gambols with the

wind,

Upon supposed fairness, often known

\* Dignity of mien.

† Winning favour.

‡ Love.

§ Curled.

To be the dowry of a second head,  
The skull that bred them, in the sepulchre.  
This ornament is but the gilded \* shore  
To a most dangerous sea ; the brautious scurf  
Veiling an Indian beauty ; in a word,  
The seeming truth which cunning times put on  
To entrap the wisest. Therefore, thou gaudy

gold,

Hard food for Midas, I will none of thee :

Nor none of thee, thou pale and common drudge

'Tween man and man : but thou, thou meagre

lead,

Which rather threat'nest, than dost promise

ought,

Thy plainness moves me more than eloquence,

And here choose I ; Joy be the consequence !

*Por.* How all the other passions fleet to air,

As doubtful thoughts, and rash embrac'd de-

spair,

And shudd'ring fear, and green ey'd jealousy.

O love, be moderate, allay thy ecstasy,

In measure rain thy joy, scant this excess ;

I feel too much thy blessing, make it less,

For fear I surfeit !

*Bass.* What had I here ?

*[Opening the leaden casket.]*

Fair Portia's counterfeit ? What demi-god

Hath come so near creation ? Move these eyes ?

Or, whether, riding on the balls of mine,

Seem they in motion ? Here are sever'd lips

Parted with sugar breath ; so sweet a bar

Shoud sunder such sweet friends : Here in her

hairs

The painter plays the spider ; and hath woven

A golden mesh to entrap the hearts of men,

Faster than gnats in cobwebs : But her eyes,

How could he see to do them ? having made

one,

Methinks, it should have power to steal both

his,

And leave itself unfurnish'd : Yet look, how

far

The substance of my praise doth wrong this

shadow,

In underprizing it, so far this shadow

Doth lump behind the substance.—Here's the

scroll,

The continent and summary of my fortune.

You that choose not by the vain,

Chance as fair, and choose as true †

Since this fortune falls to you,

Be content and seek no new.

If you be well pleas'd with this,

And hold your fortune for your bliss,

Turn you where your lady is,

And claim her with a loving kiss.

A gentle scroll ;—Fair lady, by your leave ;

*[Kissing her.]*

I come by note, to give, and to receive.

Like one of two contending in a prize,

That thinks he hath done well in people's eyes,

Hearing applause, and universal shout,

Giddy in spirit, still gazing, in a doubt

Whether those peals of praise be his or no ;

So, thrice fair lady, stand I, even so ;

As doubtful whether what I see be true,

Until confirm'd, sign'd, ratified by you.

*Por.* You see me, lord Bassanio, where I

stand,

Such as I am : though for myself alone,

I would not be ambitious in my wish,

To wish myself much better ; yet, for you,

I would be trebled twenty times myself ;

A thousand times more fair, ten thousand times

More rich ;

Than only to stand high on your account,

I might in virtues, beauties, livings, friends,

Exceed account : but the full sum of me

Is sum of something ; which, to term in gross,

Is an unlesson'd civil, unschool'd, unpractis'd :

Happy in this, she is not yet so old

But she may learn ; and happier than this,

She is not bred so dull but she can learn ;

\* Treacherous.

† Likeness, portrait.

Happiest of all, is, that her gentle spirit  
Commits itself to your's to be directed,  
As from her lord, her governor, her king.  
Myself, and what is mine, to you, and your's  
Is now converted: but now I was the lord  
Of this fair mansion, master of my servants,  
Queen o'er myself; and even now, but now,  
Thus house, these servants, and this same my-  
self,  
Are your's, my lord; I give them with this  
ring,  
Which, when you part from, lose, or give away,  
Let it presage the ruin of your love.  
And be my vantage to exclaim on you.

*Bass.* Madam, you have bereft me of all  
words,  
Only my blood speaks to you in my veins:  
And there is such confusion in my powers,  
As, after some oration fairly spoke  
By a beloved prince, there doth appear  
Among the buzzing pleased multitude;  
Where every something, being blent\* together,  
Turns to a wild of nothing, save of joy,  
Express'd, and not express'd: But when this  
rings  
Parts from this finger, then parts life from  
hence;  
Oh! then he bold to say, Bassanio's dead.

*Ner.* My lord and lady, it is now our time,  
That have stood by, and seen our wishes pro-  
per,

To cry, good joy! Good joy, my lord and lady!  
*Gra.* My lord Bassanio, and my gentle lady,  
I wish you all the joy that you can wish;  
For I am sure, you can wish none from me:  
And, when your honours mean to solemnize  
The bargain of your faith, I do beseech you,  
Even at that time I may be married too.

*Bass.* With all my heart, so thou canst get a  
wife.

*Gra.* I thank your lordship; you have got me  
one.

My eyes, my lord, can look as swift as you's:  
You saw the mistress, I beheld the maid;  
You lov'd, I lov'd; for intermission  
No more pertains to me, my lord, than you.  
Your fortune stood upon the caskets there;  
And so did mine too, as the matter falls:  
For wooing here, until I sweat again;  
And swearing, till my very roof was dry  
With oaths of love: at last,—if promise last,—  
I got a promise of this fair one here,  
To have her love, provided that your fortune  
Achiev'd her mistress.

*Por.* Is this true, Nerissa?

*Ner.* Madam, it is, so you stand pleas'd  
withal.

*Bass.* And do you, Gratiano, mean good  
faith?

*Gra.* Yes, 'faith, my lord.

*Bass.* Our feast shall be much honour'd in  
your marriage.

*Gra.* We'll play with them, the first boy for a  
thousand ducats.

*Ner.* What, and stake down?

*Gra.* No; we shall ne'er win at that sport,  
and stake down.—

But who comes here? Lorenzo, and his infidel?  
What my old Venetian friend, Salerio?

*Enter LORENZO, JESSICA, and SALERIO.*

*Bass.* Lorenzo, and Salerio, welcome hither;  
If that the youth of my new interest here  
Have power to bid you welcome:—By your  
leave,

I bid my very friends and countrymen,  
Sweet Portia, welcome.

*Por.* So do I, my lord;

They are entirely welcome.

*Lor.* I thank your honour:—For my part,  
my lord,

My purpose was not to have seen you here;  
But meeting with Salerio by the way,

He did entreat me, past all saying nay,  
To come with him along.

*Saler.* I did, my lord,  
And I have reason for it. Signior Antonio  
Commends him to you.

[*Gives BASSANIO a letter.*]

*Bass.* Ere I open his letter,  
I pray you, tell me how my good friend doth.

*Saler.* Not sick, my lord, unless it be in mind;  
Nor well, unless in mind: his letter there  
Will show you his estate.

*Gra.* Nerissa, cheer you\* stranger; bid her  
welcome.

Your hand, Salerio; What's the news from  
Venice?

How doth that royal merchant, good Antonio?  
I know, he will be glad of our success;  
We are the Jasons, we have won the fleece.

*Saler.* Would you had won the fleece that he  
hath lost!

*Por.* There are some shrewd contents in your  
same paper,

That steal the colour from Bassanio's cheek:  
Some dear friend dead: else nothing in the  
Could turn so much the constitution [world  
Of any constant man. What, worse and worse?  
With leave, Bassanio; I am half myself,  
And I must freely have the half of any thing  
That this same paper brings you.

*Bass.* O sweet Portia,  
Here are a few of the unpleasant'st words,  
That ever blotted paper! Gentle lady,  
When I did first impart my love to you,  
I freely told you all the wealth I had  
Pan in my veins, I was a gentleman;  
And then I told you true: and yet, dear lady,  
Rating myself at nothing, you shall see  
How much I was a braggart; when I told you  
My state was nothing, I should then have told  
you

That I was worse than nothing; for, indeed,  
I have engag'd myself to a dear friend,  
Engag'd my friend to his mere enemy,  
To feed my means. Here is a letter, lady;  
The paper is the body of my friend,  
And every word in it a gaping wound,  
Issuing life-blood.—But is it true, Salerio?  
Have all his ventures fail'd? What, not one hit?  
From Tripolis, from Mexico, and England,  
From Lisbon, Barbary, and India?  
And not one vessel 'scape the dreadful touch  
Of merchant-marring rocks?

*Saler.* Not one, my lord.  
Besides, it should appear, that if he had  
The present money to discharge the Jew,  
He would not take it: Never did I know  
A creature, that did bear the shape of man,  
So keen and greedy to confound a man:  
He plies the duke at morning and at night;  
And doth impeach the freedom of the state,  
If they deny him justice: twenty merchants,  
The duke himself, and the magnificoes\*  
Of greatest port, have all persuaded with him;  
But none can drive him from the cruel'st plea  
Of forfeiture, of justice, and his bond.

*Jes.* When I was with him I have heard  
him swear,

To Tubal and to Chus, his countrymen,  
That he would rather have Antonio's flesh.  
Than twenty times the value of the sum  
That he did owe him: and I know, my lord,  
If law, authority, and power deny not,  
It will go hard with poor Antonio.

*Por.* Is it your dear friend, that is thus in  
trouble?

*Bass.* The dearest friend to me, the kindest  
man,

The best condition'd and unwearied spirit  
In doing courtesies; and one in whom  
The ancient Roman honour more appears,  
Than any that draws breath in Italy.

*Por.* What sum owes he the Jew?

*Bass.* For me, three thousand ducats.

\* Breasted.

+ Pause, delay.

• The chief of men.

*Por.* What, no more ?  
 Pay him six thousand, and deface the bond ;  
 Double six thousand, and then treble that,  
 Before a friend of this description  
 Shall lose a hair through Bassanio's fault.  
 First go with me to church, and call me wife ;  
 And then away to Venice, to your friend ;  
 For never shall you lie by Portia's side  
 With an unquiet soul. You shall have gold  
 To pay the petty debt twenty times over ;  
 When it is paid, bring your true friend along :  
 My maid Nerissa, and myself, mean time,  
 Will live as maids and widows. Come, away ;  
 For you shall hence upon your wedding-day ;  
 Bid your friends welcome, show a merry cheer.\*  
 Since you are dear bought, I will love you dear.—  
 But let me hear the letter of your friend.

*Bass.* [*Reads.*] *Sweet Bassanio, my ships  
 have all miscarried, my creditors grow cruel,  
 my estate is very low, my bond to the Jew is  
 forfeit, and since, in paying it, it is impos-  
 sible I should live, all debts are cleared be-  
 tween you and I, if I might but see you at  
 my death ; notwithstanding, use your plea-  
 sure if your love do not persuade you to come,  
 let not my letter.*

*Por.* O love, despatch all business, and be gone.

*Bass.* Since I have your good leave to go away,

I will make haste ; but till I come again,  
 No bed shall e'er be guilty of my stay,  
 No rest be interposer 'twixt us twain.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.—Venice.—A Street.

*Enter SHYLOCK, BASSANIO, ANTONIO, AND  
 JAILER*

*Shy.* Jailer, look to him ;—Tell not me mercy ;—

This is the fool that lent out money gratis ;—  
 Jailer, look to him.

*Ant.* Hear me yet, good Shylock.

*Shy.* I'll have my bond ; speak not against my bond ;

I have sworn an oath that I will have my bond ;  
 Thou call'st me dog, before thou hadst a cause :

But, since I am a dog, beware my fangs ;  
 The duke shall grant me justice.—I do wonder,  
 Thou naughty jailer, that thou art so fond  
 To come abroad with him at his request.

*Ant.* I pray thee, hear me speak.

*Shy.* I'll have my bond ; I will not hear thee speak :

I'll have my bond ; and therefore speak no more.

I'll not be made a soft and dull-eyed fool,  
 To shake the head, relent, and sigh and yield  
 To Christian intercessors. Follow not ;  
 I'll have no speaking ; I will have my bond.

[*Exit SHYLOCK.*]

*Salan.* It is the most impenetrable cur,  
 That ever kept with men.

*Ant.* Let him alone ;

I'll follow him no more with bootless prayers.  
 He seeks my life ; his reason well I know ;  
 I oft deliver'd from his forfeitures  
 Many that have at times made moan to me ;  
 Therefore he hates me.

*Salan.* I am sure, the duke

Will never grant this forfeiture to hold.

*Ant.* The duke cannot deny the course of  
 For the commodity that strangers have [law ;  
 With us in Venice, if it be denied,  
 With much unpeace the justice of the state ;  
 Since that the trade and profit of the city  
 Consisteth of all nations. Therefore, go :  
 These griefs and losses have so 'bated me,  
 That I shall hardly spare a pound of flesh  
 To-morrow to my bloody creditor.—

\* Face.

\* English.

Well, jailer, on :—Pray God, Bassanio come  
 To see me pay his debt, and then I care not !  
 [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV.—Belmont.—A Room in Portia's House.

*Enter PORTIA, NERISSA, LORENZO, JESSICA  
 and BALTHAZAR.*

*Lor.* Madam, although I speak it in your presence,

You have a noble and a true conceit  
 Of god-like amity ; which appears most strongly  
 In bearing thus the absence of your lord.

But, if you knew to whom you show this honour,

How true a gentlemen you send relief,  
 How dear a lover of my lord your husband,  
 I know, you would be prouder of the work,  
 Than customary bounty can enforce you.

*Por.* I never did repent for doing good,  
 Nor shall not now : for in companions  
 That do converse and waste the time together,  
 Whose souls do bear an equal yoke of love,  
 There must be needs a like proportion  
 Of lineaments, of manners, and of spirit ;

Which makes me think that this Antonio,  
 Being the bosom lover of my lord,  
 Must needs be like my lord : If it be so,  
 How little is the cost I have bestow'd,  
 In purchasing the semblance of my soul  
 From out the state of hellish cruelty !  
 This comes too near the praising of myself ;  
 Therefore, no more of it : bear other things.—  
 Lorenzo, I commit into your hands

The husbandry and manage of my house,  
 Until my lord's return : for mine own part,  
 I have toward heaven breath'd a secret vow  
 To live in prayer and contemplation,  
 Only attended by Nerissa here,

Until her husband and my lord's return :  
 There is a monastery two miles off,  
 And there we will abide. I do desire you,  
 Not to deny this imposition ;  
 The which my love, and some necessity,  
 Now lays upon you.

*Lor.* Madam, with all my heart ;  
 I shall obey you in all fair commands.

*Por.* My people do already know my mind,  
 And will acknowledge you and Jessica  
 In place of lord Bassanio and myself.  
 So fare you well, till we shall meet again.

*Lor.* Fair thoughts, and happy hours attend on you.

*Jes.* I wish your ladyship all heart's content.

*Por.* I thank you for your wish, and am well pleas'd

To wish it back on you : fare you well, Jessica.—[*Exeunt JESSICA and LORENZO.*]

Now, Balthazar,  
 As I have ever found thee honest, true,  
 So let me find thee still : Take this same letter,  
 And use thou all the endeavour of a man,  
 In speed to Padua : see thou render this  
 Into my cousin's hand, doctor Bellario ;  
 And look, what notes and garments he doth  
 give thee,

Bring them, I pray thee, with imagin'd speed  
 Unto the tranect, to the common ferry  
 Which trades to Venice :—waste no time in words,

But get thee gone : I shall be there before thee.

*Balth.* Madam, I go with all convenient speed. [*Exit.*]

*Por.* Come on, Nerissa ; I have work in hand  
 That you yet know not of : we'll see our husbands,  
 Before they think of us.

*Ner.* Shall they see us ?

*Por.* They shall, Nerissa ; but in such a habit,  
 That they shall think we are accomplished  
 With what we lack. I'll hold thee any wager,  
 When we are both account'd like young men,  
 I'll prove the prettier fellow of the two,  
 And wear my dagger with a braver grace :

And speak, between the change of man and boy,  
With a reed voice; and turn two mincing steps  
Into a manly stride; and speak of traws,  
Like a true bragging youth; and tell quaint lies,  
How honourable ladies sought my love;  
Which I denying, they fell sick and died;  
I could not do with all, - then I'll repent,  
And wish, for all that, that I had not kill'd them:  
And twenty of these puny lies I'll tell,  
That men shall swear, I have discontinued  
school.

Above a twelvemonth:—I have within my mind  
A thousand raw tricks of these bragging Jacks,  
Which I will practise.

*Ner.* Why, shall we turn to men?

*Por.* He! what a question's that,  
If thou wert near a lewd interpreter?  
But come, I'll tell thee all my whole device  
When I am in my coach, which stays for us  
At the park gate; and therefore haste away,  
For we must measure twenty miles to-day.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—The same.—A Garden.

*Enter LAUNCELOT and JESSICA.*

*Laun.* Yes, truly:—for, look you, the sins of  
the father are to be laid upon the children;  
therefore, I promise you, I fear you. I was  
always plain with you, and so now I speak my  
agitation of the matter: Therefore, be of good  
cheer, for, truly, I think, you are damn'd.  
There is but one hope in it that can do you any  
good; and that is but a kind of bastard hope  
neither.

*Jes.* And what hope is that, I pray thee?

*Laun.* Marry, you may partly hope that your  
father got you not, that you are not the Jew's  
daughter.

*Jes.* That were a kind of bastard hope, indeed,  
so the sins of my mother should be visited  
upon me.

*Laun.* Truly then I fear you are damn'd both  
by father and mother: thus when I shun Scizik,  
your father, I fall into Charybdis, your mother;  
well, you are gone both ways.

*Jes.* I shall be saved by my husband; he hath  
made me a Christian.

*Laun.* Truly the more to blame he: we were  
Christians enough before; e'en as many as  
could well live, one by another: This making  
of Christians will raise the price of hogs; if we  
grow all to be pork-eaters, we shall not shortly  
have a rasher on the coals for money.

*Enter LORENZO.*

*Jes.* I'll tell my husband, Launcelot, what  
you say; here he comes.

*Lor.* I shall grow jealous of you shortly,  
Launcelot, if you thus get my wife into corners.  
*Jes.* Nay, you need not fear us, Lorenzo;  
Launcelot and I are out: he tells me flatly, there  
is no mercy for me in heaven, because I am a  
Jew's daughter; and he says you are no good  
member of the commonwealth; for, in converting  
Jews to Christians, you raise the price of pork.

*Lor.* I shall answer that better to the com-  
monwealth, than you can the getting up of the  
negro's belly: the Moor is with child by you,  
Launcelot.

*Laun.* It is much, that the Moor should be  
more than reason; but if she be less than an  
honest woman, she is, indeed, more than I took  
her for.

*Lor.* How every fool can play upon the word!  
I think, the best grace of wit will shortly turn  
into silence; and discourse grow commendable  
in none only but patriots.—Go in, sirrah; bid  
them prepare for dinner.

*Laun.* That is done, Sir; they have all sto-  
machs.

*Lor.* Goodly lord, what a wit-snapper are  
you! then bid them prepare dinner.

*Laun.* That is done too, Sir; only, cover is  
set.

*Lor.* Will you cover then, Sir?

*Laun.* Not so, Sir, neither; I know my duty.

*Lor.* Yet more quarrelling with occasion!  
Wilt thou show the whole wealth of thy wit in  
an instant? I pray thee, understand a plain  
man in his plain meaning; go to thy fellows;  
bid them cover the table, serve in the meat,  
and we will come in to dinner.

*Laun.* For the table, Sir, it shall be served  
in; for the meat, Sir, it shall be covered: for  
your coming in to dinner, Sir, why, let it be as  
humours and conceits shall govern.

[*Exit LAUNCELOT.*]

*Lor.* O dear discretion, how his woids are  
suited!

The fool hath planted in his memory  
An army of good words; And I do know  
A many fools, that stand in better place,  
Garnish'd like him, that for a tricky word  
Defy the matter. How cheer'st thou, Jessica?  
And now, good sweet, say thy opinion,  
How dost thou like the lord Bassanio's wife?

*Jes.* Past all expressing: It is very meet,  
The lord Bassanio live an upright life;  
For, having such a blessing in his lady,  
He finds the joys of heaven here on earth:  
And, if on earth he do not mean it, it  
is reason he should never come to heaven.

Why, if two gods should play some heavenly  
match,

And on the wager lay two earthly women,  
And Portia one, there must be something else  
Pawn'd with the other; for the poor rude world  
Hath not her fellow.

*Lor.* Even such a husband  
Hast thou of me, as she is for a wife.

*Jes.* Nay, but ask my opinion too of that.

*Lor.* I will anon; first, let us go to dinner.

*Jes.* Nay, let me praise you, while I have a  
stomach.

*Lor.* No, pray thee, let it serve for table-  
talk;

Then bowsow'er thou speak'st, 'mong other  
things

I shall digest it.

*Jes.* Well, I'll set you forth. [*Exeunt.*]

#### ACT IV.

SCENE I.—Venice.—A Court of Justice.

*Enter the DUKE, the Magnificoes, ANTONIO,  
BASSANIO, GRATIANO, SALARINO, SALANIO,  
and others.*

*Duke.* What, is Antonio here?

*Ant.* Ready, so please your grace.

*Duke.* I am sorry for thee; thou art come  
to answer.

A stony adversary, an inhuman wretch  
Uncapable of pity, void and empty  
From any dram of mercy.

*Ant.* I have heard,  
Your grace hath ta'en great pains to qualify  
His rigorous course: but since he stands ob-  
durate,

And that no lawful means can carry me  
Out of his envy's reach, I do oppose  
My patience to his fury; and am arm'd  
To suffer with a quietness of spirit,  
The very tyranny and rage of his.

*Duke.* Go one, and call the Jew into the  
court.

*Salan.* He's ready at the door: he comes, my  
lord.

*Enter SHYLOCK.*

*Duke.* Make room, and let him stand before  
our face.—

Shylock, the world thinks, and I think so too,  
That thou but lead'st this fashion of thy malice  
To the last hour of act; and then, 'tis thought,

Thou'lt show thy mercy, and remorse,\* more  
strange

Than is thy strange apparent† cruelty :  
And where ‡ thou now exact'st the penalty,  
(Which is a pound of this poor merchant's  
flesh,)

Thou wilt not only loose the forfeiture,  
But, touch'd with human gentleness and love,  
Forgive a moiety of the principal,  
Glancing an eye of pity on his losses,  
That have of late so huddled on his back ;  
Enough to press a royal merchant down,  
And pluck commiseration of his state  
From brassy bosoms, and tough hearts of flint,  
From stubborn Turks and Tartars, never train'd  
To offices of tender courtesy.

We all expect a gentle answer, Jew.

*Shy.* I have possess'd your grace of what I  
purpose ;

And by our holy Sabbath have I sworn,  
To have the due and forfeit of my bond :  
If you deny it, let the danger light  
Upon your charter, and your city's freedom.  
You'll ask me, why I rather choose to have  
A weight of carrion flesh, than to receive  
Three thousand ducats : I'll not answer that ;  
But say, it is my humour : † Is it answer'd ?  
What if my house be troubled with a rat,  
And I be pleas'd to give ten thousand ducats  
To have it baned ? What, are you answer'd yet ?  
Some men there are, love not a gaping pig ;  
Some, that are mad, if they behold a cat ;  
And others, when the bagpipe swells i'th nose,  
Cannot contain their urine : For affection,  
Mistress of passion, sways it to the mood  
Of what it likes, or loathes : Now, for your an-  
swer :

As there is no firm reason to be render'd,  
Why he cannot abide a gaping \* pig ;  
Why he, a harmless necessary cat ;  
Why he, a swollen bagpipe ; but of force  
Must yield to such inevitable shame,  
As to offend, himself being offended ;  
So can I give no reason, nor I will not,  
More than a lodg'd hate, and a certain loathing,  
I bear Antonio, that I follow thus  
A losing suit against him. Are you answer'd ?

*Bass.* This is no answer, thou unfeeling man,  
To excuse the current of thy cruelty.

*Shy.* I am not bound to please thee with my  
answer.

*Bass.* Do all men kill the things they do not  
love ?

*Shy.* Hates any man the thing he would not  
kill ?

*Bass.* Every offence is not a hate at first.

*Shy.* What, would'st thou have a serpent  
stung thee twice ?

*Ant.* I pray you, think you question \*\* with  
the Jew :

You may as well go stand upon the beach,  
And bid the main flood bate his usual height ;  
You may as well use question with the wolf,  
Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb ;  
You may as well forbid the mountain pines  
To wag their high tops, and to make no noise,  
When they are fretted with the gusts of heaven ;  
You may as well do any thing most hard,  
As seek to soften that (than which what's  
harder ?)

His Jewish heart :—Therefore, I do beseech you,  
Make no more offers, use no further means,  
But, with all brief and plain conveyance,  
Let me have judgment, and the Jew his will.

*Bass.* For thy three thousand ducats here is  
six.

*Shy.* If every ducat in six thousand ducats,  
Were in six parts, and every part a ducat,  
I would not draw them, I would have my bond.

*Duke.* How shall thou hope for mercy, reu-  
d'ring none ?

\* Pity.

† Particular fancy.

‡ Seeming.

§ Prejudice

\*\* Converse

‡ Whereas.

¶ Crying.

*Shy.* What judgment shall I dread, doing no  
wrong ?

You have among you many a purchas'd slave,  
Which, like your asses, and your dogs, and  
mules,

You use in abject and in slavish part,  
Because you bought them :—Shall I say to you,  
Let them be free, many them to your heirs ?  
Why sweat they under loadens ? let them beds  
Be made as soft as your's, and let them palates  
Be season'd with such viands ? You will an-  
swer,

The slaves are ours :—So do I answer you :  
The pound of flesh, which I demand of him,  
Is dearly bought, is mine, and I will have it :  
If you deny me, sue upon your law !

There is no force in the decrees of Venice :  
I stand for judgment : answer, shall I have it ?

*Duke.* Upon my power, I may dismiss this  
count,

Unless Bellario, a learned doctor,  
Whom I have sent for to determine this,  
Come here to-day.

*Salari.* My lord, here stays without  
A messenger with letters from the doctor,  
New come from Padua.

*Duke.* Bring us the letters ; Call the mes-  
senger.

*Bass.* Good cheer, Antonio ! What, man,  
courage yet !

The Jew shall have my flesh, blood, bones, and  
all,

Ere thou shalt lose for me one drop of blood.

*Ant.* I am a taunted wether of the flock,  
Meetest for death ; the weakest kind of fruit  
Drops earliest to the ground, and so let me .  
You cannot better be employ'd, Bassanio,  
Than to live still, and write mine epitaph.

*Enter NERISSA, dressed like a lawyer's clerk.*

*Duke.* Came you from Padua, from Bellario ?

*Ner.* From both, my lord : Bellario greets  
your grace. [Presents a letter

*Bass.* Why dost thou what thy knife so ear-  
nestly ?

*Shy.* To cut the forfeiture from that bankrupt  
there.

*Gra.* Not on thy sole, but on thy soul, harsh  
Jew,

Thou mak'st thy knife keen : but no metal can,  
No, not the hangman's ax, bear half the keen-  
ness

Of thy sharp envy. Can no prayers pierce thee ?

*Shy.* No, none that thou hast wit enough to  
make.

*Gra.* Oh ! be thou damn'd, inexorable dog !  
And for thy life let justice be accus'd.

Thou almost mak'st me waver in my faith,  
To hold opinion with Pythagoras,

That souls of animals infuse themselves  
Into the trunks of men : thy carrish spirit,  
Govern'd a wolf ; who, hang'd for human  
slaughter,

Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet,  
And, while thou lay'st in thy unhallow'd dam,  
Infus'd itself in thee ; for thy desires

Are wolfish, bloody, starv'd, and ravenous. ●

*Shy.* 'Till thou can'st rail the seal from off my  
bond,

Thou but offend'st thy lungs to speak so loud :  
Repair thy wit, good youth, or it will fall  
To careless ruin.—I stand here for law.

*Duke.* This letter from Bellario doth com-  
mend

A young and learned doctor to our court :—  
Where is he ?

*Ner.* He attendeth here hard by,  
To know your answer, whether you'll admit him.

*Duke.* With all my heart :—some three or  
four of you,

Go, give him courteous conduct to this place.—  
Meau time, the court shall hear Bellario's letter.

[Clerk reads.] Your grace shall under-  
stand, that, at the receipt of your letter, I am  
very sick ; but in the instant that your mes-

semer came, in loving visitation was with me a young doctor of Rome, his name is Balthazar: I acquainted him with the cause in controversy between the Jew and Antonio the merchant: he furnished me with many books together: he is furnish'd with my opinion; which better'd with his own learning, (the greatness whereof I cannot enough commend,) comes with him, at my importunity, to fill up your grace's request in my stead. I beseech you, let this lack of years be no impediment to let him lack a reverend estimation; for I never knew so young a body with so old a head. I leave him to your gracious acceptance, whose trial shall better publish his commendation.

Duke. You hear the learn'd Bellario, what he writes.  
And here, I take it, is the doctor come.—

Enter PORTIA, dressed like a Doctor of laws.  
Give me your hand: Came you from old Bellario?

Por. I did, my lord.

Duke. You are welcome: take your place.

Are you acquainted with the difference?

That holds this present question in the court?

Por. I am inform'd thoroughly of the cause, Which is the merchant here? and which the Jew?

Duke. Antonio and old Shylock both stand forth.

Por. Is your name Shylock?

Shy. Shylock is my name.

Por. Of a strange nature is the suit you follow; Yet in such rule, that the Venetian law Cannot impugn you, as you do proceed.— You stand within his danger, do you not?

[To ANTONIO.]

Ant. Ay, so he says.

Por. Do you confess the bond?

Ant. I do.

Por. Then must the Jew be merciful.

Shy. On what compulsion must I? tell me that.

Por. The quality of mercy is not strain'd; It droppeth, as the gentle rain from heaven Upon the place beneath: it is twice bless'd; It blessing him that gives, and him that takes: 'Tis mightiest in the mightiest; it becomes The throned monarch better than his crown: His sceptre shows the force of temporal power, The attribute to awe and majesty, Wherein doth sit the dread and fear of kings: But mercy is above this sceptred sway, It is enthroned in the hearts of kings, It is an attribute to God himself; And earthly power doth then show likest God's, When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, Jew, Though justice be thy plea, consider this,— That, in the course of justice, none of us Should see salvation: we do pray for mercy; And that same prayer doth teach us all to render The deeds of mercy. I have spoke thus much, To mitigate the justice of thy plea; Which if thou follow, this strict court of Venice Must needs give sentence 'gainst the merchant there.

Shy. My deeds upon my head! I crave the The penalty and forfeit of my bond. [Law]

Por. Is he not able to discharge the money?

Bass. Yes, here I tender it for him in the court;

Yea, twice the sum: if that will not suffice, I will be bound to pay it ten times o'er, On forfeit of my hands, my head, my heart: If this will not suffice, it must appear That malice bears down truth. And I beseech you,

Wrest once the law to your authority; To do a great right, do a little wrong; And curb this cruel devil of his will.

• Rough or controul,

Por. It must not be; there is no power in Can alter a decree established: [Venice.]

'Twill be recorded for a precedent; And many an error, by the same example, Will rush into the state: it cannot be.

Shy. A Daniel come to judgment! yea, a Daniel!—

O wise young judge, how do I honour thee!

Por. I pray you, let me look upon the bond.

Shy. Here 'tis, most reverend doctor, here it is.

Por. Shylock, there's thrice thy money offer'd thee.

Shy. An oath, an oath, I have an oath in heaven:

Shall I lay perjury upon my soul?

No, not for Venice.

Por. Why, this bond is forfeit; And lawfully, by this, the Jew may claim A pound of flesh, to be by him cut off Nearest the merchant's heart:—Be merciful; Take thrice thy money; bid me tear the bond.

Shy. When it is paid according to the tenor.— It doth appear, you are a worthy judge;

You know the law, your exposition Hath been most sound: I charge you by the law,

Whereof you are a well-deserving pillar,

Proceed to judgment: by my soul I swear,

I here is no power in the tongue of man

To alter me: I stay here on my bond.

Ant. Most heartily I do beseech the court

To give the judgment.

Por. Why then, thus it is,

You must prepare your bosom for his knife:

Shy. O noble judge! O excellent young man!

Por. For the intent and purpose of the law

Hath full relation to the penalty,

Which here appeareth due upon the bond.

Shy. 'Tis very true; O wise and upright judge!

How much more elder art thou than thy looks!

Por. Therefore, lay bare your bosom.

Shy. Ay, his breast:

So says the bond;—Doth it not, noble judge?—

Nearest his heart, those are the very words.

Por. It is so. Are there balance here, to weigh the flesh.

Shy. I have them ready.

Por. Have by some surgeon, Shylock, on your charge,

To stop his wounds, lest he do bleed to death.

Shy. Is it so nominated in the bond?

Por. It is not so express'd; But what of that?

'Twere good you do so much for charity.

Shy. I cannot find it; 'tis not in the bond.

Por. Come, merchant, have you any thing to say?

Ant. But little; I am arm'd, and well prepared.—

Give me your hand, Bassanio; fare you well!

Grieve not that I am fallen to this for you;

For herein fortune shows herself more kind

'Than is her custom: it is still her use,

To let the wretched man outlive his wealth,

To view with hollow eye, and wrinkled brow,

An age of poverty; from which lingering pe-

Of such a misery doth she cut me off. [Unce]

Commend me to your honourable wife:

Tell her the process of Antonio's end,

Say, how I lov'd you, speak me fair in death;

And, when the tale is told, bid her be judge,

Whether Bassanio had not once a love.

Repent not you that you shall lose your friend,

For, if the Jew do but cut deep enough,

I'll pay it instantly, with all my heart.

Bass. Antonio, I am married to a wife,

Which is as dear to me as life itself;

But life itself, my wife, and all the world,

Are not with me esteem'd above thy life:

I would lose all, ay, sacrifice them all

Here to this devil, to deliver you.

Por. Your wife would give you little thanks for that,

If she were by to hear you make the offer.



*Gra.* I have a wife, whom, I protest, I love ; I would she were in heaven, so she could entreat some power to change this curriish Jew. Nor, 'Tis well you offer it behind her back ; The wish would make else an unquiet house.

*Shy.* These be the Christian husbands : I have a daughter—

'Would, any of the stock of Barrabas Had been her husband, rather than a Christian !

*[Aside.]* We trifle time ; I pray thee, pursue sentence.

*Por.* A pound of that same merchant's flesh is time ;

The court awards it, and the law doth give it.

*Shy.* Most rightful judge !

*Por.* And you must cut this flesh from off his breast ;

The law allows it, and the court awards it.

*Shy.* Most learned judge !—A sentence ; come, prepare.

*Por.* Tarry a little ;—there is something else.—This bond doth give thee here no jot of blood ; The words expressly are, a pound of flesh ;

Take then thy bond, take thou thy pound of flesh ;

But, in the cutting it, if thou dost shed One drop of Christian blood, thy lands and goods

Are, by the laws of Venice, confiscate Unto the state of Venice.

*Gra.* O upright judge !—Mark, Jew ;—O learned judge !

*Shy.* Is that the law ?

*Por.* Thyself shalt see the act : For, as thou urgest justice, be assur'd,

Thou shalt have justice more than thou desir'st.

*Gra.* O learned judge !—Mark, Jew ;—a learned judge !

*Shy.* I take this offer then ;—pay the bond thrice,

And let the Christian go.

*Bass.* Here is the money.

*Por.* Soft ! *[haste ;—]* The Jew shall have all justice ;—soft !—no

He shall have nothing but the penalty.

*Gra.* O Jew ! an upright judge, a learned judge !

*Por.* Therefore, prepare thee to cut off the flesh.

Shed thou no blood ; nor cut thou less, nor more,

But just a pound of flesh : if thou tak'st more, Or less, than a just pound,—be it but so much

As nakes it light, or heavy, in the substance, Or the division of the twentieth part

Of one poor scruple ; nay, if the scale do turn But in the estimation of a hair,—

Thou diest, and all thy goods are confiscate.

*Gra.* A second Daniel, a Daniel, Jew ! Now, unfeild, I have thee on the hip.

*Por.* Why doth the Jew pause ? take the forfeiture.

*Shy.* Give me my principal, and let me go.

*Bass.* I have it ready for thee ; here it is.

*Por.* He hath refus'd it in the open court ; He shall have merely justice and his bond.

*Gra.* A Daniel, still say I ; a second Daniel !—I thank thee, Jew, for teaching me that word.

*Shy.* Shall I not have barely my principal ?

*Por.* Thou shalt have nothing but the forfeiture.

To be so taken at thy peril, Jew.

*Shy.* Why then the devil give him good of it ! I'll stay no longer question.

*Por.* Tarry, Jew ; The law hath yet another hold on you.

It is enacted in the laws of Venice,— If it be prov'd against an alien,

That by direct or indirect attempts, He seek the life of any citizen,

The party, 'gainst the which he doth contrive, Shall seize one half his goods ; the other half Comes to the privy coffer of the state ;

And the offender's life lies in the mercy Of the duke only, 'gainst all other voice.

In which predicament, I say, thou stand'st.

For it appears by manifest proceeding, That indirectly, and directly too,

Thou hast contriv'd against the very life Of the defendant, and thou hast incur'd

The danger formerly by me rehears'd.

Down, therefore, and beg mercy of the duke.

*Gra.* Beg, that thou may'st have leave to hang thyself.

And yet, thy wealth being forfeit to the state, Thou hast not left the value of a cord :

Therefore, thou must be hang'd at the state's charge.

*Duke.* That thou shalt see the difference of our spirit,

I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it : For half thy wealth, it is Antonio's ;

The other half comes to the general state, Which innocencies may drive unto a mine.

*Por.* Ay, for the state ; not for Antonio.

*Shy.* Nay, take my life and all, pardon not that :

You take my house, when you do take the prop That doth sustain my house ; you take my life,

When you do take the means whereby I live.

*Por.* What mercy can you render him, Antonio ?

*Gra.* A halter gratis, nothing else ; for God's sake.

*Ant.* So please my lord the duke, and all the court,

To quit the fine for one half of his goods ; I am content, so he will let me have

The other half in use,—to render it, Upon his death, unto the gentleman

That lately stole his daughter : Two things provided more,—That, for this favour,

He presently become a Christian ; The other, that he do record a gift,

Here in the court, of all he does possess'd, Unto his son Lorenzo and his daughter.

*Duke.* He shall do this ; or else I do retract The pardon, that I late pronounced here.

*Por.* Art thou contented, Jew, what dost thou say ?

*Shy.* I am content.

*Por.* Clerk, draw a deed of gift.

*Shy.* I pray you, give me leave to go from hence ;

I am not well ; send the deed after me, And I will sign it.

*Duke.* Get thee gone, but do it.

*Gra.* In christening thou shalt have two god-fathers ;

Had I been judge, thou should'st have had ten more.

To bring thee to the gallows, not the font.

*[Exit SHYLOCK.]*

*Duke.* Sir, I entreat you home with me to dinner.

*Por.* I humbly do desire your grace of pardon ; I must away this night toward Padua,

And it is meet, I presently set forth.

*Duke.* I am sorry, that your leisure serves you not.

Antonio, gratify this gentleman ; For, in my mind, you are much bound to him.

*[Reënter DUKE, MAGNIFICENT, and TRAM.]*

*Bass.* Most worthy gentleman, I and my friend,

Have, by your wisdom, been this day acquitted Of grievous penalties ; in lieu whereof,

Three thousand ducats, due unto the Jew, We freely cope your courteous pains withal.

*Ant.* And stand indebted, over and above, In love and service to you evermore.

*Por.* He is well paid, that is well satisfied ; And I, delivering you, am satisfied ;

And therein do account myself well paid ; My mind was never yet more mercenary ;

I pray you, know me, when we meet again ; I wish you well, and so I take my leave.

*Bass.* Dear Sir, of force I must attempt you further ;

Take some remembrance of us, as a tribute,  
Not as a fee: grant me two things, I pray  
you,

Not to deny me, and to pardon me.

*Por.* You press me far, and therefore I will  
yield.

Give me your gloves, I'll wear them for your  
sake;

And, for your love, I'll take this ring from  
you—

Do not draw back your hand; I'll take no  
more;

And you in love shall not deny me this.

*Bass.* This ring, good Sir,—alas, it is a trifle,  
I will not shame myself to give you this.

*Por.* I will have nothing else but only this;  
And now, methinks, I have a mind to it.

*Bass.* There's more depends on this, than on  
the value.

The dearest ring in Venice will I give you,

And find it out by proclamation;

Only for this, I pray you, pardon me.

*Por.* I see, Sir, you are liberal in offers:  
You taught me first to beg; and now, methinks,  
You teach me how a beggar should be answer'd.

*Bass.* Good Sir, this ring was given me by  
my wife,

And, when she put it on, she made me vow,  
That I should neither sell, nor give, nor lose it.

*Por.* That 'cause serves many men to save  
their gills.

And if your wife be not a mad woman,  
And know how well I have deserv'd this ring,

She would not hold out enemy for ever,  
For giving it to me. Well, peace be with you!

[*Exit* PORTIA AND NERISSA.  
*Ant.* My lord Bassanio, let him have the  
ring;

Let his deservings, and my love withal,  
Be valued 'gainst your wife's commandment.

*Bass.* Go, Gratiano, run and overtake him,  
Give him the ring; and bring him, if thou  
can'st,

Unto Antonio's house:—away, make haste.

[*Exit* GRATIANO.  
Come, you and I will thither presently;  
And in the morning early will we both  
Fly toward Belmont: Come, Antonio.] [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II.—The same.—A Street.

*Enter* PORTIA AND NERISSA.

*Por.* Inquire the Jew's house out, give him  
this deed,

And let him sign it; we'll away to-night,

And be a day before our husbands home:

This deed will be well welcome to Lorenzo.

*Enter* GRATIANO.

*Gra.* Fair Sir, you are well overtaken:  
My lord Bassanio, upon more advice,  
Hath sent you here this ring, and doth entreat  
Your company at dinner.

*Por.* That cannot be:

This ring I do accept most thankfully,  
And so, I pray you, tell him: Furthermore,

I pray you, show my youth old Shylock's  
house.

*Gra.* That will I do.

*Ner.* Sir, I would speak with you:—

I'll see if I can get my husband's ring,  
[*To* PORTIA.

Which I did make him swear to keep for ever.  
*Por.* Thou may'st, I warrant: We shall have  
old swearing.

That they did give the rings away to men;  
But we'll outface them, and outswear them too.

Away, make haste; thou know'st where I will  
tarry.

*Ner.* Come, good Sir, will you show me to  
this house? [*Exit.*]

## ACT V

SCENE I.—Belmont.—Avenue to PORTIA'S  
House.

*Enter* LORENZO AND JESSICA.

*Lor.* The moon shines bright:—in such a  
night as this,

When the sweet wind did gently kiss the trees,  
And they did make no noise; in such a night,  
Troilus, methinks, mounted the Trojan walls,  
And sigh'd his soul toward the Grecian tents,  
Where Cressid lay that night.

*Jes.* In such a night,  
Did Thisbe fearfully o'ertrip the dew;  
And saw the lion's shadow ere himself,  
And ran dismay'd away.

*Lor.* In such a night,  
Stood Dido with a willow in her hand  
Upon the wild sea-banks, and wav'd her love  
To come again to Carthage.

*Jes.* In such a night,  
Medea gather'd the enchanted herbs  
That did renew old Æson.

*Lor.* In such a night,  
Did Jessica steal from the wealthy Jew:  
And with an unthought love did run from Venice  
As far as Belmont.

*Jes.* And in such a night,  
Did young Lorenzo swear he lov'd her well;  
Stealing her soul with many vows of faith,  
And ne'er a true one.

*Lor.* And in such a night,  
Did pretty Jessica, like a little shrew,  
Slander her love and he forgave it her.

*Jes.* I would out-night you, did no body  
come:

But, hark, I hear the footing of a man.

*Enter* STEPHANO.

*Lor.* Who comes so fast in silence of the  
night?

*Steph.* A friend.

*Lor.* A friend? what friend? your name, I  
pray you, friend?

*Steph.* Stephano is my name; and I bring  
word,

My mistress will before the break of day  
Be here at Belmont: she doth stray about  
By holy crosses, where she kneels and prays  
For happy wedlock hours.

*Lor.* Who comes with her?

*Steph.* None, but a holy hermit, and her  
maid.

I pray you, is my master yet return'd?

*Lor.* He is not, nor we have not heard from  
him.—

But go we in, I pray thee, Jessica,  
And ceremoniously let us prepare  
Some welcome for the mistress of the house.

*Enter* LAUNCELOT.

*Laun.* Solà, solà, wo ha, ho, solà, solà!

*Lor.* Who calls?

*Laun.* Solà! did you see master Lorenzo, and  
mistress Lorenzo! solà, solà!

*Lor.* Leave hollaing, man; here.

*Laun.* Solà! where? where?

*Lor.* Here.

*Laun.* Tell him, there's a post come from my  
master, with his horn full of good news; my  
master will be here ere morning. [*Exit.*]

*Lor.* Sweet soul, let's in, and there expect  
their coming.

And yet no matter.—Why should we go in?

My friend Stephano, signify, I pray you,

Within the house, your mistress is at hand;

And bring your music forth into the air.—

[*Exit* STEPHANO.

How sweet the moonlight sleeps upon this  
bank!

Here will we sit, and let the sounds of music  
Creep in our ears; soft stillness, and the night,  
Become the touches of sweet harmony.

Sit, Jessica: Look, how the floor of heaven

Is thick inlaid with patines \* of bright gold ;  
There's not the smallest orb, which thou be-  
hold'st,

But in his motion like an angel sings,  
Still quivering to the young-ey'd cherubims :  
Such harmony is in immortal souls ;  
But, whilst this muddy vesture of decay  
Doth grossly close it in, we cannot hear it.—

*Enter Musicians.*

Come, ho, and wake Diana with a hymn ;  
With sweetest touches pierce your mistress' ear,  
And draw her home with music.

*Jes.* I am never merry, when I hear sweet  
music. [*Music.*]

*Lor.* The reason is, your spirits are attentive :  
For do but note a wild and wanton herd,  
Or race of youthful and unhandled colts,  
Fetching mad bounds, bellowing, and neighing  
loud,

Which is the hot condition of their blood ;  
If they but hear perchance a trumpet sound,  
Or any air of music touch their ears,  
You shall perceive them make a mutual stand,  
Their savage eyes turn'd to a modest gaze,  
By the sweet power of music : Therefore, the poet  
Did feign that Orpheus drew trees, stones, and  
floods ;

Since nought so stockish, hard, and full of rage,  
But music for the time doth change his nature :  
The man that hath no music in himself,  
Nor is not mov'd with concord of sweet sounds,  
Is fit for treasons, stratagems, and spoils ;  
The motions of his spirit are dull as night,  
And his affections dark as Erebus :  
Let no such man be trusted.—Mark the music.

*Enter PORTIA and NERISSA at a distance.*

*Por.* That light we see, is burning in my hall,  
How far that little candle throws his beams !  
So shines a good deed in a naughty world.

*Ner.* When the moon shone, we did not see  
the candle.

*Por.* So doth the greater glory dim the less :  
A substitute shines brightly as a king,  
Till a king be by ; and then his state  
Lumpies itself, as doth an inland brook  
Into the main of waters. *Music ! hark !*

*Ner.* It is your music, madam, of the house.

*Por.* Nothing is good, I see, without respect ;  
Methinks, it sounds much sweeter than by day.

*Ner.* Silence bestows that virtue on it, madam.

*Por.* The crow doth sing as sweetly as the  
lark,

When neither is attended ; and, I think,  
The nightingale, if she should sing by day,  
When every goose is cackling, would be thought  
No better a musician than the wren.

How many things by season season'd are  
To their right praise and true perfection !—  
Peace, ho ! the moon sleeps with Endymion,  
And would not be awak'd ! [*Music ceases.*]

*Lor.* That is the voice,  
Or I am much deceiv'd, of Portia.

*Por.* He knows me, as the blind man knows  
the cuckoo,  
By the bad voice.

*Lor.* Dear lady, welcome home.

*Por.* We have been praying for our husbands'  
welfare,

Which speed, we hope, the better for our words.  
Are they return'd ?

*Lor.* Madam, they are not yet ;  
But there is come a messenger before,  
To signify their coming.

*Por.* Go in, Nerissa,  
Give order to my servants that they take  
No note at all of our being absent hence ;  
Nor you, Lorenzo ;—Jessica, nor you.

[*A tucket † sounds.*]

*Lor.* Your husband is at hand, I hear his  
trumpet,  
We are no tell-tales, madam ; fear you not.

*Por.* This might, methinks, is but the day  
light sick,

It looks a little paler ; 'tis a day,  
Such as the day is, when the sun is hid.

*Enter BASSANIO, ANTONIO, GRATIANO, and  
their Followers.*

*Bass.* We should hold day with the Anti-  
podes,

If you would walk in absence of the sun.

*Por.* Let me give light, but let me not be  
light ;

For a light wife doth make a heavy husband,  
And never be Bassanio so for me  
But God sort all !—You are welcome home, my  
lord.

*Bass.* I thank you, madam ; give welcome to  
my friend.—

This is the man, this is Antonio,  
To whom I am so infinitely bound.

*Por.* You should in all sense be much bound  
to him,

For, as I hear, he was much bound for you.

*Ant.* No more than I am well acquitted of.

*Por.* Sir, you are very welcome to our house :  
It must appear in other ways than words,  
Therefore I scant this breathing courtesy. \*

[*GRATIANO and NERISSA seem to talk apart.*]  
*Gra.* By yonder moon, I swear, you do me  
wrong ;

In faith, I gave it to the judge's clerk :  
Would he were gelt that had it, for my part,  
Since you do take it, love, so much at heart.

*Por.* A quarrel, ho, already ! what's the  
matter ?

*Gra.* About a hoop of gold, a paltry ring  
That she did give me ; whose posy was  
For all the world, like cutler's poetry  
Upon a knife, *Love me, and leave me not.*

*Ner.* What, talk you of the posy, or the value ?  
You swore to me, when I did give it you,  
That you would wear it till your hour of death :  
And that it should lie with you in your grave  
Though not for me, yet for your vehement oaths,  
You should have been respective † and have  
kept it.

Gave it a judge's clerk !—but well I know,  
The clerk will ne'er wear hair on his face that  
had it.

*Gra.* He will, an if he live to be a man.

*Ner.* Ay, if a woman, live to be a man.

*Gra.* Now, by this hand, I gave it to a youth,—

A kind of boy ; a little scrubbed boy,

No higher than thyself, the judge's clerk ;

A prating boy, that begg'd it as a fee ;

I could not for my heart deny it him.

*Por.* You were to blame, I must be plain  
with you,

To part so slightly with your wife's first gift ;

A thing stuck on with oaths upon your finger,  
And riveted so with faith unto your flesh.

I gave my love a ring, and made him swear  
Never to part with it, and here he stands ;

I dare be sworn for him, he would not leave it,  
Nor pluck it from his finger, for the wealth  
That the world masters. Now, in faith, Gratiano,

You give your wife too unkind a cause of grief ;

An 'twere to me, I would be mad at it.

*Bass.* Why, I were best to cut my left hand  
And swear, I lost the ring defending it. [*Off.*]

[*Aside.*]

*Gra.* My lord Bassanio gave his ring away  
Unto the judge that begg'd it, and, indeed,  
Deserv'd it too ; and then the boy, his clerk,  
That took some pains in writing, he begg'd mine :

And neither man nor master, would take ought  
But the two rings.

*Por.* What ring gave you, my lord ?

Not that, I hope, which you receiv'd of me.

*Bass.* If I could add a lie unto a fault,

• Verbal, complimentary form. † Regardful.

\* A small flat dish, used in the administration of the  
Eucharist—or, according to Warburton, plates of gold  
borne in heraldry. † A flourish on a  
trumpet.

I would deny it; but you see, my finger  
Hath not the ring upon it, it is gone.

*Por.* Even so void is your false heart of truth.

By heaven I will ne'er come in your bed  
Until I see the ring.

*Ner.* Nor I in yours,

Till I again see mine.

*Bass.* Sweet Portia,

If you did know to whom I gave the ring,  
If you did know for whom I gave the ring,  
And would conceive for what I gave the ring,  
And how unwillingly I left the ring,  
When naught would be accepted but the ring,  
You would abate the strength of your displeasure.

*Por.* If you had known the virtue of the ring,  
Or half her worthiness that gave the ring,  
Or your own honour to contain the ring,  
You would not then have parted with the ring.  
What man is there so much unreasonable,  
If you had pleas'd to have defended it  
With any terms of zeal, wanted the modesty  
To urge the thing held as a ceremony?  
Nerissa teaches me what to believe;  
I'll die for't, but some woman had the ring.

*Bass.* No, by mine honour, madam, by my  
soul,

No woman had it, but a civil doctor,  
Which did refuse three thousand ducats of me,  
And begg'd the ring; the which I did deny him,  
And suffer'd him to go displeas'd away;  
Even he that had held up the very life  
Of my dear friend. What should I say, sweet  
lady?

I was enforc'd to send it after him;  
I was beset with shame and courtesy;  
My honour would not let ingratitude  
So much besmear it: Pardon me, good lady;  
For, by these blessed candles of the night,  
Had you been there, I think you would have  
begg'd

The ring of me to give the worthy doctor.

*Por.* Let not that doctor e'er come near my  
house;

Since he hath got the jewel that I lov'd,  
And that which you did swear to keep for me,  
I will become as liberal as you:  
I'll not deny him any thing I have,  
No, not my body, nor my husband's bed:  
Know him I shall, I am well sure of it:  
I've not a night from home; watch me, like  
Aguis:

If you do not, if I be left alone,  
Now, by mine honour, which is yet my own,  
I'll have that doctor for my bedfellow.

*Ner.* And I his clerk; therefore be well  
advis'd,

How you do leave me to mine own protection.

*Gra.* Well, do you so: let me not take him  
then;

For, if I do, I'll mar the young clerk's pen.

*Ant.* I am the unhappy subject of these  
quarrels.

*Por.* Sir, grieve not you: You are welcome  
notwithstanding.

*Bass.* Portia, forgive me this enforced  
wrong;

And, in the hearing of these many friends,  
I swear to thee, even by thine own fair eyes,  
Wherein I see myself,—

*Por.* Mark you but that I

In both my eyes he doubly sees himself:  
In each eye, one:—swear by your double self,  
And there's an oath of credit.

*Bass.* Nay, but hear me;  
Pardon this fault, and by my soul I swear,  
I never more will break an oath with thee.

*Ant.* I once did lend my body for his wealth;  
Which, but for him that had your husband's ring,  
[To Portia.]

Had quite miscarried: I dare be bound again,  
My soul upon the forfeit, that your lord  
Will never more break faith advicedly,

*Por.* Then you shall be his surety: Give him  
this;

And bid him keep it better than the other.

*Ant.* Here, lord Bassanio; swear to keep this  
ring.

*Bass.* By heaven, it is the same I gave the  
doctor!

*Por.* I had it of him: pardon me, Bassanio;  
For by this ring the doctor lay with me.

*Ner.* And pardon me, my gentle Gratiano;  
For that same scrubbed boy, the doctor's clerk,  
In lieu of this, last night did lie with me.

*Gra.* Why, this is like the mending of bad  
ways

In summer, where the ways are fair enough;  
What! are we cuckolds, ere we have deserv'd  
it?

*Por.* Speak not so grossly.—You are all  
amaz'd:

Here is a letter, read it at your leisure;  
It comes from Padua, from Bellario;  
There you shall find, that Portia was the doctor;  
Nerissa there, her clerk: Lorenzo here  
Shall witness, I set forth as soon as you,  
And but even now return'd: I have not yet  
Enter'd my house.—Antonio, you are welcome;  
And I have better news in store for you,  
Than you expect: unseal this letter soon;  
There you shall find, three of your argosies  
Are richly come to harbour suddenly.  
You shall not know by what strange accident  
I chanced on this letter.

*Ant.* I am dumb.

*Bass.* Were you the doctor, and I knew you  
not?

*Gra.* Were you the clerk, that is to make me  
cuckold?

*Ner.* Ay; but the clerk that never means to  
do it,

Unless he live until he be a man.

*Bass.* Sweet doctor, you shall be my bed-  
fellow;

When I am absent, then he with my wife.

*Ant.* Sweet lady, you have given me life, and  
living;

For here I read for certain, that my ships  
Are safely come to load.

*Por.* How now, Lorenzo?

My clerk hath some good comforts too for you.

*Ner.* Ay, and I'll give them him without a  
There do I give to you, and Jessica, [See.—]

From the rich Jew, a special deed of gift.  
After his death, of all he dies possess'd of.

*Lor.* Fair ladies, you drop manna in the way  
Of starved people.

*Por.* It is almost morning,

And yet, I am sure, you are not satisfied

Of these events at full: Let us go in;

And charge us there upon interrogatories,

And we will answer all things faithfully.

*Gra.* Let it be so: The first interrogatory

That my Nerissa shall be sworn on, is,

Whether till the next night she had rather stay,

Or go to bed now, being two hours to-day:

But were the day come, I should wish it dark,

That I were couching with the doctor's clerk.

Well, while I live, I'll fear no other thing

So sore, as keeping safe Nerissa's ring. [Exeunt.]

# MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

THE fable of this play (written in 1603) was taken from the *Promos and Cassandra* of George Whetstone. That production is described as very meagre and insipid, though forming a complete embryo of *Measure for Measure*; and if the genius of Shakspeare enabled him to avoid the faults of his modelist, by imparting a greater degree of interest to his own drama, it did not give him strength to resist the besetting sin of his piece—an indulgence in obscenity, buffoonery, and quibble. Some portion of this would naturally result from the indelicate and improbable incident which he took for the ground-work of his plot. Such an occurrence could only be wrought into a catastrophe, by the introduction of agents whom morality condemns, and by the use of allusions at which modesty revolts. But neither the necessities of the story, nor the purposes of entertainment, can justify such a strange admixture of pathetic contingencies and unmeaning trifles—of ennobling sentiment and disgusting ribaldry as are exhibited in this piece. Still the moral is of excellent application, since there are few situations of life in which delegated authority is not capable of abuse. Nature may fail in restraining tyranny, and precept in correcting intolerance, but they teach mankind the necessity of caution in conferring power, by shewing “the fantastic tricks” which mortals are prone to play, when “dressed in a little authority,” and entrusted with “the thunder of Jove.” Though Shakspeare wrote to gratify monarchs, he never descended to palliate oppression; and in the scene between Angelo and Isabella, where the latter pleads for her brother’s life, the reader will meet with another eloquent vindication of the principles of justice and humanity—differing from the speech of Portia on a somewhat similar occasion, but excellently opposed to that mild and dispassionate appeal, by the cutting and indignant sarcasm with which it slashes “the insolence of office.” Dr. Johnson animadverts upon the peculiarities of the play, and thus decides upon its merits: “The light or comic part is very natural and pleasing; but the grave scenes (a few passages excepted) have more labour than elegance. The plot is more intricate than artful.”

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

VINCENTIO, *Duke of Vienna.*  
ANGELO, *Lord Deputy in the Duke's absence.*  
ESCALUS, *an ancient Lord, joined with Angelo in the devotion.*  
CLAUDIO, *a young Gentleman.*  
LUCIO, *a Fantastick*  
*Two other like Gentlemen.*  
VARRILLO, *a Gentleman, Servant to the Duke.*  
PROVOST,  
THOMAS, } *Two Friars.*  
PETER, }  
A JUSTICE.  
ELEW, *a simple Constable.*

FROTH, *a Foolish Gentleman.*  
CLOWN, *Servant to Mrs. Over-done.*  
ABHURSON, *an Executioner.*  
BARNARDINE, *a dissolute Prisoner.*

ISABELLA, *Sister to Claudio.*  
MARIANA, *betrothed to Angelo.*  
JULIET, *beloved by Claudio.*  
FRANCISCA, *a Nun.*  
MRS. OVER-DONE, *a Bawd.*

*Lords, Gentlemen, Guards, Officers, and other Attendants.*

SCENE—Vienna.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—*An apartment in the Duke's Palace.*

Enter DUKE, ESCALUS, Lords, and Attendants.

Duke. Escalus,—

Escal. My lord.

Duke. Of government the properties to unfold,

Would seem in me to affect speech and discourse;

Since I am put to know, that your own science, Exceeds, in that the lists,\* of all advice

My strength can give you; Then no more re-  
tains

\* Bounds.

But that to your sufficiency, as your worth is able,

And let them work.\* The nature of our people, Our city's institutions, and the terms

For common justice, you are as pregnant† in, As art and practice hath enriched any

That we remember; There is our commission, From which we would not have you warp.—

Call hither,

I say, bid come before us Angelo.

[Exit an Attendant.

What figure of us think you he will bear?

For you must know, we have with special soul

Elected him our absence to supply;

Lent him our terror, drest him with our love;

\* This is a controverted passage; and as unintelligible as ever.  
† Full of.

And given his deputation all the organs  
Of our own power : What think you of it ?  
*Escal.* If any in Vienna be of worth  
To undergo such ample grace and honour,  
It is lord Angelo.

*Enter ANGELO.*

*Look.* Look, where he comes.

*Ang.* Always obedient to your grace's will,  
I come to know your pleasure.

*Duke.* Angelo,

There is a kind of character in thy life,  
That, to the observer, doth thy history  
Fully unfold : Thyself and thy belongings \*  
Are not thine own to proper, † as to waste  
Thyself upon thy virtues, them on thee.  
Heaven doth with us, as we with torches do ;  
Not light them for themselves : for if our virtues  
Did not go forth of us, ‡ were all alike  
As it we had them not. Spirits are not finely

touch'd,  
But to fine issues ; † nor nature never lends  
The smallest scruple of her excellence,  
But, like a thrifty goddess, she determines  
Herself the glory of a creditor,  
Both thanks and use. § But I do bend my speech  
To one that can my part in him advise ;  
Hold therefore, Angelo ;  
In our remove, be thou at full yourself ;  
Mortality and mercy in Vienna  
Live in thy tongue and heart : Old Escalus,  
Though first in question, is thy secondary :  
Take thy commission.

*Ang.* Now, good my lord,  
Let there be some more test made of my metal,  
Before so noble and so great a figure  
Be stamp'd upon it.

*Duke.* No more evasion :

We have with a leaver'd and prepared choice  
Proceeded to you ; therefore take your honours.  
Our haste from hence is of so quick condition,  
That it prefers itself, and leaves unquestion'd  
Matters of needful value. We shall write to you,  
As time and our concerns shall importune,  
How it goes with us, and do look to know  
What doth befall you here. So, fare you well :  
To the hopeful execution do I leave you  
Of your commissions.

*Ang.* Yet, give leave, my lord,  
That we may bring you something on the way.

*Duke.* My haste may not admit it ;  
Nor need you on mine honour, have to do  
With any scruple ; your scope ¶ is as mine own ;  
So to enforce, or qualify the laws,  
As to your soul seems good. Give me your

hand ;  
I'll privily away : I love the people,  
But do not like to stage me to their eyes :  
Though it do weill, I do not relish well  
Their loud applause, and *aves* ¶ vehement ;  
Nor do I think the man of safe discretion,  
That does affect it. Once more, fare you well.

*Ang.* The heavens give safety to your purposes !

*Escal.* Lead forth, and bring you back in  
happiness.

*Duke.* I thank you : Fare you well. [*Exit.*]

*Escal.* I shall desire you, Sir, to give me leave  
To have free speech with you ; and it concerns  
To look into the bottom of my place : [me  
A power I have, † but of what strength and na-  
I am not yet instructed. [ture

*Ang.* 'Tis so with me :—Let us withdraw to-  
gether,

And we may soon our satisfaction have  
Touching that point.

*Escal.* I'll wait upon your honour. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—A Street.

*Enter LUCIO and two GENTLEMEN.*

*Lucio.* If the duke with the other dukes

\* Endowments. † So much thy own property.  
‡ In high purposes. § Interest.  
¶ Extent of power. ¶ Illings.

come not to composition with the king of Hun-  
gary, why, then all the dukes fall upon the  
king.

*1 Gent.* Heaven grant us its peace, but not  
the king of Hungary's !

*2 Gent.* Amen.

*Lucio.* Thou concludest like the sanctimonious  
pirate, that went to sea with the ten command-  
ments, but scraped one out of the table.

*2 Gent.* Thou shalt not steal ?

*Lucio.* Ay, that he razed.

*1 Gent.* Why, 'twas a commandment to com-  
mand the captain and all the rest from their  
functions ; they put forth to steal. There's not  
a soldier of us all, that, in the thanksgiving  
before meat, doth relish the petition well that  
prays for peace.

*2 Gent.* I never heard any soldier dislike it.

*Lucio.* I believe thee ; for, I think, thou never  
wast where grace was said.

*2 Gent.* No ? a dozen times at least.

*1 Gent.* What ? in metre ?

*Lucio.* In any proportion, \* or in any language.

*1 Gent.* I think, or in any religion.

*Lucio.* Ay ! why not ? Grace is grace, despite  
of all controversy : As for example ; Thou thy-  
self art a wicked villain, despite of all grace.

*1 Gent.* Well, there went but a pair of sheets  
between us †

*Lucio.* I grant ; as there may between the  
lists and the velvet ; Thou art the list.

*1 Gent.* And thou the velvet : thou art good  
velvet : thou art a three-pil'd piece, I warrant  
thee : I had as lief he a list of an English ker-  
sey, as be pil'd, as thou art pil'd, for a French  
velvet. ‡ Do I speak feelingly now ?

*Lucio.* I think thou dost ; and, indeed, with  
most painful feeling of thy speech : I will, out  
of thine own confession, learn to begin thy  
health ; but, whilst I live, forget to drink after  
thee.

*Gent.* I think I have done myself wrong,  
have I not ?

*2 Gent.* Yes, that thou hast ; whether thou  
art tainted, or free.

*Lucio.* Behold, behold, where madam Mit-  
igation comes ! I have purchased as many dis-  
eases under her roof, as come to—

*2 Gent.* To what, I pray ?

*1 Gent.* Judge.

*2 Gent.* To three thousand dollars a year.

*1 Gent.* Ay, and more

*Lucio.* A French crown † more.

*1 Gent.* Thou art always figuring diseases in  
me : But thou art full of error ; I am sound.

*Lucio.* Nay, not as one would say, healthy ;  
but so sound, as things that are hollow : thy  
bones are hollow ; impiety has made a feast  
of thee.

*Enter BAWD.*

*1 Gent.* How now ? Which of your hips has  
the most profound sciatica ?

*Bawd.* Well, well ; there's one yonder ar-  
rested, and carried to prison, was worth five  
thousand of you all.

*1 Gent.* Who's that, I pray thee ?

*Bawd.* Marry, Sir, that's Claudio, signior  
Claudio.

*1 Gent.* Claudio to prison ! 'tis not so.

*Bawd.* Nay, But I know, 'tis so ; I saw him  
arrested ; saw him carried away ; and, which is  
more, within these three days his head's to be  
chopped off.

*Lucio.* But, after all this fooling, I would not  
have it so : Art thou sure of it ?

*Bawd.* I am too sure of it : and it is for get-  
ting madam Julietta with child.

*Lucio.* Believe me, this may be : he promised  
to meet me two hours since ; and he was ever  
precise in promise-keeping.

*2 Gent.* Besides, you know, it draws some-

\* Measure. † A cut of the same cloth.  
‡ A jest on the loss of hair by the French disease.  
§ Corona cereus.

thing near to the speech we had to such a purpose.

*I Gent.* But most of all, agreeing with the proclamation.

*Lucio.* Away; let's go learn the truth of it.

[*Exeunt LUCIO and GENTLEMEN.*]

*Band.* Thus, what with the war, what with the sweat,\* what with the gallows, and what with poverty, I am custom-shrunk. How now? What's the news with you?

*Enter CLOWN.*

*Clo.* Yonder man is carried to prison.

*Band.* Well; what has he done?

*Clo.* A woman.

*Band.* But what's his offence?

*Clo.* Groping for trouts in a peculiar river.

*Band.* What, is there a maid with child by him?

*Clo.* No; but there's a woman with maid by him: You have not heard of the proclamation, have you?

*Band.* What proclamation, man?

*Clo.* All houses in the suburbs of Vienna must be pluck'd down.

*Band.* And what shall become of those in the city?

*Clo.* They shall stand for seed: they had gone down too, but that a wise burgher put in for them.

*Band.* But shall all our house of resort in the suburbs be pull'd down?

*Clo.* To the ground, mistress.

*Band.* Why, here's a chance, indeed, in the commonwealth! What shall become of me?

*Clo.* Come; fear not you; good counsellors lack no clients: though you change your place, you need not change your trade: I'll be your tapster still. Courage; there will be pity taken on you: you that have worn your eyes almost out in the service, you will be considered.

*Band.* What's to do here, Thomas Tapster? Let's withdraw.

*Clo.* Here comes signior Claudio, led by the provost to prison: and there's madam Juliet.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.—The same.

*Enter PROVOST, CLAUDIO, JULIET, and Officers; LUCIO, and two Gentlemen.*

*Claud.* Fellow, why dost thou show me thus to the world?

Bear me to prison, where I am committed.

*Prov.* I do it not in evil disposition, But from lord Angelo by special charge.

*Claud.* Thus can the demi god, Authority, Make us pay down for our offence by weight.—The words of heaven;—on whom it will, it will; On whom it will not, so; yet still 'tis just.

*Lucio.* Why, how now, Claudio? whence comes this restraint?

*Claud.* From too much liberty, my Lucio, liberty;

As surfeit is the father of much fast, So every scope by the immoderate use Turns to restraint: Our natures do pursue, (Like rats that ravin down their proper bane,) A thirsty evil; and when we drink, we die.

*Lucio.* If I could speak so wisely under arrest, I would send for certain of my creditors: And yet, to say the truth, I had as lief have the foppery of freedom, as the morality of imprisonment.—What's thy offence, Claudio?

*Claud.* What, but to speak of would offend again.

*Lucio.* What is it? murder?

*Claud.* No.

*Lucio.* Lechery?

*Claud.* Call it so.

*Prov.* Away, Sir; you must go.

*Claud.* One word, good friend:—Lucio, a word with you.

[*Takes him aside.*]

*Lucio.* A hundred, if they'll do you any good—Is lechery so look'd after?

*Claud.* Thus stands it with me:—Upon a true contract,

I got possession of Julietta's bed; You know the lady; she is fast my wife, Save that we do the denunciation lack Of outward order: this we came not to, Only for propagation of a dower Remaining in the coffer of her friends; From whom we thought it meet to hide our love, Till time had made them for us. But it chanc'd, The stealth of our most mutual entertainment, With character too gross, is writ on Juliet.

*Lucio.* With child, perhaps?

*Claud.* Unhappily, even so.

And the new deputy now for the duke,— Whether it be the fault and glimpse of newness: Or whether that the body public be A horse whereon the governor doth ride, Who, newly in the seat, that it may know He can command, lets it straight feel the spur: Whether the tyranny be in his place, Or in his emulgence that fills it up, I stagger in:—But this new governor Awakes me all the enrolled penalties, Which have, like unscour'd armour, hung by the wall

So long, that nineteen zodiacs\* have gone round, And none of them been worn; and, for a name, Now puts the drowsy and neglected net Freshly on me:—'tis surely, for a name.

*Lucio.* I warrant, it is: and thy head stands so tickle† on thy shoulders, that a muck-mate, if she be in love, may sigh it off. Send after the duke, and appeal to him.

*Claud.* I have done so, but he's not to be found.

I pray thee, Lucio, do me this kind service: This day my sister should the cloister enter, And there receive her approbation; Acquaint her with the danger of my state; Implore her, in my voice, that she make friends To the strict deputy; bid her: If assay him; I have great hope in that: for in her youth There is a prone and speechless dialect, Such as moves men; besides, she hath prosperous art

When she will play with reason and discourse, And well she can persuade.

*Lucio.* I pray, she may; as well for the encouragement of the like, which else would stand under grievous imposition; as for the enjoying of thy life, who I would be sorry should be thus foolishly lost at a game of tick-tack. I'll to her.

*Claud.* I thank you, good friend Lucio.

*Lucio.* Within two hours,—

*Claud.* Come, officer, away. [*Exeunt*]

### SCENE IV.—A Monastery.

*Enter DUKE and FRIAR THOMAS.*

*Duke.* No; holy father; throw away that thought;

Believe not that the dribbling dart of love Can pierce a complete bosom: || why I desire thee

To give me secret harbour, hath a purpose More grave and wrinkled than the aims and ends Of burning youth.

*Fri.* May your grace speak of it?

*Duke.* My holy Sir, none better knows than you

How I have ever lov'd the life remov'd; ¶ And held in idle price to haunt assemblies, Where youth, and cost, and witless beryery keeps. \*\*

\* Yearly circles.

† Enter on her probation.

‡ Completely armed.

\*\* Resident.

† Ticklish.

‡ Prompt.

¶ Retired.

\* The sweating sickness.

‡ Voraciously devour.

† Gaoler.

I have delivered to lord Angelo  
(A man of stricture,\* and firm abstinence,) my absolute power and place here in Vienna, And he supposes me travell'd to Poland; For so I have strew'd it in the common ear, And so it is receiv'd: Now, pious Sir, You will demand of me, why I do this?

*Fri.* Gladly, my lord.

*Duke.* We have strict statutes, and most biting laws,  
(The needful bits and curbs for headstrong steeds)

Which for these fourteen years we have let sleep; Even like an o'ergrown lion in a cave, That goes not out to prey: Now, as fond fathers Having bound up the threatening twigs of birch, Only to stick it in their children's sight, For terror, not to use; in time the rod Becomes more mock'd than fear'd: so our decrees

\* Dead to inflection, to themselves are dead; And liberty plucks justice by the nose; The baby beats the nurse, and quite atwart Goes all decorum.

*Fri.* It rested in your grace To unloose this tied-up justice, when you pleas'd; And it in you more dreadful would have seem'd, Than in lord Angelo.

*Duke.* I do fear, too dreadful: Sith 'twas my fault to give the people scope, 'Twould be my tyranny to strike, and gall them For what I bid them do: For we bid this be done,

When evil deeds have their permissive pass, And not the punishment. Therefore, indeed, my father,

I have on Angelo impos'd the office; Who may, in the ambush of my name, strike home,

And yet my nature never in the sight, To do it slander: And to behold his sway, I will, as 'twere a brother of your order, Visit both prince and people: therefore, I pry thee,

Supply me with the habit, and instruct me How I may formally in person bear me Like a true friar. More reasons for this action,

At our more leisure shall I render you; Only, this one:—Lord Angelo is precise; Stands at a guard<sup>†</sup> with envy; scarce confesses That his blood flows, or that his appetite Is more to bread than stone: Hence shall we see, If power change purpose, what our seemers be.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE V.—A Nunnery.

*Enter ISABELLA and FRANCISCA.*

*Isab.* And have you nuns no further privileges?

*Fran.* Are not these large enough?

*Isab.* Yes, truly: I speak not as desiring more;

But rather wishing a more strict restraint Upon the sisterhood, the votariats of saint Clare.

*Lucio.* Ho! Peace be in this place! [*Within.*]

*Isab.* Who's that which calls?

*Fran.* It is a man's voice: Gentle Isabella, Turn you the key, and know his business of him; You may, I may not; you are yet unworn: When you have vow'd, you must not speak with men,

But in the presence of the prioress:

Then, if you speak, you must not show your face;

Or, if you show your face, you must not speak. He calls again; I pray you, answer him.

[*Exit FRANCISCA.*]

*Isab.* Peace and prosperity! Who is't that calls?

\* Strictness.

† On his defence.

† Since.

*Enter LUCIO.*

*Lucio.* Hail, virgin, if you be; as those cheek-roses

Proclaim you are no less! Can you so stead me As bring me to the sight of Isabella,

A novice of this place, and the fair sister

To her unhappy brother, Claudio?

*Isab.* Why her unhappy brother? let me ask

The rather, for I now must make you know

I am that Isabella, and his sister.

*Lucio.* Gentle and fair, your brother kindly greets you:

Not to be weary with you, he's in prison.

*Isab.* Woe me! For what?

*Lucio.* For that, which, if myself might be his judge,

He should receive his punishment in thanks:

He hath got his friend with child.

*Isab.* Sir, make me not your story.\*

*Lucio.* It is true.

I would not—though 'tis my familiar sin With maids to seem the lapwing, and to jest,

Tongue far from heart,—play with all virgins so: I hold you as a thing enskied and sainted;

By your renouncement, an immortal spirit;

And to be talk'd with in sincerity,

As with a saint.

*Isab.* You do blaspheme the good, in mocking me.

*Lucio.* Do not believe it. Fewness and truth, 'tis thus:

Your brother and his lover have embrac'd:

As those that feed grow full; as blossoming time, That from the seedness the bare fallow brings

To teeming foison; even so her plenteous womb Expresseth his full tilth and husbandry.

*Isab.* Some one with child by him?—My cousin Juliet?

*Lucio.* Is she your cousin?

*Isab.* Adoptedly; as school-maids change their names,

By vain though apt affection.

*Lucio.* She, it is.

*Isab.* Oh! let him marry her!

*Lucio.* This is the point.

The duke is very strangely gone from hence:

Bore many gentlemen, myself being one,

In hand, and hope of action: but we do learn

By those that know the very nerves of state,

His givings out were of an infinite distance

From his true-meant design. Upon his place,

And with full line of his authority,

Governs lord Angelo; a man, whose blood

Is very snow-broth; one who never feels

The wanton stings and motions of the sense;

But doth rebate and blunt his natural edge

With profits of the mind, study and fast.

He (to give fear to use and liberty,

Which have, for long, run by the hideous law,

As mice by lions,) hath pick'd out an act,

Under whose heavy sense your brother's life

Falls into forfeit: he arrests him on it;

And follows close the rigour of the statute,

To make him an example: all hope is gone,

Unless you have the grace of your fair prayer

To soften Angelo: And that's my pith

Of business 'twixt you and your poor brother.

*Isab.* Doth he so seek his life?

*Lucio.* Has censur'd<sup>\*\*</sup> him

Already; and, as I hear, the provost hath

A warrant for his execution.

*Isab.* Alas! what poor ability's in me

To do him good?

*Lucio.* Assay the power you have.

*Isab.* My power! Alas! I doubt.

*Lucio.* Our doubts are traitors,

And make us lose the good we oft might win,

By fearing to attempt: Go to lord Angelo,

And let him learn to know, when maidens sue,

\* Do not make a jest of me.

† In few and true words.

‡ Tiling.

¶ Power of gaining favour.

\*\* Extent.

†† Have.

‡ Breeding plenty.

¶ Extent.

\*\* Extent.

†† Have.

3 G



Men give like gods : but when they weep and kneel,

All their petitions are as freely their's  
As they themselves would owe\* them.

*Isab.* I'll see what I can do.

*Lucio.* But speedily.

*Isab.* I will about it straight ;  
No longer staying but to give the mother †  
Notice of my affair. I humbly thank you :  
Commend me to my brother : soon at night  
I'll send him certain word of my success.

*Lucio.* I take my leave of you.

*Isab.* Good Sir, adieu.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—A Hall in ANGELO'S House.

*Enter ANGELO, ESCALUS, a JUSTICE, PROVOST, Officers, and other Attendants.*

*Ang.* We must not make a scare-crow of the law,

Setting it up to fear ‡ the birds of prey,  
And let it keep one shape, till custom make it  
Their perch, and not their terror.

*Escal.* Ay, but yet

Let us be keen, and rather cut a little,  
Than tall, and bruise to death : Alas ! this gentleman,

Whom I would save, had a most noble father.  
Let him your honour know, §

(Whom I believe to be of most strait in virtue,)  
That, in the working of your own affections,  
Had time color'd ‖ with place, or place with wishing,

Or that the resolute acting of your blood  
Could have attain'd the effect of your own purpose,

Whether you had not sometime in your life  
Err'd in this point : which now you censure him,  
And pull'd the law upon you.

*Ang.* 'Tis one thing to be tempted, Escalus,  
Another thing to fall. I not deny,  
The jury, passing on the prisoner's life,  
May, in the sworn twelve, have a thief or two  
Guiltier than him they try : What's open made  
to justice,

That justice seizes. What know the laws,  
That thieves do pass on thieves ? 'Tis very pregnant, ¶

The jewel that we find, we stoop and take it,  
Because we see it ; but what we do not see,  
We tread upon, and never think of it.

You may not so extenuate his offence,  
For \*\* I have had such faults : but rather tell me,  
When I, that censure †† him, do so offend,  
Let mine own judgment pattern out my death,  
And nothing come in partial. Sir, he must die.

*Escal.* Be it as your wisdom will.

*Ang.* Where is the provost ?

*Prov.* Here, if it like your honour.

*Ang.* See that Claudio

Be executed by nine to-morrow morning :  
Bring him his confessor, let him be prepared ;  
For that's the utmost of his pilgrimage.

[*Exit PROVOST*]

*Escal.* Well, heaven forgive him ; and forgive  
as all !

Some rise by sin, and some by virtue fall :  
Some run from brakes ‡ of vice, and answer  
none ;

And some condemned for a fault alone.

*Enter ELBOW, FROTH, CLOWN, Officers, &c.*

*Elb.* Come, bring them away : if these be  
good people in a common-weal, § that do no  
thing but use their abuses in common houses, I  
know no law ; bring them away.

\* Have.

† Scare.

‡ Sued.

§ Because.

|| Thickest, thorny paths of vice.

† Abbess.

‡ Examine.

§ Plann.

¶ Sentence.

|| Wealth.

*Ang.* How now, Sir ! What's your name ? and  
what's the matter ?

*Elb.* If it please your honour, I am the poor  
duke's constable, and my name is Elbow ; I do  
lean upon justice, Sir, and do bring in here  
before your good honour two notorious bene-  
factors.

*Ang.* Benefactors ? Well ; what benefactors are  
they ? are they not malefactors ?

*Elb.* If it please your honour, I know not  
well what they are : but precise villains they  
are, that I am sure of ; and void of all profana-  
tion in the world, that good Christians ought to  
have.

*Escal.* This comes off well ; \* here's a wise  
officer.

*Ang.* Go to : What quality are they of ? El-  
bow is your name ? Why dost thou not speak,  
Elbow ?

*Clo.* He cannot, Sir ; he's out at elbow.

*Ang.* What are you, Sir ?

*Elb.* He, Sir, a tapster, Sir ; parcel †-bawd ;  
one that serves a bad woman ; whose house, Sir,  
was, as they say, pluck'd down in the suburbs ;  
and now she professes ‡ a hot-house, which, I  
think, is a very ill house too.

*Escal.* How know you that ?

*Elb.* My wife, Sir, whom I detest § before  
heaven and your honour,—

*Escal.* How ! thy wife ?

*Elb.* Ay, Sir ? whom, I thank heaven, is an  
honest woman,—

*Escal.* Dost thou detest her therefore ?

*Elb.* I say, Sir, I will detest myself also, as  
well as she, that this house, if it be not a bawd's  
house, it is puy of her life, for it is a naughty  
house.

*Escal.* How dost thou know that, constable ?

*Elb.* Marry, Sir, by my wife ; who, if she had  
been a woman cardinally given, might have been  
accused in fornication, adultery, and all uncleanness  
there.

*Escal.* By the woman's means ?

*Elb.* Ay, Sir, by mistress Overdone's means :  
but as she spit in his face, so she denied him.

*Clo.* Sir, if it please your honour, this is not  
so.

*Elb.* Prove it before these varlets here, thou  
honourable man, prove it.

*Escal.* Do you hear how he misplaces ?

[*To ANGELO.*]

*Clo.* Sir, she came in great with child ; and  
longing (savouring your honour's reverence,) for  
stew'd prunes ; Sir, we had but two in the house,  
which at that very distant time stood, as it were,  
in a fruit dish, a dish of some three-pence ; your  
honours have seen such dishes ; they are not  
China dishes, but very good dishes.

*Escal.* Go to, go to : no matter for the dish,  
Sir.

*Clo.* No, indeed, Sir, not of a pin ; you are  
therein in the right : but, to the point. As I say,  
this mistress Elbow, being, as I say, with child,  
and being great belly'd, and longing, as I said,  
for prunes, and having but two in the dish, as  
I said, master Froth here, this very man, hav-  
ing eaten the rest, as I said, and, as I say, pay-  
ing for them very honestly ;—for, as you know,  
master Froth, I could not give you three-pence  
again.

*Froth.* No, indeed.

*Clo.* Very well : you being then, if you be  
remember'd, cracking the stones of the forecast  
prunes.

*Froth.* Ay, so I did, indeed.

*Clo.* Why, very well : I telling you then, if you  
be remember'd, that such a one, and such a one,  
were past care of the thing you wot of, unless  
they kept very good diet, as I told you.

*Froth.* All this is true.

*Clo.* Why, very well then.

*Escal.* Come, you are a tedious fool : to the  
purpose.—What was done to Elbow's wife, that

\* Well told.

† Keeps a bagnio.

‡ Partly.

§ For protest.

he hath cause to complain of? Come me to what was done to her.

*Clo.* Sir, your honour cannot come to that yet.

*Escal.* No, Sir, nor I mean it not.

*Clo.* Sir, but you shall come to it, by your honour's leave: And, I beseech you, look into master Froth here, Sir; a man of fourscore pound a year; whose father died at Hallowmas:—Was't not at Hallowmas, master Froth?

*Froth.* All-holland \* eve.

*Clo.* Why, very well; I hope here be truths: He, Sir, sitting, as I say, in a lower† chair, Sir;—'twas in the *Bunch of Grapes*, where, indeed, you have a delight to sit: Have you not?

*Froth.* I have so; because it is an open room, and good for winter.

*Clo.* Why, very well then;—I hope here be truths.

*Ang.* This will last out a night in Russia, When nights are longest there: I'll take my leave,

And leave you to the hearing of the cause; Hoping, you'll find good cause to whip them all.

*Escal.* I think no less: Good morrow to your lordship. *[Exit ANGELO.]*

Now, Sir, come on; What was done to Elbow's wife, once more?

*Clo.* Once, Sir? there was nothing done to her once.

*Elb.* I beseech you, Sir, ask him what this man did to my wife.

*Clo.* I beseech your honour, ask me.

*Escal.* Well, Sir: What did this gentleman to her?

*Clo.* I beseech you, Sir, look in this gentleman's face—Good master Froth, look upon his honour; 'tis for a good purpose: Doth your honour mark his face?

*Escal.* Ay, Sir, very well.

*Clo.* Nay, I beseech you, mark it well.

*Escal.* Well, I do so.

*Clo.* Doth your honour see any harm in his face?

*Escal.* Why, no.

*Clo.* I'll be supposed‡ upon a book, his face is the worst thing about him: Good then; if his face be the worst thing about him, how could master Froth do the constable's wife any harm? I would know that of your honour.

*Escal.* He's in the right: Constable, what say you to it?

*Elb.* First, an it like you, the house is a respected house; next, this is a respected fellow; and his mistress is a respected woman.

*Clo.* By this hand, Sir, his wife is a more respected person than any of us all.

*Elb.* Varlet, thou liest; thou liest, wicked varlet: the time is yet to come, that she was ever respected with man, woman, or child.

*Clo.* Sir, she was respected with him before he married with her.

*Escal.* Which is the wiser here? Justice or Iniquity? Is this true?

*Elb.* O thou cauld! O thou varlet! O thou wicked Hannibal! I respected with her, before I was married to her? If ever I was respected with her, or she with me, let not your worship think me the poor duke's officer:—Prove this, thou wicked Hannibal, or I'll have mine action of battery on thee.

*Escal.* If he took you a box o' ear, you might have your action of slander too.

*Elb.* Marry, I thank your good worship for it: What is't your worship's pleasure I should do with this wicked catiff?

*Escal.* Truly, officer, because he hath some offences in him, that thou wouldst discover if thou couldst, let him continue in his courses, till thou know'st what they are.

*Elb.* Marry, I thank your worship for it:—

Thou seest, thou wicked varlet now, what's come upon thee; thou art to continue now, thou varlet; thou art to continue.

*Escal.* Where were you born, friend?

*[To Froth.]*

*Froth.* Here in Vienna, Sir.

*Escal.* Are you of fourscore pounds a year?

*Froth.* Yes, au't please you, Sir.

*Escal.* So.—What trade are you of, Sir?

*[To the Clown.]*

*Clo.* A tapster; a poor widow's tapster.

*Escal.* Your mistress's name?

*Clo.* Mistress Over-done.

*Escal.* Hath she had any more than one husband?

*Clo.* Nine, Sir; Over-done by the last.

*Escal.* Nine!—Come hither to me, master Froth. Master Froth, I would not have you acquainted with tapsters: they will draw you, master Froth, and you will hang them: Get you gone, and let me hear no more of you.

*Froth.* I thank your worship: For mine own part, I never come into any room in a taphouse, but I am drawn in.

*Escal.* Well; no more of it, master Froth: farewell. *[Exit Froth.]*—Come you hither to me, master tapster: what's your name, master tapster?

*Clo.* Pompey.

*Escal.* What else?

*Clo.* Bum, Sir.

*Escal.* 'Troth, and your bum is the greatest thing about you, so that, in the beastliest sense, you are Pompey the great. Pompey, you are partly a bawd, Pompey, howsoever you colour it in being a tapster. Are you not? come, tell me true; it shall be the better for you.

*Clo.* Truly, Sir, I am a poor fellow, that would live.

*Escal.* How would you live Pompey? by being a bawd? What do you think of the trade, Pompey? is it a lawful trade?

*Clo.* If the law would allow it, Sir.

*Escal.* But the law will not allow it, Pompey; nor it shall not be allowed in Vienna.

*Clo.* Does your worship mean to geld and spay all the youth in the city?

*Escal.* No, Pompey.

*Clo.* Truly, Sir, in my poor opinion, they will to't then: If your worship will take order\* for the drabs and the knaves, you need not to fear the bawds.

*Escal.* There are pretty orders beginning, I can tell you: It is but heading and hanging.

*Clo.* If you head and hang all that offend that way but for ten year together, you'll be glad to give out a commission for more heads. If this law hold in Vienna ten year, I'll rent the fairest house in it, after threepence a bay: If you live to see this come to pass, say, Pompey told you so.

*Escal.* Thank you, good Pompey: and, in requital of your prophecy, hark you,—I advise you, let me not find you before me again upon any complaint whatsoever, no, not for dwelling where you do: If I do, Pompey I shall beat you to your tent, and prove a shrewd Caesar to you; in plain dealing, Pompey, I shall have you whipt: so for this time, Pompey, fare you well.

*Clo.* I thank your worship for your good counsel; but I shall follow it, as the flesh and fortune shall better determine.

Whip me! No, no; let carman whip his jade; The valiant heart's not whipt out his trade.

*[Exit.]*

*Escal.* Come hither to me, master Elbow; come hither, master Constable. How long have you been in this place of constable?

*Elb.* Seven year and a half, Sir.

*Escal.* I thought, by your readiness in the office, you had continued in it some time: You say, seven years together?

\* Eve of All Saints day.

† Easy.

‡ Deposed, sworn.

§ Constable or clown.

¶ For cannibal.

*Elb.* And a half, Sir.

*Escal.* Alas! it hath been great pains to you! They do you wrong to put you so oft upon't: Are there not men in your ward sufficient to serve it?

*Elb.* Faith, Sir, few of any wit in such matters: as they are chosen, they are glad to choose me for them; I do it for some piece of money, and go through with all.

*Escal.* Look you, bring me in the names of some six or seven, the most sufficient of your parish.

*Elb.* To your worship's house, Sir?

*Escal.* To my house: Fare you well. [*Exit. ELBOW.*] What's o'clock, think you?

*Just.* Eleven, Sir.

*Escal.* I pray you home to dinner with me.

*Just.* I humbly thank you.

*Escal.* It grieves me for the death of Claudio; But there's no remedy.

*Just.* Lord Angelo is severe.

*Escal.* It is but needful:

Mercy is not itself, that oft looks so;

Pardon is still the nurse of second woe:

But yet,—Poor Claudio!—There's no remedy. Come, Sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Another Room in the same.

*Enter PROVOST and a SERVANT.*

*Serv.* He's hearing of a cause; he will come straight. I'll tell him of you.

*Prov.* Pray you, do. [*Exit SERV.*] I'll know His pleasure; may be, he will relent: Alas, He hath but as offended in a dream! All sects, all ages smack of this vice; and he To die for it!

*Enter ANGELO.*

*Ang.* Now, what's the matter, provost?

*Prov.* Is it your will Claudio shall die to-morrow?

*Ang.* Did I not tell thee, yea? hadst thou not order?

Why dost thou ask again?

*Prov.* Lest I might be too rash: Under your good correction, I have seen, When, after execution, judgment hath Repented o'er his doom.

*Ang.* Go to; let that be mine: Do you your office, or give up your place, And you shall well be spar'd.

*Prov.* I crave your honour's pardon.—What shall be done, Sir, with the groaning Juliet? She's very near her hour.

*Ang.* Dispose of her To some more fitter place; and that with speed.

*Re-enter SERVANT.*

*Serv.* Here is the sister of the man condemn'd, Desires access to you.

*Ang.* Hath she a sister?

*Prov.* Ay, my good lord; a very virtuous maid, And to be shortly of a sisterhood, If not already.

*Ang.* Well let her be admitted. [*Exit SERV.*] See you, the fornicatress be remov'd; Let her have needful, but not lavish, means; There shall be order for it.

*Enter LUCIO and ISABELLA.*

*Prov.* Save your honour!

*Ang.* Stay a little while.—[*To ISABELLA.*] You are welcome: What's your will?

*Isab.* I am a woeful suitor to your honour, Please but your honour bear me.

*Ang.* Well; what's your suit?

*Isab.* There is a vice, that most I do abhor, And most desire should meet the blow of justice; For which I would not plead, but that I must; For which I must not plead, but that I am At war 'twixt will and will not.

*Ang.* Well; the matter?

*Isab.* I have a brother is condemn'd to die: I do beseech you, let it be his fault, And not my brother.

*Prov.* Heaven give thee moving graces!

*Ang.* Condemn the fault, and not the actor of it!

Why, every fault's condemn'd, ere it be done: Mine were the very cipher of a function, To find the faults, whose fine stands in record, And let go by the actor.

*Isab.* O just, but severe law!

I had a brother then.—Heaven keep your honour!

[*Retiring.*]

*Lucio.* [To *Isab.*] Give't not o'er so: to him again, entreat him;

Kneel down before him, hang upon his gown; You are too cold: if you should need a pin, You could not with more tame a tongue desire it:

To him, I say.

*Isab.* Must he needs die?

*Ang.* Maiden, no remedy.

*Isab.* Yes; I do think that you might pardon him,

And neither heaven nor man grieve at the mercy.

*Ang.* I will not do't.

*Isab.* But can you, if you would?

*Ang.* Look, what I will not, that I cannot do.

*Isab.* But might you do't, and do the world no wrong,

If so your heart were touch'd with that remorse? As mine is to him?

*Ang.* He's sentenc'd; 'tis too late.

*Lucio.* You are too cold. [To *ISABELLA.*]

*Isab.* Too late! why, no; I, that do speak a word,

May call it back again: Well believe't this, No ceremony that to great ones 'longs, Not the king's crown, nor the deputed sword, The marshal's truncheon, nor the judge's robe, Become them with one half so good a grace, As mercy does. If he had been as you, And you as he, you would have slipp'd like him; But he, like you, would not have been so stern.

*Ang.* Pray you, begone.

*Isab.* I would to heaven I had your potency, And you were Isabel! should it then be thus? No; I would tell what 'twere to be a judge, And what a prisoner.

*Lucio.* Ay, touch him: there's the vein.

[*Aside.*]

*Ang.* Your brother is a forfeit of the law, And you but waste your words.

*Isab.* Alas! alas!

Why, all the souls that were, were forfeit once; And He that might the vantage best have took, Found out the remedy: How would you be, If He, which is the top of judgment, should But judge you as you are? Oh! think on that, And mercy then will breathe within your lips, Like man new made.

*Ang.* Be you content, fair maid; It is the law, not I, condemns your brother: Were he my kinsman, brother, or my son, It should be thus with him;—he must die to-morrow.

*Isab.* To-morrow? Oh! that's sudden! Spare him, spare him!

He's not prepar'd for death! Even for our kitchens

We kill the fowl of season;† shall we seive heaven

With less respect than we do minister

To our gross selves? Good, good my lord, be- think you;

Who is it that hath died for this offence?

There's many have committed it.

*Lucio.* Ay, well said.

*Ang.* The law hath not been dead, though it hath slept:

Those many had not dar'd to do that evil, If the first man that did the edict infringe,

\* Fity.

† Be assured.

‡ When in reason.

Had answer'd for his deed : now, 'tis awake ;  
Takes note of what is done ; and, like a prophet,

Looks in a glass, that shows what future evils,  
(Either now, or by remissness new-conceiv'd,  
And so in progress to be hatch'd and born,)  
Are now to have no successive degrees,  
But, where they live, to end.

*Isab.* Yet show some pity.

*Ang.* I show it most of all, when I show justice ;

For then I pity those I do not know,  
Which a dismiss'd offence would after gall ;  
And do him right, that answering one foul wrong,

Lives not to act another. Be satisfied ;  
Your brother dies to-morrow ; he content.

*Isab.* So, you must be the first that gives this sentence ;

And he, that suffers : Oh ! it is excellent  
To have a giant's strength ; but it is tyrannous  
To use it like a giant.

*Lucio.* That's well said.

*Isab.* Could great men thunder  
As Jove himself does, Jove would ne'er be quiet,  
For every pelting,\* petty officer,  
Would use his heaven for thunder ; nothing but  
thunder,——

Merciful heaven !

Thou rather, with thy sharp and sulphurous  
bolt,

Split'st the unwedgeable and gnarled † oak,  
Than the soft myrtle : Oh ! but man, proud man !  
Drest in a little brief authority ;

Most ignorant of what he's most assur'd—  
His glassy essence,—like an angry ape,  
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven,  
As make the angels weep : who, with our spleens,  
Would all themselves laugh mortal.

*Lucio.* Oh ! to him, to him, wench : he will  
releat ;

He's coming, I perceive't.

*Prov.* Pray heaven, she win him !

*Isab.* We cannot weigh our brother with our-  
self :

Great men may jest with saints : 'tis wit in them ;  
But, in the less, foul profanation.

*Lucio.* Thou'rt in the right, girl ; more o'that.  
*Isab.* That in the captain's but a choleric  
word,

Which in the soldier is flat blasphemy.

*Lucio.* Art advis'd o' that † more on't.

*Ang.* Why do you put these sayings upon me ?

*Isab.* Because authority, though it err like  
others.

Hath yet a kind of medicine in itself,  
That skins the vice o' the top : Go to your  
bosom ;

Knock there ; and ask your heart, what it doth  
know

That's like my brother's fault : if it confess

A natural guiltiness, such as is his,

Let it not sound a thought upon your tongue

Against my brother's life.

*Ang.* She speaks, and 'tis

Such sense, that my sense breeds with it.——

Fare you well.

*Isab.* Gentle my lord, turn back.

*Ang.* I will betlink me :—Come again to-  
morrow.

*Isab.* Hark, how I'll bribe you : Good my  
lord, turn back.

*Ang.* How I bribe me

*Isab.* Ay, with such gifts, that heaven shall  
share with you.

*Lucio.* You had marr'd all, else.

*Isab.* Not with fond shekels of the tested †  
gold,

Or stones, whose rates are either rich, or poor,  
As fancy values them : but with true prayers,  
That shall be up at heaven, and enter there,  
Ere sunrise ; prayers from preserved ‡ souls,

From fasting maids, whose minds are dedicate  
To nothing temporal.

*Ang.* Well : come to me

To-morrow.

*Lucio.* Go to ; it is well ; away.

[*Aside to ISABELLA.*

*Isab.* Heaven keep your honour safe !

*Ang.* Amen : for I

Am that way going to temptation, [*Aside.*

Where prayers cross.

*Isab.* At what hour to-morrow

Shall I attend your lordship ?

*Ang.* At any time 'fore noon.

*Isab.* Save your honour !

[*Exeunt LUCIO, ISABELLA, and PROVOST.*

*Ang.* From thee ; even from thy virtue !—

What's this ? what's this ? Is this her fault, or  
mine ?

The tempter, or the tempted, who sins most ?  
Ha !

Not she ; nor doth she tempt : but it is I,

That lying by the violet in the sun,

Do, as the carrion does, not as the flower,

Corrupt with virtuous season. Can it be,

That modesty may more betray our sense

Than woman's lightness ? Having waste ground  
enough,

Shall we desire to raze the sanctuary,

And pitch our evils there ? \* O fie, fie, fie !

What dost thou ? or what art thou, Angelo ?

Dost thou desire her foully, for those things

That make her good ! Oh ! let her brother live :

Thieves for their robbery have authority.

When judges steal themselves. What ? do I

love her,

That I desire to hear her speak again,

And feast upon her eyes ? What is't I dream on ?

O cunning enemy, that, to catch a saint,

With saints dost bait thy hook ! Most dangerous

Is that temptation, that doth goad us on

To sin in loving virtue : never could the strum-  
pet,

With all her double vigour, art, and nature,

Once stir my temper ; but this virtuous maid

Subdues me quite :—Ever, till now,

When men were fond, I smil'd, and wonder'd

how. [*Exit.*

### SCENE III.—A Room in a Prison.

*Enter DUKE habited like a Friar, and  
PROVOST.*

*Duke.* Hail to you, provost ! so, I think you  
are.

*Prov.* I am the provost : What's your will,  
good friar ?

*Duke.* Bound by my charity, and my bless'd  
order,

I come to visit the afflicted spirits

Here in the prison : do me the common right

To let me see them ; and to make me know

The nature of their crimes, that I may minister

To them accordingly.

*Prov.* I would do more than that, if more  
were needful.

*Enter JULIET.*

Look, here comes one ; a gentlewoman of mine,

Who falling in the flames of her own youth,

Hath blister'd her report : She is with child.

And he that got it, sentenc'd : a young man

More fit to do another such offence,

Than die for this.

*Duke.* When must he die ?

*Prov.* As I do think, to-morrow.—

I have provided for you ; stay a while,

[*To JULIET.*

And you shall be conducted.

*Duke.* Repent you, fair one, of the sin you  
carry ?

*Juliet.* I do ; and bear the shame most pa-  
tiently.

\* P'alt'ry.

† Knotted.

‡ Attested, stamped.

§ Preserved from the corruption of the world.

\* See 2 Kings x. 27.

*Duke.* I'll teach you how you shall arraign your conscience,  
And try your penitence, if it be sound,  
Or hollowly put on.

*Juliet.* I'll gladly learn.

*Duke.* Love you the man that wrong'd you?

*Juliet.* Yes, as I love the woman that wrong'd him.

*Duke.* So then, it seems, your most offence-ful act

Was mutually committed?

*Juliet.* Mutually.

*Duke.* Then was your sin of heavier kind than his.

*Juliet.* I do confess it, and repent it, father.

*Duke.* 'Tis meet so, daughter: But lest you do repent,

As that the sin hath brought you to this shame,—  
Which sorrow is always toward ourselves, not heaven;

Showing, we'd not spare\* heaven, as we love it,  
But as we stand in fear,—

*Juliet.* I do repent me, as it is an evil;  
And take the shame with joy.

*Duke.* There rest.

Your partner, as I hear, must die to-morrow,  
And I am going with instruction to him.—

Grace go with you! *Benedicite!* [Exit.]

*Juliet.* Must die to-morrow! O injurious love,

That respites me a life, whose very comfort  
Is still a dying horror!

*Pror.* 'Tis pity of him. [Re-enter]

#### SCENE IV.—A Room in ANGELO'S House.

Enter ANGELO.

*Ang.* When I would pray and think, I think  
And pray  
To several subjects: heaven hath my empty  
words;

Whilst my invention, hearing not my tongue,  
Anchors on Isabel: Heaven in my mouth,  
As if I did but only chew his name;  
And in my heart, the strong and swelling evil  
Of my conception: The state, whereon I  
studied,

Is like a good thing, being often read,  
Grown fearful and tedious; yea, my gravity,  
Wherein (let no man hear me) I take pride,  
Could I, with boot, † change for an idle plume,  
Which the air beats for vain. O place! O form!  
How often dost thou with thy case, ‡ thy habit,  
Wrench awe from fools, and tie the wiser souls  
To thy false seeming! Blood, thou still art  
blood:

Let's write good angel on the devil's horn,  
'Tis not the devil's crest.

Enter SERVANT.

How now, who's there?

*Serv.* One Isabel, a sister,  
Desires access to you.

*Ang.* Teach her the way. [Exit SERV.]

O heavens!  
Why does my blood thus muster to my heart;  
Making both it unable for itself,  
And dispossessing all the other parts  
Of necessary fitness?

So play the foolish throngs with one that swoons,  
Come all to help him, and so stop the air  
By which he should revive: and even so  
The general, § subject to a well-wish'd king,  
Quit their own part, and in obsequious fondness  
Crowd to his presence, where their untaught  
love

Must needs appear offence.

Enter ISABELLA.

How now, fair maid?

*Isab.* I am come to know your pleasure.

*Ang.* That you might know it, would much  
better please me,  
Than to demand what 'tis. Your brother cannot  
live.

*Isab.* Even so?—Heaven keep your honour!

*Ang.* Yet may he live a while; and, it may be,  
As long as you or I: Yet he must die.

*Isab.* Under your sentence?

*Ang.* Yea.

*Isab.* When, I beseech you? that in his re-  
prieve,  
Longer, or shorter, he may so be fitted,  
That his soul sicken not.

*Ang.* Ha! Fie, these filthy vices! It were as  
good

To pardon him, that hath from nature stolen

A man already made, as to remit  
Their saucy sweetness, that do coin heaven's  
image

In stamps that are forbid: 'tis all as easy

Falsely to take away a life true made,

As to put mettle in restrained means,

To make a false one.

*Isab.* 'Tis set down so in heaven, but not in  
earth.

*Ang.* Say you so? then I shall pose you  
quickly.

Which had you rather, That the most just law,  
Now took your brother's life; or, to redeem him,  
Give up your body to such sweet uncleanness,  
As she that he hath stain'd?

*Isab.* Sir, believe this,  
I had rather give my body than my soul.

*Ang.* I talk not of your soul: Our compell'd  
sins

Stand more for number than account.

*Isab.* How say you?

*Ang.* Nay, I'll not warrant that, for I can  
speak

Against the thing I say. Answer to this;—

I, now the voice of the recorded law.

Pronounce a sentence on your brother's life:

Might there not be charity in sin.

To save this brother's life?

*Isab.* Please you to do't,

I'll take it as a peril to my soul,

It is no sin at all, but charity.

*Ang.* Pleas'd you to do't, at peril of your soul,  
Were equal poise of sin and charity.

*Isab.* That I do beg his life, if it be sin,  
Heaven, let me bear it! you granting of my  
suit,

If that be sin, I'll make it my morn prayer

To have it added to the faults of mine,

And nothing of your answer.

*Ang.* Nay, but hear me:  
Your sense pursues not mine: either you are  
ignorant,

Or seem so, craftily; and that's not good.

*Isab.* Let me be ignorant, and in nothing  
good,

But graciously to know I am no better.

*Ang.* Thus wisdom wishes to appear most  
bright,

When it doth tax itself: as these black masks

Proclaim an ensheild † beauty ten times louder

Than beauty could displayed.—But mark me;

To be received plain, I'll speak more gross:

Your brother is to die.

*Isab.* So.

*Ang.* And his offence is so, as it appears  
Accountant to the law upon that pain. ‡

*Isab.* True.

*Ang.* Admit no other way to save his life,  
(As I subscribe † not that, nor any other,

But in the loss of question, §) that you, his sister  
Finding yourself desir'd of such a person,

Whose credit with the judge, or own great  
place,

Could fetch your brother from the manacles  
Of the all-blinding law; and that there were

\* Spare to offend heaven.

† Profit.

‡ People.

§ Outside.

¶ Enshielded, covered.

‡ Agree to.

† Penalty.

§ Conversation.

No earthly mean to save him, but that either  
You must lay down the treasures of your body  
To this supposed, or else let him suffer;  
What would you do?

*Isab.* As much for my poor brother, as myself:  
That is, Were I under the terms of death,  
The impression of keen whips I'd wear as rubies,  
And strip myself to death, as to a bed  
That longing I have been sick for, ere I'd yield  
My body up to shame.

*Ang.* Then must your brother die.

*Isab.* And 'twere the cheaper way:  
Better it were, a brother die at once,  
Than that a sister, by redeeming him,  
Should die for ever.

*Ang.* Were not you then as cruel as the sentence  
That you have slander'd so?

*Isab.* Ignominy\* in ransom, and free pardon,  
Aie of two houses: lawful mercy is  
Nothing akin to foul redemption.

*Ang.* You seem'd of late to make the law a  
tyrant;

And rather prov'd the sliding of your brother  
A merit than a vice.

*Isab.* O pardon me, my lord; it oft falls out,  
To have what we'd have, we speak not what  
we mean:

I something do excuse the thing I hate,  
For his advantage that I dearly love.

*Ang.* We are all frail.

*Isab.* Else let my brother die,  
If not a feodary,† but only he,  
Owe,‡ and succeed by weakness.

*Ang.* Nay, women are frail too.

*Isab.* As, as the glasses where they view  
themselves:

Which are as easy broke as they make forms.  
Women!—Help heaven! men their creation  
mar

In profiting by them. Nay, call us ten times  
For we are soft as our complexions are, [frail  
And credulous to false prints.‡

*Ang.* I think it well.

And from this testimony of your own sex,  
(Since, I suppose, we are made to be no stronger  
Than faults may shake our frames,) let me be  
hold:—

I do arrest your words; Be that you are,  
That is, a woman; If you be more, you're none:  
If you be one, (as you are well express'd  
By all external warrants,) show it now,  
By putting on the destined livery.

*Isab.* I have no tongue but one: gentle my lord,  
Let me entreat you speak the former language.

*Ang.* Plainly conceive, I love you.

*Isab.* My brother did love Juliet; and you tell  
That he shall die for it. [me,

*Ang.* He shall not, Isabel, if you give me  
love.

*Isab.* I know, your virtue hath a licence in't,  
Which seems a little fouler than it is,  
To pluck on others.

*Ang.* Believe me, on mine honour,  
My words express my purpose.

*Isab.* Ha! little honour to be much believ'd,  
And most pernicious purpose.—Seeming, seem-  
ing!!

I will proclaim thee, Angelo; look for't:  
Sign me a present pardon for my brother,  
Or, with an outstretch'd throat, I'll tell the  
Aloud, what man thou art. [world

*Ang.* Who will believe thee, Isabel?

My unsold'd name, the austereness of my life,  
My vouch§ against you, and my place I'the  
Will so your accusation outweigh, [state,  
That you shall stifle in your own report,  
And smell of calumny. I have begun;

And now I give my sensual race the rein:  
Fit thy consent to my sharp appetite:  
Lay by all nicety, and prolixious\*\* blushes,  
That banish what they sue for; redeem thy  
brother:

By yielding up thy body to my will;  
Or else he must not only die the death,  
But thy unkindness shall his death draw out  
To lingering sufferance: answer me to-morrow,  
Or, by the affection that now guides me most,  
I'll prove a tyrant to him: As for you,  
Say what you can, my false o'erweighs your  
true. [Exit.

*Isab.* To whom shall I complain? Did I tell  
this,

Who would believe me? O perilous mouths,  
That bear in them one and the self-same tongue,  
Either of condemnation or approval!

Bidding the law make court'sv to their will;  
Hooking both right and wrong to the appetite  
To follow as it draws! I'll to my brother:  
Though he hath fallen by prompture of the  
blood,

Yet hath he in him such a mind of honour,  
That had he twenty heads to tender down  
On twenty bloody blocks, he'd yield them up,  
Before his sister should her body stoop  
To such abhor'd pollution.

Then, Isabel, live chaste, and, brother, die:  
More than our brother is our chastity.  
I'll tell him yet of Angelo's request,  
And fit his mind to death, for his soul's rest.  
[Exit.

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—A Room in the Prison.

*Enter DUKE, CLAUDIO, and PROVOST.*

*Duke.* So, then you hope of pardon from lord  
Angelo?

*Claudio.* The miserable have no other medicine,  
But only hope:

I have hope to live, and am prepar'd to die.

*Duke.* Be absolute\* for death; either death,  
or life,

Shall thereby be the sweeter. Reason thus with  
life:—

If I do lose thee, I do lose a thing  
That none but fools would keep: a breath thou  
(servile to all the skiey influences,) [art,

That dost this habitation, where thou keep'st,  
Hourly afflict: mercly, thou art death's fool;  
For him thou labour'st by thy flight to shun,  
And yet run'st toward him still: Thou art not  
noble;

For all the accommodations that thou bear'st,  
Are ours'd by baseness. Thou art by no means  
valiant;

For thou dost fear the soft and tender fork  
Of a poor worm: Thy best of rest is sleep,  
And that thou oft provok'st; yet grossly fear'st  
Thy death, which is no more. Thou art not  
thyself;

For thou exist'st on many a thousand grains  
That issue out of dust: Happy thou art not;  
For what thou hast not, still thou striv'st to get;  
And what thou hast, forget'st: Thou art not  
certain;

For thy complexion shifts to strange effects, +  
After the moon: if thou art rich, thou art poor;  
For, like an ass, whose back with ingots bows,  
Thou bear'st thy heavy riches but a journey,  
And death unloads thee: Friend hast thou none:  
For thine own bowels, which do call thee sire,  
The mere effusion of thy proper joints,  
Do curse the gout, serpigo,‡ and the rheum,  
For ending thee no sooner: Thou hast nor youth,  
nor age;

But, as it were, an after-dinner's sleep,  
Dreaming on both; for all thy blessed youth  
Becomes as aged, and doth beg the alms  
Of palsied old;§ and when thou art old, and  
rich,

\* Ignominy. † Associate. ‡ Own. § Impressions.  
¶ H<sub>2</sub> poetry. ¶ Attestation. \*\* Reluctant.

\* Determined. † Leperous eruptions.  
‡ Affects, affection. § Old age.

Thou hast neither heat, affection, limb, nor beauty,

To make thy riches pleasant. What's yet in this, That bears the name of life? yet in this life Lie hid more thousand deaths; yet death we That makes these odds all even. [fear,

*Claud.* I humbly thank you.  
To sue to live, I find, I seek to die:  
And, seeking death, find life: let it come on.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

*Isab.* What, ho! Peace here; grace and good company!

*Prov.* Who's there? come in; the wish deserves a welcome.

*Duke.* Dear Sir, ere long I'll visit you again.  
*Claud.* Most holy Sir, I thank you.

*Isab.* My business is a word or two with Claudio.

*Prov.* And very welcome. Look, signior, here's your sister.

*Duke.* Provost, a word with you.

*Prov.* As many as you please.

*Duke.* Bring them to speak, where I may be conceal'd.

Yet hear them. [*Exeunt DUKE and PROVOST.*]

*Claud.* Now, sister, what's the comfort?

*Isab.* Why, as all comforts are; most good in deed:

Lord Angelo, having affairs to heaven, Intends you for a swift ambassador, Where you shall be an everlasting leiger;\* Therefore your best appointment† make with To-morrow you set on. [speed;

*Claud.* Is there no remedy?

*Isab.* None, but such remedy, as to save a head,

To cleave a heart in twain.

*Claud.* But is there any?

*Isab.* Yes, brother, you may live; There is a devilish mercy in the judge, If you'll implore it, that will free your life, But fetter you till death.

*Claud.* Perpetual durance?

*Isab.* Ay, just, perpetual durance; a restraint, Though all the world's vastitude; you had, To a determin'd scope.

*Claud.* But in what nature?

*Isab.* In such a one as (you consenting to't) Would bark your honour from that trunk you And leave you naked. [bear,

*Claud.* Let me know the point.

*Isab.* Oh! I do fear thee, Claudio; and I quake Lest thou a feverous life should'st entertain, And six or seven winters more respect Than a perpetual honour. Darest thou die? The sense of death is most in apprehension; And the poor beetle, that we tread upon, In corporal sufferance finds a pang as great As when a giant dies.

*Claud.* Why give you me this shame? Think you I can a resolution fetch From flowery tenderness? If I must die, I will encounter darkness as a bride, And hug in it mine arms.

*Isab.* There spake my brother; there my father's grave

Did utter forth a voice! Yes, thou must die: Thou art too noble to conserve a life In base appliances. This outward-sainted deputy,—

Whose settled visage and deliberate word Nips youth i'the head, and follies doth enmew,‡ As falcon doth the fowl,—is yet a devil; His fifth withing being cast, he would appear A pond as deep as hell.

*Claud.* The princely Angelo?

*Isab.* Oh! tis the cunning livery of hell, The damndest, body to invest and cover In princely guards!‡ Dost thou think, Claudio, If I would yield him my virginity, Thou might'st be freed.

*Claud.* O heavens! it cannot be.

*Isab.* Yes, he would give it thee, from this rank offence, So to offend him still: This night's the time That I should do what I abhor to name. Or else thou diest to-morrow.

*Claud.* Thou shalt not do't.

*Isab.* Oh! were it but my life, I'd throw it down for your deliverance As frankly\* as a pin.

*Claud.* Thanks, dear Isabel.

*Isab.* Be ready, Claudio, for your death to-morrow.

*Claud.* Yes.—Has he affections in him, That thus can make him bite the law by the nose, When he would force it? Sure it is no sin; Or of the deadly seven it is the least.

*Isab.* Which is the least?

*Claud.* If it were damnable, he, being so wise, Why, would he for the momentary trick Be perdurably† sin'd?—O Isabel!

*Isab.* What says my brother?

*Claud.* Death is a fearful thing.

*Isab.* And shamed like a hateful.

*Claud.* Ay, but to die, and go we know not To lie in cold obstruction, and to rot: [where;

This sensible warm motion to become A kneaded clod; and the delighted spirit To bathe in fiery floods, or to reside In thrilling regions of thick-ribbed ice; To be imprison'd in the viewless winds, And blown with restless violence round about The pendent world; or to be worse than worst Of those, that lawless and incertain thoughts Imagine howling!—tis too horrible! The weariest and most toilsome wordly life That age, ache, penury, and imprisonment Can lay on nature, is a paradise To what we fear of death.

*Isab.* Alas! alas!

*Claud.* Sweet sister let me live: What sin you do to save a brother's life, Nature dispenses with the deed so far, That it becomes a virtue.

*Isab.* O you-heast!

O faithless coward! O dishonest wretch! Wilt thou be made a man out of my vice? Is't not a kind of incest, to take life From thine own sister's shame? What should I think?

Heaven shield, my mother play'd my father fair! For such a warped slip of wilderness? Ne'er issu'd from his blood. Take my defiance: Die; perish! I might but my bending down Reprieve thee from thy fate, it should proceed: I pray a thousand prayers for thy death. No word to save thee.

*Claud.* Nay, hear me, Isabel.

*Isab.* O fie, fie, fie!

Thy sin's not accidental, but a trade: Mercy to thee would prove itself a bawd; 'Tis best that thou diest quickly. [Going.

*Claud.* O hear me, Isabella.

*Re-enter Duke.*

*Duke.* Vouchsafe a word, young sister, but one word.

*Isab.* What is your will?

*Duke.* Might you dispense with your leisure, I would by and by have some speech with you: the satisfaction I would require, is likewise your own benefit.

*Isab.* I have no superfluous leisure; my stay must be stolen out of other affairs; but I will attend you a while.

*Duke.* [To CLAUDIO, aside.] Son, I have overheard what hath past between you and your sister. Angelo had never the purpose to corrupt her; only he hath made an essay of her virtue, to practise his judgment with the disposition of natures: she, having the truth of honour in her, hath made him that gracious de-

\* Resident. † Preparation. ‡ Vastness of extent. § Lured robes.

\* Freely. † Loosely. ‡ Invisible. § Wildness. ¶ Refusal. ¶ An established habit.

nial which he is most glad to receive: I am confessor to Angelo, and I know this to be true; therefore prepare yourself to death: Do not satisfy your resolution with hopes that are fallible: to-morrow you must die; go to your knees, and make ready.

*Claud.* Let me ask my sister pardon. I am so out of love with life, that I will use to be glad of it.

*Duke.* Hold \* you there: Farewell.

[*Exit CLAUDIO.*]

*Re-enter PROVOST.*

*Provost,* a word with you.

*Prov.* What's your will, father † ?

*Duke.* That now you are come, you will be gone: Leave me a while with the maid: my mind promises with my habit, no loss shall touch her by my company.

*Prov.* In good time.

[*Exit PROVOST.*]

*Duke.* The hand that hath made your fair, hath made you good: the goodness, that is cheap in beauty, makes beauty brief in goodness; but grace, being the soul of your complexion, should keep the body of it ever fair. The assault, that Angelo hath made to you, fortune hath convey'd to my understanding; and, but that frailty hath examples for his falling, I should wonder at Angelo. How would you do to content this substitute, and to save your brother † ?

*Isab.* I am now going to resolve him: I had rather my brother die by the law, than my son should be unlawfully born. But oh! how much is the good duke deceived in Angelo! If ever he return, and I can speak to him, I will open my lips in vain, or discover his government.

*Duke.* That shall not be much amiss: Yet, as the matter now stands, he will avoid your accusation; he made trial of you only.—Therefore, fasten your ear on my advisings; to the love I have in doing good, a remedy presents itself. I do make myself believe, that you may most uprightly do a poor wronged lady a merited benefit; redeem your brother from the angry law; do no stain to your own gracious person; and much please the absent duke, if, peradventure, he shall ever return to have bearing of this business.

*Isab.* Let me hear you speak further; I have spirit to do any thing that appears not foul in the truth of my spirit.

*Duke.* Virtue is bold, and goodness never fearful. Have you not heard speak of Mariana the sister of Frederick, the great soldier, who miscarried at sea † ?

*Isab.* I have heard of the lady, and good words went with her name.

*Duke.* Her should this Angelo have married; was affianced to her by oath, and the nuptial appointed: between which time of the contract, and limit of the solemnity, her brother Frederick was wrecked at sea, having in that perish'd vessel the dowry of his sister. But mark, how heavily this befall to the poor gentlewoman: there she lost a noble and renowned brother, in his love toward her ever most kind and natural; with him the portion and sinew of her fortune, her marriage-dowry; with both, her combinate † husband, this well-seeming Angelo.

*Isab.* Can this be so? Did Angelo so leave her † ?

*Duke.* Left her in her tears, and dry'd not one of them with his comfort; swallowed his vows whole, pretending, in her, discoveries of dishonour: in few, bestow'd † her on her own lamentation, which she yet wears for his sake; and he, a marble to her tears, is washed with them, but relents not.

*Isab.* What a merit were it in death, to take this poor maid from the world! What corrup-

tion in this life, that it will let this man live!—But how out of this can she avail?

*Duke.* It is a rupture that you may easily heal: and the cure of it not only saves your brother, but keeps you from dishonour in doing it.

*Isab.* Show me how, good father.

*Duke.* This fore-named maid hath yet in her the continuance of her first affection; his unjust unkindness, that in all reason should have quenched her love, hath, like an impediment in the current, made it more violent and murly. Go you to Angelo; answer his requiring with a plausible obedience; agree with his demands to the point: only refer \* yourself to this advantage,—first, that your stay with him may not be long; that the time may have all shadow and silence in it; and the place answer to convenience: this being granted in course, now follows all. We shall advise this wronged maid to stand up your appointment, go in your place: if the encounter acknowledge itself hereafter, it may compel him to her recompense: and here, by this, is your brother saved, your honour untainted, the poor Mariana advantaged, and the corrupt deputy scaled. † The maid will I frame, and make fit for his attempt. If you think well to carry this as you may, the doubtiness of the benefit defends the deceit from reproof. What think you of it?

*Isab.* The image of it gives me content already; and, I trust, it will grow to a most prosperous perfection.

*Duke.* It lies much in your holding up: Haste you speedily to Angelo; if for this night he entreat you to his bed, give him promise of satisfaction. I will presently to St. Luke's; there, at the moated grange, † resides this dejected Mariana: At that place call upon me and despatch with Angelo, that it may be quickly.

*Isab.* I thank you for this comfort: Fare you well, good father.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE II.—*The Street before the Prison.*

*Enter DUKE, as a Friar; to him ELBOW, CLOWN, and Officers.*

*Elb.* Nay, if there be no remedy for it, but that you will needs buy and sell men and women like beasts, we shall have all the world drunk brown and white bastard. †

*Duke.* O heavens! what stuff is here † ?

*Clo.* 'Twas never merry world, since, of two usuries, the merriest was put down, and the worse allow'd by order of law a furr'd gown to keep him warm; and furr'd with fox and lambskins too, to signify, that craft, being richer than innocence, stands for the facing.

*Elb.* Come your way, Sir:—Bless you, good father friar.

*Duke.* And you, good brother father: What offence hath this man made you, Sir † ?

*Elb.* Marry, Sir, he hath offended the law; and, Sir, we take him to be a thief too, Sir; for we have found upon him, Sir, a strange pick-lock, † which we have sent to the deputy.

*Duke.* Fie, sirrah; a bawd, a wicked bawd!

The evil that thou caustest to be done, That is thy means to live: Do thou but think What 'tis to cram a maw, or clothe a back, From such a filthy vice: say to thyself,—From their abominable and beastly touches I drink, I eat, array myself, and live.

Caust thou believe thy living is a life, So stinkingly depending † Go, mend go, mend.

*Clo.* Indeed, it does stink in some sort, Sir; but yet, Sir, I would prove—

*Duke.* Nay, if the devil have given thee proofs for sin,

Thou wilt prove his. Take him to prison, officer;

\* Continue in that resolution.

† Betrothed.

‡ Gave her up to her sorrows.

\* Have recourse to  
‡ A solitary farm house

Over-reached.

§ A sweet wine.

¶ For a Spaniard padlock.



Correction and instruction must both work,  
Ere this rude beast will profit.

*Elb.* He must before the deputy, Sir; he has given him warning: the deputy cannot abide a whoremaster: if he be a whoremonger, and comes before him, he were as good go a mile on his errand.

*Duke.* That we were all, as some would seem to be,  
Free from our faults, as faults from seeming,  
free!

*Enter Lucio.*

*Elb.* His neck will come to your waist, a cord,\* Sir.

*Clo.* I spy comfort; I cry bail: Here's a gentleman, and a friend of mine.

*Lucio.* How now, noble Pompey? What, at the heels of Caesar? Art thou led in triumph? What, is there none of Pygmalion's images, newly made woman, to be had now, for putting the hand in the pocket and extracting it clutch'd? What reply? Ha? What say'st thou to this tune, matter, and method? Is't not drownd i'the last rain? Ha? What say'st thou, trot? Is the world as it was, man? Which is the way? Is it sad, and few words? Or how? The trick of it?

*Duke.* Still thus, and thus! still worse!

*Lucio.* How doth my dear morsel, thy mistress? Procures she still? Ha?

*Clo.* Troth, Sir, she hath eaten up all her beef, and she is herself in the tub.†

*Lucio.* Why, 'tis good; it is the right of it; it must be so: Ever your fresh whore, and your powder'd bawd: An unshann'd consequence; it must be so: Art going to prison, Pompey?

*Clo.* Yes, faith, Sir.

*Lucio.* Why 'tis not amiss, Pompey: Farewell: Go; say, I sent thee thither. For debt, Pompey? Or how?

*Elb.* For being a bawd, for being a bawd.

*Lucio.* Well, then imprison him: If imprisonment be the due of a bawd, why, 'tis his right: Bawd is he, doubtless, and of antiquity too; bawd-boin. Farewell, good Pompey: Commend me to the prison, Pompey: You will turn good husband now, Pompey; you will keep the house.‡

*Clo.* I hope, Sir, your good worship will be my bail.

*Lucio.* No, indeed, will I not, Pompey; it is not the wear.§ I will pray, Pompey, to increase your bondage: if you take it not patiently, why, your mettle is the more: Adieu, trusty Pompey.—Bless you, friar.

*Duke.* And you.

*Lucio.* Does Bridget paint still, Pompey? Ha?

*Elb.* Come your ways, Sir; come.

*Clo.* You will not bail me, then, Sir?

*Lucio.* Then, Pompey? nor now.—What news abroad, friar? What news?

*Elb.* Come your ways, Sir; come.

*Lucio.* Go,—to kennel, Pompey, go:

[*Ereunt ELBOW, CLOWN, and Officers.*]  
What news, friar, of the duke?

*Duke.* I know none: Can you tell me of any?

*Lucio.* Some say, he is with the emperor of Russia; other some, he is in Rome: But where is he, think you?

*Duke.* I know not where: But wheresoever, I wish him well.

*Lucio.* It was a mad fantastical trick of him, to steal from the state, and usurp the beggary he was never born to. Lord Angelo dukes it well in his absence; he puts transgression to't.

*Duke.* He does well in't.

*Lucio.* A little more lenity to lechery would do no harm in him: something too crabbed that way, friar.

*Duke.* It is too general a vice, and severity must cure it.

*Lucio.* Yes, in good sooth, the vice is of a great kindred; it is well allied: but it is impossible to extirp it quite, friar, till eating and drinking be put down. They say, this Angelo was not made by man and woman, after the downright way of creation: is it true, think you?

*Duke.* How should he be made then?

*Lucio.* Some report, a sea-maid spawn'd him:—Some, that he was begot between two stock-fishes:—But it is certain, that when he makes water, his urine is congeal'd ice; that I know to be true; and he is a motion\* ungenerative, that's infallible.

*Duke.* You are pleasant, Sir; and speak apace.

*Lucio.* Why, what a ruthless thing is this in him, for the rebellion of a cod-piece, to take away the life of a man? Would the duke, that is absent, have done this? Ere he would have hang'd a man for the getting a hundred bastards, he would have paid for the nursing a thousand: He had some feeling of the sport; he knew the service, and that instructed him to mercy.

*Duke.* I never heard the absent duke much detected† for women; he was not inclined that way.

*Lucio.* O Sir, you are deceived.

*Duke.* 'Tis not possible.

*Lucio.* Who? not the duke? yes, your beggar of fifty;—and his use was, to put a ducat in her clack-dish: the duke had crochets in him: He would be drunk too; that let me inform you.

*Duke.* You do him wrong, surely.

*Lucio.* Sir, I was an inward of his: A shv fellow was the duke: and, I believe, I know the cause of his withdrawing.

*Duke.* What, I pry'thee, might be the cause?

*Lucio.* No,—pardon us,—'tis a secret must be lock'd within the teeth and the lips: but this I can let you understand,—The greater file; of the subject held the duke to be wise.

*Duke.* Wise? why, no question but he was.

*Lucio.* A very superficial, ignorant, unworthing fellow.

*Duke.* Either this is envy in you, folly, or mistaking; the very stream of his life, and the business he hath belin'd,‡ must, upon a warranted need, give him a better proclamation. Let him be but testimonied in his own bringings forth, and he shall appear to the envious, a scholar, a statesman, and a soldier: Therefore, you speak unskilfully; or, if your knowledge be more, it is much darken'd in your malice.

*Lucio.* Sir, I know him, and I love him.

*Duke.* Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love.

*Lucio.* Come, Sir, I know what I know.

*Duke.* I can hardly believe that, since you know not what you speak. But, if ever the duke return, (as our prayers are he may,) let me desire you to make your answer before him: if it be honest you have spoke, you have courage to maintain it: I am bound to call upon you; and, I pray you, your name?

*Lucio.* Sir, my name is Lucio; well known to the duke.

*Duke.* He shall know you better, Sir, if I may live to report you.

*Lucio.* I fear you not.

*Duke.* Oh! you hope the duke will return no more; or you imagine me too unhurtful an opposite.¶ But, indeed, I can do you little harm; you'll forswear this again.

*Lucio.* I'll be hang'd first: thou art deceived in me, friar. But no more of this; Caust thou tell, if Claudio die to-morrow, or no?

*Duke.* Why should he die, Sir?

\* Tied like your waist with a rope.  
† Powder'd hair. ‡ Stay at home.  
§ Fashion

\* Puppet.  
† The majority of his subject.  
‡ Guided.  
§ Suspected.  
¶ Inconsiderate.  
¶ Opponent.



Enter ISABELLA.

*Duke.* I do constantly believe you:—The time is come, even now. I shall crave your forbearance a little: may be, I will call upon you anon, for some advantage to yourself.

*Mari.* I am always bound to you. [Exit.]

*Duke.* Very well met, and welcome.

What is the news from this good deputy?

*Isab.* He hath a garden circummur'd\* with brick,  
Whose western side is with a vineyard back'd;  
And to that vineyard is a ploughed gate,  
That makes his opening with this bigger key:  
This other doth command a little door,  
Which from the vineyard to the garden leads;  
There have I made my promise to call on him,  
Upon the heavy middle of the night.

*Duke.* But shall you on your knowledge find this way?

*Isab.* I have ta'en a due and wary note upon't;

With whispering and most guilty diligence,  
In action all of precept, he did show me  
The way twice o'er.

*Duke.* Are there no other tokens  
Between you 'greed, concerning her observance?

*Isab.* No, none, but only a repair I the dark;  
And that I have possess'd; him, my most stay  
Can be but brief: for I have made him know,  
I have a servant comes with me along,  
That stays 'pon me; whose persuasion is,  
I come about my brother.

*Duke.* 'Tis well borne up.  
I have not yet made known to Mariana  
A word of this:—What, ho! within! come forth!

Re-enter MARIANA.

I pray you, be acquainted with this maid;  
She comes to do you good.

*Isab.* I do desire the like.

*Duke.* Do you persuade yourself that I respect you?

*Mari.* Good friar, I know you do; and have found it.

*Duke.* Take then this your companion by the hand,

Who hath a story ready for your ear:  
I shall attend your leisure; but make haste;  
The vaporous night approaches.

*Mari.* Will't please you walk aside?

[Exit MARIANA and ISABELLA.]

*Duke.* O place and greatness, millions of false eyes

Are struck upon thee! volumes of report  
Run with these false and most contrarious  
quests!

Upon thy doings! thousand 'scapes of wit  
Make thee the father of their idle dream,  
And rack thee in their fancies!—Welcome! How agreed!

Re-enter MARIANA and ISABELLA.

*Isab.* She'll take the enterprise upon her, father,  
If you advise it.

*Duke.* It is not my consent,  
But my entreaty too.

*Isab.* Little have you to say,  
When you depart from him, but, soft and low,  
Remember now my brother.

*Mari.* Fear me not.

*Duke.* Nor, gentle daughter, fear you not at all;

He is your husband on a pre-contract:  
To brine you this together, 'tis no sin;  
Sith 'tis the justice of your title to him  
Doth flourish at the deceit. Come, let us go;  
Our corn's to reap, for yet our tithe's to sow.

[Exit.]

SCENE II.—A Room in the Prison.

Enter PROVOST and CLOWN.

*Prov.* Come hither, sirrah: Can you cut off a man's head?

*Clo.* If the man be a bachelor, Sir, I can; but if he be a married man, he is his wife's head, and I can never cut off a woman's head.

*Prov.* Come, Sir, leave me your snatches, and yield me a direct answer. To-morrow morning are to die Claudio and Barnardine: Here is in our prison a common executioner, who in his office lacks a helper: If you will take it on you to assist him, it shall redeem you from your gyves; \* If not, you shall have your full time of imprisonment, and your deliverance with an unpitied whipping; for you have been a notorious bawd.

*Clo.* Sir, I have been an unlawful bawd, time out of mind: but yet I will be content to be a lawful hangman. I would be glad to receive some instruction from my fellow-partner.

*Prov.* What ho, Abhorson! Where's Abhorson, there?

Enter ABHORSON.

*Abhor.* Do you call, Sir?

*Prov.* Sirrah, here's a fellow will help you to-morrow in your execution: If you think it meet, compound with him by the year, and let him abide here with you; if not, use him for the present, and dismiss him: He cannot plead his estimation with you; he hath been a bawd.

*Abhor.* A bawd, Sir? Fie upon him, he will discredit our mystery.†

*Prov.* Go to, Sir; you weigh equally: a feather will turn the scale. [Exit.]

*Clo.* Pray, Sir, by your good favour, (for, surely, Sir, a good favour; you have, but that you have a hanging look,) do you call, Sir, your occupation a mystery?

*Abhor.* Ay, Sir; a mystery.

*Clo.* Painting, Sir, I have heard say, is a mystery; and your whores, Sir, being members of my occupation, using painting, do prove my occupation a mystery: but what mystery there should be in hanging, if I should be hang'd, I cannot imagine.

*Abhor.* Sir, it is a mystery.

*Clo.* Proof.

*Abhor.* Every true man's apparel fits your thief: If it be too little for your thief, your true man thinks it big enough; if it be too big for your thief, your thief thinks it little enough: so every true man's apparel fits your thief.

Re-enter PROVOST.

*Prov.* Are you agreed?

*Clo.* Sir, I will serve him; for I do find your hangman is a more penitent trade than your bawd; he doth oftener ask forgiveness.

*Prov.* You, sirrah, provide your block and your axe, to-morrow four o'clock.

*Abhor.* Come on, bawd; I will instruct thee in my trade; follow.

*Clo.* I do desire to learn, Sir; and, I hope, if you have occasion to use me for your own turn, you shall find me rare:‡ for, truly Sir, for your kindness, I owe you a good turn.

*Prov.* Call hither Barnardine and Claudio.

[Exit CLOWN and ABHORSON.]

One has my pity; not a jot the other,  
Being a murderer, though he were my brother.

Enter CLAUDIO.

Look, here's the warrant, Claudio, for thy death:  
'Tis now dead midnight, and by eight to-morrow  
Thou must be made immortal. Where's Barnardine?

*Claud.* As fast lock'd up in sleep, as guiltless labour

\* Walled round.  
† Planked, wooden.  
‡ Wits.  
§ Inquiries, inquiries.  
¶ Salutes.  
\*\* Since.  
†† Gild, or varnish over.

\* Fetters.  
‡ Countenance.  
§ Trade.  
¶ Flourish.

When it lies starkly \* In the traveller's bones :  
He will not wake.

*Prov.* Who can do good on him ?  
Well, go, prepare yourself. But hark, what  
noise ? *[Knocking within.]*  
Heaven give your spirits comfort !

*[Exit CLAUDIO.]*

By and by :—

I hope it is some pardon, or reprove,  
For the most gentle Claudio.—Welcome, father.

*Enter DUKE.*

*Duke.* The best and wholesomest spirits of  
the night  
Envelope you, good Provost ! Who call'd here of  
late ?

*Prov.* None, since the curfew rung.

*Duke.* Not Isabel ?

*Prov.* No.

*Duke.* They will then, ere't be long.

*Prov.* What comfort is for Claudio ?

*Duke.* There's some in hope.

*Prov.* It is a bitter deputy.

*Duke.* Not so, not so ; his life is parallel'd  
Even with the stroke and line of his great  
justice ;

He doth with holy abstinence subdue  
That in himself, which he spurs on his power  
To quality † in others : were he meal'd ‡  
With that which he corrects, then were he ty-  
rannous ; *[come.]*

But this being so, he's just.—Now are they  
*[Knocking within — Provost goes out.]*  
This is a gentle provost : Seldom, when  
The steed gaoles the friend of men.—  
How now ? What noise ? That spirit's possess'd  
with haste,

That wounds the unslinking postern with these  
strokes.

*PROVOST returns, speaking to one at the  
door.*

*Prov.* There he must stay, until the officer  
Arise to let him in ; he is call'd up.

*Duke.* Have you no countermend for Claudio  
But he must die to-morrow ? *[yet.]*

*Prov.* None, Sir, none.

*Duke.* As near the dawning, Provost, as it is,  
You shall hear more ere morning.

*Prov.* Happily, ‡

You something know ; yet, I believe, there comes  
No countermend ; no such example have we :  
Besides, upon the very siege § of justice,  
Lord Angelo hath to the public ear  
Profess'd the contrary.

*Enter a MESSENGER.*

*Duke.* This is his lordship's man.

*Prov.* And here comes Claudio's pardon.

*Mess.* My lord hath sent you this note ; and  
by me this further charge, that you swerve not  
from the smallest article of it, neither in time,  
matter, or other circumstance. Good morrow ;  
tor, as I take it, it is almost day.

*Prov.* I shall obey him. *[Exit MESSENGER.]*

*Duke.* This is his pardon ; purchas'd by such  
sin, *[Aside.]*

For which the pardoners himself is in :  
Hence hath offence his quick celerity,  
When it is borne in high authority :  
When vice makes mercy, mercy's so extended,  
That for the fault's love, is the offender friend—  
Now, Sir, what news ? *[ed.—]*

*Prov.* I told you : Lord Angelo, be-like,  
thinning me remiss in mine office, awakens me  
with this unwonted putting on : ¶ methinks,  
strangely ; for he hath not used it before.

*Duke.* Pray you, let's hear.

*Prov.* *[Reads.]* *Whatsoever you may hear  
to the contrary, let Claudio be executed by  
four of the clock ; and, in the afternoon,*

*Barnardine for my better satisfaction, let  
me have Claudio's head sent me by five. Let  
this be duly performed ; with a thought, that  
more depends on it than we must yet deliver.  
Thus fail not to do your office, as you will  
answer it at your peril.*

What say you to this, Sir ?

*Duke.* What is that Barnardine, who is to be  
executed in the afternoon ?

*Prov.* A Bohemian born ; but here nursed up  
and bred : one that is a prisoner nine years old.\*

*Duke.* How came it, that the absent duke  
had not either deliver'd him to his liberty, or  
executed him ? I have heard, it was ever his  
manner to do so.

*Prov.* His friends still wrought reprieves for  
him : And, indeed, his fact, till now in the  
government of lord Angelo, came not to an un-  
doubtful proof.

*Duke.* Is it now apparent ?

*Prov.* Most manifest, and not denied by him-  
self.

*Duke.* Hath he borne himself penitently in  
prison ? How seems he to be touch'd ?

*Prov.* A man that apprehends death no more  
dreadfully, but as a drunken sleep ; careless,  
reckless, and fearless of what's past, present, or  
to come ; insensible of mortality, and desperately  
mortal.

*Duke.* He wants advice.

*Prov.* He will hear none : he hath evermore  
had the liberty of the prison : give him leave  
to escape hence, he would not : drunk many  
times a day, if not many days entirely drunk.  
We have very often awaked him, as if to carry  
him to execution, and show'd him a seeming  
warrant for it : it hath not moved him at all.

*Duke.* More of him anon. There is written  
in your brow, Provost, honesty and constancy :  
if I read it not truly, my ancient skill beguiles  
me ; but in the boldness of my cunning, I will lay  
myself in hazard. Claudio, whom here you have  
a warrant to execute, is no greater forfeit to the  
law than Angelo who hath sentenced him : To  
make you understand this in a manifested effect,  
I crave but four days respite ; for the which  
you are to do me both a present and a danger-  
ous courtesy.

*Prov.* Pray, Sir, in what ?

*Duke.* In the delaying death.

*Prov.* Alack ! how may I do it ? having the  
hour limited ; and an express command, under  
penalty, to deliver his head in view of Angelo ?  
I may make my case as Claudio's, to cross this  
in the smallest.

*Duke.* By the vow of mine order, I warrant  
you, if my instructions may be your guide. Let  
this Barnardine be this morning executed, and  
his head borne to Angelo.

*Prov.* Angelo hath seen them both, and will  
discover the favour. †

*Duke.* O, death's a great dissembler : and you  
may add to it. Shave the head, and tie the  
beard ; and say, it was the desire of the peni-  
tent to be so shaven before his death : You know,  
the course is common. If any thing fall to you  
upon this, more than thanks and good fortune,  
by the saint whom I profess, I will plead against  
it with my life.

*Prov.* Pardon me, good father ; it is against  
my oath.

*Duke.* Were you sworn to the duke, or to the  
deputy ?

*Prov.* To him, and to his substitutes.

*Duke.* You will think you have made no of-  
fence, if the duke avouch the justice of your  
dealing ?

*Prov.* But what likelihood is in that ?

*Duke.* Not a resemblance, but a certainty.  
Yet since I see you fearful, that neither my  
coat, integrity, nor my persuasion, can with  
ease attempt you, I will go further than I  
meant, to pluck all fears out of you. Look

\* Stiffly.  
† Deified.  
‡ Deat.

† Moderate.  
‡ Perhaps.  
¶ Spur, incitement

\* Nine years in prison.

† Countenance.

you, Sir, here is the hand and seal of the duke. You know the character, I doubt not; and the signet is not strange to you.

*Prov.* I know them both.

*Duke.* The contents of this is the return of the duke; you shall anon over-read it at your pleasure; where you shall find, within these two days he will be here. This is a thing, that Angelo knows not: for he this very day receives letters of strange tenor; perchance, of the duke's death; perchance, entering into some monastery: but, by chance, nothing of what is writ. Look, the unfolding star calls up the shepherd; Put not yourself into amazement, how these things should be: all difficulties are but easy when they are known. Call your executioner, and off with Barnardine's head: I will give him a present shrift, and advise him for a better place. Yet you are amazed; but this shall absolutely resolve you. Come away; it is almost clear dawn. *[Exit.]*

SCENE III.—Another Room in the same.

*Enter CLOWN.*

*Clo.* I am as well acquainted here, as I was in our house of profession: one would think, it were mistress Over-done's own house, for here be many of her old customers. First, here's young master Kash; he's in for a commodity of brown paper and old ginger, ninescore and seventeen pounds; of which he made five marks ready money: marry, then, ginger was not much in request, for the old women were all dead. Then is there here one master Caper, at the suit of master Three-pile the mercer, for some four suits of peach-colour'd satin, which now peaches him a beggar. Then have we here young Dizz, and young master Deep-vow, and master Copper-spur, and master Starvelackey the rapiet and dagger-man, and young Drop-heir that kill'd iusty Pudding, and master Fortright the tilter, and brave master Shoe-tie the great traveller, and wild Half-can that stabb'd Pots, and, I think, forty more; all great doers in our trade, and are now for the Lord's sake.

*Enter ABHORSON.*

*Abhor.* Sirrah, bring Barnardine hither.

*Clo.* Master Barnardine! you must rise and be hang'd, master Barnardine!

*Abhor.* What, ho, Barnardine!

*Barnar.* *[Within.]* A pox o' your throats! Who makes that noise there? What are you?

*Clo.* Your friends, Sir; the hangman: you must be so good, Sir, to rise and be put to death.

*Barnar.* *[Within.]* Away, you rogue, away; I am sleepy.

*Abhor.* Tell him, he must awake, and that quickly too.

*Clo.* Pray, master Barnardine, awake till you are executed, and sleep afterwards.

*Abhor.* Go in to him, and fetch him out.

*Clo.* He is coming, Sir, he is coming; I hear his straw rustle.

*Enter BARNARDINE.*

*Abhor.* Is the axe upon the block, sirrah?

*Clo.* Very ready, Sir.

*Barnar.* How now, Abhorson? what's the news with you?

*Abhor.* Truly, Sir, I would desire you to clap up to your prayers; for, look you, the warrant's come.

*Barnar.* You rogue, I have been drinking all night, I am not fitted for't.

*Clo.* Oh! the better, Sir; for he that drinks all night, and is hang'd betimes in the morning, may sleep the sounder all the next day.

*Enter DUKE.*

*Abhor.* Look you, Sir, here comes your ghostly father; Do we jest now think you?

*Duke.* Sir, induced by my charity, and hearing how hastily you are to depart, I am come to advise you, comfort you, and pray with you.

*Barnar.* Friar, not I; I have been drinking hard all night, and I will have more time to prepare me, or they shall beat out my brains with billets: I will not consent to die this day, that's certain.

*Duke.* O Sir, you must: and therefore, I beseech you, Look forward on the journey you shall go.

*Barnar.* I swear I will not die to-day for any man's persuasion.

*Duke.* But hear you,——

*Barnar.* Not a word; if you have any thing to say to me, come to my ward; for thence will not I to-day. *[Exit.]*

*Enter PROVOST.*

*Duke.* Unfit to live or die. O gravel heart!—After him, fellows; bring him to the block.

*[Exit ABHORSON and CLOWN.]*

*Prov.* Now, Sir, how do you find the prisoner?

*Duke.* A creature unprepared, unmeet for death:

And, to transport him in the mind he is, Were damnable.

*Prov.* Here in the prison, father, There died this morning of a cruel fever One Ragozine, a most notorious pirate, A man of Claudio's years, his beard and head, Just of his colour: What if we do omit This reprobate, till he were well inclin'd; And satisfy the deputy with the visage Of Ragozine, more like to Claudio?

*Duke.* Oh! 'tis an accident that heaven provides;

Despatch it presently; the hour draws on

Pretend'd by Angelo: See this be done,

And sent according to command; while I Persuade this rude wretch willingly to die.

*Prov.* This shall be done, good father, presently.

But Barnardine must die this afternoon:

And how shall we continue Claudio,

To save him from the danger that might come, If he were known alive?

*Duke.* Let this be done;—Put them in secret Both Barnardine and Claudio: Ere twice 't holds, The sun hath made his journal greeting to The under generation,\* you shall find Your safety manifested.

*Prov.* I am your free dependant.

*Duke.* Quick, despatch,

And send the head to Angelo. *[Exit PROVOST.]*

Now will I write letters to Angelo,—

The provost, he shall bear them, whose contents

Shall witness to him, I am near at home;

And that, by great injunctions, I am bound

To enter publicly to him, I'll desire

To meet me at the consecrated fount,

A league below the city; and from thence,

By cold gradation and well-balanced form,

We shall proceed with Angelo.

*Re-enter PROVOST.*

*Prov.* Here is the head; I'll carry it myself.

*Duke.* Convenient is it: Make a swift return;

For I would commune with you of such things

That want no ear but yours.

*Prov.* I'll make all speed. *[Exit]*

*Isab.* *[Within.]* Peace, ho, be here!

*Duke.* The tongue of Isabel!—She's come to know,

If yet her brother's pardon be come hither:

But I will keep her ignorant of her good,

To make her heavenly comforts of despair,

When it is least expected.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

*Isab.* Ho, by your leave.

\* The antipodes.

*Duke.* Good morning to you, fair and gracious daughter.

*Isab.* The better given me by so holy a man. Hath yet the deputy sent my brother's pardon?

*Duke.* He hath released him, Isabel, from the world;

His head is off, and sent to Angelo.

*Isab.* Nay, but it is not so.

*Duke.* It is no other;

Show your wisdom, daughter, in your close patience.

*Isab.* Oh! I will to him, and pluck out his eyes.

*Duke.* You shall not be admitted to his sight.

*Isab.* Unhappy Claudio! Wretched Isabel! Injurious world! Most damned Angelo!

*Duke.* This nor hurts him, nor profits you a jot:

Forbear it therefore; give your cause to heaven.

Mark what I say; which you shall find

By every syllable, a faithful verity:

The duke comes home to-morrow;—nay, dry your eyes;

One of our convent, and his confessor,

Gives me this instance: Already he hath carried

Notice to Escalus and Angelo;

Who do prepare to meet him at the gates,

There to give up their power. If you can, pace your wisdom

In that good path that I would wish it go;

And you shall have your bosom\* on this wretch,

Grace of the duke, revenges to your heart,

And general honour.

*Isab.* I am directed by you.

*Duke.* This letter then to friar Peter give;

'Tis that he sent me of the duke's return:

Say, by this token, I desire his company

At Mariana's house to night. Her cause, and

yours,

I'll perfect him withal; and he shall bring you

Before the duke; and to the head of Angelo

Accuse him home, and home. For my poor self,

I am combined by a sacred vow,

And shall be absent. Wend† you with this

letter:

Command these fretting waters from your eyes

With a light heart,† trust not mine holy order,

If I pervert your course.—Who's here?

*Enter Lucio.*

*Lucio.* Good even!

*Duke.* Where is the provost?

*Duke.* Not within, Sir.

*Lucio.* O pretty Isabella, I am pale at mine

heart, to see thine eyes so red: thou must be

patient. I am fain to dine and sup with water

and bran; I dare not for my head fill my belly;

one fruitful meal would set me to't: But they say

the duke will be here to-morrow. By my troth,

Isabel, I lov'd thy brother: if the old fantastical

duke of dark corners had been at home, he had

lived. *[Exit ISABELLA.]*

*Duke.* Sir, the duke is marvellous little

holden to your reports; but the best is, he lives

not in them.

*Lucio.* Friar, thou knowest not the duke so

well as I do: he's a better woodman than thou

takes him for.

*Duke.* Well, you'll answer this one day. Fare

ye well.

*Lucio.* Nay, tarry; I'll go along with thee; I

can tell thee pretty tales of the duke.

*Duke.* You have told me too many of him al-

ready, Sir, if they be true; if not true, none were

enough.

*Lucio.* I was once before him for getting a

wench with child.

*Duke.* Did you such a thing?

*Lucio.* Yes, marry, did I: but was fain to for-

swear it: they would else have married me to

the rotten medder.

*Duke.* Sir, your company is fairer than honest;

Rest you well.

\* Your heart's desire.

† Go.

*Lucio.* By my troth, I'll go with thee to the lane's end: if bawdy talk offend you, we'll have very little of it: Nay, friar, I am a kind of burr, I shall stick. *[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE IV.—A Room in ANGELO'S House.

*Enter ANGELO and ESCALUS.*

*Escal.* Every letter he hath writ hath dis-  
vouch'd\* other.

*Ang.* In most uneven and distracted manner. His actions show much like to madness: pray heaven, his wisdom be not tainted! And why meet him at the gates, and re-deliver our authorities there?

*Escal.* I guess not.

*Ang.* And why should we proclaim it in an hour before his entering, that if any crave redress of injustice, they should exhibit their petitions in the street?

*Escal.* He shows his reason for that: to have a despatch of complaints; and to deliver us from devices hereafter, which shall then have no power to stand against us.

*Ang.* Well, I beseech you, let it be proclaim'd: Betimes† the morn, I'll call you at your house: Give notice to such men of sort and suit,† As are to meet him.

*Escal.* I shall, Sir, fare you well. *[Exit.]*

*Ang.* Good night.—

This deed unshapes me quite, makes me unpre-  
nant,

And dull to all proceedings. A deflower'd maid! And by an eminent body, that enforc'd

The law against it!—But that her tender shame Will not proclaim against her maiden loss,

How might she tongue me? Yet reason dares; her I—no;

For my authority bears a credent‡ bulk, That no particular scandal once can touch,

But it confounds the breather.¶ He should have liv'd,

Save that his riotous youth, with dangerous sense,

Might, in the times to come, have ta'en revenge By so receiving a dishonour'd life,

With ransom of such shame. †Would yet he had liv'd!

Alack, when once our grace we have forgot, Nothing goes right; we would, and we would not. *[Exit.]*

#### SCENE V.—Fields without the Town.

*Enter DUKE in his own habit, and Friar PETER.*

*Duke.* These letters at fit time deliver me. *[Giving letters.]*

The provost knows our purpose, and our plot.

The matter being afoot, keep your instruction,

And hold you ever to our special drift;

Though sometimes you do blench‡ from this to that,

As cause doth minister. Go, call at Flavius' house,

And tell him where I stay: give the like notice,

To Valentinus, Rowland, and to Crassus,

And bid them bring the trumpets to the gate;

But send me Flavius first.

*F. Peter.* It shall be speeded well.

*[Exit FRIAR.]*

*Enter VARRIUS.*

*Duke.* I thank thee, Varrius; thou hast made good haste:

Come, we will walk: There's other of our friends Will greet us here anon, my gentle Varrius. *[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE VI.—Street near the City Gate.

*Enter ISABELLA and MARIANA.*

*Isab.* To speak so indirectly, I am loath;

\* Contradicted.

† Figure and rank.

‡ Challenges her to do it.

¶ Credit unques-

tionable.

¶ Utterer.

¶ Start off

I would say the truth; but to accuse him so,  
That is your part; yet I'm advis'd to do it:  
He says, to veil full \* purpose.

*Mari.* Be rul'd by him.

*Isab.* Besides, he tells me, that, if peradventure

He speak against me on the adverse side,  
I should not think it strange; for 'tis a physic,  
That's bitter to sweet end.

*Mari.* I would, friar Peter—

*Isab.* O peace; the friar is come.

*Enter Friar Peter.*

*F. Peter.* Come, I have found you out a stand  
most fit,

Where you may have such vantage on the duke,  
He shall not pass you: Twice have the trumpets  
sounded;

The generous \* and gravest citizens  
Have bent the gates, and very near upon  
The duke is entering; therefore hence, away.

[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT V.

#### SCENE I.—A public Place near the City Gate.

MARIANA, (*veiled*), ISABELLA, and PETER, *at a distance. Enter at opposite doors, DUKE, VARRIUS, Lords; ANGELO, ESCALUS, LUCIO, Provost, Officers, and Citizens.*

*Duke.* My very worthy cousin, fairly met:—  
Our old and faithful friend, we are glad to see you

*Ang. and Escal.* Happy return be to your  
royal grace!

*Duke.* Many and hearty thankings to you  
both.

We have made inquiry of you; and we hear  
Such goodness of your justice, that our soul  
Cannot but yield you forth to public thanks,  
Forerunning more requital.

*Ang.* You make my bonds still greater.

*Duke.* Oh! your desert speaks loud; and I  
should wrong it,

To lock it in the wards of covert bosom,  
When it deserves with characters of brass  
A fortified residence, 'gainst the tooth of time,  
And rasure of oblivion: Give me your hand,  
And let the subjects see, to make them know  
That outward courtesies would fain proclaim  
Favours that keep within.—Come, Escalus;  
You must walk by us on our other hand;—  
And good supporters are you.

*PETER and ISABELLA come forward.*

*F. Peter.* Now is your time; speak loud, and  
kneel before him.

*Isab.* Justice, O royal duke! Vail § your  
regard

Upon a wrong'd, I'd fain have said, a maid!  
O worthy prince, dishonour not your eye  
By throwing it on any other object,

'Till you have heard me in my true complaint  
And give me justice, justice, justice, justice!

*Duke.* Relate your wrongs: In what? By  
whom? Be brief:

Here is lord Angelo shall give you justice;  
Reveal yourself to him.

*Isab.* O worthy duke,

You bid me seek redemption of the devil:  
Hear me yourself; for that which I must speak  
Must either punish me, not being believ'd,  
Or wring redress from you: hear me, O hear  
me, here.

*Ang.* My lord, her wits, I fear me, are not  
firm:

She hath been a suitor to me for her brother,  
Cut off by course of justice.

*Isab.* By course of justice!

*Ang.* And she will speak most bitterly, and  
strange.

*Isab.* Most strange, but yet most truly, will  
I speak:

That Angelo's forsworn; is it not strange?  
That Angelo's a murderer; is't not strange?  
That Angelo is an adulterous thief,  
An hypocrite, a virgin violator;  
Is it not strange, and strange?

*Duke.* Nay, ten times strange.

*Isab.* It is not truer he is Angelo,  
Than this is all as true as it is strange;  
Nay, it is ten times true; for truth is truth  
To the end of reckoning.

*Duke.* Away with her:—Poor soul,  
She speaks this in the infirmity of sense.

*Isab.* O prince, I conjure thee, as thou be-  
liev'st

There is another comfort than this world,  
That thou neglect me not, with that opinion  
That I am touch'd with madness: make not  
impossible

That which but seems unlike: 'tis not impossi-  
ble,

But one, the wicked'st caltiff on the ground,  
May seem as shy, as grave, as just, as absolute,  
As Angelo; even so may Angelo,

In all his dressings,\* characts, titles, forms,  
Be an arch-villain: believe it, royal prince,  
If he be less, he's nothing; but he's more,  
Had I more name for badness.

*Duke.* By mine honesty,  
If she be mad, (as I believe no other,)  
Her madness bath the oddest frame of sense,  
Such a dependency of thing on thing,  
As e'er I heard in madness.

*Isab.* O gracious duke,  
Harp not on that; nor do not banish reason  
For inequality: but let your reason serve  
To make the truth appear, where it seems hid;  
And bide the false, seems true.

*Duke.* Many that are not mad,  
Have, sure, more lack of reason.—What would  
you say?

*Isab.* I am the sister of one Claudio,  
Condemn'd upon the act of fornication  
To lose his head: condemn'd by Angelo:  
I, in probation of a sisterhood,  
Was sent to by my brother: One Lucio  
As then the messenger:—

*Lucio.* That's I, an't like your grace:  
I come to her from Claudio, and desir'd her  
To try her gracious fortune with lord Angelo,  
For her poor brother's pardon.

*Isab.* That's he, indeed.

*Duke.* You were not bid to speak.

*Lucio.* No, my good lord;  
Nor wish'd to hold my peace.

*Duke.* I wish you now then;  
Pray you, take note of it: and when you have  
A business for yourself, pray heaven, you then  
Be perfect.

*Lucio.* I warrant your honour.

*Duke.* The warrant's for yourself; take heed  
to it.

*Isab.* This gentleman told somewhat of my  
tale.

*Lucio.* Right.

*Duke.* It may be right; but you are in the  
To speak before your time.—Proceed. [wrong

*Isab.* I went

To this pernicious caltiff deputy.

*Duke.* That's somewhat madly spoken.

*Isab.* Pardon it;

The phrase is to the matter.

*Duke.* Mended again: the matter;—Proceed.

*Isab.* In brief,—to set the needless process by  
How I perswaded, how I pray'd, and kneel'd,  
How he refus'd me, and how I reply'd;  
(For this was of much length,) the vile con-  
clusion

I now begin with grief and shame to utter;  
He would not, but, by gift of my chaste body

\* Available.

† Most noble.  
‡ Lower.

2 Seized.

• Habits and characters of office.

† Reluctant.

To his conspicuous interperate lust, [ment,  
Release my brother; and, after much debate-  
My sisterly remorse\* confutes mine honour,  
And did yield to him: But the next morning  
betimes,

His purpose surfeiting, he sends a warrant  
For my poor brother's head.

*Duke.* This is most likely!

*Isab.* Oh! that it were as like, as it is true!

*Duke.* By heaven, [and] † wretch, thou know'st  
not what thou speak'st:  
Or else thou art suborn'd against his honour,  
In hateful practice: ‡ First, his integrity  
Stands without blemish:—next it imports no  
reason,

That with such vehemency he should pursue  
Faults proper to himself: if he had so offended,  
He would have weigh'd thy brother by himself,  
And not have cut him off: Some one hath set  
you on;

Confess the truth, and say by whose advice  
Thou cam'st here to complain.

*Isab.* And is this all?

Then, O you blessed ministers above,  
Keep me in patience; and, with ripen'd time,  
Unfold the evil which is here wrapt up  
In countenance!—Heaven shield your grace  
from woe,

As I, thus wrong'd, hence unbeliev'd go!

*Duke.* I know, you'd fain he gone:—An  
officer!

To prison with her:—Shall we thus permit  
A blasting and a scandalous breath to fall  
On him so near us? This needs must be a  
practice.

—Who knew of your intent, and coming hither?

*Isab.* One that I would were here, friar Lodowick.

*Duke.* A ghostly father belike:—Who knows  
that Lodowick?

*Lucio.* I know him; 'tis a meddling  
friar; [lord,

I do not like the man: had he been lay, my  
For certain words he spake against your grace  
In your retirement, I had swing'd § him soundly.

*Duke.* Words against me? This' a good friar,  
belike!

And to set on this wretched woman here

Against our substitute!—Let this friar be found.

*Lucio.* But yesternight, my lord, she and that  
friar

I saw them at the prison: a saucy friar,  
A very scurvy fellow.

*F. Peter.* Blessed be your royal grace!  
I have stood by, my lord, and I have heard  
Your royal ear abus'd: First, hath this woman  
Most wrongfully accus'd your substitute:  
Who is as free from touch or soil with her,  
As she from one untot.

*Duke.* We did believe no less.

Know you that friar Lodowick, that she speaks of?

*F. Peter.* I know him for a man divine and  
holy;

Not scurvy, nor a temporary medler,

As he's reported by this gentler-an;

And, on my trust, a man that never yet

Did, as he vouches, misreport your grace.

*Lucio.* My lord, most villanously; believe it.

*F. Peter.* Well, he in time may come to clear  
himself:

But at this instant he is sick, my lord,  
Of a strange fever: Upon his mere || request,  
(Being come to knowledge that there was complaint

Intended 'gainst lord Angelo,) came I hither,  
To speak as from his mouth, what he doth  
know

Is true, and false; and what he with his oath,  
And all probation, will make up full clear,  
Whosoever he's convicted. ¶ First, for this  
woman;

(To justify this worthy nobleman,  
So vulgarly \* and personally accus'd.)  
Her shall you hear disprov'd to her eyes  
Till she herself confess it.

*Duke.* Good friar, let's hear it.

[*Isabella is carried off, guarded; and  
Mariana comes forward.*

Do you not smile at this lord Angelo?—  
O heaven! the vanity of wretched fools!—  
Give us some seats.—Come, cousin Angelo

In this I'll be impartial; be you judge

Of your own cause.—Is this the witness, friar?

First, let her show her face; and, after speak.

*Mari.* Pardon, my lord; I will not show my  
Until my husband bid me. [face,

*Duke.* What, are you married?

*Mari.* No, my lord.

*Duke.* Are you a maid?

*Mari.* No, my lord.

*Duke.* A widow, then?

*Mari.* Neither, my lord.

*Duke.* Why, you [wife,

Are nothing then:—Neither maid, widow, nor

*Lucio.* My lord, she may be a punk; for many  
of them are neither maid, widow, nor wife.

*Duke.* Silence that fellow: I would, he had  
some cause

To prattle for himself.

*Lucio.* Well, my lord.

*Mari.* My lord, I do confess, I ne'er was  
married;

And, I confess, besides, I am no maid;

I have known my husband; yet my husband  
knows not,

That ever he knew me.

*Lucio.* He was drunk then, my lord; it can  
be no better.

*Duke.* For the benefit of silence, 'would thou  
wert so too.

*Lucio.* Well, my lord.

*Duke.* This is no witness for lord Angelo.

*Mari.* Now I come to't, my lord:

She, that accuses him of fornication,  
In self-same manner doth accuse my husband;

And charges him, my lord, with such a time,  
When I'll depose I had him in mine arms,  
With all the effect of love.

*Ang.* Charges she more than me?

*Mari.* Not that I know.

*Duke.* No? you say, your husband.

*Mari.* Why, just, my lord, and that is Angelo,  
Who thinks, he knows, that he ne'er knew my  
body,

But knows he thinks, that he knows Isabella's.

*Ang.* This is a strange abuse:—Let's see  
thy face.

*Mari.* My husband bids me; now I will un-  
mask. [Unveiling.

This is that face, thou cruel Angelo, [on:

Which once thou swear'd, was worth the looking

This is the hand, which, with a vow'd contract,

Was fast belock'd in thine: this is the body

That took away the match from Isabella,

And did supply thee at thy garden-house,  
In her imagin'd person.

*Duke.* Know you this woman?

*Lucio.* Carnally, she says.

*Duke.* Sirrah, no more.

*Lucio.* Enough, my lord.

*Ang.* My lord, I must confess, I know this,  
woman; [marriage

And, five years since, there was some speech of

Between myself and her; which was broke off,

Partly, for that her promised proportions

Came short of composition; † but, in chief,

For that her reputation was disvalued

In levity: since which time of five years,

I never spake with her, saw her, nor heard from

Upon my faith and honour. [her,

*Mari.* Noble prince,

As there comes light from heaven, and words  
from breath,

\* Pity.  
† Best.

‡ Foolish.  
§ Simple.

|| Conspiracy. ¶  
¶ Convicted.

\* Publicly † Deception. ‡ Her fortune fell short.



As there is sense in truth, and truth in virtue,  
I am affianc'd this man's wife, as strongly  
As words could make up vows: and, my good  
lord,

But Tuesday night last gone, in his garden-house,  
He knew me as a wife: As this is true  
Let me in safety raise me from my knees;  
Or else for ever be confix'd here,  
A marble monument!

Ang. I did but smile till now;  
Now, good my lord, give me the scope of justice;  
My patience here is touch'd: I do perceive,  
These poor informal \* women are no more  
But instruments of some more mighty member,  
That sets them on: Let me have way, my lord,  
To find this practice † out.

Duke. Ay, with my heart;  
And punish them unto your height of pleasure.—  
Thou foolish friar: and, thou pernicious woman,  
Compact with her that's gone! think'st thou, thy  
oaths, [saint,  
Though they would swear down each particular  
Were testimonies against his worth and credit,  
That's seal'd in approbation?—You, lord Escalus,  
Sit with my cousin; lend him your kind pains  
To find out this abuse, whence 'tis derived.—  
There is another friar that set them on;  
Let him be sent for.

F. Peter. Would he were here, my lord; for  
he, indeed,  
Hath set the women on to this complaint:  
Your provost knows the place where he abides,  
And he may fetch him.

Duke. Go, do it instantly.— [Exit Provost.  
And you, my noble and well-warranted cousin,  
Whom it concerns to hear this matter forth;  
Do with your injuries as seems you best,  
In any chastisement: I for a while  
Will leave you; but stir not you, till you have  
Determined upon these slanderers. [well

Escal. My lord, we'll do it thoroughly.— [Exit  
Duke.] Signior Lucio, did not you say, you knew  
that friar Lodowick to be a dishonest person?

Lucio. *Lucullus non facit monachum*: honest  
in nothing, but in his clothes; and one that hath  
spoke most villainous speeches of the duke.

Escal. We shall entreat you to abide here till  
he come, and enforce them against him: we shall  
find this friar a notable fellow.

Lucio. As any in Vienna, on my word.

Escal. Call that same Isabel here once again;  
[To an Attendant.] I would speak with her:  
Pray you, my lord, give me leave to question;  
you shall see how I'll handle her.

Lucio. Not better than he, by her own report.

Escal. Say you?

Lucio. Marry, Sir, I think, if you handled her  
privately, she would sooner confess; perchance,  
publicly she'll be asbamed.

Re-enter Officers, with ISABELLA, the DUKE,  
in the Friar's habit, and PROVOST.

Escal. I will go darkly to work with her.

Lucio. That's the way: for women are light  
at midnight.

Escal. Come on, mistress: [To ISABELLA.]  
here's a gentlewoman denies all that you have  
said.

Lucio. My lord, here comes the rascal I spoke  
of; here with the provost.

Escal. In very good time: speak not you to  
him, till we call upon you.

Lucio. Mum.

Escal. Come, Sir: Did you set these women  
on to slander lord Angelo? they have confess'd  
you did.

Duke. 'Tis false.

Escal. How! know you where you are?

Duke. Respect to your great place! and let the  
devil

Be sometime honour'd for his burning throne:—  
Where is the duke? 'tis he should bear me  
speak:

Escal. The duke's in us; and we will hear you.  
Look, you speak justly.

Duke. Boldly, at least:—But, O poor souls,  
Come you to seek the lamb here of the fox?  
Good night to you! redress. Is the duke gone?  
Then is your cause gone too. The duke's unjust,  
Thus to retort \* your manifest appeal,  
And put your trial in the villain's mouth,  
Which here you come to accuse.

Lucio. This is the rascal: this is he I spoke of.  
Escal. Why, thou unrevenged and unhallow'd  
friar!

Is't not enough, thou hast suborn'd these women  
To accuse this worthy man; but, in foul mouth,  
And in the witness of his proper ear,  
To call him villain?

And then to glance from him to the duke him-  
To tax him with injustice?—Take him hence;  
To the rack with him:—We'll touze you joint by  
joint,

But we will know this purpose:—What! unjust?

Duke. Be not so hot; the duke  
Dare no more stretch this finger of mine, than he  
Dare rack his own; his subject am I not,  
Nor here provincial: † My business in this state  
Made me a looker-on here in Vienna,  
Where I have seen corruption boil and bubble,  
Till it o'er-run the stew: laws, for all faults;  
But faults so countenanc'd, and the strong statutes

Stand like the forfeits in a barber's shop,

As much in mock as mark.

Escal. Slander to the state! Away with him  
to prison.

Ang. What can you vouch against him, signior  
Lucio?

Is this the man that you did tell us of?

Lucio. 'Tis he, my lord. Come hither, good-  
man bald-pate: Do you know me?

Duke. I remember you, Sir, by the sound of  
your voice: I met you at the prison, in the ab-  
sence of the duke.

Lucio. Oh! did you so? And do you remember  
what you said of the duke?

Duke. Most notably, Sir.

Lucio. Do you so, Sir? And was the duke a  
flesh-monger, a fool, and a coward, as you then  
reported him to be?

Duke. You must, Sir, change persons with me,  
ere you make that my report: you, indeed, spoke  
so of him; and much more, much worse.

Lucio. O, though damnable fellow! Did not I  
pluck thee by the nose, for thy speeches?

Duke. I protest, I love the duke, as I love  
myself.

Ang. Hark! how the villain would close now  
after his treasurable abuses.

Escal. Such a fellow is not to be talk'd withal:  
—Away with him to prison:—Where is the provost?  
—Away with him to prison; ray bolts enough  
upon him: let him speak no more:—Away with  
those gylots; too, and with the other confederate  
company.

[The Provost lays hands on the DUKE.]

Duke. Stay, Sir; stay a while.

Ang. What! resists he? Help him, Lucio.

Lucio. Come, Sir; come, Sir; come, Sir;  
foh, Sir: Why, you bald-pated, lying rascal! you  
must be hooded, must you? Show your knave's  
visage, with a pox to you! show your sheep-  
biting face, and be hang'd an hour! Will't not  
off?

[Pulls off the Friar's hood, and discovers  
the Duke.]

Duke. Thou art the first knave that e'er made  
a duke:—

First, Provost, let me rail these gentle three:—  
Sneak not away, Sir; [To Lucio.] for the friar  
and you

Must have a word anon:—lay hold on him.

Lucio. This may prove worse than hanging.

Duke. What you have spoke, I pardon; sit you  
down.— [To ESCALUS.]

\* Crazy.

† Conspiracy.

‡ To the end.

\* Referback.

† Accountable.

‡ Wantons

We'll borrow place of him:—Sir, by your leave:  
[To ANGELO.]

Hast thou of word, or wit, or impudence,  
That yet can do thee office? \* It thou hast,  
Rely upon it till my tale be heard,  
And hold no longer out.

Ang. O my dread lord,  
I should be guiltier than my guiltiness,  
To think I can be undiscernible,  
When I perceive, your grace, like power divine,  
Hath look'd upon my passes:† Then, good

prince,  
No longer session hold upon my shame.  
But let my trial be mine own confession;  
Immediate sentence then, and sequent‡ death,  
Is all the grace I beg.

Duke. Come hither, Mariana:—  
Say, wast thou e'er contracted to this woman?  
Ang. I was, my lord.

Duke. Go take her hence, and marry her instantly.—

Do you the office, friar; which consummate,  
Return him here again:—Go with him, Provost.

[Exit ANGELO, MARIANA, PETER, and PROVOST.]

Escal. My lord, I am more amaz'd at his disdain  
Than at the strangeness of it. [honour.]

Duke. Come hither, Isabel:  
Your friar is now your prince: As I was then  
Advertising, and holy to your business,  
Not changing heart with habit, I am still  
Attorney'd at your service.

Isab. Oh! give me pardon,  
That I, your vassal, have employ'd and pain'd  
Your unknown sovereignty.

Duke. You are pardon'd, Isabel:  
And now, dear maid, be you as free to us.  
Your brother's death, I know, sits at your heart;  
And you may marvel, why I obscur'd myself,  
Labouring to save his life; and would not  
rather

Make rash remonstrance of my hidden power,  
Than let him so be lost: O most kind maid,  
It was the swift celerity of his death,  
Which I did think with slower foot came on,  
That brain'd my purpose: But, peace be with  
him!

That life is better life, past fearing death,  
Than that which lives to fear: make it your com-  
So happy is your brother. [fort,

Re-enter ANGELO, MARIANA, PETER, and PROVOST.]

Isab. I do, my lord.

Duke. For this new-married man, approaching  
here,

Whose salt imagination yet hath wrong'd  
Your well-defended honour, you must pardon  
For Mariana's sake: but as he adjudg'd your  
(Being criminal, in double violation [brother,  
Of sacred chastity, and of promise-breach,  
Thereon dependent, for your brother's life,)  
The very mercy of the law cries out  
Most audible, even from his proper tongue,  
An Angelo for Claudio, death for death.  
Haste still pays haste, and leisure answers leisure;  
Like doth quit like, and Measure still for Mea-  
sure.

Then, Angelo, thy fault's thus manifested;  
Which though thou would'st deny, denies thee  
vantage:

We do condemn thee to the very block  
Where Claudio stoop'd to death, and with like  
Away with him. [haste;—

Mari. O my most gracious lord,  
I hope you will not mock me with a husband!

Duke. It is your husband mock'd you with a  
husband:

Consenting to the safeguard of your honour,  
I thought your marriage fit; else imputation,  
For that he knew you, might reproach your life,  
And choke your good to come: for his possessions,

Although by confiscation they are ours,  
We do instate and widow you withal,  
To buy you a better husband.

Mari. O my dear lord,  
I crave no other, nor no better man.

Duke. Never crave him; we are definitive.  
Mari. Gentle, my liege,— [Kneeling]

Duke. You do but lose your labour;  
Away with him to death.—Now, Sir, to you.

[To LUCIO.]  
Mari. O my good lord!—Sweet Isabel, take  
my part:

Lend me your knees, and all my life to come  
I'll lend you, all my life to do you service.

Duke. Against all sense \* you do importune  
her:

Should she kneel down, in mercy of this fact,  
Her brother's ghost his paved bed would break,  
And take her hence in horror.

Mari. Isabel,  
Sweet Isabel, do yet but kneel by me;  
Hold up your hands, say nothing, I'll speak all.  
They say, best men are moulded out of faults;  
And, for the most, become much more the better  
For being a little bad: so may my husband.

O Isabel I will you not lend a knee?  
Duke. He dies for Claudio's death.

Isab. Most bounteous Sir, [Kneeling]  
Look, if it please you, on this man condemn'd,  
As if my brother liv'd: I partly think,  
A due sincerity govern'd his deeds,  
Till he did look on me; since it is so,  
Let him not die: My brother had but justice,  
In that he did the thing for which he died:  
For Angelo,

His act did not o'ertake his bad intent;  
And must be buried but as an intent  
That perish'd by the way: thoughts are no sub-  
stutents but merely thoughts. [jects;

Mari. Merely, my lord.

Duke. Your suit's unprofitable; stand up, I  
say.—

I have bethought me of another fault:  
Provost, how came it, Claudio was beheaded  
At an unusual hour?

Prov. It was commanded so.

Duke. Had you a special warrant for the deed?

Prov. No, my good lord; it was by private  
message.

Duke. For which I do discharge you of your  
Give up your keys. [othice:

Prov. Pardon me, noble lord:

I thought it was a fault, but knew it not;

Yet did repent me, after more advice:†

For testimony whereof, one in the prison

That should by private order else have died,  
I have reserv'd alive.

Duke. What's he?

Prov. His name is Barnardine.

Duke. I would thou had'st done so by Claudio.

Go, fetch him hither; let me look upon him.

[Exit PROVOST.]

Escal. I am sorry, one so learned, and so wise

As you, lord Angelo, have still appear'd,

Should slip so grossly, both in the heat of blood,  
And lack of temper'd judgment afterward.

Ang. I am sorry that such sorrow I procure:

And so deep sticks it in my penitent heart,  
That I crave death more willingly than mercy;  
'Tis my deserving, and I do intreat it.

Re-enter PROVOST, BARNARDINE, CLAUDIO,  
and JULIET.

Duke. Which is that Barnardine?

Prov. This, my lord.

Duke. There was a friar told me of this  
man:—

Sirrah, thou art said to have a stubborn soul

That apprehends no further than this world,  
And squar'st thy life according. Thou'rt con-  
demn'd;

But, for those earthly faults, I quit them all;

And pray thee, take this mercy to provide

\* Service. † Devices. ‡ Following.  
§ Attentive. || Angelo's own tongue.

\* Reason and affection. ‡ Consideration.

For better times to come :—Friar, advise him ;  
I leave him to your hand.—What muffled fellow's  
that ?

*Prov.* This is another prisoner, that I sav'd,  
That should have died when Claudio lost his head ;  
As like almost to Claudio, as himself.

[*Unmuffles* CLAUDIO.]

*Duke.* If he be like your brother, for his sake  
[*To* ISABELLA.]

Is he pardon'd : And, for your lovely sake,  
Give me your hand, and say you will be mine,  
He is my brother too : But fitter time for that.  
By this, lord Angelo perceiveth he's safe ;  
Methinks, I see a quick'ning in his eye :—  
Well, Angelo, your evil quits \* you well :  
Look that you love your wife ; her worth, worth  
I find an apt remission in myself : (your's.)  
And yet here's one in place I cannot pardon :—  
You, sirrah, [*To* LUCIO.] that knew me for a

fool, a coward,

One all of luxury, † an ass, a madman ;  
Wherein have I so deserved of you,  
That you extol me thus ?

*Lucio.* Faith, my lord, I spoke it but accord-  
ing to the trick : ‡ If you will hang me for it,  
you may, but I had rather it would please you, I  
might be whipp'd.

*Duke.* Whipp'd first, Sir, and hang'd after.—  
Proclaim it, Provost, round about the city ;  
If any woman's wrong'd by this lewd fellow,  
(As I have heard him swear himself, there's one  
Whom he begot with child,) let her appear,

And he shall marry her : the nuptial finish'd,  
Let him be whipp'd and hang'd.

*Lucio.* I beseech your highness, do not marry  
me to a whore : Your highness said even now, I  
made you a duke : good my lord, do not recom-  
pense me, in making me a cuckold.

*Duke.* Upon mine honour, thou shalt marry  
her.

Thy slanders I forgive ; and therewithal  
Remit thy other forfeits : \*—Take him to prison :  
And see our pleasure herein executed.

*Lucio.* Marrying a punk, my lord, is pressing  
to death, whipping, and hanging.

*Duke.* Sland'ring a prince deserves it.—

She, Claudio, that you wrong'd, look you re-  
store.—

Joy to you, Mariana !—love her, Angelo :  
I have confess'd her, and I know her virtue.—  
Thanks, good friend Escalus, for thy much good-  
ness :

There's more behind, that is more grateful.†

Thanks, Provost, for thy care and secrecy :

We shall employ thee in a worthier place :—

Forgive him, Angelo, that brought you home

The head of Ragozine for Claudio's :

The offence pardons itself.—Dear Isabel,

I have a motion much imports your good ;

Whereto if you'll a willing ear incline,

What's mine is your's, and what is your's is  
mine :—

So, bring us to our palace ; where we'll show  
What's yet behind, that's meet you all should  
know. [*Exeunt.*]

\* Requeses.

† Inconsequence.

‡ Thoughtless profligacy.

\* Punishments.

† To reward.

# WINTER'S TALE.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

TO the story-book, or *Pleasant History* (as it is called) of *Dorastus and Fawnia*, written by Robert Greene, M.A. we are indebted for Shakspeare's *Winter's Tale*. The parts of Antigonus, Paulina, and Autolycus, are of the poet's own invention; and many circumstances of the novel are omitted in the drama. Mr. Walpole ranks it among the historic plays of Shakspeare, and says it was certainly presented, (in compliment to Queen Elizabeth) as an indirect apology for her mother, Anne Boleyn; the unreasonable jealousy and violent conduct of Leontes, forming a true portrait of Henry VIII. who generally made the law the engine of his passions. Several passages, it must be confessed, strongly favour this plausible conjecture, and seem to apply to the real history much closer than to the fable. But Malone and Sir William Blackstone refer to other passages, which would strengthen a contrary opinion; to one, in particular, which could scarcely be intended for the ear of her, who had put the Queen of Scots to death. It was, however, probably written immediately upon Elizabeth's death; nor could it fail of being very agreeable to James her successor. An inattention to dramatic rules, so common with Shakspeare, is perhaps more glaringly apparent in this than in any other of his productions; and Pope and Dryden have made it the subject of some ill-advised censure. But had Shakspeare been acquainted with these rules, (which he certainly was not,) the exquisite talent displayed in his writings, is a sufficient apology for the freedom with which he has set them aside. His inexhaustible genius was not to be restrained, nor the restless disposition of an English audience to be gratified, by a close and reverent adherence to the classical unities of the stage. Hence such a breach in time and probability, as producing, at a rustic festival, a lovely woman, fit to be married, who but a few minutes before, had been deposited on the sea-shore, an infant in swaddling clothes. Hence the celerity with which seas are crossed, countr'es traversed, battles fought, and marriages accomplished. *The Winter's Tale*, however, with all its contradictions—with a mean fable, extravagantly conducted—is scarcely inferior to any of Shakspeare's plays. It contains much excellent sentiment, several strongly-marked characters, and a tissue of events fully justifying the title;—for a jumble of improbable incidents, some merry and some sad, is the legitimate feature of a Christmas story. Still it must be observed, that though the origin and progress of jealousy are always unaccountable, the sudden transition of Leontes from a state of perfect friendship and affection to that of hatred and vindictive rage, is not accompanied by any apparent circumstances to render it probable or natural. Paulina's character is novel, and very pleasingly imagined; and Hermione's defence is not less beautiful and pathetic than its prototype in Henry VIII. Autolycus, the king of beggars and of pedlars, is one of the most arch and amusing scoundrels ever designed by our poet. His songs are all exceedingly spirited.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

LEONTES, *King of Sicilia.*

MAMILLIUS, *his Son.*

CAMILLO,

ANTIGONUS, } *Sicilian Lords.*

CLEOMENES, }

DION,

*Another Sicilian Lord.*

ROGERO, *a Sicilian Gentleman.*

*An Attendant on the young Prince Mamillius.*

*Officers of a Court of Judicature.*

POLIXENES, *King of Bohemia.*

FLORENCE, *his Son.*

ARCHIDAMUS, *a Bohemian Lord.*

*A Mariner.*

*Jailer.*

*An old Shepherd, reputed father of Perdita.*

*Clown, his Son.*

*Servant to the old Shepherd.*

AUTOLYCUS, *a Rogue.*

*Time, as Chorus.*

HERMIONE, *Queen to Leontes.*

PERDITA, *Daughter to Leontes and Hermione.*

PAULINA, *Wife to Antigonus.*

EMILIA, *a Lady,*

*Two other Ladies, } Attending the Queen.*

MOPSA, } *Shepherdesses.*

DORCAS, }

*Lords, Ladies, and Attendants; Satyrs for a dance.*

*Shepherds, Shepherdesses, Guards, &c.*

SCENE—sometimes in Sicilia; sometimes in Bohemia.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—*Sicilia.—An Antechamber in*

*LEONTES' Palace.*

*Enter CAMILLO and ARCHIDAMUS.*

*Arch.* If you shall chance, Camillo, to visit Bohemia, on the like occasion wherein my services are now on foot, you shall see as I

have said, great difference betwixt our Bohemia, and your Sicilia.

*Cam.* I think, this coming summer, the king of Sicilia means to pay Boemia the visitation which he justly owes him.

*Arch.* Wherein our entertainment shall shame us, we will be justified in our loves: for, indeed,—

*Cam.* Beseech you —

*Arch.* Verily, I speak it in the freedom of my knowledge: we cannot with such magnificence—in so rare—I know not what to say.—We will give you sleepy drinks; that your senses, unintelligent of our insufficiency, may, though they cannot praise us, as little accuse us.

*Cam.* You pay a great deal too dear, for what's given freely.

*Arch.* Believe me, I speak as my understanding instructs me, and as mine honesty puts it to utterance.

*Cam.* Sicilia cannot show himself over-kind to Bohemia. They were trained together in their childhoods; and there rooted betwixt them then such an affection, which cannot choose but branch now. Since their more mature dignities, and royal necessities, made separation of their society, their encounters, though not personal, have been royally attended,\* with interchange of gifts, letters, loving embassies; that they have seemed to be together, though absent; shook hands, as over a vast;† and embraced, as it were, from the ends of opposed winds. The heavens continue their loves!

*Arch.* I think, there is not in the world either malice, or matter, to alter it. You have an unspeakable comfort of your young prince Mamilius; it is a gentleman of the greatest promise, that ever came into my note.

*Cam.* I very well agree with you in the hopes of him: it is a gallant child; one that, indeed, physics the subject.† It makes old hearts fresh: they, that went on crutches ere he was born, desire yet their life, to see him a man.

*Arch.* Would they else be content to die?

*Cam.* Yes; if there were no other excuse why they should desire to live.

*Arch.* If the king had no son, they would desire to live on crutches till he had one.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same.*—A Room of state in the Palace.

*Enter LEONTES, POLIXENIS, HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, CAMILLO, and Attendants.*

*Pol.* Nine changes of the wat'ry star have been [throne]

The shepherd's note, since we have left our Without a burden: time as long again Would be fill'd up, my brother, with our thanks; And yet we should, for perpetuity, Go hence in debt: And therefore, like a cipher, Yet standing in rich place, I multiply, With one we thank-you, many thousands more That go before it.

*Leon.* Stay your thanks awhile; And pay them when you part.

*Pol.* Sir, that's to-morrow. I am question'd by my fears, of what may chance,

Or breed upon our absence: That may blow No sneaping<sup>•</sup> winds at home, to make us say, *This is put forth too truly!* Besides, I have To tire your royalty. [stay'd]

*Leon.* We are tougher, brother, Than you can put us to't.

*Pol.* No longer stay.

*Leon.* One seven-eight longer.

*Pol.* Very sooth, to-morrow.

*Leon.* We'll part the time between's then: and in that

I'll no gain-saying.

*Pol.* Press me not, 'beseech you, so; There is no tongue that moves, none, none i'the world, [now]

So soon as your's, could win me: so it should Were there necessity in your request, although 'Twere needful I denied it. My affairs Do even drag me homeward: which to hinder, Were, in your love, a whip to me; my stay,

To you a charge and trouble: to save both, Farewell, our brother.

*Leon.* Tongue-tied, our queen? speak you. *Her.* I had thought, Sir, to have held my peace, until

You had drawn oaths from him, not to stay. You, Sir,

Charge him too coldly: Tell him, you are sure, All in Bohemia's well. this satisfaction The by-gone day proclaim'd; say this to him, He's beat from his best ward.

*Leon.* Well said, Hermione.

*Her.* To tell, he longs to see his son, were strong:

But let him say so then, and let him go; But let him swear so, and he shall not stay, We'll thrack him hence with distaffs.— Yet of your royal presence [To POLIXENIS.] I'll adventure

The borrow of a week. When at Bohemia You take my lord, I'll give him my commis-

sion, To let him there a month, behind the gest.\* Preen'd for his parting: yet, good deed,† I L<sup>o</sup>ntes,

I love thee not a jar ‡ o'the clock behind What lady she her lord.—You'll stay?

*Pol.* No, madam.

*Her.* Nay, but you will?

*Pol.* I may not, verily.

*Her.* Verily!

You put me off with lumber § vows: But I, Though you would seek to unsphere the stars with oaths,

Should yet say, *Sir, no going.* Verily, You shall not go; a lady's verily is As potent as a lord's. Will you go yet?

I force me to keep you as a prisoner, Not like a guest; so you shall pay your fees, When you depart, and save your thanks. How say you? [verily]

My prisoner? or my guest? by your dread Of them you shall be.

*Pol.* Your guest then, madam:

To be your prisoner, should import offending; Which is for me less easy to commit, Than you to punish.

*Her.* Not your jailer then, But your kind hostess. Come, I'll question you Of my lord's tricks, and your's, when you were boys;

You were pretty lordings ¶ then.

*Pol.* We were, fair queen,

Two lads, that thought there was no more behind,

But such a day to-morrow as to day,

And to be boy eternal.

*Her.* Was not my lord the venter wag o'the two?

*Pol.* We were as twin'd lambs, that did frisk i'the sun,

And bleat the one at the other: what we chang'd, Was innocence for innocence; we knew not The doctrine of ill-doing, no, nor dream'd That any did: Had we pursued that life, And our weak spirits ne'er been higher rear'd With stronger blood, we should have answer'd heaven

Boldly, *Not guilty*: the imposition clear'd, Hereditary our's. ¶

*Her.* By this we gather,

You have tripp'd since.

*Pol.* O my most sacred lady, Temptations have since then been born to us: In those unfledg'd days was my wife a girl; Your precious self had then not cross'd the eyes Of my young playfellow.

*Her.* Grace to boot!

Of this make no conclusion; lest you say, Your queen and I are devils: Yet, go on;

\* Gests were the names of the stages where the king appointed to lie, during a royal progress.

† Indued. ‡ Tick.

§ A diminutive of lords. ¶ Flimsy.

¶ Setting aside original sin.

• Nobly supplied by substitution of embassies.

† While waste of country.

‡ Affords a cordial to the state. § Nipping

The offences we have made you do, we'll answer;

If you first sinn'd with us, and that with us  
You did continue fault, and that you shipp'd not  
With any but with us.

*Leon.* Is he won yet?

*Her.* He'll stay, my lord.

*Leon.* At my request, he would not.  
Hermione, my dearest, thou never spok'st  
To better purpose.

*Her.* Never?

*Leon.* Never, but once,

*Her.* What? have I twice said well? when  
was't before?

I pr'yther, tell me: Cram us with praise, and  
make us

As fat as tame things: One good deed, dying  
tongueless,

Slaughters a thousand, waiting upon that.

Our praises are our wages: You may ride us,  
With one soft kiss, a thousand furlongs, ere  
With spur we heat an acre. But to the jail:—  
My last good was, to entreat his stay;  
What was my first? it has an elder sister,  
Or I mistake you: Oh! would her name were  
Grace!

But once before I spoke to the purpose: When I  
Nay, let me have't; I long.

*Leon.* Why, that was when

Three crabbed months had sour'd themselves to  
death,

Ere I could make thee open thy white hand,  
And clap thyself my love; then didst thou utter,  
*I am your's for ever.*

*Her.* It is Grace, indeed.—

[twice:

Why, lo you now, I have spoke to the purpose  
The one for ever earn'd a royal husband;  
The other, for some while a friend.

[Giving her hand to POLIXENES.

*Leon.* Too hot, too hot:

[Aside.

To mingle friendship far, is mingling bloods.  
I have tremor cordis\* on me:—my heart dances;  
But not for joy,—not joy.—This entertainment  
May a free face put on; derive a liberty  
From heartiness, from bounty, fertile bosom,  
And well become the agent; it may, I grant;  
But to be paddling palms, and pinching fingers,  
As now they are; and making practis'd smiles,  
As in a looking-glass;—and then to sigh, as  
twere

Th: mort o'the deer, + Oh! that is entertain-  
ment

My bosom likes not, nor my brows.—Mamillius,  
Art thou my boy?

*Mam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* I'flocks?

Why that's my bawcock. ‡ What, hast smutch'd  
thy nose?—

They say, it's a copy out of mine. Come, cap-  
tain,

We must be neat; not neat, but cleanly, captain:  
And yet the steer, the heifer, and the calf,  
Are all call'd, neat.—Still virginallings §

[Observing POLIXENES and HERMIONE.  
Upon his palm?—How now, you wanton calf?  
Art thou my calf?

*Mam.* Yes, if you will, my lord.

*Leon.* Thou want'st a rough pash, and the  
shoots that I have, ||

To be fall like me:—yet, they say, we are  
Almost as like as eggs; women say so,  
That will say any thing: But were they false  
As o'er-died blacks, as wind, as waters; false  
As dice are to be wish'd, by one that fixes  
No burn ¶ twist his and mine; yet were it  
true

To say this boy were like me.—Come, Sir page,  
Look on me with your welkin\*\* eye: Sweet  
villain!

\* Trembling of the heart.

† The tune played at the death of the deer.

‡ Heavy fellow.

§ I. e. Playing with her fingers as if on a spinnet.

¶ Thou wantest a rough head, and the budding horns  
that I have.

|| Bound ary.

\*\* Blue.

Most dear'st! my collop!—Can thy dam!—  
may't be?

Affection! thy intention stabs the centre:  
Thou dost make possible, things not so held  
Communicat'st with dreams;—(How can this  
be?)—

With what's unreal thou coactive art,  
And fellow'st nothing: Then, 'tis very credent,\*  
Thou may'st co-join with something; and thou  
dost;

(And that beyond commission; and I find it,)

And that to the infection of my brains,

And hardening of my brows.

*Pol.* What means Sicilia?

*Her.* He something seems unsettled.

*Pol.* How, my lord?

What cheer? how is't with you, best brother?

*Her.* You look,

As if you held a brow of much distraction:

Are you mov'd, my lord?

*Leon.* No, in good earnest.—

How sometimes nature will betray its folly  
its tenderness, and make itself a pastime  
To harder bosoms! Looking on the lines  
Of my boy's face, methought, I did recoil  
Twenty-three years; and saw myself unbreech'd,  
In my green velvet coat; my dagger muzzled,  
Lest it should bite its master, and so prove,  
As ornaments oft do, too dangerous.

How like, methought, I then was to this kernel,  
This quash, † this gentleman:—Mine honest  
friend,

Will you take eggs for money? ‡

*Mam.* No, my lord, I'll fight.

*Leon.* You will? why, happy man be Lis-  
dole! §—My brother,

Are you so fond of your young prince, as we

Do seem to be of our's?

*Pol.* If at home, Sir,

He's all my exercise, my mirth, my matter:  
Now my sworn friend, and then mine enemy;  
My parasite, my soldier, statesman, all:  
He makes a July's day short as December;  
And with his varying childness, cures in me  
Thoughts that would thicken my blood.

*Leon.* So stands this squire

Offic'd with me: We two will walk, my lord,  
And leave you to your graver steps.—Hermione,  
How thou lov'st us, show in our brother's wel-  
come;

Let what is dear in Sicily, be cheap:

Next to thyself, and my young rover, he's

Apparent || to my heart.

*Her.* If you would seek us,

We are your's i'the garden: Shall's attend you  
there?

*Leon.* To your own bents dispose you: you'll  
be found,

Be you beneath the sky:—I am angling now

Though you perceive me not how I give line.

Go to, go to!

[Aside. Observing POLIXENES and HER-  
MIONE.

How she holds up the neb, ¶ the bill to him!

And arms her with the boldness of a wife

To her allowing\*\* husband! Gone already;

Inch-thick, knee-deep; o'er head and ears a  
foik'd one. ††—

[Exit POLIXENES, HERMIONE, and  
Attendants.

Go, play, boy, play;—thy mother plays, and I  
Play too; but so disgrac'd a part, whose issue  
Will hiss me to my grave; contempt and cla-  
mour

Will be my knell.—Go, play, boy, play;—There  
have been,

Or I am much deceiv'd, cuckolds ere now;

And many a man there is, even at this present,

Now, while I speak this, holds his wife by the  
arm,

\* Credible. † Peacock. ‡ Will you be cajoled.

§ May his share of life be a happy one.

|| Her apparent, next claimant.

¶ Mouth.

\*\* Approving. †† A horned one.

That little thinks she has been sluc'd in his absence,  
And his pond fish'd by his next neighbour, by  
Sir Smile, his neighbour : nay, there's comfort  
in't, <sup>[open'd,</sup>

Whiles other men have gates ; and those gates  
As mine, against their will : Should all despair,  
That have revolted wives, the tenth of mankind  
Would hang themselves. Physic for't there is  
none ;

It is a bawdy planet, that will strike  
Where 'tis predominant ; and 'tis powerful, think  
it, <sup>[cluded,</sup>

From east, west, north, and south : Be it con-  
No barricado for a belly ; know it ;  
It will let in and out the enemy,  
With bag and baggage : many a thousand of us  
Have the disease, and feel't not.—How now,  
boy ?

*Mam.* I am like you, they say.

*Leon.* Why that's some comfort.—

What ! Camillo there ?

*Cam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* Go play, Mamilius ; thou'rt an honest  
man.—<sup>[Exit MAMILIUS.</sup>

Camillo, this great Sir will yet stay longer.

*Cam.* You had much ado to make his anchor  
hold ;

When you cast out, it still came home.

*Leon.* Didst note it ?

*Cam.* He would not stay at your petitions ;  
His business more material. <sup>[made</sup>

*Leon.* Didst perceive it ?—

They're here with me already ; whispering,  
rounding,\*

*Sicilia* is a so-forth : 'Tis far gone,  
When I shall gust it last.—How came't, Camillo,  
That he did stay ?

*Cam.* At the good queen's entreaty.

*Leon.* At the queen's, be't : good, should be  
pertinent ;

But so it is, it is not. Was this taken  
By any understanding pate but thine ?  
For thy conceit is soaking, will draw in  
More than the common blocks :—Not noted, is't,  
But of the finer natures ? by some severals,  
Of head-piece extraordinary ? lower messes, †  
Perchance, are to this business purblind : say.

*Cam.* Business, my lord ! I think, most un-  
derstand

Bohemia stays here longer.

*Leon.* Ha ?

*Cam.* Stays here longer.

*Leon.* Ay, but why ?

*Cam.* To satisfy your highness, and the en-  
treaties

Of our most gracious mistress.

*Leon.* Satisfy

The entreaties of your mistress ?—satisfy ?—  
Let that suffice. I have trusted thee, Camillo,  
With all the nearest things to my heart, as well  
My chamber-councils : wherein, priest-like, thou  
Hast cleans'd my bosom ; I from thee departed  
Thy penitent reform'd : but we have been  
Deceiv'd in thy integrity, deceiv'd  
In that which seems so.

*Cam.* Be it forbid, my lord !

*Leon.* To hide upon't ;—Thou art not honest :  
or,

If thou inclin'st that way, thou art a coward ;  
Which boxes ‡ honesty behind, restraining  
From course requir'd : Or else thou must be  
counted

A servant, grafted in my serious trust,  
And therein negligent ; or else a fool,  
That seest a game play'd home, the rich stake  
drawn.

And tak'st it all for jest.

*Cam.* My gracious lord,  
I may be negligent, foolish, and fearful ;  
In every one of these no man is free,  
But that his negligence, his folly, fear,

\* To round in the ear was to tell secretly.  
† Tasse.  
‡ To box is to hamstring.

Amongst the infinite doings of the world,  
Sometime puts forth : In your affairs, my lord,  
If ever I were willful-negligent,  
It was my folly ; if industriously  
I play'd the fool, it was my negligence,  
Not weighing well the end ; it ever fearful  
To do a thing, where I the issue doubted,  
Whereof the execution did cry out  
Against the non performance, 'twas a fear  
Which oit affects the wisest : these, my lord ;  
Are such allow'd infirmities, that honesty  
Is never free of. But, beseech your grace,  
Be plainer with me ; let me know my trespass  
By its own visage : if I then deny it,  
'Tis none of mine.

*Leon.* Have not you seen, Camillo,  
(But that's past doubt : you have ; or your eye-  
glass

Is thicker than a cuckold's horn :) or heard,  
(For, to a vision so apparent, rumour  
Cannot be mute,) or thought, (for cogitation  
Resides not in that man, that does not think it,)  
My wife is slippery ? If thou wilt confess,  
(Or else be impudently negative,  
To have nor eyes, nor ears, nor thought,) then  
say,

My wife's a hobby-horse : deserves a name  
As rank as any flax-wench, that puts to  
Before her troth-plight : say it, and justify it.

*Cam.* I would not be a stander-by, to hear  
My sovereign mistress clouded so, without  
My present vengeance taken : 'Shrew my heart  
You never spoke what did become you less  
Than this ; which to reiterate, were sin  
As deep as that, though true.

*Leon.* Is whispering nothing ?  
Is leaning cheek to cheek ? is meeting noses ?  
Kissing with inside lip ? stopping the career  
Of laughter with a sigh ? (a note inlallible  
Of breaking honesty :) horsing foot on foot ?  
Skulking in corners ? wishing clocks more swift ?  
Hours, minutes ? noon, midnight ? and all eyes  
blind

With the pin and web, \* but their's, their's only,  
That would unseeen be wicked ? Is this nothing ?  
Why, then the world, and all that's in't, is no-  
thing ;

The covering sky is nothing : Bohemia nothing ;  
My wife is nothing ; nor nothing have these no-  
things

If this be nothing.

*Cam.* Good my lord, be cur'd  
Of this diseas'd opinion, and betimes ;  
For 'tis most dangerous.

*Leon.* Say, it be ; 'tis true.

*Cam.* No, no, my lord.

*Leon.* It is ; you lie, you lie :

I say thou liest, Camillo, and I hate thee :  
Pronounce thee a gross lout, a mindless slave ;  
Or else a hovering temporizer, that  
Canst with thine eyes at once see good and evil,  
Inclining to them both : Were my wife's liver  
Infected as her life, she would not live  
The running of one glass. †

*Cam.* Who does infect her ?

*Leon.* Why he, that wears her like her medal,  
hanging

About his neck, Bohemia : Who—if I  
Had servants true about me : that bare eyes  
To see alike mine honour as their profits,  
Their own particular thrifths,—they would do  
that

Which should undo more doing : Ay, and thou,  
His cup-bearer,—whom I from meaner form  
Have beuch'd, and rear'd to worship ; who  
may'st see <sup>[heaven,</sup>

Plainly, as heaven sees earth, and earth sees  
How I am galled,—might'st bespice a cup,  
To give mine enemy a lasting wulk ;  
Which draught to me were cordial

*Cam.* Sir, my lord,

I could do this ; and that with no rank ‡ potion,

\* Disorders of the eye. † Hour-glass.  
‡ Flaxty.

But with a ling'ring dram, that should not work  
Maliciously \* like poison : But I cannot  
Believe this crack to be in my dread mistress  
So sovereignly being honourable.  
I have lov'd thee,—

*Leon.* Make't thy question, and go rot !  
Dost think I am so muddy, so unsettled,  
To appoint myself in this vexation ? sully  
The purity and whiteness of my sheets,  
Which to preserve, is sleep ; which being  
spotted,

Is goads, thorns, nettles, tails of wasps ?  
Give scandal to the blood o' the prince my son,  
Who, I do think is mine, and love as mine ;  
Without ripe moving to't ? Would I do this ?  
Could man so blench : †

*Cam.* I must believe you, Sir ;  
I do : and will fetch off Bohemia for't :  
Provided, that when he's remov'd, your highness  
Will take again your queen, as you's at first ;  
Even for your son's sake ; and, thereby, for  
sealing

The injury of tongues, in courts and kingdoms  
Known and allied to your's.

*Leon.* Thou dost advise me,  
Even so as I mine own course have set down :  
I'll give no blemish to her honour, none.

*Cam.* My lord,  
Go then : and with a countenance as clear  
As friendship wears at feasts, keep with Bo-  
hemia,

And with your queen : I am his cupbearer ;  
If from me he have wholesome beverage,  
Account me not your servant.

*Leon.* This is all :  
Do't, and thou hast one half of my heart ;  
Do't not, thou spilt'st thine own.

*Cam.* I'll do, my lord.

*Leon.* I will seem friendly, as thou hast ad-  
vis'd me. [Exit.]

*Cam.* O miserable lady !—But, for me,  
What case stand I in ? I must be the poisoner  
Of good Polixenes : and my ground to do't  
Is the obedience to a master ; one,  
Who, in rebellion with himself, will have  
All that are his, so too.—To do this deed,  
Promotion follows : If I could find example  
Of thousands, that had struck anointed kings,  
And flourish'd after, I'd not do't : but since  
Nor brass, nor stone, nor parchment, bears not  
one,

Let villany itself forswear't. I must  
Forsake the court : to do't, or no, is certain  
To me a break-neck. Happy star, reign now !  
Here comes Bohemia.

*Enter POLIXENES.*

*Pol.* This is strange ! methinks,  
My favour here begins to warp. Not speak I—  
Good-day, Camillo.

*Cam.* Hail, most royal Sir !

*Pol.* What is the news i' the court ?

*Cam.* None rare, my lord.

*Pol.* The king hath on him such a counte-  
nance,

As he had lost some province, and a region,  
Lov'd as he loves himself ; even now I met him  
With customary compliment ; when he,  
Wasting his eyes to the contrary, and falling  
A lip of much contempt, speeds from me ; and  
So leaves me, to consider what is breeding,  
That changes thus his manners.

*Cam.* I dare not know, my lord.

*Pol.* How ! dare not ? do not. Do you know,  
and dare not  
Be intelligent to me ? 'Tis thereabouts ;  
For, to yourself, what you do know, you must ;  
And cannot say, you dare not. Good Camillo,  
Your chang'd complexions are to me a mirror,  
Which shows me mine chang'd to : for I must be  
A party in this alteration, finding  
Myself thus alter'd with it.

*Cam.* There is a sickness

Which puts some of us in distemper ; but  
I cannot name the disease ; and it is caught  
Of you that yet are well.

*Pol.* How ! caught of me ?

Make me not sighted like the basilisk :  
I have look'd on thousands, who have sped the  
better

By my regard, but kill'd none so. Camillo,—  
As you are certainly a gentleman ; tho'to  
Clerk-like, experienc'd, which no less adorns  
Our gentry, than our parents' noble names,  
In whose success \* we are gentle, †—I beseech  
you,

If you know aught which does behave my know-  
ledge

Thereof to be inform'd, imprison it not  
In ignorant concealment.

*Cam.* I may not answer.

*Pol.* A sickness caught of me, and yet I  
well !

I must be answer'd.—Dost thou hear, Camillo,  
I conjure thee, by all the parts of man,  
Which honour does acknowledge,—whereof the  
least

Is not this suit of mine,—that thou declare  
What incidency thou dost guess of harm

Is creeping toward me ; how far off, how near ;

Which way to be prevented, if to be ;

If not, how best to bear it.

*Cam.* Sir, I'll tell you ;  
Since I am charg'd in honour, and by him  
That I think honourable : Therefore mark my  
counsel ;

Which must be even as swiftly follow'd as  
I mean to utter it ; or both yourself and me  
Cry, *lost*, and so good-night.

*Pol.* On, good Camillo.

*Cam.* I am appointed him to murder you. ‡

*Pol.* By whom, Camillo ?

*Cam.* By the king.

*Pol.* For what ?

*Cam.* He thinks, nay, with all confidence he  
swears,

As he had seen't, or been an instrument  
To vice § you to't,—that you have touch'd his  
queen

Forbiddenly.

*Pol.* Oh ! then my best blood turn  
To an infected jelly ; and my name  
Be yok'd with his, that did betray the best !

Turn then my freshest reputation to  
A savour, that may strike the dullest nostril  
Where I arrive ; and my approach be shunn'd,  
Nay, hated too, worse than the great'st infection  
That e'er was heard, or read !

*Cam.* Swear his thought over

By each particular star in heaven, and  
By all their influences, you may as well  
Forbid the sea for to obey the moon,

As or, by oath, remove, or counsel, shake

The fabric of his folly ; whose foundation

Is pil'd upon his faith, ‖ and will continue

The standing of his body.

*Pol.* How should this grow ?

*Cam.* I know not : but, I am sure, 'tis safer to  
Avoid what's grown, than question how 'tis  
born.

If therefore you dare trust my honesty,—  
That lies inclosed in this trunk, which you  
Shall bear along impawn'd,—away to-night.  
Your followers I will whisper to the business ;  
And will, by twos and threes, at several pos-  
terns,

Clear them o' the city : For myself, I'll put  
My fortunes to your service, which are here  
By this discovery lost. Be not uncertain ;  
For, by the honour of my parents, I  
Have utter'd truth ; which if you seek to prove,  
I dare not stand by ; nor shall you be safer

\* For succession.

† Gentle was opposed to simple ; well born.

‡ I. e. I am the person appointed, &c.

§ Draw.

‖ bottled belief.

\* Maliciously, with effects openly hurtful.

† I. e. Could any man so start off from propriety ?



Than one condemn'd by the king's own mouth,  
thereon  
His execution sworn.

*Pol.* I do believe thee :  
I saw his heart in his face. Give me thy hand ;  
Be pilot to me, and thy places shall  
Still neighbour mine ; My ships are ready, and  
My people did expect my hence departure  
Two days ago.—This jealousy  
Is for a precious creature : as she's rare,  
Must it be great ; and, as his person's mighty,  
Must it be violent ; and as he does conceive  
He is dishonour'd by a man which ever  
Profess'd to him, why, his revenges must  
In that be made more bitter. Fear o'er-shades  
me :

Good expedition be my friend, and comfort  
The gracious queen, part of his theme, but no-  
thing

Of his ill-ta'en suspicion ! Come, Camillo ;  
I will respect thee as a father, if  
Thou bear'st my life off hence : Let us avoid.

*Cam.* It is in mine authority to command  
The keys of all the posterns : Please your high-  
ness

To take the urgent hour : come, Sir, away.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—*The same.*

*Enter* HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, and LADIES.

*Her.* Take the boy to you : he so troubles me,  
'Tis past enduring.

*1 Lady.* Come, my gracious lord,  
Shall I be your playfellow ?

*Mam.* No, I'll none of you.

*1 Lady.* Why, my sweet lord ?

*Mam.* You'll kiss me hard ; and speak to me  
as if

I were a baby still.—I love you better.

*2 Lady.* And why so, my good lord ?

*Mam.* Not for because  
Your brows are blacker ; yet black brows, they  
say,

Become some women best ; so that there be not  
Too much hair there, but in a sun circle,  
Or half-moon made with a pen.

*2 Lady.* Who taught you this ?

*Mam.* I learn'd it out of women's faces.—  
Pray now

What colour are your eye-brows ?

*1 Lady.* Blue, my lord.

*Mam.* Nay, that's a mock : I have seen a  
lady's nose

That has been blue, but not her eye-brows.

*2 Lady.* Hark ye :

The queen, your mother, rounds space ; we shall  
Present our services to a fine new prince,  
One of these days ; and then you'd wanton with  
If we would have you. [us,

*1 Lady.* She is spread of late  
Into a goodly bulk : Good time encounter her !

*Her.* What wisdom stirs amongst you ? Come,  
Sir, now

am for you again : Pray you, sit by us,  
And tell's a tale.

*Mam.* Merry, or sad, shall't be ?

*Her.* As merry as you will.

*Mam.* A sad tale's best for winter :  
I have one of sprites and goblins.

*Her.* Let's have that, Sir.

Come on, sit down :—Come on, and do your best  
To fright me with your sprites : you're powerful  
at it.

*Mam.* There was a man,—

*Her.* Nay, come, sit down ; then on.

*Mam.* Dwelt by a church-yard ;—I will tell it  
softly ;

Yon crickets shall not bear it.

*Her.* Come on then,  
And give't me in mine ear.

*Enter* LEONTES, ANTIGONUS, LORDS, and  
others.

*Leon.* Was he met there ? his train ? Camillo  
with him ?

*1 Lord.* Behind the tuft of pines I met them ;  
never

Saw I men scour so on their way : I ey'd them  
Even to their ships.

*Leon.* How bless'd am I

In my just censure ! In my true opinion !—  
Alack, for lesser knowledge !—How accurs'd,  
In being so blest !—There may be in the cup  
A spider† steep'd, and one may drink ; depart,  
And yet partake no venom ; for his knowledge  
Is not infected : but if one present

The abhor'd ingredient to his eye, make known  
How he hath drunk, he cracks his gorge, his  
sides,

With violent hefts :—I have drunk, and seen  
the spider.

Camillo was his help in this, his pander :—  
There is a plot against my life, my crown ;  
All's true that is mistrusted :—that false villain,  
Whom I employ'd, was pre-employ'd by him :  
He has discover'd my design, and I  
Remain a pinch'd thing ; § yea, a very trick  
For them to play at will :—How came the posterns  
So easily open ?

*1 Lord.* By his great authority ;  
Which often hath no less prevail'd than so,  
On your command.

*Leon.* I know't too well.—

Give me the boy ; I am glad you did not nurse  
him :

Though he does bear some signs of me, yet you  
Have too much blood in him.

*Her.* What is this sport ?

*Leon.* Bear the boy hence, he shall not come  
about her ;

Away with him :—and let her sport herself  
With that she's big with ; for 'tis Polixenes  
Has made thee swell thus.

*Her.* But I'd say, he had not,  
And, I'll be sworn, you would believe my saying.  
How'er you lean to the wayward.

*Leon.* You, my lords—

Look on her, mark her well ; be but about  
To say, *she is a goodly lady*, and  
The justice of your hearts will thereto add,  
'Tis pity, *she's not honest, honourable* ;  
Praise her but for this her without-door form,  
(Which, on my faith, deserves high speech,) and  
straight

The shrug, the hum, or ha ; these pretty brands,  
That calumny doth use :—Oh ! I am out,  
That mercy does ; for calumny will seal ||  
Virtue itself :—these shrugs, these hums, and  
ha's,

When you have said *she's* goodly, come between,  
Ere you can say *she's* honest : But be it known,  
From him that has most cause to grieve it  
should be,

She's an adulteress.

*Her.* Should a villain say so,  
The most replenish'd villain in the world,  
He were as much more villain : you, my lord,  
Do but mistake.

*Leon.* You have mistook, my lady,  
Polixenes for Leontes : O thou thing,  
Which I'll not call a creature of thy place,  
Lest barbarism, making me the precedent,  
Should a like language use to all degrees,  
And mannerly distinguishment leave out  
Betwixt the prince and beggar !—I have said,  
She's an adulteress ; I have said with whom  
More, she's a traitor ; and Camillo is  
A federaly with her ; and one that knows  
What she would shame to know herself,  
But with her most vile principal that she's  
A bed-swarver, even as bad as those

\* Oh ! that my knowledge were less.

† Spiders were esteemed poisonous in our author's  
time.

‡ Heavens.

§ A thing pinch'd out of clouts, a puppet.

|| Braud as infamous.

That vulgar give bold titles; ay, and privy  
To this their late escape.

*Her.* No, by my life,  
Privy to none of this: How will this grieve you,  
When you shall come to clearer knowledge, that  
You thus have publish'd me? Gentle my lord,  
You scarce can light me throughly then, to say  
You did mistake.

*Leon.* No, no; if I mistake  
In those foundations which I build upon,  
The centre is not big enough to bear  
A school-boy's top.—Away with her to prison:  
He, who shall speak for her, is afar off guilty,\*  
But that he speaks.†

*Her.* There's some ill planet reigns:  
I must be patient, till the heavens look  
With an aspect more favourable.—Good my lords,  
I am not prone to weeping, as our sex  
Commonly are; the want of which vain dew,  
Perchance, shall dry your pities: but I have  
That honourable grief lodg'd here, which burns  
Worse than tears drown: 'Beseech you all, my  
lords,

With thoughts so qualified as your charities  
Shall best instruct you, measure me:—and so  
The king's will be perform'd!

*Leon.* Shall I be heard? [To the Guards.

*Her.* Who 'st, that goes with me!—'Beseech  
your highness,  
My women may be with me; for, you see,  
My plight requires it. Do not weep, good tools;  
There is no cause: when you shall know your  
mistress

Has deserv'd prison, then abound in tears,  
As I come out: this action, I now go on,  
Is for my better grace.—Adieu, my lord:  
I never wish'd to see you sorry; now,  
I trust, I shall.—My women, come; you have  
leave.

*Leon.* Go, do our bidding; hence.

[*Exeunt QUEEN and LADIES.*]

*1 Lord.* 'Beseech your highness, call the queen  
again.

*Ant.* Be certain what you do, Sir; lest your  
justice  
Prove violence; in the which three great ones  
suffer,  
Yourself, your queen, your son.

*1 Lord.* For her, my lord,—  
I dare my life lay down, and will do't, Sir,  
Please you to accept it, that the queen is spot-  
less

'Tis eyes of heaven, and to you; I mean,  
In this which you accuse her.

*Ant.* If it prove

She's otherwise, I'll keep my stables‡ where  
I lodge my wife; I'll go in couples with her;  
Than when I feel, and see her, no further trust  
For every inch of woman in the world, [her;  
Ay, every diam of woman's flesh, is false,  
If she be.

*Leon.* Hold your peace.

*1 Lord.* Good my lord,—

*Ant.* It is for you we speak, not for ourselves:  
You are abus'd, and by some putter-out,§  
That will be damn'd for't; 'would I knew the  
villain,

I would land-damn him: Be she honour-flaw'd,—  
I have three daughters; the eldest is eleven;  
The second, and the third, nine, and some five;  
If this prove true, they'll pay for't: by nine  
honour,

I'll geld them all; fourteen they shall not see,  
To bring false generations: they are co-heirs;‡  
And I had rather glib myself, than they  
Should not produce fair issue.

*Leon.* Cease; no more.

You smell this business with a sense as cold  
As is a dead man's nose: I see't, and feel't,  
As you feel doing thus; and see withal  
The instruments that feel.

*Ant.* If it be so,  
We need no grave to bury honesty;  
There's not a grain of it, the face to sweeten  
Of the whole dungey earth.

*Leon.* What lack I credit?

*1 Lord.* I had rather you did lack, than I my  
lord, [me  
Upon this ground: and more it would content  
To have her honour true, than your suspicion;  
Be blam'd for't how you might.

*Leon.* Why, what need we  
Commune with you of this? but rather follow  
Our forceful instigation? Our prerogative  
Calls not your counsels: but our natural good-  
ness

Imparts this: which,—if you (or stupified,  
Or seeming so in skill,) cannot, or will not,  
Relish as truth, like us; inform yourselves,  
We need no more of your advice: the matter,  
The loss, the gain, the ordering on't, is all  
Properly our's.

*Ant.* And I wish, my liege,  
You had only in your silent judgment tried it,  
Without more overture.

*Leon.* How could that be!  
Either thou art most ignorant by age,  
Or thou wert born a fool. Camillo's flight,  
Add'd to their familiarity,  
(Which was as gross as ever touch'd conjecture,  
That lack'd sight only, nought for approbation,\*  
But only seeing, all other circumstances  
Made up to the deed,) doth push on this pro-  
ceeding:

Yet, for a greater confirmation,  
(For, in an act of this importance, 'twere  
Most piteous to be wild, I have despatch'd in  
post,

To sacred Delphos, to Apollo's temple,  
Cleomenes and Dion, whom you know  
Of stuff'd sufficiency:† Now, from the oracle  
They will bring all; whose spiritual counsel had,  
Shall stop, or spur me. Have I done well?

*1 Lord.* Well done, my lord.

*Leon.* Though I am satisfied, and need no  
more

Than what I know, yet shall the oracle  
Give rest to the minds of others; such as he  
Whose ignorant credulity will not  
Come up to the truth: So have we thought it  
good,

From our free person she should be confin'd;  
Lest that the treachery of the two, fled hence,  
Be left her to perform. Come, follow us;  
We are to speak in public: for this business  
Will raise us all.

*Ant.* [*Aside.*] To laughter, as I take it,  
If the good truth were known. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The same.*—*The outer Room of  
a Prison.*

*Enter PAULINA and Attendants.*

*Paul.* The keeper of the prison,—call to him;  
[*Exit an Attendant.*]  
Let him have knowledge who I am.—Good  
lady!

No court in Europe is too good for thee,  
What dost thou then in prison?—Now, good  
Sir,

*Re-enter Attendant, with the KEEPER.*

You know me, do you not?

*Keeper.* For a worthy lady,  
And one whom much I honour.

*Paul.* Pray you, then,  
Conduct me to the queen.

*Keeper.* I may not, madam; to the contrary  
I have express commandment.

*Paul.* Here's ado,  
To lock up honesty and honour from  
The access of gentle visitors!—Is it lawful,  
Pray you, to see her women? any of them?  
Emilia!

\* Remotely guilty.  
† In merely speaking. ‡ Take my station.  
§ Instigator.

\* Proof. † Of abilities more than sufficient.

*Keep.* So please you, madam, to put  
Apart these your attendants, I shall bring  
Emilia forth.

*Paul.* I pray now, call her.

Withdraw yourselves. [Exeunt Attend.]

*Keep.* And, madam,  
I must be present at your conference.

*Paul.* Well, be it so, pr'ythee. [Exit KEEPER.]

Here's such ado to make no stain a stain,  
As passes colouring.

*Re-enter KEEPER, with EMILIA.*

Dear gentlewoman, how fares our gracious lady?

*Emil.* As well as one so great, and so for-  
lorn,

May hold together: On her frights, and griefs,  
(Which never tender lady hath borne greater,)  
She is, something before her time, deliver'd.

*Paul.* A boy?

*Emil.* A daughter; and a goodly babe,  
Lusty, and like to live: the queen receives  
Much comfort in't: says, *My poor prisoner,*  
*I am innocent as you.*

*Paul.* I dare be sworn.—  
These dangerous unsafe lures \* o'the king! be-  
shrew them!

He must be told on't, and he shall: the office  
Becomes a woman best; I'll take't upon me:  
If I prove honey-mouth'd, let my tongue blister;  
And never to my red-look'd anger be  
The trumpet any more:—Pray you, Emilia,  
Commend my best obedience to the queen;  
If she dares trust me with her little babe,  
I'll show't the king, and undertake to be  
Her advocate to th' loudest: We do not know  
How he may soften at the sight o'the child;  
The silence often of pure innocence  
Persuades, when speaking fails.

*Emil.* Most worthy madam,  
Your honour, and your goodness, is so evident,  
That your free undertaking cannot miss  
A thriving issue; there is no lady living,  
So meet for this great errand; Please your lady-  
ship

To visit the next room, I'll presently  
Acquaint the queen of your most noble offer;  
Who, but to-day, hammer'd of this design;  
But durst not tempt a minister of honour,  
Lest she should be denied

*Paul.* Tell her, Emilia,  
I'll use that tongue I have: if wit flow from it,  
As boldness from my bosom, let it not be doubt-  
I shall do good. [ed]

*Emil.* Now be you bless'd for it!  
I'll to the queen: Please you, come something  
nearer.

*Keep.* Madam, if't please the queen to send  
the babe,

I know not what I shall incur, to pass it,  
Having no warrant.

*Paul.* You need not fear it, Sir:  
The child was prisoner to the womb; and is,  
By law and process of great nature, thence  
Freed and enfranchis'd: not a party to  
The anger of the king; nor guilty of,  
If any be, the trespass of the queen.

*Keep.* I do believe it.

*Paul.* Do not you fear: upon  
Mine honour, I will stand 'twixt you and danger.  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—The same.—A Room in the  
Palace.

Enter LEONTES, ANTIGONUS, LORDS, and other  
ATTENDANTS.

*Leon.* Nor night, nor day, no rest: It is but  
weakness

To bear the matter thus: mere weakness, if  
The cause were not in being;—part o'the  
cause,

She, the adulteress;—for the harlot king

Is quite beyond mine arm, out of the blank  
And level \* of my brain, plot-proof, but she  
I can hook to me: Say, that she were gone,  
Given to the fire, a moiety of my rest  
Might come to me again.—Who's there?

*I Attend.* My lord? [Advancing]

*Leon.* How does the boy?

*I Attend.* He took good rest to-night,

'Tis hop'd, his sickness is discharg'd.

*Leon.* To see,

His nobleness!

Conceiving the dishonour of his mother,  
He straight declin'd, droop'd, took it deeply;  
Fasten'd and fix'd the shame on't in himself;  
Threw off his spirit, his appetite, his sleep,  
And downright languish'd.—Leave me solely: +

—go,  
See how he fares. [Exit Attend.]—Fie, fie! no  
thought of him;—

The very thought of my revenges that way  
Recoil upon me: in himself too mighty;  
And in his parties, his alliance.—Let him be,  
Until a time may serve: for present vengeance,  
Take it on her. Camillo and Polixenes  
Laugh at me; make their pastime at my sorrow:  
They should not laugh, if I could reach them;  
nor

Shall she, within my power.

*Enter PAULINIA, with a Child.*

*I Lord.* You must not enter.

*Paul.* Nay, rather, good my lords, be second  
to me:

Fear you this tyrannous passion more, alas!  
Than the queen's life? a gracious innocent soul;  
More free, than he is jealous.

*Ant.* That's enough.

*I Attend.* Madam, he hath not slept to-night;  
commanded

None should come at him.

*Paul.* Not so hot, good Sir;  
I come to bring him sleep. 'Tis such as you,—  
That creep like shadows by him, and do sigh  
At each his needless heavings,—such as you  
Nourish the cause of his awaking: I  
Do come with words as medicinal as true;  
Honest, as either: to purge him of that humour,  
That presses him from sleep.

*Leon.* What noise there, ho?

*Paul.* No noise, my lord; but needful coun-  
ference,

About some gossips for your highness.

*Leon.* How?—

Away with that audacious lady: Antigonus,  
I charg'd thee that she should not come about me;  
I knew she would.

*Ant.* I told her so, my lord,

On your displeasure's peril, and on mine,  
She should not visit you.

*Leon.* What, canst not rule her?

*Paul.* From all dishonesty, he can: in this,  
(Unless he take the course that you have done,  
Commit me, for committing honour,) trust it,  
He shall not rule me.

*Ant.* Is you now; you hear!

When she will take the rein, I let her run;  
But she'll not stumble.

*Paul.* Good my liege, I come,—

And, I beseech you, hear me, who profess  
Myself your loyal servant, your physician,  
Your most obedient counsellor; yet that dare  
Less appear so, in comforting your evils,†  
Than such as most seems your's:—I say, I come  
From your good queen.

*Leon.* Good queen!

*Paul.* Good queen, my lord, good queen: I  
say, good queen;

And would by combat make her good, so were I  
A man, the worst ‡ about you.

*Leon.* Force her hence.

*Paul.* Let him, that makes but trifles of his  
eyes,

\* Frenzies.

\* Mark and slun.  
‡ Abetting your ill courses.

+ Alone.  
† Lowest.

First hand me : on mine own accord, I'll off ;  
But, first, I'll do my errand.—The good queen  
For she is good, hath brought you forth a  
daughter ;

Here 'tis ; commends it to your blessing.

[*Laying down the Child.*]

*Leon.* Out !

A mankind \* witch ! Hence with her, out o' [door :  
A most intelligencing bawd !

*Paul.* Not so :

I am as ignorant in that, as you  
In so entitling me : and no less honest  
Than you are mad ; which is enough, I'll war-  
rant,

As this world goes, to pass for honest.

*Leon.* Traitors !

Will you not push her out ? Give her the bas-  
tard :—

Thou, dotard, [*To* ANTIGONUS.] thou art woman-  
tir'd, † unrooted

By thy dame Parlet here,—take up the bastard ;  
Take't up, I say ; give't to thy crone. ‡

*Paul.* For ever

Unvenerable be thy hands, if thou  
Tak'st up the princess, by that forced ‡ baseness  
Which he has put upon't ?

*Leon.* He dreads his wife.

*Paul.* So, I would, you did ; then, 'twere past  
all doubt,

You'd call your children your's.

*Leon.* A nest of traitors !

*Ant.* I am none, by this good light.

*Paul.* Not I ; nor any,

But one, that's here ; and that's himself : for he  
The sacred honour of himself, his queen's,  
His hopeful son's, his babe's, betrays to slander  
Whose sting is sharper than the sword's ; and  
will not

(For, as the case now stands, it is a curse  
He cannot be compell'd to't,) once remove  
The root of his opinion, which is rotten,  
As ever oak, or stone, was sound.

*Leon.* A callet, †

Of boundless tongue ; who late hath beat her  
husband,

And now bats me !—This bat is none of mine ;  
It is the issue of Polydorus ;  
Hence with it ; and, together with the dam,  
Commit them to the fire.

*Paul.* It is your's ;

And, might we lay the old proverb to your  
charge,

So like you, 'tis the worse.—Behold, my lords,  
Although the print be little, the whole matter  
And copy of the father : eye, nose, lip,  
The trick of his frown, his forehead ; nay, the  
valley, [smiles ;

The pretty dimples of his chin, and cheek : his  
The very mould and frame of hand, nail, finger  
And thou, good goddess nature which hast  
made it

So like to him that got it, if thou hast  
The ordering of the mind too, 'mongst all  
colours

No yellow ‡ in't ; lest she suspect, as he does,  
Her children not her husband's !

*Leon.* A gross hag !—

And, lozel, \* thou art worthy to be hang'd,  
That wilt not stay her tongue.

*Ant.* Hang all the husbands,  
That cannot do that feat, you'll leave yourself  
Hardly one subject.

*Leon.* Once more, take her hence.

*Paul.* A most unworthy and unnatural lord  
Can do no more.

*Leon.* I'll have thee burn'd.

*Paul.* I care not :

It is a heretic that makes the fire,  
Not she, which burns in't. I'll not call you  
tyrant ;

\* Masculine.

† Hen-pecked.

‡ Worn-out old woman.

§ Forced is false ; uttered with violence to truth.

¶ Tru.l.      † The colour of jealousy.

\*\* Worthless fellow.

But this most cruel usage of your queen  
(Not able to produce more accusation  
Than your own weak-hing'd fancy,) something  
savours

Of tyranny, and will ignoble make you,  
Yea, scandalous to the world.

*Leon.* On your allegiance,

Out of the chamber with her. Were I a ty-  
rant,

Where were her life ? she durst not call me so,  
If she did know me one. Away with her.

*Paul.* I pray you, do not push me ; I'll be  
gone.

Look to your babe, my lord ; 'tis your's : Jove  
send her

A better guiding spirit !—What need these  
hands ?—

You, that are thus so tender o'er his follies,  
Will never do him good, not one of you.

So, so :—Farewell ; we are gone. [Exit.

*Leon.* Thou, traitor, hast set on thy wife to  
this.—

My child ? away with't !—even thou, that hast  
A heart so tender o'er it, take it hence,  
And see it instantly consum'd with fire ;  
Even thou, and none but thou. Take it up  
straight :

Within this hour bring me word 'tis done,  
(And by good testimony,) or I'll seize thy life,  
With what thou else call'st thine : If thou re-  
fuse,

And wilt encounter with my wrath, say so ;  
The bastard's brains with these my proper  
hands

Shall I dash out. Go, take it to the fire ;  
For thou sett'st on thy wife.

*Ant.* I did not, Sir :

These lords, my noble fellows, if they please,  
Can clear me in't.

1 *Lord.* We can ; my royal liege,  
He is not guilty of her coming hither.

*Leon.* You are liars all.

1 *Lord.* 'Beseech your highness, give us bet-  
ter credit :

We have always truly serv'd you ; and beseech  
So to esteem of us : And on our knees we beg,  
(As recompense of our dear services,  
Past, and to come,) that you do change this  
purpose ;

Which, being so horrible, so bloody, must  
Lead on to some foul issue : We all kneel.

*Leon.* I am a feather for each wind that  
blows :—

Shall I live on, to see this bastard kneel  
And call me father ? Better burn it now,  
'Than curse it then. But, be it ; let it live :  
It shall not neither. You, Sir, come you  
hither ; [To ANTIGONUS.]

You that have been so tenderly officious  
With lady Margery, your midwife, there,  
To save this bastard's life—for 'tis a bastard,  
So such as this beard's grey,—what will you  
adventure

To save this brat's life ?

*Ant.* Any thing, my lord,  
That my ability may undergo,  
And nobleness impose : at least, thus much ;  
I'll pawn the little blood which I have left,  
To save the innocent : any thing possible.

*Leon.* It shall be possible : Swear by this  
sword \*

Thou wilt perform my bidding.

*Ant.* I will, my lord.

*Leon.* Mark, and perform it ; (seest thou ?)  
for the fail

Of any point in't shall not only be  
Death to thyself, but to thy lewd-tongu'd wife ;  
Whom, for this time, we pardon. We enjoy  
thee.

As thou art liegeman to us, that thou carry  
This female bastard hence ; and that thou bear  
it

\* It was anciently a practice to swear by the cross  
at the hit of the sword.

To some remote and desert place, quite out  
Of our dominions; and that there thou leave it,  
Without more mercy, to its own protection,  
And favour of the climate. As by strange for-  
tune

It came to us, I do in justice charge thee,—  
On thy soul's peril, and thy body's torture,—  
That thou commend it strangely to some place,\*  
Where chance may nurse, or end it: Take it  
up.

*Ant.* I swear to do this, though a present  
death

Had been more merciful.—Come on, poor babe:  
Some powerful spirit instruct the kites and  
ravens,

To be thy nurses! Wolves, and bears, they say,  
Casting their savageness aside, have done  
Like offices of pity.—Sir, be prosperous  
In more than this deed doth require! and bless-  
ing,

Against this cruelty, fight on thy side,  
Poor thing, condemn'd to loss!

[*Exit, with the Child.*]

*Leon.* No, I'll not rear  
Another's issue.

1. *Atten.* Please your highness, posts,  
From those you sent to the oracle, are come  
An hour since: Cleomenes and Dion,  
Being well arriv'd from Delphos, are both  
landed  
Hasting to the court.

1. *Lord.* So please you, Sir, their speed  
Hath been beyond account.

*Leon.* Twenty-three days  
They have been absent: This good speed; foretels,  
The great Apollo suddenly will have  
The truth of this appear. Prepare you lords;  
Summon a session, that we may arraign  
Our most disloyal lady: for, as she hath  
Been publicly accus'd, so shall she have  
A just and open trial. While she lives,  
My heart will be a burden to me. Leave me;  
And think upon my bidding. [*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—The same.—A Street in some Town.

*Enter CLEOMENES and DION.*

*Cleo.* The climate's delicate; the air most  
sweet;

Fertile the soil; the temple much surpassing  
The common praise it bears.

*Dion.* I shall report,  
For most it caught me, the celestial habits,  
(Methinks, I so should term them,) and the  
reverence

Of the grave wearers. Oh! the sacrifice!  
How ceremonious, solemn, and unearthly  
It was! the offering!

*Cleo.* But, of all, the burst  
And the ear-deafening voice o'the oracle,  
Kin to Jove's thunder, so surpris'd my sense,  
That I was nothing.

*Dion.* If the event o'the journey,  
Prove as successful to the queen,—Oh! be't  
so!

As it hath been to us, rare, pleasant, speedy,  
The time is worth the use on't. †

*Cleo.* Great Apollo,  
Turn all to the best! These proclamations,  
So forcing faults upon Hermione,  
I little like.

*Dion.* The violent carriage of it  
Will clear, or end, the business: When the  
oracle,

(Thus by Apollo's great divine seal'd up,)  
Shall the contents discover, something rare,

Even\* then will rush to knowledge.—Go,—  
fresh horses;—  
And gracious be the issue! [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II.—The same.—A Court of Justice.

LEONTES, LORDS, and OFFICERS, appear pro-  
perly seated.

*Leon.* This sessions (to our great grief, we  
pronounce,)

Even pushes 'gainst our heart: The party tried,  
The daughter of a king; our wife, and one  
Of us too much belov'd.—Let us be clear'd  
Of being tyrannous, since we so openly  
Proceed in justice, which shall have due course,  
Even to the guilt, or the purgation —  
Produce the prisoner.

*Off.* It is his highness' pleasure, that the  
queen

Appear in person here in court.—Silence!

HERMIONE is brought in, guarded; PAULINA  
and LADIES, attending.

*Leon.* Read the indictment.

*Off.* Hermione, queen to the worthy Leontes,  
king of Sicilia, thou art here accus'd and ar-  
raigned of high treason, in committing adul-  
tery with Polixenes, king of Bohemia, and  
conspiring with Camillo to take away the life  
of our sovereign lord the king, thy royal hus-  
band, the pretence thereof being by cir-  
cumstances partly laid open, thou, Hermione,  
contrary to the faith and allegiance of a true  
subject, didst counsel and aid them, for their  
better safety, to fly away by night.

*Her.* Since what I am to say, must be but  
that

Which contradicts my accusation; and  
The testimony on my part, no other  
But what comes from myself; it shall scarce  
boot me

To say, Not guilty - mine integrity,  
Being counted falsehood; ‡ shall, as I express it,  
Be so receiv'd. But thus,—If powers divine  
Behold our human actions, (as they do,)  
I doubt not then, but innocence shall make  
False accusation blush, and tyranny

Tremble at patience.—You, my lord, best know,  
(Who least will seem to do so,) my past life  
Hath been as continent, as chaste, as true,  
As I am now unhappy; which is more  
Than history can pattern, though devis'd,  
And play'd, to take spectators: For behold  
me,—

A fellow of the royal bed, which owe §  
A moiety of the throne, a great king's daughter,  
The mother to a hopeful prince,—here standing  
To prate and talk for life and honour, 'fore  
Who please to come and hear. For life, I prize  
it

As I weigh grief, which I would spare: for ho-  
'Tis a derivative from me to mine,  
And only that I stand for. I appeal  
To your own conscience, Sir, before Polixenes  
Came to your court, how I was in your grace,  
How merited to be so; since he came,  
With what encounter so uncurent I  
Have strain'd, to appear thus: if one jot be-  
yond

The bound of honour; or, in act, or will,  
That way inclining; harden'd be the hearts  
Of all that hear me, and my near'st of kin  
Cry, Fie upon my grave!

*Leon.* I ne'er heard yet,  
That any of these bolder vices wanted  
Less impudence to gainsay what they did,  
Than to perform it first.

*Her.* That's true enough;  
Though 'tis a saying, Sir, not due to me.

*Leon.* You will not own it.

*Her.* More than mistress of,

\* I.e. Commit it to some place as a stranger.  
† I.e. Our journey has recompensed us the time we  
spent in it.

\* Equal.

† Felix's maid.

‡ Own, possess

§ Treachery.

Which comes to me in name of fault, I must not

At all acknowledge. For Polixenes,  
(With whom I am accus'd,) I do confess,  
I lov'd him, as in honour he requir'd;  
With such a kind of love, as might become  
A lady like me; with a love, even such,  
So, and no other, as yourself commanded:  
Which not to have done, I think, had been in me

Both disobedience and ingratitude,  
To you, and toward your friend; whose love  
I had spoke,

Even since it could speak, from an infant,  
freely,

That it was your's. Now, for conspiracy,  
I know not how it tastes; though it be dish'd  
For me to try how: all I know of it,  
Is, that Camillo was an honest man;  
And, why he left your court, the gods themselves,

Wotting no more than I, are ignorant.

Leon. You knew of his departure, as you know

What you have underta'en to do in his absence.

Her. Sir,  
You speak a language that I understand not;  
My life stands in the level \* of your dreams,  
Which I'll lay down.

Leon. Your actions are my dreams;  
You had a bastard by Polixenes,  
And I but dream'd it.—As you were past all  
shame,

(Those of your fact + are so,) so past all truth:  
Which to deny, concerns more than avails:  
For as

This brat hath been cast out, like to thyself,  
No father owning it, (which is, indeed,  
More criminal in thee, than it,) so thou  
Shalt feel our justice, in whose easiest passage,  
Look for no less, than death.

Her. Sir, spare your threats;  
The bug, which you would fright me with, I seek.

To me can life be no commodity:  
The crown and comfort of my life, your favour,  
I do give lost; for I do feel it gone,  
But know not how it went: My second joy,  
And first fruits of my body, from his presence,  
I can bar'd, like one infectious: My third com-  
fort,

Stav'd most unluckily, † is from my breast  
The innocent milk, in its most innocent mouth,  
Haled out to murder: Myself on every post  
Proclaim'd a strumpet: With immodest hatred,  
The child-bed privilege denied, which † longs  
To women of all fashion:—Lastly, hurried  
Here to this place, 't' the open air, before  
I have got strength of limit. § Now, my liege,  
Tell me what blessings I have here alive,  
That I should fear to die? Therefore, proceed.  
But yet hear this; mistake me not;—No I  
life,

I prize it not a straw; but for mine honour,  
(Which I would free,) if I shall be condemn'd  
Upon surmises, (all proofs sleeping else,  
But what your jealousies awake) I tell you,  
'Tis rigorous and not law.—Your honours all,  
I do refer me to the oracle;  
Apollo be my judge.

1 Lord. This your request  
Is altogether just: therefore, bring forth,  
And in Apollo's name his oracle.

[*Exeunt certain OFFICERS.*]  
Her. The emperor of Russia was my father:  
Oh! that he were alive, and here beholding  
His daughter's trial! that he did but see  
The flatness of my misery; yet with eyes  
Of pity, not revenge;

\* Is within the reach.

† They who have done like you.

‡ Ill-starred; born under an auspicious planet.

§ *E. The degree of strength which it is customary to acquire before women are suffered to go abroad after child-bearing*

*Re-enter OFFICERS, with CLEOMENES and DION.*

Offi. You here shall swear upon this sword  
of justice,  
That you, Cleomenes and Dion, have  
Been both at Delphos; and from thence have  
brought

This seal'd-up oracle, by the hand deliver'd  
Of great Apollo's priest; and that, since then,  
You have not dar'd to break the holy seal,  
Nor read the secrets in't.

Cleo. Dion. All this we swear.

Leon. Break up the seals, and read.

Offi. [*Reads.*] *Hermione is chaste, Polixenes, blameless, Camillo a true subject, Leontes a jealous tyrant, his innocent babe truly begotten; and the king shall live without an heir, if that, which is last, be not found.*

Lords. Now blessed be the great Apollo!

Her. Praise'd!

Leon. Hast thou read truth?

Offi. Ay, my lord; even so

As it is here set down.

Leon. There is no truth at all 't' the oracle:  
The sessions shall proceed; this is mere falsehood.

*Enter a SERVANT hastily.*

Serv. My lord the king, the king!

Leon. What is the business?

Serv. O Sir, I shall be bated to report it:  
The prince your son, with mere conceit and fear  
Of the queen's speed \* is gone.

Leon. How! gone?

Serv. Is dead.

Leon. Apollo's angry; and the heaven's themselves

Do strike at my injustice. [*HERMIONE faints.*]

How now there?

Paul. This news is mortal to the queen:—  
Look down

And see what death is doing.

Leon. Take her hence:  
Her heart is but o'ercharg'd; she will recover.—  
I have too much believ'd mine own suspicion:—  
Beseech you, tenderly apply to her  
Some remedies for life.—Apollo, pardon

[*Exeunt PAULINA and LADIES, with HERM.*]

My great profaneness 'gainst thine oracle!—

I'll reconcile me to Polixenes;

New woo my queen; recall the good Camillo;

Whom I proclaim a man of truth, of mercy:

For, being transported by my jealousies

To bloody thoughts and to revenge, I chose

Camillo for the minister, to poison

My friend Polixenes: which had been done,

But that the good mind of Camillo tardied

My swift command, though I, with death and

with

Reward, did threaten and encourage him,

Not doing it, and being done: he, most hu-

mane,

And fill'd with honour, to my kingly guest

Unclass'd his practice; quit his fortunes here,

Which you knew great; and to the certain

hazard

Of all uncertainties himself commended, †

No richer than his honour:—How he glisters

Through my rust! and how his piety

Does my deeds make the blacker!

*Re-enter PAULINA.*

Paul. Woe the while!

O cut my lace; lest my heart, cracking it,

Break too!

1 Lord. What fit is this, good lady?

Paul. What studied torments, tyrant, hast

for me?

What wheels? racks? fires? What faying? ‡

boiling,

In leads, or oils? what old, or newer torture

\* Of the event of the Queen's trial.

† Commended.

Must I receive; whose every word deserves  
To taste of thy most worst? Thy tyranny  
Together working with thy jealousies,—  
Fancies too weak for boys, too green and idle  
For girls of mine!—O think, what they have  
done,

And then run mad, indeed; stark mad! for all  
Thy by gone fooleries were but spices of it.  
That thou betray'dst Polixenes, 'twas nothing;  
That did but show thee, of a fool, inconstant,  
And damnable ungrateful: nor was't much,  
Thou would'st have poison'd good Camillo's  
honour,

To have him kill a king; poor trespasses,  
More monstrous standing by: whereof I reckon  
The casting forth to crows thy baby daughter,  
To be or none, or little; though a devil  
Would have shed water out of fire, \* ere don't:  
Nor is't directly laid to thee, the death  
Of the young prince; whose honourable thoughts  
(Thoughts high for one so tender,) cleave the  
heart

That could conceive, a gross and foolish sire  
Bleem'd his gracious dam: this is not, no,  
Laid to thy answer: But the last—O lords,  
When I have said, cry, woe!—the queen, the  
queen,

The sweetest, dearest, creature's dead; and  
vengeance for't

Nor dropp'd down yet.

1 Lord. The higher powers forbid!

Paul. I say, she's dead; I'll swear't; if word,  
nor oath,

Prevail not, go and see: if you can bring  
Tincture, or lustre, in her lip, her eye,  
Heat outwardly, or breath within, I'll serve  
you

As I would do the gods.—But, O thou tyrant!  
Do not repent these things; for they are hea-  
vier

Than all thy woes can stir: therefore betake  
thee

To nothing but despair. A thousand knees  
Ten thousand years together, naked, fasting,  
Upon a barren mountain, and still winter  
In storm perpetual, could not move the gods  
To look that way thou wert.

Leon. Go on, go on:

Thou canst not speak too much; I have deserv'd  
All tongues to talk their bitterest.

1 Lord. Say no more;

Howe'er the business goes, you have made fault  
I'th boldness of your speech.

Paul. I am sorry for't;

All faults I make; when I shall come to know them  
I do repent: Alas! I have show'd too much  
The rashness of a woman: he is touch'd  
To the noble heart.—What's gone, and what's  
past help

Should be past grief: Do not receive affliction  
then,

At my petition, I beseech you; rather  
Let me be punish'd, that have minded you  
Of what you should forget. Now, good my  
liege,

Sir, royal Sir, forgive a foolish woman:  
The love I bore your queen,—lo, fool again!—  
I'll speak of her no more, nor of your children;  
I'll not remember you of my own lord,  
Who is lost too: Take your patience to you,  
And I'll say nothing.

Leon. Thou didst speak but well, [better  
When most the truth; Which I receive much  
Than to be puled of thee. Pr'ythee, bring me  
To the dead bodies of my queen and son:  
One grave shall be for both; upon them shall  
The causes of their death appear, unto  
Our shame perpetual: Once o' day I'll visit  
The chapel where they lie; and tears, shed there,  
Shall be my recreation: So long as  
Nature will bear up with this exercise,  
So long I daily vow to use it. Come,  
And lead me to these sorrows. [Exeunt.

\* I.e. A devil would have shed tears of pity ere he  
would have perpetrated such an action.

SCENE III.—Bohemia.—A desert  
Country near the Sea.

Enter ANTI-GONUS, with the Child; and a  
MARINER.

Ant. Thou art perfect \* then, our ship hath  
touch'd upon

The deserts of Bohemia?†

Mar. Ay, my lord; and fear [grimly,  
We have lauded in ill time; the skies look  
And threaten present blusters. In my con-  
science,

The heavens with that we have in hand are  
And frown upon us.

Ant. Their sacred wills be done!—Go, get  
aboard;

Look to thy bark; I'll not be long, before  
I call upon thee.

Mar. Make your best haste; and go not  
Too far i'th land: 'tis like to be loud weather;  
Besides, this place is famous for the creatures  
Of prey that keep upon't.

Ant. Go thou away:

I'll follow instantly.

Mar. I am glad at heart

To be so rid o'the business. [Exit.

Ant. Come, poor babe:—

I have heard, (but not believ'd,) the spirits of  
the dead.

May walk again; if such thing be, thy mother  
Appear'd to me last night; for ne'er was dream  
So like a waking. To me comes a creature,  
Sometimes her head on one side, some another;  
I never saw a vessel of like sorrow,

So fill'd, and so becoming. In pure white robes,  
Like very sanctity, she did approach

My cabin where I lay: thrice bow'd before me,  
And, gasping to begin some speech, her eyes

Became two spouts: the fury spent, anon  
Did this break from her: Good Antigonus,

Since fate, against thy better disposition,  
Hath made thy person for the thou'r-out

Of my poor babe, according to thine oath,—  
Places remote enough are in Bohemia,

There weep, and leave it crying; and for the  
babe

Is counted lost for ever: Perdita

I pr'ythee, call't; for this ungentle business,  
Put on thee by my lord, thou ne'er shalt see

Thy wife Paulina more:—and so, with shrieks,  
She melted into air. Affrighted much,

I did in time collect myself; and thought  
This was so, and no slumber. Dreams are toys:

Yet, for this once, yea, superstitiously,  
I will be squar'd by this. I do believe,

Hermione hath suffered death; and that  
Apollo would, this being indeed the issue

Of king Polixenes, it should here be laid,  
Either for life, or death, upon the earth

Of its right father.—Blossom, speed thee well!  
[Laying down the Child.

There lie; and there thy character:† there  
these; [Laying down a Bundle.

Which may, if fortune please, both breed thee,  
pretty,

And still rest thine.—The storm begins:—  
Poor wretch,—

That, for thy mother's fault, art thus expos'd  
To loss, and what may follow!—Weep I can-

not,  
But my heart bleeds: and most accurs'd am I,  
To be by oath enjoin'd to this.—Farewell!

The day frowns more and more; thou art like  
to have

A lullaby too rough: I never saw [mour't—  
The heavens so dim by day. A savage clat-

Well may I get aboard!—This is the chase;  
I am gone for ever. [Exit, pursued by a Bear

Enter an old SHEPHERD.

Shep. I would there were no age between

\* Well-assured.

† An oversight of the poet's; Bohemia being an  
land country.

‡ The writing afterwards discovered with Perdita.

ten and three-and-twenty; or that youth would sleep out the rest: for there is no hing in the between but getting, wenches with child, wronging the ancientry, stealing, fighting.—Hark you now!—Would any but these boiled brains of nineteen, and two-and-twenty, hunt this weather? They have scared away two of my best sheep; which, I fear, the wolf will sooner find, than the master: if any where I have them, 'tis by the sea side, browsing on ivy. Good luck, an't he thy will! what have we here? [*Taking up the Child.*] Mercy on's, a bairn; \* a very pretty bairn! A boy, or a child,† I wonder? a pretty one; a very pretty one: Sure, some scape: though I am not bookish, yet I can read waiting gentlewoman in the scape. This has been some stair-work, some trunk-work, some behind door-work: they were warmer that got this, than the poor thing is here. I'll take it up for pity: yet I'll tarry till my son come; he hallac'd but even now. Whoa, ho ho!

*Enter CLOWN.*

*Clo.* Hilloa, loa!

*Shep.* What, art so near? if thou'lt see a thing to talk on when thou art dead and rotten, come hither. What ailest thou, man?

*Clo.* I have seen two such sights, by sea, and by land; but I am not to say, it is a sea, for it is now the sky; betwixt the firmament and it, you cannot thrust a bodkin's point.

*Shep.* Why, boy, how is it?

*Clo.* I would, you did but see how it chases, how it rages, how it takes up the shore! but that's not to the point. O the most piteous cry of the poor souls! sometimes to see 'em, and not to see 'em: now the ship boring the moon with her main-mast; and anon swallowed with yest and froth, as you'd thrust a cork into a hog's-head. And then for the land service,—To see how the bear tore out his shoulder-bone; how he cried to me for help, and said, his name was Antigonus, a nobleman:—But to make an end of the ship:—to see how the sea flap-dragon'd it:—but, first, how the poor souls roared, and the sea mocked them;—and how the poor gentleman roared, and the bear mock'd him, both roaring louder than the sea or weather.

*Shep.* Name of mercy, when was this, boy?

*Clo.* Now, now; I have not winked since I saw these sights: the men are not yet cold under water, nor the bear half dined on the gentleman; he's at it now.

*Shep.* Would I had been by, to have helped the old man!

*Clo.* I would you had been by the ship side, to have helped her; There your charity would have lacked footing. [*Aside.*]

*Shep.* Heavy matters! heavy matters! but look thee here, boy. Now bless thyself; thou met'st with things dying, I with things new born. Here's a sight for thee: look thee, a bearing-cloth § for a squire's child! Look thee here; take up, take up, boy; open't. So, let's see: It was told me, I should be rich by the fairies: this is some changeling: ||—open't: What's within boy?

• *Clo.* You're a made old man; if the sins of your youth are forgiven you, you're well to live. Gold! all gold!

*Shep.* This is fairy gold, boy, and 'twill prove so: up with it, keep it close; home, home, the next § way. We are lucky, boy; and to be so still, requires nothing but secrecy.—Let my sheep go:—Come, good boy, the next way home.

*Clo.* Go you the next way with your findings; I'll go see if the bear be gone from the gentleman, and how much he hath eaten: they are

never curs'd\* but when they are hungry: if there be any of him left, I'll bury it.

*Shep.* That's a good deed: if thou may'st discern by that which is left of him, what he is, letch me to the sight of him.

*Clo.* Marry, will I; and you shall help to put him i'the ground.

*Shep.* 'Tis a lucky day, boy; and we'll do good deeds on't. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

*Enter TIME, as Chor'us.*

*Time.* I,—that please some, try all; both joy and terror,

Of good and bad; that make, and unfold error,—Now take upon me, in the name of Time, To use my wings. Impute it not a crime, To me, or my swift passage, that I slide O'er sixteen years, and leave the growth untried Of that wide gap; † since it is in my power To o'erthrow law, and in one self-born hour To plant and o'erwhelm custom: Let me pass The same I am, ere ancient'st order was, Or what is now received: I witness to The times that brought them in; so shall I do To the freshest things now reigning; and make The glistering of this present, as my tale [stale Now seems to it. Your patience this allowing, I turn my glass; and give my scene such growing As you had slept between. Leontes leaving The effects of his fond jealousies; so grieving That he shuts up himself; imagine me,† Gentle spectators, that I now may be In fair Bohemia; and remember well, I mentioned a son o'the king's, which Florizel I now name to you; and with speed so pace To speak of Perdita, now grown in grace Equal with wond'ring: What of her ensues, I list not prophecy; but let Time's news Be known, when 'tis brought forth:—a shepherd's daughter,

And what to her adheres, which follows after, Is the argument § of time: Of this allow, || If ever you have spent time worse ere now; If never, yet, that Time himself doth say, He wishes earnestly, you never may. [*Exit.*]

SCENE I.—The same.—A Room in the Palace of POLIXENES.

*Enter POLIXENES and CAMILLO.*

*Pol.* I pray thee, good Camillo, be no more importunate: 'tis a sickness, denying thee any thing; a death, to grant this.

*Cam.* It is fifteen years, since I saw my country: though I have for the most part, been ailed abroad, I desire to lay my bones there. Besides, the penitent king, my master, hath sent for me: to whose feeling sorrows I might be some ally, or I o'erween ¶ to think so; which is another spur to my departure.

*Pol.* As thou lovest me, Camillo, wipe not out the rest of thy services, by leaving me now: the need I have of thee, thine own goodness hath made; better not to have had thee, than thus to want thee; thou, having made me businesses, which none, without thee, can sufficiently manage, must either stay to execute them thyself, or take away with thee the very services thou hast done: which, if I have not enough considered, (as too much I cannot,) to be more thankful to thee, shall be my study; and my profit therein, the heaping friendships. ¶ Of that fatal country Sicilia, pr'ythee speak no more: whose very naming punishes me the remembrance of that penitent, as thou call'st him, and reconciled king, my brother; whose

\* Child. † Female Infant. ‡ Swallowed.  
§ The mantle in which a child was carried to be baptized.  
|| Some child left behind by the fairies, in the room of one which they had stolen.

¶ Nearest.

• Mischievous.

† I.e. Leave unexamined the progress of the intermedate time which filled up the gap in Perdita's story.  
‡ Imaginative for me. § Subject. || Approve.  
¶ Think too highly. \*\* Friendly offices.



loss of his most precious queen, and children, are even now to be afresh lamented. Say to me, when saw'st thou the prince Florizel my son? Kings are no less unhappy, their issue not being gracious, than they are in losing them, when they have approved their virtues.

*Cam.* Sir, it is three days since I saw the prince: What his happier affairs may be, are to me unknown; but I have, missingly, noted, \* he is of late much retired from court; and is less frequent to his princely exercises, than formerly he hath appeared.

*Pol.* I have considered so much, Camillo; and with some care; so far, that I have eyes under my service, which look upon his removedness: from whom I have this intelligence; That he is seldom from the house of a most homely shepherd; a man, they say, that from very nothing, and beyond the imagination of his neighbours, is grown into an unspeakable estate.

*Cam.* I have heard, Sir, of such a man, who hath a daughter of most rare note: the report of her is extended more, than can be thought to begin from such a cottage.

*Pol.* That's likewise part of my intelligence. But I fear the angle that plucks our son thither. Thou shalt accompany us to the place: where we will, not appearing what we are, have some question † with the shepherd; from whose simplicity, I think it not uneasy, to get the cause of my son's resort thither. Pr'ythee, be my present partner in this business, and lay aside the thoughts of Sicilia.

*Cam.* I willingly obey your command.

*Pol.* My best Camillo!—We must disguise ourselves. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The same —A Road near the Shepherd's Cottage.

Enter AUTOLYCUS, singing.

*When daffodils begin to peer,—*

*With, heigh! the dory over the dale,—*

*Why then comes in the sweet o'the year;*

*For the red blood reigns in the winter's pale. †*

*The white sheet bleaching on the hedge,—*  
*With, hey! the sweet birds, O how they sing!*

*Doth set my pugging ‡ tooth on edge;*

*For a quart of ale is a dish for a king.*

*The lark, tirra-lirra, chants,—*

*With, hey! with, hey! the thrush and the jay:*

*Are summer songs for me and my aunts, ¶*  
*While we lie tumbling in the hay.*

I have served prince Florizel, and, in my time, wore three-pile ¶ but now I am out of service:

*But shall I go mourn for that, my dear?*

*The pale moon shines by night:*

*And when I wander here and there,*

*I then do most go right.*

*If tinkers may have leave to live,*

*And bear the saw-skin budget;*

*Then my account I well may give,*

*And in the stocks avouch it.*

My traffic is sheets: when the kite builds, look to lesser linen. My father named me, Autolycus; who, being, as I am, littered under Mercury, was likewise a snapper-up of unconsidered trifles; With die, and drab, I purchased this caparison; and my revenue is the silly cheat: \*\* Gallows, and knock, are too powerful on the highway: beheading, and hanging, are terrors to me; for the life to come, I sleep out the thought of it.—A prize! a prize!

\* Observed at intervals.

† Talk.

‡ I. e. The spring blood reigns over the parts lately under the domination of winter.

§ Thievish. ¶ Doxies.

¶ Rich velvet.

\*\* Picking pockets.

Enter CLOWN

*Clo.* Let me see:—Every † eleven weather—tods; \* every tod yields—pound and odd shilling: fifteen hundred shorn.—What comes the wool to?

*Aut.* If the springe hold, the cock's mine.

[Aside.

*Clo.* I cannot do't without counters. †—Let me see; what I am to buy for our sheep shearing feast? *Three pound of sugar; five pound of currants; rice*—What will this sister of mine do with rice? But my father hath made her mistress of the feast, and she lays it on. She hath made me four-and-twenty nosebags for the sheaters: three-man sount-men; all, and very good ones; but they are most of them means ‡ and bases: but one Puttun amongst them, and he sings psalms to hompines. I must have *saffron*, to colour the warden pies; || *mace*, † *date*, † *none*, † that's out of my head; † *nutmegs seven; a race*, or two, of ginger; but that I may beg;—*four pound of prunes, and as many of raisins o'the sun.*

*Aut.* Oh! that ever I was born!

[Groveling on the ground.

*Clo.* P'the name of me,—

*Aut.* Oh! I help me, help me! pluck but off these rags; and then, death, death!

*Clo.* Alack, poor soul! thou hast need of more rags to lay on thee, rather than have these off.

*Aut.* O Sir, the loathsomeness of them offends me more than the stripes I have received, which are mighty ones and millions.

*Clo.* Alas! poor man a million of beating may come to a great matter.

*Aut.* I am robbed, Sir, and beaten, my money and apparel † taken from me, and these detestable things put upon me.

*Clo.* What, by a horse-man, or a foot-man?

*Aut.* A foot-man, sweet Sir, a foot-man.

*Clo.* Indeed, he should be a foot-man, by the garments he hath left with thee; it is he a horse-man's coat, it hath seen very hot service. Lend me thy hand, I'll help thee: come, lend me thy hand. [Helping him up.]

*Aut.* Oh! good Sir, tenderly, oh!

*Clo.* Alas, poor soul.

*Aut.* Oh! good Sir, softly, good Sir: I fear, Sir, my shoulder-blade is out.

*Clo.* How now? canst stand?

*Aut.* Softly, dear Sir; [Picks his pocket.] good Sir, softly: you ha' done me a charitable office.

*Clo.* Dost lack any money? I have a little money for thee.

*Aut.* No, good sweet Sir; no, I beseech you, Sir: I have a kinsman not past three quarters of a mile hence, unto whom I was going; I shall there have money, or any thing I want: Offer me no money, I pray you; that kills my heart.

*Clo.* What manner of fellow was he that robbed you?

*Aut.* A fellow, Sir, that I have known to go about with trol-iv-dames: † I knew him once a servant of the prince; I cannot tell, good Sir, for which of his virtues it was, but he was certainly whipped out of the court.

*Clo.* His vices, you would say; there's no virtue whipped out of the court: they cherish it, to make it stay there; and yet it will no more but abide. \*\*

*Aut.* Vices I would say, Sir. I know this man well: he hath been since an ape-bearer; then a process server, a bailiff; then he compassed a motion † of the prodigal son, and married a tinker's wife within a mile where my land

\* Every eleven sheep will produce a tod or 28 pounds of wool.

† Circular pieces of base metal anciently used by the illiterate to adjust their reckoning.

‡ Singers of catches in three parts.

§ Tenors.

¶ A species of pearls.

¶ The machine used in the game of pigeon-holes.

\*\* Sojourn.

†† Puppet-show.

and living lies; and, having flown over many knavish professions, he settled only in rogue: some call him Autolycus.

*Clo.* Out upon him! Prig, \* for my life, prig: he haunts wakes, fairs, and bear-batings.

*Aut.* Very true, Sir; he, Sir, he; that's the rogue, that put me into this apparel.

*Clo.* Not a more cowardly rogue in all Bohemia; if you had but looked big, and spit at him, he'd have run.

*Aut.* I must confess to you, Sir, I am no fighter: I am false of heart that way; and that he knew, I warrant him.

*Clo.* How do you now?

*Aut.* Sweet Sir, much better than I was; I can stand and walk: I will even take my leave of you, and pace softly towards my kinsman's.

*Clo.* Shall I bring thee on the way?

*Aut.* No, good-faced Sir; no, sweet Sir.

*Clo.* Then take thee well; I must go buy spurs for our sheep-shearing.

*Aut.* Pto-per you, sweet Sir!—[*Exit CLOWN*] Your purse is not hot enough to purchase you spurs: I'll be with you at your sheep-shearing too. If I make not this cheat bring out another, and the shearers prove sheep, let me be unmoiled, and my name put in the book of virtue!

*Jog on, jog on, the foot-path way,*

*And evenly hent & the stile-a:*

*A merry heart goes all the day,*

*Your sad sits in a mile-a.* [Exit.]

SCENE III.—*The same.*—*A Shepherd's Cottage.*

*Enter FLORIZEL and PERDITA.*

*Fl.* These your unusual weeds to each part of you

Do give a life: no shepherdess, but Flora, Peering in April's front. This your sheep-shearing

Is as a meeting of the petty gods,

And you the queen on't.

*Per.* Sir, my gracious lord,

To chide at your extremes; † it not becomes me; O pardon, that I name them: your high self, The gracious mark's of the laud, you have observed

With a swain's wearing; and me, poor lowly maid,

Most goddess-like prank'd ‡ up: But that our feasts

In every mess have folly, and the feeders

Digest it with a custom, I should blush

To see you so attired; sworn, I think,

To show myself a glass.

*Fl.* I bless the time,

When my good falcon made her flight across

Thy father's ground.

*Per.* Now Jove afford you cause!

To me, the difference † forges dread; your greatness

Hath not been used to fear. Even now I tremble To think, your rather, by some accident,

Should pass this way, as you did: O the fates! How would he look, to see his work, so noble, Vilely bound up? What would he say? Or how

Should I, in these my borrow'd flaunts, behold The sternness of his presence.

*Fl.* Apprehend

Nothing but jollity. The gods themselves, Humbling their deities to love, have taken The shapes of beasts upon them: Jupiter Became a bull, and bellow'd; the green Neptune

A ram, and bleated; and the fire-rob'd god,

Golden Apollo, a poor humble swain,

As I seem now: Their transformations

Were never for a piece of beauty rarer; Nor in a way so chaste: since my desires Run not before mine honour; nor my lusts Run hotter than my faith.

*Per.* O but, dear Sir, Your resolution cannot hold, when 'tis Oppos'd, as it must be, by the power o'the king:

One of these two must be necessities, Which then will speak; that you must change this purpose,

Or I my life.

*Fl.* Thou dearest Perdita, With these forc'd thoughts, I pry'thee, daiken not

The mirth o'the feast: Or I'll be thine, my fair, Or not my father's: for I cannot be Mine own, nor any thing to any, if I be not thine: to this I am most constant, Though destiny say, no. Be merry, gentle; Strangle such thoughts as these, with any thing That you behold the while. Your guests are coming:

Lift up your countenance; as it were the day Of celebration of that nuptial, which We two have sworn shall come.

*Per.* O lady fortune, Stand you auspicious:

*Enter SHEPHERD, with POLIXENES and CAMILLO, disguised; CLOWN, MOPSA, DORCAS, and others.*

*Fl.* See, your guests approach: Address yourselves to entertain them sprightly, And let's be red with mirth.

*Shep.* Fie, daughter! when my old wife liv'd, upon

This day, she was both pantler, butler, cook; and Both dame and servant. welcom'd all; serv'd all:

Would sing her song, and dance her turn: now At upper end o'the table, now, i'the middle, On his shoulder, and his: her face o'mie With labour; and the thing, she took to quench She would to each one sip: You are rem'd, [it, As if you were a teased one, and not

The hostess of the meeting: Pray you, bid These unknown friends to us welcome: for it is A way to make us better friends, more known. Come, quench your blushes; and present yourself

That which you are, mistress o'the feast: Come And bid us welcome to your sheep-shearing, As your good flock shall prosper.

*Per.* Welcome, Sir! [To POL.] It is my father's will, I should take on me The hostesship o'the day:—You're welcome, Sir!

[To CAMILLO.] Give me those flowers there, Dorcas.—Reverend Sirs,

For you there's rosemary, and rue: these keep Seeming, and savour, \* all the winter long: Grace, and remembrance, be to you both, And welcome to our shearing!

*Pol.* Shepherdess, (A fair one are you,) well you fit our ages With flowers of winter.

*Per.* Sir, the year growing ancient,—Not yet on summer's death, nor on the birth Of trembling winter,—the fairest flowers o'the season

Are our carnations, and streak'd gillyflowers, Which some call nature's bastards: of that kind Our rustic garden's barren; and I care not To get slips of them.

*Pol.* Wherefore, gentle maiden,

Do you neglect them?

*Per.* For I have heard it said, There is an art, which, in their piedness, shares With great creating nature.

*Pol.* Say, there be; Yet nature is made better by no mean, But nature makes that mean: so, o'er that art,

\* Thief.

† Excesses.

‡ Dressed with ostentation.

† Take hold of.

§ Object of all men's notice.

¶ I e. Of station.

• Likeness and smell.

† Because that.

Which, you say, adds to nature, is an art  
That nature makes. You see, sweet maid, we  
marry

A gentler scion to the wildest stock;  
And make conceive a bark of baser kind  
By bud of nobler race; This is an art  
Which does mend nature,—change it rather: but  
The art itself is nature.

*Per.* So it is.

*Pol.* Then make your garden rich in gilly-  
flowers,  
And do not call them bastards.

*Per.* I'll not put

The dibble\* in earth to set one slip of them:  
No more than, were I painted, I would wish  
This youth should say, 'twere well; and only  
therefore

Desire to breed by me.—Here's flowers for you;  
Hot lavender, mints, savory, marjoram;  
The marigold, that goes to bed with the sun,  
And with him rises weeping; these are flowers  
Of middle summer, and, I think, they are  
given

To men of middle age: You are very welcome.

*Cam.* I should leave grazing, were I of your  
flock,

And only live by grazing.

*Per.* Out, alas!

You'd be so lean, that blasts of January  
Would blow you through and through.—Now, my  
fairest friend, (might  
I would, I had some flowers o'the spring, that  
Become your time of day; and yours, and yours;  
That wear upon your virgin branches yet  
Your maidenheads growing:—O Proserpina,  
For the flowers now, that, frightened, thou let'st  
fall

From Dis'† waggon! daffodils,  
'That come before the swallow dares, and take  
'The winds of March with beauty; violets, dim,  
But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes,  
Of Cytherea's breath; pale primroses,  
That die unmarried, ere they can behold  
Bright Phoebus in his strength, a malarly  
Most incident to maids; hold oxlips, and  
The crown-imperial; lilies of all kinds,  
The flower-de-luce being one! Oh! these I lack,  
To make you garlands of; and, my sweet friend,  
To strew him o'er and o'er.

*Flo.* What? like a corpse?

*Per.* No, like a bank, for love to lie and play  
on;

Not like a corpse: or if,—not to be buried,  
But quick; and in mine arms. Come, take your  
flowers:

Methinks, I play as I have seen them do  
In Whitsun† pastorals: sure, this robe of mine  
Does change my disposition.

*Flo.* What you do,  
Still betters what is done. When you speak,  
sweet,

I'd have you do it ever: when you sing,  
I'd have you buy and sell so; so give alms;  
Pray so; and, for the ordering your affairs,  
To sing them too: When you do dance, I wish  
you

A wave o'the sea, that you might ever do  
Nothing but that; move still, still so, and own  
No other function: Each your doing,  
So singular in each particular,  
Crowns what you are doing in the present deeds,  
That all your acts are queens.

*Per.* O Doricles,

Your praises are too large: but that your youth,  
And the true blood, which fairly peeps through  
it,

Do plainly give you out an unstain'd shepherd;  
With wisdom I might fear, my Doricles,  
You woo'd me the false way.

*Flo.* I think, you have

As little skill to fear, as I have purpose  
To put you to't.—But, come; our dance, I pray:

\* A tool to set plants.

† Living.

† Plute.

Your hand, my Perdita: so turtles pan,  
That never mean to part.

*Per.* I'll swear to 'em.

*Pol.* This is the prettiest low-born lass, that  
ever

Ran on the green-sward: \* nothing she does, or  
seems,

But snacks of something greater than herself:  
Too noble for this place.

*Cam.* He tells her something,

That makes her blood look out: Good sooth,  
she is

The queen of curds and cream.

*Clo.* Come on, strike up.

*Dor.* Mopsa must be your mistress: marry,  
gail,

To mend her kissing with.—

*Mop.* Now, in good time!

*Clo.* Not a word, a word, we stand upon our  
manners.—

Come, strike up.

[Music

Here a dance of SHEPHERDS and SHIP-  
HERDESSES.

*Pol.* Pray, good shepherd, what  
Fair swain is this, which dances with your  
daughter?

*Shep.* They call him Doricles, and he boasts  
himself

To have a worthy feeding: † but I have it  
Upon his own report, and I believe it,  
He looks like sooth: ‡ He says, he loves my  
daughter:

I think so too; for never gaz'd the moon  
Upon the water, as he'll stand, and read,  
As 'twere, my daughter's eyes: and, to be  
plain,

I think, there is not half a kisse to choose,  
Who loves another best.

*Pol.* She dances featly. §

*Shep.* So she does any thing; though I re-  
port it,

That should be silent: if young Doricles  
Do light upon her, she shall bring him tunc  
Which he not dreams of.

Enter a SERVANT.

*Serv.* O master, if you did but hear the pedlar  
at the door, you would never dance again after  
a tabor and pipe; no, the bagpipe could not  
move you: he sings several tunes, faster than  
you'll tell money; he utters them as he had  
caten ballads, and all men's ears grow to their  
tunes.

*Clo.* He could never come better: he shall  
come in: I love a ballad but even too well; if  
it be doleful matter, merrily set down, or a  
very pleasant thing indeed, and sung lament-  
ably.

*Serv.* He hath songs, for man, or woman, of  
all sizes; no milliner can so fit his customers  
with gloves: he has the prettiest love-songs for  
maids; so without badwry, which is strange;  
with such delicate burdens of *dildos* and *fadings*;  
*jump her and thump her*; and where some  
stretch-mouth'd rascal would, as it were, mean  
mischief, and break a foul gap into the matter,  
he makes the maid to answer, *Whoop, do me  
no harm, good man*; puts him off, slights him,  
with *Whoop, do me no harm, good man*.

*Pol.* This is a brave fellow.

*Clo.* Believe me, thou talkest of an admir-  
able conceited fellow. Has he any unbraided  
wares? ¶

*Serv.* He hath ribands of all the colours i'the  
rainbow; points, more than all the lawyers in  
Bohemia can learnedly handle, though they  
come to him by the gross; inkles, ¶ caddises, \*\*  
cambrics, lawns: why, he sings them over, as  
they were gods or goddesses; you would think,

\* Green turf. † A valuable tract of pasture.

‡ Truth. § Neatly.

¶ Plain goods. ¶ Worst of galleons.

\*\* A kind of tape.

a smock were a she-angel: he so chants to the sleeve-hand,\* and the work about the square on't.†

*Clo.* Pr'ythee, bring him in; and let him approach singing.

*Per.* Forewarn him, that he use no scurrilous words in his tunes.

*Clo.* You have of these pedlars, that have more in 'em than you'd think, sister.

*Per.* Ay, good brother, or go about to think.

*Enter AUTOLYCUS, singing.*

*Lawn, as white as driven snow;  
Cyprus, black as e'er was crow;  
Gloves, as sweet as damask roses;  
Masks for faces, and for noses,  
Bugle bracelet, necklace-amber,  
Perfume for a lady's chamber;  
Golden quoifs, and stomachers,  
For my lady to gape my dears;  
Pris and poking-sticks of steel,  
What maids lack from head to heel:  
Come, buy of me, come; come buy, come  
buy.  
Buy, lady, or else your lasses cry;  
Come, buy, &c.*

*Clo.* If I were not in love with Mopsa, thou should'st take no money of me; but being enthralld as I am, it will also be the bondage of certain ribbands and gloves.

*Mop.* I was promised them against the feast; but they come not too late now.

*Dor.* He hath promised you more than that, or there b' hais.

*Mop.* He hath paid you all he promised you; may be, he has paid you more; which will shame you to give him again.

*Clo.* Is there no manners left among maids? will they wear their pocketts, where they should bear their faces? Is there not malking-time, when you are going to bed, or kin-hole, to whistle off these secrets? but you must be titillating before all our guests? 'Tis well they are whispering: Clamour your tongues, and not a word more.

*Mop.* I have done. Come, you promised me a tawdry lace,‡ and a pair of sweet gloves.

*Clo.* Have I told thee how I was cozened by the way, and lost all my money?

*Aut.* And, indeed, Sir, there are cozeners abroad; therefore it behoves men to be wary.

*Clo.* Fear not thou, man, thou shalt lose nothing here.

*Aut.* I hope so, Sir; for I have about me many parcels of charge.

*Clo.* What hast here? ballads?

*Mop.* Pray now, buy some: I love a ballad in print, a' life; for then we are sure they are true.

*Aut.* Here's one to a very doleful tune. How a usurer's wife was brought to bed of twenty money bags at a burden; and how she longed to eat adders' heads, and toads carbonadoed.

*Mop.* Is it true, think you?

*Aut.* Very true; and but a month old.

*Dor.* Bless me from marrying a usurer!

*Aut.* Here's the midwife's name to't, one mistress Taleporter; and five or six honest wives that were present: Why should I carry lies abroad?

*Mop.* Pray you now, buy it.

*Clo.* Come on, lay it by: And let's first see more ballads; we'll buy the other things anon.

*Aut.* Here's another ballad, of a fish, that appeared upon the coast, on Wednesday the fouscore of April, forty thousand fathom above water, and sung this ballad against the hard

heart of maids: It was thought she was a woman, and was turned into a cod fish, for she would not exchange flesh with one that loved her: The ballad is very pitiful, and as true.

*Dor.* Is it true too, think you?

*Aut.* Five justices' hands at it; and witnesses, more than my pack will hold.

*Clo.* Lay it by too: Another.

*Aut.* This is a merry ballad; but a very pretty one.

*Mop.* Let's have some merry ones.

*Aut.* Why this is a passing merry one; and goes to the tune of, *Two maids wooing a man*: there's scarce a maid westward, but she sings it: 'tis in request, I can tell you.

*Mop.* We can both sing it; if thou'lt bear a part, thou shalt hear; 'tis in three parts.

*Dor.* We had the tune on't a month ago.

*Aut.* I can bear my part; you must know, 'tis my occupation: have at it with you.

SONG.

*A.* Get you hence, for I must go;

*Where, it fits not you to know.*

*D.* Whither? *M.* O whither? *D.* Whither?

*M.* It becomes thy oath full well,

*Thou to me thy secrets tell:*

*D.* Me too, let me go thither

*M.* Or thou go'st to the grange, or mill;

*D.* If to either, thou dost ill.

*A.* Neither. *D.* What, neither? *A.* Neither.

*D.* Thou hast sworn my love to be,

*M.* Thou hast sworn it more to me.

*Then, whither go'st? say, whither?*

*Clo.* We'll have this song out anon by ourselves; My father and the gentleman are in sad\* talk, and we'll not trouble them; Come, bring away thy pack after me. Wenches, I'll buy for you both:—Pedlar, let's have the first choice.—Follow me, girls.

*Aut.* And you shall pay well for 'em. [*Exe.*]

*Will you buy any tape,*

*Or lace for your cape,*

*My dainty duck, my dear-a?*

*Any silk, any thread.*

*Any toys for your head,*

*Of the new'st, and fin'st, fin'st ucar-a?*

*Come to the pedlar;*

*Money's a mediator,*

*That doth utter a' all men's ware-a.*

[*Exeunt CLOWN, AUTOLYCUS, DORCAS, and MOPSA.*]

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Serv.* Master, there is three caters, three shepherds, three neat-herds, three swine-herds, that have made themselves all men of han;‡ they call themselves saltiers;§ and they have a dance which the wenches say is gallantly|| of gambols, because they are not m't; but they themselves are o'the mind, (if it be not too rough for some, that know little but bowling,) it will please plentifully.

*Shep.* Away! we'll none on't; here has been too much humble toolery already:—I know, Sir, we weary you.

*Pol.* You weary those that refresh us: Pray, let's see these four threes of herdsmen.

*Serv.* One three of them, by their own report, Sir, hath danced before the king; and not the worst of the three, but jumps twelve foot and a half by the squire.¶

*Shep.* Leave your prating; since these good men are pleased, let them come in; but quickly now.

*Serv.* Why, they stay at door, Sir. [*Exit.*]

\* The cuffs.

† The work about the bosom.

‡ Amber of which necklaces were made fit to perfume

lady's chamber

§ Fire-place for drying malt; still a noted gossiping

place.

¶ Ring a dumb peal.

¶ A lace to wear about the head or waist.

\* Serious.

‡ Dressed themselves in habits imitating hair.

§ Satyr.

¶ Foot rule.

† Vend.

‡ Medles.

Re-enter SERVANT, with twelve Rustics habited like Satyrs. They dance, and then exeunt.

Pol. O father, you'll know more of that hereafter.—

Is it not too far gone?—'Tis time to part them.—He's simple, and tells much. [Aside.]—How now, fair shepherd?

Your heart is full of something, that does take Your mind from feasting. Sooth, when I was young,

And handed love, as you do, I was wont To load my she with knacks: I would have ransack'd

The pedlar's silken treasury, and have pour'd it To her acceptance; you have let him go, And nothing marted \* with him: if your lass interpretation should abuse; and call this Your lack of love, or bounty: you were straiten'd † For a reply, at least, if you make a care Of happy holding her.

Flo. Old Sir, I know she prizes not such trifles as these are: The gifts, she looks from me, are pack'd and lock'd

In my heart; which I have given already, but not deliver'd.—Oh! I hear my breath my life before this ancient Sir, who, it should seem, hath sometime lov'd: I take thy hand; this hand,

As soft as dove's down, and as white as it; Or Ethiopian's tooth, or the fann'd snow, That's bolted ‡ by the northern blasts twice o'er.

Pol. What follows this?—How prettily the young swain seems to wash The hand, was fair before!—I have put you But to your protestation; let me hear [out:—] What you profess.

Flo. Do, and be witness to't.

Pol. And thus my neighbour too?

Flo. And he, and more

Than he, and men; the earth, the heavens, and all: [march,

That,—were I crown'd the most imperial monarch of most worthy; were I the fairest youth That ever made eye swerve: had force, and knowledge, [them,

More than was ever man's,—I would not prize Without her love: for her, employ them all; Commend them, and condemn them, to her service to their own perdition. [vice,

Pol. Fairly offer'd.

Cam. This shows a sound affection.

Shep. But, my daughter, Say you the like to him?

Per. I cannot speak

So well, nothing so well; no, nor mean better: By the pattern of mine own thoughts I cut out The parity of his.

Shep. Take hands, a bargain;— [to't: And, friends unknown, you shall bear witness I give my daughter to him, and will make Her portion equal his.

Flo. Oh! that must be [the virtue of your daughter: one being dead, I shall have more than you can dream of yet; Enough then for your wonder: But, come on, Contract † before these witnesses.

Shep. Come, your hand;— And, daughter, yours.

Pol. Soft, swain, awhile, 'beseech you; Have you a father?

Flo. I have: But what of him?

Pol. Knows he of this?

Flo. He neither does, nor shall.

Pol. Methinks, a father

Is, at the nuptial of his son, a guest That best becomes the table. Pray you, once Is not your father grown incapable [more; Of reasonable affairs? Is he not stupid With age, and altering rheums? Can he speak? hear?

Thought, trafficked.

† Put to difficulties.

The sieve used to separate flour from bran is called sifting cloth.

Know man from man? dispute his own estate? Lies he not bed-rid? and again does nothing, But what he did being childish?

Flo. No, good Sir;

He has his health, and ampler strength, indeed, Than most have of his age.

Pol. By my white beard, You offer him, if this be so, a wrong Something unilial: Reason, my son, [son, Should choose himself a wife; but as good tea— The father, (all whose joy is nothing else But fair posterity,) should hold some counsel In such a business.

Flo. I yield all this;

But, for some other reasons, my grave Sir, Which 'tis not fit you know, I not acquaint My father of this business.

Pol. Let him know't.

Flo. He shall not.

Pol. Pr'ythee, let him.

Flo. No, he must not.

Shep. Let him, my son; he shall not need to At knowing of thy choice. [give

Flo. Come, come he must not:—

Mark our contract.

Pol. Mark your divorce, young Sir,

[Discovering himself.

Whom son I dare not call; thou art too base To be acknowledg'd: Thou a sceptre's heir, That thus affect'st a sheep-hook! Thou old traitor,

I am sorry, that, by hanging thee, I can but Shorten thy life one week.—And thou, fresh piece

Of excellent witchcraft; who, of force, must The royal fool thou cop'st with:— [know

Shep. O my heart!

Pol. I'll have thy beauty scratch'd with thorns, and made

More homely than thy state.—For thee, fond boy— If I may ever know, thou dost but sigh, That thou no more shall see this knack, (as never I mean thou shalt,) we'll bar thee from succession;

Not hold thee of our blood, no not our kin. Far + than Deucalion off:—Mark thou my words; Follow us to the court.—Thou child, for this time,

Though full of our displeasure, yet we free thee From the dead blow of it.—And you, enchantment,—

Worthy enough a herdsman; yea, him too, That makes himself, but for our honour therein, Unworthy thee.—If ever, henceforth, thou These rural latches † to his entrance open, Or hoop his body more with thy embraces, I will devise a death as cruel for thee, As thou art tender to't. [Exit.

Per. Even here undone!

I was not much afraid: for once, or twice, I was about to speak; and tell him plainly, The selfsame sun, that shines upon his court, Hides not his visage from our cottage, but Looks on alike.—Will't please you, Sir, be gone? [To FLORIZEL.

I told you what would come of this: 'Beseech you,

Of your own state take care: this dream of mine,— Being now awake, I'll queen it no inch further, But milk my ewes, and weep.

Cam. Why, how now, father?

Speak, ere thou diest.

Shep. I cannot speak, nor think, Nor dare to know that which I know.—O Sir, [To FLORIZEL.

You have undone a man of fourscore three, That thought to fill his grave in quiet; yea, To die upon the bed my father died, To lie close by his honest bones: but now Some hangman must put on my shroud, and lay me

• Talk over his affairs.

† Further.

‡ Do on.

Where no priest shovels in dust.—O cursed wretch !  
That knew'st this was the prince, and would'st adventure

To mingle faith with him.—Undone ! undone !  
If I might die within this hour, I have liv'd  
To die when I desire. [Exit.

*Flo.* Why look you so upon me ?  
I am but sorry, not afraid ; delay'd,  
But nothing alter'd : What I was, I am :  
More straining on, for plucking back ; not following  
My leash \* unwillingly.

*Cam.* Gracious my lord,  
You know your father's temper : at this time  
He will allow no speech,—which, I do guess,  
You do not purpose to him ;—and as hardly  
Will he endure your sight as yet, I fear :  
Then, till the fury of his highness settle,  
Come not before him.

*Flo.* I not purpose it.

I think, Camillo.

*Cam.* Even he, my lord.

*Per.* How often have I told you, 'twould be thus ?

How often said, my dignity would last

But till 'twere known ?

*Flo.* It cannot fail, but by  
The violation of my faith ; And then  
Let nature crush the sides o'the earth together,  
And mar the seeds within !—Lift up thy looks :—  
From my succession wipe me, father ! I  
Am heir to my affection.

*Cam.* Be advis'd.

*Flo.* I am ; and by my fancy : † if my reason  
Will thereto be obedient, I have reason ;  
If not, my senses, better pleas'd with madness,  
Do bid it welcome.

*Cam.* This is desperate, Sir.

*Flo.* So call it : but it does fulfil my vow ;  
I need not think it honesty. Camillo,  
Not for Bohemia, nor the pomp that may  
Be thereto glean'd ; for all the sun sees, or  
The close earth wombs, or the profound seas  
hide

In unknown fathoms, will I break my oath  
To this my fair belov'd : Therefore, I pray you,  
As you have e'er been my father's honour'd  
friend,

When he shall miss me, (as, in faith, I mean not  
To see him any more,) cast your good counsels  
Upon his passion ; Let myself and fortune,  
'Ting for the time to come. This you may know,  
And so deliver,—I am put to sea  
With her, whom here I cannot hold on shore ;  
And, most opportune to our need, I have  
A vessel rides fast by, but not prepar'd  
For this design. What course I mean to hold,  
Shall nothing benefit your knowledge, nor  
Concern me the reporting.

*Cam.* O my lord,  
I would your spirit were easier for advice,  
Or stronger for your need.

*Flo.* Hark, Perdita.— [Takes her aside.  
I'll hear you by and by. [To CAMILLO.

*Cam.* He's unremovable,  
Resolv'd for flight : Now were I happy, if  
His going I could frame to serve my turn ;  
Save him from danger, do him love and honour ;  
Purchase the sight again of dear Sicilia,  
And that unhappy king, my master, whom  
I so much thirst to see.

*Flo.* Now, good Camillo,  
I am so fraught with curious business, that  
I leave out ceremony. [Going.

*Cam.* Sir, I think,

You have heard of my poor services, I'the love  
That I have borne your father ?

*Flo.* Very nobly

Have you deserv'd : It is my father's music,  
To speak your deeds ; not little of his care  
To have them recompens'd as thought on.

*Cam.* Well, my lord,

If you may please to think I love the king ;  
And, through him, what is nearest to him,  
which is

Your gracious self ; embrace but my direction,  
(If your more ponderous and settled project  
May suffer alteration,) on mine honour  
I'll point you where you shall have such re-  
ceiving

As shall become your highness ; where you may  
Enjoy your mistress ; (from the whom, I see,  
There's no disjunction to be made, but by,  
As heavens forefend I your ruin :) marry her ;  
And (with my best endeavours, in your ab-  
sence,)

Your discontenting \* father strive to qualify,  
And bring him up to liking.

*Flo.* How, Camillo,  
May this, almost a miracle, be done ?  
That I may call thee something more than man,  
And, after that, trust to thee.

*Cam.* Have you thought on  
A place, whereto you'll go ?

*Flo.* Not any yet :

But as the unthought-on accident † is guilty  
To what we wildly do ; so we profess  
Ourselves to be the slaves of chance, and flies  
Of every wind that blows.

*Cam.* Then list to me : [pose,

This follows,—if you will not change your pur-  
But undergo this flight ;—Make for Sicilia ;  
And there present yourself, and your fair prin-  
cess,

(For so, I see, she must be,) 'fore Leontes ;  
She shall be habit'd, as it becomes  
The partner of your bed. Methinks, I see  
Leontes, opening his free arms, and weeping  
His welcomes forth : asks thee, the son, forgive-  
ness,

As 'twere i'the father's person : kisses the hands  
Of you fresh princess : o'er and o'er divides him  
'T'wixt his unkindness and his kindness ; the one  
He chides to hell, and bids the other grow,  
Faster than thought, or time.

*Flo.* Worthy Camillo,  
What colour for my visitation shall I  
Hold up before him ?

*Cam.* Sent by the king your father  
To greet him, and to give him comforts. Sir,  
The manner of your bearing towards him, with  
What you, as from your father, shall deliver,  
Things known betwixt us three, I'll write you  
down :

The which shall point you forth at every sitting, ‡  
What you must say ; that he shall not perceive  
But that you have your father's bosom there,  
And speak his very heart.

*Flo.* I am bound to you :

There is some sap in this.

*Cam.* A course more promising  
Than a wild dedication of yourselves  
To unpath'd waters, undream'd shores ; most  
certain,

To miseries enough : no hope to help you ;  
But, as you shake off one, to take another :  
Nothing so certain as your anchors : who  
Do their best office, if they can but stay you  
Where you'll be loath to be : Besides, you know,  
Prosperity's the very bond of love :  
Whose fresh complexion and whose heat to-  
Affliction alters. [gether

*Per.* One of these is true :  
I think, affliction may subdue the cheek,  
But not take in § the mind.

*Cam.* Yea, say you so ?

There shall not, at your father's house, these  
seven years.

Be born another such.

*Flo.* My good Camillo,  
She is as forward of her breeding, as  
I'the rear of birth.

\* For discontented.

† This unthought-on accident is the unexpected dis-  
covery made by Polixenes.

‡ The council-days were called the sittings.

§ Conquer.

\* A leading string

† Love.

*Cam.* I cannot say, 'tis pity  
She lacks instructions; for she seems a mistress  
To most that teach.

*Per.* Your pardon, Sir, for this;  
I'll blush you thanks.

*Flo.* My prettiest Perdita.—  
But, oh! the thorns we stand upon!—Camillo,—  
Preserver of my father, now of me;  
The medicine of our house!—how shall we do?  
We are not furnish'd like Bohemia's son;  
Nor shall appear in Sicily—

*Cam.* My lord,  
Fear none of this: I think, you know my fortunes  
Do all lie there: it shall be so my care  
To have you royally appointed, as if  
The scene you play, were mine. For instance,  
Sir,  
That you may know you shall not want,—one  
word. [*They talk aside.*]

*Enter AUTOLYCUS.*

*Aut.* Ha, ha! what a fool honesty is! and  
trust, his sworn brother, a very simple gentle-  
man! I have sold all my trumpery; not a  
counterfeit stone, not a riband, glass, pomander,\*  
brooch, table-book, ballad, knife, tape,  
glove, shoe-tye, bracelet, horn-ring, to keep my  
pack from fasting: they throng who should buy  
first; as if my trinkets had been hallowed, and  
brought a benediction to the buyer: by which  
means, I saw whose purse was best in picture;  
and, what I saw, to my good use, I remembered.  
My clown (who wants but something to be a  
reasonable man,) grew so in love with the  
wenches' song, that he would not stir his petti-  
toes, till he had both tune and words; which so  
drew the rest of the herd to me, that all their  
other senses stuck in ears: you might have  
pinched a placket, it was senseless; 'twas no-  
thing, to geld a codpiece of a purse; I would  
have fled keys off, that hung in chains: no  
hearing, no feeling, but my Sir's song, and ad-  
miring the nothing of it. So that, in this time  
of lethargy, I picked and cut most of their fes-  
tival purses; and had not the old man come in  
with a whoobub against his daughter and the  
king's son, and scared my choughs† from the  
chaff, I had not left a purse alive in the whole  
army.

[*CAMILLO, FLORIZEL, and PERDITA,  
come forward.*]

*Cam.* Nay, but my letters by this means being  
there

So soon as you arrive, shall clear that doubt.

*Flo.* And those that you'll procure from king  
Leontes,—

*Cam.* Shall satisfy your father.

*Per.* Happy be you!

All, that you speak, shows fair.

*Cam.* Who have we here?

[*Seeing AUTOLYCUS.*]

We'll make an instrument of this; omit

Nothing, may give us aid.

*Aut.* If they have overheard me now,—why  
hanging. [*Aside.*]

*Cam.* How now, good fellow? Why shakest  
thou so? Fear not, man; here's no harm intended  
to thee.

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, Sir.

*Cam.* Why, be so still: here's nobody will  
steal that from thee: Yet, for the outside of thy  
poverty, we must make an exchange: therefore,  
discease thee instantly, (thou must think, there's  
necessity in't,) and change garments with this  
gentleman: Though the penny-worth, on his  
side, be the worst, yet hold thee, there's some  
boot.‡

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, Sir:—I know ye well  
enough. [*Aside.*]

*Cam.* Nay, pr'ythee, despatch: the gentleman  
is half flayed § already.

\* A little ball made of perfumes, and worn to prevent  
infection in times of plague.

† Bunch.

‡ Stripped.

*Aut.* Are you in earnest, Sir?—I smell the  
trick of it.— [*Aside.*]

*Flo.* Despatch, I pr'ythee.

*Aut.* Indeed, I have had earnest; but I can-  
not with conscience take it.

*Cam.* Unbuckle, unbuckle.—

[*FLO. and AUTOL. exchange garments.*  
Fortunate mistress,—let my prophecy  
Come home to you!—you must attire yourself  
Into some covert: take your sweetheart's hat  
And pluck it o'er your brows; muffle your  
face;

Dismantle you: and as you can, dishken  
The truth of your own seeming; that you may,  
(For I do fear eyes over you,) to shipboard  
Get undescried.

*Per.* I see, the play so lies,  
That I must bear a part.

*Cam.* No remedy.—

Have you done there?

*Flo.* Should I now meet my father,

He would not call me son.

*Cam.* Nay, you shall have

No hat:—Come, lady, come.—Farewell, my  
friend.

*Aut.* Adieu, Sir.

*Flo.* O Perdita, what have we twain forgot?  
Pray you, a word. [*They converse apart.*]

*Cam.* What I do next, shall be, to tell the  
king. [*Aside.*]

Of this escape, and whether they are bound;

Wherein, my hope is, I shall so prevail;

To force him after: in whose company

I shall review Sicilia; for whose sight

I have a woman's longing.

*Flo.* Fortune speed us!—

Thus we set on, Camillo, to the sea-side.

*Cam.* The swifter speed, the better.

[*Exit CAMILLO, FLORIZEL, and PERDITA.*]

*Aut.* I understand the business, I hear it: To  
have an open ear, a quick eye, and a humble  
hand, is necessary for a cut-purse; a good nose  
is requisite also: to smell out work for the other  
senses. I see, this is the time that the unjust  
man doth thrive. What an exchange had this  
been, without boot? What a boot is here, with  
this exchange? Sure, the gods do this year con-  
vinate at us, and we may do any thing *retem-  
pore*. The prince himself is about a piece of  
iniquity; stealing away from his father, with  
his clog at his heels: If I thought it were not a  
piece of honesty to acquaint the king withal, I  
would do't: I hold it the more knavery to con-  
ceal it: and therein am I constant to my pro-  
fession.

*Enter CLOWN and SHEPHERD.*

*Aside, aside:*—here is more matter for a hot  
brain: Every lane's end, every shop, church, ses-  
sion, hanging, yields a careful man work.

*Clo.* See, see; what a man you are now! there  
is no other way, but to tell the king she's a  
changeling, and none of your flesh and blood.

*Shep.* Nay, but bear me.

*Clo.* Nay, but hear me.

*Shep.* Go to thee.

*Clo.* She being none of your flesh and blood  
your flesh and blood has not offended the king;  
and, so, your flesh and blood is not to be pu-  
nished by him. Show those things you found  
about her; those sacred things, all but what she  
has with her: This being done, let the law go  
whistle; I warrant you.

*Shep.* I will tell the king all, every word,  
yea, and his son's pranks too; who, I may say,  
is no honest man neither to his father, nor to  
me, to go about to make me the king's brother-  
in-law.

*Clo.* Indeed, brother-in-law was the furthest  
off you could have been to him; and then your  
blood had been the dearer, by I know how much  
an ounce.

*Aut.* Very wisely; puppies!

*Shep.* Well; let us to the king; there is that

[*Aside.*]

In this fardel,\* will make him scratch his head.

*Aut.* I know not what impediment this complaint may be to the flight of my master.

*Clo.* 'Pray heartily he be at palace.

*Aut.* Though I am not naturally honest, I am so sometimes by chance:—Let me pocket up my pedlar's excitement.†—*[Takes off his false beard.]* How now, rustics? whither are you bound?

*Shep.* To the palace, an it like your worship.

*Aut.* Your affairs there? what? with whom? the condition of that fardel, the place of your dwelling, your names, your ages, of what having; breeding, and any thing that is fitting to be known, discover.

*Clo.* We are but plain fellows, Sir.

*Aut.* A lie; you are rough and hairy: Let me have no lying; it becomes none but tradesmen, and they often give us soldiers the lie: but we pay them for it with stamped coin, not stabbing steel; therefore they do not give us the lie.

*Clo.* Your worship had like to have given us one, if you had not taken yourself with the manner.‡

*Shep.* Are you a courtier, an't like you, Sir?

*Aut.* Whether it like me, or no, I am a courtier. See'st thou not the air of the court, in these enfoldings? hath not my gait in it, the incense of the court?|| receives not thy nose court-odour from me? reflect I not on thy baseness, court-contempt? Think'st thou, for that I misname, or toze¶ from thee thy business, I am therefore no courtier? I am courtier, cap-n-pe; and one that will either push on, or pluck back thy business there: whereupon I command thee to open thy affair.

*Shep.* My business, Sir, is to the king.

*Aut.* What advocate hast thou to him?

*Shep.* I know not, an't like you.

*Clo.* Advocate's the court-word for a pheasant; say, you have none.

*Shep.* None, Sir? I have no pheasant, cock nor hen.

*Aut.* How bless'd are we, that are not simple men!

Yet nature might have made me as these are, Therefore I'll not disdain.

*Clo.* This cannot be but a great courtier.

*Shep.* His garments are rich, but he wears them not handsomely.

*Clo.* He seems to be the more noble in being fantastical; a great man, I'll warrant; I know, by the picking on's teeth.

*Aut.* The fardel there? what's i'th' fardel? Wherefore that box?

*Shep.* Sir, there lies such secrets in this fardel, and box, which none must know but the king; and which he shall know within this hour, if I may come to the speech of him.

*Aut.* Age, thou hast lost thy labour.

*Shep.* Why, Sir?

*Aut.* The king is not at the palace; he is gone aboard a new ship to purge melancholy, and air himself: For, if thou be'st capable of things serious, thou must know, the king is full of grief.

*Shep.* So 'tis said, Sir; about his con, that should have married a shepherd's daughter.

*Aut.* If that shepherd be not in hand-fast, let him fly; the curses he shall have, the tortures he shall feel, will break the back of man, the heart of monster.

*Clo.* Think you so, Sir?

*Aut.* Not he alone shall suffer what wit can make heavy, and vengeance bitter; but those that are germane\* to him, though removed fifty times, shall all come under the hangman: which though it be great pity, yet it is necessary. An old sheep-whistling rogue, a ram-tender, to offer to have his daughter come into grace! Some say, he shall be stoned; but that death is too

soft for him, say I: Draw our throne into a sheep-cote! all deaths are too few, the sharpest too easy.

*Clo.* Has the old man e'er a son, Sir, do you hear, an't like you, Sir?

*Aut.* He has a son, who shall be flayed alive; then, 'pointed over with honey, set on the head of a wasp's nest; then stand, till he be three quarters and a dram dead: then recovered again with aqua-vite, or some other hot infusion; then, raw as he is, and in the hottest day prognostication proclaims,\* shall he be set against a brick-wall, the sun looking with a southward eye upon him; where he is to behold him, with flies blown to death. But what talk we of these traitorly rascals, whose miseries are to be smiled at, their offences being so capital? Tell me, (for you seem to be honest plain men,) what you have to the king: being something gently considered,† I'll bring you where he is aboard, tender your persons to his presence, whisper him in your behalfs; and, if it be in man, besides the king to effect your suits, here is man shall do it.

*Clo.* He seems to be of great authority: close with him, give him gold; and though authority be a stubborn bear, yet he is oft led by the nose with gold: show the inside of your purse to the outside of his hand, and no more ado: Remember stoned, and flayed alive.

*Shep.* An't please you, Sir, to undertake the business for us, here is that gold I have: I'll make it as much more and leave this young man in pawn, till I bring it you.

*Aut.* After I have done what I promised?

*Shep.* Ay, Sir.

*Aut.* Well give me the moiety:—Are you a party in this business?

*Clo.* In some sort, Sir: but though my case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be flayed out of it.

*Aut.* O that's the case of the shepherd's son:—Hang him, he'll be made an example.

*Clo.* Comfort, good comfort: we must to the king, and show our strange sights, he must know, 'tis none of your daughter nor my sister; we are gone else. Sir, I will give you as much as this old man does when the business is performed; and remain, as he says, your pawn, till it be brought you.

*Aut.* I will trust you. Walk before toward the sea-side; go on the right hand; I will look upon the hedge, and follow you.

*Clo.* We are blessed in this man, as I may say, even blessed.

*Shep.* Let's before, as he bids us: he was provided to do us good.

[*Exeunt SHEPHERD and CLOWN.*]

*Aut.* If I had a mind to be honest, I see fortune would not suffer me; she drops booties in my mouth. I am courted now with a double occasion; gold, and a means to do the prince my master good; which, who knows how that may turn back to my advancement? I will bring these two moles, these blind ones, aboard him; if he think it fit to shore them again, and that the complaint they have to the king concerns him nothing, let him call me, rogue, for being so far officious; for I am proof against that title, and what shame else belongs to't: To him will I present them, there may be matter in it. [Exit.]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*Sicilia.*—A Room in the Palace of LEONTES.

Enter LEONTES, CLEOMEDES, DION, PAULINA, and others.

*Cleo.* Sir, you have done enough, and have perform'd

\* Bundle, parcel

† Estate, property.

‡ The stately tread of courtiers.

† His false beard.

‡ In the fact.

== Omitted

\* The hottest day foretold in the Almanack.

† A small handsome basket



A saint-like sorrow : no fault could you make,  
Which you have not redeem'd; indeed, paid  
down

More penitence, than doone trespass : At the last,  
Do, as the heavens have done; forget your evil;  
With them, forgive yourself.

*Leon.* Whilst I remember

Her, and her virtues, I cannot forget  
My blemishes in them; and so still think of  
The wrong I did myself : which was so much,  
That heirless it hath made my kingdom; and  
Destroy'd the sweet'st companion, that e'er man  
Bred his hopes out of.

*Paul.* True, too true, my lord :

If, one by one, you wedded all the world,  
Or, from the all that are, took something good,  
To make a perfect woman; she, you kill'd,  
Would be unparallel'd.

*Leon.* I think so. Kill'd!

She I kill'd? I did so : but thou strik'st me  
Sorely, to say I did; it is as bitter  
Upon my tongue, as in my thought : Now, good  
Say so but seldom. [Now,

*Cleo.* Not at all, good lady :

You might have spoken a thousand things that  
would

Have done the time more benefit, and grac'd  
Your kindness better.

*Paul.* You are one of those,

Would have him wed again.

*Dion.* If you would not so,

You put not the state, nor the remembrance  
Of his most sovereign dame; consider little,  
What dangers, by his Highness' fall of issue,  
May drop upon his kingdom, and devour  
Uncertain lookers-on. What were more holy,  
Than to rejoice, the former queen is well? \*  
What holier, than,—for royalty's repair,  
For present comfort and for future good,—  
To bless the bed of majesty again  
With a sweet fellow to't?

*Paul.* There is none worthy,

Respecting her that's gone. Besides, the gods  
Will have fulfill'd their secret purposes;  
For has not the divine Apollo said  
Is't not the tenour of his oracle,  
That king Leontes shall not have an heir,  
Till his lost child be found? which, that it  
shall,

Is all as monstrous to our human reason,  
As my Antigonus to break his grave,  
And come again to me; who, on my life,  
Did perish with the infant. 'Tis your counsel,  
My lord should to the heavens be contrary,  
Oppose against their wills.—Care not for issue;

[To LEONTES.

The crown will find an heir : Great Alexander  
Left his to the worthiest; so his successor  
Was like to be the best.

*Leon.* Good Paulina,—

Who hast the memory of Hermione,  
I know, in honour.—O! that ever I [now,  
Had squar'd me to thy counsel!—then, even  
I might have look'd upon my queen's full eyes;  
Have taken treasure from her lips,—

*Paul.* And left them

More rich, for what they yielded.

*Leon.* Thou speak'st truth.

No more such wives; therefore, no wife : one  
worse,

And better us'd, would make her sainted spirit  
Again possess her corps; and, on this stage,  
(Where we offenders now appear,) soul-vex'd,  
Begin, And why to me?

*Paul.* Had she such power,  
She had just cause.

*Leon.* She had; and would incense me

To murder her I married.

*Paul.* I should so;

Were I the ghost that walk'd, I'd bid you mark  
Her eye; and tell me, for what dull part in't  
You chose her : then I'd shriek, that even your  
ears

Should rift \* to hear me; and the words that  
Should be, Remember mine. [follow'd

*Leon.* Stars, very stars,  
And all eyes else dead coals!—fear thou no wife,  
I'll have no wife, Paulina.

*Paul.* Will you swear  
Never to marry, but by my free leave?

*Leon.* Never, Paulina; so be bless'd my  
spirit!

*Paul.* Then, good my lords, bear witness to  
his oath.

*Cleo.* You tempt him over-much.

*Paul.* Unless another,  
As like Hermione as is her picture,  
Affront † his eye.

*Cleo.* Good madam,—

*Paul.* I have done.

Yet, if my lord will marry,—if you will, Sir,  
No remedy, but you will; give me the office  
To choose you a queen : but she shall not be so  
young

As was your former : but she shall be such,  
As, walk'd your first queen's ghost, it should take  
To see her in your arms. [Joy

*Leon.* My true Paulina,  
We shall not marry, till thou bidd'st us.

*Paul.* That

Shall be, when your first queen's again in breath;  
Never till then.

Enter a GENTLEMAN.

*Gent.* One that gives out himself prince Flo-  
rize!

Son of Polixenes, with his princess, (she  
The fairest I have yet beheld,) desires access  
To your high presence.

*Leon.* What with him? he comes not  
Like to his father's greatness : his approach,  
So out of circumstance, and sudden, tells us,  
'Tis not a visitation fram'd, but forc'd  
By need and accident. What train?

*Gent.* But few.

And those but mean.

*Leon.* His princess, say you, with him?

*Gent.* Ay; the most peerless piece of earth, I  
think,

That e'er the sun shone bright on.

*Paul.* O Hermione,  
As every present time doth boast itself  
Above a better, gone : so must thy grave  
Give way to what's seen now. Sit, you yourself  
Have said, and writ so, (but you writing now  
Is colder than that theme;) She had not been,  
Nor was not to be equal'd;—thus your voice  
Flow'd with her beauty once; 'tis shrewdly ebb'd,  
To say, you have seen a better.

*Gent.* Pardon, madam :

The one I have almost forgot; (your pardon.)

The other when she has obtain'd your eye,  
Will have your tongue too. This is such a crea-  
ture,

Would she begin a sect, might quench the zeal  
Of all professors else : make proselytes  
Of who she but bid follow.

*Paul.* How? not women?

*Gent.* Women will love her, that she is a wo-  
man

More worth than any man; men, that she is  
The rarest of all women.

*Leon.* Go, Cleomenes;

Yourself, assisted with your honour'd friends,  
Bring them to our embracement.—Still 'tis  
strange,

[Exit CLEOMENES, LORDS, and GEN-  
TLEMAN.

He thus should steal upon us.

*Paul.* Had our prince,  
(Jewel of children,) seen this hour, he had pair'd  
Well with this lord; there was not full a month  
Between their births.

*Leon.* Pr'ythee, no more : thou know'st,

\* Split.

† Meet.

‡ I.e. That the course of Hermione the subject of

He dies to me again, when talk'd of : sure,  
When I shall see this gentleman, thy speeches  
Will bring me to consider that, which may  
Unturnish me of reason.—They are come.—

*Re-enter CLIFOMENES, with FLORIZEL, PERDITA, and Attendants.*

Your mother was most true to wedlock, prince ;  
For she did print your royal father off,  
Concerning you : Were I but twenty-one,  
Your father's image is so hit in you,  
His very air, that I should call you brother,  
As I did him ; and speak of something, wildly  
As you perform'd before. Most dearly welcome !  
And you fair princess, goddess !—Oh ! alas !  
I lost a couple, that 'twixt heaven and earth  
Might thus have stood, begetting wonder, as  
You, gracious couple, do ! and then I lost  
(All mine own folly,) the society,  
Anny too, of your brave father ; whom,  
Though bearing misery, I desire my life  
Once more to look upon.

*Flo.* By his command  
Have I here touch'd Sicilia : and from him  
Give you all greetings, that a king, a friend,  
Can send his brother ; and, but indrimity  
(Which waits upon worn times,) hath something  
seiz'd

His wish'd ability, he had himself  
The lands and waters 'twixt your throne and his  
Measur'd, to look upon you ; whom he loves  
(He bade me say so,) more than all the sceptres,  
And those that bear them, living.

*Leon.* O my brother,  
(Good gentleman !) the wrongs I have done thee,  
sir

Afresh within me ; and these thy offices,  
So rarely kind, are as interpreters  
Of my behind-hand slackness !—Welcome hither,  
As is the spring to the earth. And hath he too  
Expos'd this paragon to the fearful usage  
(At least, ungentle,) of the dreadful Neptune,  
To greet a man, not worth her pains ; much less  
The adventure of her person ?

*Flo.* Good my lord,  
She came from Libya.

*Leon.* Where the warlike Smales,  
That noble honour'd lord, is fear'd and lov'd ?

*Flo.* Most royal Sir, from thence ; from him,  
whose daughter

His tears proclaim'd his, parting with her : thence  
(A prosperous south-wind friendly,) we have  
cross'd,

To execute the charge my father gave me,  
For visiting your highness : My best train  
I have from your Sicilian shores dismiss'd ;  
Who for Bohemia bend, to signify  
Not only my success in Libya, Sir,  
But my arrival, and my wife's, in safety  
Here, where we are.

*Leon.* The blessed gods  
Purge all infection from our air, whilst you  
Do climate here ! You have a holy father,  
A graceful \* gentleman ; against whose person,  
So sacred as it is, I have done sin ;  
For which the heavens, taking angry note  
Have left me issueless ; and your father's bless'd,  
(As he from heaven merits it,) with you,  
Worthy his goodness. What might I have been,  
Might I a son and daughter now have look'd on,  
Such goodly things as you ?

*Enter a LORD.*

*Lord.* Most noble Sir,  
That, which I shall report, will bear no credit,  
Were not the proof so nigh. Please you, great  
Sir,

Bohemia greets you from himself, by me :  
Desires you to attach a his son ; who has  
(His dignity and duty both cast off,)  
Fled from his father, from his hopes, and with  
A shepherd's daughter.

*Leon.* Where's Bohemia ? speak.

\* Full of grace and virtue.

† Seize, arrest.

*Lord.* Here in the city ; I now came from  
him.

I speak amazedly ; and it becomes  
My marvel, and my message. To your court  
Whiles he was last'ning, (in the chase, it seems,  
Of this fair couple,) meets he on the way  
The father of this seeming lady, and  
Her brother, having both their country quitted  
With this young prince.

*Flo.* Camillo has betray'd me ;  
Whose honour, and whose honesty, till now,  
Endur'd all weathers.

*Lord.* Lay't so, to his charge ;  
He's with the king ; your father.

*Leon.* Who ? Camillo ?

*Lord.* Camillo, Sir ; I spake with him ; who  
now

Has these poor men in question.\* Never saw I  
Wretches so quake : they kneel, they kiss the  
earth ;

Forswear themselves as often as they speak :  
Bohemia stops his ears, and threatens them  
With divers deaths in death.

*Per.* O my poor father !—

The heaven sets spies upon us, will not have  
Our contract celebrated.

*Leon.* You are married ?

*Flo.* We are not, Sir, nor are we like to be ;  
The stars, I see, will kiss the valleys first :—  
The odds for high and low's alike.†

*Leon.* My lord,  
Is this the daughter of a king ?

*Flo.* She is.

When once she is my wife.

*Leon.* That once, I see, by your good father's  
speed,

Will come on very slowly. I am sorry,  
Most sorry, you have broken from his liking,  
Where you were tied in duty : and as sorry,  
Your choice is not so rich in worth ‡ as beauty,  
That you might well enjoy her.

*Flo.* Dear, look up :

Though fortune, visible an enemy  
Should chase us, with my father ; power no jot  
Hath she, to change our loves.—Beseech you,  
Sir,

Remember since you ow'd no more to time  
Than I do now : with thought of such affections  
Step forth mine advocate ; at your request,  
My father will grant precious things, as trifles.

*Leon.* Would he do so, I'd beg your precious  
mistress,

Which he counts but a trifle.

*Paul.* Sir, my liege,  
Your eye hath too much youth in't : not a month  
'Fore your queen died, she was more worth such  
gazes

Than what you look on now.

*Leon.* I thought of her,  
Even in these looks I made.—But your petition

[To FLORIZEL.

Is yet unanswered ; I will to your father ;  
Your honour not o'erthrown by your desires,  
I am a friend to them, and you : upon which  
errand

I now go toward him ; therefore, follow me,  
And mark what way I make : Come, good my  
lord. [Exit.

SCENE II.—The same.—Before the Palace.

*Enter AUTOLYCUS and a GENTLEMAN.*

*Aut.* Beseech you, Sir, were you present at  
this relation ?

*1 Gent.* I was by at the opening of the fardel,  
heard the old shepherd deliver the manner how  
he found it : whereupon, after a little amazed-  
ness, we were all commanded out of the cham-  
ber ; only this, methought I heard the shepherd  
say, he found the child.

*Aut.* I would most gladly know the issue of  
it.

\* Conversation.

† A quibble on the false dice so called.

‡ Descent or wealth.

1 *Gent.* I make a broken delivery of the business:—But the changes I perceived in the king, and Camillo, were very notes of admiration: they seemed almost, with staring at one another, to tear the cases of their eyes; there was speech in their dumbness, language in their very gesture; they looked, as they had heard of a world ransom'd, or one destroyed: A notable passion of wonder appeared in them: but the wisest beholder, that knew no more but seeing, could not say, if the importance \* were joy, or sorrow: but in the extremity of the one, it must needs be.

*Enter another GENTLEMAN.*

Here comes a gentleman, that, happily, knows The news, Rogero?

2 *Gent.* Nothing but bonfires: The oracle is fulfilled; the king's daughter is found: such a deal of wonder is broken out within this hour, that ballad-makers cannot be able to express it.

*Enter a third GENTLEMAN.*

Here comes the lady Paulina's steward; he can deliver you more.—How goes it now, Sir? this news, which is called true, is so like an old tale, that the verity of it is in strong suspicion: fias the king found his heir? †

3 *Gent.* Most true; if ever truth were pregnant by circumstance: that, which you hear, you'll swear you see, there is such unity in the proofs. The mantle of queen Hermione:—her jewel about the neck of it:—the letters of Antigonus, found with it, which they know to be his character:—the majesty of the creature, in resemblance of the mother;—the affection ‡ of nobleness, which nature shows above her breeding,—and many other evidences, proclaim her, with all certainty, to be the king's daughter. Did you see the meeting of the two kings?

2 *Gent.* No.

3 *Gent.* Then have you lost a sight, which was to be seen, cannot be spoken of. There might you have beheld one joy crown another; so, and in such manner, that, it seemed, sorrow wept to take leave of them, for their joy waded in tears. There was casting up of eyes, holding up of hands; with countenance of such distraction, that they were to be known by garment, not by favour. † Our king, being ready to leap out of himself for joy of his found daughter; as if that joy were now become a loss, cries, *O thy mother, thy mother!* then asks Bohemia forgiveness; then embraces his son-in-law; then again worries he his daughter, with clipping ‡ her; now he thanks the old shepherd, which stands by, like a weather-bitten conduit of many kings' reigns. I never heard of such another encounter, which lames report to follow it, and undoes description to do it.

2 *Gent.* What, pray you, became of Antigonus, that carried hence the child?

3 *Gent.* Like an old tale still; which will have matter to rehearse, though credit be asleep, and not an ear open: he was torn to pieces with a bear; this avouches the shepherd's son; who has not only his innocence (which seems much,) to justify him, but a bannerchief and rings of his, that Paulina knows.

1 *Gent.* What became of his bark and his followers?

3 *Gent.* Wrecked, the same instant of their master's death; and in the view of the shepherd: so that all the instruments, which aided to expose the child, were even then lost, when it was found. But O the noble combat that, 'twixt joy and sorrow, was fought in Paulina! She had one eye declined for the loss of her husband; another elevated that the oracle was fulfilled; She lifted the princess from the earth;

and so locks her in embracing, as if she would pin her to her heart, that she might no more be in danger of losing.

1 *Gent.* The dignity of this act was worth the audience of kings and princes; for by such was it acted.

3 *Gent.* One of the prettiest touches of all, and that which angled for mine eyes (caught the water, though not the fish,) was, when at the relation of the queen's death, with the manner how she came to it, (bravely confessed, and lamented by the king,) how attentiveness wounded his daughter: till, from one sign of dolour to another, she did, with an *alas!* I would fain say, bleed tears; for, I am sure, my heart wept blood. Who was most marble there, \* changed colour; some swooned, all sorrowed; if all the world could have seen it, the woe had been universal.

1 *Gent.* Are they returned to the court?

3 *Gent.* No: the princess hearing of her mother's statue, which is in the keeping of Paulina,—a piece many years in doing, and now newly performed by that rare Italian master, Julio Romano; who, had he himself deity, and could put breath into his work, would bewitch nature of her custom, so perfectly he is her ape: he so near to Hermione hath done Hermione, that, they say, one would speak to her, and stand in hope of answer. Together, with all greediness of affection, are they gone, and there they intend to sup.

2 *Gent.* I thought she had some great matter there in hand, for she hath privately, twice or thrice a day, ever since the death of Hermione, visited that removed † house. Shall we thither, and with our company piece the rejoicing?

1 *Gent.* Who would be thence, that has the benefit of access? every wink of an eye, some new grace will be born: our absence makes us unthrifty to our knowledge. Let's along.

*Exeunt GENTLEMEN.*

*Aut.* Now, had I not the dash of my former life in me, would preferment drop on my head. I brought the old man and his son abroad the prince; told him I heard him talk of a fiddler, and I know not what: but he at that time, over-tired of the shepherd's daughter, (so he then took her to be,) who began to be much sea sick, and himself, † little better, extremity of weather continuing, this mystery remained undiscovered. But 'tis all one to me: for had I been the finder-out of this secret, it would not have relished among my other discredit.

*Enter SHEPHERD and CLOWN.*

Here comes those I have done good to against my will, and already appearing in the blossoms of their fortune.

*Shep.* Come, boy; I am past more children; but thy sons and daughters will be all gentlemen born.

*Clow.* You are well met, Sir: You denied to fight with me this other day, because I was no gentleman born; See you these clothes? say, you see them not, and think me still no gentleman born: you were best say, these robes are not gentleman born. Give me the lie: do; and try whether I am not now a gentleman born.

*Aut.* I know you are now, Sir, a gentleman born.

*Clow.* Ay, and have been so any time these four hours.

*Shep.* And so have I, boy.

*Clow.* So you have:—but I was a gentleman born before my father: for the king's son took me by the hand, and called me, brother; and then the two kings called my father, brother: and then the prince, my brother, and the prince's, my sister, called my father, father; and

\* The thing imported.

† Disposition or quality.

‡ Continuance or length.

† Embowelled.

\* More manifest with weeper.

† Remote.

So we wept; and there was the first gentleman-like tears that ever we shed.

*Step.* We may live, son, to shed many more.

*Clo.* Ay, or else 'twere hard luck, being in so preposterous estate as we are.

*Aut.* I humbly beseech you, Sir, to pardon me all the faults I have committed to your worship, and to give me your good report to the prince my master.

*Step.* 'Fy, then, son, do; for we must be gentle, now we are gentlemen.

*Clo.* Thou wilt amend thy life?

*Aut.* Ay, an it like your good worship.

*Clo.* Give me thy hand: I will swear to the prince, thou art as honest a true fellow as any is in Bohemia.

*Step.* You may say it, but not swear it.

*Clo.* Not swear it, now I am a gentleman? Let hoors and frankins \* say it, I'll swear it.

*Step.* How it it be false, son?

*Clo.* If it be ne'er so false, a true gentleman may swear it, in the behalf of his friend:—And I'll swear to the prince, thou art a tall fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt not be drunk; but I know, thou art no tall fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt be drunk; but I'll swear it; and I would, thou would'st be a tall fellow of thy hands.

*Aut.* I will prove so, Sir, to my power.

*Clo.* Ay, by any means prove a tall fellow: If I do not wonder, how thou dar'st venture to be drunk, not being a tall fellow, trust me not—Hark! the kings and the princes, our kindred, are going to see the queen's picture. Come, follow us: we'll be thy good masters.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The same.*—A Room in PAULINA'S House.

*Enter* LEONTAS, POLIXENES, FLORIZEL, PERDITA, CAMILLO, PAULINA, Lords, and Attendants.

*Leon.* O grave and good Paulina, the great That I have had of thee! [comfort]

*Paul.* What, sovereign Sir, I did not well, I meant well; All my services, You have paid home: but that you have vouch-said [contracted]

With your crown'd brother, and these your Heirs of your kingdoms, my poor house to it is a surplus of your grace, which never [visit, M.] life may last to answer.

*Leon.* O Paulina, We honour you with trouble: but we came To see the statue of our queen: your gallery Have we pass'd through, not without much content

In many singularities; but we saw not That which my daughter came to look upon, The statue of her mother.

*Paul.* As she liv'd peerless, So her dead likeness, I do well believe, Excels whatever yet you looked upon, Or hand of man hath done: therefore I keep it Lonely apart: But here it is: prepare To see the life as lively mock'd, as ever [well. Still sleep mock'd death: behold. And say, 'tis [PAULINA undraws a Curtain, and discovers a statue.]

I like your silence, it the more shows off Your wonder: But yet speak;—first, you, my Comes it not something near? [liege]

*Leon.* Her natural posture! Chide me, dead stone; that I may say, indeed, Thou art Hermione: or, rather, thou art she, In this not chiding; for she was as tender, As infancy and grace.—But yet, Paulina, Hermione was not so much wrinkled; nothing So aged, as this seems.

*Pol.* Oh! not by much.

*Paul.* So much the more our carver's excellence:

Which lets go by some sixteen years, and makes her As she liv'd now.

*Leon.* As now she might have done, So much to my good comfort, as it is Now piercing to my soul. Oh? thus she stood, Even with such lik' of majesty, (wain life, As now it coldly stands,) when first I woo'd her!

I am ashamed: Does not the stone rebuke me, For being more stone than it?—O royal piece, There's magic in thy majesty; which has My evils conjur'd to remembrance; and From thy admiring daughter took the spirits, Standing like stone with thee!

*Per.* And give me leave;

And do not say, 'tis superstition, that I kneel, and then implore her blessing.—Lady, Dear queen, that ended when I but began, Give me that hand of your's, to kiss.

*Paul.* O patience, The statue is but newly fix'd, the colour's Not dry.

*Cam.* My lord, your sorrow was too sore laid on;

Which sixteen winters cannot blow away, So many summers, dry: scarce any joy Did ever so long live; no sorrow, But kill'd itself much sooner.

*Pol.* Dear my brother, Let him that was the cause of this, have power To take off so much grief from you as he Will piece up in himself.

*Paul.* Indeed, my lord, If I had thought the seat of my poor image Would thus have wrought \* you, (for the stone is mine,)

I'd not have show'd it.

*Leon.* Do not draw the curtain.

*Paul.* No longer shall you gaze on't; lest May think anon, it moves.

*Leon.* Let be, let be,

Would I were dead, but that methinks already— [loud, What was he, that did make it?—See, my Would you not deem, it breath'd? and that those veins

Did verily bear blood?

*Pol.* Masterly done! The very life seems warm upon her lip.

*Leon.* The figure of her eye has motion in't; As † we are mock'd with art.

*Paul.* I'll draw the curtain; My lord's almost so far transported, that He'll think anon, it lives.

*Leon.* O sweet Paulina, Make me to think so twenty years together; No settled senses of the world can match The pleasure of that madness. Let't alone.

*Paul.* I am sorry, Sir, I have thus far stirr'd you: but

I could afflict you further.

*Leon.* Do, Paulina; For this affliction has a taste as sweet As any cordial comfort.—Still, methinks, There is an air comes from her: What fine chisel [me, Could ever yet cut breath? Let no man mock For I will kiss her.

*Paul.* Good my lord, forbear: The ruddiness upon her lip is wet: You'll mar it, if you kiss it; stain your own With oily painting: Shall I draw the curtain?

*Leon.* No, not these twenty years

*Per.* So long could I Stand by, a looker on.

*Paul.* Either forbear, Quit presently the chapel; or resolve you For more amazement: If you can behold it, I'll make the statue move indeed; descend,

\* Worked, agitated.

† I. e. Though her eye be fixed it seems to have motion in it.

And take you by the hand : but then you'll think,  
(Which I protest against,) I am assisted  
By wicked powers.

*Leon.* What you can make her do,  
I am content to look on ; what to speak,  
I am content to hear ; for 'tis as easy  
To make her speak, as move.

*Paul.* It is requir'd  
You do awake your faith : Then, all stand still ;  
Or those, that think it is unlawful business  
I am about, let them depart.

*Leon.* Proceed ;

*Paul.* Music ; awake her : strike.— [*Music.*  
'Tis time ; descend ; be stone no more : ap-  
proach ;

Strike all that look upon with marvel. Come ;  
I'll fill your grave up : stir ; nay, come away ;  
Bequeath to death your numbness, for from him  
Dear life redeems you.—You perceive, she stirs :

*HERMIONE comes down from the Pedestal.*  
Start not : her actions shall be holy, as,  
You hear, my spell is lawful : do not shun her,  
Until you see her die again ; for then  
You kill her double : Nay, present your hand :  
When she was young, you woo'd her ; now, in  
age,

Is she become the suitor. ♀

*Leon.* Oh ! she's warm ! [*Embracing her.*  
If this be magic, let it be an art  
Lawful as eating.

*Pol.* She embraces him.

*Com.* She hangs about his neck ;

If she pertain to life, let her speak too.

*Pol.* Ay, and make't manifest where she has  
liv'd

Or, how stol'n from the dead ?

*Paul.* That she is living,  
Were it but told you, should be hooted at  
Like an old tale ; but it appears, she lives,  
Though yet she speak not. Mark a little while.  
Please you to interpose, fair madam ; kneel,  
And pray your mother's blessing.—Turn, good  
Our Perdita is found. {*lady ;*

[*Presenting PERDITA, who kneels to*  
*HERMIONE.*

*Her.* You gods, look down,  
And from your secret vials pour your graces  
Upon my daughter's head !—Tell me, mine own,  
Where hast thou been preserv'd ? where liv'd ?  
how found

Thy father's court ? for thou shalt hear, that I,—  
Knowing by Paulina, that the oracle  
Gave hope thou wast in being,—have preserv'd  
Myself, to see the issue.

*Paul.* There's time enough for that ;  
Lest they desire, upon this push to trouble  
Your joys with like relation.—Go together,  
You precious winners \* all ; your exultation  
Partake to every one. I, an old turtle,  
Will wing me to some wither'd bough ; and there  
My mate, that's never to be found again,  
Lament till I am lost.

*Leon.* O peace, Paulina ;  
Thou should'st a husband take by my consent,  
As I by thine, a wife : this is a match,  
And made between's by vows. Thou hast found  
mine ;

But how, is to be question'd : for I saw her,  
As I thought, dead ; and have, in vain, said many  
A prayer upon her grave : I'll not seek far  
(For him, I partly know his mind,) to find thee  
An honourable husband :—Come, Camillo,  
And take her by the hand : whose worth, and  
honesty,

Is richly noted ; and here justified  
By us, a pair of kings.—Let's from this place —  
What !—Look upon my brother !—both your  
pardons,

That e'er I put between your holy looks  
My ill suspicion.—This your son-in-law,  
And son unto the king, (whom heavens direct-  
ing,) {*luna,*

Is troth-plight to your daughter—Good Pau-  
Lead us from hence ; where we may leisurely  
Each one demand, and answer to his part  
Perform'd in this wide gap of time, since first  
We were dissever'd : Hastily lead away.

{*Exeunt.*

\* You who by this discovery have gained what you  
desired  
† Participate.

# TAMING OF THE SHREW.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

WARBURTON and Farmer have questioned the authenticity of this play; one declaring it to be certainly spurious, and the other supposing that Shakspeare merely adapted it to the stage, with certain additions and corrections. Malone, however, upon very satisfactory grounds, ranks it among the earliest efforts of Shakspeare's muse, as it abounds with the doggerel measure so common in the old comedies immediately preceding the time at which he commenced writing for the stage; and with a tiresome play upon words, which he took occasion to condemn in one of his subsequent comedies. The year 1549 is the probable date of its production. Yet Stevens discovers the hand of Shakspeare in almost every scene; and Johnson considers the whole play very popular, sprightly, and diverting. "The two plots (says the learned Doctor) are so well united, that they can hardly be called two, without injury to the art with which they are interwoven." That part of the story which suggests the title of the play, is probably a work of invention. The under-plot, which comprises the love-scenes of Lucentio, the pleasing incident of the pedant, with the characters of Vincentio, Tranio, Gremio and Biondello, is taken from a comedy of George Gascogne's (an author of considerable popularity) called *Supposés*, translated from Ariosto's *I Suppositi*, and acted in 1566, by the gentlemen of Grey's Inn. The singular induction to this piece is taken from Goulart's "*Histoires ad arabes de notre temps*," in which its leading circumstance is related as a real fact, practised upon a mean artisan at Brussels, by Philip the Good, duke of Burgundy. *The Taming of the Shrew* condensed within the compass of a modern after-piece invariably elicits considerable mirth; for the respective parts of Katharina and Petruchio are exceedingly spirited, ludicrous, and diverting. But, in its present form, many of the scenes are unparadoxically tedious, and many of the incidents perplexingly involved. To those who look for "sermons in stones, and good in every thing," we cannot exactly point out the moral of this domestic occurrence; since the successful issue of Petruchio's experiment in one solitary instance, will scarcely warrant its practical repetition in any of the numerous cases which seem to call for a similar remedy.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

A LORD.			
CHRISTOPHER SLY, a drunken	} Persons in the Induc- tion.	TRANIO,	} Servants to Lucentio.
Tinker.		BIONDELLO,	
Hostess, Page, Players, Hunts-		GRUMIO,	} Servants to Petruchio.
men, and other servants at-		CURTIS,	
tending on the Lord.		PEDANT, an old fellow set up to personate	Vincentio.
BAPTISTA, a rich Gentleman of Padua.			
VINCENTIO, an old Gentleman of Pisa.		KATHARINA, the Shrew,	} Daughters to Bap- tista.
LUCENTIO, Son to Vincentio, in love with		BIANCA, her Sister,	
Bianca.		WIDOW.	
PETRUCHIO, a Gentleman of Verona, a suitor			
to Katharina.		Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants attending	on Baptista and Petruchio.
GRUMIO,	} Suitors to Bianca.		
HORTENSIO,			

SCENE, sometimes in Padua; and sometimes in Petruchio's House in the Country.

## CHARACTERS IN THE INDUCTION

To the original Play of *The Taming of a Shrew*, entered on the Stationers' Books in 1594, and printed in quarto, in 1607.

A LORD, &c.		VALERIA, Servant to Aurelius.
SLY.		SANDER, Servant to Ferando.
A Tinker.		PHYLLOTUS, a Merchant who personates the
Page, Players, Huntsmen, &c.		Duke.
PERSONS REPRESENTED.		
ALPHONSUS, a merchant of Athens.		KATE,
JEROME, Duke of Cestus.		EMELIA,
AURELIUS, his Son,	} Suitors to the Daughters of Alphonsus.	PHYLENA,
FERANDO,		
POLIBON,		Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants to Ferando and Alphonsus.

SCENE, Athens; and sometimes Ferando's Country House.

## INDUCTION.

## SCENE I.—Before an Alchouse on a Heath.

Enter HOTHAM and SLY.

Sly. I'll please \* you, in faith.

Hoth. A pair of stocks, you rogue!

Sly. You're a baggage; the Slies are no rogues: Look in the chronicles, we came in with Richard Conqueror. Therefore, *paucas palladis*, † let the world slide: *Sessal* ‡.

Hoth. You will not pay for the glasses you have burst?

Sly. No, not a denier: Go by, says Jeronimy;—Go to thy cold bed, and warm thee. ||

Hoth. I know my remedy, I must go fetch the thurdborough. ¶ [Exit.]

Sly. Third, or fourth, or fifth borough, I'll answer him by law; I'll not budge an inch, boy; let him come, and kindly.

[Lies down on the ground and falls asleep.]

Wind horns. Enter a Lord from hunting, with huntsmen and servants.

Lord. Huntsman, † charge thee, tender well my hounds:

Brach \*\* Merri-man,—the poor cur is emboss'd, †† And couple Clowder with the deep-mouth'd brach.

Saw'st thou not, boy, how Silver made it good At the hedge corner, in the coldest fault? I would not lose the dog for twenty pound.

1 Hun. Why, Belman is as good as he, my He cried upon it at the merest loss, † Lord, And twice to-day pick'd out the dullest scent. Trust me, I take him for the better dog.

Lord. Thou art a fool: it Echo were as fleet, I would esteem him worth a dozen such. But sup them well, and look unto them all; To-morrow I intend to hunt again.

1 Hun. I will, my lord.

Lord. What's here? one dead, or drunk? See, doth he breathe?

2 Hun. He breathes, my lord: Were he not warm'd with ale,

This were a bed but cold to sleep so soundly.

Lord. O monstrous beast! how like a swine he lies! † Image!

Grim death, how foul and loathsome is thine Sirs, I will practise on this drunken man — What think you, if he were convey'd to bed,

Wrapp'd in sweet clothes, rings put upon his fingers,

A most delicious banquet by his bed, And brave attendants near him when he wakes Would not the beggar then forget himself?

1 Hun. Believe me, lord, I think he cannot choose.

Hun. It would seem strange unto him when he wak'd.

Lord. Even as a flattering dream, or worthless fancy.

Then take him up, and manage well the jest:— Carry him gently to my fairest chamber, And hang it round with all my wanton pictures:

Balm his foul head with warm distilled waters, And burn sweet wood to make the lodging sweet:

Procure the music ready when he wakes, To make a dulcet and a heavenly sound; And if he chance to speak, be ready straight, And, with a low submissive reverence, Say,—What is it your honour will command? Let one attend him with a silver basin, Full of rose-water, and bestrew'd with flowers; Another bear the ewer, †† the third a diaper, ††

\* Beat or knock.

† Be quiet.

‡ This line and the scrap of Spanish is used in but one scene from an old play called Hieronimo, or the Spanish Tragedy.

†† An officer whose authority equals a constable

\*\* Butch.

†† Patcher.

† Few words.

‡ Broke.

†† This line and the scrap of Spanish is used in but one scene from an old play called Hieronimo, or the Spanish Tragedy.

†† An officer whose authority equals a constable

\*\* Butch.

†† Patcher.

And say, —Will't please your lordship cool your hands?

Some one be ready with a costly suit, And ask him what apparel he will wear; Another tell him of his hounds and horse, And that his lady mourns at his disease: Persuade him, that he hath been lunatic; And, when he says he is—, say, that he dreams, For he is nothing but a mighty lord. This do, and do it kindly, \* gentle Sirs; It will be pastime passing excellent, If it be husbanded with modesty. †

1 Hun. My lord, I warrant you, we'll play our part,

As he shall think, by our true diligence, He is no less than what we say he is.

Lord. Take him up gently, and to bed with him;

And each one to his office, when he wakes.—

[Some bear out SLY. A trumpet sounds.]

Sirrah, go see what trumpet 'tis that sounds.—

[Exit SERVANT.]

Belike, some noble gentleman, that means, Travelling some journey, to repose him here.—

Re-enter a SERVANT.

How now? Who is it?

SERV. An it please your honour, Players that offer service to your lordship.

Lord. Bid them come near:—

Enter PLAYERS.

Now, fellows, you are welcome.

1 Lord. We thank your honour.

Lord. Do you intend to stay with me to-night?

2 Play. So please your lordship to accept our duty.

Lord. With all my heart.—This fellow I remember,

Since once he play'd a farmer's eldest son;—

'Twas where you woo'd the gentlewoman so well:

I have forgot your name; but, sure, that part Was aptly fitted, and naturally perform'd.

1 Play. I think, 'twas Soto that your honour means.

Lord. 'Tis very true;—thou didst it excellent.—

Well, you are come to me in happy time; The rather for I have some sport in hand, Wherein your cunning can assist me much.

There is a lord will hear you play to-night; But I am doubtful of your modesties:

Lest, over-eying of his odd behaviour, (For yet his honour never heard a play,) You break into some merry passion,

And so offend him: for I tell you, Sirs, If you should smile, he grows impatient.

1 Play. Fear not, my lord: we can contain ourselves,

Were he the veriest antick in the world.

Lord. Go, sirrah, take them to the buttery, And give them friendly welcome every one:

Let them want nothing that my house affords.

[Exeunt SERVANT and PLAYERS.]

Sirrah, go you to Bartholomew my page,

And see him dress'd in all suits like a lady: That done, conduct him to the drunkard's chamber,

And call him—madam, do him obeisance,— Tell him from me, (as he will win my love,—

He bear himself with honourable action, Such as he hath observ'd in noble ladies

Unto their lords, by them accomplished; Such duty to the drunkard let him do,

With soft low tongue, and lowly courtesy; And say,—What is't your honour will com-

mand,

Wherein your lady, and your humble wife, May show her duty, and make known her love?

\* Naturally.

† Moderation.

And then—with kind embracements, tempting kisses,

And with declining head into his bosom,  
 Bid him shed tears, as being overjoy'd  
 To see her noble lord restor'd to health,  
 Who, for twice seven years, hath esteem'd him  
 No better than a poor and loathsome beggar:  
 And if the boy have not a woman's gift,  
 To rain a shower of commanded tears,  
 An onion will do well for such a shift;  
 Which in a napkin being close convey'd,  
 Shall in despite enforce a watery eye.  
 See this despatch'd with all the haste thou canst;  
 Anon I'll give thee more instructions.

[Exit SERVANT.]

I know, the boy will well usurp the grace,  
 Voice, gait, and action of a gentlewoman:  
 I long to hear him call the drunkard, husband;  
 And how my men will stay themselves from  
 laughter,  
 When they do homage to this simple peasant.  
 I'll in to counsel them: haply \* my presence  
 May well abate the over-merry spleen,  
 Which otherwise would grow into extremes.

[Exit.]

## SCENE II.

## A Bedchamber in the Lord's House.

SLY is discovered in a rich night gown, with attendants, some with apparel, others with bason, euer, and other appurtenances. Enter LORD, dressed like a Servant.

Sly. For God's sake a pot of small ale.

1 Serv. Will't please your lordship drink a cup of sack?

2 Serv. Will't please your honour taste of these conserves?

3 Serv. What raiment will your honour wear to-day?

Sly. I am Christopher Sly; call not me—honour, not lordship: I never drank sack in my life, and if you give me any conserves, give me conserves of beet: Ne'er ask me what raiment I'll wear; for I have no more doublets than backs, no more stockings than legs, nor no more shoes than feet, nay, sometimes, more feet than shoes, or such shoes as my toes look through the over-leather.

Lord. Heaven cease this idle humour in your honour!

Oh! that a mighty man, of such descent,  
 Of such possessions, and so high esteem,  
 Should be infused with so foul a spirit!

Sly. What, would you make me mad? Am not I Christopher Sly, old Sly's son of Burton-heath; by birth a pedlar, by education a card-maker, by transmutation a bear-herd, and now by present profession a tinker? Ask Marian Hacket, the fat ale-wife of Wincot, if she know me not: if she say I am not fourteen pence on the score for three ale, score me up for the youngest knave in Christendom. What, I am not bestrought: † Here's—

1 Serv. Oh! this it is, that makes your lady mourn.

2 Serv. Oh! this it is that makes your servants droop.

Lord. Hence comes it that your kindred shun your house,

As beaten hence by your strange lunacy.

O noble lord, bethink thee of thy birth;  
 Call home thy ancient thoughts from banishment,

And banish hence these abject lowly dreams:

Look how thy servants do attend on thee,

Each in his office ready at thy beck,

Will thou have music? hark! Apollo plays,

[Music.]

And twenty caged nightingales do sing:  
 Or wilt thou sleep? we'll have thee to a couch,  
 Softer and sweeter than the lustful bed

On purpose trimm'd up for Semiramis.

Say, thou wilt walk; we will bestrew the ground:  
 Or wilt thou ride? thy horses shall be tripp'd,  
 Their harness studded all with gold and pearl.

Dost thou love hawking? thou hast hawks will

soar

Above the morning lark: Or wilt thou hunt?

Thy hounds shall make the welkin answer them,  
 And fetch shrill echoes from the hollow earth.

1 Serv. Say, thou wilt course; thy greyhounds

are as swift

As breasted stags, ay, fleetier than the roe.

2 Serv. Dost thou love pictures? we will fetch thee straight

Adonis, painted by a running brook:

And Clytherea all in scales hid; [breath,  
 Which seem to move and wanton with her  
 Even as the waving sedges play with wind.

Lord. We'll show thee so, as she was a maid;

And how she was beguiled and surpris'd,

As lively paint'd as the deed was done.

3 Serv. Or Daphne, roaming through a thorny

wood;

Scratching her legs that one shall swear she

bleeds:

And at that sight shall sad Apollo weep,

So workmanly the blood and tears are drawn.

Lord. Thou art a lord, and nothing but a lord:

Thou hast a lady far more beautiful

Than any woman in this waning age.

1 Serv. And, till the tears that she hath shed

for thee,

Like envious floods, o'er-ran her lovely face,

She was the fairest creature in the world;

And yet she is inferior to none.

Sly. Am I a lord? and have I such a lady?

Or do I dream? or have I dream'd till now?

I do not sleep: I see, I hear, I speak;

I smell sweet savours, and I feel soft things:—

Upon my life, I am a lord, indeed;

And not a tinker, nor Christophero Sly.—

Well, bring our lady hither to our sight;

And once again, a pot of the smallest ale.

2 Serv. Will't please your mightiness to wash

your hands?

[SERVANTS present an ewer, basin, and napkin.]

Oh! how we joy to see your wit restor'd!

Oh! that once more you knew but what you

are!

These fifteen years you have been in a dream;

Or, when you wak'd, so wak'd as if you slept!

Sly. These fifteen years, by my fay,\* a goodly

nap.

But did I never speak of all that time?

1 Serv. O yes, my lord; but very idle words:—

For though you lay here in this goodly chamber,

Yet would you say, ye were beaten out of door,

And rail upon the hostess of the house;

And say, you would present her at the leet,†

Because she brought stone jugs and no seal'd

quarts:

Sometimes you would call out for Cicely Hacket.

Sly. Ay, the woman's maid of the house.

3 Serv. Why, Sir, you know no house, nor

no such maid;

Nor no such men, as you have reckon'd up,—

As Stephen Sly, and old John Naps of Greece,

And Peter Turf, and Henry Pimplenell;

And twenty more such names and men as these,

Which never were, nor no man ever saw.

Sly. Now, Lord be thanked for my good

amends!

All. Amen.

Sly. I thank thee; thou shalt not lose by it.

Enter the PAGE, as a lady, with attendants.

Page. How fares my noble lord?

Sly. Marry, I fare well; for here is cheer

enough.

Where is my wife?

Page. Here, noble lord; What is thy will

\* Perhaps.

† Distracted.

\* Fa th

† Court-leet



*Sly.* Are you my wife, and will not call me—  
husband?  
My men should call me—lord; I am your good-  
man.

*Page.* My husband and my lord, my lord and  
husband;

I am your wife in all obedience.

*Sly.* I know it well:—What must I call her?

*Lord.* Madam.

*Sly.* Al'ce madam, or Joan madam?

*Lord.* Madam, and nothing else; so lords call  
ladies.

*Sly.* Madam wife, they say that I have dream'd,  
and slept

Above some fifteen year and more.

*Page.* Ay, and the time seems thirty unto me;  
Being all this time abandon'd from your bed.

*Sly.* 'Tis much;—Servants leave me and  
her alone.

Madam, undress you, and come now to bed.

*Page.* Thrice noble lord, let me entreat of  
you,

To pardon me yet for a night or two;

Or, if not so, until the sun be set:

For your physicians have expressly charg'd,  
In peril to incur your former malady,

That I should yet absent me from your bed:

I hope, this reason stands for my excuse.

*Sly.* Ay, it stands so, that I may hardly tarry  
so long. But I would be loath to fall into my  
dreams again; I will therefore tarry in despite  
of the flesh and the blood.

*Enter a SERVANT.*

*Serv.* Your honour's players, hearing your  
amendment,

Are come to play a pleasant comedy,

For so your doctors hold it very meet;

Seeing too much sadness hath congeal'd your  
blood.

And melancholy is the nurse of frenzy,  
Therefore, they thought it good you hear a play,  
And frame your mind to mirth and merriment,  
Which bars a thousand harms, and lengthens  
life.

*Sly.* Marry, I will; let them play it: Is not a  
commodity,\* a Christmas gambol, or a tumbling  
tick?

*Page.* No, my good lord; it is more pleasing  
stuff.

*Sly.* What, household stuff?

*Page.* It is a kind of history.

*Sly.* Well, we'll see't: Come, madam wife,  
sit by my side, and let the world slip; we shall  
u'er be younger. *[They sit down.]*

# ACT I.

## SCENE I.—Padua.—A public Place.

*Enter LUCENTIO and TRANIO.*

*Luc.* Tranio, since—for the great desire I had  
To see fair Padua, nursery of arts,—  
I am arriv'd for fruitful Lombardy,  
The pleasant garden of great Italy;  
And, by my father's love and leave, am arm'd  
With his good will, and thy good company,  
Most trusty servant, well approv'd in all;  
Here let us breathe, and happily institute  
A course of learning, and ingenious studies.  
Pisa, renowned for grave citizens,  
Gave me my being, and my father first,  
A merchant of great traffic through the world,  
Vincentio, come of the Bentivoli.  
Vincentio his son, brought up in Florence,  
It shall become, to serve all hopes conceiv'd,  
To deck his fortune with his virtuous deeds:  
And therefore Tranio, for the time I study,  
Virtue, and that part of philosophy  
Will I apply, that treats of happiness  
By virtue specially to be achiev'd.

\* For comedy.

† Ingenious.

Tell me thy mind: for I have Pisa left,  
And am to Padua come; as he that leaves  
A shallow plash,\* to plunge him in the deep,  
And with satiety seeks to quench his thirst.

*Tra.* *My pervenator*,† a gentle master mine,  
I am in all affected as yourself;

Glad that you thus continue your resolve,

To suck the sweets of sweet philosophy,

Only, good master, while we do admire

This virtue, and this moral discipline,

Let's be no stoics, nor no stocks, I pray;  
Or so devote to Aristotle's checks,‡

As Ovid be an outcast quite unwar'd:

Talk logic with acquaintance that you have,

And practise rhetoric in your common talk:

Music and poetry use to quicken § you;

The mathematics, and the metaphysics,

Fail to them, as you find your stomach serves  
you:

No profit grows, where is no pleasure ta'en;—

In brief, Sir, study what you most affect.

*Luc.* Graciously, Tranio, well dost thou ad-  
vise.

If, Biondello, thou wert come ashore, ¶ wise.

We could at once put us in readiness;

And take a lodging, fit to entertain

Such friends, as time in Padua shall beget.

But stay awhile: What company is this?

*Tra.* Master, some, show to welcome us to  
town.

*Enter BAPTISTA, KATHARINA, BIANCA, GREG-  
GIO, and HORTENSIO. LUCENTIO and TRANIO  
stand aside.*

*Bap.* Gentlemen, importune me no further,  
For how I firmly am resolv'd you know;

That is, not to bestow my youngest daughter,

Before I have a husband for the elder:

If either of you both love Katharina,

Because I know you well, and love you well,

Leave shall you have to court her at your plea-  
sure.

*Gre.* To cart her rather: She's too rough for  
me:—

There, there, Hortensio, will you any wife?

*Kath.* I pray you, Sir, *[To Bap.]* is it your  
will

To make a stale ¶ of me amongst these mates?

*Hor.* Mates, maid! how mean you that? no  
mates for you,

Unless you were of gentler, milder mould.

*Kath.* 'Tis faith, Sir, you shall never need to fear;

I wis, † it is not half way to her heart:

But, if it were, doubt not her care should be

To comb your noodle with a three-legg'd stool,

And paint your face, and use you like a fool.

*Hor.* From all such devils, good Lord, deli-  
ver us!

*Gre.* And me too, good Lord!

*Tra.* Hush, master! here is some good pas-  
time toward;

That wench is stark mad, or wonderful froward.

*Luc.* But in the other's silence I do see

Maids' mild behaviour and sobriety.

Peace, Tranio.

*Tra.* Well said, master: mum! and gaze your  
fill.

*Bap.* Gentlemen, that I may soon make good

What I have said,—Bianca, get you in:

And let it not displease thee, good Bianca;

For I will love thee ne'er the less, my girl.

*Kath.* A pretty peal! \*\* 'tis best

Put finger in the eye,—an she knew why.

*Bian.* Siver, content you in my discontent.—

Sir, to your pleasure humbly I subscribe:

My books and instrument shall be my company;

On them to look, and practise by myself.

*Luc.* Mark, Tranio! thou may'st hear Minerva

speak. *[Aside.]*

*Hor.* Signior Baptista, will you be so strange?

Sorry am I, that our good will effects

Bianca's grief.

\* Small piece of water.

† Harsh rules.

‡ A bait or decoy.

† Pardon me.

‡ Animate.

\*\* Pet.

¶ Think.

*Gre.* Why, will you mew\* her up, Signior Baptista, for this fiend of hell, And make her bear the penance of her tongue?

*Bap.* Gentlemen, content ye; I am resolv'd:—Go in, Bianca. *[Exit Bianca.]*

And for I know, she taketh most delight In music, instruments, and poetry, Schoolmasters will I keep within my house, Fit to instruct her youth.—If you, Hortensio, Or signior Gremio, you,—know any such, Preter† them hither; for to cunning; men I will be very kind, and liberal To mine own children in good bringing up; And so farewell. Katharina, you may stay; For I have more to continue with Bianca.

*[Exit.]*

*Kath.* Why, and I trust I may go too; May I not? *[Belike,]* What, shall I be appointed hours; as though, I knew not what to take, and what to leave? *[Exit.]*

*Gre.* You may go to the devil's dam; your gifts are so good, here is none will hold you. Their love is not so great, Hortensio, but we may blow our nails together, and fast it fairly out; our cake's dough on both sides. Farewell:—Yet, for the love I bear my sweet Bianca, if I can by any means light on a fit man, to teach her that wherein she delights, I will wish him to her father.

*Hor.* So will I, signior Gremio: But a word, I pray. Though the nature of our quarrel yet never brook'd parle, know now, upon advice,|| it toucheth us both,—that we may yet again have access to our fair mistress, and be happy rivals in Bianca's love,—to labour and effect one thing specially.

*Gre.* What's that, I pray?

*Hor.* Marry, Sir, to get a husband for her sister.

*Gre.* A husband? a devil.

*Hor.* I say, a husband.

*Gre.* I say, a devil: Think'st thou, Hortensio, though her father be very rich, any man is so very a fool to be married to hell?

*Hor.* Tush, Gremio, though it pass your patience, and mine, to endure her loud alarms, why, man, there be good fellows in the world, on a man could light on them, would take her with all faults, and money enough.

*Gre.* I cannot tell; but I had as lief take her dowry with this condition,—to be whipped at the high cross every morning.

*Hor.* 'Faith, as you say, there's small choice in rotten apples. But, come; since this bar in law makes us friends, it shall be so far forth friendly maintained,—till by helping Baptista's eldest daughter to a husband, we set his youngest free for a husband, and then have to't afresh. Sweet Bianca!—Happy man be his dole! ¶ He that runs fastest gets the ring. How say you, signior Gremio?

*Gre.* I am agreed: and 'would I had given him the best horse in Padua to begin his wooing, that would thoroughly woo her, wed her, and bed her, and rid the house of her. Come on. *[Exeunt Gremio and Hortensio.]*

*Tra.* *[Advancing.]* I pray, Sir, tell me,—Is it possible

That love should of a sudden take such hold?

*Luc.* O Tranio, till I found it to be true, I never thought it possible, or likely; But see I while idly I stood looking on, I found the effect of love in idleness: And now in plainness do confess to thee,—That art to me as secret, and as dear, As Anna to the queen of Carthage was, Tranio, I burn, I pine, I perish, Tranio, If I achieve not this young modest girl: Counsel me, Tranio, for I know thou canst; Assist me, Tranio, for I know thou wilt.

*Tra.* Master, it is no time to chide you now; Affection is not rated\* from the heart: *[So,—]* If love have touch'd you, nought remains but *Redime te captum quam queas minimo.*

*Luc.* Gramercies, lad; go forward: this contents;

The rest will comfort, for my counsel's sound.

*Tra.* Master, you look'd so longly† on the maid,

Perhaps you mark'd not what's the pith of all.

*Luc.* O yes, I saw sweet beauty in her face, Such as the daughter; of Agenor had, That made great Jove to humble him to her hand,

When with his knees he kiss'd the Cretan strand.

*Tra.* Saw you no more? mark'd you not how her sister

Began to scold; and raise up such a storm,

That mortal ears might hardly endure the din?

*Luc.* Tranio, I saw her coral lips to move,

And with her breath she did perfume the air,

Sacred, and sweet, was all I saw in her.

*Tra.* Nay, then, 'tis time to stir him from his trance,

I pray, awake, Sir; if you love the maid,

Bend thoughts and wits to achieve her. Thus it

stands:—

Her elder sister is so curst and shrewd,

That, till the father rid his hands of her,

Master, your love must live a maid at home;

And therefore has he closely mew'd her up,

Because she shall not be annoy'd with suitors.

*Luc.* Ah! Tranio, what a cruel father's he!

But art thou not advis'd, he took some care

To get her cunning schoolmasters to instruct

her?

*Tra.* Ay, marry, am I, Sir; and now 'tis

plotted.

*Luc.* I have it, Tranio.

*Tra.* Master, for my hand,

Both our inventions meet and jump in one.

*Luc.* Tell me thine first.

*Tra.* You will be schoolmaster,

And undertake the teaching of the maid;

That's your device.

*Luc.* It is: May it be done?

*Tra.* Not possible? For who shall bear your

And be in Padua here Vincentio's son? *[Exit.]*

Keep house, and ply his book; welcome his

friends;

Visit his countrymen, and banquet them?

*Luc.* Basta; content thee; for I have it full

We have not yet been seen in any house;

Nor can we be distinguished by our faces,

For man or master: Then it follows thus:—

Thou shalt be master, Tranio, in my stead,

Keep house, and port,|| and servants, as I

should;

I will some other be; some Florentine,

Some Neapolitan, or mean man of Pisa.

'Tis hatch'd, and shall be so.—Tranio, at once

Uncase thee; take my colour'd hat and cloak:

When Biondello comes, he waits on thee;

But I will charm him first to keep his tongue.

*Tra.* So had you need.

*[They exchange habits]*

In brief then, Sir, sith ¶ it your pleasure is,

And I am tied to be obedient;

*[For so your father charg'd me at our parting;*

*Be serviceable to my son, quoth he,*

*Although, I think, 'twas in another sense,)*

I am content to be Lucentio,

Because so well I love Lucentio.

*Luc.* Tranio, be so, because Lucentio loves:

And let me be a slave, to achieve that maid

Whose sudden sight hath thrall'd my wounded

eye.

*Enter BIONDELLO.*

Here comes the rogue.—Sirrah, where have you been?

\* Shut.

† Knowing, learned. Consideration.

‡ Recommended.

§ Endowments. ¶ Gain or lot.

\* Driven out by chiding.

† Longingly.

‡ Europa.

§ Show, appearance

¶ 'Tis enough

‡ Since.

*Bion.* Where have I been? Nay, how now, where are you? [clothes?]  
Master, has my fellow Tranio stolen your Or you stolen his? or both? pray, what's the news?

*Luc.* Sirrah, come hither; 'tis no time to jest, And therefore frame your manners to the time. Your fellow Tranio here, to save my life, Puts my apparel and my countenance on, And I for my escape have put on his; For in a quarrel, since I came ashore, I kill'd a man, and fear I was descried.\* Wait you on him, I charge you, as becomes, While I make way from hence to save my life: You understand me.

*Bion.* I, Sir, ne'er a whit.

*Luc.* And not a jot of Tranio in your mouth; Tranio is chang'd into Lucentio.

*Bion.* The better for him; Would I were so too!

*Tra.* So would I, faith, boy, to have the next wish after,— [daughter, That Lucentio indeed had Baptista's youngest But sirrah,—not for my sake, but your master's, —I advise

You use your manners discreetly in all kind of companies:

When I am alone, why, then I am Tranio; But in all places else, your master Lucentio.

*Luc.* Tranio, let's go:—

Oge thing more rests, that thyself execute;— To make one among these wooers: if thou ask me why,—

Sufficieth, my reasons are both good and weighty. [Exeunt.]

*I Serv.* My lord, you nod; you do not mind the play.

*Sly.* Yes, by saint Anne, do I. A good matter, surely; Comes there any more of it?

*Page.* My lord, 'tis but begun.

*Sly.* 'Tis a very excellent piece of work, madam lady; 'Would 'twere done!

SCENE II.—The same.—Before HORTENSIO'S House.

Enter PETRUCHIO AND GRUMIO.

*Pet.* Verona, for a while I take my leave, To see my friends in Padua; but, of all, My best beloved and approved friend, Hortensio; and, I trow, this is his house:— Here, sirrah Grumio; knock, I say.

*Grum.* Knock, Sir! whom should I knock? is there any man has rebused your worship?

*Pet.* Villain, I say, knock me here soundly.

*Grum.* Knock you here, Sir? why, Sir, what am I, Sir, that I should knock you here, Sir?

*Pet.* Villain, I say, knock me at this gate, And rap me well, or I'll knock your knave's pate.

*Grum.* My master is grown quarrelsome: I should knock you first, And then I know after who comes by the worst.

*Pet.* Will it not be?

'Faith, sirrah, an you'll not knock, I'll wring it; I'll try how you can *sot, fa,* and sing it.

[He wrings GRUMIO by the ears.]

*Grum.* Help, masters, help! my master is mad.

*Pet.* Now, knock when I bid you: sirrah! villain!

Enter HORTENSIO.

*Hor.* How now? what's the matter?—My old friend Grumio! and my good friend Petruchio!—How do you all at Verona?

*Pet.* Signior Hortensio, come you to part the fray?

*Con tutto il core bene trovato, may I say.*

*Hor.* Alla nostra casa, bene venuto, Molto honorato signor mio Petruchio. Rise, Grumio, rise; we will compound this quarrel.

\* Observed.

*Grum.* Nay, 'tis no matter, what he 'leges\* in Latin.—If this be not a lawful cause for me to leave his service,—Look you, Sir,—he bid me knock him, and rap him soundly, Sir: Well, was it fit for a servant to use his master so; being, perhaps, (for aught I see,) two and thirty,—a pip out?

Whom, 'would to God, I had well knock'd at first,

Then had not Grumio come by the worst, *Pet.* A senseless villain—Good Hortensio, I bade the rascal knock upon your gate, And could not get him for my heart to do it.

*Grum.* Knock at the gate?—O heavens! Spake you not these words plain,—Sirrah, knock

me here, Rap me here, knock me well, and knock me soundly.

And come you now with—knocking at the gate?

*Pet.* Sirrah, be gone, or talk not, I advise you.

*Hor.* Petruchio, patience; I am Grumio's pledge:

Why, this a heavy chance 'twixt him and you; Your ancient trusty, pleasant servant Grumio.

And tell me now, sweet friend,—what happy

Blows you to Padua here, from old Verona?

*Pet.* Such wind as scatters young men through the world,

To seek their fortunes further than at home, Where small experience grows. But, in a few; Signior Hortensio, thus it stands with me:—

Antonio, my father, is deceas'd; And I have thrust myself into this maze,

Haply to wive, and thrive, as best I may: Crowns in my purse I have, and goods at home,

And so am come abroad to see the world.

*Hor.* Petruchio, shall I then come roundly to thee.

And wish thee to a shrewd ill-favour'd wife?

Thoud'xt thank me but a little for my counsel: And yet I'll promise thee she shall be rich,

And very rich:—but thou'rt too much my friend, And I'll not wish thee to her.

*Pet.* Signior Hortensio, 'twixt such friends as we,

Few words suffice: and, therefore, if thou know One rich enough to be Petruchio's wife,

(As wealth is burden of my wooing dance,) Be she as foul as was Florentine's love;\*

As old as Sybil, and as curst and shrewd As Socrates' Xantippe, or a worse,

She moves me not, or not removes, at least, Affection's edge in me; were she as rough

As are the swelling Adriatic seas: I come to wive it wealthily in Padua;

If wealthily, then happily in Padua.

*Grum.* Nay, look you, Sir, he tells you flatly what his mind is: Why, give him gold enough

and marry him to a puppet, or an aglet-baby;† or an old trot with ne'er a tooth in her head,

though she have as many diseases as two and fifty horses: why nothing comes amiss, so money comes withal.

*Hor.* Petruchio, since we have stepp'd thus far in,

I will continue that I broach'd in jest. I can, Petruchio, help thee to a wife

With wealth enough, and young, and beautiful;

Brought up, as best comes a gentlewoman: Her only fault (and that is faults enough,) is,—that she is intolerably curst, [snare

And shrewd, and froward; so beyond all men,— That were my state far worse than it is, I would not wed her for a mine of gold.

*Pet.* Hortensio, peace; thou know'st not gold's effect:

Tell me her father's name, and 'tis enough;

\* Allegue.

† See the story, No. 29. of "A Thousand Notable Things."

‡ A small image on the tag of a lace.

For I will bow her, though she chide as loud  
As thunder when the clouds in autumn crack.

*Hor.* Her father is Baptista Minola,  
An affable and courteous gentleman:  
Her name is Katharina Minola,  
Renown'd in Padua for her scolding tongue.

*Pet.* I know her father, though I know not  
her:

And he knew my deceased father well:—  
I will not sleep, Hortensio, till I see her;  
And therefore let me be thus bold with you,  
To give you over at this first encounter,  
Unless you will accompany me thither.

*Gru.* I pray you, Sir, let him go while the  
humour lasts. O' my word, an she knew him  
as well as I do, she would think scolding  
would do little good upon him: She may, per-  
haps, call him half a score knaves, or so: why,  
that's nothing; an he begin once, he'll rail in  
his rope-tricks. \* I'll tell you what, Sir,—an  
she stand't him but a little, he will throw a  
denre in her face, and so disfigure her with it,  
that she shall have no more eyes to see withal  
than a cat: You know him not, Sir.

*Hor.* Tarry, Petrucchio, I must go with thee;  
For in Baptista's keep I my treasure is:  
He hath the jewel of my life in hold,  
His youngest daughter, beautiful Bianca;  
And her withholds from me, and other more  
Suitors to her, and rivals in my love:  
Supposing it a thing impossible,  
(For those defects I have before rehears'd,)—  
That ever Katharina will be woo'd,  
Therefore this order's hath Baptista ta'en:—  
That none shall have access unto Bianca,  
Till Katharine the curst have got a husband.

*Gru.* Katharine the curst!  
A title for a maid, of all titles the worst.

*Hor.* Now shall my friend Petrucchio do me  
grace;

And offer me, disguis'd in sober robes,  
To old Baptista as a schoolmaster  
Well seen in music, to instruct Bianca:  
That so I may by this device at least,  
Have leave and leisure to make love to her,  
And, unsuspected, court her by herself.

*Enter GRUMIO: with him LUCENTIO disguised,  
with books under his arm.*

*Gru.* Here's no knavery! See; to beguile  
the old folks, how the young folks lay their  
heads together! Master, master, look about  
you: Who goes there? ha!

*Hor.* Peace, Grumio; 'tis the rival of my  
Petrucchio, stand by a while. [love:—

*Gru.* A proper stripling, and an amorous! [They retire.

*Gru.* O very well; I have perus'd the note.  
Hark you, Sir; I'll have them very fairly  
bound:

All books of love, see that at any hand; ¶  
And see you read no other lectures to her:  
You understand me:—Over and beside  
Signior Baptista's liberality, [too,  
I'll mend it with a largess: \*\*—Take your papers  
And let me have them very well perfum'd;  
For she is sweeter than perfume itself,  
To whom they go. What will you read to her?

*Luc.* What'er I read to her, I'll plead for  
you,

As for my patron, (stand you so assur'd)  
As firmly as yourself were still in place:  
Yea, and (perhaps) with more successful words  
Than you, unless you were a scholar, Sir.

*Gru.* O this learning! what a thing it is!

*Gru.* O this woodcock! what an ass it is!

*Pet.* Peace, sirrah.

*Hor.* Grumio, mum!—God save you, signior  
Grumio!

*Gru.* And you're well met, signior Horten-  
sio. Trow you,

Whither I am going!—To Baptista Minola.

I promis'd to enquire carefully

About a schoolmaster for fair Bianca:  
And, by good fortune, I have lighted well  
On this young man; for learning, and be-  
haviour,

Fit for her turn; well read in poetry,  
And other books,—good ones, I warrant you.

*Hor.* 'Tis well; and I have met a gentleman,  
Hath promis'd me to help me to another,  
A fine musician to instruct our mistress:  
So shall I no whit be behind in duty  
To fair Bianca, so belov'd of me.

*Gru.* Belov'd of me,—and that my deeds  
shall prove.

*Gru.* And that his bags shall prove. [Aside.

*Hor.* Grumio, 'tis now no time to vent our  
Listen to me, and if you speak me fair, [love:  
I'll tell you news indifferent good for either.  
Here is a gentleman, whom by chance I met,  
Upon agreement from us to his liking,  
Will undertake to woo curst Katharine;  
Yea, and to marry her, if her dowry please.

*Gru.* So said, so done, is well;—

Hortensio, have you told him all her faults?

*Pet.* I know, she is an irksome brawling  
scold;

If that be all, masters, I hear no harm.

*Gru.* No, say'st me so, friend! What coun-  
tryman?

*Pet.* Born in Verona, old Antonio's son:

My father dead, my fortune lives for me;

And I do hope good days, and long, to see.

*Gru.* O Sir, such a life, with such a wife,  
were strange:

But, if you have a stomach, to't o' God's name;

You shall have me assisting you in all.

But will you woo this wild cat?

*Pet.* Will I live!

*Gru.* Will he woo her? ay, or I'll hang her.

[Aside.

*Pet.* Why came I hither but to that intent?

Think you, a little din can daunt mine ears?

Have I not in my time heard lions roar?

Have I not heard the sea, puff'd up with winds

Rage like an angry boar, chafed with sweat?

Have I not heard great ordnance in the field,

And heaven's artillery thunder in the skies?

Have I not in a pitched battle heard

Loud 'larums, neighing steeds, and trumpets'  
clang?

And do you tell me of a woman's tongue;

That gives not half so great a blow to the ear,

As will a chesnut in a farmer's fire?

Tush! tush! fear boys with bugs.\*

*Gru.* For he fears none. [Aside.

*Gru.* Hortensio, hark!

This gentleman is happily arriv'd, [your's.

My mind presumes, for his own good, and

*Hor.* I promis'd, we would be contributors,

And bear his charge of wooing, whatsoever.

*Gru.* And so we will; provided, that he win  
her.

*Gru.* I would, I were as sure of a good din-  
ner. [Aside.

*Enter TRANIO, bravely apparelled; and  
BIONDELLO.*

*Tra.* Gentlemen, God save you! If I may be  
bold,

Tell me, I beseech you, which is the readiest way  
To the house of signior Baptista Minola?

*Gru.* He that has the two fair daughters:—is't  
[Aside to TRANIO.] he you mean?

*Tra.* Even he. Biondello!

*Gru.* Hark you, Sir; You mean not her to—

*Tra.* Perhaps, him and her, Sir; What have  
you to do?

*Pet.* Not her that chides, Sir, at any hand, I  
pray.

*Tra.* I love no chiders, Sir:—Biondello, let's  
away.

*Luc.* Well begun, Tranio.

[Aside.

*Hor.* Sit, a word ere you go:—

\* Abusive language. † Withstand. ‡ Custody.

Are you a suitor to the maid you talk of, yea, or no?

*Tra.* An if I be, Sir, is it any offence?

*Gre.* No; if, without more words, you will get you hence.

*Tra.* Why, Sir, I pray, are not the streets as free to me, as for you? [*free*]

*Gre.* But so is not she.

*Tra.* For what reason, I beseech you?

*Gre.* For this reason, if you'll know,—

That she's the choice love of signior Gremio.

*Hor.* That she's the chosen of signior Hortensio.

*Tra.* Sottily, my masters! if you be gentlemen, Do me this right, bear me with patience.

Baptista is a noble gentleman,

To whom my father is not all unknown:

And, were his daughter fairer than she is,

She may more suitors have, and me for one.

Fair Leda's daughter had a thousand wooers;

Then well one more may fair Bianca have;

And so she shall; Lucentio shall make one,

Though Paris came; in hope to speed alone.

*Gre.* What! this gentleman will out-talk us all.

*Luc.* Sir, give him head; I know he'll prove a jade.

*Pet.* Hortensio, to what end are all these words?

*Hor.* Sir, let me be so bold as to ask you,

Did you yet ever see Baptista's daughter?

*Tra.* No, Sir; but hear I do that he hath two;

The one as famous for a scolding tongue,

As is the other for beauteous modesty.

*Pet.* Sir, Sir, the first's for me; let her go by.

*Gre.* Yea, leave that labour to great Hercules;

And let it be more than Alcides' twelve.

*Pet.* Sir, understand you this of me, in sooth;—

The youngest daughter, whom you hearken for,

Her father keeps from all access of suitors;

And will not promise her to any man,

Until the elder sister first be wed:

The younger then is free, and not before.

*Tra.* It it be so, Sir, then you are the man.

Must stand us all, and me among the rest;

Am I to break the ice, and do this feat,—

Achieve the elder, set the younger free

For our access,—whose hap shall be to have her, Will not so graceless he, to be ingrate.\*

*Hor.* Sir, you say well, and well you do conceive;

And since you do profess to be a suitor,

You must, as we do, gratify this gentleman,

To whom we all rest generally beholden.

*Tra.* Sir, I shall not be slack: in sign whereof

Please ye we may contrive this afternoon,

And quaff carouses to our mistress' health;

And so as adversaries do in law,—

Strive mightily, but eat and drink as friends.

*Gre.* *Hon.* O excellent motion! Fellows,† let's begone.

*Hor.* The motion's good indeed, and be it so;—

Petruchio, I shall be your *ben venuto*.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The same.—A Room in BAPTISTA'S House.*

*Enter KATHARINA and BIANCA.*

*Bian.* Good sister, wrong me not, nor wrong yourself,

To make a bondmaid and a slave of me;

That I disdain: but for these other gawds,‡

Unblind my hands, I'll pull them off myself,

Yea, all my raiment to my petticoat;

Or, what you will command me will I do,

So well I know my duty to my elders.

*Kath.* O! all thy suitors, here I charge thee tell

Whom thou lov'st best; see thou dissemble not.

*Bian.* Believe me, sister, of all the men alive, I never yet beheld that special face

Which I could fancy more than any other.

*Kath.* Minion, thou liest; is't not Hortensio?

*Bian.* If you affect\* him, sister, here I swear, I'll plead for you myself, but you shall have him.

*Kath.* O then, belike, you fancy riches more; You will have Gremio to keep you fair.

*Bian.* Is it for him you do envy me so?

Nay, then you jest; and now I well perceive

You have but jested with me all this while:

I pry'thee, sister Kate, unlie my hands.

*Kath.* If that be jest, then all the rest was so. [*Strikes her.*]

*Enter BAPTISTA.*

*Bap.* Why, how now, dame! whence grows this insolence?—

Bianca, stand aside;—poor girl! she weeps:—

Go ply thy needle; meddle not with her:—

For shame, thou hiding† of a devilish spirit,

Why dost thou wrong her that did ne'er wrong thee?

When did she cross thee with a bitter word?

*Kath.* Her silence flouts me, and I'll be reveng'd. [*Flies after BIANCA.*]

*Bap.* What, in my sight?—Bianca, set thee in. [*Exit BIANCA.*]

*Kath.* Will you not suffer me? Nay, lov' I see

She is your treasure, she must have a husband;

I must dance bare-foot on her wedding day,

And, for your love to her, lead apes in hell.

Talk not to me; I will go sit and weep,

Until I can find occasion of revenge.

[*Exit KATHARINA.*]

*Bap.* Was ever gentleman thus griev'd as I?

But who comes here?

*Enter GREMIO, with LUCENTIO in the habit of a mean man; PETRUCHIO, with HORTENSIO as a Musician, and TRANIO, with BIONDELLO bearing a lute and books.*

*Gre.* Good-morrow, neighbour Baptista.

*Bap.* Good-morrow, neighbour Gremio: God save you, gentlemen!

*Pet.* And you, good Sir! Pray, have you not a daughter

Call'd Katharina, fair and virtuous?

*Bap.* I have a daughter, Sir, call'd Katharina.

*Gre.* You are too blunt, go to it orderly.

*Pet.* You wrong me, signior Gremio; give me leave.—

I am a gentleman of Verona, Sir, That,—hearing of her beauty, and her wit, Her affability, and bashful modesty, Her wondrous qualities, and mild behaviour,— Am bold to shew myself a forward guest Within your house, to make mine eye the witness

Of that report which I so oft have heard.

And, for an entrance to my entertainment,

I do present you with a man of mine,

[*Presenting HORTENSIO.*]

Cunning in music, and the mathematics,

To instruct her fully in those sciences,

Whereof, I know, she is not ignorant:

Accept of him, or else you do me wrong;

His name is Licio, born in Mantua.

*Bap.* You're welcome, Sir; and he, for your good sake:

But for my daughter Katharine,—this I know,

She is not for your turn, the more my grief.

*Pet.* I see you do not mean to part with her; Or else you like not of my company.

\* Ungrateful.

† Companions.

‡ Trifling ornaments

\* Love.

† A worthless woman.

*Bap.* Mistake me not, I speak but as I find.  
Whence are you, Sir? what may I call your name?

*Pet.* Petruchio is my name; Antonio's son,  
A man well known throughout all Italy.

*Bap.* I know him well: you are welcome for his sake.

*Gre.* Saving your tale, Petruchio, I pray,  
Let us, that are poor petitioners, speak too:  
Baccare! \* you are marvellous forward.

*Pet.* O pardon me, signior Gremio; I would fain be doing.

*Gre.* I doubt it not, Sir; but you will curse your wooing.

Neighbour, this is a gift very grateful, I am sure of it. To express the like kindness myself, that have been more kindly beholden to you than any, I freely give unto you this young scholar, [*Presenting LUCENTIO*] that hath been long studying at Rheims; as cunning in Greek, Latin, and other languages, as the other in music and mathematics: his name is Cambio; pray, accept his service.

*Bap.* A thousand thanks, signior Gremio: welcome, good Cambio.—But, gentle Sir, [*To TRANIO*] methinks, you walk like a stranger; May I be so bold to know the cause of your coming?

*Tru.* Pardon me, Sir, the boldness is mine own;  
That, being a stranger in this city here,  
Do make myself a suitor to your daughter,  
Unto Bianca, fair, and virtuous,  
Not is your firm resolve unknown to me,  
In the preferment of the eldest sister:  
This liberty is all that I request,—  
That, upon knowledge of my parentage,  
I may have welcome amongst the rest that woo,  
And free access and favour as the rest.  
And, toward the education of your daughters,  
I here bestow a simple instrument,  
And this small packet of Greek and Latin books:

If you accept them, then their worth is great.

*Bap.* Lucenio is your name? of whence I pray?

*Tru.* Of Pisa, Sir; son to Vincentio.

*Bap.* A mighty man of Pisa; by report  
I know him well: you are very welcome, Sir.—  
Take you [*To HON.*] the lute, and you [*To LUC.*]  
the set of books,  
You shall go see your pupils presently.  
Holla, within!

*Enter a SERVANT.*

Sirrah, lead

these gentlemen to my daughters; and tell them both,

These are their tutors; bid them use them well.

[*Exit SERVANT, with HORTENSIO, LUCENTIO, and BIONDELLO.*]

We will go walk a little in the orchard,  
And then to dinner: you are passing welcome,  
And so I pray you all to think yourselves.

*Pet.* Signior Baptista, my business asketh haste.

And every day I cannot come to woo.

You knew my father well; and in him, me,  
Left solely heir to all his lands and goods,  
Which I have better'd rather than decreas'd:  
Then tell me,—if I get your daughter's love,  
What dowry shall I have with her to wife?

*Bap.* After my death, the one half of my lands:

And, in possession, twenty thousand crowns.

*Pet.* And for that dowry, I'll assure her of  
Her widowhood,—be it that she survive me,—  
In all my lands and leases whatsoever:  
Let specialties be therefore drawn between us,  
That covenants may be kept on either hand.

*Bap.* Ay, when the special thing is well obtain'd,

This is,—her love; for that is all in all.

*Pet.* Why, that is nothing; for I tell you, father,

I am as peremptory as she proud-minded;  
And where two raging fires meet together,  
They do consume the thing that feeds their  
fury:

Though little fire grows great with little wind,  
Yet extreme gusts will blow out fire and all:  
So I to her, and so she yields to me;  
For I am rough, and woo not like a babe.

*Bap.* Well may'st thou woo, and happy be thy speed!

But be thou arm'd for some unhappy words.

*Pet.* Ay, to the proof; as mountains are for winds,  
That shake not, though they blow perpetually.

*Re-enter HORTENSIO, with his head broken.*

*Bap.* How now, my friend? why dost thou look so pale?

*Hon.* For fear, I promise you, if I look pale.

*Bap.* What, will my daughter prove a good musician?

*Hon.* I think, she'll sooner prove a soldier;  
Iron may hold with her, but never lutes.

*Bap.* Why, then, thou canst not break her to the lute?

*Hon.* Why, no; for she hath broke the lute to me.

I did but tell her, she mistook her frets,\*  
And bow'd her hand to teach her fingering:  
When, with a most impatient devilish spirit,  
Frets, call you these? quoth she: I'll jame  
with them:

And, with that word, she struck me on the head,  
And through the instrument my pate may way;  
And there I stood amazed for a while,  
As on a pillory, looking through the lute:  
While she did call me,—rascal fiddler,  
And—twangling Jack;† with twenty such vile  
terms,

As she had studied to misuse me so.

*Pet.* Now, by the world, it is a lusty wench,  
I love her ten times more than e'er I did:  
Oh! how I long to have some chat with her!

*Bap.* Well, go with me, and be not so discomfited:

Proceed in practice with my younger daughter;  
She's apt to learn, and thankful for good turns.—  
Signior Petruchio, will you go with us;  
Or shall I send my daughter Kate to you?

*Pet.* I pray you do: I will attend her here,—  
[*Exit BAPTISTA, GREMIO, TRANIO, and HORTENSIO.*]

And woo her with some spirit when she comes.  
Say, that she rail; Why, then I'll tell her plain,  
She sings as sweetly as a nightingale:  
Say, that she frown; I'll say, she looks as clear  
As morning roses newly wash'd with dew:  
Say, she be mute, and will not speak a word;  
Then I'll commend her volubility,  
And say—she uttereth piercing eloquence:  
If she do bid me pack, I'll give her thanks,  
As though she bid me stay by her a week;  
If she deny to wed, I'll crave the day  
When I shall ask the bans, and when be married:—  
But here she comes; and now, Petruchio, speak.

*Enter KATHARINA*

Good-morrow, Kate; for that's your name, I hear.

*Kath.* Well have you heard, but something hard of hearing:

They call me—Katharine, that do talk of me.

*Pet.* You lie, in faith; for you are call'd plain Kate,

And bonny Kate, and sometimes Kate the curst;  
But Kate, the prettiest Kate in Christendom,  
Kate of Kate-Hall, my supper-dainty Kate,  
For dainties are all cates; and therefore, Kate,

\* A fret in music is the stop which causes or regulates the vibration of the string.  
† Faliero musician.

Take this of me, Kate of my consolation ;—  
Hearing thy mildness prais'd in every town,  
Thy virtues spoke of, and thy beauties sounded,  
(Yet not so deeply as to thee belongs,)  
Myself am mov'd to woo thee for my wife.

*Kath.* Mov'd! in good time: let him that  
mov'd you hither,  
Remove you hence: I knew you at the first,  
You were a moveable.

*Pet.* Why, what's a moveable?

*Kath.* A joint stool.

*Pet.* Thou hast hit it: come, sit on me.

*Kath.* Asses are made to bear, and so are  
you.

*Pet.* Women are made to bear and so are you.

*Kath.* No such jade, sir, as you, if me you  
mean.

*Pet.* Alas! good Kate I will not burden  
thee:

For, knowing thee to be but young and light,—

*Kath.* Too light for such a swain as you to  
catch;

And yet as heavy as my weight should be.

*Pet.* Should be? should buzz.

*Kath.* Well ta'en, and like a buzzard.

*Pet.* O slow-wing'd turtle! Shall a buzzard  
take thee?

*Kath.* Ay, for a turtle; as he takes a buzzard.

*Pet.* Come, come you wasp; I'faith, you are  
too angry.

*Kath.* If I be waspish, best beware my sting.

*Pet.* My remedy is then, to pluck it out.

*Kath.* Ay, if the fool could find it where it  
lies.

*Pet.* Who knows not where a wasp doth  
wear his sting?

In his tail.

*Kath.* In his tongue.

*Pet.* Whose tongue?

*Kath.* Your's, if you talk of tails; and so  
farewell.

*Pet.* What, with my tongue in your tail?  
nay, come again.

Good Kate: I am a gentleman.

*Kath.* That I'll try. [*Striking him.*]

*Pet.* I swear I'll cuff you, if you strike again.

*Kath.* So may you lose your arms:

If you strike me, you are no gentleman:

And if no gentleman, why, then no arms:

*Pet.* A herald, Kate! I'll put me in thy books.

*Kath.* What is your crest? a cockcomb?

*Pet.* A combless cock, so Kate will be my  
hen.

*Kath.* No cock of mine, you crow too like a  
craven.\*

*Pet.* Nay, come, Kate, come; you must not  
look so sour.

*Kath.* It is my fashion, when I see a crab.

*Pet.* Why, here's no crab; and therefore  
look not sour.

*Kath.* There is, there is.

*Pet.* Then show it me.

*Kath.* Had I a glass, I would.

*Pet.* What, you mean my face?

*Kath.* Well aim'd of such a young one.

*Pet.* Now, by Saint George, I am too young for  
you.

*Kath.* Yet you are wither'd.

*Pet.* 'Tis with cares.

*Kath.* I care not.

*Pet.* Nay, hear you, Kate: in sooth, you  
'scape not so.

*Kath.* I chafe you, if I tarry; let me go.

*Pet.* No, not a whit; I find you passing  
gentle.

'Twas told me, you were rough, and coy, and  
sullen,

And now I find report a very liar;

For thou art pleasant, gameesome, passing  
courteous;

But slow in speech, yet sweet as spring-time  
flowers:

Thou canst not frown, thou canst not look

Nor bite the lip, as angry wenches will;  
Nor hast thou pleasure to be cross in talk;  
But thou with mildness entertain'st thy wooers,  
With gentle conference, soft and affable.  
Why does the world report, that Kate doth  
limp?

O slanderous world! Kate, like the hazle-twig,  
Is straight, and slender; and as brown in hue  
As hazel nuts, and sweeter than the kernels.  
Oh! let me see thee walk: thou dost not halt.

*Kath.* Go, fool, and whom thou keep'st com-  
mand.

*Pet.* Did ever Dian so become a grove,  
As Kate this chamber with her princely gait?  
O be thou Dian, and let her be Kate;  
And then let Kate be chaste and Dian sport-  
ful!

*Kath.* Where did you study all this goodly  
speech?

*Pet.* It is extempore from my mother-wit.

*Kath.* A witty mother! witless else her son.

*Pet.* Am I not wise?

*Kath.* Yes; keep you warm.

*Pet.* Marry, so I mean, sweet Katharine in  
thy bed;

And therefore, setting all this chat aside, —  
Thus in plain terms:—Your father hath con-  
sented [on:]

That you shall be my wife; your dowry 'greed  
And, will you, will you, I will marry you.  
Now, Kate, I am a husband for your turn:  
For, by this light, whereby I see thy beauty,  
Thy beauty, that doth make me like thee well,  
Thou must be married to no man but me.  
For I am he, am born to tame you, Kate;  
And bring you from a wild cat to a Kate  
Conformable, as other household Kates.  
Here comes your father; never make denial,  
I must and will have Katharine to my wife.

*Re-enter BAPTISTA, GREGIO, and TRANIO.*

*Bap.* Now,  
Signior Petruchio: How speed you with  
My daughter?

*Pet.* How but well, sir? how but well?

It were impossible, I should speed amiss.

*Bap.* Why, how now, daughter Katharine?  
in your dumps?

*Kath.* Call you me, daughter? now I promise  
you,

You have show'd a tender fatherly regard,  
To wish me wed to one half lunatic;  
A mad-cap ruffian, and a swearing Jack,  
That thinks with oaths to face the matter out.

*Pet.* Father, 'tis thus,—yourself and all the  
world,

That talk'd of her, have talk'd amiss of her;  
If she be curst, it is for policy:

For she's not froward, but modest as the dove;  
She is not hot, but temperate as the morn;

For patience she will prove a second Grissel;  
And Roman Lucrece for her chastity:

And to conclude,—we have 'greed so well to-  
gether

That upon Sunday is the wedding-day.

*Kath.* I'll see thee hang'd on Sunday first.

*Gre.* Hark, Petruchio! she says, she'll see  
thee hang'd first.

*Tra.* Is this your speeding? nay, then good  
night our part!

*Pet.* Be patient, gentlemen; I choose her for  
myself;

If she and I be pleas'd, what's that to you?  
'Tis bargain'd 'twixt us twain, being alone,

That she shall still be curst in company.  
I tell you, 'tis incredible to believe

How much she loves me: Oh! the kindest Kate!—  
She hung about my neck; and kiss on kiss

She vied\* so fast, protesting oath on oath,  
That in a twink she won me to her love.

Oh! you are novices! 'tis a world to see,†  
How tame, when men and women are alone,

\* A degenerate cock.

† Br.

\* To vie and revere were terms at cards, now super-  
seded by the word 'brag.' † It is well worth seeing.

A meacock \* wretch can make the curstest shrew.—

Give me thy hand, Kate: I will unto Venice To buy apparel 'gainst the wedding-day:— Provide the feast, father, and bid the guests; I will be sure, my Katharine shall be fine.

*Bap.* I know not what to say: but give me your hands;

God send you joy, Petruccio! 'tis a match.

*Gre. Tra.* Amen, say we; we will be witnesses.

*Pet.* Father, and wife, and gentlemen adieu; I will to Venice, Sunday comes apace:— We will have rings, and things, and fine array; And kiss me, Kate, we will be married o'Sunday.

[*Exeunt PETRUCCHIO AND KATHARINE, severally.*]

*Gre.* Was ever match clapp'd up so suddenly?

*Bap.* Faith, gentlemen, now I play a merchant's part, And venture madly on a desperate mart.

*Tro.* 'Twas a commodity lay fretting by you: 'I will bring you gain or perish on the seas.

*Bap.* The gain I seek is—quiet in the match.

*Gre.* No doubt, but he hath got a quiet catch. But now, Baptista, to your younger daughter;— Now is the day we long have looked for; I am your neighbour, and was suitor first.

*Tra.* And I am one, that love Bianca more Than words can witness, or your thoughts can guess.

*Gre.* Youngling! thou canst not love so dear as I.

*Tra.* Grey-beard! thy love doth freeze.

*Gre.* But thine doth fry.

Skipper, stand back: 'tis age, that nourisheth.

*Tra.* But youth, in ladies' eyes that nourisheth.

*Bap.* Content you, gentlemen: I'll compound this strife:

'Tis deeds, must win the prize; and he, of both, That can assure my daughter greatest dower Shall have Bianca's love.—

Say, Signior Gremio, what can you assure her?

*Gre.* First, as you know, my house within the city

Is richly furnished with plate and gold; Basins, and ewers, to have her dainty hand; My hangings all of Tyrian tapestry: In ivory coffers I have stuff'd my crowns; In cypress chests my arras, counterpanes,† Costly apparel, tents, and canopies, Fine linen, Turkey cushions boss'd with pearl, Valance of Venice gold in needle-work, Pewter and brass, and all things that belong To house, or housekeeping: then, at my farm, I have a hundred milch-kine to the pail, Sixscore fat oxen standing in my stalls, And all things answerable to this portion. Myself am struck in years, I must confess; And, if I die to-morrow, this is hers, If, whilst I live, she will be only mine.

*Tra.* That, only, came well in—Sir, list to I am my father's heir, and only son: [we, If I may have your daughter to my wife, I'll leave her houses three or four as good, Within rich Pisa walls, as any one Old signior Gremio has in Padua; Besides two thousand ducats by the year, Of fruitful land, all which shall be her jointure.—

What, have I pinch'd you, signior Gremio?

*Gre.* Two thousand ducats by the year, of land!

My land amounts not to so much in all:

That she shall have; besides an argosy,‡

That now is lying in Marseilles' road:—

What, have I chok'd you with an argosy?

*Tra.* Gremio, 'tis known, my father hath no less

Than three great argosies; besides two galliasses,\*

And twelve tight galleys; these I will assure, And twice as much, whate'er thou offers next

*Gre.* Nay, I have offer'd all, I have no more; And she can have no more than all I have;—

If you like me, she shall have me and mine.

*Tra.* Why, then the maid is mine from all the world,

By your firm promise; Gremio is out-vied.

*Bap.* I must confess, your offer is the best; And, let your father make her the assurance,

She is your own; else, you must pardon me: If you should die before him, where's her dower?

*Tra.* That's but a cavi!; he is old, I young.

*Gre.* And not young men die, as well as old!

*Bap.* Well, gentlemen, [know, I am thus resolv'd:—On Sunday, next, you

My daughter Katharine is to be married: Now, on the Sunday following, shall Bianca

Be bride to you, if you make this assurance; If not, to signior Gremio:

And so I take my leave, and thank you both.

*Gre.* Adieu, good neighbour.—Now I fear thee not;

Sirrah, young gamester, your father were a fool To give thee all, and, in his waning age,

Set foot under thy table: Tut! a toy! An old Italian fox is not so kind, my boy.

*Tra.* A vengeance on your crafty wither'd hide!

Yet I have faced it with a card of ten.† 'Tis in my head to do my master good;—

I see no reason, but suppos'd Lucentio Must get a father, call'd—suppos'd Vincentio;

And that's a wonder: fathers, commonly, Do get their children: but, in this case of woo-

ing, A child shall get a sire, if I fail not of my cunning.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—A Room in BAPTISTA'S House.

*Enter* LUCENTIO, HORTENSIO, and BIANCA.

*Luc.* Fidler, forbear; you grow too forward, Sir!

Have you so soon forgot the entertainment Her sister Katharine welcom'd you withal?

*Hor.* But, wrangling pedant, this is The patroness of heavenly harmony:

Then give me leave to have prerogative; And when in music we have spent an hour,

Your lecture shall have leisure for as much.

*Luc.* Preposterous ass! that never read so far

To know the cause why music was ordain'd! Was it not to refresh the mind of man

After his studies, or his usual pain? Then give me leave to read philosophy,

And, while I pause, serve in your harmony

*Hor.* Sirrah, I will not bear these braves of thine.

*Bian.* Why, gentlemen, you do me double wrong.

To strive for that which resteth in my choice: I am no breeching scholar;† in the schools;

I'll not be tied to hours, nor 'pointed times, But learn n.y lessons as I please myself.

And, to cut off all strife, here sit we down:— Take your your instrument, play you the whiles; His lecture will be done, ere you have tun'd.

*Hor.* You'll leave his lecture when I am in tune?

[*To* BIANCA.—*HORTENSIO retires.*]

\* A dastardly creature.

† Coverings for beds; now called counterpanes.

‡ A large merchant ship.

\* A vessel of burden worked both with sails and oars.

† The highest card.

‡ No school-boy, liable to be whipped.



*Luc.* That will be never;—tune your instrument.

*Bian.* Where left we last?

*Luc.* Here, madam:—

*Huc ibat Simois; hic est Sigieia tellus;  
Hic steterat Priami regia celsa senis.*

*Bian.* Construe them.

*Luc.* *Huc ibat*, as I told you before,—*Simois*, I am Lucentio,—*hic est*, son unto Vincentio of Pisa,—*Sigieia tellus*, disguised thus to get your love;—*Hic steterat*, and that Lucentio that comes a wooing,—*Priami*, is my man Tranio,—*regia*, bearing my port,—*celsa senis*, that we might beguile the old pantaloon.\*

*Hor.* Madam, my instrument's in tune.

[*Returning.*]

*Bian.* Let's hear;— [Hortensio plays.  
O fie! the treble jars.

*Luc.* Spit in the hole, man, and tune again:

*Bian.* Now let me see if I can construe it:  
*Huc ibat Simois*, I know you not; *hic est Sigieia tellus*, I trust you not;—*Hic steterat Priami*, take heed he hear us not;—*regia*, presume not;—*celsa senis*, despair not.

*Hor.* Madam, 'tis now in tune.

*Luc.* All but the bass.

*Hor.* The bass is right; 'tis the base knave that jars.

How fiery and forward our pedant is!

Now, for my life, the knave doth court my love:  
*Pedaveule*,† I'll watch you better yet.

*Bian.* In tune I may believe, yet I mistrust.

*Luc.* Mistrust it not; for, sure, *Eacides* Was Ajax,—call'd so from his grandfather.

*Bian.* I must believe my master; else, I promise you,

I should be arguing still upon that doubt:

But let it rest.—Now, Licio, to you:—

Good masters, take it not unkindly, pray,

That I have been thus pleasant with you both.  
*Hor.* You may go walk, [To Lucentio] and give me leave awhile;

My lessons must no music in three parts.

*Luc.* Are you so formal, Sir? well, I must wait,

And watch withal; for, but I be deceiv'd,  
Our hne musician groweth amorous. [Aside.

*Hor.* Madam, before you touch the instrument,

To learn the order of my fingering,

I must begin with rudiments of art;

To teach you gamut in a briefer sort,

More pleasant, pithy, and effectual,

Than hath been taught by any of my trade:

And there it is in writing, fairly drawn.

*Bian.* Why, I am past my gamut long ago.

*Hor.* Yet read the gamut of Hortensio.

*Bian.* [Reads.] Gamut I am, the ground of all accord.

A re, to plead Hortensio's passion;

B mi, Bianca, take him for thy lord;

C faut, that loves with all affection;

D sol re, one cliff, two notes have I;

E la mi, show pity, or I die.

Call you this—gamut? tut! I like it not:

Old fashion please me best; I am not so nice,†

To change true rules for odd inventions.

Enter a SERVANT.

*Serv.* Mistress, your father prays you leave your books,

And help to dress your sister's chamber up;

You know, to-morrow is the wedding-day.

*Bian.* Farewell, sweet masters, both; I must be gone.

[*Exeunt* BIANCA and SERVANT.

*Luc.* Faith mistress, then I have no cause to stay. [Exit.

*Hor.* But I have cause to pry into this pedant:

Methinks, he looks as though he were in love:—  
Yet if thy thoughts, Bianca, be so humble,

To cast thy wand'ring eyes on every stale,\*

Seize thee, that list: If once I find thee ranging,

Hortensio will be quit with thee by changing.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—The same.—Before BAPTISTA'S House.

Enter BAPTISTA, GREGGIO, TRANIO, KATHARINE, BIANCA, LUCENTIO, and Attendants.

*Bap.* Signior Lucentio, [To TRANIO.] this is the 'pointed day

That Katharine and Petruchio should be married,

And yet we hear not of our son-in-law:  
What will be said? what mocker will it be,  
To want the bridegroom, when the priest attends

To speak the ceremonial rites of marriage?

What says Lucentio to this shame of ours?

*Aath.* No shame but mine: I must, forsooth, be forc'd

To give my hand, oppos'd against my heart,  
Unto a mad-brain ruderdy, full of spleen;  
Who woo'd in haste, and means to wed at leisure.

I told you, I, he was a frantic fool,  
Hiding his bitter jests in blunt behaviour:

And to be noted for a merry man,

He'll woo a thousand, 'point the day of marriage,  
Make friends, invite, yes, and proclaim the banns;

Yet never means to wed where he hath woo'd.

Now must the world point at poor Katharine,

And say,—*Lo, there is mad Petruchio's wife*,

*If it would please him come and marry her*.

*Tra.* Patience, good Katharine, and Baptista too;

Upon my life, Petruchio means but well,  
Whatever fortune stays him from his word:

Though he be blunt, I know him passing wise;  
Though he be merry, yet withal he's honest.

*Kath.* 'Would Katharine had never seen him though!

[Exit, weeping, followed by BIANCA, and others.

*Bap.* Go, girl; I cannot blame thee now to weep;

For such an injury would vex a saint,  
Much more a shrew of thy impatient humour.

Enter BIONDELLO.

*Bion.* Master, master! news, old news, and such news as you never heard of!

*Bap.* Is it new and old too? how may that be?

*Bion.* Why, is it not news, to hear of Petruchio's coming?

*Bap.* Is he come?

*Bion.* Why, no, Sir.

*Bap.* What then?

*Bion.* He is coming.

*Bap.* When will he be here?

*Bion.* When he stands where I am, and sees you there.

*Tra.* But, say, what:—To thine old news.

*Bion.* Why, Petruchio is coming, in a new hat and an old jerkin; a pair of old breeches, thrice turned; a pair of boots that have been candlecases, one buckled, another laced; an old rusty sword ta'en out of the town armory, with a broken hilt, and chapeless; with two broken points: His horse bipped with an old mothy saddle, the stirrups of no kindred; besides, possessed with the glanders, and like to mose in the chine; troubled with the lampass, infected with the fashions,† full of wind galls, sped with spavins, raled with the yellows, past cure of the fives,‡ stark spotted with the staggers, beguawn with the bots; sway'd in the

\* Ratt, decoy.

† Caprios, inconstancy.

‡ Farcy.

§ Vives; a distemper in horses, little differing from the strangles.

\* The old cally in Italian farces.

† Pedas.

‡ Fantastical.

back, and shoulder-shotten; ne'er-legged before, and with a half-checked bit, and a head-stall of sheep's leather; which, being restrained to keep him from stumbling, hath been often burst, and now repaired with knots; one girt six times pieced, and a woman's crupper of velure,\* which hath two letters for her name, fairly set down in studs, and here and there pieced with packthread.

*Bap.* Who comes with him?

*Bion.* O Sir, his lackey, for all the world caparisoned like the horse, with a linnen stock† on one leg, and a kersey boot-hose on the other, gartered with a red and blue list; an old hat, and *The humour of forty jancies* pricked in† for a feather: a monster, a very monster in apparel; and not like a Christian footboy, or a gentleman's lackey.

*Tra.* 'Tis some odd humour pricks him to this fashion;—

Yet oftentimes he goes but mean apparel'd.

*Bap.* I am glad he is come, howsoe'er he comes.

*Bion.* Why, Sir, he comes not.

*Bap.* Didst thou not say, he comes?

*Bion.* Who? that Petruccio came?

*Bap.* Ay, that Petruccio came.

*Bion.* No, Sir; I say, his horse comes with him on his back.

*Bap.* Why, that's all one.

*Bion.* Nay, by Saint Janny, I hold you a penny,  
A horse and a man is more than one, and yet not many.

*Enter PETRUCHIO and GRUMIO.*

*Pet.* Come, where be these gallants? who is at home?

*Bap.* You are welcome, Sir.

*Pet.* And yet I come not well.

*Bap.* And yet you halt not.

*Tra.* Not so well apparel'd  
As I wish you were.

*Pet.* Were it better I should rush in thus.  
But where is Kate? where is my lovely bride?—  
How does my father?—Gentles, methinks you frown:

And wherefore gaze this goodly company;  
As if they saw some wondrous monument,  
Some comet, or unusual prodigy?

*Bap.* Why, Sir, you know, this is your wedding-day:

First were we sad, fearing you would not come;

Now sadder, that you come so unprovided.

Fit I doff this habit, shame to your estate,  
An eye-sore to our solemn festival.

*Tra.* And tell us, what occasion of import  
Hath all so long detain'd you from your wife,  
And sent you hither so unlike yourself?

*Pet.* Tedious it were to tell, and harsh to hear:

Sufficieth, I am come to keep my word,  
Though in some part enforced to digress;‡  
Which, at more leisure, I will so excuse  
As you shall well be satisfied withal.  
But, where is Kate? I stay too long from her:  
The morning wears, 'tis time we were at church.

*Tra.* See not your bride in these unreverent robes;

Go to my chamber, put on clothes of mine.

*Pet.* Not I, believe me; thus I'll visit her.

*Bap.* But thus, I trust, you will not marry her.

*Pet.* Good sooth, even thus; therefore have done with words;

To me she's married, not unto my clothers:

Could I repair what she will wear in me,

As I can change these poor accoutrements,

'Twere well for Kate, and better for myself.

But what a fool am I, to chat with you,

When I should bid good-morrow to my bride,  
And seal the title with a lovely kiss?

[*Exit PETRUCHIO, GRUMIO, and BIONDELLO.*]

*Tra.* He hath some meaning in his mad attire;  
We will persuade him, be it possible,  
To put on better ere he go to church.

*Bap.* I'll after him and see the event of this.

[*Exit.*]  
*Tra.* But, Sir, to her love concerneth us to add  
Her father's liking: Which to bring to pass,

As I before imparted to your worship,  
I am to get a man,—Whate'er he be,

It skills\* not much; we'll fit him to our turn,—  
And he shall be Vincentio of Pisa;

And make assurance, here in Padua,  
Of greater sums than I have promised.

So shall you quietly enjoy your hope,  
And marry sweet Bianca with consent.

*Luc.* Were it not that my fellow-school-master  
Doth watch Bianca's steps so narrowly,

'Twere good, methinks, to steal our marriage;  
Which once perform'd, let all the world say—

no,  
I'll keep mine own, despite of all the world.

*Tra.* That by degrees we mean to look into,  
And watch our vantage in this business:

We'll over-reach the greybeard, Grumio,  
The narrow-prying father, Minola;

The quaint† musician, amorous Licio;  
All for my master's sake, Lucentio.—

*Re-enter GRUMIO.*

Signior Grumio! came you from the church?

*Gre.* As willingly as e'er I came from school.

*Tra.* And is the bride and bridegroom coming home?

*Gre.* A bridegroom, say you? 'tis a groom,  
indeed,

A grumbling groom, and that the girl shall find  
*Tra.* Curster than she? why, 'tis impossible.

*Gre.* Why, she's a devil, a devil, a very fiend.

*Tra.* Why, she's a devil, a devil, the devil's dam.

*Gre.* Tut! she's a lamb, a dove, a fool to him.

I'll tell you, Sir Lucentio; When the priest  
Should ask—*it Katharine should be his wife?*

*Ay, by gods' wounds,* quoth he; and swore so loud,

That, all amaz'd, the priest let fall the book:

And, as he stoop'd again to take it up,  
The mad-brain'd bridegroom took him such a cuff,

That down fell priest and book, and book and priest;

*Now take them up,* quoth he, *if any list.*

*Tra.* What said the wench when he arose again?

*Gre.* Trembled and shook; for why, he stamp'd,  
and swore,

As if the vicar meant to cozen him.  
But after many ceremonies done,

He calls for wine:—*A health,* quoth he; as if  
He had been aboard carousing to his mates

After a storm:—*Quaff'd off* the muscadet,‡  
And threw the sops all in the sexton's face;

Having no other reason,—  
But that his beard grew thin and hungerly,

And seem'd to ask him sops as he was drinking.

This done, he took the bride about the neck;  
And kiss'd her lips with such a clamorous smack,

That, at the parting, all the church did echo.  
I, seeing this, came thence for very shame;

And after me, I know, the rout is coming;  
Such a mad marriage never was before;

Hark, hark! I hear the minstrels play.

[*Music.*]

\* Velvets.

† Blocking.

‡ I.e. To devote from my promise.

\* Masters.

† Strange.

‡ It was the custom for the company present to drink wine immediately after the marriage-ceremony.

Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, BIANCA, BAPTISTA, HORTENSIO, GRUMIO, and Train.

*Pet.* Gentlemen and friends, I thank you for your pains:

I know you think to dine with me to-day,  
And have prepar'd great store of wedding cheer;  
But so it is, my haste doth call me hence,  
And therefore here I mean to take my leave.

*Bap.* Is't possible, you will away to-night?

*Pet.* I must away to-day, before night come:—  
Make it no wonder; if you knew my business,  
You would entreat me rather go than stay.  
And, honest company, I thank you all,  
That have beheld me give away myself  
To this most patient, sweet, and virtuous wife:  
Dine with my father, drink a health to me!  
For I must hence, and farewell to you all.

*Tra.* Let us entreat you stay till after dinner.

*Pet.* It may not be.

*Gre.* Let me entreat you.

*Pet.* It cannot be.

*Kath.* Let me entreat you.

*Pet.* I am content.

*Kath.* Are you content to stay?

*Pet.* I am content you shall entreat me stay;  
But yet not stay, entreat me how you can.

*Kath.* Now, if you love me, stay.

*Pet.* Grumio, my horses.

*Gre.* Ay, Sir, they be ready; the oats have eaten the horses.

*Kath.* Nay, then,

Do what thou canst, I will not go to day;  
No, nor to-morrow, nor till I please myself.  
The door is open, Sir, there lies your way.  
You may be jogging, whiles your boots are green;

For me, I'll not be gone, till I please myself:—  
'Tis like, you'll prove a jolly surly groom,  
That take it on you at the first so roundly.

*Pet.* O Kate, content thee; pr'ythee, be not angry,

*Kath.* I will be angry; What hast thou to do?

Father be quiet; he shall stay my leisure.

*Gre.* Ay, marry, Sir: now it begins to work.

*Kath.* Gentlemen, forward to the bridal dinner:—

I see, a woman may be made a fool,  
If she had not a spirit to resist.

*Pet.* They shall go forward, Kate, at thy command:—

Obey the bride, you that attend on her:  
Go to the feast, revel and domineer,  
Carouse full measure to her maidenhead,  
Be mad and merry,—or go hang yourselves;  
But for my bonny Kate, she must with me.  
Nay, look not big, nor stamp, nor stare, nor fret;

I will be master of what is mine own:  
She is my goods, my chattels; she is my house,  
My household-stuff, my field, my barn,  
My horse, my ox, my ass, my any thing;  
And here she stands, touch her whoever dare;  
I'll bring my action on the prouddest he  
That stops my way in Padua.—Grumio,  
Draw forth thy weapon, we're beset with thieves;  
Rescue thy mistress, if thou be a man:—  
Fear not, sweet wench, they shall not touch thee,  
Kate:

I'll buckler thee against a million.

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and GRUMIO.*]

*Bap.* Nay, let them go, a couple of quiet ones.

*Gre.* Went they not quickly, I should die with laughing.

*Tra.* Of all mad matches, never was the like!

*Luc.* Mistress, what's your opinion of your sister?

*Blan.* That, being mad herself, she's madly mated.

*Gre.* I warrant him, Petruchio is Kated.

*Bap.* Neighbours and friends, though bride and bridegroom wants

For to supply the places at the table,  
You know, there wants no junkets\* at the feast:—

Lucentio, you shall supply the bridegroom's place;

And let Bianca take her sister's room.

*Tra.* Shall sweet Bianca practice how to bridle it?

*Bap.* She shall, Lucentio.—Come, Gentlemen, let's go. [*Exeunt.*]

#### ACT IV.

#### SCENE I.—A Hall in PETRUCHIO's Country House.

Enter GRUMIO.

*Gre.* Fie, fie, on all tired jades! on all mad masters! and all foul ways! Was ever man so beaten? was ever man so rayed? was ever man so weary? I am sent before to make a fire, and they are coming after to warm them. Now, were not I a little pot, and soon hot, my very lips might freeze to my teeth, my tongue to the roof of my mouth, my heart in my belly, ere I should come by a fire to thaw me:—But, I, with blowing the fire, shall warm myself; for, considering the weather, a taller man than I will take cold. Holla, ho! Curtis!

Enter CURTIS.

*Curt.* Who is that, calls so coldly?  
*Gre.* A piece of ice: If thou doubt it, thou may'st slide from my shoulder to my heel, with no greater a run but my head and my neck. A fire, good Curtis.

*Curt.* Is my master and his wife coming, Grumio?

*Gre.* Oh! ay, Curtis, ay: and therefore fire, fire; cast on no water.

*Curt.* Is she so hot a shrew as she's reported?

*Gre.* She was, good Curtis, before this frost: but, thou know'st, winter tames man, woman, and beast; for it hath tamed my old master, and my new mistress, and myself, fellow Curtis.

*Curt.* Away, you three-luch fool! I am no beast.

*Gre.* Am I but three inches? why, thy horn is a foot; and so long am I, at the least. But wilt thou make a fire, or shall I complain on thee to our mistress, whose hand (she being now at hand,) thou shalt soon feel, to thy cold comfort, for being slow in thy hot office.

*Curt.* I pr'ythee, good Grumio, tell me, How goes the world?

*Gre.* A cold world, Curtis, in every office but thine; and, therefore, fire: Do thy duty, and have thy duty; for my master and mistress are almost frozen to death.

*Curt.* There's fire ready; And therefore, good Grumio, the news?

*Gre.* Why, Jack boy! ho boy! and as much news as thou wilt.

*Curt.* Come, you are so full of conycatching:—

*Gre.* Why therefore, fire; for I have caught extreme cold. Where's the cook? is supper ready, the house trimmed, rushes strewed, cobwebs swept; the serving-men in their new fustian, their white stockings, and every officer his wedding garment on? Be the jacks fair within, the jills fair without, the carpets laid, and every thing in order?

*Curt.* All ready; And therefore, I pray thee, news?

*Gre.* First, know, my horse is tired; my master and mistress fallen out.

*Curt.* How?

*Gre.* Out of their saddles into the dirt; And thereby hangs a tale.

*Curt.* Let's ha't, Good Grumio.

*Gru.* Leud thine ear.

*Curt.* Here.

*Gru.* There.

*Curt.* This is to feel a tale, not to hear a tale.

*Gru.* And therefore 'tis called, a sensible tale : and this cuff was but to knock at your ear, and beseech listening. Now I begin : *Imprimis*, we came down a foul hill, my master riding behind my mistress :—

*Curt.* Both on one horse ?

*Gru.* What's that to thee ?

*Curt.* Why, a horse.

*Gru.* Tell thou the tale :—But hadst thou not crossed me, thou should'st have heard how her horse fell, and she under her horse ; thou should'st have heard, in how merry a place : how she was bemolled ; \* how he left her with the horse upon her ; how he beat me because her horse stumbled ; how she waded through the dirt to pluck him off me ; how he swore ; how she prayed—that never prayed before ; how I cried ; how the horses ran away ; how her bridle was burst ; how I lost my crupper ;—with many things of worthy memory ; which now shall die in oblivion, and thou return unexperienced to thy grave.

*Curt.* By this reckoning, he is more shrew than she.

*Gru.* Ay ; and that, thou and the proudest of you all shall find, when he comes home. But what talk I of this ?—call forth Nathaniel, Joseph, Nicholas, Philip, Walter, Sugarop, and the rest ; let their heads be sleekly combed, their blue coats brushed, and their garters of an indifferent ; knit . let them curtsy with their left legs ; and not presume to touch a hair of my master's horse-tail, till they kiss their hands. Are they all ready ?

*Curt.* They are.

*Gru.* Call them forth.

*Curt.* Do you hear, ho ! you must meet my master, to countenance my mistress.

*Gru.* Why, she hath a face of her own.

*Curt.* Who knows not that ?

*Gru.* Thou, it seems ; that callest for company to countenance her.

*Curt.* I call them forth to credit her.

*Gru.* Why, she comes to borrow nothing of them.

*Enter several SERVANTS.*

*Nath.* Welcome home, Grumio.

*Phil.* How now, Grumio ?

*Jos.* What, Grumio !

*Nich.* Fellow Grumio !

*Nath.* How now, old lad ?

*Gru.* Welcome, you ;—how now, you ; what, you ;—fellow, you ;—and thus much for greeting. Now, my spruce companions, is all ready, and all things neat ?

*Nath.* All things is ready : How near is our master ?

*Gru.* E'en at hand, alighted by this ; and therefore be not,—Cock's passion, silence !—I hear my master.

*Enter PETRUCHIO and KATHARINA.*

*Pet.* Where be these knaves ? What, no man at door,

To hold my stirrup, nor to take my horse !

Where is Nathaniel, Gregory, Philip ?—

*All Serv.* Here, here, Sir ; here, Sir.

*Pet.* Here, Sir ! here, Sir ! here, Sir, here, Sir !—

You logger-headed and unpolished grooms !

What, no attendance ? no regard ? no duty ?—

Where is the foolish knave I sent before ?

*Gru.* Here, Sir ; as foolish as I was before.

*Pet.* You peasant swain ! you whoreson malt-horse drudge !

Did I not bid thee meet me in the park,

And bring along these rascal knaves with thee ?

*Gru.* Nathaniel's coat, Sir, was not fully made,

And Gabriel's pumps were all unpink'd i'the

There was no link \* to colour Peter's hat,

And Walter's dagger was not come from sheathing :

There were none fine, but Adam, Ralph, and

Gregory ;

The rest were ragged, old, and beggarly ;

Yet, as they are, here are they come to meet

you.

*Pet.* Go, rascals, go, and fetch my supper in.—

[*Exit some of the SERVANTS.*]

Where is the life that late I led—

[*Sings.*]

Where are those—Sit down, Kate, and welcome.

Soud, soud, soud, soud !

[*Re-enter SERVANTS, with supper.*]

Why, when, I say ?—Nay, good sweet Kate, be

merry.

[*When I*]

Off with my boots, you rogues, you villains ;

*It was the friar of orders grey,*

[*Sings.*]

*As he forth walked on his way :—*

Out, out, you rogue ! you pluck my foot awry :

Take that, and mend the plucking off the

other.—

[*Strikes him.*]

Be merry, Kate :—Some water, here ; what,

ho !—

[*hence,*]

Where's my spaniel Troilus ?—Sirrah, get you

And bid my cousin Ferdinand come hither :—

[*Exit SERVANT.*]

One, Kate, that you must kiss, and be acquaint-

ed with.—

Where are my slippers ?—Shall I have some

water ? [A basin is presented to him]

Come, Kate, and wash, and welcome heartily :—

[*SERVANT lets the ewer fall.*]

You whoreson villain ! will you let it fall !

[*Strikes him.*]

*Kath.* Patience, I pray you ; 'twas a fault un-

willing.

*Pet.* A whoreson, beetleheaded, flap-ear'd

knave !

Come, Kate, sit down ; I know you have a

stomach.

Will you give thanks, sweet Kate ; or else

shall I ?—

What is this ? muttun ?

1 *Serv.* Ay.

*Pet.* Who brought it ?

1 *Serv.* I.

*Pet.* 'Tis burnt ; and so is all the meat :

What dogs are these :—Where is the rascal cook ?

How durst you, villains, bring it from the

dresser,

And serve it thus to me that love it not ?

There, take it to you, trenchers, cups, and all :

[*Throws the meat, &c. about the stage.*]

You headless joltheads, and unmanner'd slaves !

What, do you grumble ? I'll be with you straight.

*Kath.* I pray you, husband, be not so disquiet ;

The meat was well, if you were so contented.

*Pet.* I tell thee, Kate, 'twas burnt and dried

away ;

And I expressly am forbid to touch it,

For it engenders cholier, planteth anger ;

And better 'twere, that both of us did fast,—

Since of ourselves, ourselves are choleric,—

Than feed it with such over-roasted flesh.

Be patient ; to-morrow it shall be mended.

And, for this night, we'll fast for company :—

Come, I will bring thee to thy bridal chamber.

[*Exit PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and*

*CURTIS.*]

*Nath.* [*Advancing*] Peter, didst ever see the

like ?

*Peter.* He kills her in her own humour.

[*Re-enter CURTIS.*]

*Gru.* Where is he ?

\* A torch of pitch.

† A word coined by Shakespeare to express the noise made by a person heated and fatigued.

\* Bemired.

† Broken.

‡ Not different one from the other.

*Curt.* In her chamber,  
Making a sermon of continency to her :  
And rails, and swears, and rates ; that she,  
poor soul,  
Knows not which way to stand, to look, to speak ;  
And sits as one new-risen from a dream.  
Away, away ! for he is coming hither.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Re-enter PETRUCHIO.*

*Pet.* Thus have I politely begun my reign,  
And 'tis my hope to end successfully :  
My falcon now is sharp, and passing empty ;  
And, till she stoop, she must not be full gorg'd,  
For then she never looks upon her lure.\*  
Another way I have to man my haggard,†  
To make her come, and know her keeper's call,  
That is,—to watch her, as we watch these kites,  
That bate,‡ and beat, and will not be obedient.  
She eat no meat to-day, nor none shall eat ;  
Last night she slept not, nor to-night she shall not.

As with the meat, some undeserved fault  
I'll find about the making of the bed ;  
And here I'll fling the pillow, there the bolster,  
This way the coverlet, another way the sheets :—  
Ay, and amid this hurly, I intend,§  
That all is done in reverend care of her ;  
And, in conclusion, she shall watch all night ;  
And, if she chance to nod, I'll rail, and brawl,  
And with the clamour keep her still awake.  
This is a way to kill a wife with kindness.  
And thus I'll curb her mad and headstrong humour :—  
He that knows better how to tame a shrew,  
Now let him speak ; 'tis charity to show.

[*Exit.*]

*SCENE II.—Padua.—Before BAPTIST'S House.*

*Enter TRANIO AND HORTENSIO.*

*Tra.* Is't possible, friend Licio, that Bianca  
Doth fancy any other but Lucentio ?  
I tell you, Sir, she bears me fair in hand.

*Hor.* Sir to satisfy you in what I have said,  
Stand by, and mark the manner of his teaching.  
[*They stand aside.*]

*Enter BIANCA AND LUCENTIO.*

*Luc.* Now, mistress, profit you in what you read ?

*Bian.* What, master, read you ? first resolve me that.

*Luc.* I read that I profess, the art to love.

*Bian.* And may you prove, Sir, master of your art !

*Luc.* While you, sweet dear, prove mistress of my heart. [*They retire.*]

*Hor.* Quick proceeders, marry ! Now tell me, I pray,

You that durst swear that your mistress Bianca  
Lov'd none in the world so well as Lucentio.

*Tra.* O despicable love ! unconstant woman-kind !—

I tell thee, Licio, this is wonderful.

*Hor.* Mistake no more : I am not Licio,  
Nor a musician, as I seem to be ;  
Ere one that scorn to live in this disguise,  
For such a one as leaves a gentleman,  
And makes a god of such a cullion :||  
Know, Sir, that I am call'd—Hortensio.

*Tra.* Signior Hortensio, I have often heard  
Of your entire affection to Bianca ;  
And since mine eyes are witness of her light-  
ness,

I will with you,—if you be so contented,—  
Forswear Bianca and her love for ever.

*Hor.* See, how they kiss and court !—Signior  
Lucentio,

Here is my hand, and here I firmly vow—  
Never to woo her more : but do forswear her,  
As one unworthy all the former favours  
That I have fondly flatter'd her withal.

*Tra.* And here I take the like unfeigned oath,—  
Ne'er to marry with her though she would en-  
treat :

Fie on her ! see, how beastly she doth court  
him.

*Hor.* 'Would, all the world, but he, had quite  
forsworn !

For me,—that I may surely keep mine oath,  
I will be married to a wealthy widow,  
Ere three days pass ; which hath as long lov'd  
me.

As I have lov'd this proud disdainful haggard :  
And so farewell, signior Lucentio.—

Kindness in women, not their beauteous looks,  
Shall win my love :—and so I take my leave,  
In resolution as I swore before.

[*Exit HORTENSIO.—LUCENTIO AND BIANCA  
advance.*]

*Tra.* Mistress Bianca, bless you with such  
As 'longeth to a lover's blessed case ! [Grace  
Nay, I have ta'en you napping, gentle love ;  
And have forsworn you, with Hortensio.]

*Bian.* Traudio, you jest ; But have you both  
forsworn me ?

*Tra.* Mistress, we have.

*Luc.* Then we are rid of Licio.

*Tra.* I faith, he'll have a lusty widow now,  
That shall be woo'd and wedded in a day.

*Bian.* God give him joy !

*Tra.* Ay, and he'll tame her.

*Bian.* He says so, Traudio.

*Tra.* 'Faith he is gone unto the taming-  
school.

*Bian.* The taming-school ! what, is there such  
a place ?

*Tra.* Ay, mistress, and Petruchio is the mas-  
ter ;

That teacheth tricks eleven and twenty long,—  
To tame a shrew, and charm her chattering  
tongue.

*Enter BIONDELLO, running.*

*Bion.* O master, master, I have watch'd so  
long

That I'm dog-weary ; but at last I spied  
An ancient angel\* coming down the hill,  
Will serve the turn.

*Tra.* What is he, Biondello ?

*Bion.* Master, a mercantile, or a pedant,†  
I know not what ; but formal in apparel,  
In gait and countenance surely like a father.

*Luc.* And what of him, Traudio ?

*Tra.* If he be credulous and trust my tale,  
I'll make him glad to seem Vincentio ;  
And give assurance to Baptista Minola,  
As if he were the right Vincentio.  
Take in your love, and then let me alone.

[*Exeunt LUCENTIO AND BIANCA.*]

*Enter a PEDANT.*

*Ped.* God save you, Sir !

*Tra.* And you, Sir, you are welcome.

Travel you far on, or are you at the furthest ?

*Ped.* Sir, at the furthest for a week or two :

But then up further ; and as far as Rome ;

And so to Tripoli, if God lend me life.

*Tra.* What countryman, I pray ?

*Ped.* Of Mantua.

*Tra.* Of Mantua, Sir ?—marry, God forbid !

And come to Padua, careless of your life ?

*Ped.* My life, Sir ! how, I pray ? for that goes  
hard.

*Tra.* 'Tis death for any one in Mantua

To come to Padua ; Know you not the cause ?

Your ships are staid at Venice ; and the duke

(For private quarrel 'twixt your duke and him,)

Hath publish'd and proclaim'd it openly :

'Tis marvel ; but that you're but newly come,

You might have heard it else proclaim'd about.

\* A thing stuffed to look like the game which the hawk  
was to pursue.

† To tame my wild hawk :

‡ Flatter.

§ Despicable fellow.

\* Messenger.

† A merchant or a schoolmaster

Scene III.

TAMING OF THE SHREW.

879

*Pet.* Alas! Sir, it is worse for me than so; For I have bills for money by exchange From Florence, and must here deliver them.

*Tra.* Well, Sir, to do you courtesy; This will I do, and this will I advise you;— First, tell me, have you ever been at Pisa?

*Pet.* Ay, Sir, in Pisa have I often been; Pisa, renowned for grave citizens.

*Tra.* Among them, know you one Vincentio?

*Pet.* I know him not, but I have heard of A merchant of incomparable wealth. *[him;]*

*Tra.* He is my father, Sir; and, sooth to say, In countenance somewhat doth resemble you.

*Bona.* As much as an apple doth an oyster, and all one. *[Aside.]*

*Tra.* To save your life in this extremity, This favour will I do you for his sake:

And thank it not the worst of all your fortunes, That you are like to Sir Vincentio,

His name and credit shall you undertake, And in my house you shall be friendly lodg'd:—

Look, that you take upon you as you should; You understand me, Sir;—so shall you stay

Till you have done your business in the city: It is his courtesy, Sir, accept of it.

*Pet.* O Sir, I do; and will repute you ever The patron of my life and liberty.

*Tra.* Then go with me, to make the matter good.

This, by the way, I let you understand;— My father is here lodg'd for every day,

To pass assurance of a dower in marriage 'Twixt me and one Baptista's daughter here:

In all these circumstances I'll instruct you: Go with me, Sir, to clothe you as becomes you. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III.—A Room in PETRUCHIO'S House.

*Enter KATHARINA and GRUMIO.*

*Gru.* No, no; forsooth; I dare not, for my life.

*Kath.* The more my wrong, the more his spite appears:

What, did he mean me to furnish me?

Beggars, that come into my father's door,

Upon entreaty have a present alms;

If not, elsewhere they meet with charity:

But I,—who never knew how to entreat,—

Am starv'd for meat, giddy for lack of sleep:

With oaths kept waking, and with brawling fed:

And that which spites me more than all these wants,

He does it under name of perfect love;

As who should say,—if I should sleep, or eat,

'Twere deadly sickness, or else present death.—

I pry'thee go, and get me some repast:

I care not what so it be wholesome food.

*Gru.* What say you to a neat's foot?

*Kath.* 'Tis passing good; I pry'thee let me have it.

*Gru.* I fear, it is too cholerick a meat:—

How say you to a fat tripe, finely broil'd?

*Kath.* I like it well; good Grumio, fetch it me.

*Gru.* I cannot tell; I fear, 'tis cholerick.

What say you to a piece of beef, and mustard?

*Kath.* A dish that I do love to feed upon.

*Gru.* Ay, but the mustard is too hot a little.

*Kath.* Why, then the beef, and let the mustard rest.

*Gru.* Nay, then I will not; you shall have the mustard,

Or else you get no beef of Grumio.

*Kath.* Then both, or one, or any thing thou wilt.

*Gru.* Why, then the mustard without the beef.

*Kath.* Go, get thee gone, thou false deluding slave, *[Beats him.]*

That feed'st me with the very name of meat:

Sorrow on thee, and all the pack of you,

That triumph thus upon my misery!

Go, get thee gone, I say.

*Enter PETRUCHIO with a dish of meat; and HORTENSIO.*

*Pet.* How fares my Kate? What, sweeting, all amorf? \*

*Hor.* Mistress, what cheer?

*Kath.* 'Faith, as cold as can be.

*Pet.* Pluck up thy spirits, look cheerfully upon me.

Here, love; thou see'st how diligent I am, To dress thy meat myself, and bring it thee:

*[Sets the dish on a table]* I am sure, sweet Kate, this kindness merits thanks.

What, not a word? Nay, then, thou lov'st it not;

And all my pains is sorted to no proof:— Here take away this dish.

*Kath.* 'Pray you, let it stand.

*Pet.* The poorest service is repaid with thanks; And so shall mine, before you touch the meat.

*Kath.* I thank you, Sir.

*Hor.* Signior Petruccio, fie! you are to blame!

Come, mistress Kate, I'll bear you company.

*Pet.* Eat it up all, Hortensio, if thou lov'st me.— *[Aside.]*

Much good do it unto thy gentle heart!

Kate, eat a pace:—And now, my honey love,

Will we return unto thy father's house;

And revel it as bravely as the best,

With silken coats, and caps, and golden rings,

With ruffs, and cuffs, and faithingales, and

things; *[bravery;]*

With scarfs, and fans, and double change of

With amber bracelets, beads, and all this knavery,

What, hast thou did'st? The tailor stays thy

leisure, To deck thy body with his ruffling treasure.

*Enter TAILOR.*

Come, tailor, let us see these ornaments;

*Enter HABERDASHER.*

Lay forth the gown.—What news with you, Sir?

*Hab.* Here is the cap your worship did bespeak.

*Pet.* Why, this was moulded on a porringer?

A velvet dish;—he, fie! 'tis lewd and filthy:

Why, 'tis a cockle, or a walnutshell,

A knuck, a toy, a trick, a baby's cap;

Away with it, come, let me have a bigger.

*Kath.* I'll have no bigger; this doth fit the

time, And gentlewomen wear such caps as these.

*Pet.* When you are gentle you shall have one

And not till then. *[too;]*

*Hor.* That will not be in haste. *[Aside.]*

*Kath.* Why, Sir, I trust I may have leave to

speak;

And speak I will; I am no child, no babe:

Your betters have endur'd me say my mind;

And, if you cannot, best you stop your ears.

My tongue will tell the anger of my heart;

Or else my heart, concealing it, will break;

And, rather than it shall, I will be free

Even to the uttermost, as I please, in words.

*Pet.* Why, thou say'st true; it is a paitry

cap,

A custard coffin, † a hauble, a silken pie:

I love thee well, in that thou lik'st it not.

*Kath.* Love me, or love me not, I like the

cap;

And it I will have, or I will have none.

*Pet.* Thy gown? why, ay:—Come, tailor, let

us see't.

O mercy, God! what masking stuff is here?

What's this? a sleeve? 'tis like a demi-cannon:

What! up and down, carv'd like an apple-tart?

Here's snip, and nip, and cut, and slash, and

slash, Like to a censor ‡ in a barber's shop:—

\* Dispirited; a gallicism.

† Finery.

‡ A coffin was the culinary term for raised crust.

§ These censers resembled our brassers in shape.

Why, what, o'devil's name, tailor, call'st thou this?

*Hor.* I see, she's like to have neither cap nor gown.

*Tai.* You bid me make it orderly and well, According to the fashion, and the time.

*Pet.* Marry, and did; but if you be remember'd,

I did not bid you mar it to the time.

Go, hop me over every kennel home.

For you shall hop without my custom, Sir;

I'll none of it; hence, make your best of it.

*Kath.* I never saw a better-fashion'd gown, More quaint, \* more pleasing, nor more commendable:

*Belike*, you mean to make a puppet of me.

*Pet.* Why, true, he means to make a puppet of thee.

*Tai.* She says, your worship means to make a puppet of her.

*Pet.* O monstrous arrogance! Thou liest, thou thread,

Thou thimble, [nail, Thou yard, three-quarters, half-yard, quarter,

Thou flea, thou nit, thou winter cricket thou:—Brav'd in mine own house with a skein of thread!

Away, thou rag, thou quantity, thou remnant; Or I shall so be-mete† thee with thy yard,

As thou shalt think on prating whilst thou liv'st!

I tell thee, I, that thou hast marr'd her gown.

*Tai.* Your worship is deceiv'd; the gown is Just as my master had direction: [made

*Grumio* gave order how it should be done.

*Gru.* I gave him no order, I gave him the stuff.

*Tri.* But how did you desire it should be made?

*Gru.* Marry, Sir, with needle and thread.

*Tai.* But did you not request to have it cut?

*Gru.* Thou hast faced many things; ‡

*Tai.* I have.

*Gru.* Face not me: thou hast braved many men; brave not me; I will neither be faced nor braved.

I say unto thee,—I bid thy master cut out the gown; but I did not bid him cut it to pieces: ergo, thou liest.

*Tai.* Why, here is the note of the fashion to testify.

*Pet.* Read it.

*Gru.* The note lies in his throat, if he say I said so.

*Tai.* Imprimis, a loose-bodied gown:

*Gru.* Master, if ever I said a loose-bodied gown, sew me in the skirts of it, and beat me to death with a bottom of brown thread: I said, a gown.

*Pet.* Proceed.

*Tai.* With a small compassed cape; §

*Gru.* I confess the cape.

*Tai.* With a trunk sleeve;—

*Gru.* I confess two sleeves.

*Tai.* The sleeves curiously cut.

*Pet.* Ay, there's the villany.

*Gru.* Error i'the bill, Sir; error i'the bill. I commanded the sleeves should be cut out, and sewed up again; and that I'll prove upon thee, though thy little finger be armed in a thimble.

*Tai.* This is true, that I say; and I had thee in place where thou should'st know it.

*Gru.* I am for thee straight: take thou the bill, and give me my mete-yard, § and spare not me.

*Hor.* God-a-mercy, Grumio! then he shall have no odds.

*Pet.* Well, Sir, in brief, the gown is not for me.

*Gru.* You are i'the right, Sir; 'tis for my mistress.

*Pet.* Go, take it up unto thy master's use.

*Gru.* Villain, not for thy life: Take up my mistress' gown for thy master's use!

\* Curious. † To-mesure. ‡ Faced up many garments with facings. § A round cape. ¶ Measuring yard.

*Pet.* Why, Sir, what's your conceit in that?

*Gru.* O Sir, the conceit is deeper than you think for:

Take up my mistress' gown to his master's use! O, fie, fie, fie!

*Pet.* Hortensio, say thou wilt see the tailor paid:—

Go take it hence; be gone, and say no more.

*Hor.* Tailor, I'll pay thee for thy gown to-morrow.

Take no unkindness of his hasty words: Away, I say; commend me to thy master.

*Pet.* Well, come, my Kate; we will unto your father's,

Even in these honest mean habiliments; Our purses shall be proud, our garments poor:

For 'tis the mind that makes the body rich, And as the sun breaks through the darkest clouds,

So honour peereth \* in the meanest habit. What, is the jay more precious than the lark

Because his feathers are more beautiful? Or is the adder better than the eel,

Because his painted skin contents the eye? O no, good Kate; neither art thou the worse

For this poor furniture, and mean array. If thou account'st it shame, lay it on me:

And therefore, frolic; we will henceforth with, Go, call my men, and let us straight to him;

And bring our horses unto Long-lane end, Where will we mount, and thither walk on foot.—

Let's see; I think, 'tis now some seven o'clock, And well we may come there by dinner time.

*Kath.* I dare assure you, Sir, 'tis almost two; And 'twill be supper time, ere you come there.

*Pet.* It shall be seven, ere I go to horse: Look, what I speak, or do, or think to do,

You are still crossing it.—Sir, let's alone: I will not go to-day; and ere I do,

It shall be what o'clock I say it is.

*Hor.* Why, so I this gallant will command the sun.

*SCENE IV.—Padua.—Before BAPTISTA'S house.*

*Enter TRANIO, and the PEDANT dressed like VINCENTIO.*

*Tra.* Sir, this is the house; Please it you, that I call?

*Ped.* Ay, what else? and but I be deceived, Signior Baptista may remember me.

Near twenty years ago, in Genoa, where We were lodgers at the Pegasus.

*Tra.* 'Tis well; And hold your own, in any case, with such Austerity as 'longeth to a father.

*Enter BIONDELLO.*

*Ped.* I warrant you: But, Sir, here comes your boy;

'Twere good he were school'd.

*Tra.* Fear you not him, Sirrah, Biondello, Now do your duty thoroughly, I advise you;

Imagine 'twere the right Vincentio.

*Bion.* Tut! fear not me.

*Tra.* But hast thou done thy errand to Baptista?

*Bion.* I told him, that your father was at Venice;

And that you look'd for him this day in Padua.

*Tra.* Thou'rt a tall fellow; hold thee that to drink.

Here comes Baptista:—set your countenance, Sir.—

*Enter BAPTISTA and LUCENTIO.*

Signior Baptista, you are happily met:—Sir, [To the PEDANT.]

This is the gentleman I told you of;

\* Apperance.

I pray you stand good father to me now,  
Give me Bianca for my patrimony.

*Ped.* Soft, son!—

Sir, by your leave; having come to Padua  
To gather in some debts, my son Lucentio  
Made me acquainted with a weighty cause  
Of love between your daughter and himself:  
And,—for the good report I hear of you;  
And for the love he beareth to your daughter,  
And she to him,—to stay him not too long,  
I am content, in a good father's care,  
To have him match'd; and,—if you please to  
like

No worse than I, Sir,—upon some agreement,  
We shall you had most ready and most willing  
With one consent to have her so bestow'd;  
For curious \* I cannot be with you,  
Signior Baptista, of whom I hear so well.

*Bap.* Sir, pardon me in what I have to say;  
Your plainness, and your shortness, please me  
Right true it is, your son Lucentio here [well.  
Doth love my daughter, and she loveth him,  
Or both dissemble deeply their affections:  
And, therefore, if you say no more than this,  
That like a father you will deal with him,  
And pass + my daughter a sufficient dower,  
The match is fully made, and all is done;  
Your son shall have my daughter with consent.

*Tra.* I thank you, Sir. Where then do you  
know best,  
We be aff'd; and such assurance ta'en,  
As shall with either part's agreement stand?

*Bap.* Not in my house, Lucentio; for, you  
know,

Pitchers have ears, and I have many servants:  
Besides, old Gremio is heark'ning still,  
And, happily, § we might be interrupted.

*Tra.* Then at my lodging, as it like you, Sir:  
There doth my father lie; and there, this night,  
We'll pass the business privately and well:  
Send for your daughter by your servant here,  
My boy shall fetch the scrivener presently.  
The worst is this,—that, at so slender warning,  
You're like to have a thin and slender pittance.

*Bap.* It likes me well:—Cambio, hie you  
home,

And bid Bianca make her ready straight;  
And, if you will, tell what hath happened:—  
Lucentio's father is arriv'd in Padua,  
And how she's like to be Lucentio's wife.

*Luc.* I pray the gods she may, with all my  
heart!

*Tra.* Dally not with the gods, but get thee  
Signior Baptista, shall I lead the way? [gone.  
Welcome! one mess is like to be your cheer:  
Come, Sir; we'll better it in Pisa.

*Bap.* I follow you.

[*Exeunt* TRANIO, PEDANT, and BAPTISTA.

*Bion.* Cambio.—

*Luc.* What say'st thou, Biondello?

*Bion.* You saw my master wink and laugh  
upon you?

*Luc.* Biondello, what of that?

*Bion.* 'Faith nothing; but he has left me here  
behind, to expound the meaning or moral || of  
his signs and tokens.

*Luc.* I pray thee, moralize them.

*Bion.* Then thus, Baptista is safe, talking  
with the deceiving father of a deceitful son.

*Luc.* And what of him?

*Bion.* His daughter is to be brought by you to  
the supper.

*Luc.* And then?—

*Bion.* The old priest at St. Luke's church is  
at your command at all hours.

*Luc.* And what of all this?

*Bion.* I cannot tell; except they are busied  
about a counterfeit assurance: Take you as-  
surance of her, *cum privilegio ad imprimendum  
solum*: to the church;—take the priest, clerk,  
and some sufficient honest witnesses:

If this be not that you look for, I have no more  
to say,

But, bid Bianca farewell for ever and a day.

[*Going.*

*Luc.* Hear'st thou, Biondello?

*Bion.* I cannot tarry: I knew a wench  
married in an afternoon as she went to the  
garden for parsley to stuff a rabbit; and so  
may you, Sir, and so adieu, Sir. My master  
hath appointed me to go to Saint Luke's, to  
bid the priest be ready to come against you  
come with your appendix. [*Exit.*

*Luc.* I may, and will, if she be so contented:  
She will be pleas'd, then wherefore should I  
doubt?

Hap what may, I'll roundly go about her;

It shall go hard, if Cambio go without her.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE V.—A public Road

*Enter* PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and HON-  
TENSIO

*Pet.* Come on, o' God's name; once more to-  
ward our father's. [moon!]

Good Lord, how bright and goodly shines the  
*Kath.* The moon! the sun; it is not moon-  
light now.

*Pet.* I say, it is the moon that shines so  
bright.

*Kath.* I know it is the sun that shines so  
[bright.

*Pet.* Now, by my mother's son, and that's  
myself,

It shall be moon, or star, or what I list,  
Or ere I journey to your father's house:—

Go on, and fetch our horses back again.—  
Evermore cross'd, and cross'd; nothing but  
cross'd!

*Hor.* Say as he says, or we shall never go.

*Kath.* Forward, I pray, since we have come  
so far,

And be it moon, or sun or what you please:  
And if you please to call it a rush candle,  
Henceforth I vow it shall be so for me.

*Pet.* I say, it is the moon.

*Kath.* I know it is.

*Pet.* Nay, then you lie; it is the blessed sun.

*Kath.* Then, God be bless'd, it is the blessed  
sun:—

But sun it is not, when you say it is not,  
And the moon changes, even as your mind.  
What you will have it nam'd, even that it is;

And so it shall be so, for Katharine.

*Hor.* Petruchio, go thy ways; the field is won.

*Pet.* Well, forward, forward: thus the bowl  
should run,

And not unluckily against the bias.—  
But soft; what company is coming here?

*Enter* VINCENTIO, in a travelling dress.  
Good-morrow, gentle mistress: Where away?—

[*To* VINCENTIO.

Tell me, sweet Kate, and tell me truly too,  
Hast thou beheld a fresher gentlewoman?

Such war of white and red within her cheeks!  
What stars do spangle heaven with such beauty,

As those two eyes become that heavenly face?—  
Fair lovely maid, once more good day to thee:—

Sweet Kate, embrace her for her beauty's sake.

*Hor.* 'A will make the man mad, to make a  
woman of him.

*Kath.* Young budding virgin, fair, and fresh,  
and sweet,

Whither away; or where is thy abode?  
Happy the parents of so fair a child;

Happier the man, whom favourable stars  
Allot thee for his lovely bed-fellow!

*Pet.* Why, how now, Kate! I hope thou art  
not mad:

This is a man, old, wrinkled, faded, wither'd;  
And not a maiden, as thou say'st he is.

*Kath.* Pardon, old father, my mistaking eyes  
That have been so bedazzled with the sun,

That every thing I look on seemeth green:

3 L

\* Scrupulous. † Assure or conv. ‡ Betroth'd  
§ Accidentally. || Secret purpose.



Now I perceive thou art a reverend father;  
Pardon, I pray thee, for my mad mistaking.

*Pet.* Do, good old grandsire; and, withal,  
make known

Which way thou travellest; if along with us,  
We shall be joyful of thy company.

*Vin.* Fair Sir,—and you my merry mistress,—  
That with your strange encounter much amas'd  
me;

My name is call'd—Vincenzio; my dwelling—  
Pisa;

And bound I am to Padua; there to visit  
A son of mine, which long I have not seen.

*Pet.* What is his name?

*Vin.* Lucentio, gentle Sir.

*Pet.* Happily met; the happier for thy son—

And now by law, as well as reverend age,  
I may entitle thee—my loving father;

The sister to my wife, this gentlewoman,  
Thy son by this hath married: Wonder not,

Nor be not griev'd; she is of good esteem,  
Her dowry wealthy, and of worthy birth,

Beside, so qualified as may besem  
The spouse of any noble gentleman.

Let me embrace with old Vincenzio:  
And wander we to see thy honest son,

Who will of thy arrival be full joyous.

*Vin.* But is this true? or is it else your pleasure,  
Like pleasant travellers, to break a jest  
Upon the company you overtake?

*Hor.* I do assure, thee, father, so it is.

*Pet.* Come, go along, and see the truth hereof;  
For our first meritment hath made thee jealous.

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and  
VINCENZIO.*]

*Hor.* Well, Petruchio, this hath put me in  
heart.

Have to my widow; and if she be forward,  
Then hast thou taught Hortensio to be unto-  
ward. [*Exit.*]

# ACT V.

## SCENE I.—PADUA.—Before LUCENTIO'S House.

*Enter on one side BIONDELLO, LUCENTIO, and  
BIANCA; GREMIO walking on the other side.*

*Bion.* Softly and swiftly, Sir: for the priest is  
ready.

*Luc.* I fly, Biondello: but they may chance  
to need thee at home, therefore leave us.

*Bion.* Nay, faith, I'll see the church o' your  
back; and then come back to my master as  
soon as I can. [*Exeunt LUCENTIO, BIANCA,  
and BIONDELLO.*]

*Gre.* I marvel Cambio comes not all this  
while.

*Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, VINCENZIO,  
and Attendants.*

*Pet.* Sir, here's the door, this is Lucentio's  
house,

My father's bears more toward the market-  
place;

Thither must I, and here I leave you, Sir.

*Vin.* You shall not choose but drink before  
you go;

I think, I shall command your welcome here,  
and, by all likelihood, some cheer is toward.

[*Knocks.*]

*Gre.* They're busy within, you were beat  
knock louder

*Enter PEDANT above, at a window.*

*Ped.* What's he, that knocks as he would  
beat down the gate?

*Vin.* Is signior Lucentio within, Sir?

*Ped.* He's within, Sir, but not to be spoken  
withal.

*Vin.* What if a man bring him a hundred  
pound or two, to make merry withal?

*Ped.* Keep your hundred pounds to yourself;  
he shall need none, so long as I live.

*Pet.* Nay, I told you, your son was beloved  
in Padua.—Do you hear, Sir?—to leave in-  
voluntary circumstances.—I pray you, tell signior  
Lucentio, that his father is come from Pisa, and  
is here at the door to speak with him.

*Ped.* Thou liest; his father is come from Pisa,  
and here looking out at the window.

*Vin.* Art thou his father?

*Ped.* Ay, Sir; so his mother says, if I may  
believe her.

*Pet.* Why, how now, gentleman! [*To VIN-  
CEN.*] why, this is flat knavery, to take upon  
you another man's name.

*Ped.* Lay hands on the villain; I believe 'a  
means to cozen somebody in this city under my  
countenance.

## Re-enter BIONDELLO.

*Bion.* I have seen them in the church toge-  
ther; God send 'em good shipping!—But who  
is here? mine old master, Vincenzio! now we  
are undone, and brought to nothing.

*Vin.* Come hither, crack-brain.

[*Seeing BIONDELLO.*]

*Bion.* I hope, I may choose, Sir.

*Vin.* Come hither, you rogue! What, have  
you forgot me?

*Bion.* Forgot you? no, Sir: I could not for-  
get you, for I never saw you before in all my  
life.

*Vin.* What, you notorious villain, didst thou  
never see thy master's father, Vincenzio?

*Bion.* What, my old, worshipful old master?  
yes, marry, Sir; see where he looks out of the  
window.

*Vin.* Is't so, indeed? [*Beats BIONDELLO.*]

*Bion.* Help, help, help! here's a madman  
will murder me [*Exit.*]

*Ped.* Help, son! help, signior Baptista!

[*Exit from the window.*]

*Pet.* Pr'ythee, Kate, let's stand aside, and  
see the end of this controversy. [*They retire.*]

*Re-enter PEDANT below; BAPTISTA, IRANIO,  
and SERVANTS.*

*Tra.* Sir, what are you, that offer to beat my  
servant?

*Vin.* What am I, Sir? nay, what are you,  
Sir?—O immortal gods! O hue villain! A sil-  
ken doublet! a velvet hose! a scarlet cloak!  
and a copatan hat!—Oh! I am undone! I am  
undone! while I play the good husband at home,  
my son and my servant spend all at the uni-  
versity.

*Tra.* How now! what's the matter?

*Bap.* What, is the man lunatic?

*Tra.* Sir, you seem a sober ancient gentle-  
man by your habit, but your words show you  
a madman: Why, Sir, what concerns it you,  
if I were pearl and gold? I thank my good  
father, I am able to maintain it.

*Vin.* Thy father? O villain! he is a sail-  
maker in Bergamo.

*Bap.* You mistake, Sir; you mistake, Sir;  
Pray, what do you think is his name?

*Vin.* His name? as if I knew not his name:  
I have brought him up ever since he was three  
years old, and his name is—Tranio.

*Ped.* Away, away, and as! his name is Lu-  
centio; and he is mine only son, and heir to  
the lands of me, signior Vincenzio.

*Vin.* Lucentio! Oh! he hath murdered his  
master!—Lay hold on him, I charge you, in  
the duke's name!—O my son, my son!—tell  
me, thou villain, where is my son Lucentio?

*Tra.* Call forth an officer: [*Enter one with  
an officer.*] carry this mad knave to the jail:—  
Father Baptista, I charge you see, that he be  
forthcoming.

*Vin.* Carry me to the jail!

*Gre.* Stay, officer; he shall not go to prison.

*Bap.* Talk not, signior Gremio; I say, he shall go to prison.

*Gre.* Take heed, signior Baptista, lest you be coney-catched \* in this business; I dare swear, this is the right Vincentio.

*Ped.* Swear, if thou darest.

*Gre.* Nay, I dare not swear it.

*Tru.* Then thou wert best say, that I am not Lucentio.

*Gre.* Yes, I know thee to be signior Lucentio.

*Bap.* Away with the dotard; to the jail with him!

*Fin.* Thus strangers may be haled and abus'd:—O monstrous villain!

*Re-enter BIONDELLO, with LUCENTIO, and BIANCA.*

*Bion.* Oh! we are spoiled, and—Yonder he is, doing him, forswear him, or else we are all undone.

*Luc.* Pardon, sweet father. [Kneeling.]

*Fin.* Lives my sweetest son?

[BIONDELLO, TRANIO, and PEDANT run out.]

*Fin.* Pardon, dear father. [Kneeling.]

*Bap.* How hast thou offended?—Where is Lucentio?

*Luc.* Here's Lucentio, Right son unto the right Vincentio; That have by marriage made thy daughter mine, While counterfeit supposes blear'd thine eye.

*Gre.* Here's packing, † with a witness, to deceive us all!

*Fin.* Where is that damned villain, Tranio, That fac'd and brav'd me in this matter so?

*Bap.* Why, tell me, is not this my Cambio?

*Fin.* Cambio is chang'd into Lucentio.

*Luc.* Love wrought these miracles. Bianca's love

Made me exchange my state with Tranio, While he did bear my countenance in the town;

And happily I have arriv'd at last Unto the wished haven of my bliss:—

What Tranio did, myself excuse'd him to; Then pardon him, sweet father, for my sake.

*Fin.* I'll slit the villain's nose, that would have sent me to the jail.

*Bap.* But do you hear, Sir? [To LUCENTIO.] Have you married my daughter without asking my good-will?

*Fin.* Fear not, Baptista; we will content you, go to; But I will in, to be revenged for this villainy. [Exit.]

*Bap.* And I, to sound the depth of this knavery. [Exit.]

*Luc.* Look not pale, Bianca; thy father will not frown. [Exit LUC. and BIAN.]

*Gre.* My cake is dough:‡ But I'll in among the rest;

Out of hope of all,—but my share of the feast. [Exit.]

*PETRUCHIO and KATHARINA advance.*

*Kath.* Husband, let's follow, to see the end of this ado.

*Pet.* First kiss me, Kate, and we will.

*Kath.* What, in the midst of the street?

*Pet.* What, art thou ashamed of me?

*Kath.* No, Sir; God forbid!—but ashamed to kiss.

*Pet.* Why, then let's home again:—Come, sirrah, let's away.

*Kath.* Nay, I will give thee a kiss; now pray thee, love, stay.

*Pet.* Is not this well?—Come, my sweet Kate;

Better once than never, for never too late. [Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

[Exit.]

*SCENE II.—A Room in LUCENTIO'S House.*

*A Banquet set out. Enter BAPTISTA, VINCENTIO, GREMIO, the PEDANT, LUCENTIO, BIANCA, PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, HORTENSIO, and WIDOW. TRANIO, BIONDELLO, GRUMIO, and others, attending.*

*Luc.* At last, though long, our jarring notes agree:

And time it is, when raging war is done, To smile at 'scapes and perils overblown.—

My fair Bianca, bid my father welcome, While I with self-same kindness welcome

thine:— Brother Petrucchio,—sister Katharina,—

And thou, Hortensio, with thy loving widow,— Feast with the best, and welcome to my house;

My banquet \* is to close our stomachs up, After our great good cheer: Pray you sit down;

For now we sit to chat, as well as eat. [They sit at table.]

*Pet.* Nothing but sit and sit, and eat and eat!

*Bap.* Padua affords this kindness, son Petrucchio.

*Pet.* Padua affords nothing but what is kind.

*Hor.* For both our sakes, I would that word were true.

*Pet.* Now, for my life, Hortensio fears † his widow.

*Wid.* Then never trust me if I be afraid.

*Pet.* You are sensible, and yet you miss my sense;

I mean, Hortensio is afraid of you. *Wid.* He that is giddy, thinks the world turns round.

*Pet.* Roundly replied. *Kath.* Mistress, how mean you that?

*Wid.* Thus I conceive by him. *Pet.* Conceives by me!—How likes Hortensio that?

*Hor.* My widow says, thus she conceives her tale.

*Pet.* Very well mended: Kiss him for that, good widow.

*Kath.* He that is giddy, thinks the world turns round:—

I pray you, tell me what you meant by that.

*Wid.* Your husband, being troubled with a shrew,

Measures my husband's sorrow by his woe: And now you know my meaning.

*Kath.* A very mean meaning. *Wid.* Right, I mean you.

*Kath.* And I am mean, indeed, respecting you.

*Pet.* To her, Kate! *Hor.* To her, widow!

*Pet.* A hundred marks, my Kate does put her down.

*Hor.* That's my office. *Pet.* Spoke like an officer:—Ha' to thee, lad.

[Drinks to HORTENSIO.] *Bap.* How likes Gremio these quick-witted folks?

*Gre.* Believe me, Sir, they butt together well.

*Bian.* Head, and butt? an hasty-witted body Would say, your head and butt were head and horn.

*Fin.* Ay, mistress bride, hath that awaken'd you?

*Bian.* Ay, but not frighted me: therefore I'll sleep again.

*Pet.* Nay, that you shall not; since you have begun,

Have at you for a bitter jest or two.

*Bian.* Am I your bird? I mean to shift my bush,

And then pursue me as you draw your bow:— You are welcome all.

[Exit LUCENTIO, KATHARINA, and WIDOW.] *Pet.* She hath prevented me.—Here, signior Tranio,

\* Cheated † Deceived thy eyes.

‡ Trickery, underground contrivances.

§ A proverbial expression, repeated after a disappointment.

\* A banquet was a refectory consisting of fruit, cakes, &c. † Dreads.

This bird you aim'd at, though you hit her not;  
Therefore, a health to all that shot and miss'd.

*Tra.* O Sir, Lucentio slipp'd me like his greyhound,

Which runs himself, and catches for his master.

*Pet.* A good swift \* simile, but something curriish.

*Tra.* 'Tis well, Sir, that you hunted for yourself;

'Tis thought, your deer does hold you at a bay.

*Bap.* O ho, Petruchio, Tranio hits you now.

*Luc.* I thank thee for that gird, † good Tranio.

*Hor.* Confess, confess, hath he not hit you here?

*Pet.* 'A has a little gall'd me, I confess;  
And, as the jest did glance away from me,  
'Tis ten to one it maim'd you two outright.

*Bap.* Now, in good sadness, son Petruchio,  
I think thou hast the veriest shrew of all.

*Pet.* Well, I say—no: and therefore for assurance—  
Let's each one send unto his wife; [ance,

And he whose wife is most obedient

To come at first when he doth send for her,

Shall win the wager which we will propose.

*Hor.* Content:—What is the wager?

*Luc.* Twenty crowns.

*Pet.* Twenty crowns!

I'll venture so much on my hawk, or hound,

But twenty times so much upon my wife.

*Luc.* A hundred then.

*Hor.* Content.

*Pet.* A match: 'tis done.

*Hor.* Who shall begin?

*Luc.* That will I Go,

Biondello, bid your mistress come to me. [Exit.

*Bion.* I go.

*Bap.* Son, I will be your half, Bianca comes.

*Luc.* I'll have no halves; I'll bear it all myself.

*Re-enter BIONDELLO.*

How now! what news?

*Bion.* Sir, my mistress sends you word

That she is busy, and she cannot come.

*Pet.* How! she is busy, and she cannot come!  
Is that an answer?

*Gre.* Ay, and a kind one too:

Pray God, Sir, your wife send you not a worse.

*Pet.* I hope, better.

*Hor.* Sirrah, Biondello go, and entreat my wife

To come to me forthwith. [Exit BIONDELLO.

*Pet.* O ho! entreat her!

Nay, then she must needs come.

*Hor.* I am afraid, Sir,

Do what you can, your's will not be entreated.

*Re-enter BIONDELLO.*

Now, where's my wife?

*Bion.* She says you have some goodly jest in hand;

She will not come; she bids you come to her.

*Pet.* Worse and worse; she will not come! O  
Intolerable, not to endure! [vile

*Sirrah* Grumio, go to your mistress;

Say, I command her to come to me. [Exit GRUMIO.

*Hor.* I know her answer.

*Pet.* What?

*Hor.* She will not come.

*Pet.* The fouler fortune mine, and there an end.

*Enter KATHARINA.*

*Bap.* Now, by my holidame, here comes Katharina!

*Kath.* What is your will, Sir, that you send for me?

*Pet.* Where is your sister, and Hortensio's wife?

*Kath.* They sit conferring by the parlour fire.

*Pet.* Go fetch them hither; if they deny to come,

\* Willy.

† SARGANT.

Swinge me them soundly forth unto their husbands:

Away, I say, and bring them hither straight.

[Exit KATHARINA.

*Luc.* Here is a wonder, if you talk of a wonder.

*Hor.* And so it is; I wonder what it bodes.

*Pet.* Marry, peace it bodes, and love, and quiet life,

An awful rule, and right supremacy;  
And, to be short, what not, that's sweet and happy.

*Bap.* Now fair befall thee, good Petruchio!

The wager thou hast won; and I will add  
Unto their losses twenty thousand crowns;  
Another dowry to another daughter,  
For she is chang'd, as she had never been.

*Pet.* Nay, I will win my wager better yet;  
And show more sign of her obedience,  
Her new-built virtue and obedience.

*Re-enter KATHARINA, with BIANCA, and WIDOW*

See, where she comes; and brings your froward wives

As prisoners to her womanly persuasion.—  
Katharine, that cap of your's becomes you not;  
Off with that bauble, throw it under foot.

[KATHARINA pulls off her cap, and throws it down.

*Wid.* Lord, let me never have a cause to sigh,  
Till I be brought to such a silly pass!

*Bian.* Fie! what a foolish duty call you this?

*Luc.* I would, your duty were as foolish too:  
The wisdom of your duty, fair Bianca,  
Hath cost me a hundred crowns since supper-time.

*Bian.* The more fool you, for laying on my duty.

*Pet.* Katharine, I charge thee, tell these headstrong women  
What duty they do owe their lords and husbands.

*Wid.* Come, come, you're mocking; we will have no telling.

*Pet.* Come on, I say; and first begin with her.

*Wid.* She shall not.

*Pet.* I say, she shall;—and first begin with her.

*Kath.* Fie, fie! unknit that threat'ning unkind brow;

And dart not scornful glances from those eyes,  
To wound thy lord, thy king, thy governor.

It blots thy beauty, as frosts bite the meads;  
Confounds thy fame, as whirlwinds shake fair buds;

And in no sense is meet, or amiable.  
A woman mov'd, is like a fountain troubled,  
Muddy, ill-seeming, thick, bereft of beauty;

And, while it is so, none so dry or thirsty  
Will deign to sip, or touch one drop of it.

Thy husband is thy lord, thy life, thy keeper,  
Thy head, thy sovereign; one that cares for thee,

And for thy maintenance: commits his body  
To painful labour, both by sea and land;

To watch the night in storms, the day in cold,  
While thou liest warm at home, secure and safe;

And craves no other tribute at thy hands,  
But love, fair looks, and true obedience;—

Too little payment for so great a debt.  
Such duty as the subject owes the prince,  
Even such, a woman oweth to her husband;

And, when she's froward, peevish, sullen, sour,  
And not obedient to his honest will,

What is she, but a foul contending rebel,  
And graceless traitor to her loving lord?—

I am ashamed, that women are so simple  
To offer war, where they should kneel for

peace;

Or seek for rule, supremacy, and sway,  
When they are bound to serve, love, and obey.

Why are our bodies soft, and weak and smooth,  
Unapt to toil and trouble in the world;

But that our soft conditions\* and our hearts,  
Should well agree with our external parts ?  
Come, come, you froward and unable worms !  
My mind hath been as big as one of your's,  
My heart, as great ; my reason, haply, more,  
To bandy word for word, and frown for frown :  
But now, I see our lances are but straws ;  
Our strength as weak, our weakness past com-

pare,—  
That seeming to be most, which we least are.  
Then vail your stomachs, † for it is no boot ;  
And place your hands below your husband's  
foot :

In token of which duty, if he please,  
My hand is ready, may it do him ease !

\* Gentle tamers.

† Abate your spirits.

*Pet.* Why, there's a wench !—Come on, and  
kiss me, Kate.

*Luc.* Well, go thy ways, old lad ; for thou  
shalt ha't.

*Fin.* 'Tis a good bearing, when children are  
toward.

*Luc.* But a harsh bearing, when women are  
froward.

*Pet.* Come, Kate, we'll to bed :—

We three are married, but we two are sped  
'Twas I won the wager, though you hit the white ;

And, being a winner, God give you good night !  
[*To* LUCENTIO.]

[*Exeunt* PETRUCHIO and KATH.]  
*Hor.* Now go thy ways, thou hast tam'd a  
curst shrew.

*Luc.* 'Tis a wonder, by your leave, she will  
be tam'd so. [*Exeunt.*]

# THE MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

## LITERARY AND HISTORICAL NOTICE.

**THIS** play was produced under two disadvantages : first, it was not the suggestion of Shakespeare's own genius, he having exhibited the character of Falstaff in three inimitable plays, and finished the portrait to his own taste ; and secondly, it was written with unusual expedition, in the short period of fourteen days. Queen Elizabeth is said to have been so delighted with the Knight, that she commanded our poet to show him in love ; and, upon this regal signification, Dr. Johnson remarks, that " no task is harder than that of writing to the ideas of another. Shakespeare knew what the Queen, if the story be true, seems not to have known---that by any real passion of tenderness, the selfish craft, the careless jollity, and the lazy luxury of Falstaff must have suffered so much abatement, that little of his former craft would have remained. Falstaff could not love, but by ceasing to be Falstaff." The most noted propensities of " the fat old man," are however, skillfully engrafted on the design of the piece ; so that wit, covetousness, mendacity, and conceit, as far as possible combined and developed in his conduct. The other characters, also, are well contrasted, and many of the scenes are pregnant with amusing incident. The circumstances of the plot are variously derived : some of them, probably, from an old translation of *Il Pecorene* by Giovanni Fiorentino, and the particular adventures of Falstaff, from *The Loves of Pan*, a story in an ancient piece called *Isidore's News out of Perigord*. Malone supposes that Shakespeare chose Windsor for the scene of Falstaff's love-drols, upon reading the subjoined passage in " *Richard for Smalls* " " In Windsor not long ago, dwelt a simpleton, who had to wife a very faire but wanton creature, over whom, not without cause, he was sonorous, jealous, yet had he never any proof of her inconstancy."

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

SIR JOHN FALSTAFF.

FENTON.

SHALLOW, a Country Justice.

SLENDER, Cousin to Shallow.

MR. FORD, } Two Gentlemen dwelling at

MR. PAGE, } Windsor.

WILLIAM PAGE, a Boy, Son to Mr. Page.

SIR HUGH EVANS, a Welsh Parson.

DR. CAUCUS, a French Physician.

HOST of the Garter Inn.

BARDOLPH,

PISTOL,

NIX,

} Followers of Falstaff.

ROBIN, Page to Falstaff.

SIMPLE, Servant to Slender.

REGEY, Servant to Dr. CAUCUS.

MRS. FORD,

MRS. PAGE.

MRS. ANNE PAGE, her Daughter, in love with

FENTON,

MRS. QUICKLY, Servant to Dr. CAUCUS.

Servants to Page, Ford, &c.

SCENE—Windsor, and the parts adjacent.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—Windsor. Before PAGE's House.

Enter Justice SHALLOW, SLENDER, and Sir HUGH EVANS.

Shal. Sir Hugh, persuade me not : I will make a star chamber matter of it : if he were twenty Sir John Falstoffs, he shall not abuse Robert Shallow, esquire.

Slen. In the county of Gloster, justice of peace, and coram.

Shal. Ay, cousin Slender, and Cust-alorum.\*

Slen. Ay, and ratororum too ; and a gentleman born, master parson ; who writes himself armigero ; in any bill, warrant, quittance, or obligation, armigero.

Shal. Ay, that we do ; and have done any time these three hundred years.

Slen. All his successors, gone before him have done't ; and all his ancestors, that come after him, may ; they may give the dozen white lutes† in their coat.

Shal. It is an old coat.

Eva. The dozen white louses do become an

\* A title formerly appropriated to chaplains as well as to knights. † Custos ratororum.

‡ The lute is a pipe : Shakespeare has here a throw at Sir Thomas Lucy, who compelled him to leave Stratford

old coat well ; it agrees well, passant : it is a familiar beast to man, and signifies—love.

Shal. The lute is the fresh fish ; the salt fish is an old coat.

Slen. I may quarter, coz ?

Shal. You may, by marrying

Eva. It is marrying indeed, if he quarter it.

Shal. Not a whit.

Eva. Yes, py'r\* lady if he has a quarter of your coat, there is but three skirts for yourself, in my simple conjectures ; but that is all one : If Sir John Falstaff have committed disparagements unto you, I am of the church, and will be glad to do my benevolence, to make atonements and compromises between you.

Shal. The council† shall hear it ; it is a riot.

Eva. It is not meet the council hear a riot ; there is no fear of God in a riot : the council look you, shall desire to hear the fear of God, and not to hear a riot ; take your vizaments‡ in that.

Shal. Ha ! o' my life, if I were young again, the sword should end it.

Eva. It is better that friends is the sword, and end it : and there is also another device in my brain, which, peradventure, prings good discretions with it : There is Anne Page,

\* By our. † Court of star-chamber. ‡ Advisement.

which is daughter to master George Page, which is pretty virginity.

*Slen.* Mistress Anne Page? She has brown hair, and speaks small\* like a woman.

*Eva.* It is that very person for all the world, as just as you will desire; and seven hundred pounds of monies, and gold, and silver, is her grandsire, upon his death's-bed, (Got deliver to a joyful resurrection:) give, when she is able to overtake seventeen years old: it were a good motion, if we leave our pribbles and prabbles, and desire a marriage between master Abraham, and mistress Anne Page.

*Shal.* Did her grandsire leave her seven hundred pound?

*Eva.* Ay, and her father is make her a petter penny:

*Shal.* I know the young gentlewoman; she has good gifts.

*Eva.* Seven hundred pounds, and possibilities, is good gifts.

*Shal.* Well, let us see honest master Page: Is Falstaff there?

*Eva.* Shall I tell you a lie? I do despise a liar, as I do despise one that is false; or, as I despise one that is not true. The knight, Sir John, is there, and, I beseech you, be ruled by your well-willers. I will peat the door [*knocks*] for master Page. What, ho! Got pless your house here!

Enter PAGE.

*Page.* Who's there?

*Eva.* Here is Got's plessing, and your friend, and justice Shallow; and here young master Slender. That peradventures shall tell you another tale, it matters grow to your likings.

*Page.* I am glad to see your worship's well: I thank you for my venison, master Shallow.

*Shal.* Master Page, I am glad to see you: Much good do it your good heart! I wished your venison better: it was ill kill'd.—How doth good mistress Page?—and I love you always with my heart, la; with my heart.

*Page.* Sir, I thank you.

*Shal.* Sir, I thank you; by yea and no, I do.

*Page.* I am glad to see you, good master Slender.

*Slen.* How does your fallow greyhound, Sir? I heard say, he was out-run on Cotsale.†

*Page.* It could not be judg'd, Sir.

*Slen.* You'll not confess, you'll not confess.

*Shal.* That he will not;—'tis your fault, 'tis your fault:—'Tis a good dog.

*Page.* A cur, Sir.

*Shal.* Sir, he's a good dog, and a fair dog; Can there be more said? He is good and fair.—Is Sir John Falstaff here?

*Page.* Sir, he is within; and I would I could do a good office between you.

*Eva.* It is spoke as a Christians ought to speak.

*Shal.* He hath wrong'd me, master Page.

*Page.* Sir, he doth in some sort confess it.

*Shal.* If it be confess'd, it is not redress'd; is not that so, master Page? He hath wrong'd me; indeed, he hath:—at a word, he hath;—believe me;—Robert Shallow, esquire, saith he is wrong'd.

*Page.* Here comes Sir John.

Enter Sir JOHN FALSTAFF, BARDOLPH, NYM, and PISTOL.

*Fal.* Now, master Shallow; you'll complain of me to the king?

*Shal.* Knight, you have beaten my men, killed my deer, and broke open my lodge.

*Fal.* But not kiss'd your keeper's daughter?

*Shal.* Tut, a pin! this shall be answer'd.

*Fal.* Will answer it straight;—I have done all this:—That is now answer'd.

*Shal.* The council shall know this.

\* Soft.

† Cotsfold in Gloucestershire

*Fal.* 'Twere better for you, if it were known in counsel: you'll be laugh'd at.

*Eva.* *Pauca verba*, Sir John, good words.

*Fal.* Good words! \* good cabbage.—Slender, I broke your head; What matter have you against me?

*Slen.* Marry, Sir, I have matter in my head against you: and against your coney-catching† rascals, Bardolph, Nym, and Pistol. They carried me to the tavern, and made me drunk, and afterwards picked my pocket.

*Bard.* You Banbury cheese!‡

*Slen.* Ay, it is no matter.

*Pist.* How now, Mephistophilus?§

*Slen.* Ay, it is no matter.

*Nym.* Slice, I say! *pauca, pauca*; § slice! that's my humour.

*Slen.* Where's Simple, my man?—can you tell, cousin?

*Eva.* Peace: I pray you! Now let us understand: There is three umpires in this matter as I understand: that is—master Page, *fidelicet*, master Page; and there is myself, *fidelicet*, myself; and the three party is, lastly and finally, mine host of the Garter.

*Page.* We three, to hear it, and end it between them.

*Eva.* Fery goot: I will make a prief of it in my note-book; and we will afterwards work upon the cause, with as great discreetly as we can.

*Fal.* Pistol, —

*Pist.* He hears with ears.

*Eva.* The devil and his tam! what phrase is this, *He hears with eurs*? Why, it is affectations.

*Fal.* Pistol, did you pick master Slender's purse?

*Slen.* Ay, by these gloves, did he, (or I would I might never come in mine own great chamber again else,) of seven groats in mill-sixpences, and two Edward shewl-boards,¶ that cost me two shillings and two-pence a-piece of Yead Miller, by these gloves.

*Fal.* Is this true, Pistol?

*Eva.* No; it is false, if it is a pick-purse.

*Pist.* Ha, thou mountain-foreigner! — Sir John, and master mine.

I combat challenge of this latter bilbo: \*\*

Word of denial in thy labras+ here;

Word of denial; froth and scum, thou liest.

*Slen.* By these gloves, then 'twas he.

*Nym.* Be advised, Sir, and pass good humours: I will say, *marry trap*, with you, if you run the nuthook's‡ humours on me; that is the very note of it.

*Slen.* By this hat, then he in the red face had it: for though I cannot remember what I did when you made me drunk, yet I am not altogether an ass.

*Fal.* What say you, Scarlet and John?

*Bard.* Why, Sir, for my part, I say, the gentleman had drunk himself out of his five sentences.

*Eva.* It is his five senses: fie, what the ignorance is!

*Bard.* And being fap,§§ Sir, was, as they say, cashier'd; and so conclusions pass'd the careires.¶¶

*Slen.* Ay, you spake in Latin then too; but 'tis no matter: I'll ne'er be drunk whilst I live again, but in honest, civil, godly company, for this trick: if I be drunk, I'll be drunk with those that have the fear of God, and not with drunken knaves.

*Eva.* So Got 'udge me, that is a virtuous mind.

\* Words was the ancient name of all the cabbage kind  
† Sharpers were called coney-catchers.

‡ Nothing but prying.

§ The name of a familiar spirit in the old story of Faust.

¶ Few words.

¶ King Edward's shillings, used in the game of shuffle-board.

§ Lips. ‡ If you say I am a thief

§§ Drunk.

¶ The bounds of good behaviour.

*Fal.* You hear all these matters denied, gentlemen, you hear it.

*Enter Mistress ANNE PAGE with wine; Mistress FORD and Mistress PAGE following.*

*Page.* Nay, daughter, carry the wine in; we'll drink within. [*Exit ANNE PAGE.*]

*Sten.* O heavens! this is mistress Anne Page.

*Page.* How now, mistress Ford?

*Fal.* Mistress Ford, by my truth, you are very well met: by your leave, good mistress.

[*Kissing her.*]

*Page.* Wife, bid these gentlemen welcome:—Come we have a hot venison pasty to dinner; come, gentlemen, I hope we shall drink down all unkindness.

[*Exeunt all but SHALLOW, SLENDER, and EVANS.*]

*Sten.* I had rather than forty shillings, I had my book of Songs and Sonnets here:—

*Enter SIMPLE.*

How now, Simple! where have you been? I must wait on myself, must I? You have not *The Book of Riddles* about you, have you?

*Sim.* *Book of Riddles*? why, did you not lend it to Alice Shortcake upon Allhallowmas last, a fortnight afore Michaelmas?\*

*Shal.* Come, coz; come, coz; we stay for you. A word with you, coz: marry, this, coz; There is, as 'twere, a tender, a kind of tender, made afar off by Sir Hugh here;—Do you understand me?

*Sten.* Ay, Sir, you shall find me reasonable; if it be so, I shall do that that is reason.

*Shal.* Nay, but understand me.

*Sten.* So I do, Sir.

*Eva.* Give ear to his motions, master Slender: I will description the matter to you, if you be capacity of it.

*Sten.* Nay, I will do as my cousin Shallow says: I pray you, pardon me; he's a justice of peace in his country, simple though I stand here.

*Eva.* But that is not the question; the question is concerning your marriage.

*Shal.* Ay, there's the point, Sir.

*Eva.* Marry, is it; the very point of it; to mistress Anne Page.

*Sten.* Why, if it be so, I will marry her, upon any reasonable demands.

*Eva.* But can you affection the 'oman? Let us command to know that of your mouth, or of your lips; for divers philosophers hold, that the lips is parcel of the mouth;—Therefore, precisely, can you carry your good will to the maid?

*Shal.* Cousin Abraham Slender, can you love her?

*Sten.* I hope, Sir,—I will do as it shall become one that would do reason.

*Eva.* Nay, God's lords and his ladies, you must speak possible, if you can carry her your desires towards her.

*Shal.* That you must: Will you, upon good dowry, marry her?

*Sten.* I will do a greater thing than that, upon your request, cousin, in any reason.

*Shal.* Nay, conceive me, conceive me, sweet coz; what I do, is to pleasure you, coz: Can you love the maid?

*Sten.* I will marry her, Sir, at your request; but if there be no great love in the beginning, yet heaven may decrease it upon better acquaintance, when we are married, and have more occasion to know one another: I hope, upon familiarity will grow more contempt; but if you say, *marry her*, I will marry her, that I am freely dissolv'd, and dissolutely.

*Eva.* It is a ferry discretion answer; *marry*, the fault is in the 'ort dissolutely: the 'ort is, according to our meaning, resolutely;—his meaning is good.

*Shal.* Ay, I think my cousin meant well.

\* An intended blunder.

*Sten.* Ay, or else I would I might be hanged, in.

*Re-enter ANNE PAGE.*

*Shal.* Here comes fair mistress Anne; Would I were young, for your sake, mistress Anne! *Anne.* The dinner is on the table; my father desires your worship's company.

*Shal.* I will wait on him, fair mistress Anne.

*Eva.* Od's plessed will; I will not be absence at the grace.

[*Exeunt SHALLOW and Sir H. EVANS.*]

*Anne.* Will't please your worship to come in, Sir.

*Sten.* No, I thank you, forsooth, heartily; I am very well.

*Anne.* The dinner attends you, Sir,

*Sten.* I am not a-hungry, I thank you, forsooth: Go, sirrah, for all you are my man, go, wait upon my cousin Shallow: [*Exit SIMPLE.*]

A justice of peace sometime may be beholden to his friend for a man:—I keep but three men and a boy yet, till my mother be dead: But what though; yet I live like a poor gentleman born.

*Anne.* I may not go in without your worship: they will not sit till you come.

*Sten.* I'faith, I'll eat nothing; I thank you as much as though I did.

*Anne.* I pray you, Sir, walk in.

*Sten.* I had rather walk here, I thank you; I bruised my shin the other day with playing at sword and dagger with a master of fence, three venys\* for a dish of stewed prunes, and by my troth, I cannot abide the smell of hot meat since. Why do your dogs bark so I be there bears' the town?

*Anne.* I think there are, Sir; I heard them talked of.

*Sten.* I love the sport well; but I shall as soon quarrel at it, as any man in England.—You are afraid, if you see the bear loose, are you not?

*Anne.* Aye indeed, Sir.

*Sten.* That's meat and drink to me now: I have seen Sackerson† loose twenty times; and have taken him by the chain: but, I warrant you, the women have so cried and shriek'd at it, that it pass'd;‡—but women, indeed, cannot abide 'em; they are very ill favoured rough things.

*Re-enter PAGE.*

*Rage.* Come, gentle master Slender, come; we stay for you.

*Sten.* I'll eat nothing; I thank you, Sir.

*Page.* By cock and pye, § you shall not choose, Sir: come, come.

*Sten.* Nay, pray you, lead the way.

*Page.* Come on, Sir.

*Sten.* Mistress Anne, yourself shall go first.

*Anne.* Not I, Sir; pray you keep on.

*Sten.* Truly, I will not go first; truly, in: I will not do you that wrong.

*Anne.* I pray you, Sir.

*Sten.* I'll rather be unmannerly than troublesome: you do yourself wrong, indeed, in.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—The same.

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS and SIMPLE.*

*Eva.* Go your ways, and ask of Doctor Calus's house, which is the way: and there dwells one mistress Quickly, which is in the manner of his dry nurse, or his cook, or his laundry, his washer, and his wringer.

*Simp.* Well, Sir.

*Eva.* Nay, it is better yet:—give her this letter; for it is a 'oman that altogether's acquaintance with mistress Anne Page; and the

\* Three set-to's, bouts, or hits.

† The name of a bear exhibited at Paris-Garden in Southwark.

‡ Harpessed all expression.

§ A common adjuration, and a corruption of the sacred Name in the old Moralities.

letter is, to desire and require her to solicit your master's desires to mistress Anne Page: I pray you, be gone; I will make an end of my dinner; there's pipkins and cheese to come.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter FALSTAFF, HOST, BARDOLPH, NYM, PISTOL, and ROBIN.*

*Fal.* Mine host of the Garter,—

*Host.* What says, my bully-rook? Speak scholarly, and wisely.

*Fal.* Truly, mine host, I must turn away some of my followers.

*Host.* Discard bully Hercules; cashier: let them wag; trot, trot.

*Fal.* I sit at ten pounds a week.

*Host.* Thou'rt an emperor, Cæsar, Keisar, and Pheezar, I will entertain Bardolph; he shall draw, he shall tap: said I well, Bully Hector?

*Fal.* Do so, good mine host.

*Host.* I have spoke; let him follow: Let me see thee froth, and lunc: I am at a word; follow.

*Fal.* Bardolph, follow him; a tapster is a good trade: An old cloak makes a new jerkin; a withered servingman, a fresh tapster; Go; adieu.

*Bard.* It is a life that I have desired; I will thrive. [*Exit BARD.*]

*Pist.* O base Gongarian \* wight! wilt thou the spigot wield?

*Nym.* He was gotten in drink: Is not the humour conceited? His mind is not heroic, and there's the humour of it.

*Fal.* I am glad I am so acquit of this tinder-box; his thefts were too open: his flitching was like an unskilful singer, he kept not time.

*Nym.* The good humour is, to steal at a minute's rest.

*Pist.* Convey, the wise it call: Steal! foh; a fco † for the phrase!

*Fal.* Well, Sirs, I am almost out at heels.

*Pist.* Why then let kibes ensue.

*Fal.* There is no remedy; I must money-catch; I must shift.

*Pist.* Young ravens must have food.

*Fal.* Which of you know Ford of this town?

*Pist.* I ken the wight; he is of substance good.

*Fal.* My honest lads, I will tell you what I am about.

*Pist.* Two yards, and more.

*Fal.* No quips now, Pistol; indeed I am in the waist two yards about: but I am now about no waste; I am about thrift. Briefly, I do mean to make love to Ford's wife; I spy entertainment in her; she discourages, she caives, she gives the leer of invitation: I can construe the action of her familiar style; and the hardest voice of her behaviour, to be English'd rightly, is, I am Sir John Falstaff's.

*Pist.* He hath studied her well, and translated her well; out of honesty into English.

*Nym.* The anchor is deep: will that humour pass?

*Fal.* Now, the report goes, she has all the rule of her husband's purse, she hath legions of angels. ‡

*Pist.* As many devils entertain; and, To her, boy, say I.

*Nym.* The humour rises; it is good: humour me the angels.

*Fal.* I have writ me here a letter to her: and here another to Page's wife; who even now gave me good eyes too, examin'd my parts with most judicious eyliads: sometimes the beam of her view gilded my foot, sometimes my portly belly.

*Pist.* Then did the sun on dung-hill shine.

*Nym.* I thank thee for that humour.

*Fal.* Oh! she did to course o'er my exteriors

For Hunarian. † Fig. ‡ Gold coin.

with such a greedy intention, that the appetite of her eye did seem to scorch me up like a burning glass! Here's another letter to her: she bears the purse too; she is a region in Guiana, all gold and bounty. I will be cheater\* to them both, and they shall be exchequers to me; they shall be my East and West Indies, and I will trade to them both. Go, hear thou this letter to mistress Page; and thou this to mistress Ford: we will thrive, lads, we will thrive.

*Pist.* Shall I Sir Pandarus of Troy become, And by my side wear steel? then, Lucifer take all!

*Nym.* I will run no base humour; here, take the humour letter; I will keep the 'baviour of reputation.

*Fal.* Hold, sirrah, [To ROB.] hear you these letters tightly; † Sail like my pinnacle to these golden shores.— Rogues, hence avant! vanish like hail-stones, go; [pack!

Trudge, plod, away, o' the hoof; seek shelter Falstaff will learn the humour of this age, French thrift, you rogues; myself, and skirred page. [*Exeunt FALSTAFF and ROBIN.*]

*Pist.* Let vultures gripe thy guts! for gourd and fullam ‡ holds,

And high and low beguile the rich and poor: Tester § I'll have in pouch, when thou shalt lack, Base Phrygian Turk!

*Nym.* I have operations in my head, which he humours of revenge.

*Pist.* Wilt thou revenge?

*Nym.* By welkin, and her star!

*Pist.* With wit, or steel?

*Nym.* With both the humours, I: I will discuss the humour of this love to Page,

*Pist.* And I to Ford shall eke unfold, How Falstaff, varlet vile,

His dove will prove, his gold will hold, And his soft couch defile.

*Nym.* My humour shall not cool: I will incense ¶ Page to deal with poison; I will possess him with yellowness, ¶ for the revolt of which is dangerous: that is my true humour.

*Pist.* Thou art the Mais of malcontents: I second thee; troop on. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—A Room in Dr. CAIUS's House.

*Enter Mrs. QUICKLY, SIMPLE, and RUGBY.*

*Quick.* What; John Rugby—I pray thee go to the casement, and see if you can see my master, master Doctor Caius, coming: if he do, i'faith, and find any body in the house, here will be an old abusing of God's patience and the king's English.

*Rug.* I'll go watch.

[*Exit RUGBY.*]

*Quick.* Go; and we'll have a posset for't soon at night, in faith, at the latter end of a sea-coal fire. An honest, willing, kind fellow, as ever servants shall come in house withal; and I warrant you, no tell-tale, nor no breed-bate: \*\* his worst fault is, that he is given to prayer; he is something peevish †† that way: but nobody but has his fault;—but let that pass. Peter Simple, you say your name is?

*Sim.* Ay, for fault of a better.

*Quick.* And master Slender's your master?

*Sim.* Ay, forsooth.

*Quick.* Does he not wear a great round beard, like a Glover's paring knife?

*Sim.* No, forsooth; he hath but a little wee face, with a little yellow beard; a Cain-coloured beard. ‡‡

*Quick.* A softly-sprighted man, is he not?

*Sim.* Ay, forsooth: but he is as tall §§ a man

\* Exchequer, an officer in the Exchequer.

† Cleverly. ‡ False deco.

‡ Sixpence I'll have in pocket.

¶ Instigate.

\*\* Strife.

†† In the old tapestries, Cain and Judas were represented with yellow beards.

‡ Jealousy.

‡‡ Foolish.

§§ Brave.



of his hands, as any is between this and his head; he hath fought with a warrener.\*

*Quick.* How say you?—Oh! I should remember him? Does he not hold up his head, as it were? and strut in his gait?

*Sim.* Yes, indeed, does he.

*Quick.* Well, heaven send Anne Page no worse fortune! Tell master parson Evans, I will do what I can for your master: Anne is a good girl, and I wish—

*Re-enter RUGBY.*

*Rug.* Out, alas! here comes my master.

*Quick.* We shall all be shent: † Kuu in here, good young man; go into this closet. [*Shouts SIMPLE in the closet.*] He will not stay long.—What, John Rugby! John, what, John, I say!—Go, John, go inquire for my master; I doubt he be not well, that he comes not home:—*and down, down, adown-a, &c.* [*Sings.*]

*Enter Doctor CAIUS.*

*Caius.* Vat is you sing? I do not like dese toys; Pray you, go and vetch me in my closet *un boitier verd*: a box, a green-a box; Do intend vat I speak? a green-a box.

*Quick.* Ay, forsooth, I'll fetch it you. I am glad he went not in himself; if he had found the young man, he would have been born-mad.

[*Aside.*]  
*Caius.* *Fe, se, se, le l ma foi, il fait fort chaud. Je m'en vais a la Cour,—la grand affaire.*

*Quick.* Is it this, Sir?

*Caius.* *Ouv; mette le au mon pocket; De-peche, quickly*!—Vere is dat knave, Rugby?

*Quick.* What, John Rugby! John?

*Rug.* Here, Sir.

*Caius.* You are John Rugby, and you are Jack Rugby: Come, take-a your rapier, and come after my heel to de court.

*Rug.* 'Tis ready, Sir, here in the *pouch*.

*Caius.* By my trot, I tarry too long:—Od's me! *Qu'a-y j'oublie?* dere is some simples in my closet, dat I vill not for the varld I shall leave behind.

*Quick.* Ah! me! he'll find the young man there, and be mad.

*Caius.* *O diable! diable!* vat is in my closet?—Villany? *larron!* [*Putting SIMPLE out.*] Rugby, my rapier.

*Quick.* Good master, be content.

*Caius.* Verefore shall I be content-a!

*Quick.* The young man is an honest man.

*Caius.* Vat shall de honest man do in my closet? dere is no honest man dat shall come in my closet.

*Quick.* I beseech you, be not so flegmatic; hear the truth of it: He came of an errand to me from parson Hugh.

*Caius.* Vell.

*Sim.* Ay, forsooth, to desire her to—

*Quick.* Peace, I pray you.

*Caius.* Peace-a your tongue:—*Speak-a your tale.*

*Sim.* To desire this honest gentlewoman, your maid, to speak a good word to mistress Anne Page for my master, in the way of marriage.

*Quick.* This is all, indeed, Sir; but I'll ne'er but my finger in the fire, and need not.

*Caius.* Sir Hugh send-a you?—Rugby, *battlez* me some paper:—Tarry you a little-a while.

[*Writes.*]

*Quick.* I am glad he is so quiet: if he had been thoroughly moved, you should have heard him so loud, and so melancholy;—But notwithstanding, man, I'll do your master what good I can: and the very year and the no is, the French Doctor, my master,—I may call him my master, look you, for I keep his house; and I wash, wring,

brew, bake, scour, dress meat and drink, make the beds, and do all myself;—

*Sim.* 'Tis a great charge, to come under one body's hand.

*Quick.* Are you advis'd o' that? you shall find it a great charge: and to be up early, and down late;—but notwithstanding, (to tell you in your ear; I would have no words of it;) my master himself is in love with mistress Anne Page: but notwithstanding that,—I know Anne's mind,—that's neither here nor there.

*Caius.* You Jack'nape; give-a dis letter to Sir Hugh; by gar, it is a challenge: I vill cut his throat in de park; and I vill teach a scurvy Jack-a nape priest to meddle or make:—you may be gone; it is not good you tarry here:—by gar, I vill cut all his two stones; by gar, he shall not have a stone to trow at his dog

[*Exit SIMPLE.*]

*Quick.* Alas, he speaks but for his friend.

*Caius.* It is no matter-a for dat;—do not you tell-a me dat I shall have Anne Page for myself!—by gar, I vill kill de Jack priest; and I have appointed mine host of *de Jarterie* to measure out weapon:—by gar, I vill myself have Anne Page.

*Quick.* Sir, the maid loves you, and all shall be well: we must give folks leave to prate: What the goujere!

*Caius.* Rugby, come to the court vit me!—By gar, if I have not Anne Page, I shall turn your head out of my door:—Follow my heels, Rugby.

[*Exeunt CAIUS and RUGBY.*]

*Quick.* You shall have An fools-head of your own. No, I know Anne's mind for that: never a woman in Windsor knows more of Anne's mind than I do; nor can do more than I do with her, I thank heaven.

*Fent.* [*Within.*] Who's within there, ho?

*Quick.* Who's there, I trow? Come near the house, I pray you.

*Enter FENTON.*

*Fent.* How now, good woman; how dost thou?

*Quick.* The better, that it pleases your good worship to ask.

*Fent.* What news? how does pretty mistress Anne?

*Quick.* In truth, Sir, and she is pretty, and honest, and gentle; and one that is your friend, I can tell you that by the way; I praise heaven for it.

*Fent.* Shall I do any good, thinkest thou? Shall I not lose my suit?

*Quick.* Troth, Sir, all is in his hands above: but notwithstanding, master Fenton, I'll be sworn on a book she loves you:—Have not your worship a wart about your eye?

*Fent.* Yes, marry, have I; what of that?

*Quick.* Well, thereby hangs a tail;—good faith, it is such another Nan:—but, I detest, † an honest maid as ever broke bread:—We had an hour's talk of that wart:—I shall never laugh but in that maid's company?—But, indeed she is given too much to allcholly; and musing: But for you—Well, go to.

*Fent.* Well, I shall see her to-day: Hold, there's money for thee; let me have thy voice in my behalf:—If thou see'st her before me, commend me—

*Quick.* Will I? I'faith, that we will: and I will tell your worship more of the wart, the next time we have confidence; and of other woovers.

*Fent.* Well, farewell; I am in great haste now.

[*Exit.*]

*Quick.* Farewell to your worship.—Truly, an honest gentleman; but Anne loves him not; for I know Anne's mind as well as another does:—Out upon't! what have I forgot?

[*Exit.*]

\* The keeper of a warren.

† Scolded, reprimanded.

\* Morbus Gallicus.

† She means, I protest.

‡ Melancholy.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—Before PAGE's House.

Enter MISTRESS PAGE, with a letter.

Mrs. Page. What! have I 'scaped love-letters in the holy-day time of my beauty, and am I now a subject for them? Let me see: [*Reads.*]

*Ask me no reason why I love you; for though love use reason for his precisian,\* he admit him not for his counsellor: You are not young, no more am I; go to then, there's sympathy: you are merry, so am I; Ha! ha! then there's more sympathy: you love sack, and so do I; Would you desire better sympathy? Let it suffice thee, mistress Page, (at the least if the love of a soldier can suffice,) that I love thee. I will not say, pity me, 'tis not a soldier-like phrase; but I say, love me. By me,*

*Thine own true knight,  
By day or night,  
Or any kind of light,  
With all his might,  
For thee to fight,*

John Falstaff.

What a Herod of Jewry is this? O wicked, wicked, world!—one that is well nigh worn to pieces with age, to show himself a young gallant! What an unweighed behaviour hath this Flemish drunkard picked (with the devil's name) out of my conversation, that he dares in this manner as-say me? Why, he hath not been thrice in my company!—What should I say to him?—I was then frugal of my mirth:—heaven forgive me!—Why, I'll exhibit a bill in the parliament for the putting down of men. How shall I be revenged on him? for revenged I will be, as sure as his guts are made of puddings.

Enter MISTRESS FORD.

Mrs. Ford. Mistress Page! trust me, I was going to your house.

Mrs. Page. And, trust me, I was coming to you. You look very ill.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, I'll ne'er believe that; I have to show to the contrary.

Mrs. Page. Faith, but you do, in my mind.

Mrs. Ford. Well, I do then; yet, I say, I could show you to the contrary: O mistress Page, give me some counsel!

Mrs. Page. What's the matter, woman?

Mrs. Ford. O woman, if it were not for one trifling respect, I could come to such honour!

Mrs. Page. Hang the trifler, woman; take the honour: What is it?—dispend with trifles;—what is it?

Mrs. Ford. If I would but go to hell for an eternal moment, or so, I could be knighted.

Mrs. Page. What?—thou liest!—Sir Alice Ford!—These knights will hack; and so thou shouldst not alter the article of thy gentry.

Mrs. Ford. We burn day-light:—here, read, read;—perceive how I might be knighted.—I shall think the worse of fat men, as long as I have an eye to make difference of men's liking: And yet he would not swear; praised women's modesty: and gave such orderly and well-behaved reproof to all uncomeliness, that I would have sworn his disposition would have gone to the truth of his words: but they do no more adhere and keep place together, than the hundredth Psalm to the tune of *Green sleeves*. What tempest, I trow, threw this whale, with so many tons of oil in his belly, ashore at Windsor? How shall I be revenged on him? I think the best way were to entertain him with hope, till the wicked fire of lust have melted him in his own grease.—Did you ever hear the like?

Mrs. Page. Letter for letter; but that the name of Page and Ford differs!—To thy great

comfort in this mystery of ill opinions, here's the twin-brother of thy letter: but let thine inherit first; for, I protest, mine never shall. I warrant, he hath a thousand of these letters, writ with blank space for different names, (sure more,) and these are of the second edition: He will print them out of doubt: for he cares not what he puts into the press, when he would put us two. I had rather be a giantess, and lie under mount Pelion. Well, I will find you twenty lascivious turtles, ere one chaste man.

Mrs. Ford. Why, this is the very same; the very hand, the very words: What doth he think of us?

Mrs. Page. Nay, I know not: It makes me almost ready to wrangle with mine own honesty. I'll entertain myself like one that I am not acquainted withal; for, sure, unless he know some strain in me that I know not myself, he would never have boarded me in this fury.

Mrs. Ford. Boarding, call you it? I'll be sure to keep him above deck.

Mrs. Page. So will I; if he come under my hatches, I'll never to sea again. Let's be revenged on him: let's appoint him a meeting; give him a show of comfort in his suit; and lead him on with a fine baited devil, till he hath pawn'd his horses to mine Host of the Garter.

Mrs. Ford. Nay, I will consent to act any villany against him, that may not sully the chariness\* of our honesty. Oh! that my husband saw this letter! it would give eternal food to his jealousy.

Mrs. Page. Why, look, where he comes; and my good man too: he's as fat from jealousy, as I am from giving him cause; and that, I hope, is an unmeasurable distance.

Mrs. Ford. You are the happier woman.

Mrs. Page. Let's consult together against this greasy knight: Come hither. [*Tiny active.*]

Enter FORD, PISTOL, PAGE, and NYM.

Ford. Well, I hope, it be not so.

Pist. Hope is a curtain'd dog in some affairs: Sir John affects thy wife.

Ford. Why, Sir, my wife is not young.

Pist. He woos both high and low, both rich and poor,

Both young and old, one with another, Ford; He loves thy gally-mawry; † Ford, perpend. ‡

Ford. Love my wife!

Pist. With liver burning hot: Prevent, or go thou,

Like Sir Actæon he, with Ringwood at thy heels: Oh! odious is the name!

Ford. What name, Sir?

Pist. The horn, I say: Farewell. Take heed, ere summer comes, or cuckoo-birds do sing.—

Away, Sir corporal Nym.—

Believe it, Page; he speaks sense.

[*Exit PISTOL.*]

Ford. I will be patient; I will find out this.

Nym. And this is true. [*To PAGE.*] I like not the humour of lying. He hath wronged me in some humours; I should have borne the humoured letter to her: but I have a sword, and it shall bite upon my necessity. He loves you wife; there's the short and the long. My name is corporal Nym; I speak, and I avouch. 'Tis true:—my name is Nym, and Falstaff loves your wife.—Adieu! I love not the humour of bread and cheese; and there's the humour of it. Adieu.

[*Exit NYM.*]

Page. The humour of it, quoth'at here's a fellow frights humour out of its wits.

Ford. I will seek out Falstaff.

Page. I never heard such a dawling affecting rogue.

Ford. If I do find it, well.

\* Most probably Shakspeare wrote physician.

\* Caution.

‡ A medley.

† A dog that misses his game.

‡ Consider.

*Page.* I will not believe such a Catalan, though the priest o' the town commended him for a true man.

*Ford.* 'Twas a good sensible fellow : Well.

*Page.* How now, Meg ?

*Mrs. Page.* Whither go you, George ?—Hark you.

*Mrs. Ford.* How now, sweet Frank ? why art thou melancholy ?

*Ford.* I melancholy ! I am not melancholy.—Get you home, go.

*Mrs. Ford.* 'Faith, thou hast some crotchets in thy head now.—Will you go, mistress Page ?

*Mrs. Page.* Have with you.—You'll come to dinner, George !—Look, who comes yonder : she shall be our messenger to this paltry knight.

[*Aside to Mrs. Ford.*]

*Enter Mistress QUICKLY.*

*Mrs. Ford.* Trust me, I thought on her : she'll fit it.

*Mrs. Page.* You are come to see my daughter Anne ?

*Quick.* Ay, forsooth ; And, I pray, how does good mistress Anne ?

*Mrs. Page.* Go in with us, and see ; we have an hour's talk with you.

[*Exeunt Mrs. Page, Mrs. Ford, and Mrs. QUICKLY.*]

*Page.* How now, master Ford ?

*Ford.* You heard what this knave told me ; did you not ?

*Page.* Yes ; and you heard what the other told me ?

*Ford.* Do you think there is truth in them ?

*Page.* Hang 'em, slaves ! I do not think the knight would offer it : but these that accuse him in his intent towards our wives, are a yoke of his discarded men ; very rogues, now they be out of service.

*Ford.* Were they his men ?

*Page.* Marry, were they.

*Ford.* I do not misdoubt my wife ; for that.—Does he lie at the Garter ?

*Page.* Ay, marry, does he. If he should intend this voyage towards my wife, I would turn her loose to him : and what he gets more of her than sharp words, let it lie on my head.

*Ford.* I do not misdoubt my wife ; but I would be loath to turn them together : A man may be too confident : I would have nothing lie on my head : I cannot be thus satisfied.

*Page.* Look, where my ranting host of the Garter comes : there is either liquor in his pate, or money in his purse, when he looks so merrily.—How now, mine host ?

*Enter Host and SHALLOW.*

*Host.* How now, bully-rook ? thou'rt a gentleman ; cavalero-justice, I say.

*Shal.* I follow, mine host, I follow.—Good even, and twenty, good master Page ! Master Page, will you go with us ? we have sport in hand.

*Host.* Tell him, cavalero-justice ; tell him bully-rook.

*Shal.* Sir, there is a fray to be fought between Sir Hugh the Welsh priest, and Caius the French doctor.

*Ford.* Good mine host o' the Garter, a word with you.

*Host.* What say'st thou, bully-rook ?

[*They go aside.*]

*Shal.* Will you [*to Page*] go with us to behold it ? my merry host hath had the measuring of their weapons ; and, I think, he hath appointed them contrary places : for, believe me, I bear the parson is no jester. Hark, I will tell you what our sport shall be.

*Host.* Hast thou no suit against my knight, my guest-cavalier ?

*Ford.* None, I protest : but I'll give you a potful of burnt sack to give me recourse to him,

\* The Chinese, or sharpers, were called Catalans.

and tell him, my name is Brook ; only for a jest.

*Host.* My hand, bully : thou shalt have egress and regress ; and I will ? and thy name shall be Brook : It is a merry knight.—Will you go on, hearts ?

*Shal.* Have with you, mine host.

*Page.* I have heard, the Frenchman hath good skill in his rapier.

*Shal.* But, Sir, I could have told you more : In these times you stand on distance, your passess, stocondors, and I know not what : 'tis the heart, master Page ; 'tis here, 'tis here. I have seen the time, with my long sword, I would have made you four tall fellows skip like rats.

*Host.* Here, boys, here, here ! shall we wag ?

*Page.* Have with you :—I had rather hear them scold than fight.

[*Exeunt Host, SHALLOW, and Page.*]

*Ford.* Though Page be a secure fool, and stands so firmly on his wife's frailty, yet I cannot put off my opinion so easily : She was in his company at Page's house ; and what they made there I know not. Well, I will look further into't : and I have a disguise to sound Falstaff : If I find her honest, I lose not my labour ; if she be otherwise, 'tis labour well bestowed.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter FALSTAFF and PISTOL.*

*Fal.* I will not lend thee a penny.

*Pist.* Why, then the world's mine oyster, Which I with sword will open.

I will retort the sum in requipage :

*Fal.* Not a penny. I have been content, Sir, you should lay my countenance to pawn : I have grated upon my good friends for three reprieves for you and your coach fellow ; Nym ; or else you had looked through the grate like a gemmy of baboons. I am damned in hell for swearing to gentlemen my friends, you were good soldiers, and tall fellows : and when mistress Bridget lost the handle of her fan, I took't upon mine honour, thou hadst it not.

*Pist.* Didst thou not share ? hadst thou not fifteen pence ?

*Fal.* Reason, you rogue, reason : Think't thou I'll endanger my soul gratis ? At a word, hang no more about me, I am no gibbet for you :—go.—A short knife and a throng :—to your manor of Pick't-hatch, go.—You'll not bear a letter for me, you rogue !—you stand upon your honour !—Why, thou unconfinable baseness, it is as much as I can do, to keep the terms of mine honour precise. I, I, I myself sometimes, leaving the fear of heaven on the left hand, and hiding mine honour in my necessity, am fain to shuffle, to hedge, and to lurch ; and yet you, rogue, will enconceer your rags, your cat-a-mountain looks, your red-lattice phrases, and your bold-beating oaths, under the shelter of your honour ! You will not do it, you ?

*Pist.* I do relent ; What would'st thou more of man ?

*Enter ROBIN.*

*Rob.* Sir, here's a woman would speak with you.

*Fal.* Let her approach.

*Enter Mistress QUICKLY.*

*Quick.* Give your worship good-morrow.

\* Did.

† There was an old proverb, signifying that the mayor of Northampton, on account of the distance of that town from the sea, was obliged to open oysters at the sword's level from his nose.

‡ Pay you again in stolen goods.

§ Draws along with you. ¶ To cut purses in a crowd.

¶ Pick't-hatch was in Clerkenwell.

\*\* Protect.

†† Ais-ho-see.

*Fal.* Good-morrow, good wife.

*Quick.* Not so, an't please your worship.

*Fal.* Good maid, then.

*Quick.* I'll be sworn; as my mother was, the first hour I was born.

*Fal.* I do believe the swearer: What with me?

*Quick.* Shall I vouchsafe your worship a word or two?

*Fal.* Two thousand, fair woman; and I'll vouchsafe thee the hearing.

*Quick.* There is one mistress Ford, Sir:—I pray, come a little nearer this ways:—I myself dwell with master doctor Caius.

*Fal.* Well, on: Mistress Ford, you say,—

*Quick.* Your worship says very true: I pray your worship, come a little nearer this ways.

*Fal.* I warrant thee nobody hears,—mine own people, mine own people.

*Quick.* Are they so? Heaven bless them, and make them his servants!

*Fal.* Well: mistress Ford:—what of her?

*Quick.* Why, Sir, she's a good creature. Lord, lord! your worship's a wanton: Well, heaven forgive you, and all of us, I pray!

*Fal.* Mistress Ford:—come, mistress Ford,—

*Quick.* Marry, this is the short and the long of it; you have brought her into such a canaries,\* as 'tis wonderful. The best courtier of them all, when the court lay at Windsor, could never have brought her to such a canary. Yet there has been knights, and lords, and gentlemen, with their coaches: I warrant you, coach after coach, letter after letter, gift after gift; smelling so sweetly, (all musk,) and so rustling, I warrant you, in silk and gold; and in such alligant terms; and in such wine and sugar of the best, and the fairest, that would have won any woman's heart; and, I warrant you, they could never get an eye-wink of her.—I had myself twenty angels given me this morning: but I defy all angels, (in any such sort, as they say,) but in the way of honesty:—and, I warrant you, they could never get her so much as sip on a cup with the proudest of them all: and yet there has been carous, nay, which is more, pensioners; but, I warrant you, all is one with her.

*Fal.* But what says she to me? be brief, my good she Mercury.

*Quick.* Marry, she hath received your letter; for the which she thanks you a thousand times: and she gives you to notify, that her husband will be absence from his house between ten and eleven.

*Fal.* Ten and eleven?

*Quick.* Ay, forsooth; and then you may come and see the picture, she says, that you wot of;—master Ford, her husband, will be from home. Alas! the sweet woman leads an ill life with him; he's a very jealous man; she leads a very frampold† life with him, good heart.

*Fal.* Ten and eleven: Woman, commend me to her: I will not fail her.

*Quick.* Why, you say well: But I have another messenger to your worship: Mistress Page hath her hearty commendations to you too;—and let me tell you in your ear, she's as tartuous a civil modest wife, and one (I tell you) that will not miss your morning nor evening prayer, as any is in Windsor, who'er be the other: and she bade me tell your worship, that her husband is seldom from home; but, she hopes, there will come a time. I never knew a woman so dote upon a man; surely, I think you have charms, la; yes, in truth.

*Fal.* Not I, I assure thee; setting the attraction of my good parts aside, I have no other charms.

*Quick.* Blessing on your heart for't!

*Fal.* But, I pray thee, tell me this: has Ford's wife, and Page's wife, acquainted each other how they love me?

\* A mistake of Mrs. Quickly's for quarandaries.  
† Knew.

‡ Fretful, peevish.

*Quick.* That were a jest, indeed!—they have not so little grace, I hope;—that were a trick, indeed! But mistress Page would desire you to send her your little page of all loves;\* her husband has a marvellous infection to the little page: and, truly, master Page is an honest man. Never a wife in Windsor leads a better life than she does; do what she will, say what she will, take all, pay all, go to bed when she list, rise when she list, all is as she will; and, truly, she deserves it; for if there be a kind woman in Windsor, she is one. You must send her your page; no remedy.

*Fal.* Why, I will.

*Quick.* Nay, but do so then: and, look you, he may come and go between you both; and, in any case, have a nay-word† that you may know one another's mind, and the boy never need to understand anything; for 'tis not good that children should know any wickedness: old folks, you know, have discretion, as they say, and know the world.

*Fal.* Fare thee well: commend me to them both: there's my purse; I am yet thy debtor.—Boy, go along with this woman.—This news distracts me! [Exit QUICKLY and ROBIN.]

*Pist.* This punk is one of Cupid's carriers:—Clap on your sails; pursue, up with your fights; Give fire; she is my prize, or ocean whelm them all! [Exit PISTOL.]

*Fal.* Say'st thou so, old Jack? go thy ways; I'll make more of thy old body than I have done. Will they yet look after thee? Wilt thou, after the expense of so much money, be now a gainer? Good body, I thank thee: Let them say, 'tis grossly done; so it be fairly done, no matter.

Enter BARDOLPH.

*Bard.* Sir John, there's one master Brook below would fain speak with you, and be acquainted with you; and hath sent your worship a morning's draught of sack.

*Fal.* Brook is his name?

*Bard.* Ay, Sir.

*Fal.* Call him in. [Exit BARDOLPH.] Such Brooks are welcome to me, that o'erflow such liquor. Ah! ha! mistress Ford and mistress Page, have I encompassed you? go to, via!‡

Re-enter BARDOLPH with FORD disguised.

*Ford.* Bless you, Sir.

*Fal.* And you, Sir: Would you speak with me?

*Ford.* I make bold to press with so little preparation upon you.

*Fal.* You're welcome; What's your will? Give us leave, drawer. [Exit BARDOLPH.]

*Ford.* Sir, I am a gentleman that have spent much; my name is Brook.

*Fal.* Good master Brook, I desire more acquaintance of you.

*Ford.* Good Sir John, I sue for yours: not to charge you; for I must let you understand, I think myself in better plight for a lender than you are: the which hath something embolden'd me to this unseasoned intrusion; for they say, if money go before, all ways do lie open.

*Fal.* Money is a good soldier, Sir, and will on.

*Ford.* Troth, and I have a bag of money here troubles me; if you will help me to bear it, Sir John, take all, or half, for easing me of the carriage.

*Fal.* Sir, I know not how I may deserve to be your porter.

*Ford.* I will tell you, Sir, if you will give me the hearing.

*Fal.* Speak, good master Brook; I shall be glad to be your servant.

*Ford.* Sir, I hear you are a scholar,—I will be brief with you;—and you have been a man long known to me, though I had never so good

\* By all means.

† A watchword.

‡ A cant phrase of exultation.

means, as desire, to make myself acquainted with you. I shall discover a thing to you, wherein I must very much lay open mine own imperfection: but, good Sir John, as you have one eye upon my follies, as you hear them unfolded, turn another into the register of your own; that I may pass with a reproof the easier, sith \* you yourself know, how easy it is to be such an offender.

*Fal.* Very well, Sir; proceed.

*Ford.* There is a gentlewoman in this town, her husband's name is Ford.

*Fal.* Well Sir.

*Ford.* I have long loved her and, I protest to you, bestowed much on her; followed her with a dotting observance; engrossed opportunities to meet her; I see'd every slight occasion, that could but niggardly give me sight of her; not only bought many presents to give her, but have given largely to many, to know what she would have given; briefly, I have pursued her as love hath pursued me; which hath been, on the wing of all occasions. But whatsoever I have merited, either in my mind, or in my means, need, † I am sure, I have received none; unless experience be a jewel: that I have purchased at an infinite rate; and that hath taught me to say this.

*Love like a shadow flies, when substance love pursues,  
Pursuing that that flies, and flying what pursues:*

*Fal.* Have you received no promise of satisfaction at her hands?

*Ford.* Never.

*Fal.* Have you importuned her to such a purpose?

*Ford.* Never.

*Fal.* Of what quality was your love then?

*Ford.* Like a fair house, built upon another man's ground; so that I have lost my edifice by mistaking the place where I erected it.

*Fal.* To what purpose have you unfolded this to me?

*Ford.* When I have told you that, I have told you all. Some say, that, though she appear honest to me, yet, in other places, she enlargeth her mirth so far, that there is shrewd construction made of her. Now, Sir John, here is the heart of my purpose: You are a gentleman of excellent breeding, admirable discourse, of great admittance, ‡ authentic in your place and person, generally allowed § for your many warlike, court-like, and learned preparations.

*Fal.* O Sir!

*Ford.* Believe it, for you know it:—There is money; spend it, spend it; spend more; spend all I have; only give me so much of your time in exchange of it, as to lay an amiable siege to the honesty of this Ford's wife: use your art of wooing, win her to consent to you; if any man may, you may as soon as any.

*Fal.* Would it apply well to the vehemency of your affection, that I should win what you would enjoy? Methinks, you prescribe to yourself very preposterously.

*Ford.* O, understand my drift! she dwells so securely on the excellency of her honour, that the folly of my soul dares not present itself; she is too bright to be looked against. Now, could I come to her with any detection in my hand, my desires had instance and argument to commend themselves; I could drive her then from the ward ¶ of her purity, her reputation, her marriage-vow, and a thousand other her defences, which now are too strongly embattled against me: What say you to't, Sir John?

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will first make bold with your money; next, give me your hand; and last, as I am a gentleman, you shall, if you will, enjoy Ford's wife.

*Ford.* O good Sir!

*Fal.* Master Brook, I say you shall.

*Ford.* Want no money, Sir John, you shall want none.

*Fal.* Want no mistress Ford, master Brook, you shall want none. I shall be with her (I may tell you,) by her own appointment; even as you came in to me, her assistant, or go-between, parted from me: I say, I shall be with her between ten and eleven; for at that time the jealous rascally knave her husband will be forth. Come you to me at night: you shall know how I speed.

*Ford.* I am blest in your acquaintance. Do you know Ford, Sir?

*Fal.* Hang him, poor cuckoldly knave! I know him not:—yet I wrong him, to call him poor; they say, the jealous wittily knave hath masses of money; for the which his wife seems to me well-favoured. I will use her as the key of the cuckoldly rogue's coffer; and there's my harvest-home.

*Ford.* I would you knew Ford, Sir; that you might avoid him, if you saw him.

*Fal.* Hang him, mechanical salt-butter rogue! I will stare him out of his wits; I will awe him with my cudgel: it shall hang like a meteor o'er the cuckold's horns; master Brook, thou shalt know I will predominate o'er the peasant, and thou shalt lie with his wife.—Come to me soon at night:—Ford's a knave, and I will aggravate his stile; \* thou, master Brook, shalt know him for a knave and cuckold:—come to me soon at night.

*Fal.* What a damn'd Epicurean rascal is this!—My heart is ready to crack with impatience.—Who says, this is improvident jealousy? My wife hath sent to him, the hour is fixed, the match is made. Would any man have thought this?—See the hell of having a false woman! my bed shall be abused, my coffers ransacked, my reputation gnawn at; and I shall not only receive this villainous wrong, but stand under the adoption of abominable terms, and by him that does me this wrong. Terms! names!—Amalmon sounds well, Lucifer, well; Barbasen, well; yet they are devils' additions, the names of fiends: but cuckold! wittol! cuckold! the devil himself hath not such a name. Page is an ass, a secure ass; he will trust his wife, he will not be jealous: I will rather trust a Fleming with my butter, parson Hugh the Welshman with my cheese, an Irishman with my aquavite; Lottie, or a thief to walk my ambling gelding, than my wife with herself: then she plots, then she ruminates, then she devises; and what they think in their hearts they may effect, they will break their hearts but they will effect. Heaven be praised for my jealousy!—Eleven o'clock the hour:—I will prevent this, detect my wife, be revenged on Falstaff, and laugh at Page. I will about it; better three hours too soon, than a minute too late. Fie, fie, fie! cuckold! cuckold! cuckold! *Exit.*

### SCENE III.—Windsor Park.

Enter CAIUS and RUGBY.

*Caius.* Jack Rugby!

*Rug.* Sir.

*Caius.* 'Tis de clock, Jack?

*Rug.* 'Tis past the hour, Sir, that Sir Hugh promised to meet.

*Caius.* By gar, he has saved his soul, dat he is no come; he has pray his Fible vell, dat he is no come; by gar, Jack Rugby, he is dead already, if he be come.

*Rug.* He is wise, Sir; he knew your worship would kill him if he came.

*Caius.* By gar, de herring is no dead, so as I will kill him. Take your rapier, Jack; I will tell you how I will kill him.

*Rug.* Alas, Sir, I cannot fence.

\* Since. † Reward. ‡ In the greatest companies. § Guard.

¶ Add to his titles. † Contested cuckold. ‡ Urquhough.

*Caius.* Villany, take your rapier.  
*Rug.* Forbear; here's company.

*Enter Host, SHALLOW, SLENDER, and PAGE.*

*Host.* 'Bless thee, bully doctor.

*Shal.* 'Save you, master doctor Caius.

*Page.* Now, good master doctor!

*Slend.* Give you good-morrow, Sir.

*Caius.* Vat be all you, one, two, tree, four, come for?

*Host.* To see thee fight, to see thee foin,\* to see thee traverse, to see thee here, to see thee there: to see thee pass thy punto, thy stock, thy reverse, thy distance, thy montant.† Is he dead, my Ethiopian? is he dead, my Francisco? ha, bully! What says my Esculapius? my Galeo? my heart of elder? ha! is he dead, bully State? is he dead?

*Caius.* By gar, he is de coward Jack priest of the world; he is not show his face.

*Host.* Thou art a Castilian; kuug, Urinal! Hector of Greece, my boy!

*Caius.* I pray you, bull witness that me have stay six or seven, two, tree hours for him, and he is no come.

*Shal.* He is the wiser man, master doctor: he is a curer of souls, and you a carer of bodies; if you should fight, you go against the hair of your professions: is it not true, master Page?

*Page.* Master Shallow, you have yourself been a great tighter, though now a man of peace.

*Shal.* Bodykins, master Page, though I now be old, and of the peace, if I see a sword out, my finger itches to make one: though we are justices, and doctors, and churchmen, master Page, we have some salt of our youth in us; we are the sons of women, master Page.

*Page.* 'Tis true, master Shallow.

*Shal.* It will be found so, master Page. Master doctor Caius, I am come to fetch you home. I am sworn of the peace; you have showed yourself a wise physician, and Sir Hugh hath shown himself a wise and patient churchman: you must go with me, master doctor.

*Host.* Pardon, guest justice:—A word, monsieur Muck-water,‡

*Caius.* Muck-water! vat is dat?

*Host.* Muck-water, in our English tongue is valour, bully.

*Caius.* By gar, then I have as much muck-water as de Englishman!—Scurry jack-dog-priest! by gar, me vill cut his ears.

*Host.* He will clapper-claw thee tightly, bully.

*Caius.* Clapper-de-claw! vat is dat?

*Host.* That is, he will make thee amends.

*Caius.* By gar, me do look, he shall clapper-de-claw me; for, by gar, me vill have it.

*Host.* And I will provoke him to't, or let him wag.

*Caius.* Me tank you for dat.

*Host.* And moreover, bully,—But first, master guest, and master Page, and eke cavalero Slender, go you through the town to Frogmore.

[*Aside to them.*]

*Page.* Sir Hugh is there, is he?

*Host.* He is there: see what humour he is in; and I will bring the doctor about by the fields; will it do well?

*Shal.* We will do it.

*Page.* *Shal.* and *Slend.* Adieu, good master doctor.

[*Exeunt PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.*]

*Caius.* By gar, me vill kill de priest; for he speak for a jack-an-ape to Anne Page.

*Host.* Let him die: but, first, breathe thy impatience; throw cold water on thy cholier: go about the fields with me through Frogmore; I will bring thee where Mrs. Anne Page is at a farm-house a feasting; and thou shalt woo her; Cry'd game, said I well?

*Caius.* By gar, me tank you for dat: by gar, I love you; and I shall procure-a you de good

guest, de carl, de knight, de lords, de gentlemen, my patients.

*Host.* For the which, I will be thy adversary towards Anne Page; said I well?

*Caius.* By gar, 'tis good; vell said.

*Host.* Let us wag then.

*Caius.* Come at my heels, Jack Rugby.

[*Exeunt*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—A Field near Frogmore.

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS, and SIMPLE.*

*Eva.* I pray you now, good master Slander's serving-man, and friend Simple by your name, which way have you looked for master Caius, that calls himself *Doctor of Physic*?

*Sim.* Marry, Sir, the city-ward, the park-ward, every way; old Windsor way, and every way, but the town way.

*Eva.* I most feheemently desire you, you will also look that way.

*Sim.* I will, Sir.

*Eva.* 'Pless my soul! how full of cholers I am, and tremping of mind!—I shall be glad, if he have deceived me:—how melancholies I am! I will kuug his urnals about his knave's costard,\* when I have good opportunities for the 'ork:—'bless my soul!

[*Sings.*]

To shallow rivers, to whose falls  
Melodious birds sing madrigals;  
There will we make our beds of roses,  
And a thousand fragrant posies.

To shallow——

Mercy on me! I have a great dispositions to cry.

Melodious birds sing madrigals:—  
When as I sat in Babylon,†  
And a thousand fragrant posies.

To shallow——

*Sim.* Yonder he is coming, this way, Sir Hugh.

*Eva.* He's welcome:—

To shallow rivers, to whose falls——

Heaven prosper the right!—What weapons is he?

*Sim.* No weapons, Sir: There comes my master, master Shallow, and another gentleman from Frogmore, over the stile, this way.

*Eva.* Pray you, give me my gown; or else keep it in your arms.

*Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.*

*Shal.* How now, master parson? Good morrow, good Sir Hugh. Keep a gamester from the dice, and a good student from his book, and it is wonderful.

*Slend.* Ah! sweet Anne Page!

*Page.* Save you, good Sir Hugh!

*Eva.* 'Pless you from his mercy sake, all of you!

*Shal.* What! the sword and the word! do you study them both, master parson?

*Page.* And youthful still, in your doublet and hose, this raw rheumatick day?

*Eva.* There is reasons and causes for it.

*Page.* We are come to you, to do a good office, master parson.

*Eva.* Fery well: What is it?

*Page.* Yonder is a most reverend gentleman, who belike, having received wrong by some person, is at most odds with his own gravity and patience, that ever you saw.

*Shal.* I have lived fourscore years and upward; I never heard a man of his place, gravity, and learning, so wide of his own respect.

*Eva.* What is he?

\* Fence.

† Cant word for Spaniard.

‡ Terms in fencing.

§ Drain of a daughill.

\* Head. † Babylon, the first line of the 139th Psalm.

*Page.* I think you know him; master doctor Caius, the renowned French physician.

*Err.* Got's will, and his passion of my heart! I had as lief you would tell me of a mess of porridge.

*Page.* Why?

*Err.* He has no more knowledge in Illobrocat and Galen,—and he is a knave besides; a cowardly knave as you would desire to be acquainted withal.

*Page.* I warrant you, he's the man should fight with him.

*Slen.* O sweet Anne Page!

*Shal.* It appears so, by his weapons:—Keep them asunder;—here comes doctor Caius.

*Enter Host, Caius, and Rugby.*

*Page.* Nay, good master parson, keep in your weapon.

*Shal.* So do you, good master doctor.

*Host.* Disarm them, and let them question; let them keep their limbs whole, and hack our English.

*Caius.* I pray you, let-a me speak a word vit your ear: Verefore vill you not meet a-me?

*Eva.* Pray you, use your patience: In good time.

*Caius.* By gar, you are de coward, de Jack dog, John ape.

*Era.* Pray you, let us not be laughing-stoge to other men's humours: I desire you in friendship, and I will one way or other make you amends;—I will knog your urnals about your knave's cogcomb, for missing your meetings and appointments.

*Caius.* *Diablo!*—Jack Rugby,—mine *Host de Jarterre*, have I not stay for him, to kill him? have I not, at de place I did appoint?

*Era.* As I am a Christians soul, now, look you, this is the place appointed; I'll be judgment by mine Host of the Garter.

*Host.* Peace, I say, Guallia and Gaul, French and Welsh; soul-curer and body-curer.

*Caius.* Ay, dat is very good! excellent!

*Host.* Peace, I say; hear mine host of the Garter. Am I politic? am I subtle? am I a Machiavel? Shall I lose my doctor? no; he gives me the potions, and the motions. Shall I lose my parson? my priest? my Sir Hugh? no; he gives me the proverbs and the noverbs. —Give me thy hand, terrestrial; so:—Give me thy hand, celestial; so.—Boys of art, I have deceived you both; I have directed you to wrong places: your hearts are mighty, your skins are whole, and let burnt sack be the issue. Come, lay their swords to pawn:—Follow me, lad of peace; follow, follow, follow.

*Shal.* Trust me, a mad host:—Follow, gentlemen, follow.

*Slen.* O sweet Anne Page!

*[Exeunt SHAL, SLEN, PAGE, and HOST.]*

*Caius.* Ha! do I perceive dat? have you make a de sot\* of us? ha, ha!

*Era.* This is well; he has made us his vouting-stog.†—I desire you, that we may be friends; and let us knog our prains together, to be revenge on this same scall, scurry, cogging companion, the host of the Garter.

*Caius.* By gar, vit all my heart; he promise to bring me vere is Anne Page: by gar, he deceive me too.

*Era.* Well, I will smite his noddles:—Pray you, follow. *[Exeunt.]*

## SCENE II.—The Street in Windsor.

*Enter Mistress PAGE and ROBIN.*

*Mrs. Page.* Nay, keep your way, little galant; you were wout to be a follower, but now you are a leader: Whether had you rather, lead mine eyes, or eye your master's heels?

*Rob.* I had rather, forsooth, go before you like a man, than follow him like a dwarf.

*Mrs. Page.* O you are a flattering boy; now I see, you'll be a courtier.

*Enter FORD.*

*Ford.* Well met, mistress Page: Whither go you?

*Mrs. Page.* Truly, Sir, to see your wife: Is she at home?

*Ford.* Ay; and as idle as she may hang together, for want of company: I think, if your husbands were dead, you two would marry.

*Mrs. Page.* Be sure of that,—two other husbands.

*Ford.* Where had you this pretty weather-cock?

*Mrs. Page.* I cannot tell what the dickens his name is my husband had him of: what do you call your knight's name, sirrah?

*Rob.* Sir John Falstaff.

*Ford.* Sir John Falstaff!

*Mrs. Page.* He, he; I can never hit on's name. There is such a league between my good man and he!—Is your wife at home, indeed?

*Ford.* Indeed she is.

*Mrs. Page.* By your leave, Sir;—I am sick, till I see her.

*[Exeunt Mrs. PAGE, ROBIN, and ROBIN.]*

*Ford.* Has Page any brains? hath he any eyes? hath he any thinking? Sure, they sleep; he hath no use of them. Why, this boy will carry a letter twenty miles, as easy as a cannon will shoot point-blank twelve score. He pieces-out his wife's inclination, he gives her folly motion, and advantage: and now she's going to my wife, and Falstaff's boy with her. A man may hear this shower sung in the wind!—and Falstaff's boy with her!—Good plots!—they are laid; and our revolted wives share damnation together. Well; I will take him, then torture my wife, pluck the borrowed veil of modesty from the so seeming\* mistress Page, divulge Page himself for a secure and wilful Actæon; and to these violent proceedings all my neighbours shall cry aim.† *[Clock strikes.]* The clock gives me my cue, and my assurance bids me search; there I shall find Falstaff: I shall be rather praised for this, than mocked; for it is as positive as the earth is firm, that Falstaff is there: I will go.

*Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, SLENDER, HOST, Sir HUGH EVANS, CAIUS, and RUGBY.*

*Shal.* Page, &c. Well met, master Ford.

*Ford.* Trust me, a good knot: I have good cheer at home; and, I pray you, all go with me.

*Shal.* I must excuse myself, master Ford.

*Slen.* And so must I, Sir; we have appointed to dine with mistress Anne, and I would not break with her for more money than I'll speak of.

*Shal.* We have lingered about a match between Anne Page and my cousin Slender, and this day we shall have our answer.

*Slen.* I hope I have your good-will, father Page.

*Page.* You have, master Slender; I stand wholly for you:—but my wife, master doctor, is for you altogether.

*Caius.* Ay, by gar; and de maid is love-a me; my nurrah-a Quickly tell me so much.

*Host.* What say you to young master Ten-ton? he capers, he dances, he has eyes of youth, he writes verses, he speaks holiday, † he smells April and May: he will carry't, he will carry't; 'tis in his buttons; he will carry't.

*Page.* Not by my consent, I promise you. The gentleman is of no having: ‡ he kept company with the wild Prince and Poins; he is of too high a region, he knows too much. No, he shall not knit a knot in his fortunes with the finger of my abundance: if he take her, let him

\* Fool.

† Flouting-stock.

\* Spectious.

† Out of the common style.

‡ Shall encourage.

§ Not-rich.

take her simply : the wealth I have waits on my consent, and my consent goes not that way.

*Ford.* I beseech you, heartily, some of you go home with me to dinner : besides your cheer, you shall have sport ; I will show you a monster.—Master doctor, you shall go ;—so shall you, master Page ;—and you, Sir Hugh.

*Shal.* Well, fare you well :—we shall have the fiercer wooing at master Page's.

[*Exeunt SHALLOW and SLENDER.*]

*Calus.* Go home, John Rugby ; I come anon.

[*Exit RUGBY.*]

*Host.* Farewell, my hearts : I will to my honest knight Falstaff, and drink canary with him.

[*Exit HOST.*]

*Ford.* [*Aside.*] I think, I shall drink in pipe-wine first with him ; I'll make him dance. Will you go, gentles ?

*All.* Have with you, to see this monster.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—A Room in Ford's House.

*Enter Mrs. Ford and Mrs. Page.*

*Mrs. Ford.* What, John ! what, Robert !

*Mrs. Page.* Quickly, quickly : Is the buck basket—

*Mrs. Ford.* I warrant :—What, Robin, I say.

*Enter Servants with a basket.*

*Mrs. Page.* Come, come, come.

*Mrs. Ford.* Here, set it down.

*Mrs. Page.* Give your men the charge ; we must be brief.

*Mrs. Ford.* Marry, as I told you before, John, and Robert, be ready here hard by in the brew-house ; and when I suddenly call you, come forth, and (without any pause or staggering,) take this basket on your shoulders : that done, trudge with it in all haste, and carry it among the whistlers \* in Datchet mead, and there empty it in the muddy ditch, close by the Thames' side.

*Mrs. Page.* You will do it ?

*Mrs. Ford.* I have told them over and over ; they lack no direction : Be gone, and come when you are called.

[*Exeunt SERVANTS.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Here comes little Robin.

*Enter ROBIN.*

*Mrs. Ford.* How now, my eyes-musket ?† what news with you ?

*Rob.* My master Sir John is come in at your back-door, mistress Ford ; and requests your company.

*Mrs. Page.* You little Jack-a-lent,‡ have you been true to us ?

*Rob.* Ay, I'll be sworn : My master knows not of your being here, and hath threatened to put me into everlasting liberty, if I tell you of it ; for, he swears, he'll turn me away.

*Mrs. Page.* Thou'rt a good boy ; this secrecy of thine shall be a tailor to thee, and shall make thee a new doubtlet and hose.—I'll go hide me.

*Mrs. Ford.* Do so :—Go tell thy master, I am alone. Mistress Page, remember you your cue.

[*Exit ROBIN.*]

*Mrs. Page.* I warrant thee ; if I do not act it, hiss me.

[*Exit Mrs. PAGE.*]

*Mrs. Ford.* Go to then ; we'll use this unwholesome humidity, this gross wat'ry pumpline ;—we'll teach him to know turtles from jays.

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Have I caught thee, my heavenly jewel ? Why, now let me die, for I have lived long enough ; this is the period of my ambition : O this blessed hour !

*Mrs. Ford.* O sweet Sir John !

*Fal.* Mistress Ford, I cannot cog, I cannot prate, mistress Ford. Now shall I sin in my

wish : I would thy husband were dead : I'll speak it before the best lord, I would make thee my lady.

*Mrs. Ford.* I your lady, Sir John ! alas, I should be a pitiful lady.

*Fal.* Let the court of France show me such another ; I see how thine eye would emulate the diamond : Thou hast the right arched bent of the brow, that becomes the ship-tire, the tire-valiant, or any tire of Venetian admittance.

*Mrs. Ford.* A plain kerchief, Sir John : my brows become nothing else ; nor that well neither.

*Fal.* Thou art a traitor to say so : thou would'st make an absolute courtier ; and the firm fixture of thy foot would give an excellent motion to thy gait, in a semi-circled farthingale. I see what thou wert, if fortune thy foe were not ; nature is thy friend : Come, thou canst not hide it.

*Mrs. Ford.* Believe me, there's no such thing in me.

*Fal.* What made me love thee ? let that persuade thee, there's something extraordinary in thee. Come, I cannot cog, and say thou art this and that, like a many of these lisp'ing hawthorn buds, that come like women in men's apparel, and smell like Bucklersbury † in simplicity ; I cannot : but I love thee ; none but thee ; and thou deservest it.

*Mrs. Ford.* Do not betray me, Sir ; I fear you love mistress Page.

*Fal.* Thou might'st as well say, I love to walk by the Counter-gate ; which is as hateful to me as the reek of a lime-kiln.

*Mrs. Ford.* Well, heaven knows how I love you ; and you shall one day find it.

*Fal.* Keep in that mind ; I'll deserve it.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, I must tell you, so you do ; or else I could not be in that mind.

*Rob.* [*Within.*] Mistress Ford, mistress Ford ! here's mistress Page at the door, sweating, and blowing, and looking wildly, and would needs speak with you presently.

*Fal.* She shall not see me ; I will ensconce ‡ me behind the arras. §

*Mrs. Ford.* Pray you, do so : she's a very tattling woman.— [*FALSTAFF hides himself.*]

*Enter Mistress Page and ROBIN.*

What's the matter † how now ?

*Mrs. Page.* O mistress Ford, what have you done ! You're shamed, you are overthrown, you are undone for ever.

*Mrs. Ford.* What's the matter, good mistress Page ?

*Mrs. Page.* O well-a-day, mistress Ford ! having an honest man to your husband, to give him such cause of suspicion !

*Mrs. Ford.* What cause of suspicion ?

*Mrs. Page.* What cause of suspicion ?—Oud upon you ! how am I mistook in you ?

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, alas ! what's the matter ?

*Mrs. Page.* Your husband's coming hither, woman, with all the officers in Windsor to search for a gentleman, that, he says, is here now in the house, by your consent, to take an ill advantage of his absence : You are undone.

*Mrs. Ford.* Speak louder.— [*Aside.* ]—'Tis not so, I hope.

*Mrs. Page.* Pray heaven it be not so, that you have such a man here ; but 'tis most certain your husband's coming with half Windsor at his heels, to search for such a one. I come before to tell you : If you know yourself clear, why I am glad of it : but if you have a friend here, convey, convey him out. Be not amazed ; call all your senses to you ; defend your reputation, or bid farewell to your good life for ever.

*Mrs. Ford.* What shall I do ?—There is a gen-

\* Bleachers of linen. † A young small hawk. ‡ A puppet thrown at in Lent, like shrove-cocks.

• Venetian fashions. † Formerly chiefly inhabited by druggists. ‡ Prison. § Hide. ¶ Tancrump.



tleman, my dear friend; and I fear not mine own shame, so much as his peril: I had rather than a thousand pound, he were out of the house.

*Mrs. Page.* For shame, never stand you had rather, and you had rather; your husband's there at hand, bethink you of some conveyance: in the house you cannot hide him.—Oh! how have you deceived me!—Look, here is a basket; if he be of any reasonable stature, he may creep in here; and throw foul linen upon him, as if it were going to bucking; Or, it is whiting-time,\* send him by your two men to Datchet mead.

*Mrs. Ford.* He's too big to go in there: What shall I do?

*Re-enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Let me see't, let me see't! O let me see't! I'll in, I'll in;—follow your friend's counsel,—I'll in.

*Mrs. Page.* What! Sir John Falstaff! Are these your letters, knight?

*Fal.* I love thee, and none but thee; help me away: let me creep in here; I'll never—

*[He goes into the basket; they cover him with foul linen.]*

*Mrs. Page.* Help to cover your master, boy: Call your men, mistress Ford:—You dissembling knight!

*Mrs. Ford.* What, Join, Robert, John! *[Exit Robert: Re-enter SERVANTS.]* Go, take up these clothes here, quickly: Where's the cowi-staff? Look, how you drumble: I carry them to the laundress in Datchet mead; quickly, come.

*Enter FORD, PAGE, CAIUS, and Sir HUGH EVANS.*

*Ford.* Pray you, come near: if I suspect without cause, why then make sport at me, then let me be your jest; I deserve it.—How now? whither bear you this?

*Serv.* To the laundress, forsooth.

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, what have you to do whither they bear it? You were best meddle with buck-washing.

*Ford.* Buck? I would I could wash myself of the buck! Buck, buck, buck! Ay, buck; I warrant you, buck; and of the season too, it shall appear. *[Exit Servants with the basket.]* Gentlemen, I have dreamed to-night; I'll tell you my dream. Here, here, here be my keys: ascend my chambers, search, seek, find out: I'll warrant, we'll unkenne! the fox:—Let me stop this way first:—So, now uncape.†

*Page.* Good master Ford, be contented: you wrong yourself too much.

*Ford.* True, master Page.—Up, gentlemen; you shall see sport anon: follow me, gentlemen.

*[Exit.]*

*Eva.* This is fery fantastical humours, and jealousies.

*Caius.* By gar, 'tis no de fashion of France: it is not jealous in France.

*Page.* Nay, follow him, gentlemen; see the issue of his search.

*[Exit EVANS, PAGE, and CAIUS.]*  
*Mrs. Page.* Is there not a double excellency in this?

*Mrs. Ford.* I know not which pleases me better, that my husband is deceived or Sir John.

*Mrs. Page.* What a taking was he in, when your husband asked who was in the basket?

*Mrs. Ford.* I am half afraid he will have need of washing; so throwing him into the water will do him a benefit.

*Mrs. Page.* Hang him, dishonest rascal; I would all of the same strain were in the same distress.

*Mrs. Ford.* I think my husband hath some

special suspicion of Falstaff's being here; for I never saw him so gross in his jealousy till now.

*Mrs. Page.* I will lay a plot to try that: And we will yet have more tricks with Falstaff: his dissolute disease will scarce obey this medicine.

*Mrs. Ford.* Shall we send that foolish carion, mistress Quickly, to him, and excuse his throwing into the water; and give him another hope to betray him to another punishment?

*Mrs. Page.* We'll do it; let him be sent for to-morrow eight o'clock, to have amends.

*Re-enter FORD, PAGE, CAIUS, and Sir HUGH EVANS.*

*Ford.* I cannot find him: may be the knave bragged of that he could not compass.

*Mrs. Page.* Heard you that?

*Mrs. Ford.* Ay, ay, peace:—You use me well, master Ford, do you?

*Ford.* Ay, I do so.

*Mrs. Ford.* Heaven make you better than your thoughts?

*Ford.* Amen.

*Mrs. Page.* You do yourself mighty wrong, master Ford.

*Ford.* Ay, ay; I must bear it.

*Eva.* If there be any pody in the house, and in the chambers, and in the coffers, and in the presses, heaven forgive my sins at the day of judgment!

*Caius.* By gar, nor I too; dere is no bodier.

*Page.* Fie, fir, master Ford! are you not ashamed? What spirit, what devil suggests this imagination? I would not have your distemper in this kind, for the wealth of Windsor Castle.

*Ford.* 'Tis my fault, master Page: I suffer for it.

*Eva.* You suffer for a pad conscience: your wife is as honest a woman, as I will desires among five thousand, and five hundred too.

*Caius.* By gar, I see 'tis an honest woman.

*Ford.* Well,—I promised you a dinner:—Come, come, walk in the park; I pray you, pardon me; I will hereafter make known to you, why I have done this.—Come, wife;—come, mistress Page; I pray you pardon me; pray heartily, pardon me.

*Page.* Let's go in, gentlemen; but, trust me, we'll mock him. I do invite you to-morrow morning to my house to breakfast; after, we'll a birding together; I have a fine hawk for the bush: Shall it be so?

*Ford.* Any thing.

*Eva.* If there be one, I shall make two in the company.

*Caius.* If there be one or two, I shall make-a de turd.

*Eva.* In your teeth: for shame.

*Ford.* Pray you go, master Page.

*Eva.* I pray you now, remembrance to-morrow on the lousy knave, mine host.

*Caius.* That is good; by gar, vit all my heart.

*Eva.* A lousy knave; to have his gibes, and his mockeries. *[Exit.]*

#### SCENE IV.—A Room in PAGE'S House.

*Enter FENTON, and Mistress ANNE PAGE.*

*Fent.* I see, I cannot get thy father's love; Therefore, no more turn me to him, sweet Nan. Anne, Alas! how then?

*Fent.* Why, thou must be thyself. He doth object, I am too great of birth; And that, my state being gall'd with my expense,

I seek to heal it only by his wealth: Besides these, other bars he lays before me,—My riots past my wild societies; And tells me 'tis a thing impossible I should love thee, but as a property.

*Anne.* May be, he tells you true.

*Fent.* No, heaven so speed me in my time to come!

\* Bleaching time.

† A staff for carrying a large tub or basket.

‡ Drone.

§ Unbag the fox.

|| What.

Albeit, I will confess thy father's wealth  
Was the first motive that I woo'd thee, Anne :  
Yet, wooing thee, I found thee of more value  
Than stamps in gold, or sums in sealed bags ;  
And 'tis the very riches of thyself  
That now I aim at.

Anne. Gentle, master Fenton,  
Yet seek my father's love : still seek it, Sir :  
If opportunity and humble suit  
Cannot attain it, why then.—Hark you hither.  
*(They converse apart)*

Enter SHALLOW, SLENDER, and Mrs.  
QUICKLY.

Shal. Break their talk, mistress Quickly ; my  
kinsman shall speak for himself.

Slen. I'll make a shaft or a bolt on't : \* slid,  
'tis but venturing.

Shal. Be not dismay'd.

Slen. No, she shall not dismay me : I care  
not for that,—but that I am afraid.

Quick. Hark ye ; master Slender would speak  
a word with you.

Anne. I come to him.—This is my father's  
choice.

O what a world of vile ill-favour'd faults  
Looks handsome in three hundred pounds a year !

*[Aside.]*

Quick. And how does good master Fenton ?  
Pray you, a word with you.

Shal. She's coming ; to her, coz. O boy, thou  
hadst a father !

Slen. I had a father, mistress Anne ;—my  
uncle can tell you good jests of him :—Pray  
you, uncle, tell mistress Anne the jest, how  
my father stole two geese out of a pen, good  
uncle.

Shal. Mistress Anne, my cousin loves you.

Slen. Ay, that I do ; as well as I love any  
woman in Gloucestershire.

Shal. He will maintain you like a gentle-  
woman.

Slen. Ay, that I will, come cut and long-tail,  
under the degree of a 'squire.

Shal. He will make you a hundred and fifty  
pounds jointure.

Anne. Good master Shallow, let him woo for  
himself.

Shal. Marry, I thank you for it ; I thank you  
for that good comfort. She calls you, coz : I'll  
leave you.

Anne. Now, master Slender.

Slen. Now, good mistress Anne.

Anne. What is your will ?

Slen. My will ? od's heartlings, that's a pretty  
jest, indeed ! I ne'er made my will yet, I thank  
heaven ; I am not such a sickly creature, I give  
heaven praise.

Anne. I mean, master Slender, what would  
you with me ?

Slen. Truly, for mine own part, I would little  
or nothing with you : Your father, and my uncle,  
have made motions : if it be my luck, so : if not,  
happy man be his dole ! They can tell you how  
things go, better than I can : You may ask your  
father ; here he comes.

Enter PAGE and Mistress PAGE.

Page. Now, master Slender :—Love him,  
daughter Anne.—

Why, how now ! what does master Fenton  
here ?

You wrong me, Sir, thus still to haunt my  
house :

I told you, Sir, my daughter is dispos'd of.

Fent. Nay, master Page, be not impatient

Mrs. Page. Good master Fenton, come not  
to my child.

Page. She is no match for you.

Fent. Sir, will you hear me ?

Page. No, good master Fenton.

Come, master Shallow : come, son Slender, in :—  
Knowing my mind, you wrong me, master  
Fenton.

*[Exit PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER  
Quick. Speak to mistress Page.]*

Fent. Good mistress Page, for that I love your  
daughter

in such a righteous fashion as I do,  
Perforce, against all checks, rebukes, and man-  
ners,

I must advance the colours of my love,  
And not retire : Let me have your good will.

Anne. Good mother do not marry me to  
yond' fool.

Mrs. Page. I mean it not ; I seek you a better  
husband.

Quick. That's my master, master doctor.

Anne. Alas, I had rather be set quick 't the  
earth,

And bow'd to death with turnips.

Mrs. Page. Come, trouble not yourself : Good  
master Fenton,

I will not be your friend, nor enemy :  
My daughter will I question how she loves you,

And as I find her, so am I affected ;  
'Till then, farewell, Sir :—She must needs go  
in ;

Her father will be angry.  
*[Exit Mistress PAGE and ANNE.]*

Fent. Farewell, gentle mistress ; farewell,  
Nan.

Quick. This is my doing, now ;—Nay, said  
I, will you cast away your child on a fool, and a  
physician ? Look on master Fenton :—this is my  
doing.

Fent. I thank thee ; and I pray thee, once  
to-night

Give my sweet Nan this ring : There's for thy  
pains. *[Exit.]*

Quick. Now heaven send thee good fortune !  
A kind heart he hath : a woman would run  
through fire and water for such a kind heart.

But yet, I would my master had mistress Anne ;  
or I would master Slender had her ; or, in  
sooth, I would master Fenton had her : I will  
do what I can for them all three ; for so I have  
promised, and I'll be as good as my word ; but  
specially \* for master Fenton. Well, I must of  
another errand to Sir John Falstaff for my two  
mistresses ; What a beast am I to slack + it ?

*[Exit]*

SCENE V.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.

Fal. Bardolph, I say,—

Bard. Here, Sir.

Fal. Go fetch me a quart of sack ; put a toast  
in't. *[Exit BARD.]* Have I lived to be carried  
in a basket, like a barrow of butcher's offal ;  
and to be thrown into the Thames ? Well ; if  
I be served such another trick, I'll have my  
brains ta'en out and butter'd, and give them to  
a dog for a new year's gift. The rogues slighted  
me into the river with as little remorse as they  
would have drowned a bitch's blind puppies,  
fifteen i' the litter ; and you may know by my  
size, that I have a kind of alacrity in sinking ;  
if the bottom were as deep as hell, I should  
down. I had been drowned, but that the shore  
was shelvy and shallow ; a death that I abhor ; for  
the water swells a man ; and what a thing should  
I have been, when I had been swelled ! I should  
have been a mountain of mummy.

Re-enter BARDOLPH, with the wine.

Bard. Here's mistress Quickly, Sir, to speak  
with you.

Fal. Come let me pour in some sack to the  
Thames water ; for my belly's as cold, as if I  
had swallowed snow-balls for pills to cool the  
reins. Call her in.

Bard. Come in, woman.

\* A proverb—'a shaft was a long arrow, and a bolt, a  
thick short one.

+ Come, poor or rich.

! Lut.

\* Specially.

+ Neglect.

*Enter Mrs. QUICKLY.*

*Quick.* By your leave; I cry you mercy: Give your worship good-morrow.

*Fal.* Take away these chalices: \* Go brew me a pottle of sack finely.

*Bard.* With eggs, Sir?

*Fal.* Simple of itself; I'll no pullet-sperm in my brewage.—[*Exit BARD.*—] How now?

*Quick.* Marry, Sir, I come to your worship from mistress Ford.

*Fal.* Mistress Ford! I have had ford enough: I was thrown into the ford: I have my belly full of ford.

*Quick.* Alas the day! good heart, that was not her fault: she does so take on with her men: they mistook their erection.

*Fal.* So did I mine, to build upon a foolish woman's promise.

*Quick.* Well, she laments, Sir, for it, that it would yearn your heart to see it. Her husband goes this morning a birding; she desires you once more to come to her between eight and nine: I must carry her word quickly: she'll make you amends, I warrant you.

*Fal.* Well, I will visit her: Tell her so; and bid her think, what a man is: let her consider his frailty, and then judge of my merit.

*Quick.* I will tell her.

*Fal.* Do so. Between nine and ten, say'st thou?

*Quick.* Eight and nine, Sir.

*Fal.* Well, be gone; I will not miss her.

*Quick.* Peace be with you, Sir! [*Exit.*]

*Fal.* I marvel, I hear not of master Brook; he sent me word to stay within; I like his money well. O here he comes.

*Enter FORD.*

*Ford.* Bless you, Sir!

*Fal.* Now, master Brook? you come to know what hath passed between me and Ford's wife?

*Ford.* That, indeed, Sir John, is my business.

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will not lie to you; I was at her house the hour she appointed me.

*Ford.* And how speed you, Sir?

*Fal.* Very ill-favour'dly, master Brook.

*Ford.* How so, Sir? Did she change her determination?

*Fal.* No, master Brook; but the peaking cornuto, her husband, master Brook, dwelling in a continual larum of jealousy, comes me in the instant of our encounter, after we had embraced, kissed, protested, and, as it were, spoke the prologue of our comedy; and at his heels a rabble of his companions, thither provoked and instigated by his distemper, and, forsooth, to search his house for his wife's love.

*Ford.* What, while you were there?

*Fal.* While I was there.

*Ford.* And did he search for you, and could not find you?

*Fal.* You shall hear. As good luck would have it, comes in one mistress Page; gives intelligence of Ford's approach; and, by her invention, and Ford's wife's distraction, they conveyed me into a buck-basket.

*Ford.* A buck-basket!

*Fal.* By the Lord, a buck-basket: rammed me in with foul shirts and smocks, socks, foul stockings, and greasy napkins: that, master Brook, there was the rankest compound of villanous smell, that ever offended nostril.

*Ford.* And how long lay you there?

*Fal.* Nay, you shall hear master Brook, what I have suffered to bring this woman to evil for your good. Being thus crammed in the basket, a couple of Ford's knaves, his hunds, were called forth by their mistress, to carry me in the name of foul clothes to Datchel-lane: they took me on their shoulders; met the jealous knave their master in the door; who asked them once or twice what they had in their basket: I quaked for fear lest the lunatic knave would have

searched it; but Fate, ordaining he should be a cuckold, held his hand. Well; on went he for a search, and away went I for foul clothes. But mark the sequel, master Brook: I suffered the pangs of three several deaths: first, an intolerable fright, to be detected with a jealous rotten bell-wether: next, to be compassed like a good bilbo, \* in the circumference of a peck, tilted to point, heel to head: and then, to be bopped in, like a strong distillation, with stinking clothes that fretted in their own grease: think of that, —a man of my kidney,—think of that; that am as subject to heat as butter; a man of continual dissolution and thaw; it was a miracle to 'scape suffocation. And in the height of this bath, when I was more than half stewed in grease, like a Dutch dish, to be thrown into the Thames, and cooled, glowing hot, in that surge, like a horse-shoe; think of that; —hissing hot,—think of that, master Brook.

*Ford.* In good sadness, \* Sir, I am sorry that for my sake you have suffered all this. My suit then is desperate; you'll undertake her no more.

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will be thrown into Etna, as I have been into Thames, ere I will leave her thus. Her husband is this morning gone a birding: I have received from her another embassy of meeting: 'twixt eight and nine is the hour, master Brook.

*Ford.* 'Tis past eight already, Sir.

*Fal.* Is it? I will then address me to my appointment. Come to me at your convenient leisure, and you shall know how I speed; and the conclusion shall be crowned with your enjoying her; Adieu. You shall have her, master Brook; master Brook, you shall cuckold Ford.

[*Exit.*]

*Ford.* Hum! ha! is this a vision? Is this a dream? do I sleep? Master Ford, awake; awake, master Ford: there's a hole made in your best coat, master Ford. 'Tis 'tis to be married! 'tis 'tis to have linen, and buck-baskets!—Well, I will proclaim myself what I am: I will not take the lecher; he is at my house: he cannot 'scape me; 'tis impossible he should; he cannot creep into a halfpenny purse, nor into a pepper-box: but, lest the devil that guides him should and him, I will search impossible places. Though what I am I cannot avoid, yet to be what I would not, shall not make me tame: if I have horns to make one mad, let the proverb go with me, I'll be horn mad. [*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—The Street.

*Enter Mrs. PAGE, Mrs. QUICKLY, and WILLIAM.*

*Mrs. Page.* Is he at master Ford's already think'st thou?

*Quick.* Sure, he is by this; or will be presently: but truly, he is very courageous a mad, about his throwing into the water. Mistress Ford desires you to come suddenly.

*Mrs. Page.* I'll be with her by and by: I'll but bring my young man here to school: Look, where his master comes; 'tis a playing day, I see.

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS.*

How now, Sir Hugh? no school to-day?

*Eva.* No; master Slender is let the boys leave to play.

*Quick.* Blessing of his heart!

*Mrs. Page.* Sir Hugh, my husband says, my son profits nothing in the world at his book: I pray you, ask him some questions in his acquaintance.

\* Bilboa, where the best blades are made.

† Seriousness.

‡ Make myself ready.

\* Cups.

§ Outrageous.

*Eva.* Come hither, William; hold up your head; come.

*Mrs. Page.* Come on, sirrah; hold up your head; answer your master, be not afraid.

*Eva.* William, how many numbers is in nouns?

*Will.* Two.

*Quick.* Truly, I thought there had been one number more; because they say, *od's nouns*.

*Eva.* Peace your tattlings. What is *fair*, William?

*Will.* *Poulcats*.

*Quick.* *Poulcats*! there are fairer things than *poulcats*, sure.

*Eva.* You are a very simplicity 'oman; I pray you, peace. What is *lapis*, William?

*Will.* A stone.

*Eva.* And what is a stone, William?

*Will.* A pebble.

*Eva.* No, it is *lapis*; I pray you remember in your prain.

*Will.* *Lapis*.

*Eva.* That is good, William. What is he, William, that does lend articles?

*Will.* Articles are borrowed of the pronoun; and be thus declined, *Singulariter, nominativo, hic, hac, hoc*.

*Eva.* *Nominativo, hic, hag, hog*: pray you, mark: *genitivo, hujus*: Well, what is your *accusative case*?

*Will.* *Accusativo, hinc*.

*Eva.* I pray you, have your remembrance, child; *Accusativo, hing, hang, hog*.

*Quick.* Hang hog is Latin for bacon, I warrant you.

*Eva.* Leave you prabbles, 'oman. What is the *focative case*, William?

*Will.* O—*Focativo, O*.

*Eva.* Remember, William; *focative* is, *caret*.

*Quick.* And that's a good root.

*Eva.* 'Oman, forbear.

*Mrs. Page.* Peace.

*Eva.* What is your *genitive case plural*, William?

*Will.* *Genitive case*?

*Eva.* Ay.

*Will.* *Genitive*,—*horum, haram, horum*.

*Quick.* 'Vengeance of Jenny's case! lie on her! never name her child, if she be a whore.

*Eva.* For shame 'oman.

*Quick.* You do ill to teach the child such words: he teaches him to luck and to hack, which they'll do fast enough of themselves; and to call ho.um:—de upon you!

*Eva.* 'Oman, art thou lunatic? hast thou no understandings for thy cases, and the numbers of the genders? Thou art as foolish Christian creatures as I would desires.

*Mrs. Page.* Pr'ythee hold thy peace.

*Eva.* Show me now, William, some declensions of your pronouns.

*Will.* Forsooth, I have forgot.

*Eva.* It is *hi, ka, cod*; if you forget your *kies*, your *kas*, and your *cods*, you must be preaches.\* Go your ways, and play, co.

*Mrs. Page.* He is a better scholar than I thought he was.

*Eva.* He is a good sprag† memory. Farewell, mistress Page.

*Mrs. Page.* Adieu, good Sir Hugh. [Exit Sir HUGH.] Get you home, boy.—Come, we stay too long. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—A Room in FORD's House.

Enter FALSTAFF and Mrs. FORD.

*Fal.* Mistress Ford, your sorrow hath eaten up my sufferance: I see, you are obsequious† in your love, and I profess requital to a hair's breadth; not only, mistress Ford, in the simple office of love, but in all the accoutrement, com-

plement, and ceremony of it. But are you sure of your hus-and now?

*Mrs. Ford.* He's a birding, sweet Sir John

*Mrs. Page.* [Hiding.] What ho, gossip

Ford! what ho!

*Mrs. Ford.* Step into the chamber, Sir John.

[Exit FALSTAFF.]

Enter Mrs. PAGE.

*Mrs. Page.* How now, sweetheart? who's at home beside yourself?

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, none but mine own people.

*Mrs. Page.* Indeed?

*Mrs. Ford.* No, certainly;—speak louder.

[Aside.]

*Mrs. Page.* Truly, I am so glad you have nobody here.

*Mrs. Ford.* Why?

*Mrs. Page.* Why, woman, your husband is in his old limes\* again; he so takes on yonder with my husband; so rails against all married mankind; so curses all Eve's daughters, of what complexion soever; and so bullets himself on the forehead, crying, *Peer out, peer out*† that any madness I ever yet beheld seemed but tame-ness, civility, and patience, to this his distemper he is in now: I am glad the fat knight is not here.

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, does he talk of him?

*Mrs. Page.* Of none but him; and swears, he was carried out, the last time he searched for him, in a basket: protests to my husband, is is now here; and hath drawn him and the rest of their company from their sport, to make another experiment of his suspicion; but I am glad the knight is not here; now he shall see his own foolery.

*Mrs. Ford.* How near is he, mistress Page?

*Mrs. Page.* Hard by; at street end; he will be here anon.

*Mrs. Ford.* I am undone!—the knight is here.

*Mrs. Page.* Why, then you are utterly shamed, and he's but a dead man. What a woman are you?—Away with him, away with him; better shame than murder.

*Mrs. Ford.* Which way should he go? how should I bestow him? Shall I put him into the basket again?

Re-enter FALSTAFF.

*Fal.* No, I'll come no more!† the basket: May I not go out, ere he come?

*Mrs. Page.* Alas, three of master Ford's brothers watch the door with pistols, that none shall issue out; otherwise you might slip away ere he came. But what make you here?

*Fal.* What shall I do?—I'll creep up into the chimney.

*Mrs. Ford.* There they always use to discharge their birding-pieces: Creep into the kiln hole.

*Fal.* Where is it?

*Mrs. Ford.* He will seek there on my word. Neither press, coffer, chest, trunk, well, vault, but he hath an abstract† for the remembrance of such places, and goes to them by his note: There is no hiding you in the house.

*Fal.* I'll go out then.

*Mrs. Page.* If you go out in your own semblance, you die, Sir John. Unless you go out disguised,—

*Mrs. Ford.* How might we disguise him?

*Mrs. Page.* Alas the day, I know not. There is no woman's gown big enough for him; otherwise, he might put on a hat, a muffler, and a kerchief, and so escape.

*Fal.* Good hearts, devise something: any extremity, rather than a mischief.

*Mrs. Ford.* My maid's aunt, the fat woman of Brentford, has a gown above.

*Mrs. Page.* On my word it will serve him;

\* Breeched, &c. fogged.

† Apt to learn.

‡ Sorrowful.

\* Mad fits.

† As children call on a snail to push forth his horns.

‡ Short note of.

she's as big as he is : and there's her thum'd hat, and her muffler too : Run up, Sir John.

*Mrs. Ford.* Go, go, sweet Sir John : mistress Page and I, will look some linen for your head.

*Mrs. Page.* Quick, quick ; we'll come dress you straight : put on the gown the while.

[*Exit FALSTAFF.*]

*Mrs. Ford.* I would my husband would meet him in this shape : he cannot abide the old woman of Brentford ; he swears she's a witch ; forbade her my house, and hath threatened to beat her.

*Mrs. Page.* Heaven guide him to thy husband's cudgel ; and the devil guide his cudgel afterwards !

*Mrs. Ford.* But is my husband coming ?

*Mrs. Page.* Ay, in good sadness,\* is he ; and talks of the basket too, howsoever he hath had intelligence.

*Mrs. Ford.* We'll try that, for I'll appoint my men to carry the basket again, to meet him at the door with it, as they did last time.

*Mrs. Page.* Nay, but he'll be here presently : let's go dress him like the witch of Brentford.

*Mrs. Ford.* I'll first direct my men, what they shall do with the basket. Go up, I'll bring linen for him straight.

[*Exit.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Hang him, dishonest varlet ! we cannot misuse him enough.

We'll leave a proof, by that which we will do, Wives may be merry, and yet honest too : We do not act, that often jest and laugh :

'Tis old but true, *Still sune eat all the daff.*

[*Exit.*]

*Re-enter Mrs. FORD, with two Servants.*

*Mrs. Ford.* Go, Sirs, take the basket again on your shoulders ; your master is hard at door ; if he bid you set it down, obey him : quickly, despatch.

[*Exit.*]

1 *Serv.* Come, come, take it up.

2 *Serv.* Pray heaven, it be not full of the knight again.

1 *Serv.* I hope not ; I had as lief bear so much lead.

*Enter FORD, PAGE, SHALLOW, CAIUS, and Sir HUGH EVANS.*

*Ford.* Ay, but if it prove true, master Page, have you any way then to unfool me again ?—Set down the basket, villain !—Somebody calls my wife :—You, youth in a basket, come out here !—O you panderers rascals ! there's a knot, a gin, a pack, a conspiracy against me : Now shall the devil be shamed. What ! wife, I say ! come, come forth ; behold what honest clothes you send forth to bleaching.

*Page.* Why, this passes !—Master Ford, you are not to go loose any longer ; you must be pinioned.

*Eva.* Why, this is lunatics ! this is mad as a mad dog !

*Shal.* Indeed, master Ford, this is not well ; indeed.

*Enter Mrs. FORD.*

*Ford.* So say I too, Sir.—Come hither, mistress Ford ; mistress Ford, the honest woman, the modest wife, the virtuous creature, that hath the jealous fool to her husband !—I suspect without cause, mistress, do I ?

*Mrs. Ford.* Heaven be my witness, you do, if you suspect me in any dishonesty.

*Ford.* Well said, brazen-face ; hold it out.—Come forth, sirrah.

[*Pulls the clothes out of the basket.*]

*Page.* This passes !

*Mrs. Ford.* Are you not ashamed ? let the clothes alone.

*Ford.* I shall find you soon.

*Eva.* 'Tis unreasonable ! Will you take up your wife's clothes ? Come away.

*Ford.* Empty the basket, I say.

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, man, why ?—

*Ford.* Master Page, as I am a man, there was one conveyed out of my house yesterday in this basket : Why may not he be there again ? In my house I am sure he is : my intelligence is true ; my jealousy is reasonable : Pluck me out all the linen.

*Mrs. Ford.* If you find a man there, he shall die a flea's death.

*Page.* Here's no man.

*Shal.* By my fidelity, this is not well, master Ford ; this wrongs you.

*Eva.* Master Ford, you must pay, and not follow the imaginations of your own heart : this is jealousies.

*Ford.* Well, he's not here I seek for.

*Page.* No, nor no where else, but in your brain.

*Ford.* Help to search my house this one time : if I find not what I seek, show no colour for my extremity, let me for ever be your table-sport : let them say of me, As jealous as Ford, that searched a hollow walnut for his wife's leman.\* Satisfy me once more ; one more search with me.

*Mrs. Ford.* What ho, mistress Page ! come you and the old woman down, my husband will come into the chamber.

*Ford.* Old woman ! what old woman's that ?

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, it is my maid's aunt of Brentford.

*Ford.* A witch, a quean, an old cozening quean ! Have I not forbid her my house ? She comes of strands, does she ? We are simple men ; we do not know what's brought to pass under the profession of fortune-telling. She works by charms, by spells, by the figure, and such daubery as this is : beyond our element : we know nothing.—Come down, you witch, you hag you ; come down I say.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, good, sweet husband ;—good gentlemen, let him not strike the old woman.

*Enter FALSTAFF in woman's clothes, led by Mrs. PAGE.*

*Mrs. Page.* Come, mother Plat, come, give me your hand.

*Ford.* I'll prat her :—Out of my door, you witch ! [*Beats him.*] You rag, you baggage, you polecat, you rounjon ! out ! out ! I'll conjure you, I'll fortune-tell you.

[*Exit FALSTAFF.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Are you not ashamed ? I think, you have kill'd the poor woman.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, he will do it :—'Tis a goodly credit for you.

*Ford.* Hang her, witch !

*Eva.* By yea and no, I think the 'oman is a witch indeed : I like not when a 'oman has a great peard ; I spy a great peard under her muffler.

*Ford.* Will you follow, gentlemen ? I beseech you follow ; see but the issue of my jealousy : if I cry out thus upon no trail,† never trust me when I open ‡ again.

*Page.* Let's obey his humour a little further : Come, gentlemen.

[*Exit PAGE, FORD, SHALLOW, and EVANS.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Trust me, he beat him most pitifully.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, by the mass, that he did not ; he beat him most unprofitably, methought.

*Mrs. Page.* I'll have the cudgel hallowed, and hung o'er the altar ; it hath done meritorious service.

*Mrs. Ford.* What think you ? May we, with the warrant of woman-hood, and the witness of a good conscience, pursue him with any further revenge ?

\* Seriousness.

\* Loves.

† Scant.

‡ Gang.

‡ Surpasses, goes beyond all bounds.

‡ Cry out.

*Mrs. Page.* The spirit of wantonness is, sure, scared out of him; if the devil have him not in fee-simple, with fine and recovery, he will never, I think, in the way of waste, attempt us again.

*Mrs. Ford.* Shall we tell our husbands how we have served him?

*Mrs. Page.* Yes, by all means; if it be but to scrape the figures out of your husband's brains. If they can find in their hearts, the poor unvirtuous fat knight shall be any further afflicted, we two will still be the ministers.

*Mrs. Ford.* I'll warrant, they'll have him publicly shamed: and, methinks, there would be no period to the jest, should he not be publicly shamed.

*Mrs. Page.* Come to the forge with it then, shape it: I would not have things cool.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter Host and BARDOLPH.*

*Bard.* Sir, the Germans desire to have three of your horses: the duke himself will be to-morrow at court, and they are going to meet him.

*Host.* What duke should that be, comes so secretly? I hear not of him in the court: Let me speak with the gentlemen; they speak English?

*Bard.* Ay, Sir; I'll call them to you.

*Host.* They shall have my horses; but I'll make them pay, I'll sauce them; they have had my houses a week at command; I have turned away my other guests: they must come off; I'll sauce them: Come.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—A Room in Ford's House.

*Enter PAGE, FORD, Mrs. PAGE, Mrs. FORD, and Sir HUGH EVANS.*

*Eva.* 'Tis one of the pest discretions of a woman as ever I did look upon.

*Page.* And did he send you both these letters at an instant?

*Mrs. Page.* Within a quarter of an hour.

*Ford.* Pardon me, wife: Hencelorth do what thou wilt.

I rather will suspect the sun with cold, Than thee with wantonness: now doth thy honour stand.

In him that was of late a heretic, As firm as faith.

*Page.* 'Tis well, 'tis well; no more.

Be not as extreme in submission,

As in offence;

But let our plot go forward; let our wives

Yet once again, to make us public sport,

Appoint a meeting with this old fat fellow, Where we may take him, and disgrace him for it.

*Ford.* There is no better way than that they spoke of.

*Page.* How! to send him word they'll meet him in the park at midnight! fie, fie; he'll never come.

*Eva.* You say he has been thrown in the rivers; and has been grievously beaten, as an old woman methinks, there should be terrors in him, that he should not come; methinks, his flesh is punished, he shall have no desires.

*Page.* So think I too.

*Mrs. Ford.* Devise but how you'll use him when he comes,

And let us two devise to bring him thither.

*Mrs. Page.* There is an old tale goes, that Herne the hunter,

Sometime a keeper here in Windsor forest, Doth all the winter time, at still midnight, Walk round about an oak, with great ragged horns;

And there he blasts the tree, and takes \* the cattle,

\* Strikes.

And makes milch-kine yield blood, and shakes a chain

In a most hideous and dreadful manner:

You have heard of such a spirit; and well you know,

The superstitious idle-headed eld \*

Received, and did deliver to our age,

This tale of Herne the hunter for a truth.

*Page.* Why, yet there want not many, that do fear

In deep of night to walk by this Herne's oak:

But what of this?

*Mrs. Ford.* Marry, this is our device; That Falstaff at that oak shall meet with us, Disguised like Herne, with huge horns on his head.

*Page.* Well, let it not be doubted but he'll come,

And in this shape: When you have brought him thither,

What shall be done with him? what is your plot?

*Mrs. Page.* That likewise have we thought upon, and thus:

Nan Page my daughter, and my little son, And three or four more of their growth, we'll dress

Like urchins, ouphes, † and fairies, green and white,

With rounds of waxen tapers on their heads, And rattles in their hands; upon a sudden,

As Falstaff, she, and I, all newly met, Let them run forth a saw-pit rush at once

With some disguised ‡ song; upon their sight We two in great amazement will fly:

Then let them all encircle him about, And, fairy-like, to punish the unclean knight;

And ask him, why that hour of fairy revel, In their so sacred paths he dares to tread,

In shape profane.

*Mrs. Ford.* And till he tell the truth, Let the supposed fairies pinch him sound, §

And burn him with their tapers.

*Mrs. Page.* The truth being known, We'll all present ourselves; dishonour the spirit,

And mock him home to Windsor.

*Ford.* The children must

Be practised well to this, or they'll never do't.

*Eva.* I will teach the children their behaviours; and I will be like a jack-an-apes also, to burn the knight with my tapers.

*Ford.* That will be excellent. I'll go buy them vizards.

*Mrs. Page.* My Nan shall be the queen of all the fairies,

Finely attired in a robe of white.

*Page.* That suit will I go buy;—and in that time

Shall master Slender steal my Nan away, [Aside

And marry her at Eton.—Go, send to Falstaff straight.

*Ford.* Nay, I'll to him again in name of Brook:

He'll tell me all his purpose: Sure, he'll come.

*Mrs. Page.* Fear not you that: Go, get us properties, ¶

And tricking for our fairies.

*Eva.* Let as about it: It is admirable pleasures, and fey honest knaveries.

[*Exeunt PAGE, FORD, and EVANS.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Go, mistress Ford, Send quickly to Sir John, to know his mind.

[*Exit Mrs. FORD.*]

I'll to the doctor; he hath my good will, And none but he, to marry with Nan Page.

That Slender, though well lauded, is an idiot; And he my husband best of all affects:

The doctor is well money'd, and his friends Potent at court; he, none but he, shall have her,

† Elf, hogloblin.

‡ Roundly.

\* Old age.

§ Wild, discordant.

¶ Necessaries.

Though twenty thousand worthier come to crave her. *[Exit.]*

*SCENE V.—A Room in the Garter Inn.*

*Enter Host and SIMPLE.*

*Host.* What would'st thou have, boor? what, thick-skinn'd fellow, speak, breathe, discuss; brief, short, quick, snap.

*Sim.* Marry, Sir, I come to speak with Sir John Falstaff from master Slender.

*Host.* There's his chamber, his house, his castle, his standing-bed, and truckle-bed, 'tis painted about with the story of the prodigal, fresh and new: Go, knock and call; he'll speak like an *Anthropophaginan*\* unto thee: Knock, I say.

*Sim.* There's an old woman, a fat woman, gone up into his chamber; I'll be so bold as stay, Sir, till she come down: I come to speak with her, indeed.

*Host.* Ha! a fat woman! the knight may be robbed: I'll call.—Bully knight! Bully Sir John! speak from thy lungs military: Art thou there? it is thine host, thine Ephesian, calls.

*Fal.* *[above.]* How now, mine host?

*Host.* Here's a Bohemian-Tartar carries the coming down of thy fat woman: Let her descend, bully, let her descend; my chambers are honourable: Fye! privacy? fye!

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* There was, mine host, an old fat woman even now with me; but she's gone.

*Sim.* Pray you, Sir, was't not the wise woman of Brentford?

*Fal.* Ay, marry, was it, muscle-shell; † What would you with her?

*Sim.* My master, Sir, my master Slender, sent to her, seeing her go thorough the streets, to know, Sir, whether one Nym, Sir, that beguiled him of a chain, had the chain, or no.

*Fal.* I spoke with the old woman about it.

*Sim.* And what says she, I pray, Sir?

*Fal.* Marry, she says, that the very same man, that beguiled master Slender of his chain, cozened him of it.

*Sim.* I would I could have spoken with the woman herself; I had other things to have spoken with her too, from him.

*Fal.* What are they? let us know.

*Host.* Ay, come; quick.

*Sim.* I may not conceal them, Sir.

*Fal.* Conceal them, or thou diest.

*Sim.* Why, Sir, they were nothing but about mistress Anne Page; to know, if it were my master's fortune to have her, or no.

*Fal.* 'Tis, 'tis his fortune.

*Sim.* What, Sir?

*Fal.* To have her,—or no: Go; say, the woman told me so.

*Sim.* May I be so bold to say so, Sir?

*Fal.* Ay, Sir Tike; who more bold?

*Sim.* I thank your worship: I shall make my master glad with these tidings. *[Exit SIMPLE.]*

*Host.* Thou art clerkly, ‡ thou art clerkly, Sir John: Was there a wise woman with thee?

*Fal.* Ay, that there was, mine host; one, that hath taught me more wit than ever I learned before in my life; and I paid nothing for it neither, but was paid for my learning.

*Enter BARDOLPH.*

*Bard.* Out, alas, Sir! cozenage! meer cozenage!

*Host.* Where be my horses? speak well of them varletto.

*Bard.* Run away with the cozeners: for so soon as I came beyond Eton, they threw me off,

\* A cannibal.

† A cunning woman, a fortune-teller.

‡ He calls Simple *Muscle-shell*, because he stood with his mouth open.

§ Scholar-like.

from behind one of them, in a slough of mire; and set spurs, and away, like three German devils, three doctor Faustuses.

*Host.* They are gone but to meet the duke, villain: do not say, they be fled; Germans are honest men.

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS.*

*Eva.* Where is mine host?

*Host.* What is the matter, Sir?

*Eva.* Have a care of your entertainments: there is a friend of mine come to town, tells me there is three coz'nin Germans, that has cozened all the hosts of Readings, of Maidenhead, of Colebrook, of horses and money. I tell you for good-will, look you: you are wise, and full of gibes and blousing-stogs; and 'tis not convenient you should be cozened: Fare you well. *[Exit.]*

*Enter Doctor CAIUS.*

*Caius.* Vere is mine *Host de Jarterre*.

*Host.* Here, master doctor, in perplexity, and doubtful dilemma.

*Caius.* I cannot tell vat is dat; but it is tell-a-me, dat you make grand preparation for a duke *de Jarmanu*: by my trot, dere is no duke, dat the court is know to come; I tell you for good vill: adieu. *[Exit.]*

*Host.* Hue and cry, villain, go:—assist me, knight; I am undone:—fly, run, hue and cry, villain! I am undone!

*[Reënter Host and BARDOLPH.]*

*Fal.* I would all the world might be cozened; for I have been cozen'd and beaten too. If it should come to the ear of the court, how I have been transformed, and how my transformation hath been washed and cudgiled, they would melt me out of my fat, drop by drop, and liquor fishermen's boots with me: I warrant, they would whip me with their fine wits, till I were as crest-fallen as a dried pear. I never prospered since I forswore myself at *Primeo*.\* Well, if my wind were but long enough to say my prayers, I would repent.—

*Enter Mrs. QUICKLY.*

Now! whence come you?

*Quick.* From the two parties, forsooth.

*Fal.* The devil take one party, and his dam the other, and so they shall be both bestow'd! I have suffered more for their sakes, more than the villainous inconstancy of man's disposition is able to bear.

*Quick.* And have not they suffered? Yes, I warrant; speciously one of them; mistress Ford, good heart, is beaten black and blue, that you cannot see a white spot about her.

*Fal.* What tell'st thou me of black and blue? I was beaten myself into all the colours of the rainbow, and I was like to be apprehended for the witch of Brentford; but that my admirable dexterity of wit, my counterfeiting the action of an old woman, deliver'd me, the knave constable had set me 't' the stocks, I' the common stocks, for a witch.

*Quick.* Sir, let me speak with you in your chamber: you shall hear how things go; and, I warrant, to your content. Here is a letter will say somewhat. Good heats, what ado here is to bring you together! Sure, one of you does not serve heaven well, that you are so crossed.

*Fal.* Come up into my chamber.

*[Reënter.]*

*SCENE VI.—Another Room in the Garter Inn.*

*Enter FENTON and Host.*

*Host.* Master Fenton, talk not to me; my mind is heavy, I will give over all.

*Fent.* Yet hear me speak: Assist me in my purpose,

\* A game at cards.

*And, as I am a gentleman, I'll give thee  
A hundred pound in gold, more than your loss.  
Host. I will hear you, master Fenton; and I  
will, at the least, keep your counsel.*

*Fent. From time to time I have acquainted  
you*

*With the dear love I bear to fair Anne Page;  
Who, mutually, hath answer'd my affection  
(So far forth as herself might be her chooser.)  
Even to my wish: I have a letter from her  
Of such contents as you will wonder at:  
The mirth whereof so larded with my matter,  
That neither, singly, can be manifested,  
Without the show of both;—wherein fat Fal-  
staff*

*Hath a great scene: the image of the jest.  
[Showing the letter.  
I'll show you here at large. Hark, good mine  
host:*

*To-night at Herne's oak, just 'twixt twelve and  
one,*

*Must my sweet Nan present the fairy queen;  
The purpose why, is here: \* in which disguise,  
While other jests are something rank on foot,  
Her father hath commanded her to slip  
Away with Slender, and with him at Eton  
Immediately to marry: she hath consented:  
Now, Sir,*

*Her mother, even strong against that match,  
And firm for doctor Caius, hath appointed  
That he shall likewise shuffle her away,  
While other sports are tasking of their minds,  
And at the deanery, where a priest attends,  
Straight marry her: to this her mother's plot  
She, seemingly obedient, likewise hath  
Made promise to the doctor;—Now, thus it  
rests:*

*Her father means she shall be all in white:  
And in that habit, when Slender sees his time  
To take her by the hand and bid her go,  
She shall go with him:—her mother hath in-  
tended,*

*The better to denote her to the doctor,  
(For they must all be mask'd and vizarded.)  
That, quaint, in green, she shall be loose en-  
rob'd,*

*With ribbands pendant, flaring 'bout her head;  
And when the doctor spies his vantage ripe,  
To punch her by the hand, and, on that token,  
The maid hath given consent to go with him.*

*Host. Which means she to deceive? father or  
mother?*

*Fent. Both, my good host, to go along with  
me:*

*And here it rests,—that you'll procure the  
vicar*

*To stay for me at church, 'twixt twelve and  
one,*

*And, in the lawful name of marrying,  
To give our hearts united ceremony.*

*Host. Well, husband your device; I'll to the  
vicar:*

*Bring you the maid, you shall not lack a priest.*

*Fent. So shall I evermore be bound to thee;  
Besides, I'll make a present recompense.*

*[Exeunt.]*

ACT V.

SCENE I.—A Room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter FALSTAFF and Mrs. QUICKLY.*

*Fal. Pr'ythee, no more prattling;—go.—  
I'll hold: † This is the third time; I hope, good  
luck lies in odd numbers. Away, go; they say,  
there is divinity in odd numbers, either in  
nativity, chance, or death.—Away.*

*Quick. I'll provide you a chain; and I'll do  
what I can to get you a pair of horns.*

\* In the letter. † Fantastically.  
‡ Keep to the time.

*Fal. Away, I say; time wears: hold up your  
head, and mince. [Exit Mrs. QUICKLY.]*

*Enter FORD.*

*How now, master Brook? Master Brook, the  
matter will be known to-night, or never. Be you  
in the Park about midnight, at Herne's oak, and  
you shall see wonders.*

*Ford. Went you not to her yesterday, Sir, as  
you told me you had appointed?*

*Fal. I went to her, master Brook, as you see,  
like a poor old man: but I came from her,  
master Brook, like a poor old woman. That  
same knave, Ford her husband, hath the  
finest mad devil of jealousy in him, master  
Brook, that ever governed frenzy. I will tell  
you.—He beat me grievously, in the shape of  
a woman; for in the shape of man, master  
Brook, I fear not Goliath with a weaver's beam;  
because I know also, life is a shuttle. I am  
in haste; go along with me; I'll tell you all,  
master Brook. Since I plucked gerse, played  
truant, and whipped top, I knew not what it  
was to be beaten, till lately. Follow me: I'll  
tell you strange things of this knave Ford: on  
whom to-night I will be revenged, and I will  
deliver his wife into your hand.—Follow: Strange  
things in hand, master Brook! follow.*

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—Windsor Park.

*Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER,*

*Page. Come, come; we'll couch i' the castle  
ditch, till we see the light of our fairies.—Re-  
member, son Slender, my daughter.*

*Slen. Ay, tosooth; I have spoke with her,  
and we have a nay-word,\* how to know one  
another. I come to her in white, and cry, *mum*;  
she cries, *budget*, and by that we know one  
another.*

*Shal. That's good too: But what needs either  
your *mum*, or her *budget*? the white will de-  
cipher her well enough.—It hath struck ten  
o'clock.*

*Page. The night is dark; light and spirits  
will become it well. Heaven prosper our sport!  
No man means evil but the devil, and we shall  
know him by his horns. Let's away; follow me.*

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III.—The Street in Windsor.

*Enter Mrs. PAGE, Mrs. FORD, and Dr.  
CAIUS.*

*Mrs. Page. Master doctor, my daughter is in  
green: when you see your time, take her by the  
hand, away with her to the deanery, and despatch  
it quickly: Go before into the park; we two  
must go together.*

*Caius. I know vat I have to do; Adien.  
Mrs. Page. Fare you well, Sir. [Exit CAIUS.]  
My husband will not rejoice so much at the  
doctor's marrying my daughter: but 'tis no  
matter; better a little chiding, than a great deal  
of heart-break.*

*Mrs. Ford. Where is Nan now, and her troop  
of fairies? and the Welsh devil, Hugh?*

*Mrs. Page. They are all couched in a pit hard  
by Heine's oak, with obscured lights; which, at  
the very instant of Falstaff's and our meet-  
ing, they will at once display to the night.*

*Mrs. Ford. That cannot choose but amaze  
him.*

*Mrs. Page. If he be not amazed, he will be  
mocked; if he be amazed, he will every way be  
mocked.*

*Mrs. Ford. We'll betray him finely.*

*Mrs. Page. Against such lewdsters, and their  
lechery,  
Those that betray him do no treachery.*

\* Watch-word.



*Mrs. Ford.* The hour draws on; To the oak,  
to the oak!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Windsor Park.*

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS, and Fairies.*

*Eva.* Trib, trib, fairies; come; and remember your parts: be you, I pray you; follow me into the pit; and when I give the watch-words, do as I bid you; Come, come; trib, trib.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*Another part of the Park.*

*Enter FALSTAFF disguised, with a buck's head on.*

*Fal.* The Windsor bell hath struck twelve; the minute draws on: Now, the hot-blooded gods assist me!—Remember, Jove, thou wast a bull for thy Europa; love set on thy horns.—O powerful love! that, in some respects, makes a beast a man; in some other, a man a beast.—You were also, Jupiter, a swan, for the love of Leda;—O omnipotent love! how near the god drew to the complexion of a goose!—A fault done first in the form of a beast;—O Jove, a beastly fault! and then another fault in the semblance of a fowl; think on't, Jove; a fowl fault.—When gods have hot backs, what shall poor men do? For me, I am here a Windsor stag; and the fattest, I think, in the forest: send me a cool rut-time, Jove, or who can blame me to piss my tallow? Who comes here? my doe?

*Enter Mrs. FORD, and Mrs. PAGE.*

*Mrs. Ford.* Sir John? art thou there, my deer? my male deer?

*Fal.* My doe with the black scut?—Let the sky rain potatoes; let it thunder to the tune of *Green Sleeves*; hail kissing-comfits, and snow erinagos; let there come a tempest of provocation, I will shelter me here.

[*Embracing her.*]

*Mrs. Ford.* Mistress Page is come with me, sweetheart.

*Fal.* Divide me like a bride-buck, each a haunch; I will keep my sides to myself, my shoulders for the fellow \* of this walk, and my horns I bequeath your husbands. Am I a woodman? ha! Speak I like Herne the hunter?—Why, now is Cupid a child of conscience; he makes restitution. As I am a true spirit, welcome!

[*Noise within.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Alas! what noise?

*Mrs. Ford.* Heaven forgive our sins!

*Fal.* What should this be?

*Mrs. Ford.* }

*Mrs. Page.* } Away, away. [*They run off.*]

*Fal.* I think the devil will not have me damned, lest the oil that is in me should set hell on fire; he would never else cross me thus.

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS, like a satyr; Mrs. QUICKLY, and PISTOL; ANNE PAGE, as the Fairy Queen, attended by her brother and others, dressed like fairies, with waxen tapers on their heads.*

*Quick.* Fairies, black, grey, green, and white, You moon-shine revellers, and shades of night, You orphan-heirs of fixed destiny, Attend your office, and your quality.—

*Crier Hobgoblin,* make the fairy oyes.

*Pist.* Elves, list your names; silence, you airy toys.

*Bricket,* to Windsor chimnies shalt thou leap: Where fires thou find'st unrank'd, and hearths unswept,

There pinch the maids as blue as borage; †

Our radiant queen hates sluts and sluttish boys.

*Fal.* They are fairies; he that speaks to them shall die:

\* Keeper of the forest. † Fellowship. ‡ Wortleberry.

I'll wink and cough: No man flir works must eye.

[*Lies down; put his face.*]

*Eva.* Where's *Pedic*?—Go you, and where you find a maid,

That, ere she sleep, has thrice her prayers said, Raise up the organs of her fantasy, Sleep she as sound as careless infancy, But those as sleep, and think not on their sins, Pinch them, arins, legs, back, shoulders, sides, and shins.

*Quick.* About, about; Search Windsor castle, elves, within and out: Strew good luck, ouphes, on every sacred room; That it may stand till the perpetual doom, In state as wholesome, as in state 'tis lit; Worthy the owner and the owner it.

The several chairs of order look you stour With juice of balm, and every precious flower: Each fair instalment, coat, and several crest, With loyal blazon, evermore be biest! And nightly, meadow-fairies, look, you sing, Like to the Garter's compass, in a ring: The expressure that it bears, green let it be, More fertile-fresh than all the field to see; And, *Hony soit qui mal y pense*, write, In emerald turis, flowers purple, blue, and white;

Like sapphire, pearl, and rich embroidery, Buckled below fair knight-hood's bending knee: Fairies use flowers for their characters. Away; disperse: But, till 'tis one o'clock, Our dance of custom, round about the oak Of Herne the hunter, let us not forget.

*Eva.* Pray you, lock hand in hand: yourselves in order set:

And twenty glow-worms shall our lanterns be, To guide our measure round about the tree.

But stay; I smell a man of middle earth *Fal.* Heavens defend me from that Welsh fairy! lest he transform me to a piece of cheese!

*Pist.* Vile worm, thou wast o'er-look'd even in thy birth.

*Quick.* With trial-fire touch me his finger-end:

If he be chaste, the flame will back descend, And turn him to no pain; but if he start It is the flesh of a corrupted heart.

*Pist.* A trial, come.

*Eva.* Come, will this wood take fire?

[*They burn him with their tapers.*]

*Fal.* Oh! oh!

*Quick.* Corrupt, corrupt, and tainted in desire!

About him fairies; sing a scornful rhyme: And, as you trip, still pinch him to your time.

*Eva.* It is right; indeed he is full of lecheries and iniquity.

SONG.

*Eye on sinful fantasy!*

*Eye on lust and luxury!*

*Lust is but a bloody fire,*

*Kindled with unchaste desire,*

*Fed in heart; whose flames aspire,*

*As thoughts do blow them, higher and higher.*

*Pinch him, fairies, mutually,*

*Pinch him, for his villany;*

*Pinch him, and burn him, and turn him about,*

*Till candles, and star-light, and moonshine be out.*

*During this song, the fairies pinch FALSTAFF. Doctor CAIUS comes one way, and steals away a fairy in green; SLENDER another way, and takes off a fairy in white; and FENFON comes, and steals away Mrs. ANNE PAGE. A noise of hunting is made within. All the fairies run away. FALSTAFF pulls off his buck's head and rises.*

\* The letters.

*Enter PAGE, FORD, Mrs. PAGE, and Mrs. FORD. They lay held on 'em.*

*Page.* Nay, do not fly: I think we have watch'd you now;  
*Will none but Herne the hunter serve your turn?*

*Mrs. Page.* I pray you, come; hold up the jest no higher:—  
*Now, good Sir John, how like you Windsor wives?*

*See you these, husband? do not these fair jokes?*

*Become the forest better than the town?*

*Ford.* Now, Sir, who's a cuckold now?—Master Brook, Falstaff's a knave, a cuckoldly knave; here are his horns, master Brook: And, master Brook, he hath enjoyed nothing of Ford's but his buck-basket, his cudgel, and twenty pounds of money; which must be paid to master Brook; his horses are arrested for it, master Brook.

*Mrs. Ford.* Sir John, we have had ill luck; we could never meet. I will never take you for my love again, but I will always count you my dear.

*Fal.* I do begin to perceive that I am made an ass.

*Ford.* Ay, and an ox too; both the proofs are extant.

*Fal.* And these are not fancies? I was three or four times in the thought they were not fancies: and yet the guiltiness of my mind, the sudden surprise of my powers, drove the grossness of the toppers into a received belief, in despite of the teeth of all rhyme and reason, that they were fancies. See now, how wit may be made a Jack-a-lent, when 'tis upon ill employment.

*Eva.* Sir John Falstaff, serve God, and leave your desires, and fancies will not misse you.

*Ford.* Well said, fairy Hugh.

*Eva.* And leave you your jealousies too, I pray you.

*Ford.* I will never mistrust my wife again, till thou art able to woo her in good English.

*Fal.* Have I laid my brain in the sun, and dried it, that it wants manner to prevent so gross o'er-reaching as this? Am I ridden with a Welsh goat too? Shall I have a coxcomb of frize?† 'tis time I were choked with a piece of toasted cheese.

*Eva.* Seese is not good to give putter; your pelly is all putter.

*Fal.* Seese and putter! Have I lived to stand at the taunt of one that makes fitters of English? This is enough to be the decay of lust and late-walking, through the realm.

*Mrs. Page.* Why, Sir John, do you think, though we would have thrust virtue out of our hearts by the head and shoulders, and have given ourselves without scruple to hell, that ever the devil could have made you our delight?

*Ford.* What, a hodge-pudding? a bag of flax?

*Mrs. Page.* A puffed man?

*Page.* Old, cold, withered, and of intolerable entrails?

*Ford.* And one that is as slanderous as Satan?

*Page.* And as poor as Job?

*Ford.* And as wicked as his wife?

*Eva.* And given to fornications, and to taverns, and sack, and wine, and metheglin, and to drinkings and swearings, and starings, pibbles and prabbles?

*Fal.* Well, I am your theme: you have the start of me; I am dejected; I am not able to answer the Welsh flannel;‡ ignorance itself is a plummet o'er me: use me as you will.

*Ford.* Marry, Sir, we'll bring you to Windsor,

to one master Brook, that you have cozened of money, to whom you should have been a pander: over and above that you have sullied, I think, to repay that money will be a biting affliction.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, husband, let that go to make amends:

*Forgive that sum, and so we'll all be friends.*

*Ford.* Well, here's my hand; all's forgiven at last.

*Page.* Yet be cheerful, knight: thou shalt eat a posset to-night at my house; where I will desire thee to laugh at my wife, that now laughs at thee: Tell her, master Slender hath married her daughter.

*Mrs. Page.* Doctors doubt that: If Anne Page be my daughter, she is, by this, doctor Caius' wife. *[Aside.]*

*Enter SLENDER.*

*Slender.* Whoop, ho! ho! father Page.

*Page.* Son! how now? how now, son? have you despatched?

*Slender.* Despatched—I'll make the best in Gloucestershire know o'it; would I were hanged, la, else.

*Page.* Of what, son?

*Slender.* I came yonder at Eton to marry mistress Anne Page, and she's a great lubberly boy: If it had not been i' the church, I would have swung him, or he should have swung me. If I did not think it had been Anne Page, would I might never stir, and 'tis a post-master's boy.

*Page.* Upon my life then you took the wrong.

*Slender.* What need you tell me that? I think so, when I took a boy for a girl: If I had been married to him, for all he was in woman's apparel, I would not have had him.

*Page.* Why, this is your own folly: Did not I tell you, how you should know my daughter by her garments?

*Slender.* I went to her in white, and cried *mum*, and she cried *budget*, as Anne and I had appointed; and yet it was not Anne, but a post-master's boy.

*Eva.* Jesu! Master Slender, cannot you see but many boys?

*Page.* Oh! I am vexed at heart: What shall I do?

*Mrs. Page.* Good George, be not angry: I knew of your purpose; turned my daughter into green; and, indeed, she is now with the doctor at the deanery, and there married.

*Enter CAIUS.*

*Caius.* Vere is mistress Page? By gar, I am cozened; I ha' married *un garçon*, a boy; *un paison*, by gar, a boy; it is not Anne Page: by gar, I am cozened.

*Mrs. Page.* Why did you take her in green?

*Caius.* Ay, be gar, and 'tis a boy; be gar, I'll raise all Windsor. *[Exit CAIUS.]*

*Ford.* This is strange: Who hath got the right Anne?

*Page.* My heart misgives me: Here comes master Fenton.

*Enter FENTON and ANNE PAGE.*

*How now, master Fenton?*

*Anne.* Pardon, good father, good my mother, pardon!

*Page.* Now, mistress? how chance you went not with master Slender?

*Mrs. Page.* Why went you not with master doctor, maid?

*Fenton.* You do amaze me: Hear the truth of it.

You would have married her most shamefully, Where there was no proportion held in love.

\* Horns which Falstaff had.

† A fool's cap of Welsh materials.

‡ Flannel was originally the manufacture of Wales.

• Confound her by your questions.

The truth is, she and I, long since contracted,  
Are now so sure that nothing can dissolve us.  
The offence is holy that she hath committed :  
And this deceit loses the name of craft,  
Of disobedience, or unduteous title ;  
Since therein she doth evitate \* and shun  
A thousand irreligious cursed hours,  
Which forced marriage would have brought upon  
her.

*Ford.* Stand not amaz'd : there is no remedy ;—

In love, the heavens themselves do guide the  
state ;

Money buys lauds, and wives are sold by fate.

*Fal.* I am glad, though you have ta'en a  
special stand to strike at me, that your arrow  
hath glanced.

*Page.* Well what remedy ? Fenton, heaven  
give thee joy !

What cannot be eschew'd, must be embrac'd.  
*Fal.* When night-dogs run, all sorts of deer  
are chas'd.

*Eva.* I will dance and eat plums at your  
wedding.

*Mrs. Page.* Well, I will must no farther :—  
Master Fenton,

Heaven give you many, many merry days !

Good husband, let us every one go home,

And laugh this sport o'er by a country fire ;

Sir John and all.

*Ford.* Let it be so :—Sir John,

To master Brook you yet shall hold your  
word :

For he, to-night, shall lie with Mrs Ford.

[*Exeunt*]

\* Avoid

FINIS.

19

**New Works Published**  
BY  
**RICHARD GRIFFIN AND COMPANY,**

Publishers to the University of Glasgow,

5 WARWICK SQUARE,  
**LONDON.**

40 BUCHANAN STREET,  
**GLASGOW.**

---

**CHANNING'S ESSAYS AND ADDRESSES.**

**THE LITERARY WORKS OF WILLIAM ELLERY CHANNING, D.D.**  
Complete in One Volume 8vo, 3s. 6d. cloth.

**COWPER'S POETICAL WORKS.**

**THE POETICAL WORKS OF WILLIAM COWPER.** New Edition,  
with Introductory Essay by JAMES MONTGOMERY. Illustrations, small 8vo,  
3s. 6d. cloth gilt.

**THE CRUSADES.**

**HISTORY OF THE CRUSADES;** their Rise, Progress, and Results. By  
Colonel PROCTER, C.B. New Edition, with beautiful illustrations by Gilbert,  
&c. &c. Crown 8vo, 3s. 6d. cloth.

**CURIOSITIES OF BIOGRAPHY.**

**CURIOSITIES OF BIOGRAPHY;** or, MEMOIRS OF ECCENTRIC AND RE-  
MARKABLE CHARACTERS. By ROBERT MALCOLM. Numerous Characteristic  
Portraits, foolscap 8vo, 2s. 6d. cloth.

**CURIOSITIES OF LITERATURE AND SCIENCE.**

**CYCLOPÆDIA OF LITERARY AND SCIENTIFIC ANECDOTE,** illus-  
trative of the Characters, Habits, and Conversation of Men of Letters and  
Science. Edited by WILLIAM KEDDIE, Secretary to the Glasgow Philo-  
sophical Society. Crown 8vo, 5s. cloth.

**OCCULT SCIENCES.**

**OCCULT SCIENCES:** being SKETCHES OF THE TRADITIONS AND SUPERSTI-  
TIONS OF PAST TIMES, AND THE MARVELS OF THE PRESENT DAY. By Rev.  
EDWARD SMEDLEY, M.A., Rev. HENRY THOMPSON, M.A., W. COOKE  
TAYLOR, LL.D., and ELIHU RICH, Esq. Crown 8vo, 6s. cloth.

**CONTENTS.**—Ancients and their Fables—Belief in Supernatural Beings: Fairies, Devils,  
Apparitions, &c. &c.—Localities: Heaven, Hell, Purgatory, &c. &c.—Exercise of the  
Occult Power: Augury, Magic, Witchcraft, &c.—Psychological Experiences: Dreams, &c.  
—Wonders of Divination: Astrology, &c.—Natural and Artificial Charms.

**THE OTTOMAN EMPIRE.**

**HISTORY OF THE OTTOMAN EMPIRE,** including a Survey of the  
GREEK EMPIRE and the CRUSADES. Edited by Colonel PROCTER, C.B.,  
Rev. J. E. RIDDLE, M.A., and JAMES M'CONNACHY. Crown 8vo, 7s. 6d.  
cloth.

**POPE'S POETICAL WORKS.**

**THE POETICAL WORKS OF ALEXANDER POPE,** with his TRANSLA-  
TION of HOMER'S ILLAD and ODYSSEY, and Life by Dr. JOHNSON. 8vo,  
5s. cloth.

# THE WORKS

OF

## HENRY, LORD BROUGHAM, F.R.S.,

Member of the National Institute of France, and of the Royal Academy of Naples.

### I CRITICAL, HISTORICAL, AND MISCELLANEOUS WORKS,

In a Series of Post Octavo Volumes, Price 5s. each.

- Vol. 1.—**LIVES OF PHILOSOPHERS** of the Time of George III., comprising BLACK, WATT, PRIESTLEY, CAVENDISH, DAVY, SIMSON, ADAM SMITH, LAVOISIER, BANKS, and D'ALEMBERT.
- Vol. 2.—**LIVES OF MEN OF LETTERS** of the Time of George III., comprising VOLTAIRE, ROUSSEAU, HUME, ROBERTSON, JOHNSON, and GIBBON.
- Vols. 3, 4.—**SKETCHES OF EMINENT BRITISH STATESMEN** of the Time of George III., new edition, enlarged by numerous fresh Sketches and other additional matter, 2 vols.
- Vol. 5.—**SKETCHES OF EMINENT FOREIGN STATESMEN** of the Time of George III., new edition, enlarged and corrected.

To be followed by—

DISSERTATIONS and ADDRESSES on LITERATURE, ORATORY, PHILOSOPHY, and NATURAL THEOLOGY.

SPEECHES on SOCIAL and POLITICAL SUBJECTS, with HISTORICAL INTRODUCTIONS.

HISTORICAL and CRITICAL DISSERTATIONS, contributed to various Literary Periodicals.

"Not only will a large part of his productions be now brought together for the first time, but the entire series has been newly revised, and very extensive and important additions have been made in every department. Many of the biographies are sketches from personal knowledge of the great men with whom he has lived; many of the speeches must always be ranked with the very finest specimens of English eloquence; many of the treatises and articles are essential to a full understanding of the social and political history of the age in which he has been so prominent an actor; and though he must often carry us here into debatable questions, the liquid lava has cooled with time, and we may tread, with the calmness of philosophic inquirers, the ground which was once alive with the heat and passions of the hour."—*Quarterly Review*.

### II. LEGAL, POLITICAL, AND PROFESSIONAL WORKS,

In a Series of Post Octavo Volumes, Price 7s. 6d. each,

Comprising DISQUISITIONS on THE AMENDMENT OF THE LAW—COLONIAL LAW—POLITICAL PHILOSOPHY—DECISIONS, &c. &c.

### III. CONTRIBUTIONS TO THE EDINBURGH REVIEW, POLITICAL, HISTORICAL, AND MISCELLANEOUS,

Now first collected, in 3 vols. 8vo, Price 36s. cloth,

Uniform with the Library Edition of Jeffrey, Mackintosh, and Smith.

The Articles are comprised under—

RHETORICAL.	POLITICAL ECONOMY AND FINANCE.
HISTORICAL.	COMMERCIAL LAW.
FOREIGN POLICY.	PHYSICAL SCIENCE.
CONSTITUTIONAL QUESTIONS.	MISCELLANEOUS.

### IV. PALEY'S NATURAL THEOLOGY,

With NOTES and DISSERTATIONS by LORD BROUGHAM and SIR CHARLES BELL,  
New Edition, 3 vols. small 8vo, Price 7s. 6d. cloth.

"When Lord Brougham's eloquence in the Senate shall have passed away, and his services as a Statesman shall exist only in the free institutions which they have helped to secure, his Discourse on Natural Theology will continue to inculcate imperishable truths, and fit the mind for the higher revelations which these truths are destined to foreshadow and confirm."—*Edinburgh Review*.

# THE WORKS OF JOHN EADIE, D.D., LL.D.,

Professor of Biblical Literature in the United Presbyterian Church.

## I.

**ANALYTICAL CONCORDANCE TO THE HOLY SCRIPTURES**, with the TEXT IN FULL. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d. cloth—arranged as follows:—

AGRICULTURE.	FAMILY.	METALS AND MINERALS.	SABBATHS & HOLY DAYS.
ANIMALS.	GENEALOGY.	MINISTERS OF RELIGION.	SACRIFICE.
ARCHITECTURE.	GOD.	MIRACLES.	SCRIPTURES.
ARMY, ARMS.	HEAVEN.	OCCUPATIONS.	SPEECH.
BODY.	IDOLATRY, IDOLS.	ORDINANCES.	SPIRITS.
CANAAN.	JESUS CHRIST.	PARABLES AND EMBLEMS.	TABERNACLE & TEMPLE.
COVENANT.	JEWS.	PERSECUTION.	VINEYARD & ORCHARD.
DIET AND DRESS.	LAW.	PRaise AND PRAYER.	VISIONS & DREAMS.
DISAST AND DEATH.	MAGISTRATES.	PROPHECY.	WAR.
EARTH.	MAN.	PROVIDENCE.	WATER.
	MARRIAGE.	REDEMPTION.	

The object of this Concordance is to present the entire Scriptures, under certain classified and exhaustive heads. It differs from an ordinary Concordance, in that its arrangement depends not on words but on subjects, and the verses are printed in full. Its plan does not bring it at all into competition with such limited works as those of GASTON and WARREN, for they select doctrinal topics principally, and do not profess to comprehend as we do the entire Bible. The work will be accompanied with a Synoptical Table of Contents, which will present in brief a System of Biblical Antiquities and Theology, and with a very copious and accurate Index.

## II.

**BIBLICAL CYCLOPEDIA**; or, **DICTIONARY OF EASTERN ANTIQUITIES, GEOGRAPHY, NATURAL HISTORY, SACRED ANNALS and BIOGRAPHY, THEOLOGY, and BIBLICAL LITERATURE**, illustrative of the Old and New Testaments. With Maps and Pictorial Illustrations, drawn from the most authentic sources. Fifth Edition, revised, post 8vo, 7s. 6d. cloth.

## III.

**A COMMENTARY on the GREEK TEXT of the EPISTLE of PAUL to the COLOSSIANS.** 8vo, 10s. 6d. cloth.

## IV.

**A COMMENTARY on the GREEK TEXT of the EPISTLE of PAUL to the EPHESIANS,** 8vo, 14s. cloth.

## V.

**A NEW AND COMPLETE CONCORDANCE to the HOLY SCRIPTURES**, on the Basis of CRUDEX. Sixteenth Edition, post 8vo, 5s. cloth.

## VI.

**DICTIONARY OF THE BIBLE**, for the Use of Young Persons. With 120 Illustrations, Fourth Edition, small 8vo, 2s. 6d. cloth.

## VII.

**THE DIVINE LOVE: a Series of DOCTRINAL, PRACTICAL, AND EXPERIMENTAL DISCOURSES.** Foolscap 8vo, 5s. cloth.

God's Love to the World—Christ's Love to His Church—The Love of the Spirit—The Votive Tablet, or the Saint's Record of his Love, (*a Soliloquy*)—The Adopting Love of the Father—The Father's Love to the Son, the Model and Measurement of the Son's Love to His People—The Loving-kindness of the Lord on the Wild, in the Dungeon, in the Sick-Room, and on the Seas, (*a Meditation*)—The Sin and Doom of the Loveless—The Love of Invitation and Revival—The Momentous Question and its Answer, the New Commandment, &c.—The Friendship and Sympathy of Jesus—Love to Jesus the Grand Motive to Christian Labour and Missionary Enterprise.

## VIII.

**EARLY ORIENTAL HISTORY**; comprising the HISTORIES OF EGYPT, ASSYRIA, PERSIA, LYDIA, PHRYGIA, and PHœNICIA. With Illustrations from the most authentic sources. Crown 8vo, 8s. cloth.

EGYPT—Geography—Physical Peculiarities—Climate—Production—Topography—Dynastic History—Social History—Government, Priesthood, Military Affairs, Classes of Society, Constitution and Laws, Manners and Customs, Occupations, Fine Arts, Hieroglyphics, Theology.—ASSYRIA—Geography—History—Nineveh—Babylon.—PERSIA—Geographical History of Persia and Media—Topography and Monuments of Persia—Social History of Persia—Religion, Language, Government, Arts and Sciences—Political History of Persia and Media—Cyrus—Cresus—History of Lydia—Cambyses—Darius—Xerxes.—PHRYGIA—Political and Social History.—PHœNICIA—Political and Social History.

## IX.

**LECTURES ON THE BIBLE to the YOUNG**, for their Instruction and Excitement. Second Edition, 18mo, 1s. 6d. cloth.

Introductory—Read the Bible—Understand the Bible—How to Understand the Bible—Believe the Bible—Remember the Bible—Practice the Bible—Circulate the Bible.

# Valuable Works of Reference.

## I.

**HANDBOOK OF ANCIENT HISTORY**, from the CREATION of the WORLD to the FALL of the WESTERN EMPIRE, edited by ISAIAH M'BURNEY, B.A., with Introductory Essay on the Sources of History, by SIR JOHN STODDART, LL.D.—Tables of Sovereigns, Dynasties, &c. Maps,—Plans of Cities, &c. Crown 8vo.

## II.

**HANDBOOK OF MEDÆVAL HISTORY**, from the FALL of the WESTERN EMPIRE to the END of the FIFTEENTH CENTURY, edited by ISAIAH M'BURNEY, B.A., with Dissertations on the Feudal System, by Colonel PROCTER, and on the Scholastic Philosophy, by Dr. HAMPDEN, Bishop of Hereford—Maps. Crown 8vo.

## III.

**HANDBOOK OF THE SIXTEENTH AND SEVENTEENTH CENTURIES**, edited by SAMUEL NEIL, with Dissertation on the Rise, Progress, and Accomplishment of the Reformation, and Memoirs of the leading Historical Personages of the Period, by Professors CREASY, EADIE, and NICHOL, J. H. BURTON, &c. Crown 8vo.

## IV.

**HANDBOOK OF OUR OWN TIMES**—The EIGHTEENTH and NINETEENTH Centuries, edited by SAMUEL NEIL, with a Sketch of the French Revolution, by LORD BROUGHAM, and Memoirs of the leading Historical Personages of the Period, by SIR ARCHIBALD ALISON, Professor CREASY, &c. Crown 8vo.

## V.

**BIOGRAPHICAL, GEOGRAPHICAL, AND HISTORICAL HANDBOOK OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE**, by numerous Contributors, with Introductory Essay by Professor CREASY, and map and plates. Crown 8vo, 8s. 6d. cloth.

## VI.

**CYCLOPÆDIA OF UNIVERSAL HISTORY**; containing Tabular Views of Contemporaneous Events in all Ages, from the Earliest Records to the Present Time, arranged Chronologically and Alphabetically. Edited by ISAIAH M'BURNEY, B.A., and SAMUEL NEIL, 8vo, 10s. 6d. cloth.

## VII.

**CYCLOPÆDIA OF MODERN RELIGIOUS BIOGRAPHY**: a Series of Memoirs of the most eminent Religious Characters of Modern Times, by ROBERT JAMIESON, D.D., Minister of St. Paul's, Glasgow. New Edition, crown 8vo, 5s. cloth.

## VIII.

**CYCLOPÆDIA OF UNIVERSAL BIOGRAPHY**; containing the Lives of the most Remarkable Individuals of all Times and Nations. Edited by E. RICH, Esq., with the assistance of numerous Contributors. With 150 illustrations, 8vo, 12s. 6d. cloth.

### Contributors.

Sir Archibald Alison, D.C.L.  
W. Baird, M.D., F.L.S.  
Sir David Brewster, F.R.S.  
John Hill Burton, Esq.  
James Bryce, A.M., F.G.S.  
Professor Creasy, M.A.  
Professor Eadie, D.D., LL.D.  
Professor Ferguson, A.M.  
Professor Gordon, F.R.S.E.  
James Hedderwick, Esq.

J. A. Heraud, Esq.  
Robert Jamieson, D.D.  
Charles Knight, Esq.  
James McConnechy, Esq.  
James Manson, Esq.  
Professor Nichol, LL.D.  
E. Rich, Esq.  
Professor Spalding, A.M.  
R. D. Thomson, M.D., F.R.S.  
R. N. Wornum, Esq.

## IX.

**CYCLOPÆDIA OF PHYSICAL AND DESCRIPTIVE GEOGRAPHY**; or, **GAZETTEER OF THE WORLD**, by JAMES BRYCE, M.A., F.G.S., maps and numerous plates, post 8vo, cloth.







